

MANUAL OF
TROPICAL MEDICINE

CASTELLANI & CHALMERS

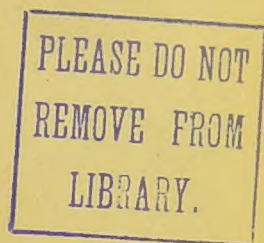
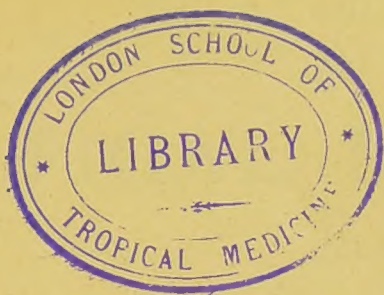
UNIVERSITY SERIES

LSHTM



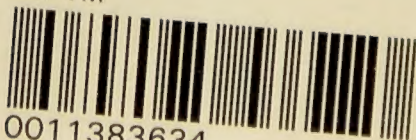
28 0098612 8

b. UB

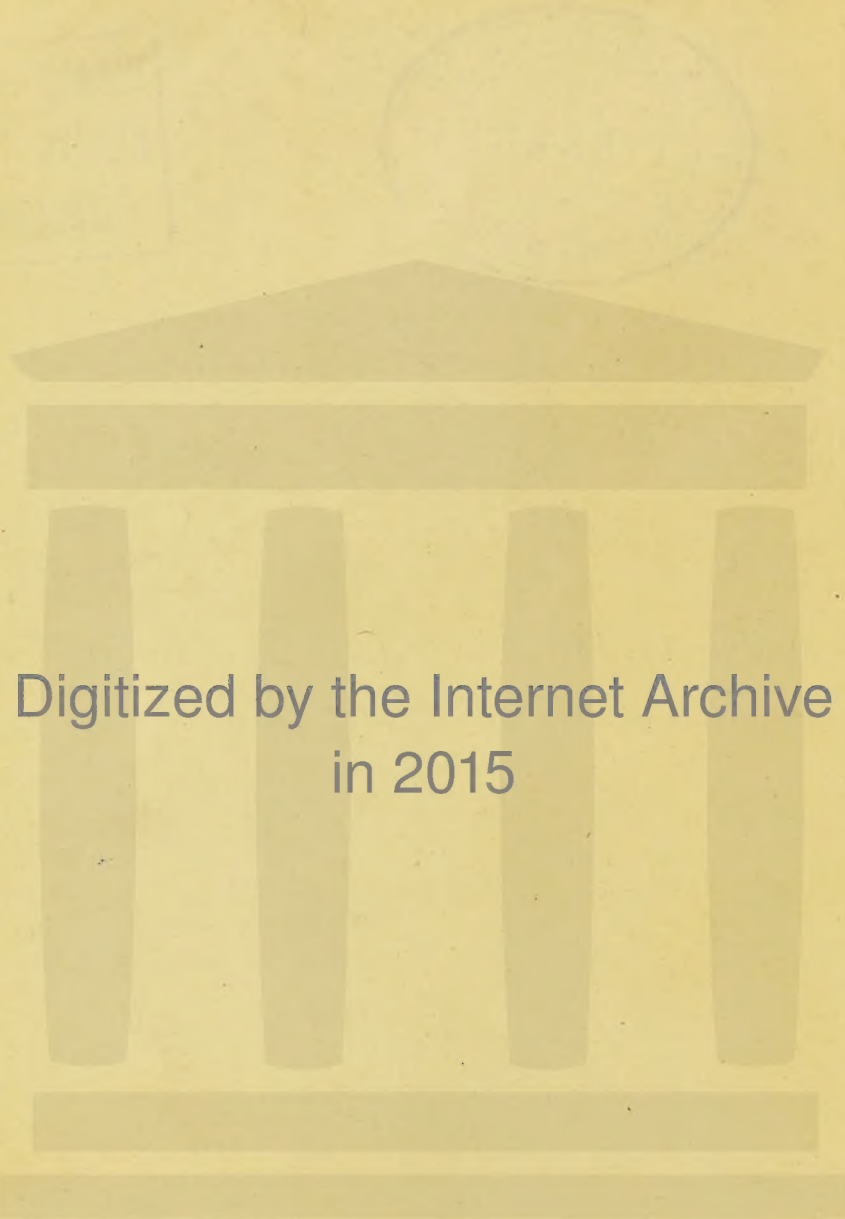


MANUAL OF TROPICAL MEDICINE

LSHTM



0011383634



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

<https://archive.org/details/b21351521>

MANUAL OF TROPICAL MEDICINE

BY

ALDO CASTELLANI

M.D. (FLORENCE); PRIVAT-DOCENT (NAPLES)

DIRECTOR OF THE CLINIQUE FOR TROPICAL DISEASES, CEYLON; PHYSICIAN, SEAMEN'S WARD
GENERAL HOSPITAL, COLOMBO; PROFESSOR OF TROPICAL MEDICINE AND LECTURER
ON DERMATOLOGY, CEYLON MEDICAL COLLEGE; MEMBER OF THE ROYAL
SOCIETY'S COMMISSION ON SLEEPING SICKNESS IN UGANDA,
1902-1903

AND

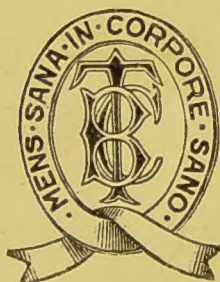
ALBERT J. CHALMERS

M.D. (VIC. & LIV.); F.R.C.S. (ENG.); D.P.H. (CAM.)

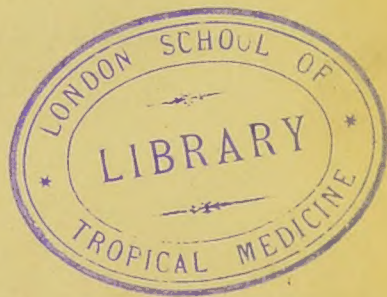
DIRECTOR, WELLCOME TROPICAL RESEARCH LABORATORIES, KHARTOUM; CEYLON MEDICAL
SERVICE, 1901-1911; HOLT FELLOW, UNIVERSITY COLLEGE, LIVERPOOL, 1890;
MEDICAL OFFICER, GOLD COAST COLONY,
1897-1901

SECOND EDITION

UNIVERSITY



SERIES



LONDON
BAILLIÈRE, TINDALL AND COX
8, HENRIETTA STREET, COVENT GARDEN

1913

[All rights reserved]

PLEASE DO NOT
REMOVE FROM
LIBRARY.

Dedication

TO

SIR PATRICK MANSON

G.C.M.G., M.D., LL.D., F.R.C.P., F.R.S.

THE FOUNDER OF SCIENTIFIC TROPICAL MEDICINE

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION

THE first edition of this manual having been exhausted, we have revised most of the chapters, and have added to the letterpress and somewhat extensively to the illustrations.

As far as possible we have endeavoured to benefit by the kind criticisms which we have received, as some of the new chapters will indicate, but we are painfully aware of the great possibilities of error, clerical and otherwise, in a work of this nature, and we crave the kind indulgence of the reader for such as may be found.

We desire to record our grateful appreciation of the kind help received from Colonel Sir William Leishman, Sir Ronald Ross, Dr. Leiper, Dr. G. C. Low, Dr. Sambon, Mr. Austen, Professor Splendore, Professor Nuttall, Mr. Cantlie, Dr. Ernest Black, Dr. Keating, Dr. Chagas, Dr. Vianna, Dr. Fantham, Professor Stephens, Dr. Bulloch, Dr. E. H. Ross, Mr. Wellcome, Professor Mesnil, Professor Pinoy, Professor Brumpt, Professor Newstead, Professor Terni, Dr. Seligmann, Professor Pittaluga, Dr. MacLeod, Professor C. J. Martin, Dr. Cranston Low, Dr. Bell, Dr. Child, Dr. Basile, Mr. Burgess, Dr. Nell, and Dr. Distaso.

We also desire to express our indebtedness to the authorities of the Royal Society, the India Office, the *British Medical Journal*, the *Lancet*, the *Centralblatt für Bakteriologie*; to Messrs. Hutchinson and Co., Messrs. Bale, Sons, and Danielsson, and Messrs. Cassell and Co., for kind permission to copy some of their illustrations.

It gives us much pleasure to thank our talented artist, Mr. Terzi, for the able manner in which he has executed the new illustrations. We also acknowledge with much appreciation the skill with which Mr. M. J. de Silva has executed the photographs of the skin diseases.

We again offer our publishers, Messrs. Baillière, Tindall, and Cox, our thanks for their continued kindness and courtesy.

ALDO CASTELLANI.
ALBERT J. CHALMERS.

LONDON,
March, 1913.



PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION

THIS book is an attempt to describe the knowledge which we have found necessary to acquire and use during our work in Tropical Africa and Asia. We are well aware how difficult it is to discover one's own omissions and mistakes, and for such as may be found in this work we ask the indulgence of the reader.

An attempt has been made to keep the book as small as possible, but at the same time to describe, however briefly, the many subjects with which we have found it necessary to be acquainted. In order to attain this object, we have omitted all reference to practical laboratory methods, as such can readily be obtained in the excellent works of Daniels and Staunton, or Stephens and Christophers. Similarly, detailed descriptions of bacteria have not been included, as they are contained in any of the modern textbooks on bacteriology, such as those by Muir and Ritchie, by Hewlett, or by Stitt, one of which should be in the possession of every practitioner working in the Tropics. Notwithstanding our desire for brevity, we have considered it advisable in a few instances to repeat our descriptions of parasites in the clinical portion of the work. This, however, has only been done when such descriptions were necessary, in order to give the reader a clear general account of the disease.

In the Clinical Section we have given importance to the descriptions of treatment, going into details, which some may think superfluous; but we know by experience that these details as regards dosage, modes of administration, etc., are required by the practitioner working in the Tropics, who often has no opportunity of consulting books on therapeutics and materia medica.

We desire to acknowledge gratefully the sympathy shown to us by the officials of the Colonial Office in London during the preparation of this work.

We are indebted to Sir Hugh Clifford, K.C.M.G., Sir Allan Perry, M.D., Dr. Sambon, Dr. Willey, Mr. Green, Miss Robertson, Mr. Barnard, Mr. Browning, and Mr. Drieberg, for reading certain portions of the proofs, and for kindly lending us specimens and illustrations.

It gives us great pleasure to express our thanks to our artists, Mr. Terzi and Mr. M. J. de Silva, for the skill with which they have executed the drawings. Though a large number of these are original, still we have been compelled in order to illustrate the work fully to draw upon the generosity of a number of authors and publishers. We desire to state how much we are indebted to the kindness of these gentlemen in allowing us to redraw their originals—a task which has been performed as carefully as possible, and it is hoped that no error has in any way crept in.

It is our desire to acknowledge in the fullest manner the source of these copied drawings, and if any omission is found it is purely accidental. We are especially indebted to Professor Looss, of Cairo, who with the greatest generosity offered us his valuable original drawings of worms ; to Professor Nuttall, many of whose drawings of mosquitoes and ticks have been used ; to Mr. Austen and the Trustees of the British Museum for several illustrations of mosquitoes and flies ; to Professor Ross for permission to copy certain drawings from the publications of the Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine ; and to Professor R. Blanchard, Professor Hartmann, Professor Fülleborn, the Honourable Charles Rothschild, Dr. Lesage, Dr. Rodewald, and Dr. Neveu-Lemaire, for permission to use some of their valuable drawings.

We have also to thank Colonel Sir William Leishman, the Honourable Mr. Warren, C.M.G. (Surveyor-General of Ceylon), Professor Grassi, Dr. C. Mense, Colonel Giles, Captain Christophers, Captain Craig, Captain Patton, Mr. Fantham, and Mr. Dobell, for kind permission to utilize their illustrations.

We have also to acknowledge the kindness of the authorities of the Royal Society, and of the Hygiene Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service of the United States, as well as the Editors of the *Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene*, of the *Lancet*, of the *British Medical Journal*, of the *Archiv für Protistenkunde*, of the *Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science*, of the *American Journal of Medical Sciences*, of the *Journal of Hygiene*, and of the *Journal of Parasitology*, in allowing us to copy certain prints.

Finally, we desire to acknowledge the constant kindness and courtesy of our publishers, Messrs. Baillière, Tindall, and Cox.

ALDO CASTELLANI.
ALBERT J. CHALMERS.

COLOMBO, CEYLON.
April, 1910.



CONTENTS

PART I

INTRODUCTORY

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. HISTORY OF TROPICAL MEDICINE - - - - -	3
II. TROPICAL CLIMATOLOGY - - - - -	28
III. TROPICAL RACES - - - - -	59
IV. EFFECTS OF FOOD AND CLIMATE ON MAN IN THE TROPICS -	79
V. DISEASE IN THE TROPICS - - - - -	108

PART II

THE CAUSATION OF DISEASE IN THE TROPICS

SECTION A.—PHYSICAL CAUSES OF DISEASE

VI. PATHOLOGICAL EFFECTS OF HIGH ATMOSPHERIC TEMPERATURES - - - - -	123
VII. SOME TROPICAL TRAUMATISMS - - - - -	135

SECTION B.—CHEMICAL CAUSES OF DISEASE

VIII. TROPICAL INTOXICATIONS : POISONS - - - - -	145
IX. POISONS USED IN WAR, FISHING, HUNTING, AND TRADE -	161
X. POISONOUS FOODS - - - - -	170
XI. VENOMOUS ANIMALS : PROTOZOA TO ARTHROPODA - - -	179
XII. VENOMOUS ANIMALS (<i>continued</i>) : PISCES AND AMPHIBIA -	204
XIII. VENOMOUS ANIMALS (<i>concluded</i>) : REPTILIA - - - -	216

SECTION C.—PARASITIC CAUSES OF DISEASE

CHAPTER	PAGE
XIV. ANIMAL PARASITES, PROTOZOA : SARCODINA - -	254
XV. MASTIGOPHORA : PROTOMONADINA, POLYMASTIGINA, AND BINUCLEATA - - - - -	280
XVI. MASTIGOPHORA (<i>concluded</i>) : HERPETOMONIDÆ, PLASMO- DIDÆ, AND SPIROCHÆTACEA - - -	348
XVII. TELOSPORIDIA AND NEOSPORIDIA - - -	417
XVIII. HETEROKARYOTA - - - - -	448
XIX. METAZOAN PARASITES AND TREMATODA - - -	455
XX. CESTOIDEA - - - - -	490
XXI. NEMATHELMINTHES - - - - -	514
XXII. ANNULATA AND ARTHROPODA - - - - -	570
XXIII. HEXAPODA : SIPHUNCULATA, MALLOPHAGA, AND HEMIP- TERA - - - - -	627
XXIV. DIPTERA : CULICIDÆ AND ALLIED FAMILIES - - -	645
XXV. DIPTERA (<i>concluded</i>) : MUSCIDÆ AND ALLIED FAMILIES -	688
XXVI. SIPHONAPTERA, COLEOPTERA, AND MAMMALIA - - -	739
XXVII. VEGETAL PARASITES : FUNGI - - - - -	756
XXVIII. FUNGI (<i>concluded</i>) - - - - -	812

PART III

THE DISEASES OF THE TROPICS

SECTION A.—FEVERS

XXIX. MALARIA - - - - -	847
XXX. THE TROPICAL HÆMOGLOBINURIAS - - - - -	910
XXXI. THE RELAPSING FEVERS - - - - -	925
XXXII. THE SPOTTED FEVER OF THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS AND TSUTSUGAMUSHI DISEASE - - - - -	940
XXXIII. THE KALA-AZARS - - - - -	952
XXXIV. THE TRYPANOSOMIASIS - - - - -	966
XXXV. DENGUE AND ALLIED FEVERS - - - - -	992
XXXVI. YELLOW FEVER - - - - -	1004
XXXVII. UNDULANT FEVER - - - - -	1018

CHAPTER	PAGE
XXXVIII. PLAGUE - - - - -	1028
XXXIX. ENTERIC FEVER IN THE TROPICS - - - - -	1046
XL. THE UNCLASSIFIED AND COSMOPOLITAN FEVERS IN THE TROPICS - - - - -	1085

SECTION B.—GENERAL DISEASES

<p> XLI. PARAGONIMIASIS, KATAYAMA DISEASE, AND POROCEPHALOSIS - - - - - XLII. THE FILIARIASES - - - - - XLIII. LEPROSY - - - - - XLIV. FRAMBÆSIA TROPICA (YAWS) - - - - - XLV. VERRUGA PERUVIANA - - - - - XLVI. BERI-BERI AND EPIDEMIC DROPSY - - - - - XLVII. PELLAGRA - - - - - XLVIII. RARER PROTOZOAL INFECTIONS: HISTOPLASMOSIS, RHINOSPORIDIOSIS, SARCOSPORIDIOSIS, AND ONYALAI - - - - - </p>	<p> 1114 1123 1147 1170 1196 1208 1230 1267 </p>
--	---

SECTION C.—SYSTEMIC DISEASES

<p> XLIX. DISEASES OF THE RESPIRATORY ORGANS - - - - - L. DISEASES OF THE ALIMENTARY CANAL: AGCHYLOSTOMIASIS, ETC. - - - - - LI. SPRUE AND THE DIARRHÆAS - - - - - LII. CHOLERA - - - - - LIII. THE DYSENTERIES - - - - - LIV. INTESTINAL SCHISTOSOMIASIS AND EPIDEMIC GAN- GRENOUS RECTITIS - - - - - LV. DISEASES OF THE LIVER AND PANCREAS - - - - - LVI. DISEASES OF THE CIRCULATORY ORGANS, SUPRARENALS, AND THYROID GLAND - - - - - LVII. DISEASES OF THE URINARY ORGANS - - - - - LVIII. DISEASES OF THE GENERATIVE ORGANS - - - - - LIX. DISEASES OF THE LYMPHATIC SYSTEM AND SEROUS MEMBRANES - - - - - LX. DISEASES OF THE CONNECTIVE TISSUES, MUSCLES, BONES, AND JOINTS - - - - - </p>	<p> 1274 1291 1325 1343 1361 1398 1403 1416 1421 1426 1434 1440 </p>
---	---

CHAPTER	PAGE
LXI. DISEASES OF THE NERVOUS SYSTEM - - -	1449
LXII. DISEASES OF THE SKIN : PYOGENIC INFECTIONS -	1460
LXIII. DISEASES OF THE SKIN (<i>continued</i>) : TROPICAL DERMA- TOMYCOSES - - - - -	1472
LXIV. DISEASES OF THE SKIN (<i>continued</i>) : TROPICAL DERMA- TOMYCOSES (<i>concluded</i>) - - - - -	1527
LXV. DISEASES OF THE SKIN (<i>continued</i>) : DERMATITIS VENENATA - - - - -	1541
LXVI. DISEASES OF THE SKIN (<i>continued</i>) : ULCERATIONS -	1548
LXVII. DISEASES OF THE SKIN (<i>continued</i>) : DERMATOZOIASES -	1577
LXVIII. DISEASES OF THE SKIN (<i>continued</i>) : CRAW-CRAW, ETC.	1593
LXIX. DISEASES OF THE SKIN (<i>continued</i>) : DYSIDROSES AND DYSTROPHIES - - - - -	1603
LXX. DISEASES OF THE SKIN (<i>concluded</i>) : COSMOPOLITAN DISEASES - - - - -	1624
LXXI. DISEASES OF THE ORGANS OF SPECIAL SENSE -	1642
INDEX - - - - -	1664
LIST OF AUTHORITIES - - - - -	1725

FIG.		PAGE
28.	Chelicera from the same Tick. (After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, <i>Journal of Parasitology</i>) - - - -	191
29.	<i>Scolopendra morsitans</i> - - - -	192
30.	An Anopheline Mosquito (<i>A. maculipennis</i> Meigen) in the Act of Biting. (After Nuttall and Shipley, <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - -	198
31.	Head of <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> Meigen. (After Nuttall and Shipley, <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - - -	199
32.	Anterior End of a Mandible of <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> Meigen. (After Nuttall and Shipley, <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - - -	199
33.	Anterior End of a Maxilla of <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> Meigen. (After Nuttall and Shipley, <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - - -	199
34.	The Alimentary Canal of <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> Meigen. (After Nuttall and Shipley, <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - - -	200
35.	<i>Synanceia verrucosa</i> Schneider. (From Savtschenko's 'Atlas of Poisonous Fish') - - - -	209
36.	<i>Trachinus draco</i> Linnæus - - - -	211
37.	<i>Cottus scorpius</i> Linnæus. (From Savtschenko's 'Atlas of Poisonous Fish') - - - -	212
38.	<i>Scorpaena diabolus</i> Cuvier and Valentine. (From Savtschenko's 'Atlas of Poisonous Fish') - - - -	213
39.	<i>Naja tripudians</i> Merrem (the Cobra) - - - -	220
40.	<i>Bungarus ceylonicus</i> Günther (the Carawalla of Ceylon) - - - -	221
41.	<i>Hydrus platurus</i> Linnæus (a Sea-snake) - - - -	221
42.	<i>Vipera russellii</i> Shaw (the Tic Polonga of Ceylon) - - - -	222
43.	Diagram of the Life-Cycles of <i>Löschia coli</i> Lösch - - - -	261
44.	Schizogony of <i>Plasmodium vivax</i> Grassi and Feletti. (After Schaudinn) - - - -	262
45.	Sporogony of <i>Plasmodium vivax</i> Grassi and Feletti: Development of the Microgamete. (After Schaudinn) - - - -	263
46.	Sporogony of <i>Plasmodium vivax</i> Grassi and Feletti: Development of the Macrogamete. (After Schaudinn) - - - -	263
47.	Sporogony of <i>Plasmodium vivax</i> Grassi and Feletti: Zygotis and Formation of the Oökinete. (After Schaudinn) - - - -	264
48.	Parthenogenesis of <i>Plasmodium vivax</i> Grassi and Feletti. (After Schaudinn) - - - -	264
49.	Diagram of the Life-Cycles of <i>Löschia tetragena</i> Viereck. (Constructed from Hartmann's Drawings in the <i>Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene</i>) - - - -	271
50.	Diagram of the Life-Cycles of <i>Löschia histolytica</i> Schaudinn. (Constructed from Craig's Drawings in the <i>Journal of Infectious Diseases</i>) - - - -	273
51.	Diagram of the Life-Cycles of <i>Löschia tropicalis</i> Lesage. (Constructed from Lesage's Drawings in the <i>Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique</i>) - - - -	274
52.	<i>Löschia undulans</i> Castellani - - - -	275
53.	Diagram of the Life-Cycles of <i>Paramœba hominis</i> Craig. (After Craig, from the <i>American Journal of Medical Sciences</i>) - - - -	277
54.	<i>Chlamydothryx enchelys</i> (Leydenia stage) Ehrenberg. (After Schaudinn) - - - -	278
55.	<i>Chlamydothryx enchelys</i> Ehrenberg. (After Cienkowski) - - - -	278
56.	Diagram of the Life-Cycles of a Mastigote (<i>Copromonas subtilis</i> Dobell). (After Dobell, from the <i>Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science</i>) - - - -	281

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FIG.	PAGE
1. The World, showing Warm Climates as delineated by Supan's Lines	29
2. Diurnal Temperature Curve at Colombo. (Kindly given by the Surveyor-General of Ceylon)	37
3. Mean Daily Range of Temperature in Colombo	37
4. Mean Daily Range of Temperature in Jacobabad	38
5. Monthly Mean Temperature of Colombo	39
6. Monthly Mean Temperature of Jacobabad	40
7. Map of Ceylon, showing Average Annual Rainfall and Isotherms. (Modified from a Map kindly given by the Surveyor-General of Ceylon)	41
8. Diurnal Barographic Curve at Colombo. (Kindly given by the Surveyor-General of Ceylon)	43
9. Average Monthly Mean Pressure at Colombo	45
10. Diagram of the Circulation of the Atmosphere. (After Ferrell, by kind permission of Messrs. Macmillan and Co.)	46
11. The World on Mercator's Projection, showing some of the Tropical Winds	48
12. The Races of Asia. (From 'Living Races of Man,' by kind permission of Messrs. Hutchinson and Co.)	65
13. The Races of Malaysia and Oceania. (From 'Living Races of Man,' by kind permission of Messrs. Hutchinson and Co.)	67
14. The Races of Africa. (From 'Living Races of Man,' by kind permission of Messrs. Hutchinson and Co.)	70
15. The Races of South America. (From 'Living Races of Man,' by kind permission of Messrs. Hutchinson and Co.)	76
16. Nerve Cells from the Medulla of a Case of Heat-Stroke, showing Chromatolysis	130
17. Temperature Chart of a Case of Heat-Stroke	131
18. <i>Cerbera odollam</i> Gärtner	149
19. <i>Gloriosa superba</i> Linnæus	150
20. <i>Nerium odorum</i> Soland	151
21. <i>Datura fastuosa</i> Linnæus	157
22. <i>Abrus precatorius</i> Linnæus	159
23. <i>Clupea longiceps</i> (<i>Sardinella neohowii</i>)	171
24. <i>Tetrodon vermicularis</i> (Schlegel). (From Savtschenko's 'Atlas of Poisonous Fish')	171
25. <i>Paspalum scrobiculatum</i> Linnæus	176
26. <i>Palamæus indus</i>	183
27. Ventral Aspect of the Mouth-Parts of a Tick (<i>Hæmaphysalis punctata</i> Canestrini and Fanzago). (After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, <i>Journal of Parasitology</i>)	191

FIG.		PAGE
57.	<i>Cercomonas hominis</i> Davaine - - - - -	285
58.	<i>Prowazekia asiatica</i> Castellani and Chalmers. From fæces - -	288
59.	<i>Prowazekia asiatica</i> Castellani and Chalmers. (After Whitmore, from the <i>Archiv für Protistenkunde</i>). (From cultures) - -	288
60.	<i>Trichomonas hominis</i> Davaine - - - - -	291
61.	Flagellate of <i>Trichomonas</i> type found in the blood of a Leopardine Snake. (After Plimmer) - - - - -	292
62.	<i>Lambliia intestinalis</i> Lambl - - - - -	293
63.	<i>Hæmoproteus mansonii</i> Sambon, showing the Development of the Gametocytes. (After Sambon) - - - - -	295
64.	<i>Hæmoproteus noctuæ</i> Celli and Sanfelice: Microgamete. (After Schaudinn) - - - - -	295
65.	<i>Hæmoproteus noctuæ</i> Celli and Sanfelice: the Oökinete. (After Schaudinn) - - - - -	296
66.	<i>Hæmoproteus noctuæ</i> Celli and Sanfelice: Maturation of the Oökinete. (After Schaudinn) - - - - -	296
67.	<i>Hæmoproteus noctuæ</i> Celli and Sanfelice: Formation of the Indifferent Oökinete and Trypanosome. (After Schaudinn) -	296
68.	<i>Hæmoproteus noctuæ</i> Celli and Sanfelice: Formation of the Male Oökinete and Trypanosome. (After Schaudinn) -	297
69.	<i>Hæmoproteus noctuæ</i> Celli and Sanfelice: Development of the Female Oökinete and Trypanosome. (After Schaudinn) -	297
70.	Diagram showing the Life-Cycle of <i>Hæmoproteus noctuæ</i> . (After Sambon and Terzi) - - - - -	298
71.	<i>Hæmoproteus noctuæ</i> Celli and Sanfelice: Trypanosomes in the Blood of the Little Owl. (After Schaudinn) - - - - -	299
72.	Life-Cycle of <i>Hæmoproteus columbæ</i> Celli and Sanfelice. (After Aragão, from the <i>Archiv für Protistenkunde</i>) - - -	301
73.	<i>Hæmoproteus columbæ</i> Celli and Sanfelice. (After Sambon) -	302
74.	<i>Leucocytozoon danilewskyi</i> Ziemann. (After Schaudinn) -	303
75.	Intracellular Form of a <i>Leucocytozoon lovati</i> . (After Sambon) -	304
76.	Intracellular Microgametocyte of a <i>Leucocytozoon lovati</i> . (After Seligmann and Sambon) - - - - -	304
77.	Intracellular Macrogametocyte of a <i>Leucocytozoon lovati</i> . (After Seligmann and Sambon) - - - - -	304
78.	<i>Leucocytozoon danilewskyi</i> Ziemann: Microgamete. (After Schaudinn) - - - - -	305
79.	<i>Leucocytozoon danilewskyi</i> Ziemann: Macrogamete. (After Schaudinn) - - - - -	305
80.	<i>Leucocytozoon danilewskyi</i> Ziemann: Development of Oökinete. (After Schaudinn) - - - - -	305
81.	Diagram showing the Structure and Polarity of a Trypanosome -	309
82.	Diagram of the Life-Cycle of <i>Trypanosoma lewisi</i> in the Body of the Rat. (After Moore, Breinl, and Hindle, <i>Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology</i>) - - - - -	312
83.	<i>Crithidia melophagia</i> Flu. (After Flu, from the <i>Archiv für Protistenkunde</i>) - - - - -	314
84.	Proboscian Development. (After Roubaud) - - - - -	316
85.	Development of <i>Trypanosoma gambiense</i> Dutton. (After Bruce, Hamerton, Bateman, and Mackie, from the <i>Proceedings of the Royal Society</i>) - - - - -	317
86.	<i>Trypanosoma rajæ</i> : Round Form. (After Miss Robertson) -	318
87.	<i>Trypanosoma rajæ</i> : Older Stage. (After Miss Robertson) -	318

FIG.		PAGE
144.	Hæmogregarina vittatæ. (After Miss Robertson) - - -	431
145.	Hæmogregarina vittatæ. (After Miss Robertson) - - -	431
146.	Sarcocystis tenellæ bubali in a Muscle Fibre - - -	435
147.	Sarcocystis tenellæ bubali in Meat - - -	435
148.	Sarcocystis spores in the Blood of Bos indicus - - -	435
149.	Rhinosporidium seeberi from a Ceylon Case - - -	437
150-155.	Life-History of an Ichthyosporidium. (After Miss Robertson)	439
156.	Sergentella hominis. (After Et. and Ed. Sergent) - - -	441
157.	Sarcocystes Spores found in Man by Castellani and Willey - - -	441
158.	Balantidium coli. (After Hartmann) - - -	452
159.	Balantidium minutum. (After Hartmann) - - -	452
160.	Nyctotherus faba. (After Hartmann) - - -	453
161.	Nyctotherus africanus Castellani - - -	453
162.	Diagram of a Type of the Female Generative Apparatus of a Trematode. (After Stiles) - - -	459
163.	Diagram of another Type of the Female Generative Apparatus of a Trematode - - -	459
164.	Watsonius watsoni. (After Shipley, emended by Leiper) - - -	463
165.	Egg of Fasciola hepatica. (After Thomas, from the <i>Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science</i>) - - -	468
166.	The Miracidium of Fasciola hepatica. (After Thomas, from the <i>Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science</i>) - - -	468
167.	The Larva of Fasciola hepatica. (After Thomas, from the <i>Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science</i>) - - -	468
168.	The Sporocyst of Fasciola hepatica. (After Thomas, from the <i>Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science</i>) - - -	468
169.	The Redia of Fasciola hepatica. (After Thomas, from the <i>Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science</i>) - - -	469
170.	The Cercaria of Fasciola hepatica. (After Thomas, from the <i>Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science</i>) - - -	469
171.	Fasciolopsis buski. (After Odhner, from the <i>Centralblatt für Bakteriologie</i>) - - -	472
172.	Clonorchis sinensis. (After Looss, from the <i>Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology</i>) - - -	475
173.	Clonorchis endemicus. (After Looss, from the <i>Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology</i>) - - -	476
174.	Paragonimus westermani. (After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten') - - -	477
175.	Heterophyes heterophyes. (After Looss, from Braun's 'Animal Parasites of Man,' English edition) - - -	479
176.	Dicrocoelium lanceatum. (After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten') - - -	480
177.	Schistosoma hæmatobium. (After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten') - - -	481
178.	Egg of Schistosoma hæmatobium. (After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten') - - -	483
179.	Outlines of the Eggs of Schistosoma hæmatobium, S. mansoni, and S. japonicum. (After Sambon) - - -	484
180.	Schistosoma mansoni. (After Holcomb, from the <i>United States Naval Bulletin</i>) - - -	485
181.	Eggs of Schistosoma japonicum. (After Leiper, from the <i>Proceedings of the Society of Tropical Medicine</i>) - - -	486
182.	Head of Tænia solium. (After Leuckart) - - -	491

FIG.		PAGE
183.	Mature Segment of <i>Tænia saginata</i> . (After Leuckart) - -	491
184.	Uterine Egg of <i>Tænia saginata</i> . (After Leuckart) - -	492
185.	Ovum of <i>Dibothriocephalus latus</i> . (After Leuckart) - -	492
186.	Fæcal Egg of <i>Tænia solium</i> . (After Leuckart) - -	493
187.	Free Ciliated Embryo of <i>Dibothriocephalus latus</i> . (After Leuckart) - - - - -	493
188.	<i>Cysticercus</i> of <i>Tænia saginata</i> . (After Leuckart) - -	493
189.	<i>Plerocercoid</i> of <i>Dibothriocephalus latus</i> . (After Leuckart) -	493
190.	<i>Sparganum prolifer</i> Ijima. (After Stiles, from the <i>Bulletin of Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service of the United States</i>) - - - - -	500
191.	<i>Sparganum baxteri</i> Sambon. (After Sambon) - - -	501
192.	Ripe Proglottis of <i>Tænia solium</i> . (After Stiles, from the <i>Bulletin of Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service of the United States</i>) - - - - -	506
193.	Ripe Proglottis of <i>Tænia saginata</i> . (After Stiles, from the <i>Bulletin of Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service of the United States</i>) - - - - -	507
194.	<i>Rhabditiform</i> Embryo of <i>Strongyloides intestinalis</i> as found in Human Fæces. (After Looss) - - - - -	519
195.	Diagram of the Development of a <i>Microfilaria</i> . (After Penel) -	525
196.	<i>Microfilaria bancrofti</i> - - - - -	526
197.	Scheme of the Structure of a <i>Microfilaria</i> . (After Fülleborn) -	527
198.	Early Stage of <i>Filaria bancrofti</i> in the Thoracic Muscles of <i>Culex fatigans</i> . (After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten') -	528
199.	Late Stage of the Development of <i>Filaria bancrofti</i> in the Thoracic Muscles of <i>Culex fatigans</i> . (After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten') - - - - -	528
200.	Diagram of the Development of <i>Filaria bancrofti</i> in the Mosquito -	529
201.	Embryo of <i>Acanthocheilonema perstans</i> - - - - -	534
202.	Posterior End of a Male <i>Loa loa</i> Guiyot. (After Looss) -	536
203.	Posterior End of a Female <i>Loa loa</i> Guiyot. (After Looss) -	536
204.	<i>Loa loa</i> Guiyot - - - - -	538
205.	<i>Microfilaria</i> of <i>Onchocerca volvulus</i> Leuckart. (After Fülleborn) -	541
206.	<i>Dracunculus medinensis</i> Linnæus - - - - -	542
207.	Larva of <i>Dracunculus medinensis</i> Linnæus. (After Looss) -	543
208.	<i>Ascaris lumbricoides</i> : Development of the Embryo. (After Stiles, from the <i>Bulletin of the Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, U.S.A.</i>) - - - - -	544
209.	<i>Ascaris lumbricoides</i> newly hatched. (Microphotograph by J. J. Bell) -	545
210.	<i>Oxyuris vermicularis</i> : Male and Female Forms. (After Claus) -	548
211.	<i>Oxyuris vermicularis</i> : Development of Larva. (After Stiles, from the <i>Bulletin of the Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, U.S.A.</i>) - - - - -	548
212.	<i>Agchylostoma duodenale</i> : Male. (After Looss, from <i>Records of the Egyptian Government School of Medicine</i>) - - -	556
213.	<i>Agchylostoma duodenale</i> : Anterior Extremity. (After Looss, from <i>Records of Egyptian Government School of Medicine</i>) -	556
214.	<i>Agchylostoma duodenale</i> Bursa copulatrix. (After Stiles, from the <i>Bulletin of the Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, U.S.A.</i>) - - - - -	557
215.	<i>Agchylostoma duodenale</i> : Female. (After Looss, from the <i>Records of the Egyptian Government School of Medicine</i>) -	557

FIG.	PAGE
216. Development of the Rhabditiform Embryo. (After Perroncito, from the <i>Bulletin of Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, U.S.A.</i>) - - -	558
217. Agchylostoma duodenale: First Stage of Development. (After Looss, from the <i>Bulletin of Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, U.S.A.</i>) - - -	559
218. Agchylostoma duodenale: Second Stage of Development. (After Looss, from the <i>Bulletin of Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, U.S.A.</i>) - - -	559
219. Agchylostoma duodenale: Third Stage of Development. (After Looss, from the <i>Bulletin of Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, U.S.A.</i>) - - -	559
220. Agchylostoma duodenale: Fourth Stage of Development. (After Looss, from the <i>Bulletin of Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, U.S.A.</i>) - - -	559
221. Agchylostoma duodenale: Fifth Stage of Development. (After Looss, from the <i>Bulletin of Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, U.S.A.</i>) - - -	559
222. Necator americanus: Anterior Extremity. (After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten') - - -	561
223. Necator americanus: Bursa copulatrix. (After Stiles, from the <i>Bulletin of the Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, U.S.A.</i>) - - -	561
224. Trichuris trichiura. (After Claus) - - -	564
225. Development of the Egg of Trichuris trichiura. (After Stiles, from the <i>Bulletin of the Hygienic Laboratory of the Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, U.S.A.</i>) - - -	564
226. Hirudo multistriata Schmarda: the Common Water-Leech of Ceylon	573
227. Margaropus annulatus var. australis: Dorsal View of the Male	580
228. Dorsal View of the Capitulum of a Tick. (After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, <i>Journal of Parasitology</i>) - - -	581
229. Chelicera of Hæmaphysalis punctata. (After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, <i>Journal of Parasitology</i>) - - -	581
230. Margaropus annulatus var. australis: Distended Female	582
231. Copulation of the Male and Female Tick. (After Sambon)	583
232. A Tick laying Eggs. (After Sambon) - - -	584
233. Larva of Hæmaphysalis punctata. (After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, <i>Journal of Parasitology</i>) - - -	585
234. The Nymph of Hæmaphysalis punctata. (After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, <i>Journal of Parasitology</i>) - - -	585
235. The Adult Female of Hæmaphysalis punctata. (After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, <i>Journal of Parasitology</i>) - - -	585
236. Female of Hæmaphysalis punctata. (After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, <i>Journal of Parasitology</i>) - - -	586
237. Argas persicus: Female, Dorsal Aspect - - -	588
238. Argas persicus: Female, Ventral Aspect - - -	588
239. Ornithodoros moubata: Female, Dorsal Aspect - - -	594
240. Ornithodoros moubata: Female, Ventral Aspect - - -	594
241. Eurhipicephalus pulchellus Gerstäcker: Ventral Aspect - - -	599
242. Dermacentor salmoni: Male, Dorsal Aspect. (After Salmon and Stiles) - - -	603
243. Dermacentor salmoni: Male, Ventral Aspect. (After Salmon and Stiles) - - -	604

FIG.	PAGE
244. <i>Dermacentor salmoni</i> : Replete Female, Dorsal Aspect. (After Salmon and Stiles) - - - - -	604
245. <i>Dermacentor salmoni</i> : Replete Female, Ventral Aspect. (After Salmon and Stiles) - - - - -	605
246. <i>Ixodes pilosus</i> : Ventral Aspect - - - - -	607
247. <i>Aponomma gervaisi</i> : Ventral Aspect - - - - -	608
248. <i>Amblyomma hebraeum</i> : Ventral Aspect - - - - -	609
249. <i>Hyalomma ægyptium</i> : Ventral Aspect - - - - -	610
250. <i>Trombidium akamushi</i> . (After Tanaka, from <i>Centralblatt für Bakteriologie</i>) - - - - -	612
251. <i>Pediculoides ventricosus</i> - - - - -	613
252. <i>Tyroglyphus longior</i> var. <i>Castellani</i> : Dorsal Aspect - - - - -	614
253. <i>Tyroglyphus longior</i> var. <i>Castellani</i> : Ventral Aspect - - - - -	614
254. <i>Sarcoptes scabiei</i> , var. <i>hominis</i> : Female - - - - -	615
255. <i>Sarcoptes scabiei</i> , var. <i>hominis</i> : Male - - - - -	615
256. <i>Demodex folliculorum</i> : Male - - - - -	616
257. <i>Porocephalus armillatus</i> : Male. (After Sambon) - - - - -	619
258. <i>Porocephalus armillatus</i> : Female. (After Sambon) - - - - -	619
259. Lateral Aspect of the Cephalothorax of <i>Porocephalus armillatus</i> . (After Sambon) - - - - -	620
260. Ventral Aspect of the Cephalothorax of <i>Porocephalus armillatus</i> . (After Sambon) - - - - -	620
261. Posterior End of <i>Porocephalus armillatus</i> . (After Sambon) - - - - -	620
262. Nymph of <i>Porocephalus armillatus</i> encysted in the Liver. (After Sambon, from our West African Case) - - - - -	620
263. Ventral Aspect of the Cephalothorax of <i>Porocephalus moniliformis</i> . (After Sambon) - - - - -	621
264. <i>Porocephalus moniliformis</i> . (After Sambon) - - - - -	621
265. <i>Cyclops</i> sp. (?) - - - - -	624
266. <i>Scolopendra</i> sp. (?) - - - - -	625
267. <i>Pediculus humanus</i> : Male - - - - -	632
268. <i>Pediculus humanus</i> : Female - - - - -	632
269. <i>Pediculus corporis</i> : Male - - - - -	633
270. <i>Pediculus corporis</i> : Female - - - - -	633
271. <i>Phthirus pubis</i> - - - - -	634
272. <i>Polyplax spinulosa</i> - - - - -	635
273. <i>Clinocoris lectularius</i> : Male - - - - -	637
274. <i>Clinocoris lectularius</i> : Female - - - - -	637
275. <i>Clinocoris rotundatus</i> : Male - - - - -	639
276. <i>Clinocoris rotundatus</i> : Female - - - - -	639
277. <i>Conorhinus sanguisugus</i> Leconte - - - - -	641
278. <i>Lamus megistus</i> Burmeister - - - - -	642
279. Diagram of Mosquito. (After Theobald, from the 'Culicidæ of the World,' by kind consent of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - - - -	649
280. Transverse Section of the Proboscis of <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> . (After Nuttall and Shipley, from the <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - - - -	650
281. Distal End of the Proboscis of <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> - - - - -	650
282. Occiput and Scutellum of an <i>Anopheles</i> . (After Theobald, from the 'Culicidæ of the World,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - - - -	651
283. Various Forms of Scales found on Different Parts of a Mosquito's Body. (After Theobald, from the 'Culicidæ of the World,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - - - -	652

FIG.	PAGE
284. Lateral View of <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> Meigen. (After Nuttall and Shipley, from the <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - -	653
285. The Alimentary Canal of <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> . (After Nuttall and Shipley, <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - -	655
286. Alimentary Canal of <i>Anopheles maculipennis in situ</i> . (After Nuttall and Shipley, <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - -	656
287. Egg of <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> Meigen. (After Nuttall and Shipley, <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - -	657
288. Larva of <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> . (After Nuttall and Shipley, <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - -	658
289. Larva of an <i>Anopheles</i> lying on the Surface of the Water - - -	659
290. Larva of a Culicine Mosquito. (After Howard) - - -	659
291. Pupa of <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> . (After Nuttall and Shipley, from the <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - -	660
292. <i>Anopheles maculipennis</i> resting. (After Sambon, from the <i>British Medical Journal</i>) - - -	661
293. <i>Anopheles pseudopictus</i> resting. (After Sambon, from the <i>British Medical Journal</i>) - - -	661
294. <i>Culex pipiens</i> resting. (After Sambon) - - -	661
295. Culicine Raft of Eggs - - -	661
296. <i>Girardinus pœciloides</i> de Filippi - - -	663
297. Occiput and Scutellum of a <i>Megarhinus</i> . (After Theobald, from the 'Culicidæ of the World,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - -	664
298. Occiput and Scutellum of a <i>Stegomyia</i> . (After Theobald, from the 'Culicidæ of the World,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - -	672
299. Occiput and Scutellum of a <i>Culex</i> . (After Theobald, from the 'Culicidæ of the World,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - -	674
300. <i>Culex pipiens</i> Linnaeus. (After Austen, from 'Blood-Sucking Flies,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - -	675
301. Occiput and Scutellum of <i>Ædes</i> . (After Theobald, from the 'Culicidæ of the World,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - -	676
302. <i>Culicoides pulicaris</i> . (After Austen, from 'Blood-Sucking Flies,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - -	679
303. <i>Simulium reptans</i> : Female. (After Austen, from 'Blood-Sucking Flies,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - -	685
304. <i>Simulium</i> Larva - - -	686
305. <i>Simulium</i> Pupa - - -	686
306. <i>Tabanus bovinus</i> : Female. (After Austen, from 'Blood-Sucking Flies,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - -	689
307. Antennæ of the <i>Tabanidæ</i> - - -	690
308. Larva of a <i>Tabanus</i> - - -	690
309. Pupa of <i>Tabanus Kingi</i> Austen. (After King, from the Fourth Report of the Wellcome Tropical Research Laboratories, Khartoum) - - -	691
310. <i>Lepidoselaga lepidota</i> Wiedemann - - -	692
311. <i>Hæmatopota vittata</i> Loew - - -	692
312. <i>Chrysops wellmani</i> - - -	695
313. <i>Cadicera chrysostigma</i> - - -	696
314. <i>Pangonia rüppellii</i> Jaennicke: Female - - -	697
315. <i>Hypoderma bovis</i> de Geer - - -	702

FIG.	PAGE
316. Larva of <i>Hypoderma bovis</i> - - - - -	702
317. <i>Æstrus ovis</i> Linnæus - - - - -	703
318. Larva of <i>Æstrus ovis</i> - - - - -	703
319. <i>Gastrophilus equi</i> Fabricius - - - - -	704
320. Larva of <i>Gastrophilus equi</i> - - - - -	704
321. <i>Dermatobia cyaniventris</i> : Female - - - - -	705
322. <i>Dermatobia cyaniventris</i> : Young Larva. (After R. Blanchard) -	705
323. Older Larva of <i>Dermatobia cyaniventris</i> - - - - -	705
324. <i>Sarcophaga carnaria</i> Linnæus - - - - -	707
325. Larva of <i>Sarcophaga carnaria</i> - - - - -	707
326. <i>Stomoxys calcitrans</i> : Female. (After Austen, from 'Blood-Sucking Flies,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum)	711
327. Head of <i>Stomoxys calcitrans</i> - - - - -	712
328. <i>Glossina palpalis</i> . (After Austen, from a 'Monograph of Tsetse- Flies,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum)	714
329. Head of a <i>Glossina</i> : Proboscis being Lowered - - - - -	715
330. Head of a <i>Glossina</i> : Proboscis Lowered - - - - -	715
331. Diagrams of a Tsetse-Fly. (After Austen, from a 'Monograph of Tsetse-Flies,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - - - -	716
332. Antenna of a <i>Glossina</i> , showing the Arista. (After Austen, from a 'Monograph on Tsetse-Flies,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - - - -	717
333. Anatomy of Tsetse-Fly. (After Minchin, from <i>Reports of the Royal Society</i>) - - - - -	718
334. A <i>Glossina</i> in the Act of giving Birth to a Larva (modified). (After Newstead, from <i>Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology</i>) -	719
335. Pupa of a Tsetse-Fly. (After Austen, from a 'Monograph on Tse- tse-Flies,' by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) - - - - -	719
336. <i>Musca domestica</i> Linnæus - - - - -	723
337. Head of <i>Musca domestica</i> . (After C. J. Martin) - - - - -	724
338. Leg of <i>Musca domestica</i> . (After C. J. Martin) - - - - -	724
339. Anatomy of <i>Musca domestica</i> . (After C. J. Martin) - - - - -	725
340. Eggs, Larva, and Pupa of <i>Musca domestica</i> . (After C. J. Martin) -	726
341. <i>Chrysomya macellaria</i> : Female - - - - -	729
342. <i>Chrysomya macellaria</i> : Larva - - - - -	729
343. <i>Cordylobia anthropophaga</i> : Female - - - - -	731
344. <i>Cordylobia anthropophaga</i> : Larva - - - - -	731
345. <i>Auchmeromyia luteola</i> : Female - - - - -	732
346. <i>Auchmeromyia luteola</i> : Larva - - - - -	733
347. <i>Fannia canicularis</i> Linnæus - - - - -	734
348. Larva of <i>Fannia canicularis</i> Linnæus - - - - -	734
349. <i>Penicillida dufouri</i> Westwood - - - - -	735
350. <i>Nycteribia</i> sp. (?) - - - - -	736
351. <i>Hippobosca rufipes</i> von Olfers - - - - -	736
352. Larva and Pupa of <i>Hippobosca rufipes</i> - - - - -	737
353. Head of <i>Hippobosca rufipes</i> - - - - -	737
354. <i>Xenopsylla cheopsis</i> . (After Jordan and Rothschild, <i>Journal of Hygiene</i>) - - - - -	740
355. Anatomy of a Flea. (From <i>Journal of Hygiene</i> , 1906) - - - - -	741
356. <i>Dermatophilus penetrans</i> : Male - - - - -	744
357. <i>Dermatophilus penetrans</i> : Female - - - - -	744

FIG.		PAGE
358.	<i>Dermatophilus penetrans</i> : Pregnant Female - - -	745
359.	<i>Dermatophilus penetrans</i> . (After Newstead, from <i>Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology</i>) - - -	745
360.	<i>Ctenocephalus felis</i> Bouché - - -	746
361.	<i>Pulex irritans</i> : Male - - -	751
362.	<i>Pulex irritans</i> : Female - - -	751
363.	Head of <i>Epimys rattus</i> . (After Hossack, from the Publications of the Indian Museum) - - -	754
364.	Head of <i>Epimys norvegicus</i> . (After Hossack, from the Publications of the Indian Museum) - - -	754
365.	<i>Mucor mucedo</i> - - -	762
366.	<i>Mucor pusillus</i> . (After Lindt) - - -	762
367.	<i>Lichtheimia corymbifera</i> . (After Lichtheim) - - -	763
368.	<i>Rhizomucor parasiticus</i> . (After Lucet and Costantin) - - -	763
369.	<i>Rhizomucor septatus</i> . (After Siebenmann) - - -	764
370.	<i>Rhizopus niger</i> . (After Ciaglinski) - - -	764
371.	<i>Endomyces vuillemini</i> . (After Vuillemin) - - -	767
372.	Colonies of <i>Saccharomyces blanchardi</i> Guart. (After Blanchard, Schwartz, and Binot, from Brumpt) - - -	769
373.	<i>Saccharomyces anginae</i> . (After Trosier and Achalme) - - -	769
374.	<i>Cryptococcus gilchristi</i> . (After Gilchrist) - - -	770
375.	<i>Cryptococcus linguae pilosae</i> . (After Lucet, from Brumpt) - - -	770
376.	<i>Microsporon audouini</i> . (After Bodin) - - -	775
377.	<i>Microsporon audouini</i> . (From cultures) - - -	775
378.	<i>Trichophyton</i> . (After Bodin) - - -	779
379.	Fructifications - - -	779
380.	<i>Trichophyton</i> : Spiral Bodies - - -	779
381.	<i>Trichophyton tonsurans</i> . (After Sabouraud) - - -	781
382.	<i>Trichophyton macfadyeni</i> - - -	787
383.	Yellow Bodies in Cultures of <i>Achorion schoenleini</i> . (After Bodin) - - -	791
384.	Claviform Bodies in Cultures of <i>Achorion schoenleini</i> . (After Bodin) - - -	791
385.	<i>Endodermophyton concentricum</i> : Glucose-Agar Culture - - -	794
386.	<i>Endodermophyton concentricum</i> : Old Glucose-Agar Culture - - -	794
387.	<i>Endodermophyton concentricum</i> : Agar Culture - - -	795
388.	<i>Endodermophyton concentricum</i> : Maltose-Agar Culture - - -	795
389.	Experimental <i>Tinea imbricata</i> - - -	796
390.	<i>Endodermophyton indicum</i> : Hanging-Drop Culture - - -	796
391.	<i>Endodermophyton indicum</i> : Agar Culture - - -	798
392.	<i>Endodermophyton indicum</i> : Glucose-Agar Culture - - -	798
393.	<i>Endodermophyton indicum</i> in the Scales - - -	798
394.	<i>Endodermophyton castellanii</i> Perry - - -	799
395.	Fructifications of the <i>Perisporiaceae</i> . (After Brumpt) - - -	801
396.	<i>Penicillium brevicaulis</i> var. <i>hominis</i> . (After Brumpt) - - -	802
397.	<i>Penicillium brevicaulis</i> var. <i>hominis</i> . (After Brumpt) - - -	802
398.	<i>Aspergillus</i> fructification. (After Brumpt) - - -	802
399.	<i>Aspergillus fumigatus</i> Fresenius - - -	803
400.	<i>Aspergillus bronchialis</i> . (After Blumentritt) - - -	803
401.	<i>Aspergillus malignus</i> . (After Lindt) - - -	804
402.	<i>Aspergillus repens</i> . (After Siebenmann) - - -	804
403.	<i>Aspergillus pictor</i> . (After Montoya y Florez) - - -	805
404.	<i>Sterigmatocystis</i> fructification. (After Brumpt) - - -	806
405.	<i>Sterigmatocystis nidulans</i> . (After Eidam, from Brumpt) - - -	806
406.	<i>Madurella mycetomi</i> . (After Brumpt) - - -	808

FIG.		PAGE
407.	<i>Indiella reynieri</i> . (After Brumpt)	808
408.	<i>Nocardia pulmonalis</i> . (After Roger and Sartory)	818
409.	<i>Nocardia buccalis</i> . (After Roger and Sartory)	818
410.	<i>Nocardia minutissima</i>	820
411.	<i>Nocardia tenuis</i>	820
412.	<i>Monilia albicans</i>	824
413.	<i>Monilia tropicalis</i>	825
414.	<i>Monilia rugosa</i>	827
415.	<i>Monilia rhoi</i>	828
416.	<i>Monilia montoyai</i> . (After Montoya y Florez)	830
417.	<i>Sporotrichum beurmanni</i> . (After Gougerot)	832
418.	<i>Sporotrichum asteroides</i> . (After Splendore)	833
419.	<i>Sporotrichum asteroides</i> in Cultures. (After Splendore)	833
420.	<i>Trichosporum</i> . (After Vuillemin)	834
421.	Transverse Section through a Piedra Nodule	834
422.	Hairs affected with Trichosporosis. (After Vuillemin)	835
423.	<i>Pityrosporum ovale</i> . (After Sabouraud)	836
424.	<i>Pityrosporum ovale</i> . (After Sabouraud)	836
425.	<i>Malassezia tropica</i>	838
426.	<i>Cladosporium mansonii</i>	838
427.	<i>Cladosporium mansonii</i>	839
428.	<i>Cladosporium mansonii</i> : Hanging-Drop Culture	839
429.	<i>Cladosporium mansonii</i> : Young Agar Culture	840
430.	<i>Hemispora stellata</i> . (After Vuillemin)	840
431.	<i>Enantiohammus</i> . (After Brault and Pinoy)	841
432.	<i>Scropulariopsis blochi</i> . (After Vuillemin)	841
433.	<i>Acremonium potronii</i> . (After Vuillemin)	842
434.	<i>Monosporium apiospermum</i> . (After Radaeli)	842
435.	Diagram of a Temperature Chart in Simple Tertian Malarial Fever	850
436.	<i>Laverania malariae</i> in Red Corpuscles blocking a Brain Capillary	851
437.	Diagram of a Temperature Chart in Double Tertian Malarial Fever	852
438.	Blood-Film showing Schizont of <i>Plasmodium malariae</i> . (From a microphotograph by J. J. Bell)	865
439.	Blood-Film showing <i>Laverania malariae</i> . (From a microphotograph by J. J. Bell)	865
440.	Temperature Chart of a Case of Simple Quartan Malarial Fever	874
441.	Chart of a Case of Double Tertian Malarial Fever	878
442.	Chart of a Case of Subtertian Malarial Fever	880
443.	<i>Spiroschaudinnia</i> from a Case of Asiatic Relapsing Fever. (From a Microphotograph by J. J. Bell)	932
444.	Indian Kala-Azar	955
445.	<i>Leishmania infantum</i> . (After Marzinowsky)	959
446.	Infantile Kala-Azar. (After Marzinowsky)	959
447.	<i>Trypanosoma gambiense</i> : Preparation from the Cerebro-Spinal Fluid	970
448.	Negro Patient in the Early Stage of Sleeping Sickness	974
449.	Negro Patient in the Late Stage of Sleeping Sickness	975
450.	Temperature Chart of a Case of Sleeping Sickness. (From Low and Castellani Reports of the Royal Society on Sleeping Sickness)	977
451.	Neuroglia Cell filled with <i>Trypanosoma cruzi</i> . (After Vianna, from <i>Memorias do Instituto Oswaldo Cruz</i>)	988

FIG.	PAGE
452. Neuroglia Cell filled with <i>Trypanosoma cruzi</i> . (After Vianna, from <i>Memorias do Instituto Oswaldo Cruz</i>) - - -	988
453. Temperature Chart of a Case of Seven Days' Fever - - -	1002
454. Temperature Chart of a Case of Seven Days' Fever - - -	1002
455. Curves illustrating Number of Flies and Cases of Enteric Fever. (After C. J. Martin) - - - - -	1052
456. Temperature Chart of the Intermittent Type of Enteric Fever - - -	1066
457. Bodies found in a Case of Hyperpyrexial Fever - - -	1087
458. Temperature Chart of Low Intermittent Non-Malarial Fever - - -	1088
459. Portion of Temperature Chart of a Case of <i>Bacillus asiaticus</i> No. 2 Fever - - - - -	1092
460. Temperature Chart of Rat-Bite Fever - - - - -	1100
461. Temperature Chart of Rat-Bite Fever - - - - -	1100
462. Alastrim. (After Ribas) - - - - -	1109
463. <i>Schistosoma japonicum</i> . (After Manson, by kind permission of Messrs. Cassell and Co.) - - - - -	1117
464. Egg of <i>Schistosoma japonicum</i> . (From a Microphotograph by J. J. Bell) - - - - -	1119
465. <i>Porocephalus armillatus</i> encysted in Liver. (After Sambon, from our West African case) - - - - -	1121
466. Temperature Chart of a Case of Elephantiasis of the Leg during an attack of Filarial Fever - - - - -	1132
467. Filarial Lymphangiectasis - - - - -	1133
468. Filarial Lymphangiectasis - - - - -	1134
469. Filarial Phlebectasis - - - - -	1135
470. Filarial Phlebectasis - - - - -	1135
471. Elephantiasis of the Legs - - - - -	1139
472. Elephantiasis of the Legs - - - - -	1140
473. Elephantiasis of the Leg before Treatment - - - - -	1141
474. Elephantiasis of the Leg after Treatment - - - - -	1142
475. Elephantiasis of the Scrotum - - - - -	1143
476. Elephantiasis of the Labium - - - - -	1145
477. Leprosy, showing the Erysipelatous-like Eruption on the Arms and Face - - - - -	1158
478. Typical Tubercular Leprosy - - - - -	1159
479. Diffuse Infiltration of both Corneas and Deformities in the Fingers of the Right Hand in Leprosy - - - - -	1160
480. Leproma of the Tongue - - - - -	1161
481. Maculo-Anæsthetic Leprosy - - - - -	1163
482. Maculo-Anæsthetic Leprosy - - - - -	1164
483. Leprosy: Ulcer of the Foot - - - - -	1165
484. Monkey inoculated with Frambœsia - - - - -	1174
485. Frambœsia: Primary Stage - - - - -	1176
486. Child and Mother with Frambœsia - - - - -	1177
487. Frambœsia: General Eruption - - - - -	1179
488. Frambœsia: Secondary Stage, General Eruption - - - - -	1180
489. Frambœsia: Secondary Stage, General Eruption - - - - -	1181
490. Frambœsia: Secondary Stage, General Eruption - - - - -	1182
491. Frambœsia: Eruption of the Hands - - - - -	1182
492. Frambœsia: Circinate Eruption - - - - -	1183
493. Frambœsia: Granulomata on the Feet - - - - -	1183
494. Frambœsia: Pitted Appearance of the Hands - - - - -	1184
495. Frambœsia: Dactylitis - - - - -	1185

FIG.		PAGE
496.	Frambœsia : Pseudo-Mycetoma - - - - -	1187
497.	Frambœsia : Tertiary Stage - - - - -	1188
498.	Frambœsia : Tertiary Stage - - - - -	1189
499.	Verruga peruviana. (After Biffi, from <i>Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene</i>) - - - - -	1204
500.	Verruga peruviana. (After Biffi, from <i>Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene</i>) - - - - -	1206
501.	Beri-Beri : Dropsical or Hypertrophic Form - - - - -	1220
502.	Beri-Beri : Dry or Atrophic Form - - - - -	1220
503.	Mal de la Rosa. (After Casal) - - - - -	1231
504.	Admissions of Pellagra Cases into the Kasr-el-Ainy Hospital. (Specially prepared by Keating and Stiven) - - - - -	1238
505.	Cells of Clarke's Column in Pellagra. (After Sambon and Chalmers) - - - - -	1251
506.	Acute Exacerbation of Pellagra. (From a Photograph by Terni) - - - - -	1252
507.	Hand in Chronic Pellagra. (From a Photograph by Sambon and Chalmers) - - - - -	1254
508.	Hand in Chronic Pellagra. (From a Photograph by Sambon and Chalmers) - - - - -	1255
509.	Section of Nasal Polypus showing Rhinosporidium sebeci - - - - -	1268
510.	Rhinosporidium sebeci - - - - -	1269
511.	Rhinosporidium sebeci - - - - -	1270
512.	Gangosa. (From a Photograph by Arnold) - - - - -	1277
513.	Larva of Chrysomya macellaria. (After Blanchard) - - - - -	1282
514.	Fungus from a Case of Bronchomycosis - - - - -	1285
515.	Sputum in Bronchomoniliasis - - - - -	1286
516.	Ova of Intestinal Worms as seen in Fæces. (After various Authors, <i>vide</i> p. 1296; and also from Ward, in 'Studies from the Zoological Laboratory, the University of Nebraska,' No. 55) - - - - -	1297
517.	Gastrodiscus hominus. (After Leuckart) - - - - -	1298
518.	Fæcal Eggs of Tænia solium. (From a Microphotograph by J. J. Bell) - - - - -	1298
519.	Tænia saginata. (After Braun, by permission of Messrs. Bale, Sons, and Danielsson) - - - - -	1299
520.	Tænia africana. (After von Linstow, from <i>Archiv für Bakteriologie</i>) - - - - -	1299
521.	Tænia africana. (After von Linstow, from <i>Archiv für Bakteriologie</i>) - - - - -	1299
522.	Dibothriocephalus latus. (After Braun, by kind permission of Messrs. Bale, Sons, and Danielsson) - - - - -	1300
523.	Dipylidium caninum. (After Diamare) - - - - -	1300
524.	Trichuris trichiura. (From a Microphotograph by J. J. Bell) - - - - -	1301
525.	Necator americanus. (Natural Size) - - - - -	1305
526.	Case of Agchylostomiasis - - - - -	1306
527.	Temperature Chart of a Case of Agchylostomiasis Fever - - - - -	1310
528.	A Cheap and Easily Constructed Incinerator - - - - -	1314
529.	Another Cheap and Easily Constructed Incinerator - - - - -	1315
530.	The Colon in a Case of Amœbic Dysentery - - - - -	1366
531.	Temperature Chart of a Case of Amœbic Dysentery complicated by Hepatitis - - - - -	1368
532.	The Colon in a Case of Bacillary Dysentery - - - - -	1384
533.	Intestinal Schistosomiasis : Polypoid Growths in Descending Colon. (After Symmers) - - - - -	1399

FIG.		PAGE
534.	Liver in Intestinal Schistosomiasis. (After Symmers)	1400
535.	Amœbic Abscess of the Liver	1408
536.	Temperature Chart of a Case of Abscess of the Liver	1409
537.	Opisthorchis felinus. (After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten')	1414
538.	Goitre in a Sinhalese Woman	1419
539.	Ischiopagus tripus	1427
540.	Syncephalus, or Janus	1428
541.	Endemic funiculitis : Longitudinal Section of the Cord	1429
542.	Endemic funiculitis : Transverse Section of the Cord	1429
543.	Endemic funiculitis : Microscopical Section of the Cord	1431
544.	Endemic funiculitis in a Sinhalese Man	1432
545.	Transverse Section of a Tumour containing Onchocera volvulus. (After Fülleborn)	1438
546.	Goundou in a Native of the Gold Coast	1445
547.	Pyosis mansonii : Axilla	1461
548.	Pyosis mansonii : Axilla more magnified	1462
549.	Pyosis tropica	1463
550.	Purulent Folliculitis of the Legs and Thighs	1465
551.	Dhobie Itch of the Cruro-Inguinal Regions	1476
552.	Dhobie Itch of the Axillary Regions	1477
553.	Dhobie Itch of the Axillary Region	1478
554.	Fungus of Tinea alba : Tr. macfadyeni Castellani	1480
555.	Tinea alba	1481
556.	Tinea albigena	1482
557.	Tinea capitis due to Tr. violaceum v. decalvans	1484
558.	Tinea imbricata	1487
559.	Tinea imbricata	1488
560.	Tinea imbricata	1488
561.	Fungus in the Scales	1489
562.	Tinea imbricata	1489
563.	Tinea imbricata	1490
564.	Tinea imbricata	1490
565.	Tinea imbricata of the Forearm (old case)	1491
566.	Tinea imbricata	1492
567.	Experimental Tinea imbricata : Endodermophyton concentricum	1493
568.	Experimental Tinea imbricata : Endodermophyton indicum	1494
569.	Fungus of Tinea intersecta	1496
570.	Fungus of Tinea flava	1497
571.	Tinea flava on the Face of a Sinhalese	1498
572.	Tinea flava on the Back	1499
573.	Tinea flava of the Arm	1499
574.	Tinea flava : Variety Guttata	1500
575.	Tinea flava on the Back of a European	1501
576.	Fungus of Tinea nigra	1502
577.	Blastomycosis of the Leg	1505
578.	Blastomycosis of the Upper Lip : Ulcerative Stage	1506
579.	Blastomycosis of the Mouth	1506
580.	Blastomycotic Ulcer	1507
581.	Blastomycosis glutealis	1507
582.	Sporotrichic Lymphangitis	1510
583.	Penicillium Fructification	1512
584.	Transverse Section through a Piedra Nodule	1520

FIG.		PAGE
585.	Piedra - - - - -	1520
586.	Trichomycosis axillaris flava - - - - -	1523
587.	Trichomycosis axillaris nigra - - - - -	1523
588.	Mycetoma - - - - -	1532
589.	Pseudo-Mycetoma of Frambœsial Origin - - - - -	1535
590.	Juxta-articular Nodules - - - - -	1538
591.	Juxta-articular Nodules - - - - -	1538
592.	Oriental Sore - - - - -	1552
593.	Oriental Sore in a Persian Soldier. (From a photograph by Drs. A. Bassière and Nattan-Larrier) - - - - -	1553
594.	Espundia. (After Splendore) - - - - -	1557
595.	Espundia. (After Splendore) - - - - -	1558
596.	Ulcus tropicum : Typical - - - - -	1563
597.	Ulcus tropicum : Early Stage - - - - -	1564
598.	Ulcus tropicum - - - - -	1565
599.	Ulcus tropicum, with Cornu cutaneum - - - - -	1566
600.	Ulcus infantum - - - - -	1568
601.	Granuloma inguinale - - - - -	1572
602.	Dermatitis macrogyrata - - - - -	1584
603.	Dermatophiliasis. (After Newstead, from the <i>Journal of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology</i>) - - - - -	1585
604.	Rhizopus parasiticus. (After Dalgetty, from the <i>Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene</i>) - - - - -	1588
605.	Tyroglyphus of Copra Itch - - - - -	1589
606.	Craw-Craw - - - - -	1594
607.	Dermatitis nodosa rubra - - - - -	1595
608.	Dermatitis nodosa rubra - - - - -	1596
609.	Lichen convex - - - - -	1597
610.	Keratoma plantare sulcatum - - - - -	1600
611.	Leucoderma in a Sinhalese Woman - - - - -	1609
612.	Leucoderma of the Hands and Arms - - - - -	1609
613.	Leucoderma in a Sinhalese Man - - - - -	1610
614.	Tattooing - - - - -	1617
615.	Ainhum - - - - -	1619
616.	Acrodermatitis vesiculosa tropica - - - - -	1622
617.	Septic Pemphigus - - - - -	1628
618.	Psoriasis - - - - -	1629
619.	Psoriasis in a Sinhalese - - - - -	1630
620.	Dermatitis exfoliativa in a Sinhalese - - - - -	1630
621.	Cheloids - - - - -	1633
622.	Fibroma molluscum in a Sinhalese - - - - -	1633
623.	Fibroma molluscum (larger variety) - - - - -	1634
624.	Fibroma molluscum (larger variety) - - - - -	1634
625.	Lupus vulgaris in a Sinhalese - - - - -	1635
626.	Papulo-squamous Syphilide - - - - -	1636
627.	Ulcer (Tertiary Syphilis) - - - - -	1637
628.	Ichthyosis in a Sinhalese - - - - -	1637
629.	Ichthyosis - - - - -	1638
630.	Biotripsis in an old Sinhalese Man - - - - -	1639

LIST OF COLOURED PLATES

	TO FACE PAGE
I. Malarial Parasites - - - - -	386
II. Anopheles maculipennis Meigen : Male - - - - -	650
III. Anopheles maculipennis Meigen : Female. (After Austen, by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum) -	650
IV. Stegomyia calopus Meigen - - - - -	672
V. Cultures of Some Tropical Fungi - - - - -	758
VI. Frambœsia tropica : General Eruption - - - - -	1180
VII. Tinea cruris - - - - -	1476
VIII. Tinea nigro-circinata - - - - -	1483
IX. Tinea imbricata - - - - -	1492
X. Tinea intersecta (Forearm) - - - - -	1496
XI. Tinea flava on the Face and Tinea nigra on the Neck -	1502
XII. Mycetoma - - - - -	1532
XIII. Dermatitis nodosa rubra - - - - -	1595
XIV. Chloasma bronzinum - - - - -	1613
XV. Xanthoderma areatum - - - - -	1614

PART 1
INTRODUCTORY



CHAPTER I

ERRATA.

- Page vii, in Preface *et seq.*, for "Keating" read "Keatinge."
,, 23, line 16 from the bottom, for "Da Orta, W. G." read "W. G." only.
,, 27, line 25 from the top, for "Haeser" read "Hirsch."
,, 50, last line, for "Gubbi" read "Gabbi."
,, 256, last two paragraphs of nomenclature, for "Löshia," "löshial," and "Löshiasis" read "Löschia," "löschial," and "Löschiasis."
,, 311, line 11 from the bottom, for "Ranke" read "Ranken."
,, 321, line 23 from the top, for "type genus" read "type species."
,, 332, lines 9 and 11 from the top, for "mesozoite" read "merozoite."
,, 403, line 3 from the bottom, for "granules spreading" read "granule shedding."
,, 424, line 10 from the bottom, for "louse" read "mite."
,, 442, Prowazek in the heading Chlamydozoa Prowazek should be in roman type.
,, 626, delete the words "the last tarsal joint is" under the heading Tyroglyphidæ.
,, 1281, line 16 from the top, for "Æstris" read "Æstrus."
,, 1300, heading of second paragraph *et seq.*, for "Daraineasis" read "Davaineasis."

INDEX.

- ,, 1692, reference for "Leishmaniasis, Indian oro-pharyngeal" should be page "1559."
,, 1710, references for "Rhinosporidiosis" should be pages "1268, 1273."
,, 1719, omit reference to page "979" in "Trichomonas vaginalis."
,, 1729, reference for "Chamberlain, Joseph" should be only page "21."
,, 1729, insert "Chamberlain (Philippine Islands), 89, 101, 1055, 1213, 1225."

Another means of prognosis of great importance is the horoscope, which is generally made for the child soon after birth, and is written on a palm-leaf. From it the influence of the planets with regard to good or evil on the individual

ERRATA.

- Page vii, in Preface *et seq.*, for "Keating" read "Keatinge."
- .. 23, line 16 from the bottom, for "Da Orta, W. G." read "W. G." only.
- .. 27, line 25 from the top, for "Haeser" read "Hirsch."
- .. 50, last line, for "Gubbi" read "Gabbi."
- .. 256, last two paragraphs of nomenclature, for "Löshia," "löshial," and "Löshiasis" read "Löschia," "löschial," and "Löschiasis."
- .. 311, line 11 from the bottom, for "Ranke" read "Ranken."
- .. 321, line 23 from the top, for "type genus" read "type species."
- .. 332, lines 9 and 11 from the top, for "mesozoite" read "merozoite."
- .. 403, line 3 from the bottom, for "granules spreading" read "granule shedding."
- .. 424, line 10 from the bottom, for "louse" read "mite."
- .. 442, Prowazek in the heading Chlamydozoa Prowazek should be in roman type.
- .. 626, delete the words "the last tarsal joint is" under the heading Tyroglyphidæ.
- .. 1281, line 16 from the top, for "Æstris" read "Æstrus."
- .. 1300, heading of second paragraph *et seq.*, for "Daraineasis" read "Davaineasis."

INDEX.

- .. 1692, reference for "Leishmaniasis, Indian oro-pharyngeal" should be page "1559."
- .. 1710, references for "Rhinosporidiosis" should be pages "1268, 1273."
- .. 1719, omit reference to page "979" in "Trichomonas vaginalis."
- .. 1729, reference for "Chamberlain, Joseph" should be only page "21."
- .. 1729, insert "Chamberlain (Philippine Islands), 89, 101, 1055, 1213, 1225."



CHAPTER I

THE HISTORY OF TROPICAL MEDICINE

Primitive knowledge—Accadia—China—Japan—America—Foundations of medicine—Indian medicine—Egyptian medicine—Jewish medicine—Grecian medicine—Alexandrian medicine—Græco-Roman medicine—Arabian medicine—Modern medicine—Discovery of cinchona-bark—Beginnings of modern tropical medicine—Helminthology—The microscope—Bacteriology—Parasitic protozoa—Insects and disease—Poisons—Physical conditions—Clinical medicine, surgery, hygiene, etc.—Unknown diseases—Cosmopolitan diseases—Schools of tropical medicine—Modern journals—Special works on tropical medicine—References.

Primitive Knowledge.—Primitive peoples from the earliest times had some knowledge of medicine, but they did not understand the phenomena of disease, which they attributed to supernatural causes, generally to evil or offended spirits. Hence, in order to cure their ailments, it was natural that they should seek to propitiate these spirits; and accordingly we find that the medicine of primitive peoples was part of their religion, and was administered by their witch-doctors, fetishmen, and priests.

This primitive condition is still met with in many parts of the tropical world. Thus, on approaching a West African village, little images will be found on the roadside with offerings, which are often to make 'ju-ju' against some disease—*e.g.*, smallpox—which, in the guise of a malignant spirit, might otherwise enter the village.

Among native peoples will be found many curious medical, surgical, and obstetrical practices which are very interesting.

In Ceylon the superstitions are quite as elaborate as in West Africa, if not more so. Pestilences are considered to be punishments on the people for wickedness, and to be brought about by the conjunction of Saturn and Jupiter, or Saturn and Mars in Sagittarius.

Every illness is supposed to be due to a demon or to the 'evil eye,' and it is dangerous for a sick person to come in contact with an unclean person—the word 'unclean' being used in the Biblical sense—who is supposed to convey to the sick man a 'killa'—that is to say, a something which increases the severity of the illness. When a person is ill, every trivial incident becomes of importance, and is discussed seriously to discover whether it is a good or bad omen.

Another means of prognosis of great importance is the horoscope, which is generally made for the child soon after birth, and is written on a palm-leaf. From it the influence of the planets with regard to good or evil on the individual

can be calculated. If the influences of the planets are unfavourable, something can be done by propitiatory means. In times of pestilences, when the planets are contrary, the goddess Pattini can still intervene and avert the epidemic if proper devotion is paid to her.

Charms are used to drive out the evil spirit, or devil-dancing to shame or terrify him so that he may leave the body. Once out, amulets are used to prevent his re-entry, and 'pirit,' or the repetition of meritorious verses by priests, is also adopted.

Before any medicine can be administered, the position of the 'kalawa,' or vital spot, must be ascertained. This spot moves all over the body in regular succession, occurring in different parts in different phases of the moon. Its position must be correctly calculated, and it will then be seen whether it is safe or otherwise to administer certain drugs. Another important matter is the constitution of the individual, whether it is inclined to be inflammatory or not, and the person must be dieted so as to counteract the baneful effects of the constitution.

During pregnancy care is taken with the diet and to avoid unpleasant maternal impressions, and many curious suppositions are connected with child-birth, such as passing the woman's body through a hoop in order to bring about an easy labour. Great fear is felt lest the severed cord should be drawn up into the uterus, and much good luck is associated with birth in a caul, or even with its possession.

Native peoples have generally a good knowledge of medical and poisonous plants growing in their vicinity, and it is well for the medical man living in the tropics to remember that cinchona-bark was originally simply a native Ecuador remedy, and that, therefore, it is not advisable to entirely despise popular drugs.

The earliest medicine, like that of certain races at the present time, was largely religious or theurgic, and this is well exemplified by the medicine in Akkad (Accadia).

Accadia.—Excluding Egypt, the earliest civilizations with which we are acquainted are in the neighbourhood of Mesopotamia, where the Sumerians, or peoples of the plain, lived on the banks of the great rivers, and the Accadians, or peoples of the hills, on the mountains to the east of that region.

The latter evolved some knowledge of the arts and sciences, including astronomy, but their medicine was of a very primitive order, being a mixture of demonology, magic, and astrology. Their priests were the physicians, who attempted to cure disease by exorcisms, and philtres or drinks, into which, it is believed, they placed the few medicines with which they were acquainted. Their religion was very similar to the Shamanism (*vide* Chapter LXI.) of the Siberian and Samoyed tribes of to-day, and their language for long remained the secret language of the exorcisms and charms of Babylonia, Chaldea, and Assyria, while many of the practices of the Ancient Jews may be traced to the same source. The Chaldeans had two dread diseases—Nantar, the plague, and Idpa, the fever—and three kinds of doctors—Khartumin, or conjurers; Chakamin, or physicians; and Asaphin, or theosophists.

China.—Accadian demonology, magic, and astrology are probably the foundations of Chinese medicine, as the Chinese are believed to be of Accadian origin, and their religion is as full of magic as that of the ancient Chaldeans, while their Buddhism has, in certain

instances, degenerated into Shamanism, which is simply magic and sorcery. Nor is their medicine much better, as diseases are held to be caused by demons, and to be sent as punishments for the sins of a previous existence, while the evil eye here, as everywhere, is considered a fertile source of harm. Under these circumstances it is not surprising that the principal feature of the treatment of disease is by magic and invocation of special gods—*e.g.*, of that of smallpox. And the best preventive measure is the charm or amulet, which may be supposed to work in one of the following ways: either to give the person confidence, or to act as a double, so that the demon, seeing the amulet, may mistake it for the part of the body which he intended to attack, and thus waste his spleen on an inanimate object; or as similars.

Associated with these primitive ideas there are signs that attempts to advance the knowledge of medicine have been made from time to time. For example, there is a catalogue of herbs said to date as far back as about 3000 B.C. (variously stated 3216-2699 B.C.), and attributed to the Emperor Chin-nong, and a work on medicine called "Nuy-kin," or "Nuei-King," is said to have been written by Huang-ti in 2637 B.C., while the god of medicine, Jöh Uong Chû Sü, is believed to have been a celebrated physician. With regard to surgery, there is the god I-Kuang-Tai-Uông, who is said to have been a distinguished surgeon, and to have come from the Loochoo Islands. The important works on Ancient Chinese medicine are:—E-tsung-king-kass or Imperial Book; Chag-Sang, "On Long Life"; Pim-tsaon, "On Botany"; and Ching-che-chum-ching, "On Medical Practice," in forty volumes dealing with nosology, pharmacology, pathology, surgery, and diseases of women and children. A Chinese herbal was produced under the Mings during the period A.D. 1370-1650, but the *materia medica* of the Chinese is a mixture of useful drugs and gruesome matters. Among the latter may be mentioned the broth made from flesh taken from living people, and the use of eyes and vital parts taken from corpses. These last appear to play an important part in the false accusations often made against foreigners who, the Chinese believe or believed, enticed people into secret places in order to kill them for the sake of these valuable medicines. Dissection has been much neglected by the Chinese, with the result that their knowledge of the human body is extremely erroneous.

A serious attempt was made by some Jesuits during the reign of Kang-hy, who died in 1722, to improve the condition of medicine, but unfortunately it was not successful, and these daring men were banished during the next reign. Too high praise cannot be given to the medical missionaries of various countries, who, in the face of much danger, have introduced modern medicine and surgery into China, nor to the medical men, merchants, and authorities who founded the Hong-Kong Medical School, now the Hong-Kong University, which should bring forth a changed condition of medicine in China in the near future.

Japan.—Chinese medicine was introduced into Japan about 218 B.C., and remained paramount until the introduction of modern medicine and surgery, which quickly attained a high degree of perfection.

America.—Medicine was found to be in a very primitive condition among the North American Indians, but appears to have advanced considerably among the Aztecs of Mexico and the Incas of Peru, although very little is now known of the condition of knowledge among these peoples, because the Spaniards destroyed all the records they could obtain. It appears that there were public hospitals in Mexico, surgeons for the armies, and a knowledge of circumcision, venesection, medicines, and chemistry. The advent of the Spaniards, while destroying our sources of history, brought America once for all under European influence, and the history of medicine therein forms part of the general advance of medical knowledge.

Foundations of Medicine.—Two races, however, appear to have advanced far beyond this elementary stage, and to have laid the foundation upon which modern medicine has been built. These two races are the peoples of India and Egypt.

Indian Medicine.—In India there are signs of the existence of peoples among whom at a very early period a better race from the north-west forced its way. This race is often spoken of as the Aryan stock. Its earliest literature appears to have been in the form of songs or hymns, and these were collected into what is called the *Rîg-Veda*.

Later, three more books, called *Samaveda*, *Ayurveda*, and *Atharvaveda*, were added, forming the Four Vedas. The word 'Veda' is said to be derived from the same root as the Latin *videre*, to see. The Vedas were said to be divinely inspired, and therefore to represent the wisdom of God.

The *Ayurveda*, or medical works, were believed to have originated directly from Brahma, who communicated them to Dacsha, the Prajapati, his son, by whom they were passed to the Acwins, or sons of the sun, Surya, who in their turn gave them to Indra. Indra taught Bhāradwāja, a learned sage, who is said to be the author of the twelfth hymn of the tenth book of the *Atharvaveda*, which belongs to the primitive age of the priest-physician.

Bhāradwāja taught Atreya, who may, perhaps, be called the first physician of India, as he taught medicine in Taxila somewhere about the sixth century B.C. Six of Ātreya's pupils wrote compendia of his teachings, of which only a single manuscript by Bheḷa (or Bheḍa) and a work by Agniveśa exist. This latter has, however, been edited by Charaka of Kashmir, who left it unfinished when he died, possibly in the second century A.D. This unfinished work was revised and completed by another Kashmir physician (Dṛiḍhabala), who used also the works of Vāgbhaṭa and Mādhava. The book so compounded is the celebrated *Charaka-Saṁhitā* (compendium), so well known in India to-day, and refers principally to medical matters.

Surgery, according to Indian mythology, descended from Indra to Dhanvantari, a teacher in the legendary school of Benares. His pupil, Suśruta, who appears to have been a contemporary with Agniveśa, wrote a compendium dealing mainly with surgical matters. The medical chapters were added about the second century A.D. by an unknown writer, the result being the Suśruta Saṁhitā as known to-day. Suśruta ascribes fevers to bites by mosquitoes, and his remarks on the physician and his patient may be quoted : ' A physician experienced in his art, but deficient in the knowledge of the science of medicine, is condemned by all good men as a quack, and deserves capital punishment at the hands of the King.' Again : ' The patient who may mistrust his own parents, sons, and relatives should repose an implicit faith in his own physician, and put his own life into his hands without the least apprehension of danger ; *hence a physician should protect his patient as his own begotten child.*'

A third system of medicine was evolved by Vāgbhaṭa the elder, who probably lived in the seventh century A.D., and who was acquainted with the Charaka-Saṁhitā and the Suśruta-Saṁhitā. His work is called ' Aṣṭāṅga Saṁgraha,' or the summary of the eight-branched science, because Indian medicine was divided into eight parts—internal medicine, major surgery, minor surgery, demonology, toxicology, tonics, aphrodisiacs, and pædotrophy.

Mādhava wrote a work on pathology (Nidāna) somewhere about the seventh century A.D., and Vāgbhaṭa the Younger, in the seventh or eighth century, a compendium, Aṣṭāṅga Hṛdaya Saṁhitā, based upon the Aṣṭāṅga Saṁgraha of the Elder Vāgbhaṭa.

The great works are therefore those of Charaka (really of Agniveśa, Charaka, Dṛiḍhabala, Vāgbhaṭa, and Mādhava), Suśruta, Vāgbhaṭa, and Mādhava.

After this comes the period of the commentators :—Bhāskara Bhaṭṭa, in the early eleventh century, on Suśruta ; Charaka-pāṇḍatta, in the late eleventh century, on Charaka ; Dallana, in the twelfth century, on Suśruta ; Arunadatta, about 1220 A.D., on the Younger Vāgbhaṭa ; Vijaya Rakshita and Śrīkaṇṭhadatta, about A.D. 1240, on the Nidāna of Mādhava ; and Vāchaspati, about A.D. 1260, also on Mādhava. In the sixteenth century Bhāva Miśra published a compilation from the older writers, which he called ' Bhāva Prakāśa ; or, The Manifestation of the Truth.'

There is no doubt that the Indian doctors were well versed not merely in medicine and surgery but in the prevention of disease and in operative midwifery. They apparently knew diabetes mellitus, dysentery, phthisis, syphilis, and diseases due to worms, etc. In diagnosis they paid great attention to the examination of the pulse, the temperature of the body, the colour of the skin, the urine, fæces, eye, voice, and the respiratory sounds. They possessed a remarkable symptomatology, and as regards treatment divided diseases into incurable, which they refused to treat, and curable, which they treated according to a copious materia medica. Among

the various remedies must be mentioned the fact that inoculation against smallpox was practised at the beginning of the warm season. Dietetics and toxicology were also well known.

Hospitals were founded by Buddhist Princes in India and Ceylon. In fact, there is an account of a hospital being founded in Anurâdhapura, the ancient capital of Ceylon, as early as the fifth century B.C., and later many more were established, as well as a sort of medical or sanitary department, having one medical officer to every ten villages, together with a definite sanitary organization, and with institutions for the reception of cripples, deformed, and poor persons. One of the Sinhalese Kings appears to have known and practised medicine himself.

Under the influence of war and invasion, together with the introduction of new religions, caste distinctions became more rigid, and the Brahmans, fearing to touch blood or diseased matter, left the study of medicine to lower castes, and later, when the hospitals were closed, Indian medicine sank to a very low position, and did not again revive till the British Government founded its medical schools and research institutions. Moreover, the invasions of India by Mohammedans, and of Ceylon by Tamils, seem to have thoroughly upset all these excellent medical arrangements. The practitioner who works in India or Ceylon must not be surprised to find that the people strongly believe in their own system of medicine and medical men. At the same time, it must be remembered that their science and art is a great degeneration from the ancient Indian medicine.

Modern medicine has now reached India and Ceylon from the West, and native medical men in increasing numbers are to be found trained in modern medicine and surgery. In other words, in these regions there have been three medical epochs—the first, in which there was great enlightenment and study; the second, in which the knowledge so acquired was largely lost; and the third, in which a revival of medical knowledge has come about by importation from the West.

Before leaving the subject of Indian medicine, it is perhaps advisable to note the visits of the Greek physicians Ktesias (about 400 B.C.) and Megasthenes (about 300 B.C.) to Northern India, as they are of importance in proving the possibility of the exchange of knowledge between India and Greece, and *vice versa*.

Egyptian Medicine.—In the meanwhile, and probably quite independently, medicine had begun to be studied in Egypt; for several papyri have been found, one called the Ebers, or Leipzig Papyrus, of the sixteenth century B.C.—*i.e.*, about 1550 B.C.; a second, the Berlin Papyrus, of the fourteenth century B.C.; a third, also in Berlin; a fourth, the Hearst Papyrus; a fifth, of little importance, in the British Museum; and a sixth, in Paris.

It seems probable that the Ebers Papyrus represents in writing the oldest Egyptian medicine, which previously had existed engraved on pillars of stone, ascribed to the god Thôt, who is regarded by

many experts as the Egyptian Æsculapius, though other authorities assign this to Imhotep (meaning physician), whose temple was at Memphis. This Ebers Papyrus is a compilation written by several people, one of whom appears to have been an oculist living in Byblos, in Phœnicia. It is thought that it was written at On (Heliopolis), where medicine was taught by a kind of polyclinic. This papyrus contains a great deal of medical knowledge, including remedies for diseases of the stomach, abdomen, and urinary bladder.

Directions for the removal of buboes and concerning diseases of the eyes and other sense-organs, nerves, heart, etc., are given. Further, it gives directions for getting rid of fleas and lice. It also contains an account of a disease called 'A A A' and 'U H A,' caused by a worm Heltu. The symptoms of the disease are described, and a remedy is prescribed for the patient who has the worms in his abdomen. There is a difference of opinion as to what disease is referred to, and what kind or kinds of worms are meant. It is quite possible that it was not such a small worm as an agchylostome, but rather some other larger species—*e.g.*, an ascaris, or a tapeworm, or even an oxyuris, especially as these would be passed *per anum*, and would be easily seen. The ancient Egyptians are said not to have opened the bowels in embalming the body, though they may have washed out the contents of the bowels, and thus have found the agchylostome. The word 'A A T' in inscriptions on the temple of Denderah is said to refer to malaria.

The Ebers Papyrus is considered by some authorities to belong to the works of Hermes Trismegistus, which numbered forty, and of which six treat of medicine, surgical instruments, anatomy, and therapeutics. The Hearst Papyrus resembles the Ebers Papyrus in being a collection of prescriptions and invocations.

The principal Berlin Papyrus contains magical invocations and prescriptions for medicaments; the other Berlin Papyrus contains recipes for treatment of various diseases, including leprosy, together with some anatomical and physiological information of a very elementary nature.

The history of Egyptian medicine becomes merged into that of Alexandrian, Arabian, and modern medicine; but before considering these, a few remarks will be made upon Jewish and Grecian medicines, both of which owe much to Ancient Egyptian medicine.

Jewish Medicine.—The books which refer to Jewish medicine are the Bible and the Talmud. In the former there are several references of interest in Tropical Medicine—*e.g.*, in the Book of Numbers there is a description of a plague of fiery serpents, which quite possibly refers to the guinea-worm (*Dracunculus medinensis*). Moreover, it appears as though Moses had taught the Israelites how to extract the worm by winding it round a piece of stick, as is done to-day in many parts of Africa. Further, he appears to have made a model in brass of the method to be adopted—or, at all events, of the worm—in imitation of Egyptian customs.

Again, in the First Book of Samuel, chapters v. and vi., there is

an account of a disease spreading among the inhabitants of the cities of Ashdod, Gath, Ekron, and Beth-shemesh, in which places no fewer than 50,070 men are said to have died. This disease was, without doubt, Oriental plague. The only point necessary in order to understand the reference is to remember that 'emerods' are buboes. It is, further, interesting to observe that these ancient people noted that the '*mice*' died and marred the land, showing that the plague affected both man and rat.

No one can fail to be impressed by the careful hygienic precautions of the Mosaic period. For example, consider how animals were divided into the clean and unclean, the reason for this being that the priests, in preparing them for sacrifice, noted the presence of parasites in the flesh of the viscera of certain animals, which were therefore to be avoided. It is true that the classification of disease was very simple—viz., into acute disorders, called 'plague'; and chronic disorders, with some sort of eruption, called 'leprosy'—but the extremely stringent quarantine rules very likely did a great deal of good, though doubtless unkind to the unfortunate sufferer.

During their captivity in Babylon the Jews were brought into contact with Babylonian, Assyrian, and Grecian influences, and it is possible with Indian influences also. After this period—*i.e.*, about 150 B.C.—there existed in Palestine a curious sect called the Essenes, who were also known as the Healers, or Therapeutists. Still later appeared the Talmud, which contains surgical, medical, pathological, and anatomical information, much of which was doubtless from Grecian sources. Afterwards Jewish doctors are to be found associated with the Alexandrian School and the Arabs.

Grecian Medicine.—As in India, so in Greece, medicine began with a Divine origin, in the latter from Apollo, who taught Cheiron the Centaur, who, in his turn, instructed Æsculapius, whose sons are mentioned as surgeons by Homer. Then comes the period of the Philosophers, among whom Pythagoras may be mentioned, and the establishment of the schools of the Asclepiades, of which the most celebrated is Cos, because there lived Hippocrates, who was supposed to be descended from Æsculapius, and is said to have been born about 460 B.C. His forefathers appear to have been attached to this ancient temple of health, and there is no doubt that he himself practised in the Asclepion of Cos, of which an excellent account has recently been given by Caton.

The writings of Hippocrates, the most eminent of the eight physicians called by that name, are most interesting; for he clearly distinguished intermittent fevers from continuous fevers. Further, he recognized quotidian, tertian, and quartan fevers, and noted their frequency in summer and autumn, and their occurrence near stagnant water and after rains. He also mentions relapsing fever, which, after his period, was forgotten till the eighteenth century.

The writings of Hippocrates, who is justly considered to be the Father of medicine, are of a very high standard, but it is probable

that directly or indirectly he owed much to Indian and Egyptian influences.

Alexandrian Medicine.—After the death of Alexander the Great, and the disruption of the Empire of Macedonia, medical science again went back to Egypt under the Ptolemies, and here in 170 B.C. Agatharchides described *Dracunculus*.

It is remarkable that this school was entirely influenced by Grecian, and not at all by Egyptian medicine. The period of the supremacy of Alexandrian medicine, however, did not last long.

Græco-Roman Medicine.—After Alexandrian medicine came Græco-Roman medicine, largely derived directly from the Greek, for Roman medicine, until this influence came to be felt, was very primitive. Among the physicians of this period may be mentioned Themison of Laodicea (50 B.C.), who was the first to describe elephantiasis græcorum, or leprosy.

After him comes the great master of Roman medicine, Aulus Cornelius Celsus (25 B.C. to A.D. 45). It is quite possible that Celsus was not a medical man, but, whether or not, he has left behind him in his eight books of medicine a most valuable treatise. To him belongs the credit of clearly distinguishing two types of tertian malarial fever—viz., a simple and a much graver form. Hundreds of years later this was put upon a scientific basis by the researches of Marchiafava, Celli, and Bignami, in the same city (Rome). He also recognized the double quartan fever, and gave a description of elephantiasis, by which he meant leprosy.

After Celsus, medicine flourished in both the Eastern and the Western Empires. Among the many writers of this period, attention may be drawn to Aretæus of Cappadocia (A.D. 30-90), who describes dysentery, and gives a long account of elephantiasis, which he considered to be contagious by the inspired air.

Grecian medicine reaches its zenith in Galen, who was born at Pergamos A.D. 131, and died A.D. 210. He studied especially in Alexandria, and carefully described tertian and quartan malaria.

The next work which may be mentioned is the compilation of Paulus of Ægina, at the end of the seventh century A.D. This work gives a synopsis of medicine from the time of Galen up to nearly the end of the seventh century. In the second book considerable space is devoted to the malarial fevers, and there is also a section on 'Plague,' but what is meant by this is not certain, though Procopius, of the sixth century, is said to have written an account of glandular plague. There is also an article on siriasis, by which was meant an inflammation of the brain in young children. In the third book information is given concerning cholera, tenesmus, and dysentery. His fourth book is particularly interesting, beginning with a description of elephantiasis græcorum, or leprosy. It contains an account of broad and round worms, especially ascarides and dracunculus, and further describes the bites of snakes, dogs, spiders, scorpions, centipedes, lizards, crocodiles,

and other animals. There is also a description of the stings of wasps and bees, and an account of poisons.

Arabian Medicine.—After the fall of the Roman Empire, medical knowledge was kept alive by the Arabians from the eighth to the thirteenth century.

Among these may be mentioned Avicenna (Abu Ali el Hosein Ibn Abdallah Ibn Sina, A.D. 980-1037), who gives an account of elephantiasis arabum under the term 'elephantia,' whereas he called elephantiasis græcorum 'juzam,' or 'judam,' which is interpreted into leprosy. He was also acquainted with intermittent fevers, as was also Rhazea, another celebrated physician.

Arabian medicine, carrying with it Greek medicine, was introduced into Spain, whence it was reintroduced into Italy by the translation of Greek works from Arabic into Latin by scholars in Spain. This old learning in new form was particularly welcomed at the school of Salerno, which, indeed, alone had preserved some ideals of Greek medicine.

Modern Medicine.—Later came the general revival of learning, and at the same time, as Payne so aptly puts it, the medical men of Western Europe were confronted with new diseases from the East, which came in epidemic form—*e.g.*, the plague and typhus. Indeed, it was during the study of syphilis that Girolamo Fracastori (1483-1553) first started modern epidemiology by formulating the theory of contagion.

Discovery of Cinchona-Bark.—In the seventeenth century the epoch-making discovery of the value of cinchona-bark in the treatment of malarial fevers took place.

In 1638 the Countess of Chinchon, wife of the fourth Count, Viceroy of Peru, after nine years' residence in that country, was seized with tertian malarial fever. Don Lopez de Canizaries, the Corregidor of Loxa, hearing of this, sent her a parcel of the bark of a tree called by the Indians of Loxa 'quina-quina.' The duplication of the name of the tree is said to indicate that it has medical properties.

The value of this bark in the treatment of fever appears to have been only known locally, but was understood by the Spaniards in Loxa as far back as 1600. How the Indians became acquainted with the bark is not known, and the tales of the curing of their fevers by drinking the water of a lake into which a cinchona-tree had fallen, or of a sick puma chewing the bark, are considered to be myths invented later in Europe.

Dr. Don Juan de Vega administered the bark to the Countess, who quickly recovered, and four years later returned to Europe with a large supply of it, which she distributed to persons suffering from fever on her estates near Madrid. Hence the bark was often known as *Pulvis comitissæ*. In 1670 Jesuit missionaries sent some of the bark to Rome, whence it was distributed throughout Europe by Cardinal de Lugo. Hence the names 'Jesuit's' or 'Cardinal's' bark.

Linnaeus named the tree after the Countess, but spelt her name wrongly, calling it *Cinchona officinalis*. A curious strife now rose in Europe as to whether fever should be treated by bark or not, but the labours of Morton and Sydenham, together with the dramatic cure of the Grand Dauphin, enabled its true value to be known. The tree has since that time been introduced into several parts of the world, and grows well in India, Ceylon, and Java.

Morton, Sydenham, and Torti gave excellent clinical accounts of the fevers included under the term 'malaria,' the latter especially dealing with the pernicious fevers. In 1717 Lancisi appears to have foreshadowed the discovery of the spread of the disease by mosquitoes, for he considered that marshes caused these fevers by their inorganic and organic emanations. In 1820 Pelletier and Caventou prepared the alkaloid quinine from cinchona-bark.

BEGINNING OF MODERN TROPICAL MEDICINE.

Helminthology.—The foundation of modern tropical medicine may be said to have been laid when it was realized that parasites caused disease.

Worms, as has already been noticed, were known to the ancients in the shape of round and tape worms. Trematodes were first recognized by Jehan de Brie in the form of the liver-fluke in sheep, which was afterwards described in 1547 by Gabucinus, the knowledge of these animals being extended later by Leeuwenhoek (1675), Swammerdam (1752), Rosenhof (1758), Müller (1777), Zeder (1800), while in 1808 Rudolphi invented the word *τρηματώδης*, meaning 'pierced by holes,' for Zeder's sucking-worms. The knowledge of parasitic worms has been greatly extended by the works of Dubini, the discoverer of the agchylostome, Cobbold, von Siebold, Bilharz, Pruner, Griesinger, Leuckart, Sonsino, Perroncito, and Braun. More recently by Looss of Cairo; Stiles of the United States of America; von Linstow; Low, Sambon, Leiper, and Bahr, of the London School of Tropical Medicine; Ashburn, Craig, Musgrave, and other workers in the Philippine Islands; Railliet and Blanchard in Paris; Miura and Katsurada in Japan.

But among all these names connected with tropical helminthology that of Sir Patrick Manson stands out pre-eminently first for the far-reaching importance of his researches into filariasis. The detailed history of the discovery of *Filaria bancrofti* will be given later, therefore it will suffice to state here that the microfilaria was discovered by Demarquay, and that Lewis and Sonsino extended the knowledge of this discovery by finding the parasite in the blood, while Bancroft found the adult in an abscess. Manson, in 1881, clearly pointed out the connection between this worm and elephantiasis, and in 1882 demonstrated the extraordinary periodicity of the embryo, which at that time was discredited by all to whom he described it.

Epoch-making in the history of tropical medicine was the discovery by Manson as far back as 1877, 1878, and 1879, of the different phases of the development of the embryo filaria in the mosquito, thus laying the foundation for the further discovery of the development of the malarial parasite in the Anopheles. From this time onwards Sir Patrick Manson interested himself in the development of knowledge concerning filaria. The result is that by the labours of Bancroft, Low, Grassi, Noè, Fülleborn, James, Daniels, Vincent, Annett, Dutton, Elliott, Bahr, Ashburn, and Craig, a great mass of information has been collected. But the real credit for stimulating all this work lies with Sir Patrick Manson. In the meanwhile two other great workers appeared in the field of helminthology—viz., Looss of the Medical School of Cairo and Stiles of the United States—to both of whom tropical medicine is much indebted.

The Microscope.—It must be clearly understood that the development of knowledge concerning the ætiology of disease depended very largely upon the evolution of the microscope. Until this was brought to such a condition of perfection that minute objects could be clearly and definitely seen, it was impossible for a human being to define the cause of any disease brought about by animals or plants as minute as parasitic protozoa and bacteria. Therefore, tropical medicine is indebted almost directly for many of its most important facts to the makers of achromatic and apochromatic lenses, for these alone have enabled the sciences of bacteriology and parasitic protozoology to be placed on a firm basis.

Bacteriology.—The next great factor in the knowledge of tropical disease has been bacteriology.

From the most remote times the suspicion that the mysterious cause of contagious and epidemic diseases must be sought in living entities has flashed through the minds of many observers. Columella, a contemporary of Seneca, records the belief, apparently popular in his time, of the living nature of miasmata and contagion. The idea of a *contagium vivum* was not extinguished even in the darkness of the Middle Ages. Thus, for instance, in a book written in the twelfth century by St. Hildegard, the abbess of a convent, we find notices of minute animals which produce disease.

In 1641 Athanasius Kircher, a friar, stated that he had observed minute living organisms in the blood of a patient during an epidemic of plague. Linnæus supported the theory that disease was due to minute forms of life by inserting papers on the subject in his 'Amœnitates Academicæ.' But the first to promulgate scientifically a bacterial theory was Agostino Bassi, a country practitioner of the north of Italy in the early nineteenth century. At that time a peculiar disease was destroying the silkworms, bringing ruin to the country in which the silk industry was paramount. Bassi, by means of the microscope, discovered the germ which is the cause of the disease. The organism received later the name of *Botritis bassiana*. From analogy, Bassi believed and stated that human diseases were also due to micro-organisms. Bassi's work was not

appreciated by his contemporaries, and failed to make any lasting impression. In 1839 Holland wrote on the hypothesis of insect life as a cause of disease.

Gruby, in 1844, showed that ringworm was due to a parasitic fungus; Pollender, in 1849, and Davaine, in 1850, noted the *Bacillus anthracis* in sheep's blood; but it was not until after Pasteur, in 1857, had shown that fermentation was due to *saccharomyces*, and had described the bacillus of butyric acid fermentation, that Davaine, in 1863, considered that the rodlets he had seen in sheep's blood were the cause of the disease.

Then came Koch's epoch-making work, extending from 1877 to 1911, accounts of which can be found in any textbook of bacteriology.

The important bacteria from a tropical medicine point of view were discovered as follows:—

Leprosy (Hansen)	..	..	..	..	1879
Typhoid (Eberth)	..	..	..	..	1880
Tetanus (Nicolaier)	..	..	..	..	1884
Cholera (Koch)	..	..	..	..	1884
Malta fever (Bruce)	..	..	..	..	1887
Plague (Yersin and Kitasato)	..	..	..	..	1894

The dysentery bacillus was found by Shiga in Japan (1898) and by Kruse in Germany (1900), the latter giving the more exact description of the germ. The discovery of the typhoid and paratyphoid germs and their allies has been of great importance in differentiating these fevers from the chaotic collection of unclassified fevers which were formerly called 'malaria.'

Of much practical importance has been the work on various vaccines and sera by Wright, Haffkine, Kolle, Leishman, Lustig and Galeotti, Sclavo, Metchnikoff and Besredka, Vincent, and others.

The knowledge of the higher fungi causing tropical skin diseases and Madura-foot is largely due to Manson, Blanchard, Böllinger, Brett, Ballingal, Eyre, Carter, Vincent, Nocard, Pinoy, and Brumpt.

Parasitic Protozoa.—Protozoa were recognized by Leeuwenhoek in 1675, and the first life-history of a protozoon (a vorticella) was worked out by Trembley in 1744-1747.

Among the protozoa parasitic in human beings, one of the first to be discovered was *Balantidium coli*, found by Malmsten of Stockholm in the year 1856, and now known to be often associated with a chronic catarrh and ulceration of the large bowel. *Lambli intestinalis*, discovered by Lambl in 1859, and *Trichomonas hominis*, found by Davaine in 1864, are considered by many authors (Ebstein, etc.) to be the cause of certain cases of diarrhoea.

In 1875 an amœba was found by Lösch in St. Petersburg in a peasant who suffered from an ulcerative inflammation of the large intestine, and Sonsino in Cairo also described the finding of large numbers of amœbæ in the intestinal mucus of a child who had died

of dysentery. Other observers, however—*e.g.*, Grassi, Celli, and Cunningham—found amœbæ in persons whose health had undergone no change. Kruse and Pasquale first suggested that there might be two species of amœbæ, one pathogenic, the other harmless. Later Schaudinn showed that there were two kinds of amœbæ affecting man—*viz.*, *Entamœba (Löschia) coli*, which was non-pathogenic; and *Entamœba (Löschia) histolytica*, described by himself, which was the cause of a certain kind of dysentery (amœbic dysentery) and of the abscess of the liver which at times followed it.

The discovery which has had the greatest influence on Tropical Medicine was that of the parasite of malarial fever by Laveran on November 6, 1880. True, this had to some extent been foreshadowed by Merkel in 1847, and Virchow in 1848, both of whom saw, and the latter figured, protoplasmic masses and pigment. Still, the entire credit for this great discovery is due to Laveran, for the others failed to recognize the parasitic nature of the forms they saw. The development of our knowledge concerning this parasite is due to the valuable researches of Golgi, Marchiafava, Celli, Bignami, and many others. Of great importance was Golgi's discovery of the plurality of species of the malarial parasite. Laveran's discovery and the work of his successors left, however, a great gap in the history of the parasite. They described lucidly its life-history in the human being, but could not explain how man became infected.

Sir Patrick Manson, reasoning on his work on the mosquito and filaria, suggested that there might be a stage of the development of the parasite in the mosquito. Working on Manson's theory, Ross, at that time in the Indian Medical Service, after years of patient hard work, was able to trace the full development of a bird's parasite in *Culex*, and partially that of the human parasite in the *Anopheles*, and thus made not merely a great discovery, but one which ought to be in time of lasting benefit to mankind. The full development of the human parasite was found out by Grassi, who also showed that only *Anopheles* are capable of transmitting the parasite. Ross and Grassi's most important discoveries have been verified and extended by many people—*e.g.*, Celli, Marchiafava, Bignami, Dionisi, Daniels, Stephens and Christophers, etc.—but the account of their work will be given later. Thus, out of the fevers all classed as malaria, there issued a type clearly defined, to which the term 'malaria' must be restricted.

In 1901 Forde and Dutton discovered a trypanosome, called by Dutton *Trypanosoma gambiense*, in a case of a peculiar irregular fever in the Gambia. In 1902 Dutton and Todd observed this organism in several other cases presenting the same type of fever, which became known at the time as trypanosome fever, Gambia fever, or Dutton's disease (Laveran and Mesnil). In 1902 and 1903 Castellani found a trypanosome in the cerebro-spinal fluid of cases of sleeping sickness, and first associated it with the ætiology. Further investigation by Bruce, Nabarro, and numerous observers

in various regions of Africa showed that Gambia fever and sleeping sickness were two stages of the same disease. In 1903 Sambon and Brumpt independently promulgated the hypothesis that the human trypanosome was carried by a tsetse-fly, in all probability the *Glossina palpalis*; and Bruce and Nabarro experimentally proved that the *Trypanosoma gambiense* is in reality introduced into human beings by the bite of *Glossina palpalis*. Bruce and others considered the transmission as purely mechanical, but the researches of Kleine show that the parasite undergoes true development in the body of the tsetse-fly. In 1903 Castellani stated that man in analogy with the lower animals might be infected by several species of trypanosomes. In 1909 Chagas discovered a form of human trypanosomiasis in South America, and showed that the trypanosome causing it (*T. cruzi*, Chagas, 1909) was carried by a *Conorhinus*. In 1910 Stephens and Fantham created a new species (*T. rhodesiense*), which Kinghorn and Yorke in 1912 showed to be transmitted by *Glossina morsitans* (Westwood).

Trypanosomes were found in the lower animals long before they were discovered in man. Gruby first used (1844) the term 'trypanosoma' for a flagellate he had found in the blood of frogs in 1842. A similar parasite had been found by Valentin in 1841 in the common trout (*Salmo fario*). Very little progress was made in the investigations of these organisms until 1878, when Lewis, in India, described a trypanosome in the blood of rats, which was named by S. Kent *Trypanosoma lewisi*. In 1880 Evans discovered a trypanosome in animals affected with surra—*Trypanosoma evansi* (Steel, 1885). This was a most important discovery, as it showed that trypanosomes were capable of producing disease, while previously it had been believed that these parasites were harmless. In 1894 Bruce discovered the Nagana trypanosome, *Trypanosoma brucei* (Plimmer and Bradford, 1899), and experimentally proved that the organism was conveyed by a species of tsetse-fly (*Glossina morsitans*). Rouget in the same year observed a trypanosome in the blood of horses affected with dourine—*Trypanosoma equiperdum* (Doflein, 1901). Elmassian in 1901 described a trypanosome observed by him in mal de caderas—*Trypanosoma equinum* (Voges, 1901). Theiler, in 1902, in South Africa found a trypanosome in the blood of cattle affected with a peculiar disease known locally as 'galziecté.' The parasite was named by Bruce *Trypanosoma theileri*. Recently several other forms of trypanosomiasis have been described in the lower animals by Dutton and Todd, Cazalbou, Lingard, Ed. and Ét. Sergent, Shillong, Martini, Ziemann, and others.

In the meanwhile, Colonel Sir W. B. Leishman, in the year 1900, discovered some peculiar bodies in the spleen of a soldier who had died of what was called 'dum-dum fever,' but did not publish an account of his discovery till 1903, in which year Donovan also found the same parasitic bodies in Madras. This parasite was first considered to be a piroplasma by Laveran and Mesnil, and

called *Piroplasma donovani*; but Ross created a new genus for it, using the term *Leishmania*. Wright of Boston found similar bodies in Oriental sore, which he called *Helcosoma tropicum*. The knowledge of these bodies and the diseases they cause has been considerably extended by Christophers and by Martzmowsky and Bogroff, while a great advance was made by Rogers, who in 1904 showed that by artificial cultivation *Leishmania donovani* developed into flagellate organisms. The life-history of *L. donovani* outside the human body has partially been traced by Captain Patton, of the Indian Medical Service, in the bed-bug. In 1905, Pianese, in Italy, discovered a *Leishmania* in the spleen of children suffering from febrile splenic anæmia. Nicolle completed the study of the parasite, and called it *Leishmania infantum*; while Basile has apparently shown the possibility of the flea being the carrier of *L. infantum*. Gabbi, and later Cardamatis, Feletti, and others, have emphasized the frequency of this disease in the Mediterranean littoral and islands. Gabbi considers the disease to be identical with Indian kala-azar.

In 1909 Darling discovered in Panama, in a case of splenomegaly a protozoon somewhat similar to a *Leishmania*, which he called *Histoplasma capsulatum*.

In 1903 peculiar parasitic bodies, certainly protozoa, were discovered in rabies by Negri of Pavia. Negri's important discovery has been confirmed by many authors, and in the tropics by Cornwall.

In this section may be described the discovery of the causes of disease due to spirochætes, the nature and relationship of which are not yet clearly known. Obermeyer, as far back as 1873, described the spirochæte of relapsing fever, which was thought to be spread by the bed-bug. In 1904 Nabarro, Ross, and Milne, in Uganda, discovered a spirochæte in the blood of persons suffering from tick fever—i.e., a fever supposed to be due to the bite of *Ornithodoros moubata*—and independently in the same year Dutton and Todd, working in the Congo, described a spirochæte causing tick fever. This spirochæte has been proved by Breinl and Kinghorn to be distinct from the *Spiroschaudinna recurrentis*, and in 1906 they gave it the name of *S. duttoni*, in honour of the late Dr. Dutton, of the Liverpool School, who had done so much for Tropical Medicine, and who himself had fallen a victim to this disease. Novy and Knapp had a little time previously assigned the names *Spirillum duttoni* to the same parasite. Other spirochætæ have recently been described, as will be mentioned later.

In 1905 Schaudinn discovered the presence of a spirochæte-like organism in syphilis, which he called *Spirochæta pallida*. Later he created for the organism a new genus—*Treponema*. In the same year Castellani demonstrated the presence of a spirochæte or treponema in yaws, and named it *Spirochæta pertenuis* (*Treponema pertenue*).

Reference must here be made to the discovery of a small protozoan parasite in sheep suffering from a disease called 'carceag'

by Babès in Roumania in 1888. The name applied to this parasite—viz., hæmatococcus—could not be maintained, as it was already used in botany, hence the generic name of *Babesia* was given to the group by Starcovich in 1893. The term 'piroplasma,' so often used, was introduced by Patton in 1895. It is, however, mostly due to the work of Smith and Kilborne on red-water in cattle that *Babesia* has become well known, together with the fact that it is spread by a tick. The parasite *Babesia canis*, discovered by Piana and Galli-Valerio in 1895, has been thoroughly described by Celli in 1900 and Nuttall in 1904, and the life-history in the tick has been worked out by Christophers. At the present time, thanks to the researches of Koch, Theiler, and others, several species of *Babesia* especially affecting cattle are known.

As to whether a *Babesia* is the cause of the tick or spotted fever of the Rocky Mountains appears open to grave doubt, although it has been described by Wilson and Chowning in 1902, and supported by Westbrook and Cobb in the same year, and Anderson in 1903, because other observers have failed to find any such organism. There is, however, strong evidence in favour of a tick being the spreader of the disease. We have already mentioned that the so-called Leishman-Donovan body (*Leishmania donovani*) was considered by Laveran and Mesnil to be a *Babesia*.

Insects and Disease.—It will be obvious from the preceding section that ticks and insects play a great part in spreading protozoan diseases, and, further, it will be shown that they communicate bacterial disease as well.

Filaria can be spread by *Culex*, *Stegomyia*, or *Anopheles*; malaria by several species of the *Anophelinae*; *Babesia* and spirochaetes by ticks; *Leishmania donovani* perhaps by bugs; *Leishmania infantum* probably by fleas; trypanosomes by tsetse-flies, and possibly by some kind of mosquitoes.

But apart from these diseases, of which we know the cause, there are two infections the unknown agent of which is carried by mosquitoes. Thus Finlay, in 1881, formulated definitely the hypothesis that yellow fever was spread by a mosquito, which in 1900 was proved by Reed, Carroll, Agramonte, and Lazear to be a fact, the mosquito being *Stegomyia fasciata*, now *Stegomyia calopus*.

With regard to dengue fever, Graham of Beirut, in 1903, thought that he had discovered a protozoon in the red corpuscles of persons suffering from the disease, and that this parasite underwent development in *Culex fatigans* (Wied). Doubt has been thrown upon Graham's parasite, but the idea that *Culex fatigans* (Wied) is responsible for the spread of dengue fever has been strongly supported by Ashburn and Craig in 1907.

Turning now to bacterial diseases, the work of the Indian Plague Committee, published in 1906-1908, proves that the rat-flea (*Xenopsylla cheopis*) is the main means of the spread of plague. With regard to typhoid, it was conclusively proved in the army con-

centration camps of the United States in the Spanish-American War of 1898 that flies were great spreaders of the disease, a fact already emphasized by Celli and others; and this has been further supported by the work of Firth and Horrocks (1902), Chantemesse, and numerous other observers. Dysentery may also be spread by flies.

A knowledge, therefore, of ticks, biting flies, and other insects is of the greatest importance to the doctor who is to practise in the tropics. We refer the reader interested in this subject to the classical work of Nuttall on Insects as carriers of disease in the Johns Hopkins Hospital Reports, 1899.

The idea that the house-fly and its allies are capable of spreading disease originates from the time of Mercurialis, who in 1577 suggested that the virus of plague might be disseminated by this means. In 1666 Sydenham remarked that the presence of numerous flies in the summer indicated that there would be much sickness in the autumn, while in 1808 Crawford stated that he believed insects to be the carriers of infection. In 1853 Moore referred to flies as the possible carriers of cholera, typhoid, tuberculosis, anthrax, and leprosy. In 1869 Raimbert performed the first experiments, showing that anthrax could be disseminated by flies. Tizzoni and Cattani made observations on the spread of cholera by the same means, Grassi and later Stiles demonstrated the possibility of the carriage of parasitic worms, and one of us the transference of the *Treponema pertenue* by the same means. Gayon in 1903 indicated the possibility of the dissemination of fungi by flies.

Poisons.—Micro-organisms are not the only causes of disease to be found in the tropics, for poisons from plants and animals are also of the greatest importance.

It has been shown that the most primitive peoples have definite knowledge of poisons, and it has already been mentioned how early the study of snake and other animal venoms began.

It will suffice here to indicate that the scientific study of snake-venom, begun by Prince Lucien Bonaparte in 1843, has been extended by Fayrer, Martin, Lamb, Calmette, Noguchi, and many others, and leave a fuller description of this and the history of other poisons to a later section.

Physical Conditions.—Tropical medicine does not confine itself to diseases caused only by parasites and poisons, for there are such conditions as heat-stroke, which are entirely due to physical causes, and also there is the important question of the influence of tropical climates on man, which, together with injuries caused by wild animals, must be dealt with in a later chapter.

Clinical Medicine, Surgery, Hygiene, etc.—Clinical researches into the diseases affecting Europeans and natives in the tropics began with the earliest modern travellers, non-medical as well as medical, and the earliest references to tropical diseases are to be found in these early works on travel. Thus, as Singer has pointed out, De Oviedo in 1526 gives a reference to a disease bubas, which we now know to include *Frambæsia tropica*, a form of Leishmaniasis, and probably a form of Blastomycosis. In 1558 Thevet described the jigger as a little worm called 'Tom,'

which entered into the feet, and wrote descriptions of *Frambæsia tropica* under the term 'Pains.' In 1598 G. W. wrote an account of Calenture (heat-stroke), and Tabadillo, which is derived from the Spanish word *Tabardo*, a cloak, and was applied to the typhus fever epidemic in Spain in 1557; and therefore G. W. may have meant typhus by this term, though it is possible that he also included yellow fever under the same name. He also describes Espinlas, possibly due to the bite or sting of some venomous animal; Camaras de Sangre, or dysentery; erysipelas, which probably included filariasis; and Tiñoso, or scurvy. In 1642 Bontius wrote his work, 'De Medicina Indorum,' but this and many others are briefly mentioned at the end of this chapter under the heading 'Special Works on Tropical Medicine,' and need not be further described here.

The great improvement in the methods used in the tropics in medicine, surgery, midwifery, together with the improvement in the hospitals and in the sanitation, deserves its full share of praise. As regards sanitation, it is sufficient to mention the splendid work of Gorgas in Panama, Hasler and his co-workers in the Philippines. Ross in Ismailia and Balfour in Khartoum have shown what can be done to improve the sanitation of tropical towns.

Therapeutic Advances.—The most important therapeutic advances are represented by the application of atoxyl by Thomson; tartar emetic by Plimmer and Thomson for the treatment of the trypanosomiasis; and salvarsan by Ehrlich for the spirochætosis; and of emetine by Rogers, Vedder, and others, for the amœbiasis.

Unknown Diseases.—Notwithstanding all the rapid advance of knowledge in tropical diseases, there are many which as yet are unknown or little known. The causation of blackwater fever, of yellow fever, of dengue, of sprue, of beri-beri, of ainhum, of goundou, and many others, still require explanation.

Cosmopolitan Diseases.—Though tropical medicine is limited to the description of certain diseases found mostly in the tropics, still there are many cosmopolitan diseases common to both temperate and tropical regions which must be mentioned in a work on tropical medicine.

It will be observed that tropical diseases, *sensu strictu*, are comparatively few, most of them being endemic in the Temperate Zone, though occurring more rarely there. Moreover, owing to the great increase of traffic between tropical countries and Europe, diseases have passed from one to the other, and *vice versa*. In fact, enteric fever may, at the present time, be considered to be essentially a tropical disease, as it is much more commonly met with in the tropics than in Europe or North America.

Schools of Tropical Medicine.—Nothing has done more to advance the knowledge of tropical medicine than the movement commenced by Sir Patrick Manson, Mr. Joseph Chamberlain, and the British Government in founding the London School of Tropical Medicine, and by Sir Alfred Jones and the citizens of Liverpool in founding the Liverpool School.

These, together with the schools in Paris, Hamburg, Lisbon, and elsewhere, have done a very great work. Previous to their foundation the ordinary medical man had to pick up his knowledge of tropical medicine as best he could, though it is to be noted that army and navy doctors were given instruction in tropical medicine at Netley and Haslar, and to them, as well as to the officers of the Indian Medical Service and the Medical Services of the French, German, American, Dutch, Portuguese, Italian, and Spanish armies and navies, much credit is due for investigating tropical diseases. In this connection the names of Carter, Lewis, Cunningham, Gordon, Corre, Rho, Pasquale, and many others besides, may be mentioned. The improvement in the existing and the founding of schools of medicine and universities in various parts of the tropics will enable the native races to obtain a better knowledge of medicine than formerly.

It is not wise for a medical man, however well trained otherwise, to attempt to practise in the tropics without having gone through a course of instruction in one of these schools, for greatly will he regret his lack of special knowledge.

MODERN JOURNALS.

Unless the practitioner in the tropics keeps in touch with the work of the day, he will in a short time find himself deficient in much useful information.

The most valuable epitome of recent work is :—

BALFOUR AND ARCHIBALD (1911). Second Review of Recent Advances in Tropical Medicine.

The current literature is to be found in the Tropical Diseases Bulletin.

The progress of Tropical Medicine is to be found in the following journals :—

1. American Tropical Diseases Society's Journal.
2. Annali di Medicina Navale (Roma).
3. Annual Reports of the Surgeons-General and Principal Civil Medical Officers of the British, French, and German Colonies.
4. Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology (Liverpool).
5. Annals of Tropical Hygiene and Sanitation. (Not yet commenced.)
6. Archives de Parasitologie (Paris).
7. Archiv für Protistenkunde (Jena).
8. Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropenhygiene (Leipzig), und die Beihefte (separate).
9. Archivos de Hygiene e Pathologia Exoticas (Lisbon).
10. Atti della Società per gli studi della Malaria (Roma).
11. British Guiana Medical Journal (Demerara).
12. Bulletin de l'Institut Pasteur of Paris and of Tunis.
13. Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique (Paris).
14. Bulletin de la Société Médecin-Chirurgicale de l'Indo-Chine.
15. Bulletin of the Yellow Fever Bureau (Liverpool).
16. Bulletin of Entomological Research (London).
17. China Medical Journal.
18. Indian Medical Gazette (Calcutta).
19. Journal of Hygiene (Cambridge, England).
20. Journal of the London School of Tropical Medicine, and its Supplements.
21. Journal of Parasitology (Cambridge).
22. Journal of the Royal Army Medical Corps (London).
23. Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene (London).
24. Malaria e Malattie dei Paesi Caldi (Roma)
25. Malay Medical Journal (Singapore).

26. Medical Reports of the Chinese Customs.
27. Memorias do Instituto Oswaldo Cruz (Rio di Janeiro).
28. Philippine Journal of Science (Manila).
29. Records of the Egyptian Government School of Medicine (Cairo).
30. Reports of the Advisory Committee for the Tropical Diseases Research Fund (London).
31. Scientific Memoirs by the Officers of the Medical and Sanitary Department of India (Calcutta).
32. Studies from the Institute for Medical Research, Federated Malay States (London).
33. Transactions of the Society of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene (London).

Among the publications which at times have most valuable papers on tropical diseases and parasitology may be mentioned :—

34. Arbeiten aus dem Kaiserlichen Gesundheitsamte.
35. British Medical Journal and the Lancet.
36. Bulletins and Reports of the following departments of the United States : Washington—(a) Animal Industry; (b) Public Health and Marine Hospital Service; (c) National Museum.
37. Canadian Medical Association Journal.
38. Centralblatt für Bakteriologie.
39. Deutsche Medizinische Wochenschrift.
40. Journal of Experimental Medicine.
41. Münchener Medizinische Wochenschrift.
42. Proceedings and Transactions of the Royal Society (London).
43. Proceedings of the Society of Experimental Biology and Medicine.
44. South African Medical Record (Cape Town).
45. Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science (London).
46. Transvaal Medical Journal.
47. Zeitschrift für Hygiene und Infectionen Krankheiten.

SPECIAL WORKS ON TROPICAL MEDICINE.

- DE OVIEDO, F. (1526). *Hystoria Natural de las Indias* (Toledo); (1547) *Coronica de las Indias* (Madrid). (Accounts of Yaws and Jiggers.)
- THEVET, F. A. (1558). *Les Singularitez de la France Antartique autrement nommée Amerique*. (Jiggers, Yaws, and Native Practice.)
- DA ORTA, G. (1563). *Coloquios dos Simples e Drogas da India*. (This book is the first European work published in India, and contains descriptions of many Indian plants and their application to the treatment of Cholera, Dysentery, etc.) Garcia da Orto was physician to Dom Marten da Sousa, Governor of Goa, with whom he travelled in India and Ceylon in 1534. The English translation (1913).
- DA ORTA, W. G. (1598). *The Cures of the Diseased in Remote Regions* (London). Heat-Stroke, Typhus, Yellow Fever (?), Erysipelas (Filariasis?), Espindas, Dysentery, and Scurvy.
- BONTIUS, J. (1642). *De Medicina Indorum* (Lugduni, Batavia). (Remarks on drugs, preservation of health, treatment, and morbid anatomy.)
- ALPINUS, P. (1645). *De Medicina Ægyptorum* (Parisiis). (The first book contains articles on the state of Egyptian Medicine, on diseases endemic and epidemic, including plague; the second on blood-letting; the third on scarification, extraction of stone from the bladder, baths, and friction; the fourth on medicines.)
- PISON, G. (1648). *Historia Medica Brasilæ* (Lugduni, Batavia). (This work is divided into two parts, of which the first treats of Brazilian climatology; the second, of Brazilian diseases—*e.g.*, catarrhs, diseases of the eyes, spasm, stupor of the members, obstructions of the viscera, hydropsy, fluxes, tenesmus, colic, dysentery, liver troubles, worms, syphilis, ulcers, etc.)

- CLEYER, A. H. C. (1682). *Opuscula Medica ad Mentem Sinensium* (Francforti).
- KAEMPFER, E. (1712). *Amœnitatum Exoticorum. Politico-Physico-Medicorum Lengovia.* (This well-illustrated book, dealing with Persia, India, and Japan, is composed of five fascicles, of which the first is political; the second antiquarian; the third physico-medico, containing descriptions of the Torpedo, *Dracunculus persarum*, Asafœtida, Hydrocele, Hyper-sarcosis ulcerosa pedum malabaricæ genti vernacula—i.e., Madura-foot—acupuncture, cauterization; the fourth and fifth are botanical.)
- KAEMPFER, F. D. L. (1726). *Traité des Maladies Particuliers aux Pays Orientaux* (Paris). (Bound with Lullier's Voyages; contains descriptions of Sea-sickness, Scurvy, Colic, Venereal Disease, Fever, Guinea-Worms, Jiggers, Serpent Bite, Smallpox, etc.)
- AUBREY, T. (1729). *The Sea-Surgeon or the Guinea Man's Vade-Mecum* (London). (Contains accounts of Fevers, Erysipelas, Diarrhœa, Cholicks, Yaws, Negroes and their food, etc., as seen on the Coast of Guinea.)
- ATKINS, J. (1734). *The Navy Surgeon* (London). (Contains an appendix on 'The Sleepy Distemper in the Negro'.)
- PERRY, C. (1743). *View of the Levant, particularly Constantinople, Syria, Egypt, and Greece* (in four parts, containing information with regard to Medicine and Surgery in the East).
- BROCKLESBY, R. (1764). *Observations on Camp Diseases, with an Appendix on the Climate and Diseases in Africa* (London).
- LIND, JAMES (1768). *Essays on Diseases incidental to Europeans in Hot Climates* (London). (Other editions 1771, 1777, 1788, 1808. Translated into German 1773.)
- HILLARY (1772). *Observations on the changes of Air, etc., in the Island of Barbadoes* (London).
- CLARK, JOHN (1773). *Observations on the Diseases in Long Voyages to Hot Countries, and particularly those of the East Indies* (London). (Other editions 1792, 1809. Translated into German 1778.)
- ROBERTSON, R. (1779). *A Physical Journal kept during Three Voyages on the Coast of Africa and the West Indies in the years 1772-1774* (London).
- ROLLO, J. (1781). *Diseases in the Army on St. Lucia* (Barbadoes).
- FONTANA, N. (1781). *Osservazioni intorno alle malattie che attaccano gli Europei nei Climi Caldi* (Livorno). (Translated into French in 1818.)
- D'AZILLE (1785). *Observations générales sur les Maladies des Climats chauds* (Paris).
- CAMPBELL, D. (1785). *Observations on the Typhus or Low Contagious Fever* (Lancaster). (Partly relates to Yellow Fever in Jamaica and West Indies.)
- MOSELEY, B. (1787). *Treatise on Tropical Diseases* (London). (Another edition 1806. Translated into German 1790.)
- BALFOUR, F. (1790). *Treatise on Putrid Intestinal Fevers* (Edinburgh).
- THOMAS, R. (1790). *Medical Advice to the Inhabitants of Warm Climates* (London).
- JACKSON, R. (1791). *The Fevers of Jamaica.*
- WADE, P. (1793). *Prevention and Treatment of the Disorders of Seamen and Soldiers in Bengal* (London).
- HUNTER, JOHN (1796). *Observations on the Diseases of the Army in Jamaica, and on the Best Way of preserving the Health of Europeans in that Climate* (London).
- THOMAS (1801). *Modern Practice of Physic of all Climates.*
- CAMPET, P. (1802). *Traité pratique des Maladies graves qui regnent dans les Contrées situées sous la Zone torride et dans le Midi de l'Europe* (Paris).
- BLANE, G. (1803). *Observations on the Diseases of Seamen* (London).
- WINTERBOTTOM, T. (1803). *An Account of the Native Africans in the Neighbourhood of Sierra Leone, to which is added an Account of the Present State of Medicine among them.* 2 vols. (London). (The second volume contains the medical information.)
- HUNTER, W. (1804). *An Essay incident to Seamen or Lascars in Long Voyages* (Calcutta).

- CURTIS, C. (1807). *Diseases of India* (Edinburgh).
- JOHNSON, J. (1811). *Influence of Tropical Climates on European Constitutions* (London). Other editions 1821 and 1827, and a sixth edition.
- FRANK (1812). *Collection d'Opuscules de Médecine Pratique* (Paris).
- REECE (1814). *Medical Guide for Tropical Climates* (London).
- SIMPSON (1820). *Exposition of Elementary Principles specially concerned in the Preservation of Healthiness and Production of Distempers amongst Mariners, Travellers, etc., in Tropical Climates* (London).
- CHISHOLM, C. (1822). *A Manual of the Climate and Diseases of Tropical Countries* (London).
- BALLINGALL, G. (1823). *Observations on Fever, Dysentery, and Liver Complaints in European Troops in India*. Edinburgh.
- BOYLE, J. (1823). *Letters on the Prevention and Cure of Diseases peculiar to Hot Climates* (London).
- M'CAVE, J. (1825). *Military Medical Reports containing Pathological and Practical Observations illustrating the Diseases of Warm Climates* (Cheltenham).
- JOHNSON, J. (1827). *An Essay on Morbid Sensibility of the Stomach, etc., to which are added Observations on the Diseases and Regiments of Invalids on their Return from Hot and Unhealthy Climates* (London).
- HASPER, M. (1831). *Die Natur und Behandlung der Krankheiten der Tropenländer* (Leipzig).
- BOYLE, J. (1831). *Medico-Historical Account of the Western Coast of Africa* (London).
- THÉVENOT (1840). *Traité des Maladies des Européens dans les pays chauds* (Paris).
- MCWILLIAM, J. O. (1843). *The Medical History of the Expedition to the Niger, 1841-42* (London).
- SIGAUD, J. F. (1844). *Maladies du Brésil* (Paris).
- FERGUSON, W. (1846). *Notes and Recollections of a Professional Life* (London). (Deals with Military Hygiene, Ophthalmia, Plague, Yellow Fever, Typhus, Marsh Miasmata, and Cholera).
- REED, MCC. (1846). *Fever, Contagion, Quarantine, and Cholera* (London). (Deals with Yellow Fever, Typhus, Plague, and Scurvy.)
- WILSON, J. (1846). *Medical Notes on China* (London).
- BRYSON, A. (1847). *Climate and Principal Diseases of the African Station* (London). (This is a book on the diseases in the vessels of the West African Squadron from 1820 till 1845, giving graphic descriptions of the ravages of Yellow Fever, and, in addition, chapters on the Topography of the Station, the Causation, Treatment, and Prevention of Disease in the Station, and the Diseases most prevalent among captured slaves.)
- PRUNER (1847). *Die Krankheiten des Orients* Erlangen.
- MOREHEAD, CHARLES (1856). *Researches on Disease in India* (London).
- JOHNSTON, C. (1860). *Health and Disease in Natal* (Natal).
- MARTIN, RANALD (1861). *Influence of Tropical Climates in producing Disease*.
- MOORE, W. J. (1861?). *Manual of the Diseases of India* (London). Second edition, 1886.
- DUTROULAU, A. F. (1861). *Traité de Maladies des Européens dans les pays chauds* (Paris). Second edition, 1868.
- GORDON (1863). *China from a Medical Point of View* (London).
- CLARK, S. (1864). *Hygiene of the Army in India* (London).
- SABATIER (1864). *Maladies Observées dans les Mers de Chine*. Thèse (Montpellier).
- MARÉ, J. (1865). *Étude sur les Maladies endémiques au Sénégal et à la côte occidentale d'Afrique*. Thèse (Montpellier).
- GAUTHIER (1865). *Des Endémies au Sénégal*. Thèse (Paris).
- WARING, E. J. (1866). *The Tropical Resident at Home* (London).
- GODARD, E. (1867). *Observations Médicale et Scientifique* (Paris). (Relates to Egypt and Palestine.)
- GIRARD, LA BARCERIE (1868). *Considérations Médicales sur la Cochinchine*. Thèse (Montpellier).

- SAINT VEL (1868). *Maladies des Régions intertropicales* (Paris).
- GORDON, C. A. (1872). *Experiences of an Army Surgeon in India*.
- HORTON, J. A. (1874). *Diseases of Tropical Climates and their Treatment* (London). Second edition, 1879.
- LAVERAN, A. (1875). *Maladies et Epidémies des Armées* (Paris).
- BACHOUÉ (1876). *Étude sur la Constitution Phys. et Méd. de l'Île de Zanzibar* (Paris).
- FOSSAGRIES, J. B. (1877). *Traite d'Hygiene Naval* (Paris).
- SULLIVAN, JOHN (1877). *The Endemic Diseases of Tropical Climates* (London).
- BÉRENGER-FÉRAUD (1878). *Traité Clinique des Maladies des Européens au Sénégal* (Paris).
- HORTON, J. A. B. (1879). *Diseases of Tropical Climates* (London).
- FAYRER, JOSEPH (1881). *Tropical Diseases* (London).
- BÉRENGER-FÉRAUD (1881). *Traité Clinique des Maladies des Européens aux Antilles* (Paris).
- NIELLY, MAURICE (1881). *Éléments de Pathologie Exotique* (Paris).
- FAYRER, JOSEPH (1882). *Climate and Fevers of India* (London).
- GORDON, C. A. (1884). *Medical Reports—Chinese Customs Service* (London). (Almost a textbook of tropical medicine, with valuable reports by Manson on Filariasis, Paragonimiasis, etc.)
- MACLEAN, W. C. (1886). *Diseases of Tropical Climates* (London).
- CORRE, A. (1887). *Traité Clinique des Maladies des Pays Chauds* (Paris).
- DUNCAN, A. (1888). *Prevention of Disease in Tropical and Subtropical Campaigns* (London).
- KELSCH AND KIENER (1889). *Traité des Maladies des Pays Chauds*. (A justly celebrated book.)
- DAVIDSON, ANDREW (1893). *Hygiene and Diseases of Warm Climates*.
- FELKIN, R. W. (1895). *Geographical Distribution of Tropical Diseases in Africa*.
- DESAINT, CONSTANT (1895). *Manuel de Médecine*, fifth edition (Hong-Kong). (A work on the diseases of China, with an extensive catalogue of drugs intended for missionaries.)
- SCHEUBE, B. (1896). *Die Krankheiten der Warmen Länder* (Jena). Second edition, 1900; translated into English, 1903; third edition, 1903; fourth edition, 1910.
- RHO, F. (1897). *Malattie Predominanti Nei Paesi Caldi e Temperati* (Torino).
- MANSON, PATRICK (1898). *Tropical Diseases* (London). (A very celebrated work.) Second edition, 1900; third edition, 1903; fourth edition, 1907; translated into French.
- BRAULT, J. (1900). *Traité Pratique des Maladies des Pays Chauds et Tropicaux* (Paris).
- LE DANTEC, A. (1900). *Précis de Pathologie Exotique* (Paris). Third edition, 1911.
- REYNAUD, G. (1903). *Hygiène des Établissements Coloniaux* (Paris).
- AUDAIN (1904). *Pathologie Intertropicale* (Paris, 1910). *Fièvres intertropicales* (Paris).
- MUZIO, C. (1904). *Le Malattie dei Paesi Caldi* (Milano).
- BRAULT, J. (1905). *Pathologie et Hygiène des Indigènes Musulmans d'Algérie* (Alger).
- MENSE, C. (1905). *Handbuch der Tropenkrankheiten*. 3 vols. (Translated into Italian.)
- FINLAY (1905). *Manuel de Pratique Sanitaire La Havane*.
- MANSON, P. (1905). *Lectures on Tropical Diseases* (London).
- ALLBUTT AND ROLLESTON (1906). *System of Medicine*. Vol. II., Part II.: *Tropical Diseases* (London).
- JACKSON, T. W. (1907). *Tropical Diseases*.
- GILBERT (1908). *Tropical Diseases*.
- DANIELS, C. W. (1909-1912). *Tropical Medicine and Hygiene*. 3 vols (London).

- JEANSELME AND RIST (1909). *Précis de Pathologie Exotique* (Paris).
 GUILLON (1909). *Manuel de Thérapeutique Clinique des Maladies Tropicales* (Paris).
 SCHILLING, C. (1909). *Tropenhygiene* (Leipzig).
 JEFFRY AND MAXWELL (1910). *The Diseases of China* (London).
 GRALL ET CLARAC (1910). *Traité de Pathologie Exotique* (Paris). (Several volumes: not yet fully published.)
 ROGERS (1910). *Fevers in Tropics* (London).
 SALANQUE-IPIN, H. (1910). *Précis de Pathologie Tropicale* (Paris).
 RUGE UND VERTH (1912). *Tropenkrankheiten und Tropenhygiene* (Leipzig).
 GABBI (1912). *Malattie Tropicali dell' Italia Meridionale* (Roma).
 GABBI (1912). *Malattie Pestilenziali Esotiche* (Roma).

REFERENCES WITH REGARD TO THE HISTORY OF TROPICAL MEDICINE.

- BAAS, J. H. (1876). *Geschichte der Medicin* (Stuttgart). (English translation, 1881, New York.)
 BERDOE, E. (1893). *The Origin and Growth of the Healing Art* (London). (Contains articles on the Medicine of Primitive Man, of Egypt, Judea, Chaldea, India, China, Persia, Mexico, and Peru.)
 DABRY, P. (1863). *La Médecine chez les Chinois* (Paris).
 HAESER, H. (1875-1882). *Lehrbuch des Geschichte der Medicin*, 3 vols. (Jena). (This book, though old, is strongly recommended, because of the excellent manner in which the subject is handled.)
 HEUSINGER (1839). *Geschichte der indischen Medicin*. Sachs Medicin.
 JOURDAIN (1831). *Dictionnaire des Sciences Médicales*. Biographie Médicale (Amsterdam). (This is a series of short biographical accounts; another similar publication is Haeser (1884-88), 6 vols., Wien, in German.)
 KEEGEL (1887). *Superstition in Native Medicine* (Ceylon Medical Journal).
 LEPAGE, F. A. (1813). *Récherches historiques sur la Médecine des Chinois*. Thèse (Paris).
 MACDONALD (1879). *Historical Sketch of Medicine* (Edinburgh). (Contains a translation of some palm-leaf manuscripts, without date, by Burmese physicians.)
 NUTTALL AND JEPHSON (1909). *Reports of the Local Government Board*, No. 16. (Bibliography of Flies and Disease.)
 RHO, F. (1904). *Dal Vecchio al Nuovo in Patologia Esotica* (Roma).
 ROTH, W. E. (1897). *Ethnological Studies among the North-West Central Queensland Aborigines* (Brisbane). (Contains a chapter on Disease, Accident, and Death.)
 SELIGMANN, C. G. (1902). *Journal of the Anthropological Institute* (London). (The Medicine, Surgery, and Midwifery of the Sinangolo, an inland tribe inhabiting the Rigo District of British New Guinea.)
 SINGER (1912). *Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology*, vi. 87, 379 (Liverpool).
 SPRENGEL (1815). *Histoire de la Médecine*. 9 vols. (Paris).
 TURNOUR (1837). *Mahawansa*.
 WHITTLE (1911). *Bulletin of the Sleeping Sickness Bureau*, August, 329 (London).
 WIJESINGHE (1889). *Mahawansa*, pp. 44, 125, 156 (notes), 158.
 WISE, T. S. (1867). *Review of the History of Medicine* (London). (Deals with medicine among the Hindus and Chinese.)

It will be obvious that unless a library is available—and there ought to be a well-equipped medical library in every colony and tropical State—it is extremely difficult for a medical man to keep abreast of the times.

If information with regard to diseases of animals is required other than that found in textbooks, the reader is referred to the *Tropical Veterinary Bulletin*, published by the Committee of the Tropical Diseases Bureau at the Imperial Institute, London, S.W.

CHAPTER II

TROPICAL CLIMATOLOGY

Tropical climates—Climatic factors—Temperature—Pressure—Motion of the atmosphere—Humidity—Rainfall—Subdivisions of warm climates—Psycho-physical aspect of climates—References.

TROPICAL CLIMATES.

CLIMATES may be classified, as suggested by Supan, according to temperature, into three groups :—

1. Warm climates, extending from the Equator to the mean annual isotherm of 68° F.
2. Temperate climates, extending from the mean annual isotherm of 68° F. to that of 50° F. for the warmest months of the year.
3. Cold climates, lying polewards of the isotherm of 50° F. for the warmest months of the year.

Of these divisions, the warm climates alone concern us.

Warm or hot climates may be defined on a map of the world by the isotherms which represent a mean annual temperature of 68° F. or 20° C.

If now attention is turned to Fig. 1, it will be noticed that these isotherms are represented by irregular wavy lines situated about 35 degrees north latitude and rather less than 30 degrees south latitude.

This region is divided into two zones :—

1. The Tropical Zone.
2. The Subtropical Zone.

1. The Tropical Zone.—The Tropical Zone is limited to the north and the south by the isotherm which represents a mean temperature for ' the coldest months of the year ' of 68° F. or 20° C.

It will be noticed that this isotherm corresponds more or less with $23\frac{1}{2}$ degrees north or south latitude, which represent the Tropics of Cancer and Capricorn.

Examining the map a little more in detail, it will be noticed that, starting in the extreme west and travelling eastwards, the isotherm both north and south of the Equator is nearly the same as the latitude $23\frac{1}{2}$ degrees north or south, but as the coast of America is

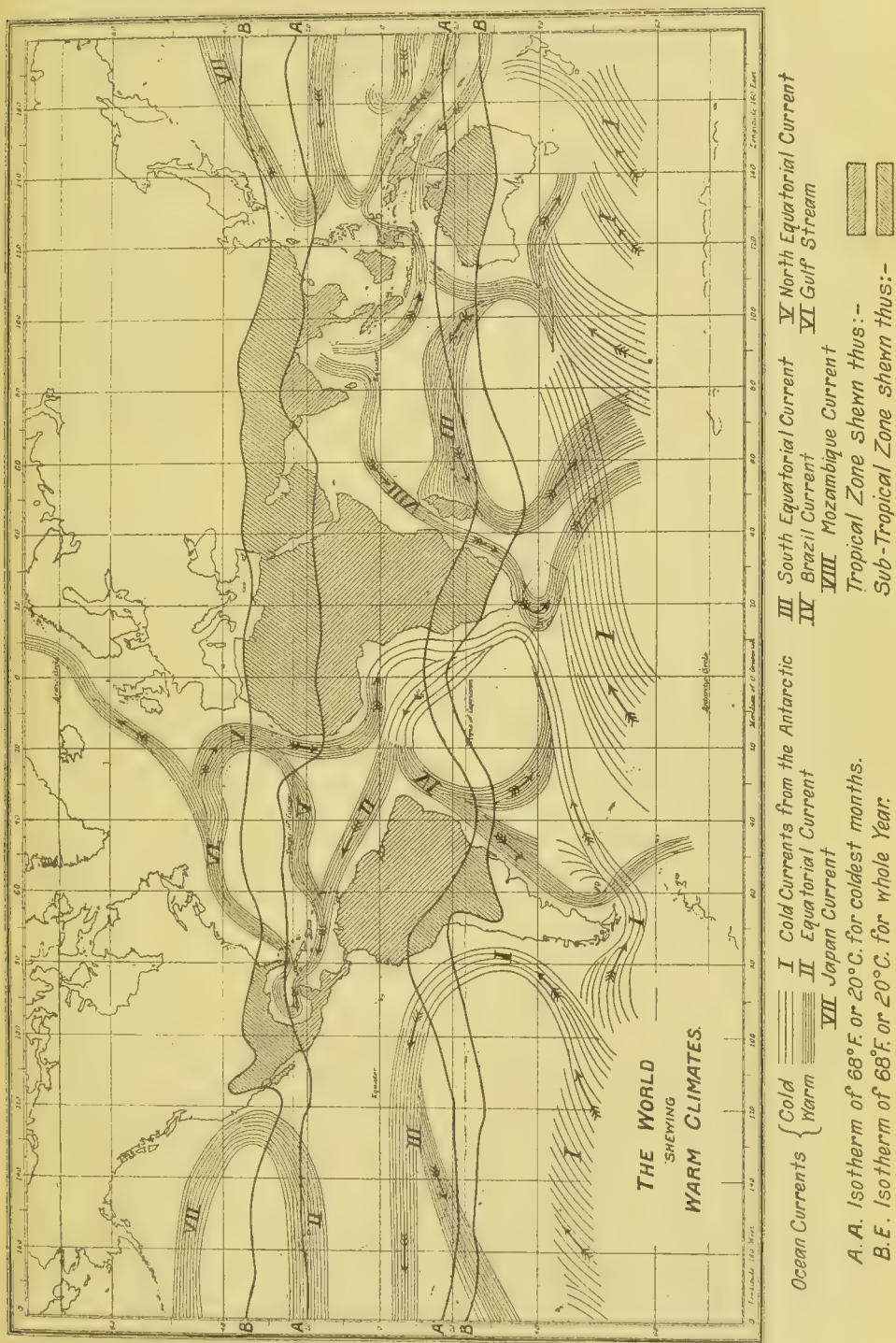


FIG. 1.—THE WORLD, SHOWING WARM CLIMATES AS DELINEATED BY SUPAN'S LINES.

reached it dips a little to the south in the Northern Hemisphere, and considerably to the north in the Southern Hemisphere. This variation is caused by cold currents in the sea running along the west coast of America, the more important of which (marked I. on the map) is the cold current from the Antarctic.

Tracing the line farther eastward, it will be noticed that it rises towards the north in the Northern Hemisphere, and falls towards the south in the Southern Hemisphere. In the Northern Hemisphere this is due to the warm Equatorial Current (II.), and in the Southern Hemisphere to the warming effects of the land and to the warm Brazilian Current (IV.).

With reference to the different effect of land and sea, it is necessary to remember that though 25 per cent. of the heat of the sun's rays which fall on the outer limit of our atmosphere are absorbed, still these rays do not really warm the air to any appreciable extent. The real warmth of the air is obtained from the dark heat radiated from land and sea.

Land not only absorbs the radiant heat from the sun more quickly than water, but also more readily gives off the dark heat to the air; therefore the presence of a large area of land upon which the sun's rays fall more or less vertically at noon all the year round will raise the temperature of the air, and will tend to extend the area of the warm climates. Hence the land may become extremely hot—incredibly high temperatures have been mentioned by authors—while water never becomes very warm. The reason of this is that water, being a liquid, by convection and by currents tends to keep at a more even temperature than land, though, as already noted, the currents, cold and warm, have a marked influence on the climate.

Turning again to the map, and tracing the isotherm eastwards towards the west coast of Africa, it will be noticed that again both the northern and the southern isotherms approach the Equator, and again this is due to cold currents—in the north to the North Equatorial Current (V.), and in the south to the cold Antarctic Current (I.). Crossing the continent of Africa, the effect of land is seen, and on passing into the Indian Ocean the effect of the Mozambique and the South Equatorial Currents may be noted, and finally, to the west and east of Australia the cold Antarctic Currents produce effects.

Thus the Tropical Zone is alternately decreased and increased in area, the most marked diminutions being on the west coast of America and the west coast of Africa.

It will be observed that this zone includes Central America, a large portion of South America, the West Indies, a large portion of Africa, Madagascar, a portion of Arabia, India, Ceylon, Indo-China, Sumatra, Java, Borneo, the Philippine Islands, New Guinea, and a portion of Australia, and many other smaller islands.

2. **The Subtropical Zone.**—The Subtropical Zone lies between the isotherms of 68° F. (20° C.) for the temperature of the coldest month, and the same isotherms for the mean temperature of the year.

It is depicted in Fig. 1, and will be noticed to include a portion of North America and considerable portions of South America, Africa, Asia Minor, Arabia, Persia, North India, China, and Australia.

Another method of subdividing warm climates, based upon the winds and rainfall rather than upon the temperature, will be given at the end of this chapter.

CLIMATIC FACTORS.

Climate may be defined as the combined effects of the sun, the atmosphere, and the earth at any one place on the earth's surface.

The sun produces its influence by the heat, light, and chemical rays which issue from it.

The atmosphere acts by its chemical composition, its temperature and diathermancy, its humidity, pressure, motion (winds), and electrical conditions.

The earth's influence is due to latitude, relative proportion of land and water, ocean currents, soil, vegetation, configuration of the surface, and altitude.

In the present chapter the discussion on these factors may be grouped into the three headings of temperature, pressure, and humidity, leaving the chemical rays and their effects to the next chapter, while electrical conditions will be omitted.

Though we are compelled to deal in a cursory manner with these subjects, we would strongly advise the medical man about to practise in the tropics to make himself conversant with elementary meteorology, in order that he may understand the seasonal changes which will take place around him, and the data which he will obtain from meteorological instruments which may be in his charge. The latter especially applies to Government Medical Officers, who generally are responsible for a small meteorological station, often situate in the hospital compound.

TEMPERATURE.

Heat derived from the sun is capable of traversing the atmosphere surrounding the world, and thus reaching the earth, because this atmosphere is diathermanous to rays with short wave-lengths coming from so hot a body as the sun. Dry air is diathermanous for all rays, but aqueous vapour is almost athermanous for infra-red rays, though diathermanous for other rays.

In passing through the atmosphere, about 25 per cent. of the heat which has entered it is absorbed before it reaches sea-level.

The position of the sun is, however, of the utmost importance with regard to the quantity of heat reaching the earth. If the sun is quite vertical, probably only 20 per cent. is lost; whereas, if the beam is nearly horizontal, probably none reaches the earth.

The heat rays falling upon the earth are absorbed and converted into dark heat—that is to say, into frequencies with longer wave-

TABLE A.
MEAN AND EXTREME AIR TEMPERATURE IN THE SHADE IN COLOMBO.

Month.	Mean.	9.30 a.m.	3.30 p.m.	Mean of Maximum.	Mean Daily Range.	Mean of Minimum.	Highest Maximum.		Absolute Range.	Lowest Minimum.	
							Date.	Degrees.		Date.	Degrees.
January ..	Degrees. 79.2	Degrees. 81.2	Degrees. 84.1	Degrees. 86.8	Degrees. 14.6	Degrees. 72.2	26th	91.2	Degrees. 24.0	14th	67.2
February ..	80.1	81.8	85.4	87.4	14.4	73.0	13th	92.4	23.9	12th	68.5
March ..	83.1	85.2	87.6	89.3	12.7	76.6	6th	93.7	21.7	5th	72.0
April ..	81.9	83.6	85.3	87.8	11.1	76.7	3rd	91.7	18.1	9th	73.6
May ..	81.8	83.1	84.7	87.2	9.6	77.6	5th	89.4	15.6	24th	73.8
June ..	81.2	82.5	83.2	86.0	8.1	77.9	13th, 16th, & 17th	88.2	13.7	20th	74.5
July ..	82.1	83.2	84.6	86.4	7.8	78.6	8th, 28th, & 30th	87.4	10.9	19th	76.5
August ..	82.4	83.9	84.7	87.5	8.8	78.7	7th	89.0	12.5	22nd	76.5
September ..	81.0	82.9	83.8	86.1	9.9	76.2	3rd	88.4	15.2	6th	73.2
October ..	79.9	81.7	82.8	85.5	10.4	75.1	5th, 29th, & 30th	87.7	15.3	10th	72.4
November ..	80.8	82.3	85.1	87.4	12.3	75.1	6th	90.8	17.8	6th	73.0
December ..	79.8	81.1	85.2	88.2	15.0	73.2	23rd	91.7	23.2	30th	68.5
Year ..	81.1	82.6	84.7	87.1	11.2	75.9	March 6th	93.7	26.5	Jan. 14th	67.2
Means of extremes	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	90.2	17.7	—	72.5

lengths—and these are radiated back into the atmosphere (terrestrial radiation). This dark heat is absorbed by the atmosphere, which is, as already stated, almost athermanous to this kind of energy.

This atmospheric heat is one of the most important factors in determining the nature of a climate, and therefore requires a few remarks.

The following temperatures are usually recorded at meteorological stations :

1. Shade temperatures.
2. Solar radiation.
3. Terrestrial radiation.
4. Earth temperatures.

1. Shade Temperature.—The shade temperature of the air is measured by maximum and minimum thermometers. The figures in Table A, taken from the Ceylon meteorological reports, indicate how such records should be kept.

Altitude has a marked effect upon temperature, and must either be stated or else the temperature, for purposes of comparison, must be recorded in sea-level equivalents.

SEA-LEVEL EQUIVALENTS OF MONTHLY MEAN TEMPERATURE
IN COLOMBO.

January	79'3	July	82'2
February	80'2	August	82'5
March	83'2	September	81'1
April	82'0	October	80'0
May	81'9	November	80'9
June	81'3	December	79'9

Average for 1905, 81'2.

These temperatures give a good idea of a tropical island climate. The extremes are neither very high nor irregular ; the mean daily range of temperature throughout an average year is only 11'2° F., though it may be as much as 15'0° F.

Compare this with Jacobabad in Sind, North India, which may be taken as a type of a bad continental tropical station.

ELEVATION 186 FEET ABOVE SEA-LEVEL.

Month.	Mean.	Mean Maximum.	Mean Daily Range.	Mean Minimum.
January	57	74	31	43
February	62	77	29	48
March	74	90	30	60
April	83	99	31	68
May	91	108	32	76
June	96	111	28	83
July	94	107	24	83
August	91	103	22	81
September	88	101	25	76
October	78	96	33	63
November	65	84	34	50
December	58	75	32	43
Year	78	—	—	—

Mean highest temperature for the year, 118° F.
Mean lowest temperature for the year, 32° F.

TABLE B.
EQUILIBRIUM TEMPERATURES OF SOLAR RADIATION IN COLOMBO.

Month.	Mean.	Maximum.		Minimum.		Difference, Sun and Shade.		
		Date.	Degrees.	Date.	Degrees.	Mean.	Maximum.	Minimum.
January	..	1st	150.7	12th	138.2	Degrees. 56.7	Degrees. 63.8	Degrees. 52.2
February	..	21st	156.2	9th	138.8	57.9	69.0	52.8
March	..	7th	154.0	1st	140.8	56.5	61.3	53.5
April	..	8th	152.8	13th	91.4	50.4	66.4	9.0
May	..	2nd	151.4	24th	92.8	53.4	67.2	9.3
June	..	18th	144.0	8th	115.5	52.3	57.8	32.8
July	..	22nd	145.5	12th	128.4	54.4	85.1	52.2
August	..	15th	153.5	18th	135.0	56.5	66.5	49.3
September	..	22nd	149.2	14th	111.0	56.3	62.8	29.8
October	..	9th	149.8	19th	94.8	54.8	62.2	14.2
November	..	9th	157.5	13th	115.8	55.1	69.3	28.8
December	..	4th	150.6	29th	122.8	54.4	63.2	38.8
Year	..	November 9th	157.5	April 13th	91.4	54.9	85.1	9.0
Means of extremes	..	—	151.3	—	118.8	—	65.4	35.2

TABLE C.
TEMPERATURE OF TERRESTRIAL RADIATION IN COLOMBO.

Month.	Mean.	Maximum.		Minimum.		Difference, Shade and Radiation.		
		Date.	Degrees.	Date.	Degrees.	Mean.	Maximum.	Minimum.
January	..	6th	73·2	14th	61·5	Degrees. 3·5	Degrees. 5·7	Degrees. 1·3
February	..	24th	74·2	11th	64·0	2·9	5·8	0·3
March	30th	77·5	5th	67·0	3·3	8·0	2·0
April	6th	77·5	7th	71·8	1·8	5·6	0·5
May	21st	78·2	19th & 24th	73·0	1·9	4·4	0·5
June	2nd	77·5	20th	73·0	2·3	4·8	0·8
July	27th	78·0	1st	74·2	2·9	4·8	0·8
August	..	30th	78·0	22nd	74·8	2·3	3·5	1·4
September	..	1st	77·2	23rd	70·0	1·8	6·0	0·7
October	..	21st	75·2	10th	71·4	1·9	5·2	0·3
November	..	9th & 13th	76·0	6th	69·0	1·9	4·0	0·5
December	..	15th	74·2	30th	64·5	2·7	6·4	1·1
Year	May 21st	78·2	January 14th	61·5	2·4	8·0	0·5
Means of extremes	..	—	76·4	—	69·5	—	4·9	0·9

2. **Solar Radiation.**—Solar radiation is measured by black bulb and bright bulb thermometers *in vacuo*, mounted on posts 4 feet above the ground. The former gives a higher temperature than the latter, because the bright bulb will radiate the heat it receives from the sun more freely. Table B (p. 34) shows the Colombo method of recording the results of the black bulb thermometrical readings. The most modern instrument for measuring the radiation of the sun is Angström's pyrheliometer.

3. **Terrestrial Radiation.**—This is measured by a sensitive spirit minimum thermometer placed on a pad of non-conducting material (a blanket) resting on the ground, so that the bulb part is just prevented from touching the surface. The Colombo readings are to be found in Table C (p. 35).

Terrestrial radiation must not be considered by itself, but together with the presence or absence of clouds in the sky which prevent its action, and reflect the heat back to the earth when present. The condition of the sky in Colombo is given farther on in this chapter.

4. **Earth Temperatures.**—These are taken by Symon's earth thermometer, which is usually placed 1 foot below the surface. But a better plan is to have four thermometers, placed respectively 6 inches, 1 foot, 2 feet, and 4 feet in the ground.

The mean temperature of the earth increases as the depth, but the rate varies very much with geological conditions. Approximately it is placed at 1° C. for every 28 metres, or 1° F. for every yard. This has proved of the greatest importance in the Temperate Zone, for in mines in Cornwall, Belgium, Italy, and elsewhere, agchylostomiasis, which is considered to be a tropical disease, is found, because the heat of some of these mines is quite tropical. This underground temperature must be carefully borne in mind when the question of ventilation of underground sewers in the tropics is considered, otherwise results the reverse from pleasant may ensue. With regard to tropical earth temperatures, Lewis and Cunningham in Calcutta found that they varied with the season. In hot weather the thermometer stood highest in the air, next highest in the upper strata of the soil, and lowest in the lower strata. In cold weather this was reversed; in rain the relations were not constant.

Periodic Variations.

The temperature of a locality shows daily and annual periodic variations. The diurnal variation of temperature is due to the sun's rays falling upon dry earth and heating it; therefore this variation disappears at sea or during an Arctic winter.

Fig. 2 shows the curve of diurnal variation in Colombo, Ceylon; and on studying this, it will be observed that the maximum is reached between 1 and 2 p.m.—*i.e.*, about one and a half hours after the sun has reached its zenith.

The mean daily range of temperature is of great importance, because a considerable difference between day and night makes a climate dangerous if proper precautions are not taken.

Fig. 3 demonstrates the mean daily range of temperature in Colombo, from which it will be noticed that nowhere is the range very great, though it is most marked in December, January, and February, and least in June, July, and August, which is explicable by the proportion of cloud being greater in the latter than in the former months, as is shown in the following table:

AVERAGE PROPORTION OF CLOUDED SKY IN EACH MONTH IN COLOMBO,
DEDUCED FROM THE REGISTERS OF THE PAST 36-37 YEARS.

January..	..	..	..	4.5	July	..	..	..	6.6
February	..	..	..	3.5	August	..	..	..	6.5
March	..	..	..	3.9	September	..	..	..	6.8
April	..	..	..	5.5	October	..	..	..	6.7
May	..	..	..	6.7	November	..	..	..	6.3
June	..	..	..	7.3	December	..	..	..	5.4

Where 1 denotes a perfectly clear sky, and 10. one entirely overcast.

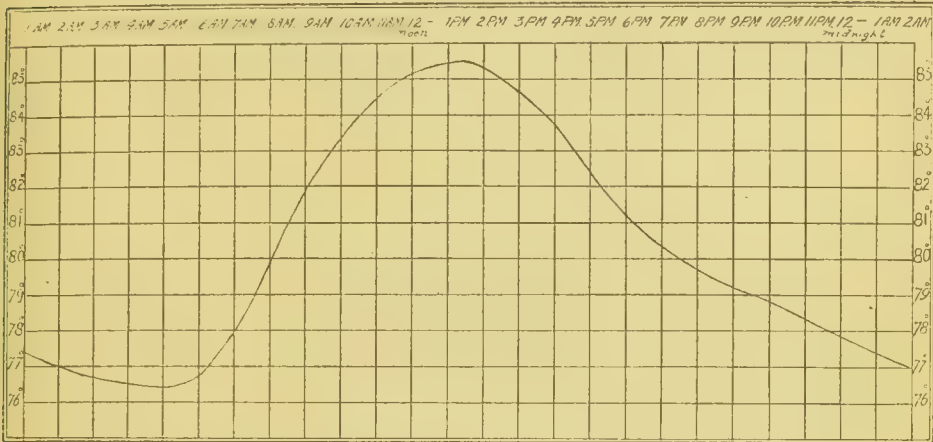


FIG. 2.—DIURNAL TEMPERATURE-CURVE AT COLOMBO.
(Kindly given by the Surveyor-General of Ceylon.)

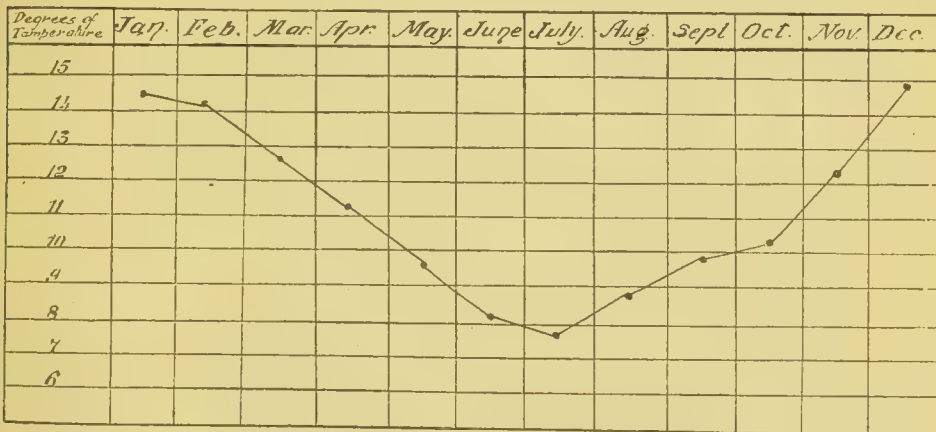


FIG. 3.—MEAN DAILY RANGE OF TEMPERATURE IN COLOMBO.

The Colombo curve may with advantage be compared with that of Jacobabad in Sind (Fig. 4), when the daily range will be seen to be much more considerable.

The annual curve depends largely upon the inclination of the world's axis as it passes round the sun in its yearly orbit. At the spring equinox, about March 21, the earth is so situated that the sun shines vertically upon the Equator at noon, after which its axis alters in position, so that the Northern Hemisphere is inclined more

and more towards the sun, until the summer solstice—about June 22—is reached, when the sun at noon is vertical over the Tropic of Cancer, $23\frac{1}{2}$ degrees north latitude, after which the inclination of the north towards the sun is lessened until about September 24. At the autumn equinox the sun is again vertical on the Equator, after which the Northern Hemisphere inclines away from the sun, until the maximum declination is reached at the winter solstice, about December 22, when the sun is vertical over the Tropic of Capricorn, $23\frac{1}{2}$ degrees south latitude, after which it diminishes, until, on March 21, the sun is again vertical over the Equator.

Hence, in the regions between the two tropics, the sun is vertical in the sky at noon twice a year, at which time there is, or ought to be, a wet season, and in the intervals a dry, hot season.

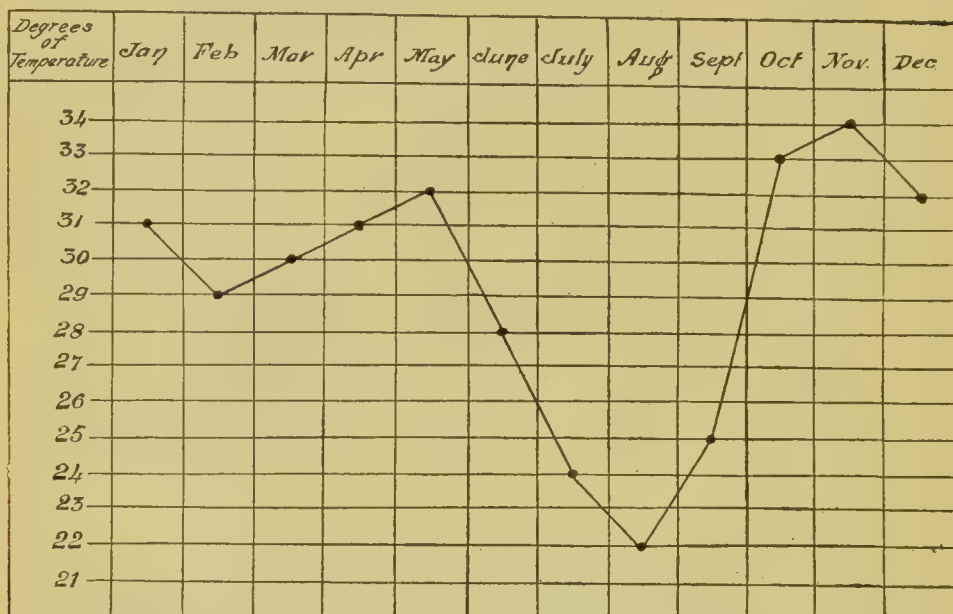


FIG. 4.—MEAN DAILY RANGE OF TEMPERATURE IN JACOBABAD.

The monthly mean temperature of Colombo is depicted in Fig. 5, which shows that, though the extent of the range is small, still, variations do occur. Thus it is seen that in Colombo, with little cloud, the temperature rises towards the March equinox; whereas in September, with much cloud, it is actually falling.

It will further be seen from the following table that March is dry, and that September 24 is approaching the heavy October rains:

MEAN RAINFALL IN COLOMBO FOR THE PAST 36 YEARS.

January	..	..	..	3.56	July	..	..	..	4.51
February	..	..	..	2.10	August	..	..	..	3.59
March	..	..	..	4.70	September	..	..	..	5.19
April	..	..	..	10.90	October	..	..	..	14.67
May	..	..	..	12.08	November	..	..	..	12.18
June	..	..	..	8.17	December	..	..	..	5.87

It is the coincidence of the vertical position of the sun over Colombo, together with the rain at the same time, which makes the irregularity of the curve at the end of the year.

Compare the Colombo curve with that of Jacobabad (Fig. 6), where June, July, and August are the cloudy season, when the small annual rainfall takes place.

Altitude.

Another interesting feature of tropical temperature is its variation with altitude. Herschel pointed out many years ago that for every

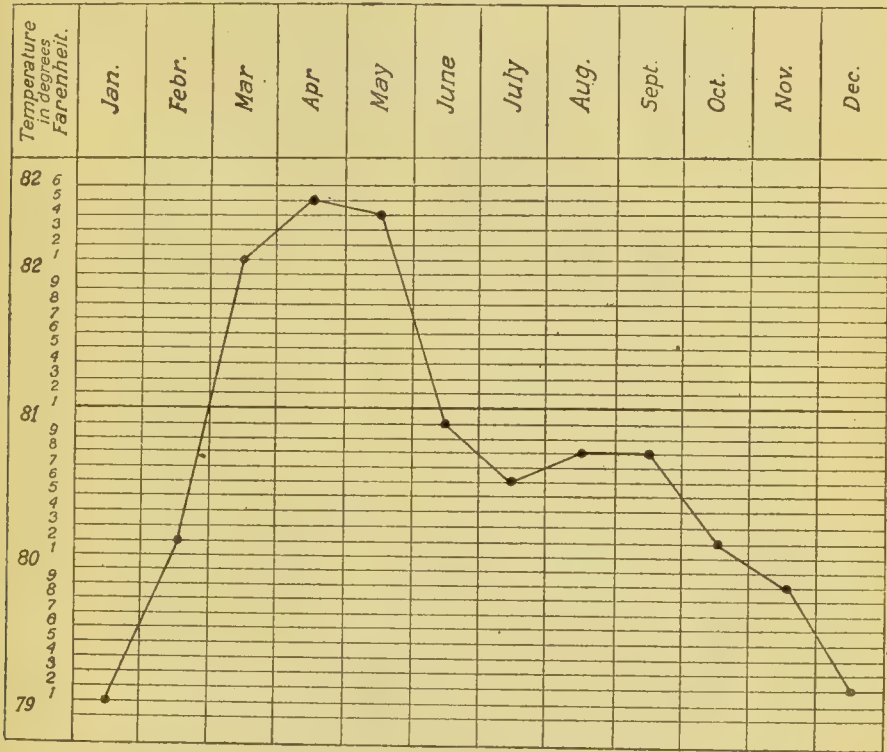


FIG. 5.—MONTHLY MEAN TEMPERATURE OF COLOMBO.

300 feet of increase in altitude there is a decrease of 1° F. in temperature, and for every 180 metres a decrease of 1° C.—facts which, however, are only partially correct, for the temperature at a given altitude depends upon several factors :—

1. Expansion of the air.
2. Humidity of the air.
3. Clearness of the atmosphere.
4. Amount of earth.
5. Winds.

Perhaps of all these the most important is the expansion of air ; for it is well known that, when heated, it expands ; *i.e.*, the energy

represented by heat is converted into motion, and hence the temperature falls. This will in part be counteracted by the heat produced by the condensation of aqueous vapour, even at high altitudes, as will be explained later, and upon this condensation and cloud-formation will depend how much of the heat, radiating from the earth into the air, is retained. The lessened amount of earth in high altitudes is also a factor, as there is less earth to retain heat,

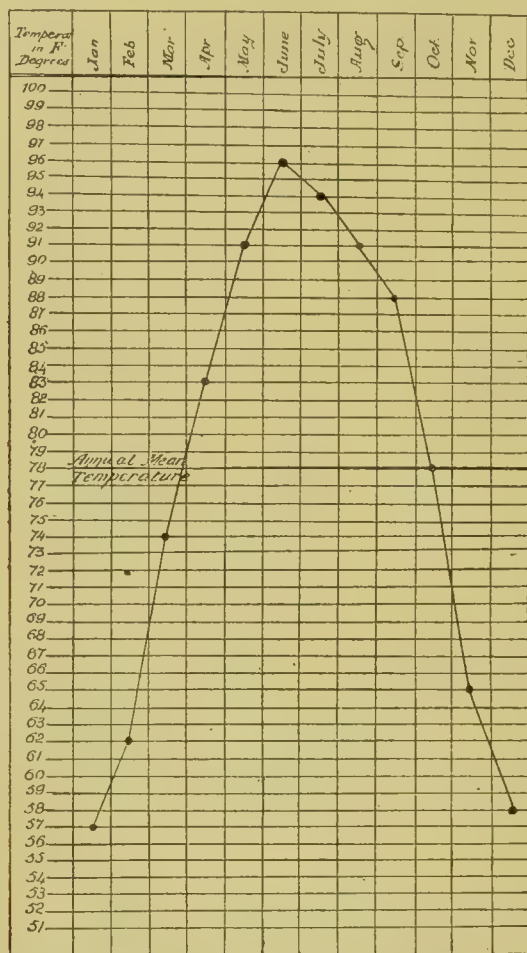


FIG. 6.—MONTHLY MEAN TEMPERATURE OF JACOBABAD.

and hence less heat is given off into the air. It is obvious that movements of the air—the winds—must have a great effect, depending upon their origin from warm or cold sources. Hence, though in general the rule mentioned above as to a relationship between temperature and altitude holds good, it is only approximate, as the connection between the two is complex, not simple.

In the tropics, therefore, the low country possesses the true tropical climate, while the climatological conditions of the hills are

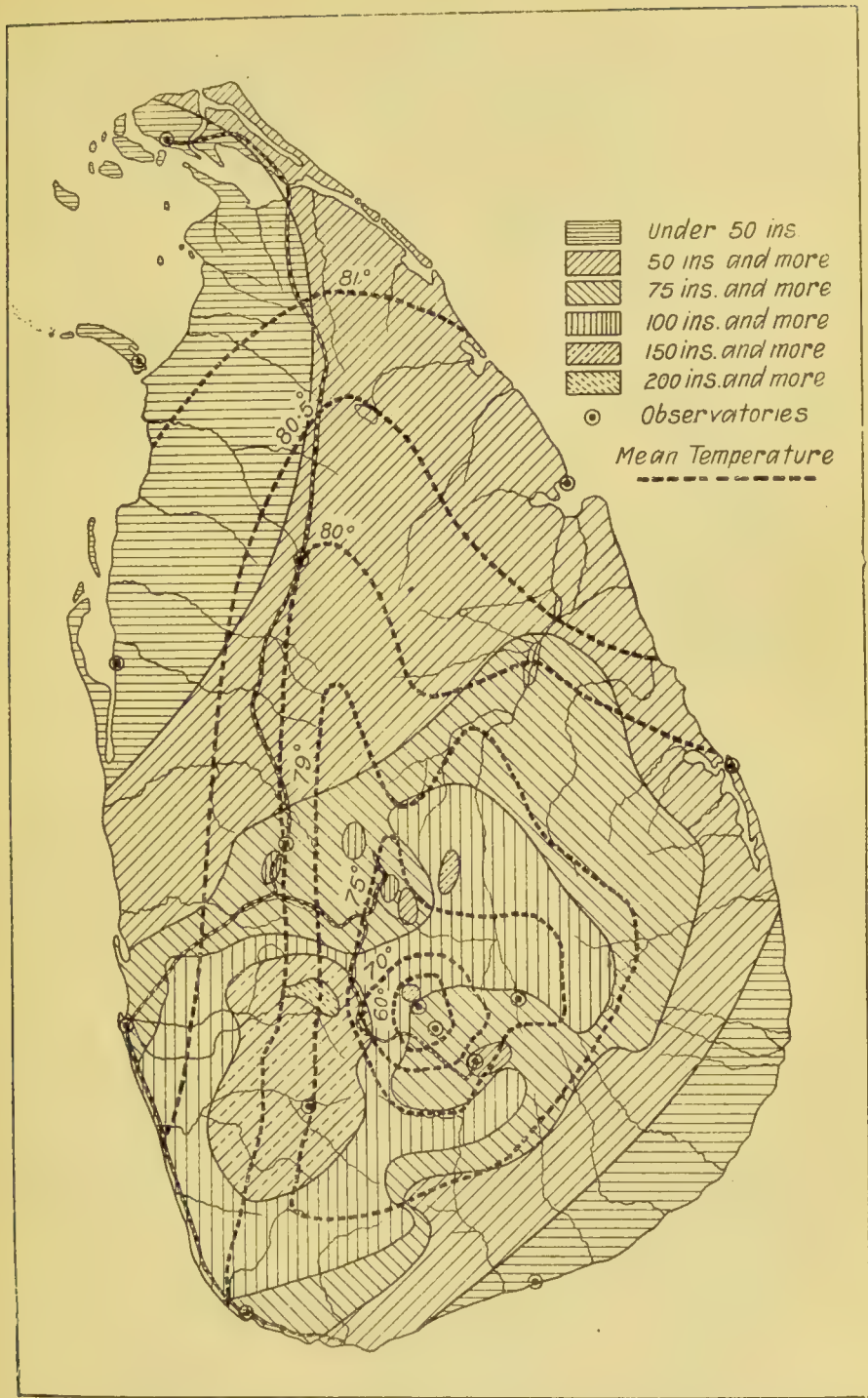


FIG. 7.—MAP OF CEYLON, SHOWING AVERAGE ANNUAL RAINFALL AND ISOTHERMS.

(Modified from a map given by the Surveyor-General of Ceylon.)

quite different. This phenomenon is well demonstrated in Ceylon, which has a low and a hill country, as depicted in Fig. 7.

For this purpose, compare the following tables of the temperature of Kandy, in which the height of the meteorological observatory is 1,654 feet, and of Newera Eliya, which is 6,240 feet, with that of Colombo, which is only 40 feet high.

AVERAGE MONTHLY MEAN TEMPERATURE OF
STATIONS IN CEYLON.

	Colombo (Years 36-37).	Kandy (Years 35-37).	Newera Eliya (Years 35-37).
January	79°1	73°3	56°6
February	80°2	75°1	57°6
March	82°1	77°4	60°8
April	82°5	77°4	60°1
May	82°4	78°5	60°8
June	81°0	75°5	58°1
July	80°6	74°8	57°3
August	80°8	74°9	57°7
September	80°8	74°9	58°0
October	80°2	75°1	58°2
November	79°9	75°2	57°8
December	79°2	73°4	57°2
Average for year	80°7	75°5	58°4

In fact, as Herschel remarked, it is possible in the tropics, if you ascend high enough, to go through every degree of temperature, just as if you proceeded from the Equator to the Poles. This is a factor of importance in a tropical country, enabling people to get into cool weather by going into the hills when the plains are very warm.

But the practitioner must remember that, however beneficial this change may be, a sick person must approach it gradually. For example, if a person just recovering from a severe illness takes a train at 10 p.m. at night in Colombo, in March, with a mean temperature of 82°1° F., and arrives at about 8 a.m. the next morning in Newera Eliya, with a mean temperature of 60°8° F. and a mean minimal temperature of 45° F., the sudden change of temperature is apt to be very dangerous.

PRESSURE.

Atmospheric pressure, which comes next in importance to temperature in meteorology, is measured by means of the barometer; but the reading has to be corrected for many errors—*e.g.*, index error, capacity, capillarity, temperature, and altitude.

When these corrections have been carried out, and the data obtained at different stations scattered all over the world, entered on Mercator's projection, and the points of similar pressure joined together by curves, an isobaric chart is obtained.

The result of this investigation shows that, generally speaking, at sea-level there is high pressure at about 30 degrees north or south of the Equator, and that from this the pressure decreases towards the Equator.

The reason why the pressure is low at the Equator is partially due to the heating of the air by the sun's rays, but more especially to the considerable addition of aqueous vapour to the air in these regions, with the result that it ascends with considerable force, and goes on ascending to very high altitudes, owing to repeated warming from the condensation of aqueous vapour and the liberation of latent heat.

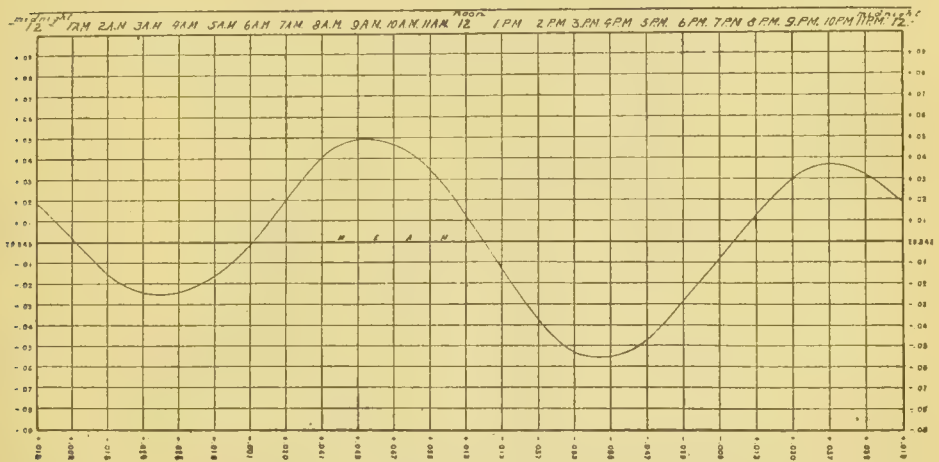


FIG. 8.—DIURNAL BAROGRAPHIC CURVE AT COLOMBO.

Though the pressure at 30 degrees is higher than that at the Equator at sea-level, it is considerably less than at higher altitudes. Consequently air passing upwards from sea-level at the Equator into higher strata will then flow either north or south towards 30 degrees; but as it flows it is compressed as the latitude increases, and hence the current of air flowing polewards becomes narrower and narrower, and finally, owing to this, is forced down by the increasing pressure, until it reaches sea-level at 30 degrees north or south, causing the high pressure about this latitude. This compression is helped by the cooling of the air as it proceeds polewards, and by the centrifugal force of the earth's rotation.

Apart from this general distribution, there are diurnal and annual variations in the pressure. The diurnal variation of pressure is best marked in the tropics, diminishing as the Poles are approached—e.g., at Calcutta it is 0.12 inch, whereas at Greenwich it is only

TABLE D.
MONTHLY MEANS AND EXTREMES OF PRESSURE IN COLOMBO.

Month.	Mean.	9.30 a.m.	3.30 p.m.	Range.	Highest Reading.	Date.	Lowest Reading.	Date.	Absolute Range
January ..	29+	29+	29+	—	29+	—	29+	—	—
February ..	0.911	0.974	0.848	0.126	1.047	1st	0.784	25th	0.263
March ..	0.892	0.957	0.827	0.130	1.019	27th	0.752	19th	0.267
April ..	0.874	0.940	0.809	0.131	1.042	4th	0.717	21st	0.325
May ..	0.852	0.903	0.802	0.101	0.975	27th	0.737	1st	0.238
June ..	0.812	0.861	0.763	0.098	0.935	4th	0.712	10th	0.223
July ..	0.851	0.898	0.804	0.094	0.929	10th	0.763	3rd & 28th	0.166
August ..	0.846	0.889	0.804	0.085	0.926	18th	0.764	16th	0.162
September ..	0.839	0.880	0.798	0.082	0.961	6th	0.739	17th	0.222
October ..	0.850	0.901	0.799	0.102	0.959	16th	0.749	10th	0.210
November ..	0.846	0.899	0.793	0.106	0.954	23rd	0.728	11th	0.226
December ..	0.894	0.954	0.834	0.120	1.023	26th	0.776	11th & 12th	0.247
Year ..	0.867	0.927	0.806	0.121	0.980	25th	0.746	9th	0.234
Means of extremes ..	0.861	0.915	0.807	0.108	1.047	January 1st	0.712	May 10th	0.335
	—	—	—	—	0.979	—	0.747	—	0.232

0.02 inch. The Colombo variation is shown in Fig. 8. The cause of this diurnal variation is the heating of the air by the sun, but there is also another cause, producing, according to Blandford, a variation of 0.1 inch in India, and acting twice daily, the nature of which is not known.

The monthly variations of pressure for Colombo are shown in Table D.

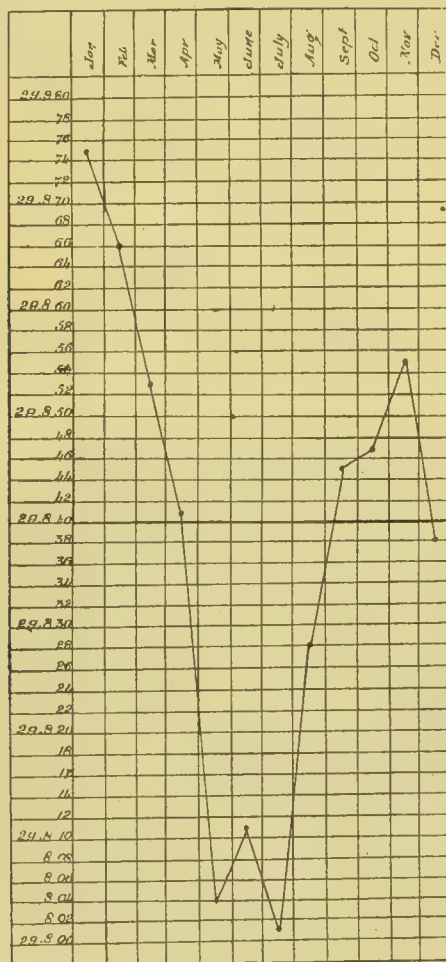


FIG. 9.—AVERAGE MONTHLY MEAN PRESSURE AT COLOMBO.

The cause of these seasonal variations in the pressure is the heating or cooling of the land, which, in the case of Colombo, is associated with the monsoons. Thus, the low pressures occur in the season of the south-west monsoon, May, June, and July (Fig. 9), when air is travelling from high pressure at the Equator to low pressure in the warm plains of Asia; and the high pressures are associated with the north-east monsoon, when air is travelling from the cold plains of Asia, where it is at considerable pressure, towards the Equator, where the pressure is less.

It is obvious that the air will move from regions of high pressure to those of low pressure. These movements of the atmosphere are called 'the winds,' which are the next topic upon which a few remarks must be made.

MOTION OF THE ATMOSPHERE (WINDS).

The movements of the atmosphere called 'winds' may be classified into:—

Permanent Winds.
Periodical Winds.
Variable Winds.
Local Winds.

Permanent Winds.

The hot air of the tropics expands, and rises to great heights, as already explained. By this expansion, air is drawn from the north and the south towards the Equator—in fact, the primary cause



FIG. 10.—DIAGRAM OF THE CIRCULATION OF THE ATMOSPHERE.
(After Ferrell.)

of the motions of the atmosphere is the unequal distribution of heat on the world's surface, for if heat were uniformly distributed there would be no motion of the air.

The general circulation of the atmosphere is shown in Fig. 10, which demonstrates Ferrel's latest ideas. It will be noticed that

the zones of equatorial calms and rains are indicated, as well as the zones of subtropical calms and drought.

The unbroken arrows indicate the surface winds, and the broken arrows the upper currents. The margin of the circle shows a vertical section of the atmosphere in which the arrows indicate the movements. The equatorial area is marked in the centre.

If this figure be carefully examined, it will be seen from the section of the atmosphere on the sides of the figure that the heated air rises over the Equator to high altitudes, and flows to the poles; but at lesser altitudes it descends in the region of subtropical calms, and either passes polewards or to the Equator. Within the area from 0 to 30 degrees there are winds called 'the trades,' which blow from 30 degrees towards the Equator, and which, on reference to Fig. II, can be noted as north-east trades and south-east trades, and it will also be observed that the only portion of the ocean free from them is the North Indian Ocean, where the south-west monsoons occur. The north-east monsoon is really a trade-wind.

Further, it will be noted that as the air moves in opposite directions along the surface in the region of latitude 35 degrees, there is an absence of prevailing winds. These belts of calms are called 'the subtropical belts,' or the calms of Cancer and Capricorn. Again, at the Equator there are calms for the same reason, and these are often called 'the doldrums.'

The trade-winds are only to be seen typically in oceanic regions, where the temperature is equable, and there are no local conditions to cause them to deviate from their course. But they, together with their intermediate zones of calms, shift their positions according to the temperature, having, therefore, different areas in such months as March and September. On an average the north-east trades extend from 7 degrees to 29 degrees north in the Atlantic, and the south-east to 20 degrees south. During the summer they advance a few degrees north, and in the winter recede to the south. In spring the centre of the doldrums is only 1 to 2 degrees north of the Equator, while in summer it is about 9 or 10 degrees north latitude, and, as will be explained later, the tropical rains of certain regions depend upon this movement. Their easterly direction is due to the rotation of the world.

Periodical Winds.

When large tracts of land are heated by the sun at one time of the year and not at another time, the movements of the air are bound to be influenced by this alternate heating and cooling, and the result is that periodical winds are produced.

The most important of these to the student of the tropics are the monsoons. The word is derived from the Arabic word *mansin*, meaning 'a season,' being probably simply a corruption of this term.

A reference to Fig. 11 will show that monsoons are classified into three groups :

1. North-East and South-West Monsoons.
2. North-West and South-East Monsoons.
3. West Monsoon.

1. North-East and South-West Monsoons.—These are typically met with in the Indian Ocean and its coasts.

Dove's explanation of these monsoons is generally accepted—viz., that, owing to heating of the great plains of Asia, where the air ascends in the months of May, June, July, and August, the south-east trade-wind, which is blowing south of the Equator, is drawn northwards, at the same time being deflected to the west, thus forming the south-west monsoon. Conversely, when the plains cool in November, December, January, February, and March, there is a breeze from the north-east towards the Equator, which, though called the north-east monsoon, is really a trade-wind.

The interval between the two monsoons is characterized by changeable winds, which blow alternately in opposite directions—north-east and south-west.

The south-west monsoon is laden with moisture, and on it Southern India largely depends for rain, and a failure will mean a famine, because a large portion of the population is agricultural, for the natives depend for food upon their own cultivation ; and so densely are they placed that a failure to produce their own crops results in a most severe famine, which can only be coped with by the most energetic action of the Government.

2. North-West and South-East Monsoons.—These are to be found in the Southern Hemisphere, and are depicted in Fig. 11 in the region of Australia.

3. West Monsoon.—Dove described as the west monsoon of the line a wind which blows in a south-westerly direction along the coast of Africa from Cape Verde down to Walfisch Bay. These winds, however, are variable, and in the Gulf of Guinea are interrupted very often by calms.

Some people describe the winds along the eastern and western coasts of South America as monsoons, but they hardly come under this term.

Variable Winds.

In the tropics these winds are found in the regions of calms, interposed between the trades in the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans.

The region of equatorial calms does not extend across the oceans, but is broadest on the eastern side, and is very thin in mid-ocean or on the western side, the two trades appearing to meet.

Local Winds.

Local winds are of great importance in the tropics, constituting the so-called land wind, sea-breeze, mountain wind, etc., and several others to be referred to later, to which special local names have been given.

The wind about which a great deal is spoken in every tropical country is 'the land wind.' During the day the land becomes heated by the sun, and causes the air to rise, thus lessening the pressure, and drawing the air from the sea, causing a sea-breeze, which is, of course, very humid. During the night, however, by terrestrial radiation, the land becomes cooler than the sea, and the air travels from the land to the sea, and constitutes the land wind. This wind, as a rule, is dry, and has a very deleterious effect on

men and animals by extracting moisture and abruptly cooling the body, and thereby lowering the resisting-power to disease. Hence the complaints made by old residents about the land breezes. On the other hand, new-comers delight in them, because they are cool.

This land wind is more marked at certain seasons of the year than at others, being particularly felt in Colombo in those months when there is less cloud, because the terrestrial radiation is then more marked. There is, however, nothing like a definite season for a pronounced land wind, for it can take place at any time, only depending upon terrestrial radiation.

A few remarks may be useful with regard to some local winds.

The Sirocco (Italian, *scirocco*).—The sirocco is a south-east wind with a high temperature, which, coming from the high land of North Africa, descends to the Mediterranean, and may reach Malta and some parts of Italy. It is considered to be very enervating.

The Solano.—The solano is a south-easterly wind, blowing from the Sahara into Spain.

The Harmattan.—The harmattan is a hot easterly wind, coming from the Sahara Desert, and carrying dust far out into the Atlantic.

In the months of November to March this wind meets with the north-east trade in its most southerly position, with the result that it is deflected southwards down the west coast of Africa. It is a very dry wind, and therefore extracts moisture from everything it comes across. Hence human beings feel their skin dry and hard, and may suffer from bleeding from the nose and lips, while furniture creaks and groans in a most supernatural manner.

The Khamsin.—The khamsin, or khamseen, is the dust-laden wind which blows from the Sahara into Egypt at intervals during fifty days about Easter-time, and is very disagreeable.

Pamperos.—These are the south-westerly winds of Brazil. Europeans have altered the significance of the name to squally cyclonic winds in the same vicinity.*

Storms.

Besides ordinary winds, cyclonic disturbances called storms occur. Cyclonic storms receive different names in various parts of the world, being called cyclones in India, Ceylon, and Mauritius, hurricanes in the West Indies, typhoons in the China Seas. Mild cyclonic storms met with on the west coast of Africa and elsewhere are called tornadoes.

The air of the tropics is highly charged with electricity, and silent electrical discharges are frequent, causing an increase in the nitric acid in the air, which ruins cover-glasses and lenses. This electrical condition may give rise to thunder-storms, which in most parts of the tropics are very intense, and deaths from lightning not infrequent. The thunder-storms of the tropics are mostly heat-storms, due to great differences in temperature in adjacent masses of air. Hail may fall during a thunder-storm.

HUMIDITY.

Man can bear very high temperatures easily, provided the air is dry, but not if there is much moisture or humidity in it. The humidity of the atmosphere is, in fact, of the utmost importance

* **Ghibli**.—This is a violent S. or S.E. wind blowing in Tripoli. It carries a quantity of sand with it from the desert. In some people it causes irritation of the eyes and conjunctiva, and may induce nervous symptoms, as noted by Gubbi.

in the study of climatic effects upon man. This humidity is due to aqueous vapour, caused by the constant evaporation which takes place from the surface of all collections of water.

The capacity of air to hold water is doubled for every 27° F. increase in temperature, and therefore aqueous vapour is raised in abundance into the air over tropical seas; but aqueous vapour, being lighter than air in the ratio of 0.623 to 1.0, helps it to rise to cold altitudes, where the vapour condenses into small droplets of water, forming mist or cloud. If the droplets become too heavy to remain in the atmosphere, they fall as rain. Condensation sets free latent heat, which warms the surrounding air, and makes it rise to higher altitudes, where condensation and liberation of heat may again take place, and this may be repeated until the cirrus clouds are formed at a height of about five or six miles.

The humidity of the atmosphere, therefore, presents three problems:—

1. How much water is being evaporated?—Atmometry.
2. How much aqueous vapour is there in the air?—Hygrometry
3. How much water is being condensed out of the atmosphere?—Hyetometry.

Evaporation takes place most quickly in hot dry air, and causes a considerable amount of heat to be rendered latent.

This fact can be made use of in hot climates, where it is a common practice to wrap flannel or felt round a bottle of water, and after damping the flannel, to hang the bottle in the breeze, so that the contents may become cooled by the evaporation of the water from the flannel. The same principle applies to the porous stone or earthenware basins which are commonly used in Ceylon, Uganda, Egypt, and other parts of the tropics to filter and cool water. Hence, also, the value of collections of water in keeping the temperature of places equable.

The amount of aqueous vapour in the atmosphere is generally spoken of as the humidity. Two kinds of humidity are recognized: absolute humidity, which is the weight of aqueous vapour actually present in a definite volume of air at a given temperature; and relative humidity, which is the ratio of the weight of water actually present in a known volume of air to the weight of water which is required to saturate the same volume of air at the given temperature, and is generally expressed as a percentage.

We have already stated that the humidity of the air is of the greatest importance in considering the effects of a tropical climate on man. The most trying climate would be one with a high air temperature and a high relative humidity, for it is obvious that when the air is full of aqueous vapour, evaporation from the surface of the human body must be considerably diminished; and as this is one of the methods of regulating the bodily temperature, it is apt to rise and cause great discomfort, as will be described later in the chapter on the effects of climate on man.

A warm place with a high humidity is less bearable than a much hotter but drier place. A fairly high relative humidity can, however, be borne if there is a breeze, without which a much lower humidity is most unbearable. In fact, Giles points out that Abusher, in the Persian Gulf, in August, with a mean maximum temperature of 96.5° F. (35.7° C.), and a relative humidity of 65 per cent., with no rainfall during the month, and little or no breeze, constitutes one of the most unbearable climates in the world, though neither the temperature nor the humidity by themselves are high.

The general conditions in Abusher can be judged from the following table, taken from Giles's 'Climate and Health in Hot Countries':—

Month.				Mean Maximum Temperature.	Mean Minimum Temperature.	Relative Humidity.	Rainfall in Inches.
January	..	..	..	65.2	52.0	79	3.39
February	..	..	..	66.0	52.5	80	2.51
March	..	..	..	72.6	58.2	72	0.87
April	..	..	..	84.6	66.1	61	0.58
May	..	..	..	89.8	75.3	60	0.02
June	...	..	..	92.2	80.3	61	—
July	..	..	..	95.5	84.0	65	—
August	..	..	..	96.5	83.6	64	—
September	..	..	..	94.2	78.8	65	—
October	..	..	..	87.9	70.7	65	—
November	..	..	..	78.0	62.1	74	2.16
December	..	..	..	69.7	55.5	73	3.98

Colombo, in Ceylon, which lies at sea-level, has a bearable climate, with the following conditions, which with advantage may be compared with those of Abusher:—

Month.				Mean Maximum Temperature.	Mean Minimum Temperature.	Relative Humidity.	Rainfall in Inches.	Average Diurnal Velocity of the Wind in Miles.
January	..	..	..	86.8	72.2	77	3.56	146.7
February	..	..	..	87.4	73.0	76	2.10	157.7
March	..	..	..	89.3	76.6	76	4.70	131.7
April	..	..	..	87.8	76.7	77	10.90	122.1
May	..	..	..	87.2	77.6	81	12.08	213.5
June	..	..	..	86.0	77.9	81	8.17	249.9
July	..	..	..	86.4	78.6	81	4.51	223.1
August	..	..	..	87.5	78.7	82	3.59	218.9
September	..	..	..	86.1	76.2	79	5.19	288.5
October	..	..	..	85.5	75.1	81	14.67	176.6
November	..	..	..	87.4	75.1	81	12.18	147.5
December	..	..	..	88.2	73.2	78	5.87	208.3

Compare this, again, with the figures for Newera Eliya, the sanatorium of Ceylon, situated some 6,240 feet above sea-level:—

Month.	Mean Maximum Temperature.	Mean Minimum Temperature.	Relative Humidity.	Rainfall in Inches.	Average Diur- nal Velocity of the Wind in Inches.
January ..	67·7	45·3	82	5·38	81
February ..	70·4	44·4	77	2·15	86
March ..	72·2	45·0	75	2·97	78
April ..	69·4	51·4	81	6·10	75
May ..	68·4	54·6	84	7·69	92
June ..	67·2	53·5	91	13·64	153
July ..	66·0	51·5	89	11·76	147
August ..	67·2	54·5	89	8·14	125
September ..	67·1	53·4	89	8·26	112
October ..	68·0	51·7	88	10·61	98
November ..	67·3	54·9	87	8·80	75
December ..	66·9	48·1	86	8·53	77

It will be observed that, notwithstanding its high relative humidity, Newera Eliya has a low temperature, due to its altitude, and a very fair rainfall, and consequently makes a most admirable hill-station for Ceylon.

Note particularly the difference between Colombo and Newera Eliya for February, March, and April, which are the hottest months for the former town, whereas the latter forms an excellent climate for European ladies and children at that season.

The monsoon bursting about May 24 cools Colombo considerably, and the need for residence in Newera Eliya is ended for the year ; this is a fortunate circumstance, for the rainfall there in June is considerable.

Ceylon, however, is well provided, for the ranges of hills stop the rain, and at Bandarawella and Diyatalawa, a few miles from Newera Eliya, it is fine at this time of the year, and a second sanatorium is available.

The climate of Diyatalawa, once a camp for Boer prisoners, and now a naval and military sanatorium, is as follows (altitude, 4,500 feet) :—

Month.	Mean Maximum Tempera- ture.	Mean Minimum Tempera- ture.	Relative Humidity	Rainfall in Inches.	Average Diurnal Velocity of the Wind.
January	69·8	57·9	82	8·00	145·5
February	74·8	53·3	70	2·22	157·6
March	79·7	53·9	67	2·07	131·1
April	79·6	57·9	77	6·92	120·9
May	77·8	62·4	74	5·36	213·1
June	75·2	62·3	70	2·06	249·4
July	76·1	61·7	67	1·24	223·6
August	79·0	61·4	66	2·46	218·1
September	76·0	61·5	73	3·87	290·2
October	74·7	60·7	78	11·47	177·3
November	73·0	58·7	85	10·20	147·8
December	70·3	58·3	83	6·63	207·0

Another comparison, taken from Giles, may with advantage be considered—viz., Old Calabar, on the west coast of Africa :—

Month.	Mean Maximum Tempera- ture.	Mean Minimum Tempera- ture.	Relative Humidity.	Rainfall in Inches	Number of Rainy Days
January	90	68	78·8	2·68	1
February	94	72	78·1	6·69	5
March	94	71	81·6	7·70	8
April	93	71	75·8	11·01	10
May	94	75	77·6	10·95	19
June	92	71	84·4	32·59	22
July	90	70	85·8	13·61	25
August	86	70	88·2	6·39	15
September	92	70	85·7	11·84	25
October	91	70	82·6	9·38	17
November	91	71	83·6	11·34	12
December	89	70	83·6	1·32	1

When the mean maximal temperature and the relative humidity are compared together, it is not astonishing that certain regions of West Africa are very trying to the human constitution.

As an example of a place with a low relative humidity and a high maximum temperature and very little rain, the following data concerning Omdurman, taken from Giles, may be quoted :—

Month.	Mean Maximum Temperature.	Mean Minimum Temperature.	Relative Humidity.	Rainfall in Inches
January	88·5	62·6	24	—
February	94·5	70·2	28	—
March	99·7	—	19	—
April	103·7	72·5	14	—
May	112·0	79·0	20	—
June	106·2	77·4	46	0·63
July	103·9	79·3	48	0·50
August	99·0	77·7	58	0·13
September	104·5	81·0	40	—
October	103·2	79·5	30	0·32
November	96·7	72·4	24	—
December	91·2	65·5	28	—

When the aqueous vapour in the atmosphere condenses, the result may be dew, fog, mist, cloud, rain, hail, or snow, of which the two last are rare in the tropics.

Clouds in the sky prevent to a great extent the heating of the earth during the day, and at the same time they prevent radiation of heat from the earth during the night, and even reflect this back to it. Hence cloudy nights may be very hot in the tropics.

RAINFALL.

The key to the distribution of tropical rain is the region of equatorial calms, called the doldrums, and the trade-winds, which exist to the north and south of these regions.

As already stated, the whole system of trades and calms moves from the Equator northwards about 5 to 8 degrees, or southwards 3 to 4 degrees of latitude. This movement is dependent upon the inclination of the axis of the earth towards the sun, though not coincident with it. They are, therefore, farthest towards the north in July, and towards the south in January.

A locality may lie—

- (1) Within the rain-belt in both of its extreme positions.
- (2) Just within the equatorial boundary of the rain-belt in its farthest position polewards.
- (3) Just within the polar boundary of the rain-belt in its farthest position polewards.
- (4) Between (2) and (3).
- (5) Beyond (3).

1. Places within the Two Positions of the Rain-Belt.

These are equatorial, and are always more or less subject to rain and cloud, because the heated air is full of aqueous vapour brought by the trade-wind from the sea. When this very humid air rises to high altitudes, it becomes cooled, and therefore the moisture condenses as cloud and rain.

Again, these regions are subject to alternate seasons of wind and calm—*e.g.*, in January they will be subject to the north-east trades, followed by a period of calm; and in July to south-east trades, succeeded by a period of calm. These places will therefore have two short wet seasons and two short dry seasons.

Such a place is Ceylon, and its conditions of rain and cloud can be easily understood by referring to the tables of rainfall and cloud distribution already given for Colombo.

Other similar places are South India and Java in Asia, Columbia in South America, and parts of the Nile Basin and the Gold Coast in Africa.

2. Places just within the Equatorial Boundary of the Rain-Belt in its farthest Position Polewards.

The inclination of the North Pole towards the sun begins on March 21, and ceases on September 24. The shifting of the rain-belt northwards begins some time after the first date, and ends some time after the last date, for it lags behind. A locality situated in this position will, therefore, be in the belt for six months. Therefore in such places there will be six months' rain and six months' drought. Those places are Bengal, the Nile Basin, Northern Australia, and Central America.

3. Places just within the Polar Boundary of the Rain-Belt in its farthest Position Polewards.

These places have a short wet season lasting only three months, and a long dry season lasting nine months. Such places are the Punjaub, Upper Burma, Mexico, Central Australia. In the Punjaub, for example, there are three seasons—(1) Hot season : April to June. (2) Wet season : June to September. (3) Cold season : September to April.

4. Places between (2) and (3).

These places will vary from the maximum of six months rain to the minimum of three months.

5. Places situate just outside the Polar Boundaries of the Rain-Belt.

These places lie from about 20 to 35 degrees north or south latitude, and are among the driest in the world, except in India, where the south-west monsoon brings a little rain into the dry regions of the Punjaub and Sind.

The worst places are the dry zones of California and other parts of North America, the Sahara and Nubian Deserts, parts of Arabia and Persia, Argentina, Eastern Patagonia, South-West Africa, and the interior of Australia. The only rain these regions are likely to get will come from the extension equatorially of the polar winds.

If these conditions of rainfall in the tropics are clearly understood, they form the key to tropical climatology, for it will be seen that the wettest, as well as the driest, places in the world are found in them.

It must, however, be remembered that ranges of mountains are most important in determining the rainfall of a locality by stopping the clouds, and leading to further condensation of the moisture as rain. The influence of hills is well shown in Fig. 7 of the Ceylon rainfall, taken from the Surveyor-General's report.

The driest places in the world are in Africa, in the neighbourhood of the Sahara; but India shows the extremes of dry and wet climates best. Jacobabad, according to Blandford, has an average annual rainfall of $4\frac{1}{2}$ inches, which in some years is less than 1 inch; whereas Cherrapunji, in the Khasi Hills in Assam, has an annual fall of from 500 to 600 inches per annum.

In Ceylon the wettest place recorded is Padupola, which, with an elevation of 1,606 feet, has a rainfall of 230.50 inches as an average of thirty-five years' observations.

But it is not merely the average rainfall which is so excessive in the tropics, but the rate at which it comes down; *e.g.*, according to Blandford, on June 14, 1876, no less than 40.8 inches of rain fell at Cherrapunji in twenty-four hours. The excessive violence of tropical rain can be explained by the fact that at 20° F. air takes up 1.3 grains of water per cubic foot; at 60° F., 5.77 grains; at 85° F., 12.78 grains. Further, when air saturated at 85° F. is cooled to 60° F., every cubic foot will yield 7 grains of water (Hill).

SUBDIVISIONS OF WARM CLIMATES.

It has been shown that warm climates may be defined by using one climatic factor—the temperature—and can further be subdivided by this into the tropics and the subtropics.

Ward has recently subdivided these regions by utilizing the winds and the rainfall into—

1. The equatorial belt.
2. The trade-wind belts.
3. The monsoon belts.
4. The mountain climates.

The equatorial belt extends about 10 degrees on either side of the Equator, and is characterized by its temperature, showing two maxima corresponding to the two zeniths of the sun, and two minima corresponding to the two solstices, and should have two wet and two dry seasons.

In this belt lie such places as Singapore and Batavia, which are fairly healthy, and the west and east coasts of Africa, which are very trying.

The trade-wind and monsoon belts have already been considered, as have the mountain climates.

Psycho-Physical Aspects of Climate.

Tyler has attempted to correlate personal sensations with meteorological data under the term 'Psycho-Physical Aspects of Climate,' and says that his 'hyther' degrees—by which he means the degree of discomfort caused by high air temperatures associated with high relative humidity—are the best methods of comparing climates.

REFERENCES.

- ABBÉ (1888). *Treatise on Meteorological Apparatus and Methods*. Washington.
- ANGOT (1899). *Traité de Météorologie Élémentaire*. Paris.
- ARCHIBALD (1901). *The Story of the Atmosphere*. (A clear, simple account of the atmosphere.)
- BARTHOLOMEW (1899). *Atlas of Meteorology*. Edinburgh.
- BLANDFORD (1889). *Climates and Weather of India and Ceylon*.
- DAINELLI (1910). *Climatologia dell' Eritrea*.
- DOVE. *Klimatologische Beiträge*.
- ELLIOTT (1906). *Climatological Atlas of India*.
- EREDIA (1912). *Climatologia di Tripoli e Bengari*.
- FERREL (1889). *Winds*. New York.
- GILES. *Climate and Health in Hot Countries*. (An excellent account of the climate, with data of many tropical places.)
- GUILLAUME (1889). *Thermométrie*. Paris.
- HAHN (1903). *Handbook of Climatology*, translated by Ward. New York.
- HUGGARD (1906). *A Handbook of Climatic Treatment*. London.
- KNOX, A. (1911). *The Climate of the Continent of Africa*. (A most useful book.) Cambridge.
- LOMBARD (1877-80). *Traité de Climatologie Médicale*. Paris.
- LOOMIS (1868). *Treatise on Meteorology*.

- MARRIOTT (1903). Hints to Meteorological Observers. (A very valuable little book.)
 MOHN (1879). Grundzüge der Meteorologie. Berlin.
 MOORE (1894). Meteorology.
 PLEHN (1906). Tropenhygiene. (Climates in German colonies.)
 SANDWITH (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene, x. 361. (Hill-
 Stations and Health Resorts in the British Tropics.)
 SCOTT (1883). Elementary Meteorology.
 SUPAN (1903). Grundzüge der physischen Erdkunde. Leipzig.
 TYLER (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene, x. 130. (Psycho-
 physical Aspects.)
 WALDO (1893). Modern Meteorology. (A good account of instruments and
 winds.)
 WARD (1908). Climate. London.
 WILD. Repertorium für Meteorologie.

Bibliography of Meteorology.

- A Classed Catalogue of the Printed Literature of Meteorology from the
 Origin of Printing to the Close of 1881, and a Supplement to the End
 of 1887. Washington. 1889-91.

Current Literature.

- Meteorologische Zeitschrift, Vieweg, Braunschweig.

Reports of Tropical Meteorology.

- ALGERIA. Observations Météorologiques. Paris.
 BARBADOES. Practitioner, 1878. Climate of Barbadoes.
 BRAZIL. Anuario publicada pelo Observatorio do Rio de Janeiro Imprensa
 Nacional Rio de Janeiro.
 BRITISH COLONIES. Symon's Meteorological Magazine (monthly). (Data
 concerning a number of colonies.)
 CEYLON. Administration Reports: Meteorology. Yearly. The Climate of
 Ceylon, by Dr. W. H. de Silva. British Medical Journal, 1907.
 EGYPT AND THE SOUDAN. Climate. H. G. Lyons. British Medical Journal, 1910.
 FIJI. Meteorological Observations taken at Suva. (Yearly.)
 GERMAN COLONIES. Medizinal Berichte über die deutschen Schutzgebiete
 Deutsch Ost Africa, Kamerun, Toga, Deutsch Sud-West Africa, New
 Guinea, Karolinem, Marshall Inseln und Samoa.
 HONG-KONG. Climate of Hong-Kong. Journal of Royal Army Medical
 Corps. Vol. I. No. 1.
 INDES NEERLANDUISES. Observations Météorologiques de l'Institute
 Botanique de l'État de Buitenzorg. (Yearly.)
 INDIA.—(a) *Calcutta*. Annual Meteorological Report of Government of India.
 (There are numerous reports issued in Calcutta on Rainfall, the Monsoon,
 Weather, etc.) (b) *Madras*. Annual Report of the Kodaikanal and
 Madras Observatories.
 INDO-CHINA. Twenty-one stations. Hanoi Bulletine Économique, publié
 par la Direction de l'Agriculture et du Commerce. Cape St. Jaques,
 Pnom-feuk, Saigon, Pould-Condore, Ong-Yem, Soetrang, Pursat, Kam-
 pob, Ballambang, Padaran, Nhatrang, Quinlion, Qwangngai.
 MANILA. Observatorio Mensual. (Spanish.)
 MAURITIUS. Annual Report of the Director of the Royal Alfred Observatory.
 MEXICO. Mensual del Observatoria Meteorotoque de Mexico.
 PHILIPPINE ISLANDS. The Climate of the Philippine Islands in Bulletin
 No. 2, Census of the Philippine Islands.
 QUEENSLAND. Queensland Gazette.
 SEYCHELLES. Annual Report of the Medical Department. Chapter II. and
 Annexure II., Meteorology.
 TRIPOLI. Rapporti Coloniali. Ministera Colonie Roma.
 URUGUAY. Boletin Mensual del Collegio Pio de Villa Colon. Montevideo.
 WESTERN AUSTRALIA. The Climate of Western Australia from 1876 to 1899,
 by Cooke. Perth, 1901.

CHAPTER III

TROPICAL RACES

General remarks—Classification—Caucasic division—Ethiopic division—Mongolic division—Amerind division—References.

General Remarks.—In the preceding chapter we have cursorily glanced at the subject of Tropical Climatology, and now we turn our attention very briefly to the subject of the tropical races.

From geological, zoological, and botanical considerations there can be little doubt that in early tertiary times there existed an Indo-African continent where, at present, the Indian Ocean lies. This continent, embracing the Deccan, Madagascar, and South Africa, is more extensive than Sclater's Lemuria, and is now known as Gondwanaland.

This Indo-African continent may, for many reasons, have been the site of the primitive home of the human race, and indeed it was in Java that Dubois found those remarkable teeth, calvarium and femur, which to-day are recognized as belonging to *Pithecanthropus erectus* Dubois 1891, which, geologically, belongs more probably to the early Pleistocene rather than to the Tertiary Pliocene, as was at one time considered possible. These remains belong either to a very early form of man or to an immediate precursor.

Once evolved, there can be no doubt that the main factor in man's further evolution has been the development of the brain, and this may have been stimulated by his remarkable migrations, for, driven by food requirements, geological, or meteorological disturbances, man migrated from his primeval home and spread westwards into Africa, where, in the then fertile and well-watered northern regions of the Sahara, Caucasian man probably evolved. He also migrated northwards into Asia, evolving there the common ancestor of Mongolic-Amerind man, which eventually formed Mongolic man in Asia, while the further migration into America gave rise to Amerind man. Migrations from the south were easier in those days, because the Himalayas were much lower than they are to-day.

In the meanwhile the non-migrating common ancestor may have evolved into Ethiopic man, who was eventually compelled by the

subsidence of the land to migrate westwards into Africa and eastwards into Oceania.

With regard to these early migrations, it must not be forgotten that the climatic conditions were probably very different from those of to-day, and, as it was a warm interglacial period, were distinctly favourable to these movements; while the abundant land connections of Africa to Europe, Asia to America, and America to Europe, of those days materially facilitated them. Neither must it be forgotten that these migrations, as well as subsequent migrations, were not single, but multiple, taking place in successive waves, and spread over a long space of time.

When considering the different divisions of mankind in greater detail, it will be noted that they spread from their original homes in various directions and at various times, until the whole world was populated.

The first dispersal of man over the globe must have resembled the migrations of animals in that it must have been performed unconsciously under the influence of the factors just mentioned, though it is possible that the food factor was the most potent, because, as Seligmann has pointed out, the hunting man of to-day requires a relatively large area in which to obtain his food, and it is equally possible that primeval man soon found that a given district was unable to feed his rapidly increasing family or tribe. Under these circumstances the family or tribe in question would move into a more suitable region. When man became more evolved migrations would still take place under compulsion as described above, but might also have taken place under the influences of attraction or expulsion, by which one means that a powerful tribe might be attracted to an area held by a weaker tribe, which latter would be compelled to submit to the conquerors or to migrate to some other area. If the weaker tribe remained with the stronger, there would possibly be a race fusion, as has so often taken place all over the world, and a new mixed race would appear, or the two races might live together with little fusion. During these early times must have appeared many of the diseases, especially the infectious diseases, which to-day afflict mankind, but what part the disease factor played in these migrations we do not know. What part epidemic parasitic diseases have played in evolution cannot be stated, but that they must have played some part in the extinction of animals seems possible; and it appears also possible that parasites transferred from animals to man at this period by the agency of blood-sucking insects, etc., may have formed the basis of certain of the diseases of man to-day.

These migrations must have been delayed or stopped by meeting with natural barriers, such as deserts, dense forests, or broad expanses of water; and probably at these places settlements would be made, from which reflux migrations into parts originally occupied, or passed through, might arise, due again to the influence of the factors above mentioned.

In this way tribes, now modified by selection, environment, etc. re-entered the districts through which they had originally passed, and, finding them more or less occupied by differently evolved peoples, brought about fusion of the early divisions and subdivisions of mankind. And thus at an early period arose the first of these race fusions which are ethnologically so confusing to-day. One factor in these early refluxes must be mentioned, and this is the changed meteorological conditions brought about at the Glacial period or periods, for during these man must have been driven towards the Equator, while in the intervals he could wander polewards.

These early migrations and refluxes must have acted as potent stimuli to the already rapidly evolving brain of man, but this evolution does not appear to have gone on equally all over the world, in fact, it is in the so-called *Culture Zone*, situate between 25° and 50° north latitude, that brain development began to be highly specialized. In the eastern part of this region arose the Accadians, the Egyptians, and the early Cretans, from whom all the culture of Europe, Asia, and Africa evolved; and separately in the west the Mexicans, Peruvians, Columbians, and inhabitants of Yucatan, whose advance was ended once for all by the Spanish conquests, leaving only the culture of Accadian, Egyptian, and Cretan origin to supply the world with knowledge.

In other regions man has lagged far behind; indeed, in New Guinea and in other places we have the native peoples just emerging from a contemporary Stone Age side by side with the newly migrated and highly cultured Caucasian.

The tropical regions of to-day have therefore a most curious and most complex congeries of mankind. First, the indigenous inhabitants or natives of the land in question, together with the descendants of peoples arising from the intermingling of the original native race with other races brought thither by migrations of long ago; secondly, peoples whose native habitat is a temperate or cold climate, and who are derived from the quite recent and still continuing Caucasian migration; and, thirdly, the half-castes, derived from the intermingling of these Caucasian races and the native races.

From the above it will be comprehended that the study of the ethnology of man in the tropics is indeed complex, but some elementary knowledge of the origin and relationships of the people among whom he is to work may be of use to the practitioner in the tropics, and therefore we give the following brief classification, leaving anyone interested in this subject an opportunity of further study by means of the works mentioned in the references at the end of the chapter.

Classification.—All classifications are more or less artificial, and based upon the generally accepted knowledge of the day, and are therefore ephemeral, and the various classifications, suggested by Bernier in 1684, Linnæus in 1735, 1740, and 1758, Blumenbach in 1775, Virey in 1801, Des Moulins in 1825-26, Bory de Saint-

Vincent in 1827, Agassiz in 1850 and 1853, Isidore Geoffroy Saint-Hilaire in 1858, Pruner Bey in 1863, Haeckel in 1873, Broca and Topinard in 1885, Flower in 1885, Deniker in 1889, and, finally, Keane in 1895, form no exception to this rule.

The most useful classification is that of Keane, in which the human species is divided into four divisions—viz. :—

The Caucasian Division.

The Ethiopic or Negroid Division.

The Mongolic Division.

The Amerind Division.

We will now briefly consider these divisions.

Caucasic Division.

This division of man is thought to have evolved in Northern Africa at a time when the Sahara was a well-watered and inhabitable region.

Characters.—The characters of Caucasian man are :—*Height*, average or above the average; *colour*, florid or pale; *hair*, long, wavy, soft, and flaxen, or long, straight, wiry, and black, in either case oval on transverse section; *skull*, dolichocephalic or brachycephalic; *eyes*, moderately large, straight, blue or black; *nose*, straight or arched leptorrhine; *cheek-bones*, small; *jaws*, orthognathous; *teeth*, small; *beards*, full. Three types are recognized of these physical characters: the Nordic, with cephalic index 74-99, and blue or grey eyes, fair hair, and height 5 feet 8 inches to 6 feet; the Alpine, with cephalic index 80-90, brown or black eyes, dark hair, and height 5 feet 5 inches to 5 feet 6 inches; the Mediterranean, with cephalic index 72-78, black eyes, black hair, and height 5 feet 4 inches to 5 feet 6 inches. *Speech*, inflecting—e.g., the Hamitic, Semitic, and Aryan languages—except in some instances, when it is agglutinating—e.g., Basque; *temperament*, active, enterprising, and imaginative. *Medicine* varies from the highly evolved European medicine to the primitive Oceanic medicine.

Migrations.—From his Saharic home the primitive Caucasian man wandered in Palæolithic and Neolithic times eastwards into the Valley of the Nile and on into Asia, where he met Mongolic man, and later into Southern Asia, and so into Oceania, reaching, as we shall presently see, its farthest islands. He also wandered northwards in successive migrations across the bridges between Africa and Europe, where he was succeeded by the early race to which belong the Cannstadt cranium found in 1700, the Neanderthal cranium found in 1856, the Spy cranium found in 1886, the skeleton of *Homo primigenius* found in 1908 in the Valley of Vézère, and the various skeletons and skulls found in 1909. All these skulls belong to the type called 'Neanderthaloid,' after their best-known member, and are considered by some authorities as not belonging to *Homo sapiens*, but to a separate species—*H. primigenius* (*H. neanderthalensis*)—which is approached to-day most closely by the Australian type. This earlier type was followed by more highly evolved Caucasian types, as, for example, the Cro-Magnon race of the French anthropologists found at Les Eyzies in Périgord. It is almost certain that these early peoples did not speak an Aryan language, but more probably a language allied to that of the Berbers, and therefore to the present Basque language. In Asia a fusion took place of certain Caucasian races with Mongols, forming the Turkoman and many Tatar peoples, such as the Uzbeg Tatars.

In both prehistoric and historic times there have been migrations of Semitic Caucasians from Asia into Africa, of which the most important were the Arabic migrations, which have produced a great impression on the peoples of Northern and Eastern Africa.

In recent times migrations of the highly evolved types of Caucasians have taken place from Europe into America, Oceania, Asia, and Africa, and to-day new races are arising from the fusion of native races with Spaniards and Portuguese in America, with Dutch in South Africa, and with French in Indo-China. It is, however, a curious sociological trait of the Anglo-Saxon not to amalgamate with the aborigines of the land into which he has migrated.

Population.—At the present time the Caucasian division is estimated to number 770,000,000 of the 1,570,000,000 of peoples which are supposed to inhabit the world, but there can be no doubt that this division is rapidly increasing in numbers. These 770,000,000 are distributed as follows:

Europe, 355,000,000; Asia, 280,000,000; America, 115,000,000; Africa, 15,000,000; Oceania, 5,000,000.

Classification.—Ethnologically, Caucasian man may be classified into the Xanthochroi and the Melanochroi, while an early wave passing across Asia gave rise to the Indonesians, which type is difficult to define, though Haddon considers that its least modified representatives are to be found among the dolichocephalids of the forests of Borneo.

THE XANTHOCHROI, or fair subdivision, is characterized by possessing light hair and light-coloured eyes. It contains the modern Europeans, who can be subdivided into the Teutonic branch, consisting of Germans, Dutch, Anglo-Saxons, and Norse races, and the Slavic branch, consisting of Russians, Poles, Serbs, Bulgars (in part), and Croats. It is the Teutonic branch which has supplied many of the peoples of the recent Caucasian invasion of the tropics.

THE MELANOCHROI, or dark subdivision, has long, straight, wiry black hair, black eyes, and only average height, while their characters are fiery, impulsive, and fickle. For the present purposes the Melanochroi may be subdivided into Hamites, Semites, Hindus, and Dravidians.

The Hamites may be further divided into a western division and an eastern division. The Western Hamites are the Berbers, sometimes referred to as Libyans, who are spread from the Canary Isles in the West to the Oasis of Siva in the east, and from the Mediterranean in the north to the Senegal River and southern boundaries of the Sahara in the south.

The original strain of the Berbers has become altered by admixture with Arab blood in the north and negro blood in the south. In the north they have suffered much from the irruptions of Phœnicians, Romans, Greeks, Vandals, Arabs, and the European nations of to-day.

Two important sections of the Berbers must be recognized—the Agriculturists, as, for example, the Kabyles of Mauretania, who live settled lives, and the Nomads, represented by the Tuaregs of the Sahara. Tracing the various groups of true and mixed Berbers from west to east, there are first of all the Guanches, or original inhabitants of the Canary Isles, who show an affinity to these peoples; then the Trarza and Brakna of the Coast Sahara just north of the Senegal River, who have a negro strain. The Moors of Morocco must be considered to be Berbers with a strong Arabic

strain. The principal groups of these are the Riffians of the north of Morocco, the Brâbers of the Atlas, the Shluh of Western Morocco, the Sus between the great and small Atlas, and the Tafilat to the south of the Atlas ; but the last two have a negroid strain, as have the Wargla. East of these come the Kabyles of Jurjura and the Shauia of Aurès, who are interesting because, according to authors, some of them have chestnut hair and grey eyes. The Uled-Nails of the Biskra district are mixed Berbers and Semites.

South of the territories of these peoples are the interesting veiled Tuaregs, with their centre in the Hagggar Mountains, and their division into Asgers (Asjars) in the east, Haggars (Ahaggars) in the west, and Kelowis in the south ; and Awehmmiden on the Central Niger. The veil, or *litham*, is used to protect them from the wind-blown sand of the desert. In the south of Algeria there are mixed Berbers, Arabs, and negroes, such as the Beni-Mزاب, the Wargla, and other inhabitants of the oases. The Shaamba are Berbers between the south of Tunis and the west of Tripoli. In Tripoli itself there are Berbers mixed with Semites. South of these and east of the Tuaregs lies Tibesti, the headquarters of the Tibus, who are now Mohammedans with a slight mixture of Paganism. Far south there are the Fulahs, who are Berbers with a great admixture of negro blood, who are dispersed among the Sudanese negroes. They took their origin on the Senegal, but later invaded the Hausa States and formed the Empire of Sokoto (*vide* Fig. 14).

The eastern division of the Hamites includes the Egyptians, the Abyssinians, and the so-called Ethiopians or Nubians. The Egyptians of to-day exist as the Christian Kopts and the Mohammedan Fellahîn. The Ethiopians include the Bejas or Bisharû, of the land between the Red Sea and the Nile ; the Afar or Danakil, between Abyssinia and the Gulf of Aden ; the Somals of Somaliland, who are much intermingled with negroes, Arabs, Afars, and Abyssinians ; the Gallas or Ilru'Orma, in Southern Ethiopia or Gallaland proper ; and the Masai of Masailand, intermediate between the Galla and the Wahuma or Wahima, who are dispersed among the Bantu peoples of the great lakes, and are believed by some to be the originators of the Bantu dialects (Fig. 12).

The Semites have their primeval home in Arabia, from which they wandered in various directions—*e.g.*, the Himyarites or Southern Arabs to Abyssinia, the Arabs proper to North Africa and to the east coast of Africa, producing profound effects. They may be classified into South Arabians, including Himyarites and their derivatives, certain tribes of the Abyssinians, and the Northern or true Arabs, the Assyrians, Amorites, and Canaanites, which included the Hebrews and Phœnicians, both of which have produced effects upon man in Africa, where to-day the Jew is found in numbers in Tripoli and Algeria.

The Hindus.—The Aryans are thought by Keane to have arisen as a fusion of many Caucasian and some Mongolic elements with an original xanthochroid basis, and to have lived in a Eurasian home,

probably in the steppes between the Ural and Caucasian Mountains and in the Aral-Caspian depression and the regions of Turkestan ; for, as he points out, in Neolithic times this region was very suitable for human life, being then well watered, but the gradual drying of Asia would compel these primitive Aryans to wander westwards into Europe, and south-eastwards into the Iranian plateau and India, and it is with this last migration that we are at present concerned. In this extent there is only one non-Aryan survival—viz., the Brahui of Eastern Baluchistan. The important groups are the Hindus, Bengalis, Punjabis, Kashmiris, Gujaratis, and Sinhalese.

The Dravidians include a vast congeries of tribes, which, if the so-called Pre-Dravidian jungle peoples be excepted, form everywhere in India the basis of the population. The pure Dravidian stock is represented by the short, dark, broad-nosed, dolichocephalic peoples (recalling the noseless Daezu of the invading Aryans), but they have everywhere been modified by fusion with immigrant peoples, giving rise to the Aryo-Dravidian, Scytho-Dravidian, and the Mongolo-Dravidian types. The Aryo-Dravidian type is principally found in Northern India and Ceylon, its upper strata being exemplified by the Hindustani-speaking Brahman of Northern India and the Tamil-speaking gentleman of Northern Ceylon, while its lower strata are exemplified by the Chamar. The complexion of these people varies from medium brown to very dark, and their noses from medium to broad. The Scytho-Dravidian type of Western India is characterized by a fair complexion, with little or no hair on the face, with broad heads and moderately fine noses. Riseley considers that this type is a fusion between Dravidians and immigrant Scythians, and Haddon suggests that it is a fusion with the Alpine race from the hills of South-West Asia in prehistoric times. The Mongolo-Dravidians are best represented by the inhabitants of Lower Bengal and Orissa. They are of medium stature, and usually of dark complexion with abundant hair on the face, with broad heads and broad or medium noses.

INDONESIANS.—The greatest divergence of opinion is found with regard to the inhabitants of Malaysia and Oceania. It would appear probable that the earliest inhabitants belonged to the undifferentiated negroid type, of which the negritoës gave rise to the Andamanese, the Semangs of Malaysia, the Aëta of the Philippines, and the pygmies of New Guinea, while the negroes formed the Tasmanians, the Papuans, and the majority of the Melanesians. In among these peoples came the brachycephalic Mongols, called by Haddon the Proto-Malays, who were to be found first in the Peninsula, and later, driven south by the Caucasian migrations to be presently described, in the islands.

Earlier migrations still, perhaps of lowly developed Caucasian stocks, may have given rise to the Pre-Dravidian jungle tribes of India and Ceylon, and perhaps to the Kakhyers of Northern Borneo and the Sakai of Malaysia, and to one element in the Australian race.

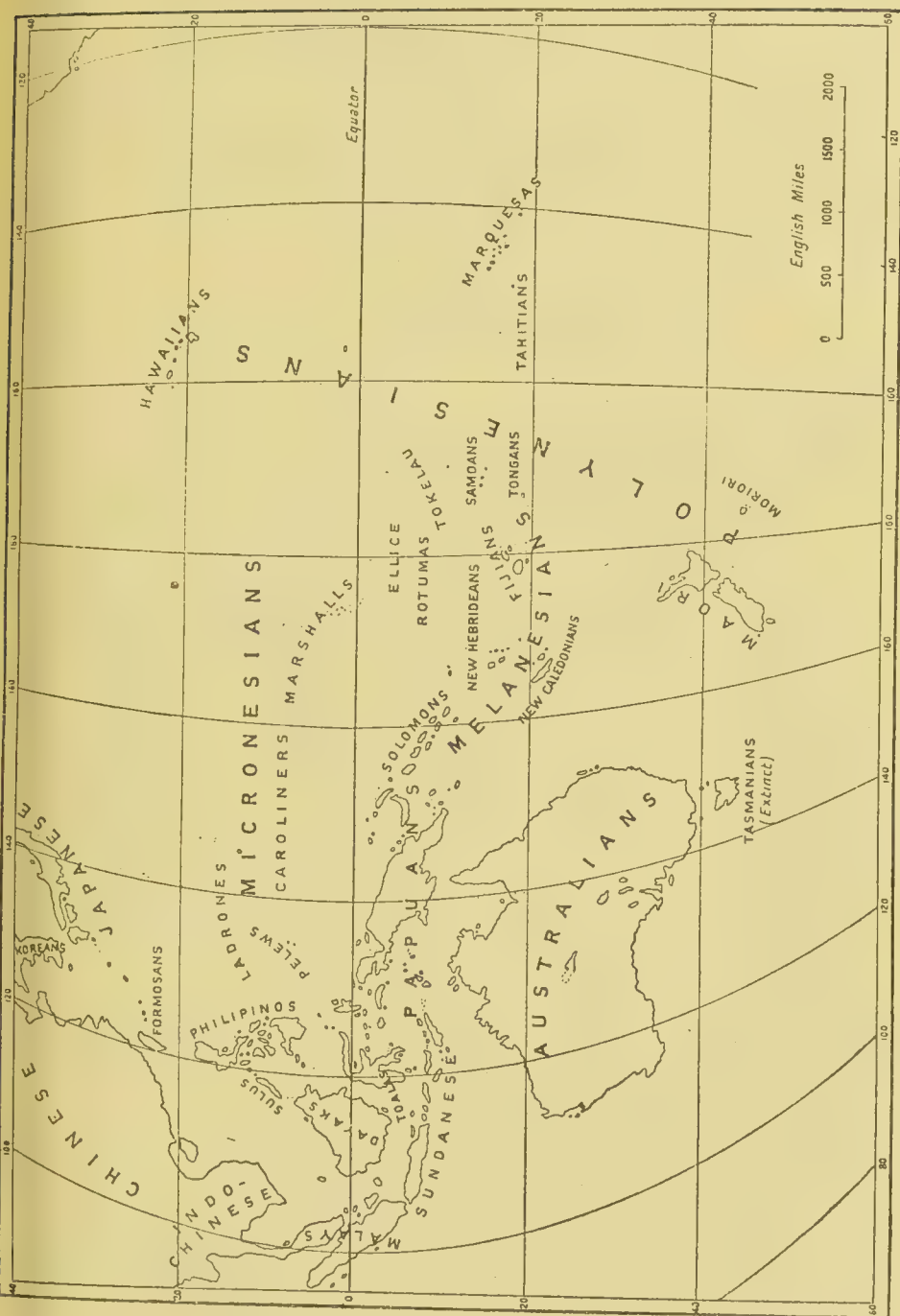


FIG. 13.—THE RACES OF MALAYSIA AND OCEANIA.
From Hutchinson's 'Living Races of Man.'

An early migration fused with the Proto-Malays, forming the Proto-Polynesians of Haddon, who migrated into the Western Pacific, and, fusing with the early black peoples, gave rise to the Melanesians; while others, passing through or round Melanesia, went on to Tonga and Samoa, and later to Tahiti and Raratonga of the Cook Islands, spreading later to Hawaii and the Marquesas, and still later to New Zealand. These migrations or voyages are supposed to have begun by a migration to Java as late as 65 B.C., and did not cease till A.D. 1350. In this way the mixed populations of many of the islands of the Pacific arose.

Ethiopic Division.

It is possible that this division took its origin in the Indo-African continent.

Characters.—The characters of Ethiopic man are :—*Height*, either above the average (negro) or dwarfish (negrito); *colour*, blackish or yellowish brown; *hair*, short, frizzy, flat in section, or reddish-brown and woolly; *skull*, dolichocephalic (negro) or brachycephalic (negrito); *eyes*, large, round, prominent, black, with yellowish cornea; *nose*, flat and broad, platyrrhine; *cheek-bones*, small; *jaws*, prognathous; *teeth*, large; *beards*, absent or small; *speech*, agglutinating, with prefix and postfix types, or inflectional. In negroid Africa there are numerous languages in the Sudan and West Africa, but in the east, centre, and south there are only variants of the Bantu stock language; in the far south there are the Hottentot and Bushmen languages. In Madagascar and Oceania the Malayo-Polynesian stock language is prevalent. In America the speech of the negroes has approached that of the European languages. *Temperament*, indolent, sensuous, passionate, and cruel. In Africa there is a lack of self-respect, thus readily permitting slavery. The development of the mind is believed to be arrested at puberty by the closure of the cranial sutures, and there is also a belief that the negro left to himself, without Caucasian migrations, would have retrograded enormously, some stating that he would have retrograded to the condition of an animal (these statements may be received with caution). *Religion*, fetishism, nature and ancestral worship; *medicine*, primitive, being closely associated with religion, and therefore with the fetish priest, and therefore with magic, charms, invocations, and sacrifices; but there is a knowledge of poisonous plants, which are used in trials by ordeal, in hunting, fishing, and war.

Population.—Ethiopic man is guessed to number some 175,000,000 of persons, of whom perhaps 155,000,000 are in Africa, 3,000,000 in Madagascar, 20,000,000 in America, and 2,000,000 in Oceania.

Migrations.—From his Indo-African home Ethiopic man wandered westwards into Africa and eastwards into Oceania.

Africa.—One of the first of the westward waves must have been that caused by Palæolithic man migrating into Africa, wherein he spread north and south. Another very early wave was that of the pygmies, who gave rise to the Bushmen and negritos or negrillos, and spread along the whole east side of Africa from the Mediterranean to the extreme south. With, or perhaps not long after, the pygmy migration came the taller negro, who possibly wandered into East Africa and through the forests, together with the pygmies, to the west coast, and possibly northwards as far as the northern shores of the Mediterranean; but these migrations of Ethiopic man in Northern Africa were stopped by the evolution of Caucasian man, who not merely drove the negro southwards, but made some remarkable race fusions with him. Thus, for example, the Hottentots are believed by some to be of Hamitic-Bushman origin, although others consider it safer to place them as intermediates between

the Bantu peoples and the Bushmen. These Hottentots were stronger than the Bushmen peoples, but not so strong as the Bantu peoples, by whom they were eventually driven into Southern Africa.

Another remarkable race fusion is that which produced the Fulani, who are believed to have been originally Berbers (Caucasics), but who have intermingled with the negro races among whom they have migrated. Thus their residence on the Senegal River is traced by the Wolofs of the Senegambia, who are a negroid Fulani race; and along the Niger by the Mandingoes, who possibly have also Tuareg and Arab infusions. These Mandingoes, driven by Fulani migrations, have to-day approached the coast south of the Senegal River, displacing the Krus and the Kpwesi, who now live in Liberia. Migrating farther inland, these Fulanis compelled the Ashantis and Fantis to travel coastwards, and then settling in the Hausa States, and forming the Sokoto Empire, they compelled the Hausas to move southwards and to force the Yorubas to approach the coast, who in their turn drove the weaker indigenous tribes into the unhealthy delta of the Niger. The Fulani can also be traced by their language right across Africa to Dár-Fúr.

All these negroes, pure and mixed, living in that region of Africa which is called the Sudan, from the Arabic *Beled-es-Sudan* (Land of the Blacks), speak languages of various stocks; but very different is the language of the Bantu-speaking peoples of the portion of Africa south of a line approximately drawn eastwards from the Rio del Rey River, near the northern boundary of the Kamerun, which separates the Bantu peoples from the Sudan peoples.

It is quite impossible here to mention the many changes which have been brought about in the position of the various Bantu tribes by the slave-trade, migrations of local tribes, as well as those of Caucasians; but these influences have produced many changes even during the nineteenth century, of which some are known, particularly in South Africa.

The slave raids began with the expeditions of the ancient Egyptians, and continued until quite recently, when the last Arabic raiders were checked by the Caucasian migration.

Locally, movements of Congo tribes southwards, and southern tribes northwards and interior tribes coastwards, have caused much confusion; but perhaps, of all the movements, those of the Ama-Zulu and their descendants, the Zulu, especially under Chaka, together with those of the Barotse and the Mantati, and the Ova-Herero, are the most remarkable or best known. Curious causes have called forth these migrations. First of all, the physical features of Africa have had a great effect upon the occupations, and hence upon the migrations of its people; secondly, the urgent need for salt in vegetal-feeding peoples, driving them coastwards; and, lastly, the endemic and epidemic disease factor, which is demonstrated by the weaker tribes being driven into the most unhealthy regions. The Caucasian migrations of the Dutch and English in South Africa have also had great effect in driving the native tribes northwards and in exterminating them.

Oceania.—The eastward or Oceanic migration of Ethiopic man is extremely difficult to follow, and may have taken place largely on foot over land bridges, which at that time existed, and later in canoes by water.

The negritoës, or pygmies, are represented to-day by the Andamanese, the Semangs of Malaysia, the Aëta of the Philippines, and the pygmies of New Guinea; while the Oceanic negroes gave rise to the extinct Tasmanians and the Papuans proper, the latter forming the ground stock of Melanesia.

Classification.—Ethnologically, the Ethiopic millions are classified into two principal sections—the Western or African, and the Eastern or Oceanic, section.

The stature of the Ethiopics of the Oceanic section is less than that of the Africans, the hair is more wiry, the nose is large and straight, the lips are not so thick, and are not everted as they are in the Africans. The Oceanics are more savage, but they show artistic taste and execute wood-carving.



FIG. 14.—THE RACES OF AFRICA.

(From Hutchinson's 'Living Races of Man'.)

The Western or African Section contains negritoës and negroes. The negrito is dwarfish, with yellowish-brown colour, reddish-brown woolly hair, and brachycephalic skull; while the negro is tall, of blackish colour, with jet-black frizzy hair and dolichocephalic skull.

The African negro may be subdivided into negroes living north of the Equator and not speaking the Bantu dialects, which include the West and Central Sudanese, the Welle River groups, the Nilotic groups, and the Nubas of Kordofan, and into groups living south of the Equator and speaking the Bantu dialects; while in the extreme south are found the Hottentots and Bushmen.

The Eastern or Oceanic Section contains also negritoës and negroes, distinguished as above mentioned.

Mongolic Division.

Mongolic man probably evolved in the Tibetan Plateau of long ago.

Characters.—The characters of Mongolic man are:—*Height*, rather under the average; *hair*, black, lank, coarse, round on transverse section; *skull*, brachycephalic; *eyes*, small, black, oblique, with outer canthus slightly higher than the inner, and with a vertical fold of skin over the inner canthus; *nose*, very small, mesorrhine; *cheek-bones*, prominent laterally; *jaws*, mesognathous; *teeth*, medium; *beard*, slight or absent, but moustache present; *speech*, agglutinating, with postfixes, the families being Ural-Altaic, Tibeto-Indo-Chinese, and Malayo-Polynesian; *temperament*, reserved, sullen, and apathetic in the Mongols, industrious in the Chinese, and indolent in the Malays; they are all gamblers; *religion*, animism, Shamanism, Lamaism, Buddhism, Mohammedanism, Confucianism, Taoism, etc.; *medicine*, mostly theurgic, associated with invocations, but in China there has been an attempt to evolve a higher state of efficiency. The Hungarians have the usual highly evolved modern medicine.

Population.—The total number of Mongols is estimated to be 540,000,000 persons, of whom 380,000,000 are believed to reside in China, 55,000,000 in Japan and Korea, 35,000,000 in Indo-China, 30,000,000 in Malaysia, 10,000,000 in Mongolia and Manchuria, 6,000,000 in Tibet, 7,000,000 in Turkestan and Siberia, 13,000,000 in West Asia, and 4,000,000 elsewhere, but estimates vary very much.

Migrations.—The common stock of Mongol-Amerind man, migrating from the primeval home in the Indo-African continent, passed into Asia, and while the Amerind division travelled through that continent into America, it is probable that the Mongolic division made its home in Tibet. This would be in later Pliocene times, when the Tibetan Plateau would not be the elevated region which it is to-day.

In Tibet to-day the original type is best preserved among the Drupa, who are about 5 feet 4 inches in height, with light brown skin, somewhat resembling that of the Amerindians, with brachycephalic skulls, long black hair, brown eyes, slightly prominent cheek-bones, depressed nose, wide nostrils, and large ears. They are semi-nomadic pastoral peoples, living at a height of about 14,000 feet above the sea-level. The other groups in Tibet are the Bodpa, the dominant peoples, who are of mixed descent, and the Tanguts, predatory peoples along the north-east boundary.

From this Tibetan home Mongolic man wandered westwards, giving rise to the celebrated Akkads and Sumerians of Babylonia, and much earlier entered Europe, giving rise to the many Asiatic invasions of that continent. With regard to the Akkads and Sumerians, it may be stated that they early evolved

a form of culture which grew and flourished after their fusion with their early Semitic conquerors, thus laying the foundations of one of the most ancient forms of human civilization. According to some authorities (though by no means proved), the Chinese took their origin from early Akkadian emigrants.

Another migration from Tibet was southwards along the valleys of the Irawadi, Salwin, and Mekhong Rivers into Indo-China, giving rise to the Mishmi, the Abors (with whom there has been trouble recently), the Kuki, the Luohai, the Chins, the Nagas, the Karens, the Khas, and the Moi, who, though perhaps not the makers of the stone implements recently discovered in the Irawadi Basin, may be looked upon as the aborigines of these regions, because there is at present no evidence as to who these earlier peoples were. The above-mentioned tribes have remained in a primitive condition, but others have developed, under Hindu influences, a high degree of civilization—as, for example, the Burmese. An immigration from the north brought the Malaysians and the Tai race, which, coming from Central China about the Yang-tse-Kiang, gave rise to the Shans, the Laos, and the Siamese; while yet another migration, this time from the valley of the Si-Kiang and South-Eastern China, gave rise to the Annamese, Tongkinese, and Cochinese.

In Oceania, taken in its widest sense to include all the islands of the Indian Ocean, as well as what is generally known as Oceania, the Mongol peoples are often known under the term 'Malays,' which is, properly, only applied to the Mohammedan tribes of Malay Peninsula, who are the Malays proper. These Malaysians are found in Sumatra, Java, Borneo, Celebes, Bali, Lombok, Billeton, Bangka, the Spice Islands, and the Philippines, but are much mingled with other races—*e.g.*, with the negroes of Bantu origin in Madagascar, and the Caucasian Indonesians in Malaysia generally.

Keane says that the term 'Malay' was originally applied to the Orang-Malayu, a small tribe of the Menangkabau district of Sumatra, who rose into prominence about a thousand years ago and spread over the archipelago, and whose language is the chief medium of intercourse throughout Malaysia.

Reverting to the primeval home of the Mongols, there are still further offshoots to mention—*viz.*, the Hyperboreans of Northern Siberia and the Mongol-Türki. These latter, who are often called Mongol-Tatars, from two words—'Mongol,' meaning 'brave,' and 'Tatar,' the plural of 'Tata,' 'an archer' (while 'Turk' is an Aryan word meaning 'swift'), which, again, is often spelt 'Tartar'—spread in two directions—eastwards and westwards. The eastward-migrating Mongol-Türki gave rise to the Mongols proper, who include the Kalmuks, Sharras, Buryats, Tunguses, and Manchus, and the Mongoloid Koreans and Japanese. The Tunguses of the Amur Basin and East Siberia are interesting because the great bulk of them are Shamanists, their Shamans being medicine men, often called 'priests,' who heal by magic, uttering oracles by which they establish communication with the invisible world, and thus are able to coerce good spirits and evil spirits to work for the good of the patient, and even to expel devils. The Manchus are the celebrated imperial caste of the Chinese Empire. The Koreans, so called after the powerful Koryo dynasty of A.D. 918-1392, are of mixed Caucasian and Mongolic origin, and are the precursors of the Japanese, who are of mixed Caucasian origin from the Aïnus, Mongolic origin from the Manchus and Koreans, and Malayan from the Malays coming through the Philippine Islands and Formosa.

The westward-migrating Mongol-Türki need not detain us, except to state that they gave rise to the Türki proper, the Samoyedes, the Lapps, the Magyars and Finns, and the Bulgars, probably only in part.

Classification.—The Mongolic division (*vide* maps 12 and 13) may be classified into:—

1. *Mongols*, who include the Mongols proper, the Tunguses, the Manchus, the Koreans; and Japanese.
2. *Türki Peoples*, who are the Yakuts, Kirghizes, Turkomans, Anatolian Turks, and Osmanli Turks.

3. *Ugro-Finns*, comprising the Finns, Lapps, Samoyedes, Mordvins, and Magyars.

4. *Tibeto-Chinese*, with the Tibetans, Burmese, Nagas, Shans, Siamese, Annamese, and Chinese.

5. *Malayans*, who are classed into the Malays proper, the Javanese, including the Sundanese, Madurese, and Javanese proper; the Achinese, Rejangs, and Passumahs of Sumatra; the Bugis, Mangkassaras, and Minahasans of Celebes; the Tagalas, Bisayas, etc., of the Philippines, the Dyaks of Borneo, the Formosans, and the Hovas of Madagascar.

Amerind Division.

The Amerind or American-Indian division of mankind has a twofold origin—from Europe and from Asia. From Europe dolichocephalic Caucasian peoples made their way in Pleistocene times along land bridges connecting Britain with the Orkneys, the Shetlands, the Faroë Islands, Iceland, Greenland, and Labrador. These peoples, making their way across the continent, met with later and more numerous arrivals, the brachycephalic peoples of Mongol-Amerind stock, arriving from Asia by the land connections about the Behring Straits and the Aleutian Islands. These two races fused and formed the Amerind division of man. These Palæolithic races were apparently uninterrupted by any Caucasian, Mongolic, or Ethiopic migrations until the discovery of America by Columbus, after which all three divisions made their migrations thereunto. Therefore all the culture of the Mayas, Aztecs, and Incas, etc., was an inbred culture, not dependable for its origin on outside sources. Hence the absence of the ordinary animals and plants of Asia, Africa, and Europe, and the presence of peculiar animals and plants. Hence, also, the presence of only stone and copper ages until the introduction of iron by the Caucasians, and also the possible source of certain peculiar diseases, such as yellow fever, and perhaps Frambœsia tropica, and, according to some authors, syphilis, which, when introduced into Europe, Asia, and Africa, produced such ravages.

Characters.—The characters of Amerind man are:—*Height*, above the average; *colour*, coppery or yellowish; *hair*, long, coarse, and black, on section round; *skull*, mesaticephalic; *eyes*, small, round, black, sunken, and straight; *nose*, large, bridged, or aquiline mesorrhine; *cheek-bones*, moderately prominent; *jaws*, mesognathous; *teeth*, medium; *beard*, absent; *speech*, divided into a very large number of linguistic families, said to number more than those of the rest of the world, but peculiar to America by being polysynthetic or holophrastic—*i.e.*, sentences made from single long words. The most important of these linguistic families from a tropical point of view are the Ut-Aztecan, the Mayan, Carib, Arawak, Quichuan, and Guaranian. The Ut-Aztecan speech is used by the Shoshoneans, or Snakes, who include the Utahs and the Nahuas, who also include the Aztecs, while the Quichuan comprises the Incas. *Religion*, Shamanism in the north, Nature-worship, and

polytheism; *medicine*, very primitive, especially when associated with Shamanism, but was somewhat more advanced among the Aztecs and Incas. Cinchona bark was a native Ecuador remedy.

Population.—There are believed to be some 10,000,000 Amerinds and 13,000,000 to 40,000,000 half-breeds, but the numbers are by no means easy to estimate even approximately. It is clear, however, that the Amerinds are rapidly dying out in Canada and the United States.

Migrations.—The brachycephalic peoples whom we have already noticed proved superior to the dolichocephalic people from Europe, and drove them northwards, where they became Eskimo, and southwards, where they became the Tehuelche or Patagonians and the Fuegians. The brachycephalic peoples then evolved the North American Indians, of whom we are only concerned with the members of the Ut-Aztecan linguistic family, because the Aztecs are members of this family in common with the Shoshoneans, and it is probable that the Nahuan family to which the Aztecs belong migrated southwards from the district of British Columbia.

Coming to Mexico proper, it is found that the archaic peoples—the Popolcans, Mixe, Chinantecs, Zoque, Mazatec, Cuicatecs, Chocho, and Magahua—have all been pressed by the migrations presently to be mentioned into secluded valleys, where alone traces of them can be found at the present time. The Mexicans proper are the Otomi, who are related to the Magahua, and are still to be found in the valley of the Upper Moctezuma and in Guanajuato.

A northern immigration may have brought the Tarascos of Michoacan into Mexico, or they may belong to the primitive Mexicans. In either case, they are to be found to-day in Guanajuato; with these may be joined the Ulmees, Xicalancas, Mestecs, and Zapotecs among the early tribes of Mexico. Of all these, the most important would appear to be the Mistecâ-Zapotecâ family, because they are known to have evolved a degree of civilization before the days of the Mayas. This culture is exemplified by the monuments of Mitla and of Monte Alban in Oajaca.

The Maya people are variously believed to have been immigrants into Yucatan, from which they spread into Guatemala, Salvador, and Honduras, or to have been original settlers therein. Be that as it may, there is no doubt that they extended into Mexico, both along the coast, where one of their tribes, the Huantecs, were found about Tampico, and into the plateau. They very early produced some degree of civilization, and constructed the celebrated monuments of Guatemala and the pyramid of Cholula in Mexico, on the top of which was the temple of Quetzatcoatl. They invented picture-writing and an almanac. They were divided into the Mayas proper of Yucatan, the Choulats of Mexico, the Quichés, the Pocomans of Guatemala, the Chortes, and the Huantecs of Tampico.

Such must have been the constitution of the tribes of Mexico when the Nahuans broke their way in. This tribe is allied to the Shoshonies, who occupy the wide tract from Oregon to California and New Mexico, and are believed to have come from the region of British Columbia. They moved down to the west of the Rocky Mountains, and spread as far south as Oajaca and eastwards to the Atlantic between Vera Cruz and Coatzacoalcas. The first waves may have been the Toltecs, but there is great doubt as to who these people were. The Alculhuaques and the Tecpanecs followed, while the last immigration was that of the powerful Aztecs, who, though probably but little civilized when they entered Mexico, soon became so, and remained the masters of that part of America until subdued by the Caucasian migration.

Enumerating, therefore, the tribes from the north to the south, there would be first the Shoshonies in the west and south-west of the United States, extending into Mexico; the Yumas of Arizona and the Pueblo-Indians, characterized by their curious rock structures; then would come the Otomi, Totonacs, and Zapotecâ, with their Nahuan conquerors, especially the Aztecâ, all in Mexico. In Central America the Maya people would be found in Yucatan, Guatemala, and Honduras, along with the Xicaks of Northern Honduras, the Leukas and Guatusos of Central Honduras. Farther south would be the Choulats of Nicaragua, the Soumoo, the Micos of the Mosquito

Reservation, the Moscos of the Blewfields Lagoon, and the Rinos of an island therein.

Passing into South America, there is the great linguistic family of the Chibcha of Colombia, whose empire extended southwards until it met that of the Incas. These peoples, as well as the Incas, are Andeans—that is to say, are peoples belonging to the highlands of the Andes. It is curious that all the South Amerind civilizations should have developed in these highlands, but it is probable that the lakes and rapid streams were suitable for the extension of agriculture, and thus led to the settlement of peoples, for without a permanent abode any great degree of civilization is impossible. The Chibchas, also called 'Muyscans,' influenced the whole Panama region as far north as the northern boundary of Costa Rica.

South of the Chibchas comes the ancient empire of the Incas, extending from Quito as far south as the Rio Maule in Chili. It would appear from the megalithic remains and the ruins of Tiahuanacu that there was an early civilization in this region, especially about Lake Titicaca. Who these people were we do not know, but they must have been conquered by the Quichuas or Aymaras, who are allied to them, as both speak derivatives of the Quichuan language.

At the same time there existed near Truxillo the Chimu people, speaking Mochica, a language quite different from Quichuan. They reached a degree of civilization, but both they and the Quichuans were conquered by the Incas. To-day the descendants of the Chimu are called the 'Yuncas,' and live along the coast from 5 degrees to 10 degrees south latitude. In the provinces of Catamarca, Tucuman, and Salta of the Argentine lived a civilized race, now extinct, called the 'Calchaqui,' who were also subdued by the Incas.

The Incas are possibly the descendants of the unknown peoples of the early civilizations who, defeated by the Quichuan peoples, fled into the Apurimac region, whence they subsequently issued forth to subdue their ancient conquerors. Their rule was very despotic, and their subject peoples were very carefully divided into tens, fifties, five hundreds, and ten thousands, the last being under a chief taking orders direct from the Inca. Their system was very artificial, and absolutely without any freedom for the individual, and hence the easy Spanish conquest. They possessed no written language, everything being preserved by oral information handed down from generation to generation.

Except in the Andes, there are no civilizations in South America, and the peoples whom we now come to consider were all backward in their culture evolution at the time of the advent of the Spaniards. They are the members of the linguistic families called 'Arawak,' 'Tapuya,' 'Tupi,' and 'Carib,' in the regions lying east of the Cordilleras as far south as the Rio de la Plata, while farther south lived the Pampeans and Fuegians, with whom we are not concerned.

The Arawak would appear to be the original inhabitants of the low-lying lands to the east of the Cordilleras, and it is possible that they originally spread to the north-east, the east, and the south-east from a primeval home on the eastern slopes of the Bolivian Cordilleras; but their most important migration appears to have been that to the north-east, where they populated the, until then, vacant valleys of the Orinoco and Amazon, especially along the north bank and up the Xingu River. In the east of Brazil, from the Xingu River to the coast, lived the Tapuya, who were probably the aborigines of these regions. They include the Ges and Botocudos of to-day, of which the latter are degraded savages.

The Caribs, according to Van der Stein, took their origin about the sources of the Xingu and Paranatiga Rivers, where the Caribbean tribes called 'Bakairi' and 'Nahuqua' live. From this source they travelled, probably by water, along the Amazon, meeting with the Arawak, till they reached its mouth, when they turned northwards, probably because they met the Tupi people coming from the south, and spread through Guiana to Venezuela, where their progress was checked by the civilized Chibchas, though some of



FIG. 15.—THE RACES OF SOUTH AMERICA.
(From Hutchinson's 'Living Races of Man.')

them entered the valley of the Magdalena River. From the north of South America they proceeded to the Antilles, into which they were still migrating when stopped by the arrival of the Spaniards.

The Tupi people had their primitive home, according to Haddon, in the northern portion of the basin of the Rio de la Plata, down which they spread to the mouth, and then, migrating northwards along the coast, reached the mouth of the Amazon, meeting there the Arawak and possibly the Carib peoples, and, travelling westwards along the southern bank of the Amazon, reached the Xingu River, up which they went, founding the Kamayura and Anëta tribes in its upper basin. They went still farther westwards, forming the more civilized Omagua between the Putumayo and Caqueta Rivers, and the Cocama peoples at the junction of the Amazon with the Ucayali River.

In Uruguay and Paraguay the Tupi peoples are called 'Guarani,' or 'Warriors,' and hence the whole family is called the 'Tupi-Guaranian family.'

Into the races mentioned above penetrated the great Caucasian migration, headed by Columbus, in the fifteenth century of our era, which, though stopping the autochthonous evolution of civilization in America, introduced the more highly evolved culture of the Old World at the cost of millions of lives of the Amerindians.

The Latin races of this migration have fused with the aborigines to a great extent, and thus have laid the foundations of the new Latin-Amerindian races which are arising to-day.

The Anglo-Saxon in North America did not fuse with the Amerind, who to-day is rapidly approaching extinction.

The negro migration was compulsory, as the negroes were introduced as slaves, but it suited the race, which is rapidly increasing in numbers. The Mongolic migration is at present very small, and of quite recent date.

Classification.—The Amerinds may be classified for our purposes into those belonging to the Northern Section, to the Central Section, and to the Southern Section of America, but only the two last need concern us here.

The Central Section is formed from Mexico and Central America as far south as the northern boundary of Costa Rica. It contains the Opata-Pima linguistic family, composed of the Pimas and Papajos of the Gila Valley, where the Gila Monster (*Heloderma suspectum* Cope 1869) lives, the Capitas, Coras, Yumas, and Torahumeras, though these last are mixed with Caucasian blood. The Nahua or Aztecs come next, and include the Aztecs proper, the Pipils of Guatemala, the Niquirans, and the Chichimecs.

The Huastecan group, often called the Maya-Quiché group, includes the Huastecs of Tamaulipas and Vera Cruz, the Mayas of Yucatan, the Choulats of Mexico, the Mopans of Northern Guatemala, the Quiché farther south in Guatemala, the Pocomans around the city of Guatemala. The Mayas proper are divided into the Itzas and the Lacandons. The Chortegans include the Chorti living around the ruined city of Copan as well as the Bribri and others.

In the Southern Section are the nations which we have sufficiently described above—viz., the Chibchas, Quichuas, Chimus, Calchecaquis, and Incas, all of whom were civilized, and the Arawak, Tapuya, Carib, and Tupi peoples, who were far more primitive and savage, as well as the Pampeans and Fuegians, which are not tropical races.

REFERENCES.

Journals.—Journal of the Royal Anthropological Institute of Great Britain and Ireland; the journal *Man*, published in London; Annual Reports of the American Bureau of Ethnology, Smithsonian Institute, Washington; *Zeitschrift für Ethnologie*; *Revue d'Anthropologie*.

- BÉRENGER-FÉRAUD (1879). *Peuples de la Sénégambie*. Paris.
 BRINTON (1891). *The American Races*.
 CARR, E. M. (1886). *The Australian Races*.
 CODRINGTON (1891). *The Melanesians*. Oxford.
 DENIKER, J. (1900). *Races of Man*. London.
 DOWD, J. (1907). *The Negro Races*. New York.
 DUCKWORTH, W. L. H. (1904). *Morphology and Anthropology*. Cambridge.
 ELLIS (1887). *Tshi-Speaking Peoples*. (1890). *The Ewe-Speaking Peoples*. (1894). *The Yoruba-Speaking Peoples*. London.
 HADDON, A. C. (1898). *The Study of Man*. (1910). *History of Anthropology*. (1911). *The Wanderings of Peoples*.
 KEANE, A. H. (1901). *Ethnology*. (1905). *Man, Past and Present*. (1908). *The World's Peoples*.
 LING ROTH (1896). *The Natives of Sarawak*. London.
 RATZEL, F. (1896-98). *The History of Mankind*.
 RIPLEY, W. Z. (1900). *The Races of Europe*. London.
 SELIGMANN, C. G. (1906). *Lancet* articles on Natives of British New Guinea. (1910). *Melanesians of British New Guinea*.
 SELIGMANN, C. G. and B. Z. (1911). *Veddahs*.
 SPENCER AND GILLEN (1899). *The Native Tribes of Central Australia*. London.
 WORCESTER (1898). *The Philippine Islands and their People*.

CHAPTER IV

THE EFFECTS OF FOOD AND CLIMATE ON MAN IN THE TROPICS

Preliminary remarks—Formation and repair of the tissues in man—Effects of a low protein dietary—Effects of certain nitrogenous complexes—Production and regulation of heat in man—Normal temperature—Effects of temperature and humidity—Effect on digestion—Effect on respiration—Effect on circulation and the blood—Effect on bodily temperature—Effect on the nervous system—Effect on the urinary system—Effect on the generative organs—Effect on growth—Effect of light—Acclimatization—Prophylaxis—References.

Preliminary Remarks.—The climatic factors which most actively affect man in the tropics are the temperature and humidity of the air and the chemical rays from the sun, and to these the following remarks will be restricted.

Before beginning to describe what is known of these effects it is necessary to review briefly the physiological problems connected with the formation and repair of the tissues and with the production and maintenance of the heat of the body. This may be thought to be superfluous, but it is intimately associated with a proper understanding of heat-stroke, etc., and cannot altogether be omitted, though it will be dealt with as briefly as possible.

FORMATION AND REPAIR OF TISSUES.

The formation of new tissues and the repair of old tissues is effected by that portion of the nitrogenous moiety of the food which is assimilable.

Proteins ingested as food are converted by the action of pepsin, trypsin, and erepsin into a number of simpler organic compounds, among which the most important are the amino-acids. It is probable that these latter are absorbed by the cells of the mucosa of the intestine, and that then one of two things may happen to them. Firstly, if these particular products are not at the moment required, or if they are excessive in quantity for the necessities of new tissue formation or tissue repair, they are largely deprived of their nitrogen, which is converted into ammonia, and is of the greatest importance in preserving intracellular alkalinity and checking any tendency to acidosis. This moiety of the absorbed nitrogen is quickly converted into urea, and excreted in the urine, but has performed a most important duty, and must be considered to be one of the chemical defences of the body against

acidosis. Secondly, if these particular products mentioned above are required by the cells, it is probable that the amino-acids pass unaltered into the blood-plasma, from which they are absorbed by such cells as require them, and that they are then built up into the complex protein molecules, which constitute the living protoplasm of the cell.

In considering the foods of the tropics, it is of importance to know not merely their digestibility—*i.e.*, their power of being converted into these amino-acids, but also their power of being assimilated—and, finally, whether they are really the substances required by the body at the time or not, and as this is, at present, beyond our knowledge, it is necessary that a diet, in order to be suitable, should offer a variety of materials to the cells of the body.

The ordinary foods are sufficiently described in books on dietetics, but perhaps a few words may be introduced here on the evolution of food, and upon rice, maize, millet, and the legumes.

Evolution of Foods.—At the present time human food is everywhere more or less cooked, and it is rare for mankind anywhere to eat, even for a limited period, absolutely raw materials. Dr. Campbell, in a most interesting manner, has traced the evolution of man's diet. He distinguishes first of all the pre-cookery epoch, during which evolving and primeval man lived upon raw materials, unaltered by any of the chemical and physical processes involved in cooking; secondly, the cookery epoch, which may be subdivided into the precibicultural and the cibicultural eras. In the former, although he cooked his food, man did not cultivate vegetal foods, nor did he rear animals for purposes of food. During this period vegetal foods would probably be used in greater quantity than before, as they are easier to obtain than hunted animals; and, also, because the processes of cookery, by breaking up the cellulose, rendered them more easily digestible and absorbable, and therefore more nutritious, as well as more palatable. Just as we have already pointed out that certain tribes have remained in the status of the Stone Age almost to the present day, so certain tribes—*e.g.*, the Bushmen of Africa, the true Veddahs of Ceylon, the Andamanese of the Bay of Bengal, and the aborigines of Australia—have remained in this precibicultural era. These peoples obtain their foods from all sorts of animals—*e.g.*, worms, centipedes, flies, caterpillars, ants, etc.—as well as from game, while their vegetal foods are collected and stored, but they have never learned to extract any chemical substance—*e.g.*, sugar—from their vegetal foods. Probably this is one of the reasons why they prize honey so highly. In the cibicultural era man cultivated his vegetal foods, and reared domestic animals for the purposes of animal food, and here again his vegetal feeding increased in amount, as this food was the cheapest and easiest to produce. Here again arose the urgent need for salt, to which we have already drawn attention in the account of the migrations of negro tribes.

EFFECTS OF A LOW PROTEIN DIETARY.

In tropical lands there are many peoples who live mainly upon cooked cultivated vegetal foods, with but little admixture of animal foods, and this is due to force of circumstances rather than to any desire of the peoples, who would be glad enough to eat animal food if it could be obtained. Among these peoples the protein in the food sinks to a very low amount, with, as we shall presently see, a markedly deteriorating influence on the race.

Rice.—Turning now to the consideration of certain articles of food in common use in the tropics, one of the most important is rice, because it is widely used throughout the East, where it is believed to be consumed by over 400,000,000 Indians, Chinese, Japanese, and Malays, and because it is very deficient in protein material, and for this reason has to be consumed in large quantities in order that a sufficiency of this important factor may be obtained. Unfortunately, dry rice absorbs water very greedily, and is increased by boiling in water to five times its original bulk. Further, its progress through

the stomach is slow, and therefore it not merely distends but keeps this organ distended for some hours.

Rice is, however, well digested in the intestines, nearly all the starch being absorbed, while the protein absorbed varies from 45·76 to 84 per cent. This lack of absorption of protein leads, therefore, to a loss in the nitrogenous value of the rice, and, indeed, is the chief method of loss of its nitrogenous value, as but little disappears during cooking. The percentage of nitrogen absorbed from a rice diet has been shown by McCay to vary directly with the quantity of the rice. Thus, in a mixed diet containing 32 ounces of rice, 6·55 grammes of nitrogen, or 45·76 per cent., were absorbed; while the same diet, with only 20 ounces of rice, showed 8·40 grammes of nitrogen, or 68·33 per cent., to be absorbed. From this it will be evident that mixed diets containing large quantities of rice tend to a low standard of protein absorption.

There are two kinds of rice commonly met with, viz. :—

(a) The Indian, country rice, or paddy, variously described in medical papers as 'cured,' 'stale,' 'unpolished,' or 'parboiled' rice, which is prepared by soaking in water for twenty-four to forty-eight hours, and then steaming in cylinders, and finally drying by exposure to the sun. This rice is yellowish-brown in colour, and carries attached to it the outer layers of the grain, while it has not lost much of its protein in the process of preparation.

(b) The Burma, Rangoon, or white rice, also variously described as 'uncured,' 'milled,' or 'polished' rice, which is prepared by milling the unhusked paddy until the husk, the pericarp, and the surface layers of the seed are removed, which results in the production of a nice clean white grain, partially denuded of its outer layers, and to some extent of its protein.

At the present time many authorities believe that the differences between these two methods of preparation of rice are the explanation of the ætiology of beri-beri, as they believe that the latter method, by separating the sub-pericarpal layers from the rice, deprives it of a substance which is absolutely necessary for the health of the human body. We will, however, return to this subject presently, and for the moment will confine our attention to the effects produced by the low protein standard, which may be illustrated by the following table, which is given by McCay to exemplify the differences in the diets of Bengalis as compared with those of Anglo-Indians and Eurasians :—

Food.	Bengalis I.	Bengalis II.	Anglo-Indians and Eurasians.
Proteids in grammes	67·11	43·61	86·56
Carbohydrates in grammes ..	548·73	200·31	376·53
Fats in grammes	71·55	33·92	54·75

McCay, in his excellent works quoted at the end of this chapter, has shown that when the protein standard of a tropical dietary is very low, then the physique, the capacity for work, the health, and the resistance against disease are also lowered, and he has illustrated these facts by reference to the rice-eating Bengali. Moreover, he has answered his critics in a most able manner, and has demonstrated by comparing closely allied tribes living under identical conditions of climate, solar irradiation, sexual excesses, early marriage, etc., that it is the influence exerted by the food, and particularly by the proteins of the food, that is all-important in determining the degree of muscular power, the general physical endowment, the powers of endurance, the resistance to disease, and, most important of all, the place which a tribe or race has won for itself in manliness, courage, and soldierly instincts. It is impossible to discuss at length in this place the facts which he has adduced, but certain important results may be briefly mentioned.

Thus, he has drawn attention to the great difference in the analysis of the blood of male Bengalis in India as compared with that of the blood of Europeans in Europe, as set forth in the following table:—

Nature of Observation.	Male Bengalis in India.	Europeans in Europe.
Erythrocytes	5,300,000	5,193,000
Leucocytes	9,000	7,500
Hæmoglobin (Haldane's method) ..	81	100
Colour index	0·74 to 0·85	0·95 to 1·1
Water	78·88	78·87
Total solids	21·12	21·13
Proteids	18·26	19·17
Salts	1·06	0·78
Blood-pressure in brachial by Riva) Rocci's sphygmomanometer)	100 millimetres Hyg.	110 to 130 millimetres Hyg.
Ratio of salts in the urine to those in the blood	1·2	2·0

His observations show that too little protein in the food affects the growth of the Bengali boy, who grows up slender, and is defective in vigour and vitality; and in conjunction with Bannerji, Dutton, and Ghosal he has demonstrated the differences in the constituents of the urine in male Bengalis in India as compared with male Europeans in Europe, as is shown in this table:—

Constituent in the Urine.	Male Bengalis in India.	Male Europeans in Europe.
Quantity	1,177 c.c.	1,200 to 1,500 c.c.
Specific gravity	1006 to 1024	1015 to 1025
Urea	5·56 to 19·68 grammes per diem	30 to 35 grammes per diem
Total nitrogen	5·9 grammes per diem	14 to 18 grammes
Chlorides	9·43 grammes per diem	15 grammes per diem
Phosphates	0·95 to 1·4 grammes per diem	2 to 3·5 grammes per diem
N : P ₂ O ₅ ratio	5 or 6 : 1	Practically the same
Uric acid	0·48 gramme per diem	0·3 to 7 grammes per diem
Total sulphates	1·75 to 2·2 grammes	2·5 to 3 grammes
Ethereal sulphates	0·15 to 0·22 gramme	—

These are most important conclusions, and we must state that our own observations in tropical practice support McCay, and are directly in opposition to Chittenden's observations. We have observed that when persons in good health have for some time carried out Chittenden's dietary, the result has often been sharp attacks of illness, indicating a lowered resistance to disease.

We would observe, however, that while food is an important factor in people living under similar climatic conditions, it does not diminish the importance of certain climatic factors in their effects upon peoples either indigenous in these places or immigrants thereunto, nor do either or both of these—food and climate—deduct in the slightest, in our opinion, from the overwhelming importance of the sanitation factor on the health, the strength, and the well-being of peoples, indigenous or immigrant, dwelling in the tropics.

Maize.—With reference to this much-abused and excellent food, which has, in our opinion, been wrongfully accused of causing pellagra, we may briefly state that it is prepared for food by crushing between millstones or milling by machinery to produce maize-meal, which can be made into unleavened bread (porous bread cannot be made, because of the absence of the gluten found in wheat-meal), into porridge, or polenta. Often, however, it is roasted, and eaten with butter and salt.

In general, about 74 to 86 per cent. of its protein is absorbed, and, as regards India, McCay says that it is decidedly superior to all the cereals experimented upon, with the exception of wheat. Woods says that it is wholesome, cheap, and well suited to its numerous uses as a food-material, and provides a greater return in protein, carbohydrates, and energy for the same outlay than any other cereal.

Millet.—The sorghums, or millets, according to McCay, show a very defective protein absorption—e.g., *Sorghum vulgare* 53 per cent., and *Pennisetum typhoideum* only 49·4 per cent.

Legumes.—The legumes are extensively used in the tropics, and among them come the dals, or dhals, of India (*Cajanus indicus*, *Ervum lens* Linn., *Cicer arietinum* Linn., *Pisum sativum* Linn., *Phaseolus radiatus*, *Ph. mungo*, all belonging to the Leguminosæ), which are allied to the European pea, and all contain a high percentage of protein, whereby they occupy an important position in the food of tropical peoples. They are utilized by being ground into meal, from which unleavened bread, porridge, or sauce is prepared, or they are simply dried (parched), and eaten in this condition.

They resemble rice in absorbing a large quantity of water when cooked, and so becoming bulky, but they differ from this and other food-materials in that they are less thoroughly digested. Moreover, their addition to diet lowers the percentage absorption of all the food-factors, but especially that of the protein factor.

McCay considers that these dhals produce a great waste of nutriment, in that 25·42 per cent. of the nitrogen of the food appears in the fæces of Bengalis, while only 15 per cent. appears in that of Europeans on a vegetable diet. Moreover, he considers that they are a factor in the production of the bowel disorders so common among the Bengalis.

EFFECTS OF CERTAIN NITROGENOUS COMPLEXES.

Eijkmann, Gryn, Takaki, Fraser, and Stanton have shown that the uncured, milled, polished, or white rice is deprived of its subpericarpal layers by the processes of milling or polishing, and that these layers contain some substance of importance in the prevention of beri-beri. This substance is present in the proportion of 0·1 gramme to the kilogramme of rice. Funk has isolated this substance, called *Beri-beri vitamine*, from the polishings of the rice mentioned above, and has determined its chemical composition—i.e., 55·63 per cent. C., 5·29 per cent. H., and 7·68 per cent. N., which correspond best to the formula $C_{17}H_{18}O_4N(HNO_3)$ —and has demonstrated its power of curing the polyneuritis induced in fowls by a rice diet, 4 milligrammes being sufficient to cure pigeons. Since then he has altered the formula of this substance (*vide* Chapter XLVI.).

We shall return to this subject when we discuss the ætiology of beri-beri.

PRODUCTION AND REGULATION OF HEAT IN MAN.

Heat is produced by the oxidation of proteid, carbohydrate, and fatty substances, mostly in the muscles, and to a less extent in the glands and other organs and tissues of the body, and depends, therefore, largely upon the intake, digestion, and assimilation of food, and can be increased by rich feeding. This effect of food is more marked if the air temperature is high; hence the danger of overfeeding and alcohol in the tropics, for unless the

increased production of heat is compensated by increased loss, the body temperature may rise.

Air temperatures have also an effect on metabolism, and hence on heat production, for it has been shown that in fasting animals there exists an external temperature at which a good bodily condition can be maintained by a minimal metabolism. Above and below this temperature, which is called 'the critical temperature,' metabolism is increased. In man the critical temperature is said to lie between 15°C . and 20°C .

According to Vierordt the heat of the body is lost in the following manner :—

	Per Cent.
Warming the urine and fæces	1·8
Warming the expired air	3·5
Evaporation from the lungs	7·2
Evaporation from the skin	14·5
Radiation and conduction from the skin	73·0
Total	100·0

The temperature of the body is therefore regulated by—

- (1) Chemical heat regulation,
- (2) Physical heat regulation,

which probably work hand in hand, and are indirectly under the control of the nervous system, which governs the activity of the muscles and other tissues, and also the vessels by the vasomotor nerves, and the sweat glands by the sweat nerves.

1. **Chemical Heat Regulation.**—By this is meant regulation of the bodily temperature by increased or diminished production of heat, which can be brought about by alterations in metabolism. Diminished heat production is, however, rare, being usually pathological, though it is possible that it occurs more frequently in the tropics than in the Temperate Zone, owing to the lessened disposition for muscular or mental work.

2. **Physical Heat Regulation.**—The body temperature is usually regulated by increasing or diminishing the loss caused by radiation, convection, and evaporation. According to Hill, a man weighing 70 kilogrammes loses 77·1 per cent. of his heat by radiation and convection, and 22·9 per cent. by evaporation. This regulation is brought about by the dilatation of the cutaneous vessels bringing more blood to the skin and by the increased perspiration. The loss of heat caused by radiation and convection depends upon—

1. Temperature and conductivity of the skin.
2. Temperature and radiation from the skin.
3. Temperature of the air.
4. Rate of motion of the air.

Clothing may, however, affect the loss of heat from the skin, for, as a rule, it is composed of substances which are bad conductors of heat, and hence the loss may, according to Rubner, be diminished no less than 47 per cent. Wet clothing, on the other hand, is a good conductor, because of the water in its interstices, and hence the danger of chills while wearing damp clothes. This latter fact is well known to the old resident of the tropics, who has generally learnt its danger by personal experience.

Radiation takes place best when the air is still, dry, and cold, conduction when it is damp. Convection is only of importance when the air is in motion, in which case the loss of heat is proportionate to the square root of the velocity, and is more marked when atmospheric humidity is high.

With regard to evaporation, Rubner has shown that it is best at medium, greater at low, and still greater at high temperatures, as is shown by the following table taken from his book of an observation on a man of 58 kilogrammes weight lightly clad :—

Air Temperature.	Grammes of OH ₂ lost per Hour.	Grammes of CO ₂ lost per Hour.
2° C.	37	29·8
10° to 15° C.	28	25·1
15° to 20° C.	19	24·1
20° to 25° C.	23	25·0
25° to 30° C.	43	25·3
30° to 35° C.	84	23·7
35° to 40° C.	112	21·2

This evaporation is very markedly diminished by humidity, as is shown in the following table :—

Temperature in Centigrade.	5 to 8 per Cent. Humidity.	81 to 89 per Cent. Humidity.
15·0°	36·3	9·0
20·4°	54·1	15·3
25·3°	75·5	23·9
28·9°	105·0	—

It is also diminished by a moderately strong wind, but is increased by the sun's rays and by work in a hot climate.

Normal Temperature.—The temperature of man, being the resultant between the heat produced and the heat lost, must vary considerably under many circumstances.

In investigating the temperature of the body, one ought to seek that which most nearly represents the temperature of the blood, for though the different organs of the body manufacture or lose heat in different proportions, the circulation of the blood tends to bring about a mean internal temperature for the whole body.

The possible methods of investigating the temperature of the body are by placing the thermometer—

1. In the axilla,
2. In the mouth,
3. In the rectum,

to which might be added placing the thermometer in the stream of issuing urine ; but this method is only open to limited application, and there may be considerable loss from evaporation and radiation, and therefore, though it is an excellent method when used with care, will not be further considered.

If the thermometer is placed in a *dry, well-closed axilla*, and kept there long enough, the result will be not unlike that in the *mouth* ; but if it is thought that any resemblance to the internal temperature of the body is to be obtained by placing a thermometer in a perspiring axilla for half to one minute, then the greatest mistakes as to the real temperature of the patient are possible. In our experience it has not been unusual in the tropics to find several degrees of difference between the axilla and the mouth.

As a rule, it may be stated that the axilla is not a good place in which to take thermometric observations which are meant to indicate the true temperature of the body.

With regard to the mouth temperature, there has been a great deal of discussion, but the most careful observations are those of Pembrey and Nicol, who have shown that the mouth temperature is apt to vary considerably, and that it is not a reliable indicator of the internal temperature of the body

in cold weather or after exercise. Haldane, in his valuable experiments to be quoted presently, finds that it varies greatly with the individual.

In warm and moist air, however, the mouth temperature approaches the rectal temperature.

The reason why the mouth temperature is apt to be lower than the rectal, and the real temperature of the body, is apparently the cooling owing to the proximity of the skin, and possibly of the nasal cavity, and therefore in warm air this difference frequently does not exist. In India Crombie found, in fifteen carefully taken observations, that the mouth temperature was 0.22° F. below that of the rectum, whereas Pembrey found it as much as 4.5° F.—*i.e.*, 2.5° C.—below that of the rectum in cold weather in England. It is possible, therefore, that it is a better site for thermometric observations in the tropics than in Europe.

Rectal temperatures under ordinary conditions give the highest readings and are the truest indicators of the internal temperature of the body; but this is not a method open to clinical use, except in children and in states of coma.

The conclusion is that if care be taken that neither hot nor cold articles have been recently placed in the mouth, and particularly if the mouth has been kept closed for a short time, the temperature from the thermometer placed under the tongue is, without doubt, the most accurate for ordinary clinical work in the tropics, for in that position the thermometer is as completely as possible protected from the influence of the nose and the skin.

A thermometer, however quickly it reacts to its surroundings, must be left a reasonable time in the mouth, by which is meant two or three minutes, so that the temperature of the closed mouth may approach that of the rest of the body. Crombie gives the time for the accurate recording of the temperature in India as:—

Ten minutes in the well-closed and dry axilla.

Eight minutes in the mouth.

Three to four minutes in the rectum.

The mean daily temperature of man for the hours 8 a.m. to 12 midnight in the Temperate Zone is:

98.45° F. (36.90° C.) in the axilla.

98.36° F. (36.87° C.) in the mouth.

98.96° F. (37.20° C.) in the rectum.

The so-called normal temperature of man, 98.40° F. (36.90° C.), in the mouth was determined as the mean temperature from 8 a.m. to 12 midnight by John Davy in 1837, and by some mistake it has been interpreted into the mean temperature for the twenty-four hours, which is different, being probably lower.

Crombie gives the following as the means of the observations of Ogle, Allbutt, Casey, and Rattray:—

Mean Morning Temperature.	Mean Afternoon Temperature.	Mean Twenty-four Hours' Temperature.	Maximum Daily Range.
97.763° F.	98.341° F.	98.084° F.	1.41° F.

But at present there are insufficient data upon which to base a definite conclusion as to the mean temperature of human beings for the whole twenty-four hours.

The average temperature varies from between 96° F. and 97° F. to a little under 99° F. in the mouth, and the rectal temperature from 97.2° F. (36.28° C.) between 2 to 5 a.m. to 99.4° F. (37.45° C.) between 4 to 7 p.m.

EFFECTS OF TEMPERATURE AND HUMIDITY.

Atmospheric temperature and humidity must be considered together, because the effect of high air temperatures is modified by the humidity of the atmosphere.

The consideration of the effects of high air temperatures associated with varying degrees of humidity on man may be conveniently discussed under the following headings:—

1. Effect on digestion.
2. Effect on respiration.
3. Effect on the circulation and the blood.
4. Effect on bodily temperature.
5. Effect on the nervous system.
6. Effect on the urinary system.
7. Effect on the generative organs.
8. Effect on growth.

Effect on Digestion.—Parkes states that in warm climates the digestive powers are somewhat lessened, there is less appetite, less desire for animal food, and more wish for cool fruits. He, together with Marshall, Davy, and Morehead, believe that the quantity of bile excreted by the liver is not increased, though Lawson is of the opposite opinion.

While we agree with the fact that there is less appetite, and certainly less desire for animal food and more desire for hot or spiced food, and probably not such good digestion, we are not in accord with the writers who maintain that there is normally hyperæmia of the abdominal organs in Europeans and Natives alike in the tropics. There may be hyperæmia, but it is pathological, not normal. There may be an excess of bile secretion, but this will depend upon the food and drink, especially the latter if alcoholic.

Effect on Respiration.—Rattray studied very fully the influence of tropical climates on respiration, and gives a table showing their effect on the capacity of the chest, as indicated by the spirometer, on a voyage from England to Bahia and back. The average of twelve observations is as follows (hygrometer indicates the difference between the wet and dry bulb of a Mason's hygrometer):—

Number of Persons, 12.	Temperature 65° F., Hygrometer 2·5° F.	Temperature 78° F., Hygrometer 4° F.	Temperature 83° F., Hygrometer 4° F.	Temperature 65° F., Hygrometer 1·5° F.
Capacity of the chest as shown by spirometer ..	256·083	280·75	287·416	260·25
Gain or loss	—	+ 24·833	+ 6·5833	— 26·333
Percentage gain ..	12·24			—

The increased capacity, according to Rattray, is not due to any actual increase in the capacity of the size of the chest, but to a diminished quantity of blood in the lungs, which he considers has been diverted to the excited and congested skin and liver.

His results may be summarized by saying that the vascularity of the lungs is reduced by 23 fluid ounces, and owing to diminished number of respirations 7·5 per cent. less air is used daily, and 1·1 ounces less carbon, and 4·5 per cent. less aqueous vapour excreted.

With regard to these observations of Rattray, he is apparently supported by all observers as to the increase in capacity when Europeans enter the tropics. Jousset, however, states that this is only temporary, and disappears after acclimatization.

Rattray maintained that there was a diminution of capacity when a native of the tropics went to the Temperate Zone, and gave the following table :—

Condition.	Race.	Temperature 79° F.	Temperature 78° F.	Temperature 32° F.
B. C., aged twenty-one; height, 5 feet 5½ inches	Native of Sierra Leone	210	207	185
J. C., aged twenty; height, 5 feet 4 inches	Native of Sierra Leone	174	166	156
J. W., aged thirty-one; height, 5 feet 4 inches	half- caste	176	162	—

He found that the frequency of respiration was slower in the tropics, as is shown in the following table :—

Climate.	Mean Shade Temperature.	Highest Number of Respirations.	Lowest Number of Respirations.	Average Number of Respirations.
England { Summer ..	62° F.	18	13·5	15·68
{ Winter... ..	42·25° F.	17·5	15	16·50
Equatorial { Outward ..	78·74° F.	14·5	11	12·74
{ Homeward ..	78·60° F.	15	12	13·74

Jousset, Plehn, and others controvert Rattray's statement that the respirations are slower, believing, on the contrary, that they are augmented before acclimatization.

This clearly shows that the question is far from settled, and, in fact, requires reinvestigation.

Effect on Circulation.—Rattray investigated the pulse-rate carefully, and gives the following table :—

Time.	Number of Observations.	Tropics.				Temperate Zone.
		Lowest.	Highest.	Range.	Average.	Average.
9 a.m. ..	53	66	112	46	86·4	91·7
3 p.m. ..	53	68	108	42	88·8	88·1
9 p.m. ..	49	73	110	37	87·3	90·5
Averages	—	—	—	—	87·5	90·1

He gives the following conclusions :

1. The average pulse is lower by 2·5 beats in the tropics than in the Temperate Zone.

2. This change holds good for the average morning and evening pulse.

3. The average afternoon pulse is higher in the tropics than in the Temperate Zone, probably because the solar heat is greatest then.

4. The morning pulse has the greatest and the evening the lowest range.

He considers that this reduction in the pulse-rate is related to the diminished respiratory function. Parkes, Jousset, Crevaux, Feris, and Plehn, according to Huggard, maintain, on the contrary, that the pulse is increased by ten beats per minute. Plehn says, however, that on acclimatization the pulse-rate sinks to normal.

There is said to be a lowering of tension (associated, according to Huggard, with the dilatation of the peripheral vessels), as well as increased elasticity and dirotism, all of which probably pass away on acclimatization.

Chamberlain in the Philippine Islands concludes that the average blood-pressure, measured by a Cook's modification of a Riva-Rocci's apparatus and a 12·5 centimetre armlet, in Filipinos and Americans of the same age dwelling in those islands, does not appreciably differ from one another, nor from that of similar Americans in the Temperate Zone, but that the pulse-rate of active Filipinos and Americans is a few beats above the usual standard of 72 per minute.

In our experience, in Europeans coming to the tropics, the pulse-rate is *occasionally* slightly increased. This disappears after acclimatization, and the pulse-rate becomes the same as in Temperate Zones. We have never noticed dirotism of the pulse in normal individuals.

As regards natives of the tropics, it is stated by some authorities that their pulse is quicker than in the inhabitants of Temperate

Zones. We have not been able to confirm this statement. Their pulse-rate is the same as in Europeans.

Effect on Bodily Temperature.—The discussion on the effects of heat and humidity on the bodily temperature may be subdivided into observations and experiments made in the Temperate Zone and those made in the Tropics.

1. **Experiments and Observations made in Temperate Climates.**—These experiments began with Lining in 1738, who found that when the temperature in the sun was 125.9° F. (51.1° C.), and in the shade 98° F. (36.7° C.), his own axillary temperature was 96.9° F. (36.1° C.), and his mouth temperature 98° F. (36.7° C.).

Ellis in 1758 recorded a bodily temperature of 96.9° F. (36.1° C.), when the temperature of the air was 105.0° F. (40.6° C.).

In 1775 Blagden and Fordyce observed that in dry air in a room heated from 233.9° F. (115.5° C.) to 260° F. (126.7° C.) their temperature remained normal, as taken by the mouth and urine, even though beefsteaks were cooked by that temperature within thirteen minutes. These observations show that man can regulate his temperature to suit a high external temperature if the air is dry.

In a damp room with a temperature of 123.9° F. (54.4° C.) their temperature, however, was 100° F. (37.8° C.). There is, therefore, a great difference between the effect of dry and moist heat upon man.

The next series of experiments of importance on man are those by Haldane, who descended a hot, damp mine—the Levant Mine in Cornwall—in which the air was saturated with moisture and the temperature was from 80° to 93° F. (26.7° to 33.9° C.). In this mine he felt much discomfort, and even in parts at 86° F., or 30° C., found that his temperature rose to 102.5° F. (39.2° C.), and that of another member of the party to 101.5° F.

He also mentions that on Boycott's visit to a spot where the air was saturated and the temperature 93° F., the latter's mouth temperature rose to 103.5° F.

He says that, on the other hand, the men who are accustomed to the mine appear to bear the heat well, and not to suffer in health. But he remarks on the leisurely way in which they work, an observation which strikes the reader in the tropics very forcibly, as it compares with the slow progress of the work he sees done around him.

His preliminary conclusions were that the rectal temperature did not show any abnormal increase until the temperature of the wet bulb rose to 88° F. (31° C.), provided the subjects were stripped to the waist or clad in light flannel.

If the wet bulb exceeded this temperature by even 1° , a very marked rise in the rectal temperature took place, and this happened whether the air temperature was the same as the wet bulb, or 50° F. (28° C.), or only 10° F. above it. The rectal temperature rose hour by hour in proportion as the wet bulb temperature rose above 88° F., but more rapidly the higher this temperature rose.

If the experimenter was at rest in air moving at the rate of 170 linear feet (51 metres) per minute, a wet-bulb temperature up to about 93° F. could be borne without rise of body temperature. When he was working leisurely in still air, the limit of the wet-bulb temperature was 78° F. (25.5° C.), and with hard work it was lower. When he was working leisurely in air moving at the rate of 135 linear feet per minute, 85° F. (29.5° C.) could be borne, but not 87° F. (30.5° C.).

The symptoms which accompanied the abnormal rise of body temperature were:—

(1) Marked rise of the pulse-rate about 20 per 1° F., or 36 per 1° C. rise in rectal temperature when standing, and a quarter less when sitting. This increase depended not merely on the rectal temperature, but also on the

wet-bulb temperature, for on returning to cool air there was an immediate drop of the pulse-rate of 10 per 1° F. standing and 8 sitting.

(2) When a rectal temperature of 102° F. was reached, hyperpnœa was noticeable.

(3) Profuse sweating.

(4) General feeling of exhaustion and discomfort.

It is obvious, therefore, from the experiments quoted, that a normal man—for a short time, at all events—can stand very high temperatures without bad effects, provided that the air is dry. The skin is able to compensate for the excess of heat received by increased work, which it does by increasing the loss of heat by hyperæmia and increased sweat-production, for it must be remembered that loss due to radiation and conduction will be diminished.

If, on the other hand, the humidity of the atmosphere is increased, and a temperature of 88° F. in still air, or 93° F. in moving air, as recorded by the wet-bulb thermometer, is exceeded, the bodily temperature will begin to rise.

It is therefore obvious that, in discussing climatic effects, the relative humidity is of the utmost importance.

2. Experiments and Observations in the Tropics.—The tropical observations may be divided into—

(1) Observations during passage from the Temperate to the Tropical Zone.

(2) Observations during residence in the Tropics.

(3) Observations during passage from the Tropics to the Temperate Zone.

(1) *Observations during Passage from the Temperate to the Tropical Zone.*—Davy in 1839, during a voyage from England to Ceylon, made observations on seven healthy men under thirty years of age, the results of which were as follows :—

Climate.	Temperature of Air.	Mouth Temperature.
Tropics	79°·5° F. (26°·4° C.)	99°·2° F. (37°·32° C.)
Temperate Zone ..	60°·0° F. (15°·6° C.)	98°·3° F. (36°·80° C.)

From these data he concluded that the temperature of man increased in passing from a temperate to a warm climate, and that, therefore, the inhabitants of warm climates have a slightly higher temperature than those in temperate climates. Reynaud and Blosville's observations on the mean temperature of eight men are as follows :—

Climate.	Temperature of Air.	Temperature of Men.
Tropics	79° to 86° F. (26° to 30° C.)	100° F. (37°·58° C.)
Temperate Zone ..	53° to 62° F. (12° to 27° C.)	99° F. (37°·11° C.)

Ratray, on a voyage from England to Bahia and back, took the temperature under the tongue thrice a day in a number of persons, and found :—

Climate.	Temperature of Air.	Mouth Temperature.
Temperate climate near England	65·0° F. (18·0° C.)	98·30° F. (36·8° C.)
Tropics generally	76·9° F. (25·0° C.)	98·66° F. (37·0° C.)
Equator	84·0° F. (27·7° C.)	99·02° F. (37·2° C.)

Rattray indicates that he noted the humidity, but unfortunately does not give figures suitable for making calculations as to the relative humidity.

According to Wunderlich, Brown-Séquard, on a journey from France to Mauritius, found the following changes in one week in the temperature of eight healthy people taken under the tongue :—

Climate.	Temperature of Air.	Mouth Temperature (Mean).
Temperate	46·4° F. (80·0° C.)	97·90° F. (36·625° C.)
Tropical	77·0° F. (25·0° C.)	99·40° F. (37·428° C.)
Equatorial	85·1° F. (29·5° C.)	100·22° F. (37·900° C.)

Eydoux and Souleyet, however, record smaller differences as the result of their observations.

Becher laid down as a law that the bodily temperature increased in the proportion of 0·05° F. for every 1° F. increase in that of the air.

Neuhaus, during a voyage round the world, took the temperature regularly, and found :—

Temperature of Air.	6 a.m.	12 noon.	6 p.m.	10 p.m.	
From 11·5°-13·6°	36·6° C.	36·9° C.	37·1° C.	36·8° C.	Rectal temperature
	55	55	62	56	Pulse
From 23·9°-26·6°	36·9° C.	37·3° C.	37·3° C.	37·1° C.	Rectal temperature
	60	68	72	64	Pulse

Plehn's observations on this point are of the greatest interest, for he found his temperature 0·9° F. (0·5° C.) higher than normal before acclimatization in the Cameroons, and 1·8° F. (1·0° C.) higher in the Red Sea, with a temperature varying from 80° to 89·2° F. (28·9° to 31·8° C.), with a relative humidity of between 60 per cent. and 74 per cent.

Further, he believes that on a quick transit from a cold to a hot climate the body temperature of a European undergoes a slight rise, which does not take place if the start is made in the European summer and the arrival in the tropics in the cool time of the year.

All these observers agree that there is a rise of bodily temperature

in passing from the Temperate Zone to the Tropics, the rise being, according to—

Davy (mouth)	..	..	..	0°90' F. (0°50' C.)
Reynaud and Blossville	..	..	..	1°00' F. (0°47' C.)
Ratray (mouth) (tropics)	..	..	..	0°36' F. (0°20' C.)
" " (Equator)	..	..	..	0°72' F. (0°40' C.)
Brown-Séguard (mouth) (tropics)	..	..	..	1°50' F. (0°80' C.)
" " (Equator)	..	..	..	2°32' F. (1°24' C.)
Neuhaus (rectal)	..	..	..	0°54' F. (0°30' C.)
Plehn (site ?)	..	..	..	0°9 to 1°8 F. (0°5 to 1°0' C.)

It would appear as though the bodily temperature increased about 0°5° F. on passing from the Temperate Zone into the tropics, but while provisionally making this statement, it is necessary to remember that the question of humidity has not been considered in comparison with these observations, which were all taken on board ship, many of them presumably in mid-ocean, where the relative humidity is considerable.

Ratray saw this defect in his own observations, and points it out in his last paragraph, and regrets that statistics are not forthcoming from which to draw satisfactory conclusions on this point.

Since he recorded his observations, Haldane's experiments have emphasized the importance of humidity, and personally we believe that Brown-Séguard's results still further demonstrate the need for more researches on this subject. Our own observations are in agreement on the whole with those who find no alteration, for records carefully taken on board ship have failed to show, with very rare exceptions, any rise of temperature in perfectly healthy Europeans entering the tropics for the first time.

The following table from Ratray clearly shows that a large number of records are necessary, otherwise individual differences will show too prominently :—

Time of Day.	Average Temperature of Air Shade.	Number of Observations.	Temperature 98° F.	Temperature 98°5° F.	Temperature 99° F.	Temperature 99°5° F.	Temperature 100° F.
9 a.m. ..	98°51' F.	51	22	11	11	7	0
3 p.m. ..	99°00' F.	51	6	5	18	17	5
9 p.m. ..	98°47' F.	51	8	23	15	5	0
Averages and totals	98°00' F.	153	36	39	44	29	5

It is therefore possible that Brown-Séguard's results may partly depend upon personal peculiarities.

(2) *Observations during Residence in the Tropics.*—The next point to discuss is the temperature of Europeans and Natives residing in the tropics.

The earliest observations to which we have referred are those made by Davy upon himself in England and Barbadoes :—

OBSERVATIONS ON HIMSELF IN ENGLAND FROM AUGUST, 1844, TO APRIL, 1845.

Time of Day.	Mean Temperature under Tongue.	Mean Pulse.	Mean Respiration.	Mean Temperature of Room.	Remarks.
7 to 8 a.m.	98°74° F.	57·6	15·6	50·9° F.	Dinner at 5 p.m.
3 to 4 p.m.	98°52° F.	55·2	15·4	54·7° F.	
12 midnight	97°92° F.	54·7	15·2	62·0° F.	

OBSERVATIONS IN BARBADOES FROM JULY, 1845, TO NOVEMBER, 1848.

Time of Day.	Mean Temperature under Tongue.	Mean Pulse.	Mean Respiration.	Mean Temperature of Room.	Remarks.
6 to 7 a.m.	98°07° F.	54·4	14·4	76·7° F.	Breakfast at 9 a.m. Dinner at 5 p.m. Tea, 7 p.m.
12 to 2 p.m.	98°09° F.	56·0	15·4	83·6° F.	
9 to 11 p.m.	99° F.	60·3	15	79° F.	

His own deductions are that the evening temperature was higher in Barbadoes by 0·93° F., and, further, that the daily fluctuations are not identical.

The next observations of importance are those of Crombie in Calcutta, who carefully investigated this question in Europeans and Natives of India during a period extending over eighteen months. The temperatures were taken in the axilla, mouth, and rectum.

The Europeans' temperatures were generally taken in the mouth, and the Indians' (because of caste prejudices) in the axilla, for which Crombie says a correction of 0·2° F. was made—*i.e.*, was added to these temperatures. The European figures are :—

Mean a.m. Temperature.	Mean p.m. Temperature.	Mean of Twenty-four Hours.	Maximum Daily Range.
98·21° F.	98·77° F.	98·49° F.	1·31

The average variation of the temperature in Europeans in India, according to Crombie, is as follows :—

2 a.m. to 7 a.m.	..	..	..	..	97·83° F.
8 a.m. to 1 p.m.	..	..	..	..	98·61° F.
2 p.m. to 8 p.m.	..	..	..	..	98·92° F.
8 p.m. to 1 a.m.	..	..	..	..	98·54° F.

It will be noticed that these figures make the European temperature about 0.41° F. higher in India than in England.

Food and exercise, but particularly the latter, produce a marked rise in temperature, which might last some hours. Sleep depressed the temperature.

With regard to Natives, the average temperature was found to be 0.50° F., and at noon nearly 1.0° F. higher than in a European.

Crombie points out that the high average temperature of the Native between 10 a.m. and 12 noon is probably owing to a meal between 9 a.m. and 10 a.m., and the absence of the rise in the evening to the fact that the temperatures were taken when at rest. He considers the normal temperature of Natives in India to be between 98° and 99° F. from 10 p.m. to 10 a.m., and from 99° to 100° F. between 10 a.m. and 10 p.m. In Ceylon and Africa, according to our experience, the temperature of normal Natives kept at rest does not exceed 98.4° F. Davy states that Natives of Ceylon, Mauritius, and the Cape have a temperature of 0.6° F. higher than the average in temperate climates.

Crombie and Davy both agree that the temperature of Europeans in the tropics is about 0.5° higher than in the Temperate Zone. In our experience this may occur, but only before acclimatization.

Livingstone noted that the temperature in the shade being 42.2° C., the native temperature was 36.7° C., while his own was 37.8° C.; but this would without doubt be due to the fact that the natives would be perspiring much more freely than he was, because of the lack of clothes, for the skin of a perspiring West African native feels quite cold.

Jousset's observations, however, appear to begin to get to the real truth, for his figures demonstrate that though the axillary temperature is generally 0.7° C. to 0.8° C. higher in Europeans and Natives living in the tropics than that observed in temperate climes, they are approximately the same in both races under similar conditions of heat, humidity, etc.

Natives of the Tropics.		Europeans in the Tropics.	
Hindus	37.85° C.	Officials at Chandernagore	38.16° C.
Cochin Chinese	37.60° C.	—	—
Chinese	37.85° C.	—	—
Negroes of Senegal ..	37.70° C.	Sailors at Senegal	37.75° C.
Negroes on Congo ..	37.80° C.	—	—
Negroes at the Antilles ..	37.80° C.	{ Sailors at Antilles	37.70° C.
		{ Soldiers at Antilles	37.75° C.

Woodruff has tried to prove that blonde persons are more subject to increased temperatures in the tropics than brunettes, and states that variations as high as 100° F. to 102° F. have been noted in healthy blonde Teutons.

Eijkman, according to Pembrey, gives the average temperature

of Europeans living in Batavia as 98.65° F. (37.02° C.), and that of the Malays 98.47° F. (36.93° C.).

It is thus seen that the majority of the above observers are inclined to the view that there is a slight increase in the temperature of Europeans and Natives in the tropics as compared with their Temperate Zone temperatures.

But Plehn's remarks on this subject are most interesting, for he says that after a residence in the tropics there is no difference between the temperature of a normal European in the tropics and that of a similar individual in Europe. Further, that there is no perceptible difference between the body temperature of the acclimatized European and the native black race.

These statements of Plehn are, in our opinion, the correct answer to the question we are considering—viz., that the acclimatized European and Native under similar circumstances have a similar temperature. He is supported by Johnston, Boileau, Furnell, and Thornley, and also by our own experience in various parts of the tropics. It is, however, obvious that further information is required on this interesting subject.

This position of affairs naturally brings us to the question as to whether there is a seasonal variation of the temperature in the tropics. Davy, as a result of observations upon his mouth temperature in Barbadoes, found no variations with the season. Jousset, on the other hand, found a drop of 0.2° C. to 0.3° C. in the average temperature of the Natives in the cool season. But these observations are too few to make any remarks upon, though one would expect such a variation.

Perhaps it will be found eventually that race has little to do with temperature, but that climate and possibly seasons in the tropics will be found to have an influence which possibly will depend largely upon the relative humidity of the atmosphere coupled with a high air temperature, care being taken in such observations to allow for the effects of exercise, food, clothing, sleep, etc. Moreover, individual differences may be considerable, as is well shown in Rattray's table given above.

O'Connell believes that exposure to a hot damp tropical atmosphere at certain seasons of the year can produce an intermittent fever associated with hæmolysis, poikilocytosis, melanæmia, and enlargement of the spleen. So far we have not met with such an unclassified non-malarial fever.

(3) *Observations on the Passage from the Tropics to the Temperate Zone.*—Davy found that on passing from a hot climate to a temperate one, when there was a mean air difference of 20° F. (11.11° C.), there was a mean bodily temperature difference of 1.58° F. (0.88° C.).

Brown-Séguard, according to Wunderlich, found that when the party above mentioned had proceeded from the Equator to 37.4 degrees south latitude, the temperature of the air became 60.8° F. (16° C.), and the mean mouth temperature 99.04° F. (37.33° C.); but, of course, the party in question had not become acclimatized.

Ranke has made some observations on this point, but the total number are too few to enable any deductions to be drawn.

Our own observations indicate that there is no alteration in the temperature in the passage from warmer to cooler regions.

Effect on the Nervous System.—It appears that the cells of the nervous system obey the general law that vital activity is increased with a higher temperature, but only up to a certain point, after which their functional activity becomes markedly depressed. This is the case in most Europeans, though a great deal of mental and physical work can be done in the tropics if the bodily health is maintained. Natives naturally are less prone to feel the depressing effects of continuous high temperature.

It is possible that this condition, together with the effect of the actinic rays of the sun, may result in weakening the control of the higher centres over the lower, and thus inducing outbursts of what Plehn calls 'tropical fury' (*Tropenkoller*), by which he means fits of passion caused by trivial incidents. This is seen not only in Europeans, but in Natives, who are apt to do violent deeds under the impulse of unreasoning anger. It appears to be one of the causes of assaults and violent crime in certain parts of the tropics.

Effect upon the Urinary System.—Urine is diminished in quantity in the tropics, and this is said to be due not merely to diminution of water, but also of solids, among which urea and chlorides may be noticeably mentioned. Lawson says that the pigments are increased.

According to Huggard, Dundas has described an atrophy of the kidney among residents of the tropics. We are well acquainted with the small size of the kidney so often seen in the tropics, due to chronic interstitial nephritis, but not with a simple atrophy of the kidney.

Effect on the Generative Organs.—The generative organs act more vigorously in the Tropics, but venereal excess is distinctly more deleterious than in the Temperate Zone.

Menstruation begins about one year earlier in European girls living in the Tropics than in those living in the Temperate Zone. For instance, it begins in 48·4 per cent. at thirteen to fourteen years of age, and in 50·07 per cent. at fifteen to sixteen years of age. Eurasian and East Indian girls, according to Das, mostly begin to menstruate at thirteen years (54·8 per cent.), though a considerable number do so at twelve years (18·6 per cent.). Natives of India mostly begin about eleven to twelve years of age (63·51 per cent.), and high-caste Indian girls begin in their eleventh year (50 per cent.) or twelfth year (48 per cent.); but this early menstruation may be associated with child-marriage rather than climate. Puberty in boys appears at an earlier age than in temperate climates.

There appears no reason to doubt that the climacteric is a more trying time for the European woman in the Tropics, and tends to produce neurasthenia. If possible, therefore, such a woman should be sent to the Temperate Zone during this period.

It is possible that fertility is not affected in Europeans, though there is some doubt on this subject, and evidence is increasing that it greatly decreases after the second or third generation. Abortions are said to be more common in the European in the Tropics than in the Temperate Zone, and post-partum hæmorrhage is also said to be more common, but these statements require careful investigation before being accepted.

Effect on Growth.—Rattray made observations on the weight and growth of forty-eight naval cadets, aged from fourteen and a half to seventeen years, during four successive changes of climate during a voyage. He considered that they grew too rapidly and lost weight considerably in the tropics, and that their strength and health was impaired by the heat.

These conclusions of Rattray's are of the greatest importance, showing clearly the necessity (well known) of sending European children as soon as possible to live in the Temperate Zone, not merely, as some writers assert, for education, but, much more importantly, for their health.

THE EFFECT OF LIGHT.

Sunlight contains heat rays (red), light rays (yellow), and chemical rays (blue, violet, and ultra-violet) ; that is to say, rays extending from the infra-red to as far as $291 \mu\mu$ in the ultra-violet (Gibbs), but is much influenced by latitude, longitude, altitude, and the daily and hourly varying local meteorological conditions.

These rays reach the earth, according to Langley, in the following percentages :—

	Per Cent.					
Ultra-violet	39
Violet	42
Blue	48
Greenish-blue	54
Yellow	63
Red	70
Infra-red	76

Freer, Gibbs, and Bacon have shown that, though the tropical light of Manila contains few, if any, more ultra-violet rays than the Temperate Zone, still the chemical rays have more effect there than in a temperate climate, and these effects vary on different days. Freer distinguishes 'actinic' and 'non-actinic' days, on both of which the sky may be equally clear. The cause of the difference between an actinic and non-actinic day is not understood. Gibbs does not believe that the normal intensities of the light in the tropics is different from that of any other region, the influence of local meteorological conditions being excluded, the most important of these being the humidity. Aron suspects that the deleterious influence of tropical sunlight is due to the long heat waves rather than to the short chemical waves, which we will now consider.

The chemical rays appear to have, first, a stimulative and beneficial influence, and, secondly, a harmful influence.

Stimulative Influence.—Finsen, by experiments upon tadpoles, earthworms, beetles, flies, etc., came to the conclusion that the action of the chemical or blue-violet rays was very considerable as compared with light (yellow) or heat (red) rays, and that, though their action was probably very complex, still, it could be best considered as an excitation of the nervous system.

This excitation was so powerful as to produce reflex actions in tadpoles and movements in other animals, while in man he considers them to be the cause of the feeling of *bien-être* experienced on a bright, sunny day, which he compares with the depression felt on a dark, cloudy day.

Bactericidal Properties.—Downes and Blunt in 1877 showed that the chemical rays could kill bacteria, while D'Arsonval and Charrain showed that they could kill the *Bacillus pyocyaneus*. In 1903 Bernard and Morgan demonstrated that it was the middle third of the ultra-violet portion of the spectrum which caused these bactericidal effects.

Harmful Influences—ACUTE SKIN IRRITATION.—Charcot in 1859 first expressed the opinion that it was the chemical and not the heat rays which produced sunburn, and showed that the dermatitis caused by strong electric light was identical with that caused by the sun.

In 1889 Widmark proved this definitely by using an electric arc of 1,200 candle-power, the light of which was first passed through water to absorb the heat rays, and then allowed to fall upon the shaven skin of a white rabbit, when the characteristic inflammation resulted. He then interposed a plate of ordinary glass to exclude the ultra-violet rays, when the skin remained unaffected.

In 1901 Finsen placed on the flexor surface of his forearm a plate of rock-crystal and pieces of different-coloured glass, and also wrote his initials in Indian ink. He then exposed the arm to the rays from an 80-ampère arc for twenty minutes, ten minutes at a distance of 50 metres and ten minutes at 75 metres. The result was that first all parts were slightly influenced by the heat, and then those parts which were unprotected or covered with rock-crystal became red and inflamed, and later desquamated and became pigmented, while the parts covered by glass and Indian ink, after the slight initial inflammation due to the heat, did not further react. This experiment is interesting as showing that the effects due to heat appear at once and pass off quickly, while those due to the chemical rays do not begin until after a lapse of three hours, which agrees with the well-known fact that a sunburn takes some time to develop.

Freund, as the result of his experiments, concluded that the chemical rays penetrated into the skin. Bernard and Morgan found that the ultra-violet rays were the active agent in producing sunburn.

The histology of solar erythema is not well known. Leredde and Pantrie made a biopsy on the skin of the shoulder of one of their friends who was suffering from sunburn of three days' duration. The skin was in a condition of acute erythema, without œdema or effusion. Under a low power of the microscope the epidermis appeared normal in thickness and disposition, but the horny layer was exfoliated in places. The dermis was richer than normal in cellular elements, and the connective-tissue bundles were swollen. Under a higher power the intercellular spaces appeared larger than normal. The vessels of the dermis were dilated, and there was a slight leucocytic infiltration, while the connective-tissue cells were swollen. These appearances are exactly like those produced by the rays of an electric light.

If the sun's action stops at this, the only change will be the deposit of the yellowish-brown pigment in the skin so well known in the tropics. If, however, the action is more intense, an exudation appears, which may be sero-fibrinous, cellular, or bloody, while the depth to which these changes may extend depends upon the intensity of the light. The epithelium becomes swollen, and bullæ may form, and the connective tissue of the dermis be swollen.

The pigmentation of the epidermis is important, and will be referred to at greater length in the next section.

CHRONIC SKIN IRRITATION.—The chronic effects produced on the skin by the chemical energy of light are :—

- (1) Pigmentation.
- (2) Vascular modification.
- (3) Disease.

(1) *Pigmentation*.—It is well known that pigmentation follows sunburn, but until recently it was not evident that it was of a protective nature.

In 1888 Wedding, confirmed by Charcot, first made this point clear, though Unna in 1885 was the first to say that it was to be regarded as useful, inasmuch as it prevented the rays penetrating too deeply, thus preventing inflammation.

In 1896 Finsen painted a black ring 2 inches wide round his arm with Indian ink to imitate the colour of a negro's skin, and then exposed it for three hours to a very hot sun. For a time the skin remained normal, showing only a little redness at the edge of the black paint, but in due course it became red and inflamed, except where it had been painted black. After several days the erythema disappeared, and the area which had been red was noticed to have become distinctly pigmented, or, in plain language, was sunburnt.

He then exposed it again to the sun, but this time the area which had originally been covered with Indian ink was unprotected. The result was that this part became red and inflamed, while the pigmented area was unaffected, except that it became a little more pigmented.

This experiment of Finsen's shows that the colour of native races

living in the tropics is protective, and was possibly originally induced by the sun. Sambon and Baly found that the ultra-violet rays were entirely absorbed by a pigmented piece of skin, and therefore support the theory that pigmentation affords an efficient natural protection against ultra-violet rays.

That the dark pigmentation is useful is shown also by the observation made by us on various occasions that natives suffering from leucoderma avoid going into the sun, as they state that the unpigmented portions of the skin become inflamed and painful. In this connection, an interesting case showing the importance of these rays came under our notice. A native, who had developed large leucodermic patches involving the whole of the face, noticed that he could no longer work in the sun, as each time he tried to do so the patches became painful and he felt sick, very weak, and giddy, and therefore asked to be relieved of his outdoor duties; but it was held that he was still fit to discharge his ordinary duties, with the result that the unfortunate man was compelled to resign his appointment a few months later. It is therefore well that the importance of skin pigmentation should be more widely known.

Generally speaking, in regions where the sunlight is very intense the race is densely pigmented. As a rule, the people who live nearer the Equator are more pigmented than those farther away; *e.g.*, the black colour of the West African can be compared with the red of the American Indian or the yellow of the Chinese. But this rule is not without exceptions, for the Sinhalese, living nearer the Equator, are distinctly less pigmented than the Tamils of the warmer regions of Jaffna and South India.

There is also not the slightest doubt that the European living in tropical countries becomes darker, a fact which specially applies to the descendants of the settlers. On the other hand, according to Finsen, the dark colour of the negro diminishes to a sensible degree in Europe.

It must be noted, however, that a certain number of Europeans do not become sunburnt in the tropics. On the contrary, their skin, especially in localities where the climate is damp and hot, may take a peculiar whitish colour, even in cases in which the blood examination does not reveal any sensible decrease in the amount of hæmoglobin. As a result of an extended series of observations made by medical officers in the Philippine Islands, Chamberlain reports that the red cell counts averaged 5,200,000 per cubic millimetre in healthy American soldiers, averaging twenty-six years of age, after twenty months' service near sea-level, which count does not differ from the normal as at present recognized for healthy young men in the Temperate Zone. The hæmoglobin averaged 89.6 per cent., and the colour index 0.86 to 0.87, both of which were a little low, but not sufficiently so to indicate a definite anæmia. He believes that the pallor mentioned above is as a rule due to a superficial ischæmia.

The effect of tropical light on man has been made the subject of a special memoir by Woodruff, who points out that all over the

globe the people who live nearer the poles are blonder than those residing near the Equator. He thinks that insufficient pigmentation, by permitting the penetration of the chemical rays, conduces to the increased activity of the mind and vigour in the muscles which is found in new-comers in the tropics. This condition of excitation causes them to overdo themselves sooner or later, and so to produce a feeling of exhaustion which he describes as tropical exhaustion.

He further considers that white men cannot become acclimatized in the tropics, and also that they should be protected by clothing opaque to the blue and ultra-violet rays. For this purpose he says that the outer clothing should be white, grey, or yellow, because heat will be least absorbed by these colours, while the underclothing should be black or yellow, to stop the ultra-violet rays. For office-workers and others not exposed to the direct sun rays he advises black or dark blue, but he states that it is not known whether blue or black excludes the ultra-violet rays.

He also strongly advises opaque head-gear, as he says it is surprising how transparent the scalp and skull are to light rays, and that it is certain that the ultra-violet rays pass through them.

He points out the nuisance of the glare from houses painted white in the tropics, and mentions the better colours of green, dark yellow, and brown. The gradual disappearance of the white buildings in the business part of Colombo, and the appearance of new buildings coloured brown, indicates the correctness of his views.

While it is not possible to agree with all or even with many of Woodruff's statements, there is no doubt whatever that there is a great general truth in what he says, though many of the matters upon which he touches are purely speculative. On the other hand, there is most urgent need for protection from sunlight both as regards the eyes and the whole body. With regard to the effect of the tropical sun on man and animals, some most interesting experiments have been performed in the Philippine Islands by Aron and Gibbs separately. Rabbits and monkeys—*i.e.*, animals with limited power of physical heat regulation—die if exposed to the sun's rays. The body temperature of these animals rises to febrile heights, while the post-mortem reveals hæmorrhages into the meninges, and, in the case of monkeys, into the heart. If, however, the increase of heat absorbed from the sun's radiation is compensated by increased loss from the animal by such means as a strong wind, the animal suffers no discomfort. Insolation of the skull alone is without effect if the body temperature is kept within normal limits. Our own experiments showed that rabbits died in about an hour if exposed to the sun with their head shaven, and lived if protected from these rays by means of red glass. Aron and Gibbs have also shown that if the human skin is exposed to the sun's rays the temperature of the area so exposed rises as a rule more rapidly and reaches a higher maximum in a dark skin than in a light, until the nerve endings of the latter are irritated by the prolonged exposure.

The black skin is protective because it guards the nerve endings from irritation, and because of the more rapid radiation by means of which heat is quickly lost, especially from the area in the shade, which is usually greater in extent than the part in the sunlight. Further, it is probable that the relatively greater number of sweat glands in the dark skin is also protective. The air in the human hair, especially in black hair, under the influence of the tropical sun acquires exceedingly high temperatures. There is not the slightest doubt that the pigmentation of native races is protective, and that the older theories of Waltz that carbon was deposited in the tissues owing to imperfect oxidation due to heat, and that of Darwin that it was due to a survival of those best fitted to withstand tropical disease—for he believed that pigmentation prevented the Native from being attacked by the fatal miasmata of the country—cannot now be seriously considered.

As to the origin of the pigment, this question must be considered as far from settled. There are two possible sources for the melanin, viz.:—

- (a) The hæmoglobin of the blood.
- (b) The cells of the epidermis.

(a) *The Hæmoglobin*.—This theory suggests that hæmoglobin is altered into melanin either in the blood-stream, in the connective-tissue cells, or in special melanoblasts, which by amœboid movement take the pigment to the epidermis.

(b) *The Cells of the Epidermis*.—This theory states that melanin is manufactured *in situ* by the epithelial cells, and is not derived from hæmoglobin, and in view of the histology given above this appears to be probably the correct solution of the problem.

Melanism, which varies from mere freckles through the diffuse yellow and brown pigmentation to the jet-black of the African negro's skin, is caused by melanin granules lying in and between the cells of the epidermis.

With regard to the pigmentation of different races, it must be remembered that it is only absent in albinos, and that it occurs in the epidermis of the areolæ and mammillæ of the breast, the scrotum, labia majora, and around the anus in white races, being contained chiefly in the large basal cells of the Malpighian layer, and to much less extent in the more superficial layers, and the connective-tissue cells of the papillary layer of the corium. In negroes the pigmentation is deeper and more diffusely spread in the epidermis.

(2) *Vascular Modification*.—Associated with pigmentation there is said to be a persistent dilatation of the vessels and capillaries of the skin, and it is stated that hair and nails grow more rapidly in the tropics than in the Temperate Zone.

Light in general is believed to have an effect upon the blood, which absorbs the violet and ultra-violet rays, and the red corpuscles under these influences probably absorb more oxygen.

(3) *Disease*.—With regard to disease, there appears to be no reason to doubt that the irritating effect of light has at least a part

in the ætiology of Kaposi's disease (*Xeroderma pigmentosum*), which we have met with in the tropics, where it would naturally develop rapidly in children prone to the disease.

There is also no doubt that these rays play a part in the production of the erythema of pellagra, as will be described later on, and they may have some effect in producing sunstroke.

Woodruff draws attention to the almost universal neurasthenia of white men in the Tropics, among whom he says insanity is more common than in Temperate Zones. In support of the latter statement, he asserts that the insanity rate in the Philippine Army in 1901 was 2.02 per mille, while in the United States from 1889-1898 it was 1.13; but he remarks that the diagnosis was not confirmed on the arrival of several of the Philippine soldiers in the United States, as they recovered *en route*. He draws attention to the loss of memory in the tropics (*tropical amnesia*), a condition which is very prevalent on the West Coast of Africa, being often called 'coast memory.' He also mentions the midday siesta as useful in preventing this neurasthenia, and in this he is also probably correct, especially for ladies. Ordinary officials and business men, however, cannot afford to rest in the middle of the day.

ACCLIMATIZATION.

Plehn seems to have been the first careful observer to clearly prove that the changes induced in the new-comer as he enters the tropics in due course disappear, and his organs becoming accustomed to the new work demanded from them, he virtually returns to the same condition of temperature, respiration, etc., as in the Temperate Zone—in other words, becomes acclimatized, as has already been explained. Further, if constantly exposed to the sun's rays, his skin is apt to become more pigmented than normal, and to afford a certain degree of protection against its rays.

Sambon pointed out long ago that if proper sanitary and other measures against disease were introduced into the tropics, and if care were taken with regard to food, drink, excessive heat, and the rays of the sun, there is no reason why the European should not live healthily in these regions.

This is supported in our belief by the extraordinary success of the American sanitarians in the canal zone of Central America, once one of the most unhealthy regions of the world, but where now the sickness-rate has been diminished to less than half that of the death-rate of many a tropical town. We feel that the basis of the largest proportion of illness and death in the tropics is bad sanitation and not climatic influences. Notwithstanding these facts, a permanent colonization of the low-lying regions of the tropics by a white race is, in our opinion, not possible, as a uniformly damp, hot climate endured for years diminishes the resistance against disease, and has a markedly deleterious effect on the nervous system. Fer-

tility probably also decreases after the second or third generation. The climate greatly deteriorates the physique of the children, as can easily be observed in any district of the tropics at sea-level. In the highlands, such as some parts of British East Africa, colonization by a white race may be possible, though Van Standel has pointed out that prolonged residence in tropical highlands produces changes in the nervous systems of the second and subsequent generations, even if it does not do so in the first.

PROPHYLAXIS.

An attempt has been made in the foregoing sections to impress the reader with the importance of the heat and the light rays in the tropics. It now remains to suggest easily applicable methods of prophylaxis to diminish these evil effects.

The remedies are :—

1. Protection for the head, spine, and eyes.
2. Suitable clothing.
3. Suitable houses, offices, etc.
4. Vegetation.
5. Suitable roads.
6. Avoidance of the midday heat.
7. Avoidance of alcohol.

1. Suitable Head-gear.—All Europeans should wear a light helmet or topee covered with white or khaki-coloured cloth externally and ventilated. This helmet should have a broad brim lined with green and prolonged down the back of the neck, should be lined internally with red, or red and yellow, or black, and should possess an internal band attached in such a manner that the head does not touch the frame of the hat, while it allows free circulation of the air.

When persons are compelled to work under the tropical sun and to expose their backs to its rays, a thin strip of yellow and red coloured silk should besewn into the shirt along the spine, or attached to the inner aspect of the coat by means of hooks and eyelets. Eyes should be protected with dark glasses with side-pieces.

Ladies who are particular about the skin of the face should wear black veils, though these are very warm.

The reasons of these requirements are, while white reflects heat very well, and absorbs very little, and is therefore excellent externally, yet it transmits the chemical rays, while red and yellow absorb them.

2. Clothing.—Clothing should be as light as possible in weight, and of a white or khaki colour externally. Sambon some years ago devised a cloth, called 'Solaro,' khaki-coloured externally and red internally, with the object of preventing the action of the sun's rays on the body. It is made by using threads of yellow and blue

twisted separately and together for the warp, while red threads are used for the weft, but these latter are brought back in the proportion of three to one, so that the front has three yellow and three blue threads to one red thread, thus producing the khaki colour. It should only be used as a coat, and should be obtained as thin as possible, and made up as lightly as possible without linings or doublings.

As regards underclothing, we are of the opinion that thin woollen materials are the best, but we are not in favour of openwork underclothes. At the present time the use of abdominal woollen or flannel belts (so-called 'cholera belts') is much abused; they are useful, however, to people with a tendency to intestinal disorders.

It should be remembered that when clothing is wet it is a good conductor of heat, and hence the risk of sitting down in damp clothes. Clothing should not be too heavy, nor too tight-fitting. Ladies should not wear too heavy skirts, which congest the pelvic viscera.

A silk hat and frock-coat have still to be worn by men at official functions at midday, but the custom is unfortunate, and may perhaps in time disappear.

3. **Houses, Offices, etc.**—Buildings should never be painted white or blue, but should be of a dark red colour. The amount of light admitted to a room should be restricted, and care should be taken that reflection from the ground into the room does not take place. Deep verandas, without which no building in the tropics is comfortable, are of the greatest value in controlling the light, as are tatties or tats made of grasses and wood, and jalousies.

Rooms should be capable of being cooled by punkahs or fans, and should be lit with electric light whenever possible. Ice-blocks are very useful in very warm weather or at meetings, or in sick-rooms. The walls of rooms should be painted rose-colour, not white.

Damp courses are required in the tropics, as walls are apt to absorb moisture and become very damp. Round roof-tiles and ventilated double ceilings are necessary to keep off the sun's rays.

4. **Vegetation.**—Roads should be protected from the glare of the sun by shade-trees—that is to say, trees with spreading branches—while plots of green grass are most valuable in towns.

5. **Suitable Roads.**—There is not the slightest doubt that red roads are the most comfortable for the eye and soothing to the nervous system, and that white roads are exceedingly trying to both.

6. **Avoidance of the Midday Heat.**—If possible, travelling and muscular exertion should be done in the early morning or late afternoon, and avoided in the middle of the day, when a siesta is most beneficial. The absurd custom of making social calls at 12 noon in certain parts of the tropics should be discouraged, and a more reasonable hour substituted.

7. **Avoidance of Alcohol.**—Alcohol should never be taken before the sun goes down, for it unfits the individual for work, and is the most important predisposing cause of sunstroke.

REFERENCES.

Special attention is drawn to the series of valuable articles on the subjects dealt with in this chapter contained in the Philippine Journal of Science, Section B, for the years 1911 and 1912.

- BROWN-SÉQUARD (1859). *Journal de la Physiologie de l'Homme*, ii. 551. (Quoted in Wunderlich, 114.) Paris.
- CROMBIE (1873). *Indian Annals Medical Science*, xvi. Calcutta.
- DAVY (1839). *Researches*, i. London. (1850). *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society*. (On the Temperature of Man in the Tropics.)
- FRASER AND STANTON (1911). *Studies from the Institute for Medical Research, Federated Malay States*. No. 12. Etiology of Beri-Beri.
- FUNK, C. (1911). *Journal of Physiology*, xliii., 395.
- GRESSWALL (1884). *British Medical Journal*, ii. 164.
- HALDANE (1905). *Journal of Hygiene*, v. 494.
- JOUSSET (1883). *Archives de Médecine Navale*, xi. Paris.
- JOUSSET (1884). *Traité de l'Acclimatement et de l'Acclimatation*. (Full description of the subject up to 1884.) Paris.
- LIVINGSTONE (1857). *Travels and Researches in South Africa*, 509.
- MAUREL (1884). *Bulletin Soc. d'Anthrop. de Paris*, vii. 371.
- MCCAY (1907). *Indian Medical Gazette*, xlii. 370. *Scientific Memoirs, Government of India*, Nos. 34, 37, and 48. (1912). *Protein Element in Nutrition*. London.
- MONTAGEZZA (1863). *Presse Médicale Belge, Bruxelles*, xv. 111.
- NEUHAUS (1893). *Virchow's Archiv*, Bd. 134, xix. 365.
- PEMBREY AND NICOL (1898). *Journal of Physiology*, xxiii. 386.
- PINKERTON (1881). *Journal of Anatomy and Physiology*, xv. 118. London.
- RANKE (1900). *Einwirkung des Tropenklimas auf die Ernährung des Menschen*. (Copious literature.) Berlin.
- RATTRAY (1870). *Proceedings of the Royal Society of London*, ii. 513-528.
- REYNAUD AND BLOSVILLE (1836-39). *Animal Heat*. Todd's Encyclopædia, ii. 658-659.
- RINGER AND STUART (1877). *Proceedings of the Royal Society of London*, xxvi. 187.
- RUBNER (1902). *Die Gesetze des Energieverbrauchs bei der Ernährung*. Leipzig.
- SAMBON (1897). *British Medical Journal*, i., Jan. 9. (Acclimatization.) (1907). *Journal Tropical Medicine*, 67. (Tropical Clothing.)
- SCHAFER (1898). *Text-book of Physiology*. Pembrey's articles on Respiration and Animal Heat. (These are most valuable to the student of tropical medicine, with full literature up to 1897.)
- WOODRUFF (1907). *Tropical Light*. New York. (1909). *Expansion of Races*. New York.

CHAPTER V

DISEASE IN THE TROPICS

General remarks—Ceylon—British Guiana—Straits Settlements—Jamaica—
India—Egypt—Tropical Africa—China and Japan—British New Guinea—
Northern Mexico—Endemicity—Epidemicity—Conclusion—References.

GENERAL REMARKS.

BEFORE beginning the systematic study of tropical diseases, a few remarks upon the difference in the incidence of disease in various tropical countries may be of interest. The factors which cause this difference are little known, and probably include many other matters than mere climatology—*e.g.*, sanitation, the habits and customs of the various peoples, and heredity, all of which must play no inconsiderable part in determining the presence or the preponderance of certain diseases in given places. Therefore it is convenient, at as early a stage in the book as possible, to present to the reader some brief statement of the diseases generally met with in different tropical countries, and at the same time to point out their incidence upon the different races dwelling therein.

In warm climates there are three distinct sets of human beings: firstly, those whose native habitat is a temperate or cold climate; these are classed under the term 'Europeans,' including Americans, Australians, etc., or, in brief, the white population: secondly, those who are natives of the particular climate; and if these consist of more than one race, it is convenient to divide them according to race: thirdly, the descendants from a mixture of European with a native race, such as Mulattos in Central and South America, the Eurasians in India, and the Burghers in Ceylon.

The term 'Burgher,' *sensu strictu*, is, however, applied in Ceylon only to the legitimate descendants of the old Dutch settlers.

There are two methods of tracing susceptibility to disease—firstly, by sickness, and, secondly, by death-rates.

Any inquiry of this nature is, however, extremely unsatisfactory in the tropics, because disease is not as a rule diagnosed by a qualified medical practitioner; and because, unless care is taken, an erroneous diagnosis may easily be made by the latter; *e.g.*, even now typhoid fever, liver abscess, kala-azar, relapsing fever, tick

fever, trypanosomiasis, glandular fever, undulating fever, agchylostomiasis, phthisis, empyema, appendicitis, and heat-stroke, are often diagnosed as malaria. It is also to be noted that in the official statistics of most colonies the list of diseases is far from being complete. Thus, for instance, the reader will fail to find such terms as 'leukæmia,' 'pseudo-leukæmia,' and even 'elephantiasis' in some reports. Then, again, such a common disease as agchylostomiasis is frequently mistaken for something quite different. Therefore the sickness-rates, which are difficult to get, are useless, as, indeed, are death-rates; in other words, statistics about disease in the tropics are most misleading. But with this understanding some remarks must be made; for though the figures are inaccurate, still, it is hoped that they will not continue to be so, but will slowly and steadily improve.

CEYLON.

The infantile mortality—*i.e.*, the proportion which the deaths of children under one year of age bear to a thousand births—is 175 per 1,000 births on an average, for the period 1898-1904.

This mortality affects the different races in the following manner :

Europeans	..	..	..	..	..	97
Sinhalese	..	..	..	..	..	157
Burghers	..	..	..	..	..	195
Tamils	..	..	..	..	..	213
Moors	..	..	..	..	..	230
Malays	..	..	..	..	..	292
Others	..	..	..	..	..	296

The principal causes, in official statistics, appear under the headings of infantile convulsions and diarrhœa, prematurity and debility, tetanus, bronchitis, and pneumonia; but the real causes are the bad condition of the mother before the birth of the child, improper and bad food, and lack of proper care of the child.

The crude death-rate of Ceylon for the period 1898-1904 is 27·4 per 1,000 inhabitants, and is divided racially—*i.e.*, per 1,000 of the racial population—as follows :

Tamils	..	..	..	..	..	31·1
Moors	..	..	..	..	..	29·3
Malays	..	..	..	..	..	28·1
Sinhalese	..	..	..	..	..	25·8
Burghers	..	..	..	..	..	22·0
Others	..	..	..	..	..	21·8
Europeans	..	..	..	..	..	21·1

Though the European death-rate is apparently low, still, it is undoubtedly high when it is considered that the population is, on the average, of an age on which death falls lightly in Europe; and, moreover, many of them have been medically examined before coming to the colony.

The principal causes of death are diarrhœa, dysentery, and the various kinds of fever, among which simple ill-defined fever stands highest. When this is considered, a strong suspicion is felt that it includes a great many cases of typhoid and paratyphoid, which only come to 5·2 per cent. of all diseases, while simple continued is 13·9 per cent.

So-called infantile convulsions come third, and probably agchylostomiasis ought to come high, because the figures for anæmia and dropsy, which often means undiagnosed agchylostomiasis, when added to the agchylostome rate, make 5·7 per cent. Malarial cachexia is often diagnosed when the true cause is agchylostomiasis.

Of tubercular diseases, phthisis appears to be the most important, and is apparently on the increase in the Sinhalese.

Cancer exists in all the races in Ceylon. Its lethal incidence, expressed as a percentage of the total racial deaths, is as follows :

Europeans	..	..	..	..	..	1·3
Burghers	..	..	..	..	..	0·7
Sinhalese	..	..	..	..	..	} 0·2
Tamils	..	..	..	..	..
Malays	..	..	..	..	..
Others	..	..	..	..	..
Moors	..	..	..	..	..	0·1

The deaths of women in childbirth are higher than in Europe, and the principal cause is puerperal fever.

Diabetes is a prevalent disease among the better classes of Natives—among the lawyers, doctors, and merchants—but not in the lower classes.

Malaria in all forms is met with, but it is not a great cause of death, the pernicious form not being common. Simple tertian is the most common ; then the subtertian, and finally the quartan, which is the rarest of the three. Under the term 'malaria' have been placed kala-azar, leukæmia, and pseudo-leukæmia, which are far from being uncommon.

Insanity is relatively much less than in England and Wales or Ireland, the chief form being mania. It is notable that progressive paralysis, locomotor ataxia, and generally the parasyphilitic diseases, are extremely rare, though syphilis is rampant in all races.

Leprosy is common, but alone is not a great cause of death.

Beri-beri, although probably a Sinhalese word, does not exist in Ceylon, though a few imported cases die every year. Formerly cases were wrongly diagnosed, the disease referred to being really agchylostomiasis.

The principal causes of death in the different races are shown in the table on p. 78, which explains itself.

Ceylon has been rather fully dealt with, because figures are available which, however faulty, show to a certain extent the susceptibility of the different races to disease.

CAUSES OF DEATH IN THE RACES OF CEYLON EXPRESSED AS A PERCENTAGE OF
TOTAL RACIAL DEATHS.

CEYLON

III

<i>Europeans.</i>	<i>Burghers.</i>	<i>Sinhalese.</i>	<i>Tamils.</i>	<i>Moors.</i>	<i>Malays.</i>	<i>Others.</i>
Enteric .. 10.1	Phthisis .. 9.7	Diarrhoea 18.30	Simple Fever 17.3	Simple Fever 19.20	Simple Fever 10.4	Diarrhoea .. 9.5
Dysentery 10.0	Diarrhoea .. 9.3	Simple Fever 12.00	Diarrhoea .. 12.3	Diarrhoea 10.00	Diarrhoea .. 7.4	Dysentery .. 8.1
Phthisis .. 6.7	Pneumonia 6.6	Enteric .. 7.60	Dysentery 11.0	Dysentery .. 4.90	Phthisis .. 6.8	Simple Fever 7.4
Pneumonia 4.7	Dysentery .. 5.5	Phthisis .. 3.80	Pneumonia 6.2	Pneumonia 3.60	Pneumonia 5.9	Enteric .. 6.3
Diarrhoea 4.3	Enteric .. 3.4	Anæmia .. 3.60	Remittent 3.8	Phthisis .. 3.10	Dysentery 5.8	Phthisis .. 6.3
Simple Fever 1.7	Simple Fever 2.6	Dysentery 2.80	Malarial } .. 2.8 Cachexia }	Enteric .. 2.70	Remittent 3.5	Remittent 1.9
Remittent 1.5	Remittent 2.3	Puerperal } 1.60 Convulsions }	Phthisis .. 1.9	Anæmia .. 2.30	Enteric .. 1.5	Dochmius 1.6
Cancer .. 1.3	Child-birth 1.1	Child-birth 1.20	Anæmia .. 1.7	Remittent 1.60	Malarial } .. 1.5 Cachexia }	Malarial } .. 1.1 Cachexia }
Ague .. 0.6	Malarial } .. 0.8 Cachexia }	Pneumonia 0.80	Child-birth 0.8	Child-birth 1.20	Child-birth 1.1	Pneumonia 0.9
Anæmia .. 0.4	Anæmia .. 0.8	Remittent 0.30	Enteric .. 0.7	Puerperal } 0.90 Convulsions }	Puerperal } 0.9 Convulsions }	Child-birth 0.6
Malarial } .. 0.3 Cachexia }	Cancer .. 0.7	Cancer .. 0.20	Dochmius 0.7	Malarial } .. 0.80 Cachexia }	Anæmia .. 0.8	Anæmia .. 0.6
Dochmius .. 0.2	Puerperal } 0.3 Convulsions }	Malarial } .. 0.20 Cachexia }	Ague .. 0.3	Dochmius 0.10	Ague .. 0.3	Ague .. 0.2
Child-birth 0.1	Ague .. 0.1	Ague .. 0.08	Puerperal } 0.2 Convulsions }	Cancer .. 0.10	Dochmius 0.2	Puerperal } 0.2 Convulsions }
Puerperal } 0.0 Convulsions }	Dochmius .. 0.1	Dochmius 0.06	Cancer .. 0.2	Ague .. 0.09	Cancer .. 0.2	Cancer .. 0.2
Total 41.9	Total 43.3	Total 52.54	Total 59.9	Total 50.79	Total 47.8	Total 44.9

BRITISH GUIANA.

For purposes of comparison let us turn to quite a different part of the world—viz., British Guiana—where the infantile mortality for 1905 is 187 per 1,000 births, which is racially divided as follows :

Chinese	..	..	..	..	93
Europeans	..	..	..	..	115
Aborigines	..	..	..	..	138
Mixed races	..	..	..	..	161
East Indians	..	..	..	..	166
Portuguese	..	..	..	..	215
Blacks	..	..	..	..	220

The principal causes of this mortality are malaria, undefined fever, bowel complaints, anæmia, debility, marasmus, premature birth, bronchitis, pneumonia, and convulsions. But, according to the Registrar-General, the great cause is illegitimacy ; for the father, by refusing to support his offspring, compels the mother to work for her living, with the result that the child is looked after by anyone.

The crude death-rate is 27·4 per 1,000 of the population for 1905, the mean for the previous five years being 26·9.

The racial death-rates were :

Mixed races	..	..	..	..	19·8
Europeans	..	..	..	..	21·1
East Indians	..	..	..	..	25·6
Native blacks	..	..	..	..	29·2
Portuguese	..	..	..	..	31·9
Chinese	..	..	..	..	36·3
Aborigines	..	..	..	..	51·9
Africans	..	..	..	..	67·7

The principal causes of death appear to be : simple fever, convulsions, pneumonia, phthisis, Bright's disease, malaria, diarrhœa, dysentery, and bronchitis. Agchylostomiasis seems to have very little lethal effect, according to the figures. Cancer caused only 59, typhoid only 4, liver abscess only 9 deaths out of a total of 8,314. Leprosy was responsible for 69 cases.

STRAITS SETTLEMENTS.

With reference to the Straits Settlements : the infantile mortality, after deducting immigrant deaths, is 256·29 per 1,000 births in 1905, and is racially classified as follows :

Europeans	..	..	..	..	57·32
Other nationalities	..	..	..	..	224·07
Malays	..	..	..	..	229·78
Indians	..	..	..	..	278·72
Chinese	..	..	..	..	302·03
Eurasians	..	..	..	..	307·69

The general death-rate of 40·51 per 1,000 inhabitants is racially as follows :

Europeans	..	..	..	..	20·73
Eurasians	..	..	..	..	30·92
Malays	..	..	..	..	34·33
Chinese	..	..	..	..	44·08
Others	..	..	..	..	46·63
Indians	..	..	..	..	46·93

The greatest number of deaths occurs in May, June and July, and between the ages twenty-five to thirty-five years.

The total deaths were 24,463, of which phthisis accounted for 3,015 (against 2,534 for 1904); beri-beri, 1,888 (2,287 in 1904); unclassified fever, 1,241; dysentery, 374; cholera, 20; malaria, 761; cancer, 56; anæmia, 43; sprue, 4; dropsy, 50; parasites, 15.

It will thus be seen that phthisis and beri-beri are potent causes of death in the Straits Settlements.

JAMAICA.

Considering next Jamaica, the death-rate in 1906 was 21·9 per 1,000 inhabitants, while the infantile deaths amounted to 29·2 per cent. of the total deaths.

The principal causes of the crude general death-rate were fevers, phthisis, convulsions, influenza, malaria, dropsy, and parasitic disease.

INDIA.

In the Bombay Presidency the infantile mortality in native races is 220·08 in males, and 219·07 in females per 1,000 births. In Bombay City the ratios were 557·24 and 569·66, but it is stated that these ratios are very fallacious.

The racial death-rates are :

				1905.	1906.
Europeans	..	..	..	14·36	14·41
Eurasians	..	..	..	20·89	26·99
Natives	..	..	..	31·84	41·39

The year 1905 seems to have been unusually healthy; only 588,394 natives died, as compared with 1,318,783 in 1900.

The principal cause of death was plague, which accounted for 71,363, or 12·13 per cent., in 1905, as compared with 223,957, or 29·28 per cent., in 1904.

The plague deaths in Bombay for the ten years 1896-1905 are as follows :—

1896	..	..	..	..	..	2,086
1897	..	..	..	..	..	46,944
1898	..	..	..	..	..	86,191
1899	..	..	..	..	..	96,596
1900	..	..	..	..	..	33,196
1901	..	..	..	..	..	128,259
1902	..	..	..	..	..	184,752
1903	..	..	..	..	..	281,269
1904	..	..	..	..	..	223,957
1905	..	..	..	..	..	71,363
Total	..	..	..	..	..	1,154,613

The population in 1901 being—

European (exclusive of cantonments) ..	18,804
Eurasian	6,557
Native	18,481,362

the above figures will give the reader some idea of the mortality caused by the plague in India.

The next important cause of death is cholera :—

1896	35,404
1897	57,109
1898	4,368
1899	8,579
1900	163,889
1901	13,600
1902	3,229
1903	1,825
1904	13,156
1905	5,396

The general term ' fever ' causes a mean of 310,420 deaths in the six years 1900-1905 ; most of this is supposed to be malaria.

The simplest way to show the Bombay death-rate is in the ratio per 1,000 inhabitants :

Cholera	2·11
Smallpox	0·26
Plague	9·18
Fevers	17·43
Dysentery and diarrhœa	4·90
Injuries	0·39
Other causes	12·12
Total	46·39

Respiratory disease in 1904 caused 3·22, and in 1905 2·95, deaths per 1,000 of the population.

The Bombay death-rate indicates clearly the incidence of cholera, plague, and fevers. In many parts of India—*e.g.*, Madras—kala-azar is an important death-producing factor. In Calcutta, phthisis is causing some apprehension by its increase. The importance of snake-bite as a cause of death is marked in India. Relapsing fever is also known.

EGYPT.

Egypt is interesting, because its diseases have been for many years carefully studied by competent observers. Typhus, Mediterranean fever, infectious jaundice, glandular fever, plague, bilharziosis, agchylostomiasis, pellagra, and relapsing fever may be noted among its diseases.

The death-rate for the period 1901-06 is, on an average, 34·7 per 1,000 Egyptian inhabitants, and of these deaths no less than 64·8 per cent. take place under the age of ten years, and 51·4 per cent. under the age of two years.

The principal causes of death are :—Dysentery and diarrhœa, congenital and senile debility, tuberculosis, infectious diseases, and violence.

TROPICAL AFRICA.

The West Coast of Africa has a high rate of mortality from malaria, and here the pernicious forms are not uncommon. Black-water fever is also a cause of death. The Guinea-worm is a very common cause of sickness.

In Uganda, the Congo, and the regions of British and German East Africa, trypanosomiasis abounds, and causes high death-rates.

Tick fever, apparently, is not a great death-producing disease.

CHINA AND JAPAN.

China and Japan and the neighbouring islands appear to be endemic areas for trematode diseases, as well as for beri-beri.

BRITISH NEW GUINEA.

Seligmann, during the eighteen months which he spent in British New Guinea and the Islands of the Torres Straits in the years 1898 and 1904, gathered much information as to the incidence of disease among the Papuo-Melanesians of Papua, who are really only just emerging from the Stone Age.

He found talipes equino-varus to be common, while hare-lip, meningocele, dwarfism, albinism, and erythrism (*i.e.*, aborigines with auburn or reddish-brown hair, pinkish-brown skin, and brown eyes) occur. Albinism and erythrism showed a family distribution.

Malaria was common, and children with greatly enlarged malarial spleens were easily found. Adults with large spleens could also be seen, but this enlargement might not be malarial. Leprosy was endemic in the valley of the St. Joseph River—*i.e.*, in the Roro-Mekeo district, and could not be attributed to foreign influences. Yaws was common, but syphilis was considered to have been introduced in comparatively recent times; in fact, he is of the opinion that in Oceania the introduction of syphilis is possibly not antecedent to Captain Cook's voyages. Respiratory diseases and dysentery are very common, as are skin diseases—*e.g.*, eczema, tinea imbricata, tinea flava, keratosis pilaris, and leucoderma. With regard to new growths, he records cutaneous papillomata, fibromata, lipomata, osteomata (?), and angiomas. Malignant tumours were rare, but sarcomata were found. He describes and illustrates subcutaneous nodules freely movable over the deep fascia, over or near bony prominences, and especially about the elbow, which are probably juxta-articular nodules. He describes and illustrates a nasal ulceration somewhat similar to gangrenosa, variously referred to as lupus by Sir William MacGregor and cancer by the white residents of British New Guinea. He also describes a peculiar ulcerative process of the legs and other parts of the body. He draws attention to the impulsive character of the people as a crime-producing factor. Paralysis and psychoses are not common. The presence of cretinism was noted. He did not meet with tuberculosis except in natives in intimate contact with Europeans, nor with arteriosclerosis, valvular heart disease, rickets, or gout, locomotor ataxy, or general paralysis, while anæmia was rare.

NORTHERN MEXICO.

Aleš Hrdlička made six expeditions in the years 1898-1905 to study the physiological and medical conditions of the Amerinds residing in Northern Mexico and in the south-western portions of the United States.

He concludes that on the whole the health of these people is superior to that of whites living in larger communities, as they do not suffer so much from inherited morbid conditions, or from those connected with teething, puberty, menstruation, gestation, puerperium, menopause, and senility, nor do they suffer so much from malignant growths, but they have a weak resistance to a few contagions—*e.g.*, smallpox.

Their most common ailments are diseases of the gastro-intestinal tract, especially dysentery; of the respiratory organs, especially pneumonia, while consumption is very rare; of the eyes, especially ophthalmia due to dust, which, being neglected, leads to blindness, as does smallpox; of muscular rheumatism and arthritis. Malaria, smallpox, and pemphigus contagiosus in children are very common. Typhoid fever appears to be rare; leprosy and elephantiasis are known, as is goitre.

He very much doubts the presence of syphilis prior to Columbus, and points out that the bones in the ancient graves in California, on the north-west coast, in Peru, and other localities in South America, do not show any signs of the disease, even when thorough examinations of extensive osteological collections have been made.

In children the common cause of death is diarrhœa. He makes most interesting observations on the mites which burrow under the skin of the toes in the Huastec, who live to the east of the Otomi (Hidalgo region), and which may cause suppuration and even loss of a toe. Injuries due to spiders, centipedes, scorpions, rattlesnakes, and the gila monster are mentioned, as well as poisoning from aconite, datura, and fungi. The narcotic effects of Peyote are noted, while two plants, *cul-ick-um-ek* (*Donedia suffrutescens*) and *hā-van tātat* (*Phacelia infundibuliformis*), cause dangerous wounds when journeying through forests, leading to some form of poisoning, and in the case of the former even to death. He met with albinism and leucoderma, but pinta was unknown, though stated to occur farther south. The diseases which were rare were: anæmia, diseases of breast, circulatory organs, liver, female generative organs, and skin; while asthma, dental caries, cancer, rickets, hernia, idiocy, insanity, nervous diseases except epilepsy, scarlet fever, and fracture of bones were also rare.

TROPICAL AUSTRALIA.

Breinl, in 1910, began his work of investigation into the diseases of tropical Australia, which includes Queensland, Papua, Torres Straits, Thursday Island, etc.

The diseases he has met with are: sprue, amœbic dysentery, filariasis, malaria, beri-beri, ulcerative granuloma, frambœsia tropica, dengue fever, leprosy. The intestinal parasites found were:—*Agchylostoma duodenale*, *Trichuris trichiura*, *Oxyuris vermicularis*, *Strongyloides stercoralis*, and *Tænia saginata*.

Under the term 'sandworm disease,' he describes an inflammation of the inner side of the sole of the foot in the Innisfail and Cairns districts, which, beginning as a small erythematous area, spreads in the form of spirals, and after a time disappear. No animal parasite could be found. It appears to us that this is a form of 'creeping eruption.' He also describes 'barcoo rot.'

ENDEMICITY.

As so much epidemiological investigation of disease has of late been undertaken, mainly due to the initiative of Sambon, we feel that a few general remarks on endemicity and epidemicity as applied to disease in general may not be amiss.

The presence of a given disease in a locality depends primarily upon the presence of conditions favourable for the action of the causal agent, upon the presence of suitable vehicles for its conveyance into the human body, which must be non-immune to its attack. The causal agents of disease may be physical, chemical, or parasitic.

Physical causes of disease are often cosmopolitan in their distribution, as, for example, the action of gravity in producing the traumatism brought about by falls, but though some causes, such as the rays from the sun, are also cosmopolitan, still they are unable to produce deleterious effects upon human beings unless assisted by secondary influences, such as latitude, altitude, the rotation and inclination of the world, etc., while some are restricted, as, for example, the traumatism due to ferocious animals, which, though occasionally taking place in other parts, whither the animals have been artificially conveyed, generally only occur in the natural habitats of these creatures.

Chemical causes of disease have become largely cosmopolitan in distribution owing to improved methods of intercommunication and the manufacture of chemical principles: still, certain chemical causes have very restricted localities even to-day, because they are little known, and only affect primitive peoples living in these regions—e.g., *Gloriosa superba*, etc.

The parasitic causes of disease may be animal or vegetal. The endemicity of a given parasite depends upon (a) the presence of non-immune human beings, in which part of the life-cycle can be gone through, and which for convenience we will term the *human hosts*; (b) easy modes of escape from the human host into the exterior; (c) suitable means of continuing the life-cycle in the exterior—i.e., in earth, water, air, on or in other animals or plants, *intermediary hosts* we will call them; (d) ready means of re-entry into the human host or into some other animal host in which the life-cycle is completed; (e) partially immune animal hosts or partially immune human hosts to act as reservoirs or carriers to enable the parasite to complete its life-cycle without producing marked pathological changes in the host. Examples of these may be found in the malarial parasite attacking (a) the white man and the native child in West Africa and elsewhere, and passing by the agency of (b) blood-sucking into (c) *Anopheles costalis*, which, by the act of biting, (d) conveys the parasite to another non-immune host or to the partially immune adult native, who acts as a reservoir or carrier.

Another example is the passage of the plague bacillus from the rat viâ the flea back to the rat or man.

Other examples are the amœbæ of dysentery, which pass from man by the evacuations on to vegetal substances or into water, by which they may be reintroduced into man.

By a suitable non-immune host is meant a host which, while providing abundant suitable food material for the parasite, does not produce such a quantity of chemical substances antagonistic to the parasite as to seriously hamper or prevent its growth and development.

Given such conditions as those just described, a parasite should be capable of developing enormously in a given district ; but there are still other factors to be considered, and the first of these is the fact that the intermediary host, if an animal, depends for its existence upon the presence of a suitable food-supply, as well as suitable means for propagating its species.

If anything untoward happens to these, the intermediary host may die out, but the problem is not quite so simple as this, because the intermediary host itself may be preyed upon by some other animal, or may be affected by disease, and so reduced in numbers.

If the intermediary host is reduced in numbers, even without being exterminated, the parasite will have difficulty in completing its life-cycle, and is therefore faced with the problem of seeking another intermediary host, or another entirely different method of leaving the human host, or of being exterminated.

The reduction in numbers of the intermediary host in a given area is one of the bases of prophylaxis in malarial fever, yellow fever, dengue fever, and sleeping sickness. Faced with these difficulties, it would appear possible that the parasite can change its intermediary, probably undergoing certain changes itself in so doing, and this would appear to be a possible explanation of the slight modifications of the various forms of *Spirochaetes* causing the relapsing fevers.

On the other hand, the malarial parasite would seem to be less capable of accommodating itself to a change of hosts, for it would appear to be only capable of completing its life-cycle in the less common *Anophelinæ* and not in the more common *Culicinæ* ; a most important fact in malarial prophylaxis.

Another factor to be considered is the effect of atmospheric temperature upon the parasite, for the study of the life-cycle of the malarial parasite has clearly shown that this has a marked effect upon the development of the oöcyst in the *Anopheles*. It is also quite possible that other physical and chemical factors, concerning which we are at present ignorant, may play important parts in controlling the life of parasites.

Finally, the parasite itself may suffer from the attacks of another parasite, a condition of affairs called 'hyperparasitism,' and, thus becoming diseased, may be unable to complete its life-cycle, and so become extinct.

It will thus be seen that the problems connected with the appear-

ance and the disappearance of a disease in a locality are extremely complex, and that next to the parasite itself the most important factor is the intermediary host, its food, its life-cycle, and its habits—in one word, its *œcology*.

Hence, in studying an endemic parasitic disease, or a disease thought to be possibly parasitic, it is not advisable to restrict one's researches solely to work in the hospital or the laboratory, for it must be remembered that the parasitic causes of some diseases are most probably ultramicroscopical, but to associate with the clinical and experimental methods of research epidemiological researches conducted by visiting several widely separated and, if possible, completely detached endemic areas, in order by carefully studying therein all the conditions of life and the habits of the human hosts to endeavour to find factors common to the different localities. A further study of these common factors from the point of view of possible modes of infection may indicate one or more possibilities, and then these must be put to the crucial test of experiment with a view of ascertaining definitely the accuracy of the epidemiological observations.

EPIDEMICITY.

From an endemic area diseases due to physical causes may spread by the alteration, naturally or artificially, of the physical conditions in the surrounding regions, and would draw back to the original region upon the return to normal of these conditions. Similarly, chemical causes of disease may be spread from their original restricted area by modern methods of intercommunication—*e.g.*, poisonous plants or their products may be brought from the Tropics to the Temperate Zone, and *vice versa*.

In order that a parasitic disease may spread from its endemic focus several factors are necessary:—

(a) Carriers to convey it from one place to another. These may be either the human host, an animal host, or the intermediary host—*e.g.*, fleas infected with plague.

(b) In order that the disease may spread in the new area there must be the suitable conditions already mentioned.

(c) There must also be suitable climatic conditions.

If these, and perhaps other still unknown factors, are present, the disease will be able to spread with perhaps increased virulence, first within the new area and then from one area to another, until an epidemic or pandemic is produced. With the appearance of partial immunity in the human and animal hosts, altered climatic and other conditions, as well as the *æstivation* or hibernation of the intermediary hosts, the epidemic will die down, perhaps only to re-awaken after the hibernation of the intermediary host is over or with a change of climatic conditions, and this may be repeated for years, until conditions become too adverse for the life of the parasite or its intermediary host, when the epidemic dies away, and the disease again becomes restricted to its endemic areas.

CONCLUSION.

It will thus be seen that disease appears differently in various tropical climates, but the geographical distribution will not be further considered here, but will be described for each disease separately.

The questions which the reader should try to solve, when working in a tropical country, are these :—

1. What are the principal causes of death in the country ?
2. Are they properly diagnosed, or are important and well-known diseases being missed ?
3. Are there diseases which as yet have not been recognized ?

REFERENCES.

- BOMBAY. Report of the Sanitary Commissioner.
 BRITISH GUIANA. Reports of Registrar-General.
 BRITISH NEW GUINEA. Seligmann, C. G. (1906). On the Morbid Conditions met with among Natives of British New Guinea. (1913). Vol. i., Reports of the Cambridge Anthropological Expedition to the Torres Straits. (1908). Third Report of the Imperial Cancer Research Fund.
 CEYLON (1907). Chalmers: Some Remarks on the Vital Statistics of Ceylon (Journal Ceylon Branch British Medical Association). Denham, E. B. (1911). Ceylon at the Census of 1911. Colombo.
 DAVIDSON (1892). Geographical Pathology.
 EGYPT (1901-1906). Vital Statistics.
 JAMAICA. Report of Registrar-General.
 MEXICO. Aleš Hrdlička (1908). Bulletin 34, Smithsonian Institute, Washington.
 OASIS OF SIVA (1911). Stanley. Egyptian Government Report.
 TROPICAL AUSTRALIA (1910). Report of the Australian Institute of Tropical Medicine.

PART II

THE CAUSATION OF DISEASE IN
THE TROPICS

SECTION A

PHYSICAL CAUSES OF DISEASE

CHAPTER VI

THE PATHOLOGICAL EFFECTS OF HIGH ATMOSPHERIC TEMPERATURES

General remarks—Heat-stroke—Heat syncope—References.

GENERAL REMARKS.

THE most important physical cause of disease in the tropics is high atmospheric temperature. A good method of studying its effects is by making observations in the hottest portions of the engine-room of a steamer in the tropics, especially in the Red Sea.

The air of the engine-room is laden with aqueous vapour, and certain corners can be found where there is no draught, and therefore the conditions are analogous to those under which Haldane performed his experiments.

If a person, lightly clad and in good health, places himself in such a corner, with a clinical thermometer in his mouth, it will be found that at first he begins to sweat violently, and for a time remains at a normal temperature. But in due course his temperature will gradually rise and his pulse-rate increase, until temperatures of over 102° F. are reached, and the person breaks off the experiment because he feels uncomfortable, after which his temperature slowly returns to normal.

We have performed this simple experiment several times, but on one occasion, in a person who was not in very good health, the temperature, after reaching 101° F., ceased to rise; the skin became cooler, the tension of the pulse altered remarkably, and he began to look ill. The experiment was quickly stopped and stimulants administered, so that he did not suffer any serious effects, though it was some hours before he felt quite right.

These two experiments show that a high atmospheric temperature can act in two ways. In the first there was a gradual rise of the

body temperature, which, if continued long enough, would probably have resulted in hyperpyrexia. In the second, after an initial rise, the heart became embarrassed, and if the heat had been continued, there appears no reason to doubt that this person would have passed into a condition of syncope.

There are, therefore, two distinct clinical entities to be considered—viz., heat-stroke, characterized by high bodily temperature; and heat syncope, in which there are symptoms due to cardiac failure but no fever—both of which are brought about by the same cause—viz., high atmospheric temperatures.

Both of these clinical conditions in our experience may also be caused by rays coming directly from the sun.

The earliest experiments, with a view to ascertaining definitely whether there is such a condition, were those by Scaghosi on rabbits exposed to the Sicilian sun. Their temperature rose considerably, and if the experiment was continued long enough they died, but if it was stopped they recovered. The post-mortem changes were hyperæmia of the meninges, heart, lungs, liver, and spleen. The nerve cells of the brain and spinal cord showed coagulative necrosis and chromatolysis.

The next experiments of importance on the ætiology of this condition are those of Möller on rabbits, who showed that thermal rays, with or without chemical rays, if directed on to the skin covering the skull, produced more or less intense cerebral disturbance, and sometimes even sudden death. The autopsy after intense irradiation showed the skin of the head much swollen and bloody, with gelatinous exudation in the subcutaneous tissue. The periosteum, cranial bones, and dura were discoloured, and covered with ecchymoses. The vessels of the brain surface were much dilated, and showed numerous, and in part confluent, ecchymoses (see also p. 102).

We have performed a few experiments on rabbits, which show that if such an animal with its head shaven is exposed to the sun in Colombo about twelve noon, it dies with all the symptoms and post-mortem appearances of sun-stroke in about sixty-seven minutes; whereas another rabbit similarly treated, but protected by red glass, lives. The ultra-violet rays seem to have no effect, and it would appear from these and other experiments which we have made as though the active rays were in the visible blue and violet.

It seems, therefore, possible that direct sunlight can bring about (1) sudden death, and (2) congestion of the meninges of the brain.

The connection between sunstroke and the chemical rays has been ably brought forward by Duncan and others, but the whole subject requires more investigation. There is, however, no doubt that if the head, improperly protected, is exposed to the sun, there is often headache and a feeling of illness, and therefore adequate protection is most necessary.

Sambon thinks that an acute specific fever which he calls 'siri-asis' is being confounded with heat-stroke, and this is possible; but we have not met with the condition.

Such are our views; but it is as well for the reader to be acquainted with those of other authors, which may be briefly stated in a historical account as follows:—

High air temperatures, whether in the day-time or at night, have been known since ancient times to have an effect upon human beings. The case of the child of the Shunamite woman described in the English Bible in 2 Kings iv., from verse 18 onwards, is probably the earliest on record. The child complained to his father of his head when out with the reapers, and was carried to his mother, and is reported to have died at twelve noon—became insensible—but recovered under Elisha's treatment, which appears to have been of the nature of massage. This treatment reminds one strongly of the active friction by which the miners of the Comstock Silver Mines of Nevada are said to successfully treat those of their fellows who faint when coming out of the warm mine in which the hot, steamy air has a temperature of 128° F.

It has been said that though old writers such as Dio Cassius described these conditions, the medical writers of ancient times were silent about them. This does not seem to be quite just, for Paulus Ægineta, Oribasius, and the Arabians certainly understood that there were head symptoms which they called 'siriasis' (after Sirius, the dog-star), due to excessive heat. Certainly this knowledge was lost, and Cardanus, in the sixteenth century, describes symptoms due to morbus attonitus (apoplexy) brought about by the heat and drought of the summer of 1543 in Florence. After this for a long time the disease was considered to be an apoplexy till Boerhaave, early in the eighteenth century, introduced the name 'insolatio,' and considered it to be a phrenitis—i.e., meningitis.

Steinkühl (1819) thought that the congestion of the lungs caused death by asphyxia; Swift (1854) that it was due to exhaustion produced by fatigue; Hill (1857) evidently confounded pernicious malaria and heat-stroke. Levick (1859) suggested that it was an acute specific fever; H. C. Wood (1863) considered that it was due to a poison developed in the blood, and called it thermic fever; while Stiles (1864) performed experiments on animals, and concluded that the disease was due to the direct effect of heat on the muscular system.

In 1869 Eulenberg and Vohl stated that the disease was due to sudden liberation of the gases in the blood; and Weikard and Richardson attributed it to clotting of blood in the vessels.

In 1870 Vallin performed several experiments by locally heating parts of the body, and concluded that there were two conditions: (1) sthenic insolation, due to coagulation of the muscle fibres of the left ventricle; (2) asthenic insolation, due to the action of heat on the nerve centres of the brain, thus disturbing the innervation of the heart.

In 1871 and 1872 Claude Bernard performed some experiments which tended to show that when a warm-blooded animal died as the result of heat, it was due to rigor in the musculature of the heart.

In 1872 H. C. Wood performed experiments which showed that sunstroke could be produced in animals as readily as in man by artificial or natural heat.

He came to the conclusion that death took place from asphyxia, and that after death the rigidity of heart and muscles was due to the coagulation of the myosin, and he further pointed out that this will take place at once in the heart if the temperature of the body reaches 115° F., and said that he considered it to be the cause of sudden deaths in soldiers in battle. Further, he pointed out that the heating of the brain of a mammal to 108° F. produces insensibility with or without convulsions, and that when 113° F. was reached the animal died, and that, though the general symptoms of sunstroke were absent, the nervous symptoms were present. He came to the conclusion that no capillary thrombi were formed, that no poisons were generated in the blood, and that the real condition was the heat acting upon the nervous system, as a result of which there was rapid metabolism, which used up oxygen and at the same time induced brain changes, causing asphyxia. But he distinguished from the true heat-stroke:—

1. Acute meningitis or phrenitis, due to exposure to the sun, in which he disbelieved.

2. Heat exhaustion, due to working in a heated atmosphere, which he said did not differ from acute exhaustion due to other causes, and therefore was not true sunstroke.

In 1879 Jacobash classified heat accidents into : (1) sunstroke due to the action of the sun on the body, when the temperature may reach 113° to 115° F. (45° to 46° C.) ; (2) heat-stroke, due to exertion, and often seen in marching troops in the Temperate Zone ; (3) thermic fever, which he considered to be the true heat-stroke of the tropics, due to accumulation of heat in the human body in consequence of high atmospheric temperatures without exposure to the sun or muscular exercise.

Dony (1884) considered that there were two main conditions : (1) sunstroke, due to the sun's rays acting upon the cranium and brain, only without very great rise of temperature ; and (2) heat-stroke, due to intense heat acting on the whole body and after certain prodromes, resulting in a rapid rise of temperature to a great height.

In 1893 Saquel classified the diseases into (1) sunstroke, meaning the erythema due to the sun's rays ; and (2) insolation, meaning the action of the sun on the nervous system, producing either congestion (mild form in the Temperate Zone) or meningitis and encephalitis (severe form in the tropics) ; (3) heat-stroke ; and (4) thermopeliosis, a combination of insolation and heat-stroke.

In 1898 Sambon defined heat exhaustion as an ordinary syncope, while he considers that under the term 'sunstroke' there is confounded an infectious fever which he calls 'siriasis,' due to some micro-organism as yet not defined.

In the period 1898-1907 Sir Patrick Manson, in his book on tropical diseases, recognizes three conditions : (1) heat exhaustion—sudden cardiac failure or fainting, brought about by exposure to high atmospheric temperature ; (2) siriasis, an acute disease developing in the presence of high atmospheric temperature, and characterized by sudden incidence of hyperpyrexia, coma ; and (3) sun traumatism, or direct action of the sun's rays on the tissue, causing either sudden death or a febrile condition.

In 1905 Van Brero, in Mense's 'Handbuch der Tropenkrankheiten,' recognizes (1) heat exhaustion, due to excessive heat from the sun or other source ; and (2) sun traumatism, caused by the direct action of the sun's rays.

In 1907 Sir Joseph Fayrer, in Allbutt and Rolleston's 'System,' recognizes (1) a state of exhaustion leading to syncope, and (2) an overheating of the nervous centres, blood, and tissues, leading to thermic fever.

In 1908 Brook defines diathermasia as the effect of heat on the thermotaxic mechanism, and phœbism, a kind of shock due to the actinic rays from the sun.

It will thus be seen that authorities in general recognize the action of heat and the action of sun's rays as being separate, and, further, that heat may produce a syncopal condition or fever, while the sun's rays may also cause syncope and fever. Some few, including especially Sambon, suspect the presence of an acute specific fever as being concealed in the diseases above mentioned. Others, again, consider the symptoms to be toxic in origin, so that there are four theories : (1) caloric ; (2) actinic ; (3) microbic ; (4) toxic. Whatever the ætiology may be, we distinguish two clinical entities—viz., *Heat-Stroke* and *Heat Syncope*.

HEAT-STROKE (THERMIC FEVER).

Synonyms.—Sunstroke, sun traumatism, insolation, siriasis (not Sambon's siriasis). *French* : Coup de Chaleur, Coup de Soleil. *German* : Hitzschlag, Sonnenstich. *Italian* : Colpo di Sole.

Definition.—Heat-stroke is caused by a high air temperature, especially when associated with marked humidity, and is characterized by high fever and often extreme pulmonary congestion, convulsions, coma, and death.

This is the form of sunstroke and heat-stroke which we have commonly met with in the tropics.

Climatology.—The tropics are the principal seat of the complaint, and of these India appears to be the most important, and in it the Punjab, Sind, and the North-West Provinces are the worst, as can be judged by a reference to their climatology.

In Ceylon sunstroke is said to be much less common than in India. Thus in 1903, according to Sir Joseph Fayrer, in statistics given to him by Surgeon-General Sir A. Keogh, there were 303 cases in India among the European troops, with 53 deaths; and in Ceylon 11, with 2 deaths, the total for the British Army for that year being 385 cases and 61 deaths.

In Asia it is well known in the Red Sea, the Persian Gulf, Burma, the Straits Settlements, South China, and Cochin China. In Africa it is met with in all parts of the tropical region. It is common in Mauritius, and is also well known in the United States, Canada, Nova Scotia, New Brunswick, and the West Indies. In South America it is met with in Guiana, Brazil, Peru, and the Argentine. In Australia it has also been recognized, and in Europe in summer. It is, of course, associated with the warm seasons in all countries, and with either very high air temperatures in relatively dry climates, or with not so high temperatures if there is much atmospheric humidity.

The disease stands in direct relationship to heat-waves, as has been pointed out by Rogers in India—a fact well known in temperate climates.

Ætiology.—The causation of the disease is the action of high air temperatures associated with a high relative humidity on man, which generally act during the day-time, but may also have an effect at night.

It has already been pointed out that a human being can—for a short time, at all events—stand a very considerable amount of dry, but not moist, heat. The heat regulation of the body is disturbed and the loss of heat prevented by the humidity; consequently the body temperature rises.

Haldane's experiments have shown that if the wet bulb thermometer rises to 88° F. (31° C.) in still air, or to 93° F. (34·4° C.) in air moving at the rate of 170 feet (51 metres) per minute, or to 78° F. (25·5° C.) with leisurely work, some pathological effects appear and the temperature of the body begins to rise. It is of interest to note that the temperature of the body, instead of rising to a certain height with a given atmospheric temperature and then remaining stationary, in Haldane's experiments went on rising; and in some measure this corresponded with the temperature of the air.

Thus, with reference to the rectal temperature, which is the best

indication of the true bodily temperature, Haldane found that with a wet bulb at 89° to 90° F. the rise was 1° to 1.4° F. (0.5° to 0.75° C.) per hour; at about 94° F. (34.4° C.) it was 2° F. (1.1° C.) per hour; at 98° F. (36.4° C.) it was about 4° F. (2.2° C.) per hour.

If this condition can be induced in healthy persons at rest in England, it does not seem impossible or improbable that lower temperatures may act as vigorously or more vigorously upon Europeans in the tropics or elsewhere, especially if living under conditions of poor bodily health and bad sanitation, or if they are improperly clad or exhausted mentally or physically.

The fact that new-comers are more apt to suffer than old residents has been put on an experimental basis by Rosenthal, who has shown that a kind of active immunity to heat can be established by repeated exposure of an animal to a temperature lower than that which would have been fatal. These animals, when subsequently exposed to a very high temperature, do show symptoms, but they are less marked, the rise in temperature is not so high, the respirations and the pulse not so accelerated, and the general distress less.

The effect of clothing, load, and exercise has been calculated by Zurtz and Schomberg, who estimate that a resting soldier weighing 70 kilogrammes produces from 1.2 to 1.3 calories per minute; and when marching, with a load of 31 kilogrammes, produces 7.73 calories per minute, which will raise the temperature of the body 1° C. in 8.7 minutes. Under ordinary circumstances the soldier is not affected, but if he is wearing thick, tight-fitting uniform (especially in the old days of stocks), with a tight belt and knapsack with cross-belts, and is at the same time marching in close formation (when the air must certainly be impure from carbon dioxide and dust) under a tropical sun, it is obvious that, especially if there is a fairly high relative humidity in the atmosphere, he cannot get rid of this heat, and there is bound to be either thermic fever or heat syncope in a certain number of cases.

Predisposing Causes.—Heat-stroke is, if anything, more common among children than adults, but it is very liable to be mistaken for other diseases. It is more common among men than women, owing to the greater exposure of the former. Among men it is principally found in stokers, and in soldiers during exhausting marches. Among soldiers the classical instance often quoted is the account of the march of the 43rd Regiment in the Indian Mutiny for over 1,100 miles, mostly across the plains of India, in the hottest weather.

The men remained quite well for 969 miles, when they became exhausted, and even emaciated; but in the narrow Kowri of the Bismarungunge Ghat, when the temperature in the tents ranged from 115° to 127° F. in the day, and on one occasion was 105° F. at midnight, they suffered severely, and two officers and eleven men died in four days, and later on seven more died in three days.

There is no doubt that exhaustion and unsuitable clothing were formerly the great causes of the frequency of attacks of heat-stroke in the army.

Race appears to have a certain amount of effect, for it is more common in Europeans than in negroes or East Indians, though it is met with in all. Previous illness is a great predisposing cause. Hot winds help to induce this condition; in India the hot wind 'loo marna' is much dreaded by the natives. Of all predisposing causes, alcohol is probably the most important.

Pathology.—Turning now to the effects of a raised internal temperature on the organs of a man, there are experiments to guide us.

Marinesco has shown that a temperature of 47° C. is immediately fatal to animals, while a temperature of 45° C. kills in one hour, and one of 43° C. after a longer lapse of time, the essential pathological change being chromatolysis in the nerve cells, therefore high bodily temperature may cause acute serious nerve-cell changes.

But the effect of high internal temperature has been further investigated by Halliburton and Mott, who have shown that a temperature of 47° C. (117° F.) is the coagulation temperature of neuroglobulin; while Hewlett had previously shown that egg-white would coagulate at a much lower temperature than usual if this is maintained for some time. His experiments were repeated by Halliburton and Mott on cat's brains, and they found that at 42° C. (108° F.) the neuroglobulin would separate out, but not at lower temperatures. Cat's brains kept at 42° to 43° C. for three and a half hours showed chromatolysis in the nerve cells. They therefore came to the conclusion that a coagulation necrosis takes place in the nerve cells, due to the coagulation of the cell globulin, and that when this occurs the protoplasm is destroyed.

Our own observations entirely agree with those of Marinesco, Mott, and Halliburton. Fig. 12 shows a nerve cell in a condition of coagulation necrosis with disappearance of the Nissl bodies from a case of sunstroke in which no pathogenic micro-organisms could be found post mortem. It appears probable, then, that the seat of the lesion of thermic fever is in the cells of the cerebro-spinal nervous system, and particularly those of the medulla.

Morbid Anatomy.—The body retains a high temperature for some hours after death; rigor mortis comes on quickly, and passes off quickly, and decomposition, on account of the high atmospheric and body temperatures, sets in. Lividity is well marked. The blood is dark, fluid, and acid. The brain and membranes are congested, and there may be minute hæmorrhages in the white matter, and marked increase of fluid under the membranes and in the ventricles. Microscopically, the minute vessels, especially of the medulla, are very congested, and the nerve cells show coagulative necrosis and disappearance of the Nissl bodies, together with a swollen and chromatolytic condition of the nucleus, though the nucleolus may remain apparently intact.

The organs of the body are in general congested, but especially the lungs, which appear almost black. The heart is often in a state of marked rigor mortis.

Symptomatology.—Sometimes the symptoms come on suddenly;

but more frequently there are prodromata. The patient often complains of feeling out of sorts and weak, especially in the legs, together with headache and drowsiness, and sometimes of nausea. Longmore lays stress on a frequent desire to micturate as a prodromal sign of importance, because, as mentioned by Simpson, perspiration is diminished or stopped, and the bowels are constipated, while the urine is copious and limpid.

Intolerance of light and chromatopsia—red, yellow, or green spots, with suffusion of the eyes—have been noted.

The attack begins with a sudden sharp rise of temperature to 104° - 107° - 110° F., while the skin becomes dry, burning, and flushed,

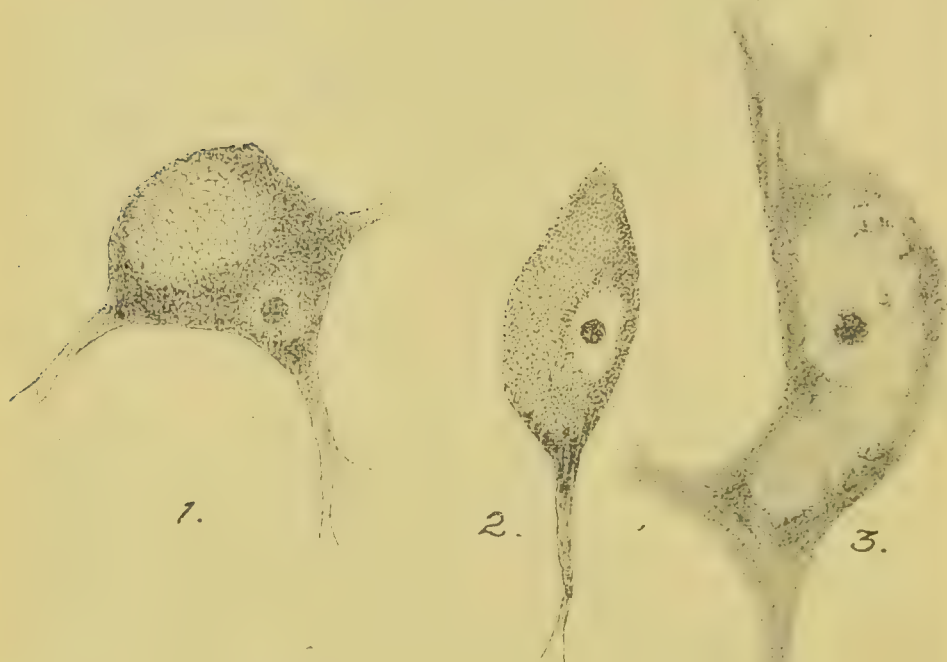


FIG. 16.—NERVE CELLS FROM THE MEDULLA OF A CASE OF HEAT-STROKE, SHOWING CHROMATOLYSIS.

with occasionally a macular eruption. The patient becomes unconscious, delirious, or comatose, usually the latter. The pupils are often very contracted. The respirations are noisy and quick, and râles and rhonchi are heard on auscultation. The pulse is rapid, and though at first of good volume, soon becomes irregular, intermittent, and thready. The urine is scanty, and may contain albumin and casts. The motions are passed involuntarily.

If the patient is going to die, convulsions appear, and the skin becomes cyanosed and clammy; the respirations become slower and slower, and more and more stertorous; the pulse weaker and

weaker, until the patient dies of asphyxia after an illness varying from a few hours to a day or so.

If recovery is to take place, the temperature often falls rapidly by crisis, the respirations become quieter, the pulse slows, there is a critical discharge of urine, and the patient falls asleep to awaken much better. The course of the fever is much longer (see Fig. 13).

In some cases the course of the fever is much longer (see Fig. 13), lasting eight to ten days. Possibly this is due to secondary infection with intestinal bacteria. The patient remains very susceptible to high atmospheric temperatures for a long time after recovery.

Diagnosis.—Heat-stroke must be diagnosed from pernicious malaria by the absence of parasites in the blood; from cerebro-

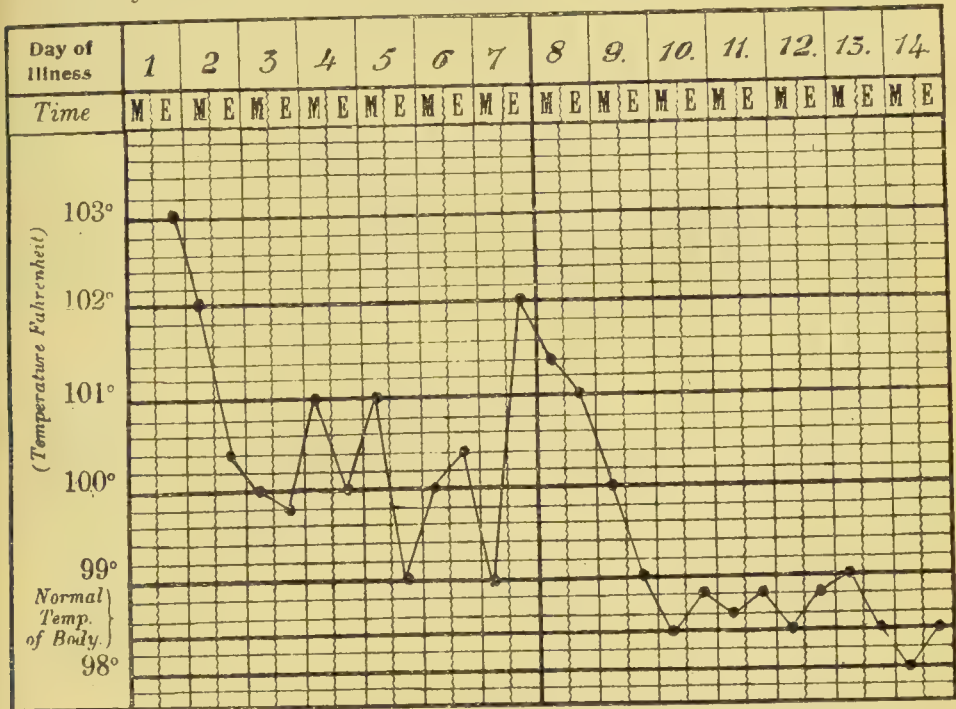


FIG. 17.—TEMPERATURE-CHART OF A CASE OF HEAT-STROKE IN A STOKER WHILE WORKING IN THE ENGINE-ROOM OF A STEAMER IN COLOMBO HARBOUR.

Temperature 103° F. three hours after the onset.

spinal fever by the absence of Kernig's sign, and absence of contracture of the muscles of the neck. The high temperature should enable it to be differentiated from alcoholic or renal coma, as well as from apoplexy and epilepsy (in both of which the temperature may be slightly raised).

Prognosis.—The death-rate varies, as a rule, between 15 per cent. and 25 per cent., but it may be as high as 51 per cent. at times. The prognosis is therefore always serious, and becomes worse if cyanosis or convulsions appear.

Treatment.—Loosen the clothing at once, and remove the patient to as cool a place as can be found, and take off his clothes, and, if

possible, lay him on a bed covered with a large indiarubber sheet, and apply an ice-bag to the head, while pieces of ice are rubbed over the body, and at the same time cold sponging is carried on. The cold *douche* may also be applied with markedly beneficial effect. Also large enemata of iced water may be given.

While this is being done, friction should be applied to the parts which have been rubbed with ice, in order to promote circulation in the cooled skin.

If there is no ice, wring out a sheet in as cold water as can be found, and allow water to drip on the patient all over.

In places where no cold water is available, the ordinary water can be chilled by dissolving a fair quantity of salt in a bath of water, squeezing the juice of some limes into this, and then adding a quantity of vinegar and a little *eau-de-Cologne*, and sponging the patient with this mixture.

The danger in cold sponging is collapse; consequently the temperature must be carefully watched, and when it falls in the rectum to about 101.6°F . sponging must be stopped, and the patient covered up with blankets.

If the temperature comes down with a run and collapse sets in, the cold applications should be stopped and treatment must be applied as described under *Heat Syncope*. The patient must in any case be carefully watched, and ice, cold sponging, or both, must be resorted to again and again till the temperature remains down.

If the fever is not reduced by this treatment, and the pulse is bounding, the body cyanosed, and the heart's action embarrassed, the median basilic vein may be opened and the patient freely bled; but if little or no blood comes, then an intravenous injection of normal saline at 98.6°F . (37°C .) may be run in.

Antipyretics are useless, as is also quinine, for thermic fever.

If the breathing stops, it is advisable to try artificial respiration for half an hour, as sometimes good results have ensued. If the heart begins to fail, hypodermics of strychnine, provided there are no convulsive symptoms, digitalin, or adrenalin, may be given. If convulsions are severe, inhalations of chloroform and oxygen mixed may be administered.

When the temperature is reduced, and the patient is conscious and can swallow, a dose of calomel (gr. iii. to v.), followed by saline purgatives, is advantageous. As soon as urine can be collected, it must be carefully examined for signs of renal trouble, which, if present, must be treated.

Bromides may be required to soothe the irritated nervous system, and do more good than hypnotics or morphine.

Food must at first consist of only milk with barley-water, or toast-water, and be given in small quantities and often; but as convalescence proceeds, broths, soups, eggs, milk-puddings, etc., can be added. No alcohol on any account must be given, except on the advent of collapse.

The room in which the patient is lying must be kept as cool as

possible by punkahs, and large blocks of ice placed in baths, and it must also be kept dark—*i.e.*, well protected from the sun's rays, and also from the glare of electric light.

There is apt to be great intolerance of light and heat, and therefore, after thermic fever the patient should, if possible, go on leave to a cool climate.

Prophylaxis.—Prophylaxis consists in protecting the head and eyes from the sun, in wearing proper clothing, in living in dwellings and offices protected against the sun and kept as cool as possible, as described in the preceding chapter.

Muscular exertion should not be taken in the heat of a tropical day if it can be avoided, and during these hours alcohol should not be touched.

If any of the prodromata are noticed, the person should be put on the sick-list, and treated as though he were ill. He should be kept in a cool, shaded room; the bowels should be freely opened, and cool applications applied to the head. The diet should be light, without alcohol, and, when better, the patient should be extremely careful not to expose himself in any way.

HEAT SYNCOPE.

Synonyms.—Heat exhaustion, Prostratio Thermica.

Definition.—Heat exhaustion is a condition of syncope brought about by the action of high air temperatures, especially if associated with a considerable atmospheric humidity, upon persons whose bodily health or conditions are abnormal.

Climatology.—The climatology is the same as for thermic fever.

Ætiology.—Two distinct factors are necessary for the development of this condition :—

1. High wet-bulb temperatures.
2. Abnormal bodily health or conditions.

The first factor has been sufficiently explained, but a word or two about the second is necessary. The second factor consists of any organic disease or chronic alcoholism, especially the latter, which is apt to cause fatty infiltration and degeneration of the heart wall, thus allowing dilatation of the organ under the stress of high air temperature.

This second factor also includes unsuitable clothing and too violent exercise, which under high wet-bulb temperatures are especially liable to induce syncope.

But alcohol is by far the most important predisposing cause, and accounts for the difference in mortality of expeditions in which soldiers are allowed to drink it, and those in which they are not.

Morbid Anatomy.—As was shown by Pfeiffer in 1851, the heart may be flaccid and very much softened, and full of blood, especially on the right side, but apart from this there is little morbid change.

There may be congestion of the brain, lungs, and other viscera, but generally there is little to note.

Symptomatology.—The symptoms begin suddenly by the person feeling very giddy, and sometimes sick and weak. If he attempts to walk, he staggers, and may fall. He is pale, his pulse small and soft, his pupils dilate, and his skin is cold. The temperature is subnormal, or there may be a transient initial rise, and there may be loss of consciousness, but this does not always take place. There is often considerable pain in the head.

Generally the condition is quickly recovered from, sometimes after a little sickness or fever, but at times it deepens into unconsciousness, and ends in coma and death.

Treatment.—When a person complains of feeling faint, lay him flat on his back in as cool a place as can be found, and loosen his clothing. Dash a little water on his head, face, and chest, and give him a little brandy-and-water or sal volatile, if he can swallow; but if he cannot, give a hypodermic injection of strychnine or of ether and camphor. As soon as possible wrap the patient in blankets, and apply hot bottles to various parts of the body.

Prophylaxis.—The prophylaxis is the same as for thermic fever. Giles advises *nux vomica* to be administered before hard work in the sun.

REFERENCES.

- BROWN, CARNEGIE (1906). *British Medical Journal* (Degeneration of the Myocardium in Hot Climates), i. 1462, 1463.
- CLEAVES (1904). *Light Energy*, pp. 253, 254, and pp. 798-801.
- DUNCAN (1904). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*.
- DUNCAN (1908). *Journal Royal Army Medical Corps*, xi. 71.
- FAYRER (1893). *Davidson's Hygiene and Diseases of Warm Climates*, p. 691.
- FAYRER (1907). *Allbutt and Rolleston's System of Medicine*, II., ii. 771-782.
- FREUND (1904). *Radiotherapy*. London.
- GIHON (1893). *Twentieth-Century Practice of Medicine*, iii. 253-285. (A good description of typical cases and a considerable literature.)
- GILES (1906). *British Medical Journal*, ii. 596.
- HALDANE (1905). *Journal of Hygiene*, v. 494-513.
- HALLIBURTON (1904). *Bio-chemistry of Muscle and Nerve*, pp. 107-115.
- HILL (1906). *Recent Advances in Physiology and Bio-chemistry*, pp. 271-274.
- HIRSCH. *Handbook of Geographical and Historical Pathology*, iii. 626-651. (A very full literature till about 1883.)
- MANSON (1904). *Tropical Diseases*, pp. 282-296.
- RHO (1907). *Mense's Tropenkrankheiten* (Italian translation).
- SAMBON (1898). *British Medical Journal*, i. 744-748. (This account should be read, if possible.)
- SIMPSON (1908). *Journal Royal Army Medical Corps*, xi. 441.
- WOOD (1887). *Pepper's System of Medicine*, v. 387-400. (A most excellent account, with many quotations.)

CHAPTER VII

SOME TROPICAL TRAUMATISMS

Remarks—Traumatism brought about by animal agencies: the larger Carnivora; the smaller Carnivora; the Ungulata; the Proboscidae; the Reptilia; the Selachii; Man—Traumatism due to physical agencies: Foot-binding—Heavy fruits—Lightning—Electric fans—References.

Remarks.—In the Tropics many accidents and injuries occur which are but rarely met with in temperate climates. These accidents and injuries may be divided into two categories—traumatism brought about by animal agencies, and those due to physical agencies. Under the first heading come those caused by the bites or maulings of wild and domestic animals, as well as the injuries caused by man's bite. In the second division are grouped various accidents caused by electric fans, by the fall of heavy fruits from trees, by lightning, and, lastly, the peculiar deformity of the foot in high-class Chinese women brought about by bandaging the feet of young female children.

There are, of course, many other traumatism which might be worthy of note, but they are either too rarely met with, or else they are too well known in the Temperate Zone to require notice here.

It will be observed that we make a distinction between the physical injury caused by the bite of one of the larger animals and the chemical injury caused by a venomous animal, and we do this advisedly, while fully recognizing that the former may introduce septic toxins, sometimes in large amount, as well as germs into the wounds so produced.

TRAUMATISMS BROUGHT ABOUT BY ANIMAL AGENCIES.

Traumatism caused by the Larger Carnivora.—The word 'traumatism' is peculiarly suitable for this nomenclature, as it is derived from the Greek words *τραῦμα* (a wound) and *θηρίον* (a wild animal). The synonyms are *Morsus* and *Rostro et Unguibus dilaceratio* (Latin); *δῆγμα*, *δῆξις*, *διασπασμός*; *κάψις*, *σπαραγμός* (Greek); *Morsures*, *Déchirements musculaires*, *Dilacérations*, *Dépècement des chairs*, *Myalgies traumathériques* (French). Under the

definition 'Traumatism caused by the larger Carnivora' we refer especially to the injuries inflicted by the bites, rends, and scratches produced by the teeth and claws of species belonging to the families Felidæ and Ursidæ.

In the Felidæ are *Felis leo* Linnæus, whose habitat is Africa and Asia; *F. tigris* Linnæus, habitat Asia; *F. pardus* Linnæus, habitat India; *F. leopardus*, habitat Africa; *F. onca* Linnæus, habitat South America; *F. pardalis* Linnæus, habitat South America. These cats have a general dental formula, $\begin{smallmatrix} 3. & 1. & 3, & 1 \\ & 3. & 1. & 2, & 1 \end{smallmatrix}$, giving thirty teeth for the whole mouth, which include the most perfect types of carnassial teeth capable of producing exceedingly severe lacerations. These animals feed not merely on the fresh prey which they have recently slain, but also on its body for a day or so after its death. Their maws and claws, therefore, become exceedingly foul, being infected with micro-organisms and their toxins, and hence the great danger of septic intoxication and infection which markedly increases the gravity of the injuries inflicted.

The other family, Ursidæ, includes the bears which are found in India and Ceylon—e.g., *Ursus torquatus*, of the Himalayas, and *U. malayanus*. Their dental formula is $\begin{smallmatrix} 3. & 1. & 4, & 2 \\ & 3. & 1. & 4, & 3 \end{smallmatrix}$ = forty-two

teeth in the mouth, but these do not include carnassial teeth, which, added to the facts that they are not as a rule such foul feeders and often eat vegetal foods, causes their bites to be not quite so serious from a septic point of view as those of the Felidæ. Their claws, however, may produce most serious effects of both a traumatic and of a septic nature.

The importance of the septicity of these wounds has been well appreciated from the earliest times, for in the fifth book of his 'De Medicina' Celsus remarks with regard to the bites of men apes, dogs, and ferocious animals, 'Omnis autem fere morsus habet quoddam virus,' and on this he based his treatment. This statement has been quoted again and again in the centuries which have passed since the days of Celsus: for example, by Morgagni, when investigating the serious illness produced in a young lady, by the peck of a sparrow inflicted on a finger, and by Heister, of Helmstadt, in the section on bites in his 'System of Surgery,' published in 1739.

It is of course possible for any person of any age and either sex to be the victim of wounds inflicted by these animals, but the persons most frequently injured are hunters (shikaris) and sportsmen, while the district postmen in jungle regions run great risk, as do shepherds and, to a less extent, herdsmen, and to a still less extent cultivators and villagers living in lonely places in the bush or jungle. The present writers have also encountered wild animals under unexpected circumstances during their journeys into the interior of Africa; but the risk which an ordinary traveller with his gang of porters runs is relatively small, particularly if he has some

slight knowledge of the habits of these animals. The most dangerous region to travel through is tall grass, as the hunter or traveller and the wild beast may meet suddenly, and it is here that an accident is more likely to occur than in more open scrub country. Another prevalent cause of accidents is the beating by means of men on foot of jungle or bush into which a wounded animal has retreated. The especially dangerous animal under such circumstances is the tiger, and as eminent an authority as Sir Samuel Baker has especially drawn attention to this fact, and has stated that if no elephants are available then a herd of buffaloes should be driven through the jungle, as they will quickly dislodge the tiger. The possible presence in the vicinity of the mate of the attacked animal should always be borne in mind, as the omission to remember this simple fact has often led to unpleasant accidents.

The physical signs and symptoms produced by these bites and mauls may be divided into general and local. With regard to the former, immediately after being bitten or mauled the victim, if able to stand, feels giddy, turns pale, becomes unable to stand, and, if the injury is at all severe, quickly passes into a condition of shock with a weak pulse, cold extremities, pinched and drawn face, and weak voice, and may become insensible, which, indeed, is often his condition when first rescued in the severer cases. As a rule he remains in a more or less torpid condition, sleeping day and night, and suffering severely, when aroused, from thirst and pain. All these symptoms are more accentuated in Europeans than in natives.

Usually reaction sets in fairly quickly, the temperature rising to 101° to 102° F. or even more, while the pulse is generally quick, ranging about 110 to 120 beats per minute. Usually the torpor continues for some time, but delirium may intervene. The mouth and throat continue to be dry, and thirst is still a marked symptom. Locally the injured region may show rends and tears in the skin, lacerations of the muscles, tendons exposed and torn, vessels and nerves injured, and perhaps torn across, with more or less hæmorrhage, bones may be exposed, bruised, broken, or dislocated, joints may be exposed, opened, and injured. Around the injured regions the parts are bluish or red in colour, and swollen, and quickly become œdematous, firm, and hot to the touch.

If the wounds are but slight, the inflammation may remain superficial, but usually the great danger is a cellulitis associated with pus formation and intermittent fever. A more serious complication is spreading or acute traumatic gangrene. Later, as the patient recovers, there is the liability of sinus formation and of stiffness in joints.

It is very important to remember that malaria can occur as a complication, and that therefore some of the intermittent temperature may at times be due to this cause. There is no difficulty with regard to the diagnosis as a rule, as there is generally a history to be obtained, while the local signs are sufficiently indicative of the condition, but the prognosis with regard to even slight wounds

must at first be guarded, especially in Europeans, as it is impossible to foretell how serious the intercurrent septic infection may prove to be.

The treatment resolves itself into two distinct categories: first, the first aid when the rescue is effected; and, secondly, the usual surgical treatment.

With regard to the first aid, the usual methods for arresting hæmorrhage, combating shock, and carrying the victim are too well known to require repetition, but the thorough washing of the wound with water, even jungle water, would appear preferable to leaving the poisons from the animal's teeth and claws in the wound. We consider that a small first-aid surgical case containing antiseptics, bandages, etc., should form part of the outfit of every sportsman, and that antiseptics should be added to the water used to wash the wound.

As a rule the hæmorrhage has more or less abated by the time the man reaches a hospital, but any possible source of bleeding must be at once attended to, and the wound thoroughly washed and syringed with warm iodine lotion. Pieces of dead or sloughing tissue may be removed, but it is better to defer any serious operative treatment for twenty-four hours if possible, as it is very dangerous to perform anything of this nature in the condition of shock usually exhibited by the patient. The parts may be drawn together by a suture if necessary, but very few of these should be inserted, and as free drainage as possible allowed. Repeated and carefully applied antiseptic dressings must be carried out. Antitetanic serum should always be administered with the view of preventing possible tetanus.

As soon as there is any suspicion that cellulitis has supervened, free incisions must be made, and hot antiseptic baths, hot fomentations, or Bier's treatment must be applied.

Amputation is necessary if spreading traumatic gangrene supervenes, when it must be performed as high up the limb as reasonable, as it is useless to do repeated operations first at low and then at higher levels, while all the time the disease is spreading. Sinuses require to be scraped and plugged with antiseptic gauze.

When recovery is proceeding and the septic infections have ceased, plastic operations are necessary to close the large wounds left by the destruction of the tissues, while massage and douches may be required to prevent joints from becoming stiff.

As regards general treatment, the first requirement of the patient is usually plenty of water to drink to relieve the urgent thirst from which he suffers, and to dilute the toxins of the possible intoxication.

At first the food should be of the lightest description—broths, soups, and milk diet—and later the ordinary hospital diets may be gradually introduced.

With regard to prophylaxis, the natives often adopt simple protective remedies, such as a bell and spear, or a stick and a small axe, the latter being in use in districts infested by small bears.

For a sportsman it is important to thoroughly understand the habits of the ferocious creatures which he is hunting, and especially to know what they usually do when wounded. In travelling in the African bush, a zareba with a fire is usually a good protection during the night.

Traumatisms caused by the Smaller Carnivora.—Under this heading come the traumatisms caused by members of the family Canidæ, of which *Canis lupus* Linnæus, the wolf, *C. aureus*, the jackal, and *C. familiaris*, the dog, may be quoted. Their general dental formula is $\frac{3. \text{I. } 4, 2}{3. \text{I. } 4, 3}$ = forty-two teeth. A wolf bite resembles that of the larger Carnivora, while jackals generally attack children, inflicting severe wounds, often of a septic nature. The jackal is often infected with hydrophobia, which he spreads to the village dogs, and in this way the disease is kept up in tropical countries. There can be no doubt that, at the present time, hydrophobia is one of the real dangers of a tropical town or village, where a large number of pariah dogs are, as a rule, allowed to run freely about the streets and make themselves as objectionable as they like. The result is that a number of children and adults are bitten every now and again, and are compelled to seek protection against possible infection by treatment at one of the now numerous Pasteur Institutes. In our opinion, some attempt should be made by muzzling dogs for a period of at least two years throughout a country, and the destruction of all dogs not so protected, to diminish this danger. We also consider that the destruction of all ownerless dogs—*i.e.*, dogs without a collar on which a name is engraved—should be conducted by a systematic organization.

The parasite of hydrophobia is described in Chapter XVII., p. 440.

One of the most important forms in which rabies attacks dogs is that called 'dumb rabies,' in which the lower jaw early becomes paralyzed; this is a form often overlooked for some time by non-medical people, and is a source of great danger.

Anyone interested in this subject must, however, consult a book on general medicine, as this is hardly the place for a description of rabies.

Traumatisms caused by the Ungulata.—Among the Herbivora there are two families which are celebrated for vicious attacks upon man, and these are the Camelidæ and the Bovidæ.

Camelus bactrianus Linnæus may at times have a bad temper, and it is often dangerous for a stranger to approach a camel, for its bite is, as a rule, a serious injury, the deep tissues being crushed and lacerated, while the bones may be crushed, broken, or dislocated, and tendons, bursæ, and joints may be laid bare or opened, and last, and by no means least, because of the possibility of gangrene and severe septic infection. The bites generally occur on the upper or lower limb, but are also well known on the head and face. The shock from such severe injuries is naturally very great, but the symptoms, signs, and treatment resemble those already

mentioned under the heading of traumatisms caused by the Carnivora, and need not be repeated.

Among the Bovidæ, the buffalo is very dangerous—e.g., *Buffelus indicus* in India and Ceylon, and *Bubalus brachyceros* in Central Africa—the danger being deep, penetrating wounds of the limbs, chest, or abdomen, as well as severe punctured, lacerated, and contused wounds in any part of the body.

Here attention may be drawn to the fact that horses may become affected with hydrophobia, which, in animals treated as family pets, is a serious danger. The animal appears to be in great pain, and is often thought to have colic, it froths at the mouth and becomes very savage, biting articles in its stable and kicking the wall in a furious manner until weakness sets in.

Kicks may produce serious contusions and wounds, as well as injuries to internal organs.

The Rhinoceri—*Rh. indicus*, *Rh. javanicus*, *Rh. sumatrensis*, *Rh. africanus*—produce most serious punctured and lacerated wounds.

Hippopotami are common in the rivers and lakes of Africa—e.g., *H. amphibius* and *H. liberiensis*. As a rule they are quite peaceful animals when left alone, but, once attacked, they become dangerous, seizing the boat or the persons in their huge jaws and crushing wood or flesh and bones into shapeless masses. They are very courageous, and nothing but death will stop the charge of one of these brutes. They will quickly stamp the life out of any victim they catch on land.

The Suidæ, or pigs, are commonly met with in tropical jungles, and are of importance because of the way in which they eat the remains of persons who have been lost in the jungle. All the soft parts are completely destroyed, while the bones are broken, so that it is impossible to say whether the unfortunate people died or were killed, whether they met with an accident or simply lost their way, whether the pigs ate them while dying or only after death.

Severe lacerated wounds can be inflicted by the tusks of an enraged boar.

Proboscidæ.—The elephants—*E. africanus* and *E. indicus*—usually kill their victim by stamping upon him until the soft parts are terribly crushed, lacerated, and bruised, while bones are broken. They also seize people by means of their trunks and dash them against surrounding objects or the ground.

Traumatism caused by the Larger Reptilia.—The crocodiles, gavials, and alligators are a constant source of danger in the Tropics, especially to natives, while bathing in rivers. The names 'crocodile' and 'alligator' are often used as though they were synonyms, but this is by no means so. Some twelve species of crocodile are well known—e.g., in Africa there are *C. vulgaris* (the common crocodile of Egypt), *C. frontatus*, and *C. cataphractus*; in Asia, *C. siamensis*, *C. biporcatus*, and four others; in South America, *C. rhombifer*, *C. moreleti*, and *C. acutus*. They possess a most formidable array of teeth, expressed, as a rule, by the formula $\frac{18}{15}$.

of which the third and ninth in the upper jaw are longer than the others, and are respectively lodged between the second and third, and the eighth and ninth teeth in the lower jaw, in which the first, fourth, and eleventh teeth are the strongest. The muzzle of the crocodile is longer than that of the alligator. The muzzle of the alligator is relatively short and broad. There are eight well-known species—viz., *A. niger*, *A. latirostris*, *A. sclerops*, *A. punctulatus*, *A. palpebrosus*, and *A. trigonatus*, in South America; *A. mississippiensis*, in North America; and *A. sinensis*, in the Yang-tse-Kiang.

The muzzle of the gavial is very long. The two species of importance are *Gavialis schlegeli* of Java and Borneo and *G. gangeticus* of the Ganges. The latter has a dental formula $\frac{28}{25} \frac{29}{26}$ teeth.

Another important anatomical feature of these reptiles is the length and strength of the tail, by means of which they can strike a man standing on the low bank of a river such a powerful blow that he may be knocked into the water.

Accidents are commonly met with while people are crossing streams, or bathing therein, or while women are washing clothes or filling vessels with water at a river or lake. Anyone sitting on a steamer or other craft on a lake or river with his feet hanging over the side, or leaning over with his hand in the water, simply provides bait for any crocodile in the vicinity.

As a rule, if the victim is rescued, it is found that a portion of a limb has been bitten off, but we have met with a case in which only a large portion of the pectoralis major was removed. In this case the victim attributed his escape to driving his thumbs into the crocodile's eyes. The wound healed excellently, though of course there was practically no pectoralis major left on the side in question, and in its place an area of scar tissue. Crocodile bites, in our experience, are not nearly so liable to septic infection as the bites of the Carnivora.

Traumatisms caused by the Larger Selachii.—By far the greatest number of sharks live in the seas of warm climates, and are well known because of the great danger of their bite, which is often fatal. The greatest risk is to bathers or fishermen, but it is a curious fact that divers for pearls appear to incur little risk. It is probable that the noise of the large number of people employed in this work frightens the sharks, which keep away.

Carcharias gangeticus was for a number of years a source of great danger to the crowds at the bathing ghats of Calcutta. Sir Joseph Fayrer says that they used to feed upon the partially burned bodies which were formerly thrown into the river, but when this custom was discontinued they began to attack the people at the bathing ghats, especially in the months of April and May, when the river contains much salt water. He says that they would dash into the crowd at the bathing ghat and inflict dangerous and, at times, mortal wounds, though they seldom were able to get away with their victim because of the numerous people at the ghat.

The patient is brought to the hospital suffering from the effects of shock and hæmorrhage, with a limb either snapped off or partially torn off, or with larger or smaller lacerated wounds, in which the bone may or may not be exposed and grooved by the sharks' teeth, and with blood dripping from the ragged surfaces of the wound. Usually the patient is in a state of extreme prostration, covered with a cold sweat, and having a hardly perceptible pulse.

More rarely there are only a few triangular or irregular lacerated wounds, showing that the shark did not obtain a proper hold of the victim.

The great danger is death, either immediately or in a few hours, from shock or hæmorrhage. If this is avoided, the wounds appear to heal readily if the patient is otherwise in fair health, but of course amputation is often necessary.

Man.—The bites inflicted by the Kru men on the West Coast of Africa in quarrels are, or were, of not uncommon occurrence, and it was also fairly common to meet with injuries on the knuckles caused by scratches from their teeth.

These wounds were usually considered to be serious, for, although the teeth of the African appear to be in excellent condition of repair and cleanliness, still the slightest scratch may lead to exceedingly severe inflammations, as the present writers well know. The most careful antiseptic treatment must be applied at once.

TRAUMATISMS DUE TO PHYSICAL AGENCIES.

Foot-binding.—The bandaging of the feet of young female children began in the imperial harem of the T'ang Dynasty in China some 1,400 years after Confucius, the idea probably being to reproduce as nearly as possible a club-foot. As a matter of fact the result of pressure of the short, heavy bandage commonly used, neatly and tightly applied to the growing feet of young girls aged three to four years, is to produce a very small foot in the condition of a pes cavus, with the outer three toes in a varoid and the inner two toes in a valgoid position.

On examining one of these feet it is noted that it is very short, and that the plantar surface has a deep groove dividing this aspect of the foot into posterior and anterior portions. The posterior portion contains the os calcis, which, when examined radioscopically, presents a very different appearance from and position to that in a normal foot.

Notwithstanding objections to the contrary, we are of the opinion that the person walks upon the posterior aspect of the os calcis, and we further draw attention to the great alteration in the lines of pressure and stress, as compared with those in a normal os calcis. The anterior portion consists of the four small toes bent under the foot, so that the dorsal aspect is placed ventrally, while toes themselves are much atrophied. By radiographs it is seen that the heads of the metatarsals are approximated towards the os calcis. The first toe is only compressed. The weight of the body is then

supported by the posterior aspect of the os calcis and by the distal end of the first metatarsal, and the plantar aspect of the great toe, while the dorsal aspect of the other toes may assist a little. The distance from the end of the os calcis to the big toe may be only three inches.

Such a compressed, deformed, stunted foot may easily become the site of disease. In the first instance there is danger of gangrene, necrosis (especially of the phalanges) and synovitis of the knee-joint during the active bandaging, while the immediate result may be total lameness. As a later complication, tuberculosis of the bones of the deformed foot is liable to occur.

Fortunately this horrible proceeding, like many other horrible fashions, is dying a natural death under the influence of increased feminine education and common sense first produced among European women, and by them introduced into China. Naturally no cure can be effected in a foot which has become fully deformed.

Heavy Fruits.—The fruits of the coco-nut (*Cocos nucifera* Linnæus) and of the jâk-tree (*Artocarpus integrifolia* Linnæus) are heavy and fairly hard, and injuries may be caused by the fall of one of these fruits from the tree on to the head or other part of the body. When the blow is received by the head, the symptoms produced may be those of concussion or compression, or there may be signs of the fracture of the vault or base of the skull.

Lightning.—Thunderstorms are often of extreme violence in the tropics, and death from lightning stroke is much commoner than in the temperate zone, but the signs of lightning stroke are exactly the same as those usually recorded in books on general surgery, and need not be repeated here.

Electrical Fans.—In the more civilized tropical towns it is common to use small, movable, quickly running electric fans in order to obtain a cooling breeze. These are brought into use especially in the bedroom and dressing-room, but are also frequently seen in the dining-room, and sometimes in the office. Being easily movable, they are apt to have their position slightly altered when running at full speed, and in doing this quite a number of accidents have taken place. Sometimes during the condition between sleeping and waking, people, stretching out their arms while still in bed, catch their fingers in the fans. The most common traumatism is for the fingers to be caught by the blades, and to sustain contused and lacerated wounds, the danger of which is tetanus, as the blades of the fan are generally thickly covered with the dust brought by the current of air.

Another and far less serious but most awkward accident sometimes happens in a lady's dressing-room. The fan is placed on or near the dressing-table, and is so arranged that the back of the fan is towards the person at the dressing-table. The current of air passes from the person towards the back of the fan. If the lady has long hair and is dressing it, the current of air may carry it into the back of the fan and between the blades, which, still revolving, causes the hair to be twisted into a tangle. Usually the lady or her attendant has sufficient nerve to switch off the fan, and no very serious injury is done, but it is difficult to extract the hair from the tangle in the fan.

REFERENCES.

- ARMSTRONG (1801). Duncan Annales. (1808). Salzberg Med. Chir. Zeitung i. 143. (Human Bite.)
 BAKER, S. W. (1891). Wild Beasts and their Ways. London. (A most fascinating book.)
 BALDWIN, A. E. (1892). Pacific Medical Journal, xxxv. 32. (Boars.) San Francisco.

- DUDGEON, J. (1874). Medical Reports, Customs Gazette. Shanghai. No. 6, 12. (Bear and Camel.)
- ENSOR, F. (1886). Lancet, June 19, p. 1160. London. (Shark Bite in South Africa.)
- FAIRCHILD, W. F. (1896-97). Louisville Medical Monthly, iii, 182. (Boar.)
- FAYRER, J. (1869). Medical Times and Gazette. (1873). Clinical and Pathological Observations in India. London. (Shark, Wolf, and Jackal Bites.)
- GLEESON (1911). Indian Medical Gazette, p. 99. London. (Tigers, Panthers, and Bears.)
- GRIEVE (1909). United States Naval Medical Bulletin, iii, 132. Washington. (Bears.)
- HENNING (1810). Huseland and Hemly's Journal der Pratischen Heilkunde, August, xxxi, 62. Berlin. (Man's Bite.)
- JEANS, F. (1908-09). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, ii, 299. Liverpool. (Foot-binding; radiographs.)
- KASTAGIR, A. C. (1881). Indian Medical Gazette, xvi, 105. (Shark.)
- MAISON, M. (1906). Archives de Médecine et de Pharmacie Militaire, p. 213. Paris. (Camel's Bite.)
- MATTHEW, R. G. (1872). Indian Medical Gazette, vii, 88. (Leopard.)
- MCLEOD, K. (1866). Indian Medical Gazette, i, 116. (Jackal.)
- MITRA, N. C. (1895). Medical Reports, Calcutta, v, 138. (Tiger.)
- MORGAN, C. (1878). Austral Practitioner, Melbourne, p. 89. (Shark.)
- PLAYFAIR, L. (1889). British Medical Journal, March 2, p. 489. London. (Distinguished men damaged by wild animals.)
- RASPAIL, F. V. (1860). Histoire Naturelle de la Santé et de la Maladie chez l'Homme. Paris. (A general account.)
- SEN, B. M. C. (1873). Indian Medical Gazette, viii, 43. Calcutta. (Alligator.)
- SIMPSON, D. (1893). Transactions of the South Indian Branch of the British Medical Association, iv, 112. (Leopard Bite.)
- SIRCAR, M. L. (1871). Calcutta Journal of Medicine, iv, 302. (Crocodile.)
- TOUSSAINT, H. (1894). Révue Générale de Clinique et de Thérapie, viii, 289. Paris.
- UMACHIGI, V. S. (1905). Lancet, February 25, p. 494. London.
- WELLMAN, F. C. (1904). Journal of Tropical Medicine, p. 124. London. (Leopard's Bite.)
- YAHOUN (1904-05). Gazette Médicale d'Orient, v, 269.

SECTION B

CHEMICAL CAUSES OF DISEASE

CHAPTER VIII

TROPICAL INTOXICATIONS—POISONS

Classification of poisons—Poisons used criminally against man—Poisons taken accidentally by man—Poisons used criminally against cattle—Poisons used in trial by ordeal—References.

CLASSIFICATION OF POISONS.

THE intoxications of the tropics are numerous, and it is only possible in this work to give a very brief glance at the more important.

These poisons may be classified according to their chemical nature, but this is perhaps not so convenient as to arrange them according to the various purposes for which they are used, into:—

1. Poisons used criminally against man.
2. Poisons taken accidentally by man.
3. Poisons used criminally against cattle.
4. Poisons used in trial by ordeal.
5. Poisons used on weapons.
6. Poisons used in fishing and hunting.
7. Poisonous trades.
8. Poisonous foods.

Only the first four will be treated in this chapter.

I. POISONS USED CRIMINALLY AGAINST MAN.

The poisons used criminally against man are very numerous, some of them being still but little known.

The medical practitioner should be on the alert to detect cases of poisoning, but if his suspicions are aroused, he had better not attempt to conduct the chemical investigation himself unless he has had a most unusual and complete training in complex organic analysis.

It requires a highly and specially trained chemist, with a good laboratory, to detect some of the tropical vegetal poisons. Our experience indicates that highly trained public analysts with well-equipped laboratories, such as exist in Ceylon and some parts of India, are essentials in a tropical country; for they are useful, not merely for criminal investigations, which are very numerous when people's eyes are opened to the danger, but also for studying other problems.

Criminal poisoning, according to Waddell, is three or four times as frequent in India as in England, and nineteen times more prevalent in Calcutta than in England. With the general statement that poisoning in the tropics is common we agree, and further, we are of the opinion that it is more so in the East than in Africa, the reason being that in Africa only the fetish-man is able to present virulent poisons in an acceptable form, whereas persons with an elementary knowledge of poisons are common in the East. It is true that the drug mostly used for poisoning purposes is arsenic, and probably it alone in the East causes as many human criminal deaths as all the organic poisons put together; but these latter from time to time cause inquiries, and are by no means uncommon. The poisons used in different countries vary according to customs or traditions.

The poisons used against man may be divided into—A. Inorganic Poisons, and B. Organic Poisons.

A. Inorganic Poisons.

The most common inorganic poisons of the tropics are:—

1. Arsenic in some form.
2. Perchloride of mercury.
3. Mineral acids.
4. Powdered glass (this is really a mechanical irritant).

Copper salts have been used for homicidal purposes, but this is unusual, though it is said to be fairly common in India, while accidental cases from using copper cooking-vessels were formerly not infrequent in the same country. Antimony is rarely used.

Powdered glass, though a mechanical and not a chemical irritant, calls for some remarks, as it is used in many parts of the tropics for homicidal and suicidal purposes, being an irritant poison. The injury caused is, of course, purely mechanical, and the more finely it is powdered, the less likely it is to cause serious injury, owing to mucus surrounding the particles. The glass is administered in food—*e.g.*, bread, spinach, sweetmeats, etc. The symptoms are those of irritant poisoning—retching, violent vomiting, spasms, convulsions, and racking pain. The most evident post-mortem feature is acute gastritis. The mucosa is covered with a layer of thick mucus, under which it is found to be hyperæmic and lacerated. In this mucus or on the mucosa the minute pieces of glass may be found. No other pathological signs need be present. The treatment is to administer any bulky food at hand, and then, if vomiting has ceased, to give an emetic, and finally a laxative.

B. Organic Poisons.

The poisonous plants of the tropics belong largely to the natural orders of the Apocynaceæ, the Loganiaceæ, Euphorbiaceæ, Liliaceæ, and Leguminosæ.

The following is a classification of the most important according to use and place :—

I. Poisons used for homicidal purposes.*

Aconitum. Several species	}	India and Ceylon.
Strychnos. Several species		
Gloriosa superba Linnæus		
Cerbera thevetia Linnæus		
Cerbera odollam Gärtner		
Nerium odorum Soland		
Jatropha curcas Linnæus	}	Brazil.
Paullinia pinnata Linnæus		
Thevetia arovai De Candolle	}	Dutch Indies.
Milletia seriacea W.		
Barringtonia speciosa Linnæus	}	Pacific Islands.
Cerbera lactaria Hamilton		
Hyoscyamus falezlez Coss	}	West Africa.
Oro of Sierra Leone (a cactus)		
Cleistanthus collina Bentham		
Melianthus major L. ; M.	}	South Africa.
comosus ; M. minor ; M.		
aregeana ; Morea collina		

2. Poisons used for suicidal purposes.

Opium, Papaver somniferum Linnæus.	
Nerium odorum Soland.	Gloriosa superba Linnæus

3. Habit Poisons.

Opium.	Indian hemp.
Cocaine.	Kawa.

4. Poisons used for purposes of infanticide.

Opium, Papaver somniferum Linnæus.
Calotropis procera R. Brown.
Tobacco Nicotiana tabacum L., and other species.

5. Poisons used for procuring abortion.

A large number of poisons are used, some of which will be mentioned later.

6. Aphrodisiacs.

Animal substances : Coleoptera.
Vegetal substances : Pausinystalia yohimba Pierre, Pausinystalia trilliesii Pierre.

7. Poisons used to stupefy with intent to rob.

Datura fastuosa L.	Cannabis sativa L.
--------------------	--------------------

* Poisoning by Viperine Venom is described in Chapter XIII.

8. Poisons used to simulate injuries.

Plumbago rosea Linnæus.

Anacardium occidentale Linnæus.

CEYLON PLANTS.

By the kindness of Mr. Driberg, we are able to give the following list of Ceylon plants known to be poisonous to men and cattle, but not commonly used against man:—

1. *Ammannia baccifera* L.
2. *Anamirta paniculata* (A. cocculus) W. and A.
3. *Arisæma curvatum* Thw.
4. *Chrozophora plicata* A. Jacs.
5. *Croton tiglium* L.
6. *Diospyros montana* Roxb.
7. *Elæodendron glaucum* Pers.
8. *Euphorbia tirucalli* L.
9. *Excœcaria agallocha* L.
10. *Datura fastuosa* L.
11. *Lagenaria vulgaris* Ser.
12. *Lasiosiphon eriocephalus* Decne.
13. *Lobelia nicotianæfolia* Heyne.
14. *Manihot utilissima* Pohl.
15. *Paspalum scrobiculatum* L.
16. *Plumbago zeylanica* L.
17. *Rauwolfia serpentina* Benth.
18. *Rhododendron arboreum* Smith.
19. *Ricinus communis* L.
20. *Sapium insigne*.
21. *Tylophora fasciculata* Buch-Ham.
22. *Withania somnifera* Dunald.

A few notes may, perhaps, with advantage be given on some of these poisons.

1. **Homicide** —*Aconite*.—*Aconite* (Ranunculaceæ) is so poisonous that in India it is known as 'bish' or 'bikh,' which means 'the poison,' which generally refers to *Aconitum ferox* Wall (Himalayas), *A. napellus* L. (Himalayas), *A. luridum* Aorte (Sikkim), *A. lycoctonum* L. (Kashmir); whilst *A. heterophyllum* Wall and *A. palmatum* Don. are said to be less poisonous.

The root is the principal source of the poison, which, however, also exists in the leaves and stem.

Aconite is used for homicidal purposes, as a cattle poison, and may at times be taken accidentally. The fatal dose is said to be 30 grains of the root, and the fatal period usually three to six hours.

The symptoms are tingling of the lips, tongue, mouth, and fauces, followed by numbness and anæsthesia, burning pains in the stomach, and vomiting, muscular and cardiac weakness, and finally death takes place from failure of the heart or respiration.

The treatment is to empty the stomach by a stomach-pump or an emetic, followed by animal charcoal and stimulants. Hypodermically atropine and ether, with or without camphor, may be given.

Cleistanthus collina.—*C. collina* (Euphorbiaceæ) has very rarely been used as a poison, though it has been mentioned in several books. When so used, it causes cramps in the limbs, purging, vomiting, and death in a day or so.

Cerbera odollam.—*C. odollam* (Apocynaceæ) is a very common plant in Ceylon, and is similar to *C. thevetia*. Its chemical properties have not yet been properly worked out, and it is said that it 'prob-



FIG. 18.—*CERBERA ODOLLAM* GÄRTNER.

ably' contains the same poisonous principle as *C. thevetia*—viz., thevetin. The symptoms are nearly the same—i.e., gastro-intestinal irritation, followed by cardiac poisoning. These symptoms are easily mistaken for arsenical poisoning. The treatment is the same as for irritant poisoning in general.

Cerbera thevetia.—*C. thevetia*, the common yellow oleander of India, is a shrub about 6 to 12 feet in height, with yellow, bell-shaped flowers and globular green fruit. It is highly poisonous, its action being due to a glucoside, thevetin, which exists in the milky juice pervading all parts of the plant. It is supposed that three seeds are sufficient to kill a man in twelve to fifteen hours, the symptoms being gastro-intestinal irritation, headache, dizziness,

and pain in the throat. The pulse is very soft and slow—thirty to forty beats a minute—which Windsor says is characteristic; later it becomes weak, very rapid, and irregular. Death results from cardiac failure. The treatment is the same as for ordinary irritant poisoning.

Dendrocalamus strictus Nees.—According to Ridley, the fine hairs of bamboo sheaths are used in Malaya as a mechanical irritant. They are administered in food, and cause a severe form of enteritis.

Gloriosa superba.—*G. superba* (Liliaceæ) is a well-known poison in India and Ceylon, while in Burma it is said to be used for suicidal purposes. Its active principle, superbine, is said to be allied to,



FIG. 19.—GLORIOSA SUPERBA LINNÆUS.

or identical with, the scillitin of squills, and therefore the action of *G. superba* is not unlike that of squills. The symptoms, which may appear in half an hour, are retching, violent vomiting, spasms, with contortions of the body and racking pains, with short intervals of relief from time to time. Death may take place in four hours. The post-mortem reveals congestion of the brain and membranes, with extravasations of blood; congestion of the lungs, liver, and kidneys; and inflammation of the mucous membrane of the stomach.

The treatment is that for irritant poisoning in general, and as already mentioned.

Hyoscyamus falezlez.—The Tuaregs are said to use *H. falezlez* to kill travellers.

Jatropha curcas.—*J. curcas* Linnaeus (Euphorbiaceæ), the jura-tree of India, has a seed which is called the 'physic nut,' from which an oil can be expressed which is an irritant to the skin and a purgative.

The symptoms of poisoning are vomiting, purging, abdominal pain, derangements of the special senses, muscular twitchings, and loss of memory. The treatment, after getting rid of as much of the poison as possible, is lime-juice and stimulants.

Melianthus (Melianthaceæ).—Various species of *Melianthus* are said to be very poisonous by Grey, who suspects the possibility of their use by South African Bushmen.

Milletia sericea (Leguminosæ) is a poison of the Dutch Indies, causing severe diarrhœa, collapse, and death.

Morea collina (Indaceæ).—*M. collina*, the wild tulip of South Africa, is said by Grey to have been used by a Bushwoman to poison a number of people, two of whom died.

The symptoms were severe vomiting and a feeling of constriction across the chest, feeble and intermitting heart, and a tendency to coma for hours before death. The post-mortem showed no rigor and no inflammation of the stomach. The heart musculature was flaccid, and the right side full of blood.

Nerium odorum.—*N. odorum* (Apocynaceæ) is the white oleander, and grows commonly in India, where it is a well-known poison. It is rarely used for homicidal purposes, but more generally for suicide, abortion, and accidental poisoning.

The root is the portion used, but all parts are poisonous. The active principles are neriodorin, a powerful cardiac poison acting something like digitalis; karabin, a cardiac poison, with also a strychnine-like action on the spinal cord.

The symptoms are therefore (1) those of gastric irritation—viz., vomiting, pain in the stomach, frothing at the mouth from salivation, but, as a rule, without diarrhœa; (2) cardiac symptoms, producing at first a slow pulse, which finally becomes quick and weak—the respirations are rapid from the first; (3) strychnine-like symptoms of twitching of the muscles, tetanic spasms, with cramps and, at times, lockjaw.

Towards the end the patient becomes drowsy, then insensible,



FIG. 20.—NERIUM ODORUM SOLAND.

and finally dies from cardiac failure. The post-mortem reveals dilatation of the right side of the heart, which is full of blood, while the left side is empty, with subendocardial hæmorrhage, congestion of the liver, spleen, kidneys, and lungs, mucosa of the stomach and small intestine, while the large intestine and brain are normal. The patient must be treated on the same lines as for digitalis and strychnine poisoning.

The Oro.—The oro (a cactus) of Sierra Leone is a gastro-intestinal irritant, causing vomiting, diarrhoea, collapse, and death.

Paullinia pinnata (Sapondaceæ) is said by Rho to be used by negro slaves in Brazil to poison their masters, and to depend upon an alkaloid, timboin, for its action.

Strychnos.—*Strychnos* (Loganiaceæ) is a genus with several poisonous species, among which may be mentioned:—

Strychnos nux vomica L.

Strychnos ignatii Berg.

Strychnos colubrina L.

Poisoning by the alkaloid strychnine is frequently met with in India, but is usually accidental. The symptoms of strychnine poisoning are bitter taste in the mouth, tetanic spasms, opisthotonus, risus sardonicus, and death from asphyxia or collapse. There are no characteristic post-mortem appearances, except congestion of the brain and spinal cord. The treatment is to empty the stomach by emetics, and to administer chloroform or chloral hydrate, and, when asphyxia threatens, to perform artificial respiration.

Thevetia arovai (Apocyanæ).—*T. arovai* is allied to the oleanders mentioned above, and has an alkaloid, thevetosin, said to cause gastric irritation and difficulty of breathing.

Sablier crepitans Linnæus, also named *Hura crepitans* (Euphorbiaceæ), grows in the Antilles, and has been imported into tropical Africa. Its fruit is purgative, and is believed to be used frequently for criminal purposes, being said to produce violent vomiting and purging with tenesmus, constriction of the throat, and syncope. Ruz, however, has thrown doubt on the possibility of its really being the cause of these criminal poisonings. It is to be noted that the same symptoms are produced by *Croton tiglium* Linnæus (Euphorbiaceæ), which is found in India, Cochin China, tropical America and Africa.

Spigelia anthelmia Linnæus (Loganiaceæ) has the reputation of being very poisonous, and has been used criminally in tropical America, in Brazil, and the Antilles, where it is still used as an anthelmintic. It is said to produce somnolence, convulsions, and death.

2. **Suicide**.—Of all the poisons used for suicidal purposes, opium is by far the most usual, though *Nerium odorum*, *Cerbera odollam*, and *Gloriosa superba* are also at times employed, the former especially by women in India. Rarer poisons are *Calotropis procera*, *Cerbera thevetia*, aconite, prussic acid, and veratrine (meeta bish). The action of all these poisons is described either in ordinary works on toxicology, or has already been mentioned.

3. **Habit Poisons.**—Apart from actual suicide, certain drugs have a distinctly deleterious effect upon human beings when taken for long periods, and those in use in the tropics are alcohol, opium, cocaine, Indian hemp, and many others. The effects of alcohol are sufficiently dealt with in books on ordinary medicine, and need not be described here.*

Opium is eaten in Persia, India, and Africa, and smoked in Malay, Indo-China, and China, but for the latter process it has to be specially prepared. On the Eastern mind opium is said to have two possible effects: either it produces a sense of absolute blank, or it produces fancy dreams and visions. The effects of chronic morphinism are loss of appetite, emaciation, and exhaustion, and hence inability to think or work.

It is, however, probable that the effects of opium are not as bad as those of alcohol, and, used in moderation, may not be more harmful than the use of tobacco.

Cocaine has been used much of late in India as an intoxicant or stimulant to counteract the effects of opium. Unfortunately, children have begun to habitually use the drug. The cocaine is chewed with betel and chunam (slaked lime), and produces at first loss of sensation in the tongue and lips, followed by dryness of the mouth and fauces. The temperature does not rise, but the pulse becomes full and quick, and at this stage the inebriate likes to be left alone, and firmly closes his lips lest the saliva should flow out. His ears become hot and red, his cheeks pale, and the tip of his nose cold. Perspiration breaks out, and the maximum amount of the so-called hilarity or exaltation, due to over-stimulation of the nervous system, now appears, but is speedily followed by depression, which induces the victim to take another dose. The teeth and tongue of the confirmed cocaine-eater turn jet-black, probably due to some chemical change produced by the action of lime and saliva on cocaine. Pernicious symptoms in the form of emaciation accompanied by insomnia, digestive disturbance, diarrhoea, deafness, diminution of urine, delusions and hallucinations, and even at times acute mania, may appear.

Indian hemp (*Cannabis sativa*) is used in India, Arabia, Persia, and elsewhere as a narcotic. It must be remembered that *C. sativa* grown in India has quite different properties from the same plant grown in Europe. In India there are four varieties sold: bhang, consisting of the dried leaves and stalks reduced to a powder; ganja, the flowering tops; charas, the resin from the leaves; and majun, a sweetmeat prepared with hemp. In Central Asia the resin is called haschisch.

Its action on man is first to produce a pleasurable excitement, and later narcotism. In moderate doses it temporarily increases the feeling of strength and power. As an intoxicant it is much

* Alcoholism, which is on the increase, may be caused by indigenous forms of stimulants, such as arrack, or, more dangerously, by imported cheap whiskies, gins, and rums, which greatly deteriorate native races.

used, being eaten or smoked, and is said to be one potent cause of insanity in India. Waddell says that about 38·4 per cent. of Bengal lunacy can be traced to this source. It is asserted to be one of the causes of the strange phenomenon called 'running amok,' but this will be dealt with in detail later on, under diseases of the Nervous System.

Kawa is an intoxicating drink prepared from the root of *Piper methysticum* Forst. (Piperaceæ), which grows throughout Polynesia.

According to Lewin, kawa contains starch, flour, two inactive substances—kawain and yangonin—and 2 per cent. of resin, which is believed to be the active principle. But this resin, by treatment with ether, can be resolved into two separate substances, one of which has a weak, and the other a strong, action on man. The drink causes a feeling of *bien-être*, but too much has an evil effect with symptoms of inco-ordination and headache, and a desire for sleep, and may induce liver disease, dermatitis, and general debility. Taken in moderation, it is said to be harmless.

Peyotl (pellote) is a narcotic used in Mexico, and derived from the cactus *Anhalonium lewinii* Henn. It causes sleep with hallucinations.

Species of Coriaria—*C. ruscifolia* L., the poison-foot of New Zealand, and *C. myrtifolia* L. (a native of Europe)—are considered to be intoxicant or poisonous, according to the dose. The symptoms are coma, convulsions, and dilated pupils. From *C. ruscifolia* the Maoris are said to prepare a wine and jelly.

Pituri (*Duboisia hopwoodii* F. Mueller [Solanaceæ]) is a shrub growing in Australia and New Caledonia. In the former it is found in the neighbourhood of Carlo or Mungerebar on the Upper Mulligan, and from this in scattered patches eastwards. At Carlo live the Ulaolinga tribes, from whom the other tribes purchase the Pituri by barter with spears, boomerangs, etc. About the beginning of March the Pituri leaf is gathered, and is sold in the form of half-green, half-yellow tea mixed with plenty of chips. The preparation is complex: it is first roasted in ashes, then wetted with water, then teased with the fingers, and all larger pieces removed. Then leaves of a species of wattle or gidgeon are heated over a fire and finally burnt, the ashes being retained and mixed with the moist Pituri on a 'pituri plate'—i.e., a smooth surface—and finally manipulated by the fingers into small rolls, $2\frac{1}{2}$ inches long by $\frac{5}{8}$ inch thick. These rolls are chewed by the natives, and are in great demand as a narcotic. Reserve rolls are carried at the top of the ear. The Australian native names are: 'Mājā' (Walookera), 'ne-em-pa' (Yaroinga), 'un-da-kor-a' (Undekerebina), 'pī-tū-rī' (Ulaolinga), 'ti-rum-bol-a' (Karanga), 'ta-rem-bō-la' (Pitta-Pitta), 'moda' (Kalkadoon). The alkaloid Piturine is identical with Hyoscyamine.

Other Poisons.—In Malacca the leaves of *Mitragyna speciosa* Korth (Rubiaceæ) are said to be used in place of opium. From the leaves of *Bassia latifolia* Roxb. and *B. longifolia* L. (Sapotaceæ) intoxicating drinks are made. *Anacardium occidentale* (the marking nut tree) is sometimes used to torture or disfigure people. *Hyoscyamus muticus* is used as an intoxicant by the Baluches, and makes them dance like lunatics.

4. **Infanticide**.—Infanticide exists in the tropics in two forms—the first irrespective of sex, and said to be due in India (Waddell) to the high-caste Hindu prohibiting remarriage of widows; and, secondly,

female infanticides, to prevent too many daughters growing up. A few of the more commonly used drugs may be briefly mentioned.

Opium is used in India by smearing the mother's nipples with the drug. There is little necessity here to describe the action of opium. All that need be said is to warn the practitioner that ayahs (native nurses) are apt to soothe a baby to sleep by dipping the finger in laudanum, and giving it to the baby to suck. Such treatment is highly deleterious to the child, and the intensely contracted pupils should make the practitioner suspect its use in an obscure case of illness.

Calotropis gigantea R.Br. and *C. procera* R.Br. (Asclepiadeæ), called 'mador' in Hindustani and 'erukam' in Tamil, have been used in India for infanticide and abortion, rarely for suicide, and more rarely for homicide. The symptoms are vomiting, profuse salivation, severe tetanic spasms, extremely slow and stertorous breathing, and dilatation of the pupils. The active principle is a yellow, bitter resin, but there is no alkaloid. The treatment is the same as for irritant poisoning.

Tobacco is also used as an infant poison.

5. Abortion.—Criminal abortion is very common in the tropics. In India it is said to be common among Hindu widows, because they are not allowed to remarry.

The drugs commonly used are :—

(1) *Reputed Emmenagogues :*

- Nerium odorum Sol.
- Cerbera thevetia L.
- Carica papaya L. seeds.
- Daucus carota L. (the carrot) seeds.

(2) *Purgatives—Curcubitaceæ :*

- Cucumis trigonus Roxburgh.
- Momordica charanta Linnæus.
- Momordica cymbalaria Fenzl.

(3) *Irritants.*—Several inorganic irritants are used—arsenic, lead, mercury, copper, quicklime.

- Plumbago rosea Linnæus.
- Plumbago zeylanica Linnæus.
- Calotropis procera R. Brown.
- Piper nigrum L. (black pepper).
- Unripe pine-apple.
- Moringa pterygosperma Gärtner (bark).
- Lasiosiphon speciosus Decaisne.

(4) *Supposed Ecboolics :*

- Juice of bamboo-leaves (*Bambusa* sp.?).
- Fruit of *Randia dumetorum* Linnæus.
- Decoctum of *Cuscuta reflexa* Roxb. (this is also an irritant).
- Seeds of *Celastrus paniculatus* W.
- Seeds of *Anethum graveolens* Linnæus.

Plumbago zeylanica L. and *P. rosea* L. are evergreen shrubs about 2 to 5 feet high, in the root of which there is an active principle, plumbagin, which acts externally as a vesicant, and internally as an irritant and narcotic. It is used as a paste, or spread on wool on an abortion stick.

The abortifacients commonly used in Ceylon are *Gloriosa superba* L., violent purgatives (including large doses of magnesium sulphate), and the twigs of the castor-oil plant, the last named being a mechanical irritant.

6. **Aphrodisiacs.**—The aphrodisiacs may be divided into those of animal and those of vegetal origin.

Those of animal origin are *Melæ vesicatorius* (*Cantharis vesicatoria*, *Lytta vesicatoria*, *Musca hispaniola* are synonyms), which is well known, and *Mylabris cichorii*, a beetle called Pân-mão by the Chinese, and containing 1 per cent. of cantharidine. In China and the Far East generally, the testicles, spinal cords, etc., of animals, pounded and mixed with rice-water, are eaten as aphrodisiacs.

Those of vegetal origin are numerous, and include *Panax quinquefolium* Linnæus (Araliaceæ), the powdered root of which, called by the Chinese Jeun-Chên, is used; *Populus spinosa* (Amentaciæ), the Sên-iâng-hoâ of the Chinese, of which the buds are used; *Psorala corylifolia* Roxburgh (Leguminosæ), the fruit of which is used by the Chinese and Annamese; *Psorala glandulosa* Linnæus in Chili; *Amomum zingiber*—the ginger (Zingiberaceæ); *Caryophyllus aromaticus* Linnæus (*Jambosa aromatica* Miquel [Myrtaceæ]); *Pausinystalia yohimba* Karl Schumann, the celebrated Yohimbehe or Yumbehoa bark from which the alkaloid Yohimbine hydrochloride, used in 1 per cent. solution, dose 5 to 15 minims, or tablets with $\frac{1}{18}$ grain taken, one three times a day, may be mentioned. The last is sometimes named *Corynanthe yohimbi*, but this is merely a synonym. *P. trilhesii* Pierre is also considered to contain Yohimbine. These trees grow in the Kameruns and the Congo.

Cordiceps sinensis is the mushroom called Tch'oungtis'aô by the Chinese, and is used as an aphrodisiac.

7. **Stupefying with Intent to Rob.**—Two drugs are much used in India and Ceylon for the purpose of stupefying with intent to rob—viz., *Datura fastuosa* L. and *Cannabis sativa* L.

Datura fastuosa (Solanaceæ).—Poisoning by datura is common in India, having been used by the Thugs. The seeds are usually mixed with food or drink, and the symptoms, which develop rapidly, depend upon the dose, being generally those of a cerebral poison. First there is delirium, and later coma, but in both conditions the pupils are widely dilated. The delirium is peculiar; for example, the people affected may be found searching their bedding most vigorously for some lost article. When death occurs, it is due to cardiac failure. The fatal dose is not accurately known, but may be about 10 to 15 grains of the seeds. Waddell puts the mortality at about 18½ per cent. The post-mortem characteristics are wide dilatation of the pupils, congestion of the brain, meninges, and the lungs, and other viscera.

The treatment consists of emetics, stimulants, hypodermics of morphia, and pilocarpine nitrate in $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{1}{2}$ grain doses, as advised by Ringer.

The action and effects of *Cannabis sativa* L. have already been described.

8. **Used to simulate Injuries.**—*Plumbago rosea* L. (Plumbagineæ) and *Anacardium occidentale* L. (Anacardineæ) are used to simulate bruises and other injuries in order to get innocent people into trouble.

II. POISONS TAKEN ACCIDENTALLY BY MAN.

Accidental poisoning happens fairly frequently ; therefore a few examples may be given.

Certain common articles of food are poisonous until properly prepared ; *e.g.*, tapioca is the starch obtained from the root of



FIG. 21.—*DATURA FASTUOSA* LINNÆUS.

Manihot utilissima Pohl (*Jatropha manihot* L. [Euphorbiaceæ]), commonly called the cassava, of which there are two varieties—the sweet and the bitter. The latter contains hydrocyanic acid in its milky juice, and is therefore poisonous until it is roasted, when the volatile acid is driven off, and the bitter cassava can then be used for food after squeezing out the juice and cooking the root. Waddell reports two cases of death from accidental poisoning by this root in 1898 in Madras.

Capsicums (*C. annum* L. [Solanaceæ]), if taken in large quantities, may cause burning in the mouth and throat, vomiting, colic, diarrhoea, and even death.

Lewin states that *cinnamon-bark* (*C. zeylanicum* Nees) may be poisonous, while *nutmegs* (*Myristica fragrans* Houtt.) are well known to be poisonous if taken in large doses.

Vanillismus is poisoning by the dried fruit of *Vanilla planifolia* (Andrews), which causes colic, vomiting, and pains in the head and muscles. Men working with it may suffer from conjunctivitis, fits of sneezing; and a skin eruption called vanilla itch, characterized by swelling, followed in a few days by scaling, may develop. There is, however, great doubt as to what is the real cause of these symptoms. Probably some of them are due to a mite in the vanilla.

Chailletia toxicaria Don. (Chailletiaceæ) (native name, magberi or manuch), the powdered fruit of which is used for killing rats, has been described by Renner, in Sierra Leone, as the cause of poisoning in a Mendi carrier.

The symptoms were mainly vomiting, diarrhœa, trembling, general weakness, and inability to walk because the legs were paralyzed, the tendon reflexes having disappeared. Hyperæsthesia was present over the inner side of the thighs and legs, and pressure on the calf muscle gave severe pain. The bladder, rectum, and pupils were normal. The man recovered in about two months.

Renner remarks that this case is probably the clue to attacks of sudden paralysis of the lower limbs in young persons (twenty to forty years) of both sexes in Sierra Leone. When death ensues, it is from paralysis of the muscles of respiration.

The seeds of *Ricinus communis* L. (Euphorbiaceæ), the castor-oil plant, are poisonous, causing burning in the throat and abdomen, vomiting, purging (may be absent), and collapse. The fatal dose appears to be three seeds, and to kill in about forty-six hours. Post mortem, the principal feature is gastro-intestinal inflammation.

The treatment is emetics, stimulants, and hypodermics of morphia.

The fruit of *Hippomane mancinella* L. (Euphorbiaceæ), the manchineel-tree, of the Grenadine Islands, which has a delicious fragrance, is said to have been the cause of many sailors meeting their deaths, for it looks like an apple. The active principle is not known.

The symptoms are severe pain in the mouth and stomach, followed by collapse. The lips and tongue become swollen and blistered, the abdomen tender, the pupils widely dilated, while bullæ appear on the skin.

The treatment consists of stimulants and hypodermics of ether, with mouth-washes. Internally opium, bromides, chlorate of potash, bicarbonate of soda, or bismuth, made into an emulsion, may be given.

Fontainea pancheri (Euphorbiaceæ) is a tree growing in New Caledonia, the ingestion of the fruit of which causes symptoms analogous to those produced by *Hippomane mancinella*.

Calotropis gigantea R. Brown (Asclepiadaceæ) has been known to cause fatal effects by administration non-maliciously of two dessertspoonfuls of its milk in a quantity of cow's milk. This plant is variously named mudar in Bengal, yercumby, by Tamils, and warra by the Sinhalese.

III. CATTLE POISONING.

Cattle-poisoning is a frequent method of revenge in India, and the drugs most commonly used are: Arsenious oxide, arsenious oxide with sulphite, arsenious oxide with oxides of lead, sulphides of arsenic only, oxides of lead only, sulphate of copper, nux vomica, cocculus indicus, mercury, and sulphate of iron.

But, in addition, *Abrus precatorius* L., *Cerbera thevetia* L., *Calotropis procera* R. Brown, aconite, chopped hair, and snake-venom have been used.



FIG. 22.—*ABRUS PRECATORIUS* LINNÆUS.

The list of Ceylon plants poisonous to man and cattle has already been given. It is important to remember that rinderpest and dysentery resemble arsenical poisoning, while poisoning with nux vomica may resemble tetanus.

Grey says that *Lessertia annularis*, the t'neuta of the Karroo of South Africa, produces cerebro-spinal paralysis in sheep and goats, like *Gastrolobium*, the poison-pea of Australia. Only *Abrus precatorius* need be discussed here.

***Abrus precatorius* Linnæus.**—The juice of this plant, which belongs to the Leguminosæ, is most irritating, and, if injected under the skin of cattle, proves rapidly fatal, by producing general depression, drowsiness, fall of temperature, and hæmorrhagic lesions somewhat like those of snake-venom.

The decorticated seeds are made into a paste, which is worked into sharp-pointed little needles, and hardened in the sun. Two of these are inserted by their bases into a wooden handle, and then driven with great force into the animal's flesh.

The active principle is abrin, a tox-albumin resembling snake-venom, which causes thrombosis and death in from eighteen to twenty-four hours.

IV. POISONS USED IN TRIAL BY ORDEAL.

POISONS D'ÉPREUVE (FRENCH).

Curious customs exist in savage lands of trial by ordeal, in which the patient is given a drug and then ordered to perform some act. Waddell records the history of an old Hindu woman who was supposed to be a witch. She was tried by ordeal, being given a poisonous drug (*datura*) in treacle, as it is a native belief that a witch can withstand poison. The result of the ordeal was that the poor woman died.

In Africa the greater part of these poisons belong to the Loganiaceæ, Apocyanaceæ, Leguminosæ, and Solanaceæ, but the plant employed varies in the different regions, and many are still undetermined—*e.g.* M'Faug may be a *Strophanthus*, while M'Boundou is undetermined.

Rho gives an account of trial in West Africa by 'imbundi,' the sliced root bark of *Strychnos icaia* (Baill), which is said to contain strychnine. The accused, after drinking a concoction of the root, is made to jump over a stick, and is pronounced guilty unless he is able to do this, or to pass urine on to a banana-leaf, both of which feats are usually impossible.

Christison mentions the Calabar bean of West Africa, *Physostigma venenosum* Balf. (Leguminosæ), as being used in trial by ordeal, the belief being that the innocent vomit and are safe, while the guilty retain the poison and die. Its antidote is atropine, administered hypodermically.

Erythrophlaeum judiciale Proct., *Tanghinia venenifera* Poir., which contains a toxic base with an action like digitalin, and *Menabea venenata* Baill are used in Madagascar, and *Adenium somalense* Poir in Somaliland, for purposes of trial by ordeal.

REFERENCES.

- BANCROFT, J. (1859-1872). Pituri Poison in Transactions of Philosophical Society, Queensland (42nd article).
 BOSE (1902). Indian Medical Gazette (Cocaine Habit).
 CADDY (1895). British Medical Journal, i. 136 (*Hippomane mancinella*).
 DYMCK, WARDEN AND HOOPER (1890). Pharmacographia Indica. 3 vols. Calcutta. (A standard work.)
 FLÜCKEGER AND HANBURY (1879). Pharmacographia. London.
 GRALL ET CLARAC (1911). Pathologie Exotique. Vol. v., Empoisonnements. Paris.
 GREY (1874). British Medical Journal, 168 (Bushmen Poisons).
 ROBERT (1906). Lehrbuch der Intoxekationen, 2 Aufl.
 LIVERSEDGE, A. (1881). The Alkaloid from Pituri. Journal of Royal Society, New South Wales, for 1880, 123.
 MALONE, A. (1904). Botanique Pharmaceutique. 2 vols. Paris. (A most valuable reference book.)
 ONDAATJIE, W. C. (1865-66). Journal of Ceylon Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society, 157. Colombo. (*Calotropis gigantea*.)
 RENNER (1904). British Medical Journal, i. 1314 (*Chaillitia Toxicaria*).
 SMITH (1905). Taylor's Principles and Practice of Medical Jurisprudence, ii. 852-882. Chapter on Medical Jurisprudence in India by Major Buchanan, I.M.S. (An excellent summary of the subject.)
 SMITH (1905). Poisonous Plants of all Countries. Bristol.
 WADDELL (1904). Lyon's Medical Jurisprudence for India. 3rd edition. Calcutta. (A most valuable book.)
 WINDSOR (1906). Indian Toxicology. (A most useful small book.)

CHAPTER IX

POISONS USED IN WAR, FISHING, HUNTING, AND TRADE

Poisons used on weapons—Arrow-poisons—Poisons used in fishing and hunting—Fish poisons—Mammalian poisons—Poisons used in trade—
—Lacquer poisoning—Jatropha poisoning—References.

V. POISONS USED ON WEAPONS.

Arrow-Poisons.

The arrows of primitive peoples produce wounds which are by no means usually fatal, and therefore, in attacking big game or in warfare, it is obvious that some poison which will insure the death of the victim fairly quickly will be valuable.

Usually these poisons, or the more potent of them, are only known to the fetish priests or chiefs, and are generally mixed with all sorts of animal extracts, the whole being made into a paste, and painted on the arrow-heads.

If a special poison is prepared, as a rule some sort of precaution is also taken, so that the owner of the arrow may not be accidentally wounded. Thus, the Fra-Fra people, when preparing against the invasion of their country, obtained a very potent poison, which, however, they handled with great caution, though they boasted that they had an antidote. They kept these arrows, as a rule, in special quivers, and each arrow had a tiny stick tied to its shaft, so that it could be carefully lifted out of the quiver. Moreover, a tuft of red material was tied to the base of each of these sticks, so that there could be no mistake as to which were the specially poisoned arrows.

Arrow-poisons may be classified into those of animal origin and those of vegetal origin. The most common animal arrow-poisons are snake-venom, scorpions, spiders, and beetles, crushed and mixed with vegetal poisons. The Bushmen of South Africa and the natives of Togoland make an arrow-poison by burning and powdering the heads of adders and vipers, regardless of the fact that the burning must destroy the venom. The Bushmen of the Kalahari Desert

make a poison from the larvæ of *Diamphidia simplex* Paringuey, which is thought to be really a toxin due to some micro-organism growing in the decomposing larva. But animal poisons are not nearly so common as vegetal poisons.

The most important natural orders containing vegetal arrow-poisons are, firstly, the Apocynaceæ, which contains the genera *Acocanthera*, *Strophanthus*, and *Adenium*, all of which are common African poisons; secondly, the Loganiaceæ, with the genus *Strychnos*, which is of great importance in Asian poisons; thirdly, the Urticaceæ, with the important ipoh poison of Sumatra, Borneo, and Indo-China; and fourthly, the less important orders of the Ranunculaceæ, containing *Aconitum ferox* (Wall), used in India, the Leguminosæ, and the Euphorbiaceæ, containing some African poisons.

The actions of arrow-poisons are very varied, and may be classified into—

1. An action on the heart and muscles like that of digitalis.
2. An action on the peripheral nerve-endings like that of curari.
3. An action on the nervous system and heart like that of aconite.
4. An action on the nervous system like that of strychnine.
5. An action resembling snake-venoms.

The general treatment of a poisoned arrow wound is as follows:

1. Tie a tight band on the heart side of the wound, if on a limb, to prevent absorption of the poison.
2. Remove the arrow as quickly as possible.

The difficulty in withdrawing the arrow-head is the presence of barbs, which can be prevented from doing mischief by thrusting the head through the skin on the far side of the limb—there is no necessity to fear about the bloodvessels, for they will slip away from the arrow—then cutting the shaft off, and drawing the head through on the far side, and the shaft on the near. If it is in the body, a good plan is to enlarge the wound and pass down some sort of a cannula—e.g., a hollow bamboo—over the head, and then withdraw the whole arrow.

3. Wash the wound with permanganate of potash.

Having withdrawn the arrow, wash the wound out thoroughly with a 3 per cent. solution of permanganate of potash (if this cannot be done, cup the wound or suck it), in order to neutralize any snake-venom, and, indeed, any other poison capable of being oxidized.

4. Keep the heart working.

Give stimulants—e.g., hypodermics of strychnine—after the arrow is removed and the wound washed.

5. After-treatment.

Treat the hurt as a poisoned wound. A dose of antitetanic serum would be good, if available.

Some of the principal arrow-poisons require to be described in more detail.

1. **African Arrow - Poisons.**—The natural order Apocynaceæ contains, as already stated, several genera of plants which provide celebrated arrow-poisons much used by native peoples in Africa.

These genera are *Acocanthera*, *Strophanthus*, and *Adenium*.

Acocanthera Arrow-Poison.—The genus *Acocanthera* supplies the most important arrow-poisons of East, Central, West, and South Africa. The poison, which is called waba, wabajo, or ouabaio, was first fully described by Burton in 1856. It is prepared from the tree *A. schimperi* (Dèc) in Abyssinia and throughout the greater part of East Africa, being used by the Wataita, the Wakamba, and probably other tribes. The special Fra-Fra arrow-poison of the Gold Coast is probably derived from some species of *Acocanthera*. In Erythræa and Yemen *A. deflersii* Schweinfurth is used, and in Somaliland *A. ouabaio* Cathelineau. These trees are 4 to 5 metres in height, with dark green foliage, white or red flowers, and violet-red fruit. The poison is usually prepared by making a decoction of the wood, and evaporating it down until it becomes a thick tar-like extract, which contains the active principle. This principle, which is a glucoside called ouabain, acocantherin, or wabain, is a powerful cardiac poison. In addition, the natives generally add snakes' heads and gall-bladders to the tar-like mass; but it is doubtful whether these really increase its virulence, though it must be admitted that sometimes there are symptoms analogous to snake-poisoning.

The thick extract of the wood containing any other additions, which individual peculiarity may consider necessary, is now painted upon the arrow-heads.

The action of the freshly prepared poison is very rapid, death taking place in a few minutes through stoppage of the heart, after a preliminary quickening of the respirations and convulsions. Sometimes pain is complained of in the lumbar region. The symptoms can be readily prevented by a 3 per cent. solution of permanganate of potassium. The native remedy is believed to consist in eating some of the poison.

Another important *Acocanthera* poison is *A. venenata* Thunberg, which is employed by the South African Bushmen, and is said to be made from a decoction of the bark. The symptoms are rigors, without convulsions, and loss of muscular power, followed by death in a few minutes.

Strophanthus Arrow-Poison.—Livingstone was probably the first to draw attention to a *Strophanthus* arrow-poison called kombi, used in Central Africa. *Strophanthus hispidus* D. C. is a very common plant in many parts of West and Central Africa, and is a common arrow-poison, but not nearly so deadly as that of *Acocanthera*. The other varieties used are *S. glabris*, *S. kambe*, *S. lanosus*, *S. ciabé*, *S. barika*.

The poison is obtained by cooking the seeds in water, and adding

snakes' heads and leaves and roots of other plants. The injured man falls to the ground, and his breathing and pulse become gradually slower and slower, until the heart-beats suddenly cease, and death ensues, preceded by a convulsion in about ten to fifteen minutes. The heart stops in systole, and will not contract on stimulation. *Strophanthus* is used on the Congo, Lake Nyassa, Zambesi, Gaboon, Guinea Coast, Gold Coast, Cameroons, and Senegambia as an arrow-poison.

Adenium Arrow-Poison.—There are two species of *Adenium* used in Africa—viz., *A. boehmianum* Schinz and *A. somalense* Oliver.

A. boehmianum, which is a shrub about $1\frac{1}{2}$ to 2 metres in height, is used by the Ovambo of German South-West Africa to prepare an arrow-poison called echuja. The thickest branches or roots are cut across and held over a fire, when the thick, viscid sap exudes in threads, and is collected by winding it round small pieces of wood. The arrow-heads are now moistened by spitting upon them, and then smeared with the sap.

The active principle is echujin, which is a very virulent cardiac poison. The Somaliland species is equally virulent.

Erythrophlœum judiciale Proct.—Its active principle is an alkaloid, erythrophloem, which causes dyspnœa, first slowing and then quickening of the heart, and finally death from stoppage of breathing. It is used by the Pigmyes of Central Africa; but the principal Pigmy arrow-poison is a mixture of this with strychnine, which will kill an elephant. Prompt treatment, however, is said to be able to save a man's life when wounded by one of these arrows.

Munchi Arrow-Poison.—The Munchi arrow-poison, which is used by the Backorana clan in Northern Nyeni, is said to be nearly always fatal to man in about half an hour. The method of preparation is not known, but the poison is plastered in a thick layer on the long point of the barb. It is brittle, of a dark brown colour, with slightly aromatic odour, and is insoluble in cold or warm water, in normal saline or acidulated solution, but dissolves easily in alkalis—e.g., 1 per cent. Na_2CO_3 solution. It has no alkaloidal properties, and does not reduce copper sulphate in alkaline solution. No fluorescence occurs with H_2SO_4 , and there is only slight reducing power after prolonged boiling with mixed acids. It acts by paralyzing the heart and the striated skeletal muscles, but no distinct action on the muscle plasm can be detected. The toxic substance is thought to belong to the class of resinous acids.

Euphorbia candelabrum.—This is supposed to be one of the ingredients of the poison 'uciunga' (meaning poison), used by the Wafiomi, Wagogo, of German East Africa. The other ingredients are not known. According to Brieger, the active principle is exactly the same as in *Acocanthera*. Rho says the Wakamba use a similar poison.

Less important African arrow-poisons are :—

(a) *Used by the Monbattu Dwarfs—*

1. *Erythrophlœum guineense* G. Don., belonging to the Leguminosæ,
of which the bark is used.
2. *Palisota barteri* Benth.
3. *Combretum grandiflorum*.
4. *Strychnos icaia* Baill.

(b) *Used by the Hottentots and South African Bushmen—*

5. *Hæmanthus toxicaria* (L.).
6. *Euphorbia cereiformis* L.
7. *Euphorbia virosa* W.
8. *Euphorbia heptagona* L.
9. *Euphorbia arborescens*.
10. *Hyænanche globosa*.

2. **Asian Arrow-Poisons.**—The best known of these poisons are those used in Malaya, Sumatra, and Borneo, and prepared from the following :—

Urticacæ—

- (1) *Antiaris toxicaria* Lesch.

Leguminosæ—

- (2) *Derris elliptica* Benth.

Loganiacæ—

- (3) *Strychnos tieuté* Lesch.
- (4) *Strychnos wallichiana* Benth.
- (5) *Strychnos maingayi* Clarke.

Rubiaceæ—

- (6) *Lasianthus flavescens* Korth.

Dioscoreacæ—

- (7) *Dioscorea hirsuta* Bl.

Aroidæ—

- (8) *Amorphophallus campanulatus* Blum.

Apocynacæ—

- (9) *Tabernæmontana malaccensis* Hook.

Antiaris toxicaria.—*A. toxicaria* (Lesch) is a tree growing in Malaya, the sap of which provides the arrow-poison known as ipuh, ipo, ipoh, ternek, kyass, poön upas, etc. It is used by the Sakais of Malacca, the Battaks of Sumatra, the Dyaks of Borneo, and the Mois of Cochin China. Brandwood's dart-poison, dajaksch, from Borneo, appears to be from the juice of *A. toxicaria*.

The earlier travellers in Malaya gave wonderful accounts of the upas-tree and its action, which were purely imaginary. Delisle and Magendie appear to have been the first to make experiments with the poison in 1810, and they were followed by Brodie in 1811, who showed that the heart-beats became weak and irregular before respiration or the mental faculties were impaired.

There appears to have arisen a confusion between the juice of *A. toxicaria* and *Strychnos tieuté*, which explains the finding by Hedbon and Welting of strychnine in upas antiar. Pelletier and Caventou, the discoverers of quinine, studied the chemistry of the poison, and in 1838 Mulder isolated the active principle as a crystalline body, which he called antiarin, which in 1868 Deirij and Ludwig showed to be a glucoside.

Kiliani in 1896 investigated antiarin, and found its formula to be $C_{27}H_{42}O_{10}$. The physiological action of the poison has been investigated by a large number of observers, notably by Hedbon, Kiliani, and Seligmann, the last-named observer giving a most excellent account of ipoh as used by the Kenyahs of the Baram district of Sarawak.

The poison is prepared from the inspissated juice of the tree, and is either used alone or is mixed with *S. tieuté*, snakes' heads, or other substances. The whole concoction is made into a paste with water, and applied to the heads of the arrows, which are then dried before a slow fire.

The poison acts on the ventricles of the heart, behaving like digitalis, and, in addition, causes paralysis of the cerebral nervous system and passing clonic spasms of the voluntary muscles.

The Strychnos Arrow-Poisons.—*Strychnos tieuté* Lesch is the upas tieuté of Borneo, *S. wallichiana* Benth is the ipoh aker, and *S. maingayi* the aker lampong of the natives of Malacca.

The poisons obtained from these plants are said to contain strychnine and curari. The symptoms are said to be paralysis of the muscles, abolition of the reflexes, and stoppage of the heart and respiration. The urine contains a substance which reduces Fehling's solution.

Aconite as an Arrow-Poison.—*Aconitum ferox* Wall, belonging to the natural order of the Ranunculaceæ, is used by the Himalayan tribes from Assam to Kashmir as an arrow-poison, and several Sepoys have been mortally wounded in expeditions.

The poison is applied as a paste to the arrow, and is said to be mixed with septic blood to increase its effects (Waddell). It is also said to be used along the French and Chinese frontiers of the Indian Empire, and by the Ainos in Japan, but the latter are believed to mix it with tobacco.

Less important Asian arrow-poisons are:—*Guatteria veneficum* Mart, *Cocculus toxiferus* Mart, *C. amazonum* Mart, which are also used in India as arrow-poisons, the active principle being curari.

Arrow-Poisons of the Philippine Islands.—The arrow-poisons used by the Negritos of the Philippine Islands are *Rabelaisia philippinensis* Planch, which causes paralysis of the extremities, dyspnoea, convulsions, and cessation of the heart's action.

Australasian Arrow-Poisons.—Le Dantec, quoted by Vaughan and Novy, says that the poisonous arrows of the natives of the New Hebrides are prepared by smearing the points, which are usually made from human bones, with, first, a vegetable resin, and then with slime taken from marshy places.

American Arrow-Poisons.—The important American arrow-poisons used in the valleys of the Amazon and Orinoco belong to the Loganiaceæ, and are *Strychnos toxifera* Schomb, *S. crevauxii* Planch, *S. castelneiana* Weid.

The active principle is curari, and, it is said, curin. Curari, or ourari, was first brought to Europe by Sir Walter Raleigh in 1595. The drug paralyzes the motor end-plates, and causes death from failure of the respiration.

Less important American arrow-poisons are :—

- (a) *Paullinia pinnata* (L.), used by native Indians of Brazil.
- (b) *Piscidia erythrina* (L.), used in Brazil and Central America.

VI. POISONS USED IN FISHING AND HUNTING.

(a) Fish Poisons.

It is a common practice all over the world to throw pieces of bark or leaves of trees and shrubs on to the water, in order to stupefy fish, and thus enable them to be easily caught.

The number of plants used for this purpose is very great, and though we have not thought it necessary to give a detailed list in this book, still, we consider that it is useful to give a few examples, as a knowledge of the subject is at times required.

The plants used in Ceylon for the purpose of intoxicating or killing fish are given in the following list, kindly supplied to us by Mr. Driberg :—

1. *Anamirta paniculata* (A. cocculus W. and A.).
2. *Barringtonia acutangula* Gärtn.
3. *Euphorbia tirucalli* L.
4. *Lasiosiphon eriocephalus* Decne.
5. *Maesa indica* Wall.
6. *Mundulea suberosa* Benth.
7. *Randia dumetorum* Lamk.
8. *Strychnos nux vomica* L.
9. *Walsura piscidia* Roxb.
10. *Derris uliginosa* Benth.

Hydnocarpus venenata Gärtn. is also said to be used, and to be poisonous on account of the hydrocyanic acid it contains.

In India the following are used :—

- Anamirta cocculus* Wight (Menispermaceæ).
- Dolichandrone falcata* Seem (Bignoniaceæ).

In Java and Sumatra :—

- Pittosporum densiflorum* Puttall (Pittosporaceæ).
- Tephrosia toxicaria* Pers.
- Tephrosia piscatoria* Pers.

In the Philippine Islands :—

- Sapindus rarak* D. C. }
- Harpulia arborea* Radlk } Sapindaceæ.

In the Dutch East Indies :—

- Derris elliptica* Benth (Leguminosæ).
- Pachyrhizus angulatus* Rich.

Both of these plants contain a non-nitrogenous substance, called respectively derrid and pachyrrhizid, highly poisonous to fish. Derrid-root will kill fish in a dilution of 1 to 25,000 of water, and derrid in 1 to 5,000,000.

In the West Indies :—

Piscidia erythrina L.

This plant, called the Jamaica dogwood, is used by throwing the leaves and entire branches into the water, when the active principle, piscidin, dissolves out and paralyzes the fish, which are easily caught floating on the surface.

(b) Mammalian Poisons.

In India the root of *Arum montanum* Roxb is said to be used to poison tigers, while aconite is employed for the same purpose against elephants.

Many rat-poisons are known, especially *Tylophora fasciculata* Buch-Ham (Asclepiadaceæ), *Chaillatia toxicaria* Don (Dichapetalaceæ), both of which are used in Africa, and *Dianella nemorosa* L. (Liliaceæ) in Malacca.

VII. POISONS USED IN TRADE.

In the natural order of the Anacardiaceæ there is the genus *Rhus*, some of the species of which are well known to cause a dermatitis.

Thus, *Rhus venenata*, the poison-ivy of the Western States of America, has many times been recorded as the cause of this disease. Other species known to cause dermatitis are *R. toxicodendron*, *R. lobata*, and *R. pumila*; but for the present purpose only *R. vernicifera* is of importance.

Lacquer Poisoning.

Lacquer is obtained from a brown treacle-like balsam, which exudes when incisions are made into the lacquer-tree, *Rhus vernicifera* De Candolle.

The disease is acquired in two ways: either by direct contact with the lacquer, or through the fumes arising from it by evaporation, but only as long as the lacquer is not dry, for the poison, whatever it is, disappears on drying.

The symptoms, which develop in a few hours, are fever, with tension and œdema of the skin of the face, limbs, and generative organs, nasal and conjunctival catarrh, while a papular eruption appears on the œdematous skin of the legs and forearms.

The treatment consists in washing the skin thoroughly with soap and water, and applying soothing applications, such as cold lotions, or lotio plumbi subacetatis.

As prophylaxis the Chinese rub the hands and face with rape-seed oil in which a ham has been boiled, and wear a linen mask for the face and a leather apron for the body. After work the exposed parts are rubbed with a decoction of chestnuts, pine-bark, salt-petre, and amaranth.

The above precautions are taken in China, but in Japan no such prophylaxis exists.

Jatropha Poisoning.

While on the subject of irritating plants it may be mentioned that *Jatropha areus* of the West Indies has leaves covered with stinging hairs, which are said to cause extreme collapse, followed by pain and swelling of the affected parts when touched.*

REFERENCES.**Poisons used on Weapons.**

- BURTON (1856). First Footsteps in East Africa.
 CHALMERS (1905). A Further Report of Experiments upon the Fra-Fra Arrow-Poisons. Journal Royal Army Medical Corps, August.
 FRÖHLICH (1905). Munchi Arrow-Poison. Journal of Physiology, 319.
 GREY (1874). British Medical Journal, August, 169.
 KRAUSE (1907). Archiv für Schiffs u. Tropenk.
 LEWIN, L. (1894). Die Pfeilgifte. Historische u. experimentelle Untersuchungen. Berlin.
 LEWIN, L. (1903). Traité de Toxicologie. Paris.
 LIVINGSTONE (about 1865). Expedition to the Zambesi, pp. 465-467.
 RHO, F. (1905). Mense's Handbuch der Tropenkrankheiten, i. 237-257.
 SELIGMANN (1903). Action of the Kenyah Dart Poison Ipoh and its Active Principle Antiarin. Journal of Physiology, xxix. 39. (Complete literature of Ipoh poison.)
 SMITH (1905). Taylor's Medical Jurisprudence, ii. 696-698.
 STOCKMAN (1898). Pharmaceutical Journal, pp. 550-585.
 VAUGHAN AND NOVY (1903). Cellular Toxins, p. 68.
 WADDELL (1904). Lyon's Medical Jurisprudence for India, pp. 589, 617.

Poisons used in Fishing and Hunting.

- RHO, F. (1905). Mense's Handbuch der Tropenkrankheiten, i. pp. 253-255.
 VAUGHAN (1898). Twentieth-Century Practice of Medicine, pp. 38, 39.
 VAUGHAN AND NOVY (1903). Cellular Toxins, p. 198. London.
 WADDELL (1906). Lyon's Medical Jurisprudence for India.

Poisonous Trades.

- CROCKER (1903). Diseases of the Skin, third edition, i. 418-420.
 SCHEUBE (1903). Diseases of Warm Climates, p. 331. (English translation.)

* For Dermatitis Venenata see Chapter LXV.

CHAPTER X

POISONOUS FOODS

Bromatoxismus—Zootrophotoxismus—Fuguismus—Sitotoxismus—Lathyrismus—Loliismus—Paspalismus—Atriplicismus—References.

VIII. POISONOUS FOODS.

Food poisoning, technically called bromatoxismus, may be divided into two classes :—

1. Animal food poisoning.
2. Vegetal food poisoning.

I. ANIMAL FOOD POISONING.

Animal food poisoning is called zootrophotoxismus, and may be due to—

(a) Products normally present in certain animals, but poisonous to man.

(b) Poisonous food having been eaten by an animal prior to its being killed for food.

(c) Products abnormally produced in the living animal.

(d) Post-mortem decomposition.

But of these we need only concern ourselves with the first and the last.

Products normally Present in the Animal.

Poisoning by products normally present in the animal is called 'siguatera,' and is generally due to fish, though it may also be caused by Molluscs, Crustaceans, and Cœlenterates.

The most dangerous fish are those living among coral reefs, and particularly those which are bright-coloured. It is possible that the poisonous properties may be due not so much to the fish itself as to the fact that it has eaten decomposing food, such as dead medusæ, corals, etc.

Certain species of the genus *Clupea* (Cuvier), particularly *C. thrissa* (Osbeck) are noted as being very poisonous, but there is considerable doubt about this matter, as no scientific work has been

done on the subject. The symptoms are gastro-intestinal irritation, which may lead to collapse and death. Another fish which is only poisonous at certain seasons is a so-called sardine *Clupea*



FIG. 23.—*CLUPEA LONGICEPS* (*SARDINELLA NEOHOWII*).

longiceps (*Sardinella neohowii* Val), found off the coasts of Ceylon, and which, according to Tennent, caused much sickness years ago.

Other poisonous fish are *Tetrodon hispidus*, the 'muki-muki' or death-fish of Hawaii, and the file fishes, of which *Stephanolepis hispidus* L. may be mentioned as an example. Poisoning with



FIG. 24.—*TETRODON VERMICULARIS* SCHLEGEL.
(From Savtschenko's 'Atlas of Poisonous Fish.')

Tetrodon has, however, been more accurately studied, and may be referred to at greater length under the term Fuguismus.

Fuguismus.

The Japanese term 'fugu' includes several species of fish belonging to the genus *Tetrodon*, of which the important species are *T. vermicularis*, *T. rubripes*, *T. laevigatus*, *T. chrysops*, *T. rivulatus*, *T. lunaris*, *T. pardalis*, *T. porphyreus*, *T. poicelonotus*, *T. stellatus*, and *T. sticonotus*, which are said by Scheube to be often used for suicidal purposes.

The poison appears to lie in the ovaries and testicles, which, according to Tabara, contain—1. Tetrodin—a crystalline base; 2. Tetrodonic acid—a white, waxy body. Both are poisonous, but the acid is said to be more so than the base.

The symptoms, which begin in three to fifteen minutes after eating one roe, are, according to Scheube, an unpleasant sensation in the stomach, abdominal pains, burning in the fauces, nausea, severe headache, collapse, and fainting. Death may occur in a few

hours from paralysis of the heart or respirations. The mortality is high, being said to be more than 68 per cent.

The treatment is to empty the stomach with an emetic and to give stimulants, especially hypodermics of strychnine.

Post-Mortem Decomposition.

Post-mortem changes are much more rapid in the tropics than in the Temperate Zone, and, therefore, food is quickly apt to become poisonous. Meat is especially liable to become infected with saprophytic or pathogenic micro-organisms, especially *Bacillus paratyphosus-B* (Schothmüller) and the bacillus of Gärtner, more rarely *B. paratyphosus-A* (Schothmüller). These micro-organisms give rise to ptomaines, which cause symptoms of irritant poisoning (kreotoxismus), which may be so severe as to resemble those of cholera. The treatment is to remove the poison by emetics if necessary and purgatives, in the meanwhile keeping up the heart's action by means of warm applications, stimulants, and cardiac tonics. When collapse sets in, saline hypodermic injections should be given. As soon as the acute symptoms subside, the bowel should be disinfected with small doses of calomel, salol, or naphthol.

2. VEGETAL FOOD POISONING.

Sitotoxismus, or vegetal food poisoning, is caused by many kinds of vegetal food, and ought to be well known, but, unfortunately, is by no means on a scientific basis in the tropics.

Ergotism, well known in the temperate regions, is not important in the tropics; but, on the other hand, there is lathyrism, believed to be due to *Lathyrus sativus*, and other species of the same genus—*loliismus*, due to *Lolium temulentum*; and *paspalismus*, due to *Paspalum scrobiculatum*—which are known to occur in India. Less known is *atriplicismus*, which is described in China.

Kirke has drawn attention to poisoning by *Cystisus cadjan*, by which he probably means *Dolichus catjana* (Linné), named *Vigna catjang* (Walp) by Dragendorff, and also by *Dolichos filosa* (Klein), which is the same as *Vigna filosa* (Savi), both of which are used as foods. With regard to the former, the native name of which is *urhur* or *toar*, he says it mainly affects the poorer classes, as they do not remove the outer skin before eating it. The symptoms in the order of appearance are as follows:—Urticaria, sense of heat in the stomach, redness of the lining membrane of the mouth, apparent elongation of the teeth (by this must be meant shrinking of the gums), discoloration, bronzing of the skin, sponginess of the nails, burning of the hands and feet, a dry, harsh, cracked condition of the cuticle of the hands and feet, and deep longitudinal cracks in the heels. Rheumatic pains, with thickening of the periosteum, especially of the shins, and changes in the joints are also noticed. *Dolichos filosa*, called *oordh dal*, is said by Kirke to be poisonous only if eaten with the husks, when it causes colic, indigestion, and

as secondary results rheumatic pains, harshness, and dryness of the skin, with cracks. It is said to be a staple article of food among all classes, except the highest and the lowest.

Fagopyrism is an erythematous condition met with in white animals fed on maize and exposed to a strong sun. Some authorities believe that pellagra is a fagopyrism.

Lathyrismus.

Synonyms.—Platterbsenkrankheit (Ger.); Meurd Djilben (Algeria), Latirismo (It.).

Definition.—Lathyrismus is an intoxication caused by the ingestion of *Lathyrus sativus* Linnaeus and other species of the same genus, and characterized by symptoms of spastic paraplegia.

History.—It is believed that Hippocrates was acquainted with the disease, because he mentions that people at Ainos who fed continually on pulse suffered from weakness in the legs. In 1671 the Grand-Duke of Würtemberg issued an edict forbidding the eating of bread made from vetch-seeds, as it had been noticed that those who ate such bread suffered from a peculiar stiffness of their legs, although they seldom died. In 1784 an epidemic was recorded in Tuscany, when, through scarcity of food, the people were compelled to eat chick-peas. Tozzetti, while studying this epidemic, came to the conclusion that only the people who had for at least three months eaten bread made of two parts chick-pea to one part of rye or wheat became ill. He then planted some of the chick-pea seeds, and, when they grew up, identified them as *Lathyrus sativus* (L.). In 1824 Desparanches came to the conclusion that the seat of the lesion was in the lumbar cord. In 1833 the disease was first recognized in India in the Sangor territories, where, on account of three successive famines in 1829-31, the people were compelled to eat vetches, which are called kesari dal, or teori. Outbreaks took place in Sind, Chota Nagpur, the Central Provinces, and in the Himalayas. It apparently became very prevalent, for Irving says that in one district 6 per cent., and in another 3·19 per cent., of the inhabitants were affected. It still exists in India.

Climatology.—The disease depends upon social rather than climatic conditions, for people will not eat the vetches unless compelled by famine. It is known in India, Algiers, Italy, and France.

Ætiology.—There appears to be a consensus of opinion that the disease is due to eating bread composed largely of flour obtained from seeds of some species of *Lathyrus* belonging to the natural order Leguminosæ. The species most commonly suspected is *Lathyrus sativus* Linné, which grows in India; but *L. cicera* L. (red vetch), *L. clymenum* L. (Spanish vetch), *L. tuberosus*, and *L. aphaca* have all been regarded as possible causes. It is, however, by no means evident what substance or substances in these plants cause the symptoms. Teilleux obtained a resin which caused tetanic spasms and paralysis of the posterior limbs in rabbits. Bourlier obtained an extract which killed birds and frogs. Asher obtained

from *L. cicera* a volatile alkaloid, which he called lathyrin, which was doughy in consistence, alkaline, insoluble in water, slightly soluble in ether, soluble in chloroform, and which on evaporation formed needles; but he did not perform any experiments with the substance, the action of which is therefore unknown. It is believed by some that *Lathyrus* is not poisonous unless the seeds are decomposed or contain some parasitic growth, while others hold that the symptoms are not due to *Lathyrus* at all, but to *Agrostemma githago* (the corn-cockle) or *Lolium temulentum* (the darnel).

Animals are by no means immune from the baneful effects of the plants, for ducks become paralyzed and may die after eating the seeds; while pigs and horses also suffer, the latter showing acute or chronic symptoms which are said more or less to correspond to lathyrismus. On the other hand, bullocks and buffaloes are considered to be immune.

The great predisposing cause in man is scarcity of food, whether due to famine or poverty, both of which compel the unfortunate people to eat vetches instead of ordinary food. If the disease is brought about by famine, it may assume epidemic proportions; if by poverty, it may be simply endemic. Young people are more liable to be poisoned than old persons, and men more than women, perhaps because they eat more food.

Morbid Anatomy.—The pathology and morbid anatomy need investigation. When this is done, it is probable that some lesion of the pyramidal tracts—*i.e.*, of the upper motor neurones—will be found.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period is not known, and the disease comes on so insidiously that the patient often attributes it to a chill which he may have experienced a day or so previously.

Prodromata are often said to be absent, though it is more probable that digestive disturbances, colicky pains, and diarrhoea do occur, but pass unnoticed.

One of the first symptoms to arise is pain in the back and weakness in the legs, which increase until symptoms of spastic paraplegia appear. The patient now complains of girdle sensations, and walks with difficulty. The gait is characteristic, for the feet are turned slightly inwards, and are dragged or raised with difficulty from the ground. The joints appear so weak that it is difficult to proceed any distance without falling, while the body has a peculiar up and down motion. There is no ataxy, and no vasomotor phenomena, but the legs waste very much. The arms are not, as a rule, involved, though the hands may tremble. The superficial and deep reflexes are increased, and ankle clonus is present. The electrical excitability of the affected muscles is diminished, but the reaction of degeneration is absent. Incontinence of urine and impotence are early and common symptoms. The mind is unaffected.

The disease does not itself end fatally, but a definite improvement is seldom seen except in incipient cases.

Diagnosis.—Lathyrism must be distinguished from ergotism by the absence of gangrene, from beri-beri by the absence of implication of the peripheral nerves and the heart, and the absence of dropsy.

Prognosis.—The disease itself is not fatal.

Treatment.—Mild cases may be considerably benefited by being given good food and warm clothing, together with counter-irritation to the spine, and bromide of potassium internally in 15-grain doses three times a day. Strychnine is harmful.

Prophylaxis.—The only possible prophylaxis is the distribution of good food to the poor in times of famine.

Loliismus.

Loliismus is an intoxication caused by the ingestion of the seeds of *Lolium temulentum* Linné in bread.

History.—Loliismus has been known since Roman times, and is said by Orfila to have occurred in Genoa during the blockade of the year 1800. Kingsley of Roscrea described an outbreak in 1854, in which thirty persons suffered severely. Similar cases have been reported in India from the Punjaub, where the herb is called mostaki, and from the North-West Provinces, where it is called moschni.

Ætiology.—The exact method by which *Lolium temulentum* causes disease is not known. Dr. Cordier experimented on himself by taking 6 drachms of the seeds early one morning, and asserts that the result was inability to think, indistinct vision, torpor, debility, and drowsiness, followed by efforts to vomit, and later by tremors of the limbs, great depression, difficulty of speech, and vomiting. Bley separated a bitter principle, which he called loliin, but the action of this does not appear to have been investigated properly. Freeman states that the seeds owe their poisonous properties to an associated symbiotic fungus, which he carefully describes, and says that it is probably identical with that found in other species of *Lolium*. He says that it is a disputed point how far ergot and other fungi may be concerned in the production of the disease.

Climatology.—It occurs in the Punjaub and the North-West Provinces of India, and in Europe.

Pathology and Morbid Anatomy.—Not known.

Symptomatology.—The affected persons become very giddy, and stagger about as though drunk, and at the same time suffer from violent tremblings in the arms, legs, and tongue, impairment of vision with dilated pupils, green vision, great prostration, and in some cases vomiting. Sometimes there is a sense of burning heat in the mouth and throat, and a small irregular pulse.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis may be effected by considering the symptoms and examining the bread, when the starch granules of *Lolium* may be seen.

Prognosis.—The disease does not end fatally.

Treatment.—Castor oil must be given to remove the poison, and at the same time stimulants must be used to counteract the collapse.

Prophylaxis.—Bread should not be made with the seeds of *Lolium temulentum*.

Paspallismus.

Paspallismus is an intoxication caused by eating bread made from flour derived in part from the seeds of *Paspalum scrobiculatum* Linnæus.



FIG. 25.—*PASPALUM SCROBICULATUM* LINNÆUS.
Seeds show separately at the top of the illustration.

History.—Poisoning by *Paspalum scrobiculatum* occurs in India, where it was reported as far back as 1879, and probably was known earlier.

Ætiology.—Some authorities doubt the genuineness of this disease, for, as Waddell points out, the symptoms are so like loliismus

that it is quite possible that some mistake may be made as to the causation.

Two varieties of *Paspalum scrobiculatum* are known in India—viz., the sweet, which is called 'pechadi,' or 'goraharik,' and is said to be wholesome; and the bitter, which is called 'dhome, majara harik' or 'mana kodra,' and is considered to be poisonous. The poison appears to reside for the most part in the testa, but the exact poisonous principle is not known. Barry points out that the seed is liable to the attacks of fungi, and that perhaps the poisoning is really due to these parasites. It is clear that the whole subject requires revision.

Symptomatology.—The symptoms are vertigo, impairment of vision, apparent intoxication, muscular tremors, feeble pulse, cold clammy skin, dysphagia, delirium, narcosis, ending at times in death.

Diagnosis.—This must be mainly from poisoning due to *Lolium*, which can only be done by making inquiries as to the seeds from which the flour is prepared.

Prognosis.—This appears to be on the whole good, though fatal cases have been recorded.

Treatment.—Similar to loliismus.

Prophylaxis.—Avoid the seeds of the grass in making flour.

Atriplicismus.

Atriplicismus (Matignon, 1898) is an intoxication said to be caused by the ingestion of certain species of *Atriplex* (Linnæus), especially *Atriplex littoralis* L. and *A. angustissima vel serrata*.

History.—Atriplicismus was first described by Matignon in North China (Pekin) in 1898, but he leaves the subject open to some doubt.

Climatology.—The disease is, as far as is known, confined to China.

Ætiology.—In some way the disease is connected with *Atriplex serrata* (Chenopodiaceæ), which grows as a weed in the courts, gardens, and along the walls of the houses of Pekin, and is eaten by very poor people either uncooked or as a pancake.

It is said never to be poisonous if well washed, and if the red leaves are picked out. But Matignon drew attention to the fact that a small insect of a greenish-yellow colour is found on the plant. It is possible that the disease may be due to this insect, because Mégnin found that *Holothyrus coccinella* Gervais, a mite found in Mauritius and the Malay Archipelago, causes severe inflammation of the part touched. This insect may be carried by the hand to the mouth. Laveran thinks that the people get the thumb and forefinger infected while plucking the herb, and that it is by the hand that the disease is carried to the mouth. The ætiology is, therefore, extremely doubtful, and it may be either an animal or a vegetal poisoning.

The predisposing cause is scarcity of food, which compels the poorer classes to use some substitute for the usual cereals. Hence in Pekin in 1895, while the Japanese War was proceeding, there were a number of cases among beggars. Women suffer more than men, and the young and the old are specially attacked.

Morbid Anatomy.—The pathology and morbid anatomy are quite unknown.

Symptomatology.—The disease begins suddenly without prodromata, some ten to twenty hours after the plant has been eaten. The tips of the fingers and the back of the hands begin to itch, though sometimes the irritation may be at first limited to the thumb and forefinger. The affected parts soon become painful, swollen, cyanosed, and cold, while the pain and swelling spreads up the hands on to the forearms. The face and eyelids itch, and in due course become swollen, and the nose becomes cyanosed and cold. Sensibility to touch is diminished in the affected parts, but much increased to heat and to the sun's rays. Bullæ and ulcers may appear on the affected parts, the latter often giving rise to keloid scars. There is considerable itching. Ecchymoses may appear in various parts of the body. Gangrene of the fingers may also occur. The general health of the patient is not much affected.

Diagnosis.—Atriplicismus may require to be diagnosed from Raynaud's disease and erythromelalgia, but there should be no difficulty, because in the former there is no œdema, and in the latter there is redness as well as œdema.

Treatment.—The treatment is symptomatic, and consists in applying anodynes and cold compresses locally, and giving purgatives and disinfectants, such as salol, internally. Good food and good hygiene are also requisite.

Prophylaxis.—The ætiology must be settled before definite rules for prophylaxis can be given.*

REFERENCES.

Fuguismus.

SCHEUBE (1903). Diseases of Warm Climates. (English translation.)

Lathyrismus.

BUCHANAN (1898 and 1899). Journal of Tropical Medicine.

IRVING (1857). Indian Annals of Medical Science, vi. 424-434.

KIRK (1858). *Ibid.*, vii. 144-152.

RHO (1905). Mense's Tropenkrankheiten, i. 270-271.

SCHEUBE (1903). *Ibid.*

SHEEMAN (1837). Rambles and Recollections of an Indian Official, i. 134.

VAUGHAN (1898). Twentieth-Century Practice of Medicine, xiii. 72-76.

Loliismus.

CORDIER (1820). London Medical Repository, xiii. 260.

FREEMAN (1903). Proceedings of the Royal Society, lxxi. 27.

SMITH (1905). Taylor's Medical Jurisprudence, ii. 765.

WADDELL (1904). Lyon's Medical Jurisprudence for India, p. 585.

Paspalismus.

WADDELL (1904). *Ibid.*, pp. 586-587.

WATT (1895). Indian Medical Gazette.

Atriplicismus.

SCHEUBE (1903). *Ibid.*, pp. 328-330.

DRAGENDÖRF (1898). Heilpflanze, pp. 196-197.

* Fagopyrism is mentioned on p. 1241.

CHAPTER XI

VENOMOUS ANIMALS: PROTOZOA TO ARTHROPODA

Protozoa—Cœlenterata—Echinodermata—Platyhelminthes—Nemathelminthes—Arthropoda—Arachnida—Scorpionidea—Aranea—Acarina—Chilopoda—Hexapoda—Siphunculata—Hemiptera—Hymenoptera—Lepidoptera—Diptera—Coleoptera—Mollusca—References.

VENOMOUS ANIMALS.

MANY species belonging to the various classes and orders of the animal kingdom possess glands which secrete chemical substances injurious to man and the higher animals. The exact nature of these chemical substances is but little understood at present, though of late years much advance has been made in the knowledge of their action, which seems to be of a nature similar to that of bacterial toxins.

It will be best to consider these venomous animals in the order of their zoological classification.

PROTOZOA.

Rosenau and his collaborators have recently succeeded in producing a malarial paroxysm in a healthy man by injecting blood-serum taken from a malarial patient during the cold stage of the fever, and previously filtered through a Pasteur-Chamberland filter. Casagrandi and De Blasi have also described a hæmolytic toxin, concerning which more will be said when malaria is discussed.

Laveran and Mesnil have shown that *Sarcocystis tenella* produces a toxin, sarcocystin, of which 0.1 milligramme will kill 1 kilogramme of rabbit with choleraic symptoms, while a less dose will produce fatal cachexia. It is, however, less toxic to other animals.

CŒLENTERATA.

The Cœlenterata include anemones, corals, and jelly-fishes, which are capable of stinging by means of certain special cells called cnidoblasts, which enclose nematocysts—*i.e.*, little sacs—the invaginated neck of which is continued into a long, hollow, spirally coiled fila-

ment, surrounded with poisonous fluid. When stimulated, these cysts explode, and the filament is ejected and pierces the skin of the animal attacked, and so introduces the poison.

Zoantharia.—Stings from anemones cause itching and burning and skin eruptions. In its worst form this is exhibited in *la maladie des plongeurs* (*pêcheurs d'éponges*) of the Mediterranean. According to Dr. Skévos Zervos, the first symptoms are itching and intense burning in the place where contact with the anemone has taken place. A papule then appears, surrounded by an area, which at first is red, but may become blue and finally black, and may spread over the surrounding skin to a distance proportional to the virulence of the poisoning. The skin sloughs, and leaves a suppurating ulcer. Dr. Zervos has produced the symptoms of this disease in a dog by rubbing an actinia, held in forceps, along its abdomen.

C. Richet has separated two poisonous principles from *Anemone scultatus*—viz., thalassin and congestine. Thalassin is not very toxic, producing cutaneous redness, intense congestion of mucous membranes, pruritus, and sneezing. Congestine is much more virulent than thalassin, for a dose of 2 milligrammes per kilogramme will kill a dog in twenty-four hours. Thalassin is, however, antagonistic to congestine, for a dog inoculated with the former will resist an otherwise mortal dose of the latter.

The application of fat to the skin is said to be a preventative to the venomous action of the anemone.

Millepora.—Jones has described an acute erythema, with severe pain, followed by papules, pustules, and desquamation, as the result of stings by the hydroids of the hydrocoralline millepores (*Millepora alcicornis*, *M. complanata*, and *M. verrucosa*) in Malaya, where the corals are known as 'Karang gatal,' or itchy corals.

Trachymedusæ.—The jelly-fishes of European waters, such as *Rhizostoma pulini* of the Mediterranean and *R. cuvieri* of the English Channel, are well known to cause local redness, swelling, and urticarial eruptions.

The jelly-fishes of the tropics produce the same symptoms, but with greater severity. The pain is agonizing, and there is collapse, with local swelling and redness.

The treatment is to give stimulants internally, and to apply alkalis, such as dilute ammonia, to the affected area. Usually recovery is quick, and there are no after-effects.

Meyer describes a case of poisoning due to the well-known *Physalia pelagica* (the Portuguese man-of-war), in which there was severe inflammation and fever. A similar case caused by *Cyanea capillata* has been recorded by Forbes.

Porter and Richet obtained a liquid from *Physalia* containing an active principle, hypnotoxin, which, when injected into animals, caused somnolence and finally death, due to cessation of respiration.

ECHINODERMATA.

The Echinodermata possess poison glands which supply a venom to certain modified spines, but this only affects small animals.

The only echinoderms which affect man are the holothurians. The Cuvierian organs of certain Polynesian species (allied to *Holothuria argus*) are said to cause inflammation of the skin, and, if any of the secretion gets into the eye, even blindness.

PLATYHELMIA.

Dibothriocephalus latus, which causes a profound anæmia, is suspected to secrete some form of poison, and, indeed, this theory is supported by certain experiments of Schaumann and Tallquist. These investigators found that if the worms were subjected to tryptic digestion, and then mixed with food and given to dogs by the mouth, or extracted with normal salt solution and injected hypodermically, an exhaustion which ended in death was sometimes produced. In one case there was a great reduction of the red blood-corpuscles. Rabbits, however, were not affected.

Tænia saginata has been investigated by Messineo and Calamida, who consider that they have found evidence of the presence of a poison which can be obtained by pulverizing the tænia with sand and extracting with normal saline solution. This extract was then filtered and injected into animals, but the symptoms were not characteristic. Picou and Ramond consider that the extracts they obtained showed a decided bactericidal action.

On the other hand, the rupture of an echinococcus cyst is well known to produce symptoms of poisoning, but the chemical nature of the poison is not known. The symptoms in man are urticaria, if the dose is small; peritonitis, and severe cardiac symptoms, leading to fatal collapse, if the dose is large. Injected into animals, the liquid acts as a cardiac poison, causing death by stoppage of the heart in diastole, together with various other symptoms, such as a fall of the blood-pressure and temperature.

NEMATHELMINTHES.

Ascarides produce a volatile body with a peculiar and disagreeable odour, very irritating to the mucous membranes, especially to the conjunctiva. This odour is most noticeable in making post-mortems upon persons suffering severely from these worms. Arthus and Chanson have injected rabbits with the liquid squeezed out of living human ascarides, and produced collapse and death within ten minutes of a dose of 2 c.c.

Cattaneo obtained a substance toxic to guinea-pigs by allowing ascarides to live in sterile broth. Cao, Jammes, Mandoul, and Boycott, however, failed to obtain any evidence of the toxicity of ascarides.

With regard to *Agchylostoma duodenale*, there has been much discussion as to whether it produces a toxin or not. The experiments of Whipple and Preti seem to establish the presence of a hæmolytic principle in the alimentary canal of the worm, and those of Loeb and Smith of a principle inhibiting the coagulation of the blood and secreted by the cephalic glands, but these substances appear to be of importance to the worm for the purposes of digestion, and not to be of sufficient strength to act upon the host. According to Alessandrini, however, the cephalic glands secrete a true toxin. The evidence which has been gathered together points also to the possibility of the toxicity of the agchylostomes being partly due to the absorption of bacteria or their products into the circulation of the host through lesions in the intestinal mucosæ caused by the bites of the worms.

ARTHROPODA.

The Phylum Arthropoda includes a large number of types, which are characterized by their capability of stinging.

I. ARACHNIDA.

The class Arachnida includes among its orders the Scorpionidea, or scorpions, the Aranea, or spiders, and the Acarina, or mites and ticks, many of which are venomous.

1. Scorpionidea.

Scorpions abound in the tropics, where they grow to a large size, and are much feared because of the poisonous properties of their sting. The method of striking is to bring the tail forward over the body of the scorpion, so that the curved spine on the last segment (telson) of the tail penetrates into the skin and inflicts the wound. On either side of this curved barb is an opening through which the duct from a poison gland discharges the venom.

It is probable that the poison of different kinds of scorpions differ qualitatively and quantitatively, but on this subject little is known. Certainly the sting of the small European scorpion (*Euscorpius europæus*) has but slight action, causing only local pain, redness, and swelling, while the larger one of South Europe (*Buthus occitanus*) causes severe pain and phlegmonous swelling of the whole extremity, and such remote symptoms as vomiting, faintness, tremors, and cramps in muscles, while the larger tropical species kill not merely children, but even adults. According to Cararoz, as many as 200 persons die annually from scorpion-sting in the neighbourhood of Durango in Mexico. In Africa scorpion-stings are of frequent occurrence, but death is rare.

Historical.—Maupertius in 1731 and Redi in 1779 appear to have been the first to study the effects of scorpion-venom by experiments,

though the ancients were well acquainted with the sting and its effects, and had woven wonderful legends as to the origin of these animals. Redi experimented upon a pigeon and a dog, but the real study of the venom began with Guyon 1864, Paul Bert 1865, Delange 1866, and Valentin in 1876, and was followed up by Joyeux-Laffine in 1883 and many others. A full literature is given in Faust's 'Die Tierischen Gifte.'

Geographical.—Scorpions occur all over the world, but the largest and most dreaded are found in the tropics. They live under stones, under the bark of trees, in sand, and also in houses, which they leave at dusk. Some of the best known are:—

1. *Euscorpius europæus* (3 to 3·5 centimetres long): Italy, Tyrol, South France.

2. *Buthus occitanus* Amour (8·5 centimetres long): Italy, Greece, Spain, North Africa.

3. *Buthus afer* Leach (16 centimetres long): Africa, Asia.

4. *Buthus quinquestriatus* Hemprich. and Ehrenberg: Upper Egypt and the Sudan.

5. *Buthus maurus*: Egypt, Tunis.

6. *Prionurus citrinus*: Desert near Cairo and Alexandria.

7. *Prionurus amoureuni* Savigny: Sudan.

8. *Androctonus funestus* Ehrenberg (9 centimetres long): North and Middle Africa.

9. *Heterometrus maurus*: Tunis.

Anatomical.—The body of the scorpion is divided into a cephalo-thorax or prosoma, behind which comes an abdomen subdivisible into a broader portion, or mesosoma, and a narrower, metasoma, with five segments, which is popularly called the tail. At the end of this metasoma there is a postanal curved spine, called the telson, inside which lies the paired poison gland. The appendages of the scorpion are: 1. Small three-jointed chelicerae, which are used for holding prey. 2. Large six-jointed pedipalpi, which are used for seizing prey. 3-6. Four pairs of seven-jointed walking legs.

Scorpions seize their prey with the pedipalpi, hold them close to the mouth by means of the chelicerae, and sting them, if necessary, by bringing the metasoma forwards over the mesosoma and cephalo-thorax, and inserting the tip of the telson well into the animal's



FIG. 26.—PALAMÆUS INDUS.
(A scorpion commonly found in Ceylon.)

body, and allowing it to remain there until the poison has had time to act. The telson consists of two portions—a broad swollen part (the ampulla) and a narrow portion (the spine), near the extremity of which are two small openings for the escape of the venom. The two poison glands lie inside the ampulla, one on each side of the middle line. Each gland is covered with a sheet of muscle on its mesial and dorsal aspects. This muscle, which is called by Wilson 'the compressor,' is inserted by its edge mesially along the ventral inner surface of the wall of the telson, and by a broader insertion laterally. The compressor muscle squeezes the poison out of the gland, along the duct, and through the opening in the spine into the victim. The epithelium of the gland shows three distinct types of cells—the mucous cell, the fine oxyphile granular cell, and the cell with very large granules.

The Venom.—Scorpion-venom is a clear, faintly acid fluid of a somewhat thick or oily consistence, and possessed of an extremely faint yellowish colour. It contains no structural elements, but crystals form in it if evaporation takes place. On an average it contains about 28 per cent. of solids.

Wilson gives the following figures for the venom of *Buthus questriatus* :—

Specific gravity	..	..	..	..	1092
Solids	..	..	..	..	20·3 per cent.
Ash	..	..	..	..	8·4 „

Proteids form part of the solids, and it is believed that the active principle is either a nucleo-proteid, acid albumin, or a primary protease. The effects described by various authors would, however, indicate the presence of toxins, one resembling the neurotoxin of snake-venom, and another a hæmolysin, for Kyes has described a typical lecithide producing hæmolysis like the lecithides of cobra-venom. Calmette has also shown that the venom of *Buthus occitanus* is neutralized by cobra antivenene. There would, therefore, appear to be some resemblance between scorpion-venom (or, at all events, the venom of *Buthus occitanus*) and cobra-venom. It is, however, impossible to make any definite statements, as the condition of our knowledge with regard to this poison is most unsatisfactory.

Joyeux-Laffine thought that the venom first increased reflex action, and then caused paralysis of the nervous system, and that death was due to a curari-like poisoning of the end-plates of the respiratory muscles; but Valentin found these were quite intact, and that the muscles contracted well when their nerves were stimulated by electrical or mechanical stimuli.

As regards the action on the blood, coagulation, hæmorrhage due to change in the capillary walls, and hæmolysis have been observed, as well as agglutination of the red corpuscles, which are said to form viscous masses, and thus to block the bloodvessels by embolism.

These observations were made by Jousset de Bellesme on *Lilla*

viridis, a frog remarkable for its lack of pigment, and therefore specially suitable for such a purpose. If confirmed, they would show the presence of fibrin ferment, hæmorrhagins, hæmolysins, and agglutinins in scorpion-venom, and would make it resemble very closely snake-venoms. Sanarelli, however, was not able to observe any change in the red cells beyond hæmolysis, which he saw in the blood of fishes, amphibia, and birds.

In conclusion, we may therefore assume the presence of a neurotoxin acting on the central nervous system, and the presence of hæmolysins, until further experiments give us more exact information.

Minimum Lethal Dose.—The minimum lethal doses for dry *Buthus afer* venom is, according to Calmette, 0.05 milligramme for white mice, and 0.5 milligramme for rabbits.

That the venom must be very toxic for small animals is shown by the fact that the minimum lethal dose for a guinea-pig is 0.1 milligramme per kilogramme, which gives a toxic value of 10,000,000 for *Buthus quinquestriatus*; but, as may be imagined, the toxicity of different venoms varies considerably, and the difference may be not merely quantitative, but qualitative.

Effects of the Venom.—It must be remembered that the venom is not merely a means of defence for the scorpion, but it is also the method by which it kills its prey, which usually consists of small animals; and, further, that, in order to be toxic, the venom must be injected subcutaneously or intravenously, for by the mouth it is harmless.

When experiments are performed on animals, the following symptoms appear:—

1. Local irritation and pain.
2. Muscular twitchings, chiefly of the head and neck.
3. Jumping movements.
4. Lachrymation.
5. Increased orbital, nasal, and salivary secretions.
6. Muscular spasms, especially of the hind-limbs, but also in all muscles.
7. Erection of the hairs.
8. Passage of liquid fæces (often absent).
9. Erection of penis and emission of semen.

The venom of *Heterometrus maurus* causes death in small birds within two minutes to half an hour from failure of the respiration. If the venom of a scorpion is placed on the conjunctiva of a rabbit, violent ophthalmia results.

In man, the symptoms depend upon the size and nature of the scorpion. Thus, the sting of the small ($3\frac{1}{2}$ centimetres) *Euscorpheus europæus* causes only pain, redness, and local swelling, whereas the larger tropical scorpions cause very intense pain of a burning character radiating from the skin, associated often with violent convulsions, mental disturbance, and hallucinations, profuse perspiration, and secretion of saliva, and perhaps vomiting. The pulse is

weak and quick, and the respirations hurried and shallow. These symptoms gradually diminish in three to eight hours, and by about nineteen to twenty-four hours the person is usually normal. This, however, is not always so, for death may ensue due to collapse or stoppage of the respiration, effects which are more likely to happen in small children than in adults. Thus, Wilson states that the mortality in children under five is 60 per cent. for *Buthus quinquestriatus*, but the mortality diminishes as the age increases. Of course this is simply due to the greater dilution of the poison in the body of the adult.

In addition to the above symptoms, some authors have described trismus, but it is probably due to infection with the bacillus of tetanus. The erection of the penis noted in experiments on animals has been seen in man by Delange and Guyon in Algeria. A paralysis of the lingual and hypoglossal nerves has been noted by Posada-Arango. Lymphangitis and adenitis are described as part of the local effect of the sting.

The above symptoms would indicate the action of a neurotoxin acting upon the nervous system, and causing first of all increased reflex action and convulsions, and later paralysis of the medullary nuclei; for if Valentin's observations are correct, there are no paralyzes of the motor nerve-endings.

Effect on the Scorpion.—At the present time it is not believed that a scorpion commits suicide when in difficulties by stinging itself in the head with its own sting, because, though not absolutely immune to its own venom, it possesses a high degree of immunity against it. Accidental but not intentional wounding of an individual by its own sting is said to be known.

Immunity.—A natural immunity exists in the jerboa (*Jaculus jacilis*) and in the desert rat (*Gerbilis pyramidis*), and a partial immunity in the zerilla (*Ictonix libyca*).

According to Balfour, fakirs at times possess an acquired immunity, but this has not so far been obtained in any animal. Calmette has reported that the serum of a horse immunized against cobra-venom can neutralize the venom of *Buthus occitanus*—a fact which Metchnikoff has confirmed; but Nicolle and Catouillard have found this serum useless against the venom of the Tunis scorpion (*Heterometrus maurus*).

Diagnosis.—The history of the case and the single puncture on the affected part makes the diagnosis generally easy.

Prognosis.—If an adult is stung, the prognosis is good, as death is known to be rare, but not so in children. The prognosis, therefore, varies with the age, and can be judged by the following table from Bray, quoted by Wilson, which gives the deaths at Omdurman in 1902 as follows:—

Under one year	..	..	..	..	..	5
One to five years	..	..	..	..	..	9
Five to fifteen years	..	..	..	..	..	7
						—
Total	..	..	..	..	..	21

Deaths of adults, however, are known, but generally take place in a few days, not quickly.

Treatment.—The most reasonable treatment is to apply a proximal ligature, and to excise and treat the wound with permanganate of potash, as described under the heading of Snake-Bite.

Washing and bathing with a weak solution of ammonia may also be tried, and stimulants should be given.

Colonel Duke recommends that 5 to 10 minims of a 5 per cent. solution of cocaine be injected subcutaneously close to the sting in an adult, and 1 to 5 minims in infants and children. Eucaïne or stovaine might be preferable, and can be imported from any chemist in sterile capsules ready for hypodermic injection. Simpson recommends the local application of a paste of ipecacuanha.

Although the experiments of Calmette with the venom of *Buthus occitanus* would indicate the trial of his antivenene in bad cases, still, the experiments of Nicolle and Catouillard indicate that the result may not be satisfactory. Recently a serum has been prepared by Todd for the Board of Health Department of Egypt from horse's blood, and has been found useful.

2. Aranea.

The Aranea, or spiders, are found all over the world, but by far the largest are in the tropics, and their peculiarly repulsive appearance has given rise to numerous fables, both ancient and modern, with regard to their poisonous properties.

Historical.—The study of spider-stings may be said to be modern, and to begin with Blackwell in 1855, but it was Kobert in 1893 who gave the fundamental data concerning these poisons. He maintains that, in addition to the secretion of the poison gland, there is a toxalbumin which permeates every portion of the body of the animal, and in some species of animals is mixed with the venom. He considers that the secretion of the poison gland only gives rise to local symptoms, and that the general symptoms are due to this toxalbumin, and that it is because of this admixture in *Latrodectus* that the bite may cause severe symptoms and even death in human beings. The common European garden spider (*Epeira diadema*) only causes local irritation, because the toxalbumin, though present in the body, is not mixed with the poison of the poison gland. He also describes a hæmolytic action in both *Epeira* and *Latrodectus*.

Sachs has contributed a paper in which he carefully studies this hæmolysin, which he calls arachnolysin, and Wilson has recently written an excellent monograph on the spider-bites.

Geographical.—All genera of spiders appear to be poisonous, but the most important are: *Latrodectus mactans*, Chili; *L. scelio*, the katipo of New Zealand; *Theraphosa avicularia* L., South America; *T. blondi* Latr.; *T. javanesis* Walck.; *Chiracanthum nutrix* Walck.; *Theridium tredecim guttatum* F., France and Italy; *T. lugubre* Koch, Kara kist of Russia; *Segestria perfida* St.;

Chætopelina olivacea ; *Lycosa tarantula* L. ; *L. singoriensis* Laxman ; *Epeira diadema* Walck.

Anatomical.—The body of the spider is sharply divided into cephalothorax and abdomen. The pairs of appendages are six in number :—(1) The two-jointed chelicerae ; (2) The six-jointed leg-like pedipalpi ; (3-6) The seven-jointed legs. The poison gland usually lies in the basal joint of the chelicera, ensheathed in connective tissue, inside which there are two spirally arranged layers of non-striped muscle surrounding a basement membrane which bears two to three layers of polyhedral cells, surrounding the lumen of the acinus. From the gland the duct runs forwards into the distal hook-shaped joint, upon the apex of which it opens.

The Venom.—The venom, which is useful to the spider, enabling it to kill the small animals upon which it lives, is an oily, translucent, lemon-yellow-coloured liquid, with an acid reaction and a hot, bitter taste. It has proteid reactions, and gives the xantho-proteid reaction. It is difficult to obtain it in any quantity. Wilson recommends triturating the gland with distilled water (0·5 c.c. being used for each gland), and then filtering, when an extract suitable for experimental purposes is obtained. These extracts are rendered harmless by heating to 90° C., and the active principles are said not to dialyze. The chemical peculiarities and the active principles of the venom are little known. Kobert, as has already been pointed out, considers that there are two poisons :—(1) A toxin secreted by the poison gland, and only causing local symptoms ; (2) A toxalbumin distributed through the body (not originating from the poison gland), and causing general symptoms. The first exists alone in *Lycosa tarantula*, *L. singoriensis*. The second largely predominates in *Latrodectus*.

Kobert and Sachs have found and studied a hæmolysin, arachnolysin, in the venom of several kinds of spiders, and Sachs has been able to immunize a guinea-pig against this toxin and produce an active serum. Arachnolysin acts upon the red cells of man, rabbit, ox, mouse, and goose, but not on those of the horse, dog, sheep, and guinea-pig.

Spider venom is also said to increase the coagulability of the blood. The venom of *Theridium lugubre* is believed to act injuriously on the isolated frog's heart, even when diluted to 1 in 100,000, but it is not known whether this is due to action directly upon the heart-muscle or upon the local nervous apparatus. The walls of the capillaries are also said to be damaged by spider-venom, and to allow an increased amount of transudation, and hence the hæmorrhages and œdema seen about the wound. It is asserted that the venom acts deleteriously upon the mucous membrane of the stomach and intestines, causing redness and swelling, and even hæmorrhages, which perhaps are due to some attempt at excretion of the poison by these organs. It is also thought that the venom acts upon the central nervous system, but whether the cramps and convulsions are really due to action of the

poison upon the nerve cells, or merely to the altered blood conditions, has not been decided.

The reader is particularly asked to compare these actions on the nervous system (neurotoxin?), on the mucosa of the stomach, on the capillary wall, on the blood and red cells, with the venoms of the scorpion and of the snakes, which they strongly resemble.

Acquired immunity can be produced in animals by injections of non-lethal quantities of venom.

Minimum Lethal Dose.—The minimum lethal dose for cats is 0·20 to 0·35 milligramme of the dry venom per kilogramme of the body-weight. Dogs are less sensitive, and hedgehogs still less, while frogs require fifty times the quantity of poison which will affect warm-blooded animals.

Effects of the Venom.—In general, the symptoms of spider-bite rather resemble those of the scorpion, and are divisible into (1) local, (2) general. Local inflammation is generally present, but may be absent, and severe pain is felt at the site of the wound. The general symptoms are those of collapse coming on gradually, with sometimes convulsions, or rarely a typhoidal condition ensues, which may remain for weeks. Many other symptoms may also be noted, such as nausea, rigors, cold sweats, dyspnœa, fever, delirium, paralysis, and coma terminating in death. Inflammation of the stomach and intestines, coagulation of the blood, and local hæmorrhages and œdema, are the principal features of a post-mortem examination. The symptoms of the bites of the different spiders will now be briefly described.

*Bite of *Latrodectus mactans*.*—The symptoms of this bite are local pain, which does not appear till some little time after the bite, but becomes agonizing, and may last for a couple of days. In addition, tetanoid symptoms may set in, but usually end in recovery in about ten days.

*Bite of *Latrodectus scelio*.*—This is the katipo spider of New Zealand. The symptoms begin in about thirty minutes with the formation of a white vesicle surrounded by a red halo, and severe pain at the site of the bite. The general symptoms include, first, stiffness of the muscles about the mouth and jaw, so that it is difficult to open the mouth or to speak, and impossible to swallow. The pulse becomes very slow (12 to 14 to the minute), and there is extreme pallor of the face and body, with coldness of the extremities, which are quite flaccid. Respiration becomes slower and slower, and death may take place at this stage, or an illness lasting about six weeks, and somewhat resembling typhoid, may ensue, which may end either in death or recovery.

*Bite of *Theridium lugubre*.*—This bite is characterized by smarting pains, no redness or swelling, cold sweats, restlessness, dizziness, mental anxiety, depression, vomiting, cyanosis, convulsions, status typhosus, and, unless improvement sets in, death in three days.

*Bite of *Theraphosa avicularia*.*—The Theraphosæ come under the commoner heading of Mygale, and cause prolonged inflammation and extensive cicatrization. *Theraphosa javanensis* is reported to kill men.

Bite of Chætopelina olivacea.—The local symptoms are great pain, redness, swelling, but whether a general effect (curari-like poisoning of the voluntary muscles and death from stoppage of respiration) takes place is very doubtful.

Bite of Lycosa tarantula.—The bite of this spider produces wheals surrounded by a red areola, but no general symptoms result, and tarantismus only exists in popular imagination. The tarantula dance was probably introduced as a cure, with the purpose of keeping the patient on the move, so that he should perspire, and thus get rid of the poison. The tradition of the Middle Ages was that the bite caused the dance frenzy, *Chorea saltatoria*, or tarantismus, which was supposed to lead to such violent exertion that death resulted unless the victim was soothed by music.

The Bite of Epeira diadema.—The bite of the common garden spider has been recently proved by Kobert and Sachs to be poisonous.

The Bite of a Bengal Spider.—Fink has recently described a herpetic eruption on the face of Bengalee children due to a spider-bite; for this he recommends fumigating the face with the smoke evolved when lumps of mustard-oil cake, burned in a charcoal fire, are dropped into a basin of cold water.

Diagnosis.—Bee-stings, scorpion-bites, and ordinary skin bacterial infections must, of course, be distinguished from spider-bites, with which, without doubt, they have been often confounded. The local symptoms and the history ought to be some guide.

Prognosis.—This is generally good.

Treatment.—Prevent absorption by the proximal ligature, open the wound by an incision, and apply alkaline solutions—*e.g.*, weak solutions of ammonia or carbonate of potash. It appears to us that a strong permanganate of potash solution ought to be given a trial.

3. Acarina.

The Ixodoidea, or ticks, are well known to cause severe symptoms by their bites, apart from the introduction of any parasite such as a *Babesia* or *Spirochæta*.

The anatomy of these arthropods is given in detail in Chapter XXII., to which reference should be made, but a few remarks are necessary concerning the act of biting, which has been recently studied by Nuttall.

The tick pierces the skin by means of the teeth on the digits of its chelicerae. The digit is capable of being extended by an internal muscle, and turned outward by an external muscle. These movements, occurring alternately, cause the teeth to cut the skin, and as the chelicerae work deeper and deeper, the hypostome is dragged into the wound, and by its recurved teeth keeps the tick in position. The palps but rarely enter the wound. During this act of biting it is believed that the salivary glands pour a considerable amount of secretion into the victim, but the nature of this fluid and its action requires further investigation. Nuttall, drawing attention to the immunity following bites, says that it is probable that this secretion is toxic in its action.

The Effects of the Venom.—With regard to the Argasidæ, *Argas persicus* Oken has an evil reputation in Persia, where its bite is said to cause severe pain, fever, lassitude, delirium, convulsions, and even at times death in new-comers, while natives are immune.

Bordier considers that these symptoms are due to the injection of a poison, but this would hardly appear to be likely, as Lounsbury found in his own case in South Africa that the bite caused only slight itching. If the symptoms are properly described in Persia, it would indicate that the tick introduced some parasite into the new-comer which caused a definite disease to which the native had acquired an immunity.

Argas reflexus Fabr. may cause local pain and swelling, with sometimes an erythematous eruption, while the site of the bite is marked for years by a cicatrix. The bite of *A. brumpti* Neu is also severe.

Ornithodoros moubata Murray inflicts a very painful bite, with much swelling and the formation of raised hard wheals, in Europeans, which may last several days.

Ornithodoros turicata Dugès may cause swelling and numbness all over the body, with vomiting and diarrhœa, accompanied by an urticarial eruption and profuse perspiration, with rigors, fever, headache, and backache if the poisons enter a vein. Locally, an ulcer may form at the site of the bite. *O. talaje* Guérin Méneville causes severe itching and pain.

With regard to the Ixodidæ, *Ixodes ricinus* causes severe dermatitis, which may be followed by pustules and abscesses, with œdema, lymphangitis, and lymphadenitis, associated with fever.

Treatment.—The treatment of tick-bites is first to detach the tick, which is by no means easy, as the recurved teeth of the hypostome hold on to the wound very firmly. The best plan is to rub any oil into the ventral

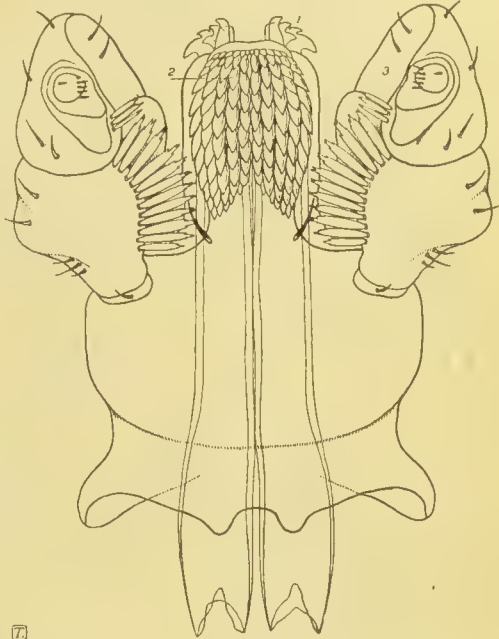


FIG. 27.—VENTRAL ASPECT OF THE MOUTH-PARTS OF A TICK (*HÆMAPHYSALIS PUNCTATA* CANESTRINI AND FANZAGO).

(After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, *Journal of Parasitology*.)

1, Chelicerae, showing teeth; 2, hypostome, showing rows of recurved teeth; 3, palp.



FIG. 28.—CHLICERA FROM THE SAME TICK.

(After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, *Journal of Parasitology*.)

1, Internal digit; 2, external digit.

surface of the tick, thus interfering with its respiration, and compelling it to detach itself from the host. With regard to *O. turicata*, it is advised to apply the actual cautery, as the effects of the bite are so severe. According to Wellman, *Ornithodoros* bites should be treated by bathing in very hot water, after which bicarbonate of soda should be applied in strong solution. Itching may be allayed by a menthol ointment (1 to 2 per cent.).

As regards prophylaxis, badly infected native huts should be burnt, while ordinary houses may be fumigated with sulphur or carbon bisulphide, or sprayed with kerosene or boiling water. Beds must always be raised from the ground, and the feet of the bedstead placed in water containing kerosene, while pyrethrum powder may be dusted between the coverings of the bed. Wellman insists that natives should not be allowed to sleep in or near the quarters of Europeans.

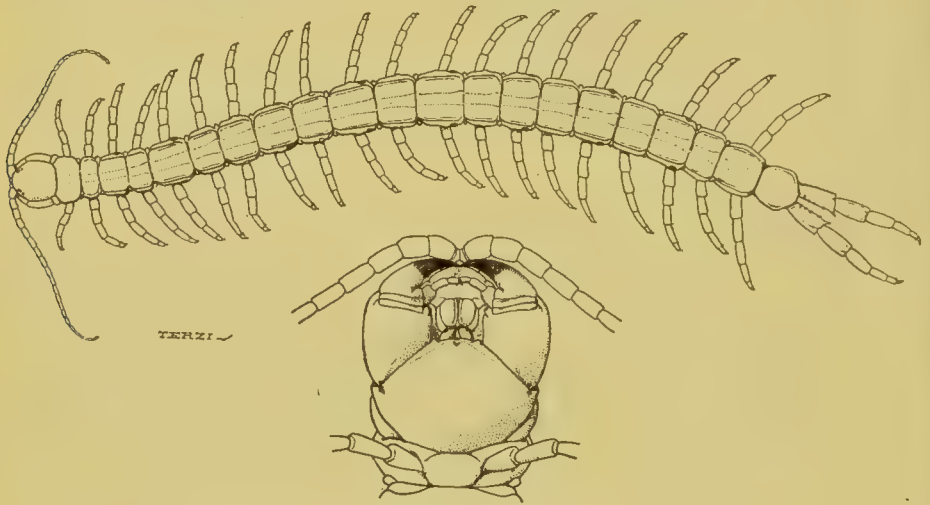


FIG. 29.—SCOLOPENDRA MORSITANS.

2. CHILOPODA.

The class Chilopoda includes the Scolopendridæ, or centipedes, which are animals with a head and a uniformly segmented trunk, possessing numerous legs. They are very common all over the world, but the tropical species are much larger than those which inhabit the Temperate Zone. They live under stones in shady places, especially in woods. The poison apparatus of the centipedes is formed by the appendages of the first trunk segment being modified so as to form a large pair of jaws, at the base of which the poison gland lies. The duct of this gland opens on the apex of the claw, and therefore, as there are two jaws, a centipede-bite will show two minute punctures or drops of blood.

The venom is primarily intended to kill their prey, which consists of small insects and larvæ.

Geographical.—The most noted species are *Scolopendra cingulata*, France, Spain, Italy; *S. gigantea*, *S. morsitans*, *S. heros*, Africa, India, Indo-China, Equatorial America; *Geophilus longicornis* Leach, Mid-Europe.

The Venom.—The venom is an acid opalescent liquid, but little miscible with water. For experimental purposes it can be obtained by treating the lower lip and the hooks with normal saline solution.

When injected into the veins of rabbits, it causes an immediate paralysis, with coagulation of the blood, while under the skin it forms a large abscess.

Effects of the Venom.—The poison causes local and general symptoms. At first there is itching, but this is quickly followed by intense pain, which extends all over the limb. A red spot appears at the site of the bite, which enlarges and becomes black in the centre, and sometimes there are lymphangitis and lymphadenitis. The general symptoms are great mental anxiety, vomiting, irregular pulse, dizziness, and headache.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis is obtained by the history and the presence of the two minute punctures.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is good, though small children have been known to die from the effects of a sting. Adults, as a rule, recover in about twenty-four hours at the most.

Treatment.—Bathe the part well with a solution of ammonia (1 in 5 or 1 in 10). After bathing, apply a dressing of the same alkali, or if there is much swelling and redness, an ice-bag.

If necessary, give hypodermic injections of morphia to relieve the pain. At a later period, fomentations may be required to reduce the local inflammation.

3. HEXAPODA.

The Hexapoda, or insects, contain many species injurious to man.

The orders to which the principal venomous species belong are: (1) Siphunculata; (2) Hemiptera; (3) Hymenoptera; (4) Lepidoptera; (5) Diptera; and (6) Coleoptera.

1. Siphunculata.

This order includes the lice, which cause much irritation by their bites. The nature of the venom, however, is not known, and the lice are of more importance as carriers of disease, and will therefore be dealt with more fully in Chapter XXIII.

2. Hemiptera.

The Hemiptera include the families of the Clinocoridæ, or bugs, and the Reduviidæ, or cone noses. In the latter family is classified *Phonergates bicoloripes* Stål, which, according to Wellman, produces a very painful bite in man in Angola. Another member of this family, as yet not named, has been described by King in the Sudan, where it bites human beings on the hands and wrists, producing small red lumps, which, however, soon disappear. It is said to be closely related to *Phonergates bicoloripes*.

It is, however, more convenient to discuss these venomous insects along with other parasites in Chapter XXIII., as it enables a more systematic description to be given, especially as the nature of the venom is quite unknown.

3. Hymenoptera.

In this order come the bees, wasps, and ants.

APIDÆ.

The members of this family which sting are well known, and it is by no means infrequent to hear of animals and even at times human beings in the tropics suffering severely from bee-stings, and more rarely dying from the effects.

The species generally credited with evil effects are: *Apis mellifica* L., the hive-bee; *Vespa vulgaris* L., the wasp; *V. germania* Fabr.; *V. crabo* L., the hornet; *V. orientalis*, the hornet; *Bombus hortorum* L., the bumble-bee; *B. lapidarius*, and *Xilocopa violacea*, the wood-bee.

Historical.—The venom of the bee was first studied by Brandt and Ratzeburg in 1833, then by Paul Bert in 1865 and Carlet in 1884, but the chemical nature was first investigated carefully by Josef Langer in 1897.

Anatomical.—The body of the bee is divided into head, thorax, and abdomen, from the posterior end of the last of which projects the sting in the form of a chitinous sheath, narrow posteriorly and wider anteriorly. This sheath contains two barbed darts, and into its wider portion (which possesses a cleft by which air can penetrate into it) two or three ducts from glands open. The principal opening belongs to the duct of the 'acid gland,' and opens anteriorly into a sac—the poison reservoir—which leads into a long, slender, coiled tubular gland, either bifid anteriorly or subdivided into two glands. This long gland ramifies amongst the contents of the abdomen. The second opening, which lies alongside the first, belongs to a small, irregular, tubular gland called the alkaline gland, or gland of Dufour. The third opening, when present, leads into a lanceolate or ovoid accessory poisonous gland.

The Venom.—The venom freshly extruded from the bee's body weighs from 0.2 to 0.3 milligramme, and is a transparent acid fluid with a bitter taste, a peculiar aromatic smell, and a specific gravity of 1.1313. It contains about 30 per cent. of solid matter when dried at the room temperature.

The acid reaction is believed to be due to formic acid, and the smell to volatile substances, but neither of these have any connection with the poisonous properties of the venom.

The preparation of venom in quantity was carried out by Langer as follows: Several thousand fresh stings with their venom-sacs were placed in 96 per cent. alcohol, which was in due course

filtered off, when the stings were dried at 40° C., then pulverized and extracted with water. The resulting extract, which, when filtered, was a clear yellowish-brown fluid, was then precipitated by 96 per cent. alcohol. The precipitate, after washing with alcohol and ether, was dissolved either in ordinary water or in the same acidulated slightly with acetic acid. From this solution Langer obtained an albumin-free active body after repeatedly precipitating with a few drops of concentrated ammonia and again dissolving as above. The active principle is, therefore, not albuminous, and is thought to be an organic base, the nature of which, however, is not known. This poison is destroyed or its activity lessened by oxidizing agents, such as potassium permanganate, and also by ferments, such as pepsin and rennin.

Subcutaneously injected, the venom produces great local irritation, but heating to 100° C. for fifteen minutes destroys this effect.

Intravenous injections into dogs produce convulsions, trismus, nystagmus, emprosthotonos, and death from respiratory failure. This action is believed by some authors to be due to a neurotoxin, but the blood after death is very fluid, and the red corpuscles are destroyed, indicating a marked hæmolysis, while all the organs except the spleen show hæmorrhages and hyperæmia; so that the effects may not be due so much to the action on the nervous system as to that on the blood. The convulsive effects can be destroyed by heating to 100° C. for thirty minutes, when the poison becomes merely narcotic. All effects are annulled by heating to 150° C. for fifteen minutes.

The venom, therefore, contains:—

1. Inflammatory poisons, which are thought to come from the acid gland.

2. Neurotoxins:—

(1) Convulsive, thought to be derived from the alkaline gland.

(2) Narcotic, secreted by the acid gland.

3. Hæmolysins.

With regard to the last, Morgenroth and Carpi have shown that a lecithide is formed which is 200 to 500 times more hæmolytic than the venom alone. There is, therefore, a similarity between this poison and cobra-venom.

The only marked features recorded in human post-mortems are hyperæmia of the meninges and bloody exudation into the ventricles of the brain.

Immunity.—There appears to be no doubt that bee-keepers often attain a considerable amount of immunity against the venom.

Thus, Langer says: Out of 164 bee-keepers, 11 were immune from the first; while of the 153 at first sensitive, 126 became more or less immune, and 27 did not. Of the 126 more or less immune

persons, 14 said that they were not affected even when several stings were inflicted quickly one after the other.

Bee immunity, however, is only passing, and does not last, and the keepers say that the first sting in the early part of the year may produce a strong effect.

Calmette has immunized a mouse, so that it could resist doses of the venom which would surely have been mortal otherwise.

The Effects of the Venom.—Usually the symptoms are merely local, and limited to pain in the part, redness, and swelling of the skin, and disappear in a few hours. Suppuration is rare, and blood-poisoning very rare, only taking place occasionally if the sting is on the eyes, ears, lips, or in feeble old people.

Slight fever may result in sensitive people, and sometimes general constitutional symptoms, such as nausea, faintness, great weakness, vomiting, precordial distress, difficulty in breathing, coldness of the extremities, with an eruption on the skin like measles, or with wheals. These symptoms may pass on to delirium, unconsciousness, and more rarely death.

Vespa orientalis causes semi-unconsciousness, the face becoming pale and cyanosed, the skin of the extremities cold with a clammy sweat; respiration becomes shallow and sighing; the pulse quick (130 to 140), irregular, and barely perceptible. On recovery from this state of shock, the patient complains of a sensation of tightness in the throat, and œdema may develop in the neck and face, as well as slight fever (100° to 102° F.), all symptoms disappearing in twenty-four hours.

The ordinary bee may at times cause severe symptoms, of which the following is an example: a lady was stung in the forehead, and in four minutes swelling of the eyelids and lips began, which rapidly spread to the arms, and was associated with acute abdominal pain. The hands became rigid in the position of *main en griffe*, and pain and stiffness was felt in the throat, together with difficulty in speaking. There was also vomiting and a sense of chilliness, followed by exhaustion. Recovery was rapid.

Diagnosis.—There is usually no difficulty in this, the history being clear.

Prognosis.—Usually the prognosis is very good; the only dangers are in children and old feeble persons, and in multiple stings.

Treatment.—The usual treatment is by applications of weak solutions of ammonia, which answers well. Carbolic acid (1 in 20 or 1 in 10) is satisfactory if applied immediately after the sting. Potassium permanganate may be tried.

Calmette advises a solution of calcium hypochlorate (1 in 60) or eau de Javel (1 in 100). When there is much swelling, apply iced compresses or an ice-bag. When general symptoms develop, strychnine injections may be used.

FORMICIDÆ.

Ants may appear rather insignificant in the Temperate Zone, but in the tropics they are most active, and their bites are very painful.

Many ants—*e.g.*, *Myrmica* and *Ponera*—have a poison apparatus analogous to that of the bees, which has just been described.

The Venom.—The venom is well known to contain formic acid, but there must be more than this in the venoms of the tropical species, though nothing is known on the subject.

The Effects of the Venom.—The symptoms are usually only local—that is to say, pain, inflammation, and swelling at the site of the bite—but in the case of the large tropical ants general symptoms of faintness, shivering, and temporary paralysis may be produced. Indeed, dried red ants made into a paste have already been noted as an arrow-poison.

In Ceylon there is a species of very small ants which infest the beds and bite people while asleep, producing urticarial pomphi.

Treatment.—Apply weak solutions of ammonia, carbolic solution (1 in 20), or camphorated alcohol, to the part. As a preventive measure against the ants infesting beds, spread some powdered camphor in the beds and sheets.

4. Lepidoptera.

Caterpillars of many butterflies are well known to be venomous in the tropics, causing marked skin eruptions, and even a feeling of illness associated with a slight rise of temperature.

Wellman reports that in Angola the most common stinging caterpillar is that of the tiger-moth (Archidæ), called locally 'ochipia'—that which burns—which produces an angry eruption associated with much pain. Another belonging to the Limacodidæ, called 'Epuvi,' he describes as causing urticaria. A third, belonging to the Liparidæ, also causes severe local, and at times reflex nervous symptoms. We are acquainted with stinging caterpillars in Ceylon and the Gold Coast, but we have not determined the species. In the former, a bombyx larva living on the *Hibiscus* plant is apt to cause skin irritation. In India, the 'komlah' of the Terai is liable to cause intense irritation if it touches the skin. According to Brooke, the larvæ of *Nœra lepida* and *Adolia* are known to be venomous. Recently Bleyer has described caterpillars belonging to the Bombycidæ of Brazil which possess peculiar stinging organs, the venom from which produces locally urticaria and dermatitis, as well as general symptoms, which are best treated by the local application of a 2 per cent. solution of menthol in æther, chloroform, and rectified spirits, and by the administration of a mixture containing liquor ammoniæ acetatis.

Porthesia Chrysorrhæa.—The caterpillar of this brown moth is reported from America (Massachusetts and New Hampshire) as

causing a peculiar skin eruption, which Tyzzer says is caused by the penetration into the epidermis of peculiarly modified microscopic hairs called the nettling hairs, which are sharply pointed and barbed. These hairs are specially arranged for penetration, and possess an irritating substance which can be destroyed at 115° C. The other hairs are innocuous. The poison causes necrosis of the cells of the epidermis, together with the formation of small vesicles and inflammation of the corium.

The **Symptoms**, which are generally those of an urticarial dermatitis, but occasionally erysipelatous-like, may be divided into two groups: (1) *severe*, due to contact with the caterpillar; (2) *mild*, due to hairs blown into the air and lodging in skin or undergarments. But it must be remembered that some people are very sensitive and others almost immune.

Treatment.—The best treatment is to clear away the hairs with a little alkaline lotion (bicarbonate of soda 2 per cent.), and then to apply an ointment of ichthylol (10 per cent.).

5. Diptera.

The classification of the Diptera is given in Chapter XXIV., to which reference should be made.

Culicidæ.—The irritation of mosquito-bites is most noticed by the new-comer to the tropics, for as years go by a kind of partial immunity is acquired, and the bites are much less noticed. Some people appear to have a partial natural immunity to the bites, but this is uncommon.

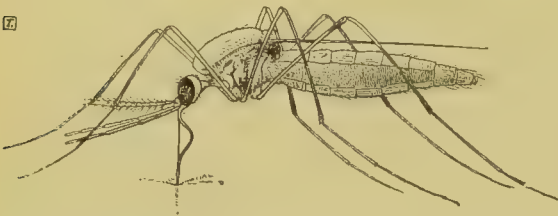


FIG. 30.—AN ANOPHELINE MOSQUITO (*A. MACULIPENNIS* MEIGEN) IN THE ACT OF BITING.

(After Nuttall and Shipley, *Journal of Hygiene*.)

Note that the proboscis does not enter the wound, and that it is bent convex posteriorly. Note the distension of the abdomen as seen by the space between the terga and the sterna. In the natural condition this space would be bright red from the blood in the abdomen.

testing the different parts of the skin by its labellæ.*

Having selected a given area of skin, it moves the palpi away from the proboscis dorsally, and at the same time rotates the labellæ on their hinge-joints outwards.

The labium is now pressed against the skin, and is bent into the form of a bow, convex posteriorly. An opening in the skin is then

* For the anatomy of the proboscis see Chapter XXIV., on the *Culicidæ*.

made, in which the mandibles and maxillæ work like saws, while the head of the mosquito can be seen rocking from side to side. During this process respiration is going on quietly, but at times, according to Schaudinn, a violent contraction of the abdomen is noticed, which is said to be due to the carbonic acid in the superficial layers of the



FIG. 31.—HEAD OF ANOPHELES MACULIPENNIS MEIGEN.

(After Nuttall and Shipley, *Journal of Hygiene*.)

1, Labium; 2, maxillæ; 3, hypopharynx; 4, mandibles; 5, labrum;
6, palpi; 7, antennæ; 8, occiput; 9, eye; 10, clypeus.

skin, for he found that when carbon dioxide gas acted upon mosquitoes a like contraction was produced.

As this process is proceeding, an irritating substance, the chemical nature of which is not known, is injected under the skin, and it is evident that this happens before the mosquito begins to suck blood,



FIG. 32.—ANTERIOR END OF A MANDIBLE.

(After Nuttall and Shipley, *Journal of Hygiene*.)



FIG. 33.—ANTERIOR END OF A MAXILLA.

(After Nuttall and Shipley, *Journal of Hygiene*.)

for the irritation is present when the insect ceases to bite before drawing up the blood.

There has been much dispute as to where this substance comes from, but this appears to have been settled by Schaudinn, who triturated the isolated salivary glands in salt solution, which he applied to a wound with negative result. On the other hand, when

he applied the isolated œsophageal diverticula to a scratch, he obtained the characteristic irritation and redness. These œsophageal diverticula contain gas-bubbles and bacteria or moulds. The bubbles were shown by Schaudinn to contain carbon dioxide by applying baryta-water to the diverticula, when a precipitate was obtained. The fungi need further investigation, but they or their products appear to be the real cause of the irritation, for when Schaudinn pressed the carbon dioxide out of the sac the signs characteristic of the bite were still produced. It appears probable, therefore, that the powerful abdominal contraction mentioned above expels the gas, bacteria, and fungi from the œsophageal diverticula and the saliva from the salivary glands.

It is possible that the chemical products of the fungi, by causing local irritation, bring more blood into the particular area of skin affected, and thus enable the mosquito to get her supply quickly, for feeding only takes two to three minutes, during which time some

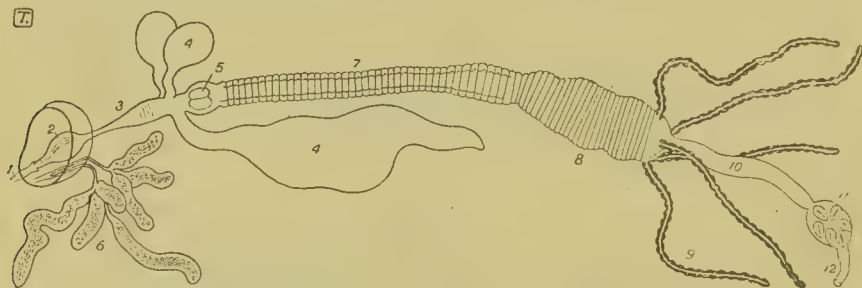


FIG. 34.—THE ALIMENTARY CANAL OF ANOPHELES MACULIPENNIS MEIGEN.

(After Nuttall and Shipley, *Journal of Hygiene*.)

1, Mouth and buccal cavity; 2, pharynx; 3, œsophagus; 4, dorsal and ventral œsophageal diverticula; 5, proventriculus; 6, salivary glands; 7, narrow portion of ventriculus; 8, so-called stomach; 9, malpighian tubules; 10, intestine; 11, rectum; 12, anus.

mosquitoes will so overfill themselves with blood that it may be ejected *per anum*. The use of the carbonic acid is probably to prevent the coagulation of the blood, which is drawn up the large blood-tube formed by the labrum epipharynx and hypopharynx by the suctorial action of the pump-like pharynx.

Symptoms.—Shortly after a mosquito has bitten a person, a sensation of itching is experienced in the affected part, which on examination is seen to be inflamed and reddish, while a wheal not unusually develops, especially in persons new to the tropics. Sometimes a papule or even a nodule may form on the site of the bite, while more rarely scratching leads to secondary infection and the formation of boils, lymphangitis, or lymphadenitis.

Treatment.—The itching may be relieved by dilute solutions of ammonia (Scrubbs's Ammonia is a favourite remedy), or by a 5 per cent. solution of carbolic acid, or 1 per cent. alcoholic lotion of

menthol. Inflamed bites may be cleaned with 1 in 40 carbolic lotion, and afterwards dressed with boracic ointment. Local septic poisoning should be treated by boracic or carbolic fomentations, while boils and abscesses must be opened.

Prophylaxis.—The prevention of mosquito-bites will be discussed in the chapter on Malaria.

Other Diptera.—Numerous flies other than the Culicidæ cause irritation by their bites, such as fleas, but the nature of the venom not being well known, they will be considered together in Chapters XXIV., XXV., and XXVI.

6. Coleoptera.

Beetles and their larvæ are capable of inflicting severe bites or wounds by means of stiff hairs. *Silvanus surinamensis* L., the saw-toothed grain-beetle, is said to bite people. According to Brooke, *Mylabris cichorii* in India, *Lytta villata* in America, *Lytta ruficeps* in Chili, and a species of *Cantharis* in Senegal, are all venomous. Wellman describes the larva of a beetle, which the natives of Angola call 'ochisia,' which means 'to be left alone,' whose bristles will even penetrate the skin of the sole of the foot, causing pain, inflammation, and even sloughing, when trodden upon.

MOLLUSCA.

A venomous snail of unknown genus and species is described in the Solomon Islands. These snails possess radulæ provided with pointed tubular teeth, armed anteriorly with a barb. These teeth are connected with a poison gland, and are capable of injuring men and producing severe wounds.

REFERENCES.

The best general references are :

- CALMETTE (1907). *Les Venins*. Paris.
 FAUST (1906). *Die tierischen Gifte*. Braunschweig.
 WELLS (1907). *Chemical Pathology*, pp. 181, 182.

Protozoa.

- LAVERAN AND MESNIL (1899). *Comp. Rendus Soc. Biol.*, xi. 245-248. Paris.
 ROSENAU, PARKER, FRANCIS, AND BAYER (1904). *Bull.* 14, Yellow Fever Institute. Public Health and Mar. Hospital Serv. Washington.

Cœlenterata.

- FORBES (1848). *Monograph of the British Naked-Eye Medusæ*.
 RICHET (1902, 1903, 1904). *Compt. Rendus de la Soc. de Biologie*.
 SCHMIDT AND W. MARSHALL (1893). *Brehms Tierleben*. 3 Aufl., S. 552 and 553.
 ZÉRVOS (1903). *Semaine Médicale*.

Echinodermata.

- SAVILLE KENT (1893). *The Great Barrier Reef of Australia*, p. 293.

Platyhelminia and Nemathelminthes.

- ACHARD (1887). *Archive Générale de Médecine*.
 BOYCOTT (1905). *Journal of Pathology and Bacteriology*, x. 383.
 MESSINEO UND CALAMIDA (1901). *Centralblatt f. Bakteriologie*, p. 346.
 PICOU ET RAMOND (1899). *Compt. Rendus de la Société de Biologie*.
 SCHAUHANN UND TALLQUIST (1898). *Deutsche Medicin. Wochenschrift*, p. 312.
 WHIPPLE (1909). *Journal of Experimental Medicine*, xi., 2, 331.

Arachnidæ—Scorpionidea.

- BERT, PAUL (1885). *Soc. de Biolog.*, p. 574.
 BOURNE (1885). *Proceedings of the Royal Society*, xlii. 17.
 CALMETTE (1895). *Annales de L'Institut Pasteur*, p. 232
 CAVAROZ (1865). Über den Biss des Scorpio von Durango. *Rec. de Mem. de Med. Milit.*, series xiii., 327.
 DALANGE (1866). *Rec. de Mem. de Med. Milit.*, p. 136.
 GUYON (1867). *Comptes Rendus*, vol. lxiv., p. 1001.
 HEINZEL (1866). Ueber Scorpionstich Wochen. der Gesellschaft der Wiener Aertste.
 JOUSSET (1870). *Comptes Rendus*, lxxi. 407.
 JOYEUX, LAFFINE (1882). *Comptes Rendus des Sciences*.
 KOBERT (1893). *Lehrbuch der Intoxicationen*, 325.
 KRAEPELIN (1899). *Scorpions. Das Tierreich*, viii. Berlin.
 KYES (1903). *Beit. Klin. Woch.*
 POSADA ARANGO (1871). *Archive de Med. Naval.*, xvi. 213.
 POSADA ARANGO (1871). *Gazette des Hôpit.*, No. 121.
 REDI (1731). *Hist. de l'Acad. des Sciences*.
 SANARELLI (1888). *Boll. dell Seydei Cult delli Scienze Med.*, p. 202.
 VALENTA (1876). *Zeit. für Biologie*, xii. 170.
 WERNER (1911). *Scorpions of the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan. Wellcome Tropical Research Laboratories. London.*
 WILSON (1904). *Records of the Egyptian Government School of Medicine*, pp. 7-43. (Full account, with considerable literature.)

Aranea.

- BLACKWELL (1855). *Transactions of the Linnæan Society of London*, p. 31.
 FRANTZUIS, V. A. (1869). Vergiftete Wunden bei Thieren und Menschen durch den Biss der in Costa Rica vorkommenden Minispinne. *Virchow's Archiv f. Path.*, xlvii. 335.
 FINK (1906). *Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene*, ix., December 1.
 GAUBERT (1893). *La Naturaliste*, p. 24.
 HASSATT (1896). *Les Venins des Araignées Tijdsch. Entom.*, xxxix. (and 1882).
 HEINZEL (1866). Ueber Tarantelbiss. *Wochenb. der Gesellschaft der Wiener Aerzte*, 255.
 KOBERT (1901). *Beitrage zur Kenntniss d. Giftspinnen*.
 KOBERT (1906). *Lehrbuch der Intoxicationen* (2 vols.).
 OZANAM (1856). *Étude sur le Venin des Arachnides*. Paris.
 PANCERI AND GASCO (1874). *Institut Égyptien*, July 4.
 SACHS (1902). *Zur Kenntniss des Kreuz Spinnengiftes. Hoffmann Beitrage*, ii. 125.
 UCKE (1870). *Vergiftungen durch Spinnenbisse in der Kirgisensteppe in Sommer 1869. Petersb. hed. Zeitschrift*, 54.
 WEIGENBERGER (1878). *Caso fatal par le Mordedura de Una Arancnea Cordova. South America*.
 WILSON (1901). *Poison of Spiders. Records of the Egyptian Government School of Medicine* pp. 143-150.
 WRIGHT (1870). *The Katipo. Medical Times and Gazette*, November 12, p. 570.

Ixodoidea.

- NUTTALL (1899). Johns Hopkins Reports, viii. 1899.
 NUTTALL (1908). Ticks. London.
 NUTTALL (1908). Journal of the Royal Institute of Public Health, xvi. 385.

Chilopoda.

- BACHELIER (1887). La Scolopendre et sa Piqure. Thèse, Paris.
 SAULIE (1885). Appareil Vénémeux et Venin de la Scolopendre. Thèse, Montpellier.
 SEBASTIANY (1870). Piqure de la Scolopendre mordante. Gaz. des Hôpit. No. 91.
 SRIOT (1904). Soc. de Biologie, November 15.
 WOOD (1866). American Journal of Medical Sciences, (52), 575.

Apidæ.

- DRURY (1871). British Medical Journal, September 23.
 EWENS (1860). Death from Bee-Sting. Medical Times and Gazette.
 FUKH (1861). Vortheil Corresp. Blatten., xxi. 35.
 LANGER (1896). Archiv Exp. Path. u. Pharm., 381.
 MACWALTERS (1908). Indian Medical Gazette, xliii. 236.
 MORGENROTH AND CARPI (1906). Berlin. Klin. Wochen., xliii. 1424.
 NEUBERG AND ROSENBERG (1907). Berlin. Klin. Woch., xlv. 457.
 NIVISON (1857). Fatal Results of a Bee-Sting. New York Journal, May.
 O'DONNELL (1867). New York Medical Record.
 PHISALIX (1890). Comptes Rendus Académie des Sciences. July 23.
 STEFFEN (1866). Infection durch Insectenstich. Deutsches Archiv für Klin. Medicin., ii. 192.
 TERRY (1871). British Medical Journal, September 2.
 THOMPSON (1869). British Medical Journal, p. 374.

Formicidæ.

- FABRE (1898). Annal. des Sciences Natur.
 TYZZER (1907). Journal of Medical Research. Boston.

Culicidæ.

- SCHAUDINN (1904). Arbeiten aus der Kaiserlichen Gesundheitsamte, xx. 417-421.

Lepidoptera and Coleoptera.

- BLEYER (1909). Archiv f. Schiff. u. Tropen Hyg., 73.
 BROOKE (1908). Tropical Medicine, pp. 121, 122.
 WELLMAN (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine, x. 185

Mollusca.

- SCHNEE (1908). Archiv f. Schiff. u. Tropen Hyg., 171.

CHAPTER XII

VENOMOUS ANIMALS (*continued*)—PISCES AND AMPHIBIA

Pisces—Zoological classification—Geographical distribution—Poison by bite—Poison by stings—Amphibia—References.

PISCES.

ALL over the world, but especially in tropical seas, there are fish which for purposes of defence secrete poisonous fluids from special glands. These fish have been but little studied, and still less is known about the nature of their venom and its physiological action. A great deal, however, is known by residents in the tropics about wounds inflicted by these fish, and the doctor practising therein is bound sooner or later to come across not merely persons who know a good deal in a general way about the subject, but those who either are suffering or have suffered from the poisoning. It is therefore necessary that the tropical practitioner should have some knowledge of venomous fish.

The subject might be studied by classifying the fish zoologically, and then taking them seriatim and describing their poison and its effects; but though a zoological list will be given, this does not seem so satisfactory as to follow Bottard in his special classification based on the manner in which the fish inflicts the poison.

Venomous fish may be classified into :—

Class I. Fish which poison by their bite.

Class II. Fish which poison by barbs (spines) connected with special glands.

Class III. Fish which poison by a secretion prepared by the skin glands. This class is illustrated by the lamprey, which is only known to produce poisoning when eaten.

It will be understood from the above classification that venomous fish are to be distinguished from poisonous fish—*i.e.*, from fish which cause symptoms of poisoning when their flesh is eaten—for the flesh of venomous fish can be eaten with impunity. The poisonous fish and their effects have been briefly described in Chapter X. under the heading Poisonous Food.

During the spawning season the quantity and the virulence of

the poison of venomous fish generally increase, and, indeed, some genera—e.g., *Cottus*—are only venomous at that time. Poisonous glands, being protective, occur more commonly in weak and small rather than in large fish, hence they are more frequent in bony than in cartilaginous fish, which latter are usually of large size. Venomous fish are often conspicuous by form or colour.

Historical.—The history of our knowledge of venomous fish has been well written by Faust, who points out that it was Aristotle, the Father of Ichthyology, who first established the fact that fish could produce poisoned wounds, and that after his day information on this subject appears to have been very uncertain, and doubts were cast upon the facts ascertained by him. Modern knowledge began in 1841 by Allman writing a paper on the stinging properties of the lesser weever (*Trachinus vipera*), which, he said with all reservation, was probably due to a poison-gland at the base of the opercular valve. Further researches were made by Byerley in 1849, Günther from 1864 to 1881, Corre 1865-81, Gressin 1884, and Savtschenko, who produced his excellent atlas in 1886. It is, however, Bottard, in his thesis on 'Les Poissons Vénimeux' in 1889, who first gave a clear account of these fish, and he has been followed by Coutière in 1899, Briot in 1902-04, and Evans in 1907. The nature of the poison or poisons, and its or their physiological effects, still require considerable research.

Effects of the Poison.—As far as investigations have gone, it appears as though the venoms of the different fish only varied quantitatively, and not qualitatively. The effects are local and general. The local effects consist in painful sensations, swelling of the part, which may spread over the whole limb, suppuration, and even gangrene. The general symptoms appear to be due in the first instance to the action of the venom on the central nervous system, which shows itself in excitation, and later insensibility and paralysis. An action on cardiac muscle has also been recorded. In man death has been known to occur from wounds of *Synanceia brachio*.

Persons Chiefly Affected.—The persons chiefly affected by the venom are cooks and fishermen, but the latter are well aware of the danger.

Diagnosis.—Diagnosis is to be obtained by the history of the injury.

Prognosis.—This is usually good, but prompt treatment is needed.

Treatment.—The treatment of a poisonous wound due to a fish must be based upon the following principles :

1. Prevent as far as possible the poison entering the general circulation.
2. Neutralize the poison as far as possible locally.
3. Treat the general symptoms.

1. *Prevent the Poison entering the General Circulation.*—The wound will usually be on an arm or a leg, and therefore it will be quite

easy to apply proximally a tight bandage with the same precautions as mentioned under Snake-Bite (see p. 246).

2. *Neutralize the Poison locally.*—This should be done by opening the wound and letting it bleed while washing it with 1 per cent. solution of permanganate of potash, or by rubbing in crystals of the same substance, and then applying fomentations and aseptic dressings.

3. *General Treatment.*—The pain must be relieved by hypodermics of morphia, and nervous symptoms by bromides; syncopal attacks by stimulants and hypodermics of strychnine; failure of respiration by artificial respiration.

Zoological Classification.

The venomous fish may be classified as follows:—

Subclass I. Elasmobranchii.

Order 3. Selachii.

Suborder 3. Raii.

Family Myliobatidæ.

Myliobatis aquila L.

Aëtobatis narinari Euphrasen.

Family Trygonidæ.

Trygon pastinaca Cuvier and other species

Subclass V. Teleostei.

Grade A. Physostomi.

Suborder 2. Cyprini-siluriformes (Ostariophysi).

Family Siluridæ.

Plotosus arab Forsk.

Saccobranchnus fossilis Bloch.

Suborder 4. Anguilliformes (Apodes).

Family Murænidæ.

Muræna helena L.

Grade B. Physoclisti.

Suborder 10. Acanthopterygii.

Division 1. Perciformes.

Family Acanthuridæ.

Acanthurus luridus.

Division 7. Triglififormes (Scleroparei).

Family Triglidæ.

Trigla hirundo L.

Family Scorpænidæ.

Synanceia brachio Cuv. and Val.

„ verrucosa Schnd.

Scorpæna grandicornis Cuv. and Val.

„ diabolus Cuv. and Val.

„ porcus L.

Pterois antennata Bl.

Pelor filamentosum Cuv. and Val.

Family Cottidæ.

Cottus scorpius L.

Division 8. Blenniiformes.

Family Trachinidæ.

- Trachinus draco L.
 „ vipera Cuv. and Val.
 „ radiatus Cuv. and Val.
 „ araneus Riss.

Family Uranoscopidæ.

- Uranoscopus scaber L.

Family Callionymidæ.

- Callionymus lyra L.

Family Batrachidæ.

- Batrachus tau.
 „ grunniens Bloch.
 Thalassophryne reticulata Günth.
 „ maculosa Günth.

Addendum.—*Serranus outabli* (Cuv. and Val.) and *Holocanthus imperator* (Bl.) are looked upon as possibly poisonous, but there is no definite evidence. The Siluridæ are believed to be poisonous, because some of them possess sac-like organs opening into the axillæ of the pectoral fins, on which there are powerful spines.

Geographical Distribution.

The geographical distribution of venomous fish is in temperate and tropical seas:—

Teleostomi.

<i>Plotosus arab</i> ..	..	Indian Ocean.
<i>Muræna helena</i> ..	..	Mediterranean.
<i>Acanthurus luridus</i>	..	Tropical Atlantic.
<i>Trigla hirundo</i> ..	..	English Channel.
<i>Synanceia brachio</i>	..	Tropical Pacific.
„ <i>verrucosa</i>	..	Indian Ocean.
<i>Scorpena grandicornis</i>	..	Waters of the Antilles.
„ <i>diabolus</i>	..	Indian Ocean and Tropical Pacific.
„ <i>porcus</i>	..	Mediterranean.
<i>Pterois antennata</i>	..	Seas of the Indies and Equatorial Pacific.
<i>Pelor filamentosum</i>	..	Waters of l'Isle-de-France.
<i>Cottus scorpius</i> ..	..	Seas of Europe, Asia, and North America.
Trachinidæ ..	..	Waters of Europe.
<i>Uranoscopus scaber</i>	..	Mediterranean.
<i>Callionymus lyra</i>	..	Waters of France.
Batrachidæ ..	..	Waters of Tropical America and India.

Leaving, however, the zoological classification, we will consider the venomous fish according to Bottard's classification, excluding Class III.

CLASS I.

FISH WHICH POISON BY THEIR BITE.

The type of this class is the genus *Muræna*, all of which possess powerful teeth capable of inflicting severe bites. According to Calmette, there are more than one hundred species in tropical and sub-tropical seas. *Muræna helena* L. is found in the Mediterranean, and *Muræna moringa* Cuv. in the tropical Atlantic.

The poison-apparatus consists of a pouch lying above the covering of the palate lined with epithelial cells, secreting the venom. This pouch is capable in larger species of holding about $\frac{1}{2}$ c.c. of

Section 1.—Poison Apparatus entirely closed.

The apparatus is connected with the dorsal fin, and is passively defensive—that is to say, the fish cannot eject the poison unless the barb is broken.

EXAMPLES.—*Synanceia* (*brachio* and many other species); *Plotosus arab*.

Synanceia (*brachio* and many other species).—This fish, called 'rapau de mer' in Réunion, 'laffé' in Mauritius, 'ikan Satan' in Java, and 'nohu' in Tahiti, is distributed through the waters of the Indies, Cochin China, New Caledonia, and the Pacific Ocean.

Its poison apparatus is connected with the dorsal fin, which has thirteen barbs, each of which is supplied with two poison reservoirs, to which belong ten or twelve tubular glands. It cannot eject the



FIG. 35.—*SYNANCEIA VERRUCOSA* SCHNEIDER.

(From Savtschenko's 'Atlas of Poisonous Fish.')

poison itself, but if trodden upon by the naked foot, the barbs enter the skin, and the poison is pressed mechanically into the wound. The venom is limpid, bluish, and slightly acid. The symptoms are severe pain, spreading up the limb. The sufferer becomes violent, throwing himself from side to side, and even asking to have his foot cut off. Sometimes syncope and death may take place. In other cases abscesses and symptoms of blood-poisoning may be noted. The skin surrounding the wound becomes bluish, and may slough, in which case repair takes a very long time to be completed.

Plotosus arab.—This fish, called 'machoiria' in Réunion and Mauritius, 'sanbilang' in Malay, 'koormat' in Abyssinia, is found in the waters of India, of the Seychelles, and other places mentioned above. The poison apparatus is connected with the dorsal fin, and the conditions which bring about the wound, together with the symptoms, resemble those of *Synanceia*.

Saccobranchus fossilis.—This fish is found in the waters of India and Ceylon, and wounds caused by its pectoral fins are much dreaded by the natives, as they produce severe inflammation and even tetanic symptoms.

Section 2.—Poison Apparatus Partially Closed.

The types of this section are *Thalassophryne reticulata* Günther, which is found near Panama, and *T. maculosa* Günther, which is chiefly found in the Gulf of Bahia (Brazil).

In these fish the poison apparatus is double, there being hollow barbs on the gill covers and on the back close behind the head. The barb on the gill cover, which is bent somewhat upwards, is conical in shape and pierced by a central canal, which is connected with a poison reservoir situated at the base of the barb. The cells lining this sac are probably those which secrete the poison. The venom, therefore, is capable of flowing along this canal without being forced by muscular exertion. The barbs on the dorsum of the fish consist of two spines pierced, as in the case of the opercular spine, by canals which communicate with poison reservoirs. When the barbs are erected, the poison flows out of the peripheral openings of the central canals, and thus can enter any wound caused by them. The nature of the venom and its physiological action are not known, but it is supposed that it will be like *Synanceia* and *Trachinus*, though there is no ground for this supposition.

The poison apparatus of *Batrachus tau* of the waters of North America and *B. grunniens* of those of the Antilles are said to be identical (Calmette) with that just described for *Thalassophryne*.

Section 3.—Poison Apparatus in more or less Direct Communication with the Exterior.

This section contains a number of fish, the best studied of which is *Trachinus draco*.

Trachinus draco.—This fish possesses two sets of poison apparatus, the one a barb on the operculum, and the other connected with the dorsal fin. The barb on the operculum possesses a groove which is converted into a canal by a fine membrane, which leaves an opening near the point of the spine. This barb, which is slightly erectile, pierces the operculum. At its base lies the poison gland, partly covered by an adductor muscle, which helps to press the poison into the canal and to erect the spine. When the barb enters the flesh of another animal, the above-mentioned membrane is stripped off and the poison enters the wound.

The dorsal apparatus consists of from five to seven spines joined together by a membrane, which is adherent almost to their tips. Each barb has a deep double channel, the two grooves of which join towards the base of the spine and form a conical space, of which the walls are covered with cells which secrete the poison.

The first symptoms are very severe pain of a burning or lancinating character. The part then tingles and becomes painfully numb, and this may spread along the limb, and appears to travel along the nerves, though the joints are particularly tender. This is followed by palpitation, fever, delirium, vomiting, and syncope. The area affected becomes swollen and inflamed, and if neglected may suppurate or even turn to gangrene. The symptoms may last from two to three hours to several days.

The venom has been studied by Günther, Gressin, Bottard, Briot, and Phisalix. It has also been studied by Evans, who, after washing the fish, collected it by means of an aseptic hypodermic syringe, then dried it *in vacuo*, reduced it to a fine powder, and finally dissolved it in normal saline or in water. He collected the poison from about 2,000 fish. The venom is clear, transparent, and very slightly acid. Hypodermically injected, it causes mortification and local paresis, necrosis, and hæmorrhage. Intravenously injected, it causes failure of the heart and respiratory paralysis, associated with first a rise in the blood-pressure, which is followed later by a marked fall. It also appears to have

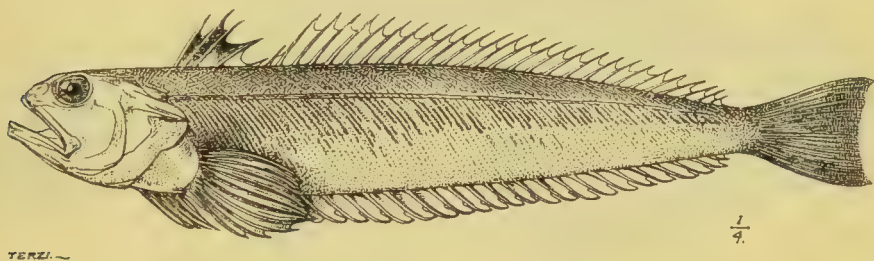


FIG. 36.—*TRACHINUS DRACO* LINNÆUS.

a hæmolytic effect, which is supposed to be due to its amboceptors uniting with endocomplements (lecithin) in the red cell. It will thus be seen that the poison in some respects resembles snake-venom. The venom is lethal to fish, frogs, and mammals. Thus, 0.015 gramme of dried venom killed a frog, and 0.02 gramme a mouse.

According to Briot, who has succeeded in immunizing rabbits, the venom contains a ferment capable of digesting proteid.

Trachinus radiatus.—Pohl has studied the poison of this fish, and finds that it stops the heart in diastole. The effect of applying the poison to the heart of the frog is to first produce strong contractions, which gradually become weaker and weaker, until they cease and the heart stands still in diastole. The poison has, however, no effect on skeletal muscle.

Cottus.—The genus *Cottus*, widespread in the Northern Hemisphere, possesses a poison apparatus which resembles that of the genus *Trachinus*, but is less developed, and consists of poison glands lying in culs-de-sac in the opercular spines. The cells of the gland only secrete the venom during the spawning season, from November to the end of January.

Callionymus.—In *Callionymus* the operculum terminates in three conical spines like a trident, and in addition possesses another spine directed upwards, and these are supplied in the spawning season with a small quantity of venom from the gill membrane, which, according to Bottard, has little effect on man.

Scorpaena scropha.—In this fish the poison apparatus is said to exist not merely in the dorsal fin, but also in the operculum.

In the dorsal fin, the first three rays, which project about one-third of their length beyond the membrane of the fin, are grooved posteriorly by three channels, which are converted into canals by a fine membrane, and communicate with the poison gland.

On the operculum there are three small spines, of which the longest alone is connected with a poison gland.

When handled incautiously, a poisoned wound may result from one of these poison spines entering the skin. The action of the

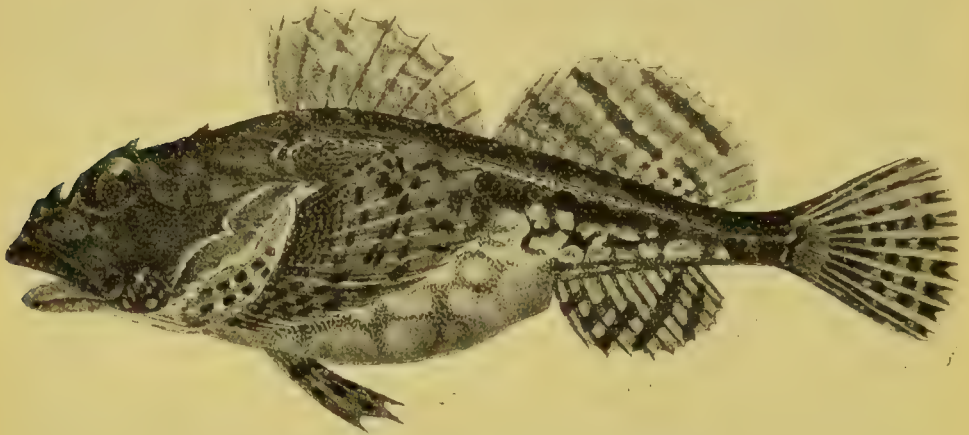


FIG. 37.—*COTTUS SCORPIUS* LINNÆUS.

(From Savtschenko's 'Atlas of Poisonous Fish.')

poison has been studied by Pohl, Brunton, and Briot. Brunton describes the effects of the poison as being exactly the same as that of *Trachinus draco*, and Pohl thinks that the poison acts on the heart in the same manner as he describes for *Trachinus*.

On the other hand, Briot thinks that it is quite different from *Trachinus*, and that the effects produced are by secondary infection of the mechanical wound caused by the spines. Brunton's description of the symptoms in man might possibly be due to *Trachinus* only, as he does not mention specifically whether it was *Trachinus* or *Scorpaena* which affected the person. His experiments on animals with both fish appear, however, to have caused the same symptoms. He pressed the spines of the poison organs against the hind-limb of a guinea-pig or a rat. In a few minutes the animal began to suffer pain and twitching in the injured limb, followed by tremors and convulsions (if disturbed), and later by death from collapse.

The description which he gives of the symptoms in human beings for either *Scorpæna* or *Trachinus* is given below, but reference to his original paper will, we think, convince the reader that he is really dealing with a *Trachinus* sting.

The symptoms of an attack may be described thus :—

A sharp prick is felt as the spine enters the skin, and this is followed in a few minutes by burning and itching, which shortly become stabbing pains, increasing in violence and passing up the limb. The sufferer now lies down and writhes and cries in agony, while sweat breaks out on his brow, and flashes of light pass in front of his eyes. He begins to feel a sensation of suffocation, and puts his hand to his throat and heart, while the pulse is felt to be intermittent. Presently he loses sight of the bystanders, and in a little becomes delirious, crying out and suffering from convulsions. This condition may lead to collapse and death, or, after lasting



FIG. 38.—SCORPÆNA DIABOLUS CUVIER AND VALENTINE.

(From Savtschenko's 'Atlas of Poisonous Fish.')

several hours, may gradually subside ; but the convalescence is slow, and the patient may take several months to recover.

The local conditions show at first merely the prick of the spine, but the aperture may be pigmented by the covering membrane already alluded to. The puncture does not bleed, but the skin around for about $\frac{1}{2}$ inch is whiter than usual, and outside this redness appears, but soon all the surrounding skin is red, turning as time passes darker and darker, till it becomes black and œdematous. The prick now discharges fluid. In a day or so the affected area sloughs and separates, leaving a deep wound. Sometimes a spreading gangrene ensues, which necessitates amputation. In milder cases the part remains painful and swollen for about three days before recovery.

Pterois antennata.—The poison apparatus is connected with the dorsal fin, and is said to resemble that of the Scorpænidæ.

Pelor filamentosum.—In this fish the poison apparatus is connected with the dorsal fin, and resembles that of *Pterois* and *Scorpaena*. With regard to *Pelor japonicum* Cu. and Val., Scheube says that he knew of a case in which a sting on the thumb resulted in phlegmonous and gangrenous symptoms so severe that the arm had to be amputated.

Acanthurus luridus.—*Acanthurus luridus* possesses a poison apparatus connected with the dorsal and anal fins like that of *Scorpaena*.

Elasmobranchii.—Associated with the poisonous fish of the *Teleostei* must be placed those of the *Elasmobranchii*, of which the sting rays (*Trygonidæ*) and eagle rays (*Myliobatidæ*) alone produce toxic symptoms by blows with the tail, which carries a spine. These Rays are found all over the world, and we have received information as to their effects from persons who have been in British Guiana, in Australia, and in Ceylon, in which island stings are well known on the west coast, particularly about Dutch Bay.

Dr. Crevaux has studied Rays from the Orinoco, and has shown that their barbs are canalized and the canals connected with poison reservoirs. This poison is said to be so severe as to be able to kill a man in forty-eight hours. The symptoms of *Aëtobatis narinari*, called the Bishop ray, and of *Trygon pastinaca* (from Japan), are violent pain, a tendency to syncope, with locally a rapidly forming swelling, which soon becomes the seat of a violent inflammation and even at times gangrene. The symptoms of the sting, as observed by us in Ceylon, are local pain and swelling. The general symptoms are not severe. *Trygon sephen* and *T. walga* Müll. and Hen. are known in Indian waters.

A large number of these *Elasmobranchii* have not got special poison glands, and the venom must come from the ordinary skin glands.

Amphibia.

Toads and salamanders have been celebrated for ages as venomous animals, the poison being found in their parotid glands and skin. In toads Faust has shown that there are two poisons—(1) an acid, bufotalin, and (2) a neutral body, bufonin, the former being the more active. It is, as a rule, scarcely toxic to man, only irritating the mucous membranes, especially the conjunctiva; but to small animals it is toxic.

In salamanders Zalesky and Faust have found two bodies, one an inorganic base—salamandarin—and another an alkaloid—salamandarinidin; but this poison and the digitalis-like poison of Bert and Dulatre in frogs are not of sufficient practical interest to concern us here.

According to Vulpian and Caparelli, *Triton cristatus* (Laur) gives a creamy secretion from the glands of the skin at times which is poisonous to many animals, but the chemical nature of which is not known.

REFERENCES.

Pisces.

- BOTTARD (1889). Les Poissons Venimeux. Thèse. Paris.
 BRIOT (1902 and 1904). Société de Biologie, p. 666.
 BRIOT (1903). Journal de Physiologie. March.
 CALMETTE (1907). Les Venins, pp. 301-327. English edition (1908) translated by Austen.
 CORRE (1872). Archive de Physiologie. May (1865). Archive de Médecine Navale. February (1881). *Ibid.* January (1881).
 COUTIÈRE (1899). Poissons Venimeux et Poissons Vénéneux. Thèse. Paris.
 CUVIER ET VALENCIENNES (1828-49). Histoire Nat. des Poissons. Paris.
 DINIZ GONSALVES A. (1907). Gazeta Médica da Bahia, No. 10-11.
 DISSARD ET NOË (1895). Société de Biologie, p. 86.
 DUNBAR, BRUNTON (1896). Lancet, ii. 600.
 EVANS (1907). Observations on the Poisoned Spines of the Weever Fish (*Trachinus draco*). British Medical Journal, December 1.
 FAUST (1906). Tierischen Gifte, p. 134.
 GRESSIN (1884). Thèse. Paris.
 JORDAN (1905). The Study of Fishes. London.
 NOGUE (1897). Archives de Méd. Naval., lxviii. 439.
 PHISALIX (1899). Bulletin Museum d'Hist. Nat.
 POHL (1893). Prague Med. Wochen. (18), 31.
 RHO (1900). Malattie dei Paesi caldi.
 ROGER (1895). Traité de Pathologie Générale, i. 751-755.
 SAVTSCHENKO (1886). Atlas des Poissons Venimeux. St. Petersburg.
 VAUGHAN AND NOVY. Cellular Toxins, pp. 193-195.
 WELLS (1907). Chemical Pathology, pp. 184-185.

Amphibia.

- CALMETTE (1907). Les Venins, pp. 328-332.
 FAUST (1906). Die Tierischen Gifte, p. 210.
 WELLS (1906). Chemical Pathology, pp. 182-183.

CHAPTER XIII

VENOMOUS ANIMALS (*concluded*)--- REPTILIA

Reptilia : Ophidismus.—Historical—Classification—Geographical distribution
—The act of striking—The venom—Entry of the venom into the body
—Minimum lethal dose—Effects of the venom—Excretion of the poison
— Immunity — Diagnosis — Prognosis — Treatment — Prophylaxis. —
Lacertilia. — *Mammalia*. — References.

REPTILIA.

THE Reptilia include two groups which are of interest to medical men in the tropics—viz., the Ophidia and the Lacertilia ; but the former is infinitely more important, as it includes the venomous snakes.

Snake poisoning is called ‘ ophidismus.’

OPHIDISMUS.

Ophidismus, or snake poisoning, is the most important branch of animal poisons, because not merely do serious and even fatal results follow snake-bite, but the number of people who die from this cause in India is by no means small, being, it is said, about 20,000 per annum.

Historical.

The history of the study of snake-bites and their effects may be divided into three periods :—

1. Period of ancient theories.
2. Period of one venom.
3. Period of more than one venom.

1. **Period of Ancient Theories.**—The ancients were acquainted with a number of snakes, which they described under the terms *Echis* and *Colubra*, but it is not known definitely to what species these referred. *Echidna* was a term used to denote the female viper.

They were acquainted with the main symptoms of a snake-bite, and had many remedies, including the tying of a ligature around the part, followed by cupping after scarification, and the administration of wine and theriac, the last mentioned being a celebrated remedy which, among other substances, contained the burnt body of the viper. Celsus recommends the sucking of the wound, but only if there are no ulcers on the gums, palate, and other parts of the mouth.

2. **Period of One Venom.**—In 1664 Redi studied the effects of viper-bites by experiments on animals, and Morse Charas, in 1669, noted the important fact that the blood of animals bitten by vipers was coagulated, and came to the conclusion that the symptoms and death were due to this coagulation.

In 1767 Abbé Felix Fontana made a number of observations on animals bitten by vipers, and in 1796 Russell published an account of his experiments on Indian snakes. In 1821 Davy gave an account of the effects on animals of the bites of three Ceylon snakes.

In 1843 Prince Lucien Bonaparte published his important discovery that the venom of the adder contained an active substance, which he called viperine, or echidnine, capable of being precipitated by alcohol.

In 1845 Brainard showed that if an animal dies at once after the bite of a rattlesnake, the blood will be found to be clotted, but if it lives for some time it will be fluid.

In 1860 Weir Mitchell laid the foundations of modern investigations into snake-venom in his classical paper on the poison of *Crotalus durissus*.

In 1867 Sir Joseph Fayrer began his work on Indian snakes, which resulted in the publication of his magnificent atlas on the Thanatophidia of India in 1872, and several papers by himself and Sir Lauder Brunton in 1873-75.

About the same time Vincent Richards published some valuable remarks on snake poisons and their antidotes.

In 1883 Wall wrote a most excellent little book on the colubrine and viperine snakes of India.

In 1886 appeared a most masterly paper by Weir Mitchell and Reichert, in which they state that the active principles are globulins and peptones (proteoses). These researches indicating a proteid nature for the venom were confirmed by Wolfenden and Karlbach, and did away with Gautier and Blyth's ideas as to their alkaloidal nature.

In 1892 Martin alone and with Smith studied the venom of Australian snakes (*Hoplocephalus* and *Pseudechis*), and concluded that the venom contained three proteids—an albumin and two proteoses (proto and hetero), the latter, however, being alone virulent.

In the meanwhile observers had not been backward in making attempts to find the physiological antidote suggested by Weir Mitchell and Reichert, for in 1887 Sewall showed that by repeated injections of the venom of *Crotalus*, pigeons could be gradually rendered resistant against strong doses of that poison; and a little later Reichert obtained the same result with regard to the venom of the French viper. In 1892 Calmette published the first of his celebrated series of investigations, showing that successive inoculations of heated venom produced in animals a certain degree of resistance to quantities of the poison otherwise surely fatal. Calmette worked largely with the cobra, and produced in rabbits and guinea-pigs a true immunity. He further concluded that animals vaccinated against the cobra also withstood with impunity mortal doses of the venom of the viper and other snakes (*Bungarus*, *Cerastes*, *Naja haje*, and *Pseudechis*).

Phisalix and Bertrand also studied the question of obtaining an immunity against the bite of the viper. Fraser of Edinburgh in 1895 confirmed these results of Calmette. Since then there has not been the slightest doubt that Calmette's serum is of the greatest value in certain cases, especially against cobra venom.

In 1881 permanganate of potash was recommended as an antidote by Professor de Lacerda, of Rio de Janeiro, and by Badaloni in Italy in 1882-84, and lately this remedy has again been strongly recommended by Rogers, of Calcutta, and there appears to be no doubt as to its efficiency; but the question of remedies will be dealt with in their proper place.

It will thus be seen that at the close of this period there is a general belief that the venom of all snakes has virtually the same active principles, which are thought to be proteids, and that, though they may differ in amount, and hence their effects be different, still, it is only a quantitative, and not a qualitative, difference; and, further, that one antivenene is effectual against all kinds of venom.

3. **Period of more than One Venom.**—The third period, extending up to the present, is that in which there is the conception that there are at least two definitely separate types of venom, one of which may be called the colubrine type, having as its example *Naja tripudians*; and the other the viperine type, which may be exemplified by the *Vipera russellii*. In addition, however, there are venoms which show characters belonging to both types.

Weir Mitchell alone and with Reichert indicated that there was a difference between viperine and colubrine poisons; and C. J. Martin, working on *Pseudechis*, a colubrine snake, discovered the intravascular clotting, and suggested that the sudden death caused by *Vipera russellii* might be due to this cause, which hypothesis Lamb and Hanna confirmed.

The difference in the working of these two classes of venoms is still further accentuated by the researches of Rogers, and later by those of Lamb, which clearly prove that Calmette's antivenene will neutralize the colubrine, but not the viperine, venom.

In 1902 a most valuable paper appeared, by Flexner and Noguchi, showing that, in addition to the neurotropic principles, the venom contained agglutinins for the erythrocytes and for the leucocytes which were probably identical, and lysins for erythrocytes and leucocytes which were separate.

They also pointed out that venom contained hæmorrhagins, and lessened the bactericidal powers of the blood. They showed that antivenene neutralizes venom by removing the hæmolytic and antibacteriolytic actions. These results have been confirmed and extended by Kyes, Sachs, Lamb, and others.

The position at the present time is that, though snake venom is extremely complex, still, three kinds of venom may be recognized:—the colubrine type, the viperine type, and the mixed type. In this last both colubrine and viperine types are represented, but one is predominant. It is probable that the main action of both types is on the nervous system, but that other principles in the venom may mask this important action.

With regard to treatment, there is no doubt as to the value of Calmette's serum in cobra-poisoning, and Lamb's serum in Cobra and *Vipera russellii* poisoning, though the old method of ligature and incision, together with the application of permanganate of potash, is still the most practically useful method of treatment.

Classification.

The order Ophidia includes a large number of families, of which only two are of importance to the tropical practitioner—viz., Colubridæ and Viperidæ.

COLUBRIDÆ.

The family of the Colubridæ is said to contain nine-tenths of the whole of the species belonging to the Ophidia, and, roughly speaking, any reptile which would usually be called a snake, other than pythons and vipers, belongs to this order.

The Colubridæ are divided, in works on snake poisons, into the non-venomous and the venomous, and the latter are joined with the vipers to form a subclass of the order Ophidia called Thanatophidia, or poisonous snakes; but this classification is by no means satisfactory, as will presently be shown.

The usual classification of the Colubridæ is into three series:—

1. **Aglypha—Poisonous Colubridæ possessing solid ungrooved teeth.**—The Aglypha are usually stated to be non-poisonous, but the observations of Phisalix and Bertrand on *Tropidonotus* (sp.?), and Alcock and Rogers on *Zamenis mucosus* and *Tropidonotus piscator*, prove that the saliva of these species is poisonous to rats,

mice, and guinea-pigs. Thus hypodermic injections of the saliva of the two last-named snakes will cause convulsions and death from failure of respiration in rats and mice.

Therefore the saliva, though it may not be known to have affected even a child, must be looked upon as poisonous, and the Aglypha must be grouped with the other Colubridæ and the Viperidæ under the head Thanatophidia.

The Aglypha are divided into three subfamilies: Acrochordinæ, Colubrinæ (rat-snakes), and Dasypeltinæ (African egg-eating snakes).

Some of the important species are *Tropidonotus natrix*, the common British snake, and *Coronella austriaca*, a rare snake found in South England.

Tropidonotus fasciatus is the North American water moccasin, *Zamenis mucosus* the Indian rat-snake, and *Dasypeltis scabra* is the African egg-eating snake.

2. Opisthoglypha—Poisonous Colubridæ with one or more of the hinder teeth of the upper jaw grooved.—Early last century there was a great controversy as to whether these snakes were poisonous or not, and it is generally stated nowadays that, though poisonous, their venom is weak, and that the position of the poison-fangs at the back of the mouth prevents the bite from hurting man. Quelch has, however, recorded cases in which bites on the fingers from *Erythrolamprus æsculapii* L. and *Xenodon severus* have caused severe inflammation.

The following list is given by Faust of those known to be poisonous to animals: *Cælopeltis monspessulana* Herm, *Trimorphodon biscutatus* D. and B., *Tarbophis savignyi* Descr., *Dryophis prasinus* Russl., and *Leptodira annulata* L.

The Opisthoglypha are divided into three subfamilies:—

(1) *Dipsadomorphinæ*—*Opisthoglyphida* with well-developed mouth, and nostrils situated at the side of the head.—They include the Indian tree-snakes.

(2) *Elachistodontinæ*—*Opisthoglyphida* with rudimentary teeth on the palatine and pterygoid bones.—Their venom is said to be so weak and their poison-fangs so unfavourably situated that they are not to be considered as dangerous to man. They include the Indian egg-eating snakes.

(3) *Homalopsinæ*—*Opisthoglyphida* with nostrils valvular and situated on the upper part of the snout.—They are all water-snakes.

3. Proteroglypha—Poisonous Colubridæ with the front teeth in the upper jaw well developed to form fangs, and grooved anteriorly. The bases of these fangs are connected with ducts which lead from well-developed poison glands.—These snakes are well known to be highly dangerous to man and animals. They are divided into three subfamilies—Elapinæ, Hydrophinæ, and Viperidæ.

Elapinæ—*Proteroglypha* living on land, and possessing a cylindrical tail.—Among these are classed the cobras, whose proper name is cobra-di-capello—i.e., the snake with the hood, so called because,

when excited, it expands the skin behind the head by throwing outwards the cervical ribs.

Buddhists regard these snakes with reverence, because one with seven heads is said to have placed its expanded hoods over Buddha's head, and thus to have protected him from the glare of the mid-day sun.

The genera of the Elapinae (Boulenger) are:—*Naja* Laurent; *Bungarus* Daudin; *Hemibungarus* Peters; *Callophis* Günther; *Doliophis* Girard; *Boulengerina* Dollo; *Elapechis* Boulenger; *Aspidelaps* Fitzinger; *Walterinnesia* Lataste; *Dendraspis* Schlegel; *Ogmodon* Peters; *Glyphodon* Günther; *Pseudelaps* Duméril and Bibron; *Diemenia* Gray; *Pseudechis* Wagler;



FIG. 39.—*NAJA TRIPUDIANS* MERREM (THE COBRA).

Denisonia Krefft; *Tropidechis* Günther; *Notechis* Boulenger; *Rhinoplocephalus* F. Müller; *Brachyaspis* Boulenger; *Acanthophis* Daudin; *Elapognathus* Boulenger; *Rhynchelaps* Jan; *Furma* Duméril and Bibron; *Elaps* Schneider; *Sepedon* Merrem; *Micropechis* Boulenger; *Hoplocephalus* Cuvier.

Naja tripudians Merr., the cobra with one spot, or a pair of spectacles on its hood, is common in India and Ceylon. *N. bungarus* Schlegel., the king cobra, or hamadryad, is not so common, but is feared because of its size, and because it is said to attack people. *N. haje* L. is Cleopatra's asp, and is well known as a resident of Egypt and North Africa. *N. regalis* Schl. is found on the Gold Coast. *N. nigricollis* Reinh. is found on the Gold Coast and in Sierra Leone.

The kraits are also included in this family, and are:—*Bungarus*

candidus L., the true krait, and *B. fasciatus* Schn., the banded krait, with yellow and black bands, both of which are common in



FIG. 40.—*BUNGARUS CEYLONICUS* GÜNTHER (THE CARAWALLA OF CEYLON).

India, while *B. ceylonicus* Gthr. is the carawalla of Ceylon. The Elapinae are the only poisonous snakes of Australia, and include



FIG. 41.—*HYDRUS PLATURUS* LINNAEUS (A SEA-SNAKE).
Note the flattened tail.

Notechis scutatus Ptrs. and *N. pseudechis*, and *Acanthophis antarcticus* Shaw, the death adder, recognized by the spines on its tail.

Elaps corallinus Wied, the coral snake, with black and red bands separated by narrow rings of a yellow colour, is found in Columbia, British Guiana, Venezuela, and Brazil.

The *Sepedons* are hooded snakes like cobras (*Sepedon hæmachates* Lacép of South Africa), and are supposed to throw their venom so far that there is a danger of it getting into the eyes of animals and human beings, and causing severe conjunctivitis.

None of these snakes are found in Europe or America.

Hydrophinae—*Proteroglyphæ* living in the sea, and possessing a flat tail.—These snakes can be seen swimming in families far out in the Indian Ocean, but are also found in all Eastern tropical seas.



FIG. 42.—VIPERA RUSSELLII SHAW (THE TIC POLONGA OF CEYLON).

The genera of the *Hydrophinae* (Boulenger) are:—*Distira* Lacépède ; *Acalyptus* Duméril and Bibron ; *Hydrophis* Daudin ; *Enhydrina* Gray ; *Hydrelaps* Boulenger ; *Hydrus* Schneider ; *Thalassophis* Schmidt ; *Enhydris* Merrem ; *Platurus* Latreille ; *Aipysurus* Lacépède.

The best-studied species is *Enhydrina valakadien* Boie. Another species, *Distira semperi* Garm, lives in fresh water in the Philippine Islands. It is, of course, dangerous to fishermen.

VIPERIDÆ.

The vipers are characterized by their triangular head and their tubular poison-fangs (hence the name *Solenoglypha*), which are situated anteriorly in the mouth, and are provided with a wide foramen, piercing the base anteriorly for connection with the duct of the poison gland. They possess a stout body and short tail, and are all viviparous.

The *Viperidæ* are divided into:—

Crotalinæ.—Vipers with a deep pit, probably sensory in function, situated between the nostril and the eye on each side of the head.

Viperinæ.—Vipers without such a pit.

Crotalinæ.—The Crotalinæ include the rattlesnakes, so called because they have a number of horny rings which fit into one another at the end of the tail.

The genera of the Crotalinæ (Boulenger) are :—*Crotalus* Linnaeus ; *Sistrurus* Garman ; *Ancistrodon* Beauvois ; *Lachesis* Daudin.

There are two divisions of rattlesnakes in America—*Crotalus* and *Sistrurus*—distinguished by the former having many small, and the latter only nine large, scales on the top of the head.

The best-known rattlesnakes are *Crotalus horridus* L., *C. scutulatus* Kenn., of Texas, *C. confluentus* Say, of the Pacific, *C. durissus* L., and *C. cerastes* Hallow.

Other genera are *Ancistrodon*, with *Ancistrodon piscivorus* Lacép., the water moccasin, and *A. contortrix* L., the copper-head ; *Lachesis*, with *Lachesis lanceolatus* Lacép., the celebrated fer-de-lance of Martinique ; *L. anamallensis* Gthr. and *Sistrurus*, with *Sistrurus ravus* Cope and *S. miliarius* L.

Viperinæ.—The true vipers include : *Vipera berus* L., the adder of England ; *V. russellii* Shaw, the handsome viper of India and Ceylon ; *Bitis arietans* Merr., the puff-adder of the Gold Coast ; *Cerastes cornutus* Forsk., the horned viper of North Africa ; and *Echis carinatus* Schn., the viper of the Pyramids, called 'efa.'

The genera of the Viperinæ (Boulenger) are :—*Vipera* Laurent ; *Causus* Wagler ; *Bitis* Gray ; *Pseudocerastes* Boulenger ; *Cerastes* Wagler ; *Echis* Merrem ; *Atheris* Cope ; *Atractaspis* Smith.

Geographical Distribution.

Asia.—ELAPINÆ : *Naja tripudians*, *N. samarensis*, *N. bungarus* ; *Bungarus fasciatus*, *B. candidus*, *B. ceylonicus* ; *Hemibungarus*, *Callophis*, *Doliophis*.

HYDROPHINÆ : *Enhydrina valakadien*, *Hydrus platurus*, *Enhydris curtus*, *Hydrophis obscurus*, and many others.

VIPERINÆ : *Vipera berus*, *V. renardii*, *V. raddii*, *V. lebetina*, *V. russellii* ; *Pseudocerastes persicus* ; *Cerastes cornutus* ; *Echis carinatus*.

CROTALINÆ : *Ancistrodon halys*, *A. himalayanus*, *A. hypnale*, and others ; *Lachesis flavoviridis*, *L. sumatranus*, *L. borneensis*, etc.

Africa.—ELAPINÆ : *Naja haje*, *N. flava*, *N. melanoleuca*, *N. nigricollis*, *N. anhieta*, *N. goldii* ; *Sepedon hæmachates* ; *Boulengerina stormsi* ; *Elaeophis guentheri*, etc. ; *Aspidelaps scutatus*, *Walterinnesia ægyptica*, *Dendraspis viridis*, etc.

VIPERINÆ : *Causus rhombeatus*, etc. ; *Vipera ammodytes*, etc. ; *Bitis arietans*, *B. cornuta*, *B. gabonica*, *B. caudalis*, *B. atropos*, *B. nasicornis*, *B. peringueyi*, *B. inornata* ; *Cerastes cornutus*, *Echis carinatus*, *Atheris chlorechis*, *Atractaspis congica*, etc.

Australia and Oceania.—ELAPINÆ : *Ogmodon vitianus* ; *Glyphodon tristis* ; *Pseudelaps muelleri*, etc. ; *Diemenia psammophis*, etc. ; *Pseudechis porphyriacus*, etc. ; *Denisonia superba*, etc. ; *Micropechis elapoides*, *Hoplocephalus variegatus*, etc. ; *Tropidechis carinata* ; *Notechis scutatus* ; *Brachyaspsis curta* ; *Elapognathus minor* ; *Acanthophis antarcticus*, *Rhynchelaps australis* ; *Furina calonota*, etc.

HYDROPHINÆ : *Hydrus*, *Thalassophis*, *Hydrelaps*, *Hydrophis*, *Distira*, *Enhydris*, *Enhydrina*, *Aipysurus* ; *Platurus*.

America.—ELAPINÆ : *Elaps*, many species ; *Micropechis elapoides* ; *Ancistrodon piscivorus*, *A. bilineatus*, *A. contortrix*, *Lachesis mutus*, *L. lanceolatus*, and many others ; *Sistrurus miliarius*, *S. catenatus*, *S. ravus* ; *Crotalus adaman-teus*, *C. horridus*, *C. confluentus*, *C. atrox*, *C. oregonus*, *C. cerastes*, *C. mitchelli*, *C. terrificus*, and others.

The Act of Striking.

The poison is secreted by glands, which are either modified upper labial glands or a pair of glands occupying the sides of the head behind the eyes, and which are the homologues of the parotid gland of other animals. The duct usually begins as a receptacle which runs the whole length of the gland. This receptacle is of importance, as it enables the reptile to store the venom. Into this receptacle the smaller ducts of the gland open, and from it the main duct runs forward just above the line of the lip, to a point below the eye. It is now bent backwards, and ends on a small papilla on the anterior wall of the sheath of mucous membrane, which embraces the base of the fang.

Weir Mitchell describes a sphincter muscle of reddish appearance, and composed of non-striated muscle, on the course of the duct of *Crotalus*, but no such sphincter has been described in the other snakes.

The poison from the duct either runs along a groove on the anterior surface of a long tooth called the fang, or else along a canal formed by the sides of the groove meeting and coalescing by the bending of the developing dentine. It should be clearly understood that the venom duct does not directly communicate with the groove or canal in the tooth, but ends close to it, the venom being conducted into the groove by a fold of mucous membrane. The vipers have the longest fangs, measuring nearly 1 inch.

The poison fang projects downwards and backwards in the closed mouth, being firmly attached to the alveolar process, and it is entirely due to the free mobility of the cranial bones one on the other that the fang can be placed in such a position as to be able to enter the skin of the victim.

The act of striking, as described by Weir Mitchell in *Crotalus*, is as follows:—In preparing to strike, the snake first of all throws itself into its well-known characteristic attitude, with the lower part of the body coiled, the tail slightly projecting, and the head raised a few inches.

The tongue now darts backwards and forwards, and the air of expiration, in passing through the narrow glottis, produces the characteristic hissing. The muscles on the convexity of the coils now contract and straighten the snake, so that the head is thrust suddenly upwards, forwards, or downwards as required. The maximum thrust is half of the body-length, the usual one-third; but the reptile judges this for itself, and sometimes makes mistakes. The jaws are widely separated, and the head is bent back on the cervical vertebræ, and a muscle called the spheno-pterygoid, which, passing from the basal orbito-sphenoid region backwards, to be inserted into the inner dorsal surface of the pterygoid, contracts, and draws forward the pterygoid, thus pushing upwards the ectopterygoid (transversum), and causing the superior maxillary bone to rotate forward on its lachrymal articulation, and thus to erect

the fang. This motion, when it reaches its limit, is checked by ligaments, and now the lachrymal yields a little to the force applied to the maxilla, with the result that the whole muzzle of the snake is elevated, and produces the curious appearance which it has when preparing to strike. The fang now enters the flesh of the victim, and the head of the snake is drawn violently backwards, too much action being prevented by the muscles of the spine. In the meanwhile the spheno-pterygoid, acting from the pterygoid, and together with the external pterygoid, rotates the maxilla and pulls the fang backwards, and so drives it deeply into the flesh.

The lower jaw now closes on the bitten part, and this act squeezes the fluids from all parts of the glands forwards into the duct, and not merely deepens the wound, but injects the venom forcibly into it.

The snake then has to disentangle itself, and in so doing may lose its fang. But this is of no moment, for fangs are shed naturally, and there are a number of tooth-germs in different stages of development ready to take the place of the last tooth.

Sometimes the fangs have not been properly erected, and therefore only their convex borders touch the skin of the victim, in which case the venom will flow on to the skin, but the fangs will not penetrate.

The Venom.

Collection.—The venom can be collected by making the snake strike a watchglass covered with a thin, tightly stretched piece of indiarubber sheeting, or by chloroforming the snake and squeezing the poison out of the glands into a vessel.

In order to preserve this venom, it must be quickly dried over calcium chloride or sulphuric acid in a desiccator, when it will keep for years—e.g., Weir Mitchell kept his *Crotalus* venom for twenty-three years, and then found it active.

Physical Characters.—The quantity of the venom obtained depends upon many factors, such as the general condition and size of the snake, whether it has previously ejected venom, and whether it has been long in captivity—a condition in which the secretion diminishes.

An adult cobra in good condition is said by Martin to give from 0.6 c.c. to 1.1 c.c., and this should yield from 200 to 370 milligrammes of solids. Calmette gives 124 milligrammes of liquid venom, yielding 35 milligrammes of dry venom for *Naja haje* L.

The water-snake, *Enhydrina valakadien* Boie, gives only 9.4 to 2.3 milligrammes of dry venom, according to Rogers.

A *Vipera russellii* Shaw gives from 0.6 c.c. to 1.0 c.c. of liquid, which yields 150 to 250 milligrammes of solids.

According to C. J. Martin, *Notechis scutatus* Ptrs. gives 205 milligrammes of liquid, containing 73 milligrammes of solids, *Notechis pseudectis* 160 milligrammes of liquid and 94 milligrammes of solids.

According to Calmette, *Lachesis lanceolatus* Lacép gives 320 milligrammes of liquid venom, containing 127 milligrammes of solids. *Cerastes cornutus* Forsk from Egypt gave 123 milligrammes of liquid and 27 milligrammes of solids, and *Crotalus confluentus* Say gave 370 milligrammes of liquid and 105 milligrammes of solids; while *Crotalus durissus* L., according to Flexner and Noguchi, yields from 309 to 179 milligrammes of dry venom; and *Ancistrodon piscivorus* Lacép from 180 to 125 milligrammes.

The different venoms vary in physical characters, as may be judged by a few descriptions.

Cobra-venom, when fresh, is a transparent, almost colourless fluid, with a syrupy consistence and a disagreeable bitter taste. When dried, it becomes yellowish-brown, and may be kept for months. It can decompose and become of a dark brown colour, possessing a disagreeable odour.

Crotalus-venom, according to Mitchell, may vary from a pale emerald-green to an orange or straw colour, and when dried resembles dried albumin. It has no taste or smell.

The poison varies, being clear and limpid or pale straw or yellow in colour, which is said to vary with the degree of pigmentation of the snake and the concentration of the venom. The specific gravity varies from 1030 to 1044 (Weir Mitchell) for *Crotalus*, 1110 for *Cobra*, and 1077 for *Vipera russellii*. Microscopically, there may be only a few epithelial cells and salivary corpuscles and bacteria, all due to contamination with fluids from the mouth.

Chemical Analysis.—The reaction of pure venom is acid.

The ultimate analysis was made by Armstrong for Sir Joseph Fayrer, and is as follows :—

Crude Dried Poison.					
Carbon	..	..	..	..	43.55
Nitrogen	..	..	..	..	13.43
Alcoholic Extract.					
Carbon	..	..	..	..	45.76
Nitrogen	..	..	..	..	14.30
Hydrogen	..	..	..	..	6.60
Sulphur	..	..	..	..	2.50
Ash ..	..	..	..	..	Traces.

These figures merely indicate the presence of proteid in some form, and, as a matter of fact, Armstrong found reactions indicating the presence of albumin; but it must be remembered that Prince Charles Lucien Bonaparte had already shown that a proteid existed in the venom of the viper, and that the toxicity was carried down with this when precipitated, and, further, that Weir Mitchell had corroborated his statements while examining *Crotalus*-venom.

Weir Mitchell and Reichert went further, and discovered toxalbumins of the nature of globulins (which must be considered to include the more modern proteoses) in venom. They considered these proteids, which they found to be poisonous, to be the true active principles of the venom. In this they have received support from Phisalix and Bertrand, who separated from viper-venom two toxalbumins—echidin, which acts locally; and echitoxin, which acts generally—and also from C. J. Martin and Smith, who showed that the proteoses consisted of proto- and heteroproteose, with perhaps a little deuteroproteose, and that true peptones were absent.

The reader will, therefore, not be surprised to hear that venom gives proteid reactions—*e.g.*, Millon's, the xanthoproteic and the biuret—and that precipitates appear on the addition of picric acid,

copper sulphate, and alcohol, and on saturation with sodium chloride, magnesium chloride, or ammonium chloride, and, lastly, that it coagulates on heating.

With regard to heat, it is found that viperine venoms more readily lose their toxicity than colubrine—*e.g.*, 80° to 85° C. will destroy most of the former venoms, while it takes 120° C. to do the same to those of the latter with certainty.

If venom is only heated to the temperature of first coagulation, and then filtered, it will be found that the filtrate still gives a precipitate with alcohol, and is still active, though its virulence is diminished, and that this action is mostly on the nervous system.

The analysis of venom, however, does not stop with toxalbumins, for, as Ewing pointed out long ago, they contain true toxins allied to those produced by bacteria, and recently Faust has separated from the toxalbumins a very poisonous non-nitrogenous substance called *ophiotoxin*.

The knowledge of these toxins is principally due to the work of Flexner and Noguchi on the venoms of *Crotalus durissus*, *Ancistrodon piscivorus*, *A. contortrix*, and *Naja tripudians*.

The work of these investigators, coupled with that of C. J. Martin, Calmette, Lamb, Weir Mitchell, Reichert, Stewart, Rogers, and others, have shown that snake-venoms are very complex liquids containing some, but not in any one venom all, of the following active principles:—

1. *Neurotoxins*.

- (1) Acting principally on the respiratory centre.
- (2) Acting principally on the vasomotor centre.
- (3) Acting upon nerve end-plates in striated muscle, particularly on those of the phrenics.

2. *Agglutinins*.

3. *Cytolysins*.

- (a) Hæmolysins.
- (b) Leucolysins.
- (c) Hæmorrhagins.
- (d) Other cytolysins.

4. *Anti hæmolysins*.

5. *Antibactericidal substances*.

6. *A fibrin ferment*.

7. *An antifibrin ferment*.

8. *A proteolytic ferment*.

9. *A cardiac and vascular tonic*.

Of these principles, the most important are the neurotoxins, the cytolysins, and the fibrin ferment.

The analysis of the venom, according to Martin, may be effected by:—

(1) Dialyzing and filtering the venom through a gelatin filter supported in the pores of a Pasteur-Chamberland filter. *Fibrin ferments and hæmorrhagins do not dialyze*.

(2) Heating from 70° to 100° C., when some *neurotoxins* and some *hæmolysins* will not be affected.

(3) Hæmolysins can be separated from neurotoxins by digestion with red blood cells mixed with serum which has previously been heated to 56° C.

Neurotoxins and other cytolytins can be separated by the method of Flexner and Noguchi, which will be described later. It must be clearly understood that the venom of any one snake does not contain all these principles.

1. NEUROTOXINS.—The neurotoxins are the most important active principles of the venom of many snakes, especially the colubrine snakes. They have been studied in *Ancistrodon contortrix* by Flexner and Noguchi, who tested the anchoring power of the various tissues of the body for the principles in venom in the following manner:—They took a definite weight of tissue washed in tepid, sterile, normal saline solution, and after triturating it in a sterile mortar, mixed it in test-tubes with a given number of minimal lethal doses (M.L.D.) of the venom. The mixture, after being placed in a thermostat for one hour, was centrifugalized, and the supernatant fluid injected into guinea-pigs. They first took 2 grammes of the organs, and mixed them with three times M.L.D., calculating that after centrifugalizing there should be left at least two M.L.D.

The results were as follows:—

Control guinea-pig died in 45 minutes.

Brain-injection guinea-pig died in 19 hours.

Blood-injection guinea-pig died in 3 hours 50 minutes.

Adrenals-injection guinea-pig died in 2 hours 35 minutes.

Spleen-injection guinea-pig died in 2 hours 10 minutes.

Liver-injection guinea-pig died in 1 hour 30 minutes.

Kidney-injection guinea-pig died in 1 hour 55 minutes.

Muscles-injection guinea-pig died in 1 hour 30 minutes.

Next they tried two M.L.D., with the following results:—

Brain-injection guinea-pig survived.

Blood-injection guinea-pig died in 28 hours.

Liver-injection guinea-pig died in 19 hours.

From these experiments they conclude that snake-venom contains a neurotoxic principle, which is the chief poison, and which unites in multiple minimal doses with the nerve cells, but that, even if this chief toxic principle be removed, there is still left sufficient hæmolysin to cause death.

This neurotoxic substance has been shown by Rogers in the cobra and the Hydrophidæ to attack the respiratory centre in the medulla, the respirations becoming both fewer in number and less in amplitude minute by minute, until they cease if sufficiently large doses are administered, but when smaller doses are given there is at first a temporary stimulation.

Further, he shows that the neurotoxic substance can paralyze

the end-plates of the phrenic nerves in the diaphragm shortly after the failure of the respiratory centre in the medulla.

The blood-pressure does not appear to be affected by the poison, and, in fact, the circulation can be kept going for a long time after cessation of breathing if artificial respiration is resorted to—a fact first shown by Brunton and Fayrer.

On the other hand, with regard to viperine snakes—e.g., *Vipera russellii*, *Bitis arietans*, *Crotalus horridus*, and *Lachesis anamallensis*—Rogers concluded that the neurotoxin acted upon the vasomotor centre in the medulla—a point which was noted by Weir Mitchell and Reichert as a cause of the variation of the blood-pressure in *Crotalus* poisoning.

There are thus several neurotoxic elements in snake-venom, of which two great groups can at present be provisionally described :

(1) Colubrine neurotoxic element, acting upon the—(1) Respiratory centre in the medulla ; (2) the end-plates of the phrenic nerve.

(2) Viperine neurotoxic element, acting upon the vasomotor centre in the medulla.

Kilvington has studied the effects of the venom of *Hoplocephalus curtus* Günther (*Brachyaspis curta* Schleg) on nerve cells, and found that the nerve cells of the central part of the cervical enlargement showed a breaking-up of the Nissl granules into a fine dust-like deposit. The nucleus may become indistinct, but it remains in the centre of the cell. The cells are unequally attacked. Those around the central canal are most severely injured, while the motor cells are little affected. In sudden death no change is noted. He says that the character of the changes are of the same order as those described by Marinesco as toxic degeneration, and are very like those following the fatal dose of abrin. Inflammatory and vascular changes are absent.

As to the cause of this cytolysis, it would appear from the researches of Flexner and Noguchi that it is probably due to the union of an endocomplement (capable of being neutralized by calcium chloride, and therefore not lecithin) in the nerve cell with an amboceptor in the venom. This neurotoxin, according to Ehrlich's denomination, is neurotropic—i.e., unites only with nerve cells—and monotropic—i.e., has affinities for one tissue only.

These facts have been demonstrated by Flexner and Noguchi in cobra-venom by first treating it with erythrocytes to remove the hæmolysin, and then heating it to destroy the hæmorrhagin, thus leaving only the neurotoxic principle to act on the animal.

They found that after cerebral injection the appearance of the nervous symptoms was almost immediate, while with other methods of injections the development was more gradual.

The first effect of the neurotoxin was irritation (convulsions), and the final paralysis. By cobra-venom, death was caused by respiratory paralysis. Intracerebral injection of a viperine venom like that of *Crotalus*, however, caused but slight symptoms.

They further found that the venoms of *Ancistrodon piscivorus*

Lacép and *A. contortrix* L. occupied an intermediate position between the colubrine and viperine venoms, containing both neurotoxins and hæmolysins in considerable quantities. From these experiments it was possible to classify venoms into the three classes given above.

2. AGGLUTININS.—Agglutination of the red cells was first described by Weir Mitchell and Reichert, and that of the leucocytes by Halford and Ralf.

The reaction can be studied by adding a 0.01 per cent. to 10 per cent. solution of dried venom in normal saline to washed corpuscles suspended in normal saline.

The time required for agglutination depends upon the strength of the solution of venom, and the effect upon the corpuscles depends upon whether they come together quickly or slowly. In the former case they are not damaged, while in the latter their shape is considerably altered. Agglutinins are destroyed by heating the venom to 75°-80° C.

The agglutinins for the red cells appear to be the same substances as those for the white, and in both cases they appear to act prior to the cytolysis of the cells.

3. THE CYTOLYSINS—(a) *Hæmolysins*.—Fontana many years ago noted that the blood of animals bitten by vipers was fluid, and Weir Mitchell and Reichert described the hæmoglobin dissolving out of the agglutinated red corpuscles, which finally became invisible when treated with *Crotalus*-venom. Feoktistow showed that a 2 per cent. solution of the venom of *Viper berus* destroyed red corpuscles in eighteen to twenty-four hours. Martin has demonstrated also that the venom of *Pseudechis* in 0.1 per cent. solution destroyed the red corpuscle.

Flexner and Noguchi showed that these hæmolysins must be looked upon as amboceptors, which require a complement, and this they obtain in the bactericidal principles found in the serum of the victim. Hence, when they join with the erythrocytes and the complement, they not merely produce hæmolysis, but they take away the bactericidal powers from the blood. If, as was found to be the case in *Necturus*, they are incapable of uniting with the complements, they are incapable of damaging the bactericidal properties of the serum; for it was found that hæmolysis was but slightly produced in the blood of *Necturus*, and then only after long periods, and at the same time the serum of *Necturus* did not lose its bactericidal effects to *Bacillus coli communis* and *B. typhosus*.

The hæmolysins have been further studied by Kyes, who showed that in some animals the venom alone could hæmolyze the washed red cells, whereas in others it could not do so until some fresh serum was added. In the first class came man, dog, rabbit, guinea-pig, and horse, and with reference to these he came to the conclusion that the complement was contained in the red blood cell itself—i.e., was an endocomplement. In a further research with Sachs,

he shows that this endocomplement is attached to the stroma of the red cells. Further, they conclude that it is the lecithin of the stroma which acts as the complement, and support this by experiments showing that lecithin prepared from the yolk of an egg can act as a complement for the venom, and dissolve cells which are not affected by the venom alone. They look upon the fatty acid radical of the lecithin as being probably the active agent.

In the second class—viz., those animals whose erythrocytes are not affected by venom alone without the presence of serum—come the ox, sheep, and the goat ; but Kyes found it very easy to produce solution by the addition of foreign sera—*e.g.*, ox blood by venom and guinea-pig serum ; sheep blood by venom and guinea-pig serum—which clearly showed that the venom was an amboceptor, and agreed with the results of Flexner and Noguchi.

Further, he showed that by heating the serum to 56° C. for half an hour this action was destroyed, but if heated to 65° C. for half an hour hæmolysis took place. In other words, serum contained two possible complements : (1) free in the serum, and destroyed by heat ; (2) only in heated serum. Kyes and Sachs consider (1) to be complements in the restricted sense of the term, and that there are differences in their workings from that of the lecithin complement. More recently, however, they have doubted this, and begun to believe that the serum merely frees the lecithin, which acts as the true complement.

In (2) the lecithin, being free, is able to combine with the amboceptor and cause the hæmolysis. They further show, that if a blood solution is heated to 62° C., it is inactivated, owing to the union at this temperature, of the lecithin directly to the hæmoglobin.

They therefore came to the conclusion that the reason why there was a difference in the action of the venom on red cells was that in the first class—*e.g.*, man, etc.—the lecithin was so loosely bound to the cell that it was available as a complement for the venom amboceptor, whereas in the other cases it was more closely bound, and therefore was not available.

Kyes then went a step further, and mixed 40 c.c. of a 1 per cent. solution of cobra-venom in a 0.75 per cent. salt solution, with 20 c.c. of 20 per cent. solution of lecithin in chloroform, and then centrifugalized the mixture. The result was the separation of chloroform and water into two layers ; from the former the cobra-venom lecithin could be precipitated by the addition of pure ether. This body possessed hæmolytic but no neurotoxic properties, which entirely remained in the water. Thus Kyes clearly supports the fact first pointed out by the late Dr. Myers that the neurotoxic and hæmolytic actions are quite separate.

This cobra-venom lecithin differs in many of its properties from cobra-venom and from lecithin—*e.g.*, it is soluble in water, which lecithin is not ; it is soluble in alcohol, chloroform, and toluol, which the cobra-venom amboceptor is not.

Kyes found that the lecithin was active with the blood cells of all the species he examined, and that the absolute quantity necessary for hæmolytic was the same for the blood cells of different species. Thus lecithin corresponding to 0.003 milligramme of the dry cobra-venom was capable of hæmolyzing 1 c.c. of a 5 per cent. suspension of the erythrocytes of guinea-pig, rabbit, man, or ox.

The lecithide acts very quickly on the red cells (twenty-four times more quickly than the venom), which is due to the fact that no time is spent in developing the real toxic agent—*i.e.*, the lecithide.

The lecithide is not destroyed by heating to 100° C. for six hours, and is little affected by Calmette's serum.

Kyes went further, and studied the lecithides of—(1) *Lachesis anamallensis* Günther; (2) *L. lanceolatus* Lacép; (3) *L. flavoviridis* Hallow; (4) *Crotalus durissus* L.; (5) *Vipera russellii* Shaw; (6) *Naja bungarus* Schleg; (7) *Bungarus candidus* L.; (8) *B. fasciatus* Schn.

All these poisons, on the addition of sufficient lecithin, destroy blood cells, and, except in the first and the third, the absolute quantity of the poison is the same as that mentioned just above.

That of *Lachesis anamallensis* Günther is, however, twenty-five times weaker, and *L. lanceolatus* Lacép ten times weaker, this being due to the fact that the former forms only one-twenty-fifth and the latter one-tenth the usual quantity of lecithide.

Hence Kyes concludes that the hæmolytic element in all snakes is an amboceptor possessed of a haptophore group for the erythrocyte, and a toxophore group for lecithin, which contains the active element for the hæmolytic. The haptophore group, however, probably differs in different poisons, for Lamb has shown that, while cobra-venom will unite with Calmette's antitoxin, poison of *Vipera russellii* will not. *Bungarus* and *Naja bungarus* act like the cobra, and *Lachesis* and *Crotalus* do not.

Noguchi investigated lecithin, and found it to be by no means an inert substance, and, further, that certain oleic compounds and oleic acid itself would act as venom activators.

He found that the addition of oleic acid or its soluble soaps to a non-activating serum in the ratio which corresponds to the percentages of fatty acids and soaps contained in some of the easily activating sera makes it highly active to venom. In the normal serum of a dog, however, he found that there was a lecithin compound acting like free lecithin. He further found that these two classes of activators could be differentiated from one another by calcium chloride, which annulled the first group, but was powerless against the lecithide. Non-activating sera do not contain this lecithin compound, and other lecithides—*e.g.*, lecith albumin—are powerless.

When serum is heated, the non-coagulated portions contain a lecithin activator, as described by Kyes, which is identical with Chabrie's albumon; but this does not exist preformed in unheated sera, and is due to the high temperature altering other proteid lecithides into albumon.

He further found ovovitellin to be one of the best lecithin proteid activators. He finally came to the conclusion that the reason why some red corpuscles (man, etc.) are acted upon by venom, while others (ox, etc.) are not, depends solely upon the amount of fatty acids, and perhaps also of soaps and fats, contained in the corpuscles, to the stroma of which they are attached. They exist plentifully in corpuscles easily affected, and in small amount in those not easily affected.

The position at the present moment is, therefore, that snake-venom produces hæmolysis by its amboceptors uniting with complements contained in the sera of the majority of mammals and birds investigated, and that these complements are fatty acids and soaps (belonging principally to the oleic series).

Further, there are endocomplements in the erythrocytes of certain species, and these are of the same nature as those in normal sera, and are attached to the stroma of the corpuscle.

Finally, the reason why heated sera become active at high temperatures after losing their activity at lower temperatures is because of the conversion of the proteid lecithides into another form of lecithide called albumon, which is an activator.

(b) *The Leucolysins*.—Weir Mitchell and Reichert had noticed in their researches that the mobility of leucocytes absolutely ceased in crotalus poisoning. Martin studied this carefully with Pseudochis-venom, and says that for the first fifteen minutes he could see no change in the white cells, but they exhibited no amoeboid movements. At the end of this time the nuclei in some of them were very distinct, as if fixed by acetic acid. They then became intensely granular, and soon began to swell, and their outlines to grow less distinct, until they disappeared, leaving only a small heap of granules.

Flexner and Noguchi studied this phenomenon, and found that leucocytes with large coarse granules were most quickly affected; next came the fine granular varieties; and last of all the lymphocytes. They found cobra poison much more vigorous than that of crotalus. As to the leucolysins, they proved that they were separate from the hæmolysins by treating washed red corpuscles with copperhead venom until the supernatant fluid, after centrifugalization, ceased to have any effect on red cells. This fluid was then brought into contact with leucocytes, when lysis without agglutination took place. If, however, washed leucocytes were treated first, the supernatant fluid was found to be actively hæmolytic. They therefore concluded that the hæmolysins were distinct from the leucolysins, but that the agglutinins were probably the same.

We are not aware of further researches as to the nature of the leucolysins, though obviously such researches are required.

(c) *Hæmorrhagin*.—Weir Mitchell and Reichert, by observing a mesentery moistened with crotalus-venom, came to the conclusion that the blood escaped from the vessel owing to damage to the wall

Flexner and Noguchi found that by heating crotalus-venom to 75° C. for thirty minutes, this hæmorrhagic power was lost, and along with it most of the toxicity, as ten or twenty M.L.D. were required to cause death with symptoms resembling cobra-venom. They conclude that this death must be due to the neurotoxic or hæmatotoxic properties (hæmolysins and agglutinins) in the venom, and that, as the latter can be eliminated without any apparent loss of toxicity, it must be due to the neurotoxins.

The toxic principle lost by heating to 75° C., Flexner and Noguchi called hæmorrhagin. They studied its action in the mesentery by injecting the venom into the peritoneal cavity, or placing a minute particle of the dried poison on the exposed mesentery, and then removing specimens, which they fixed in Zenker's fluid, cut into sections, and stained with hæmatoxylin and eosin. They found that the extravasation of blood took place not by diapedesis, but through actual rents in the walls. These rents are not simple ruptures, but are apparently due to a cytolytic action upon the endothelial cells of the capillaries and the walls of the small veins.

(d) *Other Cytolysins*.—Flexner and Noguchi have found that the amboceptors in venom can act upon a number of the cells of the body—e.g., liver, kidney, testicle, and ovary—causing lysis, the complement being probably either endocellular or in the lymph-stream. The nature of the complement is, however, quite unknown at present, but is probably different from the complement acting on the red cells, as its activity is destroyed by heating to 60° C. for some time. The histological effects of these toxins can be noted particularly in the microscopical appearances in the liver and kidney. The liver shows necrosis and fatty degeneration of its cells, and, as a reactionary process, leucocytic infiltration around the bile-passages. In the kidney, the glomeruli show intense congestion of their capillaries, often associated with ruptures of their walls and hæmorrhage into Bowman's capsule. The cells of the tubules are necrotic and detached, filling the lumen. The whole organ is congested, and there may be interstitial hæmorrhages. The spleen is but slightly affected.

4. *ANTI-HÆMOLYSINS*.—Weir Mitchell and Stewart have shown that if crotalus-venom is added to red corpuscles in a certain degree of concentration, no hæmolysis takes place. This fact has been confirmed by Myers and Stephens for the cobra, and Lamb for *Vipera russellii*.

Noguchi believes that the action is due to venom having the power in certain cases of precipitating the outer layer of the hæmoglobin, while in other cases this does not take place.

5. *ANTIBACTERICIDAL SUBSTANCES*.—Weir Mitchell drew attention to the fact that bodies of animals dead from crotalus poisoning rapidly decomposed, while Ewing found that the normal germicidal power of the serum was destroyed—a fact confirmed by Martin.

Flexner and Noguchi also investigated this action, and came to the conclusion that:—

(1) All venoms, when used in suitable quantities, destroy the bactericidal properties of many normal sera.

(2) The manner of this destruction consists in the fixation of the serum complements by the venoms.

(3) Venoms have no action upon the intermediary bodies of the serum.

6. FIBRIN FERMENT.—A fibrin ferment has been shown by Martin to be present in the venoms of the viperidæ and also of some of the colubridæ. In the former it is the active agent which causes the vascular clotting in small animals, with convulsions and sudden death.

7. ANTI-FIBRIN FERMENT.—An anti-fibrin ferment—that is to say, a substance which in minute quantities is able to prevent the coagulation of the blood—is found in cobra and allied venoms.

8. PROTEOLYTIC FERMENT.—Venom contains a body of some description, probably a ferment, which is capable of transforming proteid.

Thus, Mitchell and Reichert long ago showed that muscle-fibres at the site of the bite were quickly softened by crotalus-venom, and Flexner and Noguchi have shown that gelatine is liquefied by both crotalus- and cobra-venoms, but that coagulated proteids are not acted upon. Microscopically the muscular fibres at the site of the bite are seen to have undergone necrosis and degeneration, and later a polymorphonuclear leucocytic infiltration may be noted.

9. CARDIAC AND VASCULAR TONIC.—Sir Lauder Brunton and Sir Joseph Fayrer showed that the poisons of the cobra had a stimulant effect on the heart, and that the circulation could be kept going for a long time after complete failure of breathing if artificial respiration is kept up—a fact of considerable importance if any antidotal treatment is available.

It is not clear whether this is due to direct action on the muscles of the heart, but it appears from Rogers' experiments that the effect on the bloodvessels is due to local action on the arterioles. This effect is produced by the cobra and *Vipera russellii* venom.

Entry of the Venom into the Body.

The poison, the characters of which have been described, is introduced into the body of man or that of an animal usually by the snake biting the skin and injecting the poison either subcutaneously or into a vessel. In the former case it will soon reach the blood-stream, and be distributed to the different parts of the body.

The effect of entry into a bloodvessel is to produce immediately the signs of the poisoning, whereas in the subcutaneous tissue it may take some time, and even be modified, especially in the viperine type.

If the venom fall on the conjunctiva it is readily absorbed, and symptoms of poisoning will ensue, or an acute inflammation be set up.

Taken by the mouth, the venom of the colubridæ is harmless, provided there are no cracks or abrasions, and is destroyed by the saliva and pancreatic juice. Viperine venom, on the other hand, causes gastritis, gastro-intestinal hæmorrhage, and even death, without the appearance of the usual symptoms, a fact known to the natives of Ceylon with regard to the venom of *Vipera russellii*.

Minimum Lethal Dose (M.L.D.).

The minimum lethal dose varies with the species of snake, the condition of the snake, and with the species of the victim.

Tables are given by Calmette, and Martin and Lamb, showing the amount for different snakes and animals. Thus, the quantity of cobra-venom required to kill a kilogramme of a dog is 0·0008 gramme, and of a rabbit 0·0005; and that of *Bungarus candidus* for a rabbit is 0·0008 gramme, and that of *Enhydrina valakadien* for a rabbit is 0·00006 gramme, while the same for a cat is 0·0002. Putting it in another way, 1 gramme of cobra-venom will kill 1,250 kilogrammes in weight of a dog, 2,000 of rabbit, 2,500 of guinea-pig, 1,500 of rat, and 8,333 of mouse, and 20,000 grammes of horse.

Calmette calculates that, taking a man of average size, the minimum lethal dose might be halfway between the dog and the horse—*i.e.*, would be 0·015 gramme of cobra-venom—and 1 gramme will kill 10,000 kilogrammes of man, or 165 persons of the weight of 60 kilogrammes; but, of course, this is only a very approximate guess. Lamb calculates the M.L.D. for man to be 0·015 gramme of cobra-venom, and Fraser puts the same at 0·031 gramme.

Lamb gives a number of minimum lethal doses for snakes calculated per kilogramme of rabbit and injected intravenously, which are :—

<i>Bungarus candidus</i>	0·00004	gramme.
<i>Enhydrina valakadien</i>	0·00005	„
<i>Vipera russellii</i>	0·0001	„
<i>Naja tripudians</i> and <i>N. bungarus</i> ..	0·00035	„
<i>Bungarus fasciatus</i>	0·0007	„

Effects of the Venom.

The effects of the venom have been carefully studied on warm and cold blooded animals by many observers for a long series of years, but there is a distinct difference in the action of different kinds of venom, and therefore it is as well to discuss the effect of each separately.

In doing this it will be noted that it is difficult to obtain undoubted cases of bites by definitely known snakes in man, and even when these are obtained the urgent necessity for treatment causes the symptoms to be little noted. Therefore it is necessary to detail first the experiments on animals, and then the symptoms found in man.

Colubrine Venom—*Naja tripudians* Merr.—The experiments of numerous observers show that the effects of this venom on animals are :—

1. Paralysis of voluntary movement.

2. Salivation.

3. Marked effect on the respiration, which ceases before the heart.

In smaller quantities the paralysis becomes more marked, and in cases of longer duration several features are added :—

1. Local inflammation where the bite was inflicted.

2. Lachrymation.

3. Mucous discharges from the nose, respiratory organs, and stomach.

4. Very occasionally the mucous discharges are stained with blood.

Beyond obvious pain, the local effects are engorgement of the vessels with blood, and effusion into the tissues. If the animal recovers, there may be suppuration and sloughing of the affected part. The effects on the nervous system seem to be due to the action of the poison on the brain and spinal cord, and *pari passu* on the motor nerve endings. The most evident paralysis is that of the tongue, larynx, and pharynx, as evinced by the inability to retain the saliva within the mouth, to move the tongue, or to swallow. This is due to the action of the poison on the medulla.

There is also, as indicated above, clear evidence of action upon the respiratory centre, which has been carefully studied by Wall and others, who show that in large doses there is a progressive slowing, and in smaller doses first acceleration and then slowing of the respirations. There appears to be but little effect upon the heart and circulation or temperature.

The effect on the blood in causing hæmolysis was first demonstrated by Cunningham, who considered it the main feature. Not merely are the corpuscles dissolved, but the coagulability is reduced, and hence the blood-staining of the tissues and the urine in experiments on animals, provided that artificial respiration is kept up.

The effects of the venom on man are local pain in the neighbourhood of the bite, which appears as two small punctures about $\frac{3}{4}$ inch apart, usually exuding a blood-stained fluid. The pain increases in severity, and spreads up the limb on to the body. In a short time the victim feels intoxicated, and presently loses control of his legs, which become paralyzed, as may other muscles, including those of the jaw. There is often profuse salivation, and inability to speak or swallow. The pulse and respirations increase for a time, and then the breathing becomes slower, and death occurs from failure of the respiration, while the heart continues to beat for a short time after the respirations have ceased.

If recovery takes place, the urgent symptoms abate, some slight fever and local swelling occurs, while a large amount of urine is passed.

When examined post mortem, it will be found that the rigor mortis is well marked, while the blood is fluid in man, but coagulated in animals. If the corpuscles are examined soon after death, no change will be noted, but later they alter, and blood-crystals, indicating hæmolysis, may form. The parotids may be swollen. The brain is normal, but the pia mater is gorged with blood. The muscles are often of a dirty red colour. The lungs in human beings are generally congested, and the bronchi and smaller tubes filled with thin frothy fluid and intensely congested. Particles of food or remedies are to be found in the air-tubes because of the paralysis of the larynx. The right heart is distended with blood. The liver is congested and dark. The kidneys may be normal or intensely congested. The intestines show nothing in particular. The bladder is contracted.

Microscopically, fatty degeneration of the liver and kidney, and necrosis of hepatic and renal epithelium, are to be seen, as well as round-celled infiltration along bile-ducts, which is probably due to excretion of poison.

Turning now to the colubrine snakes, which resemble the cobra, there are observations upon *Naja haje*, *N. bungarus*, *Bungarus candidus*, *B. fasciatus*, and the *Hydrophidæ*.

Naja haje L.—Calmette records that Dr. Deschamps observed a case of this bite in Senegal in which the snake bit the patient on the forehead. Almost immediately great weakness, accompanied by nausea and pains in the head and neck, set in. Locally two raised areas were seen, around which the tissue was œdematous. Cold sweats occurred. The œdema spread to the face, dyspnœa appeared, and the pulse became small and intermittent, paralysis set in, and the patient became comatose, but recovered on treatment with antivenene.

Naja bungarus Schleg.—*N. bungarus*, the hamadryad, is by far the biggest of the Indian poisonous snakes. Rogers finds its venom very like that of the cobra, producing paralysis and death from failure of respiration, while the heart continues to beat for a time.

There is no intravascular clotting, and the hæmolytic action is very slight, but the phrenic nerve-plates are paralyzed. If small doses are given, the respirations are increased.

We are not acquainted with the symptoms exhibited by an undoubted case of this bite in a human being.

Bungarus candidus L.—As to *B. candidus* L., the commonest of all Indian snakes, there is not much to say, except that all researches (Fayrer, Wall, and Rogers) indicate that its venom is almost exactly the same as that of the cobra, but is slightly more virulent.

Cases of this bite are common. In brief, the symptoms are:—a sense of tightness across the chest, with paralysis, particularly of the muscles of the face, deglutition and phonation. The conjunctivæ are suffused, the pupils dilated, the pulse and respirations quickened; the temperature is normal, and the local signs are not marked.

Coma and convulsions precede death, which is due to failure of respiration. Congestion of the meninges and brain and liquid blood are the principal signs found post mortem.

Bungarus ceylonicus (Gthr.).—*B. ceylonicus*, the Ceylon krait or carawala, has been reported by Green to have killed a man in twelve hours. The man was bitten on the left foot at 4 a.m., and felt quite well till 5.30 a.m., when he felt drowsiness, which increased till 10 a.m., when he could hardly swallow and was very sick. Paralysis affected his legs, and he became cold. Artificial respiration was now resorted to, but at 2 p.m. he became very feverish and insensible, and died at 4 p.m.

Bungarus fasciatus Schn.—The effects of the poison of *B. fasciatus* have been carefully studied by Wall, Lamb, and Rogers.

In acute cases death takes place quickly from failure of respiration; the blood is coagulated, and there is paralysis, and sometimes convulsions.

Chronic cases, on the other hand, last for days, during which there is loss of weight and emaciation, and perhaps some paralysis,

Microscopical examination of the cortex of the brain, medulla, and spinal cord shows diffuse chromatolysis, affecting a very considerable portion of the ganglion cells, being most marked in the cortex, next in the cord, least in the medulla. The cells show a rather deeply stained plasma, in which are scattered dust-like granules, the remnants of the Nissl bodies; many cells show vacuolation of the plasma, and some are reduced to mere outlines (ghost cells).

Rogers' experiments tend to show that even in injecting large doses the blood may not clot, and that the animal may be killed, as in cobra-venom, by direct action of the poison on the respiratory centre, and also on the nerve-endings of the phrenics, so that the venom appears to be a mixture of a viperine with a colubrine poison.

The only authentic case of human poisoning by *B. fasciatus* is mentioned by Fayrer, in which there was tingling sensation and later pain at the seat of the punctures, with some swelling, all of which disappeared in less than twenty-four hours.

Australian Snakes.—The symptoms produced by the bite of the Elapinae in Australia are local swelling and pain, followed in from fifteen minutes to two hours by constitutional symptoms. The patient becomes unable to stand, signs of prostration, accompanied by vomiting, appear. The circulation begins to fail, the heart's action becomes weak, the extremities cold, and the skin blanched, while the respiration, after a preliminary excitation, becomes slowed. Coma now intervenes, the sensations being diminished and the pupils dilated, and death results from failure of the respiration, preceded sometimes by convulsions. The heart continues to beat after the circulation has ceased.

Elaps fulvius, the harlequin snake, which is found in the eastern parts of the Southern United States, causes great local pain, followed in one hour by drowsiness, unconsciousness, and collapse,

lasting until death, or for a day or so if the patient recovers. Death usually ensues in about twenty-four hours after a bite, and in persons tending to recovery the danger of death is not escaped until three to four days have passed away, as the symptoms tend to recur periodically.

Spitting Snakes.—The known spitting snakes—*i.e.*, snakes which can project their venom to a distance—are *Sepedon hæmochates*, *Naja flava*, and *N. nigricollis*, *N. tripudians*, *Echis carinata*, with perhaps the addition of *N. melanoleuca* and *Vipera russellii*; and it is possible that further observations will show that all the Colubridæ and Viperidæ have this power to a greater or lesser extent. Of course the action is not spitting in the correct sense of the word, but merely projection of venom, which causes conjunctivitis if it enter the eyes, and a saltish taste if it enter the mouth.

The Hydrophidæ.—Rogers experimented with *Enhydrina valadien* Boie, *Distra cyanocincta* Daud, and *Hydrophis cantor* Gthr., and came to the conclusion that their venom only differed from that of the cobra in the following points:—

1. They were more toxic.
2. They were much less hæmolytic, and hence caused no blood-stained effusion at the site of the injection.
3. They did not affect the coagulability of the blood; therefore the poison is almost purely neurotoxic.

There is at first an excitation of the nervous system, leading to a feeling of activity and vivacity, which, however, soon passes off. The earliest signs of distress begin with difficulty of articulation and feeling of stiffness in the body and of suffocation. The stiffness in the muscles increases, and occasional spasms occur, while signs of gastric irritation, with vomiting, appear. Convulsions and death may ensue after a day or so. The local signs may be slight.

Viperine Venom.—*Vipera russellii* Shaw, the *tic polonga* of Ceylon, is a good example of this type of venom. Wall's experiments show that a dog bitten by one of these vipers will become convulsed, and die within five minutes. The cause of this sudden death has been shown by Rogers to be intravascular clotting, which is best marked in the portal vein, and then only in small animals. Post mortem, there are hæmorrhages into the area of the bite, and into kidney and intestine.

In addition to these acute cases, there are also chronic cases, in which the local symptoms are more or less extensive subcutaneous hæmorrhages, around which there is much œdema. This hæmorrhage may be absorbed, or the area may slough, or an abscess, or even a spreading gangrene, may ensue.

The general symptoms are rapid emaciation, profound anæmia and lethargy, and in some cases hæmaturia and a discharge of blood from the bowel.

Rogers has carefully investigated these symptoms, and has pointed out that there is a remarkable fall of blood-pressure due to vaso-dilatation of the portal system, caused by action of the poison

on the central, and not the peripheral vasomotor apparatus, the heart muscle being unaffected. Lamb and Hanna showed that in chronic cases there is deficiency in the blood coagulability.

In man there are the two small punctured wounds caused by the fangs, around which the skin is swollen and livid and painful. The swelling and discoloration spreads, and in the course of twenty-four hours the patient becomes at first excited, with thready pulse and hurried respirations, and later stuporous. The skin is clammy and covered with a cold sweat, while the swelling and discoloration spreads considerably, reaching the trunk. In due course convulsions set in, and death ensues from failure of the circulation. The post-mortem reveals congestion of the meninges and lungs with fluid blood, and nothing else of importance.

Bitis arietans.—The puff-adder poison was found by Rogers to work in much the same manner as that of *Vipera russellii*, but not to be so poisonous.

Echis carinata.—This is a very poisonous snake, and the effects of its bite resemble that of the cobra.

Wall records a case in which there was much local swelling, passage of blood in the urine, fæces, and vomit, elevation of temperature, and death from exhaustion, due to loss of blood, on the ninth day. Martin and Lamb record another case in which there was much swelling of the bitten part, due to exudation of liquid blood. Pain and tenderness were felt along the nerves, together with anæsthesia, extreme restlessness, with cold and clammy extremities, but no hæmorrhages. Loss of consciousness, with delirium, set in only a short time before death, which took place at the twenty-fifth hour.

Fayrer gives a good account of a chronic case, in which there was depression and faintness, coldness of the extremities, with swelling of the affected part, and marked hæmorrhages from eyes, gums, throat, nose, vagina, and under the nails.

The *Crotalidæ* are typically represented by *Crotalus horridus* of America, which has been carefully studied by Weir Mitchell and Reichert, and by *Lachesis*, which latter has been studied by Rogers in India.

Crotalus horridus.—The local effects are:—œdema, swelling, darkening of the parts with infiltration of incoagulable blood, breaking down of the tissues, putrefaction, and sloughing. There is no clotting of the blood, which, on the other hand, is fluid and incoagulable. There is a marked fall of blood-pressure, and respiration gradually ceases, due to the failure of the circulation, but there is no direct effect on the respiratory centre, and the phrenics are not paralyzed. The heart goes on beating after respiration ceases, but is slightly weakened. Post-mortem examination shows hæmorrhages into the peri- and endo-cardium, and into the peritoneum and pleura, but not in the brain or the medulla, while the whole portal system is much congested.

Rogers placed a loop of small intestine in an oncometer, and found

that fall of blood-pressure was associated with a vaso-dilatation of the portal system, in which the blood was not clotted. This vaso-dilatation he considers may possibly be due to the action of the venom on the vasomotor centre in the medulla, and thinks that he is supported in this theory by the appearance of Traube-Hering curves in his blood-pressure tracings.

Weir Mitchell and others have carefully collected the symptoms following this bite. In most instances the bite is painful, and the part becomes swollen and discoloured, while both the pain and the swelling increase steadily. The swelling is due to the effusion of blood. Very seldom is there any lymphangitis or enlargement of the lymphatic glands. Vesication, sloughing, and gangrene may result if life is prolonged and the dose considerable. If, on the other hand, the amount of poison injected is inconsiderable, the swelling declines, and the pain disappears very quickly. Constitutional symptoms are said by some people to begin directly after the bite, but this is hardly likely, as man is a relatively large animal. Under exceptional circumstances it is recorded that the symptoms did not begin till about thirty minutes after the bite, but usually the length of time is only a few minutes. The person feels extremely faint, or complains that his lower limbs are not able to support him. There is no primary stimulating effect like that mentioned in other venoms. The patient staggers or falls, cold sweats bathe the surface of the skin, and nausea and vomiting occur. The pulse is rapid and feeble, the expression anxious, and, according to Mitchell, in a few cases the mind may be slightly disturbed, but this may be largely due to fear. If the patient does not die at this stage, the local symptoms mentioned above become very pronounced, and signs of general blood-poisoning show themselves, and often lead to death.

The post-mortem reveals that the brain is normal, but congested and somewhat oedematous; the trachea and bronchi are congested, and full of red frothy mucus; while the lungs are healthy, but somewhat congested. The peritoneum may contain a little fluid, and the mucosa of the stomach and small intestines may be intensely congested and infiltrated with serum. In some cases the blood is coagulated, in some it is fluid. The local swelling is due to serous exudation. The chief features of the post-mortem are vaso-dilatation of the portal system and fluidity of the blood.

Lachesis.—This snake shows the same symptoms as *Crotalus*, but it has some effect upon the respiratory centre, causing quickening of respiration before the slowing begins. The phrenics are not paralyzed. Moreover, it is possible that the first quick fall of blood-pressure observed is due to action of the poison on the heart, but the subsequent steady fall is due to the action on the vasomotor centres, as in *Crotalus*.

Kitajima says that the region of the bite becomes dark purple in colour and swells; that the pain is severe and burning; and that the lymph glands become enlarged and tender. The face is pale,

the pulse feeble and rapid. Respiration is normal ; a slight fever is not infrequent. Coldness of the extremities, with dyspnœa and cold sweats, come on just before death. Blood has been observed in the urine and fæces.

Excretion of the Poison.

It is believed that the poison leaves the body principally by the kidney, and to a less extent by the mucosa of the stomach, the salivary and mammary glands.

With regard to the kidney, there is some direct proof of the excretion, because the urine of a dog poisoned by *Enhydrina valakadien*, when injected hypodermically into a pigeon, caused death in twenty-two hours.

It is also stated that 1 drachm of the saliva of a dog poisoned by a cobra was capable of causing death in two hours.

With regard to excretion by the mammary glands, an infant is said to have died after sucking the breast of a woman bitten by a poisonous snake.

Immunity.

Having considered the chemical composition and physiological action of the venom, the next point to be discussed is immunity to its action.

Ancient and modern peoples have equally held the belief that a person who has been bitten by a poisonous snake and survived obtains some sort of immunity ; generally the belief has been that this immunity is capable of protecting the individual against all kinds of snakes.

Ancient fables credited the Psylli of Africa, the Marsi of Italy, and Gouni of India, with immunity, on the ground that they had snake's blood in their veins.

The pig was long thought to be naturally immune ; but this is a mistake, for the relatively slight effect of snake-venom is due to the presence of the thick layer of but slightly vascular fat which surrounds the animal's body. The mongoose (*Herpestes ichneumon*) is believed to be naturally immune to cobra-bite.

Acquired immunity is said to occur among natives, especially snake-charmers, and Europeans who have been bitten several times by snakes. The Eisowy of Western Barbary are said to have acquired such an immunity, and to allow themselves to be bitten by snakes proved afterwards to be poisonous by killing a fowl. The natives of Bushmanland, Namaqualand, and Damaraland are said to drink the venom of snakes as a protection. In Ceylon a cobra is said to have bitten a snake-charmer, and shortly afterwards a bystander. The snake-charmer escaped without symptoms, the bystander died.

The first scientific attempt to produce an artificial immunity was made by Sewall in 1887, when by repeated small injections he raised the resistance of pigeons so high that they were able to resist ten times the minimum lethal dose of the venom of a *Crotalus*. Kanthack also produced a partial immunity to cobra-venom in 1891. Kaufmann, a little later, obtained a similar result with the French viper.

In 1892 Calmette showed that by repeated inoculation of venom heated to 80° C. a certain amount of resistance was produced in animals. In 1894 he made researches on the venom of the cobra,

and about the same time Phisalix and Bertrand investigated that of the viper, and showed that animals vaccinated with venom developed a true immunity, and those inoculated against the cobra-venom were able to resist mortal doses of *Vipera*, *Bungarus*, *Cerastes*, *Naja haje*, and *Pseudechis* venoms. Later they showed that the serum of an animal vaccinated by snake-venom contained antitoxins capable of producing an immunity in new animals.

Calmette obtained his serum from horses, but with great difficulty, as many of the animals died in the course of treatment from endocarditis and acute nephritis, while in others abscesses formed.

He found that in a fresh horse 0.025 gramme of cobra-venom was sufficient to kill the animal in twelve to twenty-four hours, but on vaccinating the animals for sixteen months, it was found that a horse could stand without reaction the injection of 2 grammes of cobra-venom—i.e., eighty times the M.L.D.

From such a horse it was found possible to withdraw as much as 20 litres of blood in three bleedings spread over ten days, the serum being considered to be ready for use when 1 c.c. mixed with 0.001 gramme of cobra-venom produced no sign of intoxication when injected subcutaneously into a rabbit, and when, after injecting 2 c.c. of the serum into a rabbit of 2 kilogrammes weight, two hours later 1 milligramme of venom could be injected without results. This serum was said to preserve intact its antitoxic value in all climates. The venom used for these injections was principally that of the cobra, with a slight admixture of other venoms.

In 1895-96 Fraser of Edinburgh confirmed Calmette's results, and believed that if an animal was so successfully vaccinated that it could resist the minimum lethal dose of one venom, it would also be able to resist that of other venoms. He believed that venom introduced into the stomach conferred immunity.

In 1897 C. J. Martin showed that Calmette's serum did not preserve animals against the venom of *Notechis scutatus*.

From 1901 onwards Lamb in India studied carefully the effects of snake-venoms, and came to the conclusion that Calmette's serum is active against cobra-venom, but is not useful against that of *Vipera russellii*, *Bungarus fasciatus*, or of *Echis carinatus*.

In 1902 Tidswell showed that serum prepared from the venom of *Notechis scutatus* did not neutralize the venoms of the cobra, *Bungarus fasciatus*, or *Vipera russellii*, and, further, had no effect on the venoms of the brown and black snakes and death-adder of Australia.

In the same year Lamb pointed out that there was a precipitin in venom-immune sera, and this point being further investigated by Hunter, the deduction was made that these precipitins were specific, and due to the coagulable proteids.

The following pure sera have been prepared :—

1. *Lamb's Pure Naja Tripudians Merrem Serum*.—This serum is strongly antitoxic for cobra-venom, and in large doses for *Enhydrina valakadien* Boie, but has no effect upon *Bungarus can-*

didus L., *Brachyaspis curta* Schleg, *Echis carinatus* Schn., *Lachesis gramineus* Shaw, *Vipera russellii* Shaw.

It delays death in *Bungarus fasciatus* Schn., *Naja bungarus* Schleg, *Crotalus durissus* L.

2. *Lamb's Pure Vipera russellii* Shaw Serum.—This serum neutralizes the venom of *Vipera russellii* and *Crotalus durissus*, but has no action upon—Colubridæ : *Naja tripudians* Meer, *N. bungarus* Schleg, *Bungarus candidus* L., *B. fasciatus* Schn., *Enhydrina valakadien* Boie ; Viperidæ : *Echis carinatus* Schn., *Lachesis gramineus* Shaw.

3. *Tidswell's Pure Notechis Scutatus* Ptrs. Serum.—This serum has a strong antitoxic effect upon the venom of *Notechis scutatus*, but has no effect upon that of—Colubridæ : *Naja tripudians* Meer, *N. bungarus* Schleg, *Bungarus candidus* L., *B. fasciatus* Schn., *Enhydrina valakadien* Boie ; Viperidæ : *Vipera russellii* Shaw, *Echis carinatus* Schn., *Lachesis gramineus* Shaw, *Crotalus durissus* L.

4. *Noguchi's Pure Crotalus* Serum.—It has a strong effect upon *Crotalus* venom, and a slight effect upon *Ancistrodon piscivorus* Lacép, and none on the cobra.

5. *Noguchi's Pure Ancistrodon Piscivorus* Lacép Serum.—This has a marked effect upon moccasin-venom, and medium effect upon *Crotalus*, and none on cobra-venom.

6. *Brazil's Pure Crotalus Horridus* L. Serum.—This serum is equally efficient for the venoms of *Crotalus horridus* or *C. durissus*, but is useless for cobra-venom.

The Caracas Commission reports that this serum is more efficacious against the venom of *Crotalus* than that of Calmette, which fails to neutralize the hæmorrhagins.

7. *Kitajima's Pure Lachesis Flavoviridis* Hallow Serum.—This serum is specific for *Lachesis* venom, against which Calmette's serum is useless.

It is clear that the antisera mentioned above are very nearly specific, for they neutralize principally the venom of the species employed, and sometimes, in larger doses, that of some allied species.

It is obvious that this is of great importance in considering the serum treatment of snake-bite.

8. *Polyvalent Sera*.—Polyvalent sera prepared for more than two venoms are not very efficacious.

Diagnosis.

It might be thought that the diagnosis of snake-bite would be obvious, and that nothing need be written on the subject, but this is not always so, because snake-bite often takes place in the dark, and the nature of the snake is unknown.

The diagnosis may be divided into two heads :—(1) Has a snake bitten the person ? (2) Was the snake a poisonous one ?

The first thing to do is to tie a proximal ligature on the limb, and then to examine the area of the supposed bite. If there are

absolutely no fang-marks and no venom on the skin, then obviously there is no danger; but fang-marks on the skin, or venom on mucous membranes (which, of course, may have cracks), or on skin with scratches, may be dangerous.

If there are no fang-marks, and the snake is forthcoming, examine it to see whether it is poisonous or not, especially to see whether there are fangs, and if non-poisonous, the patient's mind can be relieved at once.

Prognosis.

It appears that only a relatively small percentage of persons bitten by snakes (supposed to be poisonous) die. C. J. Martin and Lamb place it about 30 per cent., but much depends upon the quantity of venom injected and the rapidity with which symptoms develop. Personally, we believe that in most cases if treatment has been prompt, and the symptoms appear slowly, the outlook is by no means hopeless.

Treatment.

Snake-poisoning consists in the hypodermic or intravascular injection of a series of poisonous principles which act chiefly upon the nervous system and the blood.

The virulence of the poisoning depends upon the ratio of the quantity of the poison injected to the size of the animal. The same quantity of poison will therefore have a more serious effect upon a child than upon an adult. The less the quantity of poison which gets into the general circulation, the less the symptoms; hence the first indication for treatment is to prevent the passage of the poison, as far as possible, into the circulation.

The second indication for treatment is to neutralize the poison which has got into the system, and the third indication is to treat special symptoms as they appear.

1. Prevent the Poison getting into the General Circulation.—In order to prevent the poison getting into the general circulation, three points must be attended to:

(1) Stoppage of the flow of blood and lymph from the affected area.

(2) Free opening of the poisoned area.

(3) The neutralization of the poison locally.

(1) *Stoppage of the Flow of Blood and Lymph from the Affected Area.*—A person is usually bitten in the arm or leg, and in such a case the old treatment advised by Celsus should be carried out by applying a tight ligature round the affected limb on the proximal side of the wound, so as to compress the blood and lymphatic vessels. In order to do this successfully, the ligature must be applied to the arm or the thigh—*i.e.*, where there is one bone—and not the forearm or leg.

Such a ligature cannot be left in position indefinitely, otherwise gangrene will result; and after some attempts at neutralization of

the poison have been made, it must be loosened for a couple of seconds and reapplied, and this must be repeated. It must be kept on for at least twenty or thirty minutes.

The advantages of the ligature or tourniquet have been known since ancient times, but recently C. J. Martin has shown that its principal action with colubrine poison is not merely to delay the absorption of the poison, but also to give time for any already absorbed to be excreted. In the viperine poisons, which coagulate the blood by fibrin ferment, it is most beneficial; for the blood, in coagulating locally, retains the poison, which therefore but slowly passes into the general circulation, and may, as Martin and Lamb suggest, unite with the cells near the bite.

There is therefore no doubt that the correct immediate treatment in a bite due to any kind of poisonous snake on a limb is the application of a proximal tourniquet.

(2) *Free Opening into the Poisoned Area.*—It will be obvious that the two minute punctures caused by the fangs are not sufficiently large openings into the area of the bite for the application of antidotes.

Therefore the next step is to cut, not merely round the apertures of the fangs, but also to extend the incision along the course of the veins and lymphatics, and in some cases to remove the piece of skin marked out. In this way the area of inoculation is freely opened.

(3) *Neutralization of the Poison Locally.*—The next indication is to diminish the toxicity of the poison as much as possible, and to do this the best remedy we at present possess is *permanganate of potash*, though recent laboratory experiments have thrown some doubt upon its efficacy.

This should be used in strong solution, and not as a solid, as the liquid penetrates better into the interstices of the wound, which should be well washed with it. For carrying out this treatment a most useful little case has been devised containing a little lancet for making the wound, and permanganate crystals for making a solution. This little case only costs a few pence, and can be carried without any inconvenience in the waistcoat pocket, and therefore should be carried by everyone in countries where poisonous snakes abound, especially when on business or pleasure in jungles or grassy places. Should there be no water available to make a solution, then the crystals can be rubbed into the wound.

If the bite is on the head or trunk, the incision should be made as above, and the resulting wound thoroughly soaked with permanganate of potash solution (3 per cent.). The subcutaneous tissue must be freely opened, otherwise the permanganate may be prevented from doing its work properly.

The after-treatment should be boric fomentations, frequently repeated at first; but if there is no marked swelling of the part, these may be gradually, not quickly, diminished in number, and finally a mild antiseptic dressing should be applied until the wound heals.

2. **Neutralization of the Poison in the System.**—We have already endeavoured to impress on the reader the following facts :—

- (1) The specificity of snake-venom.
- (2) The inutility of an antiserum prepared for one venom against another venom.

It now remains to consider these subjects from a practical point of view.

The serum most readily obtained is Calmette's, in 20 c.c. and 50 c.c. phials standardized against cobra and *Vipera russellii* venoms, and prepared by the immunization of horses against these venoms, as well as those of *Bungarus* (krait) and *Enhydrina* (sea-snake). Reliable sera are also prepared by the Indian Pasteur Institute of Kasauli for the venoms of the cobra and Russell's viper.

All these sera, unfortunately, deteriorate quickly unless kept in a dark and cool place, and, further, must be used in large doses, for even when fresh, 1 c.c. will only neutralize 1 milligramme of cobra-venom. A healthy cobra when it bites may inject from 250 to 350 milligrammes of venom, of which the minimum lethal dose may be estimated at 15 to 17.5 milligrammes for a person weighing 60 to 70 kilogrammes; therefore at least 350 c.c. of the antivenene must be injected intravenously, or ten to twenty times that amount must be injected subcutaneously—*i.e.*, from 3,500 to 7,000 c.c.

The antivenene, of course, will succeed in much smaller doses if a small quantity of venom has been injected, and will fail if the quantity be large. Therefore the obvious indication is to begin with 100 c.c. of antivenene, injected hypodermically or far better intravenously, and to repeat this several times if necessary. The technique for the intravenous injection is as follows :—

An all-glass syringe should be carefully sterilized by boiling, and the skin over the vein must be cleansed with 1 in 40 carbolic and with absolute alcohol; a band should be tied round the arm, so that the vein shows up clearly, and the needle should be inserted with the aperture pointing proximally—*i.e.*, towards the heart—and should be felt free in the vein. The ligature should then be removed and the serum slowly injected. On removal of the needle, an antiseptic pad and bandage should be applied.

If, on the other hand, the species of snake which inflicted the wound is known, and the particular serum for that animal's venom happens to be available in good condition, then it should be used intravenously.

3. **Treatment of Special Symptoms**—(1) *Failure of the Respiration*.—The experiments of Fayrer, Brunton, and Rogers seem to indicate that in cases of poisoning due to cobra and sea-snake venoms artificial respiration should be resorted to when natural respiration is failing and medical aid or remedies are being sent for.

(2) *Failure of Circulation*.—In poisoning due to viper-venoms, which produce, according to Rogers, a paralysis of the central vasomotor centre, he recommends that :—

- (a) A binder should be applied to the abdomen and bandages to

the legs, so that as much blood as possible may be available for maintaining the circulation of the brain and medulla.

(b) That hypodermic injections of adrenalin be used to constrict the peripheral vessels and to stimulate the vasomotor centre.

In both colubrine and viperine poisons it is obvious that the circulation should also be maintained by the applications of warmth, by stimulants, either alcoholic or ammoniacal, or by strychnine hypodermically.

Summary.—1. Apply proximal ligature.

2. Freely open the cellular tissue in the vicinity of the bite.

3. Wash the wound well with a strong solution of permanganate of potash (3 per cent.), or apply crystals.

4. Inject 100 c.c. of fresh antivenene intravenously.

5. Artificial respiration, if necessary.

6. Keep up the circulation by binders to abdomen, bandages to legs, stimulants, and hypodermic injections of strychnine.

Other Methods of Treatment.

Other methods of treatment which may be briefly mentioned are :—

Snake-Stones.—The cure which is strongly believed in by the native is the snake-stone. These stones are smooth, highly polished, very light, black bodies, said to consist of calcined animal bone soaked several times with blood, and calcined after each soaking. It is easy to understand that these stones are very hygroscopic, and when applied to a wound, cling tightly, and suck up fluids, and perhaps some poison. There are supposed to be three kinds of stones :—(1) Those composed of burnt bone ; (2) those composed of chalk ; (3) those composed of burnt vegetal substance. Of these three only the first is considered of value.

The method of use is as follows :—Puncture the wounds of the snake-bite slightly, and apply the stone, which adheres for about two minutes, and should then drop off into a vessel of water, after which it should be dried by a cloth, and applied again to the wound, when it will adhere for about a minute. It should be applied a third time. During application the limb should be rubbed towards the stone. The stones are used principally in India and Ceylon, but they are also known in Mexico as 'piedra ponsona.' It is hardly necessary to say that from the days of Redi it has been shown how useless these stones are.

Exorcism of the poison by shouting charmed verses is used in India. Numerous plants, seeds, earth moistened with urine, etc., have been extolled as cures.

Ammonia.—Of all the old remedies ammonia has lived the longest, and it is almost incredible that Fontana settled the question as to its lack of utility by his experiments on vipers more than 130 years ago. Whether given by the mouth, injected subcutaneously, or into a vein, it is useless, except as a stimulant, when it is certainly of no more use than alcohol. Fayrer has shown that if liquor ammoniæ is mixed in more than equal parts with venom, it does not destroy the poison.

Oils.—It is extraordinary how the remedies of the Middle Ages are clung to, and oil is still used, though known to be useless since the days of Morgagni.

Strychnine.—Many years ago Duncan recommended strychnine as a remedy for East Indian snake-bites. Recently Müller of Victoria, Australia, has strongly recommended the hypodermic injection of this drug. He says that never less than $\frac{1}{10}$ grain is to be used, and this must be increased in urgent cases to $\frac{1}{8}$ or $\frac{1}{4}$, and repeated every fifteen or twenty minutes, until the symptoms of snake-poisoning are removed. If a fang has perforated a vein, he

recommends intravenous injection instead of subcutaneous. The patient must be watched for twenty-four hours after the disappearance of the last symptoms, in order to combat a sudden relapse. Colonel Duke, in 1895, highly recommends this remedy.

Arsenic.—Arsenic is principally famous as the Tanjore pill, which was said to contain white arsenic and many other substances, but is quite useless.

Iodine.—Brainard's remedy was the injection of a solution of 10 grains of iodine and 30 grains of iodide of potassium, dissolved in 1 ounce of water, and probably owed its reputation to its caustic action.

Bromine was at one time considered a specific.

Caustics.—Fontana strongly advised caustics, which he considered to be useful, but long experience has shown their inutility.

Stimulants.—Brandy and whisky have been repeatedly vaunted, and so have sinapisms, warmth to the precordial region, and electricity along the spine, but all these are useless.

Energetic Movements.—Energetic movements, such as walking the patient about, flogging him, pinching him, have been advised, but are contra-indicated, as tending to exhaustion and to hasten the end.

Prophylaxis.

In the tropics Europeans and better-class Natives seldom suffer from snake-bite, because they do not sleep on the ground, in the open or in small huts, like the lower-class Native. Among the latter, however, any prophylaxis is difficult in regions such as India, because they reverence the cobra, and encourage it to take up its abode in their huts.

Gardens should be kept free from jungle or long grass, and gratings should be placed on the drains from bath-rooms, as snakes have often been found in these rooms.

Good strong boots and the puttee pattern of legging should be worn when going shooting or into the jungle. A lantern should be used when walking after dark, and the small permanganate case already mentioned should be carried in the waistcoat pocket in case of accidents.

LACERTILIA.

FAMILY HELODERMATIDÆ.

In the Lacertilia there are two rather celebrated lizards—*Heloderma horridum* Wiegmann and *H. suspectum* Cope—which were placed by Sumichrast in the family Varanidæ, and though this may be disputed, still, it is probable that they are allied closely to that family.

Heloderma horridum Wiegmann, 1834.

Synonym.—*Trachyderma horridum* Wiegman., 1829.

This lizard lives exclusively in Mexico in the hot zone which extends from the western slope of the Cordilleras to the Pacific. It inhabits the hot, dry districts of Jamiltepec, Juchitan, and Tehuantepec, where it lives in holes dug at the roots of trees or under vegetable débris. It is called 'escorpion' by the Creoles, and 'tala-chini' by the Zapotec Indians; and in 1651 Hernandez says it was called 'acastetepon' by the Mexicans.

When irritated, there escapes from its mouth a white, glutinous fluid, which is secreted by the large salivary glands. Its bite is much dreaded by the natives, who say that ill-effects are produced thereby and by eating its flesh. It may reach to a length of nearly five feet when old. We are not aware of observations on the bite or venom of this reptile.

***Heloderma suspectum* Cope, 1869.**

Cope gave the lizard the name *suspectum*, because he suspected that its bite would be found to be poisonous. This lizard is found in the United States—in Arizona, Texas, Utah, New Mexico, and Southern California—where it is called the 'gila monster.' The poison apparatus consists of glands under the lower jaw and teeth in that jaw.

The poison gland in this species lies on either side of the lower jaw, and from its mesial aspect four ducts pass upwards, each towards its opening on the outer surface of the mandible, through which it passes obliquely upwards and inwards, to end at the base of a tooth near the termination of a groove.

The upper teeth are also grooved, but Schufeldt failed to find any gland wherewith they could be supplied with poison.

There appears to be no doubt as to the poisonous nature of the secretion from the glands above mentioned, for Bonberger records that a bite in the leg of a guinea-pig caused convulsions and death in three minutes.

Venom.—The venom was obtained by Mitchell and Reichert by making the lizard bite a saucer. It was found to be alkaline, with a weak smell, and to kill frogs, pigeons, and rabbits.

The effects of gila poison have been most carefully investigated by Weir Mitchell and Reichert, and by Van Denburgh and Wight.

The latter consider that it differs in no important respect from snake-venoms, causing death by acting directly upon the respiratory centre in the medulla, and causing paralysis of respiration. Its other actions are to first stimulate and then paralyze the heart by poisoning its muscular fibres. On inoculation, there is an immediate great fall of blood-pressure, but whether this is due to action on the vasomotor centre or not is not clearly known. There is a secondary gradual fall due to cardiac failure. The motor nerves and cells are not affected, but the sensory apparatus is at first rendered more irritable and then paralyzed. Coagulation of the blood is at first accelerated and then retarded, so that it may become incoagulable. Hæmolysis may occur. Local signs are almost nil, as a rule a little œdema and slight extravasation being present.

Symptoms.—Very severe pains radiating from the part, rapid swelling, faintness, profuse perspiration, may be noted.

Treatment.—A proximal ligature should be applied if on a limb, and permanganate of potash, 1-3 in 100, should be used to bathe the wound, which, finally, should be dressed aseptically.

***Lanthonotus borneensis*.**

This lizard, which is closely allied to *Heloderma*, is suspected of being poisonous, but there are as yet no proofs of this. Its habitat is Borneo.

MAMMALIA.

The bites of many mammals, including that of man himself, are known to produce very severe inflammation, probably because of micro-organisms introduced at the time of the injury. Excluding these, there are two mammals suspected of causing poisoning—viz., *Ornithorhynchus paradoxus*, belonging to the Monotremata, and the other the rat, belonging to the rodents.

MONOTREMATA.***Ornithorhynchus paradoxus*.**

As is well known, the males of this animal, which is only found in Australia, have large spurs projecting backwards from their hind limbs. These spurs are hollow, and into them open the ducts of poison glands. The venom is an albuminous fluid containing albumoses.

Injected subcutaneously, it only causes local swelling, and the animal recovers in a few days. Injected intravenously, it causes fall in the blood-pressure and death from respiratory failure. The heart appears to be unaffected, but the blood in the venous system is found coagulated after death, which takes place in twenty-five to thirty minutes. The venom has no hæmolytic or proteolytic action.

The difference between the slight effect of the subcutaneous and the serious effect of the intravenous injection is thought to be due to the fact that the poison is but slowly absorbed.

In a man who was stung on the hand the symptoms were very severe pain, swelling in the hand, which rapidly spread up the arm, difficulty in opening the mouth, cold sweats, with severe sickness. Recovery took place in a few days as far as the general symptoms were concerned, but it was several weeks before the hand quite recovered.

The treatment has generally been ammonia, but the symptoms and the experiments point to a venom closely related to viperine poison, and we should recommend the proximal ligature and permanganate of potash—in fact, the treatment advocated for snake-bite.

REFERENCES.

Ophidia.

- ALCOCK AND ROGERS (1901). Proceedings of the Royal Society, August 22.
 BADALONI (1884). *La vipera ed il suo veleno*. Bologna. (1882). *Sul permanganato di Potasso quale Antidoto del veleno dei Serpente*. Bull. delle scienze Mediche. Bologna.
 BOULENGER (1896). Catalogue of Snakes. British Museum.
 BRAZIL (1905). *L'Intoxication d'origine ophidienne*. Paris. (1906). British Medical Journal, i.
 BRUNTON (1891). British Medical Journal, I., i. 1.
 BRUNTON AND FAYRER. Proceedings of the Royal Society, xxi., xxii., and xxiii.
 CALMETTE (1907). *Les Venins*. Paris. (1893). *Ann. de l'Institut Pasteur*, Paris, VII. (1894), VII. (1895), IX. (1896). *Lancet*, ii.
 DAVY (1821). *On the Poisons of Three of the Poisonous Snakes of Ceylon*. London. (1839). *Physiological and Anatomical Researches*, i. 113.
 London. *On Snake-Stones*. Asiatic Researches, xiii. 317.
 ELLIOTT (1900). *Researches into the Nature and Action of Snake-Venom*. British Medical Journal, i. 309, ii. 217. (1901). *Indian Medical Gazette*. (1904). *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society*, London.
 FAUST, E. S. (1906). *Die Tierischen Gifte*. Braunschweig, pp. 29-94. (Copious literature.)
 FAYRER, SIR JOSEPH (1872). *Thanatophidia of India*. London. And many other publications.
 FITZSIMONS, F. W. (1912). *The Snakes of South Africa*. Cape Town.
 FLEXNER AND NOGUCHI (1903). *Journal of Pathology and Bacteriology*.
 GREEN (1908). *Spolia Zeylanica*, v., part xviii., p. 103.
 KITAJIMA (1908). *Philippine Journal of Sc. B.*, iii. 151.
 KYES (1906). *Ehrlich's Studies on Immunity*, pp. 291, 443, 466. (1910). *Journal Infectious Disease*.
 LAMB, G. (1903). *Sci. Mem. Medical Officers of India*, November. (1909). *Trans. Bombay Med. Congress*.
 LAMB AND HANNA (1901). *Lancet*, i. *Journal of Pathology and Bacteriology*. 1902.
 MARTIN, C. J. (1895). *Proceedings of the Royal Society of New South Wales*.
 MARTIN AND LAMB. *Snake-Poison and Snake-Bite*. *System of Medicine*, by Allbutt and Rolleston, ii., part ii., pp. 783-821. (Copious literature.)
 NOGUCHI (1906). *Journal of Experimental Medicine*, viii. 87; (1907) ix. 436; (1909) *Snake Venoms*.
 PHISALIX AND BERTRAND (1894). *Comptes Rendus Acad. de Science*. Paris, cxviii. 6 and 7. *Comptes Rendus Soc. de Biologie*.

- QUELCH, J. J. Zoologist. 1893.
 ROGERS (1904). Phil. Trans. B., clxvii. 123-191.
 WALL (1883). Indian Snake-Poisons. Allan and Co. (A most interesting little book.)
 WALL, F. (1909). Poisonous Terrestrial Snakes.
 WILLSON (1908). Snake Poisoning.
 WEIR, MITCHELL. On the Venom of the Rattlesnake. Smithsonian Contributions to Knowledge, xii.
 WEIR, MITCHELL, AND REICHERT. Researches upon the Venoms of Poisonous Serpents. Smithsonian Contributions to Knowledge, xxvi. (Copious literature.)
 WEST (1895). Proceedings of the Zoological Society, p. 313.

Lacertilia.

- FAUST (1906). Die Tierischen Gifte. Braunschweig.
 FAYRER, SIR JOSEPH (1882). Proceedings of the Zoological Society of London, p. 632.
 JAMIESON, SIR J. (1818). Transactions of the Linnean Society of London, xii. 584.
 MARTIN, J. C., AND TIDSWELL (1894). Proceedings of the Linnean Society of New South Wales.
 PACKARD, A. S. (1882). The American Naturalist, p. 842. Philadelphia.
 SHUFELDT, R. W. (1890). Proceedings of the Zoological Society of London, p. 148. (Full literature up to 1890.)
 SHUFELDT, R. W. (1882). The American Naturalist, pp. 907-908. Philadelphia.
 SUMICHRIST, F. (1864). Annals and Magazine of Natural History, xiii. 497.
 WEIR MITCHELL, AND REICHERT, E. T. (1883). Medical News, February, 1883. Science I., 13, 372. (Celebrated paper on the poisonous effects of the bite.)



SECTION C

PARASITIC CAUSES OF DISEASE

CHAPTER XIV

ANIMAL PARASITES

Parasitic causes of disease — Animal parasites — Protozoa — Sarcodina — Amœbina — Gymnamœbida — Löschia — Vahlkamfia — Paramœba — Chlamydophrys — References.

In tropical medicine the parasitic causes of disease may be classified into—A. Animal Parasites ; B. Vegetal Parasites.

ANIMAL PARASITES

Definition.—A parasite is defined to be a living organism, animal or vegetal, which takes up its abode temporarily or permanently on or within other living organisms (called the hosts) for the purpose of obtaining food.

Remarks.—Animal parasites (zooparasites), in the process of obtaining this food, may cause disease by their mechanical action and chemical products, or by introducing into the host pathogenic micro-organisms.

As examples of the latter may be mentioned the transmission of the animal organism which causes malaria by certain members of a family of the mosquitoes, or that of the vegetal organism which is the cause of plague by certain fleas. Intestinal worms probably cause many of the symptoms of the disease with which they are associated by the introduction into the body of poisons through their bites, or, according to Sambon, by their active migrations before attaining maturity and reaching their selective anatomical habitat.

A well-known example of the irritation caused by the introduction of chemical poisons is the ordinary mosquito-bite already described, while *Trichinella spiralis* produces severe disturbance during its wanderings through the body.

Mechanically the jigger (*Dermatophilus penetrans*) causes much irritation to the foot, and *Loa loa* to the eye.

Animals may be only 'temporary parasites'—i.e., they may only

temporarily affect the host, as, for example, mosquitoes—or they may be ‘*stationary parasites*,’ such as the malarial organism which lives in the red cells of the blood. These latter may be subdivided into ‘*periodical parasites*,’ which only spend a portion of their life-history within a host, and ‘*permanent*,’ which are parasitic throughout the whole life-cycle. As an example of the former may be mentioned the larvæ of certain flies which are parasitic, while the fly itself is not, and of the latter *Oxyuris vermicularis* is a good example.

Animal parasites may be classified into *ectoparasites* or *epizoa*, affecting the skin and exterior of the host; and *endoparasites* or *entozoa*, affecting the internal organs or cavities of the host.

Until recent years the greatest confusion existed as to the nature of parasites. With our present knowledge it appears that parasites, however altered in structure some of them may have become during their parasitic existence, have been originally derived from free-living forms. It will, however, be noted that there are great differences in the structure and appearance between some of the permanent parasites and their nearest free-living affinities. This difference has been brought about mainly by environment.

The permanent parasite, particularly if an entozoon, has food prepared for it by its host in an easily assimilated form; hence there is no necessity for a complicated digestive apparatus, which in certain cases has entirely disappeared.

Further, certain parasites, having reached an organ which supplies them with suitable food, do not require organs of locomotion, for they have only to remain where they are, and the tissues of the host will subserve their purpose. Some of them have no necessity as a rule for locomotion for sexual purposes, because hermaphroditism is common, and even in cases where this is not found parasites often live in couples (male and female). Being enclosed in the body of the host, there is no necessity for sense organs; therefore these are much reduced, or are absent.

On the other hand, the parasite requires something to enable it to fix itself firmly to the tissues of the host; hence suckers and hooks are often found, and also clasping and clinging organs.

The chance of a parasite, locked up inside a host, successfully reproducing its species is small; hence reproduction assumes important features associated with the production of large numbers of new forms, which are often protected by shells or other coverings.

Reproduction may be asexual, especially in the protozoa, or sexual. Sexual reproduction in parasites is generally complicated, ending in the production of large quantities of eggs or spores; and very often the spores of the protozoa or the corresponding larval forms of the metazoa may travel through one or more intermediary hosts before they infect another definite host—that is, one in which the sexual life-history is gone through.

With regard to the sexual process, it may be noted that often the male is smaller than the female, and in fewer numbers, but there are exceptions.

Usually parasites keep strictly to certain hosts called 'normal hosts,' but at times they are found in unusual hosts—for example, *Echinorhynchus gigas*, which is usually found in pigs, may infect man. Such a parasite is called a 'chance parasite,' while objects mistaken for parasites are known as 'pseudoparasites.'

The above are examples of simple parasitism; but there are parasites which are parasitic upon other parasites—a condition called 'hyperparasitism.' These hyperparasites may be secondary, tertiary, or quaternary, and their importance in disease has been emphasized by Sambon, who has shown that it may be one of the causes of the disappearance of malaria from a district, for the black spores found by Ross in mosquitoes infected with malaria are now known to be hyperparasites of the genus *Nosema*.

For further remarks see the article on Metazoan Parasites.

Nomenclature.

Medical men in the tropics are at present almost daily discovering new, or what are thought to be new, parasites, and are generally desirous of giving them definite names, but before doing so it behoves the discoverer to know and obey the international code laid down by zoologists, for which purpose they should study Stiles's pamphlet in the bulletins of the United States Public Health and Marine Hospitals Service.

Four rules may be mentioned here:

1. **Language Rule.**—The name given to the parasite must be in Latin, and not in any vernacular.

2. **Rule of Priority.**—The valid name for a genus or species is the oldest available name. Therefore, in describing a species or genus, give not merely the name of the authority who invented the term, but the date also.

3. **Rule of Homonyms.**—When two distinct genera or species of animals receive the same name, that applied earliest alone must stand.

4. **Rule of Appropriateness.**—No name is allowed to be changed simply because it is inappropriate.

With regard to disease there is no fixed rule, but we feel sure that if medical men would attempt to evolve a fixed method of nomenclature, much confusion would be avoided.

When an animal parasite causes a series of symptoms in a man or an animal, it is usual to name the affection by that of the animal causing the disease, together with the suffix 'iasis.' Thus, *Löshia tetragena* causes löshial dysentery and liver abscess, etc., which may be classed together under the term 'Löshiasis'; or *Paragonimus westermani* causes a varied number of symptoms, which can all be classed together as 'Paragonimiasis.'

The drawback to this nomenclature is that, parasites being very often changed from genus to genus, such terms are not permanent. For instance, the same pathological condition may be indicated by various authorities with the terms 'Amœbiasis,' 'Entamœbiasis,' 'Löshiasis.' We therefore prefer, wherever possible, to use common names for diseases—e.g., 'Kala Azar.'

Classification.

The animals which cause and convey the diseases of man may be classified into the following subkingdoms: Subkingdom I., Protozoa; Subkingdom II., Metozoa.

SUBKINGDOM I. PROTOZOA.

Definition.—Protozoa are unicellular animals, solitary or united into colonies, free-living or parasitic, with asexual reproduction (schizogony) by binary fission, budding or fragmentation and sexual reproduction (sporogony), or merely rejuvenescence by conjugation.

Remarks.—The border-line between unicellular animals and unicellular plants is very vague, and hence at present it is uncertain whether some forms should be classed with the bacteria and considered to be plants, or with the protozoa and considered to be animals.

Phylogenesis.—There can be little doubt that the primitive form of protozoon must have been an animal with some of the characteristics of the amoeba, and would most likely be free-living, most probably in water. This simple form, taken into the alimentary canal of higher animals, possibly benefited by the ease with which food was obtained and by the protection afforded by the new position, and thus became modified to suit its environment. The most important modification would be some protection for the earliest stages of its life-history, which would enable it to live in the outside world until taken up by a suitable host, and associated with this would be the necessity to produce large numbers of such protected spores, as the chance of one finding a suitable host must be relatively small. Such a type would be represented by the *Löschia coli* Lösch, which is a parasite of man. Such a parasite may cause no harm to its host, which is fairly indifferent to its existence. On the other hand, a parasite may not find sufficient nutriment in the alimentary canal, and be compelled to seek better food, and perhaps more protection, by entering the glands of Lieberkühn, or even the submucosa of the bowel. Such a parasite might cause disease in its host, and would be illustrated by the *Löschia tetragena* Viereck of man.

Such a process, however, took place not merely in man, but in many other kinds of animals, among which may be mentioned insects, in the alimentary canal of many of which, protozoan parasites are found. In these insects the sexual process takes place, and therefore they are the definitive hosts, and may also be considered the primary hosts.

If these primary hosts become predatory, biting and sucking the blood of other animals—e.g., vertebrates—then, during this process, they might pass the spores of their parasites into the blood of the vertebrata, and if these are not killed off (for some animals are repellent) by chemical substances, or destroyed by leucocytes, they might develop in the blood of some vertebrate (called tolerant), which thus becomes the secondary host.

It is, of course, possible that some of these blood protozoa may have been derived from parasites originally intestinal in the vertebrate, which found their way not merely into the mucosa of the

bowel, but later into the blood-stream, in which they would be fairly well protected, and from which they would at first escape by becoming encysted in the intestinal wall, and then, bursting into the bowel, make their way to the exterior with the faecal matter and so infect a new host. When blood-sucking animals became evolved, a new cycle would be open for them—viz., from the vertebrate through the blood-sucker back to the vertebrate—and thus the old method by way of the alimentary canal would be lost.

The origin of the protozoan blood-parasites of man may therefore be twofold: (a) from man's intestine into the blood; (b) from an invertebrate's alimentary canal into the blood of man.

The result of one or other of these methods is well illustrated by the malarial parasite, which passes through its sexual cycle in an *Anopheline* mosquito, which is its definitive and, according to the view adopted, its primary or secondary host. When the infected *Anopheline* bites a man, the parasite enters into the blood-stream, in the red cells of which it develops and undergoes its asexual cycle. Man is therefore the intermediary, and either the primary or secondary, host of the malarial parasite, as mentioned above.

The blood-stream of man contains two different elements—(1) liquor sanguinis; (2) cells—(a) red, (b) white. Therefore the parasite has two possibilities before it—either to live in the liquor or in a cell, or partially in one and partially in the other; and this last is what generally happens—i.e., the parasite lives so much of its cycle in a cell and so much in the blood-stream. It would, however, appear that there is a great phylogenetic tendency for protozoan parasites to leave the liquor sanguinis and to reside in red cells (the malarial parasite) or in white cells or in endothelial cells (the Leishman-Donovan parasite).

Infection of the Embryo.—Protozoan blood parasites apparently can be arranged in two categories as regards the infection of the foetus, for some, like the malarial parasite (which is generally considered to be incapable), do not traverse the placenta, while others, like the *Spirochaetes* and *Treponemata*, can do so. With regard to the infection of invertebrate eggs the matter is quite different, for many of these parasites infect the eggs, thus carrying the germs of disease into a new generation of blood-suckers.

It would appear as though the intracellular stage enabled the parasite to grow (e.g., consider Schaudinn's history of the development of *Hæmoproteus noctuæ* in the little owl) and to multiply (e.g., note the development and multiplication of the malarial parasite).

In the evolution of such hæmatozoan types some authorities (Woodcock) hold that the flagellate forms living in the blood-stream are to be considered the most primitive, and that the more truly cellular the parasite becomes the more it has evolved. Hence the *Hæmoflagellata*, or parasites freely moving in the liquor sanguinis, are with difficulty separated from the *Hæmosporidia*, or parasites which mostly live in blood cells. For many reasons some of

these two groups of parasites have been united together into one order of the flagellates, as will be explained farther on.

Morphology.—Protozoan parasites vary in size from the large *Sarcocystidæ* in muscle to most minute forms in the blood (*Hæmoproteozoa*). In fact, it is possible that some forms may exist which we have not yet recognized, because their minute size prevents their being visible to the human eye, even when aided by the highest powers of the microscope.

The parasites themselves consist of protoplasm, which in some instances shows a modification into ectoplasm and endoplasm, the former being clear and hyaline and the latter dark and granular. In the protoplasm are to be found—(1) one or more nuclei, (2) chromidiosomes and chromidia, (3) metachromatic granules, (4) volutine granules, (5) metaplastic granules, (6) centrosomes, (7) archoplasm, (8) rhizoplast, (9) vacuoli.

(1) The nucleus in its simplest form is merely a collection of smaller or larger particles of chromatin (chromidiosomes or chromidia). A very simple form is that termed *Protokaryon*, in which one large chromidial mass (the Karyosome) lies in a delicate achromatic network of linin inside a vacuole filled with nuclear sap, called *enchylema*. Some chromidia may or may not be situated peripherally as well as more centrally. There is no definite membrane. The next advance is the vesicular nucleus, which consists of a definite nuclear membrane separating it from the cytoplasm. Inside this membrane there is an achromatic framework made of linin; a nuclear fluid or *enchylema*, lumps of a substance called *plastin* giving rise to the *nucleolus*, so common in the Metozoa and so rare in the Protozoa, and in association with chromatin to the *karyosome*, which in this instance is called the *endosome*, or *Binnenkörper*. The granular nucleus is a further evolution, and is produced by a more scattered condition of the chromatin.

The nucleus is therefore a complex body composed of chromatic and achromatic substances. It may be single, or divided into two principal masses—trophonucleus or nutrition-nucleus and kinetonucleus or motion-nucleus, or into macronucleus and micronucleus. The latter are quite different from the tropho- and kinetonuclei, for the macronucleus is trophic and kinetic, while the micronucleus is purely reproductive. The former is typically seen in the binucleata and the latter in the heterokaryota.

(2) Chromidiosomes are the smallest particles of chromatin which, when massed together, give rise to the chromidia which may be intranuclear or extranuclear. (3) The metachromatic granules or chromatoid grains represent stages in the anabolism or katabolism of chromatin. (4) Volutine granules stain like chromatin. They are composed of nucleic acid in combination, and represent reserve food material for the nucleus. (5) Metaplastic granules are products of cytoplasmic anabolism or katabolism. (6) Centrosome is a minute grain or pair of granules (diplosome) lying typically outside the nucleus close to the membrane. (7) The archoplasm is the clear

protoplasm which sometimes surrounds the centrosome. (8) The rhizoplast is the portion of the flagellum (when present) which penetrates into the cytoplasm. The flagellar apparatus is described under the heading 'Mastigophora' in the next chapter. (9) The vacuoli may be either the contractile vacuole, which is considered to be respiratory and excretory in function, or the food vacuoles, which begin with a globule of water taken in with the food. Into this vacuole an acid is secreted from the cytoplasm and digests the food, which is then absorbed. Then the vacuole with the undigested food travels to the periphery, and the waste product is extruded.

Protozoa generally have some power of movement by pseudopodia, cilia, or flagella, but under unfavourable circumstances they may lose this power, and, becoming quiescent, surround themselves with an envelope and become encysted. Unfavourable circumstances are lack of food, desiccation, irritating chemical substances, and unusual surroundings.

Life-History.—Reproduction in the protozoa takes place asexually or sexually. As long as conditions are favourable—*i.e.*, there is abundance of food—protozoa reproduce asexually by one of the following methods: (1) binary fission; (2) gemmation; and (3) spore-formation.

1. *Binary Fission.*—In binary fission there is first division of the nucleus, which sometimes takes place by amitosis, followed by that of the cytoplasm. Then the parasite divides into two more or less equal halves (Fig. 43). The other methods of nuclear division are by chromidial fragmentation or by mitosis, of which there are three types—(a) Promitosis, (b) Mesomitosis, (c) Metamitosis. In chromidial fragmentation the nucleus breaks up into minute chromidia, which eventually collect into two new nuclei. In Promitosis a prokaryon type of nucleus divides by the centrosome splitting into two, and giving rise to the central thread (centrodesmose) of the spindle. Then the karyosome divides by constriction, and the achromatic spindle is formed from the framework of the nucleus, and lies between the two separating karyosomes, with the centrodesmose in the middle. Then the chromosomes appear formed from the peripheral chromatin as well as from that of the karyosome.

There are two types of Promitosis—the simpler, in which no equatorial plate is formed, and the chromosomes are merely scattered along the spindle, and finally gather at opposite poles to form the daughter nuclei—and the more advanced, with an equatorial plate of chromosomes which may divide by either an equating or a reducing division. In Promitosis the nuclear membrane is negligible, while the whole process is confined to the nuclear area. In mesomitosis, which takes place in a nucleus in which the karyosome is reduced and in which there are more chromatic particles in the body of the nucleus, perfect karyomitotic figures are formed, but the whole process takes place inside the nuclear membrane. In metamitosis the polar caps of archoplasm situate in the cytoplasm assist in the mitosis.

2. *Gemmation*.—In gemmation the nucleus divides usually by mitosis into two or more nuclei, which either travel to the periphery, and become surrounded by small masses of protoplasm, which separate from the parent parasite—ectogenous gemmation—or remain in the cytoplasm, a portion of which becomes differentiated around each nucleus—endogenous gemmation.

The explanation of the two methods is that in ectogenous gemmation the buds are separated from the mother cell externally, while

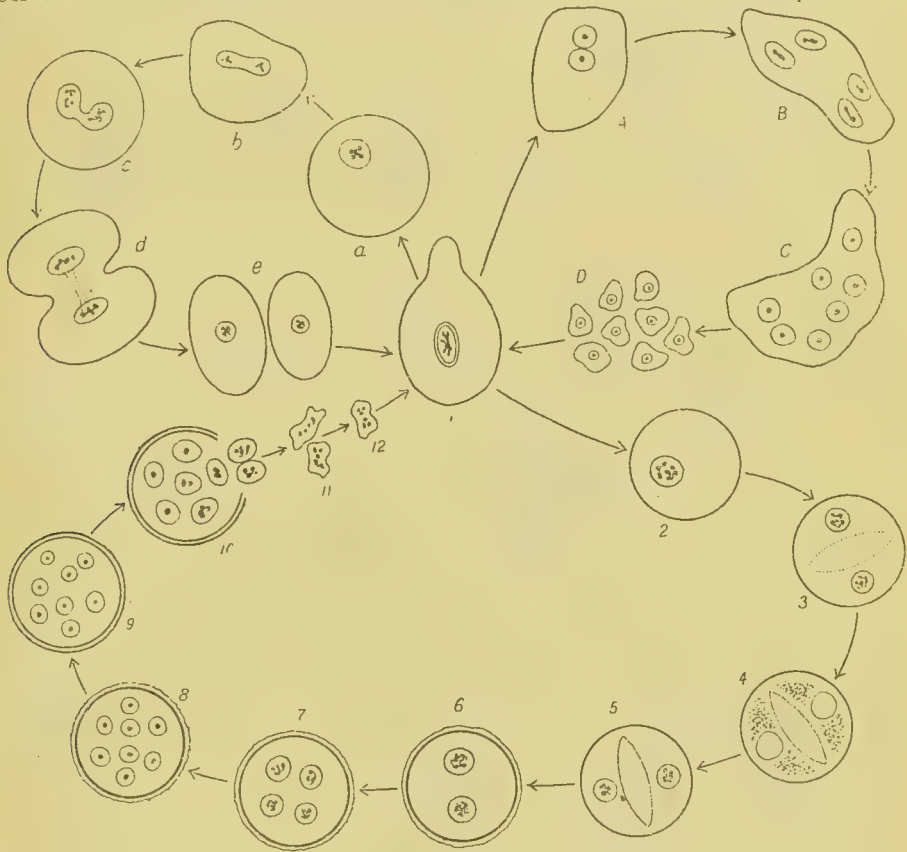


FIG. 43.—DIAGRAM OF THE LIFE-CYCLES OF LÖSCHIA COLI LÖSCH.

1, *Löschia coli*; a-e, stages in the process of binary fission by promitosis; A-D, schizogony by repeated division; 2-13, sexual reproduction or sporogony; 11 are the gametes, 12 the zygote.

in endogenous gemmation the localized budding area sinks into the body substance of the mother cell, with the result that the buds are contained in a brood sac. This localized endogenous area is called a pansporoblast, though in some the entire organism forms a pansporoblast, which is considered to be phylogenetically derived from the localized condition—i.e., the whole cell represents only the pansporoblast.

Plasmotomy.—Plasmotomy is the term applied to the intermediate division of the cytoplasm of multinuclear parasites into

two or more masses, which afterwards may or may not reproduce by spore-formation.

3. *Spore-Formation*.—Instead of being considered a process of internal gemmation, the formation of pansporoblasts may be looked upon as a process of spore-formation proceeding while the organism grows, as is typically seen in the Neosporidia.

The typical asexual spore-formation or schizogony is, however, met with in the Binucleata and Telosporidia, in which the early stages absorb nutriment and increase in size, being therefore called trophozoites. When fully grown they form a quiescent body, the schizont, whose nucleus and cytoplasm divide into a number of small forms called asexual spores or merozoites, generally, however, leaving a little undivided cytoplasm laden with effete matter, which is called a *nucleus de reliquat*, or 'rest body.'

These merozoites are the forms by which the parasite multiplies in the given host, and are not the means by which new hosts are

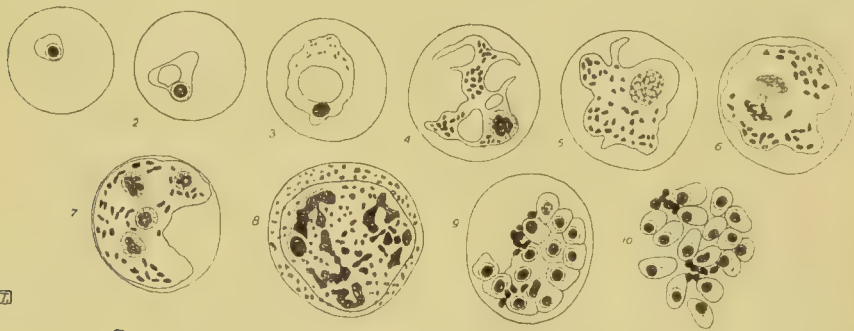


FIG. 44.—SCHIZOGONY OF *PLASMODIUM VIVAX* GRASSI AND FELETTI.
(After Schaudinn.)

1, Young trophozoite ; 2, ring form ; 3, ring form showing hæmozoin ; 4, parasite with pseudopodia ; 5, old trophozoite ; 6, schizont showing commencement of first division ; 7, schizont with four nuclei ; 8, schizont with several nuclei (the corpuscle shows Schüffner's dots) ; 9, schizont divided into merozoites ; 10, merozoites and hæmozoin free.

infected. They therefore enter new cells in the host in which they are formed, and, growing into a trophozoite, complete an asexual life-cycle, which is called the cycle of schizogony, or simply schizogony (Fig. 44).

A time arrives in the infection of every host when the food material for the given parasite is diminished by the numbers of forms produced by asexual reproduction, or when the tissues of the host react against the parasite by chemical substances, or phagocytosis, or by both methods combined.

When these adverse circumstances become sufficiently severe, changes take place in the parasite which produce forms capable of leaving the given host and existing outside it, either in a different species of animal or simply in the exterior, until an entry is made into a new host of the same species as before, when schizogony begins again.

The changes which the parasite has to undergo in spreading from one host to another are generally associated with sexual reproduction, and the whole cycle from a given host of a certain species to another host of the same species is called the cycle of sporogony, or, more simply, sporogony (Figs. 45, 46, and 47).

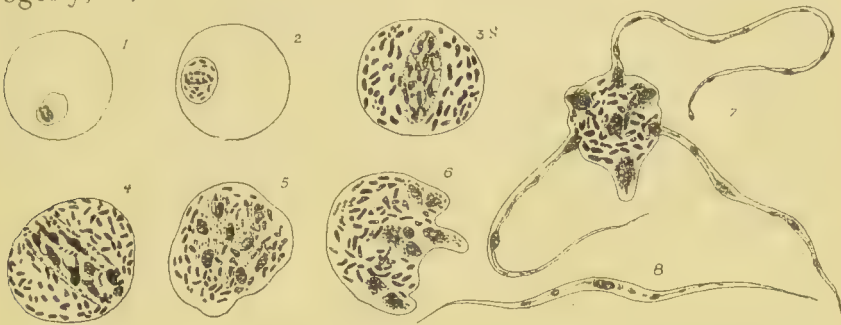


Fig. 45.—SPOROLOGY OF *PLASMODIUM VIVAX* GRASSI AND FELETTI. DEVELOPMENT OF THE MICROGAMETE. (After Schaudinn.)

1, Young microgametocyte; 2, 3, older forms; 4, fully grown microgametocyte, as seen in the blood of man; 5, division of the nucleus (reduction) in the stomach of an anopheline; 6, nuclei have travelled to the periphery, which has grown out to form the commencement of a microgamete; 7, microgametocyte with three microgametes; 8, a free microgamete.

In adverse or changed circumstances, therefore, the merozoites develop into more resisting forms, which are called gametocytes, in which, by reduction of the nuclear material, the male and female elements in the nucleus are separated; the two elements may exist in the same cell or in separate cells, but usually the male element of one cell fuses (zygosis) with the female element of another cell, and forms a new individual with a new nucleus or synkaryon.



FIG. 46.—SPOROLOGY OF *PLASMODIUM VIVAX* GRASSI AND FELETTI. DEVELOPMENT OF THE MACROGAMETE. (After Schaudinn.)

1-3, Young macrogametocytes; 3, fully developed macrogametocyte in the blood of man; 4, reduction and formation of a polar body in the stomach of an anopheline mosquito; 5, macrogamete and one polar body.

This new individual proceeds to reproduce itself rapidly by either binary fission or spore-formation. In the latter case, in order to prevent confusion, the terms employed are different from those used in asexual reproduction. The parasite is called a sporont, the spores sporozoites. The sexual reproduction takes place in the definitive host, which may be different from the intermediary host in which the asexual reproduction is found.

Parthenogenesis and Etheogenesis.—Reproduction is said to take place from a female type of parasite (parthenogenesis) or more rarely from a male type of parasite (etheogenesis), without any completion of the sexual process (Fig. 48).

An example of parthenogenesis is found in the malarial parasite, in which the female gametocyte is capable of resisting both the action of the chemicals of the body and drugs, and is therefore capable of lying dormant for some time. When given an opportunity for development, its nucleus and protoplasm divide into two portions, one of which degenerates and disappears, while the other forms merozoites and starts the cycle of schizogony anew. Another is described by Prowazek in *Herpetomonas muscæ-domesticæ*, but neither example has been definitely proved.



FIG. 47. — SPOROLOGY OF *PLASMODIUM VIVAX* GRASSI AND FELETTI: ZYGOSIS.

(After Schaudinn.)

1, Zygosis of one microgamete with the macrogamete; 2, ookinete and degenerate microgametes.

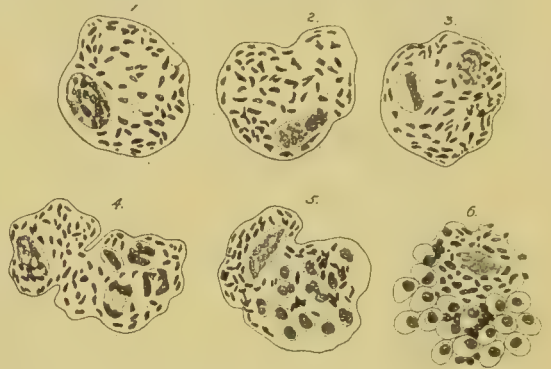


FIG. 48. — PARTHENOGENESIS OF *PLASMODIUM VIVAX* GRASSI AND FELETTI.

(After Schaudinn.)

1, Macrogametocyte; 2, division of the nucleus; 3-6, formation of merozoites from one portion of the nucleus, and separation of the other portion with the hemozoin.

Etheogenesis, a term introduced by Prowazek, is the much rarer change in the male parasite whereby asexual reproduction begins again. He described it in *Herpetomonas muscæ-domesticæ*, but Flu says that an error was made, and that the objects believed to be male elements were really stages in the life-cycle of a Microsporidian — *Octospora muscæ-domesticæ*.

Pathogenicity.—The pathogenicity of the Protozoa is of the highest importance, as they are the causes of a large number of endemic and epidemic diseases in man and animals, as will be described in the following pages. They produce toxins; but these have not been well studied, with the exception of the Sarcosporidiotoxin, which is only toxic for rabbits and not for other animals. The toxins produced by the malarial parasites have been referred to on p. 179.

Classification.—The classification of the subkingdom Protozoa is by no means satisfactory at present, and will have to be considerably altered in the near future.

The usual classification is into four phyla : (1) sarcodina ; (2) mastigophora ; (3) sporozoa ; (4) infusoria.

The sarcodina move and capture food by pseudopodia ; the mastigophora by flagella ; the sporozoa are parasites without motile organs ; and the infusoria move by means of cilia. When this classification was brought into use, practically nothing was known about the life-history of the protozoa, a more complete knowledge of which is still required.

Since the valuable researches of Schaudinn into the life-histories of some flagellates, suspicion has been aroused that some of the Hæmosporidia are stages in the life-history of the Hæmoflagellata.

Even if this be not correct, there is evidence of a close relationship between the two groups, and there are biologists who believe them to be phylogenetically related.

Therefore Sambon 1906 and Hartmann 1907 have united the Hæmoflagellata and the Hæmosporidia into one group, which belongs to the flagellate division of the protozoa, an arrangement which we have partially followed, for recent researches indicate that the Hæmogregarines are allied to the Telosporidia.

Among the blood parasites of man and other animals there are found some wavy, thread-like organisms (*Spirochaetes* and *Treponemata*), with which must be classed some free-living forms whose position, even in the animal kingdom, has been disputed.

The opinion is gaining ground, however, that these forms are protozoa with a low type of nucleus, but so different are they from the ordinary phyla of protozoa that, following Doflein's and Fantham's suggestions, we shall place them in a separate section, making them an Appendix to the Mastigophora, though Calkins thinks it better to leave them in their old position at present.

Further, the old group of the sporozoa contains two such different groups of animals in its subdivisions into Telosporidia and Neosporidia that it is justifiable to do away with this combination, and to raise the two divisions to the rank of separate phyla.

Finally, the two nuclei of the infusoria are so totally different in function from the nucleus or nuclei of the rest of the protozoa that the subkingdom is capable of being divided into two divisions ; —the Heterokaryota or infusoria ; and the Plasmodromata, under which heading come the other phyla.

The classification of the protozoa will therefore be arranged as follows :—

DIVISION I. PLASMODROMATA DOFLEIN 1901.

Protozoa in which the nucleus is not separated into reproductive (micronucleus) and non-reproductive (macronucleus) portions.

SUBDIVISION A.—Without well-defined nucleus.

SUBDIVISION B.—With well-defined nucleus or nuclei in some stage of the life-history.

Phylum I. Sarcodina.—Plasmodromata which move and capture their food by pseudopodia.

Phylum II. Mastigophora.—Plasmodromata which move and at times capture their food by flagella.

Phylum III. Telosporidia.—Parasitic Plasmodromata in which spore-formation is distinct from and takes place after the trophic phase of the life-cycle.

Phylum IV. Neosporidia.—Parasitic Plasmodromata in which spore-formation and trophic growth proceed simultaneously.

DIVISION II. HETEROKARYOTA HICKSON 1903.

Synonym.—*Ciliophora* Doflein 1901.

Protozoa possessing cilia either throughout life or only in the early stages of the life-cycle, but always with a micronucleus, which is entirely reproductive in function; and a macronucleus, which is trophic and kinetic.

Phylum V. Ciliata.—Heterokaryota possessing cilia throughout life.

Phylum VI. Acinetaria.—Heterokaryota possessing cilia only in the early stages of the life-cycle.

Remarks.—A most unfortunate feature with regard to classification is the fashion prevalent just now of naming as new any blood parasite found in a host in which that particular type has not been found before. The researches of Laveran and Mesnil, Negri and others, tend to show that in nature one species of parasite is not limited to one species or one genus of host; further, that the same parasite may somewhat vary in different hosts. With these two facts in view it is quite possible that the numerous trypanosomes and hæmogregarines described in different hosts may some day be reduced in numbers when their life-history is fully known. In order to meet this difficulty, Sambon has suggested adding a third name—that of the host—to the nomenclature of the species of these families. With regard to the division without a well-defined nucleus, it includes Haeckel's Monera, which are very doubtful, and may perhaps be stages in the development of other forms.

DIVISION I. PLASMODROMATA DOFLEIN 1901.

PHYLUM I. SARCODINA Bütschli.

Plasmodromata moving and capturing their food by means of pseudopodia.

The phylum is classified as follows:—

Class I. *Rhizopoda* von Siebold.

Order 1. *Amœbina* Ehrenberg.

Section 1. *Gymnamœbida*.

Genus 1. *Löschia* Chatton and Lalung-Bonnaire 1912.

Genus 2. *Paramœba* Schaudinn 1896.

Genus 3. *Vahlkamfia* Chatton and Lalung-Bonnaire 1912.

Section 2. Thecamoebida.

Genus 1. *Chlamydothrys* Cienkowski 1876.Order 2. *Foraminifera* d'Orbigny.Class II. *Heliozoa* Haeckel.Class III. *Radiolaria* Müller.

The Foraminifera, Heliozoa, and Radiolaria do not concern us, as they do not contain parasites.

CLASS I. RHIZOPODA VON SIEBOLD.

Sarcodina, parasitic or free-living, with pseudopodia in the form of lobose or reticulate processes.

* ORDER I. AMÆBINA Ehrenberg.

Rhizopoda, parasitic or free-living, with lobose pseudopodia, with or without a shell.

SECTION 1. GYMNAMÆBIDA.

Amœbina, without a shell.

This section includes the genera *Amœba*, *Entamœba*, *Vahlkamfia*, *Löschia*, and *Paramœba*, of which the genus *Amœba* Ehrenberg 1830 is applied to free-living forms and need not concern us, while the genus *Entamœba* Leidy 1879, with type *Entamœba blattæ* Bütschli, no longer concerns us, because, as defined by Mercier in his recent study of *E. blattæ*, it no longer refers to amœbæ which are parasitic in man. A very common mistake is to refer the genus *Entamœba* to Casagrandi and Barbagallo, who in 1897 merely applied Leidy's term of *Endamœba* or *Entamœba* to the human amœba which they were describing. As a generic name was required for the amœbæ found in man and other vertebrates, Chatton and Lalung-Bonnaire have suggested the name *Löschia*, after Lösch, who gave the name, *Amœba coli*, to the parasite with which he worked in 1875, while the same authors have recently described the new genus *Vahlkamfia* (after *Vahlkamfia*), who worked with *Amœba limax* Dujardin.

Culture.—Since the days of Auerbach in 1856 various observers have from time to time cultivated amœbæ.

The various cultures of amœbæ may be classified into (1) *cultures in symbiosis with bacteria*. In these cultures the amœbæ occur free from other protozoa, but associated with one or various kinds of bacteria. (2) *The pure cultures*. In these only one strain of amœba alone occurs without bacteria.

With regard to the latter, Kartulis at first reported that he had made such a culture from a liver abscess, but later, in 1900, he ignores his own statement, which may therefore be excluded. In 1897 Casagrandi and Barbagallo stated that they had cultivated *Amœba*

spinozoa in pure culture ; in 1898 Tsugitani stated that he had done so, associated with dead bacteria ; and recently it has been done associated with the sterile brain, liver, and kidney of guinea-pigs, rabbits, and dogs. But the general opinion is that the pathogenic amœbæ have never been obtained in pure culture.

We now come to the point as to whether these amœbæ have ever been grown in impure cultures, and as the result of our investigations (the investigations of Hartmann, Wenyon, Craig, Whitmore, and others) it would appear doubtful as to whether a genuinely pathogenic amœba has been cultivated. It is true that amœbæ of the limax type to be presently mentioned can be cultivated on the media described by Musgrave and Clegg in 1904, but these differ considerably from *Löschia tetragena* Viereck, which is the principal agent in amœbic dysentery. Wells has recently shown how easily aerial contamination with the cysts of free-living amœbæ can take place ; hence at the present time it is safer to conclude that further evidence must be produced before the cultivation of pathogenic amœbæ can be recognized as an accepted fact.

Hyperparasitism.—Amœbæ may be attacked by a parasitic form said to be an amœba called *Nucleophaga*, which destroys the nucleus.

Pathogenicity.—The genus *Löschia* certainly contains pathogenic organisms.

Löschia Chatton and Lalung-Bonnaire 1912.

Gymnamœbida, with a vesicular nucleus containing a small karyosome, and abundant peripheral chromatin, dividing by mesomitosis, and having cysts with four to eight nuclei.

Type.—*Löschia coli* Lösch 1875.

A very large number of species have been described in man. They can be classified according to the part of the body in which they are principally found.

I. Intestinal *Löschia*.—(1) *Löschia coli* Lösch 1875 ; (2) *L. tetragena* Viereck 1907 ; (3) *L. histolytica* Schaudinn 1903 ; (4) *L. tropicalis* Lesage 1908 ; (5) *L. phagocytoides* Gauducheu 1908 ; (6) *L. minuta* Elmassian 1909 ; (7) *L. nipponica* Koidzumi 1909 ; (8) *L. undulans* Castellani 1904 ; (9) *L. williamsi* Prowazek 1911 ; (10) *L. hartmanni* Prowazek 1912 ; (11) *L. bütschlii* Prowazek 1912.

The recent researches of Hartmann, Whitmore, Wenyon, Chatton, etc., show that of all these there are apparently only two 'good' species—viz., *L. coli* Lösch 1875 and *L. tetragena* Viereck 1907, thus *L. tropicalis*, *L. nipponica*, and *L. williamsi* are synonyms of *L. coli*, while *L. histolytica* and *L. minuta* are said to be synonyms of *L. tetragena*. *L. undulans* is considered by some authorities to be a stage in the life-history of an intestinal flagellate, but Gauducheu has seen similar amœbæ in the dog, and it may be still retained with the *Löschia*. In fact, Gauducheu has seen every stage between typical *Löschia* and intestinal flagellates.

Notwithstanding the possible elimination of so many species, we nevertheless propose to give brief accounts of them.

II. *Hepatic and Renal Löschia*.—*L. mortinatalium*.

This species has been found once in the liver and kidneys of a foetus born dead, but as it has not been fully described we shall not again refer to it.

III. *Buccal Löschia*.—(1) *Löschia gingivalis* Gros 1849; (2) *L. buccalis* Sternberg 1862; (3) *L. dentalis* Grassi 1879; (4) *L. buccalis* Prowazek 1904.

With regard to these, we propose to describe only *L. buccalis* Prowazek, as it is the only form which has been carefully studied, whereas the others may only be synonyms of *L. coli* or *L. tetragena*.

IV. *Genito-Urinary Löschia*.—*L. urogenitalis* Balz 1883.

V. *Pulmonary Löschia*.—*L. pulmonalis* Artault 1898.

These are probably either *L. coli* or *L. tetragena*.

VI. *Löschia in Abscesses*.—*L. kartulisi* Doflein 1901.

Probably *L. tetragena*.

VII. *Löschia in Serous Exudations*.—*L. miurai* Ijima 1898.

Probably the Leydenia stage of the life-cycle of *Chlamydomphrys enchelys* Ehrenberg.

Pathogenicity.—By this process of exclusion we are reduced to only *L. tetragena* Viereck, and rarely *L. hystolytica*, as the cause of amœbic dysentery, but this reduction must be received with caution at present.

Löschia in Animals.—Though somewhat beyond the bounds of the present work, we may mention that amœbæ, believed to belong to the genus *Löschia*, but requiring restudy in the light of recent researches, occur in several vertebrates—e.g., *L. nuttalli* Castellani 1908, found in liver abscesses and dysentery in monkeys in Ceylon; *L. cobayæ* in guinea-pigs, *L. enterica* in cats, etc., *L. muris* Grassi in mice, considered by Wenyon to be *L. coli*, *L. fecalis* in several animals, *L. intestinalis* in horses, etc., *L. gallopavæ* in turkeys, *L. ranarum* Grassi in frogs.

Classification.—Chatton and Lalung-Bonnaire distinguish two subgenera, a subgenus which would naturally be called *Löschia*, characterized by cysts with eight nuclei and a subgenus, which they called *Viereckia*, having cysts with four nuclei, the types being *L. coli* and *L. tetragena* respectively.

Löschia coli Lösch 1875.

Synonyms.—*Amœba coli* Lösch 1875; *Entamœba coli* Lösch 1875.

Probable Synonyms.—*Entamœba tropicalis* Lesage 1908; *E. nipponica* Koidzumi 1909; *E. williamsi* Prowazek 1911; *E. muris* Grassi; and perhaps others (*vide supra*).

Definition.—*Löschia* with cysts containing eight nuclei, cytoplasm almost always without red blood-corpuscles, ectoplasm invisible except when a pseudopodium is being protruded. Nucleus, subcentral, vesicular, with cyclic changes not well marked. Karyosome often with two granules.

History.—In 1859 Lambl published a note referring to the presence of an amœba, associated with other protozoa, in the motions of a case of dysentery, and this was followed by an account by Lösch in 1875 in which he states that he considers these amœbæ to be the cause of dysentery. Grassi, in 1879, was the first observer to demonstrate the presence of amœbæ in the motions of healthy people, although Lewis and Cunningham in 1881 had seen them in the motions of persons suffering from cholera. These findings were confirmed by Koch and Kartulis, but Kruse and Pasquale in a classical investigation demonstrated that there were two kinds of amœbæ, one harmless and the other the cause of dysentery. It was not, however, until Casagrandi and Barbagallo investigated and defined *L. coli*, which is harmless, that it was possible for Jürgens to make his researches, which, extended by Schaudinn, ended in defining a second amœba named *L. histolytica*, which was considered to be the cause of entamœbic dysentery. Recently it has been studied in detail by Hartmann and Whitmore with important results.

Morphology.—In diameter it measures as a rule 20 to 40 μ , although forms as small as 10 μ and even 5 μ have been described. The cytoplasm is vacuolated and contains bacteria, and extremely rarely one red corpuscle. The ectoplasm is not visible until a pseudopodium is about to be protruded. The vesicular nucleus resembles that of *L. tetragena*, an account of which is given below, but the cyclic changes are not so well defined. The karyosome when present is small, and is composed of two chromidia united by achromatic substance.

Life-History.—The life-cycle comprises two phases: an asexual division by promitosis takes place (and not by amitosis, as described by Schaudinn). The process of schizogony is produced by repeated division into two, forming two four and eight nuclei (*vide* Fig. 43, p. 261), which form eight little Löschia which begin the asexual cycle again. Sporogony takes place by encystment, followed by division of the nucleus into two, four, and finally eight nuclei. During this stage a large vacuole exists in the cytoplasm, which disappears in the eight-nuclei stage. Contrary to Schaudinn, Hartmann and Whitmore believe that no zygosis takes place in the cyst, but that eight little amœbæ are formed which, on escaping from the cyst, conjugate in pairs and form the synkaryon or zygote from which the vegetative forms arise. Sometimes the cysts have more than eight nuclei—*e.g.*, ten or twelve—which must be considered to be abnormal.

Bionomics.—*L. coli* lives in the lumen of the intestine, and feeds upon the contents of the bowel.

Pathogenicity.—This amœba is a harmless commensal in the alimentary canal of man.

Löschia (Viereckia) tetragena Viereck 1907.

Synonyms.—*Entamæba tetragena* Viereck 1907; *E. africana* Hartmann and Prowazek 1907; *E. histolytica* Schaudinn 1903 *pro parte*; *E. minuta* Elmassian 1909, according to some authorities; *E. dysenteriae* Councilman and Lafleur 1891; and perhaps others.

Definition.—*Löschia* with cysts containing four nuclei, cytoplasm, commonly containing red blood-corpuscles, ectoplasm often visible as a clear hyaline, highly refractile layer. Nucleus clearly visible with constant cyclic changes. Karyosome with one granule.

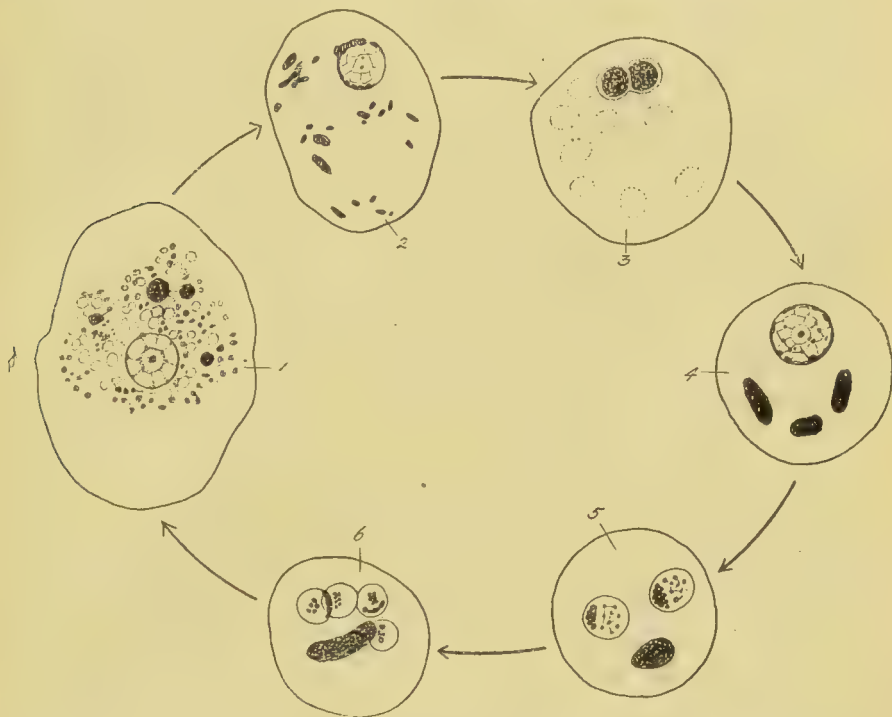


FIG. 49.—DIAGRAM OF THE LIFE-CYCLES OF LÖSCHIA TETRAGENA VIERECK.

(Constructed from Hartmann's drawings in the *Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen Hygiene*.)

1, Fully grown parasite; 2-6, stages in encystment and nuclear division.

History.—It was described by Viereck in a case of dysentery in Africa in 1907, and independently studied by Hartmann and Prowazek, whose observations were confirmed by Bensen and others. Recently it has again been carefully restudied by Hartmann, and experimentally by Wenyon, who consider it to be the same as *L. histolytica*.

Morphology.—It is usually about 25 to 40 μ in diameter, but may be as small as 20 μ , 10 μ , or even 5 μ . When at rest it is spherical, but varies in shape when in motion. The ectoplasm is usually well defined, and in pseudopodia is seen to consist of hyaline highly refractive protoplasm, but this differentiation is sometimes difficult

to define. The endoplasm is greyish in colour, and usually contains red blood-corpuscles as well as other matters. The vesicular nucleus is clearly visible, and has a well-defined membrane on which chromatic granules are distributed. In the centre there is a karyosome surrounded by a clear area, and containing a centrosome. A cycle of changes is constantly proceeding in the nucleus: first chromidia break away from the karyosome and pass outwards into the nucleus, and this proceeds until little but the centrosome is left, when it ceases, and chromatin begins to accumulate again around the centrosome, until the karyosome is reformed, when the cycle begins again.

Life-History.—Asexual reproduction is by promitosis. Sporogony is rare, and when it occurs tends to cyst formation, before which the amœbæ become small, and their chromidia form three to six masses. The cyst sometimes contains a large vacuole. Nuclear division takes place until four nuclei are formed. The further life-history is unknown.

Bionomics.—These are probably the same as those to be described for *L. histolytica* (see below).

Animal Experiments.—Wenyon has produced by its agency typical attacks of dysentery and liver abscess in cats.

Distribution.—It is known to occur in Africa, Asia, America, and Europe.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of amœbic dysentery in most cases.

Löschia histolytica Schaudinn 1903.

Löschia, with usually a differentiation into a clear ectoplasm and a more granular endoplasm. Nucleus not easily visible. Size 25 to 50 μ . Reproduction by schizogony and sporogony.

History.—*L. histolytica* was first described by Jürgens in 1902, and his observations were confirmed and extended by Schaudinn in 1903. It would seem from the recent observations of Hartmann, confirmed by Wenyon, that most of the cases of dysentery ascribed to *L. histolytica* are really due to *L. tetragena*. The true *L. histolytica* is, according to the same authority, of rare occurrence. It may, however, be useful to give Schaudinn's original description.

Morphology.—Its average measurement is 25 to 50 μ in diameter, and therefore the average is greater than that of *L. coli*. It consists of clear hyaline ectoplasm and granular endoplasm, in which can be seen red blood-corpuscles, vacuoles, bacteria, and other matters, but the nucleus is not clearly visible unless coloured by some preparation. When resting it is oval or spherical, but during movement it alters its appearance repeatedly, throwing out pseudopodia and creeping about. The nucleus is small, about 5 μ in diameter, and is poor in chromatin, and placed excentrically sometimes close to the periphery. The limiting membrane is difficult to define, and the amount of chromatin is relatively very small. A small karyosome can sometimes be seen in the centre of the nucleus.

Life-History.—It reproduces in three ways: (1) binary fission; (2) gemination; and (3) sporogony.

1. *Binary Fission.*—This method was only discovered by Schaudinn on examining fresh specimens of the infected alimentary canal.

The nucleus divides by amitosis into two, and then the cytoplasm splits into two equal daughter cells.

2. *Gemmation.*—Gemmation, found more commonly than binary fission by Schaudinn, consists of the division of the nucleus by amitosis into two or

more daughter nuclei, which, together with small portions of the cytoplasm, separate off from the mother cell, the daughter cell being smaller than the mother cell.

3. *Spore-Formation*.—In spore-formation, which only takes place under favourable circumstances, such as when recovery is taking place after an attack of dysentery, the chromatin in and around the nucleus becomes diffused into the cytoplasm, and finally collects near the periphery, and the remains of the nucleus disappear, being either pushed out or absorbed. The ectoplasm forms small knobs, containing several chromidia in each. These

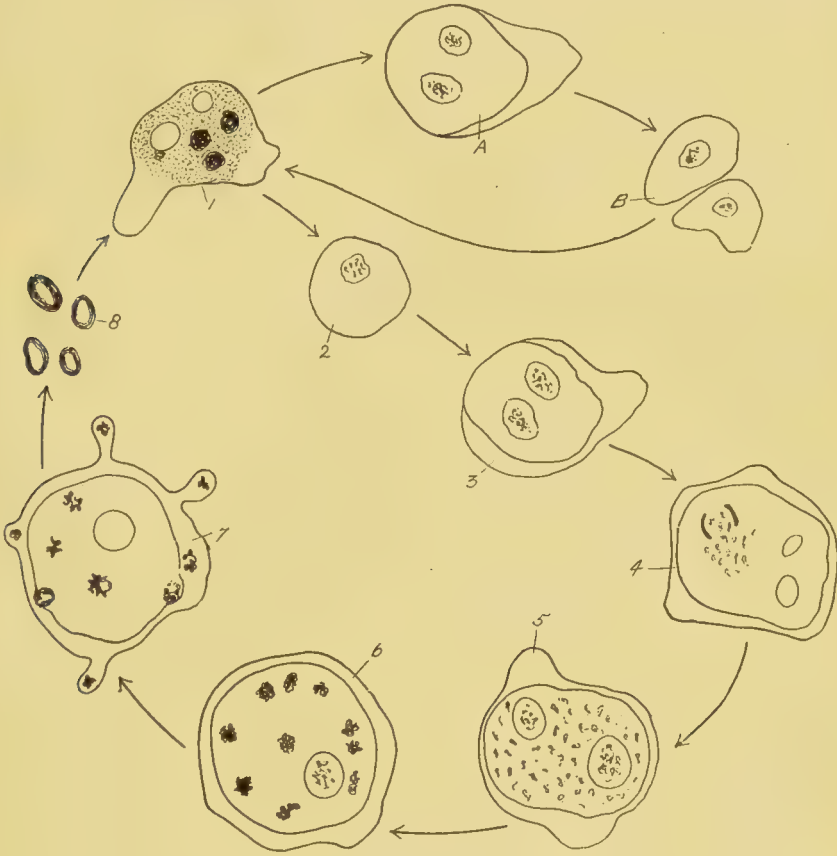


FIG. 50.—DIAGRAM ON THE LIFE-CYCLES OF *LÖSCHIA HISTOLYTICA* SCHAUDINN.

(Constructed from Craig's drawings in the *Journal of Infectious Diseases*.)

A, B, Binary fission; 1-8, spore-formation.

knobs and their chromidia become separated off as rounded bodies, which, becoming surrounded with a yellowish-brown envelope, form the spores for the infection of a new host, as has been shown by Schaudinn's feeding experiments on cats, which developed typical dysentery with the amœbæ in the motions, in the lumen, and in the wall of the alimentary canal. These experiments further proved that it was only by the spores that infection would be spread. The remaining portion of the amœba dies after the formation of the spores.

Schaudinn was not able to trace the development any further than the above sketch. Lesage says that the nucleus in the little cyst divides into three laterally placed nuclei, each of which develops into a small amœba.

Bionomics.—It is found in the fæces, in the contents of the intestine, in scrapings from dysenteric ulcers, in the mucosa and submucosa in cases of dysentery, and in the walls of abscesses in the liver and elsewhere. It seems to have a partiality for the red blood-corpuscles as food, and this may be the cause of its pathogenicity. Schaudinn considers that its pseudopodia are more resisting than those of *L. coli*, and that therefore it is capable of making its way into the mucosa and submucosa, and so into the blood-stream, by means of which it can be disseminated all over the body. Whether it lives in animals is not known with certainty.

Distribution.—Until recently it was considered to be cosmopolitan, but at the present time the general opinion is that in most cases it has been confused with *L. tetragena*. There can be no doubt that man can act as a carrier of this *Löschia*, and that therefore it has the chance of being world-wide in its distribution. It is, however, much more frequently met with in the tropics than in the temperate zone.

Pathogenicity.—*Löschia histolytica* is one of the causes of amœbic dysentery, liver abscess, and the abscesses in other parts of the body which are associated with amœbic dysentery.

Doubtful Species.

The species to be now described are not considered as 'good' by many authorities, but we give a brief account of them for the sake of completeness.

Löschia tropicalis Lesage 1908.

Lesage, from his studies of tropical dysentery, has come to the conclusion that, just as there is a *Löschia coli* Lösch parasitic, but non-pathogenic, in the intestine of man in warm and temperate countries, so there is another amœba parasitic, but non-pathogenic, in the intestine of man in the tropics. This parasite he names *L. tropicalis*.

It resembles *L. coli* by having a nucleus which contains much chromatin and by becoming encysted, but it differs from the same in having a clearly



FIG. 51.—DIAGRAM OF THE LIFE-CYCLES OF *LÖSCHIA TROPICALIS* LESAGE. (Constructed from Lesage's drawings in the *Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique*, showing binary fission and spore formation.)

visible ectoplasm, by the small size of its cysts, and by the fact that the nucleus of the cysts breaks up into a number of nuclei, which are from three to several (he draws thirteen in one cyst). This entamœba can be cultivated along with bacteria, but is non-pathogenic to animals.

Lesage considers this to be the same amœba which was studied and cultivated by Musgrave and Clegg, and thinks that the production of dysenteric symptoms in their experiments was due to contamination with the minute

spores of *Löschia histolytica*. Walker in 1908 describes as a new species *E. hominis*, which may perhaps be the same as *L. tropicalis*.

Pathogenicity.—It is a harmless commensal in the alimentary canal of man.

Culture.—It can be cultivated in symbiosis with bacteria.

***Löschia undulans* Castellani 1905.**

Synonym.—*Entamæba undulans* Castellani 1905.

This amœba was found in fæces from persons suffering from diarrhœa in Ceylon, together with other intestinal protozoa—*e.g.*, *Cercomonata* and *Trichomonata*. A somewhat similar amœba has been found by Gauducheu in dogs.

It varies in size, being from 12 to 30 μ in diameter, but there may be much smaller individuals. It has no flagella, but possesses an undulating membrane



FIG. 52.—*LÖSCHIA UNDULANS* CASTELLANI 1905.

and long straight pseudopodia, which are rapidly emitted and retracted, only one pseudopodium being protruded at a time. There is no marked differentiation into ectoplasm and endoplasm, and a non-contractile vacuole is usually to be seen. The cytoplasm, which is finely granular, often contains bacteria. Castellani was inclined at one time to consider this parasite as a developmental stage of *Cercomonas hominis*.

***Löschia phagocytoides* Gauducheu 1908.**

Synonym.—*Entamæba phagocytoides* Gauducheu 1908.

Löschia phagocytoides was discovered by Gauducheu in Indo-China in a case of dysentery. It is very small—only 2 to 15 μ in diameter—very actively motile, and possessing a well-developed ectoplasm. It can be easily cultivated on ordinary agar-agar inoculated with *Bacillus typhosus* or other bacteria, which it readily engulfs and digests. Some individuals show in their cytoplasm peculiar spirochæte-like bodies.

***Loschia minuta* Elmassian 1909.**

Synonym.—*Entamæba minuta* Elmassian 1909.

This amœba, found by Elmassian in a case of chronic dysentery in South America, resembles *L. tetragena*, but is much smaller, rarely exceeding 14 μ in diameter. There is no differentiation between the ecto- and endo-plasm. The nucleus is invisible in fresh preparations, and when stained is rich in chromatin. Encysted forms contain four nuclei.

***Löschia nipponica* Koidzumi 1909.**

Synonym.—*Entamæba nipponica* Koidzumi 1909.

This entamœba was found by Koidzumi in the motions of cases of dysentery and in healthy people in Japan. In the former case it is associated with *L. histolytica*, which it resembles in size (15 to 30 μ) and in the marked difference between the ecto- and endo-plasm. The pseudopodia are never spinose; the endoplasm is vacuolated, and more granular than in *L. histolytica*. The nucleus is well defined (5 to 7 μ), and rich in chromatin. This amœba reproduces by fission, schizogony and sporogony.

Löschia buccalis Prowazek 1904.**Synonym.**—*Entamæba buccalis* Prowazek 1904.

This amœba was described as a new species by Prowazek in 1904. It was found in the mouths of persons suffering from dental caries, and possesses a distinct ectoplasm, from which the pseudopodia are produced. The nucleus is large, subcentral in position, and poor in chromatin. The food of the amœba is composed of leucocytes, bacteria, and detritus. The development is by binary fission and a spore-formation somewhat like *L. histolytica*.

Löschia hartmanni Prowazek 1912.

Found in man in Savaii. It is 4 to 13 μ in diameter; nucleus vesicular, 2 to 3.3 μ ; cysts small, quadrinucleate, characterized by a thin, bacteria-like arrangement of chromidia.

Löschia williamsi Prowazek 1911.

This *Löschia* is considered to be identical with *L. coli* Lösch.

Löschia brasiliensis H. B. Aragao 1912.

Resembles *L. coli*. Cysts 7 to 15 μ in diameter, with eight nuclei and a double contour membrane. The cysts are characterized by the presence of a certain amount of siderophile substance which divides the cysts into two portions of nearly equal size.

Löschia bütschlii Prowazek 1912.**Synonym.**—*Entamæba bütschlii* Prowazek 1912.

Found in a boy in the Caroline Islands. It varies in size from 10 to 24 μ ; coarse alveolar cytoplasm; nucleus vesicular; round karyosome and centriole; cysts roundish; differ from those of *L. coli*.

Genus: Vahlkamfia Chatton and Lalung-Bonnaire 1912.

Gymnamœbida, with vesicular nucleus (prokaryon) having one large karyosome with or without a centrosome, with little peripheral chromatin, with division by promitosis. Cysts uninuclear. Practically all cultivable amœbæ isolated from human stools and potable water by various observers belong to this genus. Cropper has grown a peculiar amœba belonging to this genus in citrate solution.

Type.—*Vahlkamfia limax* Dujardin.**Vahlkamfia punctata** Dangeard 1910.

This amœba was found in Indo-China in the motions of a case of diarrhœa. The ectoplasm is rarely visible, and the endoplasm is very basophile, while the method of division is by promitosis. The cysts are 8 to 12 μ in diameter, with a thin wall showing a double contour ornamented with punctation, and always uninucleate.

Genus: Paramœba Schaudinn 1896.

Paramœba is usually described as one of the Sarcodina, but Hartog probably rightly considers that it belongs to the *Cryptomonadinæ* of the Mastigophora.

The life-history of *Paramœba eilhardi* Schaudinn 1896 has been worked out by Schaudinn. It is a flat, discoidal protozoon, with short, lobose pseudopodia. Besides the nucleus, there is a cytoplasmic body called by Schaudinn the

'Nebenkörper.' Reproduction is by simple fission, or by the parasite becoming encysted, and then the 'Nebenkörper,' and later the nucleus, breaking up into a number of divisions; and finally the protoplasm segmenting around these to form spores, each containing a piece of the 'Nebenkörper' and a piece of the nucleus. These spores develop two flagella each, and, breaking out from the cyst, and increasing by longitudinal division, in due course lose their flagella and become young amœbæ.

Paramœba hominis Craig 1906.

Paramœba hominis is a rare parasite found in natives in the Philippine Islands. In its fully grown amœboid stage it is from 15 to 25 μ in diameter, with well-defined ecto- and endo-plasm when moving, but not so when at rest. The nucleus is distinct, and is composed almost entirely of chromatin.

This amœba can reproduce by binary fission for some time, at the end of which it encysts and divides into a number of small, spherical bodies, which, when liberated by the bursting of the cyst-wall, develop long, delicate flagella,

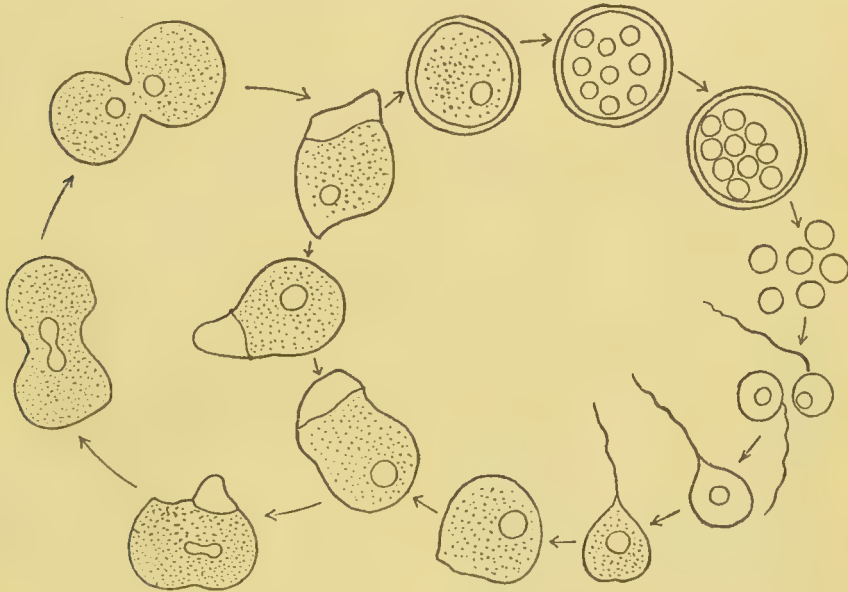


FIG. 53.—DIAGRAM OF THE LIFE-CYCLES OF PARAMÆBA HOMINIS CRAIG.
(After Craig, from the *American Journal of Medical Sciences*.)

and move about actively. These flagellates grow rapidly, and, eventually becoming quiet, lose their flagella, and develop into amœbæ (Fig. 53).

Pathogenicity.—It is generally associated with a severe form of diarrhœa, and is at times the only organism to be found to account for the symptoms, but it is not known whether it is truly the cause of the diarrhœa or not.

ORDER II. THECAMÆBIDA.

FAMILY GROMIIDÆ.

Chlamydomphrys enchelys Ehrenberg.

Synonym.—*Chlamydomphrys stercorea* Cienkowski 1876; *Leydenia gemmipara* Schaudinn 1896.

This rhizopod (Fig. 55), which is believed to be parasitic in man in one stage of its life-history, can be found growing in human fæces, as well as in those of the cow, the rabbit, the mouse, and the lizard. It is oval in form,

enclosed by a shell, except anteriorly, where the filiform pseudopodia project. The body of the parasite is divisible into an anterior portion, in which lie the contractile and food vacuoles, and a posterior, with the nucleus. Reproduction is by 'bud-fission,' by which is meant that half the protoplasm protrudes at the mouth and forms a new shell, and then separates from the other half, which retains the old shell. If two forms reproduce by 'bud-fission' close together, the daughter cells may partially coalesce (plasmogamy), forming large colonies of twenty or more individuals. The parasites may become encysted.

The sexual process starts by the extrusion of all foreign substances and the collection of the remainder of the plasma and the chromidia into the shell. The chromidial mass breaks up into a number of nuclei, never more than eight, around which the plasma divides, forming swarm cells, which, developing two flagella at one pole and escaping from the cell, conjugate with the swarm

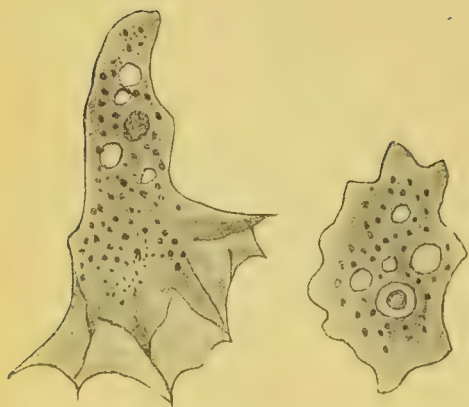


FIG. 54.—*CHLAMYDOPHRYS ENCHELYS*
(*LEYDENIA* STAGE) EHRENBURG.
(After Schaudinn.)



FIG. 55.—*CHLAMYDOPHRYS ENCHELYS*
EHRENBURG.
(After Cienkowski.)

cells of another individual, and then become encysted. When the cyst ruptures under favourable circumstances, a little amœba escapes, which speedily forms a shell, and becomes in due course an adult *Chlamydomyces*. If, however, it enters man it may remain in the amœboid stage, and as such was formerly called *Leydenia gemmipara* by Schaudinn. They were, however, originally observed by Lieberkühn in ascitic fluid taken from persons suffering from a malignant growth, but he did not determine their true nature. Leyden, again observing these cells in two similar cases, caused them to be examined by Schaudinn. Lauenstein and Behla have also seen them in a case of cancer.

They are spherical or irregularly polygonal, 3 to 36 μ in diameter, with knobs projecting from the surface. They possess a distinct ectoplasm with hyaline pseudopodia and a large vascular nucleus. Development takes place by binary fission and gemmation (Fig. 54).

REFERENCES.

Protozoa.

- DOFLEIN (1911). Lehrbuch der Protozoenkunde. 3rd Auflage. Jena.
 DOFLEIN AND KOEHLER (1912). Kolle and Wassermann's Handbuch der
 Pathogenen Mikro-Organismen. 2nd Auflage. Lieferung 16-19. Jena.
 MINCHIN (1912). Study of the Protozoa. London.
 PROWAZEK, V. S. (1911-12 ?). Handbuch der Pathogenen Protozoen. Leipzig.

Löschia.

- CASTELLANI (1905). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie (*E. undulans*).
 CHATTON AND LALUNG-BONNAIRE (1912). Bulletin de la Société de Patho-
 logie Exotique. Paris. (*Löschia*.)
 CRAIG (1911). The Parasitic Amœbæ of Man (*Paramœba hominis*).
 DARLING (1913). Archives of Internal Medicine.
 ELMASSIAN (1909). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie (*E. minuta*).
 GAUDUCHEAU (1909). Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique (*E.*
phagocytoides).
 HARTMANN AND PROWAZEK (1907). Archiv für Protistenkunde (*E. tetragera*).
 HARTMANN (1909-12). Archiv für Protistenkunde (several papers on *L.*
histolytica and *L. tetragera*).
 HARTMANN AND WHITMORE (1911). Archiv für Protistenkunde (*L. coli*).
 KOIDZUMI (1909). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie (*E. nipponica*).
 LESAGE (1908). Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique, vol. i., No. 2.
 Paris. (*E. tropicalis*.)
 PROWAZEK (1912). Arch. f. Protist.
 SCHAUDINN (1911). Arbeiten. Hamburg. (*E. coli*, *E. histolytica*, *Par-*
amœba eilhardi, *Leydenia gemmipara*, and *Chlamydomphrys stercorea*.)
 WENYON, C. M. (1912). Journal of the London School of Tropical Medicine.
 London. (Experimental Amœbic Dysentery and Liver Abscess in
 Cats.)
 WHITMORE (1911). Arch. f. Protist.

Chlamydomphrys.

- CIENKOWSKY (1876). Archiv. f. Mikroskop. Anatomie, Bd. xii., 39
 DOBELL (1909). Quarterly Journal Microscopical Science, iii. 255.
 SCHAUDINN (1902). Arbeit. aus Kaiserlich Gesundheits, xix., Bd. iii., p. 560.

CHAPTER XV

MASTIGOPHORA

Mastigophora—Euflagellata—Protomonadina—Polymastigina—Binucleata—
Hæmoproteidæ—Leucocytozoidæ—Trypanosomidæ—References.

MASTIGOPHORA Diesing 1866.

Plasmodromata with one or more permanent flagella which serve as organs of locomotion, and at times for the capture of food.

Morphology.—The Mastigophora are usually microscopical in size, but have a tendency to colony formation.

The ectoplasm is present in the form of a sheath called the periplast, a term which is really botanical in its meaning. If this envelope is absent, the Mastigote may be amœboid, as in the Rhizomastigina, which have a distinct ectoplasm and endoplasm. The periplast contains contractile elements called myonemes. The flagellum may be situate anteriorly (tractellum) or posteriorly (pulsellum); there may be but one (monomastigote), two, or four of equal length (isomastigote), one long and one short (paramastigote); one anterior and one posterior (heteromastigote); several flagella placed together (polymastigote), or numerous flagella scattered over the body (holomastigote).

The typical flagellum consists of an elastic axial core more or less enclosed in a contractile sheath from which the 'end-piece' projects. It takes its origin from a granule situated in the cytoplasm, and apparently forming only a swelling at its base. The swelling is, however, a centrosome, to which various names have been applied, such as basal granule or blepharoplast. Sometimes this centrosome is contained in a special nucleus which is called a kinetonucleus. The centrosome-blepharoplast may be single, when there is only one flagellum; or multiple, when there are many flagella. The flagellum may, however, penetrate deeper into the cytoplasm, until it reaches the nucleus. This prolongation is called the rhizoplast, which may represent the central spindle (centrodesmose) of the achromatic elements of the dividing nucleus, and which connects the divided portions of the original centrosome; or it may have

arisen simply as an outgrowth from the blepharoplast. Thus, the various parts of the flagellum may be rhizoplast, blepharoplast, sheath, or envelope, and end-piece.

If the centrosome is single, it may be intra- or extra-nuclear, and in either case is a centrosome-blepharoplast; if multiple, the portion connected with the nucleus is the centrosome, and that connected with the flagellum is the blepharoplast.

The periblast in the heteromastigotes may be drawn out into an undulating membrane which helps locomotion.

When the periblast is thin or absent the body-form may still be preserved by an internal stiff rod—as, for example, the axostyle of *Trichomonas*.

There is a difference of opinion as to which is the anterior end of the mastigote. We believe, with Sambon, that the non-flagellate end should correctly be considered as the anterior end, but several authorities hold quite different views, and our anterior end will correspond with many other writers' posterior. Very often there is a depression somewhere on the surface of the animal, generally near the base of the flagellum, which is intended for the reception of food, and is called the mouth or cytostome; more rarely there is an œsophagus leading into the interior of the cell. Nutrition may be holozoic or holophytic, but this hardly concerns us, as the forms to be described are all parasitic, and live in fluids from which they absorb nourishment by their whole surface.

In the cytoplasm there is a nucleus, and in certain forms two nuclei: a trophonucleus for nutrition, and a kinetonucleus for movement. The character of these nuclei will be dealt with in detail in the Binucleata, section Trypanosomidæ. The cytoplasm may also contain food vacuoles, contractile vacuoles, chromatin particles, and metaplastic granules.

Life-History.—Reproduction takes place asexually by multiple or simple division or spore-formation (schizogony), and also by true sexual reproduction (sporogony), brought about by conjugation

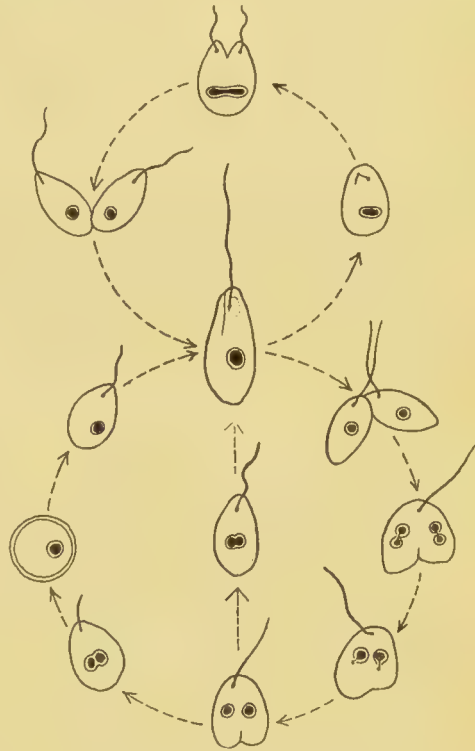


FIG. 56. — DIAGRAM OF THE LIFE-CYCLES OF A MASTIGOTE (*COPROMONAS SUBTILIS* DOBELL).

The upper cycle demonstrates simple fission and the lower sporogony.

(After Dobell, from the *Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science*.)

with zygosis and the formation of a synkaryon. This process, which may only take place at long intervals in these simple forms of life, gives renewed vigour to the animal, which now reproduces quickly asexually. Latent or encysted forms are also known. In the Binucleata the life-history is very complex, taking place in two hosts—a vertebrate and an invertebrate.

The whole subject of the structure and life-history of the parasitic Mastigophora requires much further research, which, indeed, is being rapidly carried out all over the world—in fact, so rapidly that it is hardly possible to write anything on the subject as a whole which will not quickly be out of date.

Classification.—The classification is most difficult, and, indeed, the present state of knowledge is not such as to permit of a proper arrangement. The scheme proposed below must be looked upon as merely provisional.

There are two methods in vogue at present—one by Doflein, which is generally accepted, and the other by Hartmann, less generally accepted. The essential point of difference is the treatment of the blood flagellates which are grouped together by Hartmann into his third order, 'Binucleata' or Mastigophora with a trophonucleus and a kinetonucleus. Schaudinn's researches upon the life-cycle of *Hæmoprotus noctuæ* Celli and Sanfelice 1901 indicated that the previous Hæmosporidian genus *Halteridium* Labbé 1894 was merely a stage in the life-history of a flagellate. Therefore, the Hæmoproteidæ were moved from their previous association with the old Sporidia into the 'Binucleata.' Similarly his researches upon *Leucocytozoon danielowskyi* Ziemann 1898 showed that this had a trypanosome stage, and hence was to be included in the Binucleata, and, further, that it possessed a stage which induced some authorities to believe that the Spirochætæ would eventually be found to be allied to the Binucleata. Further, Hartmann and Raven's researches upon Proteosoma supported the union of the Hæmosporidia with the Hæmoflagellata into one order, the Binucleata, because there are found among the merozoites of Proteosoma rare flagellate forms—i.e., pear-shaped forms possessing in addition to the nucleus a small granule which they interpret as a kinetonucleus, while both macrogametocytes and microgametocytes have some chromatic spheres which they interpret as non-functional kinetonuclei, while they also describe a rhizoplast; and, finally, in the microgametes they describe a kinetonucleus and a chromatic filament bordering an undulating membrane, but state that this is only seen in the fresh condition. These researches bring the malarial parasites—i.e., the Plasmodiæ—into close relationship with the Hæmoflagellata, and make them also members of the Binucleata, which therefore includes the families of the—

Hæmoproteidæ,
Leucocytozoidæ,
Trypanosomidæ,
Herpetomonidæ,
Plasmodiæ,

with an appendix in which the Spirochætæ are placed.

This, in brief, was the position of flagellate classification when we wrote the first edition of this book in 1910, and it was expected that further researches would support Schaudinn's work. Unfortunately, this extremely able protozoologist is dead and his epoch-making work has ceased, and there is at the present time much confusion with Hartmann, Prowazek, Sambon, and many others supporting his work, while Doflein, Minchin, Fantham, Miss Robertson, and many others, oppose his results. Of special interest is the position of such observers as Woodcock, who, at first thoroughly convinced of the correctness of Schaudinn's work, have been led by their own observa-

tions, and almost reluctantly, to relinquish their original position, and to state that they believe that Schaudinn's work on *Hæmoproteus* is incorrect, and that, instead of *Trypanosoma noctuæ* being a stage in the life-history of *Hæmoproteus noctuæ*, they belong in reality to entirely different genera. We therefore provisionally retain Hartmann's classification, as before, in a modified form.

Doflein's classification is as follows :—

Mastigophora :—

Subclass Flagellata (= Euflagellata) :—

- Order 1. Protomonadina.
- Order 2. Polymastigina.
- Order 3. Euglenoidina.
- Order 4. Chromomonadina.
- Order 5. Phytomonadina.

Subclass Dinoflagellata.

Subclass Cystoflagellata.

The Protomonadina includes the Trypanosomidæ and allied families—*i.e.*, the Hæmoflagellata—while the Plasmodiæ, Hæmoproteidæ, Leucocytozoidæ, and allied forms—*i.e.*, the Hæmosporidia—are classified with the Telosporidia. The Spirochætes, or Proflagellata, are treated in a separate section before the Protozoa.

Hartmann's classification is :—

Subclass Flagellata :—

- Order 1. Rhizomastigina.
- Order 2. Protomonadina.
- Order 3. Binucleata.
- Order 4. Chromomonadina.
- Order 5. Euglenoidina.
- Order 6. Phytomonadina.

His order of the Protomonadina includes Doflein's Protomonadina and Polymastigina, as follows :—

Order 2. Protomonadina :—

(a) Monozoa—not bilaterally symmetrical.

- Family 1. Cercomonadidæ.
- Family 2. Bodonidæ.
- Family 3. Monadidæ.
- Family 4. Tetramitidæ, etc.

(b) Diplozoa—bilaterally symmetrical—Distomatidæ.

The classification which we follow is :—

Phylum II. *Mastigophora* Diesing 1866.

Class I. *Euflagellata* Cohn emended Bütschli.

- Order 1. *Protomonadina* Blochmann.
- Order 2. *Polymastigina* Blochmann.
- Order 3. *Binucleata* Hartmann.
- Order 4. *Euglenoidina* Blochmann.
- Order 5. *Chromomonadina* Klebs.
- Order 6. *Phytomonadina* Blochmann.

Class II. *Dinoflagellata* Bütschli.

Class III. *Cystoflagellata* Haeckel.

In the study of tropical medicine only the first three orders of the Euflagellata are of importance.

CLASS I. EUFLAGELLATA COHN EMENDED BÜTSCHLI.

Mastigophora usually of small size, with one or more flagella, with thin periplast, and without inflation of body with gelatinous substance. Free swimming with a great tendency to colony formation.

ORDER I. PROTOMONADINA Blochmann.

Euflagellata parasitic or free-living, usually of small, and often of minute size, with one to three flagella, which spring from centrosomes which are often blepharoplasts, with periplast usually invisible. Free-living forms often have a cytostome, but no oesophagus.

Classification.—The Protomonadina contain the families Choanoflagellidæ, Cercomonadidæ, Bodonidæ, Monadidæ, and Amphimonadidæ, which may be recognized as follows :—

A. Protomonadina with one flagellum :—

I. With collar : *Choanoflagellidæ* Stein.

II. Without collar : *Cercomonadidæ* Kent.

B. Protomonadina with one principal and one or rarely two accessory flagella.

I. Flagella unequal, and performing different functions :

(a) With one principal and one lateral flagellum which may be free. There may be an undulating membrane : *Bodonidæ* Bütschli.

(b) With one principal and one or two accessory flagella : *Monadidæ* Stein.

II. Flagella equal and performing the same function : *Amphimonadidæ* Kent.

The families which contain species of interest to us are the Cercomonadidæ, the Bonadidæ, and the Monadidæ.

CERCOMONADIDÆ Kent emended Bütschli.

Protomonadina with elongate or short, oval bodies, possessing one free flagellum, and having an amœboid non-flagellate extremity (anterior) and a contractile vacuole near flagellate extremity (posteriorly). Centrosome and rhizoplast present.

Type Genus.—*Cercomonas* Dujardin 1841 emended Bütschli.

Cercomonas Dujardin 1841 emended Bütschli.

Cercomonadidæ with non-flagellate (anterior) end prolonged into a long process, supported by an axostyle which comes from the karyosome. Flagellum with blepharoplast and rhizoplast. Karyosome large. Nucleus in flagellate (posterior) third of body.

Type.—*Cercomonas hominis* Davaine 1854.

Cercomonas hominis Davaine 1854.

Davaine found these flagellata in the evacuations of cholera patients, and since then they have been found in numerous cases of diarrhoea, and even in normal stools, in which we have often seen them. They have also been found in sputum in cases of gangrene of the lungs and in pleural exudations, and have been reported as parasites of dogs, ducks, and fowls. There has, however, been the utmost confusion as to what is meant by *Cercomonas*, and many writers have confused it with *Trichomonas*.

Cercomonas hominis is a round or pear-shaped parasite averaging from 8 to 10 μ in diameter, with a long flagellum projecting from the more pointed end. There is no undulating membrane. The nucleus is small, indistinct, and usually situated near the flagellar extremity, where a mouth has also been described. Reproduction is by binary fission, and Perroncito and Piccardi have described encystment.



FIG. 57. — *CERCOMONAS HOMINIS* DAVAINÉ.

1-3, and 5, Flagellate forms ;
4, encysted form.

According to our experience at autopsies, the parasite may live not only in the small intestine, as generally stated, but also in some cases in the large intestine.

Cercomonas is readily killed, as observed by Castellani and Willey, by a solution of methylene blue (1 in 3 000).

Cercomonas vaginalis Castellani and Chalmers 1909.

This is a pear-shaped or rounded parasite, measuring 5 to 10 μ in its maximum diameter, and provided with one flagellum, a small nucleus, and food vacuoles, but without a pulsating vacuole. It is not uncommon in the vagina of native women in Ceylon.

Cercomonas perryi Castellani 1907.

Found by Castellani in Ceylon in monkeys (*Macacus pilcatus* and *Semnopithecus priamus*) suffering from diarrhoea. It is morphologically extremely similar to *C. hominis*, being roundish or pear-shaped, 8 to 12 μ in diameter. There is one flagellum originating from the pointed end. The nucleus is situated near the flagellar end. Reproduction seems to be by binary fission, but cysts can be seen.

Other Species.—*C. anatis* Davaine, in the alimentary canal of ducks ; *C. canis* Gruby and Delafond, in the same of dogs ; *C. gallinarum* Davaine, in fowls.

BODONIDÆ Bütschli.

Protomonadina free-living or parasitic, with two dissimilar flagella directed anteriorly and laterally respectively, with or without undulating membrane, and with or without kinetonucleus.

Type Genus.—*Bodo* Stein 1878.

There are two genera, which can be distinguished as follows:—

A. With kinetonucleus : *Prowazekia*.

B. Without kinetonucleus : *Bodo*.

Prowazekia Hartmann and Chagas 1910.

Bodonidæ with a kinetonucleus.

Type.—*Prowazekia cruzi* Hartmann and Chagas 1910.

The separation of the old genus *Bodo sensu lato* into *Bodo sensu stricto* and *Prowazekia* is not at present generally accepted; for example, Alexeieff and others oppose it, stating that the generic name for all the species included under *Prowazekia* should be *Bodo*, while that for the only species at present under *Bodo*—viz., *B. lacertæ* Grassi 1881—should be *Prowazekella* (new genus) *lacertæ* Grassi 1881. Nor is this the only confusion with regard to *Prowazekia*, for one species—*P. urinaria* Hassall 1859—has been found in urine which has been passed for six hours or more in the temperate zone; and three species—*P. asiatica* Castellani and Chalmers 1910, Ceylon; *P. cruzi* Hartmann and Chagas 1910, Brazil; *P. weinbergi* Mathis and Léger 1910, Indo-China—are found in fæces; while one form—*P. parva* Nägler 1910—lives in slime on stones at Lunz.

All observers are agreed that these flagellates are non-pathogenic, but the question which is debated is whether they are accidental contaminations of the urine and fæces after being passed out of the body, and the urine problem is further complicated by the question as to whether it was contaminated by the fæces.

With regard to the urinary species, it has been found by Hassall in 1859, Salisbury in 1868, Kunstler in 1883, and Stinton in 1912. He obtained it only twice from the same patient, who was in a hospital ward in Liverpool, and in none of the other patients in the ward; it was not found in the fæces, nor in a vessel of water exposed to the air of the ward, nor in the water-supply. It was not present in later observations taken aseptically, and cultures died rapidly at 37° C. It is therefore concluded to be an accidental contamination.

The intestinal forms are not so easily dismissed, as we have found them in stools collected in sterile petri-dishes, and Mathis and Léger found their species in the fæces of persons in good health and suffering from diarrhœa, even when taken with aseptic precautions. It is possible, therefore, that some, at all events, of the intestinal forms are harmless occasional parasites of man.

***Prowazekia urinaria* Hassall 1859.**

This species has several times been found in human urine which has been passed some hours.

Morphology.—The flagellate appears in three forms—a sausage-shaped form, 10 to 25 μ in length by 2.5 to 6 μ in breadth; a round or oval form, varying from 4 μ in diameter to 15 by 10 μ in measurement; a carrot-shaped form, varying from 6 by 3 μ to 25 by 4 μ . The cytoplasm contains a large number of small, highly refractile granules, and contains a trophonucleus and a kinetonucleus, which latter is a relatively large pear-shaped body. The body is enclosed by a thin periplast, and possesses two flagella, a shorter anterior and a longer lateral, which possess blepharoplasts (basal granules). Connected by rhizoplasts to the kinetonucleus there is a cytostome situate near the root of the short flagellum.

Bionomics.—It moves in a jerky manner, with the short flagellum directed forwards and the long flagellum backwards. The small flagellum is also useful in capturing food, such as bacteria. Food enters by means of the cytostome and forms the usual food vacuoles, which accumulate at the aflagellar end. A contractile vacuole is seen in large flagellates, and may measure 1 to 3 μ in diameter. It is situate near the base of the cytostome, to which it is joined by a minute canal. It contracts every 15 to 30 seconds at a temperature of 20° C. It is thought to be the dilated fundus of the cytostome.

Life-History.—It divides in two by binary fission, the blepharoplast apparently dividing first and forming two new flagella, after which the cell nuclei and the cell divide. It can lose its flagella, and can form round or oval cysts 5 to 7 μ in diameter, inside from which after a time it again becomes flagellate, and escapes in its typical form.

Cultivation.—In association with bacteria it grows well in urine, on salt agar, nutrient agar, serum agar, blood agar, peptone, salt solution, nutrient broth, and diluted blood-serum at a temperature of 20° C., but is killed by a temperature of 37° C. in one to two hours. It has not been cultivated free from bacteria.

***Prowazekia asiatica* Castellani and Chalmers 1910.**

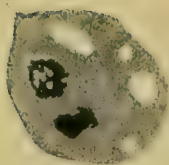
Synonym.—*Bodo asiaticus* Castellani and Chalmers 1910.

This flagellate was found in 1909 by Castellani and Chalmers in the stools of cases of Agchylostomiasis suffering from diarrhoea in Ceylon. It was studied in detail by Whitmore in 1911, and assigned to the new genus *Prowazekia*, which Hartmann and Chagas had differentiated from the old genus *Bodo*.

Morphology.—*P. asiatica* is found in the motions in two forms—either as a long, slender flagellate measuring 10 to 16 μ in length by 5 to 8 μ in breadth, or as a more rounded form which has a transverse diameter of 8 to 10 μ . The cytoplasm is alveolar in structure,

containing food vacuoles, but no contractile vacuole. The trophonucleus is usually situate in the flagellar third of the cytoplasm and consists of a nuclear membrane, a widish space for the enchylema, and a central karyosome, with usually a centrosome. The kinetonucleus is situate nearer the flagellar extremity, and is connected by a long strand with a small piece of chromatin situate near the aflagellar extremity, and by another strand with one of the two blepharoplasts which lie adjacent to the flagellar extremity. These blepharoplasts are united together, and, as already stated, to the kinetonucleus by strands. Usually there are two, which may lie side by side or one over the other. From these blepharoplasts the two flagella take origin, and quickly pass to the exterior.

FIG. 58.—*PROWAZEKIA ASIATICA* CASTELLANI AND CHALMERS: FROM FÆCES.



Reproduction.—Asexual reproduction takes place by metamitosis, but sexual reproduction is unknown. Cyst formation has been observed, resulting in

rounded bodies 6 to 7 μ in transverse diameter, possessing tropho- and kineto-nuclei, and enclosing the remains of the flagella.

Culture.—*P. asiatica* is readily cultivated in liquid and in the water of condensation of solid media in symbiosis with bacteria.



FIG. 59.—*PROWAZEKIA ASIATICA* CASTELLANI AND CHALMERS: FROM CULTURES. (After Whitmore.)

The most suitable medium is the condensation water of nutrose agar (2 to 4 per cent.), or maltose agar, on which a few drops of albumin-water have been placed, when it can be subcultured and grown indefinitely if the tubes are kept uncapped and subcultures are made twice a week.

Pathogenicity.—Probably nil.

Prowazekia cruzi Hartmann and Chagas 1910.

Oval to pear-shaped forms ; length, 8 to 12 μ ; breadth, 5 to 6 μ , with the flagella at the narrow end. Found in Brazil. Differs from *P. asiatica* by the absence of the strand which originates from the kinetonucleus and terminates into a chromatin granule. Martin has found in human stools in Tsingtau a *Prowazekia* which he believes to be identical with *P. cruzi*.

Prowazekia weinbergi Mathis and Léger 1910.

Pear-shaped, but rather drawn out into a point ; length, 8 to 15 μ ; breadth, 4 to 6.5 μ . Flagella at broad end. Found frequently in the motions of men in Tonkin.

Prowazekia parva Nägler 1910.

Characterized by its small size, the longest forms being 5 to 8 μ . The cysts do not contain flagella.

MONADIDÆ.

Monas Stein 1878.

Monas pyophila R. Blanchard 1895.

This parasite is described by Grimm as being present in the pus from a pulmonary and a hepatic abscess in a Japanese woman. It is shaped like a large spermatozoon, and consists of a heart-shaped body, surrounded by a thick cuticle, which is divided into three parts. The rounded end of the heart carries a long, retractable projection covered by cuticle, except at its tip, where a flagellum projects. It requires further investigation. *Monas leus* has also been described in cases of bronchitis in man.

ORDER II. POLYMASTIGINA Bütschli and Blochmann.

Euflagellata, with two to eight similar or dissimilar flagella, and a special mouth aperture for food. Small forms free-living or parasitic.

The parasitic members of this suborder are classed by Doflein into—

Family I. *Tetramitidæ* Bütschli.

Family II. *Polymastigidæ* Bütschli.

FAMILY I. TETRAMITIDÆ Bütschli.

Polymastigina with three or four flagella arising together.

Genera.—*Tetramitus*, *Heteromita*, and *Trichomonas*.

Tetramitus Perty 1852.

Synonyms.—*Macrostoma* Alexeieff 1909, *Fanapepea* Prowazek 1911, *Chilomastix* Alexeieff 1910.

Tetramitidæ with pear-shaped bodies, well-developed cytostome, and undulating membrane.

Tetramitus mesnili Wenyon 1910.

Synonyms.—*Macrostoma mesnili* Wenyon 1910, *Fanapepea intestinalis* Prowazek 1911, *Chilomastix mesnili* Alexeieff 1910.

Tetramitus with pear-shaped body, possessing three flagella springing from the broader end, and a very large cytostome extending from the base of the flagella into the body for about half its length. The edges of the cytostome are prolonged into lips, thus forming a deep groove within which lies the undulating membrane. The flagella are provided with blepharoplasts, and there is a vesicular nucleus containing a chromatic network dotted with clumps of chromatin. The parasites measure 12 to 15 μ in length by 3 to 7 μ broad. The diameter of the nucleus varies from 1.5 to 2.5 μ ; and the length of the flagella 9 to 13.5 μ , while the cytostome is about 6 μ long. Encysted forms measure 7 by 5 μ .

Remarks.—This parasite has been found by Wenyon, Alexeieff, Prowazek, Nattan-Larrier, and Brumpt, in the motions of persons in the Crimea, in a person from Bahama, in Sawaii, and in a person from the Ivory Coast of West Africa.

Pathogenicity.—It would appear to possibly cause diarrhoea and dysentery.

Heteromita Dujardin 1841.

Polymastigina round or oval, with two flagella, one at each pole.

Heteromita zeylanica Castellani and Chalmers 1910.

This flagellate is elongated, 8 to 15 μ in length by 3 to 4 μ in breadth, with single flagellum at each pole, and a nucleus fairly rich in chromatin. No undulating membrane or pulsating vacuole, but with chromidia in the cytoplasm. It is not cultivable. This flagellate we classify provisionally under the genus *Heteromita*. It was found in the stools of persons suffering from agchylostomiasis in Ceylon.

Trichomonas Donné 1837.

Tetramitidæ with pyriform bodies, the non-flagellate end being pointed, and the flagellate rounded and carrying three to four flagella, which may be fused together. There is an undulating membrane which runs from the non-flagellate extremity backwards to the flagellate end. The nucleus lies near the flagellated end. Parasitic in vertebrates and invertebrates, chiefly in the intestine.

Species.—*T. vaginalis* Donné 1837, *T. hominis* Davaine 1854, *T. pulmonalis* Schmidt 1895.

Trichomonas vaginalis Donné 1837.

Synonym.—*T. irregularis* Salisbury 1868.

This parasite lives in the vagina when the reaction of the mucus is acid. It is found in Europe, and we have observed it in Ceylon and in equatorial Africa. It has also been reported to occur in the urethra in men, after cohabitation with women infected with the parasite.

It is not transferable to rabbits, guinea-pigs, or dogs. It has not been cultivated, nor is it understood how women become infected.

T. vaginalis is fusiform or pear-shaped in appearance, length from 15 to 25 μ , and breadth from 7 to 12 μ . The non-flagellate extremity is pointed and the flagellate extremity rounded. The parasite is generally considered to be harmless, but we have, however, found it much more frequently in women suffering from vaginitis than in normal women.

Trichomonas hominis Davaine 1854.

Synonyms.—*Cercomonas hominis* Davaine 1854, *C. intestinalis* Lambl 1875, *T. intestinalis* Leuckart 1879, *Monocercomonas hominis* Grassi 1882; *Cimænomonas hominis* Grassi 1883.

The utmost confusion has existed between this species, *Cercomonas hominis* and *T. vaginalis*. It has been found in cases of diarrhœa in Europe, India, and Ceylon, but in small numbers may be found also in the intestine of individuals apparently healthy; it has also been reported from the mouth cavity and stomach. It seems to prefer to live in alkaline mucus.

T. hominis is pear-shaped, with a breadth of from 18 to 25 μ , with three flagella at its broadest end, and an undulating membrane. The cytoplasm contains a rather indistinct nucleus, and one or several non-pulsating vacuoles.

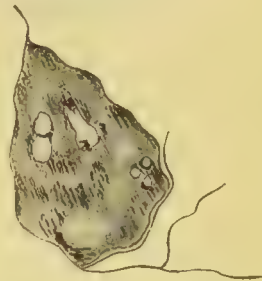


FIG. 60.—TRICHOMONAS HOMINIS DAVAINÉ.

It has not been transmitted to animals, nor has it been cultivated. It can reproduce by longitudinal division, but forms are to be seen indicating encystment and conjugation. Alexeieff considers the bodies described as trichomonas cysts to be in reality an ascomycetes fungus, which he calls *Blastocystis enterocola* n.g., n.s. Brumpt uses the term *Blastocystis hominis*.

Trichomonas dysenteriae Billet 1907.

This *Trichomonas* was first found by Billet in the motions, and later in 1912 by Gauducheau, who believes that it becomes an amœba in one stage of its life-history. The latter observer divides the life-history of a *Löschia* into—(1) Stage of parasitism in the tissues; (2) stage of saprophytism in the lumen of the bowel or in cultures when it lives on bacteria; (3) stage of free existence when it is a flagellate. He considers that *Löschia undulans* Castellani 1904 is allied to this species.

Trichomonas pulmonalis Schmidt 1895.

This form has been found by Schmidt and St. Artault, Leyden and Jaffé, in the sputum and lungs of persons suffering from phthisis, gangrene, and putrid bronchitis.

Other Species.—*T. batrachorum* Perty 1852, in the cloaca of *Rana temporaria*, *R. esculenta*, *Bufo vulgaris*, and *Hyla arborea*, in Germany and Italy; *T. suis* Gruby and Delafond, in the alimentary canal of pigs; *T. limacis* Dujardin, in the gut of *Limax agrestis*; *T. lacertæ* Blochmann, in the cloaca of *Lacerta agilis*, *T. caviæ* Davaine, in the large bowel of guinea-pigs; but this last may perhaps be separated off into a separate genus, *Trichomastix*, with one long flagellum directed across the body. *T. perronciti* Castellani 1907, in monkeys suffering from diarrhoea, is very similar morphologically to *T. hominis*. *T. columbarum* Prowazek and Aragao 1909, is found in the buccal mucosa of pigeons. Plimmer has shown that fla-

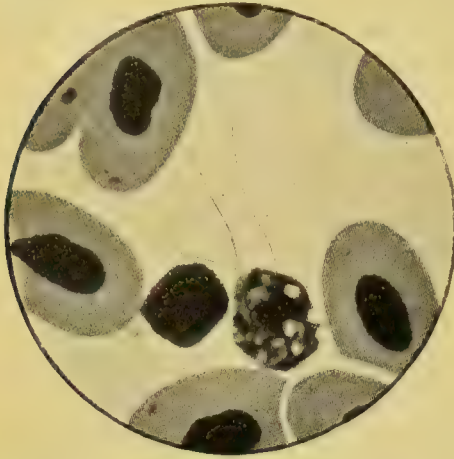


FIG. 61.—FLAGELLATE OF TRICHOMONAS TYPE FOUND IN THE BLOOD OF A LEOPARDINE SNAKE.
(After Plimmer.)

gellates of the type of *Trichomonas* can be found in the blood of snakes.

FAMILY II. POLYMASTIGIDÆ Bütschli.

Synonym.—*Octomitidæ*.

Polymastigina with four to six flagella at the broader and two at the narrower end.

Genera.—1. *Hexamitus* Dujardin, with three flagella on each side of the rounded end. 2. *Lamblia* Blanchard 1888.

Hexamitus Dujardin.

The species of *Hexamitus* are *Hexamitus muris* Grassi, in the intestine of species of *Mus*, and also that of *Arvicola arvalis*; *H. intestinalis* Grassi is found in *Rana esculenta* and *Bufo vulgaris*; and *H. vulgaris* Dujardin in the alimentary canal of *Ostrea edulis* and *angulata*, according to Certés. There is some doubt as to where the genus *Polymastix* Bütschli should come; perhaps it belongs to the Tetramitidæ.

Lamblia R. Blanchard 1888.

Polymastigidæ, with pear-shaped body, the broad end having a hollow, from the borders of which three pairs of flagella take origin. The pointed end carries the fourth pair of flagella.

Lamblia intestinalis Lambl 1859.

Synonyms.—*Cercomonas intestinalis* Lambl 1854, *Hexamitus duodenalis* Davaine 1875, *Dimorphus muris* Grassi 1879, *Megastoma entericum* Grassi 1881, *Megastoma intestinale* Blanchard 1886, *Lamblia intestinalis* Blanchard 1888.

This parasite lives in the intestine of different species of the genera *Mus* and *Epimys* (*M. musculus*, *E. rattus*, *E. norvegicus*, *M. silvestris*); also in species of *Arvicola* (*A. arvensis* and *A. amphibius*); also in the rabbit, the cat, the dog, the sheep, and man.

It was first observed by Lambl in the mucous intestinal evacuations of children in Russia, then by Grassi in Italy, who made a complete study of the parasite; in Germany by Moritz, in Austria by Jaksch, in Egypt by Kruse, and we have observed it several times in Ceylon.

It occurs in the large bowel of man, and it and its cysts can be found in the fæces. The infection of man is brought about by swallowing the encysted forms. This has been proved experimentally by Grassi, and as it occurs in mice, it is quite easy to see how infection of foodstuffs is possible.

L. intestinalis is an actively motile organism about 12 to 21 μ in length, and about 5 to 12 μ in breadth. It is pear-shaped, being surrounded by a thin periplast (ectoplasm) which keeps its form. The under surface (when attached) is excavated with a well-defined border, which is interrupted at the site of the cytostome. This hollow is probably a kind of peristome, and is useful in fixing the parasite to the intestinal epithelium. The cytoplasm contains three nuclei, which are said to be connected with the flagella. Asexual reproduction is by longitudinal division.



FIG. 62.—*LAMBLIA INTESTINALIS* LAMBL.

The parasite can become encysted into oval cysts 10 μ in length by 7 μ in breadth, surrounded by a hyaline cyst-wall. The cyst breaks up into a large number of small forms which grow into the adult form.

Noc concludes that the recognition of different species is not justifiable.

Pathogenicity.—Rats and mice are to be regarded with suspicion with regard to the spread of the parasite which, escaping with their fæces, may infect food and water, and thus gain access to man.

ORDER III. BINUCLEATA Hartmann 1907.

Synonyms.—*Hæmoprotozoa* Sambon 1906; *Hæmocytozoa* Danilewsky 1885, *pro parte*; *Hæmosporidia* Mingazzini 1890, *pro parte*; *Hæmoflagellata* Woodcock, *pro parte*.

Definition.—Parasitic Mastigophora generally inhabiting the blood-plasma or blood-cells of vertebrates, but may be found in other organs and tissues during a 'vegetative cycle' characterized by non-sexual multiplication (schizogony); and in the body of blood-sucking invertebrates during a 'sexual cycle' characterized

by sexual multiplication after conjugation of similar or dissimilar gametes (sporogony).

Classification.—Sambon divides the tribe Binucleata into two sections—Acystina and Encystina, according to whether the oökinete does or does not encyst.

The classification is as follows :—

I. ACYSTINA.

Binucleata in which the oökinete remains free and does not become encysted :—

Family 1. Hæmoproteidæ.

Family 2. Leucocytozoidæ.

II. ENCYSTINA.

Binucleata in which the oökinete becomes encysted :—

Family 3. Trypanosomidæ.

Family 4. Herpetomonidæ.

Family 5. Plasmodidæ.

With regard to the Trypanosomidæ and Herpetomonidæ, it is obvious that if Minchin is correct with regard to the encystment of *Trypanosoma grayi*, and Prowazek with regard to that of *Herpetomonas musæ-domesticæ*, these families belong to the Encystina and not to the Acystina. The Plasmodidæ are clearly Encystina.

FAMILY I. HÆMOPROTEIDÆ Sambon 1906.

Acystina, in which the schizonts and gametocytes are alternately free and active or endocellular and resting, the former having a trypaniform and the latter a halteridial appearance. The oökinetes, which are free, give rise to indifferent and sexual forms, of which the former repeatedly divides, and gives rise eventually to sporozoites. This family contains one genus and several species.

Hæmoproteus Kruse 1890.

Synonyms.—*Halteridium* Labbé 1894, *Laverania* Laveran 1899, *Trypanosoma* Schaudinn 1904, *Trypanomorpha* Léger 1906.

Historical.—These parasites were first described by Grassi and Feletti in the blood of birds in 1890 as *Laverania*, a term altered by Labbé in 1894 to *Halteridium danilewskyi*. In 1904 came Schaudinn's paper showing that they were stages in the life-history of trypanosomes, which has been supported by the work of the Sergents, and has been severely criticized by Novy, McNeal, Ross and Thiroux, who believe that Schaudinn made a mistake, and that the flagellates and intracorpuseular parasites are quite distinct. In 1908 a paper by Aragao appeared on *H. columbæ*, which certainly does not support Schaudinn's views ; but in 1909 Woodcock's researches, as already mentioned, strongly support that distinguished protozoologist ; however, later researches have all tended to indicate that Schaudinn was wrong and that his now celebrated life-cycle for *Hæmoproteus noctuæ* is a mixture of the life-cycles of a hæmoproteus and a trypanosome. We, however, at present still give Schaudinn's account, pending confirmation of the recent work on the subject. At all events, the question as to whether Schaudinn was right or wrong cannot, impartially, be said to be settled one way or the other.

Hæmoproteus noctuæ Celli and Sanfelice 1901.

H. noctuæ goes through the cycle of schizogony in *Glaucidium noctuæ* Retz, the little owl, and its sporogony in *Culex pipiens* Linnæus.

When this gnat sucks the blood of a little owl infected with hæmoproteus, two halteridial forms in the owl's corpuscles are seen to undergo development in its stomach. These two forms are the microgametocytes and the macrogametocytes.



FIG. 63.—**HÆMOPROTEUS MANSONI** SAMBON, SHOWING THE DEVELOPMENT OF THE GAMETOCYTES.

(After Sambon.)

Microgametocyte.—The microgametocyte appears as a typical halteridium parasite enclosed in an erythrocyte, and possessing pale clear cytoplasm, with coarse hæmozoin granules and a large single nucleus, which is composed of eight groups, each containing trophic and kinetic elements.

Macrogametocyte.—The macrogametocyte is a typical halteridium, laden with food granules, lying in a pale, disorganized erythrocyte. It has a rather small trophonucleus, alongside of which is a small kinetonucleus.

In the Mosquito.—When these gametocytes reach the alimentary canal of *Culex pipiens*, they escape from the erythrocytes, and appear free in the lumen of that canal, and proceed first to reduction and then to zygosis, with the formation of a zygote.

The whole process has been carefully worked out by Macallum in another species of halteridium, and is confirmed by Schaudinn in the present species.

Formation of the Microgametocyte.—The microgametocyte is a clear hyaline body, which, on escaping from the red blood-corpuscles, throws out active flagella, which, after beating about a little, break loose, forming the free microgametes. Schaudinn studied the cytological processes underlying these grosser changes, and found that the trophonuclei were reduced to four chromosomes, while the eight kinetonuclei remain, and, separating from the parent nucleus, form microgametes in the way presently to be described for the development of a male oökinete into a male trypanosome.

The Microgamete.—The microgamete is very thin, and tapering at the posterior extremity, where it ends in a tail-like prolongation of the cytoplasm, containing a portion of the trophonucleus. The anterior end is acutely conical.

The trophonucleus is elongated into a long thread, extending from the anterior to the posterior end of the body, and carrying four chromosomes in the form of dots at regular intervals.

The kinetonucleus is situate in the posterior third of the cytoplasm, and consists of a rather elongated mass, with eight chromosomes and one intranuclear centrosome.

In addition to this centrosome there are two others: an anterior, situate just at the base of the anterior conical projection, and a posterior, situate



FIG. 64.—**HÆMOPROTEUS NOCTUÆ** CELLI AND SANFELICE.

(After Schaudinn.)

On the left is the microgamete, and on the right a scheme showing the arrangement of the nuclei, centrosomes, undulating membrane, and myonemes.

just anterior to the tail, being connected with the trophonucleus by a chromatin bar. The undulating membrane runs from the anterior to the posterior centrosome, and is strengthened by eight myonemes.

Formation of the Macrogamete.—The macrogametocyte becomes rounded, and ruptures the remains of the erythrocyte, and is set free. The centrosome of the trophonucleus disappears, and the chromatin forms a spiral thread, which separates by longitudinal and transverse divisions into four tetrads. The kinetonucleus first forms a spindle, and then divides, causing the first reduction, which results in four dyads, and then a second division follows,



FIG. 65.—HÆMOPROTEUS NOCTUÆ CELLI AND SANFELICE: THE OÖKINETE.

(After Schaudinn.)



FIG. 66.—HÆMOPROTEUS NOCTUÆ CELLI AND SANFELICE: MATURATION OF THE OÖKINETE.

(After Schaudinn.)



FIG. 67.—HÆMOPROTEUS NOCTUÆ CELLI AND SANFELICE.

(After Schaudinn.)

Formation of the indifferent oökinete and its development into the indifferent trypanosome.

leaving four monads or single chromosomes. The kinetonucleus now returns to its old position outside and close to the trophonucleus, and the macrogamete is fully developed.

Schaudinn was not able to trace out the reduction of the kinetonucleus, but it ultimately consists of four chromosomes and a centrosome, which, Woodcock points out, are not wholly sexual.

Zygosis.—This consists in the penetration of a microgamete into a receptive cone, which has arisen from the cytoplasm of the macrogamete on the side where the nuclei are situated,

The only parts which enter are the male trophonucleus, which is reduced, and the male kinetonucleus, which is not reduced, but which now undergoes two divisions. The trophonuclei of the male and female elements fuse, and form the fusion spindle, at either end of which the kinetonuclei take up positions, and thus the zygote is formed.

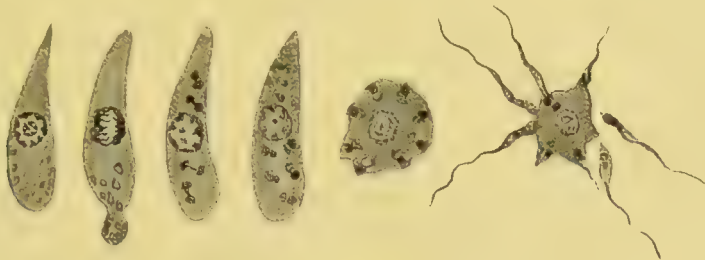


FIG. 68.—HÆMOPROTEUS NOCTUÆ CELLI AND SANFELICE.

(After Schaudinn.)

Formation of the male oökinete, and its development into the male trypanosome.

Oökinete.—While zygosis is proceeding, and even before the complete formation of the synkaryon, the zygote becomes vermiform and motile, and is therefore called an oökinete. It consists of an anterior, hyaline, changeable end, which is followed by a region of cytoplasm with vacuoles, then by a denser region with the nuclear spindle just described, and finally a rounded posterior end, full of granules and hæmozoin. From this posterior end a portion of cytoplasm enclosing granules and hæmozoin, etc., is cut off, thus freeing the oökinete of waste material. The spindle of the synkaryon now consolidates to form eight chromosomes, which will constitute the trophonucleus, while the two kinetonuclei at either end of the spindle, meeting together, form a single kinetonucleus, which takes up a central position inside the trophonucleus, and divides into eight chromosomes, with a centrosome in its centre. The nucleus of the oökinete, therefore, consists of a central centrosome, with eight surrounding chromosomes, around which lie another eight chromosomes, bordering the periphery.

But oökinetes are not all alike. On the contrary, Schaudinn describes three kinds:—

1. *Indifferent Oökinete.*—Cytoplasm clear, and staining faintly, with one or two large vacuoles anteriorly, and having some granular material and hæmozoin still left.

2. *Male Oökinete.*—Smaller than the indifferent or female forms, with cytoplasm almost hyaline, and much clearer than that of the indifferent form, with granular material completely lacking, nucleus large, and rich in chromatin.

3. *Female Oökinete.*—Cytoplasm fairly dense, with plenty of granules, with a nucleus smaller than in the indifferent form.

The Indifferent Oökinete.—The indifferent oökinete starts its development by expelling for a second time a quantity of hæmozoin, while its kinetonucleus unites with the trophonucleus, so that the nucleus now possesses eight compound chromosomes.

The centrosome becomes dumb-bell-shaped, and forms an axial spindle,



FIG. 69.—HÆMOPROTEUS NOCTUÆ CELLI AND SANFELICE: DEVELOPMENT OF THE FEMALE OÖKINETE AND THE FEMALE TRYPANOSOME.

(After Schaudinn.)

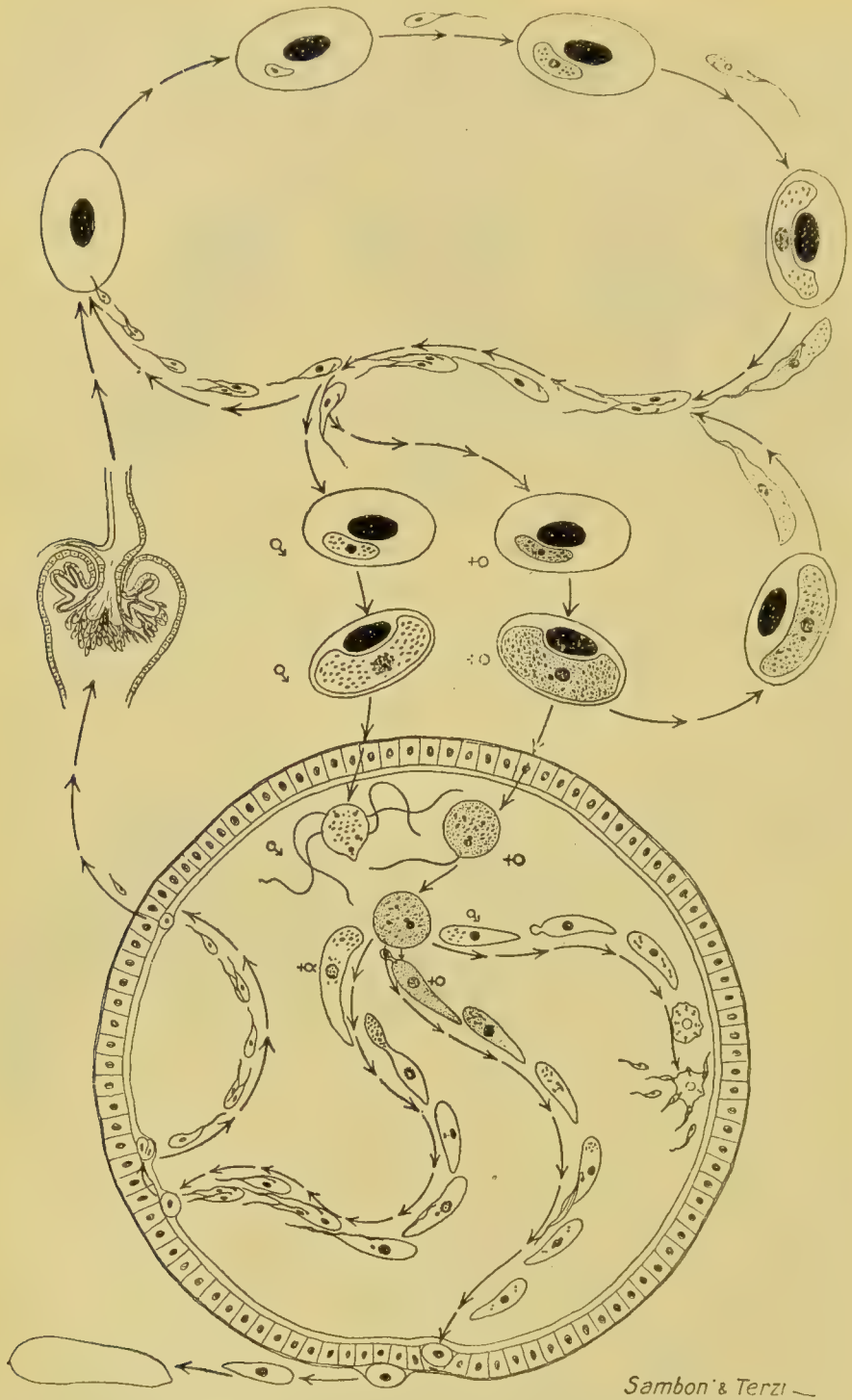


FIG. 70.—DIAGRAM SHOWING THE LIFE-CYCLE OF *HÆMOPROTEUS NOCTUÆ CELLI* AND *SANFELICE*.

(After Sambon and Terzi.)

Many authorities consider this life-cycle to be made up of the cycles of a halteridium and a trypanosome, which are believed to be quite distinct.

around which the chromosomes are arranged. These now divide, and form a diaster by the different portions passing to either end of the spindle, which is heteropolar, the smaller half being kinetic in function. The nucleus now divides into a larger portion, the trophonucleus, and a smaller, the kinetonucleus. The former enters on a resting stage, while the latter proceeds to the periphery, and forming another axial spindle at right angles to the length of the parasite, divides into two portions by its centrosome forming the axial spindle and the chromosomes the two ends of a diaster. One of these daughter kinetonuclei lying in the ectoplasm is attached to the other, lying in the endoplasm, by means of the axial spindle. The ectoplasmic kinetonucleus forms another spindle, with a longitudinal axis, which grows backwards along a fold of the ectoplasm, expanding it as it goes, to the hinder end of the body. In this way an undulating membrane is formed, which, therefore, contains eight chromosomes—the myonemes—on each side of the folded ectoplasm, while the axial spindle, becoming excentric, forms the flagellum. At the

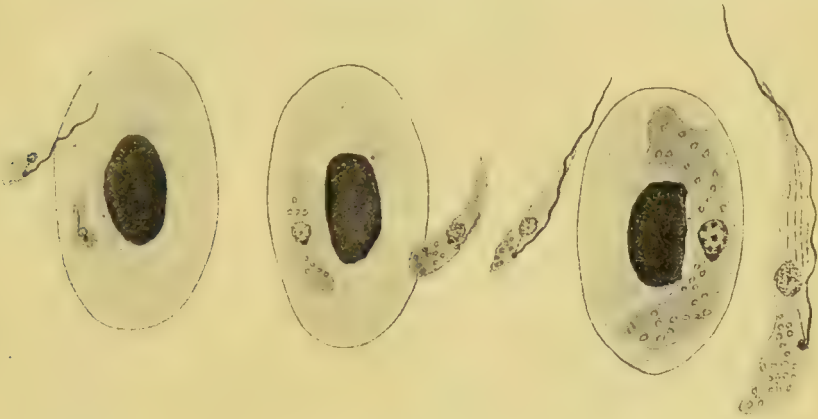


FIG. 71.—HÆMOPROTEUS NOCTUÆ CELLI AND SANFELICE.

(After Schaudinn.)

On the left a small trypanosome is seen entering a red corpuscle in the blood of the little owl, and in the corpuscle is seen the first endocellular stage. The second corpuscle shows a more advanced endocellular stage and the act of liberation into the liquor sanguinis. Farther to the right is seen a medium-sized trypanosome. The third corpuscle shows the fully-grown halteridial form, while on the extreme right a fully-grown trypanosome is depicted.

posterior end of the undulating membrane the flagellum joins with the chromosomes, and grows out of the body to form the free flagellum, along which the ectoplasm is drawn for a short distance.

Of the two centrosomes of this spindle, the distal one disappears, while the proximal one forms the blepharoplast at the root of the flagellum.

The endoplasmic daughter kinetonucleus becomes the kinetonucleus of the trypanosome, and thus is formed the indifferent trypanosome, which now multiplies by binary division. After some time it takes on a gregariniform phase, and becomes attracted to an epithelial cell in the stomach of the mosquito by its flagellum, which is reduced to a short rod. While so attached it may multiply by binary division, and may also penetrate in between the cells of the stomach and encyst, losing its flagellum.

After a period of rest the trypanosome can become active again, but after a time it must either (1) pass into the blood of the little owl; (2) become a male or female form; (3) die out.

The Male Oökinete.—The male oökinete forms a heteropolar diaster, but with a subdivision of the elements into male and female instead of into kinetic and trophic.

The larger or female portion disappears, while the smaller or male portion forms eight double nuclei, with kinetic and trophic elements, which are distributed throughout the cytoplasm.

The oökinete now becomes rounded, while the eight double nuclei travel to the periphery, which grows out into little elevations, each with a double nucleus. Each little elevation grows into a little male trypanosome in the same manner as in the indifferent form, and breaks off from the 'rest body' (*nucleus de reliquat*) of the parent cell. These male trypanosomes, according to Schaudinn, simply die off.

The Female Oökinete.—In this form the same changes take place as in the male oökinete, but it is the small male nucleus which degenerates, after dividing into a number of forms, while the large female nucleus, which consists of the trophic and kinetic elements, remains, and forms a trypanosome in the same manner as in the indifferent form.

The female trypanosome is slow moving, and does not divide, but can become gregariniform, and lie quiescent between the epithelial cells for a time. It can also pass into the ovaries and eggs, and lie dormant during the winter.

The female oökinete, however, undergoes parthenogenesis by losing its flagellar apparatus and developing a trophonucleus with a kinetonucleus in contact with it. The kinetonucleus now divides, and undergoes reduction, while the trophonucleus also divides, one portion being lost. The reduced kinetonucleus, which has divided into two, now enters the trophonucleus from opposite sides, and fusing, forms the synkaryon of an oökinete, which may become an indifferent, a male, or a female trypanosome.

In the Owl.—The male, female, and indifferent trypanosomes may be injected into the owl during the process of biting by the mosquito, but the majority are of the indifferent type. The male trypanosomes, if they enter, die off. The indifferent trypanosomes divide in the blood until a small size is reached, when they enter the erythrocytes, and become a young halteridium by the flagellar apparatus disappearing and the kinetonucleus approaching the trophonucleus.

In twenty-four hours this parasite, which now contains hæmozoin, becomes active, and, re-forming its flagellar apparatus, leaves the blood cell usually at night as a typical *Trypanosoma noctuæ*. After a short period of activity it enters another erythrocyte, and grows till the next night, when it again becomes free. This process takes place six times before the trypanosome attains its full size, when it undergoes repeated division until again small, thus completing the cycle of schizogony. The small extracellular forms may be looked upon as the merozoites, and the intracellular forms as trophozoites, and the large extracellular form as a schizont. The sexual forms are developed from the merozoites—*i.e.*, the very young indifferent trypanosomes—which enter the red cells, and become microgametocytes and macrogametocytes, thus completing the cycle of sporogony.

Remarks.—If this account be correct, it would point to an intimate relationship between the Plasmodiæ and the Trypanosomidæ, the former probably being evolved from the latter.

This description of Schaudinn's has been partially confirmed by several workers tracing out in part the life-histories of several trypanosomes. On the other hand, it is still unconfirmed *in toto*, and especially in the important point of the change of the trypanosome into the halteridium, and *vice versa*.

Novy and many others are convinced that Schaudinn is entirely wrong, and that he was dealing with a double infection of a halteridium and a trypanosome, both of which probably develop in entirely different ways.

Hæmoproteus columbæ Celli and Sanfelice 1891.

Hæmoproteus columbæ is the halteridium of *Columba livia* L. Its life-history is not exactly known at present, but has been studied by Ed. and Et. Sergent and by Aragão. According to the latter observer, it would seem to have the usual two life-cycles of schizogony and sporogony joined into one,

taking place in *Columba livia* and in *Lynchia maura* or *L. brunea* (*lividicolor*) Oliv.

Starting with the macro- and micro-gametocytes, which are of the same appearance as in *H. noctuæ*, and which enter the gut of the *Lynchia* along with the blood sucked from the pigeon, the usual processes of reduction, with the formation of microgametes and macrogametes and oökinetes, and the clearance of waste matter from these latter, are gone through. The further changes undergone by the oökinete are at present unknown.

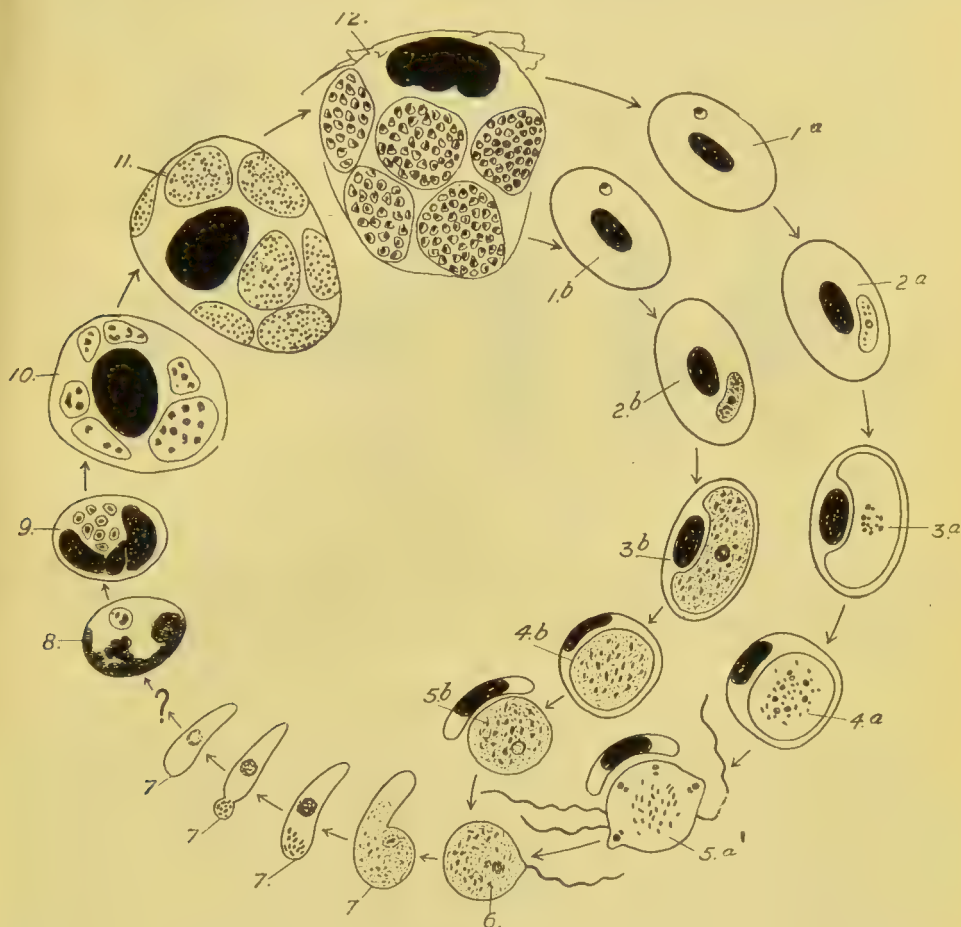


FIG. 72.—THE LIFE-CYCLE OF HÆMOPROTEUS COLUMBÆ CELLI AND SANFELICE.

(According to the researches of Aragão. After Aragão, from *Archiv f. Protistenkunde*.)

After the *Lynchia* bites a pigeon, a small binuclear parasite is to be found in a leucocyte, first at the site of the bite and later in the lungs, where the further development takes place. First the small parasite divides into a number of mononuclear forms, which, along with the leucocyte, grow enormously, and form large parasites, at first full of nuclei, and later of mono-nucleated merozoites, the whole process taking some twenty-six or more days. The minute merozoites now enter the red corpuscles and grow into typical Halteridia. It appears that there are no trypanosome stages, and, indeed, the only form of that nature met with was *Trypanosoma avium* Novy and McNeal.

This is quite a different history from that of Schaudinn for *H. noctuæ*, but it must be observed that it is incomplete, and, therefore, deductions cannot safely be drawn from it.

Other Species.—A large number of species are described by Celli and Sanfelice, Novy and McNeal and others, which have been found in birds as well as in some reptiles.

Sambon has recently described, under the name of *Hæmoproteus mansonii* (Fig. 63), a new species found in the red grouse (*Lagopus scoticus*), the gametocytes of which are not closely adherent to the nucleus of the erythrocyte, as is

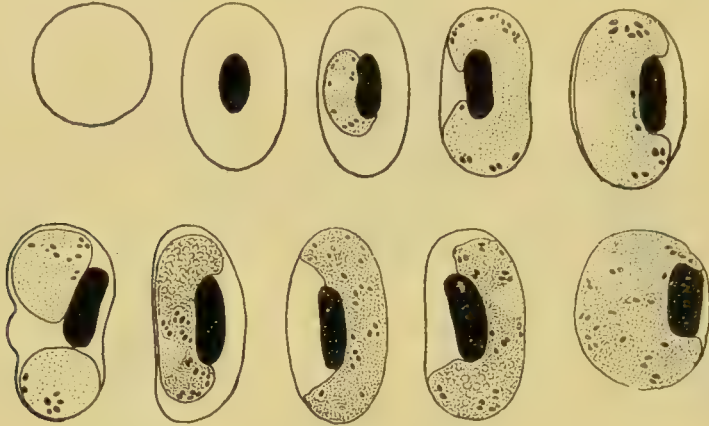


FIG. 73.—*HÆMOPROTEUS COLUMBÆ* CELLI AND SANFELICE.
(After Sambon.)

usually the case, and sporogony takes place in a parasitic fly of the grouse (*Ornithomyia lagopodis*), in the stomach of which oökinetes were found.

Anschütz has described a schizogony of *H. oryzivora* taking place in the circulating blood of *Padda oryzivora*.

FAMILY 2. LEUCOCYTOZOIDÆ.

Synonym.—*Spiroschaudinidæ* Sambon 1907, *pro parte*.

Acystina in which the schizonts and gametocytes are alternately free and active, or endocellular and passive. The oökinete remains free, but increases in length, and after coiling itself into a mass, gives rise to indifferent and sexual sporozoites.

There is only one genus known—*Leucocytozoön* Danilewskyi 1889—but a number of species have been described, of which the life-history is but imperfectly known, except in the case of *L. ziemanni*, which has been studied by Schaudinn, and partly in *L. lovati*, which has been carefully studied by Fantham. They are only definitely known to occur in birds, and must be distinguished from the *Hæmogregarines* of mammals.

Leucocytozoön Danilewsky 1889.

Synonyms.—*Hæmamæba* Laveran 1903, *Spirochæta* Schaudinn 1904, *Trypanomorpha* Woodcock 1906.

The leucocytozoa were first described by Danilewskyi between 1884 and 1886 in the blood of the wood-owl (*Syrnium aluco*) and other Strigidæ.

He described them as spherical or oval, slightly granular bodies contained in a delicate transparent homogeneous capsule, which possessed a large elongated nucleus, compressed in the middle, and broadened at the extremities. This capsule he believed to be a degenerated leucocyte, but later he held it to be an erythrocyte. He also described macrogametes and motile oökinetes, and later he described the microgametocytes. In 1893 Sakharoff confirmed these observations and described new species in ravens, rooks, and

magpies. In 1895 Theobald Smith discovered a leucocytozoön in *Meleagris gallapavo domestica* (the turkey); and in 1898 Ziemann described another specimen in *Glaucidium noctuæ* (the little owl) from Crema, in Italy. In 1902 and 1903 Laveran described forms in birds with mixed infections, and stated that he considered that they were contained in red blood cells. In 1904 Berestneff described several forms in owls, ravens, and magpies, but noted that they were in leucocytes; and in the same year came Schaudinn's paper on the development of *Leucocytozoön ziemanni*, which is given in detail later on. The Sergents, in studying the parasite in the little owl in Algeria, supported Schaudinn. In 1905 Laveran and Lucet studied Theobald Smith's parasite,

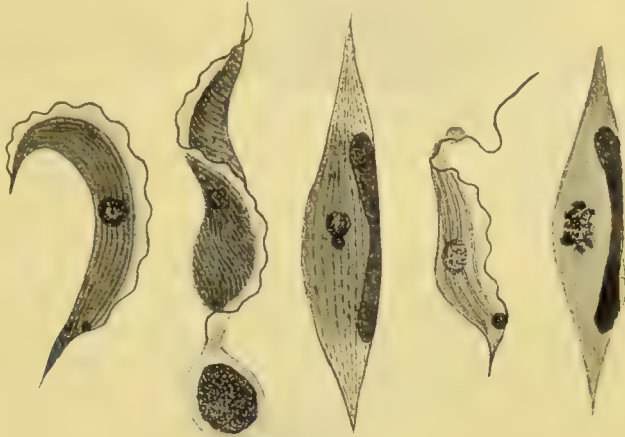


FIG. 74.—LEUCOCYTOZOÖN DANILEWSKYI ZIEMANN.

(After Schaudinn.)

From the left to the right, a macrogametocyte free, same attached to a blood cell, same enclosed in a blood cell; a free microgametocyte, same enclosed in a blood cell.

and concluded that it was enclosed in a leucocyte. In 1906 Neave described a parasite in *Numidia ptilorhynca*; and in 1907 Sambon and Seligmann described one in *Lagopus scoticus* (the red grouse); and Dutton, Todd and Tobey another in *Asturina monogrammica* (the Congo grey hawk); and lastly Sambon has quite recently reviewed the whole genus in a singularly able manner, and has described species from the capercaillie (*Tetrao urogallus*) and the pheasant (*Phasianus colchicus*). Important recent work has been done by Pantham, who demonstrated a schizogony in *L. lovati* Sambon and Seligmann 1907. E. H. Ross has suggested that Kurloff's bodies may be Leucocytozoa, and may produce spirochæte-like organisms.

Leucocytozoön danilewskyi Ziemann 1898.

Synonyms.—*Hæmamaeba ziemanni* Laveran 1902, *Spirochæta ziemanni* Schaudinn 1904, *Plasmodium ziemanni* Blanchard 1905, *Leucocytozoön ziemanni* Lühe 1906. *L. danilewskyi* is found as a parasite in the hæmatoblasts (or, according to other authors, in the leucocytes) of the little owl, *Glaucidium noctuæ* (*Athene noctuæ* Retz) and the wood-owl, *Syrnium aluco* L.

The history of the life-cycle, according to Schaudinn, may be begun with the biting of the owl by *Culex pipiens* L., and the sucking of blood containing micro- and macro-gametocytes.

Microgametocyte.—The microgametocyte may attain dimensions much larger than a leucocyte, and exists in the blood of the owl in two conditions: (1) a free active stage in the liquor sanguinis; (2) endocellular resting stage in a blood cell; and, later, when the parasite has become too large to penetrate a host

cell, free in the blood stream. In this condition the parasite may engulf the cells which formerly served it for food and shelter.

(1) *Free Active Stage*.—This is the trypanosome stage (*T. ziemanni*). The anterior end is sharp-pointed, with a kinetonucleus just at its base, from which the flagellum arises, passing posteriorly along the body and projecting some distance from the posterior end. There is a well-defined undulating membrane, with sixteen myonemes arranged in four double rows or pairs on each side. The trophonucleus is well developed, and situate near the centre of the trypanosome.

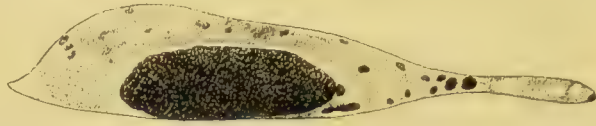


FIG. 75.—INTRACELLULAR FORM OF LEUCOCYTOZOÖN LOVATI.
(After Sambon.)

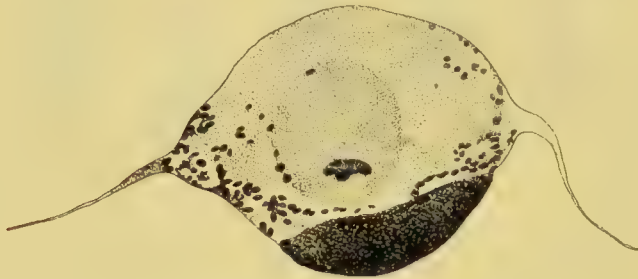


FIG. 76.—INTRACELLULAR MICROGAMETOCYTE OF LEUCOCYTOZOÖN LOVATI.
(After Seligmann and Sambon.)

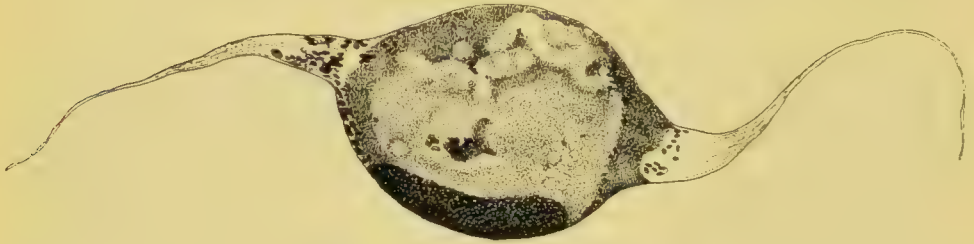


FIG. 77.—INTRACELLULAR MACROGAMETOCYTE OF LEUCOCYTOZOÖN LOVATI.
(After Seligmann and Sambon.)

(2) *Endocellular Resting Stage*.—In the intracellular stage the parasite is quite spindle-shaped, the ends being composed of ectoplasm, while the endoplasm forms a dark oval central mass containing the trophonucleus, close to which the kinetonucleus is situated. The flagellum has disappeared, but the myonemes of the ectoplasm can still be seen.

Macrogametocyte.—This has also two stages—(1) free, (2) endocellular.

(1) *Free Active Stage*.—The free stage differs from the microgametocyte in being larger, in having no free projection of the flagellum, and in having smaller tropho- and kineto-nuclei, and in the myonemes not being arranged in pairs.

(2) *Resting Stage*.—This differs from the microgametocyte in being large, with smaller nuclei.

These gametocytes, called 'leucocytozoön' by Danilewskyi and 'häm-amöbe' by Laveran, being found in the peripheral blood of the owl, are sucked into the stomach of *Culex pipiens*, and then proceed to conjugation.

Microgamete.—The microgametocyte escapes from the capsule-like periplast, and its nucleus breaks up into eight double chromosomes, which are reduced to eight single chromosomes. These travel to the periphery, and form microgametes in the manner described for *Hæmoproteus noctuæ*, microgametes of which they are said to resemble.

Macrogamete.—The macrogametocyte escapes from its enclosing cell, and the process of development of the macrogamete is the same as in *Hæmoproteus*.

Fertilization.—This is the same as in *Hæmoproteus*.

Oökinete.—There are the same three kinds of oökinetes as in *Hæmoproteus*—viz., the indifferent, the male, the female.



FIG. 78.—LEUCOCYTOZOÖN DANILEWSKYI
ZIEMANN: MICROGAMETE.

(After Schaudinn.)

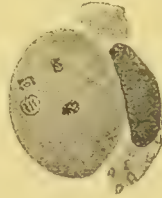


FIG. 79.—LEUCOCYTOZOÖN
DANILEWSKYI ZIEMANN:
MACROGAMETE.

(After Schaudinn.)

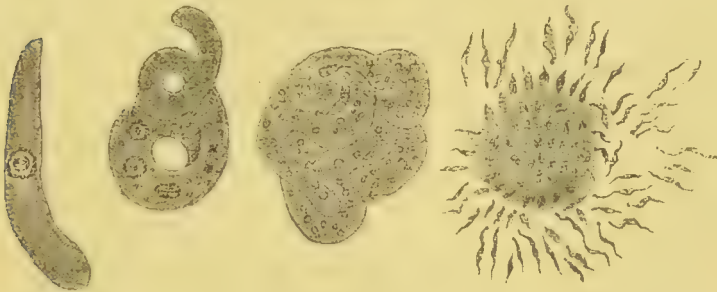


FIG. 80.—LEUCOCYTOZOÖN DANILEWSKYI ZIEMANN: THE DEVELOPMENT OF
THE OÖKINETE AND THE FORMATION OF SMALL TRYPANIFORM BODIES.

(After Schaudinn.)

The oökinete, however, differs by growing in size and multiplication of its nuclei, and at the same time coiling upon itself so as to form a skein. This skein contains a large number of nuclei uniformly distributed.

Around each of these, small portions of protoplasm gather, and become finally separated off, to form small indifferent trypanosomes in the case of the indifferent oökinete, male trypanosomes from the male oökinete, female trypanosomes from the female oökinete. A large mass of residual protoplasm is left.

These trypanosomes, especially the male, are very minute, and reproduce by longitudinal division, during which they do not separate at once, but remain attached posteriorly. Couples attached to one another may extend into the same straight line, thus giving rise to a spirochæte-like form, and while in this position may undergo longitudinal division. The spirochæte forms may become pear-shaped resting forms.

In the Owl.—On entering into the owl, the indifferent forms pass through alternate endocellular and free stages. In the former there is growth, and

in the latter there is division into smaller forms. After some time micro- and macro-gametocytes are formed in increasing numbers.

This life-history has been doubted, but Sambon has seen forms in which a coiled trypanosome body can be detected in the blood cells.

The Enclosing Cell.—There has been great doubt as to the character of the body enclosing a leucocytozoön.

1. Ziemann, Schaudinn, Dutton, Todd and Tobey believe that it is a portion of the parasite itself—*i.e.*, the periplast—and that it may enclose a red blood cell.

2. Danilewsky considers it to be a leucocyte, but derived his red cells from leucocytes. In considering it to be a leucocyte, he is supported by Laveran, Lucet, Sakharoff, and Berestneff, and most recent observers.

3. Laveran in his earlier observations believes it to be a red cell, and this Sambon supports, as do Keysselitz and Mayer.

It may be taken to be a much-enlarged dehaemoglobinized hæmatoblast or red cell, the spindle shape of which may be explained by the fusiform shape of the hæmatoblasts, and by the pseudopodia of the young parasites protruding into the long ends of the host cell. When the parasite contracts, these ends shrivel up, giving rise to the usual appearance.

The Spirochaetes.—At first Schaudinn, after tracing out the life-history described above, thought that all spirochaetes would be found to be allied to true trypanosomes; but in 1905 he stated that the spirochæte-like forms which he found in the little owl were far removed from true spirochaetes, and that the relationship was only phylogenetic, and very distant at that.

Recently E. H. Ross has brought evidence to show that Kurloff's bodies (*i.e.*, clear spherical vacuoles in the large lymphocytes of guinea-pigs) are intracorporeal stages in the life-history of a Leucocytozoön (*Lymphocytozoön cobayæ* E. H. Ross 1912) which ultimately give rise to spirochæte-like bodies, the development of which he traces, and which he considers to be the gametes. Later he and McDonagh have described a similar origin for *Treponema pallidum*, but this will be discussed later.

Recent work has tended to confirm the doubts thrown on Schaudinn's work, but the general appearance of a Leucocytozoön in its cell is sometimes remarkably similar to a trypanosome. It is possible that there may be different parasites confused under the term Leucocytozoön, and their life-histories may be different, as Fantham's work, presently to be described, is opposed to Schaudinn's work.

Leucocytozoön lovati Sambon and Seligmann 1907.

This leucocytozoön was discovered by Sambon and Seligmann in the red grouse (*Lagopus scoticus*), and has been recently restudied by Fantham. The microgametocyte and macrogametocyte are depicted in Figs. 76 and 77 on p. 304, and were till recently the only forms known, but Fantham has now found the schizonts, and described the process of schizogony.

Sporogony.—The microgametocytes measure 13 to 17 μ in length by 6 to 12 μ in breadth, and possess hyaline pale staining cytoplasm with a large, rather granular nucleus. The macrogametocyte measures 14 to 20 μ in length by 10 to 16 μ in breadth, and has a granular somewhat alveolar cytoplasm with a central nucleus with a karyosome. Their further development is unknown, but Fantham has found vermicles in *Ornithomyia lagopodis*, the grouse-fly, which may be the agent of transmission.

Schizogony.—The schizont is found in the spleen in cells which they almost fill and absorb, and which they do not elongate in the way in which the gametocytes deform their host cells. The schizont measures 11 to 14 μ by 8 to 11 μ , and is therefore of an oval shape, with a nucleus resembling that of the microgametocyte, and a cytoplasm like that of the macrogametocyte.

The nucleus divides by rapid binary fission into some 12 to 20 small nuclei, and then the cytoplasm divides, giving rise to 12 to 20 merozoites, which are small vermicles measuring 7 to 8 μ by 1 to 1.5 μ . There is some residual cytoplasm after division. The merozoites now escape from the parasite and cell, and for a very brief period become free, swimming in the liquor san-

guinis, and then quickly re-enter leucocytes or immature erythrocytes, and ultimately differentiate into gametocytes or schizonts.

Remarks.—This process of schizogony may explain the periodical increase in the gametocytes in the blood noted by Mathis and Léger in *L. caulleryi* in Tonkin. Fantham very carefully points out that the above life-history may not take place in all Leucocytozoidæ, but, notwithstanding this, Fantham's results do not support Schaudinn's researches.

Species.—Some of the species described are: *Leucocytozoön majoris* Laveran 1902, in the great tit (*Parus major*); *L. sakharoffi* Sambon 1908, in the raven (*Corvus corax*); *L. berestnieffi* Sambon 1908, in the magpie (*Pica pica*); *L. danilewskyi* Ziemann 1898, in the little owl (*Athene noctuæ*); *L. toddi* Sambon 1907, in the Congo grey hawk (*Asturina monogrammica*); *L. mansoni* Sambon 1908, in the capercaillie (*Tetrao urogallus*); *L. lovati* Sambon and Seligmann, in the red grouse (*Lagopus scoticus*); *L. macleani* Sambon 1908, in the common pheasant (*Phasianus colchicus*); *L. smithi* Laveran and Lucet 1905, in the domestic turkey (*Meleagris gallopavo domestica*); *L. neavi* Balfour 1906, in the Abyssinian guinea-fowl (*Numidia pitlorhynca*); *L. caulleryi* Mathis and Léger 1911, *L. sabrazesi* in *Gallus ferrugineus*, *L. martini* Mathis and Léger in *Pavo cristatus*, and *L. marchouxii* Mathis and Léger in *Turtur humilis*, and *L. lebœufi* Mathis and Léger in *Querquedula crecca*.

FAMILY 3. TRYPANOSOMIDÆ SAMBON 1906.

Definition.—Encystina with a well-developed flagellum and undulating membrane in some stage of the life-history. The kinetonucleus usually passes forward and in the fully-developed flagellate stage is situated in the aflagellar half of the body.

Type Genus.—*Trypanosoma* Gruby emended Laveran and Mesnil 1901.

Classification.—A brief history of the discovery of the more important species of this family has been given in Chapter I. The genera which have been described are:—

Trypanosoma Gruby 1843 emended Laveran and Mesnil 1901.

Trypanoplasma Laveran and Mesnil 1901 emended 1904.

Trypanophis Keysseltz 1904.

Endotrypanum Mesnil and Brimont 1908.

Schizotrypanum Chagas 1909.

Endotrypanum would appear to be an immature trypanosome without an undulating membrane, and parasitic in red corpuscles, because *Schizotrypanum* in its merozoite stage penetrates into red corpuscles, in which it grows into adult form, and is finally set free as a trypanosome. It would therefore appear difficult with our present knowledge to separate this genus from *Trypanosoma*, especially as the sloth in which *Endotrypanum* was found did contain one example of a typical trypanosome. In 1905 Nissle drew attention to the occasional invasion of red cells by trypanosomes, and in 1904 Moore found peg-shaped bodies in the red blood-corpuscles of cattle suffering from trypanosomiasis in Southern Nigeria.

With regard to *Schizotrypanum*, it was at first classified as a trypanosome, but when its peculiar schizogony became known, it was thought necessary to separate it therefrom under a separate generic name. Further investigations have, however, shown that this is not essentially different from the schizogony of *T. lewisi* in

the blood, nor is it different from the multiplication in cysts described by Carini for *T. lewisi* and *T. leptodactyli*, by Vianna for *T. gambiense*, and by França for *T. undulans* (*T. inopinatum*).

It would therefore appear probable that encystment and mesozoite formation, or schizogony, is part of the life-cycle of, at least, some trypanosomes, while the invasion of red corpuscles may also occur, at least, in some species; and therefore it is not possible to consider Endotrypanum and Schizotrypanum to be 'good' genera at present.

The genera included in the Trypanosomidæ are therefore:—

Trypanosoma Gruby emended Laveran and Mesnil 1901.

Trypanoplasma Laveran and Mesnil 1901 emended 1904.

Trypanophis Keysselitz 1904.

And these can be recognized as follows:—

A. With a single flagellum—monomastigote: *Trypanosoma*.

B. With more than one flagellum—Heteromastigote.

I. Kinetonucleus as large as the Trophonucleus. Found in Vertebrates—*Trypanoplasma*.

II. Kinetonucleus much smaller than the Trophonucleus. Found in Cœlenterates—*Trypanophis*.

(1) *Trypanosoma* Gruby 1843.

Synonyms.—*Amœba* Gluge 1842, *Paramœcium* Gluge 1842, *Undulina* Lankester 1871, *Herpetomonas* Kent 1878, *Hæmatomonas* Mitrophan 1883, *Trypanomonas* Danilewsky 1885, *Trypanozoon* Lühe 1906.

Definition.—Trypanosomidæ, with the periplast raised into a longitudinal undulating membrane, along which the single flagellum runs.

Morphology.—The usual form in which trypanosomes are found in vertebrate blood is that of an elongated, spindle-shaped mass of cytoplasm composed of an inner granular endoplasm, and surrounded by ectoplasm (periplast). The shape of the parasite is, however, by no means always a spindle, but, on the contrary, varies considerably in different species, and may even be rounded.

In the endoplasm is situated a trophonucleus, often called the 'nucleus,' concerning the structure of which there is considerable difference of opinion. Some authorities—e.g., Prowazek, etc.—with regard to the nucleus of *T. lewisi* and *T. brucei*, and Miss Robertson, with regard to *T. raiæ*, say that the nucleus is complex and resembles the description already given for that of *Hæmoproteus noctuæ*, that of *T. lewisi* having eight chromosomes and a centrosome connected by a strand.

Other authorities, like Ross and Moore, Breinl and Hindle, consider that observers have been led astray by using dried films; for, according to them, though pretty pictures of the parasite are produced by this method, still, such delicate structures as the details

of the nucleus are ruined, and therefore, in order to study these bodies accurately, the films must be fixed while wet in such a reagent as Fleming's fluid, and suitably stained. If this is done properly, according to them, it is seen that the nucleus is a vesicle bounded by a nuclear membrane, and having in its centre one small chromatin sphere, called by some the intranuclear centrosome.

Situated somewhere in the cytoplasm, and generally near the aflagellar extremity, is another mass of chromatin, the kinetoc-nucleus. From this kinetoc-nucleus a faint strand—the rhizoplast—proceeds, which ends in a little bead—the blepharoplast—from which the flagellum, which is also composed of chromatin, arises. A more primitive arrangement is for the kinetoc-nucleus to contain the blepharoplast, which is really only a centrosome. Under these circumstances, the flagellum will arise from the kinetoc-nucleus. When the blepharoplast is separate from the kinetoc-nucleus it is a moot point as to whether there is or there is not another centrosome in that nucleus. The flagellum runs outwards through the endoplasm to the ectoplasm, which it raises into a membrane, the

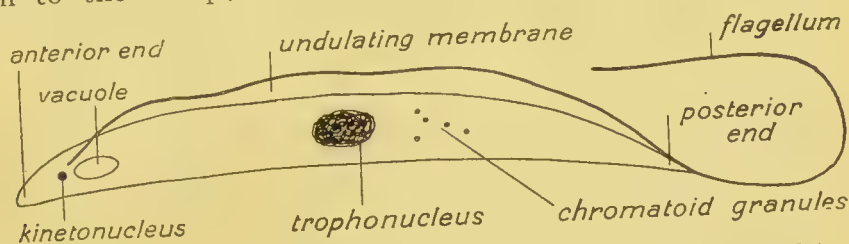


FIG. 81.—DIAGRAM SHOWING THE STRUCTURE AND POLARITY OF A TRYPANOSOME.

undulating membrane, and turns, and runs along the remaining length of the cytoplasm, in which it may end, or it may project as a free lash beyond the cytoplasm. In this course it presents three portions: (1) The root in the endoplasm; (2) the undulating portion in the ectoplasm; and (3) the free portion. In some stages of the life-history the flagellum, instead of turning along the undulating membrane, projects from its blepharoplast through the endo- and ecto-plasm to the outside of the parasite.

The undulating membrane, therefore, is the layer of ectoplasm (periplast) raised from the surface of the parasite by the second portion of the flagellum along a line sometimes called dorsal, and may be prolonged a certain distance along what is generally considered to be its free portion. The membrane is variously described as being homogeneous or strengthened by myonemes as in *Hæmoproteus noctuæ*.

Besides these structures the endoplasm often contains a vacuole, looked upon by some observers as a contractile vacuole, while others deny its existence. There is no doubt about its existence in *Trypanosoma gambiense*. Chromatoid granules can also be seen in the cytoplasm.

Before leaving this part of the subject it must be noted that many authors have given various names to the trophonucleus, kinetonucleus, centrosome, and blepharoplast. We use the terms in the same sense in which they have been used by Minchin and Woodcock—viz., the principal nucleus is a trophonucleus, because it is believed to be largely concerned in nutrition; it contains an achromatic body, which is the centrosome. The smaller nucleus is a kinetonucleus, because it is mainly concerned in motion; while the little bead connected with the flagellum is looked upon as a blepharoplast, because it is an achromatic body connected with a cilium or a flagellum.

We now come to a point on which there is a great difference of opinion—viz., the polarity of the parasite. There can be no doubt, in our opinion, that, as a rule, the anterior end of a parasite should be the non-flagellate end, as first suggested by Sambon, because, in wending its way through the blood, that end goes first, and the undulating membrane and flagellum follow, and blood being the natural habitat of the parasite, this method of propulsion must be considered to be normal. Moreover, morphologists (Woodcock) support this view.

Movement is largely caused by the undulating membrane, while the flagellum assists; but creeping or gregarinoid movements have been noted by Léger, and zigzag movements by Gray and Tulloch, and in both of these the non-flagellate ends go first. In this work anterior, therefore, means the non-flagellate end of the trypanosome, and posterior the flagellate end.

The anterior end is very variable, and may be even amœboid, while the posterior end is generally tapering, because the cytoplasm extends some way along the flagellum.

It has already been noted that the body of the parasite is slightly compressed laterally, and the edge with the undulating membrane is considered to be dorsal. In some species a supporting structure somewhat of the nature of an axostyle has been described.

The measurements of the parasite are from the non-flagellate extremity to the kinetonucleus, from that to the anterior end of the trophonucleus, from that to the posterior end of the trophonucleus, from that to the tip of the flagellum, the sum of these giving the length; while the width is taken in the region of the trophonucleus.

Stephens' method of measurement is, after outlining the parasite, to draw a straight line on a piece of transparent paper, and to mark one end, which is made to coincide with one extremity of the outlined trypanosome and then transfixed by a vertical needle. The transparent paper is now rotated so that the line runs in the long axis of the parasite. Where it deviates another pin is inserted and the first removed. The transparent paper is again rotated to take in another portion of the axis of the parasite, and this is repeated until all the deviations of the parasite have been followed and the distal extremity reached.

The results of careful measurements have been to show that some trypanosomes are polymorphic and others are not.

Food is absorbed by osmosis from the liquid in which the parasite is living.

Life-History.—The life-history of a trypanosome is not as yet fully known, but it is recognized that it has an alternation of generations associated with an alteration of hosts, one generation being usually completed in the blood of a vertebrate, and the other in the alimentary canal and its appendages of some blood-sucking invertebrate.

In the Vertebrate.—If an uninfected or clean non-immune is infected by the bites of infective invertebrates, at first no parasites are to be found in the peripheral blood, and some days must elapse before they appear. This interval is *the incubation period*. What takes place during this period is but little known, the only observations being those by Fantham, who saw a few rounded forms fifteen to eighteen hours after inoculating *T. gambiense* and *T. rhodesiense* into rats; and those by França, who reports the presence of similar forms at a later stage of incubation. These are probably multiplication forms, which are the parent forms of the trypanosomes presently to be seen in increasing numbers in the blood.

When the parasites are present in the peripheral blood, they usually show a marked pleomorphism. Thus, in *T. gambiense* Miss Robertson finds short forms 14 to 20 μ in length, medium forms 20 to 24 μ in length, and long forms 23 to 33 μ in length. Until recently it was usual to consider these variations as being probably indicative of sexual differentiation, but she concludes that this is not so, but that they are variations due to different stages of growth and subsequent division. The multiplication of the trypanosome in the blood is usually by longitudinal fission, but it may also take place by schizogony, with or without entering an endothelial or other cell. The number of trypanosomes in the blood varies considerably from time to time, apparently in more or less regular cycles, and their disappearance appears to be associated with the encystment in the lungs, spleen, bone-marrow, etc., in the form of the latent bodies described by Breinl, Fantham, and others. During their life in the vertebrate it appears probable that they propagate their species—in part, at all events—by granules, which are comparable to the 'infective granule' described by Balfour for spirochaetes, because Fry has demonstrated that *T. brucei* can throw off granules, and his observations have been confirmed by Ranke. This granule-shedding takes place in the liver, spleen, lungs, and lymphatic glands. At first the granule is simply a free pyriform body, but later it develops a flagellum and becomes actively motile. Its further history is, however, unknown in trypanosomes.

There can be no doubt that there is a reaction on the part of the cells of the vertebrate against the trypanosomes with the formation of antibodies in the form of trypanolysins, etc., but more will be said on this subject later.

Binary Fission.—Starting with a typical medium-sized parasite of *T. lewisi*, which is non-pathogenic, and therefore more likely to

show the true life-history than a pathogenic species, Moore, Breinl and Hindle have shown that a binary division takes place with or without growth. This is brought about by amitotic division of the kinetonucleus and trophonucleus, followed by the formation of a new flagellum in the daughter parasite and the division of the



FIG. 82.—DIAGRAM OF THE LIFE-CYCLE OF *Trypanosoma lewisi* IN THE BODY OF THE RAT.

1, *Trypanosoma lewisi*; 2-10, stages in rosette formation; 11-13, development of a small flagellate form into a trypanosome; 14, binary fission.

(Constructed from drawings by Moore, Breinl, and Hindle in the *Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology*.)

cytoplasm. They note the same method in *T. gambiense*. This is directly opposed to the observations of Prowazek and Byloff, who described complex nuclear divisions.

Rosette Formation.—The medium-sized parasite, according to Moore, Breinl, and Hindle, grows into large forms, which pass through the following development :—

1. The trophonucleus undergoes reduction by amitosis, the reduction body disappearing.

2. The kinetonucleus gives off a body, which travels—increasing in size as it proceeds—to the trophonucleus, with which it perhaps fuses, but this is not definitely known.

In *T. gambiense* a strand forms between the kineto- and trophonuclei, instead of this travelling body, which is seen in *T. lewisi* and *T. equiperdum*.

3. The tropho- and kineto-nuclei divide to form fusion masses consisting of two, four, seven, or more small parasites, which at first possess only the old flagellum, but in which later new flagella form (the rosette formation). This stage is not definitely known in *T. gambiense*.

4. The small parasites, which must be looked upon as representing latent phases, separate from the fusion mass. These small parasites grow into medium-sized parasites, thus completing the cycle.

All observers are agreed as to the rosette formation, and with regard to the process from the kinetonucleus, this was first pointed out by Miss Robertson, whose work is therefore confirmed. The band is said to be composed of volutine. As to the latent phases, we believe that they are the same as the peculiar aflagellate round and oval forms described several years ago by Castellani, in the cerebro-spinal fluid of sleeping-sickness patients, and which he compared to the amœboid forms found by Plimmer in the brains of animals infected with nagana.

The development of *Schizotrypanum* differs in many points from this description, for the trypanosome enters an endothelial cell in the lung, or a cardiac muscle fibre, or a neuroglia cell of the central nervous system, or a striped muscular fibre. In these situations it becomes simply a rounded body, which possesses trophonucleus and kinetonucleus, but has lost its flagellum and undulating membrane. This body undergoes repeated divisions, and each division eventually becomes a trypanosome.

Sporogony.—It has already been said that the utmost confusion exists as regards schizogony, which takes place in the vertebrate host, but the state of knowledge with regard to sporogony is almost worse. Theoretically, it would be expected that sexual forms, male and female, would be found in the blood of the vertebrate, and that these, taken into the alimentary canal of the blood-sucker, would conjugate and produce oökinetes, and perhaps oöcysts, from which forms would be produced which might infect the proboscis of the same individual, or, by entering into the eggs, infect a new generation, which alone might be the means of dissemination of the parasite. But these theoretical views have so far not been confirmed by actual observations, which must now be discussed seriatim.

Sexual Forms.—According to Prowazek, *T. lewisi* can be differentiated into three forms—(1) male, (2) female, (3) indifferent—and, according to Prowazek, Lühe, Nocht, and Mayer, the same can be

seen in *T. gambiense*: but, according to Holmes, only males, females, and young females can be seen in *T. evansi*.

Male Forms.—These are defined to be very slender trypanosomes, actively motile, with an elongated nucleus, which stains well.

Female Forms.—Broad, sluggish trypanosomes, with reticulated protoplasm and a round nucleus, both of which stain poorly. They possess a slender, undulating membrane and a short flagellum.

Indifferent Forms.—These are the forms most commonly met with, possessing granular cytoplasm and a not very well-defined nucleus.

It must be admitted that between these there are all stages of intermediary forms, so that they are not sharply defined, and some of these may be simply the ordinary trypanosome in various stages of growth and division, as described above.

Chagas has shown that *Trypanosoma cruzi* in the lungs may lose its flagellum and become curved into an arc, the extremities of which fuse, forming at first a ring which subsequently becomes a sphere



FIG. 83.—CRITHIDIA MELOPHAGIA FLU.

(After Flu.)

1, Microgamete; 2, macrogamete; 3, zygosis; 4, oökinete and degenerating microgamete; 5-8, oökinete in the alimentary canal and ovary.

with a trophonucleus and a kinetonucleus, the latter of which is expelled in female forms, while it is retained in male forms. In this manner the macrogametocytes and the microgametocytes arise. Each of these divides into eight macrogametes, which are uninuclear, and eight microgametes, which have a trophonucleus and kinetonucleus united by a filament. These gametes escape from the cyst, which is formed by the periplast of the original trypanosome, and enter red blood cells, in which they develop into sexually differentiated trypanosomes—i.e., females with one, and males with two, nuclei. These are the forms which infect the *Lamus*, or invertebrate host, and do not multiply in the vertebrate host.

In the Invertebrate Host.—The blood of the infected vertebrate is not always infective for the invertebrate host. Thus Miss Robertson has shown, with regard to *T. gambiense*, that the tsetse-fly cannot be infected by feeding just before an outburst of multiplica-

tion in the vertebrate host, or during the period of destruction which precedes a paucity period, or at the summit of an exalted period, or during certain periods of rapid multiplication, when the absolute and relative numbers of the short forms mentioned above are diminished.

Immediately after infection the invertebrate host can *mechanically* convey the infection to a *clean* host, and this power persists for about twenty-four hours, after which the invertebrate host becomes non-infective, and remains so for a varying period, which was found by Kleine not to be less than eighteen days as regards *Glossina palpalis* and *T. gambiense*, and by Kinghorn and Yorke to be about fourteen days in *G. morsitans* infected with *T. rhodesiense*, after which the flies become again infective, and apparently remain so for a very long period, probably for the rest of their lives. These facts prove definitely that the parasites undergo some changes of an important nature in the flies in question, and that the second infective period cannot possibly be classed as mechanical. The fact that *Lamus megistus* remains infective ten to twenty-five days after feeding on a host infected with *T. cruzi* also proves that the infection is not mechanical. We therefore draw the conclusion that the trypanosome undergoes part of its life-cycle in the invertebrate host, and the first question which naturally arises is the fate of the so-called 'male' and 'female' forms found in the blood of the vertebrate. Are they true male and female forms, and do they conjugate and form an oökinete or zygote?

Conjugation.—Conjugation of male and female forms has been but seldom observed, and, indeed, it is difficult to be certain that it is conjugation which has been seen, and not division. However, it has been described by Keysselitz as occurring in leeches fed on a carp infected with *Trypanoplasma borreli*, and by Prowazek in lice fed on rats infected with *T. lewisi*. The most convincing account is that by Flu in *Crithidia melophagia*, to which reference will be made under the heading Crithidia.

On the other hand, careful observers like Miss Robertson and Captain Patton have quite recently failed to see this process in their studies of trypanosomes and herpetomonads. The conclusion is that conjugation has not been proved to be present in trypanosomes so far, though it may at any time be established definitely.

Development without Conjugation.—According to most observers, there is no conjugation, but development takes place asexually in the invertebrate host. This development varies in different species, and may be classified as follows :—

- A. Development in the proboscis.
- B. Development in the anterior portions of the alimentary canal.
- C. Development in the whole alimentary canal.
- D. Development associated with infection of the salivary glands.
- E. Rectal encystment—fæcal infection.
- F. Ovum infection.

A. *Proboscean Development*.—Roubaud has described a form of asexual development of *T. gambiense* and *T. brucei* in the proboscis of *Glossina palpalis* in which the undulating membrane disappears; the flagellum is shortened, and the kinetonucleus approaches the trophonucleus, while the parasite, becomes attached to the wall of the proboscis, and multiplies, forming masses of parasites, the whole process occupying only a few minutes.

Though he thinks that this method of development explains the infection of man and animals by tsetse-flies in Africa, he was unable to produce infection of susceptible animals by inoculation of these forms.

This form of development occurs in *T. vivax* and in *T. cazalboui*.

B. *Anterior Development*.—Miss Robertson has shown that the trypanosomes of freshwater fish, when ingested by the leech *Hemiclepsis marginata*, first of all undergo rapid multiplication by unequal



FIG. 84.—PROBOSCEAN DEVELOPMENT.

(After Roubaud.)

binary fission, giving rise to small crithidial-like individuals, which also multiply in the crop, and then towards the end of digestion pass forward as long, slender trypanosomes into the proboscis sheath, and are capable of infecting a new host; while the crithidial forms which remain in the crop become Leishmania-like bodies which multiply again when fresh blood is ingested. The development of *T. vittatæ* of the milk tortoise, *Emyda vittata*, takes place in a somewhat similar manner in the leech *Glossiphonia* sp.?

C. *Entire Canal Development*.—

This form of development is exemplified by *T. rajæ* in the leech

Pontodella muricata, but in this case the trypanosomes in the crop give rise to binucleate rounded Leishmania-like forms without locomotor apparatus, which pass into the intestine, where they become flagellate, and appear as crithidial forms and multiply rapidly. During hunger periods they become Leishmania-like bodies, only to revert to the crithidial form when food is ingested. These crithidial-like forms become long, slender trypanosomes, which pass forward into the proboscis and are the infective agents.

D. *Salivary Gland Infection*.—According to Bruce and his collaborators, if *G. palpalis* is fed with *T. gambiense*, the proboscis is not involved in the further development. The fly now becomes non-infective for some twenty-eight days on an average. The trypanosomes in five to seven days disappear (possibly become intracellular), but later return in a small percentage of flies, and multiply in the fore, mid and hind guts, generally as long, moderately broad

forms, with protoplasm which stains well, and contains an oval central nucleus, a small micronucleus, undulating membrane, and a flagellum with a blepharoplast. After twenty-eight days it is found that the salivary glands become infected with the short stumpy forms already mentioned above, and now the fly is found to be infective and to remain so for long periods. These short, stumpy forms have been noted by Kleine in the intestine. Miss Robertson finds that the trypanosomes infect the salivary glands from the gut via the proboscis and the salivary ducts.

Kinghorn and Yorke have shown that the salivary glands of *G. morsitans* become infected in a somewhat similar manner with *T. rhodesiense*.

Chagas has seen trypanosomes in the body cavity and salivary glands of *Lamus megistus*, which are without doubt the forms which are inoculated in infections.

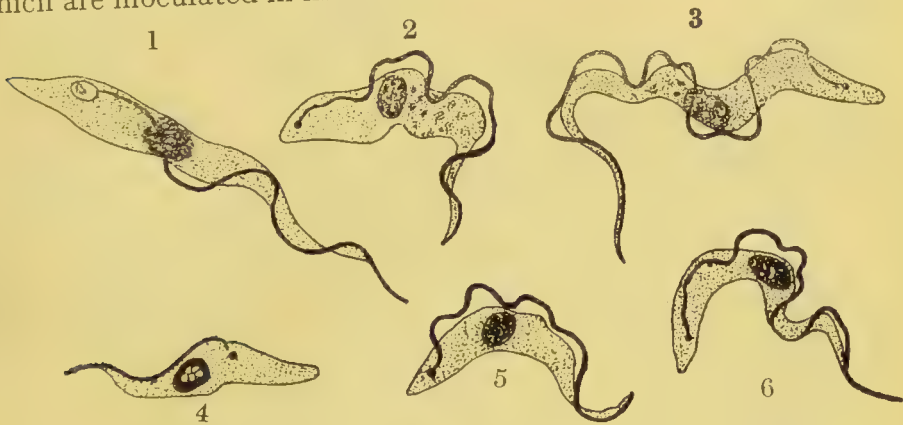


FIG. 85.—DEVELOPMENT OF *T. GAMBIENSE* DUTTON.

1, In the vertebrate blood; 2 and 3, in the mid-gut; 4 and 5, in the hind-gut; 6, in the salivary glands of the tsetse-fly.

(After Bruce, Hamerton, Bateman, and Mackie.)

E. Rectal Encystment.—Minchin finds that the crithidial forms of *T. grayi* become encysted in the rectum of *G. palpalis*, but these cysts may possibly belong to the crocodile trypanosome.

F. Ovum Infection.—This has not yet been definitely proved.

Meteorological Conditions.—Kinghorn and Yorke have shown that the development of *T. rhodesiense* in *G. morsitans* is markedly influenced by the temperature of the air, 75° to 85° F. being more favourable than 60° to 70° F., and, under favourable conditions, the first stage of development can take place, but not the later stages, and flies may remain with the parasites incompletely developed for eighty days. Humidity is without effect.

Methods of Infection.—In nature there can be no doubt that infection can take place in more than one way, and Minchin has pointed out that the different methods may be—

I. CONTAMINATIVE.—This is the infection of the host by swallowing encysted parasites. At present there is no proof that this exists

FIG. 86. — TRYPANOSOMA
RAJÆ: ROUND FORM,
IN THE LEECH.

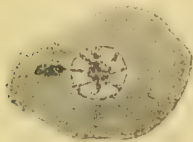


FIG. 87. — TRYPANOSOMA
RAJÆ: ROUND FORM,
OLDER STAGE.



FIG. 89. — TRYPANOSOMA
RAJÆ: POSSIBLY A
FEMALE FORM, IN THE
LEECH.

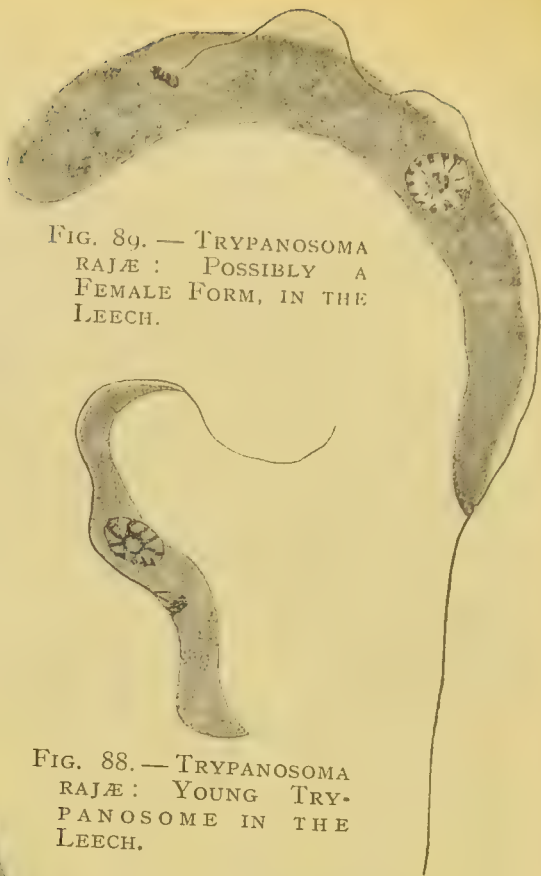


FIG. 88. — TRYPANOSOMA
RAJÆ: YOUNG TRY-
PANOSOME IN THE
LEECH.



FIG. 90. — TRYPANO-
SOMA RAJÆ: POS-
SIBLY A MALE
FORM, IN THE
LEECH.

FIG. 91. — TRYPANO-
SOMA RAJÆ: SLEN-
DER FORM, FROM
THE PROBOSCIS OF
THE LEECH.



FIG. 92. — TRYPANOSOMA RAJÆ:
FULLY DEVELOPED TRYPANO-
SOME IN THE SKATE.

(All after Miss Robertson.)

in trypanosomes. But Minchin has shown that *T. grayi* becomes encysted while lying in the proctodæum of *Glossina palpalis* by a shortening of the flagellum and an excretion of a cyst-wall, which, beginning at the anterior extremity, gradually spreads round the shortening parasite while the flagellum is being absorbed. The cysts, which lie quite free from the proctodæum, are first pear-shaped and then oval, and the trophonuclei and kintonuclei break up into chromidia. Minchin believes that these cysts will be found to infect some vertebrate, but there is no proof of this at present.

2. INOCULATIVE.—The spread of a trypanosome from one vertebrate host to another was demonstrated by Bruce while studying *T. brucei*, and also by the same observer, Nabarro, and Kleine for *T. gambiense*, both diseases being spread by tsetse-flies, though with regard to the former it had long been known that the tsetse-fly was the cause of the disease.

There are, however, two ways in which a blood-sucker can spread an infection: (a) the direct; (b) the indirect.

(a) *The Direct*.—In this the blood-sucker simply transmits the parasite unchanged.

(b) *The Indirect*.—In this method the parasite undergoes a cycle of development in the blood-sucker, the nature of which has been fully discussed already.

It would appear probable that it is only in the natural hosts that forms develop which are infective for the invertebrate.

Effects upon the Host.—Trypanosomes may produce pathological effects on their host, or may apparently be harmless.

The best known of the former are—*T. gambiense* and *T. rhodesiense*, the causes of sleeping sickness; *T. cruzi* of American trypanosomiasis; *T. evansi*, of surra in horses, etc., in India and elsewhere; *T. brucei*, of nagana in cattle and horses, etc.; *T. vivax*, of disease in cattle, sheep, and goats, in the Cameroons; *T. nanum*, of cattle sickness in the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan; *T. dimorphon*, of the Gambia horse sickness; *T. cazalboni* of souma, a disease of cattle in the French Sudan, and *T. pecaui*, of sheep in the same place; *T. equinum*, of mal de caderas in South America; *T. equiperdum*, of dourine in horses in Europe and Africa.

Symptoms.—The pathogenic effects of the parasites show themselves in the production of fever, skin eruptions, emaciation, local or general oedema, and disease of the nervous system. Secondary bacterial affections are also common. The mortality is often high.

Morbid Anatomy.—The lesions are often insignificant, but inflammation and enlargement of the lymphatic glands is characteristic, and dropsy and inflammation of the meninges are also found, which in human trypanosomiasis takes the form of meningo-encephalitis, as will be described later.

Inoculations.—The parasites can be spread from one animal and from one species to another by inoculation of infected blood.

Agglutinins.—While in the body of the host agglutinins are formed, for if blood containing trypanosomes is treated with the

serum of an animal which has had one or more injections of blood containing the same parasite, a rapid massing of the parasites into rosettes, with the anterior ends pointing inwards and the flagella outwards, takes place.

This is called agglomeration, and may last a few minutes, the parasites being unaffected, or may persist till they die.

Reducing Power.—Trypanosomes have been shown by Nauss and Yorke to have a marked reducing power on hæmoglobin.

Precipitins.—Mayer has shown that the serum of a dog infected by *T. brucei* is precipitated by a salt extract of the same parasite, but not by that of *T. equinum*, thus proving the presence of specific precipitins.

Immunity.—Active immunity, due to the action of the leucocytes (Laveran and Mesnil) or to cytolytins (McNeal), can be produced in certain cases, but it is not carried from mother to young. Vertebrates in whose blood trypanosomes will not develop have sera with marked trypanolytic powers. Léger and Ringenbach have shown that the serum of animals affected with nagana and surra, also *T. equinum*, *T. gambiense*, and *T. congolense*, is trypanolytic for homologous and allied trypanosomes, but not for others.

Passive immunity was produced by Rabinowitsch and Kempner for *T. lewisi*, and is either wholly or partially successful. Natural immunity is well known—e.g., man against *T. brucei*.

Involution Forms.—Degenerated, vacuolated involution forms may be seen as a result of immunity coming on, or of treatment by drugs.

Toxins.—Uhlenhuth, Hübener, and Worthe have demonstrated the presence of endotoxins in *T. equiperdum*, which observation supports McNeal's suggestion as to their presence, and also the work of Martin, Darre, and Leber. Free toxins do not exist, but endotoxins can be set free by trypanolysis.

Local Reservoirs.—The long-continued infectivity of *Glossina palpalis* after the removal of man from a district points to either long duration of infectivity in the fly or to a local reservoir which probably is to be found in antelopes, and perhaps other animals in the case of *T. gambiense*.

Cultivation.—McNeal and Novy cultivated *T. lewisi* in the water of condensation of blood-agar tubes in 1903, and obtained, at 37° C., and also at the room temperature, good cultures, in which *T. lewisi* varied in size from minute forms 1 to 2 μ in length up to 50 to 60 μ , and colonies of rosettes were seen with all the flagella turned inwards. The flagellum in cultivated forms projects directly from the kinetonuclear end of the parasite.

The following have been cultivated : *T. cruzi*, by Chagas ; *T. brucei*, by McNeal and Novy, and by Laveran and Mesnil ; *T. equinum*, by R. Thomas and Breinl, *T. equiperdum*, by Thomas and Breinl, with slight success ; *T. gambiense*, by Thomas, Breinl, Gray, and Tulloch, with partial success ; *T. evansi*, by Novy, McNeal and

Hare, and by Thomas and Breinl, but were found to be non-virulent, and subcultures could not be obtained.

Classification.—The various species of the genus *Trypanosoma* are differentiated by—(1) their morphological characters; (2) their animal reactions, which are (a) the effects of inoculation into different animals, some of which will be found to be immune; (b) the effect of cross-immunization, which means that an animal immunized against one species of trypanosome will be found open to attack by another; (c) agglomeration caused by immune serum; (3) attempts at cultivation on the Novy-McNeal-Matthias medium will differentiate certain forms which develop in different ways, while others will not develop at all; (4) application of the precipitin test; (5) the discovery of the true invertebrate host; (6) the chromotherapeutic reactions, for Mesnil and Nicolle have shown that different derivatives of benzene have varying effects on pathogenic trypanosomes, and may therefore help to differentiate them; (7) the biometric methods of Ross, Bruce, Stephens, and others, by which the parasites are measured accurately, and their numbers in the blood also determined.

Type Species.—*Trypanosoma rotatorium* Mayer 1843. It is a remarkable thing that with all the work which has of late been expended upon the genus *Trypanosoma*, no one has thoroughly studied the type genus. If this were done, it is possible that a basis of the study and classification of the other species of the genus might be laid. We therefore give a brief description of the type before discussing the classification.

***Trypanosoma rotatorium* Mayer 1843.**

Synonyms.—*Paramœcium loricatum seu costatum* Mayer 1843, *Amœba rotatoria* Mayer 1843, *Trypanosoma sanguinis* Gruby 1843, *Monas rotatorium* Lieberkühn 1870, *Undulina ranarum* Ray Lankester 1871, *Paramœcioides costatus* Grassi 1872.

Gluge in 1842 discovered in the blood of frogs an organism resembling that which had been discovered by Valentin in the previous year in *Salmo fario*, the brown trout, and which was thought to be related to the genus *Amœba* of Ehrenberg, but which from his description and from his figures is more probably a trypanosome. Gluge's description is also very short, and he is followed by Mayer, in 1843, who describes two forms—an *Amœba rotatoria* and a *Paramœcium loricatum*, or *costatum*—but in November of the same year Gruby gave a clear description of the organism, and applied the generic term 'Trypanosoma' to it, so that it becomes the type species of the genus, from which any variation in the classification of the species must be made.

Gruby's Original Description.—'Its elongated body is flattened, transparent, curved like a centre-bit: the cephalic end is terminated in a thin, elongated filaments; the caudal end is terminated also in a pointed filament. The length of the animal is 40 to 80 μ , its breadth is 5 to 10 μ , the filamentous pointed cephalic end has the greatest mobility, the length of the cephalic filament is 10 to 12 μ ; its body is elongated, flat, and toothed like the blade of a saw all along the length of one of its margins; it is, as I have above mentioned, supple and twisted two or three times around its axis, like an augur or a corkscrew, which is the reason why I propose to name this hæmatozoön "*Trypanosoma*."

Zoological Distribution.—It has been found in *Rana esculenta* Linnæus, in *R. temporaria* Linnæus in Europe; in *R. speciosum* in the Congo; in *R. trinodis*

in the Gambia. Whether the species found in *Hyla arborea* are truly *T. rotatorium* or not is uncertain.

Morphology.—The pleomorphism exhibited by this form is so varied that it requires classification, for, as Chalachnikov has shown, the following varieties exist:

1. *Flattened Forms.*—(a) Simple plain forms; (b) plain forms rolled on themselves; (c) spiral forms.

2. *Pectinated Forms.*—(a) Pectinated spiral forms; (b) cornucopial forms. In all these forms the undulating membrane is much folded, and has a thickened edge. The flagellum, which is short, starts from the kinetonucleus, which is situate at a variable distance from the aflagellar extremity. The trophonucleus is round or oval. The usual length varies from 40 to 80 μ , the breadth from 5 to 40 μ , and the flagellum is about 10 to 12 μ long.

Life-History.—The life-history is but little known. Asexual multiplication takes place by the trypanosome becoming round and losing its locomotor apparatus, and dividing by mitosis. It is but rarely inoculable into other frogs, but it grows in cultures, especially upon Novy-McNeal's medium, but the cultures are not inoculable. In the cultures leptomonas and rosette forms are seen. The researches of França show that it is capable of developing in the leech (*Helobdella algira*), in which it gives rise to leptomonas-like forms, which are to be seen located against the walls of the gastric intestinal pouches. Frogs can be infected by the bites of infected leeches or by the inoculation of the intestinal contents.

Classification.—The question is unsettled as to whether there are more than one species included under the term *T. rotatorium*.

Pathogenicity.—It is believed to be non-pathogenic.

TRYPANOSOMES OF MAN.

The trypanosomes of man are—*T. gambiense* Dutton 1902, *T. rhodesiense* Stephens and Fantham 1910, and *T. cruzi* Chagas 1909.

Trypanosoma gambiense Dutton 1902.

Synonyms.—*T. nepveui* Sambon 1903, *T. hominis* Manson 1903, *T. castellanii* Kruse 1903, *T. ugandense* Castellani 1903, *T. fordii* Maxwell 1903.

T. gambiense was first found by Forde in the Gambia in a peculiar case of fever. He showed it to Dutton, who described and named it. The trypanosome had, however, been seen and imperfectly described previously by Nepveu in the blood of man.

T. gambiense was first seen in the cerebro-spinal fluid of cases of sleeping sickness by Castellani in 1902, and reported by him as the cause of the disease in 1903; he asserted also the probable plurality of species of the trypanosomes affecting man, in analogy to what takes place in the lower animals, such as horses and cattle. Bruce and Nabarro demonstrated the fact first suggested by Sambon and Brumpt that it could be spread by a tsetse-fly, *Glossina palpalis*; and Kleine has demonstrated that the transmission is not merely mechanical, but also takes place after a period during which the fly is non-infective, the deduction being that the trypanosome must undergo a development in the fly which acts as a true host.

Morphology.—*T. gambiense* measures from 14 to 33 μ in length and from 2 to 2.5 μ in breadth (Laveran and Mesnil give 17 to 28 μ

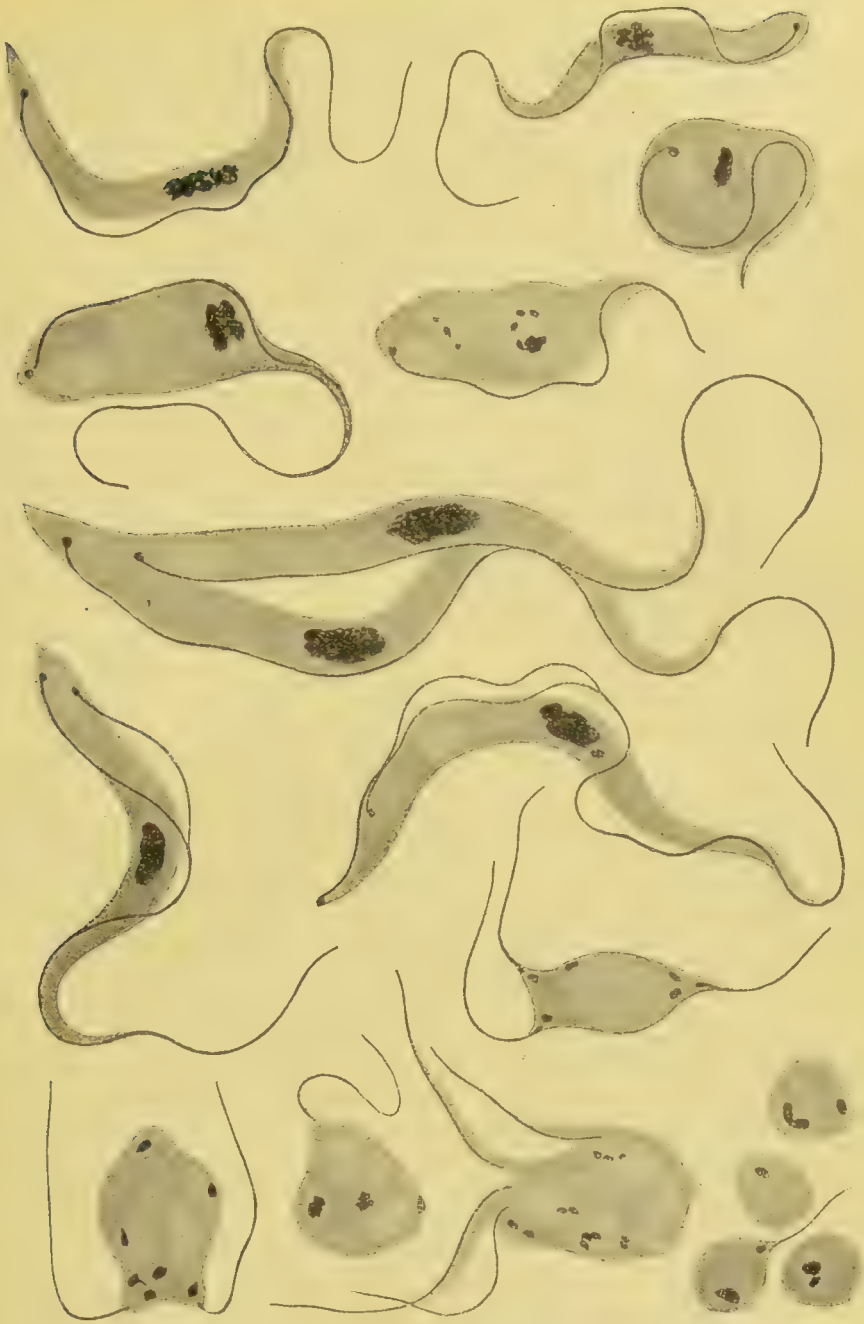


FIG. 93.—*TRYPANOSOMA GAMBIENSE* DUTTON.
(Forms found in the cerebro-spinal fluid.)

The figures in the top row show the ordinary forms ; in the second row the stumpy forms ; in the third and fourth rows longitudinal division. The lowest row shows multinucleate and polyflagellate forms (Rabinowitsch-Kempner forms), and small round flagellate and non-flagellate forms (Plimmer-Bradford and Castellani's forms). (From Castellani's report in Reports of the Royal Society on Sleeping Sickness.)

in length and 1.4 to $2\ \mu$ in breadth) ; but, as already stated, it is very polymorphic, having short forms 14 to $20\ \mu$, medium forms 20 to $24\ \mu$, and long forms 23 to $33\ \mu$. The anterior end is variable and sometimes rounded ; the kinetonucleus is an oval body, behind which is often seen a vacuole. The trophonucleus is oval in shape, and situated about the middle of the body, behind which there may be some chromatic granules in the cytoplasm, which at the posterior end runs along the flagellum for a considerable distance.

Asexual Reproduction.—The life-history of the parasite in the human body is not accurately known. It can often be obtained from the peripheral blood, but sometimes the most prolonged search fails to demonstrate it. It can then be found by puncturing the enlarged lymphatic glands, by scarification of the eruption, or by puncture of the spinal canal, if the case is one of sleeping sickness.

Salvin, Moore and Breinl have, however, investigated the life-cycle in the rat, in which, after inoculation, the parasites increase to a maximum in the peripheral blood, and then decline gradually to nil, at which they remain for a period—the latent period—and then increase again in numbers and reappear in the peripheral blood.

Their investigations give the following results : The parasite may grow to a fair size, and then divide into two by simple fission, and this may be repeated till the blood is swarming with them. When this is the case, a relatively thick band, said by Swellengrebel to be composed of melachromatic or volutine granules (axial filament), such as that described by Miss Robertson in *T. rajæ* and by Prowazek in *T. lewisi*, grows from the kinetonucleus down the endoplasm till it reaches or even passes the nucleus, or it may coil on itself, but eventually is connected with the trophonucleus. The trypanosomes now decrease in numbers in the peripheral blood, and are found in the lungs, spleen, and bone-marrow. In these organs the protoplasm becomes detached from the periphery of the nucleus, which lies in a clear space. The nucleus contracts, and a large clear vesicle forms in connection with it, and around both a cytoplasmic sheath is formed. The rest of the cell body now disintegrates, and the flagellum with the kinetonucleus may be seen lying detached. These bodies now become lodged in the spleen and bone-marrow, where they remain intact for a period of ten days or more—through the whole of the negative or latent period when the trypanosomes are missing from the blood of the infected rat. Moore and Breinl, therefore, call them latent bodies. They consist of a flattened nucleus, containing a centrosome, and attached to a vesicle, the whole being surrounded by a ring of cytoplasm. This latent phase has been confirmed by Fantham.

Just before the reappearance of the trypanosomes in the peripheral blood the centrosome inside the nucleus divides, and the new centrosome, escaping from the nucleus, becomes the kinetonucleus, and lies in the cytoplasm, which has now increased in amount. The vesicle has gradually disappeared. A new flagellum now appears, and gradually the latent body becomes a trypanosome. The rounded bodies with one or two nuclei, with or without the small

flagella, are probably identical with the forms found by Castellani several years ago in the cerebro-spinal fluid of cases of sleeping sickness, and described by him under the term 'amoeboid forms.'

Reproduction in the Fly.—The life-history of *Trypanosoma gambiense* in *Glossina palpalis* is but little known. The researches of Kleine, Taute, Bruce, Hamerton, Bateman, and Mackie have shown that, after ingestion at a correct period (as demonstrated by Miss Robertson), the trypanosomes enter the stomach of the fly, and in twenty-four hours lose their infectivity, as demonstrated by inoculation. According to Miss Robertson, the trypanosomes multiply in the posterior part of the mid-gut, and after the tenth or twelfth day give rise to long forms which move forwards into the proventriculus between the twelfth and twentieth day, after which they pass along the hypopharynx into the salivary glands. Here they become attached to the walls and are converted into crithidial forms, which divide, forming small trypanosomes similar to those found in the blood of the vertebrate. The salivary gland development requires two to five days before the fly becomes infective, which only happens in about 8 per cent. of flies. The duration of the life-cycle in the fly depends upon the air temperature.

Trypanosoma rhodesiense Stephens and Fantham 1910.

History.—In 1910 Stephens and Fantham advanced the view that the trypanosomes found in cases of sleeping sickness in the Luangeva Valley in Rhodesia belonged to a new species, because the trophonucleus of a certain percentage of short forms was situate either close to, or even on the aflagellar side of, the kinetonucleus. This view is at the present time accepted by the majority of authorities, although there are some who maintain that it is a variety of *T. brucei*, in which similar forms have also been seen. The animal reactions of the new trypanosome were studied by Yorke in 1910, Bevan in 1911, and more recently by other observers. In 1912 Kinghorn and Yorke showed that this trypanosome was transmissible by *Glossina morsitans*, in which it underwent development. They demonstrated that it occurred in waterbuck, hartebeest, impala, and wart-hogs, as well as in native dogs, and they further showed the importance of atmospheric temperature on the length of time required for the cycle of development in the fly.

Morphology.—*Trypanosoma rhodesiense* closely resembles *T. gambiense* in general appearance. It has a length varying from 12 to 31 μ , with an average of 21.5 μ , and shows the usual pleomorphic forms—e.g., short stumpy forms varying from 13 to 21 μ in length; intermediate forms, 22 to 24 μ in length; and long, slender forms 25 μ or more in length. The most common are the long, slender forms. The position of the trophonucleus is variable, but it is usually situate towards the aflagellar end of the parasite, and in the short stumpy forms is often close to the kinetonucleus, or even on its aflagellar side.

Life-History.—(a) *In the Vertebrate* longitudinal division can take place as in *T. gambiense*. About the time that trypanosomes are most numerous in the blood the researches of Fantham show that some forms in the lungs become converted into latent bodies by disintegration and loss of the flagellar end, followed by a migration of the kinetonucleus towards the trophonucleus, and a subsequent casting off of the aflagellar end with the remains of the flagellum. The result of this posterior and anterior reduction in length is to produce a rounded body, with a trophonucleus and a kinetonucleus, which surrounds itself with a capsule and forms the latent body or the *post-flagellate stage* of the life-cycle. These cysts are about 2 to 4 μ in diameter.

After a time these bodies become the *preflagellate stage*, increase in size and length, and eventually a flagellum grows out from the kinetonucleus and gives rise to the undulating membrane, and thus again forms the usual *flagellate stage*.

(b) *In the Invertebrate.*—*Glossina morsitans*, when fed upon infected animals, is capable of spreading the infection mechanically

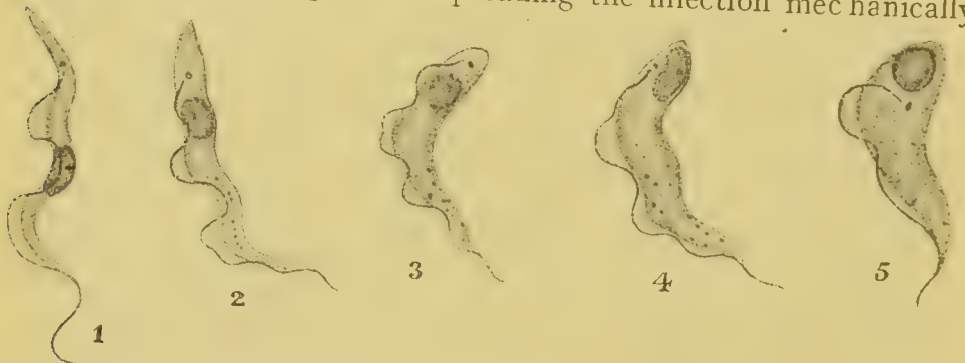


FIG. 94.—*TRYPANOSOMA RHODESIENSE* STEPHENS AND FANTHAM.
(After Stephens and Fantham.)

1, Long narrow form ; 2-4, nucleus passing to aflagellar end ; 5, nucleus at the aflagellar end.

for about twenty-four hours, after which period it ceases to be infective, and remains non-infective for at least fourteen days, after which about 5 per cent. of flies become again infective, when trypanosomes can be demonstrated in its alimentary canal and in its salivary glands.

Zoological Distribution.—As mentioned above, this parasite occurs not merely in man and domestic animals, but also in big game.

Specificity.—The question now arises, Is it a good species or not ? First of all, is it *T. gambiense* ?

(a) *Sero-Diagnosis.*—(1) Attachment experiments are very inconstant, and do not distinguish between the two.

(2) Trypanolysis does not help, being also inconstant.

(3) *T. gambiense* is resistant to human serum. *T. rhodesiense* is less resistant.

(b) *Crossed Immunity.*—An animal having an immunity against

T. gambiense can be infected by *T. rhodesiense*. The reverse experiment has not yet been conducted.

We may therefore conclude that *T. gambiense* and *T. rhodesiense* are different species.

Is *T. rhodesiense* a variety of *T. brucei*? The answer is No, because Laveran has shown that animals immunized against *T. brucei* are susceptible to *T. rhodesiense*. Is *T. rhodesiense* a variety of *T. pecaudi*? No, because the former is more virulent than the latter to animals, and because sleeping sickness is unknown in the region where 'baleri' is intense, and, finally, because an animal immunized against *T. rhodesiense* is not immune against *T. pecaudi*.

We may therefore conclude that *T. rhodesiense* Stephens and Fantham 1910 is a good species as far as our present knowledge goes.

Cultures.—Thomson has cultured it with partial success on a modification of the Novy-McNeal-Nicolle medium.

Pathogenicity.—*T. rhodesiense* is the cause of one form of sleeping sickness.

Trypanosoma cruzi Chagas 1909.

Synonym.—*Schizotrypanum cruzi* Chagas 1909.

History.—This trypanosome was discovered by Chagas in the intestine of *Lâmus megistus* Burmeister in Brazil, and later it was found in the blood of a child suffering from irregular fever, progressive anæmia, and enlargement of various groups of lymphatic glands. The trypanosome was characterized by the presence of a large kinetonucleus, and by the facility with which it could be cultivated on blood agar. In 1910-11 Chagas published a series of papers upon the life-history of the parasite and the symptomatology of the disease which it produces. In 1911 Vianna studied the pathological anatomy, while further studies on the parasite were made by Brumpt in 1911-12, Martin Mayer and Locha-Lina in 1912 (for recent researches, see p. 985).

Morphology.—In the peripheral blood of man *T. cruzi* appears in two forms—either free or in the red blood-corpuscles.

The free forms are also differentiated into two forms—viz., one with a large egg-shaped kinetonucleus, with a chromatic appendage, and with an oval or band-like trophonucleus with a centrosome. The flagellum starts from the kinetonucleus or from its chromatic appendage.

In the second free form the kinetonucleus is round and smaller than the first, and has, as a rule, no chromatic appendage. This form is broader than the one previously described. Whether this is a sexual differentiation or not is unknown.

The intraglobular forms may be completely or partially enclosed in the red cell, or merely attached by the aflagellar end.

Measurements of these forms were not originally given by Chagas, but it would appear as though the average length was 20 μ , with a certain amount of variation.

Life-History—*Schizogony.*—*T. cruzi* is remarkable in that it is not known to undergo longitudinal division either in the peripheral

blood or the internal organs of its host. According to Chagas, there is a regular cyclic development, the parasite entering the capillaries of the lungs, where it loses its flagellum and undulating

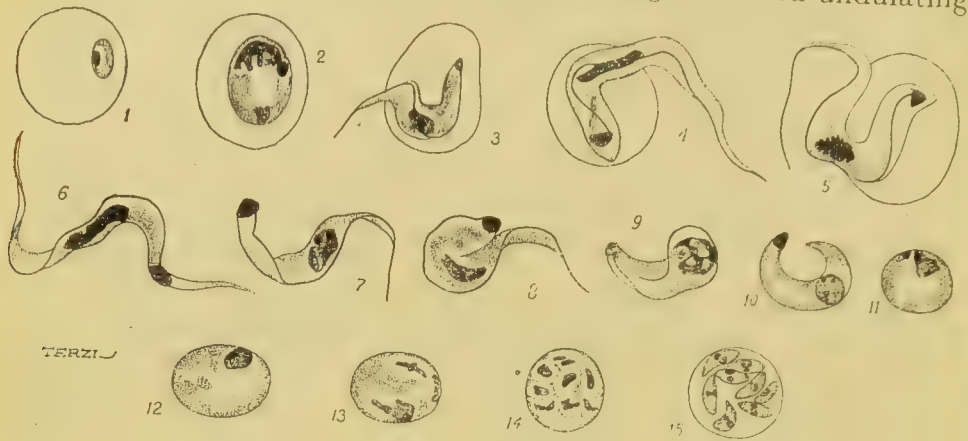


FIG. 95.—SCHIZOGONY OF *T. CRUZI* CHAGAS.
(After Chagas.)

1, Merozoite in red blood cell; 2, parasite totally enclosed in red cell, no flagellum or undulating membrane; 3-5, parasites partially enclosed in red cell; 6, 7, parasites in human blood; 8-11, parasites in the lungs of *Callithrix*; 12, 13, Initial forms of schizogony; 14, 15, schizogony in the lungs of *Callithrix*.

membrane, while the trophonucleus moves nearer the flagellar end, and the whole parasite becomes curved, first into a half-moon, and finally so much that the two ends fuse, forming a ring and finally a disc. In some instances the kintonucleus disappears,

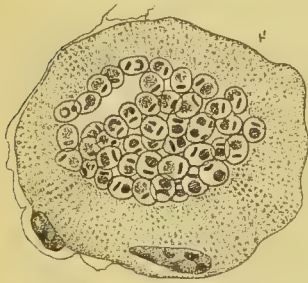


FIG. 96.—TRANSVERSE SECTION OF A STRIATED MUSCLE, CONTAINING *T. CRUZI* CHAGAS IN THE CENTRAL PORTION. $\times 1363$.

(After Vianna).

while in others it fuses with the trophonucleus, after which the nucleus divides into eight, and eventually gives rise to eight merozoites lying inside the periplast, which acts like a cyst wall. The merozoites with kintonuclei are considered to be microgametes, and those without kintonuclei to be macrogametes. The merozoites escape from the periplast wall singly, and, entering the red blood cells, become flagellates, and, finally leaving the red cell, become free in the liquor sanguinis, thus completing the cycle of gametogony, or differentiation and multiplication of gametes.

Agamogony, or asexual reproduction, takes place in the cells of various organs—*i.e.*, in hypertrophied endothelial cells in the lungs, in the cardiac muscle, in the neuroglia of the central nervous system, and in striped muscle. In these situations the parasite appears as a rounded body with trophonucleus and kintonucleus, but without flagellum or undulating

membrane. Agamogony increases the number of parasites in the host, and is responsible for the production of the symptoms, while gametogony differentiates the sexual forms, and presumably lays the basis for the infection of the invertebrate host. This form of development is confirmed by Brumpt.



FIG. 97.—*T. CRUZI* CHAGAS: DEVELOPMENT IN *LÂMUS MEGISTUS*.
(After Chagas.)

1-6, Forms found in the mid-gut of *Lâmus megistus*; 7, flagellate forms found in the posterior gut of *L. megistus*.

In the Invertebrate.—The further development takes place in the bug *Lâmus megistus* and allied forms, in which Chagas notes two forms of development: the first is considered to be sexual, and the second to be asexual.

The sexual method is as follows:—In about six hours after the ingestion of blood the kinetonucleus moves close to the trophonucleus, with which it possibly blends; the flagellum and undulating membrane are now usually lost, but some forms retain the flagellum. The parasite now becomes rounded, and multiplies rapidly by division, but after this has ceased it becomes pear-shaped, develops a

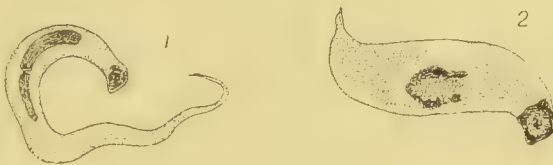


FIG. 98.—*T. CRUZI* CHAGAS.
(After Chagas).

Forms found in the salivary glands of *Lamus megistus*.

flagellum, and becomes a crithidial form, and then passes into the cylindrical portion of the intestine, in which it can be seen in about twenty-five hours after the ingestion of blood. These crithidial forms can also be found in the rectum and in the fæces. The final stage is a small trypaniform type—*i.e.*, long, slim forms, with band-like trophonucleus and large kinetonucleus. These are found in the hind-gut in the body cavity, and in the salivary glands, and are the forms by which the parasite is transmitted to a new vertebrate host. The development in the bug requires at least eight days for its completion.

The asexual method is a constant process, and resembles the

growth seen in artificial cultures, and is a simple multiplication, giving rise to crithidial forms which are found principally in the hind-gut.

Brumpt finds that the parasite lives well in *Clinocoris lectularius*, in *Clinocoris boueti*, and in *Ornithodoros moubata*. His account of the cycle of development is as follows:—Starting with the trypanosome in the posterior part of the intestine, when this is inoculated into the vertebrate, it enters the cells of the body, and becomes Leishmania-like bodies, which eventually develop into free-swimming trypanosomes, from which the form capable of continuing the infection in the vertebrate or invertebrate is produced. In the invertebrate this becomes crithidia-like forms, and eventually trypanosomes capable of infecting vertebrates, and thus completing the cycle of life-history.

Culture.—*T. cruzi* is easily cultivated upon the Novy-McNeal medium, when the first changes begin in about six hours, and closely resemble those already described in the bug.

Pathogenicity.—Two to three days after an infective feed the larvæ of *Lâmus* cease to be infective to vertebrates, and first become so on the eighth to the tenth day, after which they remain infective for a long period. The parasites so introduced into man give rise to American trypanosomiasis.

Reduction in Virulence.—*T. cruzi*, when repeatedly passed through animals of the same species become weakened in virulence, but regain this when transmitted to a fresh species.

Infectivity.—The infected monkey is infective for the bug, while the infected guinea-pig is not.

Elders' Observation (very doubtful).

In 1909 Elders reported the presence of what he thought to be a parasite in the peripheral blood of Javanese labourers suffering from fever, etc., in Sumatra. This body measured 8μ in length by 1μ in breadth; it was spindle-shaped, and possessed a trophonucleus, a kinetonucleus, an undulating membrane almost as broad as the body of the parasite. His observations have not been confirmed by other workers.

TRYPANOSOMES OF MAMMALS.

Laveran and Mesnil classify the trypanosomes of mammals into the pathogenic, the non-pathogenic, and the little known.

Pathogenic.—These are subdivided into three groups:—

1. Trypanosomes always with a part of the flagellum free.
2. Trypanosomes without a part of the flagellum free.
3. Trypanosomes with free flagella, or without free flagella.

1. *Part of the Flagellum Free.*—*T. evansi* Steel 1885; *T. brucei* Plummer and Bradford 1899; *T. equinum* Vosges 1901; *T. equiperdum* Doflein 1901; *T. cazalbouri* Laveran 1906; *T. soudanense* Laveran 1907; *T. togolense* Mesnil and Brimont 1909; *T. hippicum* Darling 1910; *T. venezuelense* Mesnil 1910; *T. annamense* Laveran 1911; *T. cellii* Marfoglio 1911.

2. *Part of the Flagellum not Free.*—*T. congolense* Broden 1904;

T. dimorphon Laveran and Mesnil 1904; *T. pecorum* Bruce 1910; *T. frobeniusi* Weissenborn 1911; *T. nanum* Laveran 1905.

3. *Forms with Free and Forms without Free Flagella.*—*T. pecaudi* Laveran 1907.

Non-Pathogenic—*Trypanosomes found in Monkeys.*—America: *T. minasense* Chagas 1909; *T. prowazeki* Gossler 1908. Asia: *T. rhesii* Terry 1911; *T. vickersæ* Brumpt 1909. Africa: A number of unnamed trypanosomes are reported in chimpanzees and species of *Cercopithecus*.

Trypanosomes of Ungulata.—*Trypanosoma theileri* Bruce 1902.

Trypanosomes of Rodents.—*T. lewisi* Kent 1881; *T. duttoni* Thiroux 1905; *T. musculi* Kendall 1906; *T. grosi* Laveran and Pettit 1909; *T. microti* Laveran and Pettit 1909; *T. blanchardi* Brumpt 1905 (= *T. myoxi* Blanchard); *T. evotomys* Hadwen; *T. peromysci* Watson; *T. criceti* Lühe 1906; *T. cuniculi* R. Blanchard 1906; *T. bandicotti* Lingard 1904; *T. nabiasi* Railliet; *T. leporis sylvatici* Watson; *T. acouchii* Brimont; *T. indicum* Lühe; *T. citelli* Watson; *T. spermophili* Laveran; *T. otospermophili* Wellman and Wherry.

Trypanosomes of Bats.—*T. vespertilionis* Battaglia 1904; *T. megaderma* Wenyon 1908; *T. nicolleorum* Ed. and Et. Sargent 1905.

Trypanosomes of Insectivora.—*T. talapæ* Nabarro; *T. soricis* Hadwen.

Trypanosomes of Edentata.—*T. légeri* Mesnil and Brimont 1910; *T. schaudinni* Mesnil and Brimont 1908.

Trypanosomes of Carnivora.—*T. pestanai* Bettencourt et França 1905.

Little-Known Trypanosomes.—*T. vivax* Ziemann 1905; *T. suis* Ochmann 1905; *T. capræ* Kleine 1910; *T. uniforme* Bruce, Hamerton and Mackie 1911; *T. elephantis* Bruce, Hamerton and Mackie 1909; *T. ingens* Bruce, Hamerton and Mackie 1909; *T. somaliense* Marfoglio 1911, causing a trypanosomiasis of cattle called 'ghindi' in Somaliland; *T. cellii* Marfoglio 1911, the cause of a disease of cattle known by the name of 'gobiat.'

A few details concerning some of the above may now be given.

PATHOGENIC MAMMALIAN TRYPANOSOMES.

I. PART OF THE FLAGELLUM FREE.

Trypanosoma evansi Steel 1885.

Synonyms.—*Spirochæta evansi* Steel 1885, *Hæmatomonas evansi* Crookshank 1886, and *Trichomonas evansi* Crookshank 1886.

Trypanosoma evansi, discovered by Evans in India in 1880, is the cause of a disease called surra, which occurs in horses, mules, camels, and cattle in India, Burma, Indo-China, Java, Philippines, Mauritius, and North Africa. With regard to cattle, they were supposed to be immune until the outbreak in Mauritius in 1902, which killed from 25 to 100 per cent. of the infected cattle.

Morphology.—This trypanosome, 25 μ in length and 1.5 μ in breadth, has a pointed anterior extremity, a long flagellum, and is actively motile. It reproduces asexually by simple division.

Walker finds that a schizogony takes place in the spleen of the vertebrate host. The trypanosome in the capillary bends round until its two ends meet and fuse, forming a ring, which may become a disc with the flagellum at first attached, but subsequently lost. These bodies measure $2.5\ \mu$ in diameter, and possess a kinetonucleus and a trophonucleus. They grow, and their nuclei divide until they reach a size of 10 to $15\ \mu$ in diameter, and divide into four to sixteen kinto- and tropho-nuclei, and eventually form mesozoites inside a thin cyst wall. Each mesozoite is 6 to $10\ \mu$ in length and 1 to $1.5\ \mu$ in width, with two nuclei, but no flagellum or undulating membrane. These mesozoites are believed to develop into trypanosomes. No dimorphism in these bodies has been seen.

Life-History.—Holmes recognizes male and female forms, which he considers conjugate by the anterior extremities only, after which the female divides, forming four amœboid bodies, which, in the liver, spleen, and bone-marrow, develop into trypanosomes. This appears to somewhat resemble the descriptions of Breinl and Hindle of latent forms in *T. gambiense*. *T. evansi* can be cultivated, and appears to develop in certain flies—for example, *Tabanus tropicus*, *T. lineola*, *Stomoxys calcitrans*, *S. geniculatus*, in the stomach of the last of which it has been found. Certainly it can be transmitted to healthy animals by the bites of flies and fleas. It is said that it can also be contracted by eating infected meat.

Pathogenicity.—The symptoms are fever, remittent or intermittent, emaciation, œdema of the limbs and ventral surfaces, frequently lesions of the eyes and eyelids, great muscular weakness, paralysis, and death. The treatment is by arsenic. A variety, *T. evansi* var. *mborii* Laveran 1905, is the cause of the disease mbori in dromedaries in Africa.

Trypanosoma brucei Plimmer and Bradford 1889.

This parasite was discovered by Sir David and Lady Bruce in 1895 in animals suffering from the testse-fly disease or nagana (which means 'weakness') in Zululand. At the same time they showed that the tsetse-fly (*Glossina morsitans*) disseminated the disease.

The parasite is widespread throughout Africa, especially in Zululand, Northern Transvaal, and its surrounding countries; also from Pretoria to Lake Nyassa, in the basin of the Limpopo, in the basin of the Zambesi, in German East Africa, British East Africa, where it causes nagana or the fly disease, and in Uganda, where it is called 'jinja.'

Morphology.—The appearance of the parasite is worm-like, being 28 to $33\ \mu$ in length in horses and donkeys. The length is constant for the given animal, but varies in different hosts, being 26 to $27\ \mu$ in rats, mice, guinea-pigs, rabbits, and dogs. The anterior end (non-flagellate) is a truncated cone, behind which lies the kinetonucleus as a well-marked rounded mass, posterior to which the flagellum arises. The trophonucleus lies in the middle of the body, and

many chromatoid granules may be seen posterior to it, while still further posterior the free whip of the flagellum may be noted. Koch considers *T. brucei* to be identical with *T. evansi*, but the animal reactions clearly show them to be different species.

Life-History.—The life-cycle in the vertebrate host has not been very fully worked out, but the longitudinal division is well known. The kinetonucleus divides first, then the flagellum, then the trophonucleus, and finally the cytoplasm, but, according to Prowazek, division is really a very complicated process. First the blepharoplast becomes thickened, elongated, and dumb-bell-shaped, and then divides. In the trophonucleus the chromosomes behave like the kinetonucleus and the centrosome, and, having divided, the whole nucleus divides. The chromatin granules in the cytoplasm are also said to undergo fission, while a new flagellum develops from the new kinetonucleus. Parasites resembling the latent forms of Breinl and Hindle are known, and are called involution forms.

It is believed by some authorities that the parasite lives in nature in the wildebeeste (*Catoblepus gnu*), the koodoo (*Strepsiceros capensis*), the brush-buck (*Tragelaphus scriptus sylvaticus*), and the hyena, without causing disease. These may form a reserve from which the tsetse-flies *G. morsitans*, *G. pallidipes*, and *G. fusca* can obtain parasites which undergo development in their alimentary canal, during which time they are non-pathogenic, and when fully developed are found in the proboscis, and are again capable of being inoculated into animals, in some of which they are pathogenic. Kleine has proved that the transmission of the trypanosome is not merely mechanical, as suggested by Bruce and others, but also takes place after the trypanosome has undergone development in the fly, which is its true host. Thus, freshly caught *G. morsitans* for the first three days infected cattle, and then, from the fourth to the tenth day the flies were non-infective, but from the eleventh to the forty-fourth day they were very infective. This shows that the parasite must undergo a development in the fly.

Cultivation.—Novy and McNeal have cultivated *T. brucei* in the same manner as *T. lewisi*, and found some evidence of a toxin, but it only grows exceptionally in the water of condensation from the agar medium which contains half or less than half its volume of blood. Agglomeration takes place under various circumstances—*e.g.*, mixture with immune blood or a few drops of dilute acetic acid, etc.

Pathogenicity.—The disease can therefore be spread by the bites of certain tsetse-flies, particularly *G. morsitans* and perhaps the others mentioned above.

It can, however, be also spread by inoculation and by eating the blood of animals recently dead from the disease. The incubation period is about ten days, and the effects produced in animals vary considerably in the following manner:—

1. It is an acute disease in mice, rats, dogs, monkeys, cats, etc., dogs dying in two to six days, rats in three to six days.

2. It is a subacute disease in rabbits, guinea-pigs, equines, and pigs, a horse dying in fifteen to nineteen days.

3. It is a chronic disease in cattle, goats, geese, and fowls. In cattle it lasts from one week to six months.

Battaglia has succeeded in inoculating bitches by injecting some infected blood *in vaginam*. He has also infected rabbits by inoculating blood on the penis, when a hard, granulomatous nodule, very similar to a human syphilitic primary sore, developed.

Nagana is invariably fatal to the horse, the ass, and the dog, but a small percentage of bovines recover. In these animals it is characterized by fever; by an infiltration of coagulable lymph in the subcutaneous tissue of the neck, of the abdomen, or of the extremities, giving a swollen appearance to those parts; by a destruction more or less rapid of the red corpuscles of the blood, with an extreme emaciation, often blindness; and by the presence constantly in the blood of *T. brucei*.

Very few lesions are found at the autopsy, the most characteristic being:—

1. Enlargement of the spleen.
2. Trypanosomes in the blood.
3. Hypertrophy of the lymphatic glands, but apparently not associated with a development of the parasites in these organs.
4. In horses, the liver and spleen are hypertrophied, and there is yellow serous infiltration under the skin and mucosa and between the muscles, as well as some pleural and pericardial exudations and subpericardial ecchymoses. A gelatinous substance is found at times around the spinal cord.

According to Bradford, Plimmer, Yakimoff, Lanfranchi, Rondoni, Goretti, and others, the spleen has a trypanolytic action, but this is denied by Laveran, Thiroux, Massaglia, and others.

The best treatment is arsenic in some form. Trypanroth, a benzine colour, and serum treatment have not proved of great service.

Trypanosoma equinum Vosges 1901.

Synonym.—*T. elmassiani* Lignières.

T. equinum, discovered by Elmassian, is the cause of mal de caderas in horses and dogs in South America.

Morphology.—This parasite closely resembles *T. brucei* and *T. evansi*. In length it is 22 to 24 μ , and in breadth 1.5 μ , and it has the same measurements in different species of animals. It is very active, but its principal characteristic is that the kinetonucleus is very insignificant.

Life-History.—Multiplication is by equal binary division. It agglomerates, and has been cultivated by Thomas and Breinl on a rabbit's blood and chicken-broth agar medium.

It can be inoculated into the ordinary laboratory animals. Its mode of propagation is not well known, but Migone has shown that it is the cause of a disease which kills the capybara (*Hydrochærus capybara*), which appears to be the reservoir for the parasite, as

monkeys inoculated from a sick *Hydrochærus* died in seventeen days. How the disease spreads from the Carpinchós (*Hydrochærus*) to the horses is not clear. Dogs may be infected by eating diseased animals, and then from the dog the infection may be spread to the horse by fleas, because they have been found to infect rats. Some authorities consider that it may be spread by members of the Tabanidæ and by *Stomoxys*.

Pathogenicity.—Mal de caderas is a very fatal disease among the horses of South America. The first sign of the disease is weakness, which makes rapid progress, though the appetite remains good. The temperature is febrile, and after a variable period the hind-quarters become paralyzed and the horse drags its limbs, the hoofs scraping the ground. As it walks it staggers, the hind-quarters oscillating from right to left, which characteristic gives the disease its name of mal de caderas, the disease of the hind-quarters. In the stable it can support itself against the walls, but in the open air it staggers and falls. There may be albuminuria and hæmaturia and an eruption on the neck, shoulders, and hind-quarters. The eyelids show conjunctivitis and chemosis. The horse lives about two months after the paralysis sets in.

Congestion and enlargement of the spleen and mesenteric glands are seen in post-mortems. The kidneys are affected, nephritis and interstitial hæmorrhages being noted. There are also serous exudations into the peritoneum, the pleura, the pericardium, and the spinal canal.

Trypanosoma equiperdum Doflein 1901.

Synonym.—*T. rougeti* Laveran and Mesnil.

T. equiperdum is the cause of the disease called dourine or mal du coit in horses in Europe, India, North Africa (Algeria), and North America.

Morphology.—It is about 25 to 28 μ in length, and has no chromatic granules in the cytoplasm. It is difficult to find in naturally infected animals, being best obtained from the plaques of the eruption. Salvin-Moore and Breinl reported the presence of latent bodies in inoculated rats.

Life-History.—It does not appear to be spread by a fly, but by coitus between stallion and mare. Hence the disease resembles syphilis, and proves that a trypanosome is capable of penetrating a mucous membrane. The incubation is from eleven to twenty days.

Stage 1, or the Period of Œdema.—The genital organs begin to show signs of œdema, generally painless and not inflammatory, though there is some fever. In about a month the œdema disappears, and weakness and emaciation begin.

Stage 2, or the Period of Eruption, is characterized by the appearance in about forty to forty-five days (or two months) after infection of an eruption, characterized by circular œdematous areas about the size of a two-shilling piece generally under the skin of the sides and hind-quarters, but sometimes also under that of the neck, shoulders, and thighs. This eruption is very variable, and may appear in the

morning and disappear at night, but generally it lasts a week, and leaves the animal in a feeble condition. There is also synovial engorgement of the joints and tendon-sheaths, and enlargement of the lymphatic glands, particularly the inguinal. The temperature is often raised to 39° C. (102·2° F.) in the evening, and falls to 38·5° C. (101·4° F. in the morning.

Stage 3, or the Period of Anæmia and Paralysis.—The animal now becomes very anæmic, with pale mucosæ, and emaciation is marked. There are often superficial abscesses which do not heal, and some conjunctivitis and ulcerative keratitis. Micturition is difficult, and the urine is thick. Sensibility is diminished, and paralysis comes on, due to softening of the cord, and in from two to eighteen months the animal dies. The disease is said to be always fatal.

The above is the usual type of the disease, and may be called chronic dourine, but in addition there is an acute type, in which the animal dies after the first stage from acute paralysis, which comes on suddenly a few days after the appearance of the eruption.

The post-mortem lesions are in the spinal cord and the lymphatic glands. In the cord there is gelatinous exudation around the lumbar area, and cervical enlargement with intense chronic inflammation of the posterior spinal ganglia, with degeneration of the perikarya and their associated neurones, causing degeneration of the posterior roots and columns, as in *tabes dorsalis*.

The grey matter of the cord also shows chromolytic changes, with capillary hæmorrhages due to chronic inflammation. Mott says that the infiltration and thickening of the septa of the cord, the infiltration of the nerve roots and the vessel walls with lymphocytes, is like a syphilitic meningitis. The membranes at the base of the brain may also be affected. The lymphatic glands are enlarged, congested, and softened. The disease appears to begin by inoculation, and then to spread to the inguinal glands, and then to the pelvic lymphatics, and from them to the posterior lumbo-sacral roots, and thus the cord becomes affected. Other lesions are gelatinous exudation under the skin, serous effusions into the pleural and peritoneal cavities, wasting and pallor of muscles, with fatty degeneration and an interstitial keratitis.

***Trypanosoma cazalboui* Laveran 1906.**

This trypanosome causes disease in horses and cattle in West Africa. It is 21 μ by 1·5 μ . Carriers: *Glossina palpalis* G. *tachinoides*, *G. longipalpis*, *G. morsitans* (p. 721).

***Trypanosoma soudanense* Laveran 1907.**

Type of *Trypanosoma evansi* causing tahaga in dromedaries in the Upper Niger, el debab in Southern Algeria, and the zoufana in horses in Southern Algeria. Carriers: *Tabanidæ*.

***Trypanosoma togolense* Mesnil and Brimont 1909.**

Type of *T. evansi*, parasitic in horses and cattle, and the cause of nagana in Togoland.

Trypanosoma hippicum Darling 1910.

This trypanosome causes a disease called murrina among mules, and was first described in some animals imported from the United States via New Orleans to Panama. The trypanosome resembles *T. evansi*, being 18 to 28 μ in length with a width of 1.5 to 3 μ . The trichonucleus is oval and median. The kinetonucleus, which is near the flagellar end, is very easily seen, which is a characteristic feature of the parasite. The undulating membrane is not much folded. It divides longitudinally in the blood. It is spread by coitus, and can also be spread mechanically by species of *Musca*, *Comptosomyia* and *Sarcophaga* sucking wounds in the diseased and the healthy. The essential pathology of murrina is an intoxication resulting in cellular degeneration and necrosis. These toxins produce endothelialysis, lymphocytosis, auto-haemagglutination, phagocytosis of erythrocytes and trypanosomes, hyperplasia of the spleen, bone-marrow, and lymph glands, and cellular exudations into the kidney, liver, etc. Owing to the destruction of the endothelium there is considerable amount of ecchymosis in various regions.

Trypanosoma venezuelense Mesnil 1910.

Type of *T. evansi*; attacks horses in Venezuela; carrier unknown.

Trypanosoma annamense Laveran 1911.

Type of *T. evansi*; causes disease in horses and cattle in Annam. Carriers: Tabanidæ and Hippoboscidæ.

Trypanosoma cellii Marfoglio 1911.

This trypanosome is pathogenic for cattle in Italian Somaliland, causing a disease called 'gobiat.'

2. PART OF THE FLAGELLUM NOT FREE.

Trypanosoma congolense Broden 1904.

This trypanosome causes disease among horses, cattle, sheep, and dromedaries in the French and Belgian Congos and in North-East Rhodesia. It is 10 to 17 μ long and 1 to 2 μ broad. Carrier: Glossina species?

Trypanosoma dimorphon Laveran and Mesnil 1904.

This trypanosome was discovered by Dutton and Todd in 1904 in horses on the Gambia, and is now known to exist in several parts of Africa, where perhaps a wide equatorial belt across the continent is affected. It is also found in cattle, dogs, pigs, sheep, and goats.

Morphology.—It exists in three forms:

1. *Tadpole Form.*—Found in the early stage of the disease, 11 to 13 μ long and 0.18 μ broad.

2. *Stumpy Form.*—Seen when the disease is not too far advanced, and characterized by a short thick body and a short flagellum. Length 16 to 19 μ , breadth 3.4 to 3.5 μ .

3. *Long Form.*—With long thin body and long flagellum, found a few days before death. Length, 26 to 30 μ ; breadth, 1.6 to 2 μ .

These may be respectively indifferent, female, and male forms of the parasite, a view supported by Hindle.

It has been cultivated, and it can be inoculated into rats, mice, guinea-pigs, and rabbits, as well as horses.

Life-History.—Hindle's observations show that the indifferent forms give rise to latent bodies or cysts which gather in the spleen, where they lie dormant for a time, and finally develop again in

trypanosomes. It apparently can undergo development in *Glossina palpalis*, as Bruce and Hamerton have shown that it is a carrier.

Pathogenicity.—The symptoms in the horse begin with loss of vigour, followed in two to three weeks by fever. During the next month the weakness is more marked and the abdomen swells, the testicles hang down and are oedematous, the coat becomes staring, the animal looks apathetic, and death ensues in about a year.



FIG. 99.—*TRYPANOSOMA DIMORPHON* LAVERAN AND MESNIL.
(After Dutton and Todd.)

The post-mortem shows oedema of the abdominal wall and a coloured fluid in the pleura and pericardium, with hypertrophy of the lymphatic glands, fatty liver, and congestion of the lungs. The spleen is normal.

Trypanosoma pecorum Bruce, Hamerton, Bateman, Mackie, 1910.

This term probably includes *T. dimorphon*, *T. congolense*, and *T. confusum*, Dr. Edington's Zanzibar trypanosome, the trypanosomes from Chai-Chai, and from Southern Rhodesia.*

Trypanosoma frobeniusi Weissenborin 1911.

Allied to *T. dimorphon* and *T. congolense*, and found in horses in Togoland.

Trypanosoma nanum Laveran 1905.

Balfour in 1904 discovered this parasite in cattle, which appeared to be ill, on the White Nile. The parasites are small (10 to 14 μ by 1.5 to 2 μ), with no free flagellum, and are non-pathogenic for dogs, rabbits, and monkeys. Amœboid forms were found in the cerebro-spinal fluid. Duke in 1912 showed that it was transmitted by *Glossina palpalis*, in which it developed in the hind-gut, and from thenceforwards to the œsophagus, but did not infect the salivary glands.*

3. FORMS WITH AND WITHOUT FREE FLAGELLA.

Trypanosoma pecaui Laveran 1907.

In the French Sudan, in addition to m'bori and souma, there is a third unnamed disease—baleri, in Equidæ—caused by *T. pecaui*, with two forms

* Development in *G. palpalis* like *T. gambiense* but with crithidial phase in proboscis not in salivary glands (Miss Robertson).

like *T. dimorphon*—(1) long and slender (25 to 35 μ by 1.5 μ), (2) short and broad (14 to 20 μ by 3 to 4 μ). Carriers: *Glossina longipalpis*, rarely *G. palpalis* and *G. tachinoides* (vide p. 721).

NON-PATHOGENIC MAMMALIAN TRYPANOSOMES.

Trypanosoma minasense Chagas 1909.

This trypanosome was found by Carini and Chagas in Brazil in a marmoset, *Hapale penicillata*, and cultivated by Brumpt.

Trypanosoma theileri Bruce 1902.

Synonym.—*T. transvaaliense* Laveran 1902.

T. theileri is found in the Transvaal, in Togoland, German East Africa, Transcaucasia, and in India. It is of large size, 60 to 70 μ in length and 4 to 5 μ in breadth. A small form is known, 25 to 53 μ in length and 2 to 3 μ in breadth. It moves very rapidly, and has a long flagellum, while the anterior end is pointed and the kinetonucleus is oval. Multiplication is by simple longitudinal fission. A female form has been described by Lühe. It is believed to be spread by species of Hippobosca, and is specific for bovines, not being inoculable into other animals. According to Nocht and Mayer, it is not the cause of gall-sickness or galziecté in cattle in Africa.

Carrier: *Hippobosca rufipes* (Fig. 351, p. 736). An allied species is *T. urublewskii* Wladimiroff and Takimoff 1909.

Trypanosoma lewisi Kent 1879.

Synonyms.—*Herpetomonas lewisi* Kent 1880; *Trichomonas lewisi* Crookshank 1886; *Trypanomonas lewisi* Labbé 1891; *Trypanosoma sanguinis* Kanthack, Durham and Blandford 1898; *T. rattorum* Börner 1901; *Trypanomonas murium* Danil 1899; and *Trypanozoon lewisi* Lühe 1906.

T. lewisi was the first mammalian trypanosome to be discovered, for it was seen by Chussat in 1850 in *Epimys rattus* (probably not by Gros in 1845), who thought it was a young nematode, while Lewis, in Calcutta, in 1877, rediscovered it, and recognized that it was a protozoön. It is a typical trypanosome, and is found in *Epimys rattus* L., *E. norvegicus* Pall, and *E. rufescens* Gray all over the world—in Asia (India, Ceylon, Java, Philippines, Japan), in Europe (England, Ireland, France, Holland, Germany, Russia), in Africa (Uganda, Abyssinia, Gambia, and Cameroons), and in America (United States and Brazil). It is non-pathogenic, and restricted to rats, among which it is probably spread by *Polyplax spinulosa*, the rat louse, and *Ceratophyllus fasciatus*, the rat flea.

Morphology.—It is a very active, worm-like little parasite darting about among the corpuscles. It is 24 to 25 μ in length and 1.5 μ in breadth. The anterior end is very pointed, and the whole parasite is thin. The trophonucleus is situated near the junction of the middle and posterior thirds of the body, and the kinetonucleus, which is rod-shaped, is situated anteriorly. There are eight myonemes in the ectoplasm (periplast). Prowazek distinguishes small male forms with a nucleus rich in chromatin, large female forms with clear cytoplasm, and indifferent forms with many granules and poorly defined nucleus.

Life-History—*In the Vertebrate*.—The life-history in the rat has been worked out by Breinl and Hindle, as already described above (p. 312). The filament they mention as occurring between the kinetonucleus and the trophonucleus appears to have been also seen by Prowazek. Asexual reproduction may be summarized into reproduction with longitudinal division and reproduction with rosette formation and encystment after some interchange between the kineto- and tropho-nuclei, followed in due course by increased power for longitudinal division. Battaglia describes a process of sporogony with the formation of macro- and micro-gametocytes, and of macrogametes and microgametes, and a similar reproduction has been described by Pricolo.*

In the louse the life-cycle has been studied by Prowazek, who finds that the micro- and macro-gametocytes undergo first a reduction of the trophonucleus from sixteen chromosomes to four, and that then the microgametocyte gives rise to only one microgamete, which fuses with the macrogamete, forming an oökinete. This becomes a trypanosome by the separation of the kinetonucleus from the synkaryon. The flagellum projects from the posterior end, which the kinetonucleus now leaves, and, taking the flagellum with it, proceeds towards the anterior end, thus forming the undulating membrane. Gregariniform non-flagellate forms also appear, which penetrate between the epithelial cells. Prowazek failed to infect rats by the bite of the louse, but this has been done successfully since. Swellengrebel and Strickland find that the development in the louse is very irregular and not to be compared with that in the flea.

In the Invertebrate.—Evidence is advancing that the rat flea, *Ceratophyllus fasciatus* is the true carrier of *T. lewisi*, as was first demonstrated by Nuttall, and that the rare complete development which may take place in louse *Polyplax spinulosa* is more of the nature of a natural culture than a proper development. The development in the flea has been studied by Swellengrebel and Strickland, and more recently by Minchin and Thompson.

When the flea ingests blood containing the flagellates, they pass direct to the mid-gut, where they enter the epithelial cells, inside which they attain a large size and undergo multiplication in a peculiar manner by forming a large spherical body containing a number of tropho- and kineto-nuclei, and developing flagella, while the original flagellum still remains attached, but is subsequently lost; and then the cytoplasm divides into the daughter trypanosomes, which are now set free, and, passing into the rectum, become crithidial forms by the kinetonucleus travelling past the trophonucleus towards the flagellum. These crithidial forms attach themselves to the wall of the rectum, and shorten into Leishmania-like forms without flagella or without free flagella. These in their turn develop into trypanosome forms, which pass forwards into the mid-gut, and which, being regurgitated into the rat's blood when the flea feeds, are the infective forms.

The intracellular stage is at its height about the end of the first day after infection; the rectal stage begins during the second day;

* Carini's cyst-like bodies in the lungs are considered by Delinois to be a coccidium, *Pneumocystis carini*.

the trypaniform types pass into the mid-gut towards the end of the fifth day; and the flea is infective in about six days after its own infective meal.

Cultivation.—Cultural experiments have been carried out successfully by Novy and McNeal on a medium prepared by mixing agar and defibrinated rabbit's blood in equal parts, when forms from $1\frac{1}{2}$ to $60\ \mu$ in length may be found, and also rosettes, but the forms are herpetomoniform, with the kinetonucleus at the posterior end.

Pathogenicity.—Inoculation can only be carried out successfully in rats, in which it is generally non-pathogenic, though some observers have described the rare occurrence of dyspnœa, œdema, and subcutaneous hæmorrhages in intense infections.

Immunity.—Immunity is gained when a rat becomes free from the parasites, and hyperimmunity can be obtained by inoculations. It is thought that the immunity is largely due to phagocytosis, but this is being questioned in many species of trypanosomes. A protective serum is obtainable from hyperimmune rats. Immune serum will agglomerate the trypanosomes.

Hereditary Infection.—The parasites cannot be transmitted from the mother to young, as it appears that they cannot traverse the placenta.

Trypanosoma duttoni Thiroux 1905.

Dutton and Todd in 1903 saw a flagellate organism in the blood of mice obtained in a house in McCarthy Island on the Gambia River, but they considered it to be of the type of a *Herpetomonas*; but in 1905 Thiroux described a definite trypanosome in *Mus musculus* L. in Senegal which will only infect mice of all kinds—e.g., *M. minutus* L. (the harvest-mouse)—and it is possible that Dutton and Todd saw one stage of its development.

A number of interesting researches have taken place with this trypanosome. Pricolo found that it could pass through the placenta and multiply in the fœtus, in which he describes latent forms very like those already mentioned in *T. lewisi*—i.e., which resembled *Leishmania*—having only a rod-shaped kinetonucleus and trophonucleus.

Trypanosomes were found in fleas caught on infected animals, but they did not show any development.

Trypanosoma musculi Kendall 1906.

This parasite was found in 8 per cent. of the mice examined by Kendall in Panama. It was non-pathogenic, and resembled *T. duttoni*.

Trypanosoma microti Laveran and Pettit 1909.

Found in *Microtus arvalis* Pallas. It is 25 to $30\ \mu$ by $1\cdot5\ \mu$.

Trypanosoma blanchardi Brumpt 1905.

In *Myoxis glis*, the common dormouse. Like *T. lewisi*, but not inoculable into rats.

Trypanosoma myoxi R. Blanchard 1906.

Found by Galli-Valerio in *Muscardium (Myoxis) avellanarius* L., but nothing much is known about the parasite.

Trypanosoma criceti Lühe 1906.

Synonym.—*T. rabinowitschi* Brumpt 1906.

This trypanosome, which is very like *T. lewisi*, but distinguished by not being transferable to the rat, was found in the hamster (*Cricetus cricetus* L.) by Koch in 1881. A blood-sucking louse has not been found on the hamster, but *Ceratophyllus fasciatus* Bosc is common.

Trypanosoma cuniculi R. Blanchard 1906.

This trypanosome was found by Jobet and Nabois in 1891 in the rabbit (*Lepus cuniculus* L.), in which it causes emaciation and perhaps diarrhœa. It is very similar to *T. lewisi*, but smaller. It will not infect white rats and guinea-pigs, but it can be cultivated. It is suspected that *Hæmalopinus ventricosus* Denny and *Pulex gonioccephalus* Tasch may perhaps have something to do with its life-history.

Trypanosoma bandicotti Lingard 1904.

This trypanosome is probably not the same as *T. lewisi*, which it resembles in being pathogenic to guinea-pigs. It is found in *Nesokia bandicotti* Bechst in Bombay and the Deccan.

Trypanosoma indicum Lühe 1906.

T. indicum is found in the Indian squirrel (*Funambulus palmarum* L.) in Madras. It is very like *T. lewisi*, and only slight morphological differences can be found.

Trypanosoma vespertilionis Battaglia 1905.

Synonym.—*Trypanosoma dionisi* Bettencourt and França 1908.

Dionisi found a trypanosome in the Italian bat (*Miniopterus schrenkensis*) in 1899, and since then numerous bats have been found to carry trypanosomes, and also they can be inoculated with the parasites of surra and mibori, which produce pathogenic effects.

T. vespertilionis has been found in bats from South Italy (Battaglia), Roman Campagna (Sambon), Brazil (Durham), India (Donovan), North Africa (Sergents), and from Portugal (Bettencourt and França). This parasite has been investigated by Battaglia, who has described a process of sporogony, and has shown that the blood filtered through a Kitasato filter is still infectious.

Trypanosoma nicolleorum Ed. and Et. Sergent 1905.

In the blood of *Vespertilio kuhli* Natt and *V. myotis* Bechst in Algeria; not transmissible to mice, rats, or rabbits.

The carrier of the infection is not known. Durham saw trypanosomes in *Stegomyia fasciata* which had fed on a bat, but they might have belonged to the mosquito. Fleas have been examined without success.

Trypanosoma schaudinni Mesnil and Brimont 1908.

Synonym.—*Endotrypanum schaudinni* Mesnil and Brimont 1908.

This trypanosome is only known in the endoglobular form in the red blood cells of the sloth, in which it appears as a peg-top-shaped trypanosome with a short flagellum, possessing trophonucleus and kinetonucleus. This must be only one stage in its life-history, and as yet the other stages are unknown; and though a free trypanosome was seen in the same animal as the encysted forms, it was considered to be different from the endoglobular forms.

Trypanosoma pestanai Bettencourt and França 1905.

Found in *Meles taxus* Schreb, the badger, in Portugal. It is non-pathogenic.

LITTLE-KNOWN TRYPANOSOMES.

Trypanosoma vivax Ziemann 1905.

An acute or chronic disease in cattle, sheep, and goats in the Cameroons was found by Ziemann to be due to a trypanosome which is distinguished from other pathogenic trypanosomes by its extraordinary activity. It is possibly spread by the Tabanidæ or *Stomoxys*, and the incubation period is five to eight days. It is probably synonymous with *T. cazalbouii*.

Trypanosoma elephantis Bruce, Hamerton and Mackie 1909.

Found in the elephant in Uganda ; resembles *T. soudanense*.

Trypanosoma uniforme Bruce, Hamerton, Bateman and Mackie 1910.

Found in beasts in Uganda. Carrier unknown.

Trypanosoma ingens Bruce, Hamerton and Mackie, 1909.

Found in the red buck and ox in Uganda ; large size (72 to 122 μ by 7 to 10 μ).

Trypanosoma giganteum Lingard.

Found twice in cattle suffering from surra.

Trypanosoma bovis Kleine.

Found in sick cattle near Tanganyika.

Trypanosoma capræ Kleine.

In sick goats near Tanganyika.

TRYPANOSOMES OF BIRDS.

In 1845 Gros found trypanosomes in the blood of goat-suckers and cranes, which are now known to be very common in birds ; but the detection in blood-

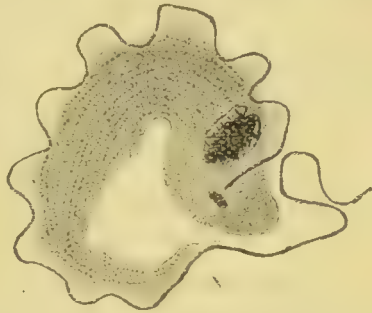


FIG. 100.—*TRYPANOSOMA VITTATÆ* ROBERTSON. SHOWS THE TRY-
PANOSOME ROLLING UP PRIOR
TO DIVISION. FIG. 101.—*TRYPANOSOMA LESCHENAULTII*
ROBERTSON.

(From drawings by Miss Robertson.)

films is not easy, as the parasites are few and far between. According to Novy and McNeal, the cultivation method is much better.

Laveran and Mesnil summarize them into three types :—(1) Trypanosomes of type of *T. lewisi* in rats (*T. avium minus*) ; (2) trypanosomes of type of *T. rotatorium* of the frog ; (3) long thin trypanosomes without free flagellum—distinct type.

A few examples may be mentioned :—*T. avium* Laveran 1903, in *Syrnium aluco* L., the wood-owl ; *T. confusum* Lühe 1906, in *Agelaius phæniceus* L., and other North American birds ; *T. laverani* Novy and McNeal 1905, in *Astragalinus tristis* L., North America ; *T. paddæ* L. and Mesnil 1904, in *Padda oryzivora*, the Java sparrow.

TRYPANOSOMES OF REPTILES.

Tortoises.—*T. damoniæ* Laveran and Mesnil 1902, in *Damonia reevesi*, an Asiatic tortoise ; *T. vittatæ* Robertson 1907 in *Emyda vittata* in Ceylon, the intermediate host being a leech.

Crocodylia.—*Cystotrypanosoma intestinalis* Roubaud 1911.

Lizards.—*T. boueti* Martin 1907, in *Mabuia raddonii*; *T. leschenaultii* Robertson 1907, in *Hemidactylus leschenaultii*, in Ceylon; *T. pertenuae* Robertson 1907, in *Hemidactylus triedri leschenaultii*, in Ceylon.

Ophidia.—*T. pythonis* Robertson: Mesnil is doubtful whether this is not a hæmoproteus, while Sambon considers that it is a hæmogregarine,



FIG. 102.—*TRYPANOSOMA PERTENUAE* ROBERTSON.

(From a drawing by Miss Robertson.)



FIG. 103.—*TRYPANOSOMA ROTATORIUM* MAYER.

(After Dutton and Todd.)

(*H. robertsoni*). *T. erythrolampri* Wenyon 1909 in *Erythrolampus æsculapii*, *T. primiti* Mathes et Léger 1909 in *H. piscator*, *T. najæ* Wenyon 1909 in *Naja nigricollis*.

TRYPANOSOMES OF FROGS.

The trypanosomes of frogs were discovered by Gruby as far back as 1842 in the form of the largest trypanosome known—i.e., *T. rotatorium*.

It seems probable that leeches are the carriers of these parasites.

Trypanosoma inopinatum Ed. and Et. Sergent 1904.

Found in *R. esculenta* L. in Algeria. It is very like *T. lewisi*, but is more stumpy. It is spread by the leech, *Helobdella algira*. It gives rise to herpetomonas forms, and Brumpt has been able to infect frogs by the bite of the infected leeches, and has shown that the infection can be spread by the second generation also—i.e., that it is hereditary. It is also inoculable.

Trypanosoma nelspruitense Laveran 1904.

Discovered by Theiler in *R. angolensis* Bocage and in *R. theileri* Macquart.

Trypanosoma somalense Brumpt 1906.

In *Bufo reticulatus* from Somaliland.

Trypanosoma sp. (?)

Found by Tobey in the American newt, *Dienytleitus viridescens*.

TRYPANOSOMES OF FISH.

In 1841 the first known trypanosome was found by Valentin in the blood of *Salmo fario*, the brown trout.

Since that time a considerable number have been found in fresh- and salt-water fish all over the world. As examples may be mentioned *T. remaki* Laveran and Mesnil 1901, which exists in two varieties—*parva* and *magna*—and is found in pike; *T. rajæ* Laveran and Mesnil 1902 in *Raja punctata*

and is thought to be spread by a leech—*Pontobdella muricata*; *T. sacco-branchi* Castellani and Willey 1905 in *Saccobranchus fossilis* in the Lake of Colombo, Ceylon.

Trypanosomes have been found in eels. Brumpt in 1906 described a number of new species in different kinds of fish, and Zupitza, in 1909, made a valuable addition to the knowledge of this subject.

Some trypanosomes found in fish are *T. danilewskyi* Laveran and Mesnil 1904 in *Cyprinus carpis*, *T. carassii* Mitrophanov 1883 in *Carassius vulgaris*, *T. tinca* Laveran and Mesnil 1904 in *Tinea tinca*, *T. barba* Brumpt 1906 in *Barbus fluviatilis*, *T. elegans* Brumpt 1906 in *Gobio fluviatilis*, *T. phoxini* Brumpt 1906 in *Phoxinus laevis*, *T. abramidis* Laveran and Mesnil 1904 in *Abramis brama*, *T. leucisci* Brumpt 1906 in *Leuciscus*, *T. scardini* Brumpt 1906 in *Scardinius erythrophthalmus*, *T. squalii* Brumpt 1906 in *Squalius cephalis*, *T. cobitis* Mitrophanov 1883 in *Cobitis fossilis*. There are, however, many others described. *T. roulei* Mathis et Léger 1911 in *Monopteres javanensis*, *T. pellegrini* Mathis et Léger 1911 in *Macropodus viridi auratus*; *T. chagasi* Horta and Machado 1911.

TRYPANOSOMES OF INVERTEBRATA.

Trypanosomes belonging to the species and not due to the sucking of contaminated blood have been found in the tsetse-fly, in mosquitoes, in ticks, and in leeches.*

In Tsetse-Flies.

Trypanosoma grayi Novy.—This parasite has either a long, wide, ribbon-like form, with a short, free flagellum and an undulating membrane, or a herpetomonas-like form. It is found in *Glossina palpalis*, and becomes encysted in the proctodæum, the flagellum disappearing into a pink-staining vacuole, while a pink-staining cap spreading from the hinder pole all round the parasite forms an irregular cyst, containing cytoplasm, a nucleus, and a kinetonucleus. *T. grayi* is now known to be part of the life-cycle of *Cystotrypanosoma* Roubaud of the crocodile, while it is possible that the cysts have nothing to do with *T. grayi*.

Trypanosoma tullocki Minchin 1907.—This parasite closely resembles *T. gambiense*, from which it can be differentiated by the central round nucleus of the small centrosome. It is also found in *G. palpalis*.

In Mosquitoes.

T. culicis Novy 1907 is found in various Culicinae. Novy strongly advocated the view that the trypanosomes found in mosquitoes which Schaudinn had fed on *Athene noctuæ* infected with halteridium should be defined as *T. noctuæ* Schaudinn 1904, a parasite of *Culex pipiens*, and the same for *T. ziemanni* Schaudinn 1904, also in *Culex pipiens*; and, further, that the trypanosome found by Durham in *Stegomyia fasciata*, which had been fed on bats, should be looked upon as belonging to the mosquito.

In Ticks.

T. christophersi Novy 1907, found in *Rhipicephalus sanguineus*, fed on dogs.

Remarks.—The presence of the Herpetomonas, Crithidia and Trypanosoma in blood-sucking animals may, therefore, be peculiar to those animals, or only acquired from their hosts. Hence it is quite possible for serious errors to arise in working out the life-history of these parasites, especially as infection of the blood-sucker may come from the eggs.

(2) *Trypanoplasma* Laveran and Mesnil 1901 emended 1904.

Trypanosomidae living in the blood and alimentary canal of vertebrates with two flagella—one projecting anteriorly and the other running posteriorly, and raising the periplast into an undulating membrane. Kinetonucleus almost as large as the trophonucleus. Sporogony in the Hirundinea.

* *Trypanosoma boylei* Lafont 1912 has been found in *Conorhinus rubrofasciatus*, an insect which attacks man in Mauritius and Réunion.

This genus, which was first described by Laveran and Mesnil, is interesting, first, because it shows definitely an anterior flagellum, which has disappeared in most trypanosomes, and a posterior flagellum, which, like all trypanosomes, carries the undulating membrane; secondly, because, according to Léger and Keysselitz, members of this genus are parasitic in the alimentary canal of fish, and not in the blood.

The body of a trypanoplasma is flattened, and often curved, with the concave side thicker than the convex, to which the undulating membrane is attached. The body is soft and of changing form. At the junction of the anterior and middle thirds of the body can be seen two masses of chromatin. The one on the convex side is the trophonucleus, and the other on the concave side the elongated kinetonucleus, in front of which are two small chromatic granules, one of which gives rise to an anterior flagellum which becomes free at once, and the other a posterior, which, turning backwards, runs the whole length of the cytoplasm, raising the periplast into an undulating membrane.

Division is longitudinal, the kinetonucleus dividing first, and then the flagella.

Often Trypanoplasmatata show seasonable variation, the infection being more intense in hot weather. They are evidently pathogenic, producing anæmia associated with serous fluid in the peritoneum, pericardium, and œdema of the organs.

The parasite appears to be spread by leeches, in which the sexual forms conjugate by a fusion of nuclei, after reduction, and of the cytoplasm, from which results an oökinete possessing a trophonucleus and a kinetonucleus.

These oökinetes give rise to male, female, and indifferent forms of trypanosomes, which multiply abundantly. Parthenogenesis may occur.

Brumpt infected fish by the bite of leeches, but Keysselitz failed with *Pisciola geometra*, and it is hardly surprising, for he describes the leech as becoming ill, with swelling of the clitellar region, alteration in colour and activity, and finally death, thus showing that this leech could hardly be the usual definitive host. He has already noted the initial stages in *Hirudo medicinalis*. Another genus of leech which spreads these parasites is *Hemiclepsis*.

Crawly considers that the generic name should be *Cryptobia* Leidy, but the diagnosis of this genus is vague. With regard to classification, Keysselitz is of the opinion that all so far described species should be considered to belong to one species—*Trypanoplasma borreli* L. and M.

Type Species.—*Trypanoplasma borreli* Laveran and Mesnil 1901.

***Trypanoplasma borreli* Laveran and Mesnil 1901.**

In the blood of *Leuciscus erythrophthalmus* (the rudd) and *Phoxinus phoxinus* (the minnow), and in the alimentary canal of the leech *Pisciola geometra*, and perhaps in *Hirudo medicinalis*.

***Trypanoplasma cyprini* Plehn 1903.**

In *Cyprinus carpio*.

***Trypanoplasma (Cryptobia) dendroccæli* Fantham and Porter 1910.**

These parasites measured 20 to 40 μ in length, with a large and often curved kinetonucleus. It lives in the alimentary canal of *Dendroccælum lacteum*, and is the first trypanoplasma to be found in the Platyhelminthes.

***Trypanoplasma intestinalis* Léger 1905.**

This trypanoplasma is very important, because it was found in the œsophagus and anterior part of the stomach of *Box boöps*, a salt-water fish.

It is the first trypanosome described as existing outside the blood. In addition to typical forms, Léger describes globular parasites with three

anterior flagella and a rudimentary undulating membrane, which reminds one of *Trichomonas*.

These he considers to be female forms, and says that he has seen conjugation with male forms.

Trypanoplasma ventriculi Keysselitz 1906.

This is found in the intestine of *Cyclopterus lumpus*, and is apparently a typical trypanoplasma.

Trypanoplasma varium Léger 1904.

In *Cobitis barbatula* (loach), and in *Hemiclepsis marginata*.

Trypanoplasma guernei Brumpt 1905.

In *Cottus globio*, and develops in *Pisciola*.

Trypanoplasma barbi Brumpt 1905.

In *Barbus fluviatilis*, and in the leech (*Pisciola*).

Trypanoplasma abramidis Brumpt 1905.

In the bream (*Abramis brama*) and the leech (*Hemiclepsis*).

Trypanoplasma truttæ Brumpt 1905.

In *Salmo fario*, and perhaps in *Pisciola*.

Other Species.

T. keysselitzi Minchin 1909 in the tench; *T. gurneyorum* Minchin 1909 in the pike; *T. clariæ* Mathis and Léger 1911 in *Clarias macrocephalus*.

(3) Trypanophis Keysselitz 1904.

Trypanosomidæ in *Cæloenterata*, with two flagella, an anterior and a posterior. The kintetonucleus is situated anteriorly, and is much smaller than the trophonucleus.

Trypanophis grobbeni Poche 1903.

In the gastral cavity of different Siphonophora. The parasite is curved somewhat, like a trypanosome.

REFERENCES.

Mastigophora.

For complete recent references, see Field, H. H. (1912) *Bibliographia Protozoologica*, Archiv für Protistenkunde, xxvi., p. 444, Jena, and Thimm, C. A. (1909), *Bibliography of Trypanosomiasis*. Sleeping Sickness Bureau, London. Laveran and Mesnil (1912). *Trypanosomes et Trypanosomiasis*. Paris.

DOFLEIN AND KOEHLER (1912). *Ueberblick über Stamm der Protozoen*. Kolle and Wassermann's *Handbuch der Pathogenen Mikroorganismen*. Jena.

MINCHIN (1912). *An Introduction to the Study of the Protozoa*. London.

NUTTALL (1913). *Journal of Parasitology*. Cambridge. (Trypanosomiasis.)

PROWAZEK (1911-12). *Handbuch der Pathogenen Protozoen*. Leipzig.

ROBERTSON, M. (1913). *Transactions Royal Society, London*. (Life-history of *T. gambiense*.)

CHAPTER XVI

MASTIGOPHORA (*concluded*)

Herpetomonidæ—Plasmodidæ—Spirochætacea—Spirochætidæ—Treponemidæ
—References.

FAMILY 4. HERPETOMONIDÆ.

Definition.—Encystina with a well-developed flagellum in some stage of the life-history, but with the undulating membrane either rudimentary or absent. The kinetonucleus is situate posterior to the trophonucleus, and remains in this position. Schizogony takes place by longitudinal division, but sporogony is as yet not fully known.

Remarks.—The various genera which used to be gathered together in the family Herpetomonidæ were—

1. *Herpetomonas* Kent 1881.
2. *Leptomonas* Kent 1881.
3. *Crithidia* Léger 1902 emended Patton 1908.
4. *Leishmania* R. Ross 1903.
5. *Toxoplasma* Nicolle and Manceaux 1908.
6. *Babesia* Starcovici 1893.
7. *Achromaticus* Dionisi 1898.
8. *Histoplasma* Darling 1906.

Unfortunately, there is at the present time much confusion with regard to these genera, due to lack of certain knowledge with regard to the morphology and life-histories of the type species. The controversy is keenest with regard to the points as to whether *Herpetomonas* and *Leptomonas* are or are not the same genus; whether *Herpetomonas* and *Crithidia* are good genera, or simply stages in the life-cycle of a trypanosome. Briefly, the position is this: In 1851 Burnett discovered a flagellate in the house-fly, and called it *Bodo muscæ-domesticæ*, for which Kent created the genus *Herpetomonas* in 1881; but two pages earlier in his book Kent created the genus *Leptomonas* for a flagellate which Bütschli had found in the intestine of *Trilobius gracilis* in 1876. The only distinguishing features between these two genera are the presence

of a contractile vacuole and the flexibility of the body in *Herpetomonas*, but modern research fails to confirm the presence of this contractile vacuole in *Herpetomonas*, and flexibility *per se* is insufficient to separate the two genera. Prowazek, however, in 1904, emended *Herpetomonas*, describing *H. muscæ-domesticæ* as possessing two flagella united by a membrane, and arising from a flagellar-situated diplosome; but Patton, in 1909, and Mackinnon, in 1910, have demonstrated that this is merely a stage in the division of *H. muscæ-domesticæ*; and Chatton and Léger, in 1911, demonstrated that there was an axostyle present in *Leptomonas drosophilæ*; and Chatton later showed that the diplosome of *H. muscæ-domesticæ* was merely the remains of this axostyle. Therefore it would appear that the two genera are indistinguishable, and might therefore be united, and, if so, the older name *Leptomonas* would by the law of priority come into use, to the exclusion of the name *Herpetomonas*; and this may happen, but it cannot be adopted at present, because the type species of the genus *Leptomonas*—namely, *L. bütschlii* Kent 1881—has, as yet, been incompletely studied, and may eventually be found to be the same as, or different from, *Herpetomonas*; therefore we continue to retain the two genera *Herpetomonas* and *Leptomonas* in the same condition as in our last edition—that is to say, indistinguishable from one another.

With regard to the controversy as to whether there is a genus *Crithidia* or not, the answer is much simpler. There can be no doubt that crithidia-like forms exist in the life-cycle of many trypanosomes; but the work of Patton, Porter, and Swingle has clearly shown that there is a separate genus, *Crithidia* Léger 1902 emended Patton. Further, Miss Porter is correct when she states that *Crithidia* should be placed in the family Trypanosomidæ (*Herpetomonidæ*) on account of the presence of an undulating membrane.

With regard to *Leishmania*, a better knowledge of the life-history may show that this is merely a *Herpetomonas* or *Leptomonas*, but at the present time we retain it as a separate genus.

So far we have been considering genera in which there is no doubt that one stage of the life-cycle is flagellate; now we turn to the other genera, concerning which doubt is freely expressed as to whether they belong to the *Mastigophora* at all.

With regard to *Toxoplasma*, it was considered by some observers to be allied to *Leishmania*, but it contains only a single nucleus, without evidence of a kinetonucleus, and without the appearance of a flagellate stage on cultivation; but its life-cycle is little known, as is that of an apparently allied genus, *Elleipsisoma* França 1911, and the relationship is further complicated by the genus *Toddia* França 1911, which appears to arise from the infective granule, and may be allied to the spirochætes. There appears to be more binucleate evidence for the genus *Globidium* Neumann 1909. The so-called *Leucocytozoön piroplasmoides* Thiroux and Teppaz appears to be allied to *Toxoplasma*, having only one nucleus, and not

developing any flagellate forms on cultivation. Finally, the work of Yakimoff and Kohl-Yakimoff indicates that *Toxoplasma* is related to the Hæmogregarines; but as the life-history is but little known, we retain it in the Herpetomonidæ provisionally.

The genus *Babesia* was classed with *Herpetomonas* because flagellate forms had been found by several observers, but these findings have been discredited because (1) they were discovered in the old faulty air-dried smears; (2) the possibility of their being intestinal flagellates of the genus *Prowazekia*, which entered the blood before death in diseased animals; (3) they are really trypanosomes, and not development stages of *Babesia*; (4) the careful work of Nuttall and his collaborators have failed to demonstrate a flagellate stage. We have, however, preferred to retain *Babesia* at present in the Herpetomonidæ pending further investigations.

Achromaticus is placed with the Herpetomonidæ because, according to Gonder, it always has a trophonucleus and a kinetonucleus, while Neumann maintains that it becomes flagellate in the bat mite, *Pteropus vespertilionis*. On the other hand, Yakimoff, Stolnikoff and Kohl-Yakimoff deny the presence of the double nucleus, and consider the parasite to be a typical *Babesia*.

According to Darling, *Histoplasma* becomes flagellated in the lungs, and therefore belongs to the Herpetomonidæ.

We therefore recognize the following as definitely belonging to the Herpetomonidæ:—

1. *Herpetomonas* Kent 1881.
2. *Leptomonas* Kent 1881.
3. *Crithidia* Léger 1902 emended Patton 1908.
4. *Rhynchoidomonas* Patton 1910.
5. *Leishmania* Ross 1903.

while the more doubtful genera which are considered here, either because they are said to be flagellate in some stage of their life-history, or because they resemble, perhaps only superficially, the above genera, are:—

6. *Lymphosporidium* Gasperini 1908.
7. *Histoplasma* Darling 1906.
8. *Toxoplasma* Nicolle and Manceaux 1908.
9. *Elleipsisoma* França 1911.
10. *Toddia* França 1911.
11. *Globidium* Neumann 1909.
12. *Immanoplasma* Neumann.
13. *Babesia* Starcovici 1893.
14. *Theileria* Bettencourt, França, and Borges 1907.
15. *Nicolli* Nuttall.
16. *Nuttallia* França.
17. *Smithia* França.
18. *Anaplasma* Theiler 1910.
19. *Achromaticus* Dionisi 1898.
20. *Paraplasma* Seidelin 1911.

Pathogenicity.—The genera of the Herpetomonidæ contain many species extremely pathogenic to man and vertebrate animals generally causing the Leishmaniasis, the Babesiasis, Histoplasmosis, etc., but they do not appear to be pathogenic to insects.

Herpetomonas Kent 1881.

Synonyms.—*Bodo* Stein, *pro parte*; *Cercomonas* Dujardin, *pro parte*; and perhaps *Leptomonas* Kent.

Elongated, rod-like Herpetomonidæ with a single flagellum. The kinetonucleus is situated near the posterior end, so that the flagellum is not attached to the side of the body, but becomes free at once and projects posteriorly. There is no undulating membrane. The contractile vacuole is situated quite close to the posterior extremity.

The trophonucleus lies about the middle of the parasite, and possesses an achromatic substance with chromatic granules interspersed. The anterior end is tapering.

Type Species.—*Herpetomonas muscæ-domesticæ* Burnett 1851.

History.—The genus *Herpetomonas* was created in 1881 by Saville Kent for Burnett's *Bodo muscæ-domesticæ*, and since then many flagellates have, rightly or wrongly, been classified under this genus.



FIG. 104.—DIAGRAM OF A HERPETOMONAS.

The life-cycles have been studied by Léger in 1903; Prowazek, 1904; Patton, 1907-08; Berliner, 1909; and Miss Porter, 1911. At the present time there are two different views concerning the characters of the genus: (a) Prowazek's view, supported by Chatton, Alilaire, and Berliner, that it is biflagellate; (b) Patton's view, supported by Miss Porter and others, that it is uniflagellate (a view which our observations support).

Remarks.—The species of *Herpetomonas*, though not parasitic in human beings, are important to the student of tropical medicine, as they are parasitic in insects. Thus, *Herpetomonas muscæ-domesticæ* Burnett is parasitic in the intestinal canal of 8 per cent. of the house-flies (Prowazek), while others are found in fleas and bugs.

As already stated, there is considerable difference of opinion concerning the status of the Herpetomonidæ at the present moment. A number of observers, including Léger and Sambon, look upon them as merely stages in the life-history of trypanosomes; while others such as Novy, McNeal, Ross, and Patton, hold that they are probably distinct from the blood trypanosomes. Woodcock, however, is probably correct when he says that those with trypaniform characters will probably be found to be stages in the life-cycle of

trypanosomes, while the more typical herpetomonads will probably be found to be separate and distinct from these parasites.

In other words, some of the forms found in blood-sucking flies, leeches, etc., may be stages in the life-cycle of trypanosomes, while other forms together with those found in non-blood-sucking flies, and perhaps those found in larvæ, may (though it is open to question in the larvæ of blood-suckers) belong to a truly separate genus. The life-history of these forms has been mainly studied by Prowazek and Patton, whose results differ remarkably.

***Herpetomonas muscæ-domesticæ* Burnett 1851.**

Synonyms.—*Bodo muscæ-domesticæ* Burnett 1851; *Cercomonas muscæ-domesticæ* Burnett 1851; *Leptomonas muscæ-domesticæ* Burnett 1851.

This flagellate is found in *Musca domestica* L., *Homalomyia scalaris* F., *Pollenia rudis* F., *Theicomys fusca* Macquart, *Lucilia* sp.?, *Pycnosoma pulorum*, *Scotophaga lutaria* F., *Neuroctena anilis* Fallen, and *Homalomyia corvina* Verrall.

Miss Mackinnon has recently given a careful account of the morphology and life-history of *Herpetomonas muscæ-domesticæ* which is found in the house fly *musca domestica* Linnæus.

Morphology.—The preflagellate stage takes place in the mid-gut, or more rarely the hind-gut, of the fly in the form of small round or oval bodies, 3 to 4 μ by 2.5 to 3 μ which possess a circular trophonucleus and a rod-shaped kinetonucleus, while a rose-pink area in specimens stained by Giemsa, running from the kinetonucleus to the end of the cell, indicates the position of the future flagellum. This stage passes into the flagellate stage which takes place in the mid-gut when the Herpetomonad appears as a rather elongated (25 μ by 2.5 μ) body, which is blunt at the aflagellar end, and furnished with a flagellum which measures 30 μ , and arises from a blepharoplast situate near the kinetonucleus. The rhizoplast measures 4 μ , and is markedly thickened. The rod-shaped kinetonucleus is situate 6 μ from the flagellar extremity, and measures 2 μ by 0.8 μ . The trophonucleus is situate almost centrally, and measures 3 μ by 2 μ . The Doppelfaden of Prowazek is present as a line from the kinetonucleus viâ the trophonucleus far into the aflagellar end of the body.

Life-History.—*Herpetomonas muscæ-domesticæ* multiplies by longitudinal division, in which the rhizoplast divides first, and each half is seen to have a separate blepharoplast; but there does not appear to be a splitting of the flagellum; on the contrary, Miss Mackinnon believes that the new flagellum grows out from one of the blepharoplasts, but for some time the two flagella lie close together, and this may last until the new flagellum has reached the length of the old flagellum. It is in this stage that *the deceptive appearances of a biflagellate organism* is produced. The kinetonucleus divides, and the trophonucleus also divides amitotically, the karyosome dividing first; after this the cytoplasm divides. Division takes place so rapidly that the organisms become smaller

and smaller, and, attaching themselves to the epithelium of the hind-gut, encyst—*i.e.*, pass into the postflagellate stage of a flagellar cysts (3 to $4\ \mu$ by 3.5 to $2.5\ \mu$), possessing tropho- and kinetonuclei. These cysts pass out in the fæces, and are accidentally ingested by the fly along with food.

Hereditary Infection.—No sign of hereditary infection could be found, nor of sexual reproduction.

Other Observations.—Prowazek describes asexual reproduction by longitudinal division, in which the trophonucleus divides first, then the kinetonucleus, and lastly the flagellum; while Patton fails to find the division of the flagellum, and states that the second flagellum is developed as an outgrowth from the kinetonucleus. Prowazek has seen sexual conjugation, which Patton fails to find. Prowazek describes encystment, and considers that the infection is carried by the fæces, with which latter statement Patton agrees. Prowazek finds that the male and female parasites penetrate into the eggs of the fly, and undergo therein an autogamy by thetogenesis, in which the kinetonucleus carries out the development; by parthenogenesis, in which the trophonucleus is active; and by an indifferent type, in which both nuclei participate. There are, however, many transitional forms between these stages. Patton's description of the life-cycle is quite different, and resembles that which he has given for *Crithidia geridis* (*vide* p. 356). He further supports this life-cycle by his previous description of a *Herpetomonas* in *Culex pipiens*.

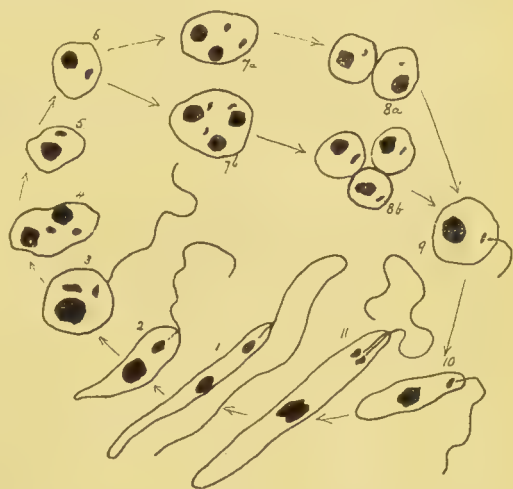


FIG. 105.—THE LIFE-CYCLE OF *HERPETOMONAS MUSCÆ-DOMESTICÆ* BURNETT.

(After Patton.)

1, Fully developed parasite; 2-5, stages of encystment; 6, encysted or preflagellate form; 7a-8a, multiplication of the preflagellate form by simple division; 7b-8b, multiple division; 9, young flagellate stage; 10, other form; 11, longitudinal division commencing.

Herpetomonas jaculum Léger 1902.

This parasite, which was found in the alimentary canal of *Nepa cinerea* by Léger, has been studied in detail by Miss Porter.

Morphology.—This *Herpetomonas* in the flagellate stage, measures 13 to $33\ \mu$ in length by 1 to $4\ \mu$ in breadth, and is surrounded by a clear, flexible ectoplasm provided with myonemes, inside, which is a granular endoplasm with granules arranged in such a way as to suggest a cytopharynx. The trophonucleus is oval,

the kinetonucleus is fairly large, and chromidia are found widely separate from one another. A blepharoplast lies close to the well-developed flagellum.

Life-History.—The flagellate attaches itself to the wall of the gut or to débris, and divides until small motionless forms result, which, shortening and encysting, form the 'post-flagellate stage.' It now escapes from its host as minute cysts in the fæces, which are deposited on the leaves of water-plants. The fæces are eaten by the young *Nepa*—i.e., there is contaminative or casual infection, and now the ingested cysts, which are small oval bodies, with tropho- and kinetonuclei, form the preflagellate stage of the life-cycle, which passes into the flagellate adult stage.

Hereditary Infection.—In addition Miss Porter has seen flagellate forms pass through the wall of the gut near the ovaries, into which they penetrate and encyst, all of which is suggestive of hereditary infection.

Other Species.—*H. gracilis* Léger 1902, in the Malpighian tubules of the larvæ of *Tanytus*; *H. lesnei* Léger 1903, in the mid-gut, near the Malpighian tubules of *Dasyphora pratorum*; *H. subulata* Léger 1903, in the gut of *Tabanus glaucopis* and *Hæmatopota italica* Meigen; *H. sarcophagæ* Prowazek 1904, in the gut of *Sarcophagæ hæmorrhoidalis*; *H. bombycis* Levaditi 1905; *H. vespæ* Porter 1911, in the gut of *Vespa crabro*; *H. Ctenophthalmi* Mackinnon 1909, in *Ctenophthalmus agyrtes*; *H. drosophilæ* Chatton and Alilaire 1908, in *Drosophila confusa*.

Leptomonas Saville-Kent 1881.

Synonym.—*Phytomonas* Donovan 1909, probably also *Herpetomonas* Kent 1881.

Herpetomonidæ, with a single long flagellum inserted far posteriorly, and without undulating membrane—i.e., the same characters as *Herpetomonas*.

Type Species.—*L. bütschlii* Saville-Kent 1881.

L. bütschlii Saville-Kent 1881.

In *Trilobius gracilis*, but it has not been perfectly studied.

L. pycnosomæ Roubaud 1904.

In *Pycnosoma putorium* Wiedmann, in Africa.

L. davidi Lafont 1909.

In *Euphorbia pilulifera*, in Mauritius, Ceylon, and Réunion. We have often met with this species in Ceylon. The parts of the plants affected are not healthy, and the disease is called 'flagellosis.' Miss Robertson has found a similar parasite in cotton plants in Uganda.

Rhynchoidomonas Patton 1910.

Herpetomonidæ with large kinetonucleus situated on the aflagellar side of the trophonucleus, with distinct undulating membrane and with the flagellar end drawn out considerably.

Rhynchoidomonas luciliæ Patton 1910.

This parasite is found in the Malpighian tubes of *Lucilia serenissima* Walker, and *Musca nebula* Fabricius, in India. It moves by sharp jerking movements, and has no free flagellum, but a pointed

flagellar extremity and a pointed aflagellar extremity. The kinetonucleus is large and circular, while the trophonucleus is also large. There are also many chromatoid granules.

Crithidia Léger 1902 emended Patton 1908.

Herpetomonidæ, in which the schizont is characterized by an attenuated posterior end, to which the flagellum is attached by a rudimentary undulating membrane. The kinetonucleus is situated close to the trophonucleus, but never anterior to it.



FIG. 106.—DIAGRAM OF A CRITHIDIA.

Remarks.—In 1902 Léger created this genus for a flagellate organism which he found in the alimentary canal of *Anopheles maculipennis*, and in 1908 Patton worked out the life-history of *Crithidia gerridis*.

Crithidia gerridis Patton 1908.

This flagellate is a parasite in *Gerris fossarum* Fabricius and in a species of *Microvelia*, and in a water-bug allied to *Perillopus* found in Madras. The flagellate is found in the crop of the insect as a round, oval, or pear-shaped body, 4 to 6 μ in length and 3 to 4 μ in breadth, in which lie a circular trophonucleus and a rod-shaped kinetonucleus.

The parasite grows and becomes vacuolated, showing, when coloured, a small pink staining area between the kinetonucleus and the periphery, which later becomes a distinct pink rod, and is a rudimentary flagellum attached by a rudimentary undulating membrane to the cell. This membrane shows as a faint pink band between the flagellum and the body of the parasite.

Later the flagellum can be seen arising from an achromatic area, the blepharoblast, close to the kinetonucleus, and running along the periphery of the parasite.

The kinetonucleus increases in size, and the trophonucleus shows its chromosomes, while chromatic particles appear in the cytoplasm.

The kinetonucleus now approaches the trophonucleus, and elongates and divides, while the flagellum thickens and splits longitudinally, so that there are two kinetonuclei and two flagella.

The trophonucleus and the cytoplasm now divide, so that two daughter cells are formed, which in turn divide, forming rosettes of eight to forty or more cells, measuring 6 to 10 μ in length by 4 to 8 μ in breadth.

Eventually the rosettes break up, and the rounded parasite has a central nucleus and a kinetonucleus at one side, and from a point close to this a flagellum passes round its circumference, giving it an undulating contour. The parasite elongates, and the posterior end is drawn out along the flagellum; the length is now 15 to 45 μ and the breadth 2 to 4 μ . They are often found agglomerated together.

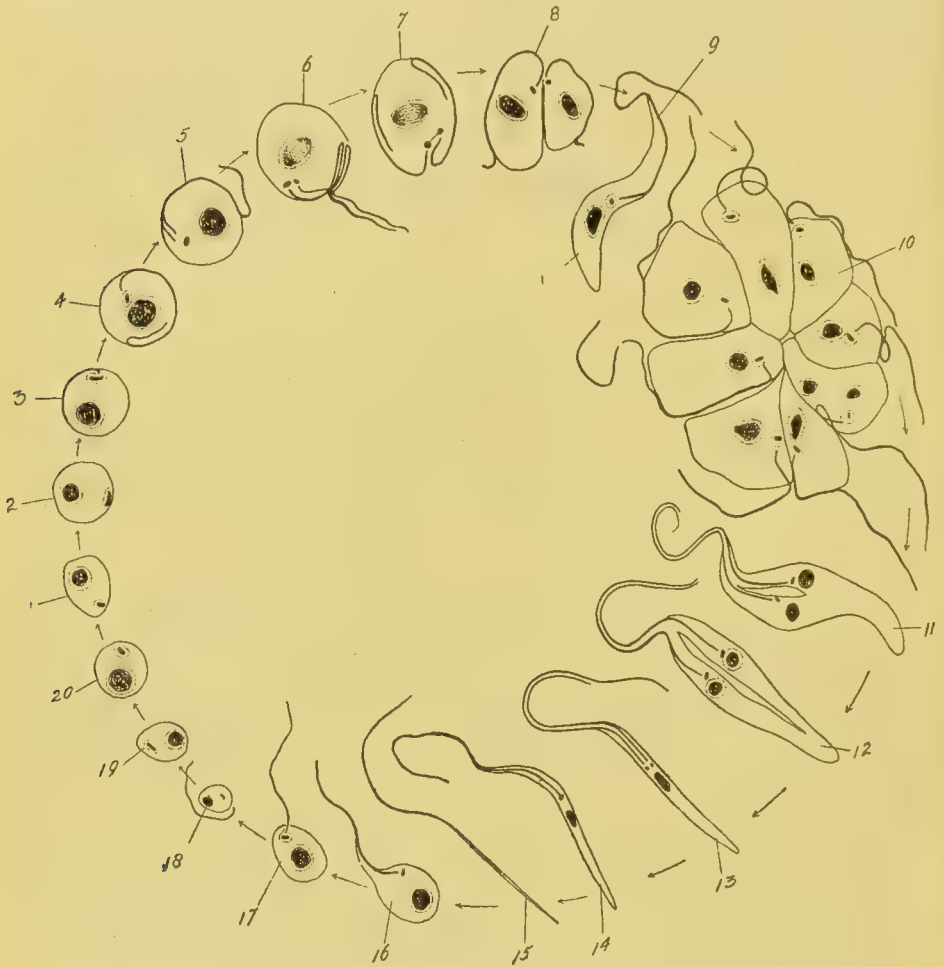


FIG. 107.—THE LIFE-CYCLE OF CRITHIDIA GERRIDIS PATTON.

(This is a diagram constructed from Captain Patton's drawings.)

14, Crithidial form; 15, very slender forms; 16-18, rounded forms losing their flagella; 19-3, preflagellate round forms, gradually increasing in size; 4, 5, formation of the flagellum; 6-8, division; 10, agglomeration; 11-13, division.

Longitudinal division now takes place rapidly, and the parasites pass down the intestinal tract and shorten, until they become round bodies with long flagella. A change then takes place, the flagellum becoming absorbed and finally detached, and the parasite appearing as a rounded body with a tropho- and a kineto-nucleus. The life-history is completed by the bodies being discharged with the fæces

into the water, and so taken up by a new host. The ovaries and eggs were not infected. This is an excellent example of Minchin's contaminative method of infection.

Miss Porter has fully traced out the life-history of *C. gerridis* found in *Gerris paludum* in England, and confirms Patton's researches.

Crithidia melophagia Flu 1908.

Flu has described *Crithidia melophagia* in *Melophagus ovinus*, a parasite of the sheep. He gives an account of asexual and sexual reproduction. The latter is characterized by a process of reduction, followed by conjugation with the formation of an oökinete and the infection of the eggs of the insect, which may cause a second generation of flies to carry the organism (Fig. 83).

Other Species.—*C. fasciculata* Léger 1902, in the intestines of females of the species *Anopheles maculipennis* and in *Culex fatigans* Wied.; *C. campanulata* Léger 1903, in the intestine of *Chironomus plumosus*; *C. minuta* Léger 1903: this parasite is found in *Tabanus tergstinus*, and is characterized by having a thick rounded end; *C. cleti* Hindle and Lewis 1912 in *Cletus varius* Dall, *C. pulicis* Porter 1911 in *Pulex irritans* L., *C. hystrihopsyllæ* Mackinnon 1909 in *Hystrihopsylla talpæ*, and a number unnamed by Miss Robertson in Hemiptera in Uganda.

Leishmania R. Ross 1903.

Synonyms.—*Piroplasma* Laveran and Mesnil 1903, *Helcosoma* Wright 1903, *Herpetomonas* Rogers 1904.

Definition.—Herpetomonidæ, living principally in endothelial cells, but also found in leucocytes and in the peripheral blood of mammals as small, oval, cytoplasmic masses with tropho- and kineto-nuclei, and developing into flagellate bodies in cultures.

Remarks.—Three species are known in man, morphologically similar, but pathogenetically different: *Leishmania donovani* Laveran and Mesnil 1903, *L. furunculosa* Firth 1891, and *L. infantum* Nicolle 1908.

Leishmania donovani Laveran and Mesnil 1903

History.—In 1900, when examining a film taken post mortem from a case of Dum Dum (a place near Calcutta) fever, Colonel Sir William Leishman saw a large number of small oval bodies, each of which contained a large and a small chromatin mass.

It was not until May, 1903, that he published an account of these parasites, suggesting that they might be trypanosomes, and might possibly be the cause of similar anomalous cases of so-called malarial fever.

In July, 1903, Major Donovan reported that he found bodies similar to those described by Colonel Leishman in blood taken from cases during life by splenic puncture.

In July, 1904, Rogers announced that he had succeeded in observing the development of these parasites into flagellates, by cultivating the blood taken from the spleen of a case of kala-azar, in sterile citrate of sodium solution incubated at 22° C. Christophers,

in 1904, considerably added to our knowledge of these parasites, and Patton, in 1906 and 1907, showed that they were not merely found more commonly in the leucocytes of the peripheral blood than

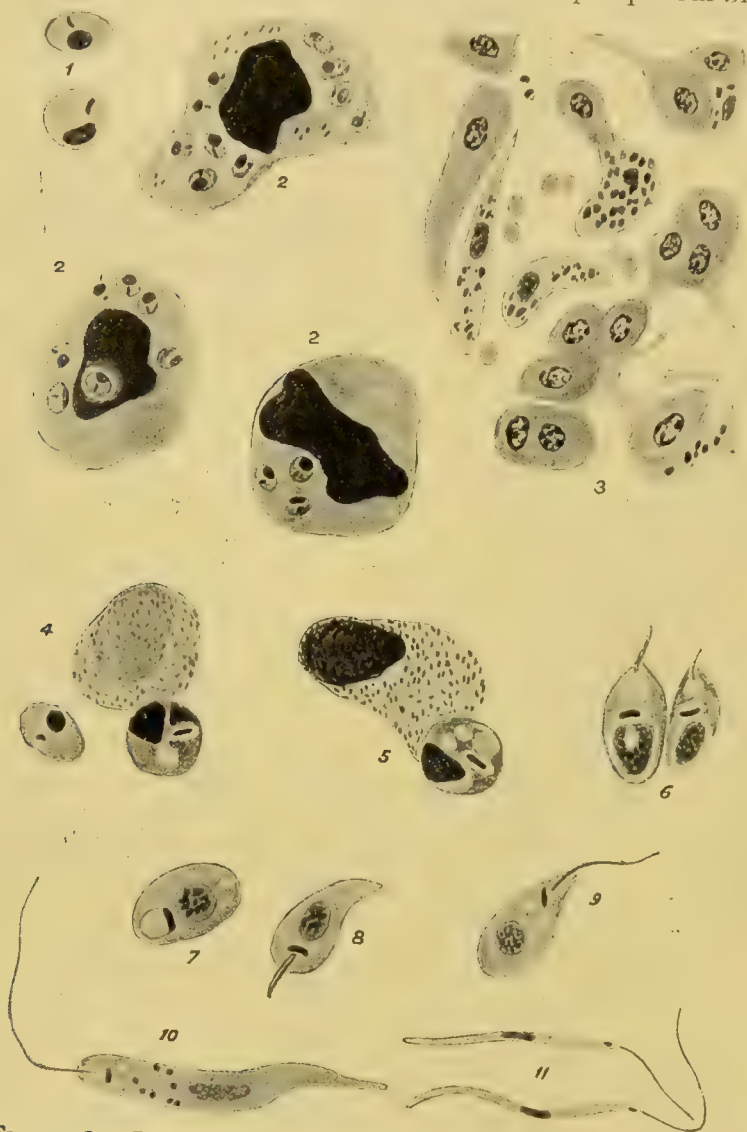


FIG. 108.—*LEISHMANIA DONOVANI* LAVERAN AND MESNIL.

1, Free binucleate forms (after Christophers); 2, endothelial cell and leucocytes containing parasites (after Christophers); 3, capillary in the liver, showing endothelial cells containing parasites (after Christophers); 4, two parasites escaping from a leucocyte in the alimentary canal of the bug (after Patton); 5, further development in the bug (after Patton); 6, flagellate forms in the bug (after Patton); 7-11, culture forms (after Leishman); 7, 8, 9 show the development of the flagellum.

had been previously believed, but that they could develop into typical flagellates in the bed-bug, *Clinocoris rotundatus* Signoret 1852 (which is the same as *C. macrocephalus* Fieb.), but this is apparently

more in the form of a natural culture than of a cyclic development. Donovan suggests that the true host may be *Conorhinus rubrifasciatus*, but Patton finds that the parasite in this bug degenerates and never flagellates.

The present state of our knowledge with regard to this parasite is that it is the cause of the disease called kala-azar; and that it is probably spread by means of some insect, but the particular carrier is not known.

Geographical.—The parasite is known to occur in India, Ceylon, China, Arabia, Egypt, and the Sudan, and many parts of Africa.

The Parasite.—The parasite is round, oval, or pyriform in shape, measuring 2 to 3.5 μ in length by 1.5 to 2 μ in breadth, with a granular cytoplasm containing two chromatic masses: the larger, more rounded, stains slightly; the smaller, rod-shaped, stains deeply. From the latter a linear structure (Mesnil and Novy's rhizoplast) runs to the acute end. A vacuole is also often present.

Distribution in the Body.—The parasites are found sometimes in large numbers in endothelial cells in the capillaries of the liver, spleen, bone-marrow, lymphatic glands, and mucosa of the intestine, in the blood from the femoral, portal, and hepatic veins, and more rarely in the circulating blood shortly before death.

Parasites liberated from the large cells are apparently taken up by mononuclear, polynuclear, and rarely eosinophile leucocytes, and may be occasionally seen in films obtained from the finger even in early stages of the disease, though more frequently near the end.

Treutlein has stated that the parasite is to be also found in red blood cells.

Schizogony.—Multiplication in man takes place by simple binary fission and by multiple division into three or more bodies. Division begins at the broad end, but cytological details are still wanting.

Inoculation.—Attempts to inoculate animals in India have been so far unsuccessful.

Development in the Bug.—According to Patton the parasites are ingested by the bug enclosed in the large cells or leucocytes as just mentioned, and develop into fully flagellated forms without reference to the temperature of the external air.

The first change begins usually by an increase in size up to 4 to 7 μ and a vacuolation of the cytoplasm on the second day, but may be deferred for several days.

The single parasite may proceed directly to flagellation by the appearance of an area stained bright pink by Giemsa, and called 'the flagellar vacuole.' This vacuole, which has a dark centre, rapidly increases in size up to 1 to 3 μ , and, passing to the surface, sends out a small pink brush, which forms the flagellum by merely growing longer. There appears to be no doubt that the flagellum forms in this vacuole, and is not directly connected with the kinetonucleus.

The flagellate form has a dark blue, granular cytoplasm with a circular trophonucleus, which stains deeply in the centre, and a kinetonucleus lying across the long diameter, and situated near the

trophonucleus, and possessing a long flagellum consisting of a number of filaments adhering closely together, inserted into a pale area near the kintonucleus. These parasites may divide into two equal or unequal flagellate forms, and apparently may go on so dividing for a length of time.

Instead of proceeding directly to flagellation, the parasite may show a division of its nuclei into two, with the formation of two flagella, and then division into two flagellate parasites, or the nuclei may multiply without division of the cytoplasm, so that forms containing four to eight nuclei may be found together, which eventually break up into separate flagellate forms. Recently Patton has traced the development into the post-flagellate stage, and believes that if the bug is fed upon human or monkey's blood the flagellates are quickly destroyed, but if not so fed the cycle of development is completed in ten to twelve days after a single feed. He believes that this destruction of the flagellates by warm blood is the cause of the endemicity of the disease.

Pathogenicity.—*Leishmania donovani* is the cause of Indian kala-azar.

***Leishmania tropica* Wright 1903.**

Synonyms.—*Helcosoma tropicum* Wright 1903, *Crithidia Cunninghami* Carter 1909.

History.—This parasite was described by Wright in a case of Oriental sore, and later Martinowski and Bognoff found the same parasites in Bouton d'Alep. It is believed by some that this parasite was first described by Cunningham in 1885, and more completely studied by Firth, who called it *Sporozoon furunculolum* Firth 1891; if this is so, the correct name of the parasite should be *L. furunculosa* Firth 1891.

It was specially investigated in 1905 by James in Delhi sore, Lahore sore, and Frontier sore. Nicolle has obtained cultures of the parasite on the McNeal-Novy medium, and Carter describes sexual forms. Carter, Balfour, and Nattan-Larrier believe, in our opinion correctly, that there are several varieties or species included under the term *L. tropica*; thus Carter maintains that the Cambay sore is different from the 'Clou de Gafsa' of Africa. Werner, Carini, and Splendore have shown that the sore may spread to or begin on mucous membranes.

Distribution.—It is found principally in Asia, in India, China, Asia Minor, Persia, etc., but also occurs in Africa, Algeria, Tunisia, on the Niger and in the Egyptian Sudan, in Mexico, Panama, and South America.

Morphology.—It differs in no morphological respect from *Leishmania donovani* in the human body, though certain minor differences have been described in the flagellate forms in cultures.

Cultivation.—In 1908 Nicolle first cultivated the parasite on blood-agar and on the modified Nicolle, Novy, McNeal medium often called 'N.N.N.' It grew slowly both in the liquor of condensation and on the agar at 20° to 22° C., producing flagellate and

division forms on the fourth day, which increased in numbers by the eighth to tenth day, when rosettes appeared and increased in such numbers that the masses were visible to the naked eye. After this a tendency to agglutination develops and increases until after one or two months the parasites die. The typical flagellate of these cultures is herpetomad-like, measuring with the flagellum 40 to 45 μ , with a breadth of 2 to 4 μ , but the flagellum alone measures 16 to 20 μ . There is no undulating membrane, but a trophonucleus and kinetonucleus can be seen. Three types of flagellates can be seen in cultures—viz., one almost spherical, a second short and stumpy, and a third long and narrow. Subcultures are best made from the tenth to the fifteenth day, and these can be repeated apparently indefinitely. Forty-five generations have been recorded during a period of eighteen months.

It is usual to state that there are no differences between the cultural forms of *L. tropica* and *L. donovani*, but Row considers that there are several points of difference—viz., that the flagellate forms of *L. furunculosa* are longer and larger, that the flagellum is longer, while the growth is quicker and may take place at higher temperatures than in *L. donovani*.

Inoculation.—Martzinowsky, Wenyon, and Patton have successfully inoculated themselves, and other people have also been successfully inoculated from cases of Oriental sore. The incubation period varies from sixteen days to six and a half months, and the papule is generally ushered in with febrile symptoms lasting several days. The inoculated sore begins as a papule, and becomes a nodule; when excised and examined it presents the typical appearances of Oriental sore, and contains *L. tropica*.

Successful inoculations are recorded from man to monkeys and dogs, from monkeys to man, other monkeys and dogs, from dogs to dogs, and from cultures to man, monkeys, and dogs.

Immunity.—Infection confers immunity if the cure is complete, and if a sufficient interval has elapsed between the cure and the reinfection; if not, a condition of hypersensibility is produced, as demonstrated by a shortened incubation period. Kala-azar infection in dogs affords immunity against *L. tropica* during and after the attack; Oriental sore protects monkeys partially or completely against *L. donovani*.

Insect Carriers.—No insect at present has been demonstrated to be the true host of *L. tropica*. *Musca domestica* may possibly be a carrier because the parasites can retain their vitality therein, and may be transferred to any raw surface, and thus induce infection; but it is not a true host, though Row has found the contents of the gut to be infective, and believes that infection can be spread by its faeces. There can be no doubt that a natural culture producing flagellates and, according to Patton, even postflagellate forms, can take place in the bed-bug *Clinocoris rotundatus*, but all attempts at transmission have failed, and the same condition of affairs holds good for *Stegomyia fasciata*. Phlebotomus is suspected, but there

is no experimental evidence. Flu suspects ticks as being the possible carrier in Dutch Guiana. Pediculi have no supporters, and *Stomoxys* is not regarded as a likely carrier. As Patton has recorded the presence of *L. tropica* in the peripheral blood, it might not be necessary for a blood-sucker to ingest juices from the local sore.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of specific sores found in the skin and on mucous membranes in Asia, Africa, and America, and which are commonly known as Oriental sore, but which also have a large number of local names, such as ulcer of Bauru, pian-bois, espundias, Delhi sore, Bagdad button, clou de Gafsa, etc.

Laveran and Nattan-Larrier have created the variety *americana* (*L. tropica* Wright var. *americana* Laveran and Nattan-Larrier) for the *Leishmania* found in *Espundias*, characterized by a flattened nucleus. Vianna has created a new species, *L. braziliensis*, for a *Leishmania* observed by him in a case of ulcer, but Marchoux doubts whether this new species is justifiable, as it has no distinctive characters.

***Leishmania infantum* Nicolle 1908.**

Synonym.—*Leishmania donovani* Laveran and Mesnil 1903 *pro parte*.

History.—In 1904 Cathoire observed peculiar bodies in films from the spleen of a child who had died of an ill-defined malady in Goulette, in Tunisia. These bodies Laveran recognized as *L. donovani*. In 1905 Pianese announced his discovery of *Leishmania* bodies in large mononuclear cells in the smears from the liver and spleen of children dying from a type of infantile splenic anæmia, which he proposed to call infantile leishmania in order to distinguish it from other forms of infantile splenic anæmia. In 1907 Nicolle and Cassuto observed the parasites in the spleen of a child in Tunisia suffering from irregular fever, splenomegaly, etc., and Nicolle named this disease infantile kala-azar, which is a most suitable name. After this it was described in Crete in 1907 by Archer, in Sicily, Stromboli, and Calabria by Gabbi and Feletti; in 1910 it was found in Malta by Critien, in Lisbon by Alvares, while Gabbi proved that the disease 'ponos,' as seen in Spezzia, was the same disease; and Christomanos, Aravandinos, and Michaelides found it in the Grecian islands and Greece itself. In 1911 Christomonas found it in several places in Greece and Asia Minor, while Batinos found it in Corfu, Kefalinos in Paris, and it was found to be widely distributed in Southern Italy and Sicily; Marzinowsky has observed cases in Moscow, Tashim Ibrahim in Tripoli, Lemaire in Algiers, and Sluka and Zarfl in Tashkent in Turkestan. Marshall reports the disease among children of about twelve years of age in the Sennar province of the Sudan.

It is thus seen that *L. infantum* is mainly found around the Mediterranean basin, but may extend to Moscow and to Turkestan; probably its geographical distribution is but little known at present.

The study of the life-history began by the experiments of Nicolle, who in 1908 successfully inoculated a dog in Tunis intrahepatically and intraperitoneally with splenic blood from a case of infantile kala-azar; later monkeys were also inoculated successfully.

Later, Manceaux, Comte, Laveran, Pettit, Jemma, Di Cristina, Cannata, Alvares, da Silva, Pulvirenti, and Tomaselli, successfully inoculated dogs, monkeys, and guinea-pigs, and Volpino produced a purely local lesion somewhat analogous to Oriental sore by inoculating the cornea of a rabbit from an infected dog. Marshall and Archibald have infected monkeys, but not dogs, with material from the Sudan cases.

In 1908 Nicolle and Comte recorded the discovery of spontaneous kala-azar in dogs in Tunis, and eventually found 1.8 per cent. to be infected in the spring, but this percentage was raised by the Sergents to 7.2 per cent. in the summer in Algiers, and Sevenet has found that in Algiers 1.6 per cent. show infection in the spring and 8.8 per cent. in the summer. Basile, in an endemic region, Bordonaro, near Messina, found twenty-seven infected dogs out of thirty-three examined by trephining the head of the femur and making smears of the bone-marrow; and he obtained also a very important fact when he found infected dogs in every house where kala-azar had been found by Gabbi; and still more interesting is the observation that infected dogs were found in houses without cases of kala-azar, but subsequently a case has already occurred in one of these houses. Canine kala-azar has also been found in Catania, slightly in Rome, in 6.69 per cent. of dogs in Greece by Cardamatis, in 2.66 per cent. in Lisbon, also in Malta by Critien and Babington, and probably by Bousfield in the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan, and in a few dogs in Colombo by Castellani in 1911. It must be noted, however, that Colombo, being one of the greatest harbours of the world, some of the dogs found are in reality imported dogs. Negative results are reported by Donovan in Madras in 1,150 dogs, by Fülleborn in Hamburg in 50 dogs, by Wenyon in Bagdad in 110 dogs, by Jemma, Cristina, and Cannata in Palermo in 227 dogs, and by Archibald in the Sudan. For a long time cats were examined with negative results, but recently Ed. and Et. Sergeant, Lombard, and Quillchini, have found a four-month-old kitten to be infected in Algeria. It will thus be seen that of all the endemic centres of infantile kala-azar, Palermo alone affords no evidence of natural canine kala-azar.

As the result of his work Basile, supporting Nicolle, has come to the conclusion that infantile and canine kala-azar are one and the same disease. He reared a number of dogs in the laboratory in Rome (where canine kala-azar is rare), and some of these he took to Bordonaro, where they contracted canine kala-azar and died (Fig. 109). The parasites were found in the bone-marrow, spleen

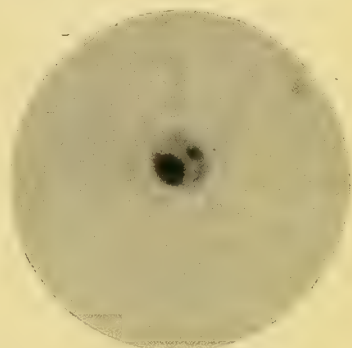


FIG. 109.—*LEISHMANIA INFANTUM* NICOLLE, FROM THE LIVER OF A DOG EXPERIMENTALLY INFECTED.

(From a microphotograph by Basile.)

and liver, and also in *Pulex serraticeps*, taken from them during the last stages of the disease. The dogs in Rome were subsequently killed, and found to be free from *L. infantum*. *P. serraticeps* from a laboratory dog whose bone-marrow contained no Leishmania were isolated and kept at 22° C. in two glass vessels, and eventually one lot was fed on spleen-juice from a case of canine kala-azar, while the others were kept as controls. After a time the intestines of the fleas were dissected out and divided into two portions—one was used for smears, and the other was made into an emulsion and injected subcutaneously into a young dog one month old, the bone-marrow of which had been shown to be free from Leishmania, while another dog was used as a control.

The smears from the infected fleas showed numerous specimens of Leishmania in a state of multiplication, while the control fleas were free. After fifteen days the dog became ill with fever and loss of appetite and dejection, and showed the parasites in the peripheral blood. In twenty-nine days the dog died, probably as a result of an operation to obtain bone-marrow from the tibia. Natural infection by flea-bites was effected by introducing a sick dog covered with fleas into a cage containing a bitch and two thirty-day-old puppies, whose bone-marrow had been found free from infection. In thirty days these dogs were found to be infected, and subsequently the puppies died, but the other dogs lived. Controls were not infected. Basile found *P. serraticeps* in the bed-clothes and mattresses of families who kept dogs in the house, and some of these fleas were brought to Rome from dogs or mattresses of people living in Bordonaro, and were fed upon laboratory-reared, marrow-examined, clean dogs, whose peripheral blood and liver had also been examined for parasites with negative result. The dogs became ill and died, and the parasites were found in the bone-marrow, liver, and spleen. Control dogs were then killed and found healthy.

Basile concludes that *P. serraticeps* is the carrier of the disease. In Bordonaro he examined 1,000 fleas from dogs and the beds of families, but found only four infected, with Leishmania. With regard to *P. irritans*, Basile finds that it is frequently a parasite of the dog, and that among specimens caught in the bed of a child suffering from kala-azar one was found to contain Leishmania. From experiments he believes that fleas are infective from December to March. There is one curious point noted, that Leishmania was found in spleen, liver, and bone-marrow only a few days before death, though the fleas had bitten the dogs three months earlier.

With regard to the objections to this work, Gabbi has pointed out—

1. Canine and human fleas placed in contact with pure cultures of Leishmania on Nicolle's blood-agar show blood in the gut, but no Leishmania.
2. Leishmania in culture with intestinal bacteria from the flea or in culture with the juice from the same do not develop.
3. Starving fleas placed in contact with spleen-juice obtained by puncture from a child with kala-azar do not become infected with Leishmania

Mazocchi in Piedmont finds that the fleas of dogs possess flagellate bodies of a crithidia-like nature, distinct from Basile's description of the *Leishmania* bodies found by him.

Alvares and Pereira da Silva's experiments with *Ctenocephalus serraticeps* strongly support Basile, and they believe the infection to be contaminative via the fæces.

Personally, we are at present inclined to agree with Basile's views, notwithstanding that the main objection to Basile's experiments is that they are conducted in Rome, in which place dogs may acquire natural canine kala-azar; secondly, the question has to be solved as to whether the bodies seen in the flea are or are not *Leishmania*, and if not, whether they are some parasite naturally occurring in the flea.

Basile describes the forms found in the flea as follows:—

'In the mid-gut *Leishmania*-like forms as oval, rounded, or pyriform bodies, 2 to 3 μ in length, with an excentrically-placed trophonucleus, and generally a kinetonucleus. Large forms, 4 to 6 μ by 2 to 3.5 μ , are also seen, and more posteriorly pyriform bodies, 6 to 8 μ by 1.5 to 2.5 μ , which latter are provided with flagella, measuring about 3 μ in length.'

Basile concludes that there is a cycle of development with pre-flagellate, flagellate, and post-flagellate forms. But a number of fleas have been found to possess natural parasites belonging to the genera *Herpetomonas* and *Crithidia*, and Miss Porter has definitely proved that *Crithidia pulicis* is a true parasite of *P. irritans*. The list of known flea parasites is:—

Crithidia pulicis Wenyon 1908 in *Xenopsylla cleopatræ*.

Crithidia ctenophthalmi Patton and Strickland 1908 in *Ctenophthalmus agyrtes*.

Crithidia hystrichopsyllæ Mackinnon 1909 in *Hystrichopsylla talpæ*.

Crithidia pulicis Porter 1911 in *Pulex irritans*.

Herpetomonas ctenophthalmi Mackinnon 1909 in *Ctenophthalmus agyrtes*.

There are also a number of unnamed flagellates recorded—e.g., a species of *Herpetomonas* by Balfour in 1906 in *Læmopsylla cleopatræ*, which may be the same as Wenyon's *Crithidia*. It does not appear certain that Miss Porter's *Crithidia* and Wenyon's *Crithidia* are the same, and if they are not, then Miss Porter's *Crithidia* must be given a different name.

The conclusion at the present is that the disease in dogs and children is apparently the same, and the evidence is in favour of the fact that transmission by the flea is apparently correct. The identity of infantile kala-azar and canine kala-azar is supported also by Bande's experiments on agglutination. Animals inoculated by him with cultures of *L. infantum* developed agglutinins for this species, and nearly in the same amount also for the *leishmania* isolated from dogs, and *vice versa*.

Franchini states that *Anopheles maculipennis* can be infected with cultural forms of *Leishmania*. Gabbi inculcated at one time *Musca domestica* as a carrier

Morphology.—*L. infantum* so closely resembles *L. donovani* as to be indistinguishable morphologically.

Life-History.—It exists in the peripheral blood, bone-marrow, spleen, and liver in children and dogs, and suspicion is aroused that it may be spread by fleas, and that aflagellate and flagellate organisms seen in these parasites may be stages in the life-cycle.

Culture.—It is easily cultivated upon the Nicolle, Novy, MacNeal (or N.N.N.) medium, as was first shown by Nicolle. The organisms develop in the condensation liquid and on the moist surface of the agar. It can be subcultured indefinitely. No distinct differences can be discerned between the three species of *Leishmania* in culture. *L. infantum* can be distinguished from *L. donovani* by the fact that the latter is not inoculable with success into dogs.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of infantile kala-azar, and probably canine kala-azar, but only the latter will be described here.

There are two types of canine kala-azar—an acute and a chronic. Acute canine kala-azar usually appears in young dogs when it is associated with fever (39° to 40° C.) of a remittent type, followed by loss of appetite, wasting, tremors, motor disturbance in the hind-limbs, and rarely diarrhœa. The animal finally dies in a comatose condition at the end of three to five months.

Chronic canine kala-azar begins without any apparent symptoms, except, perhaps, loss in weight, but as it progresses anæmia sets in, and tremors, together with motor disturbances of the hind-limbs, may be noticed. It is therefore milder than the preceding, is very chronic, and associated with considerable enlargement of the spleen. The inoculated dogs have several times been reported to exhibit symptoms resembling dumb rabies. Post-mortem examination exhibits that the spleen has a thickened capsule, with hypertrophy of the lymphoid elements; the epithelium of the blood-lacunæ are much hypertrophied, and full of parasites. The liver cells show fatty degeneration; parasites are found in the liver cells and in the endothelium of the lymphatics. The interstitial tissue of the kidney is increased, and parasites occur in the endothelial cells. Parasites may be found in the round-celled infiltration under the capsule of the kidney. The suprarenal bodies show cloudy swelling of the cortical cells, infarcts in the medulla, and vacuolation of the cells, which may be invaded in patches by the parasites. The pancreas showed a hypertrophy of the connective tissue, with the presence of the cells in the endothelium of the lymphatics. The bone-marrow showed large numbers of mononuclear cells with parasites. The heart muscle showed cloudy swelling. No parasites are found in the lungs.

The formation of a local sore on the cornea of a rabbit must be remembered as indicating the possibility of a local disease like that caused by *L. tropica*.

Lymphosporidium Gasperini 1908.

Synonym.—*Leucocytozoon* Ducloux 1908.

This genus contains forms resembling *Leishmania* in size and general appearance, and by being found in enlarged endothelial cells and leucocytes, but differing therefrom in possessing a single nucleus, and in not being known to be flagellate. They are placed here because it is impossible to correctly classify them at present.

Lymphosporidium farciminosum Rivolta and Micellone 1883.

Synonyms.—*Cryptococcus farciminosus* Rivolta and Micellone 1883, *C. tokishigei* Viullemin, *Leishmania farciminosus* Rivolta and Micellone 1883, *Lymphosporidium equi* Gasperini 1908, *Leucocytozoon piroplasmoides* Ducloux 1908.

Oval or roundish bodies, resembling *Leishmania*, but often with double contoured membrane, and usually only one nucleus found in the hypertrophied endothelial cells and leucocytes of horses suffering from *Lymphangitis epizootica* in Europe, Africa, Asia, and America.

Histoplasma Darling 1906.

Round and oval parasites, with a single nucleus and chromatin particles, enclosed in an achromatic refractile capsule. It becomes flagellate in the lungs.

Histoplasma capsulatum Darling 1906.

Round and oval parasites, 1 to 4 μ in diameter, enclosed in an achromatic refractile capsule, with, as a rule, a single nucleus situate on one side or at one end, and with chromatic particles in the cytoplasm, of which one dot or rod is at the opposite end or side to the nucleus. It stains very irregularly with the usual colouring matters.

History.—It was discovered by Darling in cases of fever with splenomegaly in man in Panama in 1906.

Distribution in the Body.—It is found in the endothelial cells of capillaries and small bloodvessels in the liver, spleen, lungs, intestines, and lymphatic glands, as well as in leucocytes.

Pathogenicity.—It causes disseminated hyaline pseudogranulomata in the lungs, splenomegaly, necrotic areas in the liver, and ulceration of the small and large intestines, which constitute histoplasmosis.

Toxoplasma Nicolle and Manceaux 1908.

Definition.—Parasites resembling *Leishmania*, but possessing only one central chromatic mass. In shape, crescentic, oval, or reniform. Reproduction by longitudinal division. Found in mononuclear and polymorphonuclear cells in the spleen and other organs. Attempts at cultivation have so far failed.

Yakimoff and Kohl-Yakimoff consider these parasites to belong to the genus *Hæmogregarina*.

The known species are:—*Toxoplasma gondii* Nicolle and Manceaux in Tunis; *T. cuniculi* Splendore in Brazil; *T. canis* Mello in Italy and Brazil; *T. talpæ* Prowazek in Japan; *T. columbæ* in Brazil.

Toxoplasma gondii Nicolle and Manceaux 1908.

Endoleucocytic crescentic parasites 6 to 7 μ by 3 to 4 μ , found in the spleen and other organs of *Ctenodactylus gondii*.

Toxoplasma cuniculi Splendore 1909.

Found by Splendore in the spleen and other organs of the rabbit, in which it produces lesions resembling kala-azar. Shape, oval or reniform; length, 5 to 8 μ ; breadth, 2.5 to 4 μ .

Elleipsisoma França 1911.**Elleipsisoma thomsoni** França 1911.

An amœboid intracorpuseular parasite with a single nucleus and no hæmozoin, believed by França to be allied to *Toxoplasma*.

Toddia França 1911.**Toddia bufonis** França 1911.

Begins as a small mass of chromatin situate in the red corpuscles of batrachia, and subsequently forms a cytoplasmic body. Seems to be allied to *Anaplasma*.

Globidium Neumann 1909.**Globidium multifidum** Neumann 1909.

Found as merozoites in red corpuscles of *Globius minutus*.

Immanoplasma Neumann.

Immanoplasma scyllii Neumann in *Scyllium canicula*.

Babesia Starcovici 1893.

Synonyms.—*Hæmatococcus* Babès 1888 (*non* Agardh), *Pyrosoma* Smith and Kilborne 1893 (*non* Péron), *Ixodioplasma* Schmidt 1904, *Apiosoma* Von Wandollek 1875 (*non* Blanchard 1855), *Piroplasma* Patton 1895, *Amæbo-sporidium* Bonome 1895.

Herpetomonidæ with a flagellate stage, which is at present but little known. Schizogony takes place in the red corpuscles by a process of gemmation giving rise to rounded or pyriform merozoites. Sporogony is not well known, but takes place in ticks. The life-cycle can hardly yet be said to be thoroughly understood, for, as Breinl and Hindle and Miyajima have shown, there is a flagellate stage, and any complete life-cycle should apparently contain some such stage; but, as already stated, serious objections have been made to all these flagellate forms, which must at present be considered to be doubtful. This flagellate stage is of importance in indicating that the *Babesia* belong to the Binucleata, and are related to the Trypanosomidæ and Herpetomonidæ, and therefore it is very necessary to have its presence confirmed or refuted definitely.

Allied Genera.—A number of genera allied to *Babesia* have recently been described, and these can be differentiated as follows:—

A. Cytoplasm easily visible:

I. Division in pairs—*Babesia*.

II. Division in fours:

a. Nucleus without dimorphism—

1. Pear-shaped swollen parasites occupying the whole breadth of the corpuscle—*Smithia*.2. Small oval forms, no bacillary forms—*Nuttallia*.3. Bacillary forms—*Theileria*.b. Nucleus with dimorphism—*Nicolli*.B. Cytoplasm usually invisible—*Anaplasma*.

The best-studied species is *Babesia canis*, whose life-history will be described.

Babesia canis Piana and Galli Valerio 1895.

Synonym.—*Piroplasma canis* P. and G. V. 1895.

In 1895 Piana and Galli Valerio found a characteristic hæmatozoön in the red blood-corpuscles of a dog which was infested by ticks (*Ixodes reduvius* L.), and which was suffering from fever, weakness, and slight jaundice, after having hunted in marshy localities. This hæmatozoön occupied 3 to 4 per cent. of the corpuscles, and also occurred free in the plasma. In the corpuscles the parasite appeared as pyriform bodies, as many as two, three, four, or five in one corpuscle, and showed amœboid movement. The dog in question recovered, but in other dogs the post-mortem showed fluid blood, congested liver and spleen, with icteric staining of the tissues and necrotic foci in the omentum near the pancreas. Other symptoms noted by them in dogs were hæmoglobinuria, anorexia, prostration, and emaciation.

In 1899 Hutcheon described the disease caused by this parasite as 'malignant jaundice' or 'bilious fever' in dogs. It is also known as 'malignant malaria,' 'hondziekté,' and 'malarial fever,' and is said to have often been mistaken for distemper. The disease is by no means uncommon in dogs in the tropics, and should be called 'canine babesiasis.'

Geography.—It is known in Europe, especially in Lombardy and other parts of Italy; also in France. In Africa it is found in South Africa, East Africa, Senegal, and other parts of West Africa, and also in North Africa, including Egypt. Nuttall suggests, however, that the African *Babesia* may be different from the European. In Asia it is found in India and Ceylon.

Place and Season.—It appears to be more common in coast towns and districts, and less common in higher inland places. It seems to have a seasonal variation, but this is not properly understood.

The Parasite.—The life-cycle in the dog has been most carefully studied by Nuttall and Graham-Smith.

In the fresh blood it is noted that the infected corpuscles are pale and enlarged, and contain irregular, dark-coloured, pear-shaped bodies, possessing a central refractive portion. Amœboid or globular non-motile bodies may be noted, and also many free forms.

In specimens stained by Leishmann's method the parasites seem to consist of a blue-coloured cytoplasm, with a delicate vacuolated or trabecular structure centrally, but more condensed around the periphery. This cytoplasm may contain a single homogeneous nucleus, which has a vivid red colour, and is often connected by a thin strand with a loose mass of chromatin, which is situated near the blunt end. The parasite contains a vacuole.

Schizogony.—A free pyriform parasite (pyriform stage) enters a normal red blood-corpuscle and becomes rounded (ring stage) in shape, while the loose mass of chromatin is drawn near to the original nucleus, where it condenses. Finally it fuses with that nucleus, forming a single chromatin mass.

The parasite now throws out pseudopodia and appears as an amœba (amœboid stage), and the chromatin subdivides into two unequal masses, connected with a thin strand.

This amœboid stage lasts for a long time, at the end of which the parasite enters upon a quiescent stage, in which the vacuole appears in a subcentral position, and the chromatin, which lies along its margin, has its two masses widely separated, though still connected by the thin strand already referred to. The smaller mass has divided into two, making in all three masses of chromatin connected together by chromatin strands.

Two small symmetrical processes of cytoplasm protrude from the parasite in the neighbourhood of the two small chromatin masses, which they carry with them.

The processes enlarge at the expense of the rest of the cytoplasm, and the vacuole divides, and the so-called trefoil stage is reached, in which the main mass of the chromatin, much reduced in size, lies at the base of the two processes.

The single strand connecting the two smaller chromatin particles has shortened and disappeared, so that the strand of each small mass now rises directly from the principal chromatin mass. This now divides into two

nuclei, connected by a strand, while the cytoplasmic processes become large. Finally, the cytoplasm divides, and two pyriform parasites are found lying side by side in one corpuscle, an arrangement considered typical of a babesia.

In each parasite is a vacuole, and a principal chromatic nucleus situated near the pointed extremity, from which a tail of loose chromatin runs alongside the vacuole towards the blunt extremity.

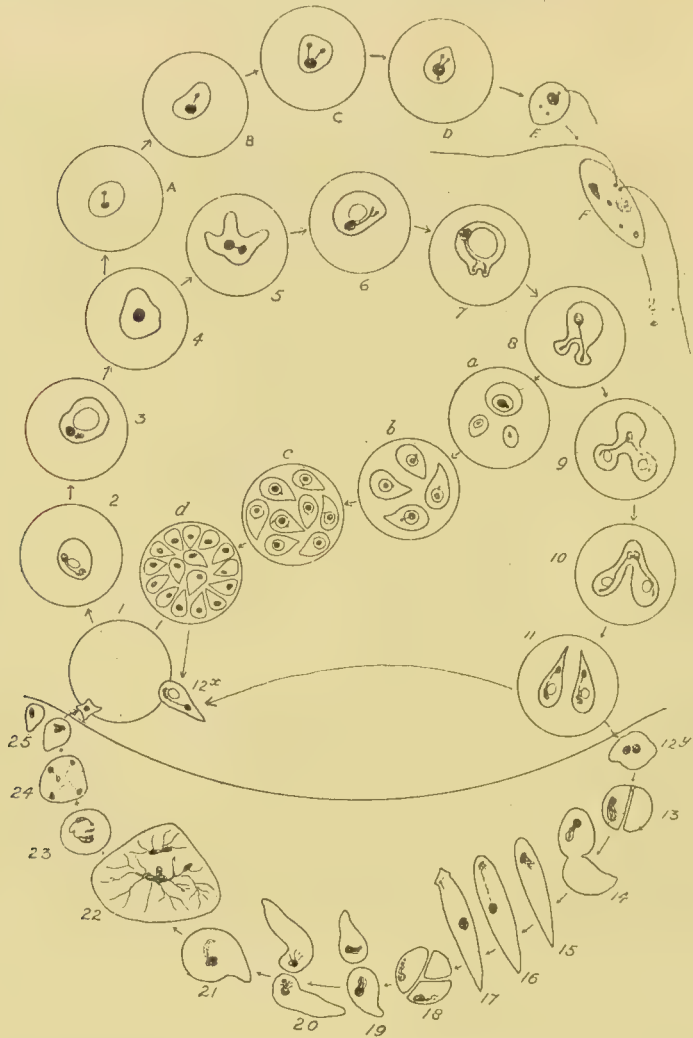


FIG. 110.—DIAGRAM OF THE LIFE-CYCLES OF *BABESIA CANIS*.

(After Nuttall and Graham-Smith, Christophers, and Breinl and Kinghorn.)

1-12x, Reproduction by simple division; a-a, reproduction by multiple division; A-F, development of a flagellate form; 12y-25, sporogony in the tick.

The corpuscle now ruptures and liberates the two parasites and some granules, representing residual matter, from the parasite or the corpuscle, or both.

Two slight variations of the process have been described by Nuttall and Graham-Smith: in one the two nuclei and their strands form an hourglass-shaped mass, and in the other the strand and second nucleus form a reticular mass; but both develop into the stage depicted in the diagram. Four

pyriform parasites may be found in a corpuscle instead of two, and this may come about by an invasion of the corpuscle by two pyriform shapes, which proceed to division, or by the division of the uninuclear shape into two, both of which proceed to develop regularly. Reproduction by gemmation with the formation of one or two buds has been described by Breinl and Hindle, and of many buds by Kinoshita.

Flagellate Forms.—Nuttall and Graham-Smith in 1905 described large forms in the blood of the first dog which they infected in Cambridge by ticks from South Africa. These forms were found on the fourth, fifth, and tenth days, and occurred in the peripheral blood and in that from a kidney. They were sausage-shaped, with rounded or tapering extremities. In some the chromatin was almost entirely concentrated in the middle, while in others it appeared to be of loose texture. Kinoshita has seen similar parasites in blood from the heart, the pancreas, and the lungs after death. The significance of these parasites is not yet understood.

Free parasites with flagella-like processes have been seen by Pound, Bowhill, Le Doux, Nuttall and Graham-Smith, Kinoshita, Fülleborn, and Breinl and Hindle, the last-mentioned observers describing the development of large biflagellate forms from the normal intracellular parasite.

The significance of these forms is not understood, Breinl and Hindle considering that they are such very transient stages in the life-history that they may easily be overlooked.

The development as given by Breinl and Hindle is associated with a binucleated form.

Cultivation.—Kleine, Nuttall, and Graham-Smith have attempted to cultivate *Babesia canis* in defibrinated blood. Kleine has observed elongated forms with radiating processes, similar to those found by Koch in ticks.

Nuttall and Graham-Smith have observed the same forms, but consider them to be intracellular, the hæmoglobin having nearly disappeared from the red cells.

Inoculation.—It was first shown by Dr. Corrington Purvis in 1900 that the disease could be spread from dog to dog by blood inoculation.

Infection from Tick-Bites.—Piana and Galli Valerio, when they discovered the parasite in 1895 in Italy, suspected that it was transmitted by the tick *Ixodes reduvius* L., but the first actual demonstration that this really took place was by Loundsbury in 1901, by the bites of the tick *Hæmophysalis leachi* Audouin, in South Africa.

Dermacentor reticulatus Fabr is suspected as the spreader of the disease in France.

This subject has been carefully investigated by Loundsbury, who finds that the parent tick, having gorged with blood, falls to the ground and lays her eggs, which develop into six-legged larvæ.

These larvæ do not infect the dog, which they attack as soon as possible, and on whom they remain two days sucking blood. After dropping off, they in due time shed their larval skin, and become eight-legged nymphs, which again bite the dog, but do not infect it.

The nymph, after dropping off, undergoes metamorphosis, and sheds its nymphal skin and becomes the sexually mature tick, which is the only form that spreads the infection, a fact confirmed by Nuttall.

Christophers has traced out the development in *Eurhipicephalus sanguineus* Latreille, thus finally confirming the idea of the transmission through the tick.

Development in the Tick.—When an adult tick or a nymph bites a dog and takes in blood containing the oval parasites already described, these parasites develop in the gut into round or oval bodies, 4 to 5 μ in diameter, the chromatin remaining undisturbed.

The cytoplasm now partially divides into a portion with and a portion without chromatin, the latter turning round to form a tail to the former, thus constituting a club-shaped body, which gradually becomes an oökinete.

In the adult these wander into the ova, while in the nymph they simply pass into the embryonic tissue.

In either case they become rounded, and form the zygote, which breaks

up into sporoblasts, and these, again, into sporozoites, which infect the salivary glands of the nymph and the adult of the second generation. This development explains Lounsbury's experiments.

Pathogenicity.—The pathological effects are divided by Nocard and Leclainche into two types—the acute, always fatal, and the subacute, ending in recovery.

Acute Form.—In the severe attack the dog quickly becomes ill with high fever (40° C.), accompanied with great weakness. After the attack of fever comes a stage of subnormal temperatures. The mucous membrane becomes pallid, bluish, or icteric. Respiration is laboured, and the movements of the animal are shaky. Vomiting is frequent. The spleen is enlarged, the urine albuminous, and in 3.5 per cent. of cases there is hæmoglobinuria. The blood is pale and watery, and the serum stained with hæmoglobin or bile pigments; the red corpuscles are reduced (in one dog, according to Wright, from 5,800,000 to 1,000,000) and altered, some becoming larger, others smaller, than normal, and often nucleated. The hæmoglobin is diminished, the smallest amount observed being 17 per cent. Usually the leucocytes are increased up to even 60,000, but in some cases they are reduced. Polymorphonuclear and mononuclear leucocytes share the general increase. Phagocytosis is not energetic, being rarely met with. The animal dies in from three to six days.

Subacute Form.—This is characterized by progressive anæmia and feebleness, with sometimes a little hæmoglobinuria or a little icterus. Fever may at first be high, but generally falls to normal. The anæmia is very pronounced, and is accompanied with paralysis, etc.

The attack lasts six weeks, and the convalescence takes three months.

Post-Mortem Appearances.—The mucous membranes are pale, and there is icteric staining of the tissues. Congestion and enlargement of the spleen, more rarely of the liver, œdema of the lungs, congestion of the kidneys, and inflammation of the stomach and intestines may be noted, but sometimes no macroscopical lesions are to be seen.

Histological.—The capillaries of the alveoli are dilated, and their walls show some proliferation of the cells, and there may be leucocytes and red corpuscles in the lumen of the air cell.

In the heart the capillaries are dilated, and there may be slight hæmorrhages. There is no change in the skeletal muscles. The liver has the central vein and the interlobular capillaries much dilated, as are the intralobular vessels. The fibrous tissue is normal, but the liver cells are distorted, and in many cases destroyed. The spleen contains a large quantity of blood in its pulp. The kidneys only show dilatation of the bloodvessels, especially those of the glomeruli. The suprarenal capsules have all the capillaries (cortex and medulla) dilated, as has the pancreas. In the brain and spinal cord there is only slight dilatation of the capillaries, and slight excess of cerebro-spinal fluid. In the small intestine the vessels of the villi are congested and crowded with infected corpuscles, as are those of the mesentery and omentum. The lymphatic glands are normal, except dilatation of their smaller vessels. The general histological condition is engorgement of the organs by dilatation of the capillaries.

Treatment.—Quinine, benzoate of soda, calomel, etc., have all been advised. Nuttall and Hadwen have introduced Trypanbleu treatment with success.

***Babesia gibsoni* Patton 1910.**

This *Babesia* has been found in dogs and in the jackal (*Canis aureus*) in India by Patton.

Morphology.—In films from the peripheral blood it is seen as small rings $0.1\ \mu$ in diameter, with one or two chromatin masses, of which the second is much smaller than the first, to which it is often joined by a pink thread. Oval parasites, with a long amœboid process, are also seen.

Division.—Division is by binary fission, giving rise to a number of forms enclosed in one leucocyte.

Pathogenicity.—It causes one variety of canine babesiasis.

Babesia bigemina Smith and Kilborne 1893.

Synonyms.—*Pyrosoma bigeminum* Smith and Kilborne 1893; *Apiosoma bigeminum* Wandollek; *Piroplasma bigeminum* Patton; *Babesia bovis* Chauvelot; *Ixodiplasma specificum bovis* Schmidt.

Babesia bigemina is the cause of Texas fever in oxen, and appears as pyriform, round, or amœboid cells, and also as flagellate forms. It can be cultivated on artificial media.

Koch has traced the development in the tick, in whose gut the parasites leave the red cell and become long and club-shaped, at the broad end of which is found a round chromatin mass. From the club pseudopodia project.

This club then becomes spherical, and immense numbers of amœba-like forms appear, which are said to grow into clubs.

Pathogenesis.—The disease may exist in two forms, a grave and a benign.

The usual symptoms of high fever, hæmoglobinuria, icterus, anæmia, paralysis, constipation, and death in a week or less, are exhibited in the grave form, in which the mortality is 60 to 80 per cent.

In the benign form there is anæmia without hæmoglobinuria as a rule, and the duration is about fourteen days.

The disease can be spread by inoculation or naturally by the bites of infected ticks—*Margaropus australis* Fuller in South America, Cuba, Porto Rico, Australia, and the Philippines, and by *M. decoloratus* Koch in South Africa.

Post Mortem.—The usual post-mortem signs are visible.

Treatment.—There is no specific treatment. Krægerud advises intravenous injections of 1 in 100 of protargol or formol, and afterwards a beverage of 10 grammes of lysol and carbolic acid in 500 grammes of distilled water.

Lignières recommends chloride of sodium and purgatives. Quinine has also been advised. Nuttall and Hadwen's treatment should be tried.

Babesia bovis Babès 1888.

Synonyms.—*Piroplasma annulatum* Dschunkowsky and Luhs 1888, *Piroplasma bigeminum* Babès, *Hæmatococcus bovis* Babès.

Babesia bovis is the cause of red water or hæmoglobinuric fever in European cattle and in red deer (*Cervus elaphus* L.), and is spread by the tick *Ixodes reduvius* L. and *Margaropus annulatus* Say.

The disease produced may be acute or chronic. In the acute form about 90 per cent. of the red cells are infected by bacillary or ring-like parasites, which cause high fever, quick pulse and respirations, seldom hæmoglobinuria, with convulsions and death in one or two weeks; or a chronic form, with minute coccus-like parasites in 10 to 40 per cent. of the red cells, producing weakness, jaundice, and anæmia. The post-mortem shows hæmorrhages into many organs.

Babesia ovis Babès 1880.

Synonyms.—*Hæmatococcus ovis* Babès, *Piroplasma ovis* Laveran, *Amæbo-sporidium polyphagum* Bonome.

Babesia ovis is found in sheep in Europe, Africa, and the West Indies, as large intracorporal and extracorporal forms, and causes anæmia, hæmoglobinuria, hæmaturia, and bile in the urine, and also blood in the motions. The mortality is 50 per cent.

The post-mortem shows œdema of the tissues, enlargement of the spleen, inflammation of the liver, kidney, and bowels, in the last of which there may be ulcers.

The *Babesia* is spread by the daughter adult tick developed from the *Eurhipicephalus bursa*, which sucked the infected blood. It is inoculable into other sheep.

Babesia pitheci P. H. Ross 1905.

Synonym.—*Piroplasma pitheci* P. H. Ross 1905.

This organism caused babesiasis in a species of *Cercopithecus* from Kikuga, in Uganda.

The parasite is a non-pigmented, pear-shaped, oval, or round endocorpuscular body, being $1.5\ \mu$ in diameter when round, and 3 by $2\ \mu$ to 2.5 by $1.5\ \mu$ in the pyriform shapes. It may be single, double, or in multiples of two, four, eight, or sixteen.

Nuttall and Graham-Smith have investigated the parasite carefully, and conclude that it is a true *Babesia*, and multiplies in the same manner as *B. canis*; and they figure one body in a corpuscle very like the peculiar free forms noted in *B. canis*.

Ross tried inoculation into dogs twice, but though one of the dogs showed a temporary rise of temperature, the experiment failed. No ticks were found on the monkeys, or in the box in which they lived. The disease causes fever, and killed four out of twelve monkeys.

***Babesia muris* Fantham 1906.**

B. muris causes a chronic disease in mice, in which it exists as pyriform intracorpuscular parasites, singly and in pairs (as many as four and six have been seen). The secondary mass of chromatin has not been observed, and no typical dividing forms have yet been seen.

***Babesia cervi* França and Borges 1907.**

This *Babesia* is found as bacillary and cross forms in the blood of *Cervus dama* L. Its development is not known.

***Babesia minense* Yakimoff 1909.**

Found in Russia in hedgehogs, and spread by *Dermatocentor reticulatus* (?).

***Babesia aristotelis* Denier 1907.**

This parasite is found in *Cervus aristotelis* in Annam.

***Theileria* Bellencourt França and Borges 1907.**

Bacilliform or rod-shaped forms arranged at times in the form of a cross.

Type Species.—*Theileria parva* Theiler 1903.

***Theileria parva* Theiler 1903.**

Synonyms.—*Piroplasma theileri*, *Babesia parva* Theiler 1903.

This is the cause of East Coast fever in cattle in Rhodesia, and is also found in India and Japan.

Parasite.—The parasite appears in the blood as minute bacillary forms or as small rings, which later become larger, and give the typical pyriform appearance, being frequently arranged in the form of a cross. Very large forms, consisting of protoplasmic masses containing numerous chromatin particles, may be found in the endothelial cells of the spleen and lymphatic glands.

Schizogony.—According to Gonder, the large multinucleated plasmodial masses divide into minute merozoites, and lead to the breaking up of the enclosing lymphocyte. The merozoites penetrate into another lymphocyte in the spleen or lymphatic glands, in which they grow and become the multinucleated masses, and so complete the process of schizogony.

Sporogony.—After a time merozoites are produced with a different nuclear structure, these multiply and produce the gametocytes, which, penetrating into the red blood cells, appear in the peripheral circulation. The microgametocytes are the bacillary forms, and the rounded or pear-shaped forms are the macrogametocytes. In *Eurhipicephalus* these come out of the corpuscles, and the male forms creep about like little amoebæ, while the nucleus undergoes reduction, forming the microgamete. In a similar manner the macrogamete is formed. Copulation takes place, and a zygote in the form of an active oökinete is formed, which enters the salivary glands and breaks up into sporozoites.

It is spread by *Eurhipicephalus appendiculatus* Neumann, by the nymphs and the adults.

Cultivation.—Miyajima states that he has cultivated the parasite in broth, producing trypanosome-like bodies, but this has not been confirmed.

Inoculation.—It cannot be inoculated successfully.

Incubation.—Fourteen days.

Symptoms.—The symptoms produced are very similar to those caused by *B. bigemina*, but there is very little anæmia and no hæmoglobinuria.

Mortality.—The mortality is about 90 per cent.

Post Mortem.—The autopsy shows œdema of the lungs, inflammation of the lymphatic glands, and infarcts in the lungs, liver, and kidneys.

Theileria mutans Theiler 1907.

Synonym.—*Piroplasma mutans* Theiler 1907.

This *Babesia* is found along with *B. bigemina*, in cattle in the Transvaal, and produces forms like *Theileria parva*, but distinguished by being inoculable. It is not known how it is spread.

Theileria cellii Castellani and Chalmers 1910.

This parasite is found in *Macacus pileatus* in Ceylon, in bacillary and pear shaped forms, lying side by side in the same erythrocyte. The development has not been traced.

Theileria buffeli Neveu-Lemaire 1912.

This parasite was discovered by Shein in 1908 in the buffalo in Nha-Trang in Indo-China, and is seen in two forms—an ovoidal, which is most frequently met with, and a bacillary. Its mode of transmission is unknown.

Nicollia Nuttall.

Oval or pear-shaped parasites, with an oval nucleus with two karyosomes, one near the centre and another close to the surface of the body, with quadruple division.

Nicollia quadrigemina Nicolle 1907.

This parasite is found in *Ctenodactylus gondii* in North Africa, and Nuttall and Graham-Smith point out that its method of division and its chromatin are so peculiar that its position is doubtful.

Nuttallia França 1910.

Oval or pear-shaped parasites with multiplication in the form of a cross.

Nuttallia herpetedis França 1908.

N. herpetedis is found in considerable numbers in *Herpestes ichneumon* L., the mongoose, as small spheres, with the chromatin arranged as a cross, or as pyriform shapes, or in fours arranged in cross form.

Nuttallia equi Laveran 1899.

Synonym.—*Piroplasma equi* Laveran 1899.

Nuttallia equi is the parasite of babesiasis in horses, mules, donkeys, and zebras in Africa, Germany, Italy, and Venezuela.

The disease appears to have been first differentiated by Wiltshire, in 1883, as anthrax fever, which name was changed to biliary fever by Hutchison. The parasite was first seen by Guglielmi, in Italy, in 1899.

It differs from *B. canis* in existing in large and small spherical forms, in large and small pyriform shapes, in large and small rod-like bodies, in rosettes of four, and sometimes as free flagellate forms. Koch believes that this list includes two different types of parasite—one of parasites arranged in groups of four, and the other like *B. canis*.

It is very difficult to inoculate, and is believed to be spread by the blue tick (*Eurhipicephalus decoloratus*).

The incubation period is not known. The disease begins with high fever, but becomes subnormal before death. The appetite varies. The animal is very weak, and in the later stages becomes paralytic and comatose. Anæmia and jaundice are noted. The pulse varies, being often weak and irregular. The respirations are accelerated. Bowels often constipated; urine is highly coloured, and hæmoglobinuria may occur. The disease may be acute or chronic.

In acute cases death may take place in from two to five days, but the mortality is not high. Secondary and terminal infections may take place.

The post-mortem reveals emaciation and icteric staining, and anæmia of the tissues, enormous enlargement of the spleen, and thin, watery blood. The liver is yellow and congested; the kidneys are enlarged and anæmic; the lymphatic glands are hæmorrhagic, as may be the mucosa of the intestines. The heart is sometimes enlarged. The lungs are usually normal.

Smithia França 1910.

Pear-shaped forms, not in pairs, occupying the whole diameter of the corpuscles. Forms crosses.

Smithia microti 1910.

Found in *Microtus arvalis*.

Anaplasma Theiler 1910.

Coccus-like parasites, round or oval in form, apparently consisting wholly of chromatin, and devoid of cytoplasm. Flagellate forms said to exist.

Type Species.—*Anaplasma marginale*.

Anaplasma marginale Theiler 1910.

Coccus-like parasites situated near the margin of the corpuscles.

Morphology.—Round or oval parasites consisting only of chromatin substance, sometimes situated in a paler zone of the corpuscle. Multiply rapidly, and invade 40 to 50 per cent. of the corpuscles.

Life-History.—It is spread by the ticks *Eurhipicephalus decoloratus* and *E. simus*, and possibly passes through the egg.

Pathogenicity.—It causes a disease like red water, but different therefrom in that animals immune against red water are susceptible to it. Clinically, it causes a severe type of illness, with fever, anæmia, and diarrhœa, with yellow fæces and urine. The blood shows anisocytosis, poikilocytosis, polychromasia, and basophilia. The post-mortem appearances are anæmia with jaundice, enlarged and yellow liver, inspissated bile, and enlarged spleen.

Anaplasma marginale var. centrale Theiler 1912.

Like *A. marginale*, but situate towards the centre of the cell. Type of illness milder than the above form.

Anaplasma canis Basile 1912.

Cocci-like forms and crescent-shaped bodies free and enclosed in corpuscles found in peripheral blood, liver, spleen, and lungs of dogs around Messina. Large form 4.9 by 2.3 μ observed, provided with a flagellum measuring 5 μ .

Pathogenicity.—Causes canine anaplasmosis.

Achromaticus Dionisi 1898.

Achromaticus vesperuginis Dionisi 1898.

This parasite was found by Dionisi in the noctule in 1898. Sambon classifies it as a *Babesia*, but this is doubted by Nuttall and Graham-Smith, as well as by Dionisi, though they report pyriform endocellular parasites from blood films

from bats of the genus *Vesperugo*, and Nuttall and Graham-Smith report four pyriform parasites in a corpuscle. Gonder, however, believes that it is in some intermediate position between the Plasmodiæ and the *Babesiæ*, and Nuttall and Graham-Smith consider that further investigations are necessary before it can be classified. We agree with Gonder, and consider the parasite to be neither a *Babesia* nor a plasmodium, and therefore return to Dionisi's original idea of a separate genus. Recently it has been studied by Yakimoff, Stolnikoff, and Kohl-Yakimoff, who believe that it is a true *Babesia*.

Paraplasma Seidelin 1911.

Paraplasma flavigenum Seidelin 1911.

Under this term Seidelin describes bodies found by himself in cases of yellow fever.

History.—Many bacilli, micrococci, and fungi have been from time to time brought forward as the cause of yellow fever—as, for example, *Cryptococcus xanthogenes* by Freire in 1885, and *Bacillus icteroides* by Sanarelli in 1897. The latter is still believed by some authorities to be a secondary infection, and to produce some of the complications of the fever. Later, a number of protozoal forms have been brought forward by Lacerda in 1893, Klebs in 1898, Porthier, Hume, Watson, and Couret in 1905, Schüller and Thayer in 1906, Stimson in 1907, and, lastly, by Seidelin from 1909 to 1912. With regard to the last three, Thayer's organism, *Amœba febris flava* may or may not be comparable to some of Seidelin's forms, while Stimson's was a Spirochæte. The last may be described in some detail.

Morphology.—*Paraplasma flavigenum* appears in the early days of the fever as extremely minute chromatin granules, with or without a faint trace of cytoplasm, or as rarer larger forms with distinct cytoplasm. In the later days of the disease and in post-mortems larger forms are seen. All these bodies are considered to be schizonts, and bodies believed to be merozoites are described from the kidney. In the second stage of the disease small round forms, microgametes, and much larger forms, macrogametes, are described. Inoculation into guinea-pigs has not produced any satisfactory results, nor have *Stegomyia fasciata* experiments been more successful, and so far complement deviation has failed.

Remarks.—V. Schilling-Torgau and Agramonte have criticized these findings, but Seidelin has replied, and has also pointed out that there is a difference between *P. flavigenum* and the bodies found by Cartaya in glanders, and by Guiteras in icterus gravis. At present the specificity of the bodies described by Seidelin cannot be said to be proved.

Paraplasma subflavigenum Seidelin 1912.

This parasite resembles *P. flavigenum*, and was found in a case of unclassified fever in Yucatan.

Babesia hominis (Doubtful) Manson 1903.

Wilson and Chowning in 1902 described ovoid intracorporeal bodies with amœboid movements in cases of spotted fever of the Rocky Mountains. Some parasites are distinctly pyriform, and may be in pairs, which are united together by a fine thread. Wilson and Chowning further came to the conclusion that the disease was spread by a tick, *Dermacentor reticulatus*. In these findings they were supported by Westbrook and Anderson. On the other hand, Ashburn and Stiles denied parasite and tick alike.

However, Wilson and Chowning have been very considerably supported recently by Ricketts and King, who have been able to transmit the disease to monkeys and guinea-pigs by means of the adult of a tick which is now known as *D. andersoni* Stiles 1905, and McCalla and Brereton have transmitted the disease twice from man to man by the tick.

Ticks are rarely infected in Nature, and hence the disease is rare in man. The infection is in the gut and salivary glands and ovary. It is transmitted to young ticks.

Immunity can be acquired by guinea-pigs, and a serum made which will protect other guinea-pigs. The young of immune guinea-pigs are also immune. It is thought that a preventive vaccine is likely to be prepared.

The present position is that it is proved that Rocky Mountain fever is spread by *D. andersoni* Stiles 1905, but as to the parasite there is a doubt with regard to even its existence in the form described above; while Ricketts has recently described peculiar bacillus-like bodies.

Hæmoglobinuric Fever.

Sambon has brought forward a theory that this disease (Blackwater fever) may be due to a minute *Babesia*. More will be said about this theory under the heading of the disease.

FAMILY 5. PLASMODIDÆ LÜHE 1906.

Synonyms.—*Gymnosporidia* Labbé 1894, *Acytosporidia* Wasielewski 1896, *Hæmamæbidæ* Ross 1899, *Acystosporæa* Minchin 1903.

Definition.—Encystidæ, without a well-developed flagellum in any stage of the life-history. The trophozoite grows into the schizont, containing hæmozoin, which breaks up into a number of merozoites, which are usually said never to be flagellate.

The oökinete encysts and forms a typical oöcyst, which breaks up eventually into sporozoites. The genera of the Plasmodidæ are: *Plasmodium* Marchiafava and Celli 1885, *Laverania* Grassi and Feletti 1889, *Hæmocystidium* Castellani and Willey 1904.

Plasmodium Marchiafava and Celli 1885.

Synonyms.—*Oscillaria* Laveran 1881, *Hæmatomonas* Osler 1887, *Hæmatophyllum* Metchnikoff 1887, *Hæmamæba* Grassi and Feletti 1889, *Laverania* Grassi and Feletti 1889, *Cytamæba* Danilewski 1890, *Proteosoma* Labbé 1894, *Hæmosporidium* Lewkowicz 1897, *Cytoporon* Wasielewski 1901.

Definition.—Plasmodidæ, in which the gametocytes resemble more or less the schizonts by being round in shape.

Nomenclature.—Some remarks are perhaps necessary on the nomenclature. Laveran first used the term *Oscillaria* because he saw the flagellate form, which at that time was thought to be a *Polymitus* form because of its flagella. Later Laveran repudiated this term, which, indeed, could not be used, because it had already been applied to a plant. He then suggested the term 'hæmatozoön,' but this is objectionable, because the hæmatozoa are a group of parasites, and not a single genus. Metchnikoff suggested the term *Hæmatophyllum malariae*, which is equally impossible; therefore the earliest distinctive term is 'plasmodium,' which was used by Marchiafava and Celli in 1885.

It is not a good term, because a plasmodium is generally considered to be a mass of protoplasm with several nuclei representing, not one single animal, but several.

General Account.—The malarial parasites may be taken as the typical examples of the Plasmodidæ.

The malarial parasite exists in nature outside the human body in certain species of different genera of the family Anophelinæ,

a type of mosquito which is somewhat easily identified by its habit of projecting at almost right angles from the surface on which it stands. In the salivary glands of infected insects the malarial parasites are found as fine fusiform bodies, about 10 to 20 μ in length, and 1 to 2 μ in breadth, lying in the cells or in the duct. These fusiform bodies are called sporozoites, and consist of cytoplasm containing a central nucleus composed of chromatin.

The ends of the parasite are pointed, one being sharper than the other. They are capable of movement forwards, and of flexion into loops or curves. It may be that the sporozoites represent male, female, and indifferent parasites, or they may not; the question is still undecided.

When inoculated into man by a mosquito, they penetrate into the red blood cells, and develop into small endo-corpuseular parasites called the trophozoites, which at first are composed of cytoplasm and a nucleus.

This young trophozoite grows, throwing out pseudopodia for the purposes of nutrition, and presently a vacuole appears, converting the small parasite into a ring form, which, according to Schaudinn, is of benefit in enabling it to absorb nutriment quickly.

The vacuole does not keep pace with the growth of the parasite, and finally in the old form disappears. Early in the ring forms there appear granules of a black pigment, which used to be called melanin, but which has by no means the chemical characteristics of true melanin, as will be described under Malaria. This pigment has been named by Sambon 'hæmozoin'—a name which appears to us to be peculiarly suitable, and will therefore be used in this work. It is really of an excrementitious nature. The fully-grown trophozoite now ceases to be amœboid, and, becoming rounded off and full of pigment granules, is called the schizont, which has a subcentral nucleus. This nucleus now divides, so that parasites may be seen with two, three, four, five, six, up to twenty-four nuclei. The cytoplasm around these nuclei segments into small bodies called merozoites, each with a nucleus, but an unsegmented portion containing the hæmozoin, and called the residual mass, or *nucleus de reliquat*, is always left unsegmented (Fig. 44).

The blood corpuscle now breaks up, and the merozoites, residual protoplasm, and pigment are liberated into the blood stream, where the effete matter and some merozoites are taken up by the leucocytes and destroyed.

The merozoite usually tries to enter a red blood cell and to start again as a trophozoite, thus completing a cycle in the blood of the human being who is acting as host. This cycle is called the *cycle of Golgi*, or *schizogony*. Sometimes more than one merozoite will enter a cell, thus giving rise to multiple infection. In such a case they are generally of the same age, but this is not invariable. In the red cell, under these conditions of multiple infection, some observers have thought that the young trophozoites might conjugate; but this, together with the suggestion of further division

of the merozoite, we believe to be incorrect, though it must be admitted that forms with a double nucleus can be seen. When such a binucleate form is seen nowadays, it makes the observer think seriously of a possible flagellate origin, and inclines him to support Sambon and Hartmann's classification, but never, as far as we know, has anyone seen a flagellate merozoite in human malaria.

It will be seen that in going through the process of schizogony one sporozoite becomes several merozoites, and that each of these may again become several merozoites, so that the infection grows unless kept in check by phagocytosis, and perhaps chemical action or quinine treatment.

Each parasite means a red cell destroyed and so much toxin liberated into the blood stream. Hence in a certain number of days (eight to twelve, as a rule) the parasites will have increased to such a degree that their collective toxins, acting upon the organs of the body, upset the metabolism and produce an attack of fever. This period of eight to twelve days is the incubation period of the disease.

It is possible that all the sporozoites develop into schizonts, and there is at present no evidence that they develop into male or female forms directly. If they do not do this, then the merozoites must differentiate sexually; for in about a week male and female forms can be seen in the blood stream, and, moreover, very young stages can be observed.

The earliest form of a sexual parasite is like an ordinary merozoite, but it grows very slowly, and it never possesses a vacuole, and as it grows its protoplasm becomes heavily pigmented and granulated in the female, and lighter and clear in the male. The result is to produce a female type of parasite called the macrogametocyte, or a male type of parasite, the microgametocyte. So that there are three types of parasite—the indifferent or schizont, the female, and the male.

The macrogametocyte is characterized by possessing a small, more or less rounded nucleus eccentrically placed and poor in chromatin, and a cytoplasm full of granules and pigment.

The microgametocyte is characterized by having a large nucleus, extending like a band across the cytoplasm, and much chromatin, a clear protoplasm, and less pigment.

The macrogametocyte and microgametocyte are the means of propagating the parasite in the mosquito, and if they fail to reach the gut of this insect the microgametocytes die off.

The macrogametocytes, on the other hand, are extremely persistent, and can wait in the body for a long time until some chill or accident lowers its resistance, when they become active and develop merozoites by parthenogenesis, thus accounting for the relapses and the recurrences of malaria, even months and years after having left a tropical country. Hence in malaria there is a latent phase which is capable of lasting an unknown time—at least

one to three years, perhaps longer ; but upon this subject more will be said later, and, indeed, more information is urgently needed.

In developing parthenogenetically, the nucleus of the macro-gametocyte divides into two portions, one rich and the other poor in chromatin. The pigment granules gather round the pale nucleus, and with it the surrounding cytoplasm and hæmozoin form a sort of *nucleus de reliquat*. The rest of the protoplasm, rendered clearer by loss of its hæmozoin, contains the nucleus rich in chromatin, which now divides like the nucleus of a schizont, and forms merozoites, which, escaping from the red cell, infect red corpuscles, and start the cycle of schizogony anew (*vide* Fig. 48).

Etheogenesis is unknown in the malarial parasite.

If a female mosquito (the male does not suck blood) belonging to certain of the genera of the Anophelinæ sucks the blood of a person in whom both macro- and micro-gametocytes are to be found, a new cycle is started in that mosquito. This cycle is sporogony, which is characterized by being a sexual process. Changes now appear in the macro- and micro-gametocyte, which are thought by Schaudinn to be brought about by the alteration in temperature.

The macrogametocyte, escaping from its red cell, undergoes reduction by division of its nucleus once or twice, forming polar bodies. The reduced gametocyte is now called the macrogamete.

Similarly the microgametocyte undergoes changes, for chromidial masses separate from its nucleus and travel to the periphery of the parasite, from which thin threads of protoplasm now project (Figs. 45, 46, and 47).

These threads, which vary from four to six in number, lash about vigorously, moving the whole parasite, which therefore whirls about, and it and its processes, called flagella, were looked upon as a polymitus ; hence this stage is often called the polymitus stage.

The threads break off, and are now called microgametes. Each microgamete is composed of a long, tapering thread of protoplasm capable of bending and moving rapidly. Its chromatin is spread along it in dots or bars, and hence the whole structure somewhat resembles a spirochæte, but there is no undulating membrane.

A microgamete now conjugates with a macrogamete, the male and female pronuclei fusing to form a synkaryon, and the resulting zygote is called an oökinete. This zygote elongates, and its anterior extremity, which is more or less clear of hæmozoin, becomes pointed ; the nucleus lies in the middle, and the posterior end contains most of the pigment, which may be largely cast off or may be retained.

It now pierces the epithelium of the mosquito's stomach, below which it comes to rest, and forms a thin cyst-wall, and is called the oöcyst. This now grows rapidly, and its nucleus divides into a large number of daughter nuclei, around each of which the protoplasm gathers, forming the sporoblasts, which are somewhat connected together (Fig. III).

The nucleus of each sporoblast now divides into several small

nuclei. These travel to the periphery, which grows out into a series of small projections, each of which takes a chromatin particle with it. Each of these projections is a sporozoite, so that each sporoblast forms a large number of sporozoites, and leaves a residual mass of pigment and cytoplasm undivided. The cyst, now enormously en-



FIG. III.—DIAGRAM OF THE LIFE-CYCLE OF *PLASMODIUM VIVAX*.

1, Sporozoite entering red cell; 2, trophozoite; 3-4, schizont; 5, merozoites; 6, merozoites entering red cell; 7, young trophozoite; 8a-10a, development of a microgametocyte; 8b-10b, development of a macrogametocyte; 10b-10c, parthenogenesis; 11a-12a, formation of a microgamete; 11b-12b, formation of a macrogamete; 13, zygosis; 14, ookinete; 15, oöcyst; 16, formation of sporoblasts; 17, formation of sporozoites; 18, cyst ruptured and sporozoites escaping; 19a, sporozoites infecting the ovary; 19b, sporozoites infecting the salivary glands; 21, sporozoites escaping from the salivary duct and entering the human skin; 22, this indicates that the further development of the sporozoites infecting the ovary is unknown.

larged, bursts, and the sporozoites escape into the cœlome of the insect, which in this case is a hæmocœle, and therefore they enter the blood, and are carried by it probably all over the insect's body. Certainly they are seen in the thoracic muscles, but finally they find their way to the salivary glands, and so to a new host or according to Schaudinn to the eggs, and so probably to a new generation of mosquitoes.

Sporogony takes about ten to twelve days, during which the mosquito will have sucked blood three or four times.

Abnormal Forms.—In mosquitoes, whether infected by malarial parasites or by *Proteosoma*, peculiar bodies, called 'black spores' by Ross, are sometimes found in the stomach wall, which are now known to be protozoal parasites of the genus *Nosema*, which have invaded the oöcysts, and are therefore hyperparasites.

Cultivation.—*Plasmodium malariae* has been cultivated once, *P. vivax* six times, and *Laverania malariae* twenty-nine times by Bass, alone and with John. They grow anaërobically in blood mixed with dextrose at 41° C., but the blood must have no leucocytes if more than one generation is to be cultivated. So far four generations have been cultivated, and the whole asexual cycle of *P. vivax* and *L. malariae* has been completed *in vitro* in the corpuscles of human blood. Forms suggesting parthenogenesis were seen.

Animal Hosts.—Although species of *Plasmodium* exist in animals, still there is no evidence that the human parasites live in any other animal than man. Fermi and Lumbau in 1912 have tested this with regard to bats, sparrows, owls, quails, and frogs, with negative results.

Classification.—A number of species, increasing gradually, belong to this genus, among which are two of the malarial parasites, *P. vivax* and *P. malariae*.

Plasmodium vivax Grassi and Feletti 1890 (Plate I.).

Synonyms.—*Hæmamæba vivax* Grassi and Feletti 1890, *H. malariae* var. *magna* Laveran 1900, *H. malariae* var. *tertianæ* Laveran 1901, *Plasmodium malariae* var. *tertianæ* Celli and Sanfelice 1891, *P. malariae tertianum* Labbé 1899, *Hæmosporidium tertianum* Lewkowitz 1887.

Plasmodium vivax is the parasite of tertian malarial fever, and derives its specific name from its energetic amœboid movements, which probably take place for purposes of nutrition.

Its schizogony has been well studied by Golgi and Schaudinn, and its sporogony by Grassi, Bignami, and Bastianelli.

The whole process of the schizogony of *P. vivax* can be summarized as follows:—During the first twenty-four hours after the entry of the sporozoite or merozoite into the red cell the little trophozoite, which at the beginning is about one-third the size of the erythrocyte, grows rapidly, absorbing nutriment from the red cell by its pseudopodia and by the large surface of cytoplasm exposed, owing to the size of the vacuole.

Hence, not merely does it increase in size, but it acts deleteriously



FIG. 112. — AN OÖCYST SHOWING ROSS'S 'BLACK SPORES,' NOW KNOWN TO BE PROTOZOA BELONGING TO THE GENUS NOSEMA.

(After Grassi.)

upon the enclosing cell, which loses its hæmoglobin, turns pale and degenerates, as is evident by its becoming swollen owing to the absorption of fluid, and by showing, on staining with any modification of Romanowsky, a dotted appearance due to red granules called Schüffner's dots. These dots can be seen in red cells affected by other plasmodia—*e.g.*, *P. canis* in the dog. In growing, it gives rise to a quantity of hæmozoin, which appears as fine, reddish-brown granules, often seen in active movement due to currents in the cytoplasm of the parasite. In about thirty hours it becomes rounded off as the schizont (Fig. 44), $8.5\ \mu$ in diameter.

From the thirtieth to the forty-eighth hour the fully-grown schizont undergoes sporulation, when it will be noticed that fifteen to twenty merozoites are formed, while the hæmozoin granules are packed together, either into the centre or towards the periphery of the parasite. It will also be noted that the red cell is now considerably swollen and almost colourless.

About the forty-eighth hour the remains of the corpuscle disintegrate, and the merozoites (size $1.5\ \mu$), hæmozoin, etc., escape.

So that *P. vivax* occupies forty-eight hours in the process of schizogony. As curiosities, it may be mentioned that a trophozoite or a schizont may be seen in the same red cell as a gametocyte.

Sporogony.—The development in the mosquito was first worked out in *Anopheles claviger*.

The development of the gametes, and the fertilization of the macrogamete, and the structure of the oökinete, have been carefully described and figured by Schaudinn (*vide* Figs. 45, 46, and 47). In about forty hours after the mosquito has been fed, the oöcyst can be found as a round transparent body with strands of yellowish hæmozoin scattered throughout it, lying in the stomach wall beneath the epithelium, and covered over by the musculo-elastic layer of the gut. Its wall is seen to be well defined—*i.e.*, the oökinete has become encysted. By this time the chromatin will have divided into small masses.

On the third day it will have become from one-third to one-fourth larger, and the cyst-wall will be more distinct, and the imperfect segmentation of the protoplasm around the nuclei can be seen. The hæmozoin is seen gathered into little masses lying between the segments of the cytoplasm, which are the sporoblasts. The first stages of the formation of sporozoites may also be observed.

During the fourth day the size increases about a fourth, and the nuclei and their surrounding protoplasm will have formed some twenty to thirty sporoblasts, whose periphery will be marked by a palisade of forming sporozoites.

Between the fourth and fifth day the cysts ($50\ \mu$ in diameter) full of sporozoites (size $14\ \mu$) will be seen to be projecting into the cœlome.

After the seventh day the oöcyst ruptures, and the sporozoites escape and find their way to the salivary glands, in the cells of which they lie, mainly in those of the mid or poison gland. Thus,

about the tenth to the twelfth day after infection the mosquito is ready to spread the disease by its bite, and the cycle of sporogony is complete. It must be remembered that Schaudinn observed infection of the mosquito's egg, but whether the parasite penetrates into the larva, and from that to the pupa, and thus into a second generation, is not known.

Plasmodium malarie Laveran 1881 (Plate I.).

Synonyms. — *Hæmamoeba malarie* Grassi and Feletti 1890, *H. laverani* var. *quartana* Labbé 1894, *H. malarie* var. *magna* Laveran 1900, *H. malarie* var. *quartana* Laveran 1901, *Plasmodium malarie* var. *quartana* Celli and Sanfelice 1891, *Hæmosporidium quartana* Lewkowicz 1897, *Plasmodium malarie quartanum* Labbé 1899, *P. golgii* Sambon 1902, and *Laverania malarie* Jan-nesco 1905.

Schizogony. — The young trophozoite, which is smaller than *P. vivax*, forms a compact ring, which lies in an unaltered erythrocyte, and shows, as a rule, but little pseudopodial activity. Very soon hæmozoin appears in the form of dark rodlets.

After the first twenty-four hours the parasite is found to be much larger, and the hæmozoin more abundant. The granules of pigment will be noticed to be gathered at the periphery, and to be very dark in colour, and non-motile. The red cell tends, if anything, to become smaller and darker. In about sixty hours the trophozoite will have become the full-grown schizont, which is a large, round, pigmented body surrounded by a rim belonging to the corpuscle. During the next twelve hours its nucleus divides up into six or twelve nuclei, around which the cytoplasm gathers, while the hæmozoin is driven into the centre, and the appearance of a daisy is produced by the central block of hæmozoin and the regular arrangement of the merozoites around it (size $6\ \mu$).

The merozoites (size $1.75\ \mu$) are now set free, and, as a rule, many of them appear to be killed off, and not to be able to affect the red cells. More rarely they go on increasing in number, and recently have been said to cause death in a case (Leishman), but a severe infection is not usual.

The whole schizogony takes place in the peripheral blood, and occupies seventy-two hours.

Sporogony. — Gametocytes are very rarely seen, and only after the disease has lasted a long time, but Vida has recently described all stages of their development as seen in the peripheral blood.

They begin as small forms with a central nucleus but no vacuole, and soon become pigmented, the fully-grown macrogametocyte being a little larger than a normal corpuscle. Its dark cytoplasm is heavily pigmented, especially at the periphery, at which the nucleus is also placed. The corpuscle forms but a small rim around the parasite.

The microgametocyte shows the usual structure already described, but is less pigmented, and has a clearer cytoplasm. The corpuscle

PLATE I.
THE MALARIAL PARASITES.
Coloured by Leishman's Stain.

1a—4a. *PLASMODIUM MALARIÆ.*

- 1a. Young Trophozoite.
- 2a. Older Trophozoite.
- 3a. Schizont.
- 4a. Sporulation.

1b—8b. *PLASMODIUM VIVAX.*

- 1b. Young Trophozoite.
- 2b. Older Trophozoite, showing Amœboid Movement.
- 3b. Schizont with single Chromatin Mass.
- 4b. Schizont with three Chromatin Masses.
- 5b. Sporulation.
- 6b. Young Sporont.
- 7b. Microgametocyte.
- 8b. Macrogametocyte.

1c—4c. *LAVERANIA MALARIÆ.*

- 1c. Two Young Trophozoites.
- 2c. Sporulation.
- 3c. Macrogametocyte.
- 4c. Microgametocyte.

PLATE I.



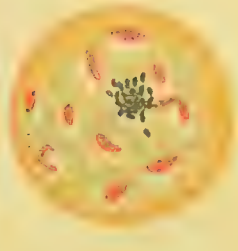
1 a



2 a



3 a



4 a



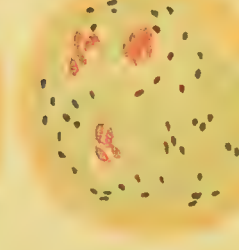
1 b



2 b



3 b



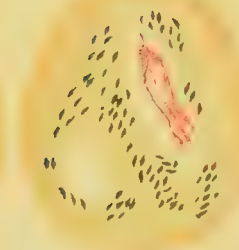
4 b



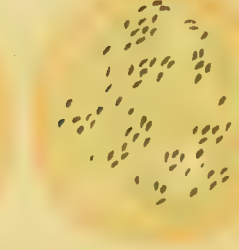
5 b



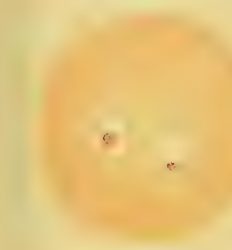
6 b



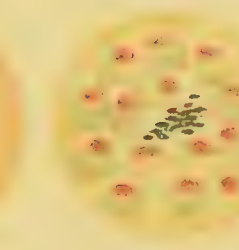
7 b



8 b



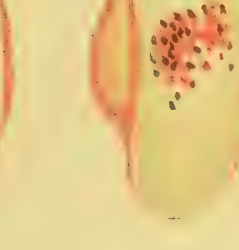
1 c



2 c



3 c



4 c

MALARIAL PARASITES.
(Coloured by Leishman's stain.)

is not enlarged, as in the case of the macrogametocyte, and much more of it is visible around the parasite. The formation of the microgametes has been observed, but the infection of the mosquito is difficult to bring about, though the development in the mosquito has been traced by Bignami and Bastianelli. The oöcyst is characterized by the pigment, which is black, coarse, and gathered into a clump. The cycle of development is the same as in *P. vivax*, but takes about eighteen to twenty-one days to be completed after infection in mosquitoes which were kept at a temperature of about 22° C. This appears to be the degree of heat at which the process takes place best. At the end of that time the completely developed sporozoites can be seen.

Plasmodium danilewskyi Grassi and Feletti 1890.

Synonyms.—*Laverania danilewskyi* Grassi and Feletti 1890, *Hæmamaeba relicta* Grassi and Feletti 1891, *Cytosporon malariae* avium Danilewskyi 1891, *Proteosoma grassii* Labbé 1894, *Plasmodium relictum* Sergent 1907.

This parasite was discovered by Grassi in the blood of birds in Italy, and causes death in partridges in Hungary. It affects sparrows in India, and is the form in which Ross first traced the development of a plasmodium in a mosquito. It occurs in Ceylon, and is common in Africa.

The young trophozoite becomes pigmented, and, displacing the nucleus, grows into the schizont, which forms about nine merozoites.

The macrogametocyte has but little chromatin in its nucleus, which is rounded, while the microgametocyte has an elongated, darkly-staining nucleus.

These develop in *Culex fatigans*, *C. nemorosus*, or some other species, when in about twelve to fifteen hours oökinetes are seen, and in about one to two days well-developed oöcysts are present in the stomach in the form of round, transparent cysts, with hæmozoin scattered through them.

In three to four days the oöcysts have increased in size, and sporoblasts have appeared, and even sporozoites are forming.

In nine to ten days the oöcyst has become fully developed and bursts, and the sporozoites can first be seen in the muscles of the thorax, and then in the salivary glands, in which they lie principally in the central or poison lobe. The black spores already mentioned can be noted in the stomach, and, according to Stephens and Christophers, in either the thoracic muscles or in the salivary glands.

No traces of parasites have been found in the larvæ or second generation of *Culex*.

Plasmodium kochi Laveran 1899.

This plasmodium is found in chimpanzees (*Anthropopithecus troglodytes* Gm.), and in monkeys in Africa and in Ceylon; in the latter it causes illness and death. The spleen and bone-marrow are found pigmented. It is said not to be inoculable.

Plasmodium pitheci Halberstaedter and Prowazek 1907.

Found in the ourang-outang (*Simia satyrus*) and the chimpanzee, in which the trophozoites resemble *P. vivax* and the gametes *P. malariae*. Schüffner's dots can be seen.

Plasmodium inui Halberstaedter and Prowazek 1907.

In *Macacus cynomolgus* L. and *M. nemestrinus* L. It is like *P. pitheci*, but the hæmozoin is in the form of fine yellow granules. Merozoites, twelve to sixteen in number. Schüffner's dots absent.

Plasmodium cynomolgi Mayer 1907.

In *M. cynomolgi* L. Merozoites, eight to thirteen. Schüffner's dots present.

Plasmodium bovis Kolle 1898.

In cattle in South Africa, in which they produce remittent fever and severe anæmia.

Plasmodium canis Castellani and Chalmers 1910.

This parasite, which is very common in pariah dogs in Ceylon, was discovered by us in 1908. It resembles *P. vivax*, entering the red cell as a small round

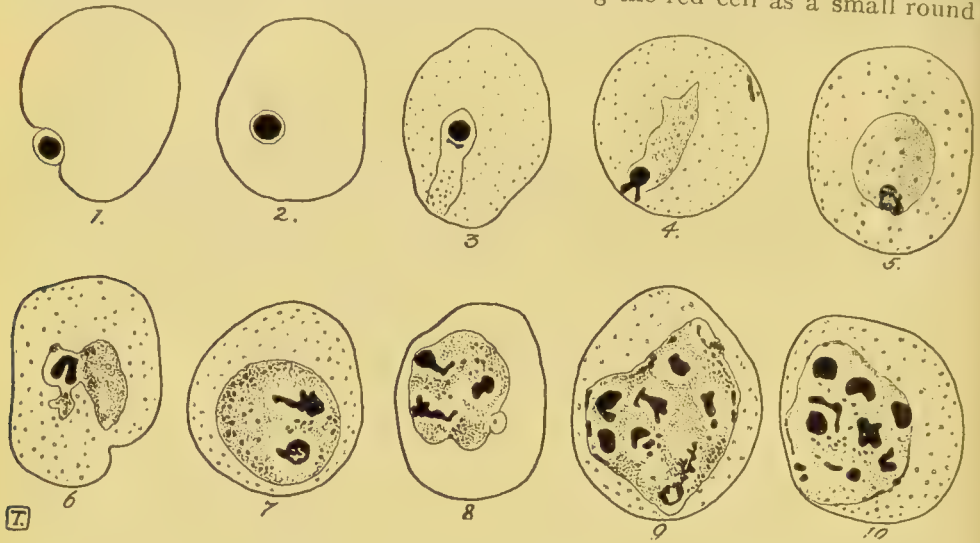


FIG. 113.—*PLASMODIUM CANIS* CASTELLANI AND CHALMERS.

1-2, Merozoite entering the corpuscle; 3, young trophozoite (the red cell shows Schüffner's dots); 4-6, trophozoites, enclosing cells showing Schüffner's dots; 7-10, schizonts showing various stages of nuclear division prior to the formation of the merozoites.

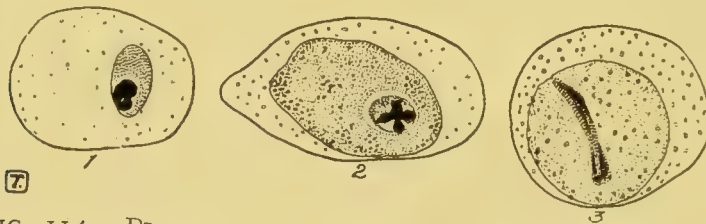


FIG. 114.—*PLASMODIUM CANIS* CASTELLANI AND CHALMERS.

1, Young gametocyte; 2, Macrogametocyte; 3, Microgametocyte.

merozoite, and growing into a pigmented plasmodium, and finally dividing into a number of merozoites. Schüffner's dots are also present. Fig. 113 shows the schizogony of this parasite, and Fig. 114 the gametocytes. The macrogametocyte has a small rounded nucleus and the microgametocyte an elongated narrowish nucleus extending across the parasite.

Plasmodium equi Castellani and Chalmers 1913.

Found by us in a horse in Ceylon. It closely resembles *P. canis*

Plasmodium brasilianum Gonder and Gossler 1908.

Resembles the human quartan parasite, but found in *Brachyurus calvus* in Brazil.

Plasmodium vassali Laveran 1905.

Synonym.—*P. vassali* Sambon 1907.

Found by Vassal in a squirrel—*Sciurus griseimanus*.

Other Forms.

In Mammals.—*P. murinum* Dionisi 1898, in *Myotis myotis*; *P. monosoma* Vassal 1907, in *Vesperugo abramus*.

In Birds.—*P. majoris*, in *Pavus major*; *P. vauhani* Novy and MacNeal 1904, in *Merula migratoria*.

In Lizards.—*P. diploglossi* Aragão and Neiva 1909 in *Diploglossus fasciatus*; *D. B.* and *P. tropiduri* Aragão and Neiva 1909 in *Tropidurus torquatus* Wied. in Brazil.

Hæmocystidium Castellani and Willey 1904.

The characters of this genus resemble those of the genus *Plasmodium*, but the parasites are generally larger, and, according to Dobell, the schizogony is very simple, there being as a rule binary and occasionally quarternary division, which takes place in the general circulation. Woodcock, however, considers the forms which Dobell describes as binary fission to be fusion forms of the parasites. Pigment present.

Hæmocystidium simondi Castellani and Willey 1904.

This parasite found in *Hemidactylus leschenaultii* Gray in Ceylon.

Other species: *H. metschnikowi* Simond in *Chitrao indica* Gray in India; *H. mesneli* Bonet in *Naja* sp. (?) in West Africa; *H. roumei* Bonet in *Cinnyxis belliana* Gray in West Africa; *H. testudinis* Laveran in *Testudo pardalis* in South Africa; *H. najæ* Wenyon in *Naja haje*, and *N. nigricollis* in Khartoum.



FIG. 115.—HÆMOCYSTIDIUM SIMONDI CASTELLANI AND WILLEY.

(After Castellani and Willey.)

Laverania.

Plasmodiæ, in which the gametocyte is dissimilar from the schizont, appearing in the form of a crescent.

Laverania malarie Grassi and Feletti 1890 (Plate I.).

Synonyms.—*Hæmameba malarie* Laveran 1890, *H. præcox* Grassi and Feletti 1890, *H. laverani* Labbé 1894, *H. immaculata* Grassi and Feletti 1891, *Plasmodium malarie* var. *quotidianæ* Celli and Sanfelice 1890, *P. præcox* Doflein 1901, *P. immaculatum* Schaudinn 1902, *P. falciparum* Blanchard 1905, *Hæmomenas præcox* Ross 1899, *Hæmosporidium undecimanæ* Lewkowicz 1892, *H. sedecimanæ* Lewkowicz 1892, *H. vigesimotertianæ* Lewkowicz 1892, *Hæmatozoon falciparum* Welch 1897.

The young trophozoite begins as a very small parasite, which quickly forms a ring, of which the size is only one-sixth to one-seventh of the diameter of the enclosing red cell. This quickly

grows into an oval form, which becomes pigmented, while the enclosing erythrocyte in stained preparations may show the so-called Maurer's dots, the significance of which is not understood.

The fully-grown schizont (size $4.5\ \mu$) is but rarely seen in the peripheral blood, and the segmentation into merozoites (size $0.7\ \mu$) nearly always takes place in the internal organs, when eight to ten or fifteen are formed. While this is in progress there is a great tendency for the red corpuscles to cling together and to the wall of the vessel, and hence to give rise to obstruction of the circulation, which produces the perniciousness of the fevers due to this parasite.

DIFFERENTIAL CHARACTERS OF THE MALARIAL PARASITES.

Character.	<i>P. malariae</i> .	<i>P. vivax</i> .	<i>L. malariae</i> .
Schizogony ..	Completion in seventy-two hours.	Completion in forty-eight hours.	Completion in forty-eight hours or less.
Young trophozoite	Young trophozoite, smaller than <i>P. vivax</i> , larger than <i>L. malariae</i> ; movements rather slow; pseudopodia not marked or long.	Young trophozoite, large; very actively motile; long pseudopodia.	Young trophozoite, small; actively motile.
Hæmozoin ..	Granules coarse, sluggish; peripherally arranged; dark brown.	Granules fine; movement marked.	Granules fine and scanty; often motionless.
Schizont ..	Smaller than red corpuscle.	Larger than red corpuscle.	Much smaller than red corpuscle.
Merozoites ..	Six to twelve, regularly arranged in a rosette.	Fifteen to twenty, regularly arranged.	Eight to fifteen, arranged irregularly.
Gametocytes	Resemble sporonts, but larger.	Resemble sporonts, but larger.	Crescentic in shape.
Erythrocytes	Almost normal.	Pale and swollen.	May be small and dark.

Schizogony takes from thirty-six to forty-eight hours to be completed.

The gametocytes are characterized by being crescent-shaped and large, with the remains of the red cell stretched round them. The hæmoglobin of the cell is often seen lying in juxtaposition to the parasite, while the remaining portion of the corpuscle is almost colourless.

The macrogametocyte is characterized by its long thin shape,

its darker cytoplasm, and its compact chromatin, around which the hæmozoin forms a ring or mass.

The microgametocyte has a shorter and broader shape, more hyaline cytoplasm, with more diffused chromatin and more scattered pigment.

The formation of the macrogametocytes and the microgametocytes has been followed, and the oöcyst and sporozoites are easily seen, especially in mosquitoes on the West Coast of Africa, being clear, round parasites with the black hæmozoin gathered into a clump, with a single nucleus on the second day, and with considerable increase in size on the third to fourth day, when the wall of the cyst can be easily seen.

On the fifth to sixth day the enormous increase in size is noted, and the sporoblasts contain the commencing sporozoites. On the seventh day the cyst is full of sporozoites, which pass on the following days to the salivary glands.

APPENDIX.—SPIROCHÆTACEA Fantham 1908.

Synonyms.—*Proflagellata* Doflein, *Spiroschaudinnidæ* Sambon 1907, *Spiroflagellata* Krzysztalowicz and Siedlecki 1907.

Definition.—Plasmodromata, generally parasitic, in form narrow, wavy, and thread-like, with or without an undulating membrane. The cytoplasm is divided into endoplasm and ectoplasm, and is bounded by a flexible, chitinous periplast. The nucleus consists of a spiral achromatic filament, on which are arranged transverse bars or rodlets of deeply staining chromatin.

Remarks.—The Spirochætacea are closely related to the Binucleata, and especially to the Trypanosomidæ.

The Treponemata are joined to the spirochætes because of their general resemblance, though it must be admitted that no nucleus of the nature of the spirochæte nucleus has yet been described, and the spirals are apparently not due to movement.

The Spirochætacea are potent factors in the production of disease, for *S. recurrentis* is the cause of one type of relapsing fever, *S. carteri* of another, *S. duttoni* of another, and *S. novyi* of yet another, while the Treponemata are the cause of syphilis and yaws.

The Spirochætacea may be divided into two families:—

1. With undulating membrane: Spirochætidæ.
2. Without undulating membrane: Treponemidæ.

SPIROCHÆTIDÆ Ehrenberg 1883.

Definition.—Spirochætacea with an undulating membrane. Body may be ribbon-shaped on transverse section.

Type Species.—*Spirochæta plicatilis* Ehrenberg 1833.

Remarks.—There is a difference of opinion as to whether these organisms are protozoa or bacteria. At first they were universally regarded as bacteria, but in 1904 Schaudinn's paper on the leucocytocoon in the little owl showed that this body, after fertiliza-

tion in the gut of *Culex pipiens* and subsequent asexual division, produced a large number of minute forms which he at the time considered to be spirochætes, and he further concluded that in all probability all spirochætes were stages in the life-history of intracellular parasites. In 1905, however, he came to the conclusion that the spirochæte forms which he had seen develop from *T. ziemannii* were trypanosomes. In fact, there is one great point of difference—the forms which he described possess a distinctly consolidated nucleus, whereas spirochætes do not. After this the view that spirochætes were bacteria was revived, particularly by Novy and Knapp, on the following grounds:—

1. Absence of trophonucleus.
2. Transverse division.
3. Rapid multiplication.
4. Absence of plasmolysis with distilled water.
5. Persistence of form when acted upon by heat.
6. The production of active immunity.
7. The absence of aerotropism—*i.e.*, the tendency to mass round a bubble of air.

Dobell, as a result of his prolonged inquiries, comes to the conclusion that they are Schizophyta (bacteria + Cyanophyceæ), and not protozoa. He also concludes that they belong to the bacteria, and probably constitute a group of the same systematic status as the cocci, the bacilli, and the spirilla.

On the other hand, there is a growing feeling among biologists that spirochætes are really protozoa—*e.g.*, Doflein, Minchin, Sambon, Nuttall, Fantham, and Krzysztalowicz and Siedlecki. Fantham points out that the strongest arguments in favour of their being bacteria are:—

1. Diffuse character of nucleus somewhat like *Bacillus bütschlii*.
 2. The possible occurrence of transverse fission.
 3. The absence of a typical kinetonucleus;
- while the points in favour of their belonging to the protozoa are:
1. The possession of an undulating membrane.
 2. The occurrence of longitudinal division (denied by Schellach).
 3. The non-plasmolysis.
 4. Difficulty to find artificial media on which they can grow.

We consider that they are protozoa, and, further, that they are related to the trypanosomes. Spirochætes are, however, distinctly peculiar, particularly with regard to their diffuse nucleus; but there appears to be almost a series from the diffuse nucleus of the bacteria through the achromatic spiral, with its attached chromosomes of the spirochætes, to the condensed nucleus of the higher protozoa. Schellach derives them phylogenetically from the oscillatory cyanophæes genus *Spirulina*.

Morphology.—Spirochætes vary much in size, from *Spiroschaudinna recurrentis*, which is 8 μ in length, to *Cristispira balbianii*, which may be 150 μ in length and 2 to 3 μ in thickness. The type species *Spirochæta plicatilis* was found in muddy water by Ehren-

berg in 1833, and was said by Schaudinn in 1905 to possess an undulating membrane. Sambon, however, considers that this so-called type-species is quite different from *S. recurrentis*, and should be

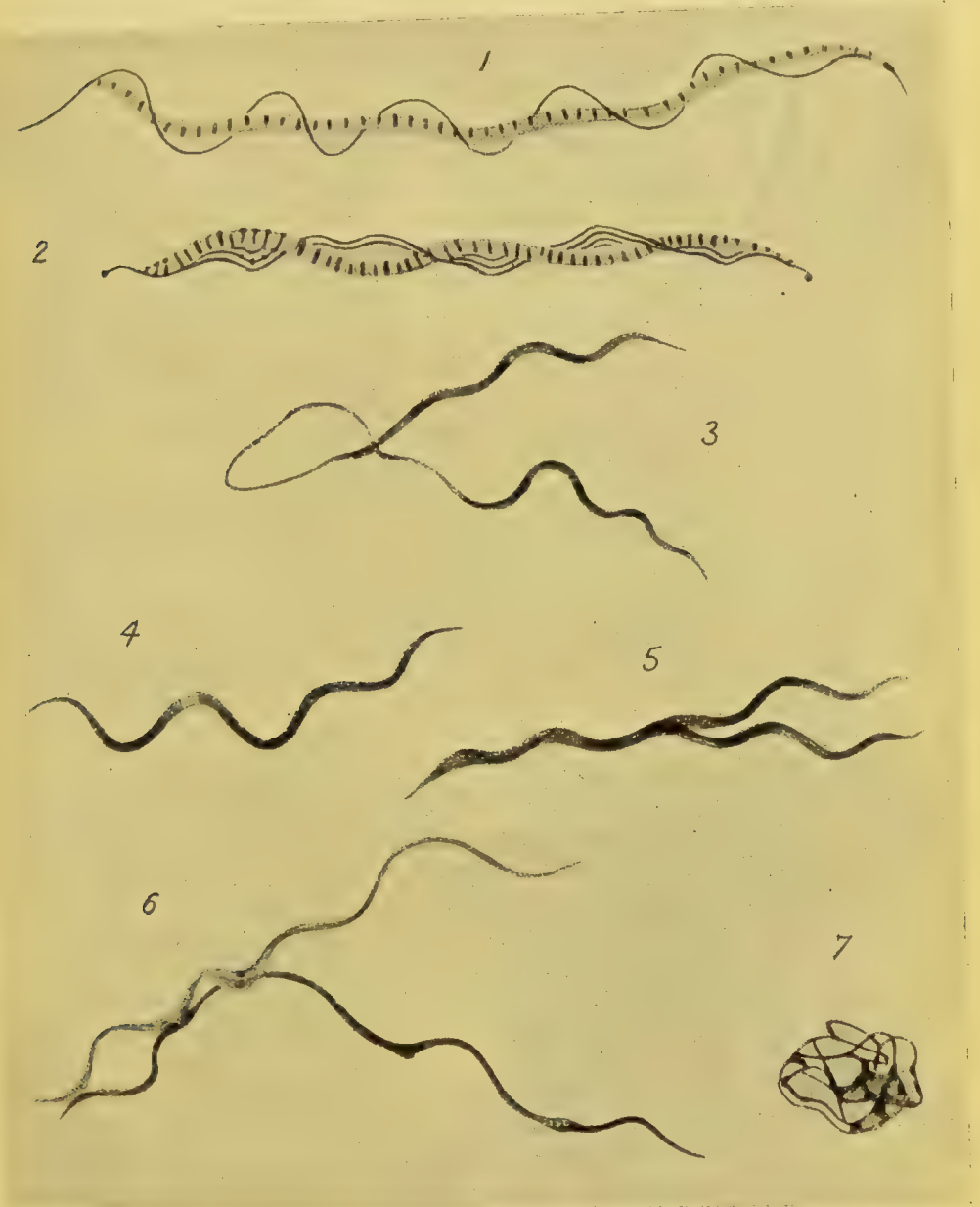


FIG. 116.—SPIROCHÆTES.

1, *Cristispira anodontæ*, showing the undulating membrane and chromatic bars (after Fantham, *Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science*); 2, *C. balbianii*, showing fibrillæ in undulating membrane (after Fantham); 3-7, *Spiroschaudinnia duttoni* (after Breinl, *Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology*); 4, shows the uncoloured transverse band; 5, longitudinal division; 6, possible male and female forms; 7, encystment.

placed in a different group therefrom. The most carefully studied types are *Cristispira balbianii* Certés 1882, found in oysters, and *Cristispira anodontæ* Keysselitz 1906 emended Schellach 1909, both of which have been the subject of research by Fantham, whose results are here followed. These organisms are long, wavy, and thread-like, composed of cytoplasm, which can be differentiated into an ectoplasm, which is generally converted into a thin, flexible, chitinous membrane, the periplast. This is continued laterally into a spirally arranged membrane, the crista, containing longitudinally arranged fibrillæ, and having a thickened border composed of chromatin. The longitudinal fibrillæ are composed of eight to nine principal and numerous secondary fibrillæ, which are contractile, and are called 'the myoneme fibrillæ' (Fig. 116). The membrane, or crista, which does not markedly undulate, helps in locomotion, which is rapid, and takes place by a wave-like flexion of the body, which causes forward movement, and a corkscrew motion, produced by the spiral winding of the membrane enabling the parasite to bore its way through the débris amidst which it may be living. A spirochæte can move backwards or forwards indifferently.

The endoplasm is slightly more granular than the ectoplasm, and contains a diffuse nucleus, which appears to consist of an achromatic filament with bars of chromatin.

In addition to this nucleus there is a dot of chromatin (basal granules) at each end of the periplast in *C. balbianii*, and only at one end in *C. anodontæ*; in the latter a short, stiff process of periplast projects from it, which is considered by some observers to be a flagellum.

Reproduction takes place by both longitudinal and transverse divisions; it has been described by Fantham and Porter in *C. anodontæ* Keysselitz 1906 and *C. balbianii*. The basal granule first divides, and then the membrane, followed by the cytoplasm, as far as one end, which does not divide at once, but later, thus completing the act of asexual reproduction.

Dobell gives a very different description of *C. anodontæ*, which he states has a chambered structure, and divides only by transverse division.

Bosanquet has observed the formation of coccoid bodies in *Cristispira* analogous to those presently to be described in *Spiroschaudinna*.

Classification.—The following genera are recognized :—

Spirochæta Ehrenberg *sensû stricto*.

Cristispira Gross 1910.

Saprospira Gross 1911.

Pseudospira Dobell 1912.

Spiroschaudinna Sambon 1907.

But it is only the last genus which contains the forms of importance in tropical medicine.

Cristispira balbianii Certés 1882.

This spirochæte is found in the crystalline style of oysters. The oysters are apparently affected; at all events, they are poorly developed. It has a

well-defined, undulating membrane, strengthened by myonemes, and also a diffuse nucleus of rodlets of chromatin on an achromatic spiral, as has already been described.

Cristispira anodontæ Keysselitz 1906.

Synonym.—**Spirochæta anodontæ** Keysselitz 1906; emend Schellach 1909.

S. anodontæ was found in the crystalline style of *Anodonta mutabilis* by Keysselitz in 1906, and in that of *A. cygnea* by Fantham in 1908.



FIG. 117.—DIAGRAM OF *S. DUTTONI*, SHOWING CHROMATIN GRANULES, POINTED ENDS, AND SLIGHT MEMBRANE EDGE. (After Fantham.)

It is $40\ \mu$ in length by $0.7\ \mu$ in breadth, with pointed ends and a spirally wound undulating membrane. The nucleus is diffuse, consisting of chromatin rodlets on a more faintly staining spiral.

S. plicatilis Ehrenberg 1833, found in pond-water.

Spiroschaudinnia Sambon 1907.

Spirochaetidae parasitic in the blood and tissues of vertebrates and in some blood-sucking invertebrates.

Remarks.—This genus, as we believed would happen, is now recognized by many authorities, and therefore we adopt it, though we had hesitated to do so in the previous edition.

Type Species.—*Spiroschaudinnia recurrentis* Lebert 1874.

Morphology.—This has been most carefully studied by Fantham in *S. recurrentis*, *S. duttoni*, and *S. marchouxi*, and he finds that they have long, narrow bodies, bent into many spiral coils, enclosed in a firm periplast, with a very tenuous membrane, which is often invisible. The nucleus consists of granules of chromatin distributed along the body.

Life - History.—Multiplication can take place by longitudinal and by transverse division, and also by multiple transverse fission, in which case the protoplasm concentrates around the chromatin masses, giving rise to a number of round or oval granules, pro-

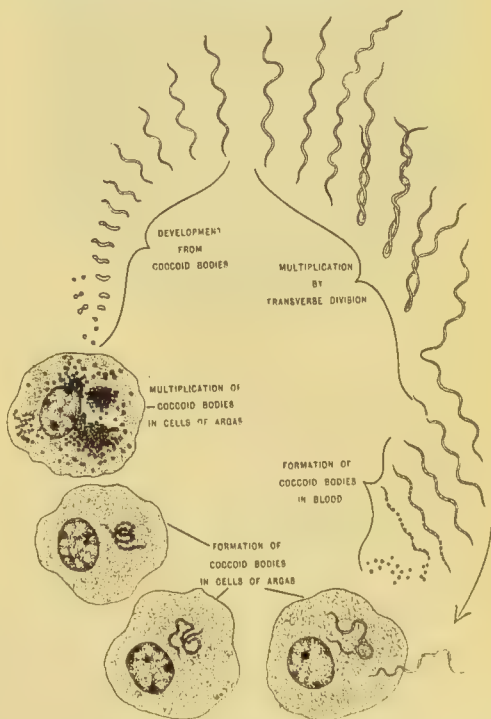


FIG. 118.—LIFE-CYCLE OF SPIROSCHAUDINNIA MARCHOUXI NUTTALL. (After Hindle from the *Journal of Parasitology*.)

bably the same as the infective granules of Balfour, which are known to escape from one end or the other of the periplastic sheath when in the internal organs. These infective granules enter the red cells, and divide into a number of merozoites, which escape from the red



FIG. 119.—SCHIZOGONY OF *SPIROSCHAUDINNIA MARCHOUXI*.
(After Sambon.)

cell and enter the liquor sanguinis; but their further development is unknown, though it is possible that they become spirochætes.

The life-history in the invertebrate has been traced by Leishman for *S. duttoni* in the tick *Ornithodoros moubata*, and his account has been confirmed by Balfour, Hindle, Blanc, Fantham, and others.

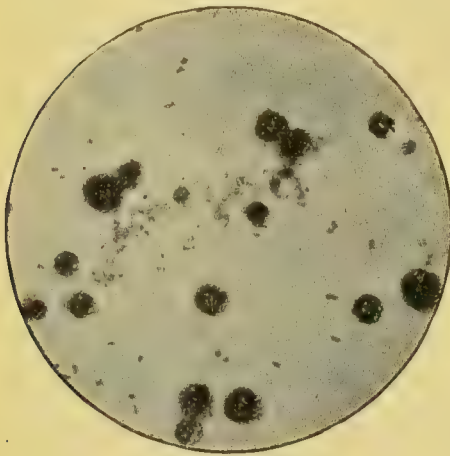


FIG. 120.—DEVELOPMENT OF *S. DUTTONI* ($\times 1,000$).

The small dots are chromatin bodies and the large granules are digested blood, while the pale outlines are spirochætes in the contents of the intestinal sac of a tick two days after an infective feed. (From a microphotograph by Sir William Leishman.)

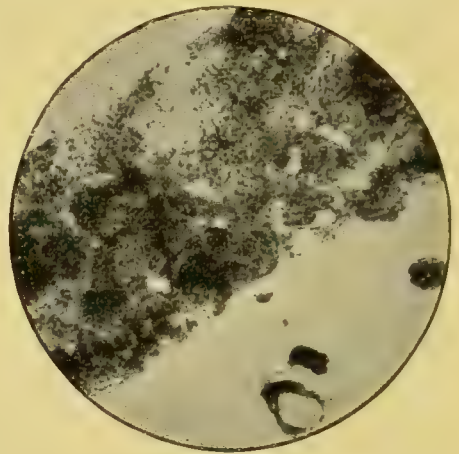


FIG. 121.—CHROMATIN GRANULES IN THE MALPIGHIAN TUBULE OF A TICK SIX DAYS AFTER INFECTIVE FEED ($\times 1,000$).

(From a microphotograph by Sir William Leishman.)

The *Spiroschaudinnia*, on entering the tick, penetrate the gut wall, and on reaching the body cavity divide by multiple transverse fission into minute ovoid or rod-like bodies, which reach the ovary and become incorporated with some of the ova. In this situation they are not often infective. When laid, the egg only contains a few ovoid bodies, but in three to five days' incubation, when the Malpighian tubes have begun to develop, ovoid and more elongate

bodies may be seen therein. In six to seven days' incubation these bodies have elongated and become bacillary, and may rupture the cell and appear in the lumen of the tube. It is believed that these bacillary forms give rise to spirochaetes either by elongation and growth, or by fusion of rods. The recently hatched tick contains ovoid bodies, bacillary forms, and a very few fully developed spirochaetes. Infection takes place towards the end of feeding by the excretion from the Malpighian tubules, which contains the spirochaetes, passing into the wound caused by the bite.

Some of the *Spiroschaudinnae*, on entering the tick, pass into the cells by way of the alimentary canal, and undergo multiple transverse division, while others may live for some weeks in the gut.

Cultivation.—Noguchi has successfully cultivated *S. duttoni* in sterile ascitic or hydrocele fluid, to which a piece of fresh rabbit's

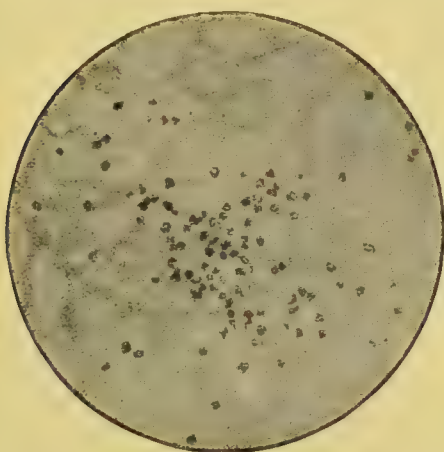


FIG. 122.—GRANULES IN AN INFECTED EGG.

(From a microphotograph by Sir William Leishman.)

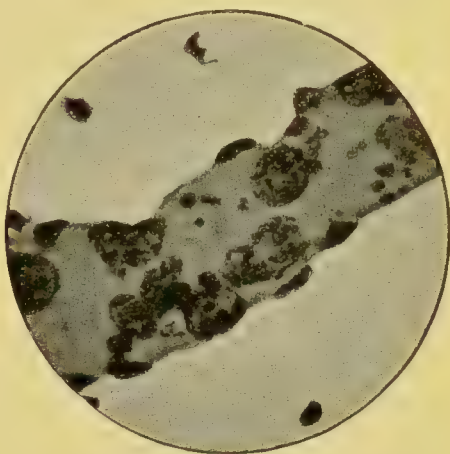


FIG. 123.—MASSES OF GRANULES IN MALPIGHIAN TUBULE OF A YOUNG UNFED NYMPH ($\times 1,000$).

(From a microphotograph by Sir William Leishman.)

kidney has been added. For inoculation of this medium he uses a few drops of the citrated heart blood from a mouse forty-eight to seventy-two hours after infection.

At a temperature of 37° C. the maximum growth is found about the eighth to ninth day, after which disintegration sets in, resulting in total disappearance about the fifteenth day. Subcultures are best made from the fourth to the ninth day, but after that date the virulence diminishes. The subcultures do not lose their virulence even after the ninth passage.

He has also cultivated in this way *S. recurrentis* Lebert 1874, when the maximum growth occurs on the seventh day; *S. rossii* Nuttall 1905, with a maximum on the ninth day; and *S. novyi*, which is the most difficult, with a maximum on the seventh day. *S. machouxi* has also been cultivated.

Carriers.—The *Spiroschaudinnia* are spread by the agency of ticks and lice.

Method of Infection.—The *Spiroschaudinnia* infect the ova of the tick, and so pass into the second generation, from which they escape in the fæces and enter the wounds made by the tick when it bites, and so infect the vertebrate host. Whether the same method of development takes place in the louse is not known, but the method of infection is thought to be due to the irritation of the louse-bite causing the vertebrate host to scratch, and thus to crush the louse and at the same time to cause abrasions of the host's own skin. The *Spiroschaudinnia*, escaping from the crushed louse, enter the vertebrate host through the abrasions caused by the scratches. Both these are contaminative methods of infection. It is believed that *Spiroschaudinnia* in the vertebrate can pass from the mother viâ the placenta to the fœtus, thus giving rise to an hereditary method of infection, in contradistinction to the contaminative methods mentioned above.

***Spiroschaudinnia recurrentis* Lebert 1874.**

Synonyms.—*Spirochæta recurrentis* Lebert 1874, *S. obermeyeri* Cohn 1875.

This spirochæte was discovered by Obermeyer in cases of relapsing fever in Berlin.

Morphology.—It exists in the blood in short and long forms. The short forms, which are from 7 to 9 μ in length, are probably early stages. The long forms, 16 to 19 μ , result from multiplication or agglutination. The latter condition in a hyper-immune blood may lead to forms 18 to 100 μ in length, brought about by agglutination of two or more cells end to end. The width is 0.25 μ . The number of spirals in the short form, which is considered to be one cell, is two to three.

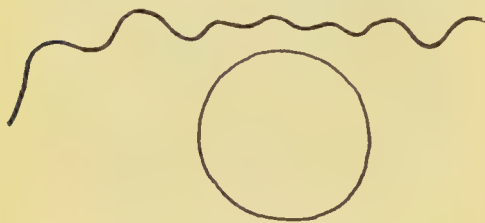


FIG. 124.—SPIROSCHAUDINNIA RECURRENTIS LEBERT, WITH OUTLINE OF RED CORPUSCLE FOR COMPARISON.

The short form is said by Novy and Knapp to have a long flagellum at one end, while the other has a faint appendage. The presence of flagella in this as well as in other spirochætes is denied by Nuttall.

Life-History.—This spirochæte is pathogenic to man, monkeys, rats, and mice; but these latter have to be infected from a monkey. Rabbits or guinea-pigs are not susceptible. It is found in the peripheral blood during the attacks and relapses, but not in the intermission, unless occasionally after very protracted search. It can also live in the bed-bug—*Clinocoris lectularius*—for some days, and Nuttall has succeeded on one occasion in transmitting *S. recurrentis* from mouse to mouse by the bites of the same bug. Positive

results have also been obtained by Sikul in Odessa. Some authorities consider lice to be the carriers.

Immunity.—The blood serum of animals immunized to *S. recurrentis* is without effect upon *S. duttoni* and *S. novyi*.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of European relapsing fever.

Spiroschaudinnia duttoni Novy and Knapp 1906.

Synonyms.—*Spirillum duttoni* Novy and Knapp 1906, *Spirochaeta duttoni* Todd 1906.

This spirochæte is the cause of the West African and the Colombian tick fever (*vide* Fig. 117).

Morphology.—Its length is variously described; thus Novy and Knapp say that the young forms are $16\ \mu$ in length, while Breinl and Kinghorn make them $24\ \mu$ in length and $0.45\ \mu$ in width when fully grown. The number of spirals varies from two to three to eight to ten, with a width of $2.2\ \mu$. The parasite is ribbon-shaped on transverse section, and though it is often in spirals, may be simply waved. The two ends are pointed.

The central core is seen to consist of lighter and darker portions, which correspond to the chromatic and the achromatic portions of the nucleus. The chromatic portion can break up into granules, when the parasites begin to disappear from the circulation.

The periplast is well marked, but there is great doubt as to the presence of an undulating membrane. Breinl, who has studied the subject carefully, could not definitely define one, but Dutton and Todd have seen it in blood taken directly from the circulation in man, or animals, or from the gut of *Ornithodoros moubata*. A small uncoloured transverse band is often to be seen in specimens stained by Giemsa lying across the parasite, about one-third its length from one end.

Life-History.—Reproduction can take place by longitudinal and transverse division. In the former the parasite thickens and then divides from one end, while in the latter the parasite increases in length and divides in the middle. Some authors deny the occurrence of transverse division, but this is untenable after Fantham and Porter's experiments.

There is, however, another and but little known method of reproduction, which appears to be analogous to spore-formation.

Just before the crisis, when the blood is swarming with parasites, they can be seen, according to Breinl, in the spleen and bone-marrow, and more rarely in the liver, coiling themselves up, and either showing a swollen appearance, or becoming thinner and rolling themselves into more and more complicated skein-like forms, which may be engulfed by phagocytes in the spleen, but in other organs become more regular and surrounded by a thin cyst-wall, the interior of which is filled with faintly blue-staining plasma.

In this cyst the parasite becomes more and more indistinct, and at a later stage small red granules are to be seen, which are thought to be the cause of the infection in the blood when filtered through

a Pasteur-Chamberland filter. Therefore, according to the latest investigations by Breinl, the life-history of the parasite has two well-defined stages in the vertebrate. In the first it is found free in the liquor sanguinis in its typical form; in the second it enters a cell, and, becoming coiled, its chromatin breaks up into a number of granules, each of which is believed to become a new spirochæte.

The stage in the liquor sanguinis is associated with the febrile attacks, and that in the cells with the apyrexial intervals.

Carriers.—It is spread by the agency of *Ornithodoros moubata* in Africa, and by *Argas americanus* (chinche) in Colombia.

In the Tick.—*S. duttoni* in Africa is conveyed to man and animals by faecal infection of the bites of a tick, *Ornithodoros moubata*. Leishman has demonstrated that when *S. duttoni* enters the intestinal sac of the tick it loses its mobility and characteristic appearance, and chromatic masses escape into the lumen of the gut in the form of small rods or rounded bodies resembling micrococci. These multiply and pass into the cells of the Malpighian tubules, and also into the immature eggs in the ovary. They can be followed through all the stages of the egg into the adult tick, as small chromatin bodies lying in the cells of the Malpighian tubules. These bodies are voided with the fæces, and when the tick feeds are capable of entering the wound produced by the bite, and in this manner infecting the host.

The tick remains infective for a very long time—according to Möller as long as eighteen months—and the infection can be passed not merely through the eggs into a new generation of ticks, as has been demonstrated by Dutton, Todd, Leishman, and others, but also according to Möller into the third generation, even if the second generation have only fed on clean animals.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of West African and Colombian relapsing fever.

***Spiroschaudinnia rossii* Nuttall 1908.**

This Spirochæte is distinguished from *S. duttoni* by its biological reactions, though some authorities consider it identical with *S. duttoni*. It is the cause of East African relapsing fever, and is conveyed by *Ornithodoros moubata*.

***Spiroschaudinnia novyi* Schellach 1907.**

History.—In 1907 Professor Manteufel, while investigating an accidental laboratory infection of relapsing fever, found that the serum of the patient agglutinated a spirochæte found by Novy in a case of relapsing fever in America in a dilution of 1 in 100, but showed no such power over the spirochæte of the European disease. Moreover, it gave Pfeiffer's reaction, being active in doses of 0.05 c.c. in experimentally infected mice. Schellach has investigated this spirochæte, and given it the specific name used above.

Morphology.—It is 17 to 20 μ in length, with six to eight undulations and a thickness of 0.31 μ . He gives the dimensions for the

S. recurrentis as 19 to 29 μ , with eight to ten undulations and a thickness of 0.39 μ , and *S. duttoni* as 24 μ at the most, with eight to ten undulations and a thickness of 0.45 μ ; which appear to be very different from Novy's table given under *S. carteri*.

The spirochæte appears to have great flexibility and activity of movement. One end has a filiform prolongation about 5 μ in length, while the other is merely pointed. No undulating membrane could be differentiated; but he states that he was able to demonstrate lateral cilia, which he considers to be artificial; but this, in our opinion, is highly suggestive of the presence of an undulating membrane. Coloured granules could be made out when stained by Giemsa. Reproduction was usually by transverse division.

Life-History.—The spirochætes are found in the blood during the attacks of fever, and equally distributed in the organs in the apyrexial interval.

Inoculation.—It can be inoculated into monkeys, but small rodents are especially susceptible. Subinoculations can be made from monkey to monkey and from mouse to mouse.

Immunity.—Serum of animals immunized for *S. novyi* is without effect upon *S. recurrentis*, *S. duttoni*, or *S. carteri*.

Cultivation.—It has been cultivated by Noguchi as mentioned above.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of North American relapsing fever.

Spiroschaudinnia carteri Manson 1907.

S. carteri has a minimal length of 12 μ , with open flexures. It is thinner than *S. novyi*, and it is not agglutinated by serum of animals immunized against *S. novyi*. It can be inoculated into monkeys and with difficulty into mice, and can be subinoculated from monkey to monkey or mouse to mouse.

Novy and Knapp give the following differences between *S. carteri*, *S. duttoni*, and *S. novyi*:—

Character.	<i>Spiroschaudinnia novyi.</i>	<i>Spiroschaudinnia duttoni.</i>	<i>Spiroschaudinnia carteri.</i>
Length of simple cell ..	8 μ	16 μ	8 μ
Length of double cell ..	16–20 μ	30 μ	16–20 μ
Width	0.25 μ	0.2 μ	0.2 μ
Number of turns in a single cell	2.3 μ	2.5 μ	2–3 μ
Distance between the turns	1.5 μ	4.5 μ	2.3 μ
Movement	Vigorous	Little	—
Number in peripheral blood	Many	Few	Many

According to Strong's experiments, rats immunized against *S. recurrentis* and *S. novyi* are immune to *S. carteri*. He therefore believes these three strains to be closely allied, if not identical,

They can also be distinguished by agglutination, immunization tests, by Pfeiffer's reaction, and by certain animals being susceptible to some species and not to others. Mackie has suggested that *S. carteri* may be transmitted by a pediculus. It is the cause of Asiatic relapsing fever.

***Spiroschaudinnia schaudinni* Prowazek 1907.**

This is a very active motile spirochæte 10 to 20 μ in length, with a well-marked undulating membrane and one rather short flagellum. Male and female forms can be seen, according to Prowazek. Division is longitudinal. It is, according to Prowazek, the cause of *ulcus tropicum*, and is possibly transmitted by a leech.

***Spiroschaudinnia vincenti* R. Blanchard 1906.**

This spirochæte is 12 to 25 μ in length, tapering at both ends, and possessing comparatively few elongated spirals.

It is often associated with the so-called fusiform bacilli, and is considered to be the cause of *Angina Vincenti*. Some authors believe that the same spirochæte is found in hospital phagedæna, in noma, and in *ulcus tropicum*.

***Spiroschaudinnia aboriginalis* Cleland 1909.**

This spirochæte was found by Wise in British Guiana in 1906, and by Cleland in West Australia in 1909 in cases of *granuloma inguinale*. Its length is 6 to 18 μ , and it possesses but few coils, which vary in depth. The extremities, according to Cleland, are blunt. Similar spirochætes have been found by Wise and others in a peculiar granulomatous affection, which attacks the genital organs of dogs and bitches. It is believed at the present time that this *Spiroschaudinnia* is not the cause of *granuloma inguinale*, but merely a saprophyte.

***Spiroschaudinnia bronchialis* Castellani 1907.**

This parasite was found by Castellani in cases of bronchitis in Ceylon. The name probably includes several varieties of spirochætes. The commonest form is 7 to 15 μ in length, and delicate in appearance, and shows a variable number of coils, and often tapers at both ends.

Thick and extremely delicate forms can also be seen.

***Spiroschaudinnia berbera* Sargent and Foley 1910.**

Spiroschaudinnia with minimal length of 12 μ and irregular open spirals or flexures. It can be inoculated into monkeys (*Macacus cynocephalus*) and with difficulty into rats and mice. Subinoculations can be made with difficulty from rat to rat and from mouse to mouse. The immune serum is without effect upon *S. recurrentis*.

It produces a mild infection in animals, but a severe one in man, for whom it is the cause of North African and possibly Egyptian relapsing fever. Probably it is spread by the agency of lice.

Spiroschaudinnia macaci Castellani and Chalmers 1910.

Synonym.—*Spirochæta macaci* Castellani and Chalmers 1910.

This spirochæte was found by us in monkeys in Ceylon in 1906. In length it measures about $12\ \mu$, and closely resembles *S. carteri* Manson 1907. It can be easily inoculated from monkey to monkey. Spirochætes which may be of a different species have also been found by Leishman, Balfour, and recently by Plimmer in *Cercopithecus sebæ* from Sierra Leone.

Spiroschaudinnia phagedenis Noguchi 1912.

Noguchi discovered this spirochæte in an indurated and ulcerated swelling of the labium which had lasted ten days. It has been cultivated on ascitic agar medium, and is a strict anaërobe. Length varies from 4 to $30\ \mu$, and the curves from 1 to $8\ \mu$, while young forms may be quite straight. Inoculated into monkeys and rabbits it causes transient inflammation.

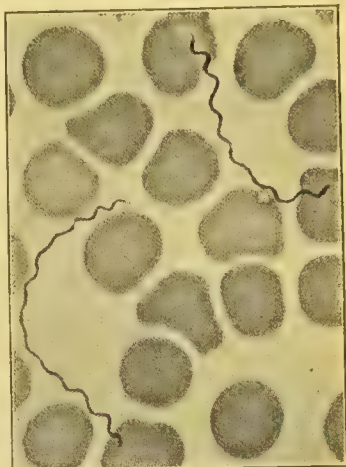


FIG. 125.—SPIROCHÆTES IN THE BLOOD OF CERCO-PITHECUS SEBÆUS FROM SIERRA LEONE ($\times 1,000$). (From a microphotograph by H. G. Plimmer.)

Spiroschaudinnia Species (?).

Dr. E. Black has found spirochætes in the vomit of cases of Belyan do Spew (Queensland) and grass sickness (Western Australia), which he believes are the cause of the malady (see p. 1322).

Spiroschaudinnia anserina Saccharoff 1891.

Found in enormous numbers in the blood of geese in the Caucasus and Tunis. It causes fever, diarrhœa, tenderness of the feet, and death in about a week, the mortality being 80 per cent. It can be inoculated into other geese.

Spiroschaudinnia marchouxi Nuttall 1904.

Synonym.—*Spirochæta gallinarum* R. Blanchard 1905.

This spirochæte, which has been discovered by Marchoux and Salimbeni, and studied by Balfour, is about 10 to $20\ \mu$ in length, causes disease in fowls in many countries—e.g., Brazil, the Sudan, Egypt, and Tunisia. The symptoms are fever, diarrhœa, anæmia, somnolence, convulsions, and death in four to five days, or in chronic cases cachexia and death in fourteen days. As first observed by Sambon, it appears to enter the red corpuscle, and to break up within it in a way which reminds one of the description already given for *S. duttoni*. Balfour has made an important investigation on granules spreading and the infective granules. It is spread by *Argas persicus* and other Argasidæ, as Fülleborn has shown with *Ornithodoros moubata*. Balfour has

made the important observation that in the infected ticks chromatin granules are present as described by Leishman in *S. duttoni*.

Recent researches by Balfour tend to show that the Sudan strain is a separate species: *S. granulosa* Balfour, 1910. Aragão has attempted to obtain a serum and a vaccine with a certain degree of success.

Spiroschaudinnia neveuxii Brumpt 1909.

Brumpt describes this spirochæte as morphologically identical with *S. marchouxi*, but cross immunization shows that the two species are different. It is the cause of fowl spirochaetosis in Senegal, and is spread by *Argas persicus*.

Spiroschaudinnia theileri Laveran 1904.

This spirochæte, discovered by Theiler in 1902, is found in cattle in Africa about Pretoria, in the Cameroons, and in East Africa. The symptoms are not clear, as *Babesia* has also been seen in the same animals. It is spread by *Margaropus decoloratus*, the blue tick.

Spiroschaudinnia ovina R. Blanchard 1906.

This spirochæte may be the same as *S. theileri*. It was found by Marfoglio and Carpano in sheep in Erythræa, on the Red Sea, and by Theiler in the Transvaal.

Spiroschaudinnia equi Novy and Knapp 1906.

Found by Theiler in the Transvaal, and by Martin in French Guinea, and may be the same as *S. theileri*.

Other Spirochætes.—*S. vespertilionis* Novy and Knapp, found by Nicolle and Contine in 1905, in *Vespertilio kuhli*.

S. pseudopallida Mulzer 1905 in ulcerating carcinomata.

S. largyrata Werner 1909 in the alimentary canal of man.

S. stenogyrate Werner 1909 in the alimentary canal of man.

S. gracilis Levaditi and Stanesco 1909, very like *T. pallidum*.

S. hachaizæ Kowalski, found in cholera motions.

S. cuticis Jaffé 1907, found in the gut and Malpighian tubules of *Culex pipiens* and the larva of *Anopheles maculipennis*.

S. muris Wenyon and *S. laverani* Breinl and Kinghorn, in mice.

S. refringens Schaudinn 1905, associated with *Treponema pallidum* in syphilis.

S. acuminata Castellani and *S. obtusa* Castellani, in the open sores of yaws.

S. subtilis Castellani 1910, found in scrapings from the oral mucosa and in the intestinal contents.

S. bufonis Dobell 1908, found in the rectum of a frog.

S. glossinæ Novy and Knapp 1906, in the stomach of tsetse-flies.

S. microgyrata Gaylord and Calkins 1907, in cancer of the breast in mice.

S. balanitidis Hoffmann and Prowazek 1906, found by Hoffmann and Prowazek in balanitis.

S. lutræ Prowazek 1907, found by Prowazek in the otter.

Other spirochætes not as yet determined have been found in dysentery (Le Dantec, Toussaint, Simonin), in suppurative conditions (Mutzer), in the bone-marrow in a case of profound anæmia (Moritz) in Psoriasis (Prowazek). Sambon has found spirochætes in scrapings from gastric ulcers in a fox.

Various spirochætes have also been observed in the stomach of normal cats, dogs, and rats (Bizzozzero, Salomon), in the intestinal ulcers of dogs and monkeys affected with trypanosomiasis (Balfour), in the intestine of normal mice (Wenyon) and birds (Kent).

TREPONEMIDÆ Schaudinn 1905.

Definition.—Spirochætacea with a minute thread-like body twisted into numerous fine coils, with pointed tapering extremities. The body is cylindrical on section, and not flattened, and the spirals

appear preformed. There is no undulating membrane. Transverse and longitudinal division have been observed, the latter type being the only one found in cultures.

Classification.—Only one genus.

Treponema Schaudinn 1905.

Synonym.—*Spirochæta* Ehrenberg *pro parte* *Spironema* Vuillemin 1905, von Klebs 1892.

Treponemidæ with the characters of the family.

Type Species.—*Treponema pallidum* Schaudinn 1905.

Treponema pallidum Schaudinn 1905.

Synonyms.—*Spirochæta pallida* Schaudinn 1905, *Spironema pallidum* Vuillemin 1905, *Microspironema pallidum* Stiles and Pfander 1905, *Trypanosoma luis* Krzysztalowicz and Siedlecki 1905.

History.—This treponema was discovered by Schaudinn in syphilis in 1905. The history of the finding of parasites in syphilis is interesting, for as long ago as 1546 Frascastorius considered syphilis to be a parasitic disease. In 1879 Klebs, and, later, Losdorfer and Döhle in 1901, described parasites, and saw cell inclusions in the disease, and in 1905 Siegel described an organism, *Cytoryctes luis*, in which there are flagellate bodies very closely resembling spirochætes. In 1905 Schaudinn, after investigating and reporting unfavourably on Siegel's work, found the *Treponema pallidum*, which is accepted as the cause of the disease. Korté in 1906 described free round bodies and cysts with threads in primary sores. Recently E. H. Ross has described an intracellular formation allied to his *Lymphocytozoon cobayæ*, which develops into spirochætes, and these researches have in part been confirmed by Jennings. McDonagh also has described a complicated life-cycle.

Morphology.—It varies from 4 to 10 μ in length, average 7 μ , with a width up to 0.5 μ . It is twisted into spirals, which vary



FIG. 126.—TREPONEMA PALLIDUM SCHAUDINN 1905.

(From a microphotograph by J. J. Bell.)

from six to twelve and more in number, the average being eight to ten, and are to a certain extent preformed—*i.e.*, not due to the parasite's movements. It moves by rotation on a long axis by gliding movements, forwards and backwards, and also by flexion of the whole body. The periplast is continued as long delicate processes at each end, which are considered by some to be flagella.

Krzyształowicz and Siedlecki say that not far from the middle the body may be nearly straight, and a clear spot can be observed which they think is a nucleus ; but it might correspond to the similar area in *S. duttoni*. They also describe male and female gametes and conjugation, which they think leads to the formation of a cyst or spore, which may be carried viâ the blood stream to different parts of the body, and there develop into Treponemata.

The parasite is found in the primary sores and in the secondary lesions, but is very difficult to detect in tertiary eruptions, though it is abundantly present in the liver, spleen, decidua, the placental villi, the umbilical cord of syphilitic foetuses, and infants.

It is distinguished from other spirochætes (*S. refringens*) which may be met with on ulcerated surfaces by difficulty in staining ; number, character, and permanence of the spirals ; the terminal prolongations ; absence of an undulating membrane ; minute size, and delicacy.

Inoculation.—Syphilis can be inoculated into chimpanzees and many other monkeys, and *T. pallidum* can be found in the lesions so caused, the incubation being fifteen to forty-nine days, average thirty days, for the primary sore ; and nineteen to sixty-one days, average thirty-three days, for the secondary eruption after the primary have appeared. In the lower monkeys the lesion remains localized to the seat of the inoculation.

Cultivation.—Schereschewsky has cultivated, with a certain degree of success, *T. pallidum* on a medium of horse serum, brought to a gelatinous consistence by heating to 60° C., and partly autolyzed by keeping in an incubator at 37° C. for three days. Later Mühlens and Hartmann also cultivated it, Hartmann inoculating a pure culture with success in the testicles of a rabbit, and more recently it was grown by Noguchi quite successfully, as described above for Spiroschaudinnia, and he has also been successful in reproducing the disease in monkeys by inoculation of the pure culture. The monkeys present a positive Wassermann reaction two weeks after inoculation. Noguchi has made the important observation that there are several varieties of *T. pertenue* ; he distinguishes a normal type of medium thickness, a thick type, and a thin type. Inoculated in the testicles of rabbits, the normal type gives rise to a diffuse induration, which develops the third week after inoculation : the thick type gives rise to several small hard nodules, which develop slowly ; the thin type induces a diffuse swelling, which develops very quickly, ten to fourteen days after inoculation. It is interesting to note that Mott, several years ago, suggested—on clinical and pathological grounds—that there might be more than one variety of *T. pallidum*.

Biological Reactions.—By heating the cultures to 60° C. Noguchi has produced a product which he calls luetine, by means of which a cutaneous reaction can be obtained in syphilitic patients.

Life-History.—Until recently nothing definite was known with regard to the life-cycle of *T. pallidum*, and the researches to be

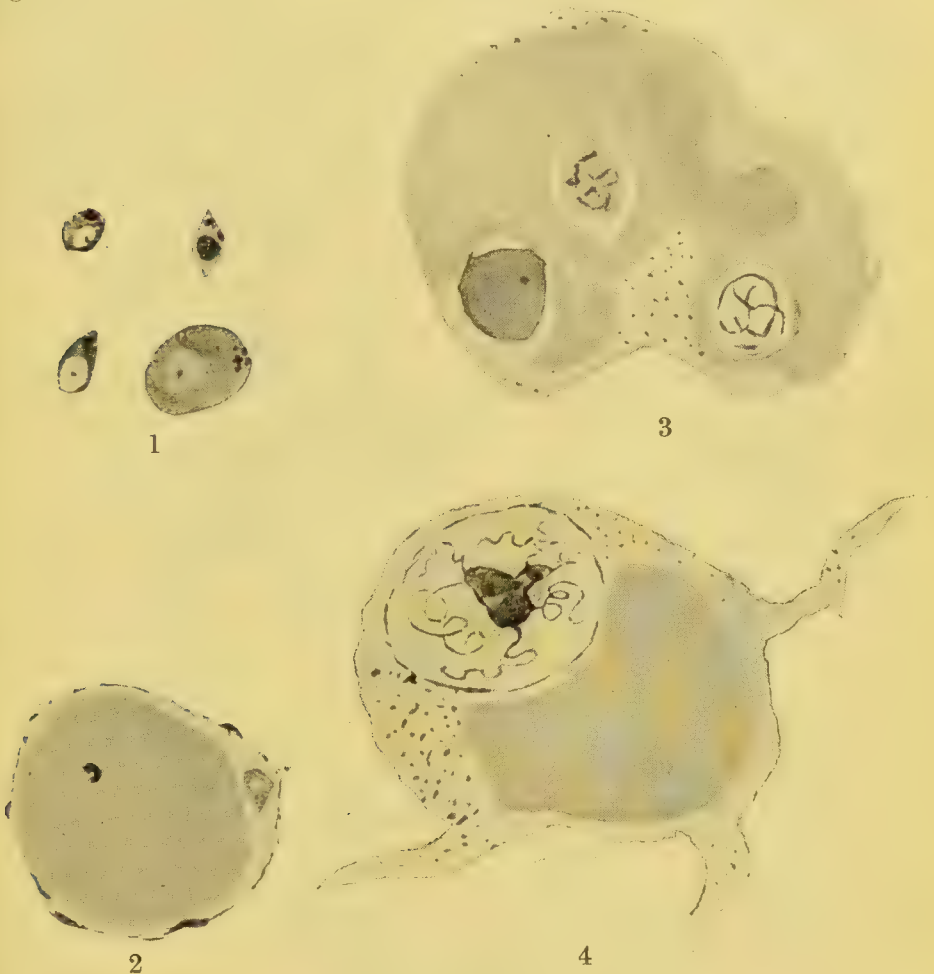


FIG. 127.—STAGES IN THE DEVELOPMENT OF *TREPONEMA PALLIDUM* SCHAUDINN. (After E. H. Ross.)

1, Free forms commonly found in chancres and glands ; 2, small form in a mononuclear cell from a gland ; 3, cell from a chancre showing development of spirochætes ; 4, mononuclear cell from the peripheral circulation of a case of secondary syphilis, showing the formation of spirochætes.

presently described are so new that there has not yet been time for their examination by other investigators.

E. H. Ross, finding cellular inclusions resembling Kurloff's bodies in mononuclears in non-ulcerated Hunterian chancres, examined them in detail by placing the blood from such a chancre upon H. C. Ross's coefficient jelly.

This jelly is made by adding 1 c.c. of a 1 in 3 solution of Unna's polychrome methylene blue (Grübler) to 3 c.c. of a boiled and filtered 2 per cent. solution of agar in water, and then adding to this mixture 2 c.c. of a solution of 4.5 per cent. sodium citrate, 1.5 per cent. sodium chloride, 0.225 per cent. atropine sulphate (but this last is not essential, and is merely useful for demonstrating amœboid movements). The mixture is boiled in a test-tube, and 0.3 c.c.

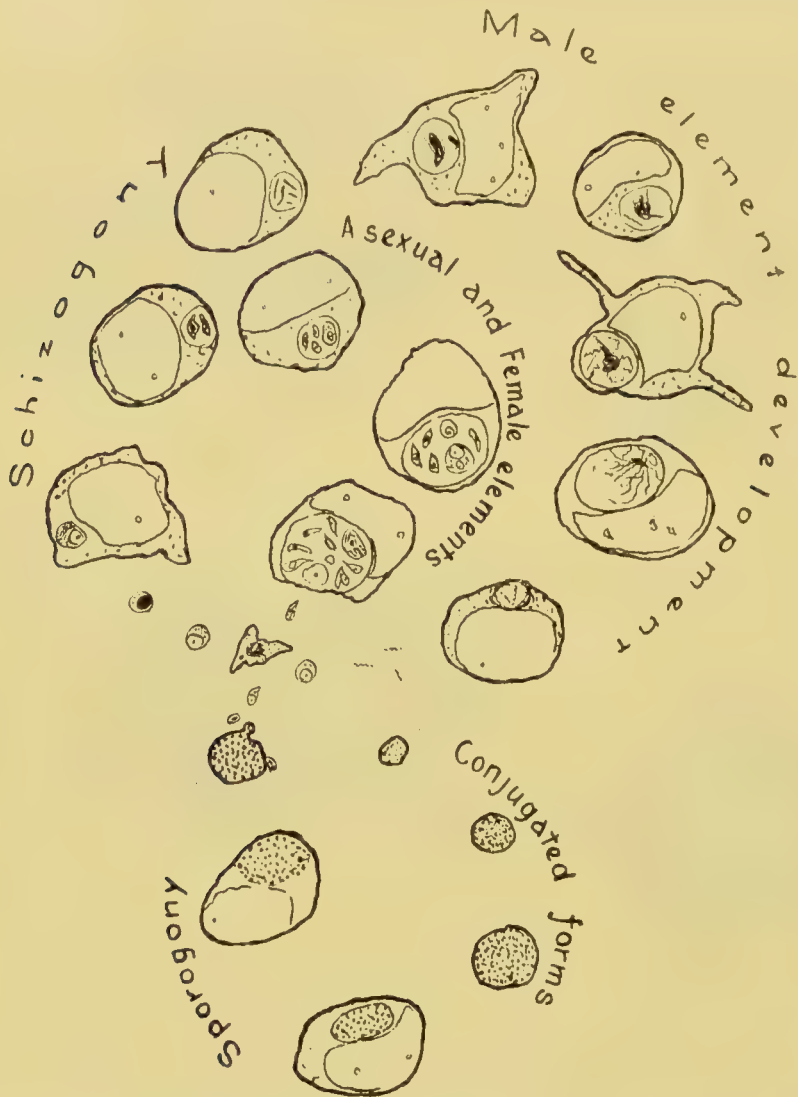


FIG. 128.—DIAGRAM OF THE LIFE-HISTORY OF THE SYPHILIS ORGANISM.

(From an original drawing kindly given us by E. H. Ross.)

of a 5 per cent. solution of sodium bicarbonate is added. A drop of this warm solution is poured upon a microscopical slide and run into a film and allowed to cool. The chancre is deeply pricked, and a drop of blood is squeezed out (in order to obtain cells), and allowed to fall into a drop of citrate solution (3 per cent. sodium citrate and 1 per cent. sodium chloride) on a cover-glass, which is then inverted on to the cool film of jelly on the slide.

When this is done, small extracellular round or pear-shaped bodies (*vide* illustration) are seen lying between the blood cells, as well as intracellular forms of the same nature lying in leucocytes (generally lymphocytes) and epithelial cells. These bodies have a cell wall, and contain a chromatin mass which may undergo division. This chromatin mass may give rise to spirochæte-like bodies resembling *T. pallidum*. E. H. Ross finds that these bodies resemble those already described by him in *Lymphocytosoon cobayæ* in the guinea-pig (*vide* p. 306), and also the bodies found by Cropper in mononuclear cells in the vesiculæ seminales of the earth-worm, and more importantly the bodies found in rabbits

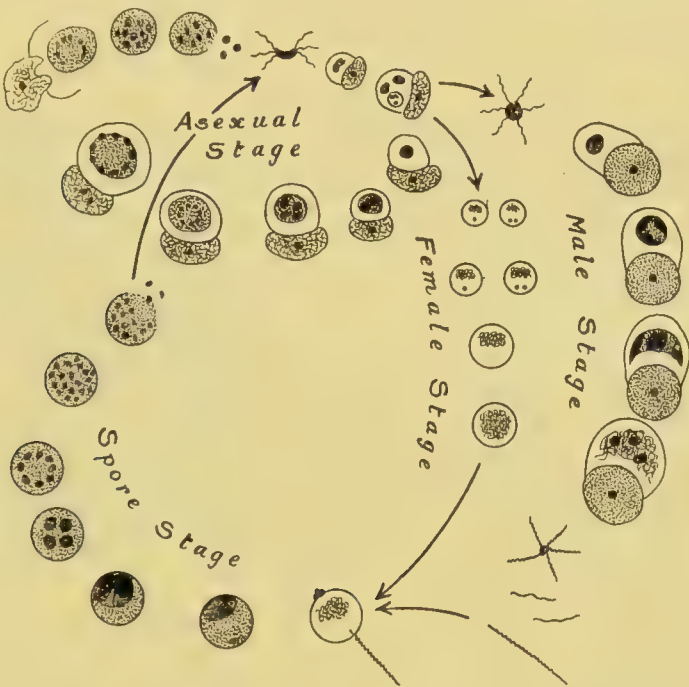


FIG. 129.—SCHEMATIC REPRESENTATION OF THE LIFE-HISTORY OF THE ORGANISM OF SYPHILIS.

(After McDonagh.)

suffering from a disease somewhat resembling syphilis, in which there is a chancre on the genitalia and later ulcers in the mouth as well as buboes.

Similar bodies have been described by McDonagh, who has given an account of a complicated life-cycle for *T. pallidum*, which is as follows :—

Schizogony.—Round or kidney-shaped, flagellate or non-flagellate sporozoites, $1.5\ \mu$ in diameter, enter a connective-tissue cell, and grow in size. The chromatin nodules of these bodies, losing their karyosomes, divide into two bodies, then into four, and finally into a ring of peripherally situated chromatin dots, which eventually

become scattered through the cytoplasm, and give rise to the merozoites, thus completing the cycle of schizogony.

Sporogony.—Some sporozoites may, however, give rise to male and female forms. The microgametocyte is a circular or oval dot of chromatin, which, on being set free, becomes flagellated and actively motile, and, entering a mononuclear leucocyte, gives rise to three pear-shaped bodies, which eventually form a coil of spirochæte-like bodies, which are considered to be the microgametes. The macrogametocyte is circular, and larger than the microgametocyte, and contains at one pole a chromatin network, and opposite this two chromatin dots, which become the polar bodies. Conjugation is figured, and a zygote is formed, which gives rise to the sporozoites.

Pathogenicity.—*T. pallidum* is the cause of syphilis.

Treponema pertenue Castellani 1905.

Synonyms.—*Spirochæta pertenuis* Castellani June 1905, *Spirochæta pallidula* Castellani November 1905.

History.—It was discovered by Castellani in 1905 in the scrapings from yaws papules.

Morphology.—*Treponema pertenue* is an extremely delicate spiral-shaped organism, varying in length from a few microns to 18 and 20 μ and even more. It is very slender. Some individuals are, however, thicker than others. It does not stain easily, but good results may be obtained with Giemsa's method, and also with Leishman's stain, provided the alcoholic solution is allowed to act for five minutes, and the subsequent admixture with distilled water for from one half-hour to several hours. Using either of these methods, the *Treponemata* stain purplish. Occasionally a few more deeply stained granules may be seen in the body of the organism. The extremities of the parasite are often pointed, but forms may be met with presenting blunt extremities, or one extremity pointed and the other blunt. In some individuals one of the extremities may present a large pear-shaped expansion or a loop-like formation. The number of coils varies from six to twenty or more, but they are, as a rule, numerous, uniform, and of small dimensions. Occasionally a portion of the *Treponema* shows numerous close uniform coils, while the rest of its body shows no coils at all. Sometimes two *Treponemata* may be attached end to end, or apparently twisted together. Castellani has not been able to detect any undulating membrane, though its presence has been asserted by other observers (Blanchard). Occasionally, in preparations stained by Löffler's method of flagella staining, it has seemed to several observers that some of the organisms present an extremely delicate flagellum at one end. Prowazek has described a resting form, oval or round, produced by a coiling up of the spiral. Ranken, by means of the dark-ground illumination, has been able to observe the extrusion from the parasite of small, highly-refractile granules, which are apparently shot out by free lateral motion.

These granules immediately after extrusion remain stationary, then begin to rotate and move about, though apparently not supplied with flagella.

Intracellular Stage.—Castellani in 1905 described some peculiar bodies, free and intracellular, in leucocytes, which possessed an oval or roundish shape, and contained chromatin dots. At the time he was inclined to consider them to be stages in the development of the parasite, but later he held that they were cell inclusions of non-parasitic origin. In view, however, of the recent work of E. H. Ross and McDonagh on the organism of syphilis, it is possible that they are in reality a stage in the development of *T. pertenue*.

Comparison with T. pallidum.—From the above description it is evident that the frambœsia organism is morphologically very similar to that of syphilis. Blanchard, Martin, Prowazek, and others seem to have been able to make out some slight morphological differences between the two. Martin states that the frambœsia *Treponema* is even

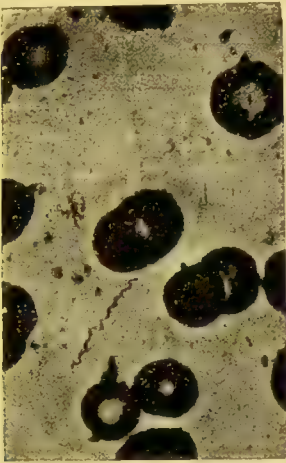


FIG. 130.—TREPONEMA PERTENUE CASTELLANI.

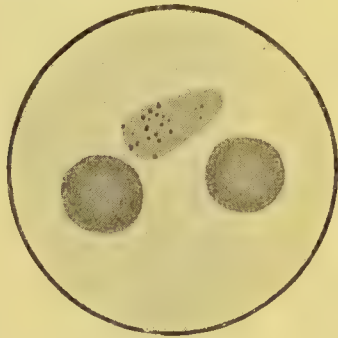


FIG. 131.—BASOPHILE CELL, WITH CHROMATIN DOTS, IN A CASE OF FRAMBŒSIA.

more slender and more difficult to stain than the *T. pallidum* of Schaudinn. On the other hand, some authorities consider it to be thicker. Rivas states that it has closer coils. Prowazek, Levaditi, and Nattan-Larrier state that *T. pertenue* shows less regularly shaped coils, and one extremity terminates in a loop much more frequently than in *T. pallidum*. Moreover, according to Levaditi and Nattan-Larrier, in fresh preparations *T. pertenue* displays whip-like lateral movements rather than translatory ones. Russell and Archibald consider that *T. pertenue* is slightly thicker than *T. pallidum*; the distance from crest to crest of the waves and the dip from the crest to the hollow is greater; the parasite has greater tendency to curl up into a loop at one end. Ranken states that the parasite does not show any corkscrew-like motion, nor any progressive motion. We believe that the differentiation of the two organisms, and in general of spirochaetes and Trypanosomata, is to be based more on the results of the biological tests than on slight morphological differences.

The animal tests clearly show that *T. pertenue* and *T. pallidum* are two different species, inasmuch as monkeys immunized with *T. pertenue* do not become immune for *T. pallidum*.

Incidence of the T. pertenue in Frambæsia Lesions.—The presence of the *Treponema* is constant in the primary lesion and in the unbroken papules of the general eruption. It may be found in the spleen, lymphatic glands, and bone-marrow. In the blood it has not yet been demonstrated microscopically, though there is no doubt that the blood of the general circulation is infectious, inasmuch as monkeys inoculated with it develop typical yaws lesions, in which the *Treponema* is abundantly present. The *Treponema* is absent in the cerebro-spinal fluid, and generally in the tertiary lesions.

Bacteriological Flora found in Open Sores of Frambæsia.—While *T. pertenue* is the only germ found in the non-ulcerated lesions, the ulcerated lesions of frambæsia are soon invaded by all kinds of germs. Apart from innumerable bacteria, various kinds of spirochætes are present. One form is rather thick, and takes up the stain easily. It is morphologically identical with the *Spirochaudinnia refringens* of Schaudinn. Another form is thin, delicate, with coils varying in size and number, and with blunt extremities—*S. obtusa* Castellani. A third form is likewise thin and delicate, but tapers at both ends—*S. acuminata* Castellani; *T. pertenue* is also present in many cases.

Inoculation Experiments of Frambæsia in Man.—Paulet, in 1848, inoculated fourteen negroes with the secretion taken from framboetic granulomata. All of them developed frambæsia, the inoculation period varying from twelve to twenty days, when at the seat of inoculation in ten cases the first nodule appeared, soon followed by a typical general eruption. In two cases apparently the eruption did not start from the seat of inoculation.

Charlouis, in 1881, inoculated thirty-two Chinese prisoners, who had never suffered from the disease, with crusts and scrapings from a case of yaws. The disease developed in twenty-eight of them, beginning invariably at the seat of inoculation. Moreover, he inoculated a native suffering from typical yaws with syphilis. The inoculation was quite successful, a primary syphilitic sore developing, followed by all the usual types of secondary eruption. That yaws patients are not immune against syphilis is proved also by Powell and Nicolas and others, who have described several cases of syphilis supervening on yaws. Syphilitic patients may contract frambæsia naturally and experimentally.

Inoculation Experiments in Monkeys.—Neisser, Prowazek, Halberstadter in Java, and shortly afterwards Castellani in Ceylon, have shown that monkeys are susceptible to frambæsia. According to their experiments, the inoculation period varies from a minimum of sixteen days to a maximum of ninety-two. The appearance of the lesions developing at the seat of inoculation is practically the same in all cases—viz., an infiltrated spot slowly increasing in size,

and soon becoming moist, the secretion drying into a thick crust. Removal of the crust exposes a raw, granulating, red surface.

In the monkeys of a low class (genus *Macacus*, genus *Semnopithecus*) the eruption is, as a rule, localized to the seat of inoculation. The infection, however, is general, as is proved by the presence of *T. pertenue* in the spleen and lymphatic glands besides the local lesions. Halberstadter has obtained a general eruption in ourang-outangs. According to Castellani's experiments, splenic blood, obtained by puncturing the spleen of a patient affected with frambœsia, can reproduce the disease in monkeys. The inoculation of the blood of the general circulation also may occasionally produce the disease. The inoculation of cerebro-spinal fluid into normal monkeys has always proved negative.



FIG. 132.—MONKEY INOCULATED WITH FRAMBŒSIA.

Neisser, Halberstadter, J. Prowazek in Java, and later Castellani in Ceylon, have proved that monkeys successfully inoculated with frambœsia do not thereby become immune to syphilis, and, *vice versa*, monkeys successfully inoculated with syphilis do not thereby become immune to frambœsia. According to Levaditi, monkeys immunized for frambœsia do not acquire any immunity for syphilis, but monkeys immunized for syphilis may acquire a partial immunity for frambœsia. According to Ashburn and Craig, monkeys of the species *Cynomolgus philippinensis* are susceptible to frambœsia, but not to syphilis.

The following facts are in favour of the *T. pertenue* being the specific cause of frambœsia :—

1. In the non-ulcerated papules, in the spleen, in the lymphatic glands of frambœsia patients, as well as in inoculated monkeys, the

T. pertenue is the only organism present. No other germ can be demonstrated, either microscopically or by cultural methods.

2. The extract of framboesia material containing the *T. pertenue*—but, so far as our present methods of investigation permit us to say, no other germs—is effective when inoculated into monkeys.

3. The extract of framboesia material from which the *T. pertenue* has been removed by filtration becomes inert, and monkeys inoculated with it do not contract the disease.

Inoculation Experiments in Rabbits.—Nichols has inoculated rabbits successfully, and finds that the incubation period is shorter than that for *T. pallidum* in the same animal. He finds that 4.5 milligrammes of salvarsan per kilogramme of the animal's weight injected intravenously will effect a cure, which is less than for *T. pallidum*. Complement fixation is positive by the fourteenth day, but after administration of salvarsan it becomes negative. He has not been able to produce immunity, and he finds that if reinoculation is unsuccessful it is because the animal is still infected; whereas, if it is cured, reinoculation can be successfully performed. It is possible to demonstrate the difference between syphilis and framboesia by the reinoculation of rabbits after treatment by salvarsan. Castelli has inoculated rabbits intravenously, and states that the general clinical symptoms, papules, etc., are so different from those obtained after a similar injection of *T. pallidum* that this method may be of use for differentiating them.

Cultivation.—*T. pertenue* has been successfully cultivated by Noguchi.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of framboesia tropica (*vide* Chapter XLIV.).

Treponema mucosum Noguchi 1912.

This *Treponema* was isolated from the pus of a case of pyorrhœa by Noguchi. It closely resembles *T. pallidum* and *T. microdentium*, but differs in certain biological properties. It can be cultivated in citrate dilution of ascitic agar. Cultures have a strong fœtid odour and mucin is produced in the medium, but this property is lost by repeated subcultures. It is a strict anaërobe. Inoculated into monkeys or rabbits it causes transitory local inflammation.

Treponema calligyrum Noguchi 1913.

Found by Noguchi in condylomata—cultivated by the same observer. It shows deep, regular curves, not so closely set as in *T. pallidum*. It is also thicker.

Other species are: *T. microdentium*, *T. refrigens*, *T. terminii* Leidy 1881 in *Calotermes militaris*, *T. minei* Prowazek 1910, *T. vivax* Dobell 1911 in *Oscittatoria*, *T. stytopyæ* Dobell 1911 in *Stytopyga orientalis*, *T. parva* Dobell 1911, *T. minutum* Dobell 1911, *T. dentium* Koch 1877, *T. triccalis* Cohn 1872, *T. intermedium* Dobell 1911 in the human mouth.

A rather doubtful *Treponema* has been described by Dobell in the intestine of *Bufo vulgaris* L.

REFERENCES.

THE most valuable publications for references with regard to this chapter are Archiv für Protistenkunde, Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, and the Journal of Parasitology.

Herpetomonidæ.

- MACKINNON (1909-10). Several papers in Parasitology.
 PATTON, W. S. (1907-12). Numerous papers in the British Medical Journal (1907), Archiv für Protistenkunde (1908-12), Lancet (1909), Parasitology (1909-12).
 PORTER, A. (1909-12). Numerous papers in Parasitology.

Leishmania.

A most complete account of the recent literature on this subject is contained in the Kala-Azar Bulletin, now the Tropical Diseases Bulletin.

Toxoplasma.

- NICOLLE AND MANCEAUX (1908). Comp. Rendus Acad. Sciences, cxlvii.
 NICOLLE AND MANCEAUX (1909). *Ibid.*, cxlviii.
 SPLENDORE (1908). Rivista du Soc. Scient. de Sao Paulo, pp. 109-112.

Babesia.

- CHRISTOPHERS (1907). Scientific Memoirs of India, 29. (*B. canis*.)
 GONDER (1906). Arb. a. d. Kais. Gesundheitsamte, xxiv. 220-226. (Achromaticus.)
 KOCH (1906). Zeitschrift f. Hygiene u. Inf., 1.
 NUTTALL (1904-08). Journal of Hygiene and Journal of Parasitology. (Various papers on *B. canis*, *B. bovis*.)
 THEILER (1904). Journal of the Royal Army Medical Corps. London.
 WILSON AND CHOWNING (1904). Journal of Infectious Diseases, pp. 31-57.

Plasmodidæ.

- ARAGÃO AND NEIVA (1909). Memorias do Institute Oswaldo Cruz.
 BIGNAMI E BASTIANELLI (1893-94). Bollet. R. Acad. Med., xx.
 GRASSI (1901). Die Malaria, Jena.
 LAVERAN (1899). Les Hématozaires Endoglobulaires. Paris.
 MANSON (1896). Lancet, i. 695, 751, 831.
 ROSS (1896). British Medical Journal, February; (1897), *op. cit.*, i. 251, ii. 1786; (1898), *op. cit.*, i. 21; Lancet, ii. 488; (1899), Nature, lx. 322; (1900), Nature, lxi. 522; (1901), Thompson-Yates Reports, iii. 2.
 SCHAUDINN (1904). Arbeit. a. d. Kaiser-Gesundheitsamte, xix. 2, 169.

Spirochætacea—General.

- FANTHAM (1908). Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science, January.
 KEYSSELITZ, G. (1907). Arch. f. Protisten., Bd. x., Heft 1, p. 127.
 LEISHMAN (1908). Journal of the Royal Army Medical Corps, vol. x., April.
 LOWENTHAL (1905). Biolog. Centralb., Bd. i.
 NOVY AND KNAPP (1906). Journal of Infectious Diseases, vol. iii., No. 3.
 PROWAZEK (1906-07). Arb. a. d. Kaiserl. Gesundheits., Bd. xxiii. and xxvi., Heft 1.
 SCHAUDINN (1904). Arb. a. d. Kaiserl. Gesundheits., Bd. xx.
 SCHAUDINN (1907). Arb. a. d. Kaiserl. Gesund., Bd. xxvi., Heft 1.
 SCHAUDINN (October 19, 1905). Deutsche Med. Wochensch.
 SIEBERT (1908). Archiv für Protistenk., Bd. ii., p. 362.

Spiroschaudinnia recurrentis.

- MANTEUFEL (1907). Arb. a. d. Kaiserl. Gesundh., Bd. xxvii., Heft 2, 326.
 OBERMEIER (1873). Centralb. f. die Med. Wiss.
 SCHELLACH (1909). Arbeiten aus dem Kais. Gesundheitsamte.

Spiroschaudinnia duttoni.

- BREINL (1907). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology. No. 3.
 BREINL AND KINGHORN (1906). Memoir XXI. Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine.
 DUTTON AND TODD. Memoir XVII. Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine.
 DUTTON AND TODD (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
 LEVADITI AND MANONELIAN (1907). Annal. de l'Institut Pasteur, xxi.
 ROSS AND MILNE (1904). British Medical Journal, vol. ii., p. 1453.

Spiroschaudinnia novyi.

- MANTEUFEL. *Loc. cit.*
 SCHELLACH. *Loc. cit.*

Spiroschaudinnia carteri.

- CARTER (1882). Spirillum Fever. London.
 MACKIE (1907). Lancet, ii., September 21 and December 14.

Treponema pallidum.

- KRZYSZTAŁOWICZ AND SIEDLECKI (1906). Bull. Inst. Past., vol. iv., p. 204. (Abstract.)
 NOGUCHI (1910-1913). Several important papers in the Journal of Experimental Medicine.
 SCHAUDINN AND HOFFMANN (1905-06). Deutsch. Med. Wochens. Selected Essay New Sydenham Society.
 SCHERESCHESKY (1909). Deutsche Medizinische Wochenschrift, p. 1260.

Treponema pertenue.

- ASHBURN AND CRAIG (1907). Philippine Journal of Science, vol. ii., p. 441.
 CASTELLANI (June, 1905). Journal Ceylon Branch British Medical Association.
 CASTELLANI (November, 1905). British Medical Journal.
 CASTELLANI (1905-1912). Journal Tropical Medicine. Several papers.
 CASTELLANI (1906). Deutsche Med. Woch., xxxii. 132-134.
 CASTELLANI (1907). Trans. Dermatological Congress.
 CASTELLI (1912). Z. f. Chemotherapie.
 HARTMANN (1911). Deut. Med. Woch.
 MACLENNAN (1906). British Medical Journal, ii. 995.
 NICHOLS (1910-1913). Several important publications in the Journal of Experimental Medicine, etc.
 NOGUCHI (1911-1912). Journal of Experimental Medicine.
 RANKEN (1912). British Medical Journal.
 WELLMAN (1905). Journal of Tropical Medicine.

CHAPTER XVII

TELOSPORIDIA AND NEOSPORIDIA

Telosporidia—Gregarinida—Coccidiidea—Hæmogregarinida — Neosporidia—
Myxosporidia — Actinomyxidia — Sarcosporidia — Haplosporidia — Protozoa in certain Sedis—Filterable viruses—References.

PHYLUM III. TELOSPORIDIA.

Definition.—Parasitic plasmodiomata without motile organs, in which the reproductive phase of the life-cycle, which produces spores, is distinct from and follows after the trophic phase.

Remarks.—This phylum is considered by many authorities as being closely related to the Mastigophora.

All the Telosporidia are parasitic, and usually begin their life-cycle as small amœboid bodies, with a single nucleus, called trophozoites, which absorb nutriment and grow, and when fully developed show a cuticle, an ectoplasm, and an endoplasm. The ectoplasm frequently has contractile fibrillæ called myonemes. The endoplasm is granular, and contains a vesicular nucleus with chromatin karyosomes. The fully-grown trophozoite now begins to divide, and is known as a schizont, which reproduces by spore-formation. These spores, called merozoites, complete the cycle of asexual reproduction called schizogony. At some stage in the life-history of the parasite, generally when conditions of life are not favourable, some merozoites are produced, which, instead of developing into trophozoites, become sexual gametocytes, male and female. These forms, which are often resistant, are the means of transmitting the given species from one host to another. They produce gametes, which conjugate and form bodies called sporoblasts, and, lastly, spores called sporozoites.

Classification.—The Telosporidia are divided into three orders : Gregarinida, Coccidiidea, Hæmogregarinida.

ORDER I. GREGARINIDA.

Definition.—Telosporidia, in which only the young trophozoites are intracellular, the fully-grown forms being extracellular.

Reproduction by Schizogony or Sporogony.—The gregarines are essentially parasites of the invertebrata, not being found in true vertebrates, though

known in Amphioxus and Ascidians. They are generally found in the Arthropoda and worms, and appear to be non-pathogenic.

Their life-history may be briefly described as follows: The young trophozoite enters a cell, generally of the alimentary canal, in which it grows, apparently causing considerable damage, for the cell first swells and afterwards degenerates.

In the meanwhile the parasite has found its way either wholly or partially out of the cell, to the remains of which, however, it is attached until all nourishment is extracted, when it becomes cœlozoic—*i.e.*, it leaves the remains of the cell, and dwells either in the alimentary canal, the cœlome, or the blood stream. The young parasite is unicellular, having its cytoplasm divided into ectoplasm and endoplasm. The ectoplasm is hyaline, and when fully developed has three layers: (1) external epicyte, (2) middle sarcocyte, (3) internal myocyte.

The last-named contains contractile fibrils called myonemes. The endoplasm is granular, and contains a well-developed vesicular nucleus. A unicellular gregarine, such as this, belongs to the suborder Acephala, and is illustrated by *Monocystis agilis* Stein, which is found in the vesiculæ seminales of *Lumbricus terrestris*.

On the other hand, in such a gregarine as *Pyxinia jrenzeli* Laveran and Mesnil, a part of the sporozoite grows out from the cell, and into this external portion the nucleus travels. The portion left in the cell is known as the 'epimerite,' while the external portion, growing considerably, is divided by a septum into a 'protomerite' near the cell, and a 'deutomerite' away from the cell.

The parasite in this condition is called a cephalont, and belongs to the suborder Cephalina.

In due course the trophozoite, whether entirely or partially in the cell, is set free, either by bursting its way out, or by a separation between the epi- and proto-merite. The cell now degenerates, and the parasite may be called a sporont. Sporogony takes place by two sporonts or gametocytes lying side by side becoming enclosed in a cyst with two walls—an external epicyst and internal endocyst.

The karyosomes of the nuclei of the gametocytes now break up into chromidia, which collect to form the generative nucleus. This divides by mitosis to form a large number of nuclei, which, travelling to the surface and surrounding themselves with cytoplasm, become detached as gametes, the rest of the cell forming a *nucleus de reliquat* or residual mass. Thus, inside the cyst-walls there are gametes from two separate parasites and two residual masses.

Gametes presumably from different individuals fuse and form a true zygote with a synkaryon. Each zygote represents a sporoblast, and each sporoblast becomes a single spore by the secretion of a chitinous cuticle and the contraction of its protoplasm (called by Minchin the 'sporoplasm'). This sporoplasm divides by amitosis into eight sporozoites and a residual mass. During this process the two residual masses of the original cyst disappear. The cyst now contains only the spores which used to be called pseudonavicellæ. These spores are intended to convey infection to a new host, in the intestine of which they set free the sporozoites, which promptly attack either the cells of the intestine or some other organ, thus completing the cycle of sporogony.

Schizogony.—This is uncommon in the gregarines, being only found in the Schizogregarinidæ. It is typically seen in *Schizocystis*, in which the trophozoite grows into a schizont, whose nucleus divides into a large number of daughter nuclei, round each of which a portion of cytoplasm gathers, forming a merozoite. This, escaping from the schizont, infects another cell, thus completing the cycle of schizogony. Some of the merozoites may develop by sporogony.

Classification.—The gregarines are classified as follows:

SUBORDER I. SCHIZOGREGARINIDA.

Reproduction by schizogony and sporogony.

Genera.—*Schizocystis* Léger 1900, in the intestine of *Ceratopogon*; *Ophryocystis* Schneider 1884, in the Malpighian tubules of beetles.

SUBORDER II. EUGREGARINIDA.

Reproduction as usual by sporogony. Schizogony very rare, if present at all, and only in the earliest cytozoic stages. The Eugregarinida are divided into two tribes.

TRIBE I. ACEPHALINA Kölliker.

Synonym.—*Monocystidea* Stein. No epimerite and no septa.

Genera (eighteen described by Minchin).—*Monocystis* Stein 1848, parasitic in the vesiculæ seminales and body cavities of the Oligochætæ and Cyclopidae; *Zygocystis* Stein 1848, in *Lumbricus agricola*; *Zygosoma* Labbé 1899; *Lankesteria* Mingazzini 1891, in *Ascidians*.

TRIBE 2. CEPHALINA Delage.

Synonym.—*Polycystidea* Stein. With epimerite, and with or without a septum in the body.

SUBTRIBE I. GYMNOSPORA Léger. — Cyst with naked sporozoites (gymnospores).

FAMILY 1. AGGREGATIDÆ Labbé.—**Genus**: *Aggregata* Frenzel 1885.—Sporozoites grouped about residual masses.

FAMILY 2. POROSPORIDÆ Labbé.—Each sporoblast giving rise to numerous sporozoites grouped round a residual mass.

Genus.—*Porospora* Schneider 1875. *P. gigantea* in the lobster.

SUBTRIBE 2. ANGIOSPORA.—Spores well developed.

FAMILY 1. GREGARINIDÆ.—Trophozoites with simple epimerites.

Genera.—*Gregarina* Dufour 1828. Epimerite conical or knobbed. Species found in cockroaches, earwigs, meal-worms, and in the intestines of other insects. *Gamocystis* in the cockroach; also *Eirmocystis*, *Hyalospora*, *Euspora*, *Sphærocystes*, *Cnemidospora*, *Stenophora*.

Other families are Didymophyidæ, Dactylophoridæ, Actinocephalidæ, Acanthosporidæ, Menosporidæ, Stylorhynchidæ, and Doliocystidæ.

ORDER II. COCCIDIIDEA.

Definition.—Telosporidia, parasitic, as a rule, in epithelial cells of vertebrates and invertebrates. Reproduction always by both schizogony and sporogony.

The Coccidiidea were recognized as long ago as 1839 by Hake, who did not know that they were animals, that discovery being made by Remak (1845); while Lieberkühn in 1854 showed that they were allied to Gregarines. Leuckart (1876) gave them the name *Coccidium*, while Schaudinn in 1900 first described a full and complete life-history of *Coccidium schubergi*, which will be taken as the type.

***Coccidium schubergi* Schaudinn 1900.**

Coccidium schubergi begins its life-history in the intestinal cell of the centipede (*Lithobius forficatus* L.) by a sporozoite pressing its anterior end against an intestinal cell, and thus forcing a way into its interior.

Inside this cell it becomes the young trophozoite, an oval body which grows rapidly at the expense of the protoplasm of the cell, and in twenty-four hours attains its full size.

It is now called a schizont, because its nucleus divides into a number of daughter nuclei, which are formed into merozoites in the usual way. These merozoites, set free by the breaking up of the schizont, attack new intestinal cells, thus increasing the infection of the host.

This process cannot, of course, go on for any length of time, for a limit to the nutritive power of the host is reached in five days, when the parasite must attempt to infect a new host, and this is done by sporogony.

Some merozoites now become differentiated into micro- and macro-gametocytes. The former consist of finely granular cytoplasm, with little reserve material, while the latter are bean-shaped and have much food-material. The microgametocyte forms the microgametes by its nucleus becoming irregular, and forming fine achromatic paths through the cytoplasm to the periphery of the parasite, along which chromidia travel from the nucleus.

At first, scattered evenly along the periphery, these chromidia gather into

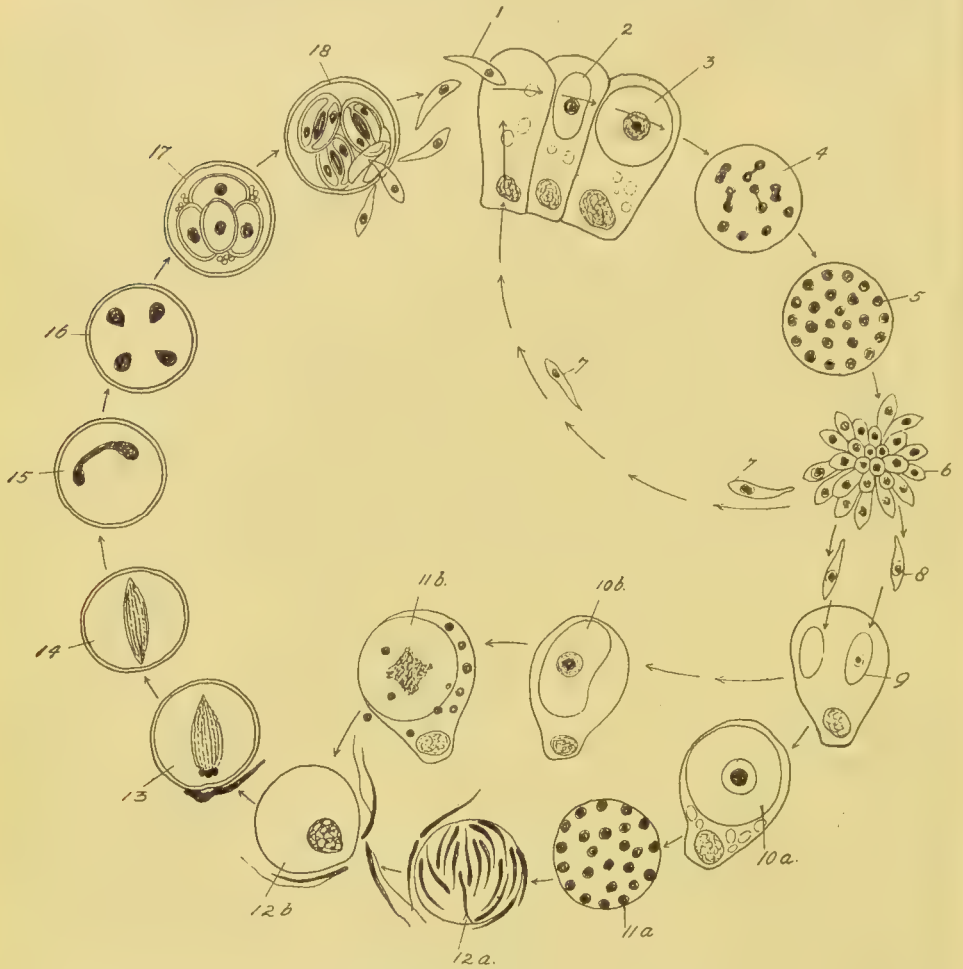


FIG. 133.—DIAGRAM OF THE LIFE-HISTORY OF *COCCIDIUM SCHUBERGI*.
(After Schaudinn.)

1, Sporozoite entering an intestinal canal ; 2-3, trophozoites ; 4-5, schizonts ; 6-8, merozoites ; 9, young gametocyte ; 10a-11a, microgametocyte ; 10b-11b, macrogametocyte ; 12a, microgametes ; 12b, macrogamete ; 13-16, oöcyst ; 17, sporoblasts ; 18, sporozoites.

patches, and finally fuse into masses, enclosing in each a vacuole. The masses of chromatin lengthen, and by bending project from the cytoplasm, which now forms two flagella, whose active movements set free the microgamete.

In the meanwhile the macrogametocyte becomes a macrogamete by expulsion of the karyosome of the nucleus.

Micro- and macro-gametes now fuse and form a zygote with a synkaryon. The oöcyst, as it may be called, now passes out of the body of the host, and

divides into four sporoblasts. Each sporoblast now develops two vacuoles and a cyst-wall, the sporocyst, so that the sporoblast is often called the spore. The nucleus of the spore divides into two, while the two vacuoles fuse and the cytoplasm divides, forming two sporozoites which are capable of infecting a new host, being set free by the acid of the digestive juices.

Sporogony takes about two to three days for completion.

It may be as well at the present time, when so much disputation is taking place *re* Schaudinn's work on trypanosomes, to mention that he worked out this life-history, which has never been refuted, though the parasite was found in company with *C. lacazei* Labbé and *Adelea ovata* H. Schneider.

Classification of the Coccidiidea.—The usual classification is that by Léger in 1900, and is based upon the number of sporozoites in each cyst.

FAMILY 1. ASPOROCYSTIDÆ.—Sporozoites naked, no sporocysts inside the oöcyst.

FAMILY 2. DISPOROCYSTIDÆ.—Oöcyst has two spores.

FAMILY 3. TETRASPOROCYSTIDÆ.—Oöcyst has four spores.

FAMILY 4. POLYSPOROCYSTIDÆ.—Oöcyst has many spores.

FAMILY ASPOROCYSTIDÆ Léger.

The genus included in this family is *Eimeriella* Stiles 1902, of which there is only one species. *Eimeriella nova* Schneider 1881 in the Malpighian tubules of Glomeris.

FAMILY DISPOROCYSTIDÆ Léger.

The genera of this family are : *Cyclospora* A. Schneider 1881 (spores dizoic) ; *Diplospora* Labbé 1893 (spores tetrazoic) ; *Isospora* A. Schneider 1881 (spores polyzoic).

Isospora A. Schneider 1881.

Isospora bigeminum Stiles 1891.

Synonym.—*Cytospermium villorum intestinalium canis et felis* Rivolta 1874.

This parasite lives in the intestinal villi of dogs and cats, and is distinguished because it is small and because it is in pairs, the oöcyst dividing into two equal portions, which become encysted and form two spores.

It is said by Virchow to occur in man, and Railliet and Lucet's case of *Eimeria hominis* and the case described by Grünow are thought by Braun to be examples of this infection.

FAMILY TETRASPOROCYSTIDÆ Léger 1900.

Genus.—*Eimeria* A. Schneider 1874.

Synonym.—*Coccidium* Leuckart 1879 (the dizoic spores are spherical or oval) ; *Crystallospora* Labbé 1896 (the dizoic spores have the form of a double pyramid).

FAMILY POLYSPOROCYSTIDÆ Léger.

Comprises a large number of genera : *Adelea* A. Schneider 1875 (dizoic) ; *Klossia* (tetrazoic) A. Schneider 1875 ; *Minchinia* Labbé 1896 ; *Klossiella* Smith and Johnstone 1902 ; *Barronsia* (monozoic) ; *Benedenia* (trizoic). Of all these genera we are only concerned with *Eimera*.

Eimeria A. Schneider 1875.

Polysporocystidæ with the formation of an oöcyst after fecundation ; sporoblasts in the form of a pyramid ; spores globular or oval, provided with a micropyle.

Eimeria stiedæ Lindemann 1865.

Synonyms.—*Psorospermium cuniculi* Rivolta 1878, *Coccidium oviforme* Leuckart 1879, *C. perforans* Leuckart, *Pfeifferia princeps* Labbé 1896.

This is the common species found in the liver of rabbits. The spores swallowed by the rabbit are opened by the action of the acid of the gastric juice, and the sporozoites set free ascend the bile-duct, and pass into the cells

lining the small bile-ducts. Here they propagate vigorously by schizogony, causing proliferation of the epithelium and connective tissue of the ducts, so that thick-walled nodules, more or less isolated and containing caseous material (consisting of detritus, pus, epithelial cells, and coccidia), are formed. The inflammation may be severe enough to kill the rabbit.

Sporogony proceeds with the formation of macrogametocytes with macrogametes, and the microgametocytes with microgametes, which conjugate and form zygote, sporoblast, spores, and sporozoites.

Eimeria cuniculi has infected man in some five well-known cases: Silcock's case in London; Gaubler's case in Paris; Dressler's case in Prague; Sattler's case in Vienna; and Perls' case in Giessen.

Silcock's case occurred in 1890, when the patient, a female aged fifty, suffered from fever, with enlarged liver and spleen, both of which contained coccidia, the infection of the spleen being probably viâ the blood stream.

Eimeria hominis Rivolta 1878.

Synonyms.—*Coccidium hominis* Rivolta 1878, *C. perforans* Leuckart 1879.

This species is by many parasitologists considered to be the same as *Eimeria stiedæ*. It inhabits the intestinal cells of the rabbit, giving rise to severe diarrhoea and death. Moreover, its cysts are smaller than those of *E. stiedæ*, and more rounded; further, it takes only two to three days for segmentation of the protoplasm of the cysts into sporoblasts, whereas *E. stiedæ* takes two weeks. It has been found in human fæces and in the intestinal cells post mortem.

Under the same term R. Blanchard described certain bodies found by Künstler and Pitres in fluid from the chest of a man employed in working steamboats between Bordeaux and Senegal. Evidently R. Blanchard intended to describe a new species, as *Coccidium* was then the term used for the genus now called *Eimeria*.

ORDER III. HÆMOGREGARINIDA Neveu-Lemaire 1901.

Synonyms.—*Hæmosporidia* Labbé 1894, *Hæmosporea* Minchin 1903.

Definition.—Telosporidia, in which either the gametocytes or the schizonts, or both, are present in red or white cells in the peripheral blood of vertebrates, and in which schizogony takes place either in the cells of the peripheral blood, or in those of some organ, while sporogony takes place in the body of some blood-sucking invertebrate, such as a leech, a tick, a mite, or an insect. Neither schizonts nor sporonts contain hæmozoin.



FIG. 134.—HÆMOGREGARINA CANTLEI SAMBON.

(After Sambon.)

History.—Although the first hæmogregarine was discovered in a frog as far back as 1850 by Chaussat, who thought it was a nematode, it is only quite recently, owing to the labours of Sambon, Miller, Miss Robertson, Christophers and others, that any accurate knowledge has been obtained.

The evolution of the knowledge concerning these parasites may be briefly stated.

Discovered, as mentioned above, by Chaussat, they were next seen by Ray Lankester in 1871, and thought to be a stage in the life-history of the frog trypanosome,

T. (Undulina) rotatorum, and then by Gaule in 1880, who mistook them for cell inclusions. In 1885 Danielewsky first applied the name 'Hæmogregarina' to the parasites he found in the blood of tortoises and lizards. In 1894 Labbé classified them, according to the relationship between the length of the parasite and that of the blood cell, into (1) *Drepanidium*, parasite not more than three-quarters of the length of the host cell; (2) *Karyolysus*, parasite not exceeding host cell in length, and destroying the nucleus;

(3) *Danilewskya*, parasite exceeding the host cell in length, and bent upon itself.

The term *Drepanidium* having been previously employed for one of the Heterokaryota, it was necessary to alter it to *Lankesterella*, and the term *Danilewskya* was also altered by Danilewsky in 1897 to 'Hæmogregarina' (*sensu stricto*); but since Sambon and others have described so many new species this classification no longer stands, nor can a natural arrangement be proposed until the life-histories of the various species are fully known; therefore the suggestion of Laveran is being universally adopted, which consists of arranging them according to the classes, orders, and genera of the hosts, and distinguishing only one genus, *Hæmogregarina* Danilewsky 1885, the various species of which are arranged into four groups: (1) Hæmogregarinida of mammals; (2) Hæmogregarinida of reptiles; (3) Hæmogregarinida of amphibia; (4) Hæmogregarinida of fish. With regard to the Hæmogregarinida of mammals, they were first discovered by Bentley in the blood of a pariah dog (*Canis familiaris*) in Assam, and confirmed by James in 1905. In 1905 Balfour discovered *Hæmogregarinida jaculi* Balfour 1905 in *Jaculus gordonii* in Khartoum, and described the cycle of schizogony; but though numerous experiments were conducted with *Xenopsylla cleopatrae*, species of *Dermanyssus* (mites), and *Clinocoris rotundatus*, only the liberated gametocytes have been traced. A danger is to mistake *Crithidia pulicis* of the flea for a developmental stage of the *H. jaculi*.

In 1905 Christophers discovered *H. gerbilli* in the Indian field-rat (*Gerbillus indicus*), and traced its schizogony and later cyst-formation in a louse (*Hæmatopinus stephensi*); but he did not observe conjugation, nor did he reinfect rats from the louse, and finally in 1907 he appears to think it probable that the cysts he described may have nothing to do with the hæmogregarine.

In 1906 Adie discovered a hæmogregarine in *Epimys rattus*, Balfour one in *E. norvegicus*, Christophers another in *Felis domestica*, Patton another in *Funambulus pennanti*.

In 1907 Christophers traced the sporogony of *H. canis* in *Rhipicephalus sanguineus*. In 1908 Miller contributes a most valuable paper on *H. muris* Balfour 1905, under the term *Hepatozoon perniciosum* Miller 1908, in which he not merely traces out the cycle of schizogony, but also fully that of sporogony. This is the first description of the full life-history of a hæmogregarine ever given. This paper is also of the greatest importance in arranging the classification of the Hæmogregarinida, for, as already stated, Ray Lankester in 1871 believed that *H. minima* might be a stage of *Trypanosoma rotatorum*, and in this was supported by Billet in 1904, who considered that he could infect clean frogs with hæmogregarines by the bites of leeches containing trypanosomes.

Brumpt's experiments in 1904 on the sporogony of *H. bagensis* in the leech (*Placobdella catenigera*) also supports this theory by finding a binucleate condition in the oökinetes. Miss Robertson believes that hæmogregarines have a trypanosoma stage. These observers would therefore classify the Hæmogregarinida with the Binucleata; but against this Brumpt in 1907 has shown that Billet was probably mistaken, for if leeches infected with *T. inopinatum* are placed on a 'clean' frog a trypanosomiasis results, and the fact that though Sambon has often seen hæmogregarines in snakes and lizards, trypanosomes are absent or rare.

The life-history of *H. muris* as worked out by Miller shows no trypanosome stage, and clearly indicates that the Hæmogregarinida belong to the Telosporidia, and are related to the Gregarinida and Coccidiidea, as was pointed out by Laveran in 1898.

With regard to the Hæmogregarinida of reptiles, the most complete work is that of Sambon in 1908 on the parasites in snakes, where a full history will be found. Those which occur in tortoises and crocodiles have been studied by Danilewsky, Castellani and Willey, Miss Robertson, Dobell and others, while Siegel has worked out fully the schizogony and sporogony of *H. stepanovi* in the leech.

The Hæmogregarinida of lizards have been studied by Danilewsky, Laveran,

Minchin, C. França, and others, and those of amphibia by Chaussat, Lankester, Billet, Durham, Brumpt, Labbé, Lesage, and others.

Life-History.—The most accurately known life-history is that given for *H. muris* Balfour by Miller.

Schizogony.—The asexual reproduction takes place in the cells of the liver, in which the young trophozoite appears as a small spherical organism with a

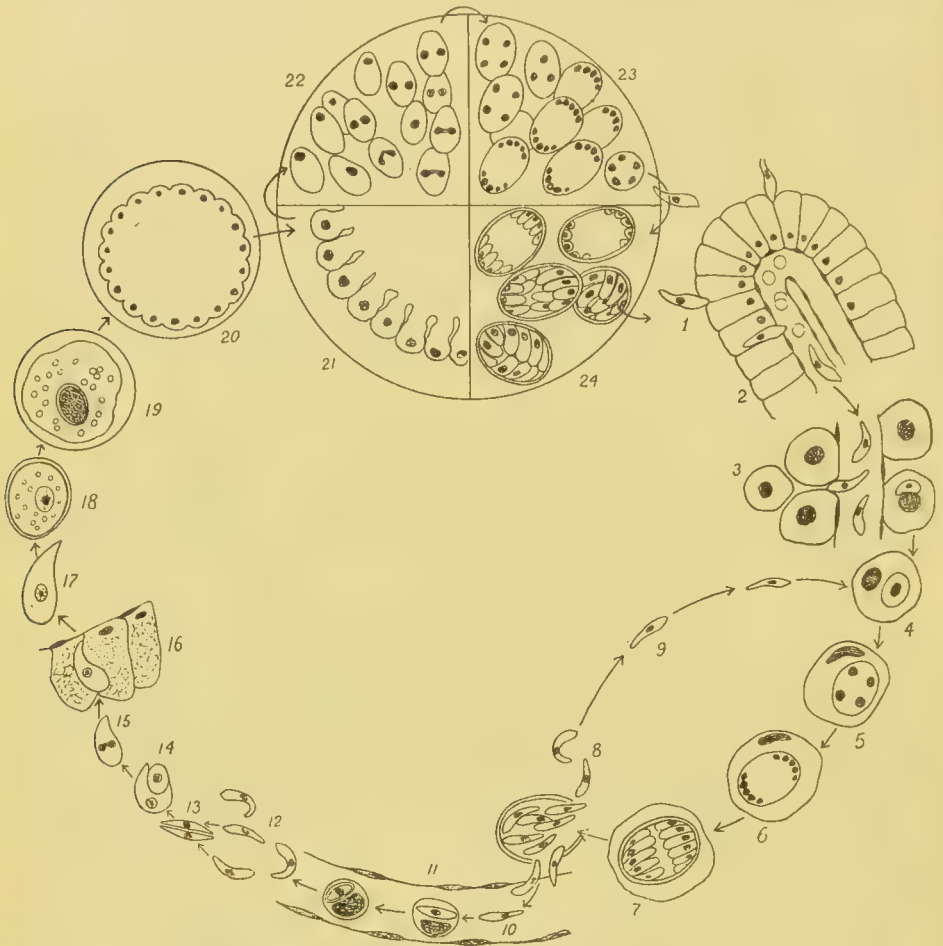


FIG. 135.—LIFE-CYCLE OF *HÆMOGREGARINA MURIS* BALFOUR.

(After Miller.)

1, 2, Free sporozoites in the intestine of the rat penetrating the villus and entering the blood; 3, entering the liver cells; 4-8, schizogony in the liver; 9, merozoite about to reinfect a liver cell; 10-11, merozoite infecting a white blood cell; 12, free vermicules in the stomach of the louse; 13, conjugation; 14, the zygote; 15, oökinete in the stomach; 16, oökinete in the wall of the stomach; 17, oökinete; 18-19, oöcyst; 20, sporoblasts appearing; 21, early sporoblasts; 22, sporoblasts; 23, late sporoblasts; 24, formation of sporozoites.

large vesicular nucleus containing a well-defined karyosome. The trophozoite grows at the expense of the liver cell, the nucleus of which is pushed to one side, and in due course becomes a schizont, which divides into twelve to twenty merozoites, and a 'rest' body.

Some of these merozoites on liberation enter fresh liver cells, and continue

the cycle of schizogony, while others enter mononuclear leucocytes, in which they become encysted, and develop into gametocytes.

Sporogony.—Sexual reproduction takes place in a mite belonging to the Gamasidæ called *Lelaps echidninus* Berlese, which lives on the blood of the rat.

The gametocytes, liberated from the leucocytes by the digestive action of the juices of the mite's gut, arrange themselves in couples, which are at first exactly similar, but which later differentiate into a large encircling form, which is more granular, and which is probably the macrogamete, and a smaller, more rounded, and less granular microgamete. Zygosis now takes place, forming an oökinete, which grows, and leaving the gut by piercing the wall, forces its way into the body cavity, which consists of a series of small spaces between the organs, and further into the sheaths of the muscles, and into the investing membrane of the salivary glands.

In the tissues the oökinete encysts and becomes the oöcyst, which grows rapidly in size, and undergoes nuclear division.

The daughter nuclei migrate to the periphery, which becomes covered with 50 to 100 bud-like projections, in each of which a nucleus is to be found. These buds break off from the central mass, and form the sporoblasts, the nuclei of which divide, forming daughter nuclei, which gather at the poles, while the whole sporoblast encysts. Short rod-like processes of cytoplasm, each containing a nucleus, now break off from the sporoblast, each of which becomes a sporozoite, of which there are on an average sixteen to each sporoblast.

Infection of the rat takes place by ingestion of the mite, when the sporozoites are liberated by the juices of the duodenum,



FIG. 136.—HÆMOGREGARINA VITTATÆ ROBERTSON, SHOWING SCHIZOGONY.

(After Miss Robertson.)



FIG. 137.—HÆMOGREGARINA RAREFACIENS SAMBON, SHOWING MALE AND FEMALE SCHIZONTS.

(After Sambon.)

and become actively motile striated vermicules, which penetrate the intestinal villi, enter the blood stream, and are carried to the liver, into the cells of which they penetrate, and start the cycle of schizogony.

As the mites leave the rats during the day-time, and only feed on them during the night, it is easy to understand the manner in which the disease spreads from the sick to the healthy.

Variations in the Life-Cycle.—The life-history of *H. muris* is peculiarly interesting, because it is fully known, but it is not quite typical for all hæmogregarines, for in it the gametocytes alone are found in the peripheral blood, and they are enclosed in leucocytes.

Other species, however, show marked differences from *H. muris*, for the majority are found in red, not white, corpuscles, while in some the whole process of schizogony is completed in the blood stream, therefore a few more general remarks are necessary to supplement the life-history given above.

The peripheral blood of the vertebrate can contain trophozoites, schizonts, and gametocytes lying either in red or white corpuscles, the two latter being contained in a double capsule, which is probably formed by the parasite, and which is always in close attachment to the nucleus of the host cell.

Schizogony begins with the young trophozoite lying free in the enclosing cell, as an oval, fusiform, or club-shaped mass of cytoplasm with a large, homogeneous nucleus. As this trophozoite grows it becomes encapsuled, and forms the schizont, which, when fully grown, is a large oval or rounded body, with a central nucleus, and with the cytoplasm filled with spherules. This schizont usually lies in an enlarged and dehaemoglobinized cell, in which it is seen to be surrounded by a thick capsule, which shows three definite cleavage lines, of which two cross it transversely a short distance from either pole, while the third is longitudinal.

There are two varieties of schizonts, one which gives rise to relatively few large merozoites called 'macromerozoites,' while the other breaks up into relatively many small micromerozoites.

This differentiation is considered to be a prelude to the formation of macro- and micro-gametocytes. Usually the schizont divides into eight, twelve, or sixteen merozoites, which may escape from the enclosing cell in the peripheral blood, but more generally do so in an organ, such as the liver, lung, or bone-marrow. Other haemogregarines, like *H. jaculi* and *H. muris*, undergo segmentation in the cells of an organ such as the liver.

The gametocytes are easily recognizable from the schizonts, as they lie bent up in the capsule, and because the enclosing cell is not affected by the para-



FIG. 138.—HÆMOGREGARINA
RAREFACIENS SAMBON:
YOUNG GAMETOCYTE.
(After Sambon.)

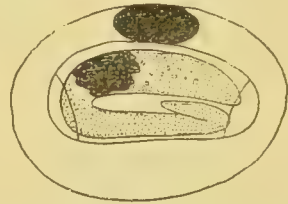


FIG. 139.—HÆMOGREGARINA
SELIGMANNI SAMBON, SHOW-
ING CAPSULE AND CLEAVAGE
LINES.
(After Sambon.)

site. It is not possible at present to differentiate between the macro- and the micro-gametocyte.

In shed blood they quickly escape from the capsule, which may be seen to be double, for Sambon depicts a gametocyte which has escaped from the outer wall of the capsule, but has the inner wall still adherent.

When free, they are seen to be of an elongated, club-shaped form. At the thicker end, which is anterior, there projects a small retractile rostrum or beak, from which a clear line, probably a cytostome or pharynx, runs backwards through the cytoplasm, and ends near the nucleus.

The ectoplasm shows at times a differentiation into three layers—epicyte, sarcocyte, and myocyte—while the endoplasm is granular, and about its middle is found the round or oval nucleus.

According to Sambon, conjugation can be seen taking place in blood spread on an ordinary slide. The further history of the cycle of sporogony is only known in *H. muris* and *H. canis*; the former has already been described, and the latter will be mentioned later.

Recently Henry has shown that Balfour's infective granule is a phase in the life-history of *H. simondi*. Haemogregarines can be cultivated in Nicolle's blood-agar medium.

No hæmogregarines are at present known in birds or in man, but some peculiar parasites have been seen by Castellani and Willey and others in the



FIG. 140.—HÆMOGREGARINA MIRABILIS CASTELLANI AND WILLEY, SHOWING THE ESCAPE OF THE GAMETOCYTE FROM ITS CAPSULE.

(After Castellani and Willey.)

peripheral blood of man (p. 442); whether these will prove to be hæmogregarines, or whether they belong to some other order of the protozoa, remains to be seen.

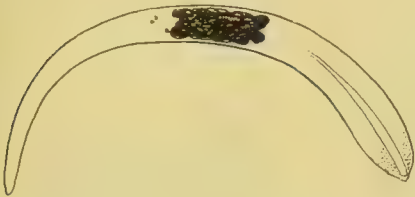


FIG. 141.—HÆMOGREGARINA SELIGMANNI SAMBON: FREE SPORONT.

(After Sambon.)

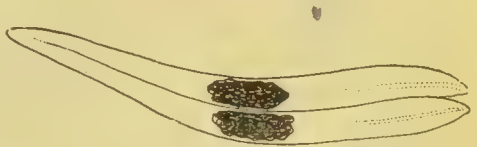


FIG. 142.—HÆMOGREGARINA SELIGMANNI SAMBON.
According to Sambon, this figure probably represents conjugation.

(After Sambon.)

Classification.—As already mentioned, the species of the genus *Hæmogregarina* Danilewsky 1885 will be arranged according to their hosts.

HÆMOGREGARINES OF THE MAMMALIA.

Hæmogregarina muris Balfour 1905.

Synonyms.—*Leucocytozoon muris* Balfour 1905; *Hepatozoon perniciosum* Miller 1908.

H. muris is found in the mononuclear leucocytes of *Epimys norvegicus* in Khartoum, and in white rats in Washington, D.C. Its schizogony and sporogony in *Lelaps echidninus* have already been described (p. 424). It caused anæmia, severe illness, and death in the rats.

Hæmogregarina canis James 1905.

Synonym.—*Leucocytozoon canis* James 1905.

Hæmogregarina canis was discovered by Bentley in the blood of a pariah dog, *Canis familiaris*, in Assam, and this discovery was fully confirmed by James in 1905. Christophers was the first investigator to trace out its full life-history in 1906-07.

It appears to be common in pariah dogs in Assam and Madras, but more particularly in the puppies and less common in the adults. It is also found in Ceylon, and, according to Dutton, Todd, and Tobey, it probably occurs in dogs in the Gambia.

Morphology.—The parasite is seen in the white corpuscle of the peripheral blood as an oval, unpigmented mass which is difficult to stain, and which lies in two envelopes—an outer formed from the cytoplasm of the corpuscle, and

nuclear cell, which are the parents of the transitional cells, which are looked upon as the parents of the polymorphonuclear leucocytes, but when infected by the parasite the proper development is not completed, and hence the appearance in the peripheral blood of a peculiar type of cell containing the encapsulated parasite. The young trophozoite is seen in the liver and spleen as well as in the bone-marrow, but is rare in the peripheral blood. This trophozoite grows into the encapsulated form just described, all stages between the two having been seen by Christophers, and in this way the cycle of schizogony is completed.

Sporogony.—The tick *Eurhipicephalus sanguineus* Latreille is very common on the dogs in Madras. The female takes from two to four days to suck the blood, which it only does once in its lifetime, but most of the blood is taken in the last twenty-four hours. After sucking the blood it drops off, and when examined at different periods the following sporogony can be made out:

The encapsulated forms already described as existing in the blood pass into the stomach, and the parasite escapes from the corpuscle, but is still inside its own envelope.

By elongation and passage of the protoplasm behind the nucleus, the oval parasite becomes a vermicule. These vermicules must probably be looked upon as macrogametocytes and microgametocytes. In any case they enter young epithelial cells lining the lumen of the gut, in whose cytoplasm they divide by fission, which in many cases takes place several times, resulting in the secondary formation of four to eight vermicules lying in a pocket in the cytoplasm of the cell. Two of these secondary vermicules, which apparently, as a rule, do not differ in appearance, conjugate, and the nuclei fuse, and then follows a throwing out of two large masses of chromatin from the nucleus and the separation of a portion of cytoplasm. The former may represent reduction, and the latter the separation of the body of the microgamete. Anyway, as the result of this process there is formed an oöcyst with a synkaryon, and therefore the conjugation results in a true zygosis. The oöcyst, still embedded in the epithelial cell, grows rapidly, and has a central clear area and outer rim of protoplasm, with chromatin diffused in irregular masses near the periphery. When about $14\ \mu$ in diameter, the oöcyst divides into twelve to fourteen sporozoites (or sporoblasts), which rather resemble vermicules, but differ by being more globular and having a short oval nucleus. These sporozoites escape into the lumen of the gut of the tick.

Whether these bodies are sporozoites or sporoblasts is not known; neither is it known how they get into the dog so as to complete the cycle of sporogony. In other words, there is a great gap in the cycle of sporogony at this point.

Hæmogregarina bovis Marfoglio and Carpano 1906.

In *Bos taurus* in Abyssinia. The parasites are 7 to $10\ \mu$ in length, and 1.5 to $2\ \mu$ in breadth, and possess rounded ends.

Hæmogregarina gerbilli Christophers 1905.

Found in the Indian field-rat, *Gerbillus indicus*, in which it produces only a little anæmia. It lies in cysts in enlarged pale blood corpuscles as a vermicule with a bent tail, and has a median nucleus and some chromatin dots. In the louse *Hæmatopinus stephensi*, he describes the parasite as escaping from its cyst and becoming a free vermicule, which gets in the coelome, and there encysts and becomes a large oöcyst, growing up to $350\ \mu$ in diameter. This oöcyst divides into numerous sporoblasts, which contain six to eight crescentic sporozoites. These, when free, appear as sausage-like bodies, 15 by $4\ \mu$, with a distinct nucleus.

There is, however, some doubt as to whether these cysts are really developed from the hæmogregarine.

Hæmogregarina jaculi Balfour 1905.

Synonym.—*H. balfouri* Laveran 1905.

This parasite has been found in the jerboa (*Jaculus gordonii*) at Khar-toum, and in *J. orientalis* in Tunis. It appears as a pale hyaline, homogeneous body, with the narrower end bent on itself, lying in a decolourized erythrocyte.

The trophozoite is found in a liver cell as an oblong parasite lying in a cavity. This body can divide into three young forms, which presumably can grow into schizonts in liver cells. The schizont divides into a large number of merozoites, leaving no residual mass of undivided cytoplasm. The merozoites probably infect the red blood cells, and after a time can escape into the liquor sanguinis as free trophozoites, and invade the liver cells.

What happens to the free vermicle is not known.

Hæmogregarina funambuli Patton 1906.

Synonym.—*Leucocytozoon funambuli* Patton 1906.

This parasite was found by Patton in the large mononuclear leucocytes of *Funambulus pennatii* (the Kathiawar palm-squirrel).

It is found in cysts in the leucocytes, and as free forms in the plasma. No evidence of schizogony could be found. In the gut of the louse (*Hæmatopinus* sp.) parasitic on these squirrels vermicules could be found, and also in the cœlome, but no further development took place.

Hæmogregarina ratti Addie 1906.

Synonym.—*H. ratti* Addie 1906.

This is a hæmogregarine found in the leucocytes of *Epimys rattus*.

Hæmogregarina felis Christophers 1906.

Like *H. canis*, only found in cats. It was discovered by Patton. Schizogony and sporogony unknown.

HÆMOGREGARINES OF REPTILIA.

Hæmogregarines of the Crocodilia.

H. hankini Simond 1901, in *Gavialis gangeticus* Gmel.; *H. crocodilinarum* Börner 1901, in *Osteotæmus tetraspis* Cope, and in *C. cataphoractes* Cuv.

Hæmogregarines of the Chelonia.

A very large number of hæmogregarines are known in Chelonia, but the best-studied life-history is that of *H. stepanovi*.

Hæmogregarina stepanovi Danilewsky 1889.

H. stepanovi is a parasite in the red blood corpuscles of tortoises—e.g., *Emys orbicularis* L. and *Cistudo*.

It appears in two forms—one kidney-shaped, and the other long and thin and bent upon itself.

The young trophozoite is club-shaped, and grows into the broad kidney form, which in the bone-marrow, liver, or spleen breaks up into merozoites, which, escaping from the red cell, complete the cycle by entering new cells.

The trophozoite grows into a large oval form, which elongates until it gives rise to the long thin form which is bent upon itself. If blood containing this form is sucked by a leech (*Placobdella catenigera* Moqu Tand), it escapes from the corpuscle in the intestine, and, entering between the epithelial cells, develops into a macrogamete or a microgamete, and forms an oökinete, which wanders into the bloodvessels around the intestine, and so gets to the pharyngeal glands, in which it becomes an oöcyst forming numerous sporoblasts and sporozoites, which complete the cycle of sporogony by entering the tortoise

when it is again bitten by the leech. There is also evidence of the infection of the ova of the leech in the finding of sporozoites in the pharyngeal glands of immature embryo leeches.

Hæmogregarina nicoriæ Castellani and Willey 1904.

This parasite is common in the tortoises (*Nicoria trijuga* Schweigg) which are found in the ditches and marshy lands round Colombo, and also in Colombo Lake. The young trophozoite grows into the schizont, which divides into merozoites.

Other parasites are: *H. laverani* Simond 1901, in *Emyda granosa* Schoepff; *H. mesnili* Simond 1901, in *Kachugatectum* Gray; *H. billeti* Simond 1901, in *Trionyx cartilagineus* Boddert; *H. stepanoviana* Laveran and Mesnil 1902, in

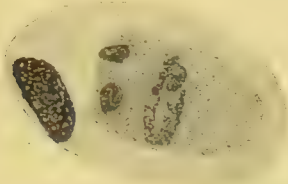


FIG. 144.—HÆMOGREGARINA VITTATÆ ROBERTSON: A BROAD FORM, SHOWING PECULIAR RED BODIES.

(After Miss Robertson.)



FIG. 145.—HÆMOGREGARINA VITTATÆ ROBERTSON: GAMETOCYTE.

(After Miss Robertson.)

Damonia reevesii; *H. vara* Laveran and Mesnil 1902, in *Damonia reevesii*; *H. mauvetania* Sargent 1904, in *Testudo ibera* Pall.; *H. bagensis* Ducloux 1904, in *Clemmys leprosa* Schweigg. Its sporogony is said to occur in *Placobdella catemnigera* Moqu Tand. *H. vittatæ* Robertson in *Emyda vittata* (Figs. 136, 144, and 145).

Hæmogregarines of the Ophidia.

The hæmogregarines of Ophidia are numerous, but their life-history has not been properly studied. They have mostly been described by Sambon.

Hæmogregarina mirabilis Castellani and Willey 1904 (Fig. 140).

H. mirabilis is a parasite in the red cells of *Tropidonotus piscator* Schn.

The trophozoite is vermicular and large (12 μ), and stains uniformly blue, leaving no clear pole. The nucleus is dense, and placed near the anterior end, and is enclosed in a well-developed cytostome, which is stippled with Schüffner's dots.

Other forms are: *H. pythonis* Billet 1895, in *Python reticularis* Schn.; *H. pococki* Sambon and Seligmann 1907, in *P. molurus* L.; *H. schattocki* Sambon and Seligmann 1907, in *P. spilotes* Lacep.; *H. najæ* Laveran 1902, in *Naja tripudians* Merr; *H. mocassini* Laveran 1902, in *Ancistrodon piscivorus* Pal.; *H. crotali* Laveran 1901, in *Crotalus confluentis*; *H. seligmanni* Sambon 1907, in *Lachesis mutus*; *H. zamenis* Laveran 1902, in *Zamenis hippocrepis* L.; *H. masoni* Sambon and Seligmann 1907, in *Zamenis flagelliformis* L.; *H. refringens* Sambon and Seligmann 1907, in *Pseudaspis cana* L.; *H. rarefaciens* Sambon and Seligmann 1907, in *Coluber corais* Holb.; *H. cantliei* Sambon 1907, in *Eryx conicus*; *H. terzii* Sambon 1907, in the boa-constrictor; and many others.

Hæmogregarines of the Sauria.

The best known of these is *H. lacertarum* Danilewsky 1885, in the red cells of *Lacerta muralis* Laur., *L. viridis* Laur., *L. agilis* L., and *L. ocellata* Daud.

The young trophozoite grows into a schizont, which is enclosed in a cyst, and which breaks up into merozoites in the liver, spleen, or kidney.

Among the merozoites there may be macromerozoites or micro-merozoites, which are thought to be precursors of the macro- and micro-gametocytes which develop in *Ixodes ricinus* L. This tick may infect the lizard in the adult stage, though this must be rare, as it usually attacks mammals, and then only by its nymphæ and larvæ.

A number are described: *H. thomsoni* Minchin 1907, in the Himalaya lizard (*Agama tuberculata*); *H. schaudinni* C. França, in *Lacerta ocellata* Daud.

HÆMOGREGARINES OF THE AMPHIBIA.

The best studied of these is *Hæmogregarina minima* Chaussat.

Synonyms.—*Drepanidium ranarum* Lankester, *Laverania ranarum* Grassi, *H. ranarum* Kruse, *Lankestellera ranarum* Labbé.

This parasite is found in the red cells, leucocytes, and tissue cells of *Rana esculenta* L.

Schizogony takes place in the spleen, liver, kidney, and bone-marrow, where the cytocysts containing round schizonts, which break up into five to eight macromerozoites (5 to 8 μ) or numerous micromerozoites (3 to 4 μ).

The sporont is club-shaped, and sporogony takes place, according to Billet, in the leech (*Helobdella*), but his account is very doubtful, and will require confirmation.

Hintze gives a quite different development in the intestine of the frog, but it is possible that he mistook a coccidial parasite for the sporogenic stages.

Durham notes a *Drepanidium* (hæmogregarine) in the blood of a toad in Para, and a *Dactylosoma* (Labbé) in the internal organs—the former is the schizont, and the latter the sporont—and found evidences of conjugation and cyst-formation in ticks fed on these toads.

H. splendens Labbé 1908 is found in *Rana esculenta* in Portugal. *H. leptodactyli* Lesage 1908 is found in *Leptodactylus ocellatus* in Argentina.

HÆMOGREGARINES OF THE PISCES.

Fish of all kinds and in all parts of the world appear to contain these parasites.

Hæmogregarina simondi Laveran and Mesnil 1901.

H. simondi is a parasite in *Solea vulgaris* (the sole). Schizogony takes place in the red corpuscles, the schizont dividing longitudinally into two, four, or eight merozoites. Sporogony takes place in *Platybdella soleæ* Kröger, a leech found on the sole in which oökinetes have been found.

Hæmogregarina anarrhichadis Henry 1912.

H. anarrhichadis is found in the catfish *Anarrhichas lupus*.

Other fish hæmogregarines are: *H. bigemina* Laveran and Mesnil 1901 in *Blennius pholis*, *H. quadrigemina* in *Callionymus lyra*, *H. platessæ* Lebaillly 1904 in *Pleuronectes platessa*, *H. rovigensis* Minchin and Woodcock 1910 in *Trigla lineata*.

PHYLUM IV. NEOSPORIDIA.

Definition.—Parasitic plasmodiomata, without motile organs, in which spore-formation and trophic growth proceed simultaneously.

The Neosporidia are protozoa in which reproduction and growth go on together. In the Telosporidia the trophozoite grows into the schizont which divides into spores; in the Neosporidia growth and spore-formation go on together; but, as in the case of all attempts

at classification, there are exceptions, for the trophozoite may grow into the schizont, and then divide.

It appears as though the Neosporidia were evolved from a sarco-dinal ancestor.

They are divided into four orders : (1) Myxosporidia, (2) Actinomyxidia, (3) Sarcosporidia, (4) Haplosporidia ; and, in addition, there are a number of parasites belonging evidently to the protozoa, which cannot easily be classified, and are therefore placed in an addendum to the Neosporidia as *Protozoa incertæ sedis*.

ORDER I. MYXOSPORIDIA Bütschli.

Neosporidia with spore-formation commencing early in the amœboid trophozoite. Each spore has one or more polar capsules.

The Myxosporidia are subdivided into :—

Suborder I. Phænocystes Gurley. **Synonym.**—Myxosporidia (*sensû stricto*). Spores with two to four large, clearly visible polar capsules.

Suborder II. Cryptocystes Gurley. **Synonym.**—Microsporidia (Balbiani). Spores with one minute polar capsule, which is only rendered visible by treatment with reagents.

SUBORDER I. PHÆNOCYSTES.

Phænocystes comprise the true Myxosporidia, being usually found in Teleostean fish, though they may occur in elasmobranchs, amphibia, and reptiles.

In fish they have long been known as psorosperms, being found in the bile-passages, the urinary organs, the muscles, and the nervous system.

The amœboid trophozoite has a differentiation of its cytoplasm into endo- and ecto-plasm, and moves about by pseudopodia. Spore-formation begins early by a concentration of the cytoplasm around one of the nuclei of the trophozoite. This concentrated area is marked off by a capsule, and is the pansporoblast. The nucleus of the pansporoblast divides repeatedly, after which the cytoplasm splits into two masses—the sporoblasts—each of which is covered by a cuticle and contains three nuclei.

The cytoplasm of the sporoblast now divides into three areas around the nuclei. One of these areas is large, and is called the sporoplasm, while the other two are small, and form the polar capsules. Each spore, therefore, contains two polar capsules and one mass of sporoplasm, which represents a single sporozoite. Each polar capsule develops a spirally coiled thread. A spore escapes when the parent trophozoite dies, and then finds its way out of its host by the bile or urine, or through the tissues into the alimentary canal. For further development it must be swallowed by another host, in whose alimentary canal the threads of the polar capsules are extruded, fixing the little spore, which bursts and allows the amœboid sporozoite to escape and go on its travels in search of a suitable tissue. Perhaps *en route* it conjugates with another sporozoite ; if so, this is not known. While sporogony is preparing, schizogony may take place by plasmotomy, which is the division of the multinuclear trophozoite into two or more forms.

It will thus be seen that growth, plasmotomy (schizogony), and spore-formation (sporogony) go on simultaneously.

Classification—Disporea Doflein.—Phænocystes with two spores.

FAMILY.—Ceratomyxidæ Thélohan.

Genera.—*Ceratomyxia*, *Leptotheca*.—Parasitic in fish and frogs.

Polysporea Doflein.—Phænocystes with more than two spores.

FAMILY 1.—Myxidiidæ Thélohan.

Genera.—*Sphærospora*, *Myxidium*.

FAMILY 2.—Chloromyxidæ Thélohan.

FAMILY 3.—Myxobolidæ Thélohan.

SUBORDER II. CRYPTOCYSTES.

This order is divided by Doflein and Perez into :—

Tribe 1. Monosporogenea Perez.—Trophozoite becomes a single pansporoblast (sporont), which produces a single spore.

Genus.—*Nosema* Nägeli.

Tribe 2. Oligisporogenea Doflein.—Trophozoite becomes a single pansporoblast (sporont), which produces four to eight spores.

Tribe 3. Polysporogenea Doflein.—Trophozoite becomes numerous pansporoblasts (sporont), which produce many spores.

TRIBE I. MONOSPOROGENEA.

This tribe includes *Nosema bombycis* Nägeli 1857, which is the cause of pébrine, the silkworm disease. *N. apis* Zander 1909 was shown to be the cause of microsporidiosis in bees in England by Fantham and Porter.

TRIBE 2. OLIGOSPOROGENEA.

This includes the genus *Gurleya* Doflein, *Thélohania* Henneguy, and *Pleistophora* Gurley.

TRIBE 3. POLYSPOROGENEA.

This includes the genera of *Glugea* Thélohan, and *Myxocystes* Mrazek, of which *Glugea anomala* Moniez is a parasite of the stickleback.

Microsporidium polyedricum Bolle, a doubtful species, is said by Perroncito to occur in man.

ORDER II. ACTINOMYXIDIA.

These are parasites in the Tubificidæ of the oligochaete worms, and need no concern us.

ORDER III. SARCOSPORIDIA.

Definition.—Neosporidia in which the young trophozoite is, with rare exceptions, found in the muscle-fibre of warm-blooded animals. Spore-formation commences early, and proceeds during the whole growth of the trophozoite, which may attain a very large size, when it is covered by two coats, the inner of which is prolonged internally through the parasite dividing it into a series of chambers.

The Sarcosporidia, discovered by Miescher in 1843, are very common parasites, and in the form of *Sarcocystis tenella* may be seen by the practitioner in the tropics in meat sent as food to gaols and hospitals.

Two genera are known : (1) *Sarcocystis*, (2) *Rhinosporidium*.

I. *Sarcocystis* Lankester 1882.

Though a common parasite, its life-history is by no means well known. The youngest form is the trophozoite described by Bertram, which lies in a muscle-fibre, and consists of cytoplasm united by a cuticle, and containing several mononuclear pansporoblasts. The next stage is more advanced, for in this the trophozoite has grown considerably, and now consists of two coats—an outer, radially striated, and an inner, homogeneous, which is prolonged externally into filaments and internally into a series of septa, marking out chambers, each of which contains one pansporoblast. Internal to this coat is a layer of cytoplasm forming the endoplasm of the parasite.

The poles of the parasite consist of undifferentiated endoplasm, and form the areas of growth of the young trophozoite. The pansporoblast breaks up into a large number of spores.

The third stage is reached when the parasite has grown so much that it has stretched the muscle-fibre, in which it is lying, into a thin sheath covering it, and therefore now appears to lie between the muscle-fibres. The endoplasmic layer extends all round the interior of the parasite, so that the pansporoblasts are formed from



FIG. 146.—*SARCOCYSTIS TENELLÆ*
BUBALI: YOUNG FORM.

the whole periphery, and therefore the youngest forms are in this position, while, farther in, chambers with the fully-developed pansporoblasts are found, and, still farther in, is the centre of the parasite, filled by a granular substance formed from broken-down and dead spores which have been too long in existence.

As to the spores, a curious point to be noted is that some observers only describe gymnosporos, while others only describe chlamydo-



FIG. 147.—*SARCOCYSTIS TENELLÆ*
BUBALI IN MEAT.

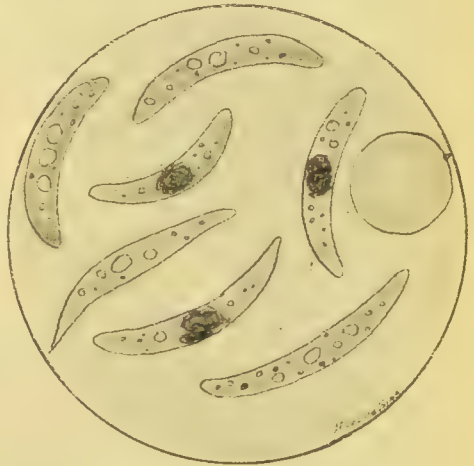


FIG. 148.—*SARCOCYSTIS* SPORES
FOUND IN THE BLOOD OF *BOS INDICUS*
BY CASTELLANI AND STURGESS.

spores. Minchin suggests that this is because parasites in different stages of their life-history have been examined, and he looks upon the gymnosporos as merozoites and the chlamydospores as spores, and these views are strongly supported by Korté's description of a form in *Macacus rhesus*.

The merozoites are crescent-shaped, naked spores, from 1 to 12 μ in length, according to the species, consisting of a finely granular

protoplasm with a nucleus, some granules, and one or two vacuoles. They are thought to be the means by which the parasite spreads itself in its host, especially as they are motile by gliding, corkscrew, or amoeboid movements.

The spores are from 3 to 14 μ long in *Sarcocystis tenella*, with one extremity rounded and the other pointed. They are curved, and surrounded by a thin membrane. The pointed third of the spore is spirally striated, due to fine folds in the outer capsule, while the blunt third contains a nucleus. It is obvious that this resembles the spore of a myxosporidian, and, in fact, Van Eecke says that one, two, or even three filaments issue from a spore. The spores can be seen in the peripheral blood at times.

It is thought that these spores spread the infection to another host, but in what manner is not clear. Perrin has recently suggested that the parasite may be transmitted by the larvæ and imagines of the blow-fly (*Calliphora*) or the flesh-fly (*Sarcophaga*).

It is true that Smith has infected (after a long incubation) mice by feeding them on the flesh of infected mice, but that, of course, might simply be by the merozoites, and would in any case not explain how herbivorous animals are infected. Our feeding experiments with a dog were not successful.

Pathogenicity.—*Sarcocystis tenellæ bubali* is very common in the buffalo-meat in Ceylon, and frequently causes inquiries to be made. It appears as white particles, called by the native butchers 'milk nerves,' lying among the muscular fibres of tongue, larynx, diaphragm, and skeletal muscles. This ingestion of infected meat has apparently no deleterious effect on man, but the spores may be the cause of irregular fever.

Classification.—A number of species are recognized :—

1. *Sarcocystis miescheriana* Kühn 1865, found in the pig.
2. *S. bertrami* Doflein 1901, in the horse.
3. *S. tenellæ* Railliet 1886, in the sheep. *S. tenellæ bubali*, in the Ceylon buffalo. Vuillemin has described a case of this infection in man.
4. *S. blanchardi* Doflein 1901, in cattle.
5. *S. lindemanni* Rivolta 1878.—This species has been found in man. They were first described indefinitely by Lindemann in 1868, in the myocardium and on the valves of the heart of a person who had died of dropsy. They were said to be 3 millimetres in length and 1·5 millimetres in breadth, but it is very doubtful what these really were.

Rosenberg, in 1902, reports a most doubtful case of a cyst in a papillary muscle in a person who died from pleuritis and endocarditis. Kartulis described them in the muscular system and liver (most doubtful) of a person who died from multiple abscesses in the liver and muscles. The man was a Sudanese. Koch, in 1887, described an undoubted case in Egypt.

Baraban and St. Remy, in 1894, described them in the laryngeal muscles of a man who had been executed. This description is not to be doubted. The parasite is described as being 1·6 millimetres long, and about 0·17 millimetre in width.

6. *S. hueti* Blanchard 1885, in the seal.

7. *S. kortéi* Castellani and Chalmers 1909.—This parasite, found by Korté in the thigh muscles of *Macacus rhesus*, is peculiar in that the inner coat was not continued into the cytoplasm of the trophozoite, and the endoplasm contained only gymnosporozoites (merozoites), and no pansporoblasts or alveolar

network. The spores contained nothing but a nucleus, no cell membrane or other structure being visible. There were no signs of any reaction on the part of the tissues.

8. *S. aramidis* Splendore 1907.—Parasite in *Aramidis saracura*, a Brazilian bird.

9. *S. ammodromi* Splendore 1907.—*Miescheria ammodromi* Splendore 1907. Mesnil says it is not generic, and perhaps not specific. It is found in a Brazilian bird, *Ammodromus manimbe*.

2. *Rhinosporidium* Minchin and Fantham 1905.

Definition.—Sarcocystidæ with well-defined sporoblast.

Rhinosporidium seeberi Wernicke 1900.

Synonym.—*Rhinosporidium kinealyi* Minchin and Fantham 1905.

Rhinosporidium was discovered in 1896 by Dr. Guillermo Seeber in Buenos Ayres in a nasal polyp in a young man of nineteen years of age. In 1900 he published a description of the parasite, and in the same year Wernicke gave it the name of *Coccidium seeberi*.

Kinealy, in 1903, reported to the Laryngological Society a peculiar case of polypus growing from the septum of the nose of an Indian in Calcutta as a pedunculated vascular growth resembling a raspberry in appearance by having whitish spots on the general red surface. On section, this tumour was found to have peculiar bodies embedded in it.

It was then carefully examined and described by Minchin and Fantham, who came to the conclusion that it was a haplosporidian, and named it *Rhinosporidium kinealyi*.

In 1905 Nair of Madras came across a similar polypus in several people who all came from the small native State of Cochin on the west coast of India. These polypi have been carefully described by Beattie in 1906. Castellani and Chalmers have found it in polypi in Ceylon.

Morphology.—On cutting into the polypus it is noticed that there are minute dots visible to the naked eye, and capable of being dissected out. These dots are cysts.

When examined with the microscope, it is seen that the growth is covered by stratified pavement epithelium, which shows signs of proliferation and invasion by polymorphonuclear leucocytes. Under this epithelium there is a stroma formed of delicate fibrous tissue, myxomatous in places, and cellular at other spots. The cysts were found to be oval, round tubular, branched or irregular bodies, lying below the epithelium principally, but also found in hæmorrhages



FIG. 149.—RHINOSPORIDIUM SEEBERI WERNICKE.

(From a nasal polypus in a case in Ceylon; schematic, and highly magnified.)

and in cell collections. The wall of the cyst is generally thin, and has either an opening or a conical elevation at one point. It consists of two layers—a thinner external and thicker internal coat. The smaller cysts, from 10 to 30 μ in diameter, contained undifferentiated protoplasm with a vesicular nucleus containing a nucleolus. The larger cysts had one or more definite chromatic masses. A fully-developed cyst is lined with protoplasm, in which young pansporoblasts are forming, while the centre of the parasite is full of old pansporoblasts, separated from one another by an indefinite framework continuous with the capsule. A young pansporoblast is seen to be a small oval or rounded mass of cytoplasm with a single nucleus. This body grows, and becomes surrounded by a membrane, while its nucleus divides by amitosis into four to sixteen spores, each of which has a very thin wall and a central nucleus. The pansporoblasts and spores are set free by rupture of the cyst, and may be surrounded by polymorphonuclear leucocytes, thus forming minute abscesses, or may be engulfed by mononuclear leucocytes, or may grow into parasites, or escape from the host in the nasal secretion. The method of infection is not known.

The framework inside the cyst separating the pansporoblasts indicates that *Rhinosporidium* belongs to the Sarcosporidia, and not to the Haplosporidia.

Pathogenicity.—The pathology appears to be a proliferation of the submucosa and mucosa of the nose, brought about by the irritation of the parasite.

ORDER IV. HAPLOSPORIDIA Caullery and Mesnil 1899.

Neosporidia with very simple life-history and undifferentiated cell-plasma, without septum and with spores of simple structure, with one nucleus, and no polar capsules.

The Haplosporidia are characterized by the simplicity of their life-cycle, which begins with a mononuclear or binuclear trophozoite, which may encyst, and in any case grows larger and larger, while its nucleus divides into several nuclei, so that a multinucleated mass or schizont is formed. This escapes from its cyst and divides up into merozoites, either directly or after plasmotomy, each of which becomes a trophozoite, thus completing schizogony. Sporogony is unknown.

They are parasites of fishes and invertebrates.

Classification.—FAMILY 1. HAPLOSPORIDIÆ Caullery and Mesnil.—Spores with double envelope and opening.

Genus 1. *Haplosporidium*.—Spores closed by a valve. In annelids.

Genus 2. *Urosporidium*.—Spores open. In annelids.

FAMILY 2. BERTRAMIIDÆ.—Spore envelope without opening.

Genus 1. *Bertramia*.—Stomach of fish.

Genus 2. *Ichthyosporidium*.—In tumours of fish (Figs. 150-155).

FAMILY 3.—CÆLOSPORIDIIDÆ.—Spores nude.

Genus 1. *Polagarynum*.

Genus 2. *Blastulidim*.

Protozoa Incertæ Sedis.

Cytoryctes (Doubtful Species).

This organism can be found as corroid bodies in the smears taken from the heart muscle of animals suffering from foot and mouth disease.

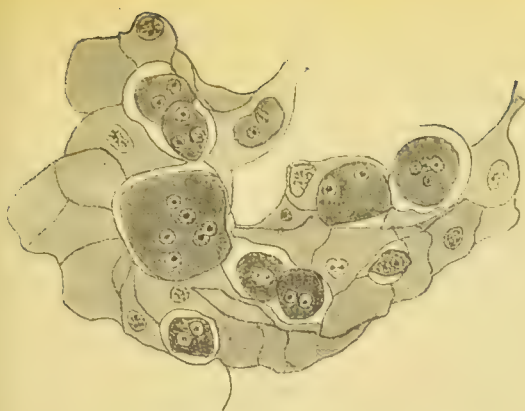


FIG. 150.—A SERIES OF SMALL ICHTHYOSPORIDIA ENCLOSED IN CONNECTIVE TISSUE.

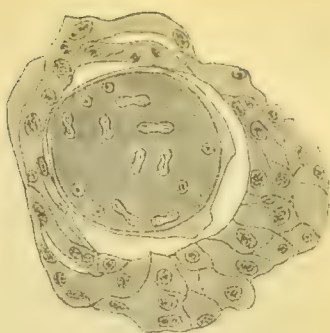


FIG. 151.—A MEDIUM-SIZED ICHTHYOSPORIDIUM IN A NEST OF CONNECTIVE TISSUE.

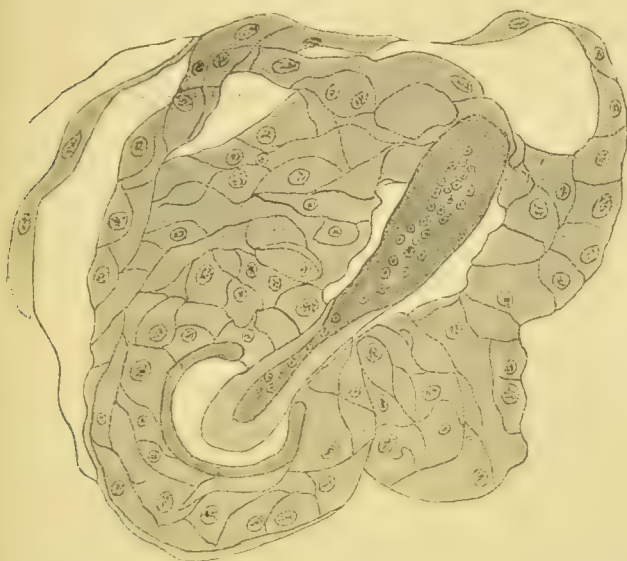


FIG. 152.—ESCAPE OF THE ICHTHYOSPORIDIUM FROM ITS CYST.



FIG. 153.—BREAKING-UP OF AN ICHTHYOSPORIDIUM INTO REPRODUCTIVE BODIES.

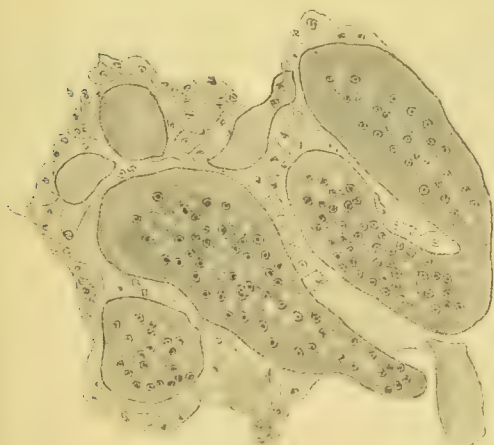


FIG. 154.—LARGE ICHTHYOSPORIDIÆ, ONE OF WHICH (ON THE RIGHT) IS UNDERGOING PLASMOTOMY.

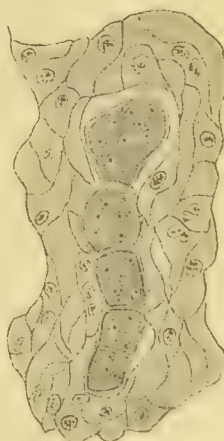


FIG. 155.—YOUNG FORMS DEVELOPED FROM THE BREAKING-UP OF A LARGE PARASITE.

(From drawings by Miss Robertson.)

Cytoryctes variolæ Guarnieri 1892.

Synonym.—*Strombodes jeuneri* Sjöbrung 1902.

In 1892 Guarnieri described peculiar parasitic bodies in lesions of smallpox, and in those produced by vaccination of the cornea of rabbits, etc. Pfeiffer, in 1893, confirmed these findings, as did Jackson Clarke in 1894, and Wasielewski in 1897. Councilman, Magrath, and Calkins, in 1903, published the full account of the life-history of the parasite, and their findings have been confirmed—in part, at least—by De Korté in 1905.

In its youngest form *Cytoryctes variolæ* is seen in the cells of the skin as a minute spherical homogeneous body, $0.7\ \mu$ in size. No differentiation into nucleus and cytoplasm is possible, as the organism appears to be all nucleus. The parasite grows to $3\ \mu$, and then shows a vacuolization in the centre, with sometimes a central dot. The periphery next shows minute unstained dots, which, when they become larger, take on the green of a Borrel's stain. The red staining material is called by Calkins protogonoplasm.

The organism can now change its shape and throw out pseudopodia, and lives in a vacuole near the nucleus; there is no ectoplasm or endoplasm, no vacuoles, but only chromatin granules of protogonoplasm. Volpino has described minute motile granules in the epithelial cells, which he considers to be the true parasites.

Auto-Infection.—In a large parasite (10 to $14\ \mu$) the protogonoplasm is distributed through the body in minute spherical granules lying in a minute vesicle, forming granules from 0.7 to $1\ \mu$ in diameter, which are liberated by disintegration of the framework of the host cell, while the rest of the cytoplasm form a *nucleus de reliquat*.

Sexual Development.—The homogeneous granules or gemmules may start the cycle of cytoplasmic organisms again, or may become germ-cells in the nucleus. The gemmules reach the nucleus, but they now stain uniformly and become minute, clearly-defined, homogeneous bodies—female gametocytes. Sometimes they fail to reach the nucleus and remain in the cytoplasm, in which they can only partially develop. Within the nucleus Calkins thinks they form male and female gametocytes, homogeneous granules, or the gemmules become spherical, with central red masses, and later red masses at the periphery—the male gametes. No conjugation has been observed.

The zygote is an amœboid body lying in the nucleus, and staining deeply. This zygote becomes a pansporoblast and the mother-cell of the sporoblasts. The spore is very minute, and contains a vacuole; it migrates, and may travel into the nucleus and form secondary sporoblasts.

Neuroryctes hydrophobiæ Calkins 1907.

Neuroryctes hydrophobiæ, better known as the Negri bodies, because they were discovered by Negri in 1903 as round or oval bodies, 1 to $23\ \mu$ in length, in the nerve-cell of the brain, especially the *Cornu ammonis*, of animals suffering from hydrophobia, are now generally accepted as the cause of the disease. Hydrophobia is so common in India and Ceylon that a knowledge of its parasite is necessary to the practitioner in that part of the tropics.

Some authorities consider these bodies to be cell-structures, but in our opinion there cannot be any doubt that they are parasites, especially after the further investigation of Negri, amply confirmed by Williams, Lowden, and Calkins, who named it *Neuroryctes hydrophobiæ* Calkins 1907. Prowazek believes them to be Chlamydozoa. When stained by Giemsa the protoplasm takes on a bluish tinge like the malarial organism, while there is a central body like a nucleus, composed of a periphery of chromatin, and containing a central chromatic particle staining red. Negri, Williams, and Lowden give drawings indicating the rapid division and growth of the organism, which apparently as it grows divides, until finally large forms result whose chromatin breaks up into minute masses.

They consider that the parasite reaches the nervous system by spreading along the nerves, which it does more quickly than travelling by the blood.

Cyclasterella scarlatinalis Mallory (Doubtful Species).

In 1904 Mallory described round and elongated bodies, sharply stained with methylene blue, 2 to 7 μ in size, lying in the epithelium of the epidermis, together with radiate bodies, composed of a central spherical body with ten to eighteen segments radiating away from it, in epithelial cells and lymph-spaces of the epidermis of people suffering from scarlet fever.

This discovery has since been confirmed, both during life and in post-mortems, by Field and Duval.

Further research is needed before the nature of these bodies can be definitely settled.

Coccidioides immitis Rixford and Gilchrist 1897 (Doubtful Species).

Synonyms.—*C. pyogenes* Rixford and Gilchrist 1897, *Coccidium posades* Caxton (?) 1898.

These parasites were first seen by Wernicke and Possadas in Buenos Ayres, and later in the United States by Rixford and Gilchrist, Montgomery, Moffit, and Ophüls, where they cause an infection producing nodules in the skin, liver, kidney, genitalia, and lymphatic glands.

They are small, rounded bodies 3 to 30 μ in size, contained in giant cells.

The Bodies of Urethritis Cystica (Doubtful).

In this disease the kidney is hydronephritic and the ureter and bladder are cystic.

The cysts contain large and small oval and irregular cells with bright globules, variously interpreted as Coccidia, Myxosporidia, and cell inclusions.

Sergentella hominis Brumpt 1910.

Et. and Ed. Sergent in 1903 reported a vermiform body, 40 μ long by 1 to 1.5 μ broad, pointed at each end, with a nucleus in the middle, in the blood of a person suffering from night-sweats and nausea.



FIG. 156.—SERGENTELLA HOMINIS
BRUMPT.

FIG. 157.—SARCOCYSTIS SPORES FOUND
IN THE BLOOD OF MAN BY CASTEL-
LANI AND WILLEY.

Bodies found by Sambon in Pseudochirus peregrinus.

Sambon has found bodies in a lemur which may have some relationship to the spores of Sarcocystis, but this is doubtful.

Bodies described in Man by Castellani and Willey.

These bodies were found and described in 1905 in two patients suffering from irregular fever. They generally have a crescentic shape, 10 to 30 μ in length, and 1.5 to 4 μ in breadth. They often present vacuoles, and a nucleus may be seen in some specimens, but not in all. The whole body stains bluish, while here and there granules of chromatin can be seen. They cannot be compared with malarial crescents, as they never contain pigment. These bodies may be spores of Sarcocystis.

Chlamydozoa Prowazek.

Definition.—The Chlamydozoa are a collective group of minute parasites, which either live extracellularly, when they are capable of passing through the usual filters, or intracellularly, when they excite a reaction upon the part of the enclosing cell which produces a substance which encloses them as it were with a mantle, thus forming a cell inclusion.

Remarks.—This collective group was formed by Prowazek to embrace a number of minute parasitic forms which become enclosed in a cellular product as with a mantle. The general tendency is to range these forms among the Protozoa. The minute granules are the parasites, and the surrounding substance is either plastin or chromatin from the nucleus, or a fatty substance. The name Chlamydozoa is derived from the Greek $\zeta\omega\omega\nu$, an animal, and $\chi\lambda\alpha\mu\acute{\upsilon}\varsigma$, a mantle.

History.—In 1907 Prowazek and Halberstaedter, on examining trachoma smears stained by Giemsa's method, found dark blue granular inclusions in the protoplasm of the epithelial cells. These granules were at first round or oval, and increased in size, at the same time becoming less dark, while minute red dots appeared, which increased rapidly in numbers, while the blue masses gradually disappeared. The granules formed *cell inclusions*, and the blue masses were considered to be a reaction product on the part of the cell, and were thought to be composed of plastin, while the minute red dots were considered to be the virus. The reason why they considered the blue granules to be distinct from the red points was because the blue gradually disappeared, while the red points, or *elementary bodies*, could be seen extracellularly situated. They inoculated anthropoid apes successfully with trachoma, and found the same bodies in this infection. These researches were confirmed by Greef in the same year, and were extended in 1908 by Stargardt and Schmeichler in 1909, who described a conjunctivitis neonatorum non-gonorrhoeica with typical Chlamydozoa. In 1909 Heymann found the same bodies in four cases of gonorrhœal conjunctivitis in newly-born infants. This discovery was of the greatest importance, because since the days of Kroner it had been known that the conjunctivitis of the new-born was not always due to the gonococcus. Linder, in 1909, and Wolfrum, in 1910, showed that there were two forms of blennorrhœa—viz., a conjunctivitis neonatorum caused by the gonococcus, and a second caused by Chlamydozoa, this latter

disease being termed by Linder 'inclusion-blennorrhœa' in contradistinction to gonoblennorrhœa. Linder maintains that the same virus produced trachoma, inclusion-blennorrhœa, and that this virus can be found in the male and female genital passages, and he bases his opinion on the facts that he has been able to produce trachoma in monkeys inoculated from a case of non-gonorrhœal urethritis in a man, from two such cases in women, and from several cases of inclusion-blennorrhœa in infants. Further investigations have shown that inclusion-blennorrhœa is histologically similar to trachoma.

Later, Leber and Prowazek in 1911 found a similar organism, *Lyzoon atrophicans* in epitheliosis desquamativa, and in the same year Uhlenhuth found inclusions in swine pest, and Botteri in spring catarrh.

In the meanwhile Halberstaedter and Prowazek had in their first paper grouped with these cell inclusions the forms described in smallpox, hydrophobia, molluscum contagiosum, epithelioma contagiosa, and Lipschütz grouped the causes of dermatropismus, or human dermatoses, under the subhead Strongyloplasmata. Finally the whole subject was gathered together and reviewed by Prowazek in 1911 in his 'Handbuch der Pathogenen Protozoen.' Somewhat similar bodies have been seen by Castellani in sprue in cells from the oval mucosa, although most of these inclusions are non-granular, and he has confirmed the finding in conjunctivitis and in urethritis of a non-gonorrhœal nature.

Morphology.—On examining the cells from a case of urethral discharge of non-gonorrhœal origin, or the cells from the discharge in certain forms of conjunctivitis, they can be seen to contain peculiar masses of granules which are grouped into oval or roundish bodies, measuring 2 to 6 μ in transverse or maximum diameter. The individual granules measure 0.5 to 1 μ in diameter, and stain a purplish-red colour, with Giemsa or Leishman's preparations. These granules appear to be embedded in a pale bluish matrix.

Life-History.—The smallest form or *elementary body* is merely a minute speck of chromatin, apparently without any cytoplasm, which lives extracellularly, but may enter a cell. This entry into the cell is not a process of phagocytosis, as may be shown by the absence of the usual vacuole, and by the fact that they do not show the usual yellow coloration when stained by neutral red. Inside the cell the elementary body grows in size, and becomes the *initial body*, which becomes surrounded by the mantle, and thus forms the *cell inclusion*. This body now breaks up into a number of small bodies called *initial corpuscles*, which divide by simple division—i.e., by the formation of dumb-bell forms, the two ends of which simply move apart until the connecting thread is broken. The result of the division of the initial corpuscles is the *elementary body*. In this way the life-cycle is completed.

Comparison.—It will thus be seen that the Chlamydozoa are the granules inside the body of the *Cytoryctes variolæ* or the *Neuroryctes*

hydrophobiæ, and that the whole organism of these two forms corresponds to the mantle and parasite of the chlamydozoon.

Pathogenicity.—They are believed to be the cause of smallpox, vaccinia, trachoma, Samoan epitheliosis, hydrophobia, scarlet fever, etc.

Classification.—The Chlamydozoa are classified into :—

A. *Chlamydozoa vera*.

Chlamydozoa, which commences as elementary bodies from cell inclusions.

1. Cytoryctes group—cause destruction of the cell.
2. Cytooikon group—cause proliferation of the cell.
3. Gelbsucht group—cause gelbsucht in the Lepidoptera.

B. *Chlamydozoa strongyloplasmata*.

Chlamydozoa, which always remain as elementary bodies—e.g., the forms in the peripneumonia of cattle and the diphtheria in birds.

Only the Cytoryctes and Cytooikon groups concern us.

The Cytoryctes Group.

It is important to distinguish between the Chlamydozoon of such a disease as smallpox and the parasite *Cytoryctes variolæ*. The Chlamydozoon is one of the chromatic particles of *C. variolæ*, the protoplasm of which forms the mantle. The Cytoryctes group includes the parasites of :—

1. Vaccinia.
2. Variola.
3. Scarlet fever.
4. Hydrophobia.

The Cytooikon Group.

The Cytooikon group includes :—

1. *Lyzoon atrophicans* Leber and Prowazek.
2. Trachoma bodies.

The former group have been described above, and the latter group will be dealt with in the chapter dealing with the diseases of the special senses.

The Filterable Viruses.

By the term 'filterable virus' is meant micro-organisms so small that they will pass through the pores of filters which are too small to allow the passage of bacteria. The term 'ultramicroscopic' is also used for filterable viruses, but is not free from objection.

History.—In 1892 Iwanowski demonstrated the filterability of the mosaic disease of the tobacco plant, and in 1898 Löffler and Frosch discovered that the virus of foot and mouth disease would pass through the pores of the finest porcelain filter. Shortly afterwards Beijerinck confirmed Iwanowski's observations, and since then numerous observations have been made.

IN MAN.—*Yellow fever virus* by Reed and Carroll in 1901, destroyed if heated to 53° C. for ten minutes; *Molluscum contagiosum* by Julius Véry in 1905; *Dengue fever* by Ashburn and Craig in 1907; *Three days' fever* by Doerr in 1908; *Poliomyelitis* by Lentz, Landsteiner, Levaditi, Flexner, and Lewis in 1909; *Typhus* by Nicolle in 1910; *Measles* by Goldberger and Anderson in 1911, as well as *Trachoma*, *Scarlatina*, and *Verruca vulgaris*.

ANIMALS AND MAN.—*Foot and Mouth Disease* by Löffler and Frosch in 1898; *Vaccinia* by Siegel in 1905, *Variola* and *Rabies*.

Besides these thirteen filterable viruses exist in diseases peculiar to animals—three in birds and one in plants.

Cultivation.—Only the virus of pleuro-pneumonia of cattle, of fowl pest, fowl diphtheria, epithelioma contagiosum, and of Novy's rat disease have so far been cultivated. The organism of pleuro-pneumonia is a very small spirochæte, but the organisms of the other disease are only evident by the fact of their infectivity in subcultures carried beyond any reasonable limit of dilution from the original.

Immunity.—In nearly every case the immunity produced by a filterable virus is complete and of long duration.

Secondary Infections.—Secondary infections with bacteria are common, and it is thought that many of the so-called typical symptoms of the disease may be due to the secondary agent.

Methods of Infection.—The methods of infection are various: (1) By blood-sucking insects—*e.g.*, *Stegomyia calopus* and yellow fever, etc.; (2) by entry through an abrasion—*e.g.*, *Molluscum contagiosum*; (3) by contact—*e.g.*, fowl pest; (4) by unknown methods—*e.g.*, Novy's rat disease.

Nature.—The nature of the viruses is unknown; some, especially those spread by blood-sucking agents, are probably protozoal, but others may be bacterial.

Classification.—The filterable viruses may be divided into—

1. Filterable viruses associated with no known organism.
2. Filterable viruses associated with some known organism.

1. *Filterable Viruses associated with No Known Organism.*

Under this heading come the viruses of several diseases of importance in tropical medicine—*e.g.*, the virus of yellow fever, of dengue fever, of pappataci fever, of typhus fever.

Yellow Fever.—The virus is found in the blood only during the first three days of the fever. It can pass through Berkefeld and Chamberland B filters, and can be destroyed by heating to 55° C. for ten minutes, or by a temperature of 24° to 30° C. for forty-eight hours. It is conveyed by *Stegomyia calopus* after an interval of twelve days from the time of the infective feed.

Dengue Fever.—The virus is in the blood during the fever, and can be filtered through Berkefeld filters impermeable to *Micrococcus melitensis*. It is spread by *Culex fatigans*.

Pappataci Fever.—The virus exists in the blood during the first day of the fever, and can be filtered through Berkefeld filters, and is spread by *Phlebotomus papatasi* after an interval of seven days from the date of the infective feed.

Typhus Fever.—The virus exists in the blood, and can be filtered through the coarser Berkefeld filters. It is destroyed by a temperature of 52° to 55° C.; it is spread by *Pediculus vestimentorum* L.

2. Filterable Viruses associated with Some Known Organism.

Borrel has clearly shown that a minute flagellated organism (*Micromonas mesnili*) exists in the filtrates of sheep-pox, and it is quite possible that all filtrates contain these minute organisms, and, further, there is reason to suppose that certain larger organisms possess these minute forms in some stage of their life-cycle—e.g., the organisms of trachoma, variola, and vaccinia.

Trachoma.—The virus passes through the Berkefeld filters, and can be successfully inoculated into monkeys.

Variola and Vaccinia.—The virus passes through Berkefeld and the coarser Chamberland filters, and is destroyed by heating to 57° to 58° C. in fifteen minutes, or by almost any disinfectant, by saponin, vicin, bile, taurocholic acid, and sodium oleate.

REFERENCES.

Telosporidia and Neosporidia in General.

- MINCHIN (1903). Lankester's Treatise on Zoology, I., ii. 150-360. (1912). An introduction to the study of the Protozoa. London.

Hæmogregarinida.

- CASTELLANI AND WILLEY (1904). Spolia Zeylanica, II., vi. 78-92; (1905). Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science.
 CHRISTOPHERS (1905). Scientific Mem. India, No. 18.
 CHRISTOPHERS (1907). Scientific Mem. India, No. 28.
 JAMES (1905). Scientific Mem. India, No. 14.
 LÜHE (1906). Mense's Tropenkrankheiten, iii.
 ROBERTSON (1906). Proceedings of the Royal Physiological Society of Edinburgh, xvi. 232-247.
 SAMBON AND SELIGMANN (1907). Transactions of the Pathological Society of London, LVIII., iii. 310.

Sarcocystis.

- SPLENDORE (1907). Rev. d. Soc. Sci. de San Paulo, pp. 115-120.
 WILLEY, CHALMERS, AND PHILIP (1904). Spolia Zeylanica, II., vi. 65.

Rhinosporidium.

- BEATTIE (1906). Journal of Pathology, 270.
 KINEALY (1903). Proceedings of the Laryngological Society, x. 109; xi. 43.
 MINCHIN AND FANTHAM (1905). Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science, xlix. 521.

Haplosporidia.

- CAULLERY AND MESNIL (1905). Archiv. de Zoologie Expériment., 101.
 ROBERTSON (1907, 1908). Proceedings of the Royal Physiological Society of Edinburgh, XVII., v. 175.

Protozoa Incertæ Sedis.

- CALKINS. New Sydenham Society (Cytoryctes).
 CASTELLANI AND WILLEY (1904). *Op. cit.*
 DARLING (1909). Journal of Experimental Medicine.
 DUVAL (1905). Virchow's Archiv, clxxix. 485-488 (Cyclosterella).
 KEYSSELITZ AND MAYER (1908). Archiv für Protistenkunde, p. 113.
 LUZZANI (1904). Archivi Scienze Mediche.
 MALLORY (1904). Journal of Medical Research, x. 4 (Cyclosterella).
 NEGRI (1903-04). Boll. Soc. Med. Pavia. (1909). Reale Accademia dei Lincei.
 PROWAZEK (1907). Archiv f. Protistenkunde, X., ii. 336-364 (Chlamydozoa).
 PROWAZEK AND ARAGAO (1909). Münch. Med. Wochenschrift.

Chlamydozoa.

- CASTELLANI (1912). Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene. London.
 LINDER (1912). Archives of Ophthalmology.
 PROWAZEK (1911). Handbuch der Pathogenen Protozoen, Leipzig.

Filterable Viruses.

- WOLBACH (1912). Boston Medical and Surgical Journal. Boston.



CHAPTER XVIII

HETEROKARYOTA

Ciliata—Balantidium—Nyctotherus—References.

DIVISION II. HETEROKARYOTA HICKSON 1903.

PHYLUM V. CILIATA Bütschli.

THE Ciliata are free-living or parasitic Heterokaryota, found principally in water, where they exist upon small animal and vegetal organisms and the débris of decomposing plants and animals. Some of them can live in the alimentary canal of man and animals, obtaining their food from its contents, and increasing to such numbers as to cause irritation of the intestine.

Their movement is by cilia, but always with one end, the anterior, in front. They turn round when desiring to progress in a different direction. This anterior end may be similar morphologically to the posterior, or may be characterized by being more pointed by having a mouth, or by peculiar sensory cilia (Hypotricha), or by a peristome of long cilia (Heterotricha). The body, which may be spherical or flattened, is divided into an ectoplasm (the cortex); and endoplasm (the medulla). The ectoplasm may simply be a clear outer layer of the protoplasm, or it may be differentiated into three layers. The first is very thick and very tough; the next, called the alveolar sheath, is marked by vertical parallel lines, which are the contractile myoneme threads; while the innermost layer next to the endoplasm consists of clear transparent ectoplasm.

The semifluid endoplasm is in constant rotatory motion, containing food vacuoles, contractile vacuoles, nuclei, pigment granules, colourless granules, crystalline bodies, and smaller particles. The cytostome or mouth is present in all except the parasitic Opalinæ. It is a slit in the cortex at the anterior end of the body, which can be opened for the reception of food, but is usually kept closed. It may be on the surface or may be carried inwards by a funnel-shaped depression in the ectoplasm called the vestibule, which may be lined by cilia specialized for the capture of food.

A cytopyge, or cell anus, occurs in *Nyctotherus*, but as a rule no

definite opening appears, and the undigested food is simply pushed through the cortex.

Two wholly distinct nuclei exist in the Heterokaryota, a mega- or macro-nucleus and a micronucleus. They are not merely different in size, form, structure, and appearance, but also in function; for the macronucleus is somatic and trophic in its function, while the micronucleus is purely sexual. They are not comparable to the tropho- and kineto-nuclei of the trypanosomes.

The macronucleus is generally well marked, but breaks down into granules before or after conjugation. It consists of an achromatic portion, with a chromatic portion in the form of a close-meshed network of fibrils, but whether there is a definite surrounding membrane or not is doubtful.

The micronucleus, when at rest, is a minute irregular granule of chromatin lying in the centre of a perfectly clear achromatic area. Probably there is only one in each animal, and the appearance of two or more is due to reproductive phases which are just finishing.

The Ciliata are characterized by the presence of protoplasmic processes projecting all over the body. These are fine, short whips, called cilia, which in places are transformed into thick processes called cirri or flat membranes in certain species. The cilia are processes of the pellicle, but they appear to be supported by a thread of specialized ectoplasm. The short, fine cilia are for motion, and the long, motionless cirri for the purpose of entangling food-particles. The membranes are supposed to be formed of fused cilia. Trichocysts exist in the Holotricha, and an excretory organ has recently been described by Metcalfe in certain species of Opalina, parasitic in frogs, while other Ciliata have a contractile vacuole.

Reproduction may take place asexually by (1) transverse or longitudinal division; (2) gemmation, simple or multiple; (3) encystment and spore-formation, or sexually by conjugation.

1. Fission.—There is no morphological distinction between longitudinal and transverse fission, in which the following changes take place: (1) A second mouth is formed; then comes (2) enlargement and division of the micronucleus; followed by (3) enlargement and division of the macronucleus; and, finally, (4) division of the cytoplasm.

2. Encystment and Spore-Formation.—The animal encysts and breaks up into a number of small individuals.

3. Conjugation.—Conjugation has been best described by Calkins and Caullery in *Paramœcium aurelia*. Two conjugating cells about the same size are placed so that the mouths are directly opposed. The micronucleus swells, its chromatin becomes granular, elongated, crescentic, fusiform, and finally forms two nuclei, each of which at once divides into two. Of these, two degenerate, while the other two divide to form a migratory, or male, and a stationary, or female, pronucleus. The male interchange and fuse with the opposite female nuclei, and then the organisms separate. The macronucleus fragments and disappears, and the synkaryon breaks up into eight micronuclei.

Four of these swell, and are changed into macronuclei; so that four micro- and four macro-nuclei are in the same cell, which divides into two very small cells with two macro- and micro-nuclei each. These cells grow to nearly full size, and then divide, giving rise to the typical protozoon, with one macronucleus and one micronucleus.

Parasitism.—A great many species of the Ciliata are parasitic in the intestine or bladder of other animals, and some are epizöic.

The latter will often be met with as *Vorticellæ*, living on *Anopheles* and *Culex* larvæ. The former are found largely in the Orthoptera, the Amphibia, and in herbivorous mammals—e.g., horse and cow.

In man a few have been recorded: *Chilodon dentatus* Dujardin 1842, *C. uncinatus*, *Colpoda cucullus* Schutz 1889, *Balantidium coli* Malmsten 1857, *B. minutum* Jakobi and Schaudinn 1898, *Nyctotherus faba* Jakobi and Schaudinn 1898, *N. giganteus* Krause 1906, *N. africana* Castellani 1905.

Parasitism does not appear to affect the structure of the animal, unless the loss of the cytostome in *Opalina*, parasitic in frogs, is considered to be due to this cause.

Pathogenicity.—The ciliate parasites, as a rule, appear to cause but little effect, unless they are present in large numbers, when diarrhœa, often severe and long-persisting, may result.

Classification.—The Ciliata are classified into four orders:—

Order I. Holotricha.—Mobile Ciliata without special oral cirri (*Chilodon*, *Colpoda*).

Order II. Heterotricha.—Mobile Ciliata with special oral cirri (*Balantidium*, *Nyctotherus*).

Order III. Hypotricha.—Mobile Ciliata with well-developed dorsal and ventral surfaces. Not known to be parasitic in man.

Order IV. Peritricha.—Fixed Ciliata. Not known to be parasitic in man.

ORDER I. HOLOTRICHA Stein.

The Holotricha are free-moving Ciliata, in which all the cilia are of approximately equal length and thickness, and never possessing cirri. It is divided into two suborders:

Gymnostomata.—Mouth closed when ingesting food.

Hymenostomata.—Mouth always open, and provided with an undulating membrane.

GYMNOSTOMATA.

FAMILY CHLAMYDODONTIDÆ Stein.—In this family there is a genus *Chilodon* Ehrenberg 1833, which includes oval, strongly dorso-ventrally compressed Chlamyodontidæ, commonly found in infusions, of which one species, *C. dentatus* Dujardin 1842, was found in great abundance by Guiart in the motions of a woman suffering from severe dysentery in Paris. Quite recently Manson and Sambon have described a case of chance-parasitism due to another species, *C. uncinatus* Blochmann, in a patient from tropical South Africa. They noted that the parasites were only found in the mucus, never in the faecal masses. They were present in very large numbers, and were found to be all gametes, some of which were

conjugating. It appears probable that Guiart's parasites may really have been *C. uncinatus*, and not *C. dentatus*.

HYMENOSTOMATA.

FAMILY CHILIFERIDÆ Bütschli.—The genus *Colpoda* Müller 1773 includes the kidney-shaped Chilifera, with rows of cilia twisted from left to right, commonly found in hay infusions, of which one species, *Colpoda cucullus* Schutz 1899, commonly found in the water of marshes, was noticed in a brickmaker attacked with dysentery in Berlin. *Uronema caudatum* Dujardin 1841 has been found in the motions of cases of diarrhoea in man.

ORDER II. HETEROTRICHA Stein.

The Heterotricha are free-moving Ciliata, with strong cirri or membranellæ, forming an adoral ring enclosing a space, the peristome, at one part of which the mouth opens. The order is divided into Polytricha, Oligotricha.

Polytricha.—Heterotricha in which the surface of the body is covered with rows of short cilia.

FAMILIES.—*Plagiostominidæ* Claparède and Lachmann, *Bursarinidæ* Bütschli, *Stentorinidæ* Stein, *Gyrocoryna* Stein.

BURSARINIDÆ Bütschli.

This family includes the genus *Balantidium*.

Balantidium Claparède and Lachmann 1858.

Bursarinidæ with a large peristome and a well-marked anal aperture.

Balantidium is common in the rectum of pigs, and is sometimes found in the intestines of man.

Balantidium coli Malmsten 1857.

Synonyms.—*Paramæcium coli* Malmsten 1857, *Plagiotoma coli* Claparède and Lachmann 1858, *Leucophrys coli* Stein 1860, *Balantidium coli* Stein 1867, *Holophrya coli* Leuckart 1863.

Balantidium coli is constantly found in pigs, and has been found in the colon and the dejecta of man in cases of cholera and diarrhoea.

In shape it is oval, slightly pointed anteriorly, but this depends upon whether the peristome is funnel-shaped or contracted. It is covered with cilia arranged in parallel rows, which give it a striated appearance.

It is 0.06 to 0.1 millimetre in length by 0.05 to 0.07 millimetre in breadth, and possesses a bean- or kidney-shaped macronucleus, and a globular micronucleus situated near it. It develops asexually by transverse division or by conjugation. It can encyst, and in this condition pass from pigs to man. *B. coli* lives in the rectum of pigs, and is transferred by its cysts to man.

It was discovered by Malmsten in a man who had had cholera,

and was suffering from diarrhœa and ulcer of the rectum. The ulcer had nothing to do with the disease, as it healed, while the diarrhœa was probably due to the parasites.

Casagrandi and Barbagallo produced catarrhal enterocolitis in young cats by means of this parasite.

Strong has investigated, in a masterly manner, the enterocolitis produced by *B. coli* in the Philippine Islands.

Balantidium minutum Schaudinn 1899.

The body is shortly oval, with a pointed anterior extremity. Length, 20 to 32 μ ; breadth, 14 to 20 μ .

The peristome extends into the centre of the body, and has the right lateral border fringed with cilia, and the left lateral border

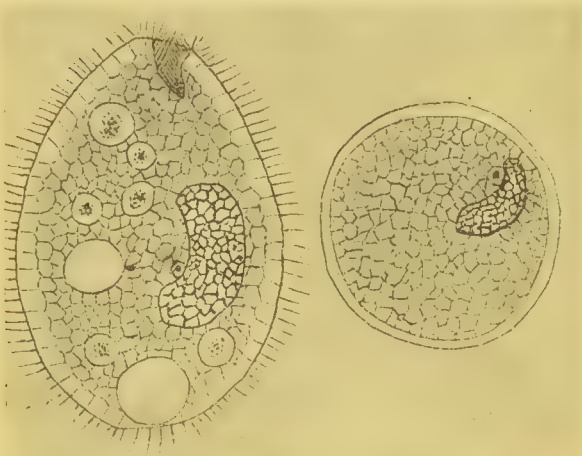


FIG. 158.—*BALANTIDIUM COLI*
MALMSTEN.

(After Hartmann. From the *Archiv für Schiffs-
u. Tropenhygiene*.)

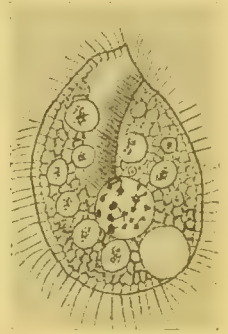


FIG. 159.—*BALANTIDIUM*
MINUTUM SCHAUDINN.

(After Hartmann. From
the *Archiv für Schiffs-
u. Tropenhygiene*.)

terminates in a hyaline membrane which can pass over to the right side, and has a row of cirri. The cysts are oval.

This parasite (along with *Nyctotherus faba*) was found by Schaudinn in a German who had often stayed in North America. The symptoms were constipation alternating with diarrhœa associated with abdominal pain.

Nyctotherus Leidy 1849.

Body bean- or kidney-shaped, with a large peristome on the concave side extending from the anterior end up to the middle of the body, from where a curved cytopharynx or œsophagus extends inwards. The macronucleus is large, and situated almost in the centre.

The species are mostly parasitic in the intestine of Amphibia, Insecta, and Myriapoda.

Species known in man: *Nyctotherus faba* Schaudinn 1899, *N. giganteus* Krause 1906, *N. africanus* Castellani 1905.

***Nyctotherus faba* Schaudinn 1899.**

N. faba is flattened dorso-ventrally, and is 26 to 28 μ in length, and 16 to 18 μ in breadth, and 12 μ in thickness. The cilia on the peristome are of two kinds, those on the right side, of the size of the body, being true cilia, and those on the left side being cirri. The contractile vacuole is large, and situated posteriorly. The macronucleus is in the centre, and is

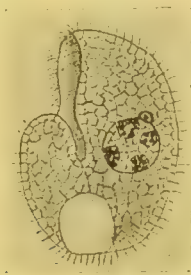


FIG. 160.—NYCTOTHERUS FABA SCHAUDINN.

(After Hartmann. From the *Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropenhygiene*.)

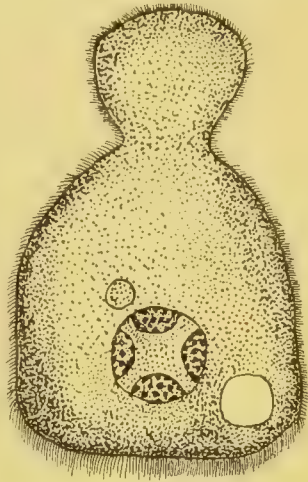


FIG. 161.—NYCTOTHERUS AFRICANUS CASTELLANI.

peculiar in having four or five large collections of chromatin at its periphery. The micronucleus lies close by. The cysts are oval.

This species was discovered by Schaudinn in the same patient as *Balantidium minutum*.

***Nyctotherus giganteus* P. Krause 1906.**

Synonym.—*Balantidium giganteum* P. Krause 1906.

This organism, along with *Trichomonas intestinalis*, was found by Krause in the dejecta of persons suffering from typhoid in Breslau.

It is shaped like a truncated cone, with the anterior end narrowed, and the posterior broad. Length, 90 to 400 μ ; breadth, 60 to 150 μ . Surface covered with cilia. The peristome is situated laterally, and from it a cytopharynx leads inwards.

The macronucleus is large and bean-shaped, while the micronucleus is small and round. One or two vacuoles can be seen. The cytopyge is situated posteriorly.

In the fæces the parasite becomes rounded off and encysted, and then divides into four.

***Nyctotherus africanus* Castellani 1905.**

Found by Castellani in a Baganda native. *N. africanus* is hour-glass shaped, with the anterior portion much less developed than

the posterior. Length, 40 to 50 μ ; breadth, 30 to 40 μ . The surface is covered with very minute cilia, which are generally more evident on the posterior portion, being almost invisible on the anterior.

The peristome is short. The cytoplasm is finely granular throughout. The nucleus is situate far posteriorly, near the contractile vacuole. The micronucleus is very small, and situated close to the macronucleus. No food vacuoles are to be seen.

Neither division, conjugation, nor encystment are known.

The patient, who had diarrhoea alternately with long periods of constipation, was suffering from sleeping sickness.

The cæcum contained many parasites, as did other parts of the bowel. The mucosa of the cæcum, colon, and rectum were slightly congested but not ulcerated. Castellani originally considered this parasite to belong to the genus *Nyctotherus*, but more complete investigations will probably show that it constitutes a new genus.

REFERENCES.

Heterokaryota.

HICKSON. Treatise on Zoology, E. Ray Lankester, Part I., Second Fascicle, 1903, p. 361.

CALKINS AND CAULLERY. Archiv f. Protistenkunde, 1907, vol. x., 2 and 3, p. 375.

METCALFE. Arch. f. Protistenkunde, 1907, vol. x., 2 and 3, pp. 183, 365.

Chilodon dentatus.

GUIART, M. J. (1903). Comptes Rendus des Séances de la Société de Biologie.

Balantidium coli.

BENSEN (1908). Archiv f. Schiffs- u. Tropenhygiene, xii. 672.

Balantidium minutum.

BENSEN (1908). *Op. cit.*, 673.

Nyctotherus faba.

JAKOBY AND SCHAUDINN. Centralblatt für Bakteriol. u. Parasitol., I., xxv., 1899, 487.

Nyctotherus giganteus.

KRAUSE, P. Deutsche Archiv für Klin. Med., lxxxvi. 442.

Nyctotherus africanus.

CASTELLANI. Centralblatt für Bakteriologie u. Parasitol., 1905, xxxviii. 66, 67.

CHAPTER XIX

METAZOAN PARASITES AND TREMATODA

Metazoan parasites—Platyhelminia—Trematoda—Malacotylea—Paramphistomoidea—Fasciolidæ—Monostomidæ—Schistosomidæ—References.

SUBKINGDOM II. METAZOA.

Definition.—Metazoa are free-living or parasitic, multicellular animals, characterized by a physiological division of labour among their cells.

Tropical medicine is only concerned with parasitic Metazoa, and chiefly with those which affect man. Parasitic Metazoa may be ectoparasites—as, for example, many species of the Insecta—or endoparasites—as, for example, many worms. The ectoparasites can cause disease by introducing toxins, protozoa, or bacteria into the tissues, and in this way they are of the utmost importance as the spreaders of disease, for, as is generally recognized, a disease is very often limited by the special œcological conditions of the animal which spreads its germ. Many of the ectoparasites, such as mosquitoes, are temporary ; or, like ticks, periodic ; while others, like lice, are permanent parasites.

With regard to the endoparasites, their ill effects on the host depend upon many factors which have been recently studied in considerable detail.

The effects of metazoan parasites on their hosts depend upon the species of the parasites, their condition, the number present, their presence in certain organs, bacterial infection, their migration in the body, the loss to the host in feeding them, the damage caused by their toxins, and the condition of the host.

1. The Species of Parasite.—*Filaria* may exist in a host without apparent ill effect, but *Agchylostoma* will produce anæmia, œdema, and perhaps death.

2. The Condition of the Parasite.—The dead eggs of *Filaria* are believed to block the lymph channels, and give rise to swelling and rupture of these vessels, thus bringing about lymphangitis and elephantiasis, while the living larvæ apparently do no harm.

3. The Number of Parasites.—A few *Ascarides* may cause no symptoms, while a large number may lead to serious disease.

4. The Organ Affected.—*Ascarides* in the alimentary canal are not nearly so virulent as in the liver, while *Paragonimus westermani* in the lungs will cause a disease somewhat resembling phthisis. *Ascarides* may cause serious mischief in the pancreas, as observed by Chalmers; and may cause appendicitis, as noted by Blanchard, Metchnikoff, Castellani, and others.

5. Bacterial Infection caused by the Parasite.—*Trichuris trichiura* may be a harmless parasite in itself, but it is quite capable of introducing bacteria into the mucosa of the vermiform appendix and causing appendicitis, for, as is well known, it burrows in the mucosa. The fever so often found in patients suffering from agchylostomiasis is probably caused by intestinal bacteria entering the small wound produced by the agchylostome.

This method of producing ill effects upon the host appears to us to be of the greatest importance in the tropics, and is, we fear, often overlooked.

6. Migration of the Parasite in the Body.—The larvæ of *Agchylostoma* as they enter the skin cause a dermatitis known as Cooly itch, sore feet, ground itch, etc., which may be primarily due to the irritation of the worm, or secondarily to bacteria introduced into the skin by its agency. The wanderings of the larvæ of *Trichinella spiralis* through the muscles cause the severe symptoms of trichiniasis.

Sambon has pointed out that much that is obscure in the pathogenesis of various forms of helminthiasis might be elucidated by a better knowledge of the migrations of the entozoa in their immature stages from the time they attack the host to that of their settlement in their selective anatomical habitat. He believes that many forms do not go directly to the part in which they are usually found, but may take a very different route from that generally accepted, and may even live for a length of time in other structures before reaching such organs as the alimentary canal or nasal fossæ, which are only sought in order to enable the young to escape from the host. During these wanderings mechanical injury may be caused to the host, and pathogenic micro-organisms may be carried from one part of the body to another.

7. The Absorption of Food.—Leuckart estimates that a *Dibothriocephalus latus* gives off in a year proglottides to the weight of 140 grammes; *Tænia saginata*, 550 grammes; and *Ascaris lumbricoides*, 42 grammes of eggs in the same period.

If the number of these parasites is great, the drain on the host must be considerable, especially in children who need food for growth.

8. Toxins.—This subject has already been dealt with.

9. The Condition of the Host.—The condition of the host is also a factor in the diseases produced by these parasites, for though *Ascarides* may be harmless in a healthy intestine, they may per-

forate a typhoid or dysenteric ulcer, or a traumatic lesion of the bowel, and cause fatal peritonitis.

With regard to the question as to whether parasites ever benefit human beings, reference can be made to the belief that the development of the *Bacillus tuberculosis* Koch is delayed by the presence of entozoa in the bowels, a view which, with our Eastern experience, we are unable to support.

The old idea that worms were good for children has died out long ago, and we know of no cases of mutualism, or benefit to parasite and host, in the animal parasites of man.

True parasitism is found in those cases in which the parasite benefits and the host is injured. Chance parasites are animals which accidentally and temporarily become parasites.

The life-history of a parasite may be simple, being carried out in one host, or it may be complex, with one or more hosts for its larval stages and another for its adult condition.

Generally these hosts bear a direct relationship to one another, the intermediary host often being herbivorous, and thus becoming infected through eating fæcally contaminated food, and the definitive host being carnivorous or omnivorous, becoming infected through eating the herbivorous host of the larva.

Some parasites, particularly the *Microfilariae* in the blood, show a remarkable periodicity in their habits, which appears to be associated with the means of escape from the definitive host by some intermediary host, such as a mosquito or a tick, whose habits agree with the periodicity of the parasite. Such correlations are very numerous in Nature—as, for example, the opening or emitting of strong odours by certain flowers at definite times of the day or night, which accords with the habits of insects which help on their fertilization.

Tropical countries are the home *par excellence* for parasites, as the means of infection by bad sanitation, biting flies, etc., are easily available. It is therefore obvious that, as there may be many methods of infection by the mouth, the skin, and the nose, prevention is not an easy matter. It depends upon two factors—personal and public hygiene. The question of personal hygiene is the more important and more easily applied, as only one person is concerned, while that of public hygiene is more expensive and not so easy to apply, as many people have to act in unison in order to produce any effect.

Personal hygiene includes such matters as personal and domestic cleanliness; protection of the skin against infection by the use of mosquito curtains and boots; avoidance of infection from domestic pets, such as dogs and cats, by not too close association with them; the protection of articles of food against flies and vermin, and the careful cooking of food and filtering of water.

With regard to public rules, the first is the proper disposal of waste, particularly of fæcal matter; careful cattle and meat inspection in well-kept slaughter-houses; and the destruction of ownerless

dogs by means of a lethal chamber, in which they are killed by gas.

Classification.—The metazoan parasites of man can be arranged into phyla as follows :—

- Phylum I. Platyhelminia.
- Phylum II. Nemathelminia.
- Phylum III. Annulata.
- Phylum IV. Arthropoda.

PHYLUM I. PLATYHELMINIA Lankester 1890.

Synonyms.—*Platyhelminia* Vogt 1851, *Platodes* Leuckart 1854, *Platyhelminthes* Gegenbaur 1859, *Platyhelminthes* Minot 1877.

Platyhelminia are bilaterally symmetrical Metazoa, with dorso-ventrally flattened bodies, and without a true coelom.

Morphology.—The Platyhelminia are flat-worms, with an oval or tape-like body, which is either covered by a ciliated epithelium, as in the free-living Turbellaria, or with a cuticle under which the surface epithelium has sunk into the parenchyma, forming the so-called subcuticular layer in the parasitic Trematoda and Cestoda. A well-developed musculo-dermal layer is present, but there is no coelom.

The mouth is generally situated at the anterior end, when present, but it may be moved to the inferior surface, and opens, via a pharynx, into a forked or branched gut, which has no anal aperture. The alimentary canal may, however, be wanting (Cestoda). The excretory system begins in the so-called flame cells—i.e., cells provided with a lash of cilia from which fine channels run, uniting together to form larger channels, which ultimately empty into a pair of laterally placed canals, which open to the exterior separately or together, often through an excretory vesicle.

The nervous system consists of a large, bi-lobed, cerebral ganglion, with nerves running forwards and backwards.

The Platyhelminia are mostly hermaphrodite, but may rarely be unisexual; the ova are produced in the ovary, near which they are fertilized, and then, after receiving food-yolk from the yolk reservoir, which has received it via the vitelline ducts from the yolk glands, they obtain a shell in a shell gland, and then enter a uterus, through which they slowly pass to the exterior.

The male organs consist of testes, vasa deferentia, vesicula seminalis, and a cirrus pouch, with a cirrus and a so-called prostate gland.

Classification.—The Platyhelminia are classified into :

Class I. Turbellaria.—Free-living flat-worms, covered with cilia.

Class II. Trematoda.—Parasitic flat-worms with an alimentary canal; cuticle non-ciliate.

Class III. Cestodea.—Parasitic flat-worms without an alimentary canal; cuticle non-ciliate.

Class I. does not enter into the subject under discussion.

CLASS II. TREMATODA RUDOLPHI 1808.

The Trematoda are parasitic Platyhelminia, which retain the mouth and alimentary canal, but in which the epidermis not merely loses its cilia during development, but is sunk into the mesoblast after secreting the chitinous cuticle. Suckers are developed in the region of the mouth, and also on the ventral surface.

Remarks.—The knowledge of the Trematoda began in 1379, when Jehan de Brie discovered the liver-fluke in the sheep, which was subsequently described by Gabucinus in 1547; but it was not till the time of O. F. Müller, in 1777, that any accurate idea of their form was obtained. Zeder in 1800 made the first attempt to classify parasitic worms, calling the Trematodes 'sucking-worms'; while in 1808

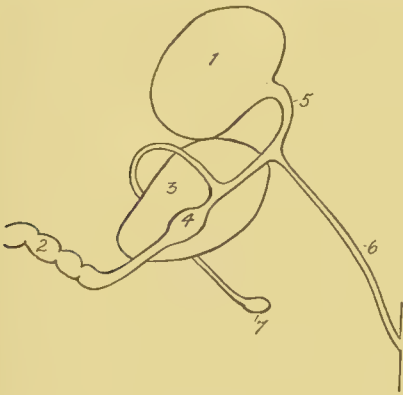


FIG. 162.—DIAGRAM OF A TYPE OF THE FEMALE GENERATIVE APPARATUS OF A TREMATODE.

(After Stiles.)

1, Ovary; 2, uterus; 3, shell gland; 4, oötype; 5, ovarian duct; 6, Laurer's canal; 7, vitellarian duct.

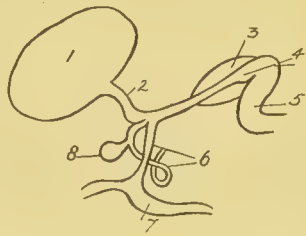


FIG. 163.—DIAGRAM OF ANOTHER TYPE OF THE FEMALE GENERATIVE APPARATUS OF A TREMATODE.

1, Ovary; 2, ovarian duct; 3, shell gland; 4, oötype; 5, uterus; 6, Laurer's canal; 7, vitellarian duct; 8, receptaculum seminis.

Rudolphi invented the name of the class, deriving it from the Greek *τρηματώδης*, which means 'pierced by holes.' After this date come many observers, among whom may be mentioned Laurer (whose canal still bears his name) in 1830, van Beneden in 1858, and Leuckart in 1867 (who divided them into Distomea and Poly-stomea), and Thomas in 1883, who worked out the development of *Fasciola hepatica*. In 1892 Monticelli revived an older classification of the group by Burmeister into three orders.

In 1899 Looss completely revolutionized the whole classification. His work has since been extended by Oohner, Lühe, Leiper, and others.

Morphology.—In shape the Trematoda are generally leaf-like or tongue-shaped, and but rarely cylindrical. They are provided with a cuticle, which may have spine-like scales, and with one or two suckers, oral and ventral

(often called the 'acetabulum'), which are capable of fixing the parasites by the action of their equatorial, meridional, and radial muscular fibres to the lining of the alimentary canal, or such other organ as they may inhabit.

The mouth lies in the oral sucker, and leads to a pharynx. The œsophagus may be short or long, with or without a sphincter muscle, and is often provided with unicellular salivary glands. The intestinal tubules, which may be branched or simple, end blindly, there being no anal aperture. The food is composed of epithelial cells and blood.

The excretory system is well developed, commencing in special cells provided with cilia (flame cells), which communicate with excretory capillaries. These open into canals, which anastomose freely, and then join the gathering tubes, which open into an excretory vesicle. This vesicle, which may be long or short, pear-shaped or Y-shaped, generally opens posteriorly, but may open dorsally above the acetabulum.

The sexes are but rarely separate, hermaphroditism being usual. The male organs consist of testes, which may be simple or branched, and are, as a rule, situated posteriorly. The vas deferens leads forwards sometimes through a vesicula seminalis to the genital opening, below which a cirrus enclosed in a muscular pouch provided with glands, called the 'prostate,' may be found.

The female organs consist of an ovary, which may be branched and is usually situated in front of the testes, and an ovarian duct, which joins with the vitellarian duct from the yolk glands, making a tube, called the 'oötype,' surrounded by the shell gland, in which the egg is formed (Fig. 162).

A curious little canal, Laurer's canal, joins by its inner aperture the oötype near the uterine tube, while its outer aperture is found on the dorsal surface. The homology of this little canal is not quite clear; it may be a vagina. Sometimes a receptaculum seminis is present. The oötype opens into the uterine tube, which is usually much coiled, and has its anterior portion thickened to form the metatrema or vulva, which opens into the genital orifice (Fig. 163).

The genital pore varies in position, being situated in the mid-line in front of or behind the ventral sucker as a rule. Rarely it opens rather laterally and has a muscular depression of its own.

Life-History.—The full life-history of a number of forms has been worked out by Leuckart and Thomas for *Fasciola hepatica*, under which heading details will be given, and by Looss for various amphistomes.

Typically there is an alteration of generations where one sexual generation is followed by two asexual generations. Usually two hosts are required, but perhaps one may be sufficient, in certain circumstances, for the whole life-cycle.

Habitat.—These parasites are found in all classes of the vertebrates, and may occur in any of the organs, but the most common in man are the liver, the intestinal tract, the lungs, and the urinary bladder. It is important to remember that the adult parasites may live in domestic animals, especially in cats, and that they may affect pigs and cattle. Further, the encystment on grass, water-weeds, etc., must be borne in mind, and the fact that the miracidium swims about in water.

Pathogenicity.—Apparently the smaller forms can live in human beings without being suspected, but irritation of the bladder, liver, intestine, and lungs may result either as the effect of the eggs or of the parasite.

Diagnosis.—The systematic examination by the microscope of the fæces, especially in cases of diarrhoea, and of the urine and sputum, is the only certain method of diagnosis.

Treatment.—The treatment of infections by these animals may be said to be useless. One may try to kill or expel the intestinal forms by chloroform mixed with eucalyptol, as described in the chapter on Agchylostomiasis, or by extract of male fern.

Prophylaxis.—We do not know enough about the life-cycle to lay down general rules about prophylaxis, but it will be obvious that the cat, the dog, the pig, and cattle are indirect sources of infection, while green vegetables, particularly those not cooked, must be regarded with suspicion, and so must that delicacy the edible snail, which may not be properly cooked.

The classification of the Trematoda is as follows :—

ORDER I. HETEROCOTYLEA Monticelli.

Synonyms.—*Polystomea* Leuckart, *Pectobothrii* Burmeister, and *Monogenea* van Beneden.

These Trematodes are generally ectoparasitic, but may be endoparasitic in amphibia and tortoises.

ORDER II. ASPIDOCOTYLEA Monticelli.

Synonym.—*Aspidobothrii* Burmeister.

These are lowly organized endoparasitic trematodes, with one large sucker occupying the whole ventral surface, found in tortoises, marine fish, and shellfish.

ORDER III. MALACOCOTYLEA Monticelli.

Synonyms.—*Distomea* Leuckart, *Malacobothrii* Burmeister, and *Digenea* van Beneden.

Typical endoparasitic trematodes, with never more than two sucking-discs, oral and ventral, and a Laurer's canal.

The Malacocotylea include all the human trematode parasites, and are subdivided into groups :

DIVISION A. METASTATICA Leuckart. Development without alternation of generations.

DIVISION B. DIGENEA Leuckart. Development with alternation of generations. The Digenea contain the human parasites.

Super-Family I. *Paramphistomoidea*.—Digenea with ventral sucker at the posterior end, opening of the excretory apparatus on the dorsal surface. Hermaphrodites.

Family 2. *Fasciolidæ*.—Digenea with oral and ventral suckers ; excretory pore at the posterior border. Hermaphrodites.

Family 3. *Monostomidæ*.—Digenea with only an oral sucker. Ventral sucker absent.

Family 4. *Schistosomidæ*.—Digenea resembling the Fasciolidæ, but with separate sexes.

The parasites known in man may be summarized as follows :

	Family.		Genus.		Species.	
Order : Malacocotylea. Suborder : Digenea.	1.	Paramphistomidæ	Watsonius	..	1.	W. watsoni Conyngham.
	2.	Gastrodiscidæ	Gastrodiscus	..	2.	G. hominis L. and McC.
	3.	Fasciolidæ	Fasciola	..	3.	F. hepatica L.
			Echinostoma	..	4.	F. gigantea Cobbold.
			Agamodistomum	..	5.	E. ilocana Garrison.
			Fasciolopsis	..	6.	E. malayanum Leiper.
			Opisthorchis	..	7.	A. ophthalmobium Dies.
			Clonorchis	..	8.	F. buski Lankester.
			Paragonimus	..	9.	F. füllebornii Rodenwaldt.
			Heterophyes	..	10.	F. rathouisi Poirier.
			Dicrocoelium	..	11.	O. felineus Rivolta.
					12.	O. noverca Braun.
	4.	Monostomidæ	Monostomulum	..	13.	C. sinensis Cobb.
	5.	Schistosomidæ	Schistosoma	..	14.	C. endemicus Baelz.
					15.	P. westermani Kerbert.
					16.	H. heterophyes Von Sieb.
					17.	H. yamagina Katsurada.
					18.	D. lanceatum Stil and Hass.
					19.	M. lentis Gesch.
					20.	S. hæmatobium Bilh.
					21.	S. mansoni Sambon.
					22.	S. japonicum Kats.

SUPER-FAMILY PARAMPHISTOMOIDEA STILES AND GOLDBERGER 1910.

Digenea with acetabulum, caudoterminal or subterminal, or ventral close to the caudal end. Oral sucker and œsophagus present. Cæca two in number. Hermaphrodites with genital pore ventro-median, præ-equatorial, prætesticular, and præ-ovarial, and with one or two præ-ovarial testes. Vitellaria paired.

Type Family.—Paramphistomidæ Fiscoeder 1901 restricted.

Families.—*Paramphistomidæ* Fiscoeder 1901 restricted; *Gastrodiscidæ* Stiles and Goldberger 1910; *Gastrothylacidæ* Stiles and Goldberger 1910. The last-named family does not contain any human parasites.

FAMILY I. PARAMPHISTOMIDÆ FISCHOEDER 1901 RESTRICTED.

Paramphistomoidea with ventral pouches absent.

Type Genus.—*Paramphistomum* Fiscoeder 1901.

The Paramphistomidæ are classified into the following sub-families: *Paramphistominæ* Fiscoeder 1901 restricted, *Cladorchiinæ* Fiscoeder 1901, and *Diplodiscinæ* Cohn 1904; but of these only the second concerns us.

SUBFAMILY CLADORCHIINÆ FISCHOEDER 1901.

Paramphistomidæ with oral sucker with evagination.

The Cladorchiinæ can be subdivided into the *Stephanopharynginæ* Stiles and Goldberger 1910, with circular evagination, and *Cladorchiinæ sensû stricto* Fiscoeder 1901, with paired evagination.

This last subdivision contains the following genera: *Cladorchis* Fiscoeder 1901, which is the type genus, *Pseudodiscus* Sonsino 1895, *Chiorchis* Fiscoeder 1901, *Tasiorchis* Fiscoeder 1901, *Pseudocladorchis* Daday 1907, *Microrchis* Daday 1907, *Pfenderius* Stiles and Goldberger 1910, and *Watsonius* Stiles and Goldberger 1910, of which the last is of importance in tropical medicine.

It may be remarked that this subfamily will probably soon be made a family, and its divisions subfamilies.

Watsonius Stiles and Goldberger 1910.

Cladorchiinæ without genital sucker, with lobate or lobulate testes, without cirrus pouch, and with each oral invagination single.

Species.—*Watsonius watsoni* (Conyngham 1904) Stiles and Goldberger 1910.

Watsonius watsoni (Conyngham 1904)
Stiles and Goldberger 1910.

Synonyms.—*Cladorchis watsoni* (Conyngham 1904), *Amphistomum watsoni* (Conyngham 1904), *Paramphistomum watsoni* (Conyngham 1904).

History.—*Watsonius watsoni* was first discovered in the duodenum and upper part of the jejunum of a negro who had come from Adamawa, in German West Africa, to Northern Nigeria. Since its discovery it has been reported as common near Lake Chad. It was first described by Conyngham, later by Shipley, and in 1910 by Stiles and Goldberger.

Morphology.—The parasite is reddish-yellow when fresh, 8 to 10 millimetres in length by 4 to 5 millimetres in breadth. In shape it is oval or pyriform. The ventral sucker is large and situated posteriorly and subterminally, while the oral sucker is so small as to be hardly worthy of being considered a true sucker. It has a pair of lateral caudal irregularly globular suctional pouches. The pharynx is spherical, with two lateral diverticula, called the 'pharyngeal pouches.' The œsophagus divides into two long intestinal cæca about the level of the junction of the anterior third with the posterior two-thirds of the body, and is here surrounded by a sphincter muscle. The excretory pore opens slightly to the left of the middle line dorsal to the posterior sucker. The excretory vesicle is relatively small, and lies over that sucker. The genital papilla is situated in the mid-ventral line, about the junction of the anterior quarter with the posterior three-quarters of the body, and on it open the canal of the cirrus and the metatreme. The testes, which lie one behind the other, are deeply lobulated. The vas deferens runs into a vesicula seminalis, which opens into the cirrus canal, but has no true cirrus pouch.



FIG. 164.—WATSONIUS
WATSONI.

(After Shipley; emended
by Leiper.)

a, Schematic; b, natural
size.

The ovary lies close behind the testes, and rather to the right of the body. The ovarian duct curves backwards, and is almost at once surrounded by the shell gland, when it may be called the 'oötype,' which just behind the shell gland receives the vitellarian duct and the inner end of Laurer's canal. The uterus, full of eggs, coils over the testes and runs as far forwards as their anterior border, where it becomes thick and muscular, and is called the 'metatrema.' The eggs are large (122 to 130 μ in length by 75 to 80 μ in breadth).

Life-History.—The life-cycle is not known, but it is believed that the usual host is a herbivorous animal.

Pathogenicity.—It may perhaps cause diarrhœa and anæmia. A post-mortem showed the mucosa slightly congested.

Diagnosis.—By recognition of the eggs or adults in the fæces.

Treatment.—The eucalyptus and chloroform mixture advised for agchylostomiasis.

FAMILY II. GASTRODISCIDÆ STILES AND GOLDBERGER 1910.

Paramphistomoidea with rather discoidal bodies divided by a transverse constriction into cephalic and caudal portions. Ventral pouch absent. Venter with many large papillæ. Acetabulum ventral at caudal end.

Type Genus.—*Gastrodiscus* Leuckart 1877; the other genus is *Homalogaster* Poirier 1883.

Gastrodiscus Leuckart 1877.

Gastrodiscidæ with bodies slender anteriorly and broadened posteriorly. The latter contains the genital glands. The acetabulum is small. The ventral pouch is absent. The oral sucker has paired evaginations, and leads into an œsophagus with muscular thickening. The cæca are long, not wavy, and end post-testicularly. Male organs:—These are two branched testes, and a cirrus pouch which is not completely closed. Female organs:—Ovary and shell gland are post-testicular; vitellaria are extra cæcal; and the uterus intercæcal. Laurer's canal is prevesicular. Two species are common in the Equidæ in Egypt and India. The horse species is known in Senegal and Guadeloupe.

Type.—*Gastrodiscus ægyptiacus* Cobbold 1876.

Gastrodiscus hominis Lewis and McConnell 1876.

Synonym.—*Amphistomum hominis* Lewis and McConnell.

History.—It was first described in 1876 by Lewis and McConnell, who found it in hundreds attached by its posterior sucker to the mucosa of the cæcum, vermiform appendix, and ascending colon of an Assamese. Since then it has been reported in natives of India, and perhaps it may be common. We have not met with it in Ceylon, though there was a small jar in the Medical College Museum labelled *Amphistomum hominis*, but without a history.

Morphology.—The parasite is reddish-coloured, 8 to 10 millimetres in length and 4 to 5 millimetres in greatest breadth, tapering to 2.5 millimetres in front. The thickness is about 4 millimetres. The posterior end of the body presents a larger disc, on the hinder border of which lies the acetabulum. The rest of the body is thin, tapering to the mouth. The genital pore is at a level with the bifurcation of the intestine. The testes are double, with a sinuous vas deferens. The uterus and the yolk glands are situated laterally. The eggs are oval, 0.15 millimetre in length and 0.072 millimetre in breadth.

Pathogenicity.—It is not known whether these parasites cause any disease.

FAMILY III. FASCIOLIDÆ Railliet 1895.

Hermaphrodite Digenea with oral and ventral (acetabulum) suckers. The excretory pore is on the posterior border (foramen caudale).

The Fasciolidæ contain a number of genera, of which species have been found in man: (1) *Fasciola* Linnæus 1758; (2) *Echinostoma* Rudolphi 1809; (3) *Agamodistomum* Stossich 1892; (4) *Fasciolopsis* Looss 1898; (5) *Opisthorchis* R. Blanchard 1895; (6) *Clonorchis* Looss 1907; (7) *Paragonimus* Braun 1899; (8) *Heterophyes* Cobbold 1866; (9) *Dicrocælium* Dujardin 1845.

The table on pp. 466 and 467 gives some of the characters by which they can be recognized.

Fasciola Linnæus 1758.

Large Fasciolidæ with leaf-like bodies, with the anterior end shaped into a conical head and with the ventral sucker situated near the mouth. Cuticle covered with spines.

Fasciola hepatica Linnæus 1758.

Synonyms.—*Distomum hepaticum* Retz 1786, *Fasciola humana* Gmel 1789, *D. caviae* Sons 1890, *Cladocælium hepaticum* Stoss 1892.

History.—*Fasciola hepatica*, the liver-fluke, is a parasite of sheep, oxen, goats, horses, and many other herbivorous animals in Europe, North Africa, North and South America, Australia, Tasmania, Japan, China, Burma, and India. It is said to be extremely common in Burma and Egypt.

It has been found in man several times, and apparently usually in the liver, but it has been recorded in the bloodvessels, in a swelling on the sole of the foot, in abscesses about the head, and in a swelling in the right hypochondriac region. It is probable that *Distomum oculi humani* Ammon 1833 and *Monostomum lentis* Von Nordmann 1832 may have been young liver-flukes.

Morphology.—*Fasciola hepatica* is a flat, oval animal, with an anterior triangular projection. Length, 20 to 30 millimetres; breadth, 8 to 13 millimetres. The cuticle is covered with minute pointed scales directed backwards. There are two suckers—an oral, which is situated at the anterior end of the animal and surrounds the mouth opening, and a ventral, the acetabulum, which is a muscular cap situated in the median line near the junction of the anterior projection with the rest of the body. The mouth leads into a muscular pharynx, which passes via a short œsophagus into the intestine, which divides just in front of the genital aperture into two tubes running to the posterior end of the body, giving off numerous branched cæca.

The excretory system starts with dilated tubules, into which project the

DIAGNOSTIC TABLE OF THE GENERA OF

Genera.	Size and Shape.	Anterior End.	Cuticular Spines.	Acetabulum.	Intestinal Cæca.	Genital
Fasciola ..	Large and leaf-like	Large cone	Present	Well developed near oral sucker	Branched	Mid-ventral anterior acetabulum
Echinostoma ..	Very small and narrow	No head cone	Present with characteristic collar ; large spines round mouth	Large and prominent	Not branched ; long	Left of line anterior to acetabulum
Fasciolopsis ..	Large	Head cone slightly developed	Absent	Large ; elongated posteriorly	Not branched ; long and wavy	Anterior border ventral sucker
Opisthorchis ..	Long and flat	No head cone	Absent	Small and close to oral sucker	Not branched ; long	Mid-ventral anterior acetabulum
Clonorchis ..	Body pigmented, long and narrow	Tapering	Absent	Small	Not branched ; long	Mid-ventral anterior acetabulum
Paragonimus ..	Broad and thick	Rounded	Present	About middle of body	Not branched ; long and wavy	Near posterior margin acetabulum little lateral
Heterophyes ..	Small	Tapering, narrow, and movable	Present	About middle of body	Not branched ; long	Lateral behind acetabulum, waxy chitinous
Dicrocoelium ..	Medium-sized	Pointed	Absent	Near oral sucker	Not branched ; short	Close behind pharynx

In addition to the above, immature forms

OLIDÆ CONTAINING HUMAN PARASITES.

Position of testes.	Situation of Uterus.	Receptaculum Seminis.	Vesicula Seminalis.	Yolk Glands.	Cirrus Pouch.	Excretory Vesicle.	Œsophagus.	Habitat.
Anteriorly; shed; anteriorly	In front of sexual glands	Nil	Present	Spread all along sides	Present	Well developed	Short	Liver
Anteriorly; shed; anteriorly	Between acetabulum and anterior testis	Nil	Present	Posterior half of body	Well developed	Tubular	Short	Small intestine
Anteriorly; shed; anteriorly	In front of sexual glands	Nil	Tubular	Spread all along sides	Long and cylindrical	Tubular	Short or absent	Small intestine
Anteriorly; shed; anteriorly	In front of sexual glands	Present	—	Middle one-third	Nil	Y-shaped	Short	Liver
Anteriorly; shed; anteriorly	In front of sexual glands	Present	Present	Middle two-thirds at the sides	Nil	Not Y-shaped; tubular	Short	Liver
Anteriorly; shed; anteriorly	Behind acetabulum	Nil	Nil (?)	Spread all along the sides	Nil	Very large, extending forwards to pharynx	Short	Lungs and other organs
Anteriorly; shed; anteriorly	In front of testes	Present	Present	At the sides posteriorly	Nil	Tubular	Long	Small intestine
Anteriorly; shed; anteriorly	Posteriorly	Present	—	Middle one-fifth	Present	Tubular	Short	Liver

Anteriorly; shed; anteriorly

cilia of the so-called flame cells. The ducts, which freely anastomose, open into a main duct, which runs directly backwards to open at a median pore at the posterior end of the body.

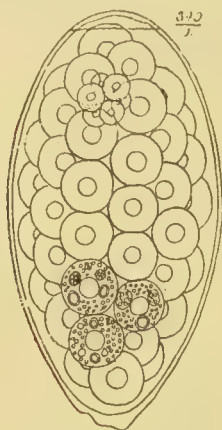


FIG. 165.—EGG OF *FASCIOLA HEPATICA*.

(After Thomas, from the *Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science*.)

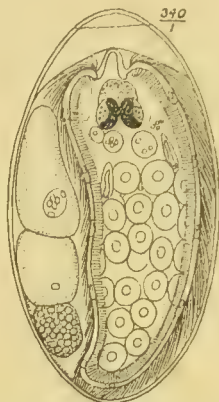


FIG. 166.—THE MIRACIDIUM OF *FASCIOLA HEPATICA*.

(After Thomas, from the *Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science*.)

The two testes are much-branched tubes, lying in the middle of the body of equal size, one lying in front of the other; from each a vas deferens runs as far as the ventral sucker, where it opens into an elongated sac, the vesicula seminalis, from which the ductus ejaculatorius runs to the end of a large

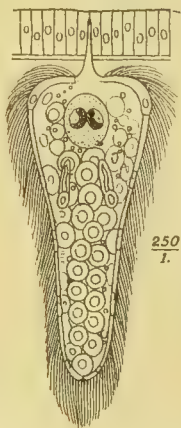


FIG. 167.—THE LARVA OF *FASCIOLA HEPATICA*.

(After Thomas, from the *Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science*.)

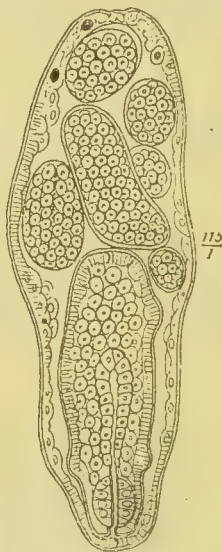


FIG. 168.—THE SPOROCYST OF *FASCIOLA HEPATICA*.

(After Thomas, from the *Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science*.)

muscular organ, called the cirrus, which lies in a sac situate just in front of the ventral sucker. The genital opening through which the cirrus can be protruded is situated between the two suckers on the ventral surface.

The branched and tubular ovary lies on the right, in front of the anterior testes. The ovarian ducts run backwards to join the middle line with the median vitellarian duct from the yolk reservoir, into which open the vitellarian ducts from the large branched yolk glands lying on either side of the body, from the level of the ventral sucker to the posterior extremity.

The junction of these two ducts is surrounded by the shell gland, and forms a much-convoluted tube, the uterus, which is joined close to its commencement by a little tube, Laurer's canal, opening on to the dorsal surface. The uterus, which is generally full of eggs, opens on the left side of the base of the cirrus.

The nervous system consists of a nerve collar around the pharynx, from which two nerve cords run backwards along the sides of the body.

Life-History.—The ovum starts from the ovary and travels along the ovarian duct, where it is fertilized, after which it is surrounded by a large number of yolk cells, and then by a shell formed from the secretion of the

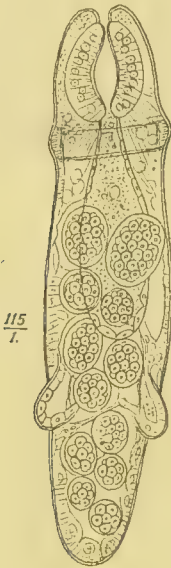


FIG. 169.—THE REDIA OF
FASCIOLA HEPATICA.

(After Thomas, from the *Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science*.)

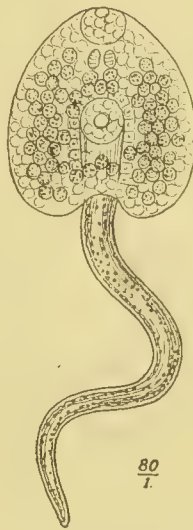


FIG. 170.—THE CERCARIA
OF FASCIOLA HEPATICA.

(After Thomas, from the *Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science*.)

shell gland. The egg now passes forwards into the uterus, and is evidently deposited in the bile-passages and escapes in the fæces. It is oval, yellowish-brown, with a cap-like lid 0.13 to 0.145 millimetre in length by 0.07 to 0.09 millimetre in breadth, and is seen to enclose a mass of yolk cells with one ovum, which now segments and grows, using up the yolk cells, forming a young form, called a 'miracidium,' 0.13 by 0.027 millimetre, which in a few weeks escapes by the opercular opening if the egg is in water, and, being ciliated, swims about as a conical larva, with a little anterior papilla and two eye-spots. It has a cuticular epithelium, under which are muscular layers, and contains a simple sac, like an alimentary canal, a cerebral ganglion, and an excretory system. There is a segmentation cavity (forming a body cavity) between the alimentary canal and the body-wall.

It now bores its way into the pulmonary cavity of some snail by means of its anterior papilla; otherwise it dies in about eight hours. The varieties of snail hosts are: *Linnaeus truncatulus* Müll, in Europe, Asia, Africa; *L. oahuensis* in the Sandwich Islands; *L. viator* Orb in South America;

L. humilis Say in North America, in which it loses all its organs, and increases in size rapidly, while cells grow from the wall into the primary body cavity, so that a cyst is formed, called the 'sporocyst.' This has an external cuticle, a thin muscular layer, and an epithelial lined cavity, containing collections of cells, which develop into cylindrical forms, possessing a simple, short, tube-like alimentary canal, with a pharynx, glands, and intestine, and a genital pore near the anterior end. These forms, which are called *Rediæ*, after the celebrated biologist Redi, force their way out of the sporocyst by making a wound, which heals readily, and then wander about the snail, being especially abundant in the liver. When fully formed they have a ridge running round the anterior end, and a pair of blunt processes for locomotion posteriorly.

Inside the *Rediæ* cells bud off from the body-wall and form the *Cercariæ*, which are not unlike a young *Fasciola* with a tail.

The *Cercariæ* possess cutaneous glands for the purpose of secreting the cyst-wall of the next stage. They escape from the *Rediæ* by means of the genital pore, and, leaving the snail, swim about in the water for some time, finally becoming encysted on grass or water-weeds, and are then eaten by sheep, inside which they escape from the cyst, and, working their way along the bile-ducts, develop in six weeks into sexually mature flukes.

Habitat.—The liver-fluke usually lives in the sheep, in which it causes the disease called 'sheep-rot'; but infection can spread to man and cause disease, as will be described later.

Fasciola gigantica Cobbold 1856.

Synonym.—*Fasciola angusta* Railliet 1895, *F. gigantea* Cobbold 1858.

F. gigantica, which is nearly allied to *F. hepatica*, is found in herbivora in the tropics, and is believed to have occurred in a man, for a parasite somewhat resembling it was expelled from the lung during a fit of coughing associated with hæmoptysis, but there is some doubt as to whether it was not different from Cobbold's species. Its length was 26 to 28 millimetres and its breadth 6 to 8 millimetres, but it was contracted. It caused fever, cough, and slight hæmoptysis.

Echinostoma Rudolphi 1809.

Synonym.—*Fascioletta* Garrison 1908.

Fasciolidæ, with small elongated bodies, broader anteriorly than posteriorly, with characteristic circumoral ring of spines and with other spines on the body, and with large prominent acetabulum. Œsophagus short, intestinal cæca unbranched. Excretory vesicle tubular. Genital pores anterior to the acetabulum. Testes compact, situate in the median line one behind the other. Cirrus and pouch well developed. Ovary compact; no receptaculum seminis; Laurer's canal present. Yolk glands well developed in the posterior fifth of the body; well-developed shell gland and uterus which lies between the ovary behind and the acetabulum in front. Ova large and operculated.

With regard to the position of *Echinostoma*, it should be observed that some authorities do not classify it under the Fasciolidæ, but in a special family Echinostomidæ.

The type species is *Echinostoma revolutum* (Froelich 1802), of which the synonym is *Distoma echinatum* Zeder 1803. Other species of importance in tropical medicine are *E. ilocanum* (Garrison 1908), Odhner 1911, and *E. malayanum* Leiper 1912.

Echinostoma ilocanum Garrison 1908.

Synonym.—*Fascioletta ilocana* Garrison 1908.

History.—*Echinostoma ilocana* was discovered and described by Garrison, who in 1907 noticed peculiar eggs in the fæces of Philippino prisoners in Bilibid Prison in Manila, and subsequently, after treatment with male-fern, obtained a small number of trematodes. Quite recently Odhner has shown that it belongs to the genus *Echinostoma*, family Echinostomidæ.

Morphology.—*Echinostoma ilocana* is a very small trematode, measuring 4 to 6 millimetres in length by 0.75 to 1.35 millimetres in breadth and 0.5 to 1 millimetre in thickness. Posteriorly it is attenuated. The acetabulum is about three times the size of the oral sucker, which is either terminal or slightly ventro-subterminal. The prepharynx is long, the pharynx globular; the œsophagus short, bifurcating just anterior to the genital pore into the intestinal cæca. The genital pores open separately a little behind the halfway point between the pharynx and the acetabulum.

The cirrus pouch is well developed, and contains posteriorly the vesicula seminalis, into which open the vasa deferentia, and which gives rise to the long coiled cirrus. Each testis shows an anterior and a posterior lobe. The ovary is globular, the yolk glands well developed, and the uterus fairly developed. Ova 88.8 to 114.7 μ long by 53.5 to 81.9 μ broad.

Life-History.—Nothing is known of the life-history beyond the fact that a miracidium hatches in about ten days after the eggs have left the host.

Habitat.—The intestine of man in Luzon, in the Philippine Islands.

Pathogenicity.—It is probable that the worm is non-pathogenic.

Echinostoma malayanum Leiper 1912.

History.—In 1911 Leiper received two consignments of flukes from Dr. Macaulay of Singapore and from Dr. Stanton of Kuala Lumpur which had been collected from the intestine of Tamils in the Malay States.

Morphology.—It is a thick, fleshy trematode, light brown in colour, 12 millimetres in length, 3 millimetres in breadth, and 1.3 millimetres in thickness. The oral sucker is situated on a kidney-shaped anterior portion, which is somewhat detached from the rest of the parasite by a furrow on either side. This circumoral disc is surrounded by a row of forty-two stout spines. The cuticle of the body is unevenly furnished with spines. The acetabulum is several times larger than the oral sucker. The oral sucker lies in the middle third of the circumoral disc, and leads into a spheroid muscular pharynx, and so into the œsophagus, which bifurcates immediately behind the pharynx into two branches, which are simple and end blindly at the posterior end of the body.

The deeply lobed testes lie one behind the other behind the acetabulum; there is a well-developed cirrus pouch and a long, thick cirrus. The ovary is smooth, and lies immediately in front of the anterior testis and just behind

the acetabulum. The yolk glands are numerous, extending from the acetabulum to the posterior end of the body. The brown eggs are few in number and large in size.

Habitat.—Leiper does not think that this worm is a normal parasite of man, and considers that domesticated animals, especially cats and dogs, should be investigated for it.

Pathogenicity.—Not stated.

Agamodistomum Stossich 1892.

Agamodistomum is an artificial collective group, designed to contain larval stages of *Fasciolidae* which have not developed far enough to allow of their being determined generally.

There is no type species.

Agamodistomum ophthalmobium

Diesing 1850.

Synonym.—*Distomum oculi humani* Ammon 1832.

Ammon found four specimens of a parasite, 0.5 to 1.0 millimetre in length, between the capsule and the opaque lens of a child, aged five months, in Dresden. There were no lateral branches to the intestinal cæca. It is possible that this was really a young *F. hepatica*.

Fasciolopsis Looss 1898.

Fasciolidae without a head cone. Acetabulum prolonged posteriorly into a pouch; cirrus pouch very long and cylindrical; intestinal cæca without branches; ovary and testes greatly branched.

Species.—*Fasciolopsis buski*, and *F. fülleborni*.

Fasciolopsis buski Lankester 1857.

Synonyms.—*Distomum buski* Lankester 1857, *D. crassum* Busk 1859, *nec v.* Siebold 1836; *Distomum rathouisi* Poirier 1887.

History.—*Fasciolopsis buski* is a very large trematode, which was first discovered by Busk in the duodenum of a Lascar who died in the Seamen's Hospital in 1843. In 1857 it was named by Lankester, and in 1859 described by Cobbold.

It appears to be by no means uncommon in man and pigs in South China, and is known in Borneo, the Straits Settlements, Assam, and India. In 1910 *F. rathouisi* Poirier 1887 was regarded as the same as *F. buski* Lankester 1898, but at the present time some authorities go back to the older view that they are separate species.

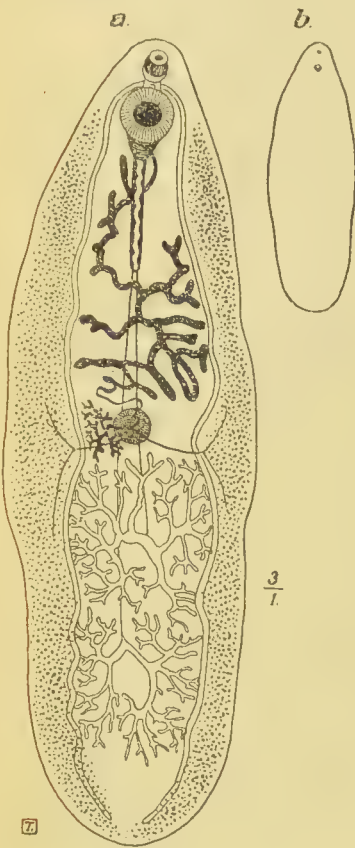


FIG. 171.—FASCIOLOPSIS BUSKI.

(After Odhner, from the *Centralblatt für Bakteriologie*.)

a, Schematic; b, natural size.

Morphology.—It is a large, thick, brown, smooth trematode, 24 to 70 millimetres in length and 5·5 to 14 millimetres in breadth. The oral sucker and acetabulum are in the proportion of 0·5 : 2·0. The pharynx is globular, and there is a prepharynx, with a sphincter. The oesophagus is short, and the intestinal cæca are not branched, and extend to the posterior border. The genital pore is situated anteriorly to the acetabulum, but the most remarkable feature is the very long cirrus, about one-fourth the length of the body. The testes lie posteriorly, with the ovary and the uterus in front. The yolk glands are extensive, like those in *F. hepatica*.

The eggs are 0·12 to 0·13 millimetre in length and 0·077 to 0·08 in breadth.

Habitat.—The intestine of the pig and man.

Pathogenicity.—It is believed to cause dysenteric diarrhœa.

Fasciolopsis fülleborni Rodenwaldt 1909.

This worm was discovered and described by Rodenwaldt in 1909, being found in the motions of an Indian in Hamburg.

Morphology.—The parasite is very large, measuring from 30 to 50 millimetres in length and from 14 to 16 millimetres in breadth. The oral sucker and acetabulum are in the proportions of 0·75 to 2·6. There is a prepharynx and pharynx, but no œsophagus.

The intestinal cæca are long and wavy, and extend to the posterior end. The genital apertures lie in front of the acetabulum.

The cirrus sac is very long and well developed, and the testes lie behind the ovary and the oötype. The latter is much larger than in *F. buski*, and is oval instead of being round. The yolk glands extend from the acetabulum to the posterior end of the body, being situated laterally. The excretory vesicle is well developed.

The eggs measure 0·1 millimetre in length by 0·073 millimetre in breadth.

Habitat.—Intestine of man.

Pathogenicity.—The patient harbouring it was suffering from fever, which had been diagnosed as typhoid.

Kwan's Fluke (=F. buski?)

Under this term Heanley has described a trematode found by Dr. Kwan King Hung in a child in the island of Hong Kong.

Morphology.—In length it is 2 inches, in breadth $\frac{1}{2}$ inch. The cuticle possessed spines. The intestine was not clearly seen, but the cæca were unbranched. The testes were large and placed one behind the other. The ovary was branched, and it—the shell gland and the yolk glands (which met each other posteriorly)—resembled those of *F. buski*.

Pathogenicity.—The patient suffered from vomiting, which resulted in the expulsion of the flat-worms.

Opisthorchis R. Blanchard 1895.

Fasciolidæ with long flattened body and somewhat pointed anterior extremity, with a cuticle usually without spines, suckers small, intestinal cæca unbranched, yolk glands situate laterally and not extending beyond the ventral sucker in front, testes in the posterior part of the body, one behind the other.

Habitat.—The bile-ducts.

The species of this genus are separated from one another with great difficulty.

The following are found in man: *Opisthorchis felineus* Rivolta 1885, *Opisthorchis noverca* Braun 1903.

Opisthorchis felineus Rivolta 1885.

Synonyms.—*Distoma conus* Gurtl 1831, *nec* Creplin 1825; *D. lanceolatum* v. Siebold 1836, *nec* Mehlis 1825; *D. sibiricum* Winogr. 1892; *D. tenuicolle* Mühl 1896, p.p.

Opisthorchis felineus lives in the gall-bladder and bile-ducts of the domestic cat, and is also found in dogs in Europe. The North American species is different (*O. pseudo-felineus*).

In human beings it is apparently a common parasite in Siberia, where it was first found by Winogradoff in Tomsk.

Morphology.—It is reddish-yellow in colour, with a conical neck at the level of the ventral sucker, marked by a shallow constriction.

The length is from 8 to 11 millimetres and the breadth 1.5 to 2 millimetres. The testes lie in the posterior part of the body, one behind the other. The yolk glands are situate on either side of the middle third of the body, beginning behind the ventral sucker and terminating about the level of the ovary.

The genital pore is close in front of the ventral sucker.

The eggs are oval, with a well-defined operculum (30 μ by 11 μ).

Life-History.—The parasites live in the bile-duct, and the eggs, containing a ciliated miracidium, escape in the fæces. Complete development is not known, but cercaria have been found in fish which infect men and cats.

Pathogenicity.—It causes inflammation, dilatation of the bile-ducts in man, with atrophy of the liver substance, ascites, and icterus.

Opisthorchis novereca Braun 1903.

Synonym.—*Distoma conjunctum* Lewis and Cunningham 1872, *nec* Cobbold 1859; *Paropisthorchis caninus* Barker 1912 (?)

Cobbold in 1858 found a little fluke (*D. conjunctum*) in the bile-ducts of *Canis fulvus* Lewis, the American fox. Fourteen years later Lewis and Cunningham found what was considered to be the same fluke in Indian pariah dogs, and in 1874 McConnell reported the presence of the same fluke in human beings in Calcutta.

Braun in 1903 pointed out that the two parasites are quite different, and gave the name of *Opisthorchis novereca* to the Indian species, it being smaller and having slightly different arrangements in its yolk glands and suckers.

Morphology.—It is lancet-shaped, with anterior and posterior extremities, pointed body, covered with spines; 9.5 to 12.7 millimetres in length and 2.5 millimetres in breadth, with two suckers very close together, the anterior being larger than the posterior. The genital pore opens just in front of the ventral sucker. The pharynx is spheroidal, and the intestinal cæca extend far back. The two testes are very distinct, the anterior rounded and the posterior lobate. The ovary is slightly lobate, and it and the uterus are situated medianly. The yolk glands lie laterally in the middle third, extending from behind the ventral sucker to the back of the testes. There is no cirrus pouch. The eggs are oval (0.034 by 0.021 millimetre).

Habitat.—The dog and man.

Pathogenicity.—Not known.

Clonorchis Looss 1907.

Fasciolidæ, characterized by the fact that the testes are not notched or lobate, but distinctly ramified, the branches crossing the intestinal cæca on their ventral side and extending very near the body margin. The excretory vesicle is simply an unpaired tube, which becomes somewhat widened at its anterior end, assuming sometimes the shape of an irregular triangle.

Species.—*Clonorchis sinensis* Cobbold 1875, *Clonorchis endemicus* Baelz 1883.

Clonorchis sinensis Cobbold 1875.

Synonyms.—*Distoma sinense* Cobbold 1875, *D. spathulatum* Leuckart 1876, *Distomum hepatis innocuum* Baelz 1883.

Clonorchis sinensis was first discovered by McConnell in 1874 in the liver of a Chinaman. Until recently it was believed to be an *Opisthorchis*, but in 1907 Looss gave reasons why it should be placed in the new genus *Clonorchis*. As far as is known it occurs principally in China and Japan, and has not yet been found in animals.

Morphology.—*Clonorchis sinensis* is a white, or yellowish-red, or brownish, narrow trematode, 13 to 19 millimetres in length and 3 to 4 millimetres in breadth. The pigmentation is due to the deposit of fine yellowish or brown granules in the body parenchyma. The ramifications of the testes are long, the anterior arising from four and the posterior from five main stems, with sometimes ventral bulgings. The ovary is trilobate, but may show three to six smaller lobules. The yolk glands reach from the ventral sucker to the level of the ovary, and are peculiar in that certain groups of follicles remain undeveloped. In perfectly mature specimens the seminal vesicle extends back as far as the middle of the uterus. The eggs are generally narrowed towards the anterior end, and have a rather high lid, with a sharply projecting brim (these peculiarities may be absent). The egg is 29 μ in length and 16 μ in breadth.

Habitat.—Only known in man.

Clonorchis endemicus Baelz 1883.

Synonym.—*Distoma hepatis endemicum sive perniciosum* Baelz 1883, *Distoma japonicum* R. Blanchard 1886.

History.—In 1883 flukes were first described in the liver of human beings in Japan by Kiyono, Nakahama, Suga, and Yamagata, and a little later in the same year Baelz reported the occurrence of two hepatic distoma in Japan.



FIG. 172.—CLONORCHIS SINENSIS.

(After Looss, from the *Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology*.)

a, Schematic; b, natural size; c, egg \times 500.

1. *Distoma hepatis innocuum*, up to 20 millimetres in length, with a lighter-coloured uterus of larger volume, with slightly larger ova, 21 to 36 μ in length by 18 to 20 μ in breadth, and with a black granular pigment in its excretory apparatus and body parenchyma. It caused little or no symptoms in human beings, and was found accidentally in post-mortems.

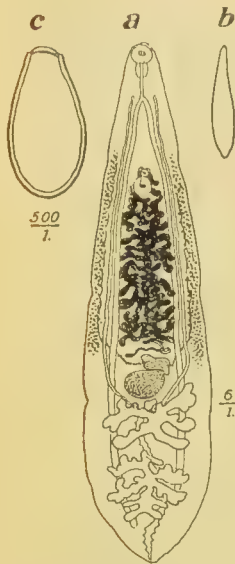


FIG. 173.—CLONORCHIS ENDEMICUS.

(After Looss, from the *Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology*.)

a, Schematic; b, natural size; c, egg $\times 500$.

2. *Distoma hepatis endemicum sive perniciosum*, which was smaller, 8 to 11 millimetres in length, and did not possess the above characters, while its eggs were only 20 to 30 μ in length by 15 to 17 μ in breadth.

These were confused with McConnell's parasite, which is now called *Clonorchis sinensis*, and of which *Distoma hepatis innocuum* is merely a synonym. Looss points out that the description given since 1883 of *Opisthorchis sinensis* is that of *D. hepatis endemicum*, which he now separates distinctly as *Clonorchis endemicus* Baelz 1883.

It is found in Japan, where it is common, and in Annam and Tonkin, in man, cats, dogs, and pigs.

Morphology.—From 6 to 13 millimetres in length by 1.8 to 2.6 millimetres in breadth. Oral sucker, 0.43 to 0.45 millimetre in diameter; ventral sucker, 0.37 to 0.40 millimetre in diameter. Ratio of the two suckers, 13 : 12 and 15 : 12. No pigment granules in the parenchyma. The yolk glands are like *C. sinensis*, but there are fewer undeveloped groups of follicles. The eggs are 26 μ long and 15 μ broad, on an average, with a rather flat lid.

Life-History.—Kobayashi has found the cysts in the muscles of fish—*Pseudorasbora parva*, *Leucogobio giuntheri*—and was able to infect cats by feeding with the infected flesh. He also found cysts in other fish—*Acheilognathus lanceolata*, *A. limbata*, *Paracheilognathus rhombea*, *Pseudoperclampus typus*, *Abbottina psegma*, *Biwia zezera*, and *Sarcocherlichthys variegatus*. These fish are the second intermediate host. The first intermediate host and the method of infection of the fish are unknown.

Habitat.—It is found in cats, dogs, hogs, and men.

Pathogenicity.—Enlargement of the liver, and diarrhoea.

A Possible Feline Clonorchis (or Opisthorchis).

Looss draws attention to the fact that Ijima, in 1886, describes a *Distomum* from the liver of a cat in Japan, with fine spines, and smaller than *C. endemicus*, which is to be looked upon as a normal parasite of the cat. It is only 4.5 millimetres in length by 0.9 millimetre in breadth. It may be a *Clonorchis* or an *Opisthorchis*.

Katsurada, in 1900, published a paper based upon seventy-six post-mortems with an enormous number of parasites, among which he mentioned three found in a man from the province of Saga, with an average length of 5.16 milli-

metres and breadth of 0.96 millimetre, which Looss considers can only be explained as an infection with a feline species.

Habitat.—Cats and man (?).

Paragonimus Braun 1899.

Fasciolidæ with thick, oval, or broad, fusiform bodies, almost circular on transverse section. Cuticle, with scale-like spines. Suckers separated by half the length of the body. The intestinal cæca are wavy, and run to the posterior end of the body, but are unbranched. The excretory vesicle runs from the pharynx backwards to its aperture on the posterior margin of the body. The genital pore is just behind the ventral sucker. There is no cirrus pouch, and no receptaculum seminis.

Habitat.—In the lungs and other organs of mammals.

Paragonimus westermani Kerbert 1878.

Synonyms.—*Distoma westermani* Kerbert 1878, *D. ringeri* Cobbold 1880, *D. hepaticum* Miura 1889, *D. pulmonale* Baelz 1883, *D. pulmonis* Suga 1883, *D. cerebrale* Yamagiwa 1890, *Mesogonimus westermani* Railliet 1890, *M. pulmonale* Stossich 1892.

History.—*Paragonimus westermani* was discovered by Kerbert in 1878 in the lungs of two Bengal tigers, who died respectively in the Zoological Gardens of Amsterdam and Hamburg.

In 1880 Baelz found in the sputum of cases of hæmoptysis bodies which he took to be psorosperms, and therefore called the disease gregarinosis pulmonum, but when these were referred to Leuckart he said that they were eggs of a *Distomum*. In the same year Manson found what he took to be eggs of some parasite in a case of hæmoptysis, in a Chinaman from Northern Formosa, and later he saw a Portuguese with hæmoptysis and obscure thoracic symptoms, who lived in Tamsui in North Formosa.

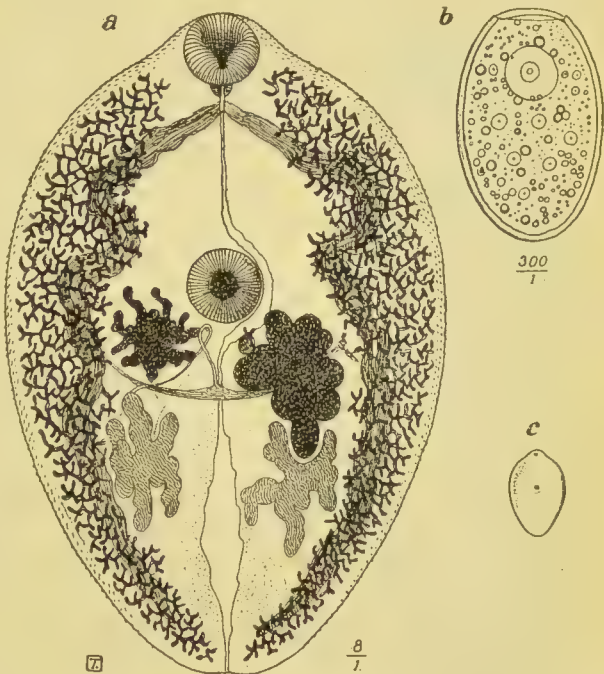


FIG. 174.—*PARAGONIMUS WESTERMANI*.

(After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten'.)

a, Schematic $\times 8$; b, eggs $\times 300$; c, natural size.

This man died in Formosa, and Dr. Ringer, who performed the post-mortem, discovered in the lungs a minute, fleshy, slightly flattened, oval body, grey in colour, and about a quarter of an inch in length, which expelled some brownish material from a minute orifice near one end.

This specimen was sent to Manson, who noted the same eggs as he had found in the Chinaman already mentioned, and then forwarded the parasite to Cobbold, who, thinking it new to science, named it *Distomum ringeri*. In 1883 Baelz, having found specimens in the lungs, named it *D. pulmonale*. In 1890 Otani and Yamagiwa proved that it could occur in other parts of the body besides the lungs by finding it in the brain, where it produced symptoms of Jacksonian epilepsy. Stiles and Looss defined its zoological position; Ward found it in cats, Railliet in dogs, and Stiles in hogs; while the best description of the lesions caused by it is that by Musgrave in 1907, who found it in the Philippine Islands.

It is very common in Japan, and is found in China, Korea, and North America, a human case being reported from Mexico by Naunyn.

Morphology.—The parasite varies from a reddish-brown to a light slate colour when first removed from the body, but soon becomes greyish on exposure to the air. In shape it is oval, with a somewhat flattened ventral surface, and is capable of slight alterations of its appearance by protruding and retracting its head, and by altering its ventral sucker so that it may appear terminal. The cuticle is covered with scale-like spines, which may be capable of being moved. The oral sucker is spherical and terminal, 0.63 to 0.97 millimetre in diameter. The ventral sucker is situated in the anterior half of the body, and is 0.76 to 1.31 millimetres in diameter. The œsophagus is short, and divides into the two wavy cæca. The genital pore may be indistinct, and is always small, lying close to and behind the ventral sucker. The testes lie about, but not quite on, the same level on each side of the median line just behind the uterus. There is neither a cirrus nor a cirrus pouch. The ovary is opposite and slightly posterior to the uterus, which is visible just posterior to the ventral sucker. The yolk glands lie at the sides, and their branches almost meet dorsally, while ventrally they only extend to the intestinal cæca. Laurer's canal is present. The eggs are oval in shape, of a reddish-brown to a light yellow in colour, with a length from 0.08 to 0.1 millimetre, and a breadth from 0.052 to 0.075 millimetre. They possess an operculum, and contain the ovum and yolk cells.

The excretory vesicle is well developed, and extends from the pharynx backwards.

Life-History.—This is not known.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of paragonimiasis. (See Chapter XLI.)

Heterophyes Cobbold 1866.

Small Fasciolidæ, with a narrow, movable, anterior portion, and a broader, less movable, posterior portion, which contains the genitalia. Cuticle with scale-like spines; suckers widely separated; œsophagus long. Genital pore placed laterally and behind the ventral sucker, and surrounded by a genital prominence with chitinous rodlets. No cirrus pouch. The testes are at the posterior

end, and the ovary in a median position between them. Yolk glands are small, and situated at the sides posteriorly.

Habitat.—The intestine of man and animals.

Heterophyes heterophyes v. Siebold 1852

Synonyms.—*Distomum heterophyes* v. Siebold 1852, *Mesogonimus heterophyes* Railliet 1890, *Cænogonims heterophyes* Looss 1900, *Cotylogonimus heterophyes* Braun 1901.

History.—This minute parasite was discovered by Bilharz in the intestine of a boy in Cairo in 1851, and again a little later, but the third observation was not till 1891 by R. Blanchard; since then Looss has found it in Alexandria and Cairo, where he says it is not uncommon.

It is also found in dogs and cats in Egypt, Japan, and Formosa.

Morphology.—*Heterophyes heterophyes* is pear-shaped, very narrow in front, broad behind; 2 millimetres in length by 1 millimetre in breadth, but can stretch to quite double this length. Cuticle with rectangular scales, and with numerous glands on the anterior ventral surface. Oral sucker 0.1 millimetre and ventral 0.35 millimetre in diameter. Œsophagus relatively long. Intestinal cæca end posteriorly near each other. Testes situated posteriorly, not quite on the same level on each side of the excretory vesicle; ducts join in a large vesicula seminalis, from which a canal unites with the metatreme, and then discharges into the genital cavity, the pore of which is placed laterally, surrounded by an annular muscular elevation, provided with seventy-five to eighty branched chitinous spines, probably intended to help in sexual intercourse.

The ovary lies medianly, and its duct passes backwards to join the receptaculum seminis, which is just in front of the testes.

Here also joins the vitellarian duct of the yolk glands, which also lie laterally in the posterior third of the body. The uterus is coiled throughout the posterior part of the body. The canal of Laurer is present. The eggs have thick shells, and are 0.03 millimetre in length and 0.017 millimetre in breadth, containing a miracidium.

Habitat.—Small intestine.

Pathogenicity.—Perhaps nil, but the parasite is very small, and may therefore be overlooked.

Dicrocoelium Dujardin 1845.

Medium-sized Fasciolidæ, with lancet-shaped bodies, without spines, and with suckers placed close together. Intestine does not reach the posterior end. Genital pore close behind the pharynx,

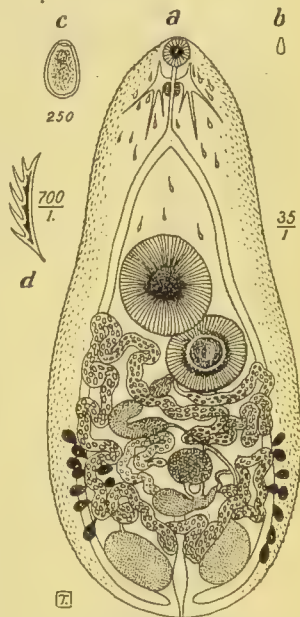


FIG. 175.—HETEROPHYES HETEROPHYES.

(After Looss, from Braun's 'Animal Parasites of Man,' English edition.)

a, Schematic $\times 35$; *b*, natural size; *c*, eggs $\times 250$; *d*, spine $\times 700$.

with the cirrus pouch in front of the ventral sucker, just behind which the testes lie with the ovary in the median line behind them. The uterus lies behind the ovary and testes, extending as far back as the posterior border. The yolk glands are small, and situated in the middle quarter of the lateral areas of the body. The excretory vesicle is tubular. Ova dark brown. Worms live in the liver and gall-bladder, rarely in the intestine.

Dicrocoelium lanceatum Stiles and Hassall 1896.

Synonyms.—*Fasciola lanceolata* Rudolphi 1803, *nec* Schrank 1790 ; *Distomum lanceolatum* Mehlis 1825 ; *Dicrocoelium lanceolatum* Dujardin 1845 ; *Dicrocoelium lanceatum* Stiles and Hassall 1896.

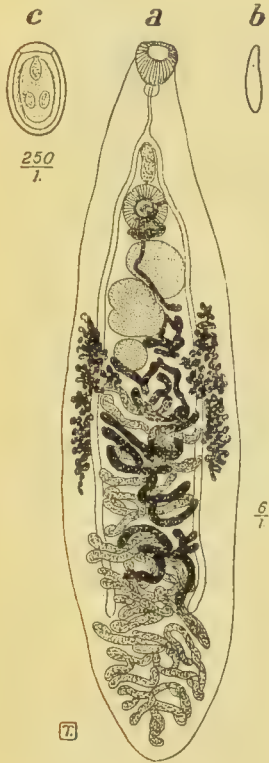


FIG. 176.—*DICROCOELIUM LANCEATUM*.

(After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten'.)

a, Schematic $\times 6$; b, natural size ; c, eggs $\times 250$.

History.—Bucholz appears to have been the first to discover these worms in the gall-bladder in Weimar, and, later, Chabert in the intestines of a girl in France, and Küchner in Weimar. Since then they have been noted in Italy and Egypt. They are found in the bile-ducts of herbivorous and omnivorous animals in Europe, North Africa, Asia, and North and South America.

Morphology.—*Dicrocoelium lanceatum* is a small trematode, measuring 8 to 10 millimetres in length by 1.5 to 2.5 millimetres in breadth. It is pointed in front and narrow behind, so that the widest point is just behind the yolk glands. Cuticle is smooth ; the oral sucker is terminal, and about the same size as the ventral (0.5 to 0.6 millimetre). The intestine bifurcates just in front of the genital pore, which is situate in the median line in front of the ventral sucker, behind which the two testes lie, from which the vasa deferentia run forwards to form a cirrus lying in a cirrus sac.

The ovary lies behind the posterior testis ; there is a receptaculum seminis and a Laurer's canal. The yolk glands lie in the lateral portion of the middle fifth of the body, the posterior portion of which is filled up by the large coiled uterus. The eggs are thick-shelled, and yellowish to brown in colour, with a length of 38 to 45 μ and a breadth of 22 to 30 μ .

Life-History.—Not known, but suspicions rest on *Planorbis marginatus* and land-snails.

Pathogenicity.—No special symptoms.

FAMILY IV. MONOSTOMIDÆ.

Trematodes of oval or more or less rounded form, possessing only an oral sucker.

Monostomum Zeder 1803.

Monostomum lentis Von Nordmann 1832.

Synonym.—*Festucaria lentis* Moquin-Tandon 1860.

Eight specimens of this parasite were discovered by Von Nordmann in the opaque lens of an old woman ; they were only 0.3 millimetre in length.

FAMILY V. SCHISTOSOMIDÆ LOOSS.

Digenea with separate sexes.

Genus.—*Schistosoma* E. Weinland.

Schistosoma Weinland 1858.

Synonyms.—*Gynæcophorus* Diesing 1858, *Bilharzia* Cobbold 1859, *Thecosoma* Moquin-Tandon 1860.

Schistosomidæ with long filiform females and shorter males, with bodies widened behind, which can curve ventrally to form a *canalis gynæcophorus*, in which the female is enclosed. No pharynx. Intestinal branches unite at the posterior end of the body. Ova with spines.

Habitat.—The vascular system.

Species.—*Schistosoma hæmatobium*, *S. mansoni*, *S. japonicum*.

Schistosoma hæmatobium Bilharz 1852.

Synonyms.—*Distoma hæmatobia* Bilharz 1852, *D. capense* Harley 1864, *Bilharzia hæmatobia*.

History.—*Schistosoma hæmatobium* was discovered in the portal vein of a man in 1851 by Bilharz in Cairo, and later by Harley in 1864 in a patient from the Cape of Good Hope. Since then it has been found widely distributed through Africa (Egypt, Sudan, Tunis, Algiers, West Coast, including the Gold Coast, East Coast, and South and Central Africa), which is its endemic centre, and in Asia, in Syria, Arabia, Persia, India, Mauritius. Only imported cases occur in Ceylon.

Other species are known in sheep, horses, oxen, etc.

Morphology—Males.—The male is whitish in colour, and from 12 to 14 millimetres in length, with a greatest width behind the ventral sucker of 1 millimetre. It is really thin and flat, though it may look cylindrical, because the lateral margins are turned ventrally inwards, enclosing a canal, called the 'gynæcophoric canal,' in which the female lies. The whole body is covered with projections tipped with short spines, which enable it to cling to the wall of the bloodvessel. The oral sucker looks ventrally. The ventral sucker is situate near to it. There is no pharynx, but the œsophagus is long and covered with numerous glands, and bifurcates just in front of the ventral sucker into the intestinal cæca, which unite behind the testes into a median trunk. The excretory pore is at the posterior end, situated a little dorsally.

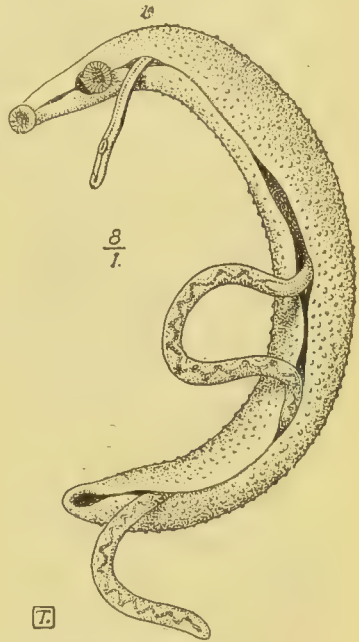


FIG. 177.—SCHISTOSOMA HÆMATOBIUM.

(After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten'.)

This drawing shows the female worm enclosed in the gynæcophoric canal of the male.

There are four to five testes, from which the vas deferens runs to a vesicula seminalis, from which an ejaculatory duct proceeds to the genital pore, situated behind the ventral sucker at the beginning of the gynæcophoric canal.

Female.—The female worm is long, thin, being 20 millimetres in length (*i.e.*, longer than the male) and 0.25 millimetre in breadth (much thinner than the male). Posteriorly it is coloured dark brown, because of the colour of the contents of the intestine. The cuticle is smooth, except in the sucker and at the tail end, where there are large spines. The alimentary canal is much the same as in the male. The ovary is median, and the ovarian duct, taking origin at the posterior end, runs forward to join with the vitellarian duct from the single yolk gland, which lies about the middle of the body. The junction of the two ducts is at first narrow and surrounded by the shell gland, but it soon dilates into the uterus, which runs forwards to end in the genital pore, just behind the ventral sucker. The eggs are bluntly spindle-shaped, yellowish in colour, slightly transparent, and provided with a thin shell, without a lid, but possessing a terminal spine, which may be absent at the posterior end. They measure from 0.12 to 0.19 millimetre in length and 0.05 to 0.073 millimetre in breadth, but vary considerably.

Life-History.—The young immature males and females are only found in the portal system in the liver, which is therefore believed by Looss to be the home of the sporocyst.

When older, the different sexes repair to the portal vein. Looss notes that it is not uncommon to find males alone in that vein, and, further, that they are all of the same age, which he explains by assuming that there are male sporocysts and female sporocysts. Eventually they pair in the portal vein, and now the male carries the female along that vein down the inferior mesenteric vein to the bladder, which is a fairly direct route, but Looss considers that they may be chemically attracted to the bladder, for their journey is against the blood-stream, and they are enabled to perform it by means of the bristles on the male cuticle.

Looss notes in the females before fertilization, in the portal vein and *en route* to the bladder, eggs with lateral spines, but after fertilization eggs with long terminal spines; but the interpretation of this will be dealt with more fully under *Schistosoma mansoni*.

The length of time occupied by the journey is not known, and probably varies considerably. Arrived in the veins of the bladder, the real oviposition begins, and Looss is inclined to think that the female can push her head (close to which is the genital opening) into the capillaries, and thus lay the eggs directly into these channels, where they are held in position by contraction of the capillary upon them. Looss thinks that it is probable that the worms may live three years in these vessels, producing during that period large numbers of eggs, which work their way like any other foreign body into the lumen of the bladder, probably by means of the contractions of that organ.

During their journey through the tissues the eggs increase in size from 0.08 to 0.09 μ in length and 0.03 to 0.04 μ in breadth in the oötype to 0.13 to 0.15 μ in length and 0.04 to 0.06 μ in breadth in the urine, while the embryo develops, so that when they are voided in the urine they contain a well-developed miracidium; but

during this journey many die and become calcified. It is not known how long an egg must take before it escapes in the urine, but Looss points out that even the presence of an egg with a true miracidium is no evidence that the parent worms are alive. These eggs will simply die, unless they gain access to water, in which they hatch, and the ciliated miracidium escapes and swims about.

In the so-called body cavity of this miracidium there are germinal cells the development of which has been traced in *Fasciola hepatica*. One would therefore assume that the miracidium required another host—e.g., an invertebrate, possibly a mollusc, crustacean, an insect, or a vertebrate, perhaps a fish—but the careful observations of Looss in the Nile Valley have not established its entry into any of these animals. Moreover, it does not live long in water, thirty to forty hours being the greatest period.

Therefore Looss has come to the conclusion that man is the intermediary host. He further points out that it cannot be viâ the stomach, for a solution of 1 in 1,000 hydrochloric acid kills them instantly; therefore he is forced to the conclusion that they enter the body viâ the skin while the people are bathing. In this he is supported by the habits of the people, who work in the fields standing in liquid mud, and bathe in companies in canals with slow-flowing water, or in pools which may possibly have become infected by persons urinating into the water.

From the skin Looss thinks that they work their way to the liver, where the further development is gone through.

But the worms do not always remain in the bladder, it being possible for them to work their way to the rectum by means of communicating veins, when the eggs escape with the fæces.

Moreover, Looss thinks that sometimes they may miss the direct route to the bladder, and get by accident into the veins of the rectum.

Further, it appears that the young immature worms, instead of entering the portal system, may get into the hepatic venous system, for they have been seen by Kartulis in the vena cava and by Symmers, Turner, and others in the lung.

Eggs laid in the portal system may be carried to the liver by the blood-stream. In this organ they may lodge, and work their way into the hepatic venous system, and thus into the lungs or into the bile-ducts, and so to the fæces and to the exterior of the body. It must be admitted that Looss's views do not obtain universal support, and that several authorities believe that a cycle analogous to *Fasciola hepatica* will some day be found.

Pathogenicity.—*Schistosoma hæmatobium* is the cause of one form of urinary, and according to some authorities of intestinal, schistosomiasis (*vide* Chapter LVII.).

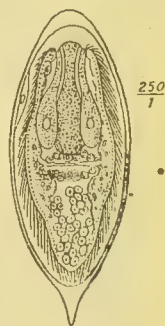


FIG. 178.—EGG OF SCHISTOSOMA HÆMATOBIUM ($\times 250$).

(After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten'.)

Schistosoma mansoni Sambon 1907.

It has long been known that in cases of schistosomiasis two kinds of eggs can be seen—one with a terminal spine when the urinary system is affected, and the other with a lateral spine when the intestine is affected. In 1903 Manson noted that in a case from the West Indies in which the disease attacked the rectum, and not the bladder, the eggs all had lateral spines, and he therefore suggested that these eggs might possibly belong to a separate species of *Schistosoma*.

In 1907 Sambon created a new species, *Schistosoma mansoni*, for the following reasons:—

1. Lateral-spined eggs are never found in the urine, but only in the fæces, and never occur in the bladder, only in the rectum and liver.

2. The egg is oval in shape, with a lateral spine, while that of *S. hæmatobium* is oblong and lanceolar in shape, with a terminal spine, and that of *S. japonicum* oval or roundish, with a lateral very small spine in about 75 per cent. of those examined by Looss.

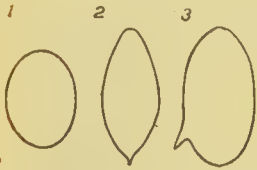


FIG. 179.—OUTLINES OF THE EGGS OF
(1) *S. JAPONICUM*
(WITHOUT SPINE);
(2) *S. HÆMATO-*
BIIUM; (3) *S. MAN-*
SONI.

(After Sambon.)

The lengths and breadths are different: *S. mansoni*, 112 to 162 μ by 60 to 70 μ ; *S. hæmatobium*, 110 to 120 μ by 46 to 50 μ ; *S. japonicum*, 75 to 90 μ by 53 to 75 μ .

3. The males are apparently similar, but the females have a difference in the genital tract, which has been described by Fritsch, and when mature contain lateral-spined ova in the uterus.

4. The geographical distribution of *S. mansoni* and *S. hæmatobium* were different. *S. hæmatobium* is alone found in the Cape; *S. mansoni* is the only species in the West Indies and in South America.

Looss has challenged these statements, maintaining that the lateral-spined eggs are the products of unfertilized females, and pointing out that Bilharz had noted the presence of a lateral-spined ovum in the anterior portion of the uterus and terminal-spined ova in the posterior portion of the same female, which he—Looss—himself believes that he has seen. Looss thinks that it is possible for only females to occur in a person, and they, not having the muscular strength for the long journey against the blood-stream to the bladder, are thus driven into side-channels and reach the bowel. These unfertilized females will only produce lateral-spined ova, which, being shed all the way along, are carried to the liver. Thus no terminal-spined ova, will ever appear, but only lateral-spined ova, which will be voided by the fæces.

He answers Sambon's points in the following manner:—

1. The lateral-spined ova do not represent the eggs of a new species of *Schistosoma*, but merely those produced by unfertilized females of *S. hæmatobium*.

2. Terminal-spined ova occur frequently in the fæces and rectum.

3. The difference in the eggs is simply due to the fact that they are products of unfertilized or fertilized females, and in all cases where the terminal-

spined ova are found the lateral will also be found, especially if the liver be examined.

4. The description of differences in the female generative organs as given by Fritsch is wrong.

5. Straight-spined ova in the urine have been found in the West Indies, as recorded by Holcomb.

6. Man being in all probability the intermediary host, there are no bounds to the geographical distribution of *S. hæmatobium*.

These criticisms of Looss have been answered by Sambon, who has also been supported by Ward. Da Silva has described the adult worms as follows:—

Males.—The male measures 12 millimetres in length by 0.448 millimetre in breadth in the middle. The ventral sucker is 0.540 millimetre behind the oral sucker.

The anterior end shows six sexual masses composed of testes and seminal vesicles. The posterior end is tapering. The spinous papillæ are not so marked as in *S. hæmatobium*.

Females.—The female worms measure 14.5 to 15 millimetres in length by 0.168 millimetre in breadth in the middle. The distance between the two suckers is 0.224 to 0.252 millimetre. It is thickest in the middle, and tapers to each extremity. The anus opens 0.336 millimetre in front of the tip of the tail. The oviduct is much shorter than in *S. hæmatobium*, and enters the vitelline ducts after only a short turn. The uterus contains laterally spined eggs. The eggs measure $146\ \mu$ by $62\ \mu$, with $18\ \mu$ as the length of the spiculum. The miracidium escapes by a transverse rupture of the shell, and measures $153\ \mu$ by $72\ \mu$.

In 1911 Looss demonstrated that Sambon's species and his own hypothesis are untenable, and brings forward a new explanation—that the eggs develop parthenogenetically, that the miracidia penetrate the skin, and that the cercaria from one sporocyst are all of the same sex. He adopts Goldschmidt's view that the yolk cells are really shell-producing cells. In the formation of terminal-spined eggs just sufficient of these cells are admitted to the oötype (*vide* Figs. 162 and 163) to fill the cavity, the shape of which is impressed upon the shell, while a small portion of the shell substance protruding into the funnel gives rise to the terminal spine. If the yolk cells are more numerous and distend the cavity of the oötype, they will cause the dorsal wall to bulge and will fill the funnel and the duct leading to the uterus. If the egg remains in this position until the shell has hardened, the irregularity will be produced, and in this way the lateral or ventral-spined ova will be produced.

In 1911 Flu, in studying the Bilharziosis in Surinam, comes to conclusions opposed to Looss, and supports Sambon. He concludes that *S. mansoni* is distinct from *S. hæmatobium* because: (1) *S. hæmatobium* has eggs differently shaped from those of *S. mansoni*; (2) the anterior border of the lateral folds in the male *S. hæmatobium* forms almost a right angle with the anterior portion of the body, while in *S. mansoni* the transition is more gradual; (3) the ovaries of *S. mansoni* have always a more or less winding course, a character not described for any other species of *Schistosoma*; (4) the oötype is asymmetrical in relation to the long axis of the worm; the oviduct opens laterally on the ventral side where the shell gland is situate; (5) *S. mansoni* lives in the region of the mesenteric veins, and *S. hæmatobium* predominates

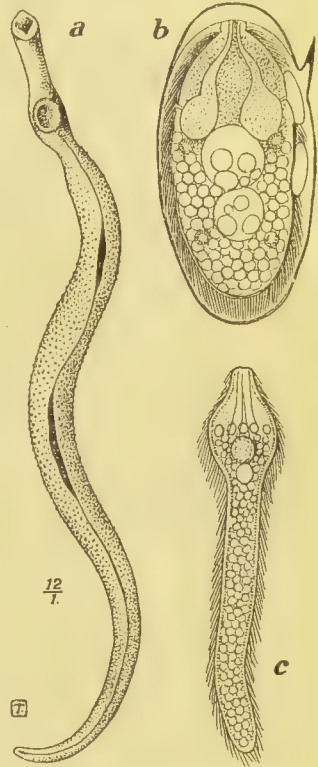


FIG. 180.—SCHISTOSOMA MANSONI.

(After Holcomb.)

a, Male; b, egg; c, larva.

in the pelvic veins; (4) *S. mansoni* gives rise to an illness like katayama disease, and never to the bladder symptoms produced by *S. hæmatobium*; (7) the morbid anatomy of cases invaded by *S. mansoni* agrees with those invaded by *S. japonicum*, and differs considerably from those caused by *S. hæmatobium*; (8) the geographical distribution is in opposition to Looss's view that the lateral-spined eggs are unfertilized because they are the only eggs found in Brazil, the Antilles, and Surinam.

He also found a single type of egg with lateral spine in the uterus and oötype of sixty females.

Our observations and views are distinctly in favour of Sambon's theory of the duality of the species, but further investigation is necessary to settle this controversy.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of intestinal schistosomiasis (*vide* Chapter LIV.).

Schistosoma japonicum Katsurada 1904.

Synonym.—*Schistosomum cattoi* Blanchard 1905.

History.—For several years an endemic disease, characterized by enlargement of the liver and spleen, fever, diarrhœa with mucus and blood in the motions, associated with ascites and cachexia and extreme weakness, had been observed in the provinces of Yamanashi and Hiroshima of Central Japan and Saga of Kinshu. Eggs containing a miracidium were to be found in the liver and other organs.



FIG. 181. —
EGG OF SCHIS-
TOSOMA JAPO-
NICUM.

Katsurada then examined cats in the neighbourhood, and found numerous *Schistosoma* in the portal veins of two cats in the province of Yamanashi, in which there were eggs exactly similar to those found in the above-mentioned disease. Catto a little later found the same parasite in a Chinaman from the province of Fukien. Logan and others have found it in Chinamen in the province of Hunan, Nicols in a case from the Philippines, and Manson and Sambon in cases from China.

Morphology.—In general appearance the parasite resembles *S. hæmatobium*, but is smaller. Male, 7 to 12 millimetres in length, 0.53 millimetre in breadth; females, 8 to 12 millimetres in length, 0.4 millimetre in breadth. The ventral sucker is relatively larger than the oral. The male worm has no tubercles. The eggs are oval, yellowish-brown in colour, without operculum; but a small round formation, which can be compared to the spine found in *S. mansoni*, has been described by Leiper in 75 per cent. of cases examined. Catto points out that these eggs might be mistaken for those of *Agchylostoma duodenale*.

Pathogenicity.—The parasite is the cause of one form of schistosomiasis—viz., katayama disease (*vide* Chapter XLI.).

Christophers and Stephens' *Schistosoma*.

Christophers and Stephens in 1905 described a *Schistosoma* egg which differs from the usual descriptions, and which therefore may belong to a new and as yet unknown species or genus; but it was found with ordinary *S. hæmatobium* eggs, and may therefore be an abnormality. The egg was

found in Madras; it was of an elongated, spindle-shape, with a long snout-like process extending from the broader end (205.2μ by 53.2μ).

New Schistosoma.

In 1904 Salomone and Belli found portions of a worm which they think may be a new *Schistosoma* in a patient suffering from hæmaturia contracted in Brazil.

REFERENCES.

Entozoa.

- BLANCHARD (1889). *Traité de Zoologie Médicale*. Paris.
 BRAUN (1892). *Klassen und Ordnungen des Tierreichs*, vol. iv., pp. 1 and 2.
 BRAUN (1908). *Die tierischen Parasiten des Menschen*. Fourth edition.
 COBBOLD (1864). *Entozoa*. London.
 DAVAINÉ (1877). *Traité des Entozoa*.
 DUJARDIN (1845). *Histoire Naturelle des Hérminthes*. Paris.
 KUCHENMEISTER (1867). *Parasitology*. London.
 LEUCKART (1879-?). *Die Parasiten des Menschen*. Second edition.

Platyhelminia.

- BENHAM (1901). *Treatise on Zoology*, Ray Lankester, part iv.
 BRAUN (1908). *Op. cit.*

Trematoda.

- In addition to the books already mentioned :—
 STILES. *Illustrated Key to the Trematode Parasites of Man*. Bulletin 17, Hygienic Laboratory of the United States Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, Washington.
 WARD (1903-08). *Data for the Determination of Human Entozoa*. I., *Studies for the Zoological Laboratory of the University of Nebraska*, No. 49; II., *ibid.*, No. 86.

Paramphistomoidea.

- STILES AND GOLDBERGER (1910). Bulletin 60, Hygienic Laboratory, Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, United States. Washington.

Paramphistomidæ.

- FISCHÆDER (1903). *Zool. Anz.*, xxiv. 367. (1901). *Zool. Jahrbuch Syst.*, xvii. 485.

Cladorechis watsoni.

- CONYNGHAM (1904). *British Medical Journal*, No. 2,281, September 17, p. 663.
 SHIPLEY (1905). *Report of Thompson Yates and Johnston Laboratory*, VI., i. 129.
 STILES AND GOLDBERGER (1910). *Loc. cit.*

Gastrodiscus hominis.

- LEWIS AND McCONNELL (1876). *Proceedings of the Asiatic Society of Bengal*, p. 182.

Fasciola hepatica.

- THOMAS, P. (1883). *The Life-History of the Liver-Fluke*. *Quarterly Journal of the Medical Society*, xxiii. 99.

Fasciola gigantica.

- RAILLIET, A. (1895). *Comptes Rendus de la Soc. de Biologie*, X., ii. 388. Paris.
 GOUVEA (1895). *La distomatose Pulm. par la Douve du Foie*. Thèse, Paris.

Echinostoma ilocanum.

- GARRISON (1908). Philippine Journal of Science, B. iii., 5, 385.
 ODHNER (1911). Zoologischer Anzeiger, August.

Agamodistomum ophthalmobium.

- GESCHEIDT AND AMMON (1833). Die Entozoa des Auges, Zeitsch. f. Ophth., iii. 405.

Fasciolopsis buski.

- BUDD, G. (1852). Diseases of the Liver. Second edition (first reference). London.
 COBBOLD (1879). Parasites, p. 20. London.
 COBBOLD (1860). Proceedings of the Linnæan Society: Zool., vol. v., p. 5. (Original description.)
 POIRIER, P. (1887). Archiv. Zool. Exp. et Gén., V. ii. 203.

Fasciolopsis fülleborni.

- RODENWALDT (1909). Centralb. f. Bakt., Parasit. u. Infect., 451. Jena.

Kwan's Fluke.

- HEANLEY (1908). Journal of Tropical Medicine, April 15, p. 122.

Opisthorchis felineus.

- LOOSS (1907). Annal. Trop. Med. and Parasit., pp. 123-154.
 VERDUM AND BRUGANT (1908). Arch. de Parasitologie, xii. 125.

Clonorchis.

- LOOSS (1907). Annal. Trop. Med. and Parasit., pp. 123-154.
 VERDUM AND BRUGANT (1908). Arch. de Parasitologie, xii. 99.

Opisthorchis noverca.

- COBBOLD (1859). Journal of the Linnæan Society of London: Zool., vol. v., p. 8.
 COBBOLD (1862). Transactions of the Linnæan Society of London, xxiii. 349.
 LEWIS AND CUNNINGHAM (1872). Eleventh Annual Report of the Sanitary Commission of the Government of India. Appendix C, p. 168.
 MACCONNELL (1876). Lancet, i. 343; (1878), i. 476.
 BARKER, F. D. (1911). Archives de Parasitologie, XIV., 13-61. Paris. (Deals with the whole genus.)

Paragonimus westermani.

- BAELZ (1880). C. f. Med. Wiss., p. 721. Berlin.
 BAEZ (1883). Klin. Woch., p. 234.
 KEBERT (1881). Arch. f. Mik. An., xix., 519.
 MANSON (1882). Medical Times and Gazette (1881), ii. 8; (1882), ii. 42.
 MUSGRAVE (1907). Philip. Journal of Science, Book II., p. 16.
 STILES (1889). Sixteenth Ann. Rep. Bur. of Anim. Industry, p. 559. Washington.

Monostomum lentis.

- NORDMANN (1853). Mik. Beitr. z. Naturg. d. Wirbellos Thiere, ii., 9. Berlin.

Heterophyes heterophyes.

- BLANCHARD, R. (1891). Comptes Rendus de la Soc. de Biologie, IX., iii. 792. Paris.
 LOOSS, A. (1902). Centralblatt f. Bakteriologie u. Parasitenkunde, I., xx. 836. Orig., xxxii. 886.
 SANDWITH (1899). Lancet, ii. 888.
 SIEBOLD (1832). Z. f. Wiss. Zool., iv. 52.

Dicrocoelium lanceatum.

- ASCHOFF, L. (1892). Archiv f. Path. Anat., cxxx. 493.
 GALLI-VALERIO (1905). C. f. Bak. u. Parasit., Orig., xxxix. 239 (B).

Schistosoma hæmatobium.

- BILHARZ (1852). Zeitschrift f. Zoologie, ii. 53, 454.
 CHRISTOPHERS AND STEPHENS (1905). Tropical Medicine, p. 259.
 LOOSS (1895). C. f. Bak. u. Parasit., xvi. 286, 340; (1894) Mem. Inst., Egypt, iii. 158.
 LOOSS (1905). Mense's Handbuch d. Tropenk., i. 93.
 SALOMONE AND BELLI (1904). Anna li Med. Navale.

Schistosoma mansoni.

- LOOSS (1908). Ann. T. Med. and Paras., ii. 153.
 SAMBON (1908). Journal of Tropical Medicine, p. 29; (1909) No. 1, p. 1.
 DA SILVA (1909). Archives de Parasitologie, xiii. 2, p. 281.
 FLU (1912). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie Parasitenkunde und Infektionskrankheiten, Originale, lxi. 389. Jena.

Schistosoma japonicum.

- CATTO, J. (1905). British Medical Journal, p. 11.
 KATSURADA (1904). Annot. Zool. Japon., V., iii. 147.
 LOOSS (1905). Centralblatt f. Bakteriologie u. Parasit., Orig., xxxix. 280.
 WOOLLEY (1906). Philippine Journal of Sci. B., i. 83.

CHAPTER XX

CESTOIDEA

Cestoidea—History—Morphology—Life-History—Habitat—Classification—
Description of species found in man—References.

CLASS III. CESTOIDEA RUDOLPHI 1808.

PLATYHELMIA without alimentary canal in any stage of the life-cycle, with segmented body, in which the epidermis, which has sunk into the parenchyma, secretes a thick cuticle. Lime-secreting cells are developed in greater or less number, and form calcareous concretions. Organs of fixation of a variable character are developed. The habitat of the adult worm is typically the intestine, and that of the larval form some other part of the body, normally that of another host.

History.—It is believed that cestodes were known to the ancients, and that the reason why Moses, who figures largely in the history of Tropical Medicine, forbade the Israelites to eat pigs and such animals, was because of the parasites known to exist in their flesh.

Aristotle knew the proglottides of tapeworms, and as early as 1592 *Tænia* was distinguished from *Bothriocephalus*. Tyson (1683) discovered the head of the tapeworm of a dog. Redi (1687-1705) came to the conclusion that *Cysticerci* were animals, and Zeder (1800) formed them into a separate group, *Cystici*; but Küchenmeister in 1851 proved by feeding experiments that these were only the larvæ of tapeworms, and that, as a rule, two different kinds of animals were required as hosts in order that the life-cycle might take place.

Leuckart, Braun, Führmann, Looss, Sonsino, Grassi, Blanchard, von Linstow, Lühe, Stiles, Sambon, and Leiper may be mentioned as investigators who have greatly improved our knowledge of these parasites.

Morphology.—There are two groups of cestodes, one called the Cestodaria, containing genera with only a single segment, and another Cestoda, in the restricted sense of the word, which includes all forms possessing a scolex and segments. It is with this latter group that we are now concerned.

The true cestodes are easily recognized by their band-like segmented body, which is usually of a white colour. They are broad and large posteriorly, becoming narrower and narrower till the place is reached where they are attached to the intestinal wall. This anterior end is called the 'scolex,' while the segments are called 'proglottides.' The scolex is divisible into a broader

anterior portion called the head, and a narrower posterior portion, the neck. The head is provided with muscular suckers, which keep it attached to the mucous membrane of the bowel. Often there are also hooks present on some part of the head, not infrequently on an anterior projection called the rostrum. The neck is constricted, and shows posteriorly faint rings indicating the commencement of new segments, which are always formed from the neck.

Behind the head come the proglottides, the youngest being those situated anteriorly, and the most fully developed posteriorly. Their number is very variable, and their size increases from before backwards. They contain the male and female sexual organs.

The whole surface of the worm is covered by a thick, non-chitinous cuticle, said to contain a quantity of lime salts, under which lies a basal membrane; beneath this come the cuticular muscles, and then the cortical parenchyma, in which lie the sunken epithelial cells, nerve cells, sense organs, excretory cells, etc. Among these cells are peculiar calcareous corpuscles, varying from 3 to 30 μ in diameter, and having essentially the structure of a fat cell—that is to say, they are composed of concentrically deposited calcareous material enclosed in a cell with a nucleus at one side. These corpuscles are highly characteristic of a Cestode. The calcareous matter is composed of 79 per cent. organic matter and 21 per cent. of lime salts, in the form principally of the carbonate, but also of an albuminate and a urate. Their function is not understood; perhaps it is skeletal, perhaps protective.

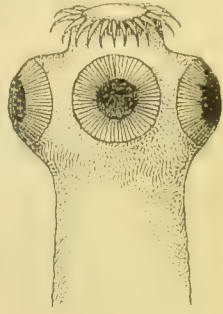


FIG. 182.—HEAD OF
TÆNIA SOLIUM.

(After Leuckart.)

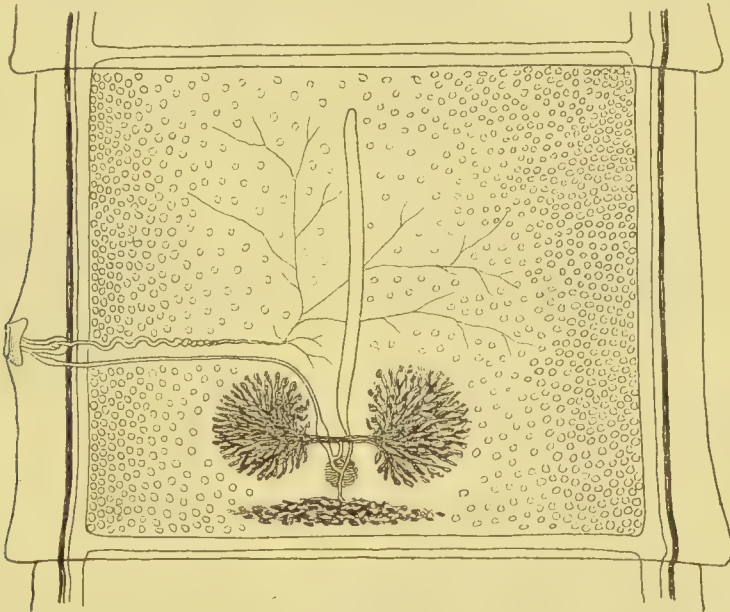


FIG. 183.—MATURE SEGMENT OF TÆNIA SAGINATA GOEZE 1782.

(After Leuckart.)

In the cortex come the longitudinal muscles, beneath which are the transverse muscles, which enclose a central area of the parenchyma called the medullary layer, and therefore separate cortical from medullary layers.

There is no alimentary canal, and the excretory system with its flame cell

terminations consists of anastomosing capillaries emptying into a dorsal and ventral collecting tube on each side of the body, which run from the scolex to the last proglottis, where they open to the exterior. In the originally posterior proglottis there is a pear-shaped excretory vesicle in the middle of the posterior edge, but this arrangement is lost when this proglottis drops off, and then the tubes open as a rule separately on the last proglottis. The nervous system consists of one ganglion in the scolex and two nerve cords. The generative organs gradually develop in the proglottides as they grow older, the youngest having no trace of them. With the exception of the end portions, these organs lie in the medullary layer of the body.

The male organs, which are the first to reach maturity, usually consist of numerous follicular testes scattered over the dorsal portion of the medullary layer, but may be consolidated into one to three glands. The efferent ducts from these unite about the middle of the proglottis into a vas deferens, which, after a wavy convoluted course, enters a cirrus pouch and terminates in the genital atrium near the vaginal orifice.

The female reproductive organs consist usually of two ovaries, which lie near the ventral surface of the medullary layer, from which a common oviduct runs to join with the spermatic duct, which, after travelling a certain distance, is dilated to form a receptaculum seminis, and continued as the vagina to the female opening in the genital atrium. After the junction with the spermatic duct, the oviduct is joined by the common duct of the yolk or vitellogene gland or glands, and then, forming the oötype, receives the ducts of the shell gland, and passes on to enter the uterus. This is usually a blind tube, but may open by a special aperture on the same or the opposite surface to that on which the genital atrium is found.

When the uterus becomes laden with eggs, it is apt to alter its appearance and become branched, and grows, filling up the proglottis, while the male generative organs atrophy and disappear (*vide* Fig. 193, p. 507).

Life-History.—The proglottis can fertilize itself with or without the use of the cirrus, or different proglottides may fertilize one another. In any case the receptaculum seminis receives the sper-

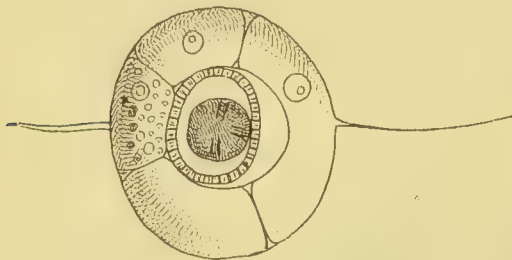


FIG. 184.—UTERINE EGG OF *TÆNIA SAGINATA*
($\times 375$).

(After Leuckart.)

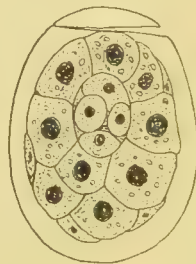


FIG. 185.—OVUM OF *DIBOTHRIOCEPHALUS LATUS*.

(After Leuckart.)

matozoa, which travel down the spermatic duct, and, meeting the ovum, fertilize it. The fertilized ovum now obtains its yolk, (vitellus) and its shell, and then passes into the uterus, from which it may escape by the uterine orifice when there is one, or not until the proglottis is destroyed.

Development usually begins in the uterus. An egg is as a rule oval in form, enclosed in a brown or yellow shell with or without an operculum. This shell contains food yolk and the developing

embryo, whose cells form two membranes—an outer in contact with the shell, and an inner in contact with the embryo.

The outer envelope and the shell are soon lost, and when the embryo appears in the fæces it is surrounded by its inner envelope, the embryophore, and has developed six hooks. In this stage of development it is called an onchosphere.

It will therefore be evident that the so-called egg as seen in the fæces is not an egg at all, but the oncho-



FIG. 186.—FÆCAL EGG OF *TÆNIA SOLIUM* ($\times 300$).

(After Leuckart.)

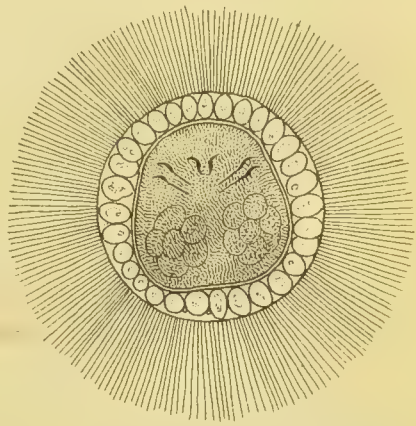


FIG. 187.—FREE CILIATED EMBRYO OF *DIBOTHRIOCEPHALUS LATUS*.

(After Leuckart.)

sphere with its embryonic envelope, which in certain species may be ciliated.

When the onchosphere enters the alimentary canal of a new host, generally of a different class from the original host, it throws off its envelope, and works its way into the tissues by its hooks until it arrives in some suitable organ, when it throws off its hooks, encysts, and forms either a little bladder-like cyst, from the wall of which the scolex develops (the whole being called a '*Cysticercus*'; if the

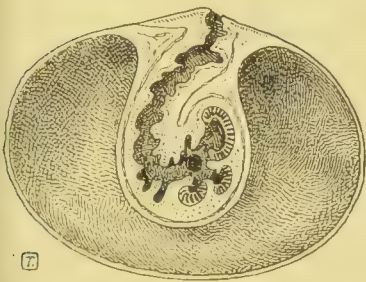


FIG. 188.—*CYSTICERCUS* OF *TÆNIA SAGINATA* GOEZE 1782.

(After Leuckart.)



FIG. 189.—*PLEROCERCOID* OF *DIBOTHRIOCEPHALUS LATUS*.

(After Leuckart.)

cyst is small, it is called a '*cysticercoid*'; and if in addition it has a caudal appendix, a '*cercocystis*'), or it develops directly into the scolex without the intervention of a cyst, forming a plerocercoid (*πλήρης*, full; *κέρκος*, a tail). These wanderings of the onchosphere in search of a suitable resting-place may produce unpleasant symptoms if there are a number of parasites. The time occupied in the

transformation of an onchosphere into a *Cysticercus* varies, being from two to six months, or longer.

With but rare exceptions the *Cysticercus* does not develop further until it enters another and different host, though some, like *Hymenolepis murina*, which is said to have its larvæ in the villi and its adults in the intestine of the rat, infest only one host.

Often the *Cysticercus* is found in a herbivorous animal, while the tapeworm occurs in a carnivorous or omnivorous animal. Infection is direct by feeding, for in the alimentary canal the cyst dies off, and leaves the scolex, which develops in the course of a few weeks into an adult tapeworm, whose span of life appears to be about a year, but may be much more or much less. An example is *Cysticercus fasciolaris* of the mouse, which becomes *Tænia crassicollis* in the cat. Abnormalities are often met with in the segments.

Habitat.—As a rule the adult lives in the alimentary canal usually of a vertebrate, but they may be found in the liver and pancreas. They are capable of active movements during life. Food is obtained by osmosis from the contents of the alimentary canal.

Classification.—The classification followed is that of Monticelli, given by Braun in Bronn's 'Klassen und Ordnung des Thierreichs.'

The *Cestoidea* Rudolphi 1808 are divided into *Cestoidaria* Monticelli 1892, which are Cestodes consisting of a single segment containing a single set of reproductive organs, and *Cestoda sensû stricto* Monticelli 1892, which are the typical cestodes with a scolex and segments. The subclass Cestoda are divided into orders as follows:—

Cestoda Sensû Stricto Monticelli 1892.

Synonyms.—*Pöllaplasiogonei* E. Blanchard, *Cestodes digêneses* van Beneden, *C. polyzoa* Lang.

Definition.—Cestodes in which the adult worm consists of a scolex and proglottides.

ORDER I. PSEUDOPHYLLIDEA *Carus* 1863.—**Synonyms.**—*Bothriocephaloidea*.—Scolex armed or unarmed, with two usually slightly developed, groove-like suckers, with three genital orifices. Vitellaria situated laterally. Eggs with or without a lid.

ORDER II. TETRAPHYLLIDEA *Carus*.—Scolex armed or unarmed, with four very motile pedunculated or sessile bothridia, or with four round suckers; no uterine orifice; cirrus and vagina open at the sides. Vitellaria situated laterally.

ORDER III. CYCLOPHYLLIDEA *van Beneden*.—Scolex with four suckers, between which there is an apical rostellum with or without hooks; segmentation distinct; no uterine orifice; vitellogene gland single, placed behind the ovary. Eggs without lids.

ORDER IV. DIPHYLLIDEA *Carus*.—Head stalk armed with hooklets, with scolex, rostellum, and two bothridia.

ORDER V. TRYPANORHYNCEA *Diesing*.—Scolex with two or four bothridia, and four retractile armed rostellata.

The only orders which contain parasites found in man are I. and III.

CESTODES IN MAN.

The cestodes which are found in man may be classified as follows:—

Order and Family.	Subfamily.	Genus and Subgenus.				Species.	
Pseudophyllidea	Dibothriocephalidae	Dibothriocephalinae	Dibothriocephalus	..	..	1. <i>D. latus</i> .	
			Diplogonoporus	..	..	2. <i>D. cordatus</i> .	
			Sparganum	..	..	3. <i>D. parvus</i> .	
		Ligulinae	Braunia	..	..	..	4. <i>D. grandis</i> .
		Dipylidiinae	Dipylidium	..	..	..	5. <i>D. brauni</i> .
		Hymenolepinae	{ Hymenolepis Drepanidotænia (?)	..	..	..	6. <i>S. mansoni</i> .
							7. <i>S. prolifer</i> .
Cyclophyllidea	Tæniidae	Davaineinae	Davainea	..	..	..	8. <i>S. baxteri</i> .
							9. <i>B. jassysensis</i> .
		{ Tænia Tæniarhynchus	..	..	..	..	10. <i>D. caninum</i> .
							11. <i>H. nana</i> .
		{ Tænia Echinococcus	..	..	..	..	12. <i>H. diminuta</i> .
							13. <i>H. lanceolata</i> (?)
		{ Tænia Echinococcus	..	..	..	..	14. <i>D. madagascariensis</i> .
							15. <i>D. asiatica</i> .
		{ Tænia Echinococcus	..	..	..	..	16. <i>T. solium</i> .
							17. <i>T. saginata</i> .
		{ Tænia Echinococcus	..	..	..	..	18. <i>T. africana</i> .
							19. <i>T. hominis</i> .
		{ Tænia Echinococcus	..	..	..	..	20. <i>T. philippina</i> .
							21. <i>T. confusa</i> .
{ Tænia Echinococcus	..	..	..	..	22. <i>T. bremneri</i> .		
					23. <i>E. granulosis</i> .		
{ Tænia Echinococcus	..	..	..	..	24. <i>E. multilocularis</i> .		
					25. <i>E. multilocularis</i> .		

Two tapeworms are not included in this list—*Tænia* (*Tænia*) *teniaeformis* Bloch 1750, a tapeworm found in cats, and *T.* (*Tænia*) *pisiformis* Bloch 1780, a tapeworm found in rabbits—because no definite evidence exists that man has ever been infected by them.

At the time of writing man alone is known to be the host of the adults of the following worms:—*Tænia solium*, *T. saginata* (there is probably no doubt about this), *T. africana*, *T. hominis*, *T. philippina*, *T. confusa*, *T. bremneri*, *Dibothriocephalus parvus*, *Hymenolepis nana* (?), *Davainea madagascariensis*, *D. asiatica*. Other hosts may yet be found.

The following are only occasional parasites in man:—*Dibothriocephalus latus* (true host may perhaps be the dog ?), *D. cordatus* (true host, the seal and walrus), *Hymenolepis diminuta* (true host, the rat and mouse), *Drepanidotænia lanceolata* (true host, ducks and geese).

Therefore in man there is the question of intestinal tæniases to be considered. But cysts may also develop in man from *T. solium* and *Echinococcus granulosis* and *multilocularis*. From the species of *Sparganum* larval forms give rise to somatic tæniases. These affections, with their treatment, will be considered later, as will the treatment.

It must be noted that the cysticercus of *T. saginata* is not included, as it is very doubtful whether it has ever been found in man.

Cysticercus acanthotrias Weinland 1858 is the same as *C. cellulosa*—i.e., the larva of *T. solium*.

The following tables, modified from Stiles, may be of help, as they give the names of recognition of the genera, and the species of *Tænia*, as determined by the head or the segment, and also a scheme for recognizing the eggs.

Table of Genera.

- A. Head with two elongated or slit-like suckers ; uterus forms a rosette ; genital spores ventral. (*Dibothriocephalidæ*.)
- I. *Tapeworms*.—Single set of genital and uterine pores present in medium ventral line. (*Dibothriocephalus*.)
Double set of uterine and genital pores present in ventro-submedium lines. (*Diplogonoporus*.)
 - II. *Plerocercoids*. (*Sparganum*.)—Probably larval forms of this group.
- B. Head with four cup-shaped suckers ; uterus does not form a rosette ; genital pores lateral. (*Tæniidæ*.)
- I. Large forms, ripe segments 9 to 35 millimetres long. Uterus median with lateral branches. (*Tænia*.)
 - II. Smaller forms, ripe segments up to 7 millimetres long.
 - (a) Genital pores single, rostellum with no more than two hooks.
 - (1) Suckers not armed. Three testes in each segment (*Hymenolepis*.)
 - (2) Suckers armed with hooks, 15 to 50 testes in each segment. (*Davainea*.)
 - (b) Genital pores double, rostellum with several rows of hooks. (*Dipylidium*.)

Table of the Species of *Tænia* found in Man.

A. SPECIMEN IS A TAPEWORM.

Head Characters.

- I. Head armed with hooks. Subgenus : *Tænia*. Species : *T. solium*.
- II. Head unarmed. Subgenus : *Tæniarhynchus*.
 - (1) Circular ring around head behind the suckers, which are directed postero-anteriorly. (*T. hominis*.)
 - (2) Without circular ring.
 - (a) Head cuboid, 1·5 to 2 millimetres in diameter ; suckers 0·7 to 0·8 millimetre in transverse diameter. (*T. saginata*.)
 - (b) Head small, 1·38 millimetres broad, 1·03 millimetres thick, 0·47 millimetre long, suckers, 0·63 millimetre in transverse diameter. (*T. africana*.)
 - (c) Head small cuboid, 1 to 1·5 millimetres in diameter ; 0·75 millimetre thick, and 1 millimetre long. Suckers, 0·34 to 0·37 millimetre in transverse diameter. (*T. philippina*.)
- III. Head not known. (*T. confusa*, *T. bremneri*.)

Segment Characters.

I. Segment Longer than Broad.

- (a) Only in the last 100 segments. (*T. saginata*.)
- (b) In the last half of the worm. (*T. solium*.)
- (c) In nearly the entire worm. (*T. confusa*.)
- (d) In the entire worm. (*T. africana*.)

- (e) Known segments very large, 28.6 by 8.5 millimetres on an average. (*T. bremneri*.)
 (f) Unknown. (*T. hominis*.)

II. Segment Broader than Long.

Except in the terminal segments, which are equilateral or slightly longer than broad. (*T. philippina*.)

B. SPECIMEN IS A CYSTICERCUS.

I. Small bladder-worm with one scolex. (*Tænia*.)

- (a) Head armed. (*T. solium*.)
 (b) Head unarmed (very rare, if ever present). (*T. saginata*.)

II. Large bladder-worm with brood capsules, inside which are the scolices. (*Echinococcus*.)

C. SPECIMEN IS AN EGG.

I. With an operculum. (*Dibrothriocephalidæ*.)

- 68 to 71 μ \times 45 to 50 μ . (*D. latus*.)
 75 to 80 μ \times 50 μ . (*D. cordatus*.)
 63 \times 48 μ to 50 μ , brownish. (*D. grandis*.)

II. Without an operculum and with a six-hooked embryo. (*Tæniidæ*.)

Egg with a thick, radially-striated, inner shell or embryophore. (*Tæniinæ*.)

- (a) Embryophore round or oval, 39 \times 33 μ . Africa. (*T. africana*.)
 (b) Embryophore oval, whitish to yellow, 39 \times 30 μ . America. (*T. confusa*.)
 (c) Embryophore, 38 \times 30.4 μ . Africa. (*T. bremneri*.)
 (d) Embryophore oval, 35 to 41 μ \times 26 to 35 μ . Philippines. (*T. philippina*.)
 (e) Embryophore, ovoid, rusty brown, 35 to 40 μ \times 20 to 30 μ . Cosmopolitan and common. (*T. saginata*.)
 (f) Embryophore almost round; brown; 31 to 36 μ . Not uncommon in the tropics. (*T. solium*.)
 (g) Egg and embryophore unknown. Asiatic Russia. (*T. hominis*.)

III. Egg with a thin, membranous inner shell.

(1) Not in Capsules. (*Hymenolepis*.)

- (a) Egg oval or globular, with two distinct membranes—outer, 30 to 60 μ , inner, 16 to 34 μ —mammillate projection at each pole. (*H. nana*.)
 (b) Egg round or oval; outer membrane, 54 to 86 μ ; yellowish; may be radially striated; inner membrane, 24 to 40 μ \times 20 to 35 μ , with not very evident mammillate projection at each pole. (*H. diminuta*.)
 (c) Egg oval or spherical; outer membrane, 50 to 100 μ \times 35 to 100 μ ; inner membrane, 30 to 40 μ \times by 25 μ ; occasionally polar papillæ; very rare in man. (*H. lanceolata*.)

(2) Egg in Capsules.

- (a) Eight to twenty eggs in a capsule; egg spherical, 43 to 50 μ . (*Dipylidium caninum*.)
 (b) One to three eggs in a capsule, with calcareous corpuscles. Eggs with two shells and two mammillate projections; onchosphere, 8 μ . (*Davainea madagascariensis*.)
 (c) Egg capsules without calcareous corpuscles; mature eggs not observed. (*D. asiatica*.)

ORDER I. PSEUDOPHYLLIDEA CARUS.

This order has three families : (1) Dibothriocephalidæ ; (2) Ptychobothriidæ ; (3) Amphitretidæ. The first only contains human parasites.

FAMILY DIBOTHRIOCEPHALIDÆ.—Pseudophyllidæ, with variously developed suckers, and a uterus which forms a rosette. Eggs with opercula. There are two subfamilies with species found in man : (1) Dibothriocephalinæ ; (2) Ligulinæ.

SUBFAMILY 1. DIBOTHRIOCEPHALINÆ.—The suckers or bothria are more or less definite slit-like furrows. Proglottides distinct, and drop off in groups. Genus 1. *Dibothriocephalus* ; Genus 2. *Diplogonoporus* ; Genus 3. *Sparganum*.

Dibothriocephalus Lühe 1899.

Synonyms.—*Diphyllobothrium* Cobbold 1858 (considered to be correct name by some authors), *Bothriocephalus pro parte* Rudolphi 1819, *Dibothrius pro parte* Rudolphi 1819, *Dibothrium pro parte* Diesing 1850.

Dibothriocephalinæ, with a more or less elongated, unarmed scolex with flat suckers cutting deeply into the head. Single genitalia in each proglottis. (1) *Dibothriocephalus latus* ; (2) *D. cordatus* ; (3) *D. cristatus* ; (4) *D. parvus*.

Dibothriocephalus latus Linnæus 1748.

Synonyms.—*Tænia lata* L. 1748, *T. vulgaris* L. 1748, *T. membraneacea* Pallas 1781, *T. tenella* Pallas 1781, *T. dentata* Batsch 1786, *T. grisea* Pallas 1796, *Bothriocephalus latus* Bremser 1819, *Dibothrium latus* Diesing 1830, *B. balticus* Küchenmeister 1855, *B. cristatus* Davaine 1874, *B. latissimus* Bugn 1886.

History.—This tapeworm has long been known in Europe, especially in French Switzerland and the Baltic provinces, Germany, and in many other parts. It is, however, well known in Asia, Turkestan, and Japan ; in Africa about the Lake N'gami, in Madagascar, and in North America.

It occurs in man and dogs and cats.

Morphology.—It is about 9 metres in length, with some 3,000 to 4,200 segments ; colour yellowish-grey. Scolex elongated, almond-shaped ; 2.5 millimetres in length, with two deep laterally placed suckers. Neck very narrow, and of variable length.

Proglottides very broad (10 to 20 millimetres), breadth being greater than the length ; postero-lateral angles project. Testes situated dorsally ; vas deferens has a vesicula seminalis and a cirrus sac, which opens dorsally. Vaginal opening directly behind this, leading into a receptaculum seminis. Yolk glands in pairs, shell gland behind, ovaries on each side of the median line behind. Uterus is arranged in a rosette, with four to six convolutions, and possesses its own separate opening. The genital orifices are two in number ; a transverse slit for the cirrus pouch and the vagina, and a posterior roundish opening for the uterus. Calcareous bodies present. The brown eggs are oval, 68 to 71 μ in length, and 45 μ in breadth, with an operculum.

Life-History.—The egg remains undeveloped for a longer or shorter time according to circumstances, and eventually a six-hooked onchosphere, enclosed in a ciliated embryophore, escapes through the lid opening, and then gets into certain fish, particularly *Esox lucius* (pike), *Lota vulgaris* (Miller's thumb), *Perca fluviatilis*, *Salmo umbla*, *Trutta vulgaris*, *T. lacustris*, *Thymalis vulgaris*, *Coregonus lavaretus*, *C. albula* and *Onchorhynchus perryi*, in the muscles of which it becomes a plerocercoid by losing its cilia and hooklets and elongating.

When these fish are eaten, the plerocercoids quickly develop into the tapeworm, eggs appearing in the fæces in some twenty-one to twenty-four days.

Habitat.—Man, dog, cat, and fox.

Pathogenicity.—It produces a severe form of anæmia, together with fever (99° to 104° F.) in some cases, and a quick pulse, which is supposed to be due to the action of a toxin.

Dibothriocephalus cordatus R. Leuckart 1863.

Synonym.—*Bothriocephalus cordatus* R. Leuckart 1863.

The parasite is commonly found in the seal, the walrus, and the dog in Greenland and Iceland. It may infect man.

Morphology.—The principal features are the short, broad, heart-shaped head with the grooves on the flat surface, the absence of the neck, and the length only 1 to $1\frac{1}{4}$ metres. Uterine rosette, with six to eight loops. Eggs with lids $75\ \mu$ in length by $50\ \mu$ in breadth.

Dibothriocephalus parvus Stephens 1907.

This parasite was found by Elkington in Tasmania in 1906 in a Syrian, aged thirty-seven, who had not long arrived from his native country.

Morphology.—Scolex not known. Proglottides with clearly-defined, central, uterine rosette, with four to five loops on each side of the median line; largest segment, 5 by 3 millimetres. Genital atrium 0.4 to 0.5 millimetre behind the anterior margin; uterine opening same distance behind the genital atrium. Calcareous bodies were not seen. Eggs, 59 by $40\ \mu$.

Diplogonoporus Lönnberg 1892.

Synonym.—*Krabbea* R. Blanchard 1894.

Bothriocephalinae with short scolex, powerful suckers, no neck, and two sets of genitalia side by side in each proglottis.

Type Species.—*Diplogonoporus balænopterae* Lönnberg 1892.

Diplogonoporus grandis R. Blanchard 1894.

Synonym.—*Krabbea grandis* R. Blanchard.

So far this parasite has only been observed twice in Japanese—in Hiogo, Japan.

Morphology.—Scolex unknown. Proglottis, 1.5 millimetres broad in front and 2.5 millimetres broad behind; very short, only 0.45 millimetre. Two ventral grooves on either side of the median line with the genital pores. Uterus with few loops. Eggs brown; thick shells, 63 to $48\ \mu$ in length and $50\ \mu$ in breadth, with opercula.

Diplogonoporus brauni Leon 1907.

Two specimens of this worm have been found in Roumania.

Morphology.—The worm presents the appearance of a thick, opaque, greyish ribbon 12 centimetres in length, marked by slight transverse rings and with a dorsal and ventral sucker, which mark a division of the head into two unequal parts. There is no neck. The genital orifices are double, with a double genital apparatus in each ring. The vitellogene glands are situated peripherally. No genital sinus, no calcareous corpuscles.

Sparganum Diesing 1850.

A collective group of larval stages of Dibothriocephalidæ which have not reached a stage in their development at which they can be determined generically: *Sparganum mansoni*, *S. prolifer*, *S. baxteri*.

Sparganum mansoni Cobbold 1883.

Synonyms.—*Ligula mansoni* Cobbold 1883, *Bothriocephalus liguloides* R. Leuckart 1886, *Dibothrium mansoni* Ariola 1900.

This larva was found by Manson while making a post-mortem on a Chinaman in Amoy, lying under the peritoneum near the kidneys

and over the iliac fossæ; he also found one free in the pleural cavity. Scheube discovered another specimen in the urethra of a Japanese, and Sonsino a third in an Egyptian jackal.

Morphology.—Long, white, ribbon-shaped parasites, with feeble movements. No head or definite structure visible. Length, 30 to 35 centimetres; breadth, 3 to 12 millimetres. At the broader end there is a sort of papilla. There is no reproduction by fission.

Sparganum prolifer Ijima 1905.

Synonym.—*Plerocercus prolifer* Ijima 1905.

In 1905 Ijima found this worm in a woman living near Tokio, and in 1907 Gates found the same or a similar worm in a man in Manatee, U.S.A.

Morphology.—The larva, which lies enclosed in a cyst, may attain 1 to 12 millimetres in length by 2.5 millimetres in breadth. The head at the narrow end is motile, and capable of evagination and invagination. It shows an apical depression, which perhaps serves as a sucker, but there are no true suckers or other organs of attachment.



FIG. 190.—SPARGANUM PROLIFER IJIMA.
(After Stiles.)

Calcareous spherical corpuscles can be found anywhere, except in the head. No genitalia are to be seen, but there is a good muscular and excretory system and food-reserve bodies. It can multiply by transverse division, and supernumerary heads may become independent, and may assume bizarre and irregular shapes. The adult is unknown.

Habitat.—It lives in the subcutaneous tissue and elsewhere in man.

Pathogenicity.—It produces nodules in the skin and fascia between the muscles and in the abdominal cavity. Associated with these nodules there may be considerable swelling of the integument, and, in fact, a condition not unlike elephantiasis may arise. Also there may be acne-like spots all over the body causing itching, which may lead to the escape of a worm from the spot. When a nodule is cut open, a cyst is found containing one or two worms, either filled with a watery fluid, or with a jelly or slime-like substance. Apparently after weeks or months the cyst-wall may become firm and thick, and encapsulate the worms. This condition may last for years, and apparently can kill the victim, who may be literally 'eaten up of worms.'

Sparganum baxteri Sambon 1907.

This Dibothriocephalid larva was found by Baxter in an abscess in the thigh of a Masai in German East Africa.

Morphology.—It has a long unsegmented body, 15 centimetres in length and 1 millimetre in breadth, with numerous irregular transverse folds, and a distinct longitudinal groove on the ventral sur-

face. Anterior extremity is 2 millimetres broad, with a completely invaginated head ; posterior extremity, 1.2 millimetres broad, with a shallow medium slit.

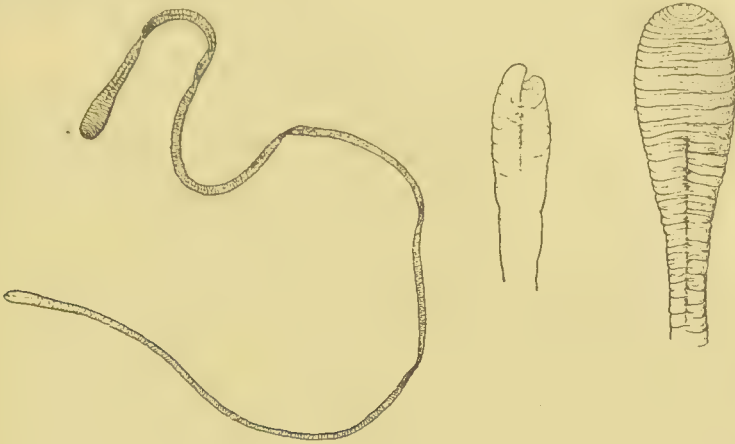


FIG. 191.—SPARGANUM BAXTERI SAMBON.
(After Sambon.)

SUBFAMILY 2. LIGULINÆ.

Quite recently Leon has described a new tapeworm in man which is referred to the Ligulinæ, in which it requires a new genus, called *Braunia jassyensis* Leon 1908.

ORDER III. CYCLOPHYLLIDEA van Beneden.

There is only one family with human parasites.

FAMILY TÆNIIDÆ Ludwig 1886.

Scolex globular or pyriform, with unarmed suckers, and an armed or unarmed rostellum. Vagina posterior to the cirrus. Mostly parasitic in mammals. Larval stage a cysticercus or cysticercoid. Subfamily 1. Dipylidiinæ ; Subfamily 2. Davaineiinæ ; Subfamily 3. Tæniinæ.

SUBFAMILY 1. DIPYLIDIINÆ Stiles 1896.

Tæniidæ, with armed rostellum and unarmed suckers. Genital pores marginal. Genitalia simple or double. Uterus becomes divided into ovarium follicles, or entirely atrophied, and the eggs are set free into the parenchyma. Eggs with thin transparent shells, with or without appendages.

Genera.—(1) *Dipylidium* ; (2) *Hymenolepis*.

Dipylidium R. Leuckart 1863.

Dipylidiinæ of medium or small size, with retractile rostellum armed with several rings of alternating hooks, which have a broad basis. Genitalia duplicated, with pores on each side of a proglottis. Eggs with a double shell.

Dipylidium caninum Linnæus 1758.

Synonyms.—*Tænia canina* Leuckart 1758, *Moniliformis* Pallas 1781, *T. cucumerina* Blochmann 1782, *T. elliptica* Batsch 1786, *Dipylidium cucumerinum* Leuckart 1863.

Dipylidium is frequently found in the dog and the cat, which are its proper hosts; in man it is only an accidental and rare parasite, having been first found by Dubois, a pupil of Linnæus in 1751. Melnikow showed that the scolex was to be found in the dog-louse (*Trichodectes canis*) and in that of the cat (*T. subrostratus*), as well as in the dog-flea (*Ctenocephalus canis* Curtis), the cat-flea (*C. felinis* Bouche), and in that of man (*P. irritans*), but how the infection reaches man is not definitely proved. Recently Blanchard has summarized sixty cases in man up to the year 1907, most of which occur among young children.

Morphology.—It measures 15 to 35 and even to 40 centimetres in length, and the segments are from 1.5 to 3 millimetres in breadth.

The scolex has the typical rostellum, with three to four rings of hooks, diminishing in size from the first circle, where they are 12 to 15 μ , to the last, where they are only 5 to 6 μ in length, and four suckers, which are unarmed.

The genitalia are double, with spores on each side. The eggs are round, from 43 to 50 μ in diameter, with a thin shell.

Life-History.—The ripe proglottides by their own movement pass through the host's anus, and get into the fur, where the eggs infect the dog and cat louse, or flea, in which they develop into cysticercoids (*Cryptocystis trichodectis* Villot 1882).

The dog bites the louse or flea, and infects itself, and may pass on the cysticercoids to man by licking. The cat licks its fur, and gets infected in that manner.

Blanchard thinks that the cat spreads the parasite by infecting milk with the cysticercoids when it steals a drink from a bowl, the contents of which are afterwards given to children.

FAMILY HYMENOLEPINIDÆ.

Hymenolepis Weinland 1858.

Synonym.—*Diplacanthus* Weinland 1858, *nec* L., Agassiz 1842.

Tæniidæ with small head, with armed, well-developed, or unarmed, rudimentary rostellum. Neck long. Proglottides serrated, longer than broad. Genital pores always on the left. Three testes. Eggs with three shells.

Type.—*H. diminuta*. The genus possesses two subgenera, *Hymenolepis* and *Drepanidotænia*.

Subgenus 1. Hymenolepis Sensû Stricto.

With the characters of the genus, but the hooks have the dorsal root much longer than the ventral, and number twenty-four to thirty.

Hymenolepis (Hymenolepis) diminuta Rudolphi 1819.

Synonyms.—*Tænia diminuta* Rudolphi 1819, *T. leptcephala* Creptlin 1825, *T. flavopunctata* Weinland 1858, *T. varesina* Parona 1884, *T. minima* Grassi 1886.

It is a parasite of *Epimys norvegicus*, *E. musculus*, and *E. rattus alexandrinus*, being not uncommon in rats in Ceylon.

The first human specimen was discharged by a child aged nineteen months, and was presented to the Boston Medical Improvement Society by Dr. Ezra Palmer in 1842. Since then a number of cases have been recorded in Philadelphia, Sicily, Italy, France, and South America.

Morphology.—The worm measures 20 to 60 centimetres in length, and up to 3·5 millimetres in breadth. The head is very small, only 0·2 to 0·5 millimetre in diameter, club-shaped, and has a rudimentary, unarmed rostellum and four elliptical suckers. The segments measure 0·66 millimetre in length by 3·5 millimetres in breadth. The anterior proglottides show a yellow spot (hence the name *T. flavopunctata*), caused by the distended receptaculum seminis. The posterior proglottides show a brownish-grey colour, due to the mature uterus. The genital pore is situated laterally. The eggs are oval, with a diameter of about 60 μ .

Life-History.—It is a common parasite in rats and mice, while the cysticercus lives in the larva and imago of the meal-moth (*Asopia farinalis*), in an earwig (*Anisolabis annulipes*), and in the beetles *Acis spinosa* and *Scaurus striatus*.

The infection in man is mostly among infants and children.

Hymenolepis (Hymenolepis) nana von Siebold 1852.

Synonyms.—*Tænia murina* Dujardin 1845, *nec* Gmelin 1790; *T. nana* von Siebold 1852, *nec* van Beneden 1867; *T. ægyptiaca* Bilharz 1852; *Diplacanthus nanus* Weinland 1858.

This is the dwarf tapeworm of man, and was discovered by Bilharz in the ileum of a boy who died of meningitis in Cairo. It is found in Egypt, Europe, North and South America, Siam, and Japan, and is by no means a rare parasite in man. Calandruccio estimates that 10 per cent. of the children in Sicily are affected. Stiles reports 4·8 per cent. for 125 children in Washington. The number found varies from one or two to several thousands in one individual.

There is doubt as to whether this worm is or is not identical with *Hymenolepis nana* var. *fraterna* Stiles 1906, which is common in rats and mice. Probably it is distinct from this parasite, because Grassi and Looss were unable to transmit it to mice.

Morphology.—It is the smallest tapeworm in man, measuring only 10 to 15 millimetres in length, and from 0·5 to 0·7 millimetre in breadth.

The head is globular, and provided with a rostellum with one ring of twenty-four to thirty hooks, which are very small, 14 to 18 μ in length. The neck is relatively long.

There are about 150 proglottides, 0.4 to 0.9 millimetre in breadth and 0.014 to 0.030 millimetre in length. The genital pore is marginal. The mature uterus contains about thirty or more eggs, which are oval, and measure 30 to 48 μ , and contain onchospheres measuring 16 to 19 μ in diameter.

Life-History.—It is believed that the cysticercus will be found in some insect.

The nearly related *T. nana* var. *fraterna* completes its development entirely in the rat, for the cysticercus develops in the villus, while the adult lies in the lumen of the intestine.

Pathogenicity.—Owing to its small size it is apt to be overlooked, but there is no doubt that it spreads in crowded institutions and poorer families. Apparently, when the parasite occurs in small numbers, no symptoms result, but in considerable numbers disturbance may occur, which has been assigned by Mingazzini to the effects of toxins.

Treatment.—Male-fern is the best treatment (*vide* Chapter L.).

Prophylaxis.—While it is doubtful whether *T. nana* and *T. nana* var. *fraterna* are the same or different species, it will be necessary to guard against the contamination of food by rats and mice. Moreover, it must be remembered that the infection spreads in crowded dwellings, and therefore isolation of the infected child should be insisted upon.

Subgenus 2. *Drepanidotænia* Railliet 1892.

With the characters of the genus, but the hooks have a dorsal root much larger than the ventral, and are only eight to twenty in number.

Hymenolepis (*Drepanidotænia*) lanceolata Blochmann 1782.

Synonyms.—*Tænia lanceolata* Blochmann 1782, *T. anserum* Frisch 1727, *T. acutissima* Pallas 1781, *T. anseris* Blochmann 1779, *T. lanceola* Batsch 1786, *Halysis lanceolata* Blochmann 1803.

It is common in ducks, geese, and other birds, including the flamingo, and has been found in man in Europe, but the record is considered to be very doubtful; probably the worm should not be included among human parasites.

Morphology.—It is about 30 to 130 millimetres in length and 5 to 18 millimetres in breadth, with a very small globular head. Eggs, with three envelopes, oval (50 by 35 μ).

Life-History.—The cysticercoid lives in a cyclops, which is eaten by ducks and geese.

SUBFAMILY 2. DAVACHINEINÆ Braun 1900.

Rostellum and suckers armed. Eggs mostly encapsuled.

Genus.—*Davainea* R. Blanchard.

Davainea R. Blanchard 1891.

Davaineinæ, with a globular head, armed with two rings of hammer-like hooks and four suckers, surrounded by several rings of hooks.

Species.—*D. madagascariensis*; *D. asiatica*.

Davainea madagascariensis Davaine 1869.

Synonyms.—*Tænia madagascariensis* Davaine 1869, *T. demarariensis* Daniels 1895.

This worm was first discovered by Grenet in children at Mayotte (Comores). Only ten infections have been recorded: by Davaine from the Comorro Islands, Leuckart from Siam, Daniels from British Guiana, Blanchard from Nossi-Bé, four by Cherreau from Mauritius, and two by Garrison from the Philippines.

Morphology.—The worm is 25 to 30 centimetres in length, with a maximum breadth of 1.4 millimetres. The scolex has four large suckers and a rostellum, with ninety hooks (18 μ long). The proglottides number from 500 to 700, being 2 millimetres long by 1.4 millimetres broad. Genital pores are unilateral, and near the proximal corner. Testes number about fifty, with a long vas deferens and a fusiform, cirrus pouch. The receptaculum seminis is long and broad. The uterus is composed of a number of tubes, rolled up on each side into an almost spherical coil. When mature, these windings uncoil and fill the proglottides; then they lose their walls, and the eggs, lying free in the parenchyma, become surrounded by proliferating cells, which form capsules for them.

As many as 300 to 400 of these capsules may exist in one proglottis, arranged in transverse rows.

The egg consists of the usual two membranes and an onchosphere, which is 8 by 15 μ .

Life-History.—The life-history is unknown, but it is suggested that the cysticercus may be found in the cockroach (*Periplaneta orientalis* or *P. americana*).

Allied genera are common in rats, hares, fowls, pigeons, turkeys, pheasants, partridges, grouse, and other birds.

Davainea asiatica von Linstow 1901.

Synonym.—*Tænia asiatica* von Linstow 1901.

This worm was found in a person in Aschabad, near the northern frontier of Persia, and consists of 750 proglottides without a head. The genital pores all lie on the same lateral border. The testes are globular, the cirrus pouch pyriform. The female organs lie anteriorly, with a large ovary and a small vitellogene gland. There is a large receptaculum seminis. The uterus breaks into sixty to seventy large egg follicles. Nothing is known about the appearance of the mature egg, or about the life-history.

SUBFAMILY 3. TÆNIINÆ Stiles 1896.

Tæniidæ, usually of considerable length, with segments longer than they are broad. Scolex with either a rostellum armed or unarmed, or an apical sucker. Genital pores irregularly arranged on the lateral borders. Genitalia single. Testes numerous, placed laterally. Ovary shell and vitellogene gland situated posteriorly.

Uterus, a single median trunk, from which lateral branches develop later. Eggshell thin; embryonic envelope (embryophore) thick, with radial stripes. Cysticercus generally in herbivora, adults in carnivora.

Tænia Linnæus 1758.

Tæniinæ with the characters of the subfamily. The genus *Tænia* is subdivided into three subgenera:

Subgenus 1. *Tænia* Linnæus 1758. Type: *T. (Tænia) solium*.

Subgenus 2. *Tæniarhynchus* Weinland 1858. Type: *T. (Tæniarhynchus) saginata*.

Subgenus 3. *Multiceps* Goeze 1782. Type: *T. (Multiceps) cænurus*. This, however, is not a human parasite.

Tænia (*Tænia*) solium Linnæus 1758.

Synonyms.—*T. cucurbitina* Pallas 1766, *T. pellucida* Goeze 1782, *T. vulgaris* Werner 1782, *T. dentata* Batsch 1786, *Halysis solium* Zeder 1803, *T. armata humana* Brera 1808.

The name 'solium' is derived from a Syrian term *schuschl*, meaning a chain, which has arrived at its present form by being first turned into Arabic and finally into Latin. It is often called the armed tapeworm.

This worm is cosmopolitan in its distribution, for it can be found wherever a pig and a man can live, for the cysticercus lives in the pig, man, and rarely in sheep and dogs, while the tapeworm only lives in man. Even monkeys appear not to be capable of infection.

It seems to be more widespread in the Tropics than in the Temperate Zone. It is not uncommon in Ceylon, and it is apparently common in Panama.

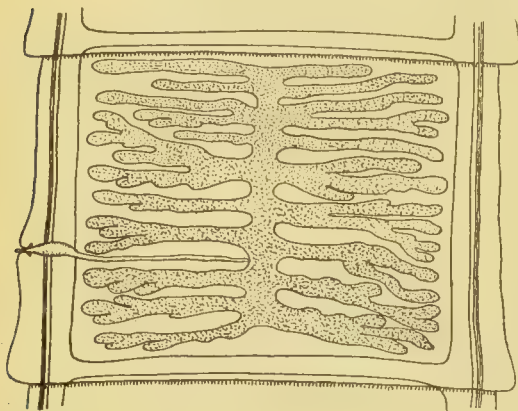


FIG. 192.—PROGLOTTIS OF *TÆNIA SOLIUM* LINNÆUS.

(After Stiles.)

Morphology.—Length usually 2 to 3 metres, but may reach 8 metres. Mature segments measure 5 to 6 millimetres in breadth. Scolex provided with a rostellum, which may be pigmented and is armed with a double row of alternately large and small hooks, which number from twenty-two to thirty-two, and with four hemispherical suckers. The neck is long. Proglottides number from 800 to 900, with a length of 10 to 12 millimetres in mature segments. Genital pore lateral and irregularly alternate. The mature uterus has seven to ten ramified lateral branches, and contains three ovaries, the third being formed by subdivision of the one

on the side of the genital pore. Eggs globular, pale yellow in colour, from 31 to 38 μ in diameter.

Life-History.—The adult worms live solely in the human intestines, from which the onchosphere with their envelopes escape in the fæces, and are apt to be eaten by pigs, or these may be infected by contaminated food or water. The cysticercus, often called *Cysticercus cellulosæ* (synonym, *C. acanthotrias*), develop in the flesh of the pig. If this flesh is eaten in an undercooked condition, the cysticercus infects the human being and forms the tapeworm. Occasionally man becomes infected with *Cysticercus cellulosæ*, most

commonly in the brain, then the eye, the muscles, liver, lungs, etc., where they are sometimes few, sometimes numerous. This infection must be due to contaminated food or water.

The tapeworm can live for years in the intestine of man. A variety called *T. solium*, var. *abietina* Weinland, originally found in a Chippewa Indian, belongs probably to this species.

Pathogenicity.—The intestinal symptoms are not severe, but colicky pains and diarrhoea alternate with constipation. The patient may slowly emaciate. The danger of this infection is the entry of eggs into the human being and the formation of cysticerci in the organs.

Treatment.—Warn the person affected to be very careful to keep his hands clean, and to avoid infecting himself and other people with the eggs. Kill the tapeworm with extract of male-fern given in capsules (four to eight of 10 minims each), or in emulsion on an empty stomach, and followed after four to six hours by a saline purgative.

Prophylaxis.—Fæces should be so treated as not to infect pigs, and the flesh of these animals should be carefully cooked.

Tænia (*Tæniarhynchus*) *saginata* Goeze 1782.

Synonyms.—*T. solium* Linnæus 1767 *pro parte*, *T. cucurbitina* Pallas 1781 *pro parte*, *T. mermis* Brera 1802, *T. dentata* Nicolai 1830, *T. lata* Pruner 1847, *Bothriocephalus tropicus* Schmidtmüller 1847, *T. mediocanellata* Küchenmeister 1855, *T. zittavensis* Küchenmeister 1855, *T. tropica* Moquin-Tandon, 1860.

This is the unarmed beef-worm or the fat tapeworm, which has a cosmopolitan distribution, the adult being known only in man and the cysticercus in cattle, though it can be produced experimentally in a number of animals. It is very common in the tropics, especially in Africa and Asia.

Morphology.—It measures 4 to 8 to 10 metres in length, and has been said to attain much greater length. A mature segment is 4·7 millimetres in breadth. The head possesses four hemispherical, often pigmented, suckers, and a sucker in place of a rostellum. The neck is long. The proglottides number about 1,000 segments, with a length of about 16 to 20 millimetres when mature. The genital spores are arranged irregularly at the sides, and the median uterus produces twenty to thirty-five ramified lateral branches. Malformations of the segments are not uncommon. Eggs globular, often with the original shell, to which may be attached one to two filaments and the two embryonic envelopes, as well as the onchosphere. The inner embryonic envelope is oval, striated, measures 30 to 40 μ in length by 20 to 30 μ in breadth. Segments can escape *per anum* by their own action.

Life-History.—The adult worm lives in man, and the embryophore, escaping in the fæces, enters cattle by means of contaminated food or water, and develops in their muscles into the *Cysticercus bovis*, which is rather small—only 7·5 to 9 millimetres in length and 5·5 millimetres in breadth. The tongue and the muscles of mastication, especially the pterygoids, are chiefly affected.

Man becomes infected by eating under-cooked meat. It can live in him for a number of years. The cysticercus very rarely occurs in man.

Pathogenicity.—It is believed to be more difficult to kill medicinally than *T. solium* and to produce more severe anæmia.

Treatment.—As for *T. solium*.

Prophylaxis.—Prevent human fæces contaminating the food of cattle, and have the meat, especially the tongue and the pterygoid muscle, inspected in the slaughter-house.

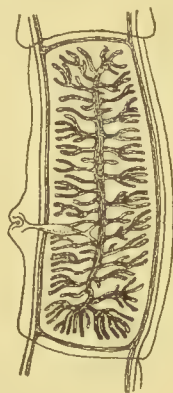


FIG. 193.—PROGLOTTIS OF *TÆNIA SAGINATA* GOEZE.

(After Stiles.)

Tænia (Tæniarhynchus) africana von Linstow 1900.

Two specimens of this worm were found in a negro in German East Africa, at Langenburg, near Lake Nyassa.

Morphology.—It is about 1.4 metres in length. The scolex is provided with an apical sucker in place of a rostellum, and also with four ordinary suckers. The neck is very short. The proglottides vary in length and breadth, according to position, but always broader than long, in the portion discovered. This species is as yet not clearly defined from *T. saginata*.

The ripe segments are 9 millimetres broad by 1.20 millimetres thick. Their number is about 600. The genital pore is irregularly alternate on the lateral border. The testes are very numerous, and the vas deferens much convoluted, with a thick, pear-shaped cirrus pouch. The cirrus is beset with bristles, as is the vagina. The receptaculum seminis is large. The ovary is large and double, and the vitellogene gland is situated at the posterior border. The mature uterus consists of a median portion with fifteen to twenty-four non-ramified lateral branches.

The embryophore is thick, with radial markings, round or oval (39 by 33 μ).

Life-History.—The life-history is not known, but it is suggested that the cysticercus may live in *Bos indicus*, the hump-backed cow, the flesh of which the natives of East Africa eat raw.

Tænia (Tæniarhynchus) hominis von Linstow 1902.

This worm was found by Anger in a man in Aschabad in Siberia.

The length was 70 millimetres. The scolex had a rudimentary rostellum without hooks. There were four unpigmented suckers, behind which there was a ring-shaped swelling. Nothing further is known about this parasite.

Tænia (Tæniarhynchus) philippina Garrison 1907.

This specimen was found by Hare in a prisoner in Bilibid prison, in the Philippine Islands, in 1905.

Morphology.—The length is 80 to 100 centimetres; maximum breadth, 1 centimetre. Head cuboid, with an unarmed retractile rostellum and four suckers. Neck segmented. Proglottides number about 800, being sexually mature about the 470th. Mature proglottides 4 to 5 millimetres in width and 0.8 to 1 millimetre in length. Surfaces and margins extend posteriorly in an elongated cuff-like projection over the succeeding segment. Testes 130 to 160 μ in length, and from 60 to 80 μ in breadth. Vas deferens without vesicula seminalis; cirrus and pouch present. Genital pore situated irregularly on the lateral borders. Ovaries, with two unequal transversely elongated lobes, close against the vitellogene gland. Vagina without setæ and with two coils. Uterus stem with a V-shaped course posteriorly, and with four to six distinct coils anteriorly. Mature uterus very compact, with a median stem and numerous long, slender dichotomous branches.

Embryophore oval, 35 to 41 μ long, and 26 to 35 μ broad.
Life-Cycle.—Life-history not known.

Tænia (?) confusa Ward 1896.

This worm has so far only been found in Lincoln, Nebraska, U.S.A.

Morphology.—Length about $8\frac{1}{2}$ metres, breadth 5 millimetres, scolex unknown. Segments much longer than they are broad, 27 to 35 millimetres long by 3.5 to 5 millimetres broad. Genital pore irregularly placed behind the middle of the lateral border. Testes numerous, vas deferens not much coiled, cirrus pouch thick-walled. Cirrus beset with little hairs. Receptaculum seminis globular; ovary small and double, bean-shaped. Vitellogene gland narrow and triangular; shell gland globular. Uterus, when mature, consists of a median trunk, and fourteen to eighteen short dichotomous branches on each side. Embryophores are oval, thick, and striated (39 by 30 μ).

Life-Cycle.—Nothing is known.

Tænia (?) bremneri Stephens 1907.

This worm was found by Dr. Bremner in a Fullani woman in Northern Nigeria.

Morphology.—The head is not known. The segments examined measured, on an average, 28.6 by 8.5 millimetres, but ranged from 21 by 6 millimetres to 32 by 29 millimetres in size. The central uterine axis has twenty-two to twenty-four ramified lateral branches, and one terminal branch with four to five ramifications. The genital pore is prominent, and lies behind the middle of the segment. Eggs measure on an average 38 by 30.4 μ .

Life-Cycle.—Nothing is known at present about the life-history.

Echinococcus Rudolphi 1801.

Synonym.—*Acephalocystis* Laennec 1804.

Species.—*Echinococcus granulosus* Batsch 1786, *E. multilocularis* Huber 1896.

Echinococcus granulosus Batsch 1786.

Synonyms.—*Tænia echinococcus* Zeder 1803, Siebold 1853; *T. nana* van Beneden 1861, *nec* Siebold 1853; *Echinococcifer echinococcus* Weinland 1861.

Hydatid disease appears to have been known since the days of Hippocrates. In 1684 Redi suggested that the cysts were animal in origin, and in 1760-67 Pallas clearly showed their relationship to tapeworms (*Tænia hydatigena*).

It appears doubtful whether there are two species of worms associated with hydatid disease, but the appearance of the larvæ and the geographical distribution tend to separate the genus into two species.

Echinococcus granulosus causes the cystic form of hydatid disease, which is found most markedly in Iceland and Australia, but also exists all over Europe, and is known in New Zealand. It is rare in India, and the only case we have seen in Ceylon came from South Africa, where it occurs; but Begbie has recently described another case in Ceylon. It is known in the Philippine Islands, and is not uncommon in Egypt and Algeria. The mature worm, which is very small, lives in the small bowel of the dog, the jackal, and the wolf in large numbers, while the cysticercus is found in man, sheep, ox, and pig.

Morphology.—It is very small, only 2.5 to 5 to 6 millimetres in length and is composed only of a scolex and three to four segments. The scolex has four

suckers and a rostellum armed with a double row of twenty-eight to fifty hooks, which vary in size, the larger being 40 to 45 μ in length, and the smaller 30 to 38 μ in length. The genital pores alternate.

The testes are numerous, the vas deferens spirally coiled, the vitellogenic gland double, the shell gland round. The mature uterus has only lateral protuberances, no true branches, and the eggs may form heaps.

The egg is globular, 30 to 36 μ in diameter.

Life-Cycle.—The dog infects man with the onchospheres, usually directly when being petted. Infection may, however, be brought about by contaminated food.

On arrival in the stomach, the onchosphere escapes from its embryophore and bores its way into the liver or some other organ. Here it grows, and forms a cyst with a thick outer cuticle, inside which is fluid enclosed by a layer of parenchyma, the endocyst, composed of two layers of cells. The irritation caused by the growth of this cyst produces a connective-tissue coat, formed by the organ in which the cyst is growing. The cyst in this condition is called an acephalocyst (*Echinococcus cysticus sterilis*), and is often found in cattle.

The next stage is the formation of the brood capsule. The inner layer of the endocyst grows inwards, forming large numbers of small hollow capsules (brood capsules), which have the endocyst externally and the cuticle internally. On these capsules heads develop. The cyst now forms the *Echinococcus cysticus fertilis*, found in domestic animals.

In man, however, daughter-cysts appear between the strata of the cuticle, into which cells belonging to the endocyst have found their way and formed cysts, with an external cuticular and an internal parenchymal layer. These cysts may, of course, bulge, and escape externally or internally. If externally, they then lie between the capsule and the mother-cyst and form *Echinococcus hydatidosus* var. *exogenus*, or if internally, they fall into the interior of the mother-cyst and form *Echinococcus hydatidosus* var. *endogenus*. These daughter-cysts may remain sterile or produce brood capsules and heads. Grand-daughter-cysts may be formed in the same way. The wall of the mother-cyst may disappear, leaving the daughter-cysts free.

Of all these varieties, the endogenous cyst is the most common. It may reach several pounds in weight, with hundreds of daughter-cysts.

It is believed that the usual cycle of life-history takes place in the dog and the sheep. Manson suspects the jackal in India as a spreader of the disease to man. Stirling and Verco lay down the following factors as necessary for the spread of the disease:—

1. Sufficiency of infected dogs.
2. Domestic herbivora, especially sheep, as intermediary hosts.
3. Conditions favourable for the transmission of the parasite from the dog to man.
4. Facility of access to dogs of infected carcasses.

Perhaps, however, the egg gains access to the human body through contaminated food and dust.

Pathogenicity.—The cysts grow but slowly, consequently organs adapt themselves to the pressure, so that the symptoms may be wanting and depend entirely upon whether the organ can or cannot expand.

If, however, fluid escapes from a cyst, urticarial eruptions, or even rigors, with local pain and tenderness, may result.

Prophylaxis.—Prophylaxis must be on the lines indicated by the factors above mentioned—viz., registration of dogs, destruction of pariah dogs, non-feeding of dogs with raw meat, clean kennels, non-handling of dogs.

Echinococcus multilocularis Leuckart 1863.

Synonym.—*Echinococcus osteoklaster* Huber 1896.

This is the parasite which causes the alveolar or multilocular form of hydatid disease, which is very different from the ordinary form. The disease was first observed by Ruysch in 1721, and was generally looked upon as a colloid cancer, until Virchow in 1856 showed that it had its origin in a worm,

Mangold and Müller consider that by feeding experiments they obtained from it a *Tænia* different from *E. granulosus* in the hooks and the distribution of the ova.

Melnikow-Raswedenkow gives quite a different life-history for this parasite, which, if correct, will make it a new species. Further, there is the support of Stiles, Stirling, Verco, and others for the differentiation of the parasites from one another.

This form of hydatids occurs in man, sheep, and pigs, but principally in large cattle.

The geographical distribution is interesting, it being mostly found in South Germany, Switzerland, the Austrian Alpine region, Russia, and East Siberia, in which districts it occurs in large cattle and man, whereas it is absent from Iceland and Australia and European districts where sheep are common and where the other form is frequently met with.

Morphology.—Melnikow-Raswedenkow says that the cysts are composed of parenchyma internally and externally, the latter being in direct contact with the tissue of the host, and producing, it is said, not merely scolices, but immature amœboid embryos, which spread the cyst by continuity, or may enter the blood-stream and form metastases.

An amœboid embryo develops into a much-folded chitinous vesicle, having parenchyma both internally and externally. This parenchyma produces poisons which act upon the host. The cyst is looked upon as the homologue of a ripe proglottis, because it can produce living embryos, for the parenchyma can form scolices, immature embryos without a capsule, and mature ovoid embryos enclosed in a chitinous capsule.

The scolices, however, are frequently destroyed by phagocytosis, because they are situated in direct contact with the host's tissues. Hence the failure of feeding experiments, as the scolices arrive in the intestine damaged.

The result of this development is to produce a collection of cysts, measuring from 0.1 to 5 millimetres in diameter, embedded in connective tissue. Disintegration may begin in the centre of the masses of the cysts. Whether the *Tæniæ* obtained by feeding experiments are the same as *T. echinococcus* or not is uncertain.

Pathogenicity.—It produces a primary tumour in the liver, brain, spleen, kidney, or adrenals, with metastases in different parts of the body. The symptoms produced vary with the region affected, but eventually, perhaps after years, lead to anæmia, emaciation, and weakness, which cause death.

REFERENCES.

General.

- BLANCHARD (1889). *Traité de Zoologie Médicale*. Paris, I.
 BRAUN (1894-1900). *Bronn's Thierreich*, vol. iv. ab 1 b. Leipzig. (This gives a full literature up to 1895.)
 BRAUN (1908). *Die thierischen Parasiten des Menschen*, 4th ed. Würzburg.
 LEUCKART (1886). *Parasites of Man*. English translation. Edinburgh.
 LOOSS (1905). *Mense's Handbuch d. Tropenkrankheiten*, vol. i.
 STILES (1906). *Bull.* 25, Hyg. Lab., U.S. Pub. Health and Mar. Hosp. Serv. (Key and specific diagnosis of tapeworm of man.)
 WARD (1903). *Studies for the Zoological Laboratory University*, lv. 49. Nebraska, also No. 54 of 1902.

Dibothriocephalus latus.

- STILES (1906). *Loc. cit.*
 WARD (1901). *Circulars on Tropical Diseases*, i. 22.

Dibothriocephalus cordatus.

- LEUCKART (1886). *Loc. cit.*

Diplogonoporus grandis.

STILES AND TAILOR. Bull. 29, U.S. Bureau Animal Industry.

Diplogonoporus brauni.

LEON, N. (1907). Zoologischer Anzeiger, xxxii. 376.

LEON, N. (1908). Ibid.

Sparganum mansoni.

COBBOLD (1883). J. Linn. Soc. Lond. (Zool.), xvii. 78.

IJIMA AND MURATA (1888). J. Coll. Sci. Imp. Univ. Jap., ii. 149. Tokio.

SAMBON (1907). Journal Tropical Medicine.

STILES AND RAY (1902). Bull. 35, Bureau of Animal Industry, U.S. Dept. Agric., p. 47-56. Washington.

Sparganum prolifer.

IJIMA (1905). J. Coll. Sci. Imp. Univ. Jap., xx. 7. Tokio.

STILES (1907). Bull. 39, Hygienic Lab. U.S. Pub. Health and Marine Hosp. Service. Washington.

Sparganum baxteri.

SAMBON (1907). Journal Tropical Medicine and Hygiene.

Ligulinæ.

LEON (1908). Zool. Anzeig., xxxiii. 359.

Dipylidium caninum.

BLANCHARD (1907). Archiv. de Parasit., xi. 439. (Summaries of sixty cases up to 1907.)

DIAMARE (1893). Il genere Dipylidium. Atti Reale Accademia Scienza fisce e Matematiche, Napoli, ii., Ser. 2, No. 7.

ZSCHOKKE (1905). Centralb. f. Bakt. u. Par.

Hymenolepis nana, H. diminuta, Drepanidotænia lanceolata.

BLANCHARD (1891). Hist. Zool. et Méd. d. T. du Genre Hymenole. Paris.

GRASSI (1887). Centralb. Bakt. u. Par., i. 97 ; ii. 282, 305.

GRASSI AND ROVELLI (1892). Atti Ac. Sci. Nat. Catanea, iv. 4.

LINSTOW (1896). Zeits. f. d. ges. Naturw., p. 571.

RANSOM (1904). Bull. 18, Hygienic Lab. Pub. Health and Marine Hosp. Service, U.S.A.

RANSOM (1888). Lancet, ii.

STILES, CH. WARDELL AND GARRISON (1906). Bull. 24, Hyg. Lab. Pub. Health and Marine Hosp. Service. Washington.

Davainea madagascariensis.

BLANCHARD, R. (1891). C. R. de Soc. Biolog., (9), iii. 604. Paris.

BLANCHARD, R. (1899). Archiv. Parasit., ii. 200.

DANIELS, C. W. (1896). Lancet, ii. 1455.

GRENET ET DAVAINÉ (1869). Mem. Soc. Biolog., (5), i. 233. Paris.

Tænia solium and saginata.

STILES AND HASSALL (1898). Bul. 19, U.S. Dept. Agric. B. Animal Industry.

Tænia africana.

VON LINSTOW (1900). Centralb. f. Bakt. u. Par., I. Abt., xxviii. 485.

Tænia hominis.

VON LINSTOW (1902). C. f. B. Pu. I., I. xxxi. 770.

Tænia philippina.

GARRISON (1907). Phil. J. of Sci., II., 542. Manila.

Tænia confusa.

WARD (1895-96 and 1896-97). Ann. Rep. Nebraska Bd. Agric. 1895-96, p. 257; 1896-97, p. 178.

Tænia bremneri.

STEPHENS (1907). Annals of Tropical Medicine, i. 551.

Echinococcus.

BEGBIE (1908). Journ. Roy. Army Med. Corps. (Echinococcus in Ceylon.)
 NEISSER (1877). Die Echinococcenkrankheit.
 RASWEDENKOW (1901). Studien ü. d. Ech. alveolaris.
 ROGERS AND WILSON (1906). British Medical Journal, i. 1397.
 STILES. Bulletin 25, *loc. cit.*
 STIRLING AND VERCO (1907). System of Medicine, II. ii. 976. Allbutt and Rolleston.

CHAPTER XXI

NEMATHELMINTHES

Nemathelminthes — Nematoda — Anguillulidæ — Angiostomidæ — Gnathostomidæ — Physalopteridæ — Filariidæ — Dracunculidæ — Mermithidæ — Ascaridæ — Oxyuridæ — Strongylidæ — Metastrongylidæ — Trichostrongylidæ — Agchylostomidæ — Eustrongylidæ — Trichinellidæ — Trichosomidæ — Gordiacea — Acanthocephala — References.

PHYLUM II. NEMATHELMINTHES.

METAZOA, worm-like in form, tubular, or filiform, unsegmented, but covered with a cuticle which may be ringed. Without appendages or limbs, but usually with bristles, hooks, papillæ, or, rarely, suckers. Usually with an alimentary canal, but without any closed vascular system, and without respiratory organs. With an almost complete absence of cilia. Sexes are separate. Usually parasitic through some part of the life-cycle, in which the larvæ develop in a different host or organ from that occupied by the adult. The larvæ may be free and the adult parasitic, or *vice versa*.

Remarks.—The Nemathelminthes are extremely important to the student of tropical medicine, for they include some of the most potent agents of disease—*e.g.*, *Agchylostoma duodenale* and the *Filariidæ*. Recent researches have shown that, no matter how common the worm may appear to be, it is advisable to carefully study it, as it has been found that several species and genera have been included in an old species which was thought to be so well known that nothing new could be discovered concerning it—*e.g.*, *Ascaris*, in examining specimens of which Leiper has separated two new genera.

Classification.—The Nemathelminthes can be divided into two classes :—

CLASS I.—Anterior end not provided with an armed proboscis ; intestine present either complete or in part rudimentary.

This class includes two orders :—

Order I. Nematoda.

Order II. Gordiacea.

CLASS II.—Anterior end provided with an armed proboscis ; intestine absent.

Order III. Acanthocephala.

CLASS I.

ORDER I. NEMATODA.

Nemathelminthes with white filiform bodies, with usually a complete alimentary canal in the adults, but sometimes this may be represented by only an œsophagus and a rudimentary intestine ; with papillæ on the head. The male with one testis, a strongly recurved posterior extremity, and usually spicules. The female with a vulva distinct from the anus, except in the Cloacinæ.

Morphology.—The Nematoda are parasitic, as a rule, but minute forms can be met with in moist soil all over the world. The body is enclosed in a thick, transparent, smooth, or ringed cuticle, which may form hooks, spines, or lateral fins.

Under the cuticle comes a syncytium called the epidermis, under which is the peculiar muscular layer cut into four quadrants by thickenings of the epidermis, which project inwards, surrounding dorsally and ventrally a nerve cord, and laterally an excretory canal. Under the skin comes the large undivided body cavity, which is not of the nature of a true cœlom, as it is not between the two layers of the mesoblast, but between mesoblast externally and hypoblast internally, and contains a fluid which may represent the hæmolymph fluids of higher animals.

The digestive system consists of a mouth situated at the anterior end, and surrounded by two to six lips, which opens into a thick muscular suctorial œsophagus lined with chitin, the posterior part of which may be swollen into a bulb and armed with teeth.

The œsophagus opens into the intestine, which is a flattened tube leading to the short rectum, which ends in the anus.

The excretory system consists of two tubes lying in the lateral line, and uniting anteriorly to open in a pore situated in the mid-ventral line just behind the mouth.

The nervous system consists of a circumœsophageal ring, with six anterior and six posterior nerve trunks.

The sexes are separate. The male reproductive organs consist of one tube divisible into testes, vas deferens, vesicula seminalis, and ductus ejaculatorius, which opens on the ventral surface of the rectum close to the anus, while the posterior end of the body is modified for sexual purpose with spines and papillæ. The female reproductive organs consist of two much-coiled tubes divisible into ovary, oviduct, and uterus, which join together to form the simple vagina, which opens about the middle of the body in the mid-ventral line, or just in front of the anus.

Biology.—They appear to live upon the juices of the part of the body in which they are found. Generally this is the intestine, the

contents of which supply them with ample food. But some of them are capable of entering the villi of the intestine.

Life-History.—Sometimes the life-history is fairly simple, or is supposed to be so, for it is possible that we are not well acquainted with details.

Other life-histories are most complicated, and must be dealt with in detail.

Pathogenicity.—Some of the worms are markedly pathogenic, while others usually produce but slight effects.

Classification.—The Nematoda are classified into—The Non-Bursata, comprising the families: (1) Enoplidæ, (2) Anguillulidæ, (3) Angiostomidæ, (4) Gnathostomidæ, (5) Physalopteridæ, (6) Filariidæ, (7) Dracunculidæ, (8) Mermithidæ, (9) Ascaridæ, and (10) Oxyuridæ; and the Bursata, which are subdivided into the Strongyles, comprising the families (11) Strongylidæ, (12) Metastrongylidæ, (13) Trichostrongylidæ, (14) Agchylostomidæ, and the Pseudostrongyles, comprising the families (15) Eustrongylidæ, (16) Trichinellidæ, and (17) Trichosomidæ.

The Enoplidæ are free-living, and do not concern us.

The following table gives the parasites known in man, excluding a number of doubtful Filariidæ:—

Division.	Family.	Genus.	Species
Non-Bursata.	Anguillulidæ ..	Anguillula ..	1. <i>A. aceti</i> .
		Anguillulina ..	2. <i>A. putrefaciens</i> .
		Rhabditis ..	3. <i>R. niellyi</i> .
		Leptodera ..	4. <i>L. pelloi</i> .
	Angiostomidæ ..	Strongyloides ..	5. <i>S. intestinalis</i> .
	Gnathostomidæ ..	Gnathostoma ..	6. <i>G. spinigerum</i> .
	Physalopteridæ ..	Physaloptera ..	7. <i>P. caucasica</i> .
			8. <i>P. mordens</i> .
	Filariidæ ..	Filaria ..	9. <i>F. bancrofti</i> .
			10. <i>F. demarquayi</i> .
			11. <i>F. taniguchi</i> .
		(Microfilaria) ..	12. (M.) <i>powelli</i> .
			13. (M.) <i>philippinensis</i> .
		(Agamofilaria) ..	14. (Agm.) <i>conjunctivæ</i> .
			15. (Agm.) <i>labialis</i> .
			16. (Agm.) <i>oculi</i> .
		Acanthocheilonema ..	17. (Agm.) <i>georgiana</i> .
			18. <i>A. perstans</i> .
			19. <i>D. magalhãesii</i> .
	Dracunculidæ ..	Loa ..	20. <i>L. loa</i> .
		Hamularia ..	21. <i>H. equi</i> .
		Onchocerca ..	22. <i>O. volvulus</i> .
		Dracunculus ..	23. <i>D. medinensis</i> .
			24. <i>A. lumbricoides</i> .
	Ascaridæ ..	Ascaris ..	25. <i>A. maritima</i> .
		Toxascaris ..	26. <i>A. texana</i> .
		Belascaris ..	27. <i>T. canis</i> .
	Oxyuridæ ..	Lagoccheilascaris ..	28. <i>B. mystax</i> .
		Oxyuris ..	29. <i>L. minor</i> .
			30. <i>O. vermicularis</i> .

Bursata.	Strongyles.	Strongylidæ	..	{	Triodontophorus	31.	T. deminutus.
						32.	Æ. brumpti.
				{	Æsophagostomum	33.	Æ. stephanostomum var. thomasi.
		Metastrongylidæ	..	{	Metastrongylus	34.	M. apri.
						35.	N. gibsoni.
		Trichostrongylidæ	..	{	Nematodirus	36.	H. contortus.
						37.	T. colubriformis.
				{	Hæmonchus	38.	T. probolurus.
						39.	T. vitrinus.
		Agchylostomidæ	..	{	Agchylostoma	40.	Ag. duodenale.
						41.	N. americanus.
			..	{	Necator		
Pseudo-strongyles.		Eustrongylidæ	..		Dioctophyme	42.	D. renale.
						43.	T. spiralis.
		Trichinellidæ	..		Trichinella	44.	T. trichiura.
		Trichosomidæ	..		Trichuris		

NON-BURSATA.

FAMILY 2. ANGUILLULIDÆ.

Very small Nematoda, mostly free-living, rarely parasitic, with an oral cavity armed with a tooth or spine, and an œsophagus with a double dilatation. Male with two spicules, and sometimes a bursa copulatrix. Female with a pointed tail, and a vulva situated in the middle of the body.

Genera.—(1) *Anguillula*, (2) *Anguillulina*, (3) *Rhabditis*, (4) *Lep-todera*.

Anguillula Ehrenberg 1826.

Anguillulidæ with small mouth, œsophagus with two dilatations, of which the posterior has valves. Male without bursa, spicules with accessory pieces feather-shaped. Female with the vulva in the hinder portion of the body; uterus asymmetrical.

Anguillula aceti Müller 1783.

Anguillula aceti is the common vinegar eel, which has several times been reported as occurring in the human bladder, but the method of infection is unknown.

Morphology.—Cuticle not striated, body cylindrical, tapering a little to the anterior, but considerably to the posterior end. Male 1 to 2 millimetres long and 24 to 40 μ broad, with two pre-anal and one post-anal papillæ. Two equal spicules 38 μ long. Female, 2.4 millimetres long and 40 to 72 μ broad. Vulva near the equator. Embryos 222 by 12 μ .

Pathogenicity.—Nil.

Anguillulina Gervais and van Beneden 1859.

Synonym.—*Tylenchus* Bastian 1864.

Anguillulidæ possessing a spine on the oral cavity. Male bursa without papilla; uterus asymmetrical.

Species.—*Anguillulina putrefaciens* Kühn 1879.

Anguillulina putrefaciens Kühn 1879.

Synonyms.—*Tylenchus putrefaciens* Kühn 1879, *Trichina contorta* Botkin 1883.

This small nematode lives in onions, and it or other varieties may at times find access to the stomach with the food, and be rejected by vomiting, as reported by Botkin in 1883.

Rhabditis Dujardin 1845.

Small Anguillulidæ with no teeth in the oral cavity, with accessory pieces to the two male spicules, and without lateral ridges.

Rhabditis niellyi Blanchard 1885.

Synonym.—*Leptodera niellyi* Blanchard 1885.

This parasite was described by Nielly in 1882 in a boy who suffered from an itching papular eruption in Brest, which he had never left.

The specimens were found in the papules, and also in the blood at the beginning of the illness, but not in the fæces, urine, or sputum.

Morphology.—The parasites measured 0.33 by 0.03 millimetre in width, and possessed a cuticle with delicate transverse striation, a double-bulbed oesophagus, and an intestine, but no genital organs.

Life-History.—It was thought that the boy might have got infected by water, and that the embryos entered the blood viâ the intestine, and so passed to the skin; but in the light of our knowledge of the life-history of *Agchylostoma duodenale*, it might possibly be that the larvæ were entering by the skin and passing into the blood to reach the bowel. It is obvious that the parasite is immature, and that its characters are hardly of specific value.

Possibly it was some such rhabdite that O'Neil saw in craw-craw papules on the West Coast of Africa, or his parasite may have been a blood *Microfilaria*.

Leptodera Dujardin 1845.

Anguillulidæ with mouth, guarded by two, three, or six lips. Male with or without bursa, which, when present, never surrounds the point of the tail. Two equal spicules, and three pre-anal papillæ. Female with the tail prolonged into a long unsymmetrical point.

Leptodera pellio Schneider 1866.

Synonyms.—*Pelodera pellio* Schneider 1866, *Rhabditis genitalis* Scheiber 1880.

Leptodera pellio is merely an occasional parasite in man. Infection arises in rather a peculiar manner. The larva lives in the earthworm (*Lumbricus terrestris*), while the adults exist in decomposing matter in the soil.

The Hungarian peasants use soil for making poultices, from which the little worms apparently make their way into the vaginæ of women and live there. Oerley has shown experimentally that they will live in the vagina of a mouse.

Morphology.—Male, 0.8 to 1.05 millimetres in length, with a bursa supported by seven to ten ribs on each side. Spicules, which are not quite alike, measuring 27 to 33 μ in length. Female, 0.9 to 1.3 millimetres in length, with a vulva slightly posterior to the middle of the body.

Pathogenicity.—Nil.

FAMILY 3. ANGIOSTOMIDÆ.

Nematoda characterized by heterogony, each species having a free bisexual rhabdite form and a parasitic hermaphrodite filarial form.

Strongyloides Grassi 1879.

Synonyms.—*Pseudorhabditis* Perroncito 1881, *Rhabdonema* Leuckart 1882.

The parasitic form has an unarmed mouth, long cylindrical œsophagus, which reaches nearly to the middle of the body. The non-parasitic form has a small mouth, short œsophagus with a double dilatation, in the hinder part of which are small teeth. The male spicules are of equal size.

Strongyloides stercoralis Bavay 1877.

Synonyms.—*Anguillula intestinalis et stercoralis* Bavay 1877, *Leptodera intestinalis et stercoralis* Cobbold, *Pseudorhabditis stercoralis* Perroncito 1881, *Rhabdonema strongyloides* Leuckart 1883, *R. intestinale* Blanchard 1886.

History.—This little worm, which is not uncommonly met with in fæces, was first described in 1876 by Normand in the fæces and the intestine of French soldiers just returned to Toulon from Cochin China.

At first it was thought that there were two species—one in the fæces (*Anguillula stercoralis*) and the other in the bowel (*A. intestinalis*)—but Leuckart showed that they were but succeeding generations of one life-cycle. It is found in Europe, Africa, India, Ceylon, Indo-China, China, the Philippines, Oceania, the United States, the West Indies, and Brazil.

The fully-developed worm is found in the duodenum and jejunum, into the mucosa of which it has bored its way deeply.

Morphology.—The parasitic adult worm is very small—2.2 millimetres long and $34\ \mu$ broad—with a finely striated cuticle, and a mouth surrounded by four lips, leading into a cylindrical œsophagus, equal in length to one-quarter of the whole body. The anus is just in front of the tip of the tail. Inside this parasite can be seen ellipsoidal eggs. The sex of this parasite is doubtful. Is it a hermaphrodite, in which the male organs, after serving their purpose, have degenerated, or is it a parthenogenetic female? At present these questions cannot be answered definitely. Most probably it is a hermaphrodite. The eggs measure 50 to $58\ \mu$ in length by 30 to $34\ \mu$ in breadth, and are arranged in strings surrounded by a delicate tubular structure. They occur in the fæces only during attacks of diarrhœa.

Life-History.—The eggs are oviposited into the mucosa of the host's intestine, and the embryos hatch and find their way into the lumen, and are evacuated with the fæces. On reaching water these embryos grow into adult male and female forms, which conjugate, and then the female lays eggs. The eggs produce free-living rhabditiform embryos, which moult and turn into filariform embryos, which have been shown by Mozocchi and van Durne to



FIG. 194.—RHABDITI-FORM EMBRYO OF STRONGYLOIDES INTESTINALIS BAVAY AS FOUND IN HUMAN FÆCES.

(After Looss.)

penetrate the skin, not through the hair-follicles, but through the horny layer into the rete Malpighii, and so into the corium. The experiments of Fülleborn and V. Schilling-Torgau in infecting tracheotomized dogs or dogs with the œsophagus cut and fixed to the skin with larvæ of *Strongyloides stercoralis* Bavay 1877 have shown that the more important route is from the skin to the lungs and so viâ the trachea and œsophagus to the bowels, while a less important route from the skin viâ the blood-stream directly to the bowel can also take place (*vide* the life-history of *Agchylostoma duodenale*, p. 556). On arrival in the intestine they burrow into Lieberkühn's follicles, and begin to lay their eggs.

Pathogenicity.—The parasite is generally believed to cause a catarrh of the small intestine, though many believe it to be non-pathogenic.

FAMILY 4. GNATHOSTOMIDÆ.

Nematoda, with the whole or only the anterior part of the body covered with minute ramified spines. They live in the stomachs of vertebrates, especially mammals.

One genus : *Gnathostoma* Owen 1836.

Gnathostoma. Owen 1836.

Synonym.—*Cheiracanthus* Diesing 1839.

With the characters of the family.

The genus comprises only intestinal parasites, of which nine species are known in man, alligators, cats, tigers, pigs, etc.

Gnathostoma spinigerum Owen 1836.

Synonyms.—*Cheiracanthus siamensis* Levinsen 1889, *Gnathostoma siamense* Levinsen 1889, *G. robustum* Diesing 1839.

Remarks.—Only two specimens are known, one a female, which was obtained by Deuntzer from a young Siamese woman in whose breast a hard painful swelling had formed, accompanied with slight fever, and another a male described by Leiper. Nodules the size of beans appeared in the skin, from one of which the worms were extracted. Two other similar cases have recently been reported. Leiper has recently compared a male specimen from man with the type specimen of *G. spinigerum* of the tiger, and declares them to be identical.

Morphology—*Male*.—10.55 millimetres long by 0.6 millimetre broad, with the anterior half of the body quite straight and terminating in a globular swelling, which carries two large fleshy lips which guard the mouth. Neck only 0.3 millimetre in diameter. In front of the neck the cuticle is provided with eight transversed rows of chitinous hooks with their points directed backwards. Behind the neck the cuticle has many cuticular laminæ, but the posterior half of the body is without armature.

The mouth is simple, without a vestibule. The paired labial glands open on the lips already mentioned. The œsophagus is 2.4 millimetres long and very muscular, and opens into the chyle intestine, which, being uniformly 0.25 millimetre broad, is with difficulty separated from the rectum, which leads to the cloaca.

There are two pre-anal and two post-anal large nipple-like genital papillæ around the cloaca, and though the cuticle is folded there is no bursal formation; but there are two unequal spicules, 1.1 millimetres and 0.4 millimetre long. There is a distinct muscular-ejaculatory duct, 1.5 millimetres long.

Female.—Nine millimetres long by 1 millimetre broad, with eight rows of bristles around the head, and spines covering the anterior third of the body. Each spine ramifies into three points, of which the middle is the longest. The anterior end was narrow, and the mouth appeared to be bordered by two lips. The posterior end had a three-lobed prominence, at the base of which the anus opened.

Habitat.—Subcutaneous tumours in man in Siam. Allied species live in the stomach of pigs and oxen. The species is said to occur in the pariah dogs of Calcutta, and another species in the large intestine of monkeys in French Guiana.

Pathogenicity.—This is the only species of *Gnathostoma* which is known to wander into the connective tissue and to form subcutaneous tumours. The other species live in the stomach of animals, causing fibrous thickenings.

FAMILY 5. PHYSALOPTERIDÆ.

Physaloptera Rudolphi 1819.

Physalopteridæ possessing mouth with usually two lips, each with papillæ and teeth. Posterior end of the male lancet-shaped, owing to a widening of the cuticle. Bursa bladder-shaped, with four parts of pedunculated external papillæ and a number of sessile internal papillæ and unequal spicules. Female with two ovaries; vulva situated anteriorly.

Physaloptera caucasica von Linstow 1902.

This has only been found once by Ménétrés in the alimentary canal of man in the Caucasus.

Male 1.42 millimetres long by 0.71 millimetre broad. Female 27 millimetres long by 1.14 millimetres broad. Eggs 57 by 39 μ .

Physaloptera mordens Leiper 1907.

Leiper has recently described a number of cases of infection with *Physaloptera* in natives of tropical Africa, which differed from *P. caucasica* not only in size but in the characters of the caudal extremity of the male.

FAMILY 6. FILARIIDÆ BRAUN 1895.

Synonyms.—*Filaridea* Carus 1863, *Filariadea* Leuckart 1876, *Filaridæ* Cobbold, *Filarides* Assenova 1899.

Long filiform nematodes with uniform diameter, and a straight head provided with two latero-median and four submedian papillæ. Mouth terminal, with two lips, and occasionally a more or less distinct buccal capsule. Œsophagus slender, elongated, and may be divided into two portions, but has no posterior bulb. Mid-gut present, rectum present, anus subterminal.

Males with one or two unequal spicules and a spirally recurved

tail, provided with papillæ, and in some cases with lateral alæ. Females larger than the males, with or without a vulva in the gravid worms, which, when present, is situate anteriorly. Uterus usually double. All species parasitic and ovoviviparous, with a change of host in at least certain species.

Type Genus.—*Filaria*.

The genus *Filaria* was created by Müller in 1787, unfortunately without naming a particular type, which Stiles suggests should be *Filaria martis* Gmelin 1790 (*F. perforans*). This is found in *Mustela martes* L., the pine-marten of Europe, and was one of the parasites originally described by Müller. This parasite requires to be restudied before definite characters can be given for the genus.

The subfamilies are *Filariinæ* and *Onchocercinæ*.

SUBFAMILY FILARIINÆ STILES 1907.

Filaria Müller 1787.

Definition.—This is doubtful. Filariidæ with long slender filiform bodies, anterior extremity attenuated, obtuse; posterior very attenuated, more so than the head. Cuticle without transverse striation, and without bosses. Male shorter than the female, with spirally bent tail provided with lateral cuticular alæ, pre- and post-anal papillæ, and unequal spicules. Females longer than males, with vulva situate anteriorly near the mouth.

Synonyms.—*Fileraria* Rudolphi 1809, *Filaire* Lee 1840, and some misprints.

Type.—*F. martis* Gmelin 1790.

Species.—*F. bancrofti* Cobbold 1877, *F. demarquayi* Manson 1895, and *F. taniguchi* Penel 1905.

Two years ago the genus *Filaria* contained a large number of subgenera with species parasitic in man, but the following genera have definitely been separated from *Filaria*; *Acanthocheilonema*, *Dirofilaria*, *Dracunculus*, *Onchocerca*, and *Hamularia*. At the present time there are only three species known to be human parasites, which are referred to the genus *Filaria*—viz., *F. bancrofti* Cobbold 1877, *F. demarquayi* Manson 1895, and *F. taniguchi* Penel 1905, in addition to the embryonic forms included in the collective group (*Microfilaria*) and the immature forms in the collective group (*Agamofilaria*). There are, however, a number of spurious or doubtful forms scattered throughout medical literature and described as human parasites which must be eliminated from the genus, and these are:—

1. *Filaria* (?) *hominis oris* Leidy 1850.—This probably belongs to the Mermithidæ, and may have been a mermis accidentally taken into the child's mouth while eating, say, an apple, because it had an obtuse posterior extremity with a recurved hook.

2. *Filaria* (?) *gigas* Prout 1902.—Two embryonic *filarial* structures 220 to 340 μ by 8 to 12 μ , found with rounded head and tapering tail ending bluntly, no sheath; stained readily with fuchsin. Low thinks that these might be contaminations—i.e., insect hairs; Looss thinks that they may be cast

skins, and as Stiles has also adopted this view, the parasite may perhaps be eliminated. Recently Leiper has considered it to be a stained fungoid growth.

3. *Nematoideum tracheale* Cobbold 1864.

The following can certainly be eliminated :—

4. *Filaria* (?) *restiformis* Leidy 1880, as this is *Agamomeris restiformis*, and belongs to the Mermithidæ.

5. *Filaria* (?) *cystica* is not a parasite of vertebrates ; it is *Oxyuris vermicularis*.

6. *Filaria* (?) *niellyi* is *Rhabditis niellyi*.

7. *Filaria* (?) *zebra* Mon Grand 1852 is said to be a fibrinous clot, and therefore a species *fictitia*.

The following may have to be eliminated :—

8. *Filaria* (?) *kilimare* Kolb 1898.—These consist of several female specimens once found free in the abdominal cavity of a fallen Kitu warrior. Oral papillæ are said to have been like *Dracunculus medinensis*.

They were 10 to 20 centimetres in length, and 0.5 to 1 millimetre in diameter, white, and resembled *Gordius aquaticus* in general appearance.

With these Kolb classified free-living worms, and therefore doubts are held as to the exact zoological determinations of the species recorded.

9. *Filaria* (?) *romanorum orientalis* Sarcani 1888.—Observed in the blood of a Roumanian woman ; 1 millimetre long by 0.3 millimetre broad, with intestine and generative apparatus developed ; believed by some to be an adult thread-worm.

The uncertain species are :—

1. *Filaria Species* (?) Cholodkowsky 1896.—Found in whitlow-like tumours on the fingers of peasants in the Twer Government.

2. *Filaria Species* (?) Prout 1902.

3. There was a parasite called *Spiroptera hominis* Rudolphi 1819, which appears to have been spurious, being really *Filaria communis*, of which *Filaria piscium* is a synonym.

Filaria bancrofti Cobbold 1877.

Synonyms.—*Trichina cystica* Salisbury 1868, *nec* Rudolphi 1819 ; *F. sanguinis hominis* Lewis 1872, *F. sanguinis hominis ægyptiaca* Sonsino 1874, *F. dermatemica* da Silva Araiyo 1875, *F. wuchereri* da Silva Lima 1877, *F. sanguinis hominum* Hall 1885, *F. sanguinis hominum nocturna* Manson 1891, *F. nocturna* Manson 1891.

History.—The *Microfilaria* was discovered in Paris by Demarquay in August, 1863, in the chylocele fluid of a patient from Havana. In 1866 Wucherer found it in Brazil in the urine of patients suffering from chyluria. In 1872 Lewis made the important observation that its true anatomical habitat is the blood. Bancroft, in 1876, discovered the adult female form ; Borne, in 1888, discovered the adult male. In 1899 Manson discovered that the *Microfilaria*, on disappearing from the peripheral circulation, resorted to the lungs during the day-time. The parasite is spread by mosquitoes, as discovered by Manson in 1878, who thought that the *Filaria* escaped from their insect hosts into water, and reached man by this means. Later Bancroft conjectured that *Filaria* might be inoculated directly into man, and about this time sent infected mosquitoes to Manson in London. Bancroft's material was investigated, at Manson's request, by Low, who discovered that the *Filaria* migrate to the mouth-parts of their insect

hosts after a period of growth within the musculature. A little later, independently, James made the same discovery in India. In the meantime Grassi and Noè investigated the life-history of a corresponding *Filaria* of the dog (*D. immitis*), and demonstrated that it undergoes a similar development also in mosquitoes, choosing, however, the Malpighian tubes instead of the thoracic muscles as the seat of their development. Moreover, Grassi and Noè were successful in inoculating normal dogs by means of mosquitoes fed on infected dogs. Fülleborn has most carefully restudied the subject, as has Bahr, whose work on the Filariasis of Fiji is of great value.

Morphology—General Characters.—The worms are whitish in colour, long and filiform, with a smooth cuticle, and a globular head terminating in a simple, circular, unarmed, lipless mouth. The tail is rounded.

Sexual Characters.—The male is smaller than the female, and the only complete specimen measured 38.6 millimetres in length and 0.12 millimetre in thickness. In the dead worm the tail is very much incurved, but may be straight during life, according to Maitland. The anus, which is 0.13 millimetre from the posterior extremity, is guarded by two projecting lips. The anal papillæ are not easily defined, but are said to consist of three pairs of pre-anal and three of post-anal papillæ.

There are two unequal curved retractile spicules. The larger measures 0.6 millimetre and the smaller 0.2 millimetre in length. They consist of a basal portion, which is broad, rigid, and chitinous, measuring 0.17 millimetre in the larger and 0.12 millimetre in the smaller spicule, and a long, thin, colourless, cylindrical, slightly undulating terminal portion.

The female, while more or less transparent, is longer and thicker than the male, and measuring 76 to 100 millimetres in length, with a thickness of 0.185 millimetre.

The mouth is situated at the anterior extremity, being 8 μ in diameter, and leading into an œsophagus which passes insensibly into the intestine. This terminates in the anus, situated 0.28 millimetre from the incurved posterior end.

The vulva, situate 1.2 millimetres from the anterior extremity, opens into a single vagina, from which two uterine tubules run along most of the length of the body. These tubules contain the eggs and embryos in various stages of development.

Cobb's formula is :—

$$\frac{-0.36, 3.64 (?), 1.22, 99.5}{-0.145, 0.377 (?), 0.254, 0.147}$$

The numerator indicates lengths from the anterior extremity to (1) base of œsophagus; (2) nerve ring; (3) posterior pharyngeal constriction; (4) vulva in females or middle in males; (5) anus. The denominator represents transverse measurements at the same levels. All measurements are expressed as percentages of the total length.

Life-History.—The males and females may be found coiled together in the lymphatics of the scrotum, the arm, the leg, hydroceles of the cord, epididymis, or testicle, and more rarely in those of the pelvis and abdomen. The males are less numerous than the females.

When placed in saline solutions, they show active movements, coiling and uncoiling themselves for several hours.

In the uterus of the female, as has already been stated, eggs may be noted in all stages of development.

At first nearly round, measuring 50 by 34 μ , and containing a coiled-up embryo, the eggs become more and more elongated by the movements of the embryo, until in the anterior part of the uterus they are much longer than broad. Finally, they escape through the genital pore, and enter the lymph-stream, along which they travel through lymphatic vessels and glands, the thoracic duct, the right side of the heart, and the lungs, to reach the peripheral circulation, where they are best seen at night; hence the name

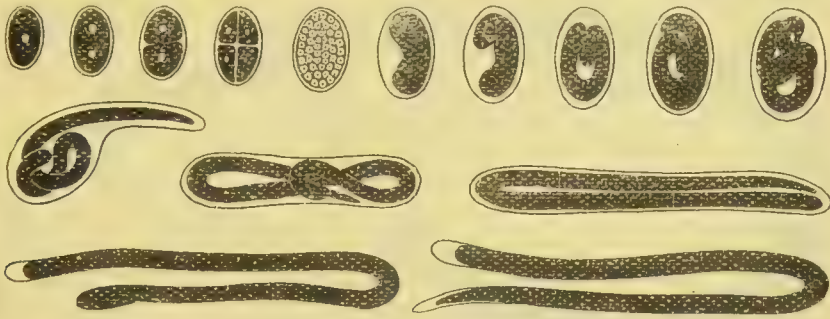


FIG. 195.—DIAGRAM OF THE DEVELOPMENT OF A MICROFILARIA (LOA LOA STILES).

(After Penel.)

Microfilaria nocturna. In the blood they appear as little wriggling filiform bodies, knocking the corpuscles about, but not moving from the position in which they are lying. The *Microfilaria* in the blood are said to be a little larger than those in the uterus, which is thought by Penel to be due, not to growth, but to inhibition of fluid by osmosis.

They measure from 290 to 320 μ in length and from 7.5 to 8.4 μ in breadth (Low), and are seen to be long, slender, cylindrical organisms with a rounded anterior and a tapering posterior end, enclosed in a sheath—the vitelline or egg membrane—inside which they are capable of darting backwards and forwards, because it is longer than they are, the empty portion being noted either in front of the anterior or behind the posterior end of the *Microfilaria*. Manson considers that this sheath is of vital importance to the little parasite, as it prevents its using its anterior spine to escape out of the blood-vessel, and so losing the chance of its invading a mosquito.

The anterior rounded extremity possesses a thick hemispherical

proboscis, carrying a minute apical spine, which is capable of being covered by a retractile and protractile six-lipped prepuce.

Behind the anterior end, the body can be seen to be composed of a transversely striated dermo-muscular layer, inside which are a number of closely packed cells whose nuclei show up clearly on staining. Unstained, the central mass appears granular, but the granules are, however, wanting at certain spots, which, following Annett, Dutton, and Elliot, may be defined as: (1) A clear anterior area from the front to the first nuclei; (2) an irregular transverse spot situated 21.5 per cent. of the length of the body from the anterior end; (3) a V-shaped or transverse irregular spot at 30 per cent. of the length, called V-spot by Manson; (4) a median line, the central viscus of Manson, whose centre is at 63 per cent. of the length; (5) an irregular oval spot often present at 85 per cent., called the tail-spot by Manson; (6) a small central spot only occasionally present at 91.5 per cent.; (7) the clear posterior area behind the last nucleus.



FIG. 196. MICROFILARIA BANCROFTI COBBOLD.

The meaning of these clear areas is not evident. Manson thinks that the V-spot is the *Anlage* of the water vascular system and the tail-spot of the proctodæum, but the development of the worm has recently been studied in detail by Fülleborn, whose diagram is reproduced on the next page.

These *Microfilarie* occur in the peripheral blood at night, as has just been stated, beginning about 5 to 7 p.m., and increasing in numbers till midnight, and then diminishing till about 7 to 8 a.m., when only a stray one may be met with, as, indeed, can be observed all through the day until the evening increase begins. There is, therefore, a definite periodicity—at night the *Microfilarie* abound in the blood, while in the day-time they do not.

In the day it appears that they live mostly in the lungs and in the large vessels of the thorax. This was shown by Manson by the careful examination of films and sections taken from the different organs of a man who had *Microfilaria bancrofti* in his peripheral

blood, as well as a lymph scrotum and varicose groin glands. The post-mortem was made six hours after death, which was due to drinking hydrocyanic acid, and took place almost instantaneously at 8.30 a.m. By far the largest number of parasites were to be found in the lungs and carotid artery, and then in the heart muscle, while a few were found elsewhere, especially in the kidney.

These facts have been confirmed, but the question as to what induces the parasites to live in the peripheral blood in the night and the thoracic organs in the day is not clear. True, it enables the *Microfilaria* to enter the mosquito, but that does not explain the problem. Neither variations in atmospheric temperature nor in pressure, in light, or in darkness seem to have any effect. Nor does the pulse-rate or the individual's temperature make much differ-



FIG. 197.—SCHEME OF THE STRUCTURE OF A MICROFILARIA, SHOWING (1) THE EXCRETORY PORE; (2) THE CELLS, WHICH WILL FORM THE EXCRETORY APPARATUS; (3) THE SUBCUTICULAR CELLS; (4) THE GENITAL CELLS; (5) THE GENITAL PORE.

(After Fülleborn.)

ence; but there is one factor, first shown by Mackenzie and since confirmed by Manson and others, that it is in some way connected with sleep; for if a person with *Microfilaria* in his blood stays awake all night and sleeps during the day, the parasites will abound in his blood in the day, and not at night. Penel remarks that the problem of the periodicity of the *Microfilaria* and the periodicity of sleep in man are connected, and that when one is properly solved the other will also be elucidated.

Recently Bahr has shown that the microfilaria of *F. bancrofti* in Fiji does not develop so well in *Culex fatigans* as it does in *Stegomyia pseudoscutellaris* Theobald 1910. Now this latter mosquito feeds only by day, and in Fiji Bahr has found that the microfilaria occur in the peripheral blood both during the day and during the night, and believes that this loss of periodicity is correlated to

the habits of its more efficient host, or, in other words, the periodicity usually observed in the microfilaria is dependent upon the habits of the insect host. He further shows that the racial peculiarity or the habits of the human host has no influence. This observation and deduction are of great importance in the study of endemicity (*vide* Chapter V.).

The number of *Microfilaria* in the blood varies from very few up to quite considerable numbers, reaching, according to Manson,



FIG. 198.—EARLY STAGE OF THE DEVELOPMENT OF *FILARIA BANCROFTI* COBBOLD IN THE MUSCLES OF *CULEX FATIGANS*.

(After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten.')

up to 500 in a single film, which gives some 40,000,000 to 50,000,000 in an average-sized man. This naturally raises the question of, How many adults do these come from? How long does an adult live? How long does a *Microfilaria* live? What finally happens to the *Microfilaria*?

These questions are much more easily asked than answered. It

would seem probable that a given *Filaria* can live several years in the human body, and, of course, give rise to many embryos. Further, numbers of *Filaria* can be met with in one individual.

Bancroft thinks that the *Microfilaria* can live in the blood for several months, and observers have thought that they may be destroyed by leucocytes and endothelial cells. It is, however,

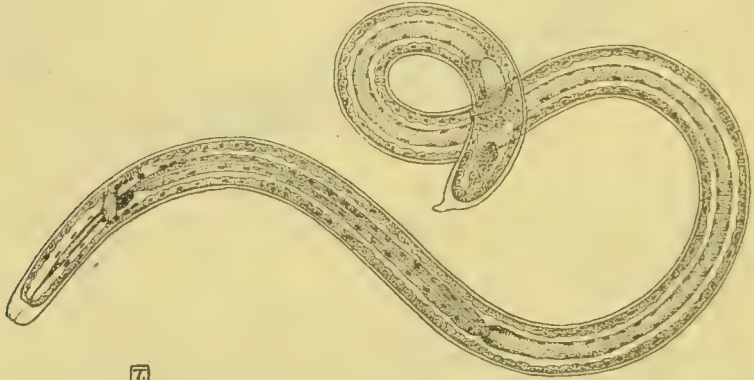


FIG. 199.—LATE STAGE OF THE DEVELOPMENT OF *FILARIA BANCROFTI* COBBOLD IN *CULEX FATIGANS*.

(After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten.')

evident that they develop no further in the human body, and require to be taken into the body of a mosquito before further development is possible.

In the Mosquito.—Abounding as they do in the peripheral blood at night, there is no difficulty for the *Microfilaria* to reach the stomach of a mosquito in the tropics, and here and in its thorax development proceeds.

The mosquitoes known to be capable of serving as efficient hosts for this development are: *Culex fatigans* Wied in the West Indies,

Myzomyia rossii Giles in India, *Pyretophorus costalis* Loew in Nigeria, *Panoplitus africanus* in Central Africa.

Incomplete results have been obtained with *Culex microannulatus*, *C. albopictus*, *C. tæniatus*, *Cellia albimana*; and negative results in *C. notoscriptus*, *C. annulirostris*, *C. hispidosus*, *C. vigilax*, *C. nigrithorax*, *C. procax*, *A. musivus*, *Myzomyia funesta*, *A. maculipennis*, *Pulex serraticeps*, *Stomoxys* (?), *Clinocoris lectularius*.

The *Microfilaria* enter with the blood into the mosquito's stomach, and there, the sheath being fixed by the hæmoglobin escaping from the red corpuscles, and becoming altered by the secretions of the stomach, they escape by rupturing it by means of the spine on their anterior extremity.

They then pierce the wall of the stomach, and find their way into the muscles of the thorax, where they grow considerably till 1·5 millimetres long and 0·25 millimetre broad.



[7]

FIG. 200.—DIAGRAM OF THE DEVELOPMENT OF *FILARIA BANCROFTI* COBBOLD IN THE THORAX, HEAD, AND LABIUM OF A MOSQUITO.

They also undergo development, obtaining four lips, an alimentary canal, and a three-lobed tail. When so far developed, they leave the thorax and pass through the prothorax and head into the labium, where they remain until the mosquito bites a man, when they escape into the wound by making their way through Dutton's membrane, which is a thin membrane between the labella and the chitinous skeleton of the labium, as was demonstrated by Lebrede. (For further details see Chapter XLII.)

Their further development in man is not known, but in due course they become adults.

Pathogenicity.—Usually non-pathogenic, these worms under certain circumstances can cause elephantoid fever, elephantiasis, lymph scrotum, etc., or, in other words, filariasis.

Filaria demarquayi Manson 1897.

Synonyms.—*Filaria ozzardi* Manson 1897, *F. juncea* Railliet 1908.

In 1895 Manson discovered a microfilaria in blood-films from natives of St. Vincent in the West Indies, which he named *Filaria*

demarquayi, after the discoverer of the microfilaria of *F. bancrofti*. In 1897 he found in blood-films from Carib Indians of British Guiana another microfilaria, which closely resembled that of *F. demarquayi*, but which he provisionally considered to be a different species, and called *F. ozzardi*.

Lately Penel and Manson have come to regard them as identical. In 1898 Daniels found the adult females.

It is found in St. Vincent, Dominica, Trinidad, St. Lucia, in the West Indies, and in British Guiana, where it is found in jungly districts. The adults live in the connective tissue at the root of the mesentery and elsewhere.

Morphology.—The male can hardly be said to be known, as only a fragment of a posterior end has been found, which showed a much incurved tail, with at least one spicule. The female measures 65 to 80 millimetres in length and 0.21 to 0.25 millimetre in breadth, with a bulbous cuticular expansion at the tip of the tail. Anus 0.25 millimetre in front of the posterior extremity, vulva 0.71 millimetre behind the anterior end.

Life-History.—The egg develops into a microfilaria which has no sheath, shows no periodicity, and measures 200 μ by 5 μ . Its tail is tapering and sharp pointed, and it moves actively. Nothing further is known as to the life-history.

Pathogenicity.—Nil.

Filaria taniguchi Penel 1905.

This *Filaria* was found in a lymphatic gland from a person living in Ama Kusha in Japan. Only the female and the microfilaria are known.

The former measured 68 millimetres in length and 0.2 millimetre in breadth, and had a non-striated cuticle, a terminal mouth with two pairs of papillæ, an anus 0.23 millimetre in front of the posterior extremity, and a vulva 1.3 millimetres behind the mouth.

The latter measured 164 μ long by 8 μ broad, possessed a sheath and a truncated tail, and showed a nocturnal periodicity. Perhaps this species is the same as *F. bancrofti*.

Life-History.—Not known.

Pathogenicity.—Not known.

(*Microfilaria*) *Le Dantec* 1904.

A collective group of the larvæ of unknown adult Filariidæ found in the blood of man and other vertebrates.

(*Microfilaria*) *powelli* Penel 1905.

This microfilaria was found by Powell in 1903 in the blood of a Bombay policeman.

It showed a nocturnal periodicity (?), was provided with a sheath, measured 131 μ by 5.3 μ , and had a truncated tail.

(Microfilaria) philippinensis Ashburn and Craig 1906.

Ashburn and Craig described this blood filaria in May, 1906. It measures 0.29 to 0.335 millimetre in length, has no periodicity, is actively and progressively motile, and is enclosed in a tight-fitting sheath, within which it cannot slip backwards and forwards, and which is only clearly seen at the extremities. The anterior extremity is broad, with a serrated prepuce, and supports a small retractile spicule. The body has an outer striated musculo-cutaneous coat and an inner clear portion, with an anterior V-spot situate 0.105 millimetre from the anterior end, and piercing the outer coat by its apex, and opening on the surface.

The central viscus is seen as a convoluted or spiral tube in the posterior part of the middle third of the body. The tail-spot is in the centre of the posterior third of the body, and opens by the apex of its V on the surface, where there is a distinct papilla. The tail begins to taper at a point midway between the tail-spot and the posterior end, and ends in a fine threadlike point. It is thought that this end disappears during later development.

The column of nuclei runs the whole length of the worm, being broken by unstained areas here and there. In stained species the V-spots and central viscus are not seen.

Life-History.—This microfilaria develops in *Culex fatigans* Wied. On entering the stomach of the mosquito it escapes from its sheath within twenty-four hours, and has pierced the stomach-wall and appeared free in the coelom, where many die, but others develop rapidly, and complete their mosquito cycle. Generally by the third day they have left this position and travelled into the thoracic muscles, where they develop. At first there is a decrease in length from 0.32 to 0.21 millimetre, but an increase in breadth from 0.0065 to 0.01 millimetre.

By the eighth day the *Filaria* has increased in length and breadth, and shows an alimentary canal along its whole length.

From this till the eleventh day the development is rapid, and the worm now measures from 1.2 to 1.6 millimetres in length by 0.04 to 0.02 millimetre in breadth, and has a mouth, œsophagus, chyle intestine, and an anus, and the tail has three well-defined papillæ.

From the eleventh to twelfth day the worms are found in the head, and by the fourteenth to fifteenth day in the labium, lying side by side, with their heads pointing forwards.

As many as four can be seen in this position. In the labium they have diminished in width and increased in length. They now show the two tubes running parallel with the alimentary canal, which are probably the *Anlage* of the generative glands.

Remarks.—There appears to be every reason to consider this microfilaria as merely the microfilaria of *F. bancrofti* Cobbold 1877, because, as Low, Leiper and Bahr have pointed out, they are morphologically identical, while both nematodes live in the tissues and are associated with the same pathological signs. Finally, the same mosquito, *Stegomyia pseudoscutellaris* Theobald 1910, is an efficient host for both. Bahr suggests that the loss of periodicity is, probably, a partial adaptation to the habits of the intermediary host, *S. pseudoscutellaris*, which only feeds by day. This is a very likely explanation, and a most important epidemiological fact, demonstrating the correlation between parasite and host which Sambon has long insisted upon. With reference to the general bearing of a fact like this, reference may be made to the section on Endemicity in Chapter V.

(Agamofilaria) Stiles 1906.

A purely collective group, to contain agamic forms of Filariidæ which have not yet reached a stage in their development permitting their being generically determined.

Species.—(*Agamofilaria*) *conjunctivæ* Addario 1885, (*A.*) *labialis* Pane 1864, (*A.*) *georgiana* Stiles 1906, (*A.*) *oculi* Diesing 1851, (*A.*) *palpebralis* Pace 1867.

(Agamofilaria) conjunctivæ Addario 1885.

Synonyms.—*F. peritonei hominis* Babes 1880, *F. inermis* Grassi 1887, *F. apapillocephala* Condorelli Francaviglia 1892.

Remarks.—This worm was first discovered by Dubini in the eye of a man in Milan, then by Babes in the gastro-splenic omentum of a woman in Budapest, then by Vadela in the conjunctiva of a woman in Sicily. Perhaps *F. palpebralis* Pace 1867 and *F. oculi humani* van Nordmann belong to this group. It is possible that this is the common *Filaria* seen in the eyes of horses in India and Ceylon, and which is usually confounded with *H. equi* Gmelin 1789; if so, the horse would be the normal host. It is possible that the *L. loa* described in India was one of these parasites. It is also possible that the specimens were immature worms.

Morphology.—Only the female is known, and it is white in colour, and measures 16 to 20 centimetres in length and 0.5 millimetre in breadth. The cuticle is striated except just around the mouth, but there are neither papillæ nor lips. The anus is subterminal, and the vulva close behind the mouth. There is a single vagina and a double uterus containing eggs and embryos.

Life-History and Pathogenicity.—Unknown.

(Agamofilaria) labialis Pane 1864.

This parasite was extracted from a small pustule on the inner surface of the upper lip of a person in Naples in 1864, and was not again described until Pierantoni, in 1908, again found it occurring in Naples. In both cases the female has been found, varying from 130 to 30 millimetres in length, with a whitish-yellow body, and a pointed anterior extremity, on which the terminal mouth, guarded by four papillæ, opens. The anus opens 150 μ anterior to the posterior end, and the vulva opens 3 millimetres behind the anterior extremity. The uterus bifurcates into two branches.

(Agamofilaria) georgiana Stiles 1906.

These immature *Filaria* were obtained by Graham from a sore on the leg of a negress at Darien.

They were cylindrical in shape, with a more or less uniform diameter, gradually attenuating towards both extremities. Mouth terminal, central, circular, small, unarmed, and surrounded by six papillæ, four of which were prominent and sub-median; two were smaller and latero-median. Anus a transverse slit, situated from 64 to 128 μ from the posterior end. Tip of the tail, with conical projections, 8 to 13 μ in length by 4 μ in breadth. Excretory pore 0.432 to 0.520 millimetre from anterior end.

Cuticle without striation, except some very fine transverse lines near the anus. Median lines visible in glycerine specimens. Lateral

bands rather prominent, with longitudinal, sinuous ridges hanging into the body cavity, and with longitudinal canal emptying into excretory pore. Œsophagus simple, 2.5 to 2.9 millimetres in length, triradiate on section. Chyle intestine straight. Rectum 200 μ long. Body-cavity almost completely occupied by the intestine, lateral longitudinal glands, and reticular formation, which is probably the primordium (*Anlage*) of the genital apparatus.

(*Agamofilaria*) *oculi* von Nordmann 1832.

Synonyms.—*Filaria oculi humani* von Nordmann 1882, *F. lentis* Diesing 1851.

These are immature filarial worms, found in cataracts by von Nordmann, Gescheidt, and Kühnt. Braun rejects those by Quadri, Fano, Schoeler, and Everbusch. The common error here appears to be to mistake the remains of the hyaloid artery for a parasite. The worms measured from 0.38 millimetre up to 12.6 millimetres in length.

(*Agamofilaria*) *palpebralis* Pace 1867, *nec* Wilson 1844.

This *Filaria* was removed from a tumour in the upper eyelid of a boy.

Acanthocheilonema Cobbold 1870.

Filariidæ with thin filiform bodies provided with smooth cuticle, which is only striated longitudinally. Mouth unarmed, followed by an Œsophagus formed of two distinct parts. Posterior extremity in both sexes provided with two short conical lateral appendages situate near the terminal point. Males with four pairs of pre-anal and one pair of post-anal papillæ and two unequal spicules, the larger membraneous distally and the smaller hooked. Female viviparous; vulva situate in the Œsophageal region. Parasites in serous cavities of Carnivora and Primates. Embryos in general circulation.

Type.—*Acanthocheilonema dracunculoides* Cobbold 1870.

Other species are *A. perstans* Manson 1891, *A. recondita* Grassi 1890, and *A. grassii* Noé 1907.

Acanthocheilonema perstans Manson 1891.

Synonyms.—*Filaria perstans* Manson 1891, *F. sanguinis hominis minor* Manson 1891, *F. sanguinis hominis perstans* Manson 1891, *F. ozzardi* (variety truncated) Manson 1897.

History.—The microfilaria was first found by Manson in the blood of negroes from the Congo. Daniels found the adults in British Guiana. The geographical distribution known at present is Tropical Africa and British Guiana.

Morphology.—The adults are found, as a rule, free in the connective tissue at the base of the mesentery, around the pancreas, behind the pericardium, and behind the abdominal aorta and the suprarenal capsules. The body is cylindrical, uniform, except towards both ends, when it tapers a little.

The male, rarely met with, is 45 millimetres in length by 0.6 millimetre broad, with a greatly curved tail, which ends in a bifid prolongation of the cuticle. There is one large spicule, according to

Penel, which terminates in a trumpet-shaped internal expansion continuous with the seminal tube. Low, however, describes two unequal spicules and four pairs of pre-anal and one of post-anal papillæ, all of which are very small.

The female is 70 to 80 millimetres in length and 0.12 millimetre in breadth, with a rounded head and a long neck. The incurved tail ends in two triangular cuticular lobes. The mouth is simple and small, and the alimentary canal shows no differentiation into oesophagus or intestine. The anus opens upon a papilla 0.145 millimetre in front of the tip of the tail. The uterus is double, and, when full of eggs and embryos in various stages of development, nearly fills the body. The vulva is 0.6 millimetre behind the anterior extremity.

Life-History.—The egg undergoes its development in the uterus, and the microfilaria escapes from its egg membrane and appears in the peripheral circulation without a sheath, and, consequently, can move about on a slide. It measures 190 to 210 μ in length and 4.5 to 5 μ in breadth. It is covered with a finely striated cuticle,

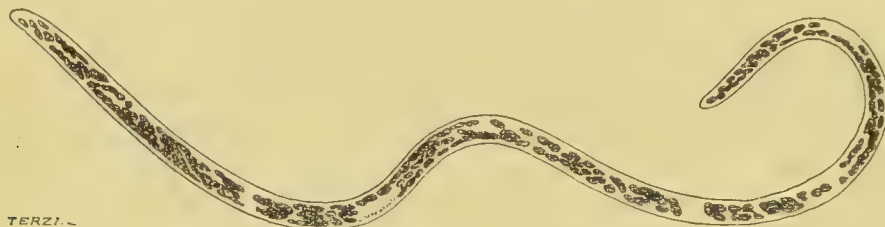


FIG. 201.—EMBRYO OF ACANTHOCHEILONEMA PERSTANS MANSON.

and has a retractile spine, situated (apparently) upon a papilla at the anterior end of the body. The posterior two-thirds of the body tapers to the tip of the tail, which is abruptly rounded off.

It does not appear to have the central viscus seen in microfilaria of *F. bancrofti*. In stained specimens there is an area free from nuclei anteriorly, a transverse break at 34 μ , a V-spot at 49 μ , and the tail-spot at 125 μ .

A short type, measuring 90 to 100 μ , has been noted. There is no periodicity in its appearance in the peripheral blood. It never occurs in large numbers, but it is always there day and night.

Many attempts have been made to trace its life-history. Its larvæ have been found in the thorax in *Panoplites (africanus?)*, *Stegomyia fasciata*, and *Tæniorhynchus fuscopennatus*. It will not develop in a large number of blood-suckers—e.g., species of *Anopheles*, *Culex*, *Pulex*, *Pediculus*, and *Uranotænia*. Wellman and Feldham claim to have found its development in a tick (*Ornithodoros moubata*), at first suggested by Christy.

It is to be noted that it only occurs in areas covered with dense forest and possessing swamps, which indicates that the host probably requires shade in the day and water to lay its eggs in.

Pathogenicity.—Nil.

Dirofilaria Railliet and Henry 1911.

Filariidæ with very long filiform body, with a striated cuticle unprovided with bosses, mouth unarmed, with six cephalic papillæ. Males with a spiral tail. Female with vulva in anterior hundredth of body. Viviparous.

Type.—*Dirofilaria immitis* Leidy 1856.

Dirofilaria magalhæsi Blanchard 1895.

Synonym.—*F. bancrofti* Magalhæs 1892, *nec* Cobbold 1877.

In 1887 Magalhæs described male and female forms of a *Filaria* found by Figueira de Saboia in the left ventricle of the heart of a child in Rio de Janeiro.

For a time it was mistaken for *F. bancrofti*, but in 1894 Manson pointed out that it was a different species, and in 1895 Blanchard gave it the present name.

Morphology.—The worms were white, opalescent, and transversely striated, the head club-shaped and simple, mouth terminal, œsophagus with a bulb, and there was a rounded tail. The male measured 83 millimetres in length and 0.28 to 0.4 millimetre in breadth, and possessed a rounded tail, with a cloaca 0.11 millimetre from its tip, with two spicules and four pre-anal and three post-anal pairs of papillæ.

The female was 155 millimetres in length and 0.6 to 0.8 millimetre in breadth, with a vulval opening 2.56 millimetres behind the mouth, and an anal opening 0.13 millimetre in front of the tip of the tail.

Life-History and Pathogenicity.—Unknown.

Dirofilaria immitis Leidy 1856.

This worm lives in the right heart and in the veins of the dog, and also of the wolf and the fox, in Europe and tropical regions. It is very common in China and Japan.

Bowlby is commonly reported to have found it in the portal vein, kidneys, bladder, ureters, and lungs of an Arab, and also in a rectal tumour in a youth, but this is quite erroneous, as he never made any such statement, for the eggs in the bladder and rectum, and the parasites in the portal vein of the Arab, were *Schistosoma hæmatobium*, as he carefully reported, never mentioning *D. immitis*. Braun, however, seems to think it possible that this worm may occur in man.

Morphology.—The worm is long, measuring 12 to 18 centimetres by 0.7 to 0.9 millimetre in the male and 25 to 30 centimetres by 1.0 to 1.3 millimetres in the female, and filiform, with a smooth rounded cuticle and a rounded anterior extremity, on which is situated the terminal mouth with six small papillæ. The anus is subterminal, and the posterior extremity pointed.

The male has a twisted tail with a cuticular fold on each side, and four pre-anal and post-anal papillæ. In the female the vulva is 7 millimetres from the anterior extremity. Viviparous.

Life-History.—The young larvæ, 285 to 295 μ by 5 μ , are not enclosed in an egg-case, and have a tapering posterior extremity. They appear in the peripheral blood particularly at night, when they may enter a mosquito if it bites the dog.

They enter the Malpighian tubules or their epithelial cells, where they moult and grow, eventually passing via the body cavity to the labium.

They escape through Dutton's membrane into the wound formed when the mosquito bites, and so enter the dog.

Loa Stiles 1905.

Filariidæ with bosses on the cuticle and with large caudal papillæ.

Species.—*Loa loa* Guiyot 1778.

Loa loa Guiyot 1778.

Synonyms.—*Filaria oculi* Gervais and van Beneden 1859, *Dracunculus oculi* Diesing 1860, *D. loa* Cobbold 1864, *F. subconjunctivalis* Guyon 1864

The larval names are :—*F. sanguinis hominis var. major* Manson 1891, *F. diurna* Manson 1891.

History.—That a *Filaria* occurred in the eye appears to have been known since the end of the sixteenth century in Europe, and prob-

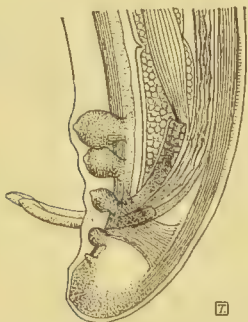


FIG. 202.—*LOA LOA* COBBOLD.
POSTERIOR EXTREMITY OF THE
MALE.

(After Looss.)



FIG. 203.—*LOA LOA* COBBOLD.
POSTERIOR EXTREMITY OF THE
FEMALE.

(After Looss.)

ably in Africa, especially in Angola, where it was called 'loa.' That knowledge must have been very ancient. Mongin in 1770 appears to have been the first person to record the presence of a worm in the eye. Guiyot, in 1778 and 1805, thought it was a *Strongylus*, and used the term 'loa' for the first time in European literature. In 1891 Manson found a microfilaria in the blood of several negroes from the Congo which differed from those already described, and which he named *Filaria diurna*, and further suggested that it might be the larva of *L. loa*. Since then this hypothesis has been proved to be correct by the observations of Penel, Prout, Henly, Brumpton, Wurtz, and Kerr. *L. loa* and *Microfilaria diurna* are, therefore, simply different stages in the life-history of the same parasite.

L. loa is a parasite of the superficial connective tissue—the

conjunctiva, the subcutaneous fat, and the superficial aponeuroses in all parts of the body. It probably only occurs in man, for its alleged existence in sheep and goats in the Cameroons requires further investigation. Its endemic area is on the West Coast of Africa, from Sierra Leone to Benguela, being most common in Old Calabar, the Cameroons, and the Ogomé River. It is, however, by no means confined to the coast, for it is known to penetrate at least 600 miles into the interior of Africa.

The cases reported from India must refer to *H. equi*, and the cases from the West Indies and South America appear to have all been imported from the West Coast of Africa.

The parasite appears to have never become endemic outside a given area, which means that the animal by which it is spread has a restricted geographical range.

Morphology.—The male is a thin, white, almost transparent worm, with a body tapering to each extremity, and measuring 25 to 34 millimetres in length and 0.273 to 0.430 millimetre in breadth. The head is like a truncated cone; the neck is but feebly indicated. The tail, more or less incurved, has a rounded tip, from which the anus is distant 74 to 82 μ . There are three pairs of well-marked pre-anal and two pairs of post-anal papillæ, with sometimes a little tubercle on each side of the middle line far posteriorly.

The spicules are two in number and unequal, and are usually stated to differ but little in length. Penel says that the larger is traversed by a fine canal, opening laterally a little distance from the free extremity.

The cuticle consists of a superficial, thin, translucent layer and a deeper perpendicularly striated layer. Scattered over this cuticle there are rounded thickenings, or bosses, the smaller being 9 to 11 μ and the larger 14 to 16 μ in height. The thickness at the posterior extremity is variable, as also is the constriction corresponding to the neck. The viscera are enclosed in a cylindrical musculo-cutaneous tube. The mouth is terminal, small, unarmed, and surrounded by a powerful muscular cone; the œsophagus is short, and without a bulb; the intestine opens via the rectum at the anus, near the posterior extremity. The excretory pore is 0.65 millimetre from the anterior end of the body.

The genital apparatus consists of a tubular testis and vas deferens, filled with spherical spermatozoa, which terminates in a vesicula seminalis situate in the neighbourhood of the bases of the spicules.

The female is larger and thicker than the male, measuring in the fresh condition 44 to 63 millimetres (may be from 32 to 57 millimetres in different conditions of preservation) in length, and from 0.38 to 0.49 millimetre in thickness. The cuticle and anterior extremity resemble those of the male.

The genital system consists of a vulva situated on a little elevation 23 μ in height, and distant some 2.5 millimetres from the anterior extremity. This vulva leads into a thick-walled canal—

the vagina—from which the two uterine tubes full of embryos and eggs diverge, and end in the ovaries.

Life-History.—The life-history, unfortunately, is not well known. The unsegmented egg, starting in the uterus with a length of $32\ \mu$ and a breadth of $17\ \mu$, grows into 40 by $25\ \mu$ in the morula stage, and 50 by $25\ \mu$ in the stage when a twisted and rolled-up embryo can be seen. It now approaches the vulva, and the embryo unrolls and elongates itself inside the egg membrane, which is now considerably lengthened, measuring 250 to $260\ \mu$ in length by 5.5 to $6.6\ \mu$ in breadth. The embryo now escapes from the mother, and passes via the lymph-stream into the blood, where it is known as *microfilaria diurna*, and is noticed to have increased somewhat in size, which Penel considers is due to imbibition of fluid by osmosis, and now measures 298 by $7.5\ \mu$. It will be noted, however, that it does not quite fill up its sheath, which is generally empty in front and behind for a short space. These embryos are only to be found in the peripheral blood during the day, and not at night, but they



FIG. 204.—EMBRYO OF *LOA LOA* GUIYOT.

have no relation to sleep in the host like *M. bancrofti*, as they are unaffected by altering the habits of the host, and making him sleep in the day and work at night. When examined under the microscope, they can be seen in irregular curves, which are different from the graceful curves of *M. bancrofti*. The anterior V-spot can be seen, and probably opens at the apex to the exterior, as Penel has observed that the stain penetrated easily at that spot; probably there is also an opening at the tail-spot. In stained specimens the first $8\ \mu$ is clear, without nuclei; at $62\ \mu$ the column of nuclei is broken by an irregular transverse spot; at $99\ \mu$ by a triangular spot; at $253\ \mu$ by a large and at $267\ \mu$ by a small spot. The last nuclei are arranged in single file. One noticeable thing about these embryos is the scarcity with which they are met with in the peripheral blood as compared with those of *F. bancrofti*. No explanation of this is forthcoming at present.

It has been thought by Manson that the further stages of the life-history will be found in a mango-fly (*Chrysops dimidiatus*), and this has recently been shown to be the case by Leiper.

After entering the human body, it would appear probable that the worm takes some three to four years to reach maturity, and that it is long-lived—i.e., fifteen or more years. The reason for

believing this is the fact that immature forms may be noted in children and the fully grown worm found in the adult. When the worm dies, it may become cretified.

TABLE SHOWING THE DIFFERENCES BETWEEN THE EMBRYOS OF *FILARIA BANCROFTI* AND *LOA LOA*. (MODIFIED FROM DR. G. C. LOW.)

	<i>Filaria bancrofti</i> Embryos.	<i>Loa loa</i> Embryos.
Average length ..	0·317 millimetre	0·245 millimetre
Average breadth ..	0·0084-0·0075 millimetre	0·0075-0·0070 millimetre
Break in cells from head	0·050 millimetre	0·042 millimetre
V spot from head ..	0·090 millimetre	0·060 millimetre
Eggs (average) ..	0·050 × 0·033 millimetre	0·042 × 0·033 millimetre
Character of curves in dried specimens on slides	Spiral coils	In wavy lines
Periodicity	In blood at night (or in equal numbers in blood by day and night, Fiji, etc.)	In blood by day
Periodicity when habits of sleeping and waking changed	Inverted	No change

Pathogenicity.—It may be noted under the skin of the finger, the back, the breast, the penis, the eyelid, under the conjunctiva, the mucosa of the tongue. It moves quickly, and may cause itching, creeping sensations, so-called Calabar swellings, irritation of the eyes and of the glottis (see Chapter LX.).

Hamularia Treutzler 1793.

Synonym.—*Tentacularia* Zeder 1800, *nec* Bosc 1797.

Filariidæ with chitinous ring and papillæ around the mouth.

Hamularia equi Gmelin 1789.

Synonyms.—*Gordius equinus* Abbild 1789, *Filaria equi* Gmelin 1789, *Hamularia lymphatica* Treutzler, *Tentacularia subcompressa* Zeder 1800, *Filaria papillosa* Rudolphi 1802, *F. hominis bronchialis* Rudolphi 1829, *E. hominis* Diesing 1851, *Strongylus bronchialis* Cobbold 1879.

History.—*Hamularia* is frequently found in horses and asses, generally in the abdominal cavity, but also in the liver, female genitalia, and cranium.

It is doubtful whether the immature *Filaria*, so commonly met with in horses' eyes in India and Ceylon, belong to this species. It was first found in human beings by Treutzler in an enlarged bronchial lymphatic gland. Other cases have been noticed by Blanchard, Brera, and von Linstow.

Morphology.—Whitish filiform body pointed posteriorly. Cuticle with delicate transverse striata, and mouth small, round, with chitinous ring and two lips, and papilliform processes dorsally and ventrally, and two submedian papillæ.

Male 6 to 8 centimetres in length, with posterior extremity spiral, with four pre-anal and four post-anal papillæ, and two unequal spicules.

Female 9 to 12 centimetres.

Pathogenicity.—Nil.

SUBFAMILY ONCHOCERCINÆ Leiper 1911.

Onchocerca Diesing 1841.

Synonym.—*Oncocerca* Creplin 1846.

Filariidæ with thick cuticle possessing spiroid thickenings. Male with always four pre-anal papillæ; female very long with vulva situated anteriorly. Viviparous. Name derived from ὄγκος ('a hook') and κέρκος ('a tail').

Species.—*Onchocerca volvulus* Leuckart 1893.

Other species are common in cattle—e.g., *O. gibsoni* Cleland and Johnston 1910 in Australia, *O. gutturosa* Neumann 1910 in Algeria and Tunis. They cause onchocerciasis. Cleland and Johnston suspect that *O. gibsoni* is spread by lice, especially *Hæmatopinus vituli*. They report finding a Protozoal parasite somewhat like a Herpetomonas or a Crithidia in *O. gibsoni*.

Onchocerca volvulus Leuckart 1893.

This worm was discovered by a German medical missionary in two tumours on the scalp and chest of negroes in the Gold Coast Colony, West Africa. Labadie, Lagrave, and Deguy found another specimen in a small swelling in the arm of a soldier from Dahomey. Prout next described two cases in Sierra Leone, and Brumpt a number of cases in his tour in West Africa, and recently Fülleborn has thoroughly studied the condition produced by the worm in man.

It is found in Sierra Leone, Gold Coast, and Dahomey; but on the Welle, between Dongon and M'Bini, it is said to occur in 5 per cent., and on the Itumburi, between Bonta and Idembo, in 1 per cent. of the population. It has not been recorded as far south as the Congo.

Morphology.—The male worm has a white filiform body, slightly attenuated at the ends, covered with a transversely striated cuticle, measuring 30 to 35 millimetres in length and 0.14 millimetre in breadth.

The head is rounded, the mouth unarmed, the alimentary canal straight and undifferentiated, the anus subterminal 0.049 millimetre in front of the posterior end. Other canals are reported, which probably belong to the generative and excretory systems.

The tail is strongly recurved, and somewhat flattened on its concave aspect. Brumpt reports three pairs of papillæ on each side of the anus and three pairs of post-anal papillæ. There are two unequal spicules, the larger 177 μ and the smaller 82 μ in length.

The female is longer and thicker than the male, measuring 60 to 70 millimetres in length and 0.36 millimetre in breadth. The

cuticular striations are ring-like and well marked. The tail is recurved. The uterus is seen full of eggs and larvæ, and the vulva is 0.76 millimetre from the anterior end.

Life-History.—The worm is said to lie in a lymphatic, which becomes inflamed, and a perilymphangitis causes a condensation of connective tissue, in which males and females are embedded, leaving the posterior end of the male and the anterior end of the female free in the lymph space. The embryos pass out of the uterus into this space, where they can be found 250 to 300 μ in length, and 5 to 6 μ in breadth, with a rounded head and a body which tapers during the last fifth, and terminates in a pointed tail. There is no sheath. The anterior V-spot is clearly seen. The microfilaria have

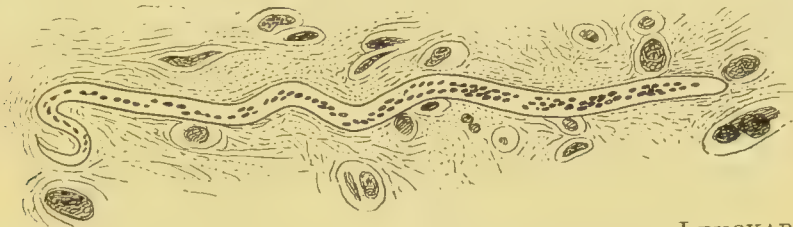


FIG. 205.—MICROFILARIA OF ONCHOCERCA VOLVULUS LEUCKART.
(After Fülleborn.)

not been seen in the blood, and their further development is quite unknown.

Brumpt is inclined to think that they will be found in the blood, and that the further development will be in a tsetse-fly. The adults live for years in the human body.

Pathogenicity.—Lymphangitis, perilymphangitis, sometimes acute and with fever, and resulting in small tumours, are their pathological signs.

FAMILY 7. DRACUNCULIDÆ Leiper 1912.

Dracunculus Kniphoff 1759.

Filariidæ with small males and long females. In the latter the vulva is absent in the gravid condition.

Dracunculus medinensis (Linnæus 1758).

Synonyms.—*Dracunculus veterum* Velsch 1674, *Vena medinensis* Velsch 1674, *Dracunculus persarum* Kämpfer 1691, *Gordius medinensis* Linnæus 1758, *Filaria dracunculus* Bremser 1819, *F. æthiopica* Valenciennes 1856, *Dracunculus medinensis* Cobbold 1864.

Dracunculus medinensis, commonly called the guinea-worm, the dracunculus, Beinwurm, Brachwasserwurm, tankworm, or dragonneau, is endemic in tropical Africa, India, Persia, Turkestan, Arabia, and some places in South America, to which it was imported from Africa.

It has been known since the most remote periods, and it was probably the fiery serpent mentioned by Moses, who apparently

knew the method of twisting the worm out on a stick, as he appears to have made a model of this method of extraction. Galen called the disease caused by these worms dracontiasis.

The anatomy of the worm was carefully studied by Bastian in 1863, and the infection of *Cyclops* with the larva was observed by Fedschenko in 1870, and confirmed later by Manson. Charles found a calcified guinea-worm in 1892, which he described as the male.

Leiper, 1907, has repeated these experiments, and has further proved that when monkeys are fed on infected *Cyclops* the males and females can be found. Wenyon has confirmed Leiper's experiments.

Morphology.—The female is a long white filiform worm 50 to 80 millimetres in length and 0.5 to 1.7 millimetres in diameter.

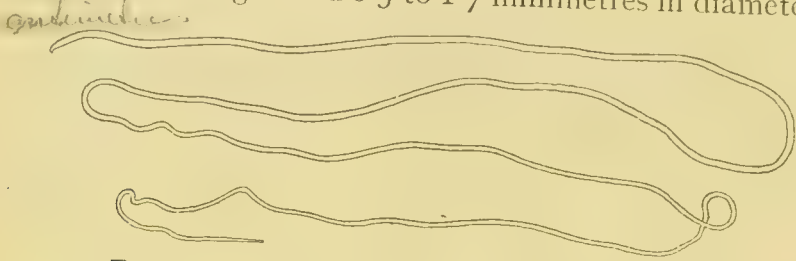


FIG. 206.—*DRACUNCULUS MEDINENSIS* LINNÆUS.

The anterior end is bluntly rounded, and carries the small terminal mouth, which has two lips and two lateral and four submedian papillæ. It leads into a straight alimentary canal, which atrophies considerably in the fully developed condition. The large uterus, which occupies the whole length of the body when filled with embryos, evacuates its contents by a rupture close to the mouth and just external to the papillæ. The tail is rounded off, and carries a small bent chitinous hook.

Leiper states that the male is only 22 millimetres in length, and has five pairs of papillæ.

Life-History.—The males and females live in the connective tissue about the mesentery, and after copulation probably the males die off. When the female is gravid, she moves, head first, apparently in search of water, usually downwards towards the leg or foot; more rarely she moves to the hand or arm, and very rarely to the head. Arrived under the epidermis, she bores her way through the deep layers, while a little bulla on the surface marks her presence.

When this bulla bursts, a small hole is seen, at the bottom of which lies the vulva, through which the tube of the uterus has prolapsed, bending the head to one side. Clear fluid can be seen escaping from this tube, which, when examined, is found to be full of embryos.

The segmentation of the egg takes place in the uterus, and the embryos are born alive. They are flat, pointed little bodies,

0.6 millimetre in length and $17.5\ \mu$ in breadth, with a narrow, very pointed tail. The mouth is at the anterior end, and leads into an alimentary canal with an anus. There is a little sac on each side of the root of the tail. These little larvæ swim about vigorously, and either die or enter a *Cyclops* passing into the cœlom, where they develop for four weeks. Leiper describes the first ecdysis as taking place about the seventh to ninth day, and the second between the tenth and eleventh day, after which progressive histological changes occur. After the fourth week no further change takes place, though they can live for forty-one days in the *Cyclops*. When placed in 0.22 per cent. solution of hydrochloric acid, the *Cyclops* is promptly killed, while the larva appears to be stimulated, undergoing ecdysis, and escaping from the *Cyclops* by boring its way through the chitinous cuticle. In a monkey fed with infected *Cyclops*, three females and two males were found. It is, therefore, correct to assume that man is infected by ingesting infected *Cyclops*

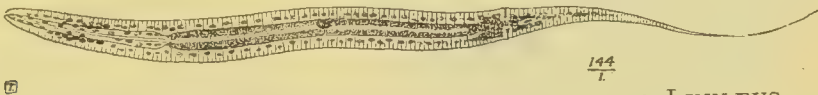


FIG. 207.—LARVA OF *DRACUNCULUS MEDINENSIS* LINNÆUS.
(After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten'.)

with his drinking-water, and it is probable that, set free in the stomach, the larvæ enter the connective tissue by boring their way through the stomach-wall.

Pathogenicity.—The worm causes dracontiasis (see Chapter LX.).

FAMILY 8. MERMITHIDÆ.

Nematoda with a diagonal fibre system in the cuticle, without anus, and with six mouth papillæ.

The male has two spicules and three rows of numerous papillæ.

Genus.—*Mermis* Dujardin.

Mermis Dujardin 1845.

Mermithidæ possessing the characters of the family.

Subgenus (*Agamomermis*) Stiles 1903.

A purely collective group, which contains forms sexually immature and not capable of being definitely placed.

(*Agamomermis*) *restiformis* Leidy 1880.

Synonym.—*Filaria restiformis* Leidy 1880.

In 1880 Leidy received from Woodward a worm which was supposed to have come from the urethra of a man living in America. Stiles has re-examined this specimen, and concludes that it is an *Agamomermis*.

The cuticle is 32 to $48\ \mu$ thick, with a diagonal fibre system. The head end is attenuated, and possesses a very small terminal mouth without lips, behind which are six papillæ. The excretory pore (?) is 0.442 millimetre behind the mouth. The pharynx is straight, and opens into the cylindrical intestine, which is a dark cæcal structure; but there is no anus and no caudal papillæ. The tail is curved ventrally and bluntly rounded.

On one side of the œsophagus there is a blind sac, which probably represents the fat body.

Filaria (?) *hominis oris* Leidy 1850.—Perhaps this worm ought to be classified here instead of under *Filaria*.

FAMILY 9. ASCARIDÆ.

Nemathelminthes with three oral papillæ, one dorsal and two ventral; œsophagus with a bulb. Male with one or two spicules; female with two ovaries.

Genera.—*Ascaris*, *Toxascaris*, *Belascaris*, and *Lagochilascaris*.

Ascaris Linnæus 1758.

Ascaridæ in which the oral cavity is surrounded by three large papillæ, one placed dorsally and two ventrally. Male with two equal spicules and numerous pre-anal and post-anal papillæ. Vulva in front of the middle of the body.

Species.—*Ascaris lumbricoides*, *A. texana*, *A. maritima*.

Ascaris lumbricoides Linnæus 1758.

This is one of the most common parasites in the tropics. It is, however, possible that other species escape recognition by being casually considered to be *Ascaris lumbricoides*. It is usually met

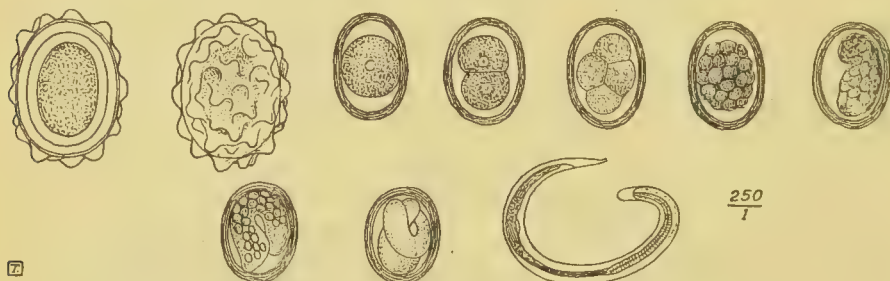


FIG. 208.—DEVELOPMENT OF *ASCARIS LUMBRICOIDES*.

(After Stiles.)

with in the small bowel, but may be found post mortem in the stomach, œsophagus, mouth, nose, larynx, trachea, or bronchi. It may also be found escaping from the anus. More rarely it has been seen in the liver, causing abscesses, in the pancreatic duct, and in the vermiform appendix, and in worm abscesses in the body-wall. Usually it gives rise to no symptoms, but at times, when in large numbers, it may cause pathological effects.

Morphology.—It is yellowish in colour, with often a faint trace of a reddish tinge. In form it is spindle-shaped. Male is 15 to 25 centimetres in length and 3 millimetres in diameter. The posterior extremity is conical, and bent ventrally, with two spicules 2 millimetres in length, and broader at the tips. On each side of the cloaca there are seventy to seventy-five papillæ, of which seven pairs are post-anal. Female is 20 to 40 centimetres in length by

5 millimetres in breadth. The vulva is at the junction of the anterior and middle thirds of the body.

Life-History.—The eggs are laid in the small intestine, and appear unsegmented in the faeces. They measure 50 to 70 μ in length by 40 to 50 μ in breadth, surrounded by a thick transparent shell, which has an externally irregular coating of albumin, which is stained brownish-yellow by the stercobilin of the faeces. These eggs can stand alteration in temperature and moisture. In warm, moist earth the embryo appears in about a month in the form of a spiral roll, but does not hatch until it reaches the interior of man, when it develops into an adult, as was shown by the experiments of Davaine, Grassi, Calandruccio, Lütz, and Epstein.

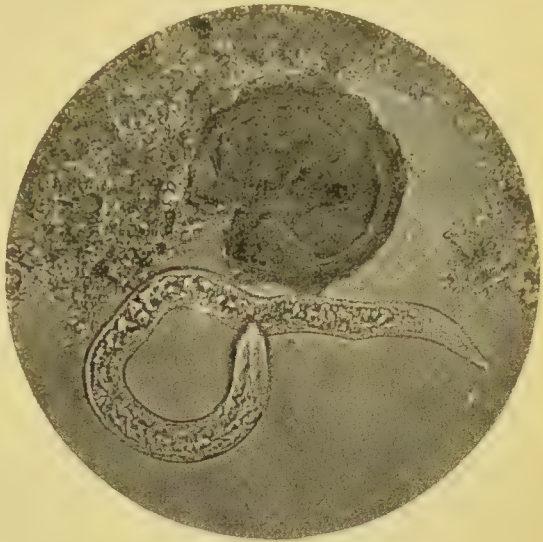


FIG. 209.—*ASCARIS LUMBRICOIDES* NEWLY HATCHED.

(Microphotograph by J. J. Bell.)

Leuckart and von Linstow had believed that an intermediate host was necessary, but this appears from the above experiments to be erroneous.

The eggs infect human beings through polluted vegetables, fruits, water, or hands soiled with dirt.

Stiles found that the house-fly could carry the egg, which passed through its alimentary canal unaltered. The worm matures, and deposits ova in one month from entering the body.

Pathogenicity.—It is only pathogenic in large numbers, or when it invades the liver, causing abscess, or the appendix, causing appendicitis.

Ascaris (?) *maritima* Leuckart 1876.

An immature worm, possibly accidentally swallowed in food, was vomited by a child in North Greenland in 1865, and was supposed to be an immature female *Ascaris*.

Ascaris (?) *texana* Smith and Goethe 1904.

Stiles appears very doubtful as to whether this worm is an *Ascaris*. The female only is known, measuring 58 to 60 millimetres in length. Uterine eggs 60 by 40 μ . It was found in a man in Texas.

Toxascaris Leiper 1907.

Ascaridæ with the anterior end of the body bent dorsally, cuticle finely striated, œsophagus simple, without a bulbous portion. Palpi of lips club-shaped. Male with a tapering, acicular tail, and without ventral protuberance behind anus. Six pairs of post-anal papillæ in two groups, the ventral pairs continuous, with a pre-anal row on each side of the body, and three lateral pairs on the outer aspect of the tail. Testis lies in the anterior part of the posterior half of the body. Seminal vesicle long and tubular. Ejaculatory duct short. Female with vulva about the centre of the body. Egg oval and smooth.

Of the species belonging to this genus, only one, *Toxascaris canis* Werner 1782, is known in man.

Toxascaris canis Werner 1782.

Synonyms.—*Lumbricus canis* Werner 1782, *Ascaris canis* Gmelin 1789, *A. marginata* Rudolphi 1802.

Toxascaris canis is the common *Ascaris* of dogs, which used to be called *A. canis*, but recently Leiper, when examining a number of specimens of *A. lumbricoides* in Egypt, found among them several smaller and apparently younger forms. On examining these he found that they had winged expansions on either side of the head, which indicated that they were not *A. lumbricoides*. On further examination they proved to be the same species as that found in dogs, but differed from that found in cats. Up to that time *A. canis* in the dog and *A. mystax* in the cat were supposed to be identical. Finally, on careful anatomical examination, it was found that the two not merely differed considerably from one another, but also from *A. lumbricoides*. He therefore formed two new genera—*Toxascaris* and *Belascaris*. *Toxascaris* has only been recorded once, so far, in man.

Morphology.—Body white or reddish, head curved dorsally, with two membranous lateral expansions, broader behind than in front. Male 5 to 10 centimetres in length, with curved tail, possessing two small lateral membranous wings and twenty-six papillæ. Female 9 to 12 centimetres in length, with an obtuse tail. Eggs 75 to 80 μ in diameter.

Life-History.—Development is believed to be direct.

Pathogenicity.—It often causes intestinal and nerve symptoms in dogs. Post mortem the mucosa of the intestine is tumefied and catarrhal.

Belascaris Leiper 1907.

Ascaridæ with the anterior end of the body bent ventrally, cuticle coarsely striated, œsophagus with a distinct bulbous portion. Male with a probular tail—*i.e.*, like a closed fist, with forefinger semi-extended. Immediately behind the anus there is a protuberance, with a pair of papillæ. On the tail there are two ventral and two

lateral pairs of papillæ, the tips of which support a slight expansion of the cuticle. The testis is situate in the anterior half of the body. The vesicula seminalis is remarkably long, and there is a short ejaculatory duct. Female with vulva situated in the anterior part of the body. Egg with a corrugated shell.

Type.—*Belascaris mystax* Zeder 1800.

***Belascaris mystax* Zeder 1800.**

Synonyms.—*Fusaria mystax* Zeder 1800, *Ascaris alata* Bellingham 1839.

This *Ascaris* is found in cats, and has been recorded nine times in man.

Morphology.—Head curved ventrally, with two membranous lateral expansions. Male 4 to 6 centimetres in length; female 4 to 10 centimetres in length.

Pathogenicity.—It rarely causes any symptoms.

***Lagocheilascaris* Leiper 1909.**

Ascaridæ with dense cuticular lips and interlabia surrounded by a ridge, and furrow separating the lips from the rest of the body. Œsophagus simple. Shallow ledge-like cuticular alæ extend along either side of the body to near the tail. Eggs mosaic.

Type Species.—*Lagocheilascaris major* Leiper 1909, in the lion.

***Lagocheilascaris minor* Leiper 1909.**

This species has been found in the pus of subcutaneous abscess in man in Trinidad.

Morphology.—Males 9 millimetres in length by 0.5 millimetres in breadth, with bent posterior part of body. Female 15 millimetres in length, straight posteriorly. The vulva, with two projecting lips, opens 6 millimetres from the anterior end.

Hosts.—Man and possibly one of the Carnivora.

Habitat.—Probably intestinal. The specimens were found in abscesses under the skin.

FAMILY 10. OXYURIDÆ DUJARDIN.

***Oxyuris* Rudolphi 1803.**

Nematoda in which the three labial papillæ are not very distinct. Œsophagus long, with a distinct dilatation. Male with curved posterior end, one spicule, and two pairs of pre-anal papillæ. Female with straight posterior end, which tapers to a point. Vulva in the anterior end of the body.

Type.—*Oxyuris vermicularis* Linnæus 1767.

***Oxyuris vermicularis* Linnæus 1767.**

Synonyms.—*Ascaris vermicularis* Linnæus 1767, *Fusaria vermicularis* Zeder 1803.

Oxyuris vermicularis is the pin or thread worm, and occurs, as far as is known, only in man and all over the world. It is believed to live in the lower part of the small intestine at first, and then the gravid females travel to the large bowel. It has been known from the earliest times.

Morphology.—It is a minute white round worm, with transversally striated cuticle, which forms two ridges along the ventral and dorsal surfaces corresponding to the lateral ridges.

Male is 3 to 5 millimetres in length, with a spirally rolled posterior extremity, with one spicule and six papillæ. Female is 10 millimetres in length and 0.6 millimetre in breadth, with a long pointed tail.

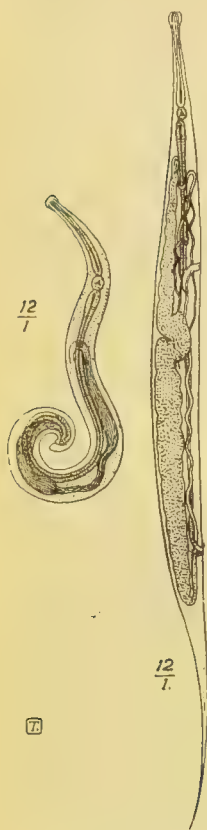


FIG. 210.—*OXYURIS VERMICULARIS*.

The male is to the left, the female to the right.

(After Claus.)

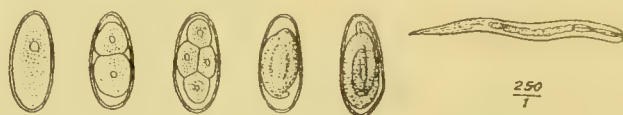


FIG. 211.—DEVELOPMENT OF *OXYURIS VERMICULARIS*.

(After Leuckart, from Stiles.)

Life-History.—The egg, when deposited from the uterus, measures 50 to 52 μ by 16 to 24 μ , with a thin shell and a fairly well-developed embryo. The dorsal surface of the egg is more convex than the ventral. These eggs escape in the fæces. They are then reintroduced into the mouth or nose by self-infection, fruits, vegetables, etc., hatch, and grow in the small intestine into males and females.

After fertilization the males die off and the females travel into the cæcum, and later into the colon, and have a great tendency to wander through the anus to the outside. The duration of life of *O. vermicularis* in the human body is not known.

Pathogenicity.—In large numbers may set up enterocolitis; in small numbers it causes only irritation.

BURSATA.

STRONGYLES LOOSS 1911.

FAMILY II. STRONGYLIDÆ COBBOLD 1864.

Nematoda with cylindroid, rarely filiform bodies, mouth usually with six oral papillæ, with or without chitinous armature, and an œsophagus more or less enlarged posteriorly. Male with a bursa copulatrix and one or two equal spicules. Female with a single or

double ovary; vulva situated anteriorly or posteriorly. As a rule, the species are small. Oviparous or ovoviviparous.

Genera.—*Triodontophorus* Looss 1901, *Æsophagostomum* Molin 1860.

***Triodontophorus* Looss 1901.**

Synonyms.—*Triodontus* Looss 1901, *nec* Westwood 1845; *Ternidens* Railliet and Henry 1909.

Strongylidæ with small, almost spherical, thick-walled oral cavity, arising from the floor of which three teeth are found, each of which consists of two surfaces joined together at an acute angle. Male bursa is finely serrated at the edge. The female genital orifice is situate a short distance in front of the tip of the tail.

Found in horses and men.

***Triodontophorus deminutus* Railliet and Henry 1905.**

Synonym.—*Ternidens deminutus* (Railliet and Henry 1905).

Railliet and Henry in 1905 discovered that a male and female parasite presented in 1865 by Monestier to the Paris Natural History Museum, and collected postmortem from an American negro who died in Mayotte, were not agchylostomes, but belonged to Looss's genus *Triodontophorus*. They named them *deminutus* because of their small size. Leiper also met with some specimens of the same species from Johannesburg; it is known in Nyassaland and Lorenço Marques. It has now been recorded in a number of cases. It is also found in monkeys.

Morphology.—To the naked eye their size and general appearance resemble those of agchylostomes. The body is white, cylindrical, tapering towards the end. Cuticle transversely striated, and forms an overhanging transverse fold across the ventral surface of the body at the level of the excretory pore.

The mouth-collar is moderately developed, with a depth of 0.04 millimetre. The anterior surface carries four small knob-like submedian papillæ, and the edge surrounds the entrance to the mouth with a double series of delicate fringes composed of cuticle. These two rows constitute the external and internal crowns of the corona radiata.

The buccal capsule is a barrel-shaped chitinous structure, capped and covered in by the mouth-collar and the corona radiata. Posteriorly it touches the dilated end of the œsophagus, whose chitinous lining expands into a funnel, uniting with the cuticle on the outside of the œsophagus, and coming near the cuticle of the buccal cavity. It shows three cuticular edges projecting into the lumen, which are continued forwards as three stout chitinous prongs or teeth, one dorsal and two ventral. The characters of these teeth are specifically important. They are formed of two plates curved longitudinally, and meet to form a keel. The œsophagus is muscular, 0.8 millimetre long, and with three fleshy valves guarding its entrance into the chyle intestine. The rectum is short, and ends in the anus, which is 0.24 millimetre from the tip of the tail. The excretory system opens on the ventral surface halfway between the posterior limit of the buccal cavity and the nerve ring.

The male is 9.5 millimetres long by 0.56 millimetre in breadth, with a spicule 0.9 millimetre long. Female is 14 to 16 millimetres in length, and 0.73 millimetre in breadth, with a tapering posterior extremity. The vulva is nearly 0.48 millimetre from the hinder end. The vagina is short, and opens into two uterine tubules. The uterine eggs are 60 to 80 μ by 40 μ , with a delicate shell and often a morula.

Life-History and Pathogenicity.—Unknown.

Æsophagostomum Molin 1860.

Strongylidæ in which the mouth is small and circular, with a chitinous ring, which carries a fold and six papillæ. There is a marked swelling just behind the anterior extremity. Male bursa with two equal spicules; female with two ovaries, and the vulva opening situate near the anus.

Species.—*Æsophagostomum apiostomum* and *Æ. stephanostomum* var. *thomasi* Railliet and Henry 1909 are known in man, but other species are found in the gorilla, chimpanzee, and other monkeys.

Æsophagostomum apiostomum Willach.

Synonym.—*Æsophagostomum brumpti* Railliet and Henry 1905.

This worm was found by Brumpt in cyst-like nodules in the cæcum and colon of a negro on the Omo River, near Rudolph's Sea in East Africa. Only the female is known. Found also in monkeys.

Morphology.—Female 8.5 to 10.2 millimetres long by 0.295 to 0.325 millimetre broad, white and cylindrical, tapering towards the posterior end. Cuticle transversely striated. There is a distension behind the oral cavity, which is formed of a cuticular band with a crown with twelve spines; on the front and inner side lamellæ; six head papillæ (two lateral, four submedian). Posterior end rounded off with three broad undulations.

Life History.—Not known.

Pathogenicity.—Forms cyst-like nodules in the large intestine.

Æsophagostomum stephanostomum var. *thomasi* Railliet and Henry 1909.

This species was found by Wolferston Thomas in tumours, numbering 187, in the large and small intestines of a man in Brazil. The tumours were in some instances large enough to diminish the lumen of the bowel. Each tumour contained a male and a female worm. The species *Æ. stephanostomum* Stossich 1904 was found in the large intestine of the gorilla, and a variety *Æ. stephanostomum* var. *dentigera* Railliet and Henry 1909 is found in the chimpanzee.

Morphology.—Body cylindrical, thick, only attenuated towards the extremities. Buccal capsule with an external crown of 38 lamellæ. Male 17 to 22 millimetres in length and 0.75 millimetre broad. Bursal thick at the sides, with one spicule 1.38 to 1.475 millimetres long. Female 16 to 20 millimetres long by 0.9 millimetre broad. Vulva in front of the anus, 0.5 to 0.525 millimetre from the posterior end.

Life-History.—Not known.

Pathogenicity.—Forms tumours in the wall of the small and large intestines.

FAMILY 12. METASTRONGYLIDÆ Leiper 1912.

This family includes a number of genera, among which are *Metastrongylus*, *Nematodirus*, and *Hæmonchus*.

Metastrongylinae Leiper 1912.

Metastrongylus Molin 1861.

Metastrongylidæ with mouth surrounded by six small papillæ. Male with a bursa copulatrix and two spicules. Female with two ovaries and a tapering posterior end; vulva situate in the hinder half of the body. Embryos without teeth, and with slightly developed œsophageal bulb.

Metastrongylus apri Gmelin 1789.

Synonyms.—*Gordius pulmonalis apri* Ebel 1777, *Ascaris apri* Gmelin 1789, *Strongylus suis* Rudolphi 1809, *S. paradoxus* Mehlis 1831, *S. elongatus* Dujardin 1845, *S. longevaginatus* Diesing 1851.

Metastrongylus apri is not uncommonly found in the bronchial tubes of pigs in Germany (60 per cent. Berlin, 15 to 52 per cent. Leipzig); occasionally it infects other animals, including man. *Filaria trachealis* Rainey 1855, found by Rainey and by Bristowe, may be infection of man with this parasite. Diesing recognized the worm in the lung of a boy aged six in Klausenberg in 1845. It is said to also occur in the intestine, but this is looked upon as accidental, as its usual habitat is the lung, where it may cause pneumonia and bronchitis.

Morphology.—Body relatively short; colour, white or brown; mouth with six lips, of which the two lateral are the largest. Male: 12 to 25 millimetres in length, with bilobed bursa with five ribs in each lobe, and thin spicules about 4 millimetres in length. Female: 20 to 40 millimetres in length, with a curved posterior end, close in front of which is the anus, while the vulva opens on a papilla just in front of this. Eggs elliptical, 50 to 100 μ by 39 to 72 μ ; when oviposited, they already contain an embryo.

Life-History.—Only the embryonic and larval development appear to have been studied. From analogy with *Agchylostoma* a skin infection would be presumed nowadays, and, further, the fact that the worms have been noted in the alimentary canal bears quite a different significance from what it did years ago, as it may be natural for the worms at times to travel from the lungs to the bowel like the *Agchylostoma*. It is interesting to note that Leuckart failed to infect sheep by feeding them with bronchial mucus full of embryos.

Pathogenicity.—This subject has recently been studied by Santiocchi, and consists essentially of bronchitis, broncho-pneumonia, and pneumonia.

Nematodirus Ransom 1907.

Metastrongylidæ with bursa provided with double ventral median ribs, two dorsal ribs, spicules long and filiform without accessory piece.

Type Species.—*Nematodirus filicollis* Rudolphi.

Nematodirus gibsoni Stephens 1909.

This worm was discovered by Bell in the fæces of a Chinaman in Hong Kong, and described by Stephens.

Morphology.—The male measures 21 millimetres by 0.4 millimetre, and possesses an attenuated head with two cervical papillæ, and a mouth with two lateral papillæ. The bursa shows two well-marked lobes, continued dorsally on to the body as a V-shaped slit. There is one pair of ventral rays and six pairs of dorsal rays—an anterior, two middle, and two posterior, which last arise from a common stem. The spicules are very long (7 millimetres) and delicate.

The female measures 25 millimetres long, and possesses a pointed tail, on which the anus opens 0.2 millimetre from the tip, while the genital pore is 0.5 millimetre from the same extremity. The uterine egg measures 110 μ by 53 μ .

Life-History.—Nothing is known as to the life-history.

Pathogenicity.—It is not stated whether it is or is not pathogenic.

Hæmonchus Cobb 1898.

Synonym.—*Hæmonchus* Stiles 1903, *Strongyles* O. F. Müller *pro parte*.

Strongylidæ with unarmed mouth. Male bursa trilobed, with median lobe asymmetrical, spicules short with an accessory piece; female with vulva situate posteriorly and protected by some tegumentary appendages.

Type Species.—*Hæmonchus contortus* Rudolphi 1803.

Hæmonchus contortus Rudolphi 1803.

This worm was found by de Magalhães in a case of anæmia supposed to be due to *Agchylostoma duodenale*, and from which the specimens were obtained by treatment with thymol, after which treatment the patient rapidly recovered.

Morphology.—Body red or white, filiform with attenuated extremities. Anterior extremity with two cervical papillæ in the form of teeth directed backwards. Cuticle finely striated. Male: 10 to 20 millimetres in length, with bursa provided with two lobes, of which the right carries an asymmetrical median lobe. The two spicules measure 0.3 to 0.5 millimetre in length, and are each furnished with an accessory portion. Female: 20 to 30 millimetres in length with caudal extremity pointed. Vulva situated in the posterior fifth of the body. Eggs are ellipsoidal, 70 to 95 μ long by 43 to 54 μ broad.

Life-History.—The rhabdite embryos quickly leave the eggs when placed in pure or muddy water; in the latter they undergo ecdyses. The infection, which is believed to be direct, is said to be easily acquired.

Habitat.—The intestine of the goat, sheep, etc.

Pathogenicity.—Produces anæmia resembling that of agchylostomiasis, and has a hæmolytic toxin.

FAMILY 13. TRICHOSTRONGYLIDÆ Leiper 1912.

Trichostrongylus Looss 1905.

Trichostrongylidæ with body tapering gradually from the genital opening anteriorly. Head with three small lips and blunt or pointed papillæ, without cuticular protuberances or neck papillæ. Cuticle transversely striated; œsophagus long. Male with the bursa closed round by large side-flaps, without evident median folds; spicules spoon-like, with a boat-shaped accessory piece. Female with the genital opening in the posterior half of the body. Tail short, with two small papillæ near the tip. Egg thin-shelled.

Type Species.—*Trichostrongylus retortæformis* Zeder.

Three species of interest in tropical pathology: *Trichostrongylus colubriformis*, *T. probolurus*, and *T. vitrinus*.

Trichostrongylus colubriformis Giles 1892.

Synonyms.—*Strongyles colubriformis* Giles 1892, *S. instabilis* Railliet 1893. *S. subtilis* Looss 1895.

This species was found by Looss in post-mortems on fellahs in Alexandria and Cairo, and also by Ijima in a woman in Japan. In man, however, it is only an accidental parasite, being usually found in the duodenum, rarely in the stomach, of sheep, antelopes, dromedaries in Egypt, monkeys in North America, and sheep in India.

Morphology.—Male 4 to 5 millimetres in length, and 0.08 millimetre in thickness just in front of the bursa. Spicule 135 to 145 μ in length, and the accessory portion 70 μ in length, with a long muscular œsophagus. Bursa with two lateral semicircular wings connected by a cross-bridge. Ribs arranged asymmetrically. Female 5 to 6 millimetres in length, and about 0.09 millimetre in breadth. Posterior extremity tapers to a pointed tail, in front of which the anus is situated, 0.055 to 0.07 millimetre, and the vulva 1.05 to 1.2 millimetres. Eggs 72 to 80 μ by 40 to 43 μ ; when oviposited, generally contain eight to twelve celled embryo.

Life-History.—Resembles that of *Agchylostoma duodenale* outside the body, according to Leiper.

Pathogenicity.—Believed to be unimportant.

Trichostrongylus probolurus Railliet 1896.

Synonym.—*Strongylus probolurus* Railliet 1896.

This parasite lives in the duodenum of sheep, antelopes, and dromedaries in Egypt, and has also been found in man in Egypt.

Morphology.—Male 4.5 to 5.5 millimetres in length, 0.08 millimetre in breadth just in front of the bursa. Spicule 126 to 134 μ , accessory piece 75 to 80 μ in length.

Female 4.5 to 6 millimetres in length, anus 0.04 to 0.05 millimetre, and vulva 1.08 to 1.25 millimetres in front of the tip of the tail, which is short. Egg 76 to 80 μ by 43 to 46 μ .

Life-History.—This is unknown.

Pathogenicity.—Believed to be unimportant.

Trichostrongylus vitrinus Looss 1905.

T. vitrinus is found in the duodenum of sheep and dromedaries, and also in man in Egypt.

Male 4 to 5.5 millimetres in length by 0.085 millimetre in breadth in front of the bursa, which is larger than in the other two species. Spicule 160 to 170 μ , accessory piece 85 to 95 μ in length.

Female 5 to 6.5 millimetres long; vulva 1.15 to 1.25 millimetres in front of the tip of the tail; egg 84 to 90 μ by 46 to 50 μ .

Life-History.—This is not known.

Pathogenicity.—Believed to be unimportant.

FAMILY 14. AGCHYLOSTOMIDÆ LOOSS 1911.

Strongyles with armed mouth and bursa copulatrix provided with ribs.

Subfamilies.—Agchylostominæ and Bunostominæ.

SUBFAMILY AGCHYLOSTOMINÆ LOOSS 1911.

Agchylostomidæ with more or less funnel-shaped mouth capsule, its walls on the ventral side, and, especially towards the anterior edge, provided on each side with two longitudinal thickenings projecting outwards like ridges. In the gutter-like depressions between the ridges lie the terminations of the dorsal and lateral papillary nerves. Floor of the mouth cavity with one pair of inner ventral teeth, otherwise free from tooth-like structures. Aperture of the dorsal œsophageal gland situated in the wall of the mouth capsule. Bursa of the male closed all round. Only one-third of the dorsal ray is cleft. The course of the genital tubes is longitudinal.

Type Genus.—*Agchylostoma* Dubini 1843. Other genus: *Uncinaria* Frölich 1789.

***Agchylostoma* Dubini 1843.**

Synonyms.—*Ancylostoma* Dubini 1843, *Dochmius* Dujardin 1845 *pro parte*.

Agchylostominæ with the head end, where the mouth is situated, abruptly truncated. Mouth large, round, with its ventral margin armed with two pairs of strong hook-like teeth, the points of which are bent backwards, while the bases are continuous posteriorly with longitudinal rib-like thickenings of the external surface of the capsule wall. The aperture of the dorsal œsophageal gland can be seen in the dorsal wall of the mouth capsule.

Male with a three-lobed bursa, broader than long, with two spicules. Female with vulva behind the middle of the body.

Species.—A number of species are known in man, dogs, bears, civet cats, and other carnivora.

***Agchylostoma duodenale* Dubini 1843.**

Synonyms.—*Strongylus quadridentatus* von Siebold 1851, *Dochmius anchylostomum* Molin 1860, *Sclerostoma duodenale* Cobbold, *Strongylus duodenale* Schneider 1866, *Dochmius duodenalis* Leuckart 1876 *pro parte*.

This worm, which is the great cause of tropical anæmia, was perhaps known to the ancient Egyptians under the term 'Heltu,' mentioned in the 'Ebers Papyrus,' which is supposed to have been written some 1550 years B.C., the disease being called A.A.A., and a remedy being advised. Perhaps the same anæmia is referred to in the 'Harita Samhita' under the term 'pandu roga,' which was said to be caused by swallowing clay. If this is correct, then knowledge of anæmia due to geophagy is very old indeed. If the ancients did really know about this worm, and the disease caused thereby, the knowledge was totally lost, and it was not till Dubini in 1838 discovered the worm in a peasant woman in Milan that modern medicine knew anything about its existence. Pruner, in 1846, found the parasites in Egypt, and Griesinger, in 1851, showed

that it was the cause of Egyptian anæmia. Wucherer, in 1872, found that it was the cause of tropical anæmia in Brazil (called 'oppilação'). Perroncito found that it was the cause of the anæmia which badly affected the miners employed in the St. Gothard tunnel. Grassi and Parona in 1878 discovered the eggs in the fæces, thus enabling a diagnosis to be made during life. The wide geographical distribution of the parasite, and the amount of disease which it causes, is slowly being realized, and the deaths from anæmia, general dropsy, and so-called beri-beri, etc., in different tropical regions are being found to be due to this animal.

The development and method of infection have been completely traced out by Looss in Egypt in a most masterly manner.

In 1902 Stiles found that under the term *Agchylostoma* two different parasites were being confused, one corresponding to Dubini's *Agchylostoma duodenale*, and the other new, which he named *Necator americanus*. Leiper has shown how widespread this latter parasite is in the Old World.

The geographical distribution is probably not correctly known, because in many places it is confounded with *Necator*. It is supposed to be cosmopolitan in tropical regions, and in mines and tunnels in colder climates, in which, of course, the air-temperature is higher than that of the outside.

Morphology.—The body is cylindrical, tapering from back to front in both sexes. During life it is flesh-coloured. The cuticle is ringed. The mouth is terminal, with a chitinous wall, which ventrally carries two pairs of hook-like teeth, and dorsally one pair. Close to the base of the outer ventral tooth opens the single-celled head gland, which runs through nearly half the length of the body. In the floor of the mouth there are two ventral chitinous plates, and the prominent opening of the dorsal head gland (often called a tooth).

Male measures about 10 millimetres in length by 0.4 to 0.5 millimetre in breadth, and possesses a bursa copulatrix at the posterior end, which is umbrella-shaped and supported by chitinous rods, which are arranged as follows: In the median dorsal line is the costa dorsalis, which divides dorsally into two small branches, which are ramified at their tips. Postero-laterally there is one root on each side—the single costa dorsalis externa, in front of which is a single broad lateral root, which divides into the costa lateralis posterior, the costa lateralis media, and the costa lateralis externa; while anteriorly also on each side is the costa ventralis. Through the opening of this bursa project the two spicules, unless they are retracted, which are long and slender, and measure about 2 millimetres in length. The male generative apparatus consists of a testis in the form of a tube, an oval vesicula seminalis, and a long cement gland, whose secretion fixes the male to the female during conjugation, and a spicule sac.

The female measures 12 to 13 millimetres in length, and has the vulva at the junction of the middle and hinder parts of the body,

from which a short vagina opens into two tubes, which are divisible into ovijector, uterus, receptaculum seminis, and an ovary.

Life-History.—The adult worms live chiefly in the jejunum of the host, where they feed upon the villi. Blood is only accidentally found in a worm. Here the females lay the eggs, which are oval in form, with broad rounded poles, surrounded by a colourless shell, which is really double, but looks single, inside which lies an oval granular mass separated from the shell by a considerable space. As the egg travels down the alimentary canal the granular mass divides into two, and finally into four segments, in which condition the egg is usually found in the fæces. Development proceeds in the fæces depending upon the temperature of the atmospheric air. In twenty-four hours, if supplied with air, water, and heat, the embryo can be seen coiled up in the egg, from which it escapes as a larva, and feeds on the fæcal material. The larva is needle-shaped, pointed posteriorly, and measures 200 to 250 μ in length by 15 to 17 μ in breadth, and is rhabdite in form, with a long cylindrical terminal mouth, opening into an œsophagus, which, after narrowing, swells out into a bulb with three valves. The straight intestine surrounded by granular material opens into an anus situate some distance in front of the tip of the tail. This larva undergoes a first ecdysis when it becomes narrower, and the œsophagus and mouth lose their characteristic appearance, while it forms a new skin inside the chitinous cuticle, so



FIG. 212.—AGCHYLOSTOMA DUODENALE DUBINI (MALE). (After Looss.)

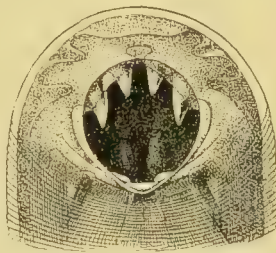


FIG. 213.—ANTERIOR END OF AGCHYLOSTOMA DUODENALE DUBINI. (After Looss, from Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten'.)

that (at the end of five days in the tropics) it now ceases to grow and feed, and takes to water or moist earth, where it can remain unchanged for months, living on the food-material enclosed in its own cells (stage of encystment). During this condition it may be quite active, and can swim and climb

up any surface which is wet. This is an important factor in explaining the production of certain kinds of skin eruptions. It is now ready to infect man, which it does through the hair-follicles of the skin, causing eruptions or sores—*e.g.*, ground-itch.

From the hair-follicles it forces its way *viâ* the subcutaneous tissue into the venous bloodvessels and lymphatics. In the former

it reaches the right heart and the lungs easily ; in the latter many are killed in the lymphatic glands, but some get through to the blood, and in this way are carried to the lungs. They now work their way out of the capillaries into the lumen of the air cells, and travel up the bronchi, trachea, and larynx into the œsophagus (they might by chance get into the mouth), and so through the stomach to the intestine. The time occupied by this journey is believed to be from seven to ten days. In the skin they undergo their second ecdysis, and later a third and fourth ecdysis takes place in the alimentary canal, the third in four to five days and the fourth from four to six days after their arrival. They now measure 3 to 5 millimetres in length, and eight days later the generative organs begin to attain maturity, and the first copulations take place, and a few days later the first eggs appear in the fæces, thus completing the cycle of development, of which the portion after infection occupies four to six weeks.

The more important morphological changes which take place in the human body may be briefly recapitulated.

On entering the skin the third stage of development begins, during which the provisional buccal capsule is formed. A third ecdysis ushers in the fourth stage, characterized by the provisional buccal capsule armed with a dorsal and a ventral pair of teeth. During this



FIG. 214.—THE MEDIAN AND EXTERNAL CAUDAL BURSA OF AGCHYLOSTOMA DUODENALE DUBINI.

1, Costa dorsalis ; 2, costa dorsalis externa ; 3, costa lateralis posterior et externa ; 4, costa lateralis media ; 5, costa ventralis.

(After Railliet, from Stiles's Report.)



FIG. 215.—AGCHYLOSTOMA DUODENALE DUBINI (FEMALE).
(After Looss.)

stage the sexes become differentiated and the permanent buccal capsule is formed. The fourth ecdysis results in the appearance of the adult worms.

The number of females can be calculated from the number of eggs in the fæces by the formula $X = \frac{A}{47}$, where X is the number of females and A the number of eggs in a gramme of fæces.

This history has been pieced together by Looss from observations on the infection of *Agchylostoma duodenale* in man and *A. caninum* in dogs.

These discoveries of Looss have been confirmed by Lambinet. Sambon, while agreeing with the view that the worms penetrate the skin and work their way to the lungs, considers that they pass from the pulmonary artery to the pulmonary veins, and in this way reach the general blood-stream, and in due course the jejunum, the mucosa of which they pierce, and enter the lumen of the bowel. He believes that the worms seen in the trachea, larynx, and stomach by Looss are merely stray specimens which have escaped in the air cells from the vessels of the lungs. His reasons for this belief are:—

1. The larval forms of *A. duodenale* have seldom been found in the stomach, and when found in this organ are lodged beneath the epithelium.
2. They are invariably absent from the duodenum.

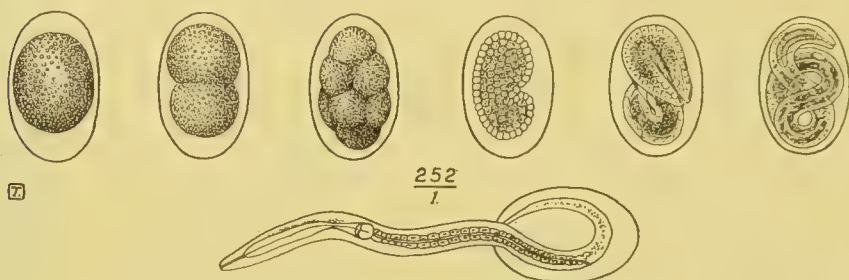


FIG. 216.—*AGCHYLOSTOMA DUODENALE* DUBINI: DEVELOPMENT OF THE RHABDITIFORM EMBRYO.

(After Looss, except the last figure, which is after Perroncito.)

3. They have been found in the left heart, in the pulmonary and azygos veins, in the thoracic duct, in the peritoneum, in the kidneys, in the lymph glands, and in the connective tissue of various regions.

4. At the beginning of the infection there is always an intense hæmorrhagic inflammation of the jejunum, which entirely subsides later on, notwithstanding the presence of enormous numbers of parasites in the intestine.

5. Immature forms have been found again and again in blood-filled spaces beneath the intestinal mucosa by Bilharz, Griesinger, Sonsino, Grassi, and many other competent investigators.

6. A number of other worms which inhabit the intestinal cavity at maturity, such as *Æsophagostomum*, *Sclerostomum*, *Ascaris*, *Gnathostoma*, etc., in an earlier developmental stage are usually found either free or encysted beneath the intestinal mucosa.

He also considers that when the larvæ are taken in by way of the mouth they probably pierce through the walls of the œsophagus like the larvæ of *Hypoderma bovis* (see Chapter XXV.), and reach their intestinal habitat by way of the vessels in exactly the same way as those which penetrate the hair-follicle.

Fülleborn and von Schilling-Torgau have investigated the points raised by Sambon by tracheotomizing dogs and inserting a cannula in such a way that the larvæ could not pass from the lungs to the œsophagus, but only to the exterior. The dogs were then infected with *Agychylostoma caninum* (Ercolani 1859), and after some time

the secretion from the cannula in the trachea swarmed with larvæ. In other dogs the œsophagus, not the trachea, was cut across and its ends separately stitched to the skin, and after a time the secretion from the upper cut end contained larvæ. In both sets of experiments, however, the dogs became infected intestinally with a small number of parasites.



FIG. 217.

FIG. 218.

FIG. 219.

FIG. 220.

FIG. 221.

FIG. 217.—AGCHYLOSTOMA DUODENALE DUBINI : FIRST (LARVAL) STAGE OF DEVELOPMENT. (After Looss, from Mense.)

FIG. 218.—AGCHYLOSTOMA DUODENALE DUBINI : SECOND STAGE OF DEVELOPMENT. (After Looss, from Mense.)

FIG. 219.—AGCHYLOSTOMA DUODENALE DUBINI : THIRD STAGE OF DEVELOPMENT. (After Looss, from Stiles.)

FIG. 220.—AGCHYLOSTOMA DUODENALE DUBINI : FOURTH STAGE OF DEVELOPMENT. (After Looss, from Stiles.)

FIG. 221.—AGCHYLOSTOMA DUODENALE DUBINI : FIFTH STAGE OF DEVELOPMENT. (After Looss, from Stiles.)

It is thus seen that Sambon's hypothesis is correct, but it would appear that Looss's route is the more important. The larger number of parasites follow the route described by Looss, and the smaller number follow that described by Sambon.

SUBFAMILY BUNOSTOMINÆ LOOSS 1911.

Agchylostomidæ with small mouth capsule, with aperture narrowed anteriorly by plates with cutting edges springing from the sides, and more or less covering the ventral half of the aperture. At the base of the cone which carries the opening of the dorsal œsophageal gland there is on each side one tooth-like plate with smooth edges. Coils of the genital tubes very numerous and close. Externo-dorsal ray thin, more especially at the root. Spicule of the male barbed at the end.

Type Genus.—*Necator* Stiles 1903.

There are seven genera in the subfamily—viz., *Bunostomum* Railliet 1902, *Necator* Stiles 1902, *Brachyclonus* Railliet and Henry 1910, *Gaigeria* Railliet and Henry, 1910, *Eumonodontus* Molin emend Mailliet and Henry, *Bathmostomum* Railliet and Henry 1909, and *Grammocephalus* Railliet and Henry 1910, but only *Necator* Stiles 1903 concerns us.

Necator Stiles 1903.

Bunostominæ closely resembling *Agchylostoma*, but distinguished therefrom by the small mouth capsule, which is armed only by semilunar plates. The head is strongly bent dorsally. In the male the bursa is bilobed. In the female the vulva lies in the anterior part of the body.

Type Species.—*Necator americanus* Stiles 1902. Other species *N. africanus* Looss 1911 in the chimpanzee.

Necator americanus Stiles 1902.

Synonyms.—*Dochmius duodenalis* R. Leuckart *pro parte*, *Uncinaria americana* Stiles 1902, *Ancylostoma americanum* von Linstow 1903 *pro parte*.

In 1902 Stiles discovered that two distinct genera were being confused under the term *Agchylostoma*, and eventually called the new genus *Necator*. Leiper has recently shown that this new genus is very widely distributed over the world, and is the common cause of agchylostomiasis in Ceylon; while it occurs in India, Assam, Burma, the Philippine Islands, America, and has been found in West and Central Africa and in North-West Rhodesia. In due course, no doubt, it will be reported in other places.

Morphology.—The body is cylindrical, and somewhat attenuated anteriorly. Head acutely bent dorsally. Mouth with a ventral pair of prominent semilunar chitinous plates and a dorsal pair of slightly developed plates. Into the floor of the mouth projects the opening of the dorsal head gland, which appears like a dorsal conical tooth, while deep in the cavity appear one pair of dorsal and one pair of ventral submedian lancets. Excretory pore 0.5 millimetre behind the mouth, with cervical papillæ on either side.

Male 7 to 9 millimetres in length and 0.3 to 0.35 millimetre in breadth. The bursa consists of two large lateral lobes joined to a

dorsal median lobe, which appears as if divided into two, and to an indistinct ventral lobe. There is a slight ventral enlargement just posterior to the point at which the bursa joins the body-wall. The costa dorsalis is divided at its base into two diverging branches, which are bipartite. The common base of the costa dorsalis and costa dorsalis externa is very short, while the latter ray is long, slender, and clavate. The costa lateralis externa is closely joined to the costa lateralis media. Two small precaudal papillæ can be seen anterior to the ventral rays. The spicules are long and slender, 0.92 millimetre in length, and terminate in barbed points.



FIG. 222. — THE MOUTH CAPSULE OF *NECATOR AMERICANUS* STILES.

(After Looss, from Mense.)

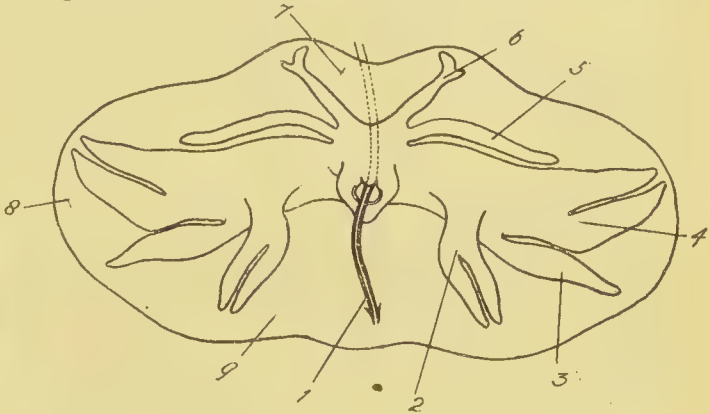


FIG. 223. — THE BURSA COPULATRIX OF A MALE *NECATOR AMERICANUS* STILES.

1, Spicules; 2, costa ventralis; 3, costa lateralis posterior; 4, costa lateralis externa et costa lateralis media; 5, costa dorsalis externa; 6, costa dorsalis; 7, dorsal lobe; 8, lateral lobe; 9, ventral lobe.

(After Stiles.)

Female is 9 to 12.6 millimetres in length; vulva in the anterior half of the body, but near the equator. Eggs 57.7 to 80 μ by 35 to 52.5 μ ; average, 66 by 40 μ .

Life-History.—This is the same as *Agchylostoma duodenale*.

Zoological Distribution.—Man and the gorilla.

Pathogenicity.—It causes agchylostomiasis in certain regions.

PSEUDOSTRONGYLES Leiper 1912.

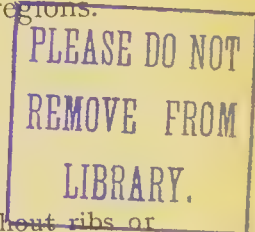
FAMILY 15. EUSTRONGYLIDÆ Leiper 1912.

SUBFAMILY DIOCTOPHYMINÆ Railliet.

Eustrongylidæ with unarmed mouth; Bursa copulatrix without ribs or bands. Genus *Dioctophyme* Collet-Megret 1802.

Dioctophyme Collet-Megret 1802.

Very large Strongylidæ with cylindrical bodies; mouth with six papillæ. Male with collar-like bursa and one spicule. Female with one ovary; vulva in the anterior half of the body.



Diectophyme renale (Goeze 1782).

Synonyms.—*Ascaris canis et martis* Schrenk 1788, *A. visceralis et renalis* Gmelin 1789, *Strongylus gigas* Rudolphi 1802, *Eustrongylus gigas* Diesing 1851, *Strongylus renalis* Moquin-Tandon 1860, *Eustrongylus visceralis* Railliet 1885.

This worm lives in the pelvis of the kidney in the dog, seal, otter, and wolf. It has been recorded twelve times in man, if the records really refer to this worm.

Morphology.—The worm is blood-red in colour, but otherwise very like a large *Ascaris lumbricoides*. Along the lateral lines there are about 150 papillæ. The submedian ridges are well developed, and the anterior extremity somewhat attenuated. Cuticle finely striated transversely.

Male 40 centimetres long by 4 to 6 millimetres broad; bursa without rays, and with one very long, slender spicule 5 to 6 millimetres in length. Female 100 centimetres in length and 12 millimetres in thickness, with an obtuse, slightly curved posterior end, a single ovary, and a vulva situate 50 to 70 millimetres behind the anterior extremity. Eggs ovoid, with thick, brownish shell 68 to 80 μ by 40 to 43 μ , with numerous depressions.

Life-History.—Development begins in the uterus of the female, but stops at a certain stage, and does not continue (Balbiani) until brought into contact with water or damp soil, when the egg hatches. The embryo is 240 μ by 14 μ , cylindrical, and gradually tapering posteriorly. The head is pointed, with a terminal mouth without papillæ, but which is thought to be provided with a small protractile dart. The further development is not known; it has been thought that it takes place in fish, but experiments have failed to justify this view.

Pathogenicity.—It is usually found in the kidney, which it destroys. In animals it has also been found in mammary and perineal tumours. Symptoms appear to be hæmaturia, and the diagnosis is made by the discovery of the eggs.

FAMILY 16. TRICHINELLIDÆ.

Nematoda with the anterior portion of the body thin and whip-like; posterior portion thick with genitalia. Mouth small, without papillæ. Œsophagus very long, traversing a peculiar strand of cells.

Genus.—*Trichinella* Railliet.

Trichinella Railliet 1895.

Synonym.—*Trichina* Owen 1835, *nec* Meigen 1830.

Very small Trichinellidæ, with thin, hair-like bodies. Posterior end of the male with two cone-like appendages, between which the cloaca is situate. Vulva placed far forwards.

Trichinella spiralis Owen 1835.

Synonym.—*Trichina spiralis* Owen 1835.

T. spiralis, though discovered by Paget in 1835 and described by Owen, had been previously seen by Peacock in 1828 and by Hilton in 1833.

It is really a parasite of the black rat (*Epimys rattus*) and the sewer rat (*E. norvegicus*), in which the rate of infection is placed from 8.3 to 100 per cent., according to the locality, but it spreads from the rat to pigs, dogs, cats, and many other animals.

Man becomes infected from the pig as a rule, for that animal is particularly liable to the disease, because it is apt to be fed upon scraps of raw meat. Further, the larva in the flesh of the pig is very difficult to kill, for it will resist a temperature of 80° C., pickling, smoking, and freezing. Hence, though ham be well boiled, it does not follow that the larvæ in its centre are killed. Sausages, however, are the greatest danger, for in them the larvæ can live well protected.

In order to infect man, there must be a source of infection for the pig, and this, in the first instance, can come from the rat, and afterwards be kept up in the pig, and then the transmission to man is easy.

As rats, pigs, and men are cosmopolitan, so trichiniasis is also cosmopolitan. It is not uncommon in certain parts of India, and is known in China. In considering the endemicity of the disease, it must not be forgotten that the wild boar (*Sus scrofa ferox*) is susceptible. The disease is supposed to have been introduced into Europe from Asia, either by *Epimys norvegicus* at the end of the eighteenth century, or by the Chinese pig from 1820 to 1830. At present it is common also in America.

Morphology and Life-History.—It is usually found in human or pig's muscles, where it appears as minute white specks, which, when magnified, are found to be encysted larvæ. These cysts are oval, with their long axis in the same direction as that of the muscular fibres, measuring 400 by 250 μ . The cyst membrane is formed from inflamed connective tissue, which has invaded the infected muscular fibre. Inside the cyst is the coiled-up worm. In this condition the larvæ may live for years, but may be killed by calcification. They are mostly found in the diaphragm, the larynx, tongue, abdominal and intercostal muscles.

When these cysts reach the stomach of a man or animal, the gastric juice dissolves the cyst-wall, and the parasites escape, and, entering the duodenum and jejunum, they grow into adult males 3 to 4 millimetres long by 60 μ in diameter, and females 1.4 to 1.6 millimetres long by 40 μ in diameter, which copulate. The males now die off, and the females, increasing in size, penetrate the mucosa of the bowel until they reach a lymph-channel, where they deposit their larvæ, which are born alive. Leuckart says one female gives rise to 1,500 larvæ, which are carried by the lymph and blood streams all over the body. The larvæ now leave the capillaries and work their way into the tissues, and in about nine to ten days encapsule in the muscles, the attacked fibres of which degenerate and become inflamed, and the cyst already described is formed.

Pathogenicity.—When the female pierces the mucosa, and during the wandering through the lymph and blood of the larvæ, very severe symptoms called trichinosis or trichiniasis are produced.

FAMILY 17. TRICHOSOMIDÆ.

Trichuris Røederer and Wagler 1761.

Trichosomidæ, with the anterior part of the body very long and thread-like, and the posterior thicker portion sharply truncated, with a terminal anus. Male with a spirally rolled posterior end and one spicule; female with one ovary, and the vulva situated at the junction of the thinner and thicker parts of the body.

Species in man : *Trichuris trichiura* Linnæus 1761.

Trichuris trichiura Linnæus 1761.

Synonyms.—*Ascaris trichiura* L. 1771, *Trichocephalus hominis* Schrank 1788, *T. dispar* Rudolphi 1801.

This worm is very commonly met with in the tropics. Its eggs appear in the fæces, and it is met with in the cæcum and sometimes in the vermiform appendix during post-mortems. Its anterior end is frequently found buried in the mucous membrane, and while in this position it is possible for bacteria to enter and cause disease—e.g., appendicitis.

It is commonly called the whip-worm, and is cosmopolitan in its distribution.

Morphology.—The male measures 40 to 45 millimetres in length, and is easily recognized by the spirally coiled posterior end. Its spicule, which lies in a retractile pouch, measures 2.5 millimetres. The female measures 45 to 50 millimetres in length. The ova are



FIG. 224.—*TRICHURIS TRICHIURA* LINNÆUS: FEMALE AND MALE.
(After Claus.)

oval, brown, thick-shelled, with a pale, clear body at each pole, where the shell is deficient. They measure 50 to 54 by 23 μ .

Life-History.—When the egg appears in the fæces, it is unsegmented, and is said to take eighteen months before the embryo is



FIG. 225.—DEVELOPMENT OF THE EGG OF *TRICHURIS TRICHIURA*.
(After Stiles.)

fully developed. The egg with the enclosed embryo is then taken in through the mouth in contaminated food or water, there being no intermediate host. The shell is dissolved by the gastric juice, and the embryo reaches maturity in the intestine in about four to five weeks.

Pathogenicity.—Usually harmless, but may give rise to intestinal disturbance and at times appendicitis.

***Syngamus* von Siebold 1836.**

Strongyles with broad head, mouth with a chitinous capsule. Male with two spicules. Female with two ovaries and a vulva, situate in the anterior part of the body.

***Syngamus trachealis* von Siebold 1836.**

This is the common nematode found infesting the respiratory organs of poultry and game. King forwarded quite recently some specimens to Leiper purporting to come from a woman living in St. Lucia who suffered from chronic cough, when the worms were expectorated with blood. Leiper thinks that this may be an accidental infection of man with the worm commonly found in domesticated animals. The specimens were male and female.

ORDER II. GORDIACEA.

Nemathelminthes with the intestinal canal always atrophied anteriorly in the adult; head without papillæ; two testes, but never spicules in the male; vulva always united with the posterior portion of the intestine to form a cloaca; rare in man; only accidental parasites.

These worms are popularly known as horsechairs, and are supposed to cause serious and even fatal disease in man or animals if swallowed. Their pathogenesis has recently been studied by Stiles, who is unable to support the popular belief as to the serious nature of these parasites in man. They are very long, thin worms, like *Filaria*, which can be found in ditch-water swimming freely or twining round water-plants.

The body is covered with a well-developed two-layered cuticle. The mouth and the anterior part of the intestine is obliterated. The posterior end of the male is lobed, and without spicules. In the female there are two ovaries and the egg-sacs, which open by means of oviducts into a uterus. The males are often blackish brown, and the females light clay brown.

The life-history of *Parachordodes tolosanus* is very complicated: the first larva enters the larva of the alder-fly (*Sialis lutaria* L.), where it lives during the winter, and passes over to the imago of the same insect, which is eaten by a beetle (*Pterostichus niger*). The first larva changes, becoming a second larva, which lives in the beetle during the second winter, and finally escapes into the water about twenty months after hatching. In the water it soon becomes adult Gordiidae.

The Gordiacea includes the family Gordiidae, which is divided by Camerano into four genera: *Gordius* Linnæus 1758, *Paragordius* Camerano 1897, *Parachordodes* Camerano 1897, *Chordodes*.

Without going into details, it may be said that the following species have been reported as parasitic in man:—

Gordius aquaticus L. 1758.—Four recorded cases in Europe with abdominal symptoms, pain, vomiting, etc., and nervous symptoms, hysteria, and neuralgia symptoms, pain, vomiting, etc., and nervous symptoms, hysteria, and neuralgia.

G. chiliensis E. Blanchard 1849.—This is simply based on the legends of Chilian Indians, who fear the worm.

Paragordius varius Leidy 1851.—Four cases of infection in North America. Worms were expelled *per anum* or by vomiting. Symptoms: unimportant.

P. tricuspidatus Dufour 1828.—One case in France. Symptoms: slight colic. Worm extracted from the throat.

P. cinctus von Linstow 1906.—From a man in Leydenburg, in the Transvaal.

Parachordodes tolosanus Dujardin 1842. Four cases, in one of which it is accused of causing epileptiform fits. Cases occurred in France and Italy.

P. pustulosus Baird 1853.—One case in Italy caused anal pruritus and discharge.

P. violaceus Baird 1853.—One case in France; it lodged in the throat before expulsion.

P. alpestris Villot 1884.—One case in France.

Undetermined.—Ward, in 1903, published the account of a case in which the genus of the worm was not determined.

CLASS II.

ORDER III. ACANTHOCEPHALA Rudolphi.

Nemathelminthes with a retractile proboscis armed with several rows of spines or hooks; intestine absent; parasitic in the intestine of vertebrates.

The Acanthocephala are elongated cylindrical worms, in which the body can be divided into proboscis, neck, and trunk. The proboscis is a hollow, finger-shaped, retractile process, covered with a thin cuticle, and armed with

rings of hooks arranged in longitudinal rows. The neck is not always discernible. The trunk has a rounded posterior end, and consists of a body-wall with muscular layers, covered by a thin cuticle, enclosing the excretory and reproductive organs. The sexes are separate. The male organs are two oval testes, whose vasa efferentia unite into a vas deferens, which opens into a cirrus contained in a pouch or bursa, and provided with a prostate gland.

The female organs consist of two ovaries, which break down into masses of cells which escape into the cœlom. Here the ova are fertilized and the embryo is formed, and escapes through a funnel-shaped structure called 'the bell' into the uterus, and so through the vagina and the genital orifice at the posterior end of the body into the lumen of the host's intestine.

The embryo leaves the host with the fæces, and, getting into water, enters the alimentary canal of a crustacean, water-insect, or fish, inside which it hatches. It now bores its way through the intestinal wall into the cœlom, where it develops all its organs except the reproductive.

The crustacean, water-insect, or fish must now be eaten by a vertebrate when the acanthocephalid becomes sexually mature in the intestine. They are very rarely found in man.

Classification.—The Acanthocephala are divided into four families by Hamann and Shipley:—Echinorhynchidæ, Gigantorhynchidæ, Neorhynchidæ, and Arhynchidæ. Human parasites, which are very rare, are only found in the first two families.

ECHINORHYNCHIDÆ.

Acanthocephala with elongated, smooth body; proboscis can be retracted into a sheath with double walls.

Genus.—*Echinorhynchus* Müller 1776.

Echinorhynchus (Müller 1776).

Echinorhynchus hominis Lambl 1859.

This parasite was found in the intestine of a boy who died of leukæmia; it was 5.6 millimetres long. There appears to be much doubt as to whether this really was *Echinorhynchus*.

GIGANTORHYNCHIDÆ.

Gigantorhynchus Hamann 1892.

Large Acanthocephala with ringed, flat, tæniform bodies.

Gigantorhynchus gigas (Goeze 1782).

This parasite was alleged by Lindemann to occur in man in South Russia, where Schneider says *Melolontha* is eaten raw. It is 10 to 15 centimetres long; eggs 80 to 100 μ long, with three shells. Its usual life-history is that the adult is found in pigs, and the larva in *Melolontha vulgaris*, *Cetonia aurata*, or *Lachnosterna arenata*.

Gigantorhynchus moniliformis (Bremser 1911).

Synonym.—*Echinorhynchus moniliformis* Bremser 1911.

Leiper records a parasite found in a Sudanese by Christopherson as probably belonging to this species. It has also been seen in man by Grassi and Calandruccio. The worm is found in Europe, Africa, and Brazil.

Morphology.—White body with attenuated ends with many rings, making it closely resemble a *Porocephalus*. Male 4 to 5 centimetres in length, with a bursa visible to the naked eye. Female 7 to 10 centimetres long. Eggs ellipsoidal, 85 μ by 45 μ .

Life-History.—The intermediate host is *Blaps mucronata*. Calandruccio has shown experimentally that it can develop in the human body.

REFERENCES.**Nemathelminthes.**

- HAMANN (1891). Die Nemathelminthen. Jena.
 SCHNEIDER (1866). Monographie der Nematoden. Berlin.
 SHIPLEY (1896). Cambridge Natural History, ii. 123.

NEMATODA.**Anguillula aceti.**

- MAROCCHI (1907). Gior. R. A. Med. Torino, lxx., 1-2, p. 3.
 STILES AND FRANKLAND (1902). Bur. Anim. Industry, United States Department of Agriculture, Bull. No. 35, p. 35. Washington.

Anguillulina putrefaciens.

- BOTKIN (1883). Vet. Kl. Wochenschrift.

Rhabditis niellyi.

- NIELLY (1883). Archiv. Méd. Nav., xxxvii. 337, 488.

Leptodera pello.

- PEIPER AND WESTPHAL (1888). Centralblatt für Klin. Med., ix. 145.

Strongyloides intestinalis.

- STRONG (1901). Johns Hopkins Reports (Bibliography).

Gnathostoma spinigerum.

- LEVINSEN (1890). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie, viii. 182.

Filariidæ.

- BAHR (1912). Filariasis and Elephantiasis in Fiji. London.
 BLANCHARD (1890). Traité de Zoologie Médicale. Paris, ii. 1-61. (Bibliography up to 1890.)
 MANSON (1883). The Filaria Sanguinis Hominis. London.
 PENEL (1905). Les Filaires du Sang de l'Homme. Paris. (Bibliography, 1890-95.)

Physaloptera.

- LEIPER (1908). Report of the Advisory Committee of Tropical Diseases. London.

Microfilaria.

- LE DANTEC (1904). Maladies des Pay Chauds, p. 1000. Paris.

Agamofilaria.

- STILES (1907). Bulletin 34, Hygiene Laboratory, U.S. Public Health and Marine Hospital Service. Washington.

Acanthocheilonema.

- LEIPER (1910). Proceedings of the Zoological Society. London.
 RAILLIET AND HENRY (1912). Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique, p. 392. Paris.

Dirofilaria magalhæsi.

- MAGALHÆS (1892). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie u. Parasitenkunde, xii. 512.
 RAILLIET AND HENRY (1911). Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique, iv. 285.

Loa loa.

WARD (1906). Zool. Annals, p. 376.

Onchocerca.

GILRUTH AND SWEET (1911). *Onchocerca gibsoni*. Sydney. (Bibliography of genus.)

RAILLIET AND HENRY (1910). Comptes Rendus de la Société de Biologie, lxxviii. 248-251. Paris.

Dracunculus.

INGLIS AND LEIPER (1912). Bibliography of Dracontiasis, Journal of London School of Tropical Medicine. London.

LEIPER (1908). Report of the Advisory Committee of Tropical Diseases. London.

Ascaris lumbricoides.

CHALMERS (1904). *Spolia Zeylanica*.

CASTELLANI (1907). British Medical Journal.

DAVAINE (1877). *Traité des Entozaires*. Paris.

EPSTEIN (1892). *Jahrb. f. Kinderheilk. N.F.*, xxx. iii. 3.

GRASSI (1887-88). *C. f. B. u. P.*, 1887, p. 131; and 1888, p. 748.

GUIART (1900). *Archiv. de Paras.*, p. 70.

SICK (1901). *Über Spulwürmer* Tübingen.

Ascaris texana.

SMITH AND GOETHE (1904). *Journal of the American Medical Association*, p. 542.

Toxascaris canis.

LEIPER (1907). British Medical Journal.

Belascaris mystax.

BELLINGHAM (1839). Dublin Medical Press, p. 104.

COBBOLD (1863). *Lancet*, i. 31.

LEIPER (1907). British Medical Journal.

Lagocheilascaris.

LEIPER (1909). *Proceedings Zoological Society*, London.

Oxyuris vermicularis.

BLANCHARD (1906). *Archives de Paras.*, x. 404.

EDENS (1905). *C. f. B. u. P.*, xl. 499.

Æsophagostomum.

WEINBERG (1909). *Archives de Parasitologie*, xiii. 2.

Nematoderus gibsoni.

STEPHENS (1907). *Annals Trop. Med. and Parasit.*, ii. 4, 315.

Trichostrongylus.

IJIMA (1896). *Zoological Magazine*, p. 155.

LOOS (1895). *C. f. B. u. P.*, xviii. 161.

Agechylostoma.

BENTLEY (1902). British Medical Journal, p. 1900.

BOYCOTT (1905). *Journal of Hygiene*, p. 280.

DUBINI (1843). *Annal. Univ. Med. d'Omodei*, cvi. 51.

Looss (1896-1904). C. f. B. u. P., 1896, xx, 865; 1897, xxi, 913; 1898, xxiv, 484; 1899, xxv, 662, xxix, 733; 1903, xxxiii, 330; 1904, xxxv, 752. Records of the Egyptian Government School of Medicine, iii. Cairo, 1905. Lancet, 1905, ii, 430.

SCHAUDINN (1904). Deutsch. Med. Woch., xxx, 1338.

STILES (1903). Bull. 10, Hyg. Lab. U.S. Pub. Health and Mar. Hosp. Serv., Wash.

Necator americanus.

LEIPER (1907). British Medical Journal.

STILES (1902). American Medicine, iii, 777.

STILES AND GOLDBERGER (1906). *Ibid.*, xi, 63.

Diocotophyme renale.

STILES (1898). Medical Record, p. 469.

TURNBULL (1897). *Ibid.*, p. 256.

Trichinella spiralis.

ASKANAZY (1894). C. f. B. u. P., xv, 225.

OWEN (1835). Transactions of the Zoological Society of London, p. 315.

STILES (1901). Bull. 30, Bur. Animal Indust. U.S. Department of Agriculture, Washington. Proceedings of the Pathological Society of Philadelphia, iv, 137.

Trichuris trichiura.

EBERTH (1860). Z. f. w. Zool. x, 233, 383; 1862, xi, 96.

WRENCH AND BOYCOTT (1905). Journal of Hygiene, Cambridge, p. 274.

Syngamus.

LEIPER (1913). Lancet, vol. i. London.

GORDIACEA.

STILES. Bull. 34, Hyg. Lab. U.S. Pub. Health and Mar. Hosp. Serv., Wash., p. 53.

ACANTHOCEPHALA.

Gigantorhynchus gigas.

STILES (1891). C. R. Soc. biol. Paris (9), iii, 764.

Echinorhynchus hominis.

GRASSI AND CALANDRUCCIO (1888). C. f. B. u. P., iii, 521.

LAMBL (1859). Prag. Vierteljahrsschrift f. pract. Hilkde., lxi, 45.

CHAPTER XXII

ANNULATA AND ARTHROPODA

Annulata—Hirudinea—Arthropoda—Diplopoda—Arachnida—Crustacea—
Chilopoda—References.

PHYLUM: ANNULATA.

METAZOA with elongated bodies divided externally into a number of rings which represent a division of the internal parts into segments or somites (metameres), usually with an extensive cœlom. Nervous system consists of a cerebral ganglion, with double commissure and ventral nerve cord. Organs of excretion in the form of metamerically arranged pairs of nephridia.

The only class of this phylum which contains animals of importance in tropical medicine is the Hirudinea or Discophora—*i.e.*, the leeches.

CLASS: HIRUDINEA.

Annulata with oval bodies, showing a dorso-ventral flattening and two suckers, one at each end.

Remarks.—Leeches are of interest in the tropics, first, because they may be a considerable nuisance as ectoparasites—*e.g.*, land leeches or *Hæmadipsa*: and, secondly, they may be of considerable danger to the health and even the life of a person as endoparasites—*e.g.*, the water leeches, particularly *Limnatis*.

As ectoparasites they are apt to fasten on the legs of persons going through grass or jungle. In fact, in Ceylon, while standing on a piece of grass in certain parts of the low country, the leeches can be watched converging from all quarters of the compass towards the observer.

Very often the bite is not noticed, and the leech or leeches may have sucked a considerable amount of blood before any attention is paid to them, and tales are told of persons feeling faint before noticing that they were being attacked by these creatures.

They are apt to get into the nose, naso-pharynx, or larynx with drinking water, and in this endoparasitic condition they may suck

blood and cause epistaxis or hæmoptysis, and this may go on to such an extent than anæmia and even death may result.

It is hardly possible to believe that they can live in the stomach, for it is much more likely that they are at once killed by the gastric juice and digested.

A great many tropical countries appear to be plagued with leeches which affect men and animals as indicated above, but it is probable that Algeria, Palestine, and Ceylon are the most infested. Among the other places in which they are troublesome may be mentioned the Philippines, Java, Sumatra, Australia, Japan, and Chili. In Algeria and Palestine the leech lives in the pools of drinking-water, and here the endoparasitic form may be met with; whereas in Ceylon it is usually a land leech which attacks the individual, and therefore the ectoparasitic condition is common, while the endoparasitic is more rare, being due to *Hirudo multi-striata*.

Morphology.—Leeches have an elongated, more or less oval body, which is very retractile and extensile, and is marked by annuli or rings, of which several—usually five—form a somite. The number of rings to a somite is, however, reduced anteriorly and posteriorly, being abbreviated. At the anterior extremity is the oral sucker, and at the posterior the acetabulum. The skin possesses many unicellular dermal glands. The mouth-opening is situate in the anterior sucker, and the anus either in or just in front of the constriction which separates the posterior sucker from the body.

The male genital opening is placed on the twenty-fourth annulus, and the female five annuli behind it in *H. medicinalis*; but the female orifice may vary with regard to the male in other genera. A number of nephridial orifices can be seen as paired openings on the posterior annuli of many of the somites. Eyes exist as small, dark dots on the dorsum of the body, behind the anterior sucker. The mouth may be armed or unarmed. In the former condition it possesses three jaws—one dorsal and two ventro-lateral—each with a thickened free edge notched with teeth. In the latter there may be only a proboscis. Into the mouth open the salivary glands, which secrete a fluid which prevents the coagulation of the blood. The pharynx is an oval sac, with strong muscular walls and radial muscles, which can alternately contract and dilate the cavity, thus forming a sucking-pump. From the pharynx an œsophagus leads to the crop, which is a straight, thin-walled tube, with lateral diverticula.

Behind the crop comes the small stomach, which opens into a narrow straight tube—the intestine—which runs to the anus. The coelom consists of a series of tubes containing red blood. The excretory system consists of the nephridia. There is a supra-œsophageal ganglion, a nerve collar, and a ventral nerve chain. The male reproductive organs are a number of testes, with vasa efferentia opening into two vasa deferentia, which, after coiling into epididymes, run to the single penis. The female organs are a pair of ovaries and oviducts opening into a single vagina.

Biology.—Leeches appear to be essentially water animals, and though certain genera can live on land, still, they require a great deal of moisture. Hence land leeches retire into moist places under stones, earth, etc., and only come out when requiring food. In dry weather not a leech can be seen, while in damp weather they may be very abundant.

Any disturbance of the air appears to affect them. Hence they are quickly aroused from their retreats when a human being or

animal approaches, and set forth at once, often with considerable speed, to the attack.

The bite is not always painful at first, and may not be noted until the flow of blood is observed. The leech, while biting, keeps itself and the skin of the victim moist by liquid excreted by the nephridia and the dermal glands. When it has gorged itself with blood it drops off, but its salivary secretion prevents the coagulation of the blood, and hence the site of the leech-bite bleeds considerably for some time. The blood is stored up in the crop and its cæcal diverticula, and only a little is used day by day for food.

Pathogenicity.—Leeches are hosts of trypanosomes and other parasites, and their bite may possibly introduce these parasites into the skin of the human victim as well as into that of animals.

The marked feature of the pathogenesis is loss of blood, not merely caused by the sucking of the leech, but also by the bleeding from the wound caused by the bite. Further, the punctures caused by *Hæmadipsa zeylanica* are extremely liable to become ulcers, which, according to Marshall and Davy, caused a high rate of mortality among the Madras sepoys and coolies during the Kandyan rebellion of 1818 in Ceylon. Short of death, amputation of the limb was necessary in those days. We are not inclined to consider these old statements as erroneous, because it is quite possible that some organism is often introduced into the affected part by the leech-bite. For a further discussion of the pathogenicity, see the chapters on Diseases of the Respiratory Organs and of the Skin.

Classification.—The class Hirudinea may be divided into several orders:—

Order I. Rhynchobdellida.—Hirudinea without jaws, with an extensile proboscis and with colourless blood, living in salt and fresh water.

The Rhynchobdellida are divided into two families:

Family 1. Ichthyobdellidæ.—Rhynchobdellida with the anterior narrower part of the body distinct from the posterior, and with both suckers distinct from the body.

To this family belong the genera *Pisciola* de Blainville 1818 and *Pontobdella* Leach 1815, mentioned in the chapter on Protozoa.

Family 2. Glossiphoniidæ.—Rhynchobdella with the anterior sucker fused to the body, while the posterior is distinct.

Among the genera of this family is *Hæmentaria* de Filippi 1849, of which *H. officinalis* de Filippi is found in Mexico, and is alleged to cause drowsiness, buzzing in the ears, and a painful rash, when it bites a person. The causation of these symptoms is obscure. Another species is *H. ghilanti* de Filippi 1849.

Other genera are *Glossiphonia* Johnson 1816, *Hemiclepsis* Vejdoysky 1883, and *Placobdella* R. Blanchard 1893.

Order II. Arhynchobdellida.—Hirudinea usually with jaws, without a proboscis, and with red blood, living in fresh water or on land. There are two families, Gnathobdellidæ and Herpobdellidæ, of which only the first concerns us.

FAMILY GNATHOBDELLIDÆ.

Arhynchobdellidæ with five or more, rarely four, pairs of eyes, and, except in the Semiscolinæ, with three denticulate jaws. Eggs enclosed in a spongy cocoon, which is deposited above water-line.

The Gnathobdellidæ are classified into the following subfamilies: Hirudininæ, Hæmadipsinæ, and Semiscolecinæ, which last is not of interest to us.

SUBFAMILY HIRUDININÆ R. Blanchard 1894.

Aquatic Gnathobdellidæ, with ten eyes, and with an eyeless ring between the third and fourth pair of eyes, with denticulate jaws. Complete somite formed of five rings. The nephridial pores open near the margins of the body on the ventral surface.

In 1896 Blanchard divided this subfamily into two series: (1) Monostichodonta—jaws armed with one row of teeth; (2) Distichodonta—jaws armed with two rows of teeth.

The genera are: *Hirudo*, *Limnatis*, *Hæmopsis*, *Hirudinaria*, *Limnobdella*, *Macrobdella*, and *Whitmania*, which are divided into two series.

Series 1. Monostichodonta.

Hirudininae with jaws with or without papillæ, and armed with a single row of numerous sharp teeth.

Hirudo Linnæus 1758.

Synonyms.—*Sanguisuga* Savigny 1832, *Iatrobdelella* de Blainville 1827.

Hirudininae with twenty-six somites, of which the 1st and 2nd have each one ring; 3rd, two rings; 4th, 5th, and 6th, each three rings; 7th to 22nd, each five rings; 23rd, three rings; 24th, 25th, and 26th, each two rings; making in all 102 rings.

Eyes are carried on the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 5th, and 8th rings. The buccals are the 5th and 6th, and the post-buccals the 7th and 8th. The first pair of nephridia is on the 13th, and the last (the 17th) pair on the 93rd ring.

The male orifice is between the 30th and 31st rings, which are the 2nd and 3rd of the 10th somite.

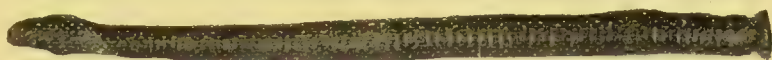


FIG. 226.—HIRUDO MULTISTRIATA SCHMARDA.

The common water leech of Ceylon.

The female orifice is five rings behind that of the male—i.e., between the 35th and 36th rings. The anus is situate on the 102nd ring, or between the 101st and 102nd.

Hirudo medicinalis Linnæus 1758 is found principally in Hungary. Variety *officinalis*.

H. troctina Johnston 1816 is the medicinal leech of England, France, Spain, and Algeria.

H. nipponia Whitman 1886. Japan.

H. sinica de Blainville 1827. China.

H. quinquestriata Schmarda. Australia.

H. saigonensis. Cochinchina.

H. asiatica R. Blanchard. Afghanistan and Persia.

H. timorensis R. Blanchard. Timor.

H. septemstriata Grube. South Africa.

H. hildebrandti R. Blanchard. East Africa, Victoria Nyanza.

H. multistriata Schmarda. Ceylon.

Series 2. Distichodonta.

Hirudininae with jaws without papillæ, and armed with two rows of infrequent, blunt, irregular teeth.

Hæmopsis Savigny 1817.

Synonym.—*Aulastoma* Moq.-Tand. 1826.

Hirudininae with 3 rings on the 23rd somite, and two rings to the 24th, 25th and 26th somites. Crop with one pair of elongate lateral cæca reflected posteriorly. Genital openings usually separated by five rings. Upper lip of anterior sucker not divided inferiorly by a longitudinal groove. *H. sanguisuga* Linnæus 1758 found in Europe, and *H. lacustre* Leidy in America.

Limnatis Moquin-Tandon 1826.

Hirudininae with a longitudinal groove on the inner surface of the upper lip of the anterior sucker. Jaws with more than 100 teeth.

Limnatis nilotica Savigny 1820. This leech is 8 to 10 centimetres in length, and is common in North Africa, the Canaries, South Europe, and Asia Minor, while it, or some other species, is found on the West Coast of Africa.

Limnatis mysomelas Serulias and Virey 1829 is found in Senegambia, and *L. granulosa* Savigny 1820 in India.

These leeches are of importance, because they are apt to get into the nose, naso-pharynx, pharynx, and larynx of persons drinking at pools of water, and to cause serious symptoms. Other species are *L. africana* R. Blanchard in Senegal and the Congo, *L. maculosa* Grube 1859 in Singapore, *L. mysomelas* Senegal, and *L. granulosa* in India.

Hirudinaria Whitman 1886.

Hirudininae with the sexual pores separated by several rings. Acetabulum very large.

H. javanica Wahlberg 1855. In Batavia, Sumatra, and Burma.

Limnobdella R. Blanchard.

Hirudininae with 103 to 104 rings. Jaws without papillae. The 6th somite with three rings, the 23rd with five rings.

L. grandis R. Blanchard. Timor, Sumatra, and Ceylon.

L. australis Besisto 1859. Sydney and New South Wales.

L. mexicana R. Blanchard. Mexico.

Macrobdella Verrill 1872.

Hirudininae, jaws without sensory papillae; teeth not numerous; 103 body-rings. Both genital openings on the 11th somite.

M. sesteria Whitman 1886. America.

Whitmania R. Blanchard 1884.

Hirudininae with 105 to 107 rings; 6th segment with five rings; 23rd has always more than three rings. Teeth more or less rudimentary.

W. ferox R. Blanchard 1896. London Zoological Gardens and in Asia.

SUBFAMILY HÆMADIPSINÆ R. Blanchard 1894.

Gnathobdellidæ, living on land, with ten eyes, and no eyeless ring between the 3rd and 4th eyes. The three last body somites (twenty-three to twenty-six) with only one ring each.

Hæmadipsa Tennent 1861.

Synonyms.—*Hæmopsis* Schmarda 1861, *Chthonobdella* Grube 1865.

Hæmadipsinæ, terrestrial in habit, 2 to 3 centimetres in length; sub-cylindrical, tapering slightly forwards, cephalic lobe, rounded when at rest, but pointed in extension; acetabulum moderately large, round, or oval, centrally attached, separated from the body only by a feeble constriction.

Eyes in five pairs, the rings bearing the 3rd and 4th pair, not separated by an intervening ring, the rings bearing the 4th and 5th pairs, separated by two rings. Œsophagus with three plications—one dorsal and two latero-ventral. The three maxillæ covered with teeth, which increase in size towards the converging anterior ends of the jaws. Clitellum includes three somites and fifteen rings. Genital orifices separated by five rings; nephridial pores at the margin of the body, the last pair opening in the constriction between the body and the acetabulum.

Remarks.—The land leeches of Ceylon were separated from the genus *Hirudo* by Tennent in 1861, under the name of *Hæmadipsa*; and those of

Australia by Whitman in 1886, under the term *Geobdella*, altered to *Moquinia* by Blanchard.

Land leeches are mostly tropical, living in the area defined by the parallels 40° N. and 40° S. of the Equator, for they appear to prefer a warm, moist climate. In the Himalayas they ascend to a height of 11,000 feet; but in Ceylon they diminish in numbers above 4,000 feet. They are to be found in Ceylon, India, Java, Sumatra, Luzon, Mindanao, Pelew Islands, Japan, New Guinea, Celebes, New South Wales, Queensland, and the southern provinces of Chili and Trinidad. They live under damp leaves and loose rubbish, and appear when the air is disturbed by the approach of man or beast, and so quickly do they rush to the attack that they have earned the name of the 'jumping leech.' As a rule they bite gently, but make a deep wound, the scar of which may take months to disappear. They fill themselves with blood in about thirty minutes, and then drop off.

Classification.—Some of the species are as follows :—

<i>H. zeylanica</i> deBlainville 1827. Ceylon.	<i>H. vagans</i> R. Blanchard. Madagascar.
<i>H. umbata</i> Grube. Sydney.	<i>H. javanica</i> Wahlberg. Java.
<i>H. fallax</i> R. Blanchard. Madagascar.	<i>H. talagalla</i> Meyen. Philippines.
<i>H. morsitans</i> R. Blanchard. „	<i>H. japonica</i> Whitman. Japan.

Other Genera.

Mesobdella R. Blanchard 1893.—With three rings to a somite.

M. gemmata R. Blanchard 1894.

Philæmon R. Blanchard 1893.—With four rings to a somite.

P. pungens R. Blanchard. Java and Australia.

P. grandidieri R. Blanchard. Madagascar.

Phytobdella R. Blanchard 1893.—With six rings to a somite.

P. meyeri R. Blanchard. Luzon.

P. moluccensis R. Blanchard. Salawati.

Planobdella R. Blanchard 1894.—With seven rings to a somite.

P. quoyi R. Blanchard. North Celebes.

P. molesta R. Blanchard. Celebes.

Moquinia R. Blanchard 1881.—With seven and a half rings between genital apertures.

Remaining Orders.

The remaining orders, *Histriobdellida*, *Acanthobdellida*, and *Branchiobdellida*, do not concern us.

PHYLUM: ARTHROPODA v. Siebold and Stannius 1845.

Bilaterally symmetrical metazoa, with well-developed body cavity and heteronomously segmented body with hollow segmental appendages, moved by intrinsic muscles and penetrated by blood spaces. One or more pairs of appendages behind the mouth are densely chitinized and turned inwards so as to act as jaws.

The phylum Arthropoda is divided into the following grades and classes by Ray Lankester :—

GRADE A. PROTARTHROPODA Lankester.

Class I. Onchophora.

GRADE B. EUARTHROPODA Lankester.

Class II. Diplopoda.

Class III. Arachnida.

Class IV. Crustacea.

Class V. Chilopoda.

Class VI. Hexapoda.

The Onchophora, which includes the genus *Peripatus*, does not concern us, but the other classes all contain species of importance in medicine.

CLASS II. DIPLOPODA RAY LANKESTER 1904.

Synonym.—*Chilognatha*.

Euarthropoda, in which the somites generally fuse after early development, forming double somites, with two pairs of appendages, or present legless and leg-bearing somites alternately. They are terrestrial, breathing by tracheæ.

The following orders are recognized:—(1) Juliformia; (2) Symphyla; and (3) Pauropoda. We shall only consider the first.

Order I. Juliformia—*Diplopoda* with two pairs of appendages on each somite.—Two families of the Juliformia need be mentioned:—

FAMILY JULIDÆ—*Juliformia* with large free head, without broad dorsal plates.—Two species of *Julus*—viz., *J. terrestris* L. and *J. londinenensis* Leach—have been found as occasional parasites (accidental) in the human alimentary canal in Europe.

FAMILY POLYDESMIDÆ—*Juliformia* with large free head and laterally extended dorsal plates.—*Polydesmus complanatus* has once been recorded as an accidental parasite in the human alimentary canal in Europe.

Pathogenicity.—These parasites give rise to symptoms both direct and reflex.

CLASS III. ARACHNIDA LAMARCK 1815.

Euarthropoda with two pre-oral segments, the first bearing typical eyes, and the second antennæ or chelicerae, and six post-oral appendages, modified so as to function as jaws, but possessing also a well-developed ramus, which may be a leg, palpus, or chela. The primitive forms have branchial respiratory processes, and the higher pulmonary organs.

The Arachnida are classified by Lankester into:—

Grade A. Anomomeristica.

Grade B. Nomomeristica.

Subclass I. Pantapoda.

Subclass II. Euarachnida.

Grade *a*. Hydropneusta.Grade *b*. Aëropneusta.

Section A. Pectinifera.

Order Scorpionidea.

Section B. Epectinata.

- Order I. Pedipalpi.
- Order II. Aranea.
- Order III. Palpigrada.
- Order IV. Solifuga.
- Order V. Pseudoscorpiones.
- Order VI. Podogona.
- Order VII. Opiliones.
- Order VIII. Acarina.
- Order IX. Linguatulida (Incertæ sedis).

Details with regard to this classification may be obtained by reference to Ray Lankester's paper in the *Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science*, 1904, vol. xlviii., p. 165.

We have already considered the effects of the bites of the Scorpionidea, the Aranea, and some of the Acarina, and now it is necessary to consider more particularly those which are parasitic, and cause or spread disease.

Two orders must be dealt with in some detail—viz., the Acarina and the Linguatulida.

ORDER: ACARINA.

Synonym.—Rhynchostomi.

Degenerate Arachnida with the basal segments of the second pair of appendages united in the middle line behind the mouth, while those of the third, fourth, fifth, and sixth appendages are widely separated, and take no part in mastication. The respiratory stigmata usually belong to the prosoma, and the primitive segmentation of the opisthosoma has either entirely or almost entirely disappeared.

Remarks.—The Acarina include the mites and ticks which have long been known to be human parasites, but it is only recently that the latter have come into notice as carriers of disease.

It is true that a mite, or rather its larva, has long been suspected to be the cause of Tsutsugamushi disease, but it is probable that at present we are not fully aware of the disease-carrying and producing effects of these small arachnids.

The Acarina are cosmopolitan in their distribution, and are said to be most numerous in temperate regions. They are abundant at high altitudes. Banks remarks that the parasites follow the distribution of the host—*i.e.*, of the food—a remark the importance of which has already been appreciated. The observer will find that a parasitic disease is often bounded by the distribution of the food of the insect, which spreads the real cause of the disease.

Morphology.—The morphology is described under the heading Ixodoidea.

Life-History.—The female lays eggs covered by a shell and an inner membrane called the deutovum. A six-legged larva hatches out from the egg, and after a time, during which it may be active or quiescent, moults and produces the nympha, which is eight-

legged, and resembles the adult, except in the non-development of the sexual organs and apertures. The leg which is added to the nymph is the fourth, or posterior. The nymph is usually energetic, and feeds on some host; eventually passing into a quiescent stage and undergoing considerable histological changes, it moults and becomes the adult male or female. The males are usually smaller and more active than the females. Both sexes suck fluid nourishment from the host, whether animal or plant. Their life-history will be found to vary with the different families and species.

Pathogenicity.—The Acarina are important in the dissemination of disease both among men and animals. In men they are responsible for the spread of such fevers as Dutton's relapsing fever, the tick fever of the Rocky Mountains, Tsutsugamushi disease, and the disease associated with the Miana bug in Persia; also they are responsible for a number of skin diseases, among which may be mentioned scabies. In animals they are responsible for the spread of the Babesiases, and of some Spirochætiases, as well as causing some forms of dermatitis. Incidentally it may be mentioned that they also cause disease in plants, producing galls, etc.

Enemies.—Hurtful as they are themselves, they are not, however, free from persecution on the part of other animals. Blood-sucking insects, particularly the Reduviidæ, prey on some arachnids, sucking their blood. Wellman has reported that he has caught *Phonergates bicoloripes* Stål in the act of sucking the juices of *Ornithodoros moubata*, the tick responsible for the spread of Dutton's relapsing fever.

Classification.—The order Acarina is divided into the following suborders:—

SUBORDER NOTOSTIGMATA.—Acarina in which the opisthosoma is segmented by ten integumental grooves, of which the anterior four are furnished with a single pair of dorsally placed spiracles. (Family: Opilioacaridæ.) This suborder does not concern us.

SUBORDER II. CRYPTOSTIGMATA.—Acarina with a hard integument strengthened by chitinized dorsal and ventral sclerites. Stigmata on the acetabula of the third, fourth, fifth, and sixth pairs of appendages. (Family: Oribatidæ.) This also does not concern us.

SUBORDER III. METASTIGMATA.—Acarina with a hard integument like the Cryptostigmata. One pair of stigmata above and behind the base of the fourth, fifth, or sixth pair of appendages.

Superfamily A. Gamasoidea.

Superfamily B. Ixodoidea.

SUBORDER IV. PROSTIGMATA.—Acarina with soft integument strengthened by special sclerites, those on the ventral surface of the prosoma apparently representing the basal segments of the legs embedded in the skin. Except in the aquatic species, there is a pair of stigmata close to or above the first pair of appendages.

Superfamily A. Trombidoidea.

Superfamily B. Eupopoidea.

SUBORDER V. ASTIGMATA.—Degenerate Acarina, mostly parasitic, like Prostigmata in the development of integumental sclerites and the softness of the skin, but with the respiratory system absent. (Superfamily : Sarcoptoidea.)

SUBORDER VI. VERMIFORMIA.—Degenerate parasitic Acarina without respiratory system, and with the body produced posteriorly into an annulated caudal prolongation. With the third, fourth, fifth, and sixth pairs of appendages short, and only three jointed. (Family : Demodicidæ.)

SUBORDER VII. TETRAPODA.—Degenerate atracheate Acarina with body as in the Vermiformia, but with the third and fourth pairs of appendages long and normally segmented, and the fifth and sixth entirely absent. (Family : Eriophyidæ.) This suborder, however, need not concern us.

SUBORDER III. METASTIGMATA.

The parasites included in this suborder would in popular language all be called ticks.

It is divided into two superfamilies :—

A. GAMASOIDEA.—With a small hypostome without teeth.

B. IXODOIDEA.—With a large hypostome armed with many recurved teeth.

SUPERFAMILY A. GAMASOIDEA.

The superfamily Gamasoidea is divided into three families :—(1) Dermanyssidæ, (2) Uropodidæ, (3) Gamasidæ.

FAMILY I. DERMANYSSIDÆ.

Gamasoidea parasitic on vertebrates, with mandibles fitted for piercing, with the body sometimes constricted, with soft integuments finely striated.

The Dermanyssidæ are divided into two subfamilies :—Dermanyssinæ, with an anal plate ; Halarachninæ, without an anal plate.

SUBFAMILY DERMANYSSINÆ.

Dermanyssus Dugès 1834.

Dermanyssinæ with a long body not distinctly constricted ; peritreme on the venter, with chelate mandibles in the male and long stiliform mandibles in the female. Parasitic on birds.

Dermanyssus gallinæ Redi 1674.

Synonyms.—*Pulex gallinæ* Redi 1674, *Acarus gallinæ* de Geer 1778, *Dermanyssus avium* Dugès 1836.

This parasite lives in cracks, etc., in the hen-house during the day, and attacks the fowls at night, sucking the blood. It is also found on many other birds and mammals, and occasionally on man, generally on poultry-men, in whom it produces a papular eczematous dermatitis on the back of the hands and forearms. *D. hirudinis* Hermann 1804, which is probably only a variety of this species, can also be found on man.

Morphology.—Body egg-shaped, posterior end wider than anterior, abdomen with short, marginal, widely separated bristles.

Male, 0·6 millimetre by 0·32 millimetre ; female, 0·7 millimetre by 0·4 millimetre.

Holothyrus Gervais 1842.**Holothyrus coccinella** Gervais 1842.

This arachnid is found on ducks and geese in Mauritius, and is said to attack human beings, causing swelling of the affected part, which, if the lips or tongue of a child, may be dangerous. Some authorities consider that this arachnid should form a separate family of its own—Holothyridæ.

FAMILY 2. GAMASIDÆ.

In this family comes the genus *Laelaps* Koch 1842, with its species *L. echidninus* Berlese, mentioned in the chapter on Protozoa, because Miller has traced the life-cycle of *Hæmogregarina muris* Balfour 1905 in it and in the rat *Mus decumanus*.

SUPERFAMILY B. IXODOIDEA Banks 1894.

Synonyms.—*Acarus* Linnæus 1746 *pro parte*, *Ricinia* Latreille 1804 *pro parte*, *Ixodides* Leach 1815, *Ixodea* Burmeister 1837, *Ricini* Koch 1844 and 1847, *Ixodes* Gervais 1844, *Ixodida* Küchenmeister 1855, *Ixodidæ* Leach 1863, *Ixodides* Donnadieu 1875 and Mégnin 1876, *Ixodæ* Wagner 1876, *Metastigmata* Canestrini 1892, *Cynorhæstea* Marx 1892, *Arpagostoma* Lahille 1905.

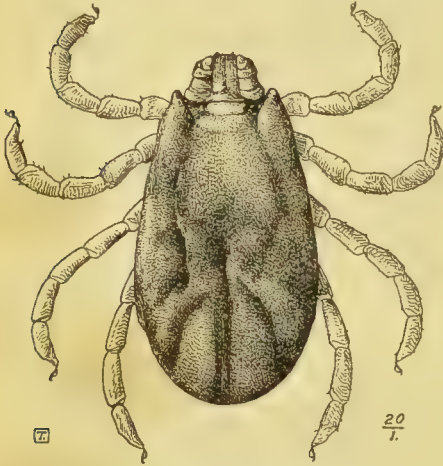


FIG. 227.—*MARGAROPUS ANNULATUS*
VAR. *AUSTRALIS* SAY.

Dorsal view of the male.

The term *Cynorhæstea* is derived from Aristotle, who speaks of these arachnids as *κυνορᾱίστης* (the dog-tormentors), because ticks were well known in his day to attack hunting-dogs.

The Ixodoidea are the ticks, which have become of importance in tropical medicine not merely because of their unpleasant bite, but because of the spread of disease by their agency—as, for example, the tick fever of Africa, Tsutsugamushi disease, the tick fever of the Rocky Mountains, etc. They are parasitic on mammals, birds, and reptiles, but are not strictly confined to one host. The Argasidæ, one of the two families included in the superfamily, are now nocturnal in habits, and do not become greatly distended with blood; while the other family, Ixodidæ, or true ticks, are very common in tropical countries.

Morphology.—A tick is divisible into a head, rostrum, or capitulum, and a body. The capitulum is the small anterior structure with the mouth parts, and is easily visible from above in the Ixodidæ (*vide* Fig. 230), but must be viewed from below in the Argasidæ (Fig. 238). It joins the rest of the body at the camerostome. The capitulum consists of the following parts:—

1. *Neck.*—This is the junction of the rostrum with the rest of the body.
2. *Base.*—This is the hard basal portion, and is usually quadrangular, but its outline varies.

In females of the Ixodidæ there are two porose areas on the upper surface. (*vide* Fig. 228). Attached behind the base is the neck; in front, in the middle line, is the haustellum, composed of the hypostome and the mandibles and their sheaths, on each side of which lie the palpi.

3. The hypostome is an elongated structure composed of two symmetrical halves, with numerous minute teeth, called denticles, on its ventral surface.

4. The chelicerae, or mandibles, are two in number—one on each side of the median line, lying dorsal to the hypostome. The posterior portion enclosed in the body is swollen for the attachment of muscles, while the anterior is flat

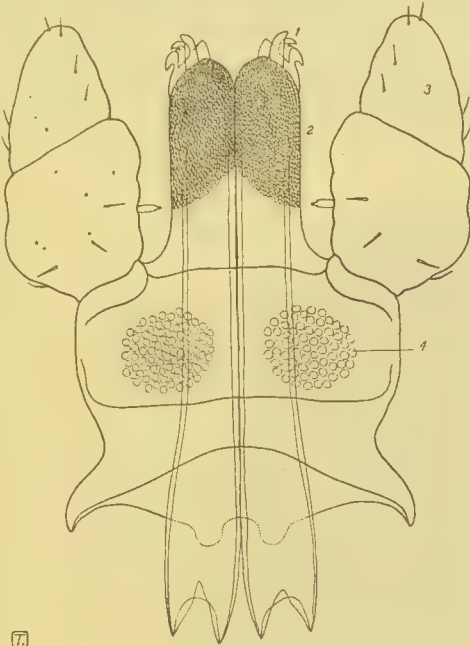


FIG. 228.—DORSAL VIEW OF THE CAPITULUM OF A TICK: FEMALE (*HÆMAPHYSALIS PUNCTATA* C. AND F.).

(After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, *Journal of Parasitology*.)

1, Chelicerae; 2, hypostome; 3, palp; 4, porose area. (The ventral aspect of this capitulum is shown in Fig. 27, p. 191.)



FIG. 229.—CHELICERA OF *H. PUNCTATA*: MALE (C. AND F.).

(After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, *Journal of Parasitology*.) (See also Fig. 28: Female Chelicera.)

and narrow, and terminated by a hook-like digit, which has two or three processes—the apophyses—an internal, an external, and a middle, with hook-like teeth.

5. The mandibular sheath lies dorsal to the mandibles.

6. The palpi are composed of four segments or articles—basal, antepenultimate, penultimate, and apical. They are of importance in classification into genera, as they possess hairs, bristles, edges, angles, and spines, varying in different species. There is sometimes a group of long hairs on the internal aspect of the palpi, which are probably sensory.

The body varies greatly in form, colour, outline, and structure. It is divided into:—(1) Dorsal surface; (2) ventral surface; (3) to (5) anterior, posterior, and lateral margins.

1. *Dorsal Surface*.—On the dorsal surface may be noted (Figs. 230 and 235):—

(a) The scutum, found in the *Ixodidæ*, and well marked in the adult male, but much smaller in the adult female. It is a hard, chitinous plate, with two longitudinal grooves (cervical grooves).

- (b) The eyes, only sometimes present on each lateral margin of the scutum in Ixodidæ, or near the first coxa in Argasidæ.
 - (c) The dorso-submedian porose plates are small, circular, or oval chitinous structures on each side of the median line, near the third and fourth legs.
 - (d) The postero-marginal festoons, when present, are eleven areas marked out by grooves lying along the posterior margin of the body between the stigmata.
 - (e) The dorsal grooves are usually longitudinal, and not always distinct, as they are due to muscular contractions.
 - (f) Pits, hairs, spines, etc., may be visible on the dorsal surface.
2. *Ventral Surface*.—The ventral surface exhibits (Fig. 241):—
- (a) The genital pore, situated in the ventro-median line, between the coxæ of the first three pairs of legs.

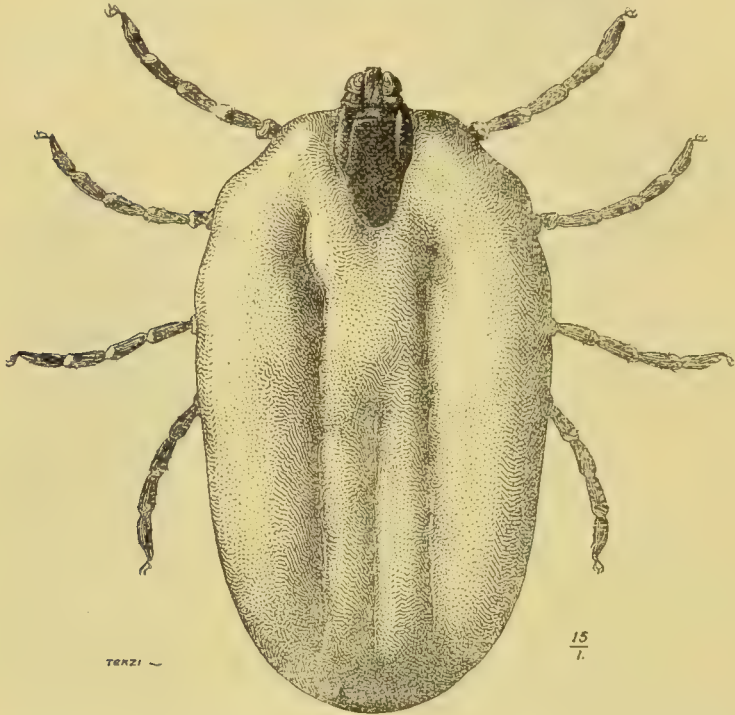


FIG. 230.—*MARGAROPUS ANNULATUS* VAR. *AUSTRALIS* SAY.
Distended female.

- (b) The anus, situate in the ventro-median line behind the posterior pair of legs. It is surrounded by a valve, and in the male of certain genera has laterally the clypea or anal valves.
 - (c) The ventral shields of chitin are small sclerites covering the surface in the male.
 - (d) The stigmata lie one on each side of the body, between the 3rd and 4th pairs of legs in the Argasidæ, and behind the fourth in the Ixodidæ.
 - (e) There are often to be seen a pair of genital furrows and an anal furrow.
 - (f) Pits, pores, hairs, and punctations are to be found as on the dorsal surface.
3. *Anterior Margin*.—This varies as compared with the posterior, being sometimes straighter, sometimes emarginate, and receiving at the camerosome the rostrum.

4. *Posterior Margin*.—This is generally rounded, and often marked by the festoons already mentioned on the dorsal surface.

5. *Lateral Margins*.—They vary as to their straightness or degree of curvature.

The legs are segmented into the following articles : coxa, trochanter, femur, patella, tibia, and tarsus.

Internal Anatomy.—The internal anatomy has been recently studied by Christophers in *Ornithodoros savignyi*, and most elaborately by Bonnet in eight Ixodidae and three Argasidae, males and females.

The tegument consists of chitinous layers, under which lies the epidermis. On the surface are the openings of numerous glands. A large cephalic gland is present in some species, opening dorsally at the junction of the rostrum with the body.

The mouth, which is lined with chitin, is situated anteriorly between the mandibular sheath dorsally and the hypostome ventrally. In this position



FIG. 231.—COPULATION OF THE MALE AND FEMALE TICK.
(After Sambon.)

it is merely a horizontal slit, with open sides, but farther back these are closed by the junction of the hypostome with the mandibular sheaths. The cavity extends backwards some little distance, and ends blindly. Into its postero-lateral angles open the ducts of the salivary glands, two large racemose glands lying over the bases of the first pair of legs. The acini are globular, and their walls consist of large cells, as a rule laden with refractile granules staining deeply, or with indistinct granules staining less deeply.

In addition to the ordinary acini, there are groups of four or five cells, forming pear-shaped masses, which have a peculiar affinity for acid stains like eosin. These elements are really unicellular glands, which open into the principal salivary ducts, not into the small ductules. These glands, which are numerous in the Argasidae, are probably poison glands.

On the floor of the mouth is a V-shaped opening, apex pointing forwards, which leads into the pharynx. This is a fusiform organ, narrow in front, where it turns upwards to open into the mouth, while behind it ends in the oesophagus. Its walls consist of chitinous plates arranged ventrally and

laterally, so that the lumen is triradiate on transverse section. At the angles the chitinous plates are united together by double folds, allowing expansion and contraction, and brought about by the contraction and relaxation of muscles taking origin in the sclerites forming the endoskeleton of the head, and inserted into these plates. It ends posteriorly in a narrow œsophagus, which is without chitinous support, and therefore soft. This œsophagus runs backward, perforating a large ganglionic mass, and ends in the mid-gut. Its walls are composed of a layer of columnar cells internally and by muscular fibres externally. Just before it joins the mid-gut its wall thickens and forms a fold, the homologue of the proventriculus, which projects into that passage.

The œsophagus opens on the floor of the large central food reservoir or mid-gut, the main canal of which runs forward a little distance in front of this opening, and backwards to the neighbourhood of the rectum.

The central canal gives off diverticula, which may be classed into an anterior set, consisting of a single diverticulum; a lateral set, consisting of an antero-lateral diverticulum, subdivided into three branches—a medio-lateral, into two or three, a postero-lateral, which is single, and a posterior set, which is also single.

The walls of the central tube and the diverticula consist of a single layer of large cells lying upon a thin basement membrane, external to which are large single muscular fibres arranged longitudinally and transversely in an open network. Digestion is assisted by free cells mingling with the coagulated blood filling the diverticula.

Posteriorly the central canal is connected with the rectum by means of a very fine canal, which appears to represent a functionless rudimentary intestine. This communication is not admitted by Bonnet.

Into the rectum open also two long, fine, much-convoluted tubules—the Malpighian tubes, which are composed of a single layer of large cells placed on a basement mem-

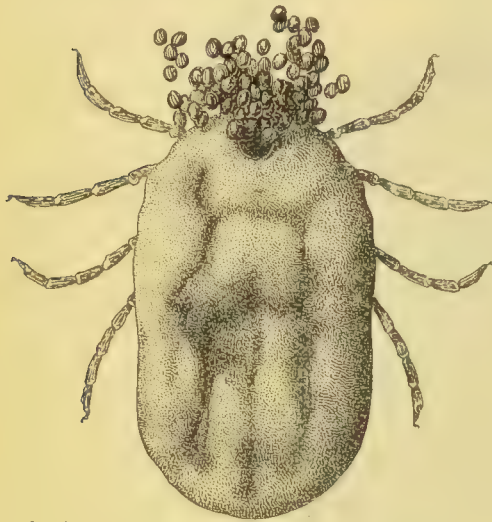


FIG. 232.—A TICK LAYING EGGS.
(After Sambon.)

brane. In females they may contain spherical corpuscles, which, though present in males, are much smaller. Berlese and Bonnet consider that these bodies are composed of guanine.

The rectum is a sacculated tube, with a wall composed of a single layer of flattened cells leading to the anus. Bonnet objects to the term 'anus,' considering the tubules as renal, the rectum as a bladder, and the opening as an excretory pore; but this term must be kept, for morphological reasons. Further, he states that this excretory matter is only expelled during moulting, collecting at other times in the rectum. The anus is a slit-like aperture, guarded by two lateral semicircular chitinous plates.

The male reproductive organs consist of a thin, transparent tubule—the testes—ending at either end in a vas deferens, which, after coiling upon itself, enters a lobulated structure—the white gland. The ejaculatory duct ends in the chitinous penis. The female reproductive organs consist of a single ovary, which lies across the abdomen, just behind the central alimentary sac. This ends in two coiled oviducts, which open into a large spermatheca with thick walls, and from which a duct leads to the genital opening.

The tick breathes by means of a system of tubes, lined by a spiral thread of chitin. These tubes are called tracheæ, and radiate, from the opening on the stigma called the 'spiracle,' all over the body. The circulatory system

consists of a median heart and distributing vessels. The fat body is well marked.

There are a number of dermal glands, a coxal gland in the second coxal joints and opening on the first coxal joints by a minute pore, and a cephalic gland in the head.

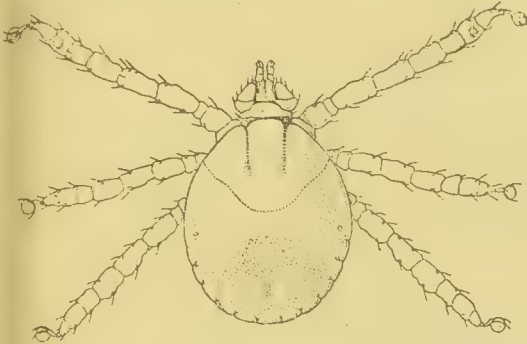


FIG. 233.—THE LARVA OF HÆMAPHYSALIS PUNCTATA C. AND F. ($\times 40$).

(After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, *Journal of Parasitology*.)

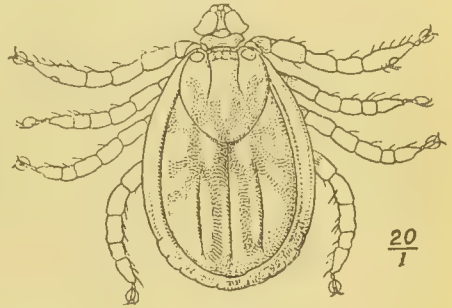


FIG. 234.—THE NYMPH OF HÆMAPHYSALIS PUNCTATA C. AND F.

(After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, *Journal of Parasitology*.)

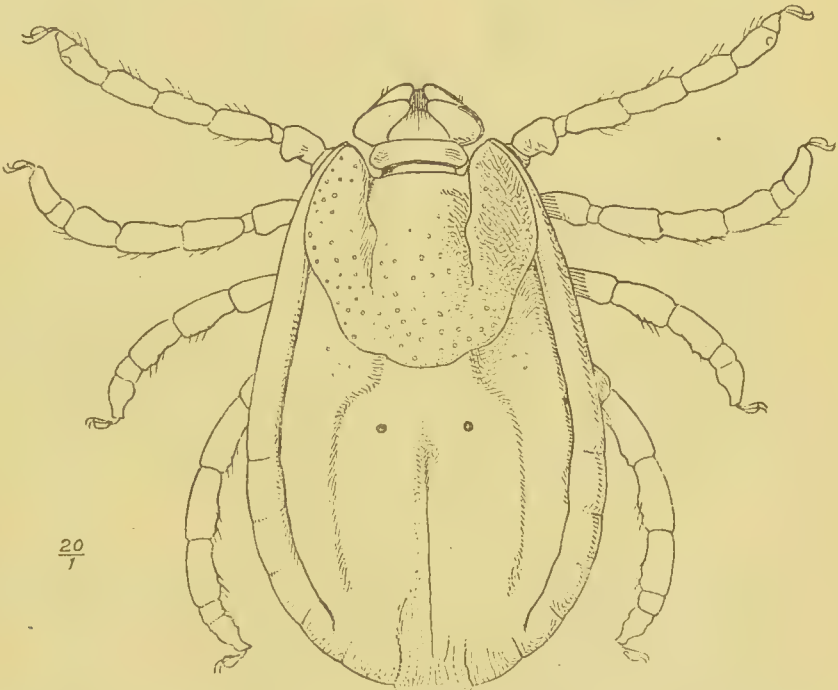


FIG. 235.—ADULT FEMALE OF HÆMAPHYSALIS PUNCTATA C. AND F.

(After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, *Journal of Parasitology*.)

Life-History.—While on the host sucking blood, the male and female parasites copulate, and the latter, growing to a large size, drops to the ground and lays a number of eggs. The egg consists of a shell with an inner membrane, enclosing food-yolk and embryo,

which eventually hatches as a six-legged larva, without sexual organs or stigmata. The digestive organs are, however, present, and the little larva, becoming parasitic on some animal, sucks its blood, drops off and moults, giving rise to the nymphæ. The nymphæ has eight legs and a pair of large stigmata, but is without reproductive openings or organs. The nymphæ now become parasitic, and feed, after which they drop off, moult, and become males or females with fully-developed generative organs.

The adults now become parasitic and moult, and the young female, fixing itself to the host, grows considerably, but rarely changes her place; while the male, remaining small, wanders about looking for the female.

The life-history and the habits of the different divisions of the *Ixodidæ* are so various that they will be described under their

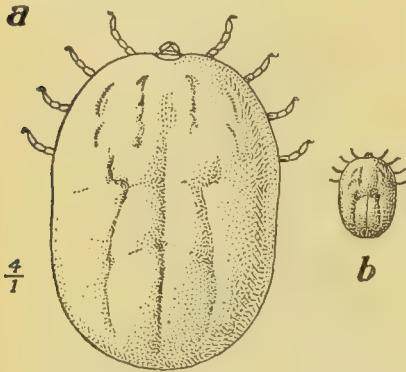


FIG. 236.—FULLY REPLETE FEMALE OF *HÆMAPHYSALIS PUNCTATA* C. AND F.

(After Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, *Journal of Parasitology*.)

(a) Magnified; (b) natural size.

separate heads. One example may, however, be mentioned here—viz., *Margaropus decoloratus*—whose life-history has been studied by Lounsbury. In this species the female, dropping off the host, completes oviposition in a time varying, according to the temperature of the air, from five days to four weeks, while the incubation of the egg varies from three weeks to three months. The larvæ, which are capable of remaining on grass without food for months, must obtain access to cattle, on which they feed, and grow for three days, after which they moult and form nymphs on the sixth day of their parasitic existence—i.e., without leaving the host.

The nymph sucks blood and grows till the eleventh day, and the adult is hatched on the thirteenth to sixteenth day without the nymph leaving the host.

Pairing takes place on the seventeenth to twentieth day, and the fertilized gorged female drops off the host on the twenty-fourth to thirty-first day. Thus, in this case the larva and nymph remain parasitic on the host, and do not drop off as described above.

Parasitic on Man.—The ticks known to be parasitic on man are:—(1) *Argas reflexus* Fabricius; (2) *A. persicus* Oken; (3) *Ornithodoros savignyi* Audouin; (4) *O. moubata* Murray; (5) *O. megnini* Dugès; (6) *O. turicata* Dugès; (7) *O. tholozani* Laboulbène and Mégnin; (8) *Alectorobius talaje* Guérin-Ménéville; (9) *Eurhhipicephalus sanguineus* Latreille; (10) *Margaropus annulatus* Say; (11) *Rhipicentor bicornis* Nuttall and Warburton; (12) *Dermacentor reticulatus* Fabricius; (13) *D. andersoni* Stiles; (14) *D. electus* Koch; (15) *D. modestus* Banks; (16) *Ixodes ricinus* Linnæus;

- (17) *I. hexagonus* Leach; (18) *Amblyomma americanum* Koch;
 (19) *A. dissimile* Koch; (20) *Hyalomma ægyptium* Linnæus.

Pathogenicity.—Ticks are spreaders of disease in man and animals. They may be classified into spreaders of *Spirochætidæ*, spreaders of *Babesia*, and into spreaders of unknown germs.

1. Spreaders of *Spirochætidæ*.

1. *Ornithodoros moubata* carries *Spiroschaudinnia duttoni* Novy and Knapp 1906, and causes African tick fever or Dutton's relapsing fever in man.
2. *Argas persicus* carries *Spiroschaudinnia marchouxi* Nuttall 1904.
3. *Margaropus annulatus* carries *Spiroschaudinnia theileri* Laveran 1904.

2. Spreaders of *Babesia*.

1. *Eurhipicephalus appendiculatus* carries *B. bigeminum*.
2. *E. simus*—*B. bigeminum*.
3. *E. evertsi*—*B. equi*.
4. *E. sanguineus*—*B. canis*.
5. *E. bursa*—*B. ovis*.
6. *Margaropus annulatus*—*B. annulatum*.
7. *Hæmaphysalis leachi*—*B. canis*.

3. Spreaders of Unknown Germs.

1. *Argas persicus* causes a disease in Persia.
2. *Dermacentor andersoni* and *D. modestus* cause Rocky Mountain fever.

Experimentally, the nymphs of *D. marginatus* and *Amblyomma americanus* and the nymphs and adults of *D. variabilis* can transmit the virus of Rocky Mountain fever.

Enemies.—The enemies of ticks are numerous, and among them may be mentioned fowls and blackbirds.

Prophylaxis.—The prevention of ticks in cattle is a difficult proceeding. The following are some of the methods in use (from Balfour and Archibald):—

Cattle Washes and Dips.—Arsenic used to be employed (Cooper's Dip Powder), but was found to be dangerous. A useful oil is crude petroleum, 2 gallons; hard soap, $\frac{1}{2}$ pound; and water, $\frac{1}{2}$ gallon. The soap is dissolved in the hot water and the petroleum gradually added. Five days' spraying is advocated in place of the usual fortnightly dip.

Rotation of Crops.—This is said to be useful in the United States.

Burning of Pastures.—Not a good plan.

Immunization.—Immunization by inoculation against babesia, etc. It is not very useful.

Quarantine.—Quarantine of cattle and control over their movements is important.

There are, however, a good many practical points to be attended to in spraying or dipping cattle. Reference may be made to Cooper's paper in the *Journal of Agricultural Science*, vol. iii., or to Newstead's Report of Twenty-first Expedition of the Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine.

Classification.—The Ixodoidea are divided into two families:—

FAMILY I. ARGASIDÆ Canestrini 1890.—Ixodoidea without a scutum; mouth parts of adult not prominent from above; no pulvilli attached to tarsus in adults.

FAMILY 2. IXODIDÆ Murray 1877.—Ixodoidea with a scutum; mouth parts prominent from above; pulvillus present, attached to the tarsus in adults.

Remarks.—Neumann's classification is very different from the one used in this book. He recognizes ixodidæ (=ixodoidea) divided into Ixodinæ (= Argasidæ and Ixodidæ) and Spelæorhynchinæ, these last being parasites on bats. Other classifications are those by Lahille and by Banks.

FAMILY 1. ARGASIDÆ.

These arachnids are more like bugs than ticks in their habits. During the day they are concealed in cracks in walls or floors, or in gravel, but at night they come out and run about. Christophers

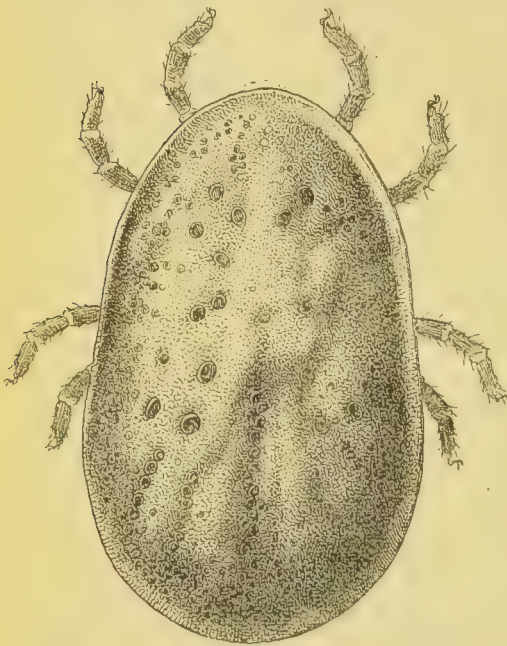


FIG. 237.—*ARGAS PERSICUS* LATREILLE :
FEMALE, DORSAL ASPECT.



FIG. 238.—*ARGAS PERSICUS* LATREILLE :
FEMALE, VENTRAL ASPECT.

says that if handled they sham death, and that when running about they have a curious habit of raising the first pair of legs as though to receive information about their surroundings. They can live for a long time (three to four years) without food. They generally feed after dark, being gorged in about fifteen minutes.

Donovan states that while feeding fluid is secreted by the coxal glands, and lies between the parasite and the skin of the host. This fluid is alkaline, and prevents coagulation of blood. After feeding, the tick drops to the ground, and, being wet with secretion, becomes covered with dust and dirt. At first they are much swollen, but in a few days this diminishes, though they may remain distended for weeks. Soon after feeding, the tick moults, and then becomes active again, and is ready for another feed.

The Argasidæ pair at various times, one female being fertilized by several males. The female now becomes quiescent, and passes out its ova, a process requiring a week or more to be completed. During this process the head is forcibly flexed on the body, so that the palpi lie on each side of the body, while above the head is the prolapsed duct of the cephalic gland, forming a protuberant mass. The ova are not as numerous as those of the cattle ticks, and are generally laid in a loosely adherent mass.

The six-legged larva hatches in less than a week. In *Ornithodoros* it appears to be quiescent, making no attempt to obtain food, and in *O. moubata* does not leave the egg. In three or four days it moults, and becomes the eight-legged nymph, which is an active little creature, feeding readily. In *Argas* the larva is more vigorous, and feeds. It appears as though there were great differences in the life-history of the different species of the Argasidæ.

The adult Argasidæ appear to moult many times as they grow larger. They are preyed upon by insects.

Genera.—The Argasidæ are divided into four genera:—*Argas*, *Caris*, *Ornithodoros*, *Alectorobius*.

The diagnosis of these genera is as follows:—

1. Eyes absent, body usually flat, with thin borders, without deep ventral grooves: (a) No groove behind anus—*Argas*; (b) transverse groove behind anus—*Caris*.

2. Eyes present or absent; body more or less distended, with deep ventral grooves: (a) Without a fold of skin (sclerite) on each side of palpi—*Ornithodoros*; (b) with such a fold—*Alectorobius*.

There is, however, some doubt as to whether *Caris* is really entitled to be a separate genus.

Argas Latreille 1796.

Synonyms.—*Nec Argas* Scoul 1835, *Carois* Latreille 1796, *Rhyncho-prion* Hermann 1804, *Caris* Latreille 1806.

Definition.—Argasidæ with oval or flattened bodies, in which the rostrum is at least its own length from the anterior margin, which is less bluntly rounded than the posterior margin. No fold present around the base of the rostrum ventrally. Tegument roughened by wrinkles and folds, and marked by circular pits. Without eyes.

Type.—*Argas reflexus* Fabricius 1794.

The number of species known is steadily increasing. The more important can be defined by the following table, modified from Neumann:—

A. Posterior margin with rectangular festoons—*A. persicus*.

B. Posterior margin with narrow festoons:

1. Tegument with fine folds, body long, swollen—*A. hermanni*.

II. Tegument with large folds, body flat :—

(a) Body narrower in front :—

(1) Anterior extremity flat and rounded—*A. reflexus*.

(2) Anterior extremity pointed :—

(a) With deep camerostome and dorsal hexagonal markings—*A. brumpti*.(b) Without these—*A. æqualis*.

(β) Body almost as large in front as behind :—

(1) Body short, a little longer than broad—*A. transgariæpinus*.(2) Body twice as long as broad—*A. cucumerinus*.**Argas reflexus** Fabricius 1794.**Synonyms.**—*Acarus reflexus* Fabricius 1794, *A. marginatus* Fabricius 1794, *Rhynchoporon columbæ* Hermann 1804.*Argas* with yellowish body ; male 4 by 3 millimetres, female 6 to 8 by 4 millimetres. Its distribution is mainly in Europe and America, where it lives in doves ; but it can and does attack man, producing the symptoms already described (p. 191).**Argas persicus** Oken 1818.**Synonyms.**—*Rhynchoprion persicum* Oken 1818, *Argas persicus* Fischer de Waldheim 1820, *A. mauritanus* Guérin-Ménéville, *A. miniatus* Koch 1844, *A. americanus* Packard 1872, *A. sanchezi* Dugès 1891, *A. chinche* Gondet.*Argas* with oval, brownish-red body. Male, 4 to 5 by 3 millimetres ; female, 7 to 10 by 5 to 6 millimetres. Dorsal and ventral surfaces with pits in rows, and irregularly placed.This *Argas* is widely distributed, being found in Asia, where, under the term 'garib-guez' (*punaïse de Miana*), it has long had an evil reputation for causing sickness. It is also known in Quetta. In South Africa it occurs as a parasite of fowls and ducks, and is also known in the Sudan, Egypt, Turkestan, and Pekin. Under the name of *A. miniatus* it was described in the form of the chicken tick of the United States and the adobe tick of Mexico and Arizona. According to Balfour, it spreads the *Spirochæta marchouxi* in Sudanese fowls. Nuttall and Strickland have demonstrated the presence of an anticoagulin in the salivary glands and intestine of the tick.**Argas brumpti** Neumann 1907.

This tick was discovered by Brumpt in Somaliland. The dorsum is marked by symmetrical hexagonal depressed areas. Female, 20 by 13 millimetres. Nuttall says that, according to Brumpt, the bite is very painful, and causes pruritus lasting several days, and the site may remain indurated after seven years.

Argas cucumerinus Neumann 1901.

Only the male of this tick is known. It has an oval elongated body, brownish-red in colour, 10 by 5 millimetres. It is found in Lima in Peru. Possibly this is merely a variety of *A. reflexus*.

Argas hermanni Audouin 1827.

Argas with very fine skin-folds and small rostrum. It is found in Abyssinia and Egypt. Possibly this also is only a variety of *A. reflexus*.

Argas æqualis Neumann 1908.

Synonym.—*Ornithodoros æqualis* Neumann 1901.

Nuttall places this species with the Argasidæ. It was found in German East Africa by Fülleborn. In size it is 5 by 2.5 millimetres, with folded finely granulated integument.

Argas transgariëpinus White 1846.

Synonym.—*Argas kochi* Neumann 1901.

Argas with very compressed body, not much longer than broad—7.5 by 6 millimetres. Margin with irregular folds. Found in South Africa.

Caris Latreille 1804.

Argasidæ with almost circular body, a little larger in front than behind, with a conspicuous transverse groove behind the anus.

Caris vespertilionis Latreille 1796.

Synonyms.—*Carios vespertilionis* Latreille 1796, *Argas pulchella* George 1876.

Parasitic on bats.

Ornithodoros Koch 1844.

Argasidæ with or without eyes. Rostrum surrounded ventrally by a camerostome. Tips of the palpi visible from above. Lateral borders of the body straight, sometimes concave. Integument mammillated, with hemispherical elevations. Two longitudinal coxal folds, a pair of supracoxal folds, one transverse pre-anal and one post-anal groove, and one longitudinal anal groove running from the anus to the post-anal groove.

Type.—*Ornithodoros savignyi* Audouin 1827.

Eleven species are recorded: (1) *Ornithodoros savignyi* Audouin 1827; (2) *O. moubata* Murray 1877; (3) *O. turicata* Dugès 1876; (4) *O. megnini* Dugès 1883; (5) *O. lahorensis* Neumann 1908; (6) *O. tholozani* Laboulbène and Mégnin 1882; (7) *O. pavimentosus* Neumann 1901; (8) *O. furcosus* Neumann 1908; (9) *O. erraticus* Lucas 1849; (10) *O. coriaceus* Koch 1844; (11) *O. canestrinii* Birula 1895.

DIAGNOSTIC TABLE.

A. Eyes present :—

Three knobs on the last segment of the fourth leg :—

- (a) Tegument with hemispherical protuberances :—
 - (1) Eyes of equal size (Africa and India)—*O. savignyi*.
 - (2) Anterior eyes larger (America)—*O. coriaceus*.
- (b) Tegument with flattened protuberances (Africa)—*O. pavimentosus*.

B. Eyes absent :—

I. Subrectangular body nearly square (Mexico)—*O. turicata*.

II. Body more or less constricted behind the fourth pair of legs :—

- (a) With broad anterior end (Mexico)—*O. megnini*.
- (b) With narrow anterior end (Lahore)—*O. lahorensis*.

III. Ovoid body, with broader posterior end :—

- (a) Anterior end broad and rounded (Central Africa)—*O. moubata*.
- (b) Anterior end tapering :—
 - (1) Tarsi forked distally (Ecuador)—*O. furcosus*.
 - (2) Tarsi slightly knobbed (Algeria)—*O. erraticus*.
 - (3) Tarsi second to fourth markedly knobbed (Persia)—*O. tholozani*.
 - (4) Tarsi first with three dorsal knobs, second to fourth with one knob (Persia)—*O. canestrinii*.

Ornithodoros savignyi Audouin 1827.

Synonyms.—*Argas savignyi* Audouin 1827, *Ornithodoros morbillosus* Gerstäcker 1873, *Argas schinzii* Berlese 1889.

This is the type species of the genus, and has been studied in detail by Neumann and Christophers.

It is common in Africa, India and Aden, and perhaps elsewhere.

Morphology.—*Ornithodoros*, with two pairs of eyes appearing as circular, smooth, convex elevations, situated on the supracoxal fold above the bases of the first pair of legs, and between those of the second and third pairs. Body oval, constricted slightly between the third and fourth pairs of legs, yellow in colour when young, and blackish-brown when old. Integument covered with irregular hemispherical prominences pointed at their summits, between which are narrow depressions with hairs. Capitulum embedded in an infundibuliform camerostome, from which it is separated by a deep groove, in the dorsal portion of which can be seen the opening of the cephalic gland. Mandibles with a simple claw-like internal apophysis, and without middle apophysis. Teeth of the hypostome arranged in three longitudinal parallel rows. Two spines at the base of the hypostome, which is large.

Dorsum of the body marked by two transverse furrows, one just in front of the posterior border, and the other situate farther

forward, marking off a median elevation with a central depression, and seven similar depressions, each of which becomes a deep sulcus posteriorly.

The ventral surface shows a well-marked pre-anal furrow, which laterally meets the supracoxal sulcus, which runs round the anterior aspect of the body as a well-marked groove, defining the supracoxal fold, on which the eyes are situate. Behind the anus are three symmetrical longitudinal grooves, while a short V-shaped depression abuts on the anus. The genital papilla is well marked, and surrounds the wide transverse opening.

The fourth pair of legs is one and a half times as long as the first. The coxæ are contiguous, and diminish in size from the first to the fourth, and the first has the opening of the coxal gland. Christophers has observed that the fluid from this gland is alkaline and prevents coagulation of the blood. The stigmata are placed behind and above the supracoxal folds. The fifth joints of the first three pairs of legs with three teeth, the two proximal, quadrangular, and the distal conical.

This tick is very hardy, and is said to be able to live for many months without food or moisture. It attacks human beings, and is found in Africa and India.

Pathogenicity.—Not known.

Ornithodoros moubata Murray 1877.

Synonyms.—*Argas moubata* Murray 1877, *Ixodes moubata* Cobbold 1882, *Ornithodoros savignyi* var. *cæca* Neumann 1901.

O. moubata is of importance as the spreader of *Spirochaeta duttoni*, the cause of Dutton's relapsing fever, or African tick fever. The tick is distributed widely in Africa, where it is called bibo in Uganda, moubata in Angola, and tampan in Zambesi. Christy has described a similar tick in Brazil.

Morphology.—*Ornithodoros* without eyes, body oval, a little wider behind than in front, with a slight constriction between the third and fourth legs; colour varies with age from yellow-brown to dusky brown. Integument covered with irregular hemispherical prominences. Capitulum embedded in an infundibuliform camerostome. Mandible with external apophyses, with two widely separated teeth, and an internal apophysis, which is bidentate. Hypostome not much wider at the base than at the anterior third. Dorsum of the body marked by two short transverse grooves posteriorly and three pairs of pits, from each of which a sulcus runs backwards and inwards.

The ventral surface shows a well-marked pre-anal sulcus, which joins the supracoxal groove, as in *S. savignyi*; behind the anus are three pairs of longitudinal grooves. The stigmata are semilunar, situate above the supracoxal groove. The last segment of the fourth pair of legs is stout and compressed, with three knobs, the distance between the first and second being equal to that between the second and third.

Tibiæ and tarsi of the first three pairs of legs, with three teeth—proximal, submedian, and distal, the last being conical.

Life-History.—The female lays a variable number of eggs, from 70 to 139, which adhere together, and are golden-brown in colour: 881 by 776 μ . Inside these eggs the larvæ develop and moult,

becoming nymphæ, which hatch about the twentieth day at a temperature of 20° to 30° C. and a humidity of 71 to 77 per cent. After three or four days these nymphæ suck blood. At first the position of the stigma is marked by only a small white spot and pit, but after the first moult this becomes clear. The genital pore is always absent until after the second moult.

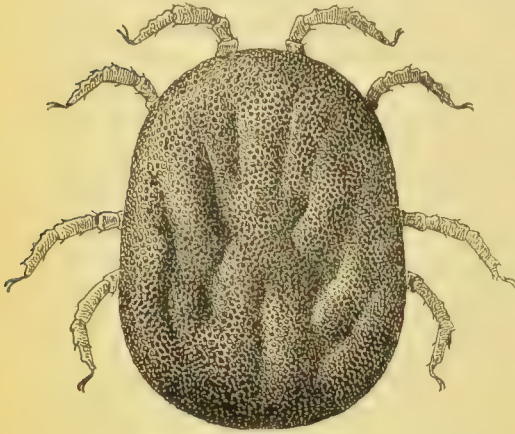


FIG. 239.—*ORNITHODOROS MOUBATA* MURRAY: FEMALE, DORSAL ASPECT ($\times 4$).



FIG. 240.—*ORNITHODOROS MOUBATA* MURRAY: FEMALE, VENTRAL ASPECT ($\times 4$).

The adult tick moults after each feed of blood, and may live about a year. They are night feeders, and rather resemble bugs in their habits. Leishmann observed that the fluid secreted by the coxal glands prevents coagulation of the blood.

Pathogenicity.—It is the spreader of *Spiro schaudinnia duttoni*, and according to Wellman and Feldmann possibly of *Acanthocheilonema perslans*.

Ornithodoros turicatus Dugès 1876.

Synonyms.—*Argasturicata* Dugès 1876, *Ornithodoros americanus* Marx 1895.

Ornithodoros without eyes; anteriorly the body is much narrowed. Tibiæ and tarsi with three small tubercles.

Habitat.—Mexico and Central America. Attacks men and fowls.

Ornithodoros megnini Dugès 1883.

Synonyms.—*Argas megnini* Dugès 1883, *A. americana* Packard 1893, *Rhynchoprium spinosum* Marx 1895.

Ornithodoros with phial-shaped body; attenuated anteriorly. Females 5 to 6 millimetres by 3 to 4 millimetres. Males somewhat smaller.

This is the ear tick of American cattle, and has been found in the ear of man.

Ornithodoros lahorensis Neumann 1908.

Ornithodoros without eyes. Male 8 by 4.5 millimetres. Female 10 by 5.6 millimetres. Found at Lahore, India. Parasitic on sheep.

Ornithodoros tholozani Laboulbène and Mégnin 1882.

Synonyms.—*A. tholozani* Laboulbène and Mégnin 1882, *A. papillipes* Birula 1895.

Ornithodoros without eyes. Males 4 to 6 millimetres in length and 2 to 4 millimetres in breadth. Females 8 to 10 millimetres by 4 to 5 millimetres.

It is specially a parasite of sheep in Caucasia and Persia, but is very dangerous to man.

Ornithodoros pavementosus Neumann 1901.

Ornithodoros with eyes. Body covered with flat warts forming a pavement. South Africa. Only female known. 12 by 8 millimetres.

Ornithodoros furcosus Neumann 1908.

Found in Ecuador. Female 10 by 5 millimetres.

Ornithodoros erraticus Lucas 1849.

Synonyms.—*Argas erraticus* Lucas 1849, *O. miliaris* Karsch 1880. Found in Algeria and Bengal. Length, 5 millimetres; breadth, 3 millimetres.

Ornithodoros coriaceus Koch 1844.

Ornithodoros with eyes. Only one knob on the hind tarsus. America. Male 6.4 to 8.6 by 3.4 to 4.6 millimetres; female 9.5 to 13.8 by 5.3 to 8.2 millimetres.

Ornithodoros canestrinii Birula 1895.

Synonym.—*Argas canestrinii* Birula 1895.

Found in Persia. Male 10 by 5 millimetres; female 14 by 8 millimetres.

Alectorobius Pocock 1907.

Argasidæ with folds of integument capable of being folded under the palpi. This genus is not recognized by Nuttall, as he considers it a synonym of *Ornithodoros*.

Type.—*A. talaje* Guérin-Méneville 1849.

Alectorobius talaje Guérin-Méneville 1849.

Synonyms.—*O. talaje* Guérin and Méneville 1849, *O. rudis* Karsch 1880, *Alectorobius talaje* Pocock 1907.

This is the chinch of South America and Mexico, where it is a great pest. *A. coniceps* of South Europe and *A. capensis* of South Africa are varieties of this species.

FAMILY 2. IXODIDÆ Murray 1877.

Synonyms.—*Ixodei* Dugès 1834, *Ixodiden* Koch 1844, *Ixodidés* Gervais and van Beneden 1859, *Ixodini* Canestrini and Fanzago 1877, *Ixodinæ* Trouessart 1892, *Anistomata* Marx 1892.

Ixodoidea with a dorsal scutum and a terminal capitulum. The digit of the mandible has two apophyses, and the palpi are free.

Most of the ticks belong to this family, which has the following features:—

Morphology.—There is a dorsal scutum and a terminal capitulum. The mandible has a digit with two apophyses, of which the internal is short, with one to four teeth, and the external long, with two to five teeth. The palpi are free. The second pair of legs is the shortest, and the fourth pair the longest. The tarsus has a pulvillum. The stigmata are situate posterior to the coxa of the fourth leg. The male is smaller and fatter than the female. The scutum covers the whole dorsum except a marginal region, the posterior portion of which, between the two stigmata, is generally divided into eleven festoons. The female has but a small scutum, situated anteriorly, and the capitulum has two symmetrical porose areas on its basal piece.

Type Genus.—*Ixodes* Latreille 1796. (*Vide* Fig. 246.)

Life-History of the Ixodidæ.—When the pregnant female tick drops off the host, it at first appears to seek for a suitable place to lay its eggs. When this is found, it becomes quiescent, and the anterior part of the ventral surface between the first pair of legs becomes depressed, and forms a hollow, in which the head and genital orifice are situated. When an ovum passes out of the orifice, the tick moves slightly backwards. This oviposition takes about fifteen to twenty days. While it is proceeding the tick begins to shrivel and to show yellow areas, due to the distension of the Malpighian tubes with guanin. At the end of oviposition the tick dies.

From the egg comes a six-legged larva, which generally climbs into some grass or bushes and waits to get on to a host. While so doing it may remain for months without food.

It now sucks blood, and drops off this first host and moults on the ground, becoming an eight-legged nymph, like an adult, but without generative apparatus, which again has to go in search of a second host and obtain a feed of blood, when it drops off and undergoes a second moult, turning this time into the sexually mature adult, which goes in search of a third host. Before feeding, the adult female is small, flat, and thin. When she arrives on the third host she drives her rostrum perpendicularly into the skin as far as its base, a hole being made by the mandibles.

The palpi do not enter the hole in the skin, but lie on each side.

The recurved hooks on the hypostome keep the tick in position, and can only with difficulty be detached. The tick now sucks the blood; and at the same time becomes fertilized, and increases enormously in size by the addition of blood and the development of the

eggs. She then drops off this third host and proceeds to lay her eggs.

The male does not gorge and does not increase so much in size, but sucks blood, which it requires for its fertilizing work.

The *Ixodidæ* are divided into two subfamilies :—

SUBFAMILY 1. RHIPICEPHALINÆ Salmon and Stiles 1901.

Synonyms.—*Rhipistomidea* Koch 1844, *Conipalpi* Canestrini 1890, *Rhipicephalæ* Neumann 1897, *Rhipistomidæ* Marx 1896.

Ixodidæ in which the palpi are no longer than broad. Anterior portion of the body emarginate.

Type Genus.—*Eurhipicephalus* Neumann 1904.

Genera.—*Eurhipicephalus*, *Margaropus*, *Hæmaphysalis*, *Demacentor*, *Rhipicentor*.

SUBFAMILY 2. IXODINÆ Salmon and Stiles 1901.

Synonyms.—*Ixodidea* Koch 1844, *Cultripalpi* Canestrini 1890, *Ixodidæ* Marx 1892, *Hæmatustoridæ* Marx 1892, *Eschatocephalidæ* Marx 1892, *Ixodæ* Neumann 1899.

Ixodidæ with palpi longer than broad; rostrum long. Anterior portion of the body straight or emarginate.

Type Genus.—*Ixodes*.

Genera.—*Ixodes*, *Eschatocephalus*, *Ceratixodes*, *Aponomma*, *Amblyomma*, *Hyalomma*.

DIAGNOSTIC TABLE OF GENERA, FROM SALMON AND STILES.

RHIPICEPHALINÆ.

A. Eyes present—

I. Dorsal surface of capitulum hexagonal, sides drawn out laterally into sharp points.

(a) Males with anal plates.

1. Second and third palpal segments straight; stigmata comma-shaped—*Eurhipicephalus*.
2. Second and third palpal segments drawn out laterally into sharp points; stigmata round—*Margaropus*.

(b) Males with rudimentary anal plates—*Rhipicentor*.

II. Dorsal surface of capitulum rectangular, sides straight; male without anal plate—*Dermacentor*.

B. Eyes absent—*Hæmaphysalis*.

Nuttall and Warburton's new classification of the *Ixodidæ* is as follows :—

Prostriata.—*Ixodidæ* with anal grooves surrounding the anus in front—*Ixodes*.

Metastricata.—*Ixodidæ* with anal groove contouring the anus behind, but this groove may be faint or obsolete.

Brevirostrata.—Group I. Inornate without eyes, but with festoons—*Hæmaphysalis*.

Group II. Ornate or inornate with eyes, and with or without festoons.

Anal grooves marked.

Ornate with festoons.

Basis capituli rectangular dorsally—*Dermacentor*.Basis capituli hexagonal dorsally—*Rhipicentor*.

Usually inornate with festoons.

Basis capituli usually hexagonal dorsally—*Rhipicephalus*.

Anal grooves obsolete.

With short palpes—*Margaropus*.With very short compressed palpes ridged dorsally and laterally—*Boöphilus*.*Longirostrata*.—Group I. Ornate or inornate, with eyes and with or without festoons, basis capituli subtriangular dorsally. Male with a pair of adanal shields—*Hyalomma*.Group II. Generally ornate, with eyes and with festoons, basis capituli variable. Without adanal shields—*Amblyomma*.Subgenus *Aponomma* chiefly found on reptiles with poorly developed or no eyes.

It will be observed that the genera *Eschatocephalus* and *Ceratixodes* are rejected and referred to the genus *Ixodes*. Another genus, *Neumannella* Lahille 1905, is also rejected, and it is referred to *Aponomma*.

SUBFAMILY RHIPICEPHALINÆ.

Eurhipicephalus Neumann 1904.**Synonyms.**—*Rhipicephalus* Koch 1844, *Phauloixodes* Berlese 1889.

Rhipicephalinæ with distinct eyes; base of the capitulum broader than long; hexagonal, or dorsal surface forming a projecting angle at each side. Palpi short and broad. First coxa with two large teeth. Male with one or two pairs of anal shields. (Fig. 241.)

Type Species.—*Eurhipicephalus sanguineus* Latreille 1804.*Eurhipicephalus appendiculatus* Neumann 1901.

This is the brown tick of South Africa, where it spreads *Babesia parva* among cattle and buffaloes, causing 'coast fever.'

Morphology.—Male, scutum does not quite cover the dorsum; festoons narrow; the median is prolonged into a caudal process. In front of the festoons, three wide longitudinal grooves. Size, 4 by 2.6 millimetres. Female, dorsal plate oval; porose area small.

Life-History.—The eggs are laid in thousands on the grass, and hatch in about twenty-eight days into six-legged larvæ, which pass from the grass on to cattle, suck blood, and drop off replete in about three to four days.

They now remain dormant for about twenty-one days, and finally moult, giving rise to the eight-legged nymph.

The nymph proceeds to attack cattle and suck blood, taking the same length of time as the larva. It then drops off replete, and in about eighteen days moults and becomes an adult male or female tick, which again infests cattle. The female settles down quickly,

and is joined by the male. In about four days the female, which has become fertilized and full of blood, drops off, and completes the life-cycle by laying the eggs, after which she dies.

What becomes of the male is not known.

Pathogenicity.—It spreads *Babesia parva*, the cause of coast fever in cattle, by the bites of the infected nymphs only—*i.e.*, infected larvæ and adults do not spread the disease, but the larva can hand the infection over to the nymph, which is the spreader.

Eurhipicephalus bursa Canestrini and Fanzago 1878.

Synonym.—*Rhipicephalus bilenus* Pavesi 1883.

This species is widespread through Southern Europe, and is also known in Africa, West Indies, and Malaga, as a sheep, horse, cattle, and dog tick.

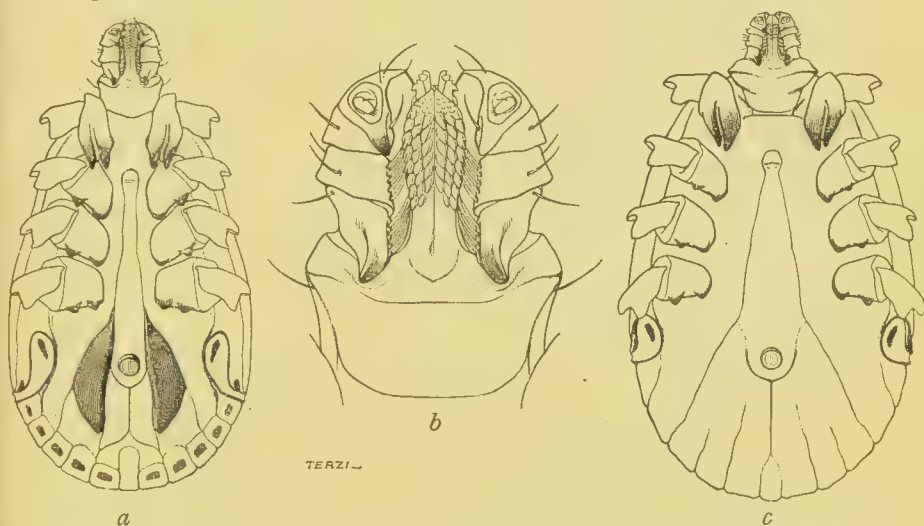


FIG. 241.—EURHIPECEPHALUS PULCHELLUS GERSTÄCKER 1873:
VENTRAL ASPECT.

a, Male ($\times 10$); *b*, mouth parts (more highly magnified); *c*, female ($\times 10$).

Morphology.—Male, scutum half as long as wide; narrow anteriorly, with many punctations. Eleven festoons. Size 4.5 by 3 millimetres.

Female, when newly hatched, flat; when distended with blood, ovoid. Scutum oval; eyes about the middle of the length. Tegument with numerous punctations dorsally when young.

Life-History.—The female lays the eggs on grass, and these develop into larvæ, which attack a sheep, and moult on it in about eight days, forming nymphæ, which grow for twenty-one days, fall off on to the ground, moult, and become adults, which again infest sheep.

Pathogenicity.—It spreads *B. ovis*, which causes 'heart-water' in sheep, the infection being carried from an adult female through the eggs to the adult ticks of the next generation, which alone are capable of transmitting the disease.

Eurhipicephalus simus Koch 1844.

Synonyms.—*Rhipicephalus senegalensis* Koch 1844, *Rh. prætentatus* Gerstäcker 1893.

This tick is found in various parts of Africa—viz., Egypt, German East Africa, and the Cape. It has several varieties—e.g., *E. simus erlangeri*, *E. simus hilgerti*, *E. simus shingleyi*. In South Africa it is called the black-pitted tick, because of its punctations, and causes 'coast fever' by spreading *Babesia parva*. Male oval, rounded posteriorly; 4 by 2.2 millimetres. Scutum brown-red. Female oval, 6 by 3 millimetres.

Eurhipicephalus sanguineus Latreille 1804.

Synonyms.—*Ixodes sanguineus* Latreille 1804, *I. rufus* Koch 1844.

Synonym of Nymph.—*Phauloixodes rufus* Berlese 1889.

This is the common dog tick, by which *B. canis* is spread, which it acquires as an adult, and transmits in the succeeding nymphal and adult stages. It also spreads *Hæmogregarina canis*. It is practically cosmopolitan.

The female has an elliptical body, wider in front than behind: 11 by 7 millimetres, reddish-brown in colour. Scutum very small; integument nearly or completely without hairs. The mandibles have an internal apophysis with three teeth, arranged one internally and two externally; and an external apophysis with three teeth, arranged in series.

The male is 3.35 by 1.55 millimetres, with a scutum covering the dorsal surface, except at the sides and back. External apophysis with only two teeth.

Eurhipicephalus evertsi Neumann 1897.

This is the red-leg tick, which spreads *B. equi*, and is found in Europe, Africa, and Asia. The life-history resembles *Eurhipicephalus appendiculatus* in the changes of host by larva and nymph. The infection is acquired in the nymphal stage, and transmitted by the adult. Size: male, 5 to 6 by 3 to 4 millimetres; female, 14 by 9 millimetres.

Margaropus Karsh 1879.

Synonyms.—*Boöphilus* Curtice 1891, *Rhipicephalus* Neumann 1897.

Rhipicephalinae with eyes, though often indistinct; base and capitulum broader than long. Palpi short and broad; second and third segment thicker in the middle, and forming a sharp angle externally. Posterior margin of the first coxa slightly bidentate; stigmal plate round. Body without marginal festoons; anal groove absent. Male with two pairs of anal plates.

Type.—*Margaropus annulatus* Say 1821.

Only three or, according to Neumann, two species, of which two species (*M. annulatus*, *M. decoloratus*) may be one, the third being *M. lounsburyi* Neumann 1907.

Margaropus annulatus Say 1821.

Synonyms.—*Ixodes annulatus* Say 1821, *Hæmaphysalis rosea* Koch 1844, *Ixodes bovis* Riley 1869, *Margaropus winthemi* Karsch 1879, *Boophilus bovis* Curtice 1880, and several others.

Female with elliptical body, as wide in front as behind. Scutum very small. Eyes small. Dorsal surface, with two antero-posterior grooves, interrupted towards their middle. Ventral surface with small sexual aperture and sexual furrows. Stigmata oval. Capitulum very short. Internal apophysis of mandible conical; the external with three teeth. Hypostome broad. Palpi very short. Legs short (*vide* Fig. 230).

Male with body oval, 2.15 by 2.35 millimetres, narrow anteriorly; widest opposite stigmata. Scutum brown-red, covering the whole dorsal surface with large punctata. Sexual orifice large, a little in front of the level of the second pair of legs. Festoons hardly marked. Two pairs of clypeal shields. Internal apophysis of the mandibles with bifid point; the external has two teeth. Coxa of first leg with a blunt anterior process and bifid posteriorly (Fig. 227).

This tick has a very wide geographical distribution, being found in North and South America, the West Indies, Africa, Europe, Japan, and Australia; but the different countries show certain variations in the tick, and hence the species receive a little change in the name.

Life-History.—*Margaropus annulatus* begins its life with the egg on the ground, from which the larva emerges, and, gaining access to the host, undergoes its development into nymph and adult without the changes of host described in *Eurhipicephalus*.

When the adult female has gorged with blood, she drops off the host and lays her eggs.

Pathogenicity.—It is the spreader of *Babesia bigemina*, the cause of Texas or red-water fever in cattle. The adult female acquires the *Babesia* and passes it on to the larva, which infects the host. It is also the carrier of *Spiroschaudinnia theileri*.

Varieties.—The names of the varieties are: (1) *M. dugesi* Mégnin 1880, in North Africa; (2) *M. microphilus* Canestrini 1887, in South America; (3) *M. australis* Fuller 1899, in Australia, Asia, Africa; (4) *M. calcaratus* Birula 1895, in the Caucasus; (5) *M. caudatus* Neumann 1901, in Japan; (6) *M. argentinus* Neumann 1901, in Buenos Ayres.

Margaropus decoloratus Koch 1844.

This is looked upon as a variety of *Margaropus annulatus* Say by some authors. It is the blue tick of South Africa.

Morphology.—The clypeal plates in the male end in sharp points, and a caudal appendage is present. The hypostome has six rows of teeth.

Life-History.—It lives from the larval stage to the adult on the same host. The adult, when fully fed, drops off and lays the eggs on the ground.

Pathogenicity.—It is a spreader of *Babesia bigemina*.

Rhipicentor Nuttall and Warburton 1908.

Rhipicephalinæ with eyes, inornate, with festoons. Basis capituli hexagonal dorsally, and having very prominent lateral angles with short palps. Coxa I. bifid in both sexes. The male resembles *Eurhipicephalus* dorsally and *Dermacentor* ventrally. Coxa IV. is much the largest. There are no ventral shields or plates. Spiracles subtriangular or comma-shaped.

Type.—*Rhipicentor bicornis* Nuttall and Warburton 1908.

Rhipicentor bicornis Nuttall and Warburton 1908.

Synonym.—*Rhipicephalus gladiger* Neumann 1908.

This is an African species living on the horse in the Congo and Central Africa. It attacks and can live on man. Another species is *Rh. vicinus* Nuttall 1908.

Dermacentor Koch 1844.

Rhipicephalinæ with eyes; base of capitulum rectangular, broader than long. Dorso-submedian porose plate present; palpi short and thick; stigmata comma-shaped. Male without anal shields. The coxa of the fourth leg much larger than those of the others. Scutum ornamented.

Type.—*Dermacentor reticulatus* Fabricius 1794.

In 1910 Stiles classified the species of *Dermacentor* into four groups, according to the microscopical structure of the stigmal plates in the adult.

- A. Adults with four longitudinal rows of large denticles on each half of hypostome, stigmal plate nearly circular without dorso-lateral prolongation, goblets very large—*D. nitens*.
- B. Adults with three longitudinal rows of large denticles on each half of hypostome, goblets small, medium, or large.
Dorso-lateral prolongation of stigmal plate absent—*Salmoni group*.
Dorso-lateral prolongation of stigmal plate distinct.
Goblets of medium size—*Andersoni group*.
Goblets small—*Reticulatus group*.

The *Salmoni group* includes *D. albipictus* Packard 1869, *D. salmoni* Stiles 1910, and *D. nigrolineatus* Packard 1869.

The *Andersoni group* includes *D. occidentalis* Marx 1892, *D. parumapertus* Neumann 1901, *D. venustus* Marx 1897, *D. andersoni* Stiles 1905.

The *Reticulatus group* includes *D. reticulatus* Fabricius 1794, *D. variabilis* Say 1821.

Remarks.—There has been the greatest confusion as to the tick which causes Rocky Mountain fever. This was called *D. occidentalis* because Stiles considered that *D. andersoni* Stiles 1905 was identical with *D. occidentalis* Marx 1892, but the two forms have since been shown by him to be quite distinct. Therefore in any reference to a tick causing Rocky Mountain fever, no matter what name is used, it is important to understand that *D. andersoni* Stiles 1905 is the species really referred to.

Dermacentor reticulatus Fabricius 1794.

Synonyms.—*Acarus reticulatus* Fabricius 1794 ; *Ixodes reticulatus* Fabricius 1805 ; *I. marmoratus* Risso 1826 ; *Dermacentor albicollis* Koch 1844 ; *D. pordalinus* Koch 1844 ; *D. ferrugineus* Koch 1844 ; *Hæmaphysalis marmorata* Berlese 1887.

Dermacentor with coarsely punctate stigmial plate.

This tick gains its importance from the fact that for some time it was considered to be the cause of the spread of Rocky Mountain fever, which was really due to the nearly related *D. andersoni*, with which it was long confused. It probably does not occur in America. It is widely distributed through Europe and Asia.

Dermacentor occidentalis Marx 1892.

This tick was received by Marx from Occidental in California; and was first described by Neumann. It is found in the north-western portion of the United States, from California to Montana.

Morphology.—Male : Oval, narrow in front, broad behind ; scutum variegated brown and white. Anteriorly there is an elliptical area, the pseudoscutum, closely representing the form and colour of the female scutum, and limited by a white border, and possessing two lateral brown stripes, with a median brown stripe or spots between them. Behind this there are four brown stripes arranged in a curve, open anteriorly. Posterior to these usually five brown stripes ; one central and two lateral. Between these areas the whole dorsum is speckled with brown punctations. The eleven festoons are somewhat quadrangular, each composed of a white area with one brown spot, and speckled with brown punctations. Ventral surface with the first coxa bidentate, and the others with a single spine. Fourth coxa very large ; about twice as large as the third. Generative aperture on a level with the second pair of legs. Stigma comma-shaped ; hypostome with three rows of teeth on each side. Palpi longer than hypostome. Size, 5 by 2.5 millimetres.

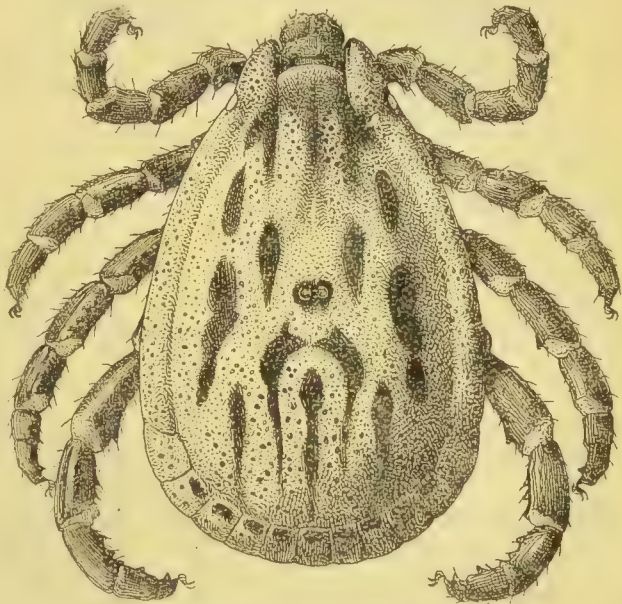


FIG. 242.—*DERMACENTOR SALMONI* STILES 1909 :
MALE, DORSAL ASPECT.

Young female : Oval depressed body, broader posteriorly than anteriorly ; reddish-brown in colour ; about the same size as the male—5 by 2.5 millimetres. Scutum very large, and marked like the anterior part of the male, extending as far back as the third pair of legs, with eyes in the anterior part of the lateral border. Dorsal surface of abdomen with a marginal groove beginning behind the eyes, and three longitudinal grooves running backwards, the two lateral beginning just behind the scutum, and the median about the

centre of the body. Posterior margin with eleven festoons. Ventral surface with fine hairs. Genital aperture at the level of the second coxa; genital



FIG. 243.—*DERMACENTOR SALMONI* STILES 1909: MALE, VENTRAL ASPECT.

grooves close together at first, but diverging laterally behind the fourth coxa, and ending between the second and third external festoons. Anus with short anomarginal groove. Stigma comma-shaped. Capitulum with the posterior lateral angle prolonged into a sharp point. Porose areas circular. Internal apophysis of the mandible with strong posterior tooth; external with three successive teeth. First coxa bidentate, other three with spines. Replete Female: Swollen body laterally constricted at the stigmata; of deep brown or slate colour; size, 16 by 10 millimetres.

Pathogenicity.—Nil.

Dermacentor andersoni
Stiles 1905.

Synonyms.—*Dermacentor occidentalis* of all writings on Rocky Mountain spotted fever until some time after 1910; *D. venustus* Marx (in part only), *D. andersoni* Kieffer 1907.

Dermacentor with caudal margin nearly or quite semicircular. Colour, greyish to red or deep red-brown. Eyes not prominent.

Life - History. — The egg hatches in seven to ten days, and produces a larva which feeds on some animal for several days, and then, becoming swollen and of a uniform slate-colour, drops off, and, becoming quiescent, moults and gives rise to the nymph. This nymph again attacks an animal, and when fed drops off, and in ten days moults and becomes the adult. The nymph, however, can hibernate. If the adults do not obtain a host, they die off quickly.

Life - History. — The egg hatches in seven to ten days, and produces a larva which feeds on some animal for several days, and then, becoming swollen and of a uniform slate-colour, drops off, and, becoming quiescent, moults and gives rise to the nymph. This nymph again attacks an animal, and when fed drops off, and in ten days moults and becomes the adult. The nymph, however, can hibernate. If the adults do not obtain a host, they die off quickly.

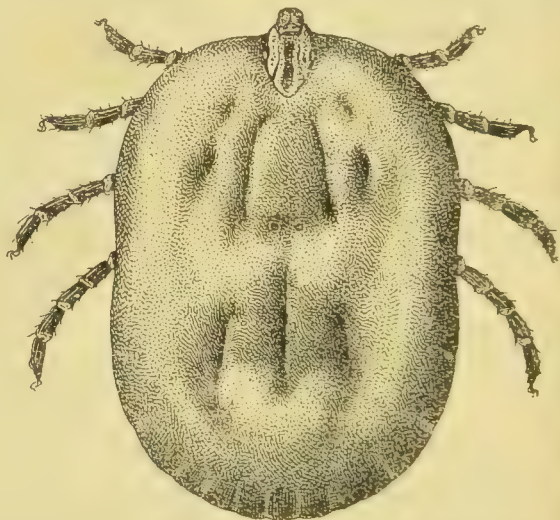


FIG. 244.—*DERMACENTOR SALMONI* STILES 1909: REplete FEMALE, DORSAL ASPECT.

Scutum with whitish rust, and with large or small punctations. Genital pore surrounded by hairs. Anal ring nearly circular. Stigmal plates with prominent dorso-lateral prolongation, aperture and chamber large and elongate, goblets of medium size. Postero-lateral projections of plate small. Capitulum with short postero-lateral projections of base. External article with large recurved tooth, a smaller subapical, and a very small apical tooth. Hypostome with three rows of strong denticles. Palpi with lateral margin convex; first article with four or five bristles; third article rather triangular dorsally. Legs: outer spur of coxa I. longer than inner spur; trochanter I. with retrograde curved blade.

Male.—Length, 4 by 2.5 millimetres broad. Body oval. Scutum covers dorsum except capitulum; deep reddish-brown, marked by four elongate spots arranged in semicircle; two elongated reniform spots behind these, one elongated median spot, and two shorter elongate submedian spots, and an indistinct forked spot.

Female.—Scutum, 1.56 to 1.62 millimetres in length by 1.9 millimetres broad; very conspicuous because of its whitish colour. Cervical grooves well developed. Venter with punctation and fine hairs. Genital grooves running parallel caudad.

Young Female.—This is the form most commonly found. Length, 4.5 to 5 millimetres. Breadth, 2.3 to 2.6 millimetres. Body oval. Scutum covers about 0.43 of the length of the body. Eyes not very distinct. Vulva between coxæ II.

Replete Female.—Length about 16 millimetres, 9.5 millimetres thick and 6 millimetres thick. Eyes more distinct than in young female. Vulva may shift to level of first and second intercoxal space, and a radial groove may appear on each side between the anal and the genital grooves. Coxæ naturally farther apart than in young female owing to repletion.

Hexapode Larva.—0.656 millimetre in length by 0.316 millimetre in breadth, with the caudal end broader than anterior end.

Hosts.—Man, cattle, horses, dogs, rabbits, ground squirrels, and other squirrels.

Distribution.—Montana, Washington State, Colorado, and Idaho.

Pathogenicity.—It is the carrier of the virus of Rocky Mountain fever.



FIG. 245.—DERMACENTOR SALMONI STILES
1909: REplete FEMALE, VENTRAL ASPECT.

Hæmaphysalis Koch 1844 (*vide* Figs. 233-235).

Rhipicephalinae without eyes, with the base of the capitulum rectangular; twice as broad as long. Palpi triangular or crescentic. Stigmata circular or comma-shaped. Anal shields absent. Tegument brownish.

Type.—*Hæmaphysalis concinna* Koch 1844.

Species.—The most important species are: *H. concinna*, *H. leachi*, *H. flavii*, *H. punctata*, the life-history of the last named having been studied in detail by Nuttall, Cooper, and Robinson, while according to Stockmann it transmits *Babesia ovis*.

Hæmaphysalis leachi Audouin 1827.

Synonyms.—*Ixodes leachi* Audouin 1827, *Rhipistoma leachi* C. L. Koch 1844, *Rhipicephalus ellipticum* C. L. Koch 1844, *Rhipidostoma leachi* Karsch 1878, *Hæmaphysalis leachi* Neumann 1897.

This species is found in Africa, Sumatra, and New South Wales. It is the South African dog tick.

The male is 3 by 1.5 millimetres, with yellowish-red scutum, finely punctated dorsum, with eleven marginal festoons. Palpi longer than hypostome. Coxæ of all legs, with a short spine.

The replete female is 9 by 5 millimetres; scutum oval, larger than wide. Second segment of palpi long and spiny.

Life-History.—The larva, after feeding, drops off the dog, and moults. The nymph attacks another dog, feeds, drops off, and moults. The adult attacks a third dog, feeds, drops off, and lays eggs which develop larvæ.

Pathogenicity.—It is the spreader of *Babesia canis* among dogs, causing their biliary fever. Nuttall and Hadwen have shown that this canine babesiasis can be successfully treated by hypodermic injections of 6 c.c. of a 1 per cent. solution of trypanrot, or 4.5 to 5.5 c.c. of a saturated solution of trypanblau.

SUBFAMILY IXODINÆ.

The following diagnostic table, modified slightly from Salmon and Stiles, will indicate the genera:—

A. Eyes absent:

I. Pre-anal crescentic groove opens posteriorly:

(a) Palpi valvate—*Ixodes* (Fig. 246).

(b) Palpi clavate—*Eschatocephalus*.

II. Post-anal crescentic groove open anteriorly—*Aponomma* (Fig. 247).

III. Without anal groove in the female; one anal shield in the male—*Ceratixodes*.

B. Eyes present:

I. Anal plates absent—*Amblyomma* (Fig. 248)

II. Anal plates present on males—*Hyalomma* (Fig. 249)

***Ixodes* Latreille 1796.**

Synonyms.—*Cynorhæstes* Hermann 1804, *Crotonus* Dumeril 1822.

Ixodinae without eyes, and with long palpi hollowed on the internal surface. Tarsi without terminal spurs. Pre-anal groove open posteriorly.

Male with scutum not covering the lateral and posterior margins; no festoons; stigmata oval. Ventral shields seven in number; one pregenital, one median, two epimeral, one anal, and two adanal.

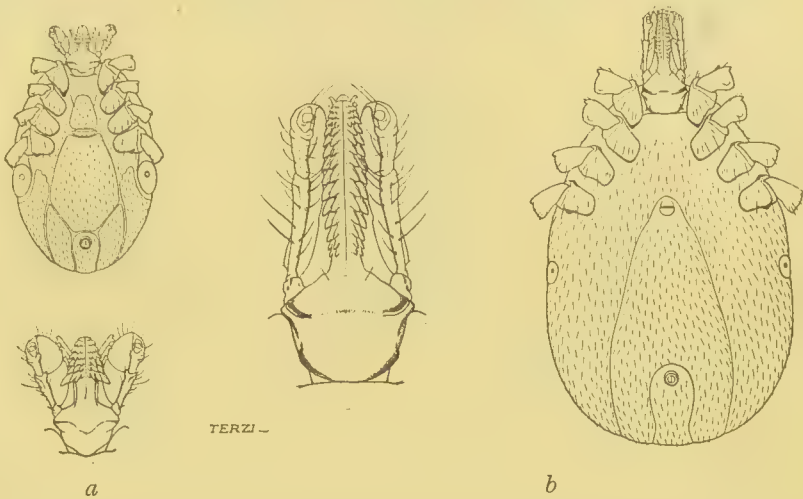


FIG. 246.—*IXODES PILOSUS* KOCH 1844: VENTRAL ASPECT.

a, Male ($\times 10$) and mouth parts; *b*, mouth parts and female ($\times 10$).

Female with three dorsal longitudinal grooves and two longitudinal genital grooves ventral, and the anal crescentic groove already mentioned.

Type.—*Ixodes ricinus* Linnæus 1758.

***Ixodes ricinus* Linnæus 1758.**

Synonyms.—*Acarus reduvius* Linnæus 1758, *A. ricinus* Linnæus 1758.

This is the castor-oil tick, and is found in Europe, North Africa, and North America on man, sheep, goats, cattle, horses, dogs, cats, rabbits, bats, birds, etc.

The male has an oval body, broader posteriorly, 2.5 by 1.5 millimetres. Scutum convex, deep red-brown. Genital pore on a plane with the third coxa. Pregenital and anal shields well marked. Capitulum long.

The female, when young, has flat, oval body. Replete female is like a castor-oil bean, 10 to 11 by 6 to 7 millimetres, of ashy colour. Tegument covered with fine, short hairs. Dorsal surface with three well-marked posterior grooves and two anterior.

Genital pore at the level of the fourth coxæ. Genital grooves

unite in front of the vulva. Well-marked pre-anal crescentic groove, open posteriorly. Stigmata whitish. Porose areas elongated transversely. Mandibles with two teeth on the internal apophysis, and external with five teeth.

Life-History.—The female lays about 1,000 eggs in about one to two weeks; the eggs take six weeks to hatch into a larva, which remain one week on the first host and then four weeks on the earth before it becomes a nymph. This stage requires one week on the second host and eight weeks on the earth before it becomes the adult, which seeks the third host, copulates, sucks blood, and drops off to lay eggs.

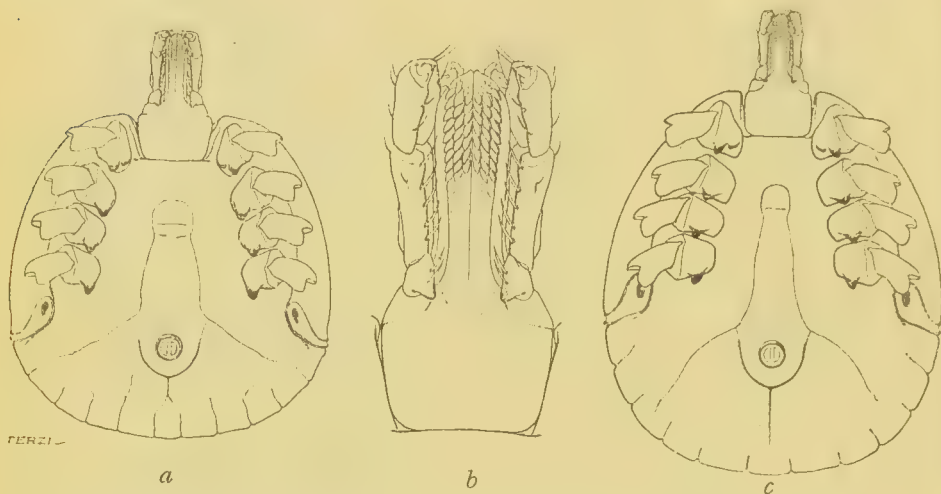


FIG. 247.—*APONOMMA GERVAISI* LUCAS 1847: VENTRAL ASPECT.
a, Male ($\times 15$); b, mouth parts (more highly magnified); c, female ($\times 15$).

Pathogenicity.—It acquires *Babesia bigemina* from infected cattle in the adult stage, and spreads it to fresh cattle in the larval and nymphal stages.

***Ixodes hexagonus* Leach 1815.**

Synonyms.—*Ixodes autumnalis* Leach 1815, *I. erinacei* Audouin 1832, *I. reduvius* Audouin 1832, *I. sexpunctatus* Koch 1847.

This is the European dog tick.

Pathogenicity.—According to Blanchard, the tick can transmit *Babesia canis* Piana and Galli Valerio 1895.

***Eschatocephalus* Frauenfeld 1853.**

Synonyms.—*Sarconissus* Kolenati 1857, *Hæmalastor* Neumann 1889.

Ixodinae without eyes, and with a long rostrum. Palpi pyriform in the male and claviform in the female. Pre-anal groove opening posteriorly. Stigmata circular. Legs long.

Male with dorsal and ventral irregular chitinous thickenings.

Female with very fine parallel grooves.

Type.—*E. vespertilionis* C. L. Koch 1844.

There are over seven species found on bats and in caves.

Aponomma Neumann 1899

Synonym.—*Ophiodes* Murray 1877.

Ixodinae without eyes, and with the base of capitulum usually pentagonal, with dorso-lateral border very short ; palpi long. Post-anal groove. Ventral sexual grooves.

Male nearly as broad as long, with a scutum marked with green spots covering the whole dorsal surface.

Female scutum shorter than broad.

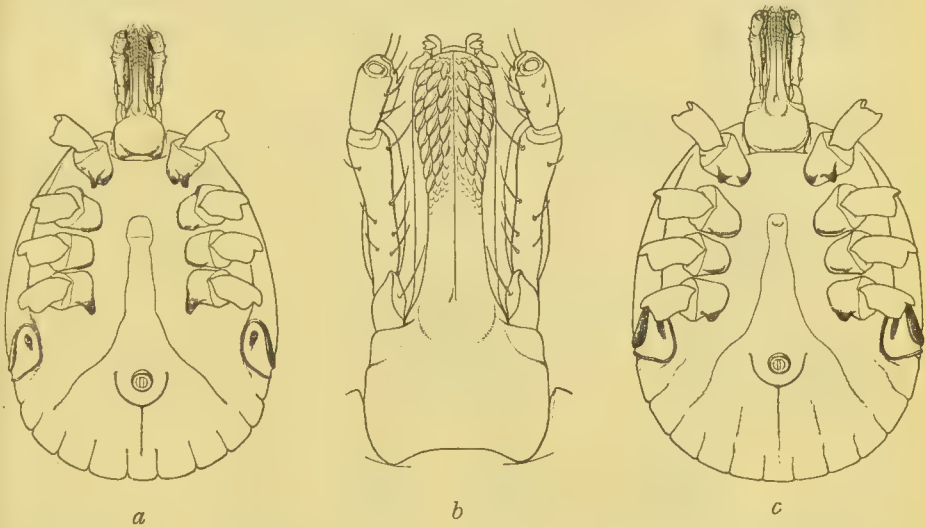


FIG. 248.—*AMBLIOMMA HEBRÆUM* C. L. KOCH 1844: VENTRAL ASPECT.
a, Male ($\times 7$) ; b, mouth parts (more highly magnified) ; c, female ($\times 7$).

Type.—*Aponomma gervaisi* Lucas 1847.

These ticks are found chiefly on reptiles, but are also found on other animals.

Ceratixodes Neumann 1904.

Ixodinae with long palpi, without eyes, and without anal groove in female. Stigmata circular. One anal and two adanal shields in the male.

Type.—*Ceratixodes putus* Cambridge 1879. It lives on sea-birds, and is found on cliffs, while *C. signatus* Banks 1908 is known in North America.

Amblyomma Koch 1844.

Ixodinae with flat eyes ; rostrum long, with valvate palpi. Anal groove semicircular, opening anteriorly. No median ano-marginal groove ; no anal plates in the male. Stigmata triangular. Nearly always eleven festoons.

Type.—*Amblyomma cajennense* Koch 1844.

Amblyomma hebraeum C. L. Koch 1844.

Synonyms.—*A. annulipes* C. L. Koch 1844, *Ixodes poortmani* Lucas 1850, *A. hassalli* Marx and Neumann 1899.

This tick is found in Africa, especially in Cape Colony, where it is called the 'bont,' or variegated tick, and is the spreader of 'heart-water' in sheep and goats (*vide* Fig. 248).

Morphology.—Male with sulphur-yellow-coloured scutum, variegated with brown, and finely punctated and marked with longitudinal grooves. Marginal festoons light-coloured, except the two extreme festoons. Female with brown and white scutum, as broad as long; body of a fully replete female, 24 by 15 millimetres.

Life-History.—The usual life-history for Ixodidæ.

Pathogenicity.—Transmits 'heart-water' in sheep.

Hyalomma Koch 1844.

Ixodinæ with eyes, rostrum long, palpi valvate, anal groove semi-circular, opening forwards, uniting sexual grooves, and followed

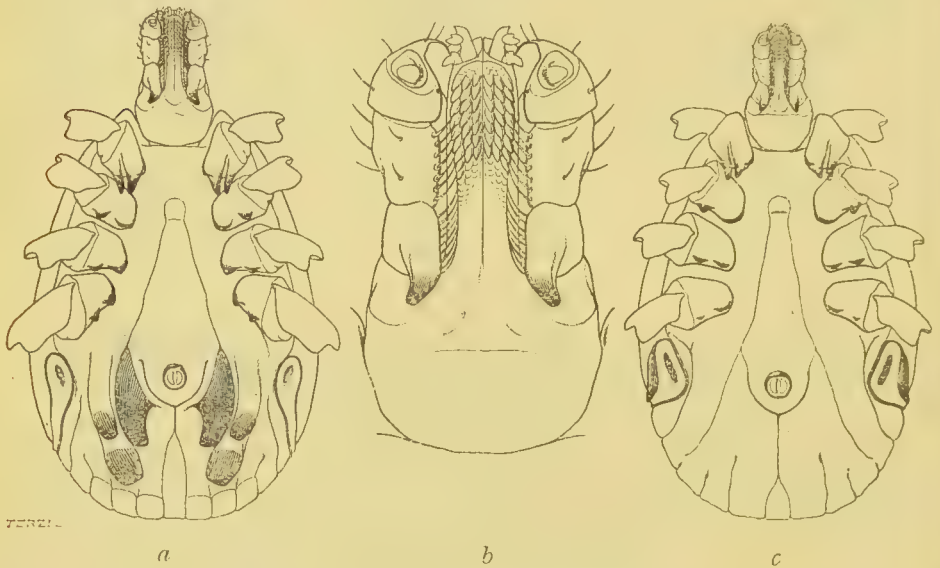


FIG. 249.—*HYALOMMA ÆGYPTIUM* LINNÆUS 1758 ($\times 3$): VENTRAL ASPECT. *a*, Male ($\times 8$); *b*, mouth parts (more highly magnified); *c*, female ($\times 8$).

by a median ano-marginal groove. Male with two pairs of ventral shields, two adanal and two lateral. Female with triangular stigmata.

Type.—*Hyalomma ægyptium* Linnæus 1758.

Only a few species:—*H. ægyptium*, *H. crassitarsus*, *H. affine*, *H. syriacum*, *H. rhipicephaloides*, *H. hippopotamense*, *H. monstrosus*.

Hyalomma ægyptium Linnæus 1758.

Synonyms.—*Acarus ægyptus* L. 1758, *Ixodes camelinus* Fischer 1823.

This tick is found in Africa, particularly in Egypt and South Africa; in Asia, particularly in Southern India; in Europe, espe-

cially in France and Italy. The adults attack cattle, especially sheep and goats, and also at times man. The larvæ and nymphæ are supposed to attack birds, not cattle.

The male is almost black, with a pale marginal stripe, with a small, triangular, often white, median festoon.

The female is brown, with light blue stripes. Scutum, which as a rule is as broad as long, possesses numerous punctations, and is indented behind the eyes.

Life-History.—This appears to require further investigation.

Pathogenicity.—Can transmit *Babesia bovis* to oxen.

SUBORDER IV. PROSTIGMATA.

The suborder Prostigmata contains two superfamilies, which are of importance in medicine.

SUPERFAMILY A. TROMBIDOIDEA.—Prostigmata in which the last joint of the palpi is bent down towards the penultimate joint, which usually ends in a claw. Body often with many hairs.

SUPERFAMILY B. EUPOPOIDEA.—Prostigmata with simple palpi, in which the last joint of the palpi is not bent down towards the penultimate joint. Body with few hairs.

SUPERFAMILY A. TROMBIDOIDEA.

The Trombidoidea include the following families, which are of importance in medicine:—(1) Trombididæ; (2) Tetranychidæ; (3) Cheyletidæ.

FAMILY TROMBIDIDÆ.

Trombidoidea with soft skins, and chelate mandibles adapted for biting.

Trombidium Latreille 1795.

The larvæ of this genus are the harvest-mites, and are widely distributed; *Leptus autumnalis* Shaw 1790 being the harvest-bug, which is not uncommon in South England in August and September, and also in the South of France and Germany, where it principally attacks small mammals, dogs, and cats, from which they are supposed to pass to man. *Leptus americanus* Riley and *L. irritans* Riley are American species, being found in the United States and Mexico. *Trombidium tlalsahuate* Lemaire 1867 is the *Tlalsahuate* of Mexico. The zoological names of the 'pou d'agouti' of Guiana, the 'niaibi' of New Granada, the 'colorado' of Cuba, the 'mouqui' of Para, the 'bête rouge' of Martinique and Honduras, are not known. It must be confessed that there is a great deal of uncertainty about the genus and species of these larvæ, and the subject evidently requires revision. It is apparently by no means certain what is the adult of *L. autumnalis*.

Morphology.—They are six-legged larvæ with prominent claws on the tips of their legs, provided with a powerful hypostome,

which they drive through the skin. Around this hypostome the tissues of the host are supposed to form a tube.

Life-History.—Only the larvæ appear to be parasitic; the adults apparently are not. The life-history has not been fully traced out, and though it is often stated that *L. autumnalis* is the larva of *Trombidium holosericeum* Linnaeus 1746, this is by no means certain.

Pathogenicity.—They cause itching, redness, and swelling of the affected part, which, if scratched, may become eczematous, and even at times suppurate.

Treatment.—Sulphur ointment kills them.

***Trombidium akamushi* Brumpt 1910.**

Synonyms.—*Akamushi* (red mite) or *Kedani* (hairy mite), *Shashitsu* (sand mite), *Shimamushi* (island mite), *Tsutsugamushi* (dangerous mite), *Yôchûbia*.



FIG. 250.—*TROMBIDIUM AKAMUSHI*
BRUMPT 1910.

(After Tanaka, from *Centralb. für Bakteriologie Par. und Inf.*)

Under this term comes the larval mite which causes tsutsugamushi, or Japanese river fever.

Morphology.—It is orange-red in colour, 0.16 to 0.24 millimetre in length by 0.10 to 0.24 millimetre in breadth. The palpi are leg-like, and the body has many long hairs, while the legs are very hirsute.

Life-History.—The life-history appears to be unknown.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of *Tsutsugamushi* disease.

***Trombidium wichmanni* Oudemans 1905.**

Synonym.—*Microtrombidium Wichmanni*.

Its larva attacks man and animals in Celebes.

***Trombidium vandersandei* Oudemans 1905.**

Synonym.—*Microtrombidium* Van der sander.

The larva of this *Trombidium* occurs in New Guinea, and attacks man and animals. Its local name is 'Gonone.'

***Metatrombidium* Oudemans 1909.**

Metatrombidium poriceps Heim and Oudemans 1904 has been found on fowls, dogs, and men.

***Microtrombidium* Haller 1882.**

M. pusillum Hermann is reported to attack man.

FAMILY TETRANYCHIDÆ.

Trombidoidea with first and second pairs of legs without spines; skin with few shields; palpi not much thickened on base, moving vertically; eyes usually present. First pair of legs do not end in long hairs. Coxæ more or less in two groups. Body with fewer longer hairs. No dorsal groove; often spinning threads; tarsi never swollen. Mandibles styliform.

Tetranychus molestissimus Weyenbergh 1886.

This mite is found in the Argentine and Uruguay. It is small and of red colour, living in a web on the inferior surface of the leaves of *Xanthum macrocarpum*. From December to February it attacks mammals and man, thrusting its hypostome into the skin and causing severe itching. Another species—*T. telarius* (var. *russeolus*) L. 1758—may attack human beings.

FAMILY CHEYLETIDÆ.

Trombidoidea without spinous processes on the legs; skin with few if any shields; palpi much thickened at the base, moving laterally; last joint often with two pectinate bristles without eyes. First leg ending in several long hairs.

Cheyletus Latreille 1796.

These are very small mites, distinguished by having enormous palpi. *Cheyletus eruditus* has been described in the external auditory meatus of a man.

Acaropsis Moquin-Tandon 1863.

Acaropsis mericourti Laboulbène has been found in the human external auditory meatus.

SUPERFAMILY B. EUPOPOIDEA.

FAMILY EUPOPIDÆ.

Eupopoidea with palpi not geniculate, and unable to grasp prey. Beak small; last joint of the first leg shorter, or but little larger, than preceding joint.

Tydeus molestus Moniez 1889.

This mite was imported into Belgium in Peruvian guano, and caused much trouble to man and beast.

FAMILY TARSONEMIDÆ.

With marked sexual dimorphism and tracheæ. No ventral suckers.

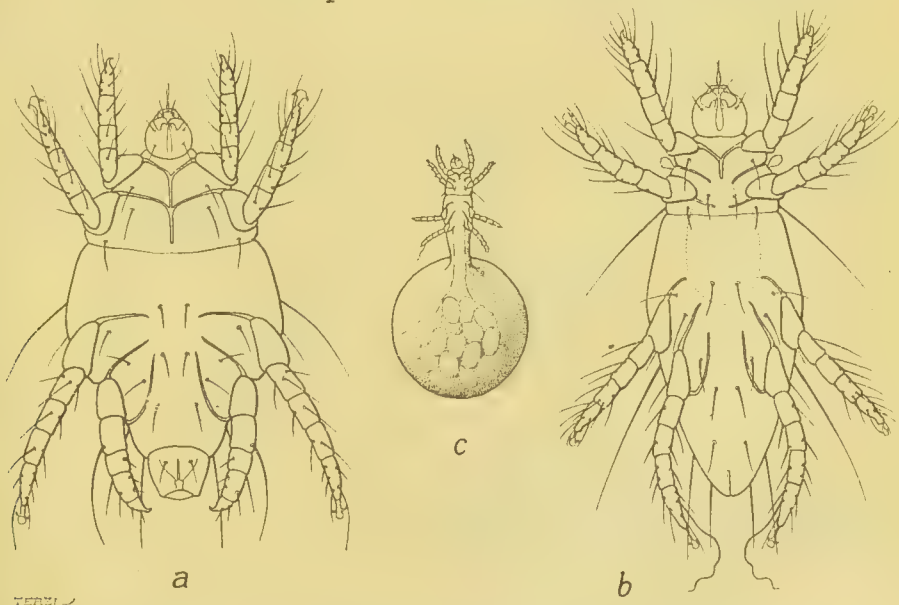


FIG. 251.—*PEDICULOIDES VENTRICOSUS* NEWPORT.

a, Male ($\times 350$); *b*, Female ($\times 220$); *c*, Distended female ($\times 60$).

Pediculoides ventricosus Newport 1850.

Synonyms.—*Heteropus ventricosus* Newport 1850, *Acarus tritici* Lagrèze-Fossot and Montané 1851, *Physogaster larvarum* Lichtenstein 1868, *Pedi-*

culoides tritici Targioni-Tozzetti 1878, *Sphærogyna ventricosa* Laboulbène and Mégnin 1885, *Tarsonemus monoungiculosus*.

This mite causes severe itching and urticarial eruptions on the breast, arms, face, neck, and shoulders of persons handling corn and barley, which contains it, in India, Algeria, and Europe.

Morphology.—Males are oval, 0.12 by 0.08 millimetre, with six pairs of dorsal hairs and a lyre-shaped lamella.

Female cylindrical, 0.2 by 0.07 millimetre; becomes much distended posteriorly when gravid.

Life-History.—They live on the stalks of cereals, and feed on animal and vegetal juices. The adult hatches directly from the egg.

Pathogenicity.—They cause diffuse erythema, urticaria, and itching.

Nephrophages Miyake and Scriba 1893.

Nephrophages sanguinarius Miyake and Scriba 1893. It is a very doubtful parasite of man; it was found in bloody urine passed by a man in Japan.

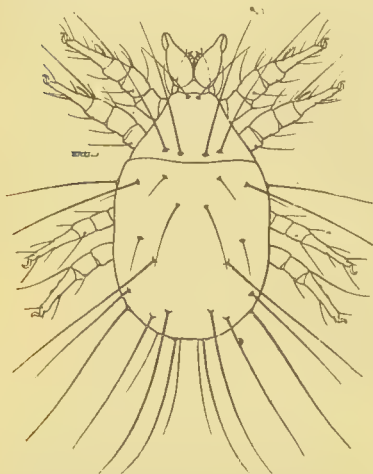


FIG. 252.—TYROGLYPHUS LONGIOR VAR. CASTELLANII HIRST 1912: DORSAL ASPECT.

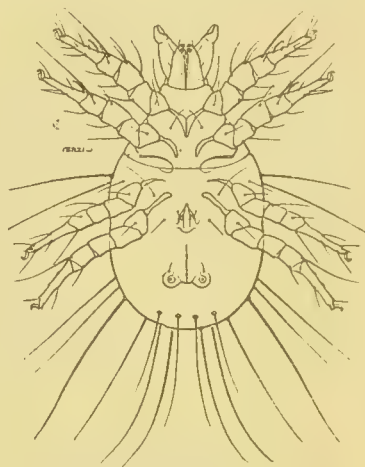


FIG. 253.—TYROGLYPHUS LONGIOR VAR. CASTELLANII HIRST 1912: VENTRAL ASPECT.

SUBORDER V. ASTIGMATA.

This suborder includes the superfamily Sarcoptoidea.

SUPERFAMILY SARCOPTOIDEA.

Astigmata with small three-pointed palpi adhering for some distance to the hypostome, with usually ventral suckers.

Among the families of the Sarcoptoidea there are two which concern us—(1) Tyroglyphidæ, (2) Sarcoptidæ.

FAMILY I. TYROGLYPHIDÆ.

Very small mites without eyes; only accidental parasites being found in flour, sugar, cheese, etc.

Tyroglyphus Latreille 1796.—With smooth dorsum, with claws and suckers. *Aleurobius farinæ* (De Geer) in corn may get into the skin. They are the cause

of so-called vanillismus. According to Theobald, Linnæus reported a case of dysentery as being due to this species (*Acarus dysenteria*).

Tyroglyphus siro Linnæus 1758 is supposed to be the cause of vanillismus, and *T. longior* Gervais 1844 is found accidentally in fæces, urine, or pus.

T. longior var. *castellani* Hirst 1912 was found by Castellani in copra and on people affected by copra itch in Ceylon.

Glyciphagus Hering 1838.—With dorsum covered with hairs.

G. prunorum Hermann (synonym, *G. domesticus* de Geer 1808) are the cause of grocer's itch.

Rhizoglyphus Claparède 1869—*R. parasiticus* Dalgetty 1901.—With short legs, armed with spines. Tarsi end in a claw. Live on plants.

This is the species which causes trouble in the feet of Indian coolies. Bell describes a large circular, superficial sore on the sole of the foot, caused by many of these parasites invading the skin (see Chapter LXVII.).

Histiogaster Berlese 1883—*H. spermaticus* Trouessart 1900. This mite, which feeds on vegetables, appears to have been introduced into a patient by means of a catheter, and to have formed a cyst in the testis in a man in India.

Carpoglyphus Robin 1869.—*C. alienus* Banks has been found in purulent urine passed by a man. Probably it was a contamination.

FAMILY 2. SARCOPTIDÆ.

Sarcoptoidea without genital suckers, without clinging apparatus, with transverse vulva. Lives in skin.

Sarcoptes Latreille 1806.—Sarcoptidæ with round or slightly oval bodies; posterior two pairs of legs concealed beneath the body; tarsi end in simple long pedicles with ambulatory suckers.

Sarcoptes scabiei var. *hominis* Linnæus 1758.—Female lives in furrows in

the epidermis, in which it lays its eggs. Posterior legs end in spines. Males occur on the surface and die after copulation. Posterior legs end in suckers. Six-legged larva hatches in four to eight days.

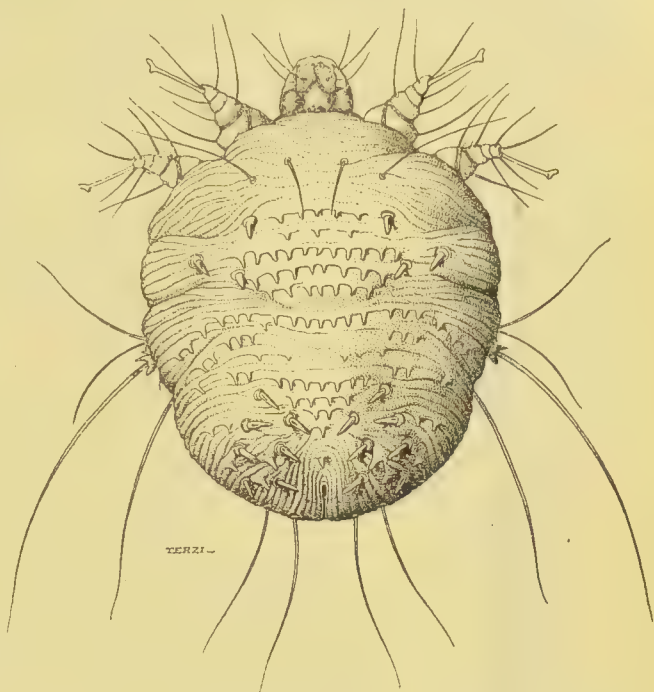


FIG. 254.—*SARCOPTES SCABIEI* VAR. *HOMINIS* LINNÆUS 1758: FEMALE ($\times 125$).

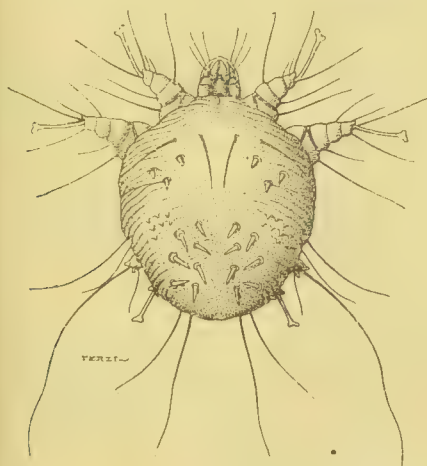


FIG. 255.—*SARCOPTES SCABIEI* VAR. *HOMINIS* LINNÆUS 1758: MALE ($\times 125$).

Sarcoptes minor Fürstenberg 1861.—Usually a parasite of cats; has been found on man.

Sarcoptidæ as internal parasites.—Sarcoptidæ have been described by Newstead and Todd as internal parasites in monkeys. An Acarid-like parasite was found by Castellani in the omentum of a negro in Uganda. This parasite somewhat resembled *Cytoleichus sarcoptoides* Hegin, which lives in the air sacs, and at times the liver and kidneys, of fowls.

Notœdres Railliet 1893—*N. cati* Railliet 1893.—Cause of the itch in the cat and transmissible to man.

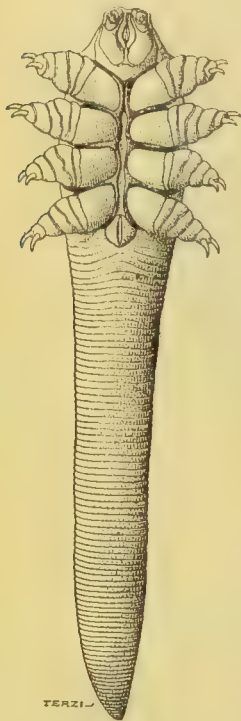


FIG. 256.—*DEMODOX FOLLICULORUM* SIMON 1842 ($\times 150$). (Partly after Berlese.)

SUBORDER VI. VERMIFORMIA.

Very minute Acarina, with abdomen elongated and annulated, without tracheæ, and with epimeres on the legs.

This suborder contains only one family.

FAMILY DEMODICIDÆ.

Vermiformia with eight legs, living on animals.

This family includes only one genus—*Demodex* Owen 1843.

Demodex Owen 1843.

With the family characters.

The species of *Demodex* lives in the sebaceous glands and hair-follicles of mammals and man. The mouth consists of a rostrum, which is arranged for sucking. The palpi are three-jointed, and pressed to the under surface of the rostrum. The legs are eight in number, short, and consist of three segments, with small terminal unguis. The abdomen is tapering, striated dorsally and ventrally, and rounded at the tip. The anus is situated at the anterior end of the abdomen.

Demodex folliculorum Simon 1842.

Synonyms.—*Acarus folliculorum* Simon 1842, *D. folliculorum* Owen 1843, *Macrogaster platypus* Miescher 1843, *Simonea folliculorum* P. Gervais 1844, *Stealozoon folliculorum* Wilson 1847.

This parasite was first discovered by G. Simon, of Berlin, in 1842, in the contents of pustules of *Acnea sebacea*.

About the same time Henle had found them in hair-follicles in the external auditory meatus, and Topping a variety in the dog. Two other species are known: *D. phylloides* Cook in pigs and *D. bovis* Stiles in cattle. *D. folliculorum hominis* is cosmopolitan, living in the sebaceous follicles of the face.

Male measures $300\ \mu$ by $40\ \mu$, and the female $380\ \mu$ by $45\ \mu$.

Life-History.—The eggs are 60 to $90\ \mu$ in length by 20 to $50\ \mu$ in breadth, and heart-shaped or fusiform. The egg hatches out a six-legged larva, which develops into an eight-legged nymph, from which the adult appears.

Pathogenicity.—Usually said to be nil, but Borrel considers them to play a part in the spread of cancer and leprosy.

ARACHNIDÆ INCERTÆ SEDIS.

LINGUATULIDA.

Parasitic Arachnoidea with ringed, elongated, vermiform bodies, possessing two pairs of hooks in the neighbourhood of the jawless mouth.

Remarks.—The *Linguatulida* have been found parasitic in man both in the adult and larval conditions, but the adult is much rarer than the larva. They have been found in Europe and Africa, and reported from the West Indies, but this was in a negro from West Africa. It is not impossible that they will be found to be far from uncommon parasites when the medical history of the West Coast of Africa is better known. When dealing with cases showing obscure abdominal or pulmonary symptoms in that part of the world, the medical man should remember these parasites.

Morphology.—The body is white in colour and vermiform in appearance, and, indeed, they were long mistaken for worms.

It is elongated, flattened, or cylindrical, and marked by a variable number of rings, and is usually divisible into two regions—an anterior broader portion called the cephalothorax, and a posterior, more attenuated, called the abdomen. It is covered with a chitinous cuticle pierced by pores, called stigmata, which have nothing to do with respiration, being merely the orifices of epidermal glands.

The mouth is situated anteriorly, and is either terminal or sub-terminal, with a chitinous ring. Two pairs of chitinous hooks, retractile into grooves, are situate on either side of the mouth, and are looked upon by Stiles as antennæ and palpi. There are no legs. The anus is terminal at the posterior end of the abdomen, with the female aperture situate just in front. The male generative pore is on the ventral surface, near the anterior end of the abdomen. The sexes are distinct. The mouth leads into a simple straight alimentary canal, which ends in the anus. There are no circulatory or respiratory organs. The nervous system consists of a ventral mass and a circumœsophageal commissure.

Life-History.—The female produces eggs, which, escaping from the definitive host, pass into the intermediary host, and there hatch out a four-legged larva, not unlike an embryo *Acarus*. This embryo undergoes complete metamorphosis, and forms a nymph, resembling the adult, which does not, as a rule, mature, until it reaches its definitive host again.

Genera.—*Linguatula* Frölich 1789, *Porocephalus* Humboldt 1811, *Reighardia* Ward 1899, and *Raillietiella* Sambon 1909, but only the first two contain species parasitic in man.

Linguatula Frölich 1789.

Linguatulida with depressed body, rounded dorsum, and crenate margins. Body cavity forming diverticuli into the lateral parts of the rings.

Species.—*Linguatula serrata* Frölich 1789.

Linguatula serrata Frölich 1789.

Synonyms.—*Tænia rhinaria* Pilger 1802, *Polystoma tænioides* Rudolphi 1810, *Linguatula tænioides* Lambinet 1816, *Pentastoma tænioides* Rudolphi 1819. **Nymph.**—*Pentastoma denticulatum*.

The adult lives in the nasal cavity and frontal sinus of the dog, wolf, fox, and rarely in the horse, mule, sheep, goat, and man in Europe; while the larva exists in sheep, oxen, horses, rarely in cats and dogs. Its real host appears to be the dog, especially sheep-dogs.

Habitat.—Europe, especially Central France.

Morphology.—The male is white in colour, 18 to 20 millimetres in length, and 3 millimetres broad. The female is greyish-white or brownish, owing to the contained ova.

Life-History.—The eggs, which are ovoid, 90 by 70 μ , are laid in the nasal cavities of the dog, and expelled by sneezing. If they fall on grass, they may enter the alimentary canal of a herbivorous animal, in whose intestine the embryo hatches. This embryo measures 130 by 60 μ , and possesses two pairs of legs and an anterior perforating apparatus composed of a stylet and two hooks.

It now bores its way into the liver, lungs, or some other organ, and in about eight weeks becomes encysted, losing all its appendages and measuring 275 by 180 μ .

A succession of ecdyses results in the formation of the nymph, which resembles the adult, except that it possesses numerous chitinous spicules on its skin, and by the sixth to the seventh month is about 6 to 8 millimetres in length.

These nymphæ now wander about the host, and are supposed to reach the bronchi, and thus to leave the herbivorous host and reach the dog either by the nose or mouth, in the nasal cavities of which they moult and become sexually mature, copulating about the sixth to seventh week after infection.

Pathogenicity.—Both the larva and the adult may be found in man, the former in the lung, rarely in the liver, spleen, or intestinal wall. The latter has but rarely been met with, and then appears to be due to embryos wandering into the nose and developing directly. Hitherto it has only been found in man in Europe and Central America.

Porocephalus Humboldt 1811.

Linguatulida with cylindrical body and continuous coelom.

Type Species.—*Porocephalus armillatus* Wyman 1847.

Species.—There are about twenty known species, of which *P. armillatus* and *P. moniliformis* are known to occur in man, and will be described below, but Sambon suspects that *P. crotali*, *P. clavatus*, *P. stilesi*, and *P. najæ* will probably also be found in man as scientific work in parasitology extends.

Pathogenicity.—They cause porocephalosis in man and animals.

Porocephalus armillatus Wyman 1847.

Synonyms—Adult.—*Linguatulida armillata* Wyman 1847, *Pentastomum polyzonum* Harley 1856, *Porocephalus moniliformis* Neuman 1899 *pro parte*. **Nymph.**—*Pentastomum diesingi* Beneden 1849, *P. euryzonum* Diesing 1850, *P. leonis* Weddell 1863, *P. constrictum* von Siebold 1852, *P. protelis* Hoyle 1883, *Linguatulida constricta* Küchenmeister 1855.

Porocephalus with cylindrical body, slightly flattened on its anterior face, and surrounded by about sixteen to twenty-two distinct rings, separated from one another by a wide interval. The body tapers from the middle backwards.

Remarks.—The larva of this parasite was discovered by Pruner in the liver of two negroes in Cairo in 1847, and subsequently by Bilharz, Fenger, Kearney, Crawford, Marchoux, Chalmers, and others; while the adult was discovered by Wyman in 1848 in the lungs of the African python. The adult was discovered by Savage in *Python sebæ* and described by Wyman in 1845. Sambon has recently studied both adult and larva.



FIG. 257.—POROCEPHALUS ARMILLATUS WYMAN: MALE, NATURAL SIZE.

(After Sambon.)

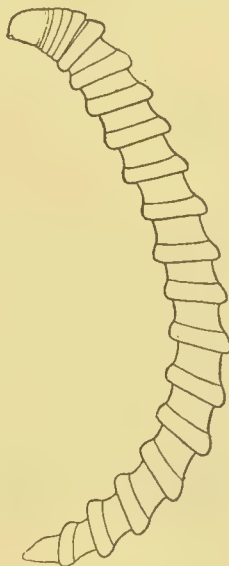


FIG. 258.—POROCEPHALUS ARMILLATUS WYMAN: FEMALE, NATURAL SIZE.

(After Sambon.)

The adult lives in African pythons and snakes (*Python sebæ*, *P. regius*, *Bitis nasicornis*, and *B. arietans*). The larval forms usually occur in *Proteles cristatus*, *Cynocephalus maimon*, and other monkeys; in *Erinaceus æthiopicus*, the African hedgehog; and in *Felis leo*, the lion.

Morphology.—Female 9 to 12 centimetres in length and 5 to 9 millimetres in breadth, with eighteen to twenty-two rings, each 1 to 2 millimetres in width. The cephalothorax extends from the anterior end of the body to the first body-ring, which is often very indistinct. Dorsally this region is convex, while ventrally it is concave, and carries the mouth, in front of which there are two papillæ, and on either side of which there are two hooks. Genital opening about 1 millimetre in front of the anus, which is terminal. Male 3 to 4.5 centimetres in length and 3 to 4 millimetres in breadth,

with sixteen to seventeen rings. Genital opening in the middle of the ventral surface at the anterior end of the abdomen.



FIG. 259.—LATERAL ASPECT OF THE CEPHALOTHORAX OF POROCEPHALUS ARMILLATUS WYMAN ($\times 5$).

(After Sambon.)



FIG. 260.—VENTRAL ASPECT OF THE CEPHALOTHORAX OF POROCEPHALUS ARMILLATUS WYMAN ($\times 5$).

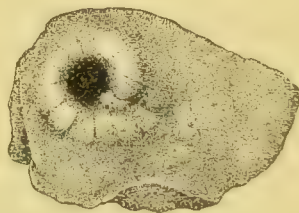
(After Sambon.)

Life-History.—Probably this resembles that of *Linguatula serrata*, with the difference of hosts. In man the nymphæ are found not merely encysted in the lungs and liver, but moving freely through the



FIG. 261.—POSTERIOR END OF POROCEPHALUS ARMILLATUS WYMAN ($\times 5$).

(After Sambon.)



TERZI—

FIG. 262.—NYMPH OF POROCEPHALUS ARMILLATUS WYMAN ENCYSTED IN THE LIVER.

(After Sambon, from our West African case).

peritoneal cavity and in the small intestine. Sambon considers that the eggs pass from the snake into water, and thence into animals and man while drinking, and become larvæ and nymphæ, which later gain access to the snake when the host is killed and eaten.

Pathogenicity.—This will be described later (Chapter XLI.).

Porocephalus moniliformis Diesing 1836.

Synonyms—**Adult**.—*Pentastoma moniliformis* Diesing 1835, *P. moniliforme* Leuckart 1860, *Linguatule moniliforme* Ménézi 1880, *Porocephalus moniliformis* Stiles 1893. **Nymph**.—*P. tornatum* Creplin 1849 *pro parte*, *P. aonycis* Macalister 1874, *P. armillatus* Stiles *pro parte*.

Porocephalus with twenty-six to thirty-one rings.

Remarks.—This parasite, which was discovered by Czermak in the lung of *Python molurus* Linnæus in 1828, and was first described by Diesing in 1835, has been carefully studied by Sambon, who

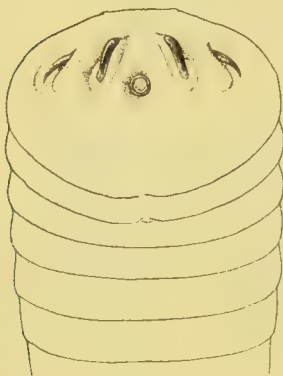


FIG. 263.—VENTRAL ASPECT OF THE CEPHALOTHORAX OF POROCEPHALUS MONILIFORMIS DIESING 1836 ($\times 5$).

(After Sambon.)



FIG. 264.—POROCEPHALUS MONILIFORMIS DIESING 1836: FEMALE, NATURAL SIZE.

(After Sambon.)

remarks that it so strikingly resembles *P. armillatus* in general appearance and structure that at first sight it may be easily mistaken for it.

Morphology.—It is more slender, tapers more caudad; with twenty-six rings in the male and twenty-eight to thirty-one rings in the female. In fresh specimens it is bright lemon yellow in colour, with genital opening on the mid-ventral surface of the first body-ring in the male, and on the mid-ventral surface of the terminal body-cone 1 millimetre in front of the anus in the female. The anus is terminal.

Life-History.—The life-history is unknown.

Hosts.—The hosts of the adult are *Python molurus* Linnæus (the Indian python), *P. reticulatus* Schneider (the reticulated python),

in which it lives in the lungs ; while the hosts of the nymph are man, monkeys, tigers, leopards (?), civets, otters, and dogs (?).

Distribution.—India, Indo-China, Southern China, the Philippines, Sumatra, Java.

Pathogenicity.—So far only two cases have been recorded in man—one at Djambi in Sumatra in 1906, when a nymph was found encysted beneath the serous coat of the small intestine of a Djambi native who died of dysentery, and the other was found in the liver of a native Filipino who died of tuberculosis. The liver in this latter case showed signs of atrophic cirrhosis.

Species imperfectly described in Man.

In addition to the well-known cases of porocephalosis due to *P. armillatus* and *P. moniliformis*, there are the following cases to be discussed—viz., Welch's parasite, Osler's parasite, and Flint's parasite. Osler's parasite is considered to be doubtful, as it was passed *per urethram*, and might, according to Sambon, have been a sparganum.

Welch's Parasite.

In the *Lancet* of November 16, 1872, F. H. Welch has an article on 'The Presence of an Encysted Echinorhynchus in Man.' This parasite was damaged in extraction, and his drawing was not very instructive, but was sufficient to convince Cobbold, R. Blanchard, and Sambon that it represented a Linguatulid, and it shows two sets of hooks. The last-named observer comes to the conclusion that it may be either a very early nymph of *P. moniliformis* (provided with caducous accessory hooks), or it may be *P. najæ* Leuckart 1860 (which is found in the abdominal muscles and peritoneum of the cobra), or *P. crociduræ* Parona 1890 (found in *Crocidura fuliginosa*, a musk-shrew), or it may be a new species.

Porocephalus najæ Leuckart 1860.

Synonym.—*P. najæ sputatricis* Leuckart 1860.

Morphology.—Body imperfectly cylindrical, with about fifty rings. Length, 4·5 millimetres long by 0·6 millimetre broad.

Distribution.—Found in cysts in the abdominal muscles and peritoneum of the cobra.

Flint's Parasite.

Flint described the parasite at a meeting of the New York Pathological Society on December 12, 1876, as occurring in a man from Albany, Gentry County, Montana. This man had cavities in his lungs, and coughed up 75 to 100 parasites, which could crawl about the floor and could live for ten days in a bottle ; moreover, they could resist freezing.

With regard to these parasites, which at the time were considered to be *P. armillatus* (i.e., *Pentastomum constrictum*), Sambon points out that, if genuine Linguatulida, they can hardly belong to an

African species, as the case occurred in America, and therefore he is inclined to believe that they must belong to *P. crotali* Humboldt 1808, which are found as adults in *Crotalus adamanteus* Beauvois, *C. horridus* Linnæus, and *C. terrificus* Laurent, while the nymphæ have been found in *Marmosa murina* Linnæus, the murine opossum.

Porocephalus crotali Humboldt 1808.

Synonyms.—*Echinorhynchus crotali* Humboldt 1808, *Distoma crotali* Humboldt 1808, *Distoma crotali durissi* Rudolphi 1809, *Porocephalus crotali* Humboldt 1811, *Polystoma proboscideum* Rudolphi 1814, *Pentastoma proboscideum* Rudolphi 1819, *Linguatula proboscidea* van Beneden 1849 *pro parte*, *Porocephalus humboldtii* Mayer 1852, *Linguatula quadriuncinata* Mayer 1852, *Porocephalus moniliforme* Mégnin 1880 *pro parte*. **Nymph.**—*Pentastoma subcylindricum* Diesing 1836.

Remarks.—This porocephalus was discovered by Humboldt in the lungs of the tropical rattlesnake.

Morphology.—When fresh, it is of a bright yellowish colour, with elongate, incurved, cylindrical body, somewhat flattened ventrally and club-shaped anteriorly, and is transversely encircled by over eighty flat bands. It is said to have an ovoid-shaped mouth on a line with the hooks, and two prominent papillæ.

Distribution.—It is thought to be coextensive in its distribution with the genus *Crotalus*—i.e., the United States, Mexico, and Brazil.

Pathogenicity.—Possibly it is the cause of one form of porocephalosis in man.

CLASS IV. CRUSTACEA LAMARCK 1815.

Aquatic Arthropoda which breathe by means of gills.

Crustaceans can hardly be considered as human parasites, for they have very rarely occurred as such—e.g., *Caligus curtus* in the cornea, and *Gammarus pulex* in the stomach.

COPEPODA.

It must, however, be remembered that the Copepoda are of importance, because a species of *Cyclops* has been found to be the intermediary host of *Dracunculus medinensis*, the guinea-worm. An excellent paper on the species found on the Gold Coast is contributed by Graham to vol. i. of the *Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology*. The *Cyclops* live in fresh water in any ditch, pond, or well.

Prophylaxis.—It is recommended to treat a well with sufficient quicklime to render the water suddenly hot in order to kill these crustaceans. The well must, of course, be closed for some time after this proceeding, until the percentage of lime has diminished to reasonable proportions. A simpler remedy is to boil all water before drinking. It has been also suggested to add 1 pound of caustic soda to 180 gallons of water = 0.07 per cent. for the same purpose. Leiper's recommendation is, however, the best, and this is to raise the temperature of the well-water to 65° C. by blowing in steam, as he finds that all *Cyclops* die if the water is raised to 35° C. He calculates that it

requires 87 gallons of water as steam to raise 1,000 gallons of water from 15° to 65° C., and that this requires 1 pound of coal or its equivalent in oil per gallon of water, and that for every square foot of grate 15 pounds of coal can



FIG. 265.—CYCLOPS SP. (?).

be burnt per hour, so that if the grate is 1 square foot it will require $\frac{87}{12}=6$ hours to raise 87 gallons of water as steam—*i.e.*, 12 square feet of grate give 90 gallons of water as steam in half an hour.

CLASS V. CHILOPODA.

Arthropoda with three prosthomeres. The first post-oral somite is the mandibular; the second and third post-oral somites carry the maxillæ, while the fourth has its appendages converted into very large powerful jaws, which are provided with poison glands. The remaining somites carry single-clawed walking-legs, one pair to each somite. Body anomomeristic, showing from 17 to 175 somites behind that which carries the poison glands. They breathe by tracheæ, and the genital ducts open on the penultimate somites.

Family 1. Scolopendridæ.

Family 2. Lithobiidæ.

Family 3. Scutigridæ.

FAMILY 1. SCOLOPENDRIDÆ.

Chilopoda with antennæ, possessing few joints, and with few ocelli.

Geophilus carpophagus Leach, *G. electricus* Linnæus, *G. cephalicus* Wood, *G. similis* Leach, have been found as accidental parasites about nineteen times in the nasal cavities and their neighbouring sinuses in man in Europe. *G. electricus* Linnæus has been found in the alimentary canal about four times.

FAMILY 2. LITHOBIIDÆ.

Chilopoda with many-jointed antennæ; numerous ocelli.

Lithobius fortificatus L. and *L. melanops* have been found in the nasal cavities in three cases in man.

FAMILY 3. SCUTIGRIDÆ.

Chilopoda with antennæ at least as long as the body, and faceted eyes instead of ocelli.

Scutigera coleoptrata has been found in the alimentary canal.

Other species found in the alimentary canal are: *Chatechelyne vesuviana* Newport, *Himantarium gervaisi*, *Stigmatogaster subterraneus*.

Pathogenicity.—In the nose these parasites cause inflammation with, at times, no flow of mucus, and at others a large discharge of it, associated with headache, which is generally more or less continuous, but may show remissions. In addition to these local symptoms, general symptoms such as convulsions, anginiform attacks, dyspnoea, etc., may be induced through irritation of the fifth nerve. There is no evidence that these parasites cause any of the



FIG. 266.—SCOLOPENDRA SPECIES (?)

(This is a very common species in Ceylon.)

symptoms by their venom. They are generally expelled in attacks of sneezing, or spontaneously. The best methods of making them leave the nostrils are applications of snuff, eau-de-Cologne, or turpentine; but in some instances it will be necessary to open a sinus—e.g., the frontal sinus—by surgical means in order to remove the parasite.

In the alimentary canal the symptoms will give rise to the suspicion of helminthiasis. They are: pain in the abdomen, cramps, nausea, vomiting, and reflex nervous symptoms.

Treatment does not appear very satisfactory.

REFERENCES.

Hirudinea.

- BLANCHARD, R. (1888). Dictionnaire Encyclop. de Science Méd., vol. xiv. (A most valuable account.)
 BLANCHARD, R. (1893-94). Bull. Mus. Zool. d. R. Un. di Torino, viii. 145, 146; ix. 192.
 HARDING (1908). Journal of Parasitology, i. 186; (1910) *ibid.*, p. 130. Cambridge.
 KNOX, R. (1861). Historical Relation of the Island of Ceylon, pp. 48, 49. 1861.
 MOQUIN-TANDON (1846). Monographie de la Famille des Hirudinées. Paris.
 TENNENT (1859). Ceylon, pp. 302-305. London, 1859. Natural History of Ceylon, pp. 479-483. London, 1861.
 WHITMAN (1886). Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science, xxvi. 315.

Classification of the Arthropoda.

- LANKESTER, R. (1904). Quarterly Journal of Microscopical Science. London.

Diplopoda.

- BLANCHARD, R. (1902). Archiv. de Parasit., 1898, i. 452; vi. 245.
 HUBER, J. (1902). *Ibid.*, vi. 631.

Acarina.

- BANKS, N. (1904). A Treatise on the Acarina. Smithsonian Institute. Proceedings United States National Museum, vol. xxviii. (Most useful.)
 HIRST (1912). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
 NEUMANN, L. G. (1905). Parasites and Parasitic Diseases. English edition.

Ixodoidea.

- BLANCHARD, R. (1909). L'Insecte et L'Infection. Paris.
 DUTTON AND TODD. Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Memoir XVII. (*O. moubata*.)
 HOOKER, BISHOP, AND WOOD (1912). United States Department of Agriculture (Life-History and Bionomics of Some Ticks). Bulletin 106. Washington.
 KING, H. H. (1911). Wellcome Tropical Research Laboratory. Fourth Report. Vol. B, p. 128. London.
 NEUMANN, G. (1896-1907). Révision de la Famille des Ixodidés. 1896, Memoirs Soc. Zool. France, IX. 1897 (Argasidæ), X. ; 1899 (Rhipicephalidæ), XII. ; 1901 (Ixodinæ), XIV. ; (Summary Classification Tables), II. 463. 1902, Archives de Parasitologie, VI. ; 1904, VIII. ; 1905, IX. ; 1906, X. ; 1907, XI. ; 1907, Annals of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene, vol. i. ; 1911, Ixodidæ in Schultze's Das Tierreich. Berlin.
 NEWSTEAD, R. (1905). British Medical Journal, ii. 1695-1697. (Ticks and Disease in Man.)
 NUTTALL, G. H. F. (1899). Johns Hopkins Hospital Reports, viii.
 NUTTALL, G. H. F. (1908). Part I.: Argasidæ; (1911) Part II.: Ixodidæ. Cambridge. (A most useful monograph.) Also many papers in the Journal of Parasitology.
 NUTTALL, COOPER, AND ROBINSON (1908). Journal of Parasitology, 152.
 SALMON AND STILES (1900). Republic of United States Department of Agriculture, Animal Indus., xvii., 1900, pp. 380-491.
 STILES (1910). Bulletin 62, Public Health Marine Hospital Service. (Genus Dermacentor.) Washington.

Tyroglyphidæ.

- OUDEMANS (1911). Oudemans' Gravenhage, Ber. Med. Ent. Ver. Java. the last tarsal joint is
 PEPPER, SCHNAUSS, AND SMITH (1908). University of Pennsylvania Medical Bulletin.

Sarcoptidæ.

- CASTELLANI (1906). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie.

Demodicidæ.

- BERTARELLI AND PARANHOS (1911). Centralblatt f. Bakt., Jena., Abt. 1.

Linguatulidæ.

- CHALMERS (1899). Lancet, I., January.
 LEUCKART (1860). Bau und Entwicklungsgeschichte der Pentastomen. Leipzig.
 SAMBON (1910-1912). Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene. London. (A very excellent account of the parasites found in man and animals.)
 SHIPLEY (1898). Archives de Parasitologie, i. 52.

CHAPTER XXIII

THE HEXAPODA

SIPHUNCULATA, MALLOPHAGA, AND HEMIPTERA

Hexapoda—Siphunculata—Pediculidæ—Mallophaga—Hemiptera—Clino-
coridæ—Reduviidæ—Hydrometridæ—Aradidæ—References.

CLASS HEXAPODA.

Synonym—*Insecta*.—Arthropoda breathing by means of tracheæ, with antennæ on the head, three pairs of legs, and usually two pairs of wings on the thorax, which is composed of three segments. Abdomen with generally nine apparent segments.

Remarks.—The Hexapoda, or insects, have recently become known to be of the utmost importance in the spread of disease, for the researches of Manson, Ross, Grassi, and others have shown that they can spread the parasites of filariasis, malaria, and other diseases.

Morphology.—The body is distinctly divided into head, thorax, and abdomen. The head is composed of the fusion of about six segments, which are the ocular, antennal, intercalary (probably homologous with the second antennal segment of the Crustacea), mandibular, maxillary, and labial; but whether the hypopharynx represents a seventh segment or not is doubtful. The head carries, in addition to the eyes, four pairs of appendages, one for each somite or segment, except the intercalary segment, which is pre-mandibular. These appendages are the antennæ, the mandibles, the maxillæ to which are attached palpi called the maxillary palps, and a second pair of maxillæ usually fused to form the lower lip or labium, which generally carries a pair of labial palps.

The exoskeleton of the head is composed of sclerites—that is to say, more densely chitinized regions of the integument—which are: (1) The clypeus; (2) the epicranium; (3) the gula.

The clypeus is the sclerite situate on the anterior portion of the dorsal surface, and carrying the labrum; in flies it is often called the face.

The epicranium is the larger part of the head, and may be subdivided into an anterior frons and a posterior occiput. The genæform the sides of the head, meeting the epicranium and the gula at the occipital foramen.

The gula is the sclerite in the median ventral line which carries the basal part of the labium called the submentum. There is no exoskeleton at the posterior part of the head ventral to the occipital region, which thus forms a foramen in the hard tissues called the occipital foramen, through which the soft structures of the head communicate with those of the thorax.

The antennæ appear to be sensory organs, and the mandibles to vary in structure according as to whether the mouth is to be used for biting or sucking. In the former case they are broad and strong, while in the latter they are

styliform. The first pair of maxillæ, similarly, may be broad, strong organs or styliform organs.

In addition to these appendages, the mouth shows an upper lip or labrum, which is simply a sclerite attached to the cephalic shield, and may have a median projection from its internal surface called the epipharynx, while the labium has a similar one called the hypopharynx. Thus the mouth parts of an insect may be very complicated, with labrum and epipharynx, mandibles, maxillæ, and maxillary palps, labium, and hypopharynx.

The thorax is joined to the head by a neck, and is subdivided into three segments—prothorax, mesothorax, and metathorax. These somites are by no means simple horny rings, but have their chitinous exoskeleton split up into hard pieces joined together by soft material. The hard pieces are a dorsal plate called 'the notum,' a ventral plate called 'the sternum,' and lateral plates called 'pleura.' Further, the terms 'pro,' 'meso,' and 'meta,' are applied to these, indicating the region to which they belong—'pronotum,' 'mesonotum,' and 'metanotum'; 'pro-,' 'meso-,' and 'metasternum'—while each pleuron is divided into an anterior episternum and a posterior epimeron. According to Audouin, a typical thoracic segment should have a notum composed of præscutum, scutum, scutellum, and post-scutellum, but all these parts are seldom seen.

Each somite of the thorax carries a pair of jointed walking-legs, in which the segments or articles are named coxa, trochanter, femur, tibia, and tarsus (consisting of several joints, the first joint of which is sometimes called the metatarsus; some authorities have caused much confusion by calling the first tarsal joint the metatarsus, and the real second tarsal joint the first tarsal joint, and so on. The last tarsal joint is terminated by claws or ungues, between which other appendages called empodia and pulvilli are to be found, as will be explained later.

Typically, the mesothorax and the metathorax should each carry a pair of wings. These are transparent and strengthened by nervures, ribs, or veins, which are chitinous canals containing blood-spaces, nerves, and tracheæ. The areas between the nervures are called cells. The wings, however, become much modified in the different orders, and may be entirely absent. The arrangement of the nervures in the wing is called the 'venation,' and has been restudied by Comstock and Needham, who find that the primitive type is composed of two main tracheal branches, an anterior and a posterior. The anterior breaks up at the base of the wing into four longitudinal branches—the costa, subcosta, radius, and media—while the posterior has also four branches, of which the first is called the cubitus, and may be subdivided into two; and the other three are simple, and are called the anal veins—first, second, and third. The costal vein is unbranched, and runs along the anterior margin of the wing. The subcostal vein typically divides into two branches, the radial vein into five branches, and the median into four.

This primitive type is altered by atrophy or coalescence, leading to the reduction of the veins. The latter may take place from the base towards the tip, or from the tip towards the base of the wing, called outward and inward coalescence respectively. The wing cells may be named as follows:—

1. Costal Cell, between the Costa and the Subcosta.
2. Mediastinal, between the Subcosta and the Radius.
3. Marginal, between Radius 1 and Radius 2.
4. First Submarginal, between Radius 2 and Radius 3.
5. Second Submarginal, between Radius 3 and Radius 4.
6. Third Submarginal, between Radius 4 and Radius 5.
7. First Posterior, between Radius 5 and Media 1.
8. Second Posterior, between Media 1 and Media 2.
9. Third Posterior, between Media 2 and Media 3.
10. Fourth Posterior, between Media 3 and Media 4.
11. Fifth Posterior, between Media 4 and Media 5.

12. Sixth Posterior, between Media 5 and Cubitus 1.
13. Seventh Posterior, between Cubitus 1 and Cubitus 2.
14. First Anal, between Cubitus 2 and Anal 1.
15. Second Anal, between Anal 1 and Anal 2.
16. Axillary, between Anal 2 and Anal 3.
17. Spurious cell, behind Anal 3.

But all these cells are not present in any one given type of wing, owing to coalescence of the nervures, and hence the arrangement of the cells is different. Besides this, the venation is complicated by the presence of transverse veins, as will be explained in the next chapter.

The abdomen usually consists of ten somites, without appendages, composed of dorsal and ventral plates connected together and to preceding and succeeding segments by soft membranes. The posterior segments are often modified with reference to reproduction, possessing claspers in the male, and ovipositors in the female. The anal opening is on the last abdominal segment, and the reproductive aperture on the penultimate segment.

Internal Anatomy.—The mouth lies between the labrum above and the labium below, and leads into an oral cavity.

The salivary glands in most of the genera which we have to consider are well developed, and are, as a rule, not connected with the mouth, but open into a common duct which communicates with a groove or canal on the hypopharynx, and so opens near the tip of the proboscis.

From the mouth a pharynx leads through an oesophagus, with a dilatation called the crop, into a proventriculus or masticatory stomach, which latter, communicates with the mesenteron or chylic ventricle, whose juncture with the intestine is defined by the openings of the caecal Malpighian tubules. This is an important landmark, defining where the stomach ends and the intestine begins. The intestine is subdivided into small intestine, colon or large intestine, and rectum. The last-mentioned may possess rectal glands, while anal glands may open into the rectum just in front of the anus, and are useful to the insect by forming the secretion which gives rise to repulsive odours.

With regard to the proventriculus, it should really be a powerful muscular organ lined with chitin, and possessing teeth, bristles, etc., but in the Diptera it will be found to be much degenerated. The Malpighian tubules, which number from four to six, are excretory in function. The alimentary canal possesses longitudinal and transverse muscular coats and a lining of epithelial cells.

The stigmata or openings of the respiratory system are situate on the membranes, on the side of the body, in the thorax and abdomen, and are very varied in number. They are never to be found on the head or on the last abdominal segment. From the stigmata the tracheæ, or air-tubes, ramify all over the body. These tracheæ are kept open by spiral thickenings of the chitinous lining membrane.

The fat-bodies are lobulated masses packed beneath the skin and between the organs, and are supposed not merely to represent reserve material, but to be of great importance in metabolism.

The circulatory system consists of a dorsal longitudinal vessel divided into chambers, which pulsates, and an anterior aorta, from which blood flows freely into the coelom or body cavity. From this it returns to the heart by two lateral vessels and one dorsal and one ventral vessel. The blood is colourless, and contains amœboid cells.

As already mentioned, some insects possess poison glands.

The nervous system and sense organs will not be described here, as they are not of importance in tropical medicine.

The male reproductive organs consist of testes, vasa deferentia, ductus ejaculatorius, and an external copulatory organ. The female reproductive organs are two ovaries, which consist of a series of egg-tubes, and oviducts, which are united together to form the single oviduct, the lower portion of which is a vagina. This receives the cement glands and the sebaceous

glands, which provide the secretion for glueing the eggs together and the receptaculum seminis, beneath which is the bursa copulatrix, which is sometimes separated from the vagina.

Life-History.—This is very varied. In general terms the spermatozoa, bound into bundles of spermatophores, are introduced by the external copulatory organ, which, when protruded, is surrounded by the claspers in the form of a sheath, into the bursa copulatrix. The ovum, starting from the terminal portion of the ovarian tube, obtains, as it passes downwards, its food-yolk and its shell or membrane, the chorion, which has a small gap, the micropyle. On arrival at the junction of the oviduct and the spermatheca, or receptaculum seminis, the spermatozoa enter via the micropyle, and fertilize the egg. These eggs may be strung together, as they are laid, into masses by means of the sebaceous secretion mentioned above. The egg may develop directly into the adult, but this is only in the lowest forms. Usually the egg develops into a larva, which becomes a nymph or pupa, and this into an adult, often called the 'imago.' This series of changes is called a metamorphosis. The pupa may present three forms :

1. *The free pupa*, with appendages free.
2. *The obtect pupa*, with appendages and body bound together.
3. *The coarctate pupa*, in which the pupa is contained in a puparium formed from the larval skin.

The larva is a most vigorous feeder, but the pupa does not take nourishment as a rule, though there are marked exceptions, especially among the Rhynchota and Siphunculata.

Habits.—We are mainly concerned with the predatory or blood-sucking insects. As a rule, only the female sucks blood, which, apparently, it does with a view of obtaining rich nourishment for its eggs. It is this habit which makes these insects of importance in tropical medicine, because not merely does it cause irritation by the introduction of secretions from the insects' salivary glands and mouth (alimentary canal), but also leads to the introduction into the victim of the germs of disease. Again, as we shall see later, larvæ are apt to become parasitic in man and animals, and in this way cause disease.

Enemies.—Insects and their larvæ have many enemies in birds, reptiles, fish, and other insects. Cannibalism is also met with, especially among mosquito larvæ.

Pathogenicity.—The principal disease-spreading insects are the Diptera—for example, the *Anophelinæ* disseminate malaria, the genus *Stegomyia* yellow fever, and the genus *Culex* filariasis, and perhaps dengue fever. Some species of *Glossina* are responsible for the African trypanosomiasis, while they and other flies spread the animal trypanosomiasis.

In addition, the common house-fly is an important factor in the dissemination of typhoid and perhaps dysentery in tropical countries. Fleas are now known to be the spreaders of plague, and bugs perhaps of some of the relapsing fevers. This is a suffi-

cient list of ills to commend insects and their habits to the serious notice of the medical practitioner of the tropics.

How to Collect Blood-Sucking Flies.—Mr. Austen, of the British Museum (Natural History), has informed us that he will be pleased to send anyone, on application, a pamphlet giving full directions as to the collection and preservation of blood-sucking flies.

Classification.—The Hexapoda are classified into the following orders :—

- | | |
|------------------|-------------------|
| 1. Aptera. | 7. Siphunculata. |
| 2. Neuroptera. | 8. Diptera. |
| 3. Orthoptera. | 9. Lepidoptera. |
| 4. Mallophaga. | 10. Hymenoptera. |
| 5. Thysanoptera. | 11. Siphonaptera. |
| 6. Hemiptera. | 12. Coleoptera. |

But the only orders which contain species important as spreaders of disease or as human parasites are :—

- | | |
|------------------|------------------|
| 1. Siphunculata. | 4. Diptera. |
| 2. Mallophaga. | 5. Siphonaptera. |
| 3. Hemiptera. | 6. Coleoptera. |

ORDER SIPHUNCULATA Meinert 1891.

Synonym.—Anoplura.

Hexapoda with labrum and labium joined together to form a rostrum or proboscis, which is armed with recurved hooklets, and contains a hollow extensile sucker formed by the mandibles and maxillæ. Eyes without facets. Antennæ five-jointed. Thorax with little traces of segmentation. Wings absent. Legs with hook-like terminal joints, suitable for clinging. Last abdominal segment rounded in male, notched in female. Metamorphosis incomplete.

The relationship of the Siphunculata to the Hemiptera was based upon the anatomy of the mouth, and is so doubtful that we have adopted Meinert's separate order.

The Siphunculata include the families (1) Pediculidæ, (2) Hæmatopinidæ, (3) Hæmatomyzidæ, (4) Echinophthinidæ, but only the first two need be considered.

FAMILY I. PEDICULIDÆ Leach.

Siphunculata with head narrower than the thorax.

The Pediculidæ are found all over the world, on man as well as on animals. They cause much irritation by their bites, which may become infected, causing impetigo. Apart from this, however, they have recently been suspected of spreading blood-parasites—e.g., *Trypanosoma lewisi* and *Hæmogregarina gerbilli*—which are believed to undergo development in them; and, in addition, they contain parasites peculiar to themselves—e.g., *Herpetomonas pediculi*.

Morphology.—The head is usually clearly defined, but the thorax may or may not be so well defined from the abdomen. Eyes may be present or absent—a fact which appears to depend upon whether the host is nocturnal or not in its habits. The antennæ are usually five-jointed. The mouth consists of a proboscis, composed of labrum and labium, which is armed with recurved hooklets, and contains the maxillæ and mandibles, which take the form of a suctorial tube. The thoracic segments are fused together. The thorax may be as broad as the abdomen, or narrower. There are no wings. The legs have four segments, of which the terminal one carries a strongly curved

claw. The abdomen has, if statements can be trusted, a various number of segments, differing in the different genera.

The last segment in the female has a slit-like opening guarded by two chitinous plates, while in the male there is in the same situation a horny papilla surrounded by spines.

Internal Anatomy.—Christophers and Newstead have studied the anatomy of *Hæmatopinus stephensi* Christophers and Newstead 1906, parasitic on *Gerbillus indicus* (the Indian field-rat).

The alimentary canal consists of a mouth followed by a chitinous pharyngeal pump, into which the ducts of the salivary glands open, and an œsophagus which leads into the mid-gut. This second part of the canal consists of two portions, of which the first appears to be a crop and the second a chylic ventricle. There are four Malpighian tubules. The intestine shows no differentiation into small and large. The rectum is globular, with a distended posterior portion containing the rectal papillæ. The fat-body is well developed. The female generative organs consist of two ovaries with oviducts. Each

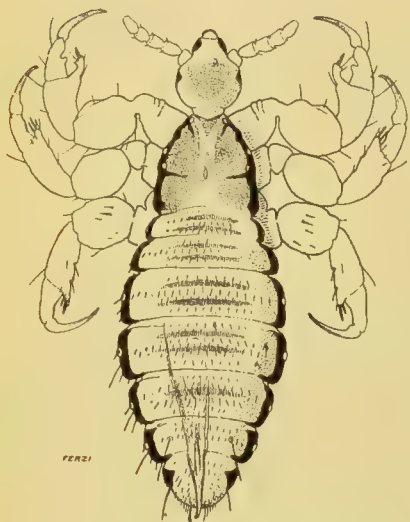


FIG. 267.—*PEDICULUS HUMANUS*
L.: MALE ($\times 25$).

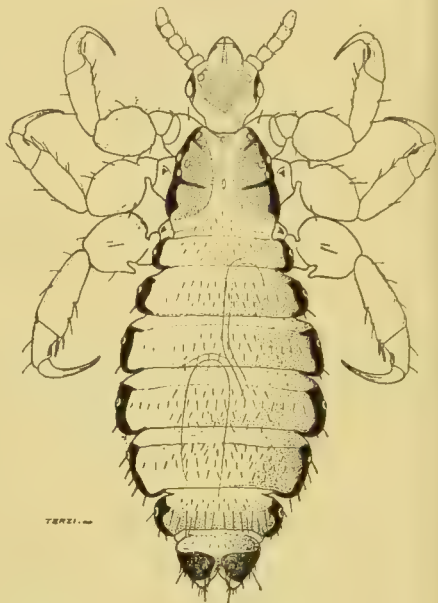


FIG. 268.—*PEDICULUS HUMANUS*
L.: FEMALE ($\times 25$).

ovary consists of five to six follicular tubes. The two oviducts unite into a common duct, and there is a spermatheca. The male organs are testes, vasa deferentia, vesiculæ seminales, and penis.

Life-History.—The ova, which are attached to the hairs of the host, give rise to larvæ, which closely resemble the adults.

Classification.—The Pediculidæ contain the lice which occur on man and cause much irritation. The family is divided into two subfamilies—the *Pediculinidæ* Enderlein, and the *Pediculinæ* Enderlein.

Pediculinæ.—This subfamily has two genera, *Pediculus* and *Phthirus*, which are distinguished as follows:—

1. Thorax narrower than abdomen: With distinct neck—*Pediculus*.
2. Thorax broader than abdomen—*Phthirus*.

Pediculus Linnæus 1758.

Pediculidæ with five-jointed antennæ, distinct neck, thorax narrower than abdomen, and legs with a single terminal claw.

Pediculus humanus Linnæus 1758.

Synonyms.—*Pediculus capitis* de Geer 1778, *P. cervicalis* Latreille 1803.

This is the head-louse, which is cosmopolitan in distribution, but varies in colour on the different races, as was pointed out by Murray, being very dark on African negroes and Tamils, and said to be yellow on Chinese and Japanese, and orange on Hottentots.

On Europeans it is light grey in colour. Daniels says that the pediculi of Chinese do not pass readily to Tamils; though in our experience the pediculi of native servants, Sinhalese and Tamils, will pass to Europeans.

These pediculi are extremely common in the tropics, and it is an every-day scene to witness natives busy at work killing them on their friends' heads.

Morphology.—The head-louse is about 2 millimetres in length by 1 millimetre in breadth. The female is larger than the male, and exists in greater

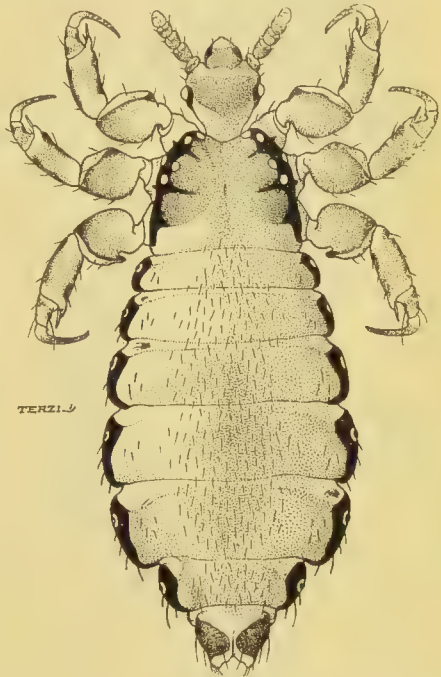
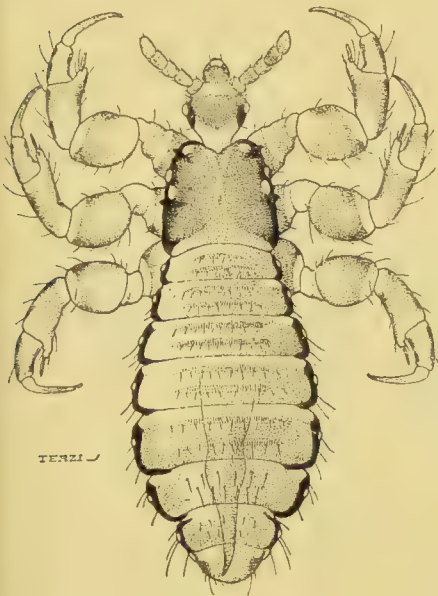


FIG. 269.—*PEDICULUS CORPORIS* DE GEER: MALE ($\times 25$).

FIG. 270.—*PEDICULUS CORPORIS* DE GEER: FEMALE ($\times 25$).

numbers. The head is triangular, the thorax broad with short legs, and the margins of the abdomen are dark.

Male.—The posterior somite is rounded off and prominent, with a circular opening dorsally, which is the common aperture of the genital and alimentary canal. The penis is simple, wedge-shaped, and is usually seen protruding dorsally.

Female.—The last abdominal segment is deeply notched at the apex, where the anus is situated. The vagina opens on the ventral surface.

Life-History.—The female lays fifty to sixty eggs, which are attached firmly to the hairs by the secretion of the cement gland. In about six days these eggs hatch. The young pediculi become fully developed in fourteen to twenty days.

Pathogenicity.—It can carry typhus and produce a form of impetigo.

Treatment.—White precipitate ointment or common paraffin oil may be used.

Pediculus corporis de Geer 1778.

Synonyms.—*Pediculus vestimenti* Nitzsch 1818, *P. tabescentium* Alt 1824.
This louse lives in the folds and seams of the clothes.

Morphology.—It is larger than *P. humanus*, and has an oval, elongated head, with large antennæ. The thorax is more segmented than in *P. humanus*, and the legs more developed, with larger claws.

Life-History.—It lays seventy to eighty eggs, measuring 0.7 to 0.9 millimetre, in the seams of the clothing, which hatch in three to four days, and become mature in fifteen to eighteen days.

Pathogenicity.—It is a carrier of typhus fever

Treatment.—Boil or steam the clothes in a sterilizer at 212° F.

Phthirius Leach 1815.

Pediculidæ with the anterior legs weak, armed with a long thin claw; the other legs very powerful, armed with large short claws; abdomen broad and short.

Phthirius pubis Linnæus 1758.

Synonyms.—*Pediculus pubis* Linnæus 1758, *P. inguinalis* Reichard 1759, *Phthirius inguinalis* Leach 1815, *P. tabescentium* Alb 1818, *P. pubis* Küchenmeister 1855.

P. pubis is the pubic or crab-louse, and is more common on men than on women. It usually infests the pubic hairs, but may also be found on the eyelashes and on the eyebrows.

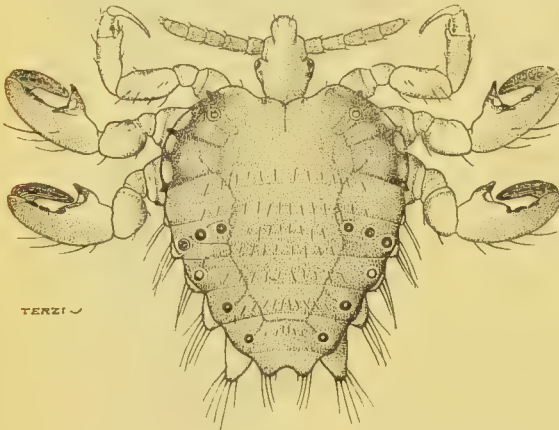


FIG. 271.—**PHTHIRIUS PUBIS** LINNÆUS:
FEMALE (× 25).

Morphology.—The body in general is flat and broad, with a rounded head bearing antennæ with five segments, and two small eyes. There is a neck. The broad, flat thorax is merged into the abdomen, and carries three pairs of legs, of which the anterior pair is slender, and possesses a straight claw suitable for walking, and the two posterior pairs have claws suitable for clinging.

The female measures 1.5 to 2 millimetres in length by 1.5 millimetres in breadth. The male is half the size of the female.

Life-History.—The female lays ten to fifteen eggs, which it attaches to hairs. These hatch in seven days, and the resulting pediculi become mature in about two weeks.

Pathogenicity.—It produces often a dermatitis, with itching and a greyish discoloration of the skin, said by Dugnet to be caused by a pigment produced by the parasite. Erasmus Wilson says that reddish deposits may be seen on the hairs, due to the faecal matter of the parasite.

Treatment.—White precipitate ointment or some other mercurial preparation.

FAMILY 2. HÆMATOPINIDÆ ENDERLEIN.

Siphunculata with antennæ composed of five joints, eyes rudimentary, and carried on a lateral prolongation of the posterior part of the head.

Classification.—*Hæmatopininæ* Enderlein, *Linognathinæ* Enderlein, and *Euhamatopininæ* Enderlein.

SUBFAMILY HÆMATOPININÆ.—Genera : *Hæmatopinus* Leach 1815, and *Hybophthirius* Neumann 1910.

SUBFAMILY LINOGNATHINÆ. Seven genera, including *Polyplax* Enderlein 1905, with *P. spinulosa* Burmeister.

Hæmatopinus Leach 1815.

This genus is not very distinct from *Pediculus*; two species are, however, known on man, and several on monkeys, dogs, horses, and many domestic animals.

ORDER MALLOPHAGA.

Hexapoda wingless and parasitic, with mandibular mouth parts; and head sometimes larger than the thorax.

The Mallophaga are subdivided into :—

SUBORDER AMBLYCERA. — Antennæ with four segments, containing the families Gyropidae and Liotheidae.

SUBORDER ISCHNOCERA. — Antennæ with three or five segments, containing the families Trichodectidae and Philopteridae.

The Trichodectidae contain the genus—*Trichodectus* Nitzsch 1818—parasitic on mammals.

ORDER HEMIPTERA.

Hexapoda with four wings, the front pair being either membranous or half horny and half membranous, but both pairs may be wanting in the parasitic species. Mouth suctorial. Metamorphosis incomplete.

The Hemiptera include the cochineal insect, *Coccus cacti*; the Aphidæ, plant-lice; and, in particular, the cicadas, whose shrill notes wake the quiet of an African forest. The anterior wings are called hemelytra, and usually consist of three portions :—

1. The clavus—the hard, coriaceous portion next to the scutellum.
2. The corium—hard, coriaceous portion occupying the whole of the area between the clavus and the membrane.
3. The membrane—apical portion.

The posterior pair are the true wings.

In the Clinocoridae the corium is divided into three portions :—

1. Internal—corium proper.
2. External and basal—embolium.
3. External and apical—cuneus.

The order is divided into two suborders :—

SUBORDER I. HOMOPTERA.—With both pairs of wings membranaceous.

SUBORDER II. HETEROPTERA.—With the front pair of wings half horny.

The first will not be considered here.

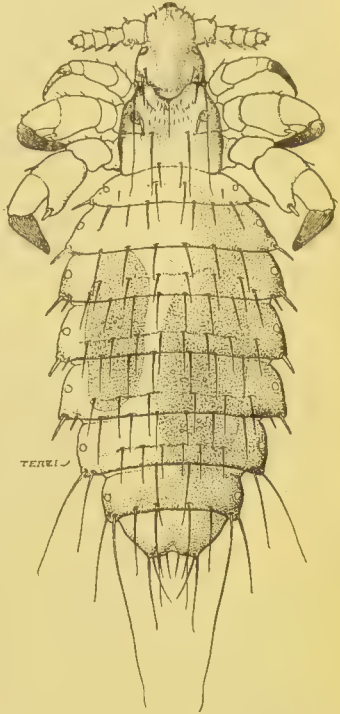


FIG. 272.—POLYPLAX SPINULOSA BURMEISTER: FEMALE.

HETEROPTERA.

This suborder has two series :—

Series 1. Gymnocerata.—Antennæ conspicuous.

Series 2. Cryptocerata.—Antennæ hidden.

GYMNOCERATA.

The families of importance to us are :—

Clinocoridæ.

Anthocoridæ.

Reduviidæ.

Aradidæ.

Hydrometridæ.

These families can be diagnosed, according to Distant, in the following manner :—

A. Species not aquatic ; abdomen not clothed beneath with a silvery, velvety pubescence ; scutellum not reaching to the base of the membrane nor to the middle of the abdomen.

(1) Mesopleuræ and metapleuræ composed of one piece ; hemelytra without cuneus.

(a) Tarsi three-jointed. Rostrum short, stout, bent at the base, so that in repose it does not lie against under-surface of the head ; ocelli behind eyes ; hemelytra complete with distinct membrane—*Reduviidæ*.

(b) Tarsi two-jointed, anterior legs normal and inserted on the disk of the prosternum. Hemelytra⁸ neither reticulate nor cellular—*Aradidæ*.

(2) Mesopleuræ and metapleuræ composed of seven pieces ; hemelytra with a cuneus and an embolium ; ocelli absent—*Clinocoridæ*.

B. Species aquatic or semi-aquatic ; abdomen clothed beneath with a silvery velvety pubescence ; antennæ four-jointed—*Hydrometridæ*.

FAMILY CLINOCORIDÆ.

Gymnocerata with ocelli absent ; elytra very short and broad, so that the abdomen is left uncovered ; tarsi three-jointed.

This family contains the bugs, with five genera, but only two will be dealt with here.

Genera.—*Clinocoris* Petersonn 1829, *Æciacus* Stål 1873, and *Loxaspis* Rothschild 1912.

Clinocoris Petersonn 1829.

Clinocoridæ with the anterior margin of the thorax strongly excavated, and with prominent lateral angles.

Synonyms.—*Cimex* Linnæus 1758, *Acanthia* Fabricius 1803, *Klinophilos* Kirk 1899.

Clinocoridae with short, broad head with two prominent eyes, but no ocelli; antennæ four-jointed, apical joints slender; elytra rudimentary and lie over the metathorax; prothorax semilunar, with extended anterior angles; abdomen uncovered, with seven segments and an eighth anal appendage; legs slender; anterior tibia twice as long, and posterior three times as long as the tarsi, which are three-jointed; proboscis flexed into a groove beneath the head and prothorax.

Type Species.—*Clinocoris lectularius* Linnæus. The species known at present are:—

1. *Clinocoris lectularius* Linnæus 1758.
2. *C. rotundatus* Signoret 1852.
3. *C. ciliatus* Eversmann 1841.
4. *C. pipistrelli* Jenyns 1839.
5. *C. columbarius* Jenyns 1839.
6. *C. inodorus* Dugès.
7. *C. boueti* Brumpt 1910.

Only the first three need concern us.

***Clinocoris lectularius* Linnæus 1758.**

Synonyms.—*C. lectularius* Merrett 1667, *Acanthia lectularius* Fabricius 1794, *Cimus lectularius* Linnæus 1758.

This is the common bed-bug found all over the world, as far as is known, but Patton has recently shown that other species have

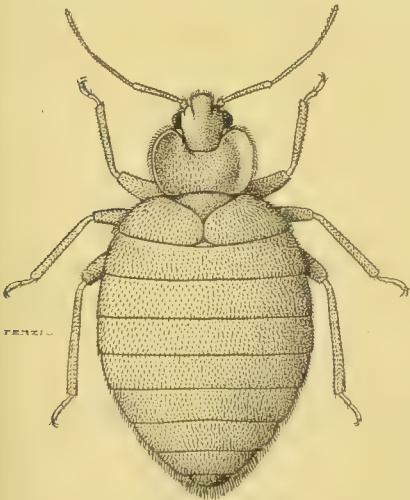


FIG. 273.—CLINOCORIS LECTULARIUS L.: MALE ($\times 10$).

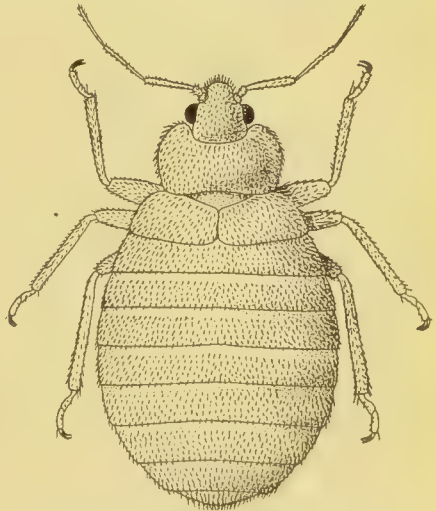


FIG. 274.—CLINOCORIS LECTULARIUS L.: FEMALE ($\times 10$).

been mistaken for this insect. It was well known to the ancient peoples of Asia and to the Romans, who called it *Cimex*, but it is believed to have only reached England in 1503, which is rather

questionable. Originally it was known as the wall-louse or chinch, and the term 'bed-bug' is apparently of recent origin. Both males and females suck blood, and are suspected of spreading Obermeyer's relapsing fever.

Morphology.—It is reddish-brown in colour, with short, broad head carrying two eyes, two antennæ composed of four segments, of which the first and second are stout, and the third and fourth slender. The mouth consists of a proboscis, which is composed of an upper part—the labrum—which is small, and a lower curved portion. This is large and jointed—the labium—inside which are four stylets, the two outer being the mandibles, and the two inner the maxillæ. There are no palpi. The prothorax is semilunar, with two rounded horns. The dorsum is raised in the median line. The mesothorax is triangular, with the apex posteriorly. The metathorax is covered dorsally by the elytra, which are two small chitinous plates belonging to the mesothorax, but consist of clavus, corium, empodium, cuneus, and membrane. The abdomen, which is rounded in shape, with seven segments and an eighth anal appendage, is broadest opposite the third segment. Posteriorly it is covered with round hairs. Length, 5 to 6 millimetres. Male smaller than female, with penis flexed into a notch between seventh and eighth segments.

Internal Anatomy.—The mouth leads into the pharynx, beneath which is a syringe organ or salivary pump, into which the salivary glands open. The pharynx leads viâ the œsophagus into a large crop. There is the usual mid-gut, intestine, and rectum.

Life-History.—They live in cracks in floors, walls, and furniture during the day, and issue forth at night to suck blood from human beings. They are capable of emigration from house to house. The female lays some fifty eggs three or four times a year. Complete development is said to require eleven weeks, but may be completed in as short a time as seven weeks.

The eggs, which are oval, 1.12 millimetres in length, and white in colour, take about seven to ten days to hatch. The larva grows slowly, moulting about five times, at intervals of about eight days, after which the wing-pad appears, showing that the adult stage is reached. They feed only upon blood.

Bionomics—Bite.—In biting, they extend the proboscis, and feel about, testing the skin with the delicate hairs, then pierce it by the stylets, and inject saliva by the syringe, causing congestion of the area, when the blood runs up the grooves in the stylets by capillary attraction into the pharynx.

Smell.—The peculiar odour is due to the secretion of sac-like glands situated at the base of the abdomen, and opening on each side of the metasternum. The secretion is a clear, oily, volatile liquid, which is supposed to be protective in function.

Pathogenicity.—It is quite possible that they spread *Spiroschaudinnia recurrentis*, the cause of Obermeyer's relapsing fever. The effects of their venom have already been described.

Prophylaxis.—Bugs are by no means without their enemies, of which the most marked is the common red house-ant (*Monomorium pharaonis*), while another enemy is the common cockroach; but, despite these foes, bugs are extremely common in tropical hospitals. The first step in prophylaxis, is of course, strict cleanliness, and the use of painted iron bedsteads which can be easily taken to pieces and washed. Another good means is to make use of mattresses and pillows covered with Willesden canvas, which can easily be washed. The mattress should be in sections, and not all in one piece, as otherwise it is difficult to manipulate. The most useful substances for killing bugs are acetic acid, camphor, and carbolic acid. Acetic acid poured into the joints of a bedstead is said to kill the bugs rapidly. Kerosene is often used, but does not appear to be very effective. Apart from bedsteads, the whole room may be infected, in which case fumigation with sulphur is quite the best remedy, 4 ounces being burnt for each 1,000 cubic feet of space, and the room left closed for four or five hours, in order that the gas may act thoroughly.

Clinocoris rotundatus Signoret 1852.

Synonyms.—*Cimex rotundatus* Signoret 1852, *Cimex macrocephalus* Fieber 1861. This is the Indian bed-bug, which is

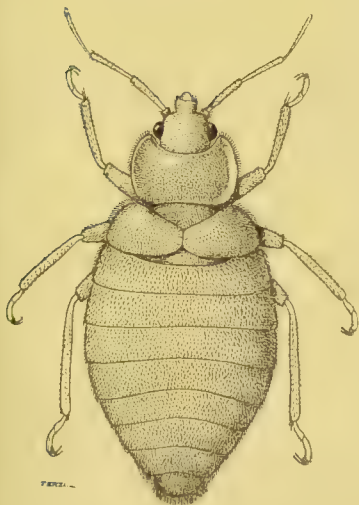


FIG. 275.—CLINOCORIS ROTUNDATUS SIG.: MALE (× 10).

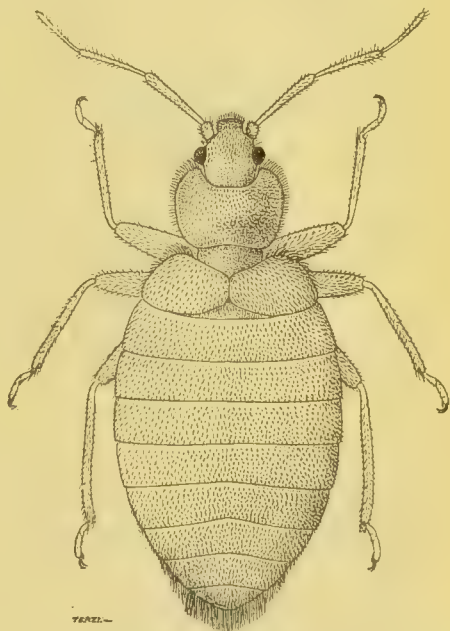


FIG. 276.—CLINOCORIS ROTUNDATUS SIG.: FEMALE (× 10).

found in India, Ceylon, Burma, Assam, and Malaya in Asia, and also in Sierra Leone, Mauritius, Réunion, St. Vincent, and Porto Rico.

Morphology.—*C. rotundatus* differs from *C. lectularius* by being darker in colour, with a shorter, narrower head, with a prothorax with rounded borders, and with a longer, narrower abdomen.

Pathogenicity.—According to Patton it spreads *Leishmania donovani*, the parasite of kala-azar or tropical febrile splenomegaly.

***Clinocoris ciliatus* Eversmann 1841.**

Synonym.—*Cimex ciliatus* Eversmann 1841.

This bug is found in Kasan, in Russia. It requires reinvestigation.

Morphology.—It is smaller than *C. lectularius*, yellowish-red in colour, and thickly covered with hairs. Length, 3.3 millimetres.

Pathogenicity.—Not known.

***Æciacus* Stål 1873.**

Clinocoridæ with the anterior margin of the thorax slightly excavated, and with only slightly projecting lateral angles.

Type Species.—*Æciacus hirudinis* Jenyns 1839.

***Loxaspis* Rothschild 1912.**

Clinocoridæ with anterior margin of thorax very narrow, scutellum transversely oblong, with posterior margin produced centrally into a point.

Type Species.—*L. mirandus* Rothschild, found on a bat in Uganda.

FAMILY ANTHOCORIDÆ.

Gymnocerata with embolium, membrane with one to four nerves, which arise at the tip and along the side of a triangular basal cell. Antennæ cylindrical.

Genera.—*Anthocoris* Fallén 1829 and *Lyctocoris* Hahn 1835.

***Anthocoris* Fallén 1829.**

Two species of importance—*A. kingi* Brumpt 1910 in the Egyptian Sudan, and *A. congolensis* Brumpt 1910 in the Belgian Congo.

***Lyctocoris* Hahn 1835.**

Lyctocoris campestris Fabricius is said to attack man.

FAMILY REDUVIIDÆ.

Gymnocerata with long, narrow heads and distinct neck. Eyes large and prominent; proboscis short, thick, and curved; antennæ long, slender at the tip; legs long; elytra with three divisions when present; tarsus three-jointed.

The genera which will be noted here are: *Reduvius*, *Conorhinus*, *Lamus*, *Reduviolus*, *Rasahus*, *Melanolestes*, but *Harpactor*, *Eulyes*, *Arilus*, *Prionotus* also bite man and animals.

In addition, it may be mentioned that Wellman found *Phonergates bicoloripes* Stål, which is locally known as 'ochindundu,' in the act of sucking the juices of *Ornithodoros moubata*. It is well known that the Reduviidæ attack other insects and ticks. He also mentions that the same insect produces a more painful effect upon man than the bite of the tick *O. moubata*.

Reduvius Fabricius 1803.

Body moderately elongate, head oblong, ante-ocular portion of head larger than post-ocular portion; eyes large, completely extending across the lateral parts of the head; rostrum with second joint much larger than first; pronotum transversely constricted before the middle anterior lobe with a strong central sulcus or fissure, which is broadly extended to the disc of the posterior lobe. Anterior much shorter than posterior lobe. Scutellum with apical spines; legs moderately long and slender; anterior femora normal; anterior tibiæ furrowed.

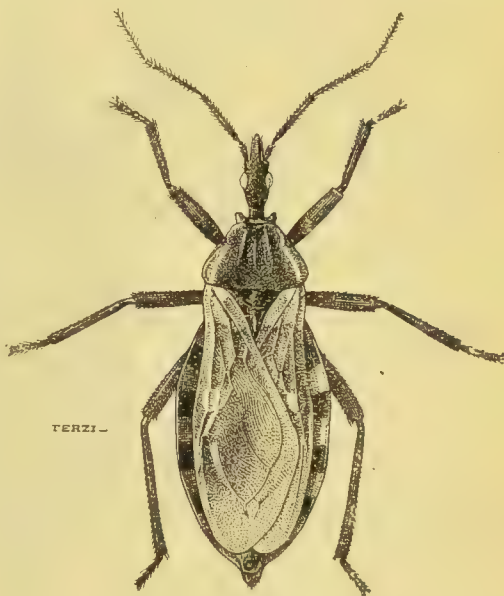
Reduvius personatus Linnæus 1758.

This is the wheel or masked bug found in Europe and the United States and celebrated for the severity of its bite; for it causes pain, swelling, and irritation in the affected area which may last as long as a week.

Conorhinus Laporte 1832.

Reduviidæ with head long, porrect, and more or less distinctly impressed behind eyes; rostrum with first joint very much shorter than second; antennæ inserted on the sides of the head about midway between eyes and apex; ocelli placed very far apart; prosternum broadly sulcated; abdomen frequently with the disc flattened; posterior tibiæ longer than the femora.

The species of *Conorhinus* are mostly found in South America, and live on the blood of mammals and of insects, including bed-bugs. Some of the more important are:—*C. sanguisugus*, *C. rubrofasciatus* de Geer, *C. renggeri* Herrich-Schäffer, *C. nigrovarius*, *C. protractus* and *C. variegatus*.

**Conorhinus sanguisugus**

Leconte 1855.

FIG. 277.—CONORHINUS SANGUISUGUS LECONTE 1855: FEMALE (× 2).

This is the blood-sucking cone-nose of America, which feeds upon the blood of insects, including bed-bugs, and of mammals, including man. The bite is very severe, and causes much swelling and irritation. It is a night-flier, and has an odour like that produced by bugs.

Morphology.—It is a large dark brown insect, with pink markings and a flattened body and very narrow pointed head, with a strong, thick, long proboscis. The thorax is provided with wings.

Life-History.—The eggs when first laid are white, but later change to yellow, and finally to pink. The larva hatches in about twenty days, and is very active. It moults twice and becomes the pupa, which also moults twice, the last stage showing wing pads. The pupa is also active.

Habits.—In addition to feeding upon blood, these insects may suck the juices of decomposing flesh.

Pathogenicity.—Its bite at times is followed by severe general symptoms, such as swelling in different parts of the body, nausea, etc., as well as local pain.

Remedy.—Sweet oil is advised as a remedy for the local pain.

Conorhinus rubrofasciatus de Geer ; this is the Malay bug, found in Africa, Sierra Leone and Madagascar, in Asia, Ceylon, India, Malaya, China, and the Philippine Islands. It is said to produce a very severe bite. *Conorhinus renggeri* Herrich-Schäffer ; this is the black bug of the Pampas. *Conorhinus nigrovarius* ; this is the 'bichugue' of South America, and bites severely. *Conorhinus protractus* ; this is the big bed-bug of Utah.

Lamus Stål 1859.

Reduviidæ with the head much shorter than the thorax, with a conical preocular portion, with the basal segment of the rostrum

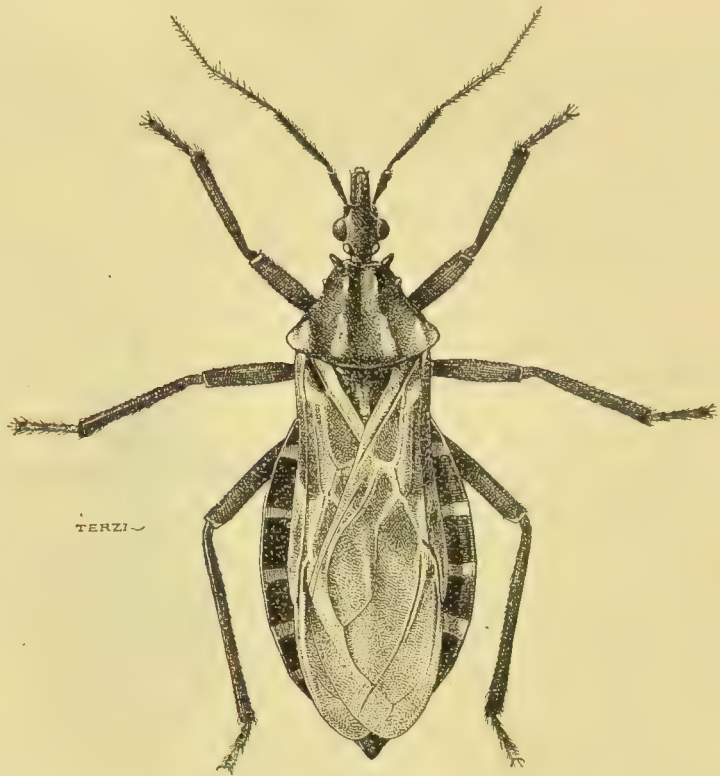


FIG. 278.—*LAMUS MEGISTUS* BURMEISTER: FEMALE (× 2).

longer than the apical. Antennæ, which are inserted a little in front of the eyes, are more than twice as long as the head, ocelli present. Scutellum unarmed ; legs rather slender ; anterior femora slightly thinner than the posterior, and armed with spines.

Lamus megistus Burmeister.

Synonym.—*Conorhinus megistus* Burmeister.

Chagas has demonstrated that *Lamus megistus* is the carrier of *Trypanosoma cruzi*. This *Reduviid* attacks men and animals, and,

owing to its habit of biting the face, is called 'Barbeiro' by the indigenous population.

Morphology.—*L. megistus* Burm. is a large black insect with numerous regularly arranged red markings, and differs from *C. rubrofasciatus* de Geer, which is closely allied to it, by the fact that *C. rubrofasciatus* is of a dull dark brown colour with markings on the pronotum, and with dusky yellow or brick-red elytra and connexivum.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of South American Trypanosomiasis.

Reduviolus Kirby 1837.

Reduviolus subcoleoptratus Kirby 1837 has once been recorded as a human blood-sucker in the United States.

Rasahus Amyot and Serville 1843.

Rasahus biguttatus Say 1831 is found in the houses in Cuba, Panama, and Para, where it really seeks the bed-bug, but bites man also.

Melanolestes Stål 1866.

Melanolestes morio Erichson 1848. Found under stones during the day in Guiana, Mexico, and the United States of America. Bites man.

FAMILY HYDROMETRIDÆ.

The Hydrometridæ, or water-bugs, are interesting to the student of tropical medicine, because Patton has traced out the development of a Crithidia resembling *Leishmania donovani* in one of them, as has been described in the chapter on Protozoa.

FAMILY ARADIDÆ.

Dysodius lunatus Fabricius is the 'Pito' bug of South American houses, which bites severely.

REFERENCES.

RECENT LITERATURE.

Summaries of recent literature are given in: Journal of Royal Microscopical Society, Zoologisches Centralblatt und Jahresbericht, and the Entomological News of Philadelphia.

A most useful series is the Bulletins of the United States Department of Agriculture, Bureau of Entomology, Washington; and the Bulletin of Entomological Research, London.

Hexapoda.

ALCOCK, A. (1911). Entomology for Medical Officers. London.

FOLSOM, J. W. (1906). Entomology with Reference to its Economic Aspects. London.

HENNEGUY, L. F. (1904). Les Insectes, Morphologie, Réproduction, Embryogénie. Paris.

HOWARD, L. O. (1901). The Insect Book. New York.

KELLOGG V. L. (1905). American Insects. New York.

PACKARD (1889). Guide to the Study of Insects. New York.

PACKARD (1898). Textbook of Entomology. New York and London.

SERGEANT (1909). *Les Insectes Piqueurs et Suceurs*. Paris.

SHARP, D. (1895-1901). *Cambridge Natural History*, vols. v. and vi. London.

THEOBALD (1899). *Textbook of Agricultural Zoology*. London.

THEOBALD. Also in Braun's *Parasites of Man*, English edition. London.

Pediculidæ.

CHRISTOPHERS AND NEWSTEAD (1906). *Thompson Yates Reports*, vii. 13.

LANDOIS (1865). *Zeits. für w. Zoologie*, xiv., 1864 ; xv., 1865.

PIAGET (1880-1885). *Les pédiculines*. Leide. *Supplement Leide*.

VON DELLA TORRE, K. W. (1908). *Anoplura—Genera Insectorum*.

Hemiptera.

DISTANT. *Fauna of British India*, vols. i. and ii.

EVERSMANN (1841). *Bull. Soc. Imp. d. Natur. Moscou*, p. 351.

HOWARD AND MARLATT (1896). *U.S. Department of Agriculture. Bur. Ent., Bull. No. 4 (New Series)*.

JENYNS (1893). *Annals and Magazine of Natural History*, vol. iii., p. 241.

LANDOIS (1869). *Zeits. f. w. Zoologie*, xviii., 1868 ; xix.

PATTON (1907). *Scientific Memoirs, India*, No. 31.

SIGNORET (1852). *Ann. Soc. Ent. de France*, x. 539.

Reduviidæ.

CHAGAS (1909). *Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique*.

DARWIN (1888). *Voyage of the Beagle*, p. 330.

DARWIN (1898). *U.S. Department of Agriculture, B. Entomology, Bull. 18 (New Series)*.

DARWIN (1900). *U.S. Department of Agriculture, B. Entomology, Bull. No. 22*.

HOWARD AND MARLATT (1896). *Household Insects. U.S. Department of Agriculture, Bureau Ent., No. 4 (New Series)*.

KING (1900). *U.S. Department of Agriculture, Bureau Entomology, Bull. No. 22*.

THEOBALD (1903). *First Report Economic Zoology*.

WELLMAN (1906). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, ix. 373.

CHAPTER XXIV

THE DIPTERA

CULICIDÆ AND THEIR ALLIED FAMILIES

Diptera : Morphology, Classification—Culicidæ—Corethridæ—Chironomidæ
—Psychodidæ—Simulidæ—References.

DIPTERA.

HEXAPODA with two well-developed transparent wings and two rudimentary wings in the form of halteres. Mouth parts well developed, adapted for piercing and sucking or for suction. Mesonotum forms by far the larger portion of the thorax. Metamorphosis is complete.

The Diptera are by far the most important order of the Hexapoda as regards tropical medicine, for they include the blood-sucking flies, which are capable of carrying disease ; also certain flies which cause disease by depositing their eggs in cavities or on the surface of the body, with the result that the larvæ enter the nose, and cause disease by gnawing away mucous membrane, cartilage, and even bone, or the alimentary canal, in which they may cause serious symptoms. Apart from these, it must be remembered that flies, particularly the common house-fly, may mechanically, either externally or by its alimentary canal, carry and deposit germs on food, by which means human beings become infected with disease.

Morphology.—The most important points in the morphology of the Diptera in general may be briefly mentioned.

Head.—The head in certain families shows an anterior depressed area, the lunula, bounded by an arched suture, which passes over the base of the antennæ. This is the invaginated 'ptilinum,' or vesicle, by which the imago breaks its way out of the pupa. With regard to the antenna, it is of great importance whether it is many- or few-jointed. In the latter case it often carries an arista on the third joint, which may be looked upon as representing the remainder of the larger antennæ of other species.

The mouth parts, though composed of the typical labrum, epipharynx, maxillæ, mandibles, hypopharynx, and labium, will be found to be very different in the various species of biting flies. More especially are the labial palps altered in *Glossina* and *Stomoxys*, becoming armed with teeth and

capable of making the hole in the skin which is necessary for the sucking of the blood.

Thorax.—In many cases the thorax is largely composed of mesothorax, the pro- and meta-thoraces being much reduced. The wings are of importance. Some genera possess a prolongation backwards, called the squama, which conceals the halter. The venation of the wing has a peculiar nomenclature, which will be more fully explained under the heading Culicidæ, but which may here be compared with the typical arrangement of Comstock and Needham, from which it differs mainly by the form of coalescence called 'inward,' which means that two veins have coalesced from the tip towards the base of the wing.

TYPICAL NAMES.				DIPTERAL NAMES.	
Costa	..	..	..	Costa.	
Subcosta	...	..	..	Subcosta.	
Radius 1	..	..	..	First Longitudinal.	
Radius 2	} Coalesced	..	..	Second Longitudinal.	
Radius 3		..	..
Radius 4		..	..
Radius 5	} Coalesced	..	..	Third Longitudinal.	
Media 1		..	..
Media 2	} Coalesced more or less	..	..	Fourth Longitudinal.	
Media 3		..	..
Media 4		..	..
Cubitus 1		..	..
Cubitus 2	} ..	..	..	Fifth Longitudinal.	
Anal 1		..	..
Anal 2		..	..
Anal 3	..	..	..	Seventh Longitudinal.	

The above table shows the two ordinary systems of nomenclature for the wing-veins of the Diptera at present in use. The terms in the right-hand column are older than the other series, and are generally employed by English writers. In addition to the longitudinal veins there are several transverse veins, viz. :—

1. The Humeral from the Costa to Subcosta.
2. The Radio-medial or anterior from the Radius to the Media.
3. The distal Medio-cubital or posterior from the Media to the Cubitus.
4. The proximal Medio-cubital or anterior Basal.
5. The Cubito-anal or posterior Basal.

The wing shows a costal cell, generally subdivided by the humeral vein, a subcostal, a marginal, a variable number of submarginal, a posterior and an anal cell. The second anal vein is often wanting, and represented by merely an incrossation. In addition there are generally an anterior or radial, a posterior medial, and an anal or cubital basal cell. In the Culicidæ the first submarginal and the second posterior cells are often called the fork cells. In the first posterior cell it is important to note whether it is closed, and does not reach the margin of the wing owing to the junction of the media with the radius, or open, or partially open, and does reach the margin of the wing. A discal cell in the middle of the wing is present in some genera. It is bounded either by the media or by that vein and the cubitus.

The legs possess the usual number of segments, but with regard to the nomenclature of these segments and the confusion associated therewith reference should be made to p. 628. The fifth tarsal segment carries two claws and usually two pulvilli or pads, while between them lies the empodium in the form of a bristle or third pad, which may be looked upon as a sixth tarsal or claw segment.

Abdomen.—This has usually nine segments, which may be reduced by the fusion of segments, especially in connection with the male and female generative organs. The genitalia, especially the male, are of importance in classification, and will be mentioned in detail under the heading Culicidæ.

The body is adorned by scales and hairs. The former have been made use of by Theobald to classify the Culicidæ, while the latter may be strongly developed in places, and have been used in flies as a help in classification, and are of the utmost importance in fleas.

Flies are usually modest in colour, being often yellowish, brownish, or blackish, but some of the Culicidæ—e.g., *Megarhina*—are brilliantly coloured. The colours depend partly upon pigments and partly upon interference with or reflection of light.

Life-History.—The female generally lays eggs; more rarely a larva is produced directly, as in *Glossina*. The eggs are laid in some material which will be useful to the larvæ—e.g., the eggs of Culicidæ in water and the eggs of Muscidæ often in decomposing matter. The larva is generally a very active, vigorously feeding little grub, which may or may not have a distinct head. The pupa may either remain in the old larval skin which forms the puparium—such a pupa, as seen in the Muscidæ, belongs to the coarctate type—or it may not be so enclosed, but the body and appendages being closely united, it forms the obtectate type. The imago escapes from its pupal skin by a T-shaped slit (Orthorrhapha), or by a circular opening (Cyclorrhapha).

Collection of Flies.—Mr. Austen has asked us to invite the reader's attention to certain remarks of his taken from the second report of the Wellcome Research Laboratories, which are as follows:—

1. Specimens of blood-sucking and other Diptera intended for determination should be in *the most perfect possible condition*.
2. Specimens collected by natives seldom fulfil this condition.
3. Flies should, if possible, always be transfixed by a pin through the thorax and pinned to a small piece of cardboard, and should be drawn up *near the head of the pin*, and not left close to the point.
4. If pinning is impossible, specimens are best placed *in three-cornered envelopes* of soft paper.
5. Flies should *never* be placed in contact with *dry cotton-wool*.
6. *A plug of soft paper* must always be pressed down on top of specimens placed in spirit, in order to fix them in the tube.
7. Several specimens of *both sexes* should be sent if identification is desired.
8. Specimens should always be *legibly labelled*, with the name of locality, and date of capture, and notes of interest forwarded at the same time.

Classification.—The Diptera may be classified as follows, according to the characters of the pupa, larva, and antennæ:—

SUBORDER I. ORTHORRHAPHA.

Diptera without lunula or ptilinum. Larva with a distinct head. Pupa obtectate. Imago escapes by T-shaped opening.

Section 1. Nematocera.—Orthorrhapha with antennæ composed of more than six joints, with the joints, except the first two, similar; without arista. Palpi four- or five-jointed.

Families.—Culicidæ, Corethridæ, Chironomidæ, Psychodidæ, Simuliidæ, Blepharoceridæ, etc.

Section 2. Brachycera.—Orthorrhapha with antennæ in which the joints differ from one another, with or without arista, which, when present, is usually terminal.

TRIBE 1. BRACHYCERA HOMŒODACTYLA. — Orthorrhapha brachycera with three well-developed pulvilli. Larva with a projecting posterior stigma.

Families.—Tabanidæ, Leptidæ.

TRIBE 2. BRACHYCERA HETERODACTYLA. — Orthorrhapha brachycera with two or three pulvilli. In the last case the middle is different from the two pulvilli. Some species without pulvilli. Posterior stigma of the larva in front of the body-end.

Families.—Asilidæ, Empidæ.

SUBORDER II. CYCLORRHAPHA.

Diptera with a lunula and usually a ptilinum. Antenna with always three joints and an arista. Palpi one-jointed. Mandibles absent. Maxillæ rudimentary. Discoidal cell bounded by the media and cubitus. Abdomen with seven segments at the most, often with less.

Section 1. Aschiza.—Cyclorrhapha with a clearly defined lunula, but a rudimentary ptilinum. Arista poorly developed.

Families.—Not of interest in tropical medicine.

Section 2. Schizophora.—Cyclorrhapha with lunula; at times absent, but the arched suture over the antennæ is well defined. Ptilinum usually well developed. Antennæ lie in separated hollows. Arista well developed.

Tribes.—Muscidæ acalyptatæ and Muscidæ calyptatæ.

SUBORDER III. PUPIPARA.

Diptera with well-developed rudimentary or no wings; parasitic on vertebrates. The fully-developed larvæ are passed directly from the body of the imago without a free-living egg stage.

SUBORDER ORTHORRHAPHA.

SECTION NEMATOCERA.

FAMILY CULICIDÆ.

Orthorrhapha nematocera with a long piercing proboscis, and a body more or less clothed with scales and hairs. Antennæ with whorls of hairs or plumes, which may be dense and long in the male, though scanty in the female. Wings with six to seven longitudinal veins, with scales and two distinct fork cells. The costa passes all round the wing, and carries scales, which form a fringe. Metamorphosis complete.

The Culicidæ include the flies which we call mosquitoes, a word which is derived from the Spanish, meaning little flies, and are the same as gallinippers in America. The genus *Culex* was formed by Linnæus in 1790 for the gnat *Culex pipiens*: the genus *Anopheles*

from a Greek word meaning harmful, by Meigen in 1818 ; the genus *Stegomyia* by Theobald in 1901. A great many other genera have also been described, but are not so important in tropical medicine

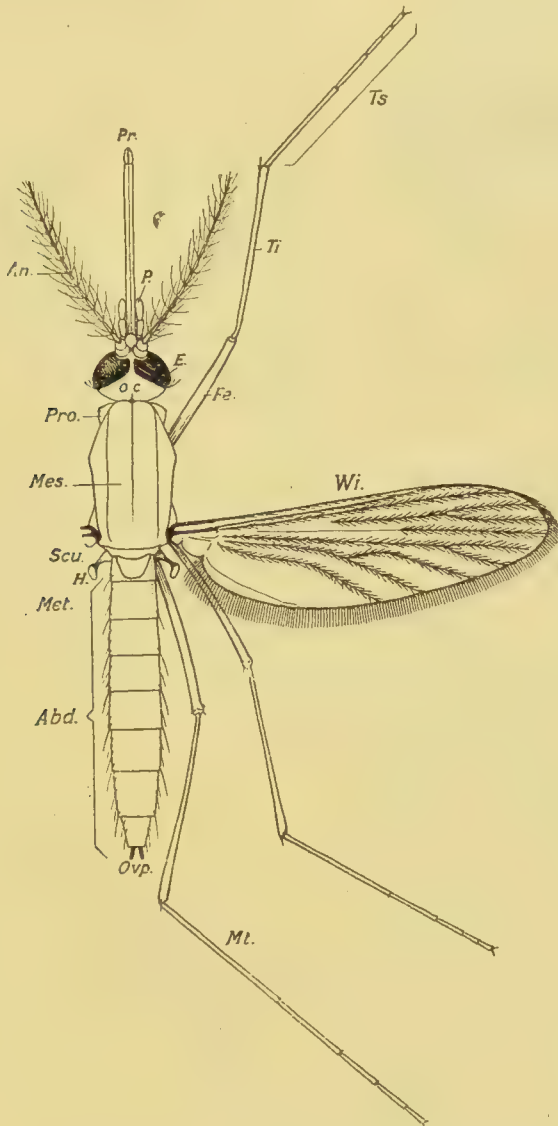


FIG. 279.—DIAGRAM OF A MOSQUITO, AFTER THEOBALD, FROM
'THE CULICIDÆ OF THE WORLD.'

Pr., proboscis ; *P.*, palp ; *An.*, antenna ; *E.*, eye ; *Oc.*, occiput ; *Pro.*, prothorax ; *Mes.*, mesothorax ; *Scu.*, scutellum, behind which is seen (*Met.*) the shield-like post-scutellum ; *H.*, halter ; *Abd.*, abdomen ; *Ovp.*, ovipositor ; *Wi.*, wing ; *Fe.*, femur ; *Ti.*, tibia ; *Mt.*, metatarsus ; *Ts.*, tarsus—the line indicating the tarsus is made to include the metatarsus, which is sometimes regarded as the first tarsal joint.

as these three. Among the early workers in this field of research special prominence must be given to the names of Arribalzaga and Ficalbi.

In our description of the classification of the Culicidæ we have followed Theobald, but a simpler system is urgently required and may be evolved during the next few years, as there are already signs that such a system may be possible.



FIG. 280.—TRANSVERSE SECTION OF THE PROBOSCIS OF *ANOPHELES MACULIPENNIS* MEIGEN. (After Nuttall and Shipley, from the *Journal of Hygiene*.)

1, Labium; 2, maxilla; 3, hypopharynx, with salivary duct; 4, mandible; 5, labrum epipharynx with the figure (5) placed in the blood-tube.

cranium,' which covers the whole where the gula can be seen. Dorsally the space called the 'vertex,' in pair of antennæ, different in male and female. The male antenna has sixteen segments, of which the first segment is very small; the second is globular, and contains an auditory organ; the third is long, and the fourth to the fifteenth carry twenty-five to thirty hairs in whorls at the proximal end of each segment. The sixteenth segment is about half as long as the penultimate. So dense are the whorls of verticillate hairs in the male that the term 'plumose' is applied to the whole antenna. The base of the sixteenth segment carries six hairs, and the tip is rounded. The female antenna consists of fifteen segments. The first is very small, merely a ring of chitin; the second is deeply hollowed for the third segment, which is the longest. The proximal ends of the fourth to the fifteenth carry six large hairs. The tip of the fifteenth segment bears fine hairs. These few hairs produce quite a different appearance in the antennæ, which are called 'pilose.'

In front of the frons a sclerite called the 'clypeus,' belonging to the exoskeleton of the head, projects forwards, under cover of which the mouth appendages appear as a median proboscis and two lateral palpi.

Careful dissections of *Anopheles* have been made by Nuttall and Shipley, and of *Culex* by Christophers, while the larva and pupa of *Anopheles* have been studied in detail by Imms.

As the *Anopheles* is, without doubt, of the greatest importance to medical men, its anatomy will be described.

Morphology.—*Anopheles maculipennis* Meigen has been studied by Nuttall and Shipley, whose account is followed in the description given below.

The body of a mosquito is divided into (a) head, (b) thorax, (c) abdomen.

(a) *Head.*—The most conspicuous objects on the head are the two large reniform, often brilliantly coloured eyes, which lie on a piece of exoskeleton, called the 'epi-head, except in the ventral median line, dorsally the eyes nearly meet, being separated front of which is the frons, which carries a

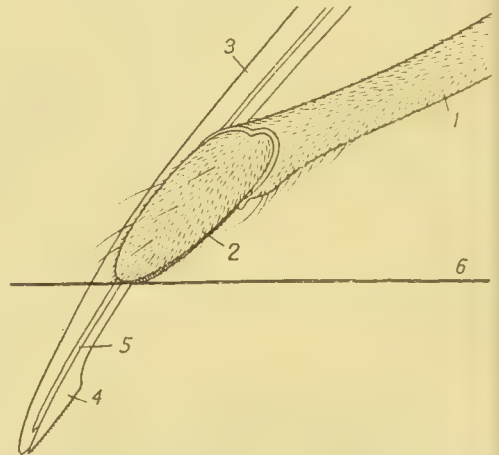
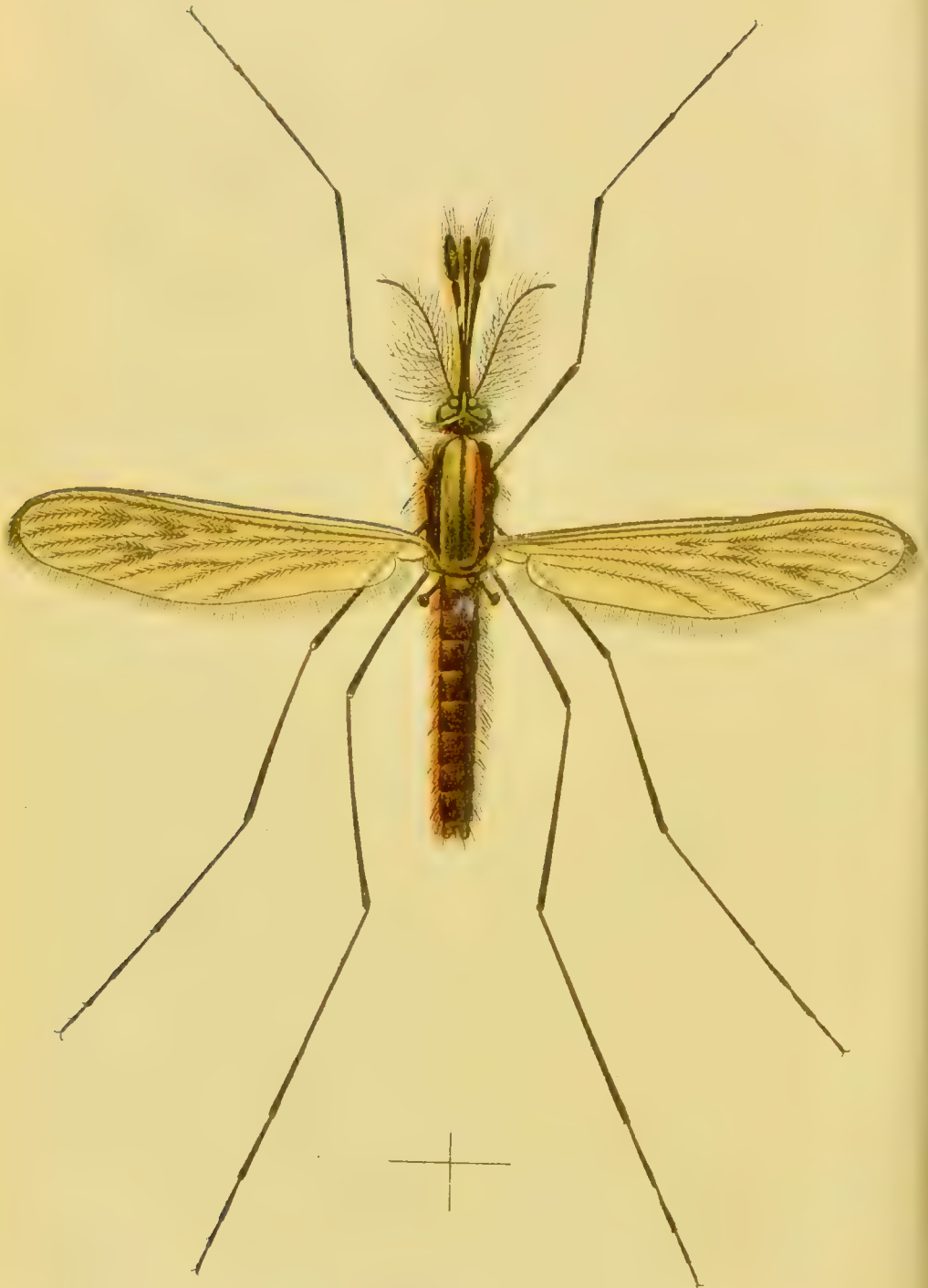


FIG. 281.—DISTAL END OF THE PROBOSCIS OF *ANOPHELES MACULIPENNIS* MEIGEN.

1, Labium; 2, labellæ; 3, labrum-epipharynx; 4, maxillæ; 5, mandibles; 6, skin line. (The labellæ should be divergent to the plane of the paper.)



ANOPHELES MACULIPENNIS MEIGEN.

MALE.

PLATE III.



ANOPHELES MACULIPENNIS MEIGEN.

FEMALE.

(After Austen, by kind permission of the Trustees of the British Museum.)

These mouth parts are made up of the following (*vide* Fig. 31):

1. Labrum, or upper lip, with which is combined the epipharynx to form the labrum-epipharynx.
2. The mandibles.
3. The first pair of maxillæ, to which the palpi belong.
4. The hypopharynx.
5. The second pair of maxillæ, which have united together to form the lower lip or labium.

The labrum-epipharynx commences at the head end as two separate chitinous structures: the more dorsal, continuous with the clypeus, is the labrum, and the more ventral, continuous with the chitinous lining of the mouth cavity, is the epipharynx; the part in the proboscis forms a deep groove, open ventrally. In the female its free end is sharp and pointed; in the male it is truncated.

The mandibles are absent in the males, while in the female they appear as yellow delicate chitinous blades, the base of which is attached to the sides of the labrum, and the apex is knife-shaped, with its edge serrated by thirty-one fine teeth (*vide* Fig. 32).

The first maxillæ are chitinous rods attached posteriorly to the side of the base of the labium, which is here swollen, and carries on its outer angle the palp. It is continuous posteriorly with a chitinous bar, which runs backwards into the head, and affords attachment to several muscles. The free extremity of the maxilla has thirteen teeth (*vide* Fig. 33).

The maxillary palps project on either side of, and dorsal to, the proboscis. They are five-jointed and covered with scales.

In the male the distal end of the third segment is broadened, and the whole fourth and fifth segments are broad and flat, giving a spatulate appearance to the tip. The length of these palpi varies in the different genera of the Culicidæ, as will be mentioned under the heading of Classification.

The hypopharynx takes its origin just above the base of the labium in a solid mass of chitin, which is pierced by the salivary duct, which is a canal 35 to 36 μ in diameter. In the male the hypopharynx is fused with the labium.

The second maxillæ are united together to form a lower lip, or labium, which is curved dorsally so as to form a deep groove, in which the first maxillæ lie ventrally and laterally, with the hypopharynx situated dorsally and mesially, and the labrum-epipharynx dorsally with the mandibles on either side. The distal end carries two short segments called 'labellæ,' which are movable on hinge-joints. Between these labellæ there is a projection of the labium connected with them by a thin membrane—Dutton's membrane—which is stretched during the act of biting. Through this membrane filarial embryos escape from the interior of the labium. The labium itself is composed of a double cuticular wall carrying scales on its exterior, and enclosing internally a cavity containing muscles, etc., among which the filarial embryos can lie. There are, therefore, two tubes in the proboscis: the first, large, formed by the labrum-epipharynx and the hypopharynx, is

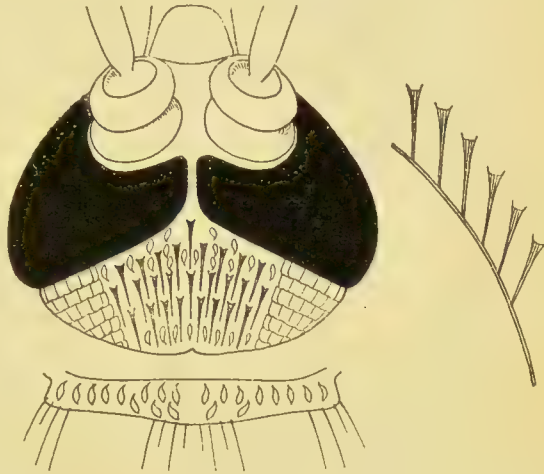


FIG. 282.—THE OCCIPUT AND SCUTELLUM OF AN ANOPHELINE MOSQUITO TO SHOW THE SCALE CHARACTERS.

At the side is seen the lateral aspect of the vertical scales.

(After Theobald, from 'The Culicidæ of the World'.)

the blood-tube, up which the blood is sucked into the pharynx; while the other, small, lying in the hypopharynx, is the salivary duct. The first is afferent, the second efferent.

Behind the eyes there is an area of the head called the 'occiput,' which carries different kinds of scales in different genera, as is seen by the following diagram (Fig. 283). These scales may be differentiated into narrow curved scales, upright forked scales, and flat scales, the presence and character of which have been made the means of classification. The upright forked and the curved scales occupy the middle area of the occiput, and alone are met with in this species; but quite different arrangements are met with in other genera. The extreme posterior area of the head is the nape. Below the eye laterally is the

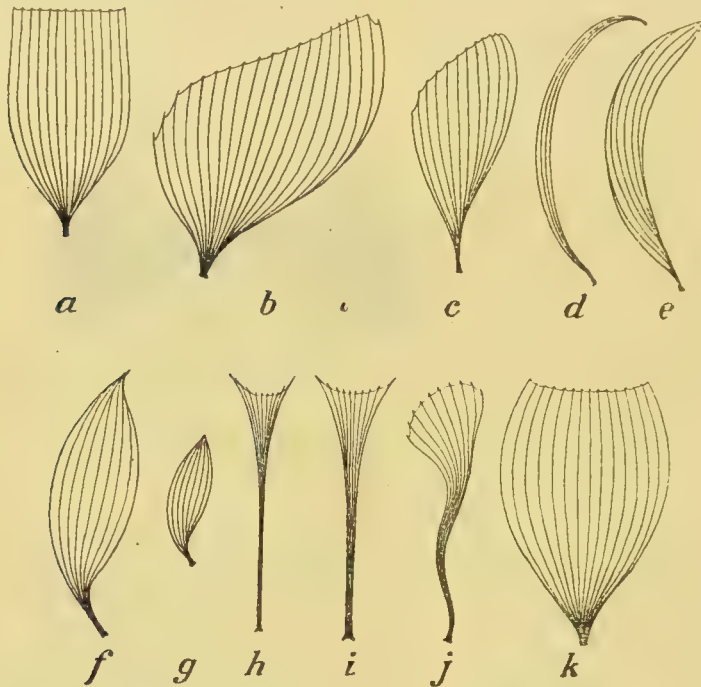


FIG. 283.—VARIOUS FORMS OF SCALES FOUND ON DIFFERENT PARTS OF A MOSQUITO.

(After Theobald, from 'The Culicidæ of the World.')

a, Flat scale from abdomen; *b*, broad wing scale; *c*, another broad wing scale; *d*, curved hair-like scale; *e*, narrow curved scale; *f*, flat spindle-shaped scale; *g*, small form of *f*; *h* and *i*, upright forked scales; *j*, twisted upright scale; *k*, inflated scale.

area of the head called the 'gena.' At the back of the head is the occipital foramen, through which the soft structures pass to the neck.

Neck.—The neck is the soft connection of the head with the thorax. It is strengthened with chitinous rods.

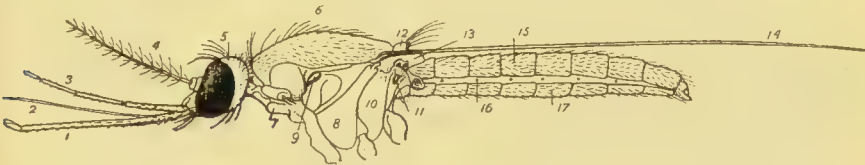
Thorax.—The thorax shows the usual three divisions into pro-, meso-, and meta-thorax, but of these the mesothorax is much the largest, and is often called 'the thorax'; in fact, the pro- and meta-thorax are hard to see. It will be remembered that a typical thoracic segment should show dorsally a notum, composed of præscutum, scutum, scutellum, and post-scutellum; ventrally a sternum, and laterally a pleuron, consisting of episternum and epimerum.

On the posterior portion of each side of the neck may be seen a small sausage-shaped sclerite, called the patagium, in front of which is the neck sclerite, while posteriorly there is another sclerite reaching as far as the first thoracic

spiracle. Below these, and reaching to the coxa of the first leg, is still another sclerite. These four sclerites make up the prothorax. The patagium may represent a pronotum, the neck sclerite an episternite, and the posterior sclerite an epimerum, while the sclerite, connected with the coxa of the first leg, is undoubtedly a prosternum. This segment of the thorax carries the first pair of legs, and perhaps the first spiracle.

The interpretation of the parts of the prothorax presents considerable difficulty. Some authorities believe that there is no pronotum. The mesothorax is well developed, and presents dorsally a præscutum and scutum fused together, behind which is a trilobed area, the 'scutellum.' Behind this, again, is a shield-shaped area, looked upon by some observers as a metanotum, but more probably representing the post-scutellum of the mesothorax. Laterally behind the first spiracle lies the episternum of the mesothorax, below and behind which is the mesosternum, wedged in between the second and third legs on each side. The two mesosterna are bound together by a chitinous bar.

Between the post-scutellum and the first abdominal segment lies the minute true metanotum. The metasternum is easily seen between the second and third pairs of legs, and the episternum of that segment lies just dorsal to the third coxa, and contains the second thoracic spiracle as well as carrying the halter. The thorax is covered with hair-like curved scales, and its



TERZ.

FIG. 284.—LATERAL VIEW OF *ANOPHELES MACULIPENNIS* MEIGEN.

(After Nuttall and Shipley, *Journal of Hygiene*.)

1, Labium; 2, labrum-epipharynx; 3, palp; 4, antenna; 5, occiput; 6, mesothorax (præscutum and scutum); 7, prothorax; 8, mesosternum; 9, first thoracic spiracle; 10, metasternum; 11, second thoracic spiracle; 12, scutellum; 13, post-scutellum; 14, wing; 15, tergum; 16, pleural membrane; 17, sternum.

appendages are the legs and wings. There are three pairs of legs, one for each division of the thorax, which have the usual number of segments—coxa, trochanter, femur, tibia, metatarsus, and tarsus, the latter being four-jointed. The last joint of the tarsus carries the two claws or unguis, which may be toothed. In the first leg in the male the claw is single, and the first terminal tarsal segment is hollowed out. In the female all the legs terminate in a double hook, and the first tarsal segment is not hollow. The empodium, a median process projecting between the unguis, is in *Anopheles maculipennis* reduced to a tuft of hairs. The arrangements of the unguis, however, vary very much in different genera and species.

The wings arise by their bases from the side of the mesothorax, between the scutum and the episternum. The anterior border of the wing is straight and thick, while the posterior is curved, and near the base is folded or indented twice to form squama and alula. The area of the wing, bounded by the squama and alula, is broken up by a series of thickenings and ridges from which the nerves take their origin. The base of the wing has a socket which fits on to a knob on the episternum. The veins of the wings are:—

1. *The Costa*.
2. *The Subcosta*, which joins the Costa some distance from the apex of the wing.
3. *The Radius* 1 (*First Longitudinal*).—Runs from base to apex of the wing.

4. *The Radius 2 + 3 (Second Longitudinal)*.—Commences in the middle of the wing, and shortly divides into two branches (Radius 2 + 3), enclosing a piece of the wing called the first submarginal cell.

5. *The Radius 4 + 5 (Third Longitudinal Vein)*.—Commences in the middle of the wing and runs to the margin.

6. *The Media (Fourth Longitudinal Vein)*.—Runs from the base of the wing to the margin, but forks (Media 1 + 2) to enclose the second posterior cell.

7. *The Cubitus (Fifth Longitudinal Vein)*.—Runs from the base and forks (Cubitus 1 + 2) to enclose the third posterior cell.

8. *The Anal 1 + 2 (Sixth Longitudinal Vein)*.—Runs a curved course from its margin.

In some mosquitoes there is a second anal vein (seventh longitudinal vein), but more often this is only indicated by a fold or incassation. There may be a vena spuria or marking between the cubitus and the anal vein.

9. *Transverse or Cross Veins.*

(a) The Humeral, between the Costa and Subcosta.

(b) The Radial, between Radius 2 + 3 and Radius 4 + 5 (second + third longitudinal veins).

(c) The Radio-medial, between the Radius and Media (third + fourth longitudinal veins).

(d) The Medio-cubital, between the Media and the Cubitus (fourth + fifth longitudinal veins).

These veins mark out the following cells :—

1. The Costal cell, between Costa and Subcosta, but subdivided by the humeral vein.

2. Subcostal (Mediastinal) cell, between Subcosta and Radius 1.

3. Marginal cell, between Radius 1 and Radius 2 + 3.

4. First Submarginal cell, between Radius 2 + 3.

5. Second Submarginal cell, between Radius 2 + 3 and Radius 2 + 5.

6. First Posterior cell, between Radius 4 + 5 and Media.

7. Second Posterior cell, between Media 1 + 2.

8. Third Posterior cell, between Media and Cubitus.

9. Fourth Posterior cell, between Cubitus 1 + 2.

10. Anal cell, between Cubitus and Anal 1.

11. Axillary cell, between Anal 1 + 2 and Anal 3, when present.

12. Spurious cell, behind Anal 3, when present.

13. Anterior Basal cell, bounded anteriorly by the Radius 1, posteriorly by the Media, and externally by the Radial transverse vein.

14. Posterior Basal cell, bounded anteriorly by the Media, and posteriorly by the Cubitus, and externally by the Medio-cubital vein.

The wing has scales on all its veins, except the cross and the spurious veins, which are arranged in two ways : (1) Two rows of flat scales on each vein ; (2) lateral scales along each vein.

Generally these scales in the Anophelinæ are lanceolate, or long and narrow, but one genus, *Cyclolepteron*, has large inflated scales. It will be found that scales vary much in the different genera and species, the principal forms of which may be gathered from the following : The posterior margin of the wing carries a fringe consisting of scales arranged as follows : (1) Flat scales ; (2) long lanceolate scales ; (3) short lanceolate scales alternating with the long lanceolate scales.

Abdomen.—There are eight segments in the abdomen, each of which consists of a dorsal plate, the tergum, and a ventral plate, the sternum, joined together by a pleural membrane, on which lie the abdominal spiracles, said to number six or eight by different observers.

On the posterior end of the terminal segment are the external genital organs. In the male these consist of a pair of large basal lobes, each terminating in a clasp segment armed with a claw, thus forming the clasper. The arrangements of the male genitalia vary so much that they have been used as a method of classification. Therefore it is necessary to explain in a general way the terms used with regard to the various parts which may be found.

On the ventral surface of the basal lobe is the tubercle or lobe, called the claspette, while from their inner margin, near the base, a pair of claspers called harpagones, and more distally another pair, the harpes, project. Just at the junction of the two basal lobes are another pair of lobes—the setaceous lobes—which are believed to be the rudimentary ninth segment. The unci are absent in the Anophelinæ, but present as a pair of ventral processes in the Culicinæ. In the female there are the flap-like ovi-positors.

The flat abdominal scales of the other Culicidæ are absent in the Anophelinæ, except in one genus.

Internal Anatomy.—A few points with regard to the internal anatomy of the mosquito may be mentioned.

ALIMENTARY CANAL.—The alimentary canal consists of: (1) Mouth; (2) buccal cavity; (3) pharynx, or pumping organ; (4) œsophagus and its pouches; (5) œsophageal valve, or proventriculus; (6) mid-gut; (7) ileum; (8) colon; (9) rectum; (10) anus (*vide* Fig. 285).

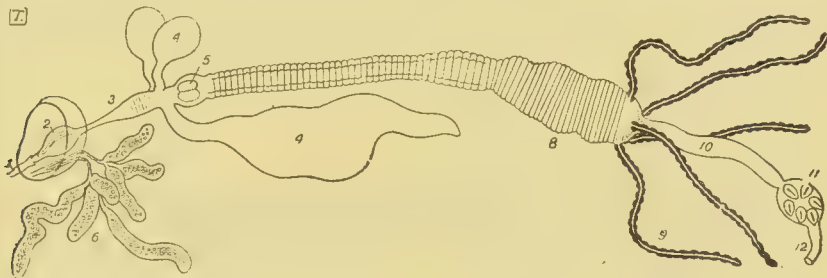


FIG. 285.—THE ALIMENTARY CANAL OF ANOPHELES MACULIPENNIS MEIGEN.

(After Nuttall and Shipley, *Journal of Hygiene*.)

1, Mouth and buccal cavity; 2, pharynx; 3, œsophagus; 4, dorsal and ventral œsophageal diverticula; 5, proventriculus; 6, salivary glands; 7, narrow portion of ventriculus; 8, so-called stomach; 9, Malpighian tubules; 10, intestine; 11, rectum; 12, anus.

1. *Mouth.*—The mouth is the place where the maxillæ, mandibles, labrum-epipharynx, hypopharynx, and palps fuse together.

2. *Buccal Cavity.*—This extends from the mouth to the valve between it and the pharynx, and is lined with chitin, and has an upward and backward direction until it approaches the pharynx, when it turns suddenly upward. There is a portion of its roof which possesses a thinner cuticle than the rest of the buccal cavity, and has been called the soft palate. This structure possesses two spines directed downward into the lumen of the cavity, and has attached to it five pairs of palatal muscles. It is thought that as this membrane is wrinkled, and has muscles attached to it, it may indicate that it is used for suctorial purposes. Posteriorly there is a valve between the buccal cavity and the pharynx, lying on a level just behind the posterior end of the clypeus. This prevents the return of fluids to the mouth during pumping. Annett and Dutton described a complicated sense-organ at the junction of the buccal cavity and the pharynx, but this has not been confirmed.

3. *Pharynx.*—The pharynx extends from the posterior end of the buccal cavity to nearly the posterior end of the head, where it ends in the œsophagus. It is considerably larger in the female than in the male, because the former sucks blood, while the latter does not. The anterior portion is tubular, and passes through the nerve ring between the supra- and infra-œsophageal ganglia. The posterior portion is triangular, and has a chitinous wall arranged into three plates, one dorsal and two latero-ventral.

Posteriorly, near the œsophagus, the triradiate pharynx is surrounded by

a sphincter muscle, and the chitin of this portion is marked by ridges, which end in very fine spines, making a comb-like appearance, and possibly acting as a strainer. The three chitinous plates have powerful muscles attached to them, of which the two posterior dorsal dilators run from the occiput to the dorsal plate; the two anterior dilators (two pairs in the female) taking their origin from the vertex are inserted also into the dorsal plate, and the five-paired latero-ventral dilators arising from the lateral posterior angle of the head pass upwards and a little forwards to the latero-ventral plates. When these muscles contract, the triradiate pharynx becomes nearly circular, and when they relax the walls come together.

In this way the pharynx pumps the blood from the victim up the blood tube in the proboscis into the alimentary canal.

4. *Œsophagus*.—The short *œsophagus* runs from the pharynx to the *œsophageal* valve. Anteriorly it is narrow, but posteriorly it expands so much that this portion is sometimes called the crop. It is lined with thin chitin, and has many bands of muscles attached to it. Its posterior end lies on a level with the origin of the first pair of legs, and at this situation it gives off three pouches, two dorsal and one ventral. The large ventral pouch opens into the *œsophagus* by a single opening in the middle line, and extends back-

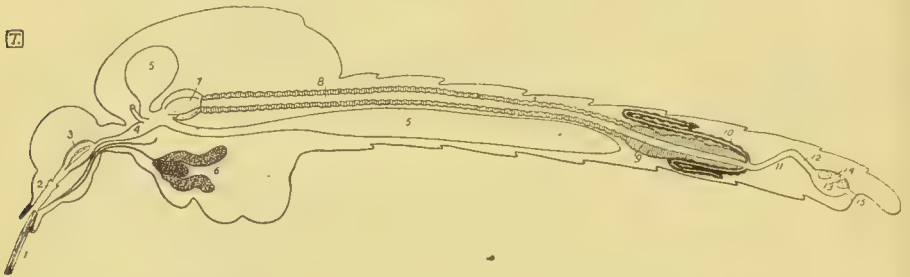


FIG. 286.—THE ALIMENTARY CANAL OF *ANOPHELES MACULIPENNIS* IN SITU.

(After Nuttall and Shipley, *Journal of Hygiene*.)

1, Proboscis; 2, buccal cavity; 3, pharynx; 4, *œsophagus*; 5, *œsophageal* pouches; 6, salivary glands; 7, proventriculus; 8 and 9, mid-gut; 10, Malpighian tubes; 11, ileum; 12, colon; 13, rectum; 14, rectal papillæ; 15, anus.

wards under the alimentary canal to the level of the fifth, sixth, or seventh abdominal segment, when fully distended. In shape it is fusiform. The two small latero-dorsally placed pouches open into the sides of the *œsophagus*. All these sacs are lined with thin chitin, and have some slight musculature.

5. *The Œsophageal Valve or Proventriculus*.—The *œsophageal* valve is an annular thickening of the intestinal wall, due partly to circular muscles, which are capable of closing the lumen of the gut when they contract, and partly to an invagination of the more anterior portion of the gut into the more posterior, thus forming a valve. Projecting from it are six small protuberances, more marked in the larva than in the adult insect. Christophers considers that this portion of the alimentary canal is the proventriculus of other insects. It is not lined with chitin.

6. *Mid-Gut or Chylific Ventricle*.—The mid-gut is a straight tube running from the *œsophageal* valve at the level of the first pair of legs to the posterior limit of the sixth abdominal segment; but this varies as to whether it is filled with food or not. It consists of two parts: an anterior narrow, and a posterior more distended, often called the 'stomach,' which begins on a level with the second abdominal segment, and is the receptacle for the food. The wall of the stomach is composed of the following layers:—

(1) A delicate internal cuticle.

(2) A single layer of large cylindrical or cubical epithelial cells with large nuclei; their condition varies with the state of distension of the stomach.

(3) An elastic basement membrane.

(4) Muscular fibres, circular and longitudinal, forming a loose network.

In this last layer there are numerous air-tubes or tracheæ, which probably help to keep the gut in position in the coelom.

7-10. *Hind-Gut*.—This runs from the end of the mid-gut to the anus, being divided into the following regions:—

(1) A dorsally bent portion, the ileum, lined by flattened epithelium.

(2) A ventrally bent portion, the colon, lined by cubical epithelium.

(3) A dilated portion, the rectum, which has six large ovoid papillæ.

The rectum narrows just before the anus, which opens on the last segment of the body.

Malpighian Tubes.—There are five Malpighian tubes opening at the junction of the mid- and hind-gut.

Salivary Glands.—The salivary glands consist of two groups, each containing three acini, lying on each side of the body, in the anterior portion of the thorax, close against the prosternum, and extending almost as far back as the proventriculus. The ducts from each of these acini unite together to form a single duct on each side, which passes forwards through the neck into the head, where it unites beneath the subœsophageal ganglion, with its fellow of the opposite side, to form a common salivary duct. This duct passes forwards to end in the salivary pump, which is continuous with the salivary groove or canal of the hypopharynx. The duct of the salivary gland, therefore, is not in any way connected with the alimentary canal. These glands, which are much larger in the female than in the male, are composed of acini, surrounded by a basement membrane which is very delicate and structureless, and upon which rests a single layer of epithelial cells surrounding a central lumen. The whole acinus lies in a cleft in the fat-body.

Space does not permit of descriptions of the vascular, nervous, and muscular systems being included.

Reproductive Organs.—The female reproductive organs consist of ovaries, oviducts, and a common oviduct, a mucous gland and its duct, and a spermatheca and duct, while the male organs are testes and vasa deferentia, which, after receiving the ducts of the receptacula seminis, run to an ejaculatory duct, which ends in a short penis.

Life-History.—A mosquito passes through a complicated life-cycle, consisting of an egg, a larval, and a pupal stage, the last-named giving rise to the perfect insect or imago.

Soon after a female insect is hatched it probably becomes fertilized, though some authorities believe that this does not take place until after the first meal of blood, which in any case precedes the oviposition, which takes place in the early morning.

The eggs, which number about one hundred, are laid upon the surface of the water, on which they may be seen arranged in stars, rows, or triangles.

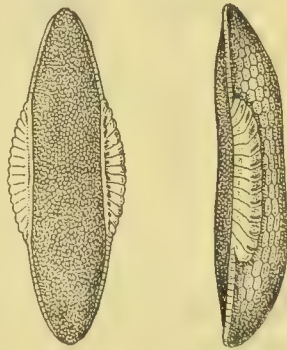


FIG. 287.—EGG OF *ANOPHELES MACULIPENNIS*.

(After Nuttall and Shipley.)

On the left the egg is seen from above, and on the right from the side.

The eggs of *A. maculipennis* are boat-shaped, about 0.5 to 1 millimetre in length, with a flat upper and convex lower surface, and with one end somewhat broader than the other. The head of the larva will be found at this broader anterior end. The upper surface is granular and reticulated, while the lower is smooth. On each side of the middle third the chitinous capsule is thrown into folds, called floats, while the margin projects as a chitinous frill.

The duration of the egg stage has not been well defined. Nuttall and Shipley give two to three days for *Anopheles maculipennis*, but it is probable that it is shorter in the tropics. The appearance and grouping of the eggs are quite different in the Culicinae, as will be mentioned later.

The larva escaping from the blunt anterior end of the egg by the shifting off of a piece like a cap from the rest of the shell is seen to consist of head, neck, and abdomen.

When first hatched the head is very black, but later on it becomes lighter in colour, and shows characteristic markings. At the back of the head there is a little notch, and from this a V-shaped dark line opens forwards, formed by two diverging bands of chitin, arranged along which are patches of pigment, which give rise to the characteristic markings. There are two large compound eyes, behind each of which lies a single eye-spot, or ocellus.

The antennæ are conspicuous rod-like bodies ending in two leaf-shaped appendages, between which is a branched hair, while another hair of specific importance arises from a papilla situated at the junction of the proximal and middle thirds.

Between the roots of the antenna and projecting forwards there is a smooth, shield-like area, the clypeus, which carries four or six hairs, two of these hairs (internal clypeal hairs) arise anteriorly near the middle line; external to these lie the external clypeal hairs, which arise from the outer angle of the clypeus; and behind them lie the posterior clypeal hairs. Sometimes there is a basal hair external to the antennæ.

The mouth parts consist of two large feeding-brushes, two maxillary palps, two mandibles, and on the ventral median line the under lip of Meinert, a conical chitinous structure, and a snout-like process covered with hairs projecting between the brushes.

The thorax is large, increasing in size as the larva grows older. It has numerous hairs, and sometimes a pair of the palmate hairs presently to be described.

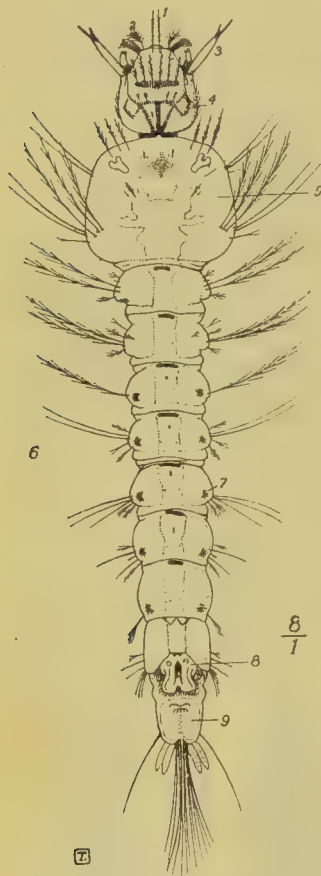


FIG. 288.—LARVA OF ANO PHELES MACULIPENNIS.
(After Nuttall and Shipley,
Journal of Hygiene.)

1, Internal clypeal hairs;
2, external clypeal hairs;
3, antennæ; 4, head markings;
5, thorax; 6, abdomen;
7, palmate hair; 8, stigmatic siphon; 9, last segment.

There are nine segments in the abdomen, of which the eighth is characterized by possessing the openings of the tracheæ, and the ninth by possessing four large papillæ, and hairs projecting downwards and backwards. The first two segments possess a pair of large feathered hairs on each side, the third a single hair on each side. The others do not possess these hairs. Certain of the abdominal segments have small, fan-shaped hairs, called 'palmate hairs,' fixed

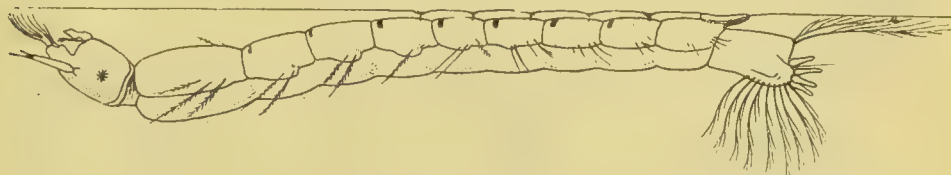


FIG. 289.—LARVA OF AN ANOPHELINE MOSQUITO LYING PARALLEL TO THE WATER.

(Modified after Howard.)

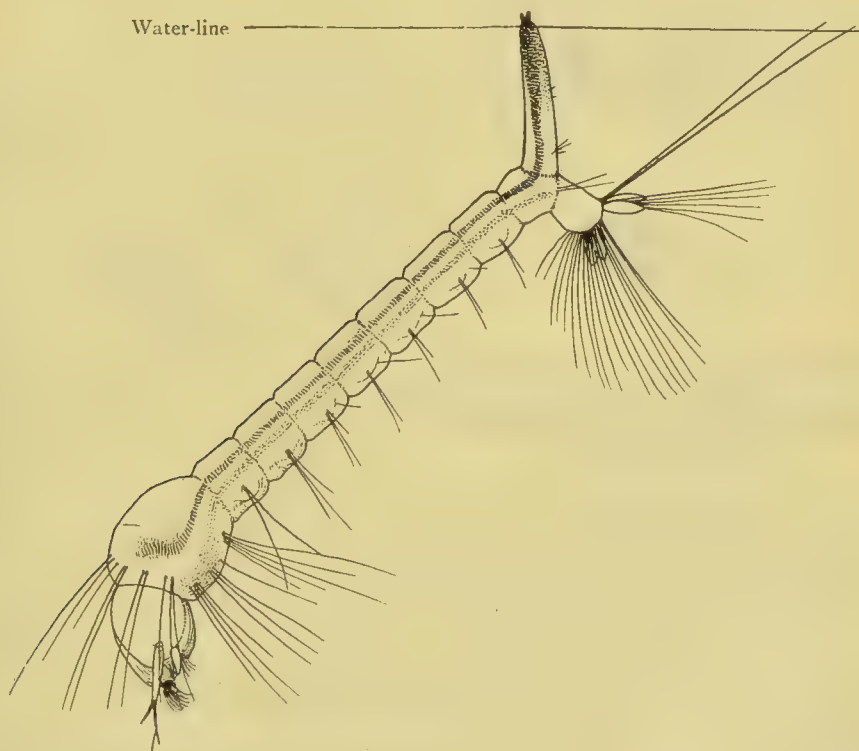


FIG. 290.—LARVA OF A CULICINE MOSQUITO, HANGING DOWN FROM THE SURFACE OF THE WATER.

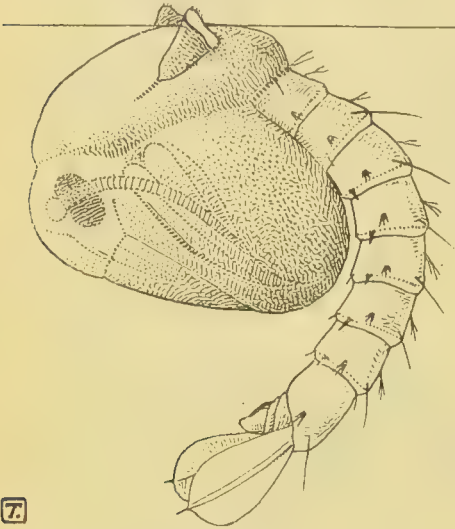
(After Howard.)

by a short stalk on the outer side of the dorsum of the segment. Each of these consists of nineteen to twenty leaflets, which are capable of closing and opening upon the stalk like a fan. These hairs are rudimentary in the freshly hatched larva, but in the adult they are well marked, and have been used for purposes of classification, according to the variations in their number and position, and the character of the leaflets and their terminal hairs, if present. These hairs are of use in helping to keep the larva in its horizontal position when it comes up to breathe on the surface of the water.

The stigmatic siphon is placed, as already mentioned, on the eighth segment, forming by means of raised, toothed, chitinous processes a quadrilateral space.

The teeth are of great importance, being capable of being approximated so as to close the cavity, and thus protect the two openings of the tracheæ which lie in the anterior portion of the siphon. From these openings the long tracheæ can be seen running from back to front along the larva.

The duration of the larval stage varies with food and temperature, being longer in the temperate zone than in the tropics.



[7.]

FIG. 291.—PUPA OF ANOPHELES MACULIPENNIS.

(After Nuttall and Shipley, *Journal of Hygiene*.)

According to Stephens, it is twelve days in *Cellia argyrotarsis* and eleven days in *Mysomyia rossii*, while it may be eighteen to twenty-one days in *Anopheles maculipennis* in the temperate zone. The larva grows by moulting several times.

Culicine larvæ are easily distinguished from Anopheline larvæ by the fact that the spiracles are carried on a long respiratory siphon, formed by a prolongation of the dorsum of the eighth abdominal segment, which has been used to distinguish the different species (Fig. 290).

Below the siphon on the eighth segment there are spines, forming a comb, while along the length of the siphon there is another comb, distal to which is a tuft of hairs.

The variations in these structures, together with those in the length and breadth of the siphon, associated with those of the antennæ and clypeus, afford means of classifying the Culicine larvæ. For further information, consult either Theobald's Monograph, vol. iv., p. 6, or Felt's paper, Bulletin 97 of the Division of Entomology of the New York State Museum. The Megarhininæ, Ædinæ, and Uranotæninæ possess larvæ belonging to the Culicine type.

The pupal stage lasts about forty-eight hours. Towards the end of an afternoon the pupa comes up to the surface, and the dorsal portion of the thorax splits with a T-shaped fissure, and the adult insect or imago emerges. Pupæ do not eat.

Differences between the Anophelinæ and Culicinæ.—The difference between these two important families may popularly be described as follows :

The Anophelinæ, as a rule, project from any plane surface on which they may be resting at a sharply defined angle, owing to their head, thorax, and abdomen forming a more or less straight line ; while the Culicinæ, on the other hand, do not make such a

well-defined angle, owing to the fact that the abdomen is not in the same straight line as the long axis of the thorax. The eggs of the Anophelinae are laid singly, while those of the Culicinae are laid in rafts. The larvæ of the Anophelinae have no drawn-out siphons,



FIG. 292.—DIAGRAM TO SHOW THE POSTURE OF AN ANOPHELINE MOSQUITO ON A WALL.

(After Sambon, from the *British Medical Journal*.)



FIG. 293.—DIAGRAM TO SHOW THE POSTURE OF ANOTHER ANOPHELINE MOSQUITO ON A WALL.

(After Sambon.)



FIG. 294.—DIAGRAM TO SHOW THE POSTURE OF CULEX PIPPIENS ON A WALL.

(After Sambon.)

and therefore lie more or less parallel to the surface of the water, while the larvæ of the Culicinae hang downwards. There are, however, exceptions to these rules—thus, *e.g.*, *Myzomyia culicifacies* rests on a surface like a Culex, not like an Anopheles.

Bionomics.—The imago emerges from the pupa during the late afternoon, after which the females are ready for fertilization by the males. These latter can sometimes be seen in large numbers, while but few females are observed, which is supposed to be characteristic of the breeding period.

The female alone bites man and animals, apparently for the purpose of obtaining rich food for the eggs, while the male feeds on the juices of plants and fruits. The female can also be seen feeding upon vegetable juices, though this is more common in the females of the Culicinae than in those of the Anophelinae. It is believed that a female feeds on blood once a day in nature, but this is a difficult matter to be certain about. The mechanism of the bite has already been described in Chapter XI., to which reference should be made. It will also be noted that the structure of the female mouth-parts is adapted for piercing, while that of the male is not. It will also be remembered that only the stylets pierce the skin, and that the labium never does so. Infection of the victim by the malarial germ takes place during the act of biting, as the sporozoites pass down the hypopharyngeal or salivary



FIG. 295.—RAFT OF CULICINE EGGS.

(After Sambon.)

tube, while the infection of the mosquito is effected by the blood, which passes from the victim along the labial or blood-tube into the mouth. So much blood may be sucked that it may appear *per anum*.

Usually the mosquitoes bite at night, and preferably in the dark, as, for example, they will attack the ankles of people while sitting at dinner at night.

After feeding, the mosquitoes usually retire to a dark portion of the room to digest the food. It is noticeable that they avoid white areas during the daytime, and prefer dark-coloured regions away from the light, and hence are very difficult to find in ill-lighted native huts.

In the early morning the female flies to the nearest water and lays her eggs. Usually she does not travel far, but is believed to be capable of going at least half a mile in case of need.

The females of the Culicinae do not appear to concern themselves as to the nature of the water in which they lay their eggs, but the female Anophelinae prefer clean water with a certain amount of weed. This water may be the back eddies of a river, where there is the protection of weeds, or the margins of large lakes, where dense surface vegetation is to be found, or any collection of water which contains green vegetal matter, or, failing these, any collection of fresh or moderately salt water. Small and large wells are a prolific source of mosquitoes, as are puddles, and water in broken bottles, shells, and especially in plants like bamboos, etc. Having laid the eggs, they retire to some dark corner during the daylight, and emerge at night for another feed of blood. How long they live is not known with certainty, and will be discussed, together with other features of their bionomics, in Chapter XXIX., under Malaria.

Mosquitoes can hibernate during the cold weather of the temperate zone, and æstivate during the dry hot weather of the tropics. In this latter condition they bite and suck blood, but apparently do not lay eggs, even if water is provided. The eggs are kept afloat on the surface of the water by their structure, and in due course give rise to the larvæ, which are great eaters, living not merely upon unicellular organisms, such as algæ and diatoms, but also upon their fellows. For purposes of obtaining air they are compelled to come to the surface of the water. The Anopheline larva, not possessing a siphon, has to lie more or less parallel with the surface of the water in order to enable the air to enter the spiracles, and this it is able to do by the aid of the palmate hairs already mentioned; while the Culicine larvæ have merely to bring the apex of the siphon to the surface of the water, from which they apparently hang downwards. Larvæ are certainly able to hibernate, and perhaps eggs also. The pupa does not feed.

Mosquitoes have many enemies and parasites, but the most important from a point of view of the prophylaxis of malaria are those which eat the eggs, the larvæ, and the pupæ, of which fish are the most important.

In 1905 C. K. Gibbons pointed out that a small fish, popularly termed 'millions,' which lived in shallow water, was a voracious feeder on eggs, larvæ, and pupæ of mosquitoes. These fish, which belong to the species *Girardinus pæciloides* de Filippi, are found in Barbadoes, which is very free from malaria. They are very small, the full-grown female only measuring $1\frac{1}{2}$ inches in length, while the male is smaller. The female is dull in colour, while the male is distinguished by red splashes and a black circular dot on its sides. The great importance of these little fish is that they are able to live in very shallow water, and to work their way in among dense surface vegetation, and thus to gain access to the larvæ, etc., of the mosquitoes, which otherwise are protected by the weeds from attacks by the larger fish. There is no doubt that these small fish should be introduced into malarious places as a prophylactic measure against the disease. Other closely allied species are *G. versicolor* Günther, found in St. Domingo, and *G. formosus*, found in Florida and South Carolina. With regard to other species, *Gambusea molliensia* is said to be of great value in consuming larvæ, especially when protected by dense surface vegeta-

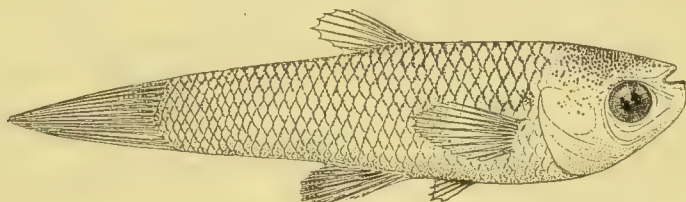


FIG. 296.—*GIRARDINUS PÆCILOIDES* DE FILIPPI.
(The tail should have been drawn expanded.)

tion. Recently Graham has reported that *Haplochilus grahami* Boulenger 1911 of the Cyprinodontidæ eat larvæ greedily, while Gowdey finds the same for *Fundatus tæniopygus* and *Haplochilus pumilus* in Uganda.

Certain plants, as is well known, collect water, especially the bromelias, the bamboos, and the pitcher-plants. In this water Culicine and sometimes Anophelinæ larvæ can be found. E. E. Green, of Ceylon, has shown that the flowers of the lobster-claw plant (*Heliconia brasiliensis*) can hold a considerable amount of water, in which he found *Stegomyia* and *Desvoidea* larvæ in large numbers.

Classification.—Various methods of classifying mosquitoes have been brought forward. The earliest were based upon the characters of the palpi, but in 1901 Theobald showed that they were useless for anything but specific characteristics, and based his larger divisions on the variations of the scales on the head, body, and wings. Felt brought forward a classification based upon the male genitalia and the wing veins, but, as Theobald remarks, the majority of known mosquitoes being female, it is most undesirable to take only

male characters for the classification. Recently Dyar and Knab have issued a classification of the Culicidæ by larval characters,

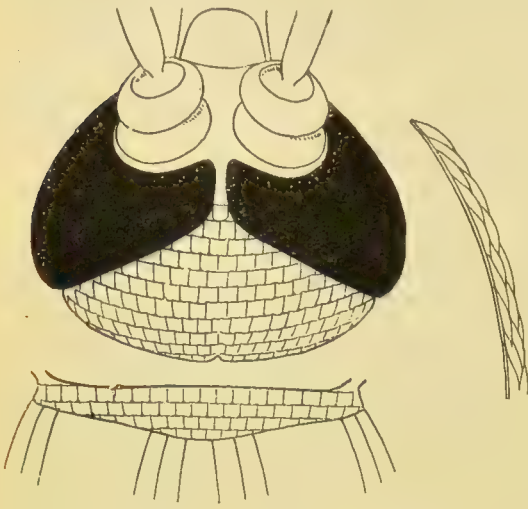


FIG. 297.—HEAD AND SCUTELLUM OF MEGARHINUS, TO SHOW THE SCALES.

On the right a profile view of the scales.
(After Theobald, 'Culicidæ of the World.')

and Eysell has advanced matters considerably by separating the Corethrinæ from the Culicidæ under the term Corethridæ, because the Corethridæ have an entire absence of the long piercing proboscis and of scales in the adults, both of which are marked features of the Culicidæ. It will be evident that this is useful. Lutz has brought forward a classification based upon larval and adult forms, which Theobald has modified and brought into accord with one based upon scales as generic characters, and this classification is followed below.

THEOBALD'S CLASSIFICATION.—The Culicidæ may be divided into subfamilies, according to the characters of the scales on the head, body, legs, and wings.

A. Scutellum simple, never trilobed ; proboscis straight ; palpi long in male and female—*Anophelinæ*.

B. Scutellum trilobed :—

I. Proboscis strongly recurved ; first submarginal cell very small—*Megarhininæ*.

II. Proboscis straight ; postscutellum nude :—

I. Wings with six longitudinal scaled veins :

(1) Antennæ with second joint normal in length :

(a) First submarginal cell as long as or longer than the second posterior cell.

Palpi in the female shorter than the proboscis ; long in male—*Culicinæ*.

Palpi short in both sexes—*Ædinæ*.

(b) First submarginal cell very small ; smaller than second posterior—*Uranotæninæ*.

(2) Antennæ with second joint very long—*Deinoceratinæ*.

2. Wings with seven longitudinal scaled veins—*Heptaphlebomyinæ*.

III. Proboscis straight ; postscutellum with scales or chætæ :—

1. Palpi long in male, short in female—*Trichoproso-*
poninæ.
2. Palpi short in both sexes—*Dendromyinae*.

IV. Proboscis elbowed—*Limatinæ*.

Of these, only the Anophelinæ and the Culicinæ, and possibly the Ædinæ, contain species of importance in tropical medicine, and concerning these subfamilies a few details must be given.

ANOPHELINÆ.

Culicidæ with straight proboscis ; palpi long in both sexes ; occiput mostly with upright forked scales, never with flat lateral scales. Thorax with scales or hairs, scutellum never trilobed, with scales or hairs. Postscutellum nude. Abdomen with hairs or scales. Eggs laid singly, and not in rafts. Larvæ without respiratory siphon.

This is a most important subfamily, because it contains the species which are known to carry malaria. The list of known carriers is as follows : *Anopheles maculipennis* Meigen, Europe and North America ; *A. bifurcatus* Linnæus, Europe. The less well-known *Anopheles* which transmit malaria are : *A. formosænsis* Tsuzuki Japan ; *A. cohesus*, Japan ; *A. martini* Laveran, Cambodia ; *A. porsati* Laveran Cambodia ; *A. vincenti* Laveran 1901, Tonkin ; *A. farauti* Laveran 1902, the New Hebrides ; *Myzomyia listoni* Liston, India ; *M. culicifacies* Giles, India ; *M. funesta* Giles, West Africa ; *M. superpicta* Grassi, Italy ; *M. christophersi*, Theobald, India, Tonkin ; *M. turkhuvi* Liston, India ; *M. ludlowi* Theobald ; *M. lutzii* Theobald ; *Myzorrhynchus paludis* Theobald, West Africa ; *M. barbirostris* van der Wulp, Asia ; *M. pseudopictus* Grassi, Italy ; *M. sinensis* Wiedemann ; *M. coustani* Laveran, Madagascar ; *M. ziemanni* Grünberg, Africa ; *M. fuliginosus* Giles, India ; *M. maculipalpis* Giles, India ; *Pyretophorus costalis* Loew, West Africa ; *P. jeyporensis* James, India ; *P. chaudoyei* Theobald ; *P. myzomyiifacies* Theobald ; *P. sergentii* Theobald ; *P. superpictus* Grassi ; *Nyssorrhynchus lutzii* Theobald, Brazil ; *N. annulipes* Walker ; *N. theobaldi* Giles ; *N. stephensi* Liston ; *N. janesi* Theobald ; *N. wilsoni* James, Tonkin ; *Cellia argyrotarsis* Robineau-Desvoidy ; *C. albimana* Wiedemann ; *C. pharoensis* Theobald, Africa ; *C. punctata*, New Guinea ; *Cyclolepteron grabhamii* Theobald ; *Stethomyia nimba* Theobald.

It is also certain that malaria is carried by *Anopheles martini* Laveran from Cambodia, *A. porsati* Laveran from Cambodia, *A. vincenti* Laveran from Tonkin ; but the position of these mosquitoes in Theobald's classification has not been determined.

It appears probable that the following are also malarial carriers : *Pyretophorus ardensis* Theobald, *P. pitchfordi* Power.

It is extremely doubtful whether *Myzomyia rossii* ever spreads malaria.

Filariasis is spread by *Pyretophorus costalis* Loew, *Myzomyia rossii* Giles, *Myzorhynchus nigerrimus* Giles, *M. minutus* Theobald, *Mansonia uniformis* Theobald, *M. pseudotitillans* Theobald, *Cellia albimana*, *Stegomyia pseudoscutellaris* Theobald and many others.

Filaria can live in *Anopheles maculipennis*, *A. annulipes*, *Myzomyia funesta*.

It is, therefore, important for the student of tropical medicine to be able to recognize the genera and species of the more important Anophelinæ. For this purpose we give the following tables taken from Theobald's 'Manual of the Culicidæ,' vol. v., 1910; for fuller information the original work must be consulted, but it must be admitted that there is a growing opinion that Theobald's genera imperceptibly merge with one another, and are not founded on essential points.

SUBFAMILY ANOPHELINÆ Theobald 1901.

Table of Genera.

- A. First submarginal cell very small—*Bironella* Theobald.
- B. First submarginal cell large :
 - I. Antennal segments with dense lateral scale-tufts—*Chagasia* Cruz.
 - II. Antennal segments with outstanding scales on the second segment and more appressed ones on the first. At least one abdominal segment with long flat more or less spatulate scales—*Calvertina* Ludlow.
 - III. Antennal segments without dense lateral scale-tufts :
 1. Thorax and abdomen with hair-like curved scales :
 - (a) No flat scales on head, but upright forked ones.
 - (a) Basal lobe of male genitalia of one segment.
 - (1) Wing scales large, lanceolate—*Anopheles* Meigen.
 - (2) Wing scales mostly small, or narrow, or slightly lanceolate, costa spotted—*Myzomyia* Blanchard.
 - (3) Wings similar to (2) but with fourth longitudinal vein very near base of third. Prothoracic lobes with outstanding scales—*Neomyzomyia* Theobald.
 - (4) Wings with patches of large inflated scales—*Cyclolepteron* Theobald.
 - (β) Basal lobe of two segments :
 - Prothoracic lobes with dense outstanding scales—*Feltinella* Theobald.
 - (b) Median area of head with some flat scales; prothoracic lobes mammillated. Wing scales lanceolate—*Stethomyia* Theobald.
 2. Thorax with narrow curved scales; abdomen hairy :
 - (a) Wing scales small and lanceolate; head with normal forked scales—*Pyretophorus* Blanchard.
 - (b) Wing scales broad and lanceolate; head with broad scales not closely appressed but not forked or fimbriated—*Myzorhynchella* Theobald.
 3. Thorax with hair-like, curved scales, and some narrow curved ones in front; abdomen with apical lateral scale-tufts and scaly venter; no ventral tuft. Wing scales lanceolate—*Arribalzagia* Theobald.
 4. Thorax, with hair-like curved scales; no lateral abdominal tufts; distinct apical ventral tuft. Palpi densely scaly. Wing with dense, large, lanceolate scales—*Myzorhynchus* Blanchard.

5. Thorax with hair-like, curved scales, and some narrow, curved lateral ones; abdomen hairy, with dense long, hair-like, lateral apical, scaly tufts. Wing scales short, dense, lanceolate; fork cells short—*Christya* Theobald.
6. Thorax with very long, hair-like, curved scales; abdomen with hairs, except last two segments, which are scaly. Dense scale-tufts to hind femora. Wings with broadish, blunt, lanceolate scales—*Lophoscelomyia* Theobald.
7. Thorax and abdomen with scales:
 - (a) Thoracic scales narrow-curved or spindle-shaped; abdominal scales as lateral tufts and small dorsal patches of flat scales—*Nyssorhynchus* Blanchard.
 - (b) Abdomen nearly completely scaled, with long, irregular scales, and with lateral scale-tufts—*Cellia* Theobald.
 - (c) Similar to above, but no lateral scale-tufts—*Neocellia* Theobald.
 - (d) Abdomen completely scaled with large flat scales, as in *Culex*—*Aldrichinella* Theobald.
 - (e) Thoracic scales hair-like, except a few narrow-curved ones in front; abdominal scales long, broad, and irregular—*Kertészia* Theobald.
 - (f) Thorax with narrow, hair-like, curved scales, some broad straight scales, and some spatulate laterally. Abdomen with fine hairs except last three segments, which have scales. Tufts of scales on hind femora. Wing scales lanceolate—*Manguinhosia* Cruz.

NOTE.—The genus *Cælodiazesis* Dyar and Knab is said by Theobald to be invalid, being based on *Anopheles barberi*, which is a true *Anopheles*.

Anopheles Meigen 1818.

Essentially *Anopheles* are temperate zone or hill-station Anophelinæ, of which the type *Anopheles maculipennis* Meigen 1818 has been already described.

Eighteen species are definitely known, but in addition there are the uncertain species of *A. ferruginiensis* Wiedemann, *A. martini* Laveran, *A. pirsati* Laveran, *A. vincenti* Laveran, *A. vestitipennis* Dyar and Knab 1906, *A. strigimacula* Dyar and Knab 1906, *A. apicumacula* Dyar and Knab 1906, *A. punctimacula* Dyar and Knab 1906, etc.

Theobald gives the following table by means of which the species may be recognized.

ANOPHELES.

A. Wings spotted:

I. Legs unbanded:

1. Wings with spots formed of collections of scales on the wing field; no costal spots—*maculipennis* Meigen.
2. Wings with light and dark costal markings.

(1) Costa with two yellow spots:

(a) Large species:

(a) No fringe-spots—*punctipennis* Say.

(β) Fringe-spots present—*pseudopunctipennis* Theobald.

(b) Small species. Wings much spotted—*franciscanus* McCracken.

(2) Costa with one spot—*perplexus* Ludlow.

II. Legs with basal pale bands.

1. Costa with two large dark spots—*gigas* Giles.
2. Two large and two small basal spots—*formosus* Ludlow.

III. Legs with narrow apical bands.

Costa dark, with two small pale yellow spots—*wellcomei* Theobald.

B. Wings unspotted :

I. Legs unbanded :

1. Thorax adorned as in *Corethra*—*corethroides* Theobald.
2. Thorax normal ornamentat on.
 - (a) Second fork cell much more than half the length of the first.
 - (1) Palpi unbanded.
 - (a) Petiole of first fork cell more than one-third length of cell.
Abdomen with golden hairs—*bifurcatus* Linnæus.
Abdomen with brown hairs—*algeriensis* Theobald.
 - (β) Petiole of first fork cell one-third length of cell—*barberi* Coquillett.
 - (2) Palpi banded. Dark species. Wing scales very dense—*smithii* Theobald.
Wing scales not so dense—*nigripes* Staeger.
 - (b) Second fork cell not more than half the length of the first—*aithenii* Theobald.

II. Legs banded :

1. Hind femora only with broad white band—*lindsayii* Giles.
2. Apices of hind tarsi pale—*immaculatus* Theobald.

Myzomyia Blanchard 1902.

This *Myzomyia* includes some important mosquitoes found in West Africa, and in India and Ceylon, which are carriers of malaria.

The diagnostic table given by Theobald is as follows :—

MYZOMYIA.

A. Proboscis unbanded :—

I. Legs banded :—

- (a) Palpi with three white rings.
 - (1) Legs with faint apical pale bands.
Wing fringe spotted—*funesta* Giles.
 - (2) Legs with prominent apical pale bands, and a broad, pale, median band to fore- and mid-metatarsi—*lutzi* Theobald.
 - (3) Legs (hind) with apical and basal pale bands.
Wings with five to six pale costal spots, the largest T-shaped—*rossii* Giles.
Wings with three yellow costal spots—*longipalpis* Theobald.
 - (b) Palpi with two white rings—
 - (1) Apex white—*aconita* Dönitz.
 - (2) Apex black—*d'thali* Patton.
 - (c) Palpi with four white rings—*jehafi* Patton.
2. Legs spotted and banded.
 - (a) Supernumerary cross-vein straight. Palpi with three white bands. Apical and basal pale leg banding.
 - (1) Third large costal spot with two spots beneath on first vein—*ludlowii* Theobald.
 - (2) Similar but much smaller—*mangyana* Banks.
 - (3) Third costal spot T-shaped, as in *Rossii*—*indefinata* Ludlow.
 - (3) Thorax with two ocelli; wings much spotted—*tessellata* Theobald.
 - (b) Supernumerary cross-vein markedly curved—*pyretophoroides* Theobald.
 3. Legs unbanded :
 - (a) Apex of palpi white and ringed. Three pale palpal bands.
 - (a) Third long vein mostly yellow—*listoni* Liston.

- (β) Third long vein dark.
 - (1) Several fringe-spots—*leptomeres* Theobald.
 - (2) Two fringe-spots—*culicifacies* Giles.
 - (3) No fringe-spots—*rhodesiensis* Theobald.
- (b) Apex of palpi white only—*nili* Theobald.
- (c) Apex of palpi black.
 - (1) Black apex narrow—*turkhuudi* Liston.
 - (2) Black apex broad—*hispaniola* Theobald.
- 4. Legs with spots only at joints. Palpi with three bands; apex black—*azriki* Patton.
- B. Proboscis banded :
 - I. Legs unspotted—*albirostris* Theobald.
 - II. Legs spotted—*throntonii* Ludlow.

Neomyzomyia Theobald 1912.

This genus includes only one species, *Neomyzomyia elegans* James 1903. It is found in India.

Pyretophorus Blanchard 1902.

The important species is *Pyretophorus costalis*, the spreader of malaria in West Africa and Mauritius.

PYRETOPHORUS.

- A. Legs unbanded :—
 - I. Palpi with three pale bands; apex black—*nigrifasciatus* Theobald.
 - II. Palpi with three pale bands; apex white :
 - (a) Wings with four large and two small black costal spots; mid cross-vein very long—*nursei* Theobald.
 - (b) Wings with four large black spots; mid cross-vein normal—*minimus* Theobald.
 - (c) Wings with five large black costal spots :
 - (1) First fork cell much longer than the second posterior—*sergentii* Theobald.
 - (2) First fork cell about as long as the second cell—*palestinensis* Theobald.
- B. Legs banded :—
 - I. Legs with apical banding. Hind-legs only banded. Palpi, black apex, and three pale bands.
 - (a) Three dark lines on postscutellum—*myzomyfacies* Theobald.
 - (b) Two dark lines on postscutellum—*chaudoyei* Theobald.
 - II. All legs with apical pale bands. Palpi with three white bands.
 - (a) Wings with four black costal spots; fringe unspotted—*superpictus* Grassi.
 - (b) Wings with four large and two small costal spots; fringe spotted.
 - (α) Apical palpal band broad; other two small—*jeyporensis* Theobald.
 - (β) Apical and median palpal bands broad—*austenii* Theobald.
 - (γ) Thoracic scales creamy—*pitchfordii* Power.
 - III. Fore and hind legs with apical pale bands.
 - Four white palpal bands—*cinereus* Theobald.
- C. Legs spotted and banded :
 - I. Last three hind tarsals all white.
 - Thorax golden scaled—*aureosquamiger* Theobald.
 - II. Last hind tarsal not white :
 - (a) Femora and tibiae spotted. Tarsal bands apical. Three palpal bands.

- (a) Apical one broad ; others narrow—*costalis* Loew.
 - (1) Fringe-spots narrow—*costalis* Loew.
 - (2) Fringe-spots broad—*merus* Dönitz.
- (β) Apical and median ones broad—*marshallii* Theobald.
- (b) No spots on femora—*pseudocostalis* Theobald.
- (c) Femora, tibiæ, and first tarsals spotted. Tarsal bands apical. Four palpal bands—*ardensis* Theobald.

Myzorhynchus Blanchard 1902.

These mosquitoes are usually said to only occur in the open, but we have repeatedly found *Myzorhynchus barbirostris* in houses. *M. sinensis* is known to carry the parasite of malaria in Japan. No species have so far been reported from America.

The thirteen species can be recognized as follows (it has been asserted that *Anopheles coustani*, which has never been correctly placed, is *M. coustani* Laveran) :

MYZORHYNCHUS.

A. Palpi unbanded :

I. Last hind tarsals brown :

Legs with pale apical tarsal bands :

(a) One fringe-spot.

- (1) Legs not spotted—*barbirostris* van der Wulp.
- (2) Legs with speckled femora and tibiæ, and more numerous 'round-ended' scales on the wing—*pseudobarbirostris* Ludlow.

(b) Several fringe-spots—*bancroftii* Giles.

(c) No fringe-spot.

- (1) One pale costal spot ; wings with light and dark scales—*umbrosus* Theobald.
- (2) Two pale costal spots ; wings mostly dark scaled—*strachanii* Theobald.

II. Last hind tarsal white—*albotæniatus* Theobald.

B. Palpi banded :

I. Last hind tarsal brown :

(a) Wing-fringe with one pale spot—*sinensis* Wiedemann.

(b) Wing-fringe unspotted.

(a) Palpi with four pale bands ; apex white.

1. Wings with two yellow costal spots.

(1) Wings distinctly spotted—*vanus* Walker.

(2) Wings without prominent spots—*pseudopictus* Grassi.

2. Wings with two white costal spots — *minutus* Theobald.

(β) Apex of palpi black—*nigerrimus* Giles.

II. Last two hind tarsals white—*mauritianus* Grandpré.

III. Last three hind tarsals white—*paludis* Theobald.

Nyssorhynchus Blanchard 1902.

The important member is *Nyssorhynchus fuliginosus* Giles 1900, which is without doubt a malarial carrier. Theobald's diagnostic table is as follows:

NYSSORHYNCHUS.

A. Last hind tarsals brown :

Legs spotted :

(a) Apical pale bands to legs.

(1) Proboscis dark—*stephensi* Liston.

(2) Proboscis pale on apical half—*masteri* Skuse.

(b) Apical and basal pale banding—*annulipes* Walker.

- B. Last hind tarsal white :
 - I. Legs spotted with white :
 - (a) Palpi with three white bands—*willmori* James.
 - (b) Palpi with four white bands—*maculatus* Theobald.
 - II. Legs not spotted ; four palpal bands—*karwari* James.
- C. Last two hind tarsals white. Legs with mottled femora, tibiæ, and tarsi :
 - three white palpal bands :
 - (a) Two apical palpal bands close together—*theobaldi* Giles.
 - (b) Two apical palpal bands far apart—*pretoriensis* Theobald.
- D. Last two and a half to two and three-quarters tarsals white—*tibani* Patton.
- E. Last three hind tarsals white :
 - I. Palpi with three white bands :
 - (a) Palpi spotted ; legs spotted—*maculipalpis* Giles.
 - (b) Palpi spotted ; hind legs not banded—*indiensis* Theobald.
 - (c) Palpi not spotted ; legs spotted—*jamesii* Theobald.
 - (d) Palpi and legs not spotted.
 - (1) Wings with four white costal spots—*fuliginosus* Giles.
 - (2) Wings with five white costal spots—*nivipes* Theobald.
 - II. Palpi with four white bands—*philippinensis* Ludlow.
- F. Legs uniformly brown—*brunnipes* Theobald.

Cellia Theobald 1902.

This genus, which is widely distributed throughout the tropics, has two malarial carriers, *Cellia argyrotarsis* and *C. albimana*, the latter being also known as a filarial carrier.

CELLIA.

- A. Legs with last three hind tarsals white :
 - I. Dark species—*argyrotarsis* Robineau-Desvoidy.
 - II. Dark species but with whitish-grey apex to abdomen—*braziliensis* Chagas.
 - III. Yellowish species—*pulcherrima* Theobald.
- B. Legs with last hind tarsals white :
 - I. Femora and tibiæ mottled ; apical foot-bands—*pharænsis* Theobald.
 - II. Femora and tibiæ not mottled—*bigotii* Theobald.
- C. Legs with last hind tarsal white, except base ; second and third white—*albimana* Wiedemann.
- D. Legs with last hind tarsal dark.
 - I. Dark species ; three white long lateral thoracic lines—*squamosa* Theobald.
 - II. Pale species :
 - (a) Thorax with two eye-like spots ; pleuræ pale with large black spots—*kochii* Dönitz.
 - (b) Similar but with wings more spotted—*punctulata* Dönitz.

SUBFAMILY CULICINÆ Theobald 1901.

Culicidæ with straight proboscis, long palpi in the male, short in the female. Postscutellum nude ; wings with a long first submarginal cell, and without a third anal vein. Larvæ with respiratory siphons.

There are upwards of sixty-three known genera, but of these only *Stegomyia*, *Culex*, and perhaps *Mansonia*, are of importance to medical men at present.

STEGOMYIA Theobald 1901.

Culicinæ with the head and scutellum clothed with flat scales.

The important species is *Stegomyia fasciata*, the tiger mosquito, which spreads yellow fever. It is peculiar in that it bites chiefly in the afternoon. It is found all over the world, which is due to the fact that it can live on board ship easily.

Unfortunately its name is about to be changed either to *S. calopus* Meigen, or *S. frater* Desvoidy. Theobald at present is not certain which will prove to be the correct term. The name as it stands at present is *S. fasciata*.

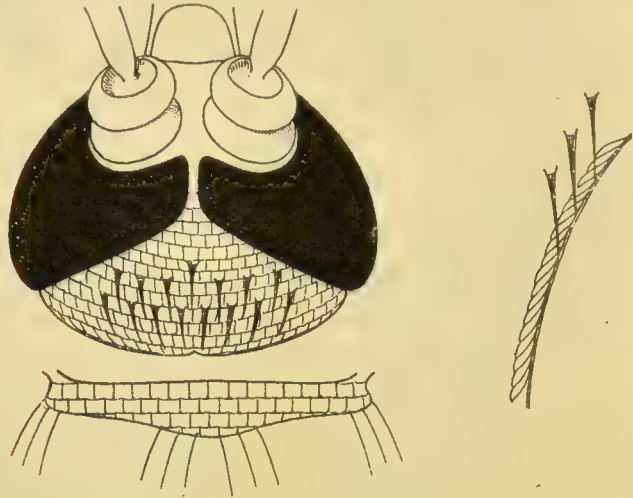


FIG. 298.—HEAD AND SCUTELLUM OF *STEGOMYIA*, TO SHOW SCALES.
(After Theobald, 'The Culicidæ of the World.')

Fabricius 1805 (*non* O. F. Müller 1764) (synonyms: *Culex calopus* Meigen 1818(?), *C. frater* Desvoidy 1827). O. F. Müller, it appears, used the term 'fasciata' for a *Culex* in 1764.

STEGOMYIA.

A. Proboscis banded :

I. Legs basally banded :

- (a) Thorax brown, with scattered, creamy-white scales—*annulirostris* Theobald.
- (b) Thorax black, with narrow, curved, golden scales—*periskelata* Giles.

II. Legs with basal and apical banding. Fore-legs with no bands ; mid with apical and basal bands on first tarsal and second tarsal ; hind with basal bands.

Thorax white in front, with a brown eye-like spot on each side—*thomsoni* Theobald.

B. Proboscis unbanded :

I. Legs basally banded :

(a) Abdomen basally banded.

- (a) Thorax with one median silvery white line—*scutellaris* Walker.
- (β) Thorax similar, but with two white spots near where the line ends.
- (γ) Thorax with two median yellow lines and lateral curved silvery lines—*fasciata* Fabricius.
- (δ) Thorax with two short median pale lines and a white patch on each side—*nigeria* Theobald.
- (ε) Thorax with large lateral white spots in front, smaller ones by the wings, two narrow median yellow lines, and two posterior submedian white lines—*lilii* Theobald.
- (ξ) Thorax with a white **W**-shaped area in front, a prolongation curved on each side enclosing a brown, eye-like spot—*W-alba* Theobald.

PLATE IV.



STEGOMYIA CALOPUS MEIGEN.

FEMALE.



- (η) Thorax with white frontal median spot, two large lateral spots, one small spot on front of wings, one narrow median white line and narrow submedian lines on posterior half. Last two hind tarsi white—*wellmanii* Theobald.
- (θ) Thorax brown with broad white line in front, extending laterally towards the wings, where they swell into a large patch, a white line just behind wings. Last two hind tarsi white—*albipes* Theobald.
- (ι) Thorax with silvery white spot on each side in front, small spot over root of wings, and a white spot over the base of the wings—*pseudonigeria* Theobald.
- (κ) Thorax with two lateral white spots, the front one the largest; a small median one near the head; two yellow median lines and a short silvery one on each side before the scutellum—*simpsoni* Theobald.
- (λ) Thorax with a silvery white scaled area in front, and another on each side in front of wings—*argenteomaculata* Theobald.
- (μ) Thorax with a median, yellowish-white line, a silvery patch on each side in front of the wings, extending as a fine yellow line to scutellum, and another silvery spot before base of each wing—*poweri* Theobald.
- (ν) Thorax with small grey-scaled area in front of roots of wings, and three short creamy lines behind—*minutissima* Theobald.
- (ο) Abdomen black, fifth segment with yellow basal band, sixth unbanded (seventh), two medio-lateral white spots, (eighth) two baso-lateral white spots; second hind tarsi nearly white—*dubia* Theobald.
- (b) Abdomen unbanded.
 - (1) Third hind tarsal nearly all white.
Thorax with two lateral white marks directed upwards—*africana* Theobald.
 - (2) First hind tarsal all white.
Thorax with one white spot anteriorly, and one in front of each wing—*apicoargentea* Theobald.
Thorax chestnut brown—*terrens* Walker.
- II. Legs with white lines as well as basal bands.
Thorax brown, with white lines; abdomen with basal bands—*grantii* Theobald.
- III. Fore and mid legs with apical bands; hind basal.
Fourth tarsal of hind-legs nearly all white—*mediopunctata* Theobald.
Base of mid-metatarsi, base and apex of hind, and base of first tarsal with pale banding—*assamensis* Theobald.
- IV. Legs unbanded:
 - (a) Abdomen basally banded.
 - (1) Thorax with front half silvery white, remainder bronzy-brown—*pseudonivea* Theobald.
 - (2) Thorax deep brown with scattered golden scales—*albocephala* Theobald.
 - (3) Thorax brown with golden stripes—*auriostriata* Banks.
 - (b) Abdomen banding indistinct.
Thorax with broad silvery white patch on each side anteriorly—*albolateralis* Theobald.
 - (c) Abdomen unbanded.
Thorax with six silvery spots—*argenteopunctata* Theobald.
 - (d) Abdomen with apical white lateral spots.
Thorax unadorned, except for pale scaled lines laterally—*punctolateralis* Theobald.

(c) Abdomen with basal white lateral spots.

(1) Thorax with two pale indistinct, median, parallel lines, and two silvery lateral spots—*minuta* Theobald.

(2) Thorax unadorned.

White spot mid-head—*tripunctata* Theobald.

No white spot—*amesii* Ludlow.

C. Proboscis yellow basally, dark apically.

Abdomen with apical pale bands—*crassipes* van der Wulp.

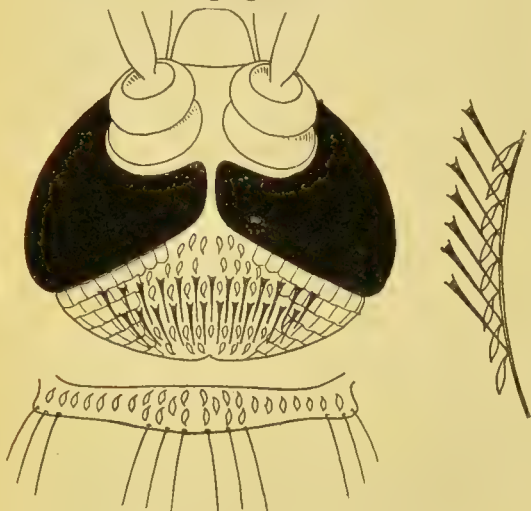
D. Proboscis with median interrupted white line on basal half.

Head black with grey margin—*albomarginata* Newstead.

NOTE.—*S. lamberti* Ventbrillon, *S. leucomeres*, *S. desmotes* Giles; *S. striocrura* Giles, of uncertain position.

Culex Linnæus 1758.

Culicidæ with head covered with narrow, curved scales above, flat scales at the sides, and upright forked scales. Male palpi long, acuminate. Female, short. Thorax with hair-like, curved scales or narrow curved scales. Linear lateral vein-scales.



The important species are *Culex pipiens* Linnæus and *C. fatigans* Wiedemann.

Culex pipiens Linnæus 1758.

Synonyms.—*Culex vulgaris* Linnæus 1767, *C. alpinus* Linnæus 1767, *C. agilis* Bigot, *C. ciliaris* Linnæus 1767, *C. communis* de Geer, *C. rufus* Meigen 1818, *C. phytophagus* Ficalbi 1889.

C. pipiens is widely distributed in Europe, North Africa, and North America, where it is the common brown mosquito.

FIG. 299.—HEAD AND SCUTELLUM OF A *CULEX*, TO SHOW SCALES.

(After Theobald, 'Culicidæ of the World.')

Its general appearance is well shown in the illustration, in which the head is brownish from the golden-brown scales, as are the proboscis, palpi, and antennæ. The thorax is dark brown, with golden-brown curved scales, and with three black lines due to black bristles. Abdomen brown, with basal yellow bands. Legs are brown and unbanded.

Culex fatigans Wiedemann 1828.

Synonyms.—*Culex æstuanus* Wiedemann 1828, *C. pungens* Wiedemann 1828, *C. pallipes* Meigen 1838, *Heteronychia dolosa* Arribalzaga 1896.

This is the common brown house-mosquito of the tropics, which is believed to spread dengue fever.

It resembles the above, but has only two dark lines on the thorax as a rule, while the basal abdominal bands are white or pale cream colour, and the first fork cell is longer.

ÆDINÆ Theobald.

Culicidæ with straight proboscis, short palpi in both sexes, usually plumose antennæ in the male, pilose in the female. Wings with six scaled longitudinal veins, and with the first submarginal cell as long as or longer than the second posterior. Postscutellum nude.

The mosquitoes included in this subfamily are generally found in the jungle, and not in habitations.



FIG. 300.—*CULEX PIPENS* LINNÆUS.

Daniels thinks that perhaps they may be proved to be malarial carriers. Loew suspects some of them (*Hæmogogus*?) as possible carriers of *Filaria* (especially *F. perstans*).

The eggs are laid in rafts, and the larvæ have respiratory siphons. A number of genera are described by Theobald, whose work should be consulted if further information is desired.

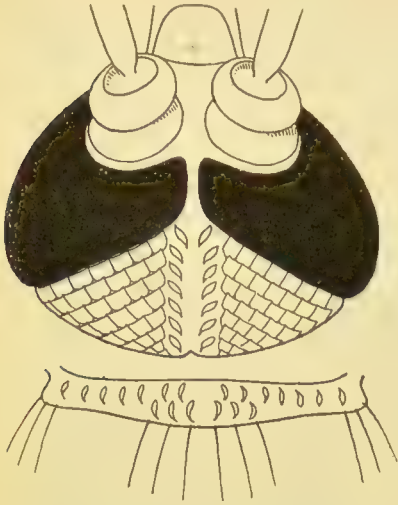


FIG. 301.—HEAD AND SCUTELLUM OF *ÆDES*, TO SHOW SCALES.

(After Theobald, 'Culicidæ of the World.')

LIMATINÆ Theobald.

Culicidæ with elbow-bent proboscis and squamæ on postscutellum. Palpi short in both sexes. First fork cell longer than second.

Genus.—*Limatus*.

FAMILY CORETHRIDÆ Eysell 1905.

Orthorrhapha nemocera with short proboscis not formed for piercing, without scales in the adult condition, with transparent larvæ rather resembling those of *Chironomus*.

The only reason why this family, which includes the genera *Corethra* and *Mochlonyx*, is mentioned here is that it has only recently been separated from the *Culicidæ*, of which it formed a subfamily—*Culicimorphæ*.

FAMILY CHIRONOMIDÆ

Synonyms.—*Tipulariæ culiciformis*, *Culicites* Newman, *Tipiladæ* Leach, *Chironomii* Zelt, *Chironominæ* Rondani.

Orthorrhapha nematocera with head small, often retracted under and covered by the thorax. Ocelli absent. No transverse suture on thorax; eyes reniform. Antennæ from six to fifteen joints; pectinate in male, simple and composed of fewer joints in female. Wings without veins along the posterior margin; costal vein ending near the tip of the wing.

The Chironomidæ include over 800 species of very delicate and often quite minute flies, popularly called 'midges,' which are found all over the world, especially near water.

Kieffer classifies the family into three subfamilies, as follows:—

A. Media and cubitus united by a cross vein—*Tanypinæ*.

B. Media and cubitus united only at the base.

I. Thorax humped over the head—*Chironominæ*.

II. Thorax not humped over the head—*Ceratopogoninæ*.

Of these three subfamilies only the last concerns us.

SUBFAMILY CERATOPOGONINÆ Kieffer 1899.

Chironomidæ with the thorax not prolonged over the head, antennæ with fourteen, rarely thirteen, joints in both sexes, and the last joint never longer than the two preceding taken together, while the last five are longer or almost the same as the preceding joint.

The eggs may be laid on land or water. If they are laid on land the larvæ and pupæ resemble those of *Phlebotomus*, presently to be described; while if they are laid in water they occur in small clusters of thirty to sixty eggs. The larva is snake-like and transparent, and lives on the surface of stagnant water, or slowly flowing streams, along which it wriggles and finally develops into a dark-coloured inactive pupa, with usually breathing organs on the thorax, which floats on the surface of the water.

Genera.—The subfamily has been especially studied by J. J. Kieffer, who recognizes the following genera: *Leptoconops* Skuse 1889, *Ceratopogon sensû stricto* Kieffer 1899, *Culicoides* Latreille 1809, *Æcacta* Poey 1851, *Bezzia* Kieffer 1899, *Brachypogon* Kieffer 1899, *Ceratolophus* Kieffer 1899, *Palpomyia* Mergele 1818. Of the other genera usually mentioned he considers *Tersesthes* Townsend 1893 and *Mycterotypus* Noé 1905 to be simply synonyms of *Leptoconops* Skuse 1889; and *Psychophæna* Phillipi 1865, *Tetrphora* Phillipi 1865, and *Didymorphleps* Weyenbergh 1883 to be identical with either *Ceratopogon* or *Culicoides*, but which it is impossible to say, as the descriptions are too imperfect.

Key of Genera.

- (a) Wings absent or rudimentary.
- (aa) Wings present.
 - (b) Median-cubital cross vein present (*i.e.*, cell enclosed by a vein).
 - (bb) Median-cubital cross vein absent.
 - (c) Wing with four to five very indistinct longitudinal veins, wing club-shaped, the anterior margin with a long, curved seta; the antennæ with about twelve joints.
 - (cc) Wing margin without long, curved seta.
 - (d) Proboscis and palpi rudimentary.
 - (dd) Palpi not rudimentary.
 - (e) Antennæ with not more than ten joints.
 - (ee) Antennæ with thirteen to fifteen joints.
 - (f) Antennæ fifteen jointed (European and tropical genera).
 - (g) Wings hyaline.
 - (gg) Wings spotted—(1) *Æcacta*.
 - (ff) Antennæ fourteen or less joints.
 - (g) Thorax rounded and not produced over the head. Antennæ thirteen to fourteen joints, legs of moderate length.
 - (h) Antennæ thirteen joints—(2) *Leptoconops*.
 - (hh) Antennæ fourteen joints, plumose in the male, sparsely paired in female. Typical wing venation.
 - (i) Wings hairy; last joint of tarsus with an empodium.
 - (j) Empodium well developed, almost as long as the claws, which are without setæ—(3) *Ceratopogon*.
 - (jj) Empodium not so distinct, less than half as long as the claws, which have setæ on the underside—(4) *Culicoides*.
 - (ii) Wings bare; pulvilli and empodium wanting.
 - (j) Wing with R_1 distinctly separated from $R_2 + 3$, and not connected with it by the cross vein like R_2 —(5) *Bezzia*.
 - (jj) Wing with R_2 present, cells sometimes indistinct.
 - (k) Media wanting—(6) *Brachypogon*.
 - (kk) Media present.
 - (l) Femora unarmed—(7) *Ceratolophus*.
 - (ll) Some of the femora spinose beneath—(8) *Palpomyia*.

Leptocconops Skuse 1889.

Synonyms.—*Tersesthes* Townsend 1893, *Mycterotypus* Noé 1905.

The flies of the genus are found in Egypt, Australia, New Mexico, and Italy.

The various species are *L. kertészi* Kieffer 1908, *L. stygius* Skuse 1889, *L. torrens* Townsend 1893, *L. bezzii* Noé 1905, and *L. irritans* Noé, and they can be recognized as follows:—

A. Antennæ of the female, twelve joints, with verticillates twice as long as the thickness of the joint. Palpi three-jointed. Costal nervure stops at the cubitus. Legs without spines, except four anterior; metatarsi-tarsal hooks simple (Egypt—*L. kertészi* Kieffer).

B. Antennæ of the female thirteen articles.

I. Palpi with four joints, legs without spines, tarsal hooks simple, costal nervure stops at the cubitus, flagellum with dense verticillates (Australia—*L. stygius* Skuse).

II. Palpi with three joints.

(a) Legs without spinules, tarsal hooks simple, costal nervure nearly to the extremity of the wing, verticillates of flagelli a little shorter than thickness of joints (New Mexico—*L. torrens* Townsend).

(b) Legs armed with spinules, especially the tibiae.

(1) Tarsal hooklets of the female with one large basal tooth; those of the male unequal; the anterior with one long, curved, S-shaped tooth; the posterior with a short, arched tooth (Italy—*L. bezzii* Noé).

(2) Tarsal hooklets of the female with one strong basal tooth, flagellum with some verticillates, spinose, and stronger than in *L. bezzii* (Italy—*L. irritans* Noé).

New species are *L. lauræ* Weiss 1912, Tunisia, and *L. interruptus* Enderlein 1907, South Africa.

Ceratopogon sensû stricto Meigen 1803.

Ceratopogoninae, with long-haired wings, especially in the female, and with a very apparent and hairy empodium on the last joint of the tarsus.

Type.—*Ceratopogon bipunctatus* Linnæus.

Kieffer has subdivided this genus into the subgenera *Ceratopogon*, *Atrichopogon*, and *Forcipomyia*, but none of the species of these genera are definitely known to suck the blood of vertebrates, although Austen states that in the type specimen of the species *C. castaneus* Walker 1848 the abdomen is apparently distended with blood as far as can be judged by external examination.

Culicoides Latreille 1809.

Synonym.—*Ceratopogon* Meigen 1803 *pro parte*, *Cheironomus* Fabricius.

Body small, pilose, or bare. Head depressed in front, prolonged

into a short rostrum. Proboscis, which is markedly longer than the head, with fleshy labium; labrum horny, seated on base of labium. Maxillæ long and horny. Antennæ filiform, fourteen-jointed, hairy, with the second to eighth joints cylindrical ovate, and the next four or five more elongate and subcylindrical, and the last joint ovate and cylindrical. Subcostal vein ending much beyond half the length of wing; radial ending near tip; cubital ending by the tip. Abdomen composed of eight segments. Legs almost equal in length; femora armed beneath with spines.

Type.—*Culicoides pulicaris* Linnæus.

There are over one hundred known species of this genus (and many more have been described since this statement was first



FIG. 302.—CULICOIDES PULICARIS: FEMALE.

(After Austen, 'British Blood-Sucking Flies.')

written), in which only the females suck blood, which they do most viciously, and though they are not known to cause disease, still they give rise to much irritation, especially as, being very small, they can get through any ordinary mosquito-netting. The eggs of the naked species are laid in water, attached to floating algæ, and give rise to white worm-like larvæ and small pupæ, with prominent respiratory horns. The eggs of the hairy species are laid in decaying vegetal matter, and give rise to small larvæ.

Culicoides grahamii Austen 1909.

Synonyms.—*Culicoides habereri* Becker 1909, *Æcacta hostilissima* Pittaluga 1910.

This minute fly appears to be extremely common, and to be almost the most troublesome of these blood-thirsty insects in tropical Africa. It is known in the Spanish Guinea, Ashanti,

Congo Free State, Uganda, Kamerun, Southern Nigeria, Angola. For fuller particulars see Austen's 'African Blood-Sucking Flies,' p. 7, Plate I., Fig. 3, and Pittaluga's Works.

Culicoides varius Winn.

This is the blood-thirsty species in Europe.

Ecacta Poey 1851.

This genus is closely related to *Ceratopogon* and *Culicoides*. The antennæ have fifteen and the palpi five joints. Ocelli are present. The wings have few cells. The tibial spurs and the pulvilli are absent. The sexes are similar, but the antennæ of the male are more hairy than those of the female.

Species.—*Ecacta furens* Poey 1851, found in America, but according to Austen *Ecacta hostilissima* Pittaluga 1912, is the same as *Culicoides grahamii* Austen 1912.

Ecacta furens Poey 1851.

This is the jejen of Cuba, which is said to be very irritating. Its length is 2 millimetres from the head to the end of the abdomen. Frons and antennæ rufous. Thorax bronze-coloured with fuscous spots; abdomen fuscous; legs with whitish articulations and a ring upon each femur; tibia fuscous. Wings broad, whitish, with fuscous spots. They are covered with minute scales and possess conspicuous marginal fringes.

Bezzia Kieffer 1899.

Synonym.—*Ceratopogon* Meigen 1803 *pro parte*. *Ceratopogoninæ* with bare wings and tarsi without empodia. Radius with three branches.

Type.—*Bezzia ornata* Meigen 1803.

Brachypogon Kieffer 1899.

Ceratopogoninæ with bare wings, media coalescent with $R_4 + 5$, pulvilli absent.

Type.—*Brachypogon vitiosus* Winnertz 1852(?) 1846(?).

Ceratolophus Kieffer 1899.

Synonym.—*Johannseniella* Williston. *Ceratopogoninæ* with bare wings, simple R_1 and R_3 connected by cross vein, tarsal claws without teeth.

Type.—*Ceratolophus femoratus* Fabricius. There is a subgenus *Serromyia*. *C. fulcithorax* Austen 1912 is the first *Ceratolophus* to be described in Africa.

Palpomyia Mergele.

Synonym.—*Xylocrypta* Kieffer.

Ceratopogoninæ with bare wings and five radial cells. R_2 present; media simple; some or all the femora spinose underneath; pulvilli and empodia wanting.

Four subgenera: *Alasion* Rondani 1857, *Sphæromyas* Stephens 1829, *Serromyia* Mergele 1818, *Heteromyia* Say 1825.

FAMILY PSYCHODIDÆ.

Orthorrhapha nematocera without ocelli, and with body densely covered with coarse hairs. Thorax without transverse suture. Antennæ long, sixteen-jointed. Wings very broad and hairy. No discoidal cell. Legs long, tibiæ without spurs.

The members of this family are small, sometimes very small

midges, with the bodies and wings thickly covered with hairs and scales, which give them a most characteristic appearance. They are found all over the world, and have a preference for damp, shady places, while their larvæ have been found in damp places—in cracks in rocks, old walls, etc ; in rotting vegetation, liquid, filth, and water. The blood-sucking genera are: *Phlebotomus* and *Sycorax* belonging to the Phlebotominæ, and possibly one in the Psychodinæ.

The Psychodidæ are classified into two subfamilies :

(1) *Psychodinæ*.—Psychodidæ, in which the second longitudinal vein gives off its first branch in the root of the wing. The female has a horny ovipositor, while the male has two claspers.

(2) *Phlebotominæ*.—Psychodidæ, in which the second longitudinal vein branches after it has passed well into the body of the wing. The female has not got a horny ovipositor, while the male has three claspers.

SUBFAMILY PSYCHODINÆ.

The genera *Pericoma* and *Psychoda* and their allies belong to this subfamily. As a rule it is stated that these flies are not blood-suckers, but Howlett states that an Indian species occasionally sucks blood.

SUBFAMILY PHLEBOTOMINÆ.

This subfamily is of importance not merely because it contains blood-sucking flies, but because the genus *Phlebotomus* is accused of spreading the 'Three Days' Fever.' The two blood-sucking genera may be distinguished as follows :—

(1) Two simple veins between the forks of the second and fourth longitudinal veins—*Phlebotomus*.

(2) One simple vein between the forks of the second and fourth longitudinal veins. Seventh longitudinal vein very short—*Sycorax*.

Phlebotomus Rondani 1840.

Morphology.—Phlebotominæ, with mouth-parts formed for piercing and sucking, palpi of five joints, antennæ long, filiform, composed normally of sixteen segments. The thorax is mainly mesothorax, the prothorax being very diminutive, but the scutellum and postscutellum are well developed. Wings hairy, narrow, with second longitudinal vein twice forked, thus forming one of the two simple veins between the forks of the second and fourth longitudinal veins, the other simple vein being the third longitudinal. The cross veins are placed near the basal fourth of the wing. Legs very long and slender, and densely clothed with scales. Ungues simple. The abdomen has ten segments, the last being modified for the genitalia, which in the female are flattened, leaf-like structures, and in the male very complex structures composed of superior claspers, inferior claspers, submedian lamellæ, and intermediate appendages, and a penis

The buccal cavity is wide in front and narrow behind, where it leads viâ the pharynx into the œsophagus, which divides posteriorly into two tubes, one leading to the sucking and the other to the mid-gut, at the posterior extremity of which are situate the four Malpighian tubules, after which come the small and large intestines. Attention is invited to the presence of the sucking stomach, and to the number of the Malpighian tubules.

The female organs consist of ovaries, from which the tubular oviducts pass to unite before reaching the base of the inferior claspers. There are two spermathecæ.

The male organs are testes, seminal vesicles, ejaculatory duct, pompetta or little pump, which regulates the exit of the spermatozoa ; ejaculatory ducts, and penis.

Life-History.—After fertilization the female takes a meal of blood, even though she may have previously sucked blood. She then lays some thirty to eighty eggs in damp places, usually cracks in rocks, stones, or bricks, and in doing so is apparently much exhausted, and in captivity may soon die. The eggs vary in size in different species from 0.15 to 0.5 millimetre in length. They are elongate oval in shape, marked with longitudinal dark marks, connected at places by means of cross lines. The eggs are laid singly, and require four to six days in warm, and fourteen days in cold, weather before hatching. The larvæ measure some 2 to 5 millimetres in length, and are composed of a head without eyes, but with well-developed mouth-parts and a Y-shaped mark, and cylindrical body of twelve segments, each with a transverse row of spinous hairs, and with spiracles on the first and penultimate segments. The characteristic point about the larvæ is the presence of two very long bristles situate on two tubercles on the ultimate segment. These bristles may be as long as the head and body taken together. The length of the larval stages depends upon the air temperature, and may last from two to fourteen days.

The pupa, 2 to 5 millimetres in length, is motionless, lying in the wrinkled, brownish larval skin which envelops its last three segments, and by which it is attached to the stone on which it lives. The duration of the pupal stage varies from eight or nine to twenty-eight days. The whole development, therefore, requires about one month in warm and two months in cold weather.

Habits.—These little flies are essentially nocturnal in their habits, but are attracted by light. During the day they lie up in cool, shady places in houses, etc., under bricks, in hollow trees, behind shutters, books, pictures, etc., often in bathrooms, and more often in latrines. They are very small, and can easily pass through the meshes of an ordinary mosquito curtain and fill themselves with human blood ; or, failing this, they will content themselves with animal blood—*e.g.*, that of cattle, dogs, frogs, etc. They fly quite silently, and only the female bites, and that only at night. She appears to be stimulated in her biting propensities by an increase of humidity and temperature, and will even crawl under the bed-

clothes to get at her victim. During the act of biting the posterior end of the abdomen is raised, while the whole abdomen becomes much distended with blood and reddish in colour, except at the posterior tip.

The originally replete female becomes half empty in sixteen, and quite empty of blood in thirty-six to forty hours. When first gorged, she cannot fly easily, and may be unable to escape from the mosquito curtain, where she may be caught while quietly digesting her enormous meal. During the day the flies remain resting in cool, shady places in houses and other buildings, under bricks, in hollow trees, behind shutters, pictures, books, etc., and are often found in bathrooms, and more often in latrines.

The larvæ are very difficult to find, because they are so small, while the pupæ are even more difficult to see, because not merely are they small, but they are also of a colour similar to the stones to which they are attached. Hence the habits of larvæ and pupæ are not well known, and require to be restudied. Their presence may be determined, even when they cannot be found, by placing the stones in a glass case or under fine netting, when the adult flies will appear in due course if any pupæ are present.

Pathogenicity.—*Phlebotomus papatasi* Scopoli 1786 is the carrier of the virus of 'Pappataci fever,' and the whole genus is composed of virulent blood-suckers, whose bite is generally severe, and may be quite painful to non-immune, new arrivals, when the sensations produced by bite is stated to resemble that which people imagine ought to be experienced by the application of a red-hot needle. The area of the bite becomes a small rose-red papule, surrounded by a reddish macula, the total result being a maculo-papule, which may persist for several days, and is associated for a day or so with a sensation of itching. Children are especially liable to be attacked.

Prophylaxis.—Newstead classifies the possible means of prophylaxis into—(1) Repellents, (2) fumigation, (3) light, (4) artificial air movements, (5) traps, (6) nets, (7) destruction of breeding-grounds, and of all these he thinks that very fine spraying with a 1 per cent. solution of formalin is the most effective, especially if performed during the day into the dark portions and angles of the sleeping-chamber, while the mosquito curtain might be sprayed towards night. He thinks that an electric fan and a modified biscuit-box trap lined with dark cloth and placed high up in dark places in the sleeping-chamber would be useful. Major Crawford recommends the following ointment for personal use: Oleum anisi, 1 drachm; oleum eucalypti, 1 drachm; oleum terebinthinæ, $\frac{1}{2}$ drachm; and unguentum acidi boracici, 1 ounce.

Species.—The species are fairly numerous, and may be grouped geographically as follows:—

Europe.—*Phlebotomus papatasi* Scopoli 1786 (type species), *P. minutus* Rondani 1840, *P. mascitii* Grassi 1908, *P. nigerrimus* Newstead 1911, *P. perniciosus* Newstead 1911.

Africa.—*P. duboscquii* Neveu-Lemaire 1906, found in Timbuktu.

Asia.—*P. papatasi* Scopoli 1786(?), *P. argentipes* Annandale 1910, *P. major* Annandale 1910, *P. malabaricus* Annandale 1910, *P. babu* Annandale 1910

P. himalayensis Annandale 1910, *P. perturbans* Meijere, *P. angustipennis* Meijere.

America.—*P. vexator* Coquillett 1906, *P. cruciatus* Coquillett 1906, *P. rostrans* Summers 1912.

Newstead gives the following table for the purpose of recognizing the *Phlebotomi* of Malta :—

A. *Abdominal Hairs Recumbent*—

- (a) Integument black. Large species. Palpi with second segment slightly longer than the third—*P. nigerrimus*.
- (b) Integument ochreous. Small species. Palpi with second segment one-half the length of the third—*P. minutus*.

B. *Abdominal Hairs more or less Erect*—

- (a) Legs in both sexes relatively short ; average length of hind-leg 3 millimetres—*P. perniciosus*.
- (b) Legs in both sexes relatively long ; average length of hind-leg 4 millimetres—*P. papatasi*.

***Phlebotomus papatasi* Scopoli 1786.**

Synonyms.—*Cyniphes molestus* Costa 1840, *Hermasson minutus* Loew 1844.

Newstead reports that there are two distinct colour varieties of this insect—viz. : (1) A uniformly pale variety which is to be considered typical ; and (2) a variety with a dark fringe to the costa and hind margin of wing. These two varieties he distinguishes as the pale variety and the dark variety.

Pale Variety.—Almost uniformly pale translucent ochreous ; thorax with a long, dull, red-brown median stripe and a single spot of the same colour on either side near the front ; wing fringe not markedly darker than the hairs on the disc of the wing.

Dark Variety.—Female with general colour of pale form, but with wing fringes smoky grey, and some of the hairs on the veins also dark grey or smoky grey. The male was not observed.

Life-History.—Ovum when first expelled shows the oölemma (interior) and a micropyle at anterior end. The first instar of the larva is caterpillar-like. Two pairs of caudal bristles, one much longer than the other, the other pair very short. Length, 2 to 3.28 millimetres. Pupa with abdomen curved upwards in varying degree.

Pathogenicity.—It is the carrier of Pappataci fever.

FAMILY SIMULIIDÆ.

Synonyms.—*Melusinidæ* *Tipulariæ latipennis* Meigen, *Simulides* Zelt, *Simulites* Newman, *Simulinæ* Rondani.

Orthorrhapha nematocera without ocelli ; without transverse suture on the thorax ; with short legs, in which the posterior tibiæ and the first joint of the hind tarsi are dilated ; with short straight cylindrical, eleven-jointed antennæ without setæ. Eyes of the male are large, and meet in the middle line, while those of the female are smaller and separate. Size, 1.5 to 4 millimetres in length.

The *Simuliidæ* or *Melusinidæ* are the sand-flies, also called

'brûlots' or 'potu' flies, and have a wide distribution, being particularly found in the tropics, but are also well known in Europe. Though small in size, they are great blood-suckers, attacking man and beast, and also other insects, but only the females suck blood.

Though there is only one genus, *Melusina* Meigen 1800, more correctly known as *Simulium* Latreille 1802, there are very many species—*i.e.*, about seventy—of which *Simulium reptans* Latreille and *S. hirtipes* Fries are known in Scotland. *S. columbaczense* Schönberg, locally known as the 'banât,' is the cause of much destruction of cattle in South Hungary. *S. indicum* Becher is the 'dam din' of Assam, which is a cause of irritation to tea-coolies. *S. damnosum* Theobald in Uganda, where it is called 'mbwa,' and in the Sudan, where it is called 'kunteb'; and *S. griseicollis* Becker, of Dongola, locally called 'nimetta,' are very virulent. Austen says that the 'potu' flies were accused of having caused the death of coolies while constructing an Indian road.



FIG. 303.—SIMULIUM REPTANS LATREILLE: FEMALE.

The effects of the bite of these small insects is most irritating, and the appearance of a person after a severe attack is most peculiar, the face and hands—*i.e.*, the exposed parts—being covered with papules.

Life-History.—The eggs are deposited on stones or plants in running water. The larva is broad posteriorly, where it possesses a sucker, capable of attaching it to any convenient object. Anteriorly it has two fan-like organs. It moves about in the water after the manner of a leech, and also by the aid of a silken thread, which it spins. It feeds on water plants. The larval stage lasts about a month, when a cocoon is spun, inside which the pupa is formed. The pupa breathes by means of branched filaments, and at the end of a week becomes the imago, which is carried to the surface of the water in an air-bubble.

Habits.—The *Simuliidæ* live in the open country, and very rarely enter houses. They can be found in the early morning, or, better, in the late afternoon, flying in clouds. During the day-time they can be found on trees, grasses, etc. It is common to

find the males quite close to the streams in which the eggs, larvæ, and pupæ abound; but the female can apparently travel for considerable distances in search of food, and can quite easily be caught on the wing. They may also be found in the ears of cattle, donkeys, etc., where they feed. They are not all vicious, blood-thirsty insects. Thus, for example, *S. venustum* Say is said to be quite peaceably disposed. It is quite possible that in some instances mistakes have been made with regard to the blood-thirsty propensities of some species, and it is possible that the real culprit

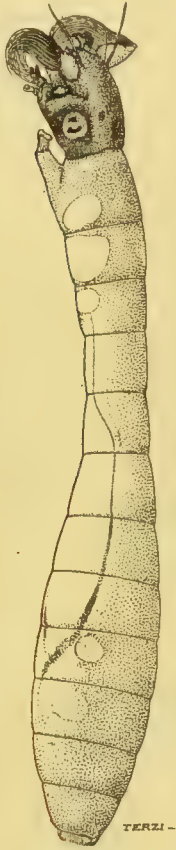


FIG. 304.—SIMULIUM LARVA
($\times 8$).

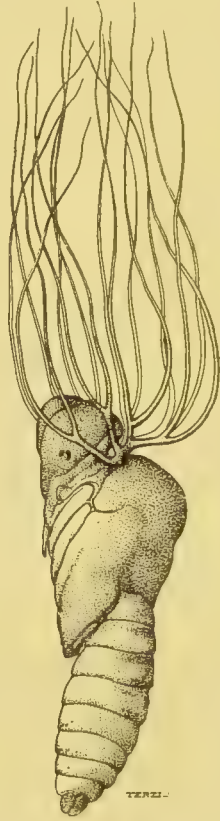


FIG. 305.—SIMULIUM PUPA
($\times 8$).

was one of the Ceratopogoninæ, and therefore it is necessary to be quite certain that the insect in question is really a *Simulium*, and this can only be done by careful examination. For purpose of quick field examination, it is as well to inspect the antennæ carefully, as they are fairly characteristic.

Enemies.—The *Simuliidæ* have many enemies, among which may be mentioned the larvæ of the May- and that of the Caddis-fly, and many kinds of fish which prey upon the larvæ, pupæ, or flies.

Classification.—The genus has been divided into two subgenera by Roubaud—*i.e.*, *Prosimulium* and *Eusimulium*, but the differenti-

ation of the species is very difficult. In fact, the family urgently requires revision.

Pathogenicity.—Although sand-flies are very irritating, and cause the death of cattle, it is not known whether they are the carriers of any definite disease of cattle or man, though it seems very probable that they may be associated with the spread of pellagra, as Sambon has suggested; but more will be said on this subject when discussing pellagra in Chapter XLVII.

Marchoux and Borret have suggested that sand-flies may play a rôle in the transmission of leprosy.

FAMILY BLEPHAROCERIDÆ Loew 1860.

Orthorrhapha nematocera, without discal cell and with a secondary set of crease-like lines on the wings.

In this family the genus *Curupira* Osten-Sacken is said to contain species which suck blood. The larvæ live in rapid streams. *C. torrentium* (Müller) is found in Brazil.

REFERENCES.

Diptera.

WILLISTON (1908). North American Diptera. London (a most useful book).

Culicidæ.

BLANCHARD, R. (1905). Les Moustiques. Paris.

CHRISTOPHERS (1901). Royal Society Reports to Malaria Committee, No. 4.

FICALBI, E. (1896). Revisione sistematica della famiglia delle Culicide Europee. Firenze.

GILES (1904). Gnats or Mosquitoes. Second edition, 1902; supplemented.

INNES (1908). Journal of Parasitology, vol. i., No. 2.

JAMES AND LISTON (1904). Anopheles Mosquitoes of India.

LEICESTER (1908). Studies from Institute for Medical Research, Malay States, III., Part 3, 168.

NUTTALL AND SHIPLEY (1901). Journal of Hygiene, vol. i., 1901, 4, 451; 1907, *ibid.*, 297.

THEOBALD (1901-10).—The Culicidæ of the World, vols. i.-v.

Chironomidæ.

MIALl AND HAMMOND (1900). The Harlequin Fly. Oxford.

THEOBALD (1892). British Flies, vol. i. London.

Psychodidæ.

AUSTEN (1909). Trans. Society Trop. Medicine and Hygiene.

BLANCHARD, R. (1909). Archives de Parasitologie XIII., No. 2 (Phlebotomus).

WALKER (1856). Insecta Britannica; Diptera. London.

Simuliidæ.

BALLON (1908). Imperial Department of Agriculture, West Indies. Pamphlet Series, No. 55.

CHRISTY (1908). Sleeping Sickness Report, Royal Society, London. No. 3.

LEON (1909). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie, Bd. 51, Heft 6, S. 659 (S. columbacense).

THEOBALD (1903). *Ibid.*, No. 2,

CHAPTER XXV

DIPTERA (*concluded*)

MUSCIDÆ AND ALLIED FAMILIES.

Flies—Orthorrhapha—Brachycera—Tabanidæ—Leptidæ—Asilidæ—Phoridæ—Scenopinidæ—Empidæ—Cyclorrhapha—Sepsidæ—Oscinidæ—Drosophilidæ—Borboridæ—Æstridæ—Sarcophagidæ—Muscidæ—Anthomyidæ—Pupipara—References.

FLIES.

THIS chapter deals with all those insects which come under the term 'flies.' In medicine they are of importance because of either their blood-sucking habits, through which they are able to disseminate animal parasites, or of their capability of carrying germs on the hairs of their legs and body, or in their alimentary canal. These germs are liable to be deposited on food, either by being brushed off the hairs or by being voided with the fæcal matter of the flies. Further, the larvæ of certain species may enter the skin or the alimentary canal, and cause irritation and disease in this way (Myiasis Hope 1837).

Continuing the classification of the Diptera already given, the first Section included in this chapter is that known as the Brachycera.

SUBORDER I. ORTHORRHAPHA.

SECTION BRACHYCERA.

The principal Orthorrhapha Brachycera may be divided into two groups:—

GROUP 1. BRACHYCERA HOMŒODACTYLA.—Imago with pulvilli-form empodia. Larvæ with a terminal posterior stigma. Families: Tabanidæ, Leptidæ, Stratiomyidæ.

GROUP 2. BRACHYCERA HETERODACTYLA.—Imago with empodia undeveloped or bristle-like. Posterior stigma of the larva not terminal. Families: Asilidæ, Empididæ.

BRACHYCERA HOMŒODACTYLA.

The families with which we are concerned may be recognized as follows:—

A. Antennæ composed of more than five joints, or third joint complex.

I. Squamæ large—*Tabanidæ*.

II. Squamæ small.

Tibia with spurs—*Leptidæ* in part.

B. Antennæ composed of three joints or third joint simple—*Leptidæ* in part.

FAMILY TABANIDÆ.

Orthorrhapha Brachycera with bulky bodies and often large heads. The eyes usually meet in the males, but are separate in the females. Antennæ with third joint marked by four to eight annuli, but without a terminal bristle. Proboscis strong and

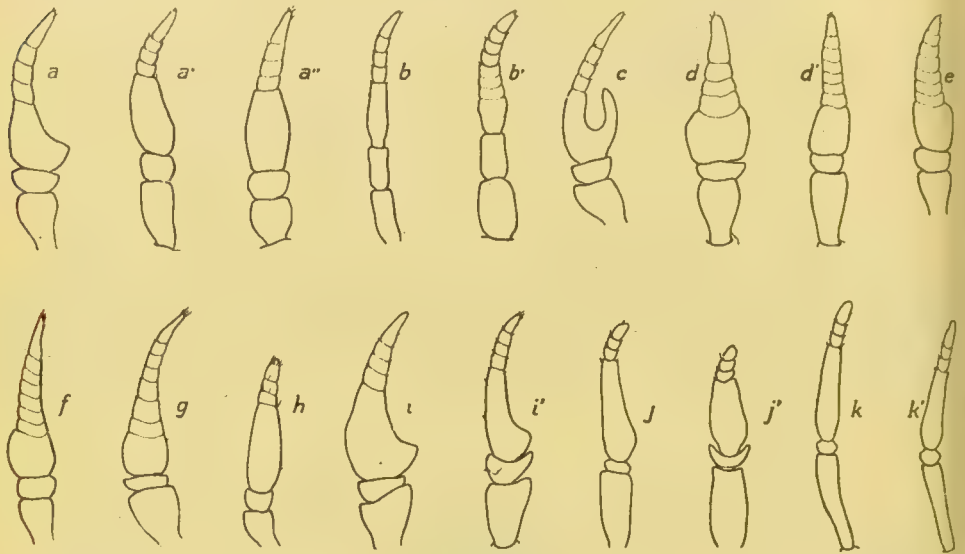


FIG. 306.—TABANUS BOVINUS LINNÆUS: FEMALE.

prominent. Thorax narrower than the head. Wings with large basal cells and five posterior cells. Third longitudinal vein bifurcate. Legs moderately stout. Empodia large.

Remarks.—The Tabanidæ are blood-sucking flies, of which some 2,000 species are known. The blood-sucking habit is confined to the females, while the males live on the juices of plants. They are variously known as horse-flies, breeze-flies, gad-flies, serut-flies (Nile), and mangrove-flies (West Africa), and are distributed widely

over the world. They are in the habit of coming to water for drinking purposes, and this has enabled them to be killed in large numbers by sprinkling the water with kerosene, which probably prevents them escaping from the surface of the water, and partially kills them by its poisonous effects.



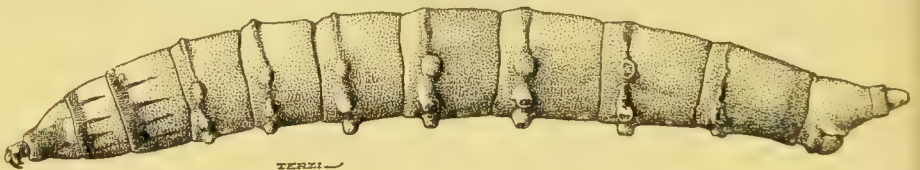
TERZ.

FIG. 307.—ANTENNÆ OF THE TABANIDÆ.

a, a', a'', *Silvius*; *b, b'*, *Chrysops*; *c*, *Rhinomyza*; *d, d'*, *Cadicera*; *e*, *Dorca-loemus*; *f*, *Pangonia*; *g*, *Erephopsis*; *h*, *Lepidoselaga*; *i, i'*, *Tabanus*; *j, j'*, *Hæmatopota*; *k, k'*, *Hippocentrum*.

Morphology.—As a rule the head is as wide or wider than the thorax, convex anteriorly, and concave posteriorly, with very large, brilliantly coloured eyes, with golden-green or purple markings.

The antennæ are very distinct, but the proboscis varies, being very short in some genera and enormously long in others. In the genera in which it is short it hangs vertically downwards from the head. It consists of a labrum, two maxillæ with palps, two mandibles, a hypopharynx, and a thick labium



TERZ.

FIG. 308.—LARVA OF A TABANUS ($\times 2\frac{1}{2}$).

with well-marked labial palps (labella). The wings have a large discoidal cell and very elongate basal cells. When at rest the wings diverge at the tips. They may be mottled. The legs are large and strong. The body is brown, whitish, or yellowish in colour, but there may be markings on the abdomen.

Life-History.—The eggs, which are spindle-shaped, and whitish in colour, are laid in raft- or flask-shaped masses attached to

water-plants. The larvæ live either in water or damp earth, and feed upon small animal organisms. They are spindle-shaped and segmented, with knobs or protuberances on the rings, either all round or only ventrally. The pupa, which is free, is found in water or damp rubbish.

Pathogenicity.—It is possible that they may disseminate trypanosomes. The diseases m'bori in dromedaries in Timbaktu and souma in Segon are believed to be spread by *Tabanus ditæniatus*,

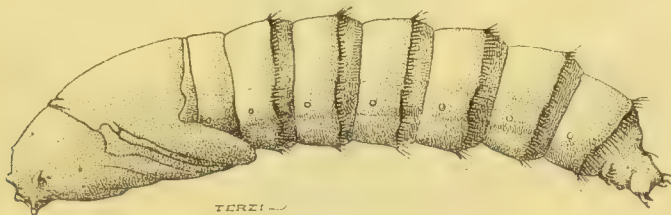


FIG. 309.—PUPA OF *TABANUS KINGI* AUSTEN. (AFTER KING.)

(From the Fourth Report of the Wellcome Tropical Research Laboratories, Khartoum.)

while the dromedary disease of Algeria is spread by *T. nemoralis* Meigen and *T. nigrinus* Fabricius. *T. glaucopsis* Meigen is infected with *Herpetomonas subulata*. According to Leiper, Chrysops is the carrier of *Loa loa* Cobbold 1864.

Prophylaxis.—Kerosene spread on water appears to be the best method of dealing with these pests.

Classification.—The family is divided into two subfamilies: Tabaninæ and Panganinæ.

TABANINÆ.

Tabanidæ without spurs on the hind tibiæ.

The important genera of the Tabaninæ may be recognized by the following table:—

I. Thorax and abdomen with iridescent tomentum—*Lepidoselaga*.

II. Thorax and abdomen without iridescent tomentum.

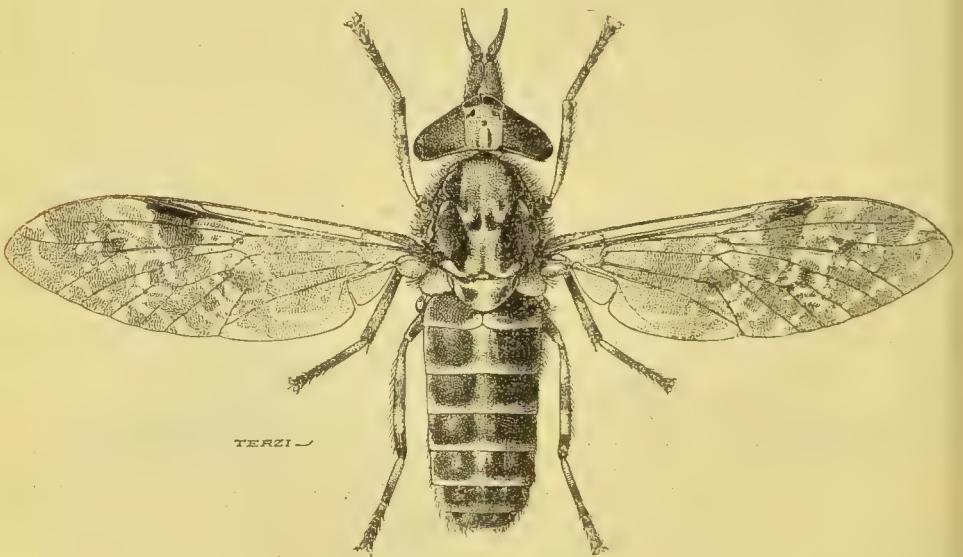
1. Eyes bare.

(a) Third joint of the antenna without basal tooth—

(1) Antennæ extremity slender, and first joint elongate—*Hippocentrum* (Fig. 307, *k*, *k'*).

(2) Antennæ not remarkably slender and first joint not remarkably elongate—*Hæmatopota* (Fig. 307, *j*, *j'*).

(b) Third joint of the antenna with well-developed basal tooth—*Tabanus* (Fig. 307, *i*, *i'*).

Lepidoselaga Macquart 1838.**Synonym.**—*Hadrus* Perty.*Lepidoselaga lepidota* Wiedemann 1828, the motuca fly of Brazil is a well-known biter. (Antennæ, *vide* Fig. 307, *h.*)FIG. 310.—*LEPIDOSELAGA LEPIDOTA* WIEDEMANN: FEMALE ($\times 6$).FIG. 311.—*HÆMATOPOTA VITTATA* LOEW ($\times 4$).**Hæmatopota** Meigen 1803.**Synonym.**—*Chrysorona* Meigen 1800.

The number of species comprised in this genus is rapidly increasing. About 130 have already been described, and Austen informs

us that many more still await description from Africa alone. The characteristics of a species belonging to this genus are—The elongate antennæ, the peculiar wing-markings (Fig. 311), and the peculiar arrangement of the wings when at rest, when the bases meet together, while the rest of the wings diverge slightly and slope backwards and outwards. The species of *Hæmatopota* are very bloodthirsty, and are a terrible pest in the wet season to man and beast alike. They are said never to bite in the early morning or after sunset, but, on the contrary, Mayer states that *H. decora* is most troublesome in the early morning and late evening. Neave states that the females bite in rather dull, damp weather, and rarely in the heat of the sun, being mostly in evidence from about 8 to 10 a.m. and from 4 p.m. to sunset in sunny weather, but in the shady, damp forest they may be troublesome all day. The life-history of the tropical species is but little known, but Neave thinks that the majority of the species may have two broods. The life-history of *H. pluvialis* Linnæus is partially known. The egg stage has not, so far as we know, been observed. The larva and pupa are of the Tabanid type, as described above. With regard to pathogenicity, Balfour reports El Takasha ('the attacking fly'), probably *H. taciturna* Austen, is believed to cause swelling of the lungs in sheep and goats.

With regard to individual species, *H. pluvialis* Linnæus is common in Europe, while *H. grahami* Austen 1912, *H. daveyi* Austen 1912, *H. rubens* Austen 1912, *H. beringeri* Austen 1912, *H. crudelis* Austen 1912, are some new species recently described by Austen from tropical Africa. Other species are *H. obscura* Loew, 1875 in South Africa, *H. vittata* Loew in tropical Africa; and *H. bullatifrons* Austen in Northern Nigeria.

Hippocentrum Austen 1908.

This genus is nearly allied to *Hæmatopota* Meigen 1803, but is, according to Austen, distinguished by the fact that the head is for the most part shining, the antennæ extremely slender and the first joint elongate (Fig. 307, *k*, *k'*), and the terminal joint of the palpi in the female very large and shining on the outer side, which is strongly convex, while the inner side is flattened; the wings are more or less suffused with dark colour, interrupted with pale streaks or blotches without the peculiar light markings of *Hæmatopota*.

Species.—*H. versicolor* Austen 1908 in Uganda and the Lado, *H. trimaculatum* Newstead in West Africa, *H. strigipennis* Karsch, which may be identical with *H. trimaculatum*, has only been found in Gaboon, and *H. murphyi* Austen 1912 in West Africa. The females bite man and animals. The life-history is unknown.

Tabanus Linnæus 1761.

There are over 900 known species of *Tabanus*, of which *Tabanus bovinus* Linnæus 1761 is found in Europe, Asia, and South Africa. In the Sudan these flies are called serut-flies: *T. ditæniatus*

Macquart, *T. gratus* Loew, *T. taniola* Palisot de Beauvois, *T. fasciatus* Fabricius, *T. africanus* Gray, may be noted. In West Africa they are known as mangrove flies. Recently Patton has described the life-cycle of a Crithidia (*C. tabani* Patton 1909), which is a true parasite of *T. hilarius* and another species.

Subgenus *Therioplectes* Zeller 1842.

A number of species of this genus are known in Europe. *Therioplectes micans* Meigen, *T. borealis* Meigen, *T. montanus* Meigen, and *T. tropicus*, may be mentioned.

Subgenus *Atylotus* Osten Sacken 1876.

Atylotus fulvus Meigen and *A. rusticus* Fabricius are met with in Europe.

Other Genera.

In 1906 Grünberg described three genera, with one species in each, as belonging to the Tabaninæ—viz., *Thaumastocera* *T. akwa* in West Africa; *Holoceria*—*H. nobilis*—in German East Africa; *Parhæmatopota*—*P. cognata*—in German East Africa and Zanzibar; while other genera are *Hexatoma* Meigen in Europe, *Dasybasis* Macquart in South America and Australia, *Bolbodimyia* Bigot in South America, *Udenocera* Ricardo in Ceylon, *Diachlorus* Osten Sacken in America, *Stibasoma* Schiner in South America, *Acanthocera* Macquart in South America, *Dichelacera* Macquart in South America, and *Selasoma* Macquart in South America.

PANGONIINÆ.

Tabanidæ with hind tibiae armed at the tips with spurs.

I. Proboscis short.

1. Antennæ longer than the head—*Chrysops*.
2. Antennæ shorter than the head—*Silvius*.

II. Proboscis long.

1. Proboscis little longer than the head—*Cadicera*.
2. Proboscis usually much longer than the head, often longer than the body—*Pangonia*.

Chrysops Meigen 1803.

This genus has become of greater importance since Leiper has shown that it includes the carrier of *Loa loa* Cobbold 1864, which in its turn is suspected to be the cause of Calabar swellings.

The genus is world-wide in its distribution, and is said to contain more than 160 species, of which some seventeen or more have been found in the Ethiopian region. The African flies belonging to the genus are of medium size, not exceeding 10.5 millimetres in length according to Austen. The wings of the majority show a conspicuous black band (Fig. 312) running across the surface. There are three ocelli on the crown of the head. The characters of the antennæ are shown in Fig. 307, *b*, *b'*; in the latter the first joint is shown to be conspicuously swollen. During life the eyes are of a golden-green colour, and are marked with purplish

spots and streaks, which Austen considers present useful specific characters. When resting, the wings are kept half open.

The females inflict a very severe bite, which causes pain, inflammation, and even at times œdema and fever.

The eggs, which at first are white and later turn brown or black, are deposited upright in a single layer upon leaves and stems of plants near water, in which, or in the mud in the vicinity, the larvæ live. The larvæ and pupæ resemble those of *Tabanus*, but in the larva the last antennal joint is longer than the penultimate, and

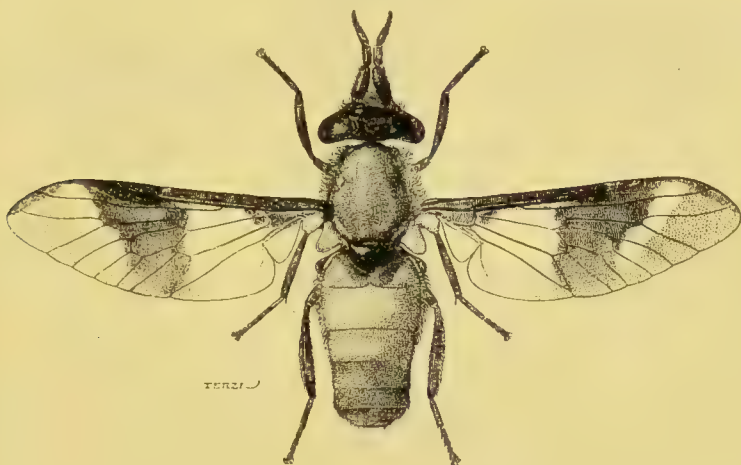


FIG. 312.—CHRYSOPS WELLMANI AUSTEN: FEMALE ($\times 4\frac{1}{2}$).

in the pupæ the antennæ project beyond the head. With regard to pathogenicity, the genus is now known to contain the carrier of *Loa loa*.

As examples the following species may be mentioned: *C. dimidiata* van der Wulp 1885 in West Africa, *C. distinctipennis* Austen 1906 in tropical Africa generally, *C. bicolor* Cordier 1907 in German East Africa, *C. silacea* Austen 1907 in West Africa, *C. magnifica* Austen 1911 in German East Africa, *C. centurionis* Austen 1911 in Uganda, *C. cana* Austen 1911 in East Africa, and *C. dispar* Fabricius in the Oriental region.

Silvius Meigen 1820.

This widely-distributed genus may be exemplified by *Silvius fallax* Austen 1912, found in North-Eastern Rhodesia, and *S. decipiens* Loew. The characters of the antennæ are illustrated in Fig. 307, a, a', and a".

Cadicera Macquart 1854.

Over a dozen species of this genus are now known in the Ethiopian region, of which the following may be mentioned: *C. melanopyga* Wiedemann 1819, *C. chrysostigma* Wiedemann 1828, *C. rubra-*

marginata Macquart 1885, *C. quinquemaculata* Austen 1908, *C. biclausula* Loew 1860, *C. chrysophila* Macquart 1834, *C. distantii* Austen 1912, *C. speciosa* Austen 1912, *C. flavicoma* Austen 1912, and *C.*

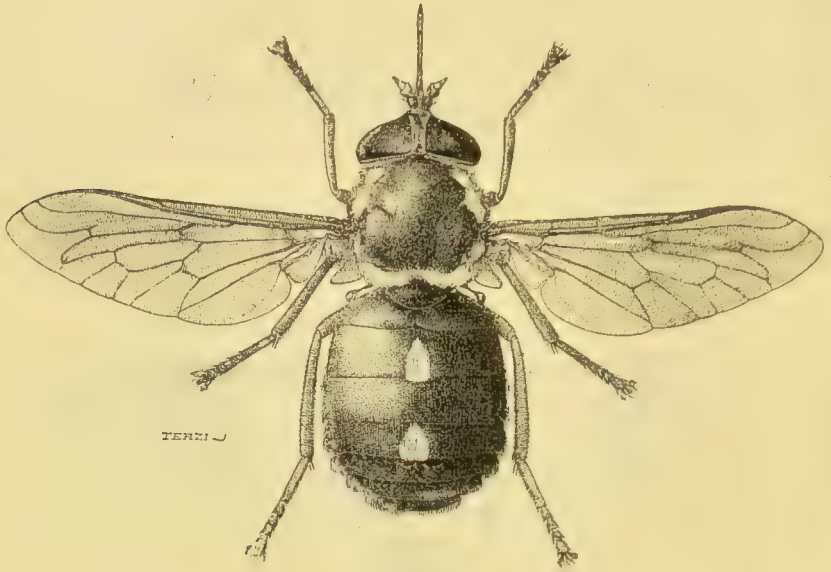


FIG. 313.—CADICERA CHRYSOSTIGMA WIEDEMANN: FEMALE ($\times 2\frac{1}{4}$).

obscura Ricardo 1908. The females have been observed to bite man, but very little is known as to the habits or life-history of the species of this genus.

Pangonia Latreille 1802.

This widely distributed genus used to contain a very large number of species, but has of late been split up into several subgenera, as may be shown in the following table taken from Miss Ricardo's paper in *The Annals and Magazine of Natural History*, Series 7, vol. v., January, 1900:—

I. Wings with first posterior cell closed.

- (a) Eyes bare—*Pangonia* Latreille (subgenus *Pangonia*).
- (b) Eyes hairy—*Pangonia* Latreille (subgenus *Erephopsis* Rondani).

II. Wings with first posterior cell open.

- (a) Eyes hairy—*Diatomineura* Rondani (subgenus *Diatomineura*).
- (b) Eyes bare—*Diatomineura* Rondani (subgenus *Corizoneura* Rondani).

The characteristic of the genus is the extremely long proboscis. The antennal characters of *Pangonia* are shown in Fig. 307, *f*, and of *Erephopsis* at *g* in the same figure. The females are known to be very bloodthirsty and to bite while on the wing, a feat which

they can readily perform owing to the length of the proboscis. At the present time the life-history is unknown, and the pathogenicity is also unknown.

As examples the following may be mentioned : *P. rostrata* Linnæus 1764, *P. varicolor* Wiedemann 1828, *P. gulosa* Wiedemann 1828 in Africa, *P. beckeri* Bezzi 1900 in Somaliland, *P. rüppellii* Jaennicke



FIG. 314.—PANGONIA RÜPPELLII JAENNICKÉ 1867 : FEMALE ($\times 3$).

1867 in the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan and British East Africa, *P. comata* Austen 1912 in East Africa, *Diatomineura suavis* Loew 1858 in South Africa, *D. (Corizoneura) lineatithorax* Austen 1912 in Northern Rhodesia, *D. (Corizoneura) penetrabilis* Austen 1912 in Northern Rhodesia, and *D. (Corizoneura) hasta* Austen 1912 in Portuguese East Africa.

Rhinomyza Wiedemann 1820.

In this genus the first and second segments of the antennæ are short, while the third segment is composed of five rings (Fig. 307, c). Moreover, the third segment has a well-marked tooth. The proboscis is short. *R. fusca* Wiedemann 1820 is known in Java, and *R. denticornis* Wiedemann 1828 in South Africa. *R. costata* Loew, *R. edentula* Wiedemann, and *R. pusilla* Schiner may also be noted, as may *R. umbraticola* Austen 1911 in North-Eastern Rhodesia and Kalanga, while *R. maculata* Surcouf is found in Madagascar.

Other Genera.

Other genera of the Pangoniinae are *Dicrania* Macquart in Brazil, *Apo-campta* Schiner in Australia, *Pityocera* Tos in Central America, *Goniops* Aldrich in North America, *Pelecorhynchus* Macquart in Australia and South America, *Apatolestes* Williston in California, *Dorcalæmus* Austen in South Africa, *Scione* Walker in South America, *Pronopes* Loew in South Africa, *Gastroxides* Saunders in India, and *Subpangonia* Surcouf in West Africa.

FAMILY LEPTIDÆ.

Orthorrhapha brachycera with brownish, medium-sized or long narrow bodies and small heads. The third antennal joint is short, and carries either a terminal brush or bristle. The proboscis resembles that of the Tabanidæ, as does the wing venation.

Three genera are accused of blood-sucking: *Leptis*, *Symphoromyia*, and *Trichopalpus*.

With regard to *Leptis*, the species *L. scolopacea* Linnaeus and *L. strigosa* Meigen are said to bite persons in France, but this is rare. *Symphoromyia* (species uncertain), characterized by a single spur on the hind tibia and a kidney-shaped third antennal joint, is found in California. *Trichopalpus obscurus* Phil. is known in Chili.

The life-history of the blood-sucking species is not known, but the other larvæ of the Leptidæ live upon decaying vegetable matter.

BRACHYCERA HETERODACTYLA.

A. Antenna apparently two-jointed with a three-jointed arista.

Small hunch-backed, quick-running flies—*Phoridæ*.

B. Antenna always three-jointed.

Empodia wanting, vestigial or linear.

I. Radial 4 and 5 separate.

(a) Arista dorsal—*Empidæ* (in part).

(b) Arista terminal.

(1) Front hollowed out between the eyes. Males never holoptic. Proboscis without fleshy labellæ at tip—*Asilidæ*.

(2) Front plane or convex. Males often holoptic. Not more than four posterior cells. Third antennal joint without bristle or style—*Scenopinidæ*.

II. Radial 4 and 5 not separate.

Wings not lanceolate, anal cell short; second basal cell confluent with distal cell. Not brilliantly coloured—*Empidæ* (in part).

The orders Therevidæ, Midasidæ, and Dolichopodidæ, while containing species predatory on other insects, do not appear to attack man.

FAMILY ASILIDÆ.

Orthorrhapha brachycera with long narrow body, short broad head, prominent eyes, third joint of the antennæ simple. Thorax narrow in front. Wings with elongate basal cells, third longitudinal vein bifurcate, two intercalary veins present. Empodium with a horny bristle.

It is not known whether the Asilidæ are really blood-sucking flies or not. It is suspected that they bite in the tropics, but there is no definite information.

FAMILY PHORIDÆ.

Phora femorata occurs occasionally in houses. *Aphiochæta ferruginea* Brunner causes intestinal myiasis.

FAMILY SCENOPINIDÆ.

Scenopinus fenestralis Linnæus is the so-called window fly, which is probably the only household fly which is not injurious to health.

FAMILY EMPIDÆ.

Orthorrhapha brachycera with medium or small bodies and small heads. Antennæ with the first two joints very small and hardly distinct, the third joint annulated, often with terminal bristle. Wings with three large complete basal cells, of which the third is shorter than the second. The posterior basal transverse vein is parallel to the border of the wing. Empodium membranaceous.

It is doubtful whether these insects attack man. As a rule they live on the juices of other insects and plants.

SUBORDER II. CYCLORRHAPHA.

Section 1. Aschiza.—This group includes the family Syrphidæ of which no species is known to bite man.

Section 2. Schizophora.—This group includes the true flies characterized by a distinct frontal lunula and a frontal suture; antennæ with three simple segments, and an arista which is generally dorsal. They may be classified into—

Muscoidea.

Synonym.—*Eumyidea*.

This superfamily is divided into :—

TRIBE 1. MUSCOIDEA ACALYPTRATÆ, without squamæ covering the halteres.

TRIBE 2. MUSCOIDEA CALYPTRATÆ, with squamæ covering the halteres.

MUSCOIDEA ACALYPTRATÆ.

A large number of families are grouped together under this division, of which the most important for our purposes are—

1. Sepsidæ.
2. Oscinidæ.
3. Drosophilidæ.
4. Borboridæ.

These families can be recognized as follows :—

A Subcostal (auxiliary) vein present, Radial 1 (first longitudinal) terminates near or beyond the middle of the wing.

I. With a distinct bristle on each side of the face near the oral margin.

Front never bristly near antennæ; abdomen somewhat elongate, cylindrical, usually narrowed near base. Small black flies found about decaying matter—*Sepsidæ*.

B. Subcostal vein absent, vestigial, or incomplete. Radial 1 usually ends in the costa before the middle of the wing. Head not produced into lateral processes.

I. Hind metatarsi incrassate and usually shorter than the second joint—*Borboridæ*.

II. Hind metatarsi not incrassate and always longer than the following joint.

(a) Discal and basal cells united; anal cell absent; front bare, or at most bristly above; small, usually light-coloured flies—*Oscinidæ*.

(b) Discal and second basal cells separated; anal cell complete though small. Scutellum not elongate and triangular, and without spines on margin. Oral vibrissæ present. Arista long plumose—*Drosophilidæ*.

FAMILY SEPSIDÆ.

The Sepsidæ includes the genus *Piophilæ*, of which the species *Piophilæ casei* Linnæus may cause intestinal myiasis. *Sepsis violacea* is a dung-fly often found in houses.

FAMILY OSCINIDÆ Latreille 1804.

Muscoidea acalyptratæ with front without bristles; crown with only a few short bristles; border of mouth without vibrissæ. Middle tibia with small spurs; costa of wings without bristles. Subcostal vein absent. Anterior of two small basal cells united with discal cell; posterior wanting.

The genera with which we are concerned are—*Microneurum* Becker 1903 and *Hippelates* Loew 1863.

Microneurum Becker 1903.

Microneurum funicola de Meijere 1905.

Synonym.—*Siphonella funicola* de Meijere 1905.

This little fly is the common 'eye-fly' of Ceylon and Java, which causes great annoyance by hovering in front of the eyes, especially when reading or writing indoors.

It is said to suck blood, but our experience is quite opposed to this. It chiefly attacks the eyelids and the ears, and since the experiments performed by Sir Allan Perry and Castellani it has been suspected as a possible carrier of the Koch-Weeks bacillus, which is the cause of severe attacks of conjunctivitis. It objects to the odour of such substances as Odol, which may be used to drive it away.

Hippelates Loew 1863.

Some authorities consider this genus not well founded, and state that a revision of the genera of the Oscinidæ is urgently required.

The species *Hippelates flavipes* Loew, *H. plebejus* Loew, and *H. pusio* Loew, attack men and domestic animals by darting at the eyes and other parts of the body in search of moisture or perspiration. They also attack wounds, sores, scratches, ulcers. Their life-history is unknown. In habits they are diurnal, frequenting open and sunny places. They are found in the southern United States, in Florida, Alabama, and Texas. Veils can be used as a protection, and eucalyptus oil can be sprinkled on the coat collar to drive them away.

FAMILY DROSOPHILIDÆ.

This family includes the species *Drosophila ampelophila* Loew, commonly called the fruit-fly, and found hovering over fruit in houses; and as it is attracted by excrementum it must be regarded as dangerous. There are a large number of species of *Drosophila* known.

FAMILY BORBORIDÆ.

This family includes *Borborus equinus*, a small fly sometimes found in houses.

MUSCOIDEA CALYPTRATÆ.

1. *Æstridæ*.
2. *Sarcophagidæ*.
3. *Muscidæ*.
4. *Anthomyidæ*.

DIAGNOSTIC TABLE.

A. First posterior cell of the wings not widely open.

- I. Antennæ small, more or less hidden in round pits; arista single or plumose; body very hairy—*Æstridæ*.
- II. Antennæ well marked, not hidden; arista more or less plumose; body not very hairy.

- (a) Arista plumose for only half its length, bare in the terminal half, which is hair-like—*Sarcophagidæ*.
- (b) Arista plumose or pectinate along its whole length—*Muscidæ*.

B. First posterior cell widely open—*Anthomyidæ*.

FAMILY ÆSTRIDÆ.

Muscidæ calyptratae with very hairy bodies, which cause them to resemble bees. Antennæ inserted into round pits, with a terminal bristle on the third joint. Mouth-parts rudimentary.

Remarks.—The *Æstridæ* are commonly known as the bot or warble flies, and are of interest because the larvæ become parasitic, either under the skin, in the nasal or pharyngeal cavities, or in the alimentary canal.

Classification.—The genera may be grouped into two subfamilies—
(a) *Æstrinæ* with rudimentary proboscis, including the genera *Gastro-*



FIG. 315.—HYPODERMA BOVIS DE GEER ($\times 2\frac{1}{2}$).

philus, *Æstrus*, *Hypoderma*, etc., and (b) *Cuterebrinæ*, with a well-developed retractile proboscis, including *Dermatobia*, etc. The four genera of interest to us may be recognized as follows:—

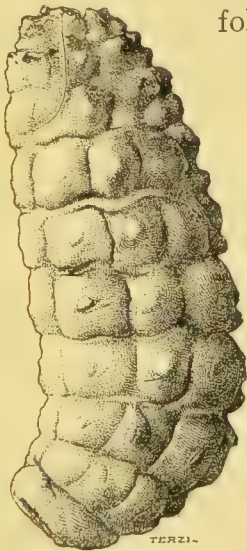


FIG. 316.—LARVA OF
HYPODERMA BOVIS
DE GEER ($\times 2\frac{1}{2}$).

- I. Wing without posterior transverse vein; the media runs towards the posterior border. First posterior cell is partly open. Arista naked—*Gastrophilus* Leach 1817.
- II. Wing with posterior transverse vein. The media at its end is bent towards the radius, and the first posterior cell is either open, partially open, or closed.
 - A. Facial grooves approximated below. First posterior cell closed and petiolate body nearly bare—*Æstrus* Linnæus 1758.
 - B. Facial grooves remote.
 - (a) Proboscis straight, capable of being extended, or entirely rudimentary. Antennal groove with small angular dividing wall. Palpi absent—*Hypoderma* Latreille 1825.

- (b) Proboscis bent and capable of being drawn into a deep cavity on the under surface of the head, and generally hidden therein. Arista with hairs on the upper side. Third antennal joint much longer than the first two—*Dermatobia* Brauer 1860.



FIG. 317.—*ÆSTRUS OVIS* LINNÆUS: FEMALE ($\times 4$).

Hypoderma.—A good example of dermal infection is *Hypoderma bovis* de Geer, which infests cattle. The eggs are laid on the skin of the animal, and are probably transferred to the mouth by licking, whence they pass viâ the œsophagus to the skin, in which they form tumours. It is found in Europe and America, and Peiper has gathered together histories of several cases in which *Hypoderma bovis* and *H. diana* Brauer have occurred in man, but this is very rare. The larva which is commonly found in man belongs to *Dermatobia cyaniventris*, which is described below.

Æstrus.—Rhinal myiasis is exemplified by *Æstrus ovis* Linnæus 1761, which has been found several times in the nasal cavities of man, though usually found in sheep. The egg is laid in the nasal cavity, in which the larvæ live until they become pupæ.

Gastrophilus.—Intestinal myiasis is exemplified by *Gastrophilus equi* Fabricius. The eggs are laid on the skin, often about the knees, and transferred to the mouth, and so to the stomach, by licking. In this organ they live



FIG. 318.—LARVA OF *ÆSTRUS OVIS* LINNÆUS ($\times 4$).

on the secretions and contents; but though they do not bite the mucosa, they cause irritation. In due course they pass out of the



FIG. 319.—*GASTROPHILUS EQUI* FABRICIUS ($\times 3\frac{1}{2}$).

alimentary canal with the fæces, and then proceed to pupation. *G. peccrum* Fabricius 1794 is stated to frequently attack man in Siberia.



FIG. 320.—LARVA OF *GASTROPHILUS EQUI* FABRICIUS ($\times 3$).

Dermatobia Brauer 1860.

Dermatobia cyaniventris Macquart 1843.

Synonyms.—*Cuterebra noxialis* Goudot 1845, *Dermatobia noxialis* Brauer 1860.

There appears to have been great doubt as to whether *D. noxialis* is the same as or different from *D. cyaniventris*. At present, on the strength of R. Blanchard's observations, it is usual to look upon them as the same. The larva of this species is found in the skin of man in tropical America at times, and is known by various local names: 'Ver moyoquil' in Mexico; 'ver macaque' in Cayenne; 'torcel' in Venezuela; 'nuche' in Colombia; 'ura' and 'berne' in Brazil; 'cormollote' and 'anal coshol' in British Guiana; 'nuche' or 'gusano' in New Granada.

The fly, which has a yellowish head and dark blue abdomen, is supposed to lay its eggs on the skin of domestic and wild animals

and man. . The larvæ from these eggs are supposed to enter the skin. The usual areas affected are the head or trunk.

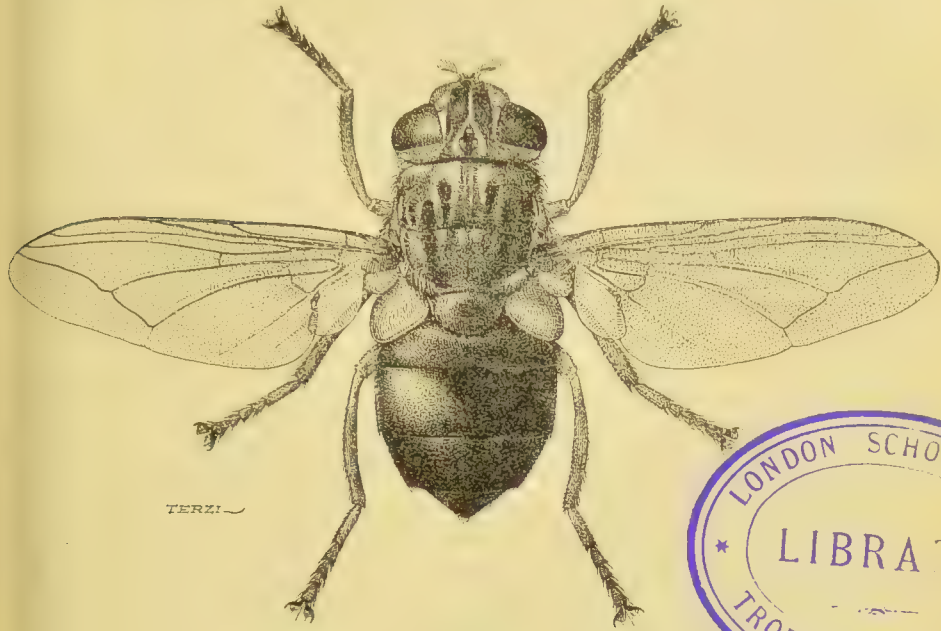


FIG. 321.—*DERMATOBIA CYANIVENTRIS* MACQUART

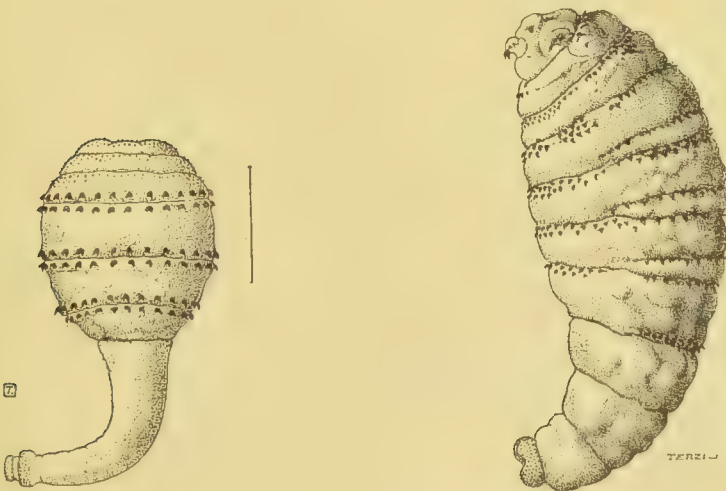
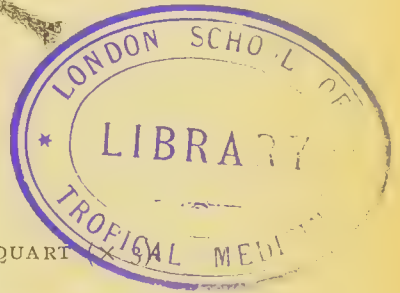


FIG. 322.—YOUNG LARVA OF
DERMATOBIA CYANIVENTRIS
($\times 3$). (After Blanchard.)

FIG. 323.—OLDER LARVA OF
DERMATOBIA CYANIVENTRIS
MACQUART ($\times 2\frac{1}{2}$).

The larva presents two quite different appearances. In the first they are club-shaped, white in colour, with a thick anterior and a thin posterior end. The anterior portion is beset with hooklets,

and has two strong oral hooks. The posterior end carries the stigmata.

If left to themselves, the larvæ will remain in the skin for some time, after which an abscess forms, and they are thrown out, drop on to the ground, and become pupæ, and finally imagos.

We have seen larvæ resembling these in the skins of Europeans in Africa, and similar observations have been made by Plehn, Strahan, Kolb, Nagal, Arnold, and Smith and others, but whether these are *D. cyaniventris* or some other species has not been determined.

Pathogenicity.—They cause pain and itching at the infected spot, with swelling and œdema of the surrounding region, giving rise to a boil-like swelling, rather hard, of a deep red colour, with a central opening.

Treatment.—On inspecting the region, a small opening will be seen, and the larva may be noted, showing its stigmata at times, and at other times disappearing and reappearing like a jack-in-the-box. There is no difficulty in seizing this parasite with a pair of forceps and forcibly removing it, and then treating the wound antiseptically. The Brazilians try to asphyxiate the larva by tobacco-smoke, or apply some animal fat to the opening in the little tumour. The fat is said to act by preventing the larva from breathing and compelling it to leave the tumour. Some authors advise the application of calomel to the opening.

Dermatobia (?) keniaë Kolb.

Kolb described a reddish-brown fly in East Africa under this term.

The fly behaved like *D. cyaniventris* in laying its eggs on the skin of people when bathing. The larvæ entered the skin, forming nodules. The natives called the fly 'ngumba.' It is, however, possible that this is not a true *Dermatobia*, which is a New World genus, but a *Cordylobia*.

FAMILY : SARCOPHAGIDÆ.

Muscidæ calyptratae with large bodies, and antennal bristles feathery at the base, but hair-like and very fine at the tip. Legs stout. First posterior cell closed or only slightly open.

The Sarcophagidæ are the blow-flies, of which *S. carnaria* is common.

Genera.—*Sarcophaga*, *Wohlfahrtia*, *Sarcophila*, *Cynomyia*.

Sarcophaga Meigen 1826.

It is by no means uncommon in the tropics to find ulcers, and especially syphilitic erosions of the nose, infected with larvæ of flies, which may belong to *S. carnaria* Linnæus 1758. The larvæ have also been found in several cavities of the human body, and those of the former in the alimentary canal. The following are causes of

intestinal myiasis: *S. affinis*, *S. carnaria* Linnæus 1761, *S. hæmorrhoidalis* Fallen 1810, *S. hæmatodes*, and *S. chrysostoma* Wiedemann

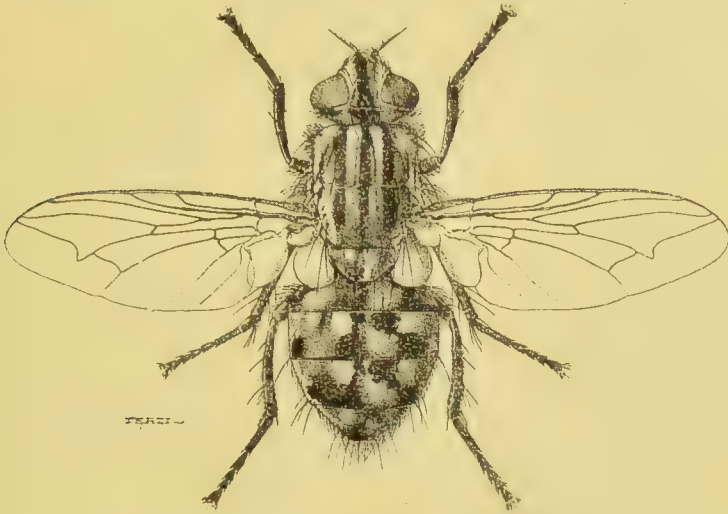


FIG. 324.—*SARCOPHAGA CARNARIA* LINNÆUS: FEMALE ($\times 3$).

1830, *S. lambens*, and *S. ruficornis*, cause cutaneous myiasis in South America. *S. plinthopya* and *S. lambens* have been found in ulcers.

Wohlfahrtia Brauer and Bergenstamm 1889.

The larvæ of *Wohlfahrtia magnifica* Schiner 1862 have been found in cavities in man's body, and also in cattle, sheep, dogs, and domestic fowls.

Sarcophila Rondani 1856.

The larvæ of species of this genus—e.g., *S. mcigeni* Schiner, *S. latifrons* Fall., and *S. ruralis* Fall.—may also be found in ulcers, etc., in Germany, Austria-Hungary, and France.

Cynomyia Robineau-Desvoidy 1830.

Cynomyia mortuorum Linnæus 1761 is believed to infect ulcers with its larvæ.



FIG. 325.—
LARVA OF *SARCOPHAGA* SP.

FAMILY: MUSCIDÆ.

Muscidæ calyptratæ with stout bodies and short thoraces. Arista either entirely plumose or pectinated. The first posterior cell is either only slightly opened, or else closed at the border of the wing.

The Muscidæ include a number of important genera, which may be recognized by the following table :—

A. Proboscis long, adapted for biting—STOMOXYDINÆ.

I. Proboscis partly chitinous, partly fleshy, with large fleshy labellæ—*Philæmatomyia*.

II. Proboscis entirely chitinous with attenuated labellæ.

(a) Arista feathered dorsally only.

(a) Palpi thin, much shorter than the proboscis. Third longitudinal vein with bristles proximally; first posterior cell open—*Stomoxys*.

(b) Palpi thickened, as long as or nearly as long as the proboscis.

(1) Proboscis long and tapering; first posterior cell widely open; third longitudinal vein without bristles—*Lyperosia*.

(2) Proboscis short and stumpy; first posterior cell narrowly open; third longitudinal vein with bristles proximally—*Stygeromyia*.

(c) Palpi strongly built everywhere, not thickened.

Proboscis thin, more than twice the head length, swollen at the base. Arista with many branched hairs. Media (fourth longitudinal) with two sharp bends—*Glossina*.

(β) Arista feathered dorsally and ventrally.

(a) First posterior cell narrowly open; third longitudinal vein without bristles—*Hæmatobosca*.

(b) First posterior cell widely open.

(1) Third longitudinal vein with bristles proximally—*Hæmatobia*.

(2) Third longitudinal vein without bristles proximally—*Bdellolarynx*.

B. Proboscis short, not adapted for biting—MUSCINÆ.

(a) Mid-tibia without bristle on inner side—*Musca*.

(b) Mid-tibia with bristles on inner side.

(1) Thorax and abdomen bluish-black, not lustrous—*Calliphora*.

(2) Thorax and abdomen green or greenish, lustrous.

(a) Scutum longitudinally marked—*Chrysomyia*.

(b) Scutum so not marked.

(a) Thorax metallic green or bluish-green—*Lucilia*.

(β) Thorax brassy green or purplish-blue—*Pycnosoma*.

(3) Thorax and abdomen dirty brownish-yellow.

(a) Eyes wide apart in both sexes, second abdominal segment of the female more than half the length of the abdomen—*Auchmeromyia*.

(b) Eyes of male not wide apart, and second abdominal segment without the above character—*Cordylobia*.

Philæmatomyia Austen 1909.

Stomoxydinæ resembling *Musca domestica* Linnæus, being grey flies with remarkable proboscis. Front in male narrow, its width in centre being from one-eleventh to one-fifteenth of total width of head; width of the front in the female, one-third of total width of head. Proximal portion of proboscis shows a swollen chitinous bulb, distal portion soft and fleshy, and folded back under distal end of bulb when not in use, but when extended there is a tubular extension furnished with a circle of chitinous teeth. Distribution: India, Ceylon (very common), Cyprus, Senegal, and the Congo.

Type Species.—*Philæmatomyia insignis* Austen 1909.

Philæmatomyia insignis Austen 1909.

Smoke grey or yellowish-grey in colour, with dorsum of thorax with four dark longitudinal stripes. The eggs are laid in batches of fifty to sixty in cracks in dry cow's-dung. Egg is 2 to 2.2 millimetres in length by 0.4 millimetre in breadth. Larvæ hatch in eight to nine hours, and when mature measure about 1.25 centimetres. They are bright lemon yellow in colour. They burrow under the ground on the evening of the second day, and pupate. The puparium resembles that of *Musca*, 0.5 centimetre long by 0.18 centimetre broad. It is of a light mahogany colour, and has eleven segments. The life-history may be summarized: Egg-laying, five to ten minutes; egg, eight to ten hours; larvæ, two days; pupa, three and a half to four and a half days; total, six to seven days. The fly is ready to feed eight hours after hatching. Feeds usually on cattle, only occasionally bites man. They pass out a clear watery fluid from the anus while feeding (common in a blood-sucking fly).

Enemies.—Hymenoptera, spiders, tachinids.

Other Species.—*Ph. lineata* Brunetti 1910—synonym: *Pristirrhynchomyia lineata* Brunetti 1910—and *Ph. gurnei* Patton and Cragg 1912, both in India.

STOMOXYDINÆ.

Stomoxys Geoffry 1764.

Arista of three segments, feathered dorsally only; proboscis long, tapering, chitinized in all its extent, non-retractile; palpi slender, very short, less than half the length of the proboscis. Fourth longitudinal vein curved so as to merely narrow the first posterior

cell distally; third longitudinal vein bristly at its proximal end. Front narrower in the male than in the female.

Type Species.—*Stomoxys calcitrans* Linnæus 1758.

The genus *Stomoxys* is cosmopolitan in its distribution. The principal species are—

European Species.—*S. calcitrans* L. 1758.

Asiatic Species.—Twelve species known and two synonyms: *S. brunnipes* Grünberg, *S. calcitrans* L., *S. plurinotata* Bigot, *S. dacnusa* Speiser, *S. indica* Picard, *S. limbata* Austen, *S. nigra* Macquart, *S. bengalensis* Picard, *S. oblongopunctata* Brunetti, *S. prattii* Summers, *S. pulla* Austen, *S. siliens* Rondani, *S. triangularis* Brunetti.

African Species.—Fourteen species and four probable synonyms are known: *S. calcitrans* L. (*S. korogwensis* Grünberg), *S. sitiens* Rondani, *S. griseiceps* Becker, *S. nigra* Macquart (*S. glauca* Grünberg and *S. lafonti* Picard), *S. bouvieri* var. *clara* Rouband, *S. inornata* Grünberg, *S. omega* Newstead, *S. varipes* Bezzi, *S. intermedia* Roubaud, *S. bouffardi* Picard, *S. bilineata* Grünberg, *S. brunnipes* Grünberg (*S. stellata* Grünberg), *S. tæniatus* Bigot, *S. ochrosoma* Speiser.

American Species.—*S. calcitrans* L.

Australian Species.—*S. calcitrans* L.

For the methods of diagnosis of these species, *vide* Summers, L. M. (1912), *Journal of London School of Tropical Medicine*, July, p. 184; London.

The following table, modified from Grünberg, gives the diagnosis of a few of the species:

A. Legs entirely yellow. Wings yellowish—*S. tæniatus* Bigot 1887.

B. Legs either entirely black or largely black or blackish-brown. Wings clear or darkish coloured.

I. Venter brilliantly white—*S. sitiens* Rondani 1873.

II. Venter pale dusky brown, with characteristic omega mark on the thorax—*S. omega* Newstead 1907.

III. Venter grey or yellow.

1. Thorax without clear black stripes. Hinder part black without any markings—*S. inornata* Grünberg 1906.

2. Thorax with clear black stripes. Abdomen with regular dark marks or spots.

(a) Knee, tibia, and tarsus—at all events, on the two anterior pairs of legs—entirely brown.

(1) Tibia and tarsus on the anterior and middle legs light brown, on the hind legs dark brown. Thorax with two small brown longitudinal median lines—*S. bilineata* Grünberg 1906.

(2) Tibia and tarsus brown on all three legs. Thorax with broad black longitudinal stripes.

Wings blackish, head and thorax brown-yellow—*S. brunnipes* Grünberg 1906.

Wings glassy, head and thorax grey—*S. stellata* Grünberg 1906.

(b) Legs black, with light brown knees or decidedly dark brown spots.

(1) Wing brushes yellowish-brown, with black tips. Abdomen with dark middle longitudinal line. Second and third segments with dark anterior and posterior borders—*S. glauca* Grünberg 1906.

- (2) Wing brushes black. Abdomen grey. Both middle segments with regularly arranged dark spots without dark median longitudinal line.

Second and third abdominal segments with one middle basal, one side apical dark spot, and dark anterior border, with which the basal spot unites—*S. korogwensis* Grünberg 1906.

Second and third abdominal segments with the same dark spots, but without anterior border-lines—*S. calcitrans* Linnæus 1761.

***Stomoxys calcitrans* Linnæus 1758.**

S. calcitrans is the common stable-fly, found in houses, stables, and in the open near cattle. It bites all classes of mammals, and in so doing is suspected of spreading trypanosomes, especially



FIG. 326.—*STOMOXYS CALCITRANS*: FEMALE.

T. evansi. Manders considered *S. nigra* Macquart 1850 to be the cause of the spread of surra in Mauritius.

It is rather like the common house-fly, but is easily recognized by the head being raised in the resting position, by the projecting proboscis, and by the closed wings, touching one another at their bases, and diverging behind.

Morphology.—The mouth-parts consist of a proboscis, composed of rostrum, haustellum, and labellæ, which are bent posteriorly, forming an elbow-shaped joint. The posterior portion can be retracted or projected forwards, and carries the chitinous fulcrum of the pharyngeal wall, the maxillæ, and their palps. It is cone-shaped, and is called the rostrum.

The structure of the haustellum, or proboscis proper, is very complex. It consists essentially of a labrum, hypopharynx, and labium. The labrum is a sharp-pointed stylet, which near its apex bears a ventral ridge with four

sensory hairs. Posteriorly it is attached to the head, where it forms a chitinous projection. It is horseshoe-shaped on transverse section, the ventral opening being closed by the hypopharynx, while laterally its walls, which expand and enclose a cavity containing muscles, articulate with the labium, thus keeping the hypopharynx in its place. The hypopharynx, which contains the salivary tube, starts from the labium and runs forwards, expanding laterally and closing in the labial, pharyngeal, or blood-tube mentioned above. Its lateral expansions contain a cavity. At its tip it appears to be membranous,

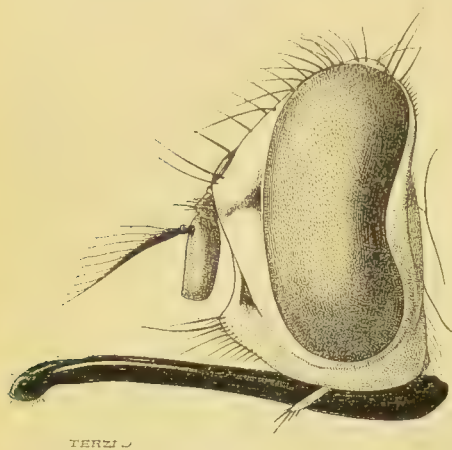


FIG. 327.—HEAD OF *STOMOXYS CALCITRANS*: FEMALE.

which Stephens and Newstead think by its flaccid condition prevents ingress of fluid during blood-sucking, while freely permitting the egress of saliva. The labium is stout and thick, with a swollen basal portion, gradually tapering towards the proximal and distal extremities, but less so basally. Posteriorly it encloses the labrum and hypopharynx, which it carries on a sclerite, which farther forwards forms the boundary of the labial gutter, and is joined dorsally by another dorsal hooked sclerite. These sclerites stop at the base of the labellæ. Ventral to the dorsal sclerites are two ventral sclerites, which anteriorly articulate with a transverse forked sclerite whose arms run forwards. To these arms the tendons of longitudinal muscles are attached, which are capable of rotating them, causing the

eversion of the labellæ. Farther forward the two labellæ are strengthened internally by dorsal and ventral sclerites, while a pear-shaped axial apophysis projects forwards freely from the labium.

The ventral plate is obliquely placed, and carries—(1) five teeth; (2) nine sets of petiolated blades; (3) six sets of rod-like hairs; (4) five sets of operculate hairs; (5) six sets of bifurcated hairs; (6) an anterior dorsal fringe of hairs; (7) a posterior ventral set of hairs; (8) ventral phalanges or lips with ventral hairs; (9) dorsal external set of hairs; and (10) latero-external set of hairs.

Internal Anatomy.—The pharyngeal tube leads into the pharynx, whose wall is formed by the chitinous fulcrum. The œsophagus, at first flattened, afterwards cylindrical, passes into the thorax and opens into the ventral surface of the proventriculus. At this point it is joined by the duct from the crop or sucking-stomach, which is a large hollow blood-reservoir lying in the abdomen. The chilific ventricle has three coils. The usual Malpighian tubules, small and large intestine, and rectum are present. The salivary glands resemble those of *Musca* and *Glossina*.

Method of Biting.—*Stomoxys* carefully inspects the skin, and having selected a spot, everts the labellæ, and by a rotatory motion cuts a hole through the epidermis by means of its teeth, and then, inserting the proboscis into the wound, sucks the blood.

Life-History.—The life-history has recently been studied by Newstead, who finds that the incubation period of the egg is two to three days, the life of the larva fourteen to twenty-one days, the pupal stage nine to thirteen days, making the total life-cycle twenty-five to thirty-seven days, but this may be considerably prolonged by the incubation and larval stages being lengthened in the absence of moisture, or the presence of a low temperature.

The eggs are 1 millimetre in length, white, turning later to a cream colour; coriaceous and reticulated; curved on one side and straight on the other, where there is a broad deep groove, wider anteriorly, where the larva escapes. The number of eggs varies from forty-eight to seventy-one, and they are laid in warm dung and fermenting grass.

The larva is 11 millimetres long, and tapering, yellowish in colour, with blackish mouth-parts. The segmentation is not well marked. The head has two large diverging processes, which carry the four-jointed antennæ. The mouth is armed with a hook-like mandible, which carries a ventral tooth, and is attached by means of a hypostomal sclerite to two large cephalo-pharyngeal sclerites, in front of the upper arms of which is a small perforated sclerite. The posterior stigmata are two in number. The mouth-hook is used for locomotion.

Pupation is brought about in two hours by the larva shortening itself and becoming barrel-shaped, the colour turning to red. The pupa measures 5 to 5.5 millimetres in length, and possesses eleven visible segments. In a few days the pupal skin is split along lateral and median lines anteriorly, and at the fourth segment transversely, and the imago escapes.

Lyperosia Rondani 1862.

Synonym.—*Glossinella* Grünberg 1906.

Stomoxydinæ resembling *Stomoxys*, but with palpi as long as the long slender proboscis, around which, as they are broad, they form almost a sheath, with no bristles on the third longitudinal vein. Distribution: Europe, Asia, Africa, North America, and Australia.

Type.—*Lyperosia irritans* Linnæus 1761.

They are dirty brown or dirty yellowish-grey, very small blood-sucking flies, with inconspicuous markings, and usually only attack animals, and do not come into houses.

European Species.—*L. irritans* L. 1587, *L. titillans* Bezzi 1911.

Asiatic Species.—*L. minuta* Bezzi 1892, *L. schillingsi* Grünberg 1906, *L. exigua* de Meijere 1903, *L. flavoherta* Brunetti 1910, *L. rufipalpis* Becker 1910 (probably = *Stygeromyia maculosa* Austen 1907).

African Species.—*L. minuta* Bezzi 1892, *L. longipalpis* Roubaud 1906 (= *L. pallidipes* Roubaud 1907), *L. schillingsi* Grünberg 1906 (= *St. Maculosa* ?), *L. potans* Bezzi 1980, *L. punctigera* Austen 1909, *L. exigua* (Meijere 1903), *L. thirouxi* Roubaud 1903.

American Species.—*L. irritans* L. 1758, *L. alcis* Snow 1891 (synonym: *Hæmatobia alcis* Snow 1891).

Australian Species.—*L. exigua* Meijere 1903.

(For details see Summer's paper, *vide infra*.)

Stygeromyia Austen 1907.

Stomoxydinæ with general appearance and body like *Stomoxys*, proboscis and palpi like *Hæmatobia*, arista feathered dorsally only. Head flattened from front to rear; proboscis short, stout, shiny, chitinous, not tapering; palpi as long as the proboscis; clavate at

tips, curving upwards. Cell opening as in *Stomoxys*. Apical portion of fourth vein straight beyond bend—*i.e.*, not bent inwards as in *Stomoxys* and *Hæmatobia*. Distribution : Africa and Southern Arabia.

Type.—*Stygeromyia maculosa* Austen 1907.

Stygeromyia sanguinaria Austen 1909 is stated by Yale Massey to be a blood-sucker in the Congo Free State, while *S. maculosa* Austen 1907, found in Little Aden, is inferred to be also a blood-sucker, and *S. woosnami* Austen 1912 in East Africa.

Glossina Wiedemann 1830.

Synonym.—*Nemorhina* Robineau-Desvoidy 1830.

Narrow bodies, elongate, greyish-brown or yellowish-brown, dull-coloured flies, with the wings closed flat over one another, and



FIG. 328.—*GLOSSINA PALPALIS* : FEMALE.

projecting considerably beyond the abdomen when at rest, with an anterior projecting proboscis, beyond which the palpi slightly extend, and in which they are ensheathed. Base of proboscis bulbous.

This is the genus of the tsetse-flies, a name probably derived from the noise which they make when flying, and now used in a generic sense. They were first named by Wiedemann from *G. longipalpis*, brought from Sierra Leone by Adam Afzelius, and in the same year Robineau-Desvoidy named another species from the Congo

Nemorhina palpalis. Their bites have been long known to be dangerous to animals, but it was not till Bruce showed that they were the spreaders of *Trypanosoma brucei* and the cause of the disease nagana in horses, etc., that they received much attention. The interest in them became vastly greater when in 1903 Bruce and Nabarro showed that they were the spreaders of *T. gambiense*, and especially when Kleine showed that the transmission was not mechanical.

The genus is confined to tropical Africa and Arabia.

Morphology.—The points in the morphology to which attention should be paid are as follows:—

The eyes are large and bare, and between them the vertex is depressed, and at its back carries ocelli. In front a deep facial pit



FIG. 329.—HEAD OF A GLOSSINA.

This figure shows the proboscis being lowered previously to piercing the skin to suck blood.

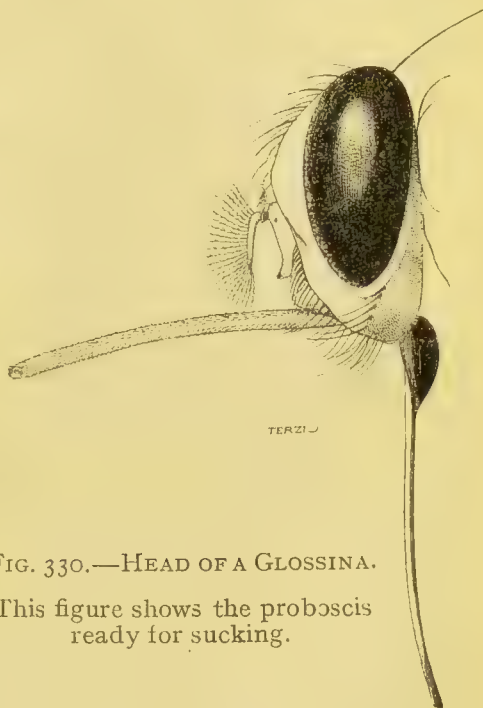


FIG. 330.—HEAD OF A GLOSSINA.

This figure shows the proboscis ready for sucking.

is separated by a transverse impression from the gena. The proboscis projects horizontally forwards, while its bulbous posterior portion is enclosed in a fold of skin. Palpi are rod-like, and clothed with short black hairs, and enclose the proboscis. The antennæ are three-jointed, the first two being small and the third large, with its anterior external angle prominent and directed forwards and outwards. At its base is attached a two-jointed arista, of which the first segment is small, and the second long and tapering, bearing some twenty-two fine, curving, branched hairs on its upper surface only. Bristles are frontal, vertical, ocellar, and post-medial.

With regard to the thorax, the most important feature is the wing, which is brownish, with a peculiar venation. The costal vein is

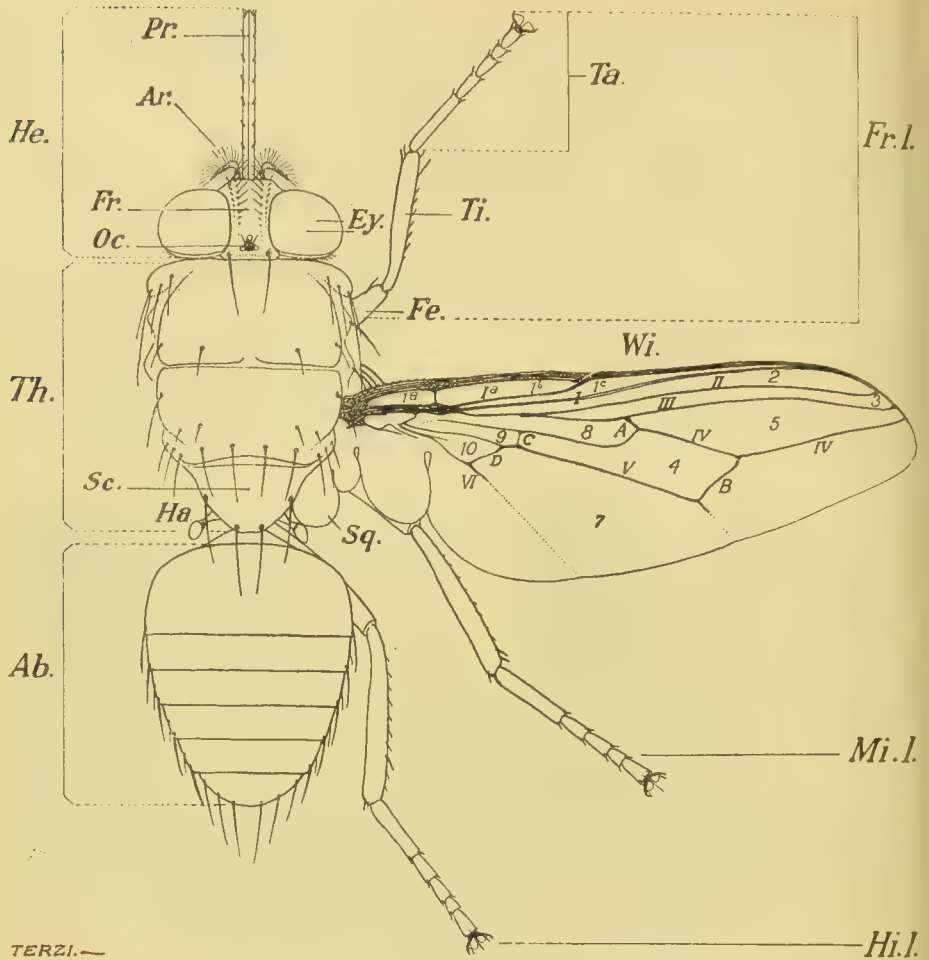


FIG. 331.—DIAGRAM OF A TSETSE-FLY.

(Modified after Austen, from 'Monograph of Tsetse-Flies.')

He., head; *Th.*, thorax; *Ab.*, abdomen; *Fr. l.*, front leg; *Mi. l.*, middle leg; *Hi. l.*, hind-leg; *Pr.*, proboscis ensheathed by the palpi; *Ar.*, arista; *Fr.*, frons; *Oc.*, occiput; *Ey.*, eye; *Sc.*, scutellum; *Ha.*, haltere; *Sq.*, squama; *Wi.*, wing; *Fe.*, femur; *Ti.*, tibia; *Ta.*, tarsus.

Venation of Wing.—*Ia*, Subcostal or auxiliary vein; *1a*, *1b*, two portions of the costal cell divided by the humeral transverse vein; *1c*, subcostal cell; *I*, radius 1, or first longitudinal; *2*, marginal cell; *II*, radius 2 and 3, or second longitudinal; *3*, submarginal cell; *III*, radius 4 and 5, or third longitudinal; *8*, first basal cell; *5*, first posterior cell; *A*, anterior transverse vein; *IV*, media or fourth longitudinal; *9*, posterior basal cell; *4*, discoidal cell, external to which is the second posterior cell, without a number; *B*, posterior transverse vein; *C*, anterior basal vein; *V*, cubitus 1 and 2, or fifth longitudinal; *D*, posterior basal transverse vein; *10*, posterior basal cell; *7*, third posterior cell; *VI*, anal or sixth longitudinal.

well marked, and the subcostal vein (auxiliary) joins it about the junction of the inner with the outer third in the extended position of the wing, thus enclosing the costal cell, which is divided into two

portions by the humeral transverse vein. The radius 1 (first longitudinal) curves forwards, joining the costa about the junction of the inner two-thirds with the outer one-third, thus forming a very narrow subcostal cell. The radius 2 and 3 (second longitudinal) also curves forwards, meeting the costal margin before the tip of the wing is reached, as does the radius 4 and 5 (third longitudinal); hence the marginal and submarginal cells are long and narrow. The media (fourth longitudinal) is highly characteristic. It starts separately from the preceding, and running outwards, after meeting with the anterior basal vein, curves forwards to join with the anterior transverse vein, when it bends at right angles, turning backwards and outwards to join with the posterior transverse vein, when it again turns and runs obliquely forwards to join the costal vein just in front of the tip of the wing. Between it and the radius 4 and 5 (third longitudinal) lie internally the first (anterior) basal cell, and externally the first posterior cell, separated by the anterior transverse vein, which is very oblique. The cubitus 1 and 2 (fifth longitudinal) joins the anterior basal vein, marking out the posterior basal cell, and then runs forwards to join the posterior transverse vein, marking out the discoidal cell, which is hatchet-shaped, with the handle running up to the anterior basal transverse vein. After this the vein turns backwards to join the margin of the wing, delineating the large second posterior cell. The anal (sixth longitudinal) is very short, being unchitinized after meeting with the posterior transverse basal vein, with which it marks out the posterior basal cell. The third posterior cell is, however, shown by its unchitinized trace. The posterior part of the wing shows an incrassation corresponding to anal 2 and 3.

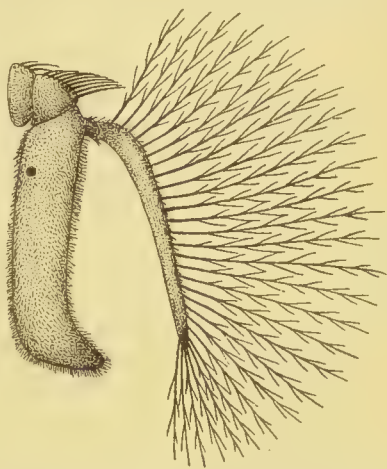


FIG. 332.—ANTENNA OF A GLOSSINA, SHOWING THE ARISTA.

(After Austen, from 'Tsetse-Flies.')

The legs are simple, rather long, with long claws and pulvilli.

The abdomen is flattened, tapering to the apex, and clothed with short black hairs. The male genitalia are characteristic. The ventral plate of the sixth segment carries a patch of dark hairs on each side of the middle line, behind which is the hypopygium, which is oval, tumid, and marked by a vulviform median groove, the anus, running from its anterior margin backwards to beyond the middle.

The proboscis shows the usual rostrum or conical head projection, the haustellum, or proboscis proper, and the labellæ.

The proboscis proper is composed of labrum, hypopharynx, and labium. The labrum arises from the basal bulb of the proboscis in

the form of a tube, which is continuous posteriorly with the pharynx, while anteriorly it runs forwards, forming the dorsal wall of the proboscis. In this position it articulates by means of interlocking teeth with the labium, while, opening ventrally, it articulates with the hypopharynx, which closes the potential ventral opening. Farther forwards it separates from the labium, and ends in a point. The tube composed by the hypopharynx and the labrum is the

afferent blood or pharyngeal tube. The hypopharynx starts below the pharynx surrounding the salivary efferent duct, and pierces the bulb of the proboscis, appearing on its dorsal aspect. Farther forward it lies in a groove on the labium, articulating laterally with the labrum. Finally it ends as a delicate chitinous tube just posterior to the labellæ. Its canal is the salivary tube, or hypopharyngeal canal.

The labium, or second maxilla, starts from the ventral area of the head, and is first swollen to form the bulb. Anteriorly it is grooved dorsally to hold the hypopharynx and the labrum, while farther anteriorly it ends in the labellæ. These structures (labellæ) are joined together in the ventral line, except anteriorly, where there is a V-shaped notch, while dorsally they possess teeth which interlock.

In the ventral line the chitinous floor of the labium is prolonged forwards in the form of a fork, in front of which is a membranous area, anteriorly to which the inner wall of each labellum becomes divided into dorsal, median, and ventral segments. Each segment is armed with a series of about ten rasps, composed of some thirty minute bars, in front of which are two pairs of teeth. Between the bases of the anterior pairs of teeth there projects a fan-shaped mass of spine-like scales.

The segments are capable of eversion, when the muscles pull backwards the external walls of the labellæ. In this way the teeth

would be brought in contact with the skin, and the wound necessary for blood-sucking made, probably by rotatory movements.

Internal Anatomy.—The internal anatomy has been carefully studied by Minchin, and does not materially differ from that of *Stomoxys*.

The pharyngeal tube opens into the pharynx, which is situated mainly in the rostrum. Its walls are strongly chitinized, forming

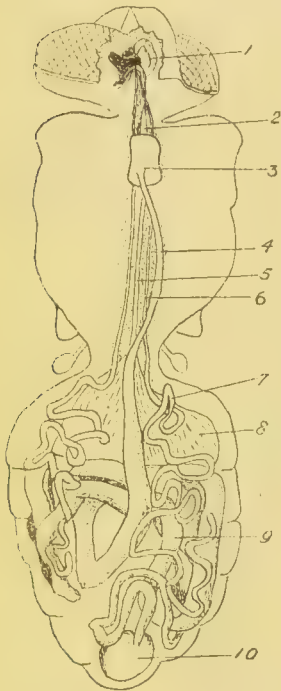


FIG. 333.—ANATOMY OF A TSETSE-FLY.

(After Minchin, from Reports of the Royal Society.)

1, Pharynx; 2, oesophagus; 3, proventriculus; 4, thoracic intestine; 5, duct of sucking-stomach; 6, salivary duct; 7, salivary gland; 8, sucking-stomach; 9, abdominal intestine; 10, rectum.

the fulcrum. The œsophagus runs upwards and then backwards to open into the proventriculus, and to be continuous viâ a long ventral duct, with the crop, which lies in the first two segments of the abdomen. The chylic ventricle is narrow at first in the thorax, but becomes wider in the abdomen, where it coils several times. There are the usual ileum, colon, rectum, and Malpighian tubules.

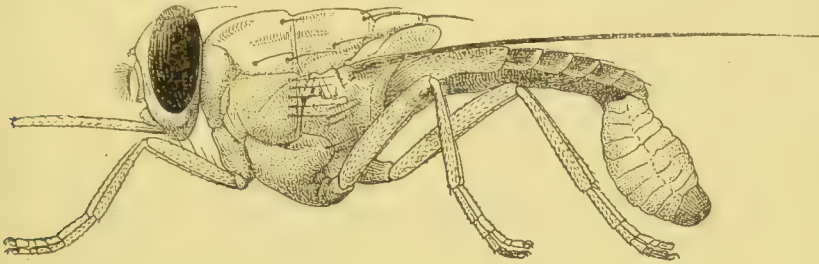


FIG. 334.—A GLOSSINA IN THE ACT OF GIVING BIRTH TO A LARVA.
(Modified after Newstead.)

The salivary glands are two long coiled tubes lying first in the abdomen, and then passing into the thorax, and probably opening finally on the hypopharynx, though this has not yet been worked out.

Life-History.—The species of *Glossina* live in jungles or bush, along the banks of streams or lakes. They appear to live principally upon the blood derived from big game, but Koch believes that *G. palpalis* lives on that of crocodiles, and Hodges, on that of hippopotami. According to Kinghorn, copulation in *G. morsitans* lasts for several hours. The female in due course produces a single larva, and may produce a second after fourteen to fifteen days. At the completion of intra-uterine life the larva almost completely fills the abdomen of the mother. Its extrusion takes place very rapidly, and it commences to crawl at once. The larvæ, which are yellow-coloured, are to be found as a rule near the roots of banana-trees. These larvæ are composed of twelve segments, the anterior of which carries the two minute mouth-hooks, and the posterior a dark hood or anal segment. The larvæ retire to some hole, and in a few hours become jet-black pupæ, from which the fully developed insects issue in about six weeks.

The pupa is 5.53 (5 to 6) millimetres long, and 3.2 (3 to 3.75) broad, according to an average of twenty measurements by Kinghorn, with twelve segments. The anterior four show the longitudinal seam which bifurcates at the fourth segment, forming an opening through which the imago escapes. The first segment carries the mouth and the twelfth two lateral

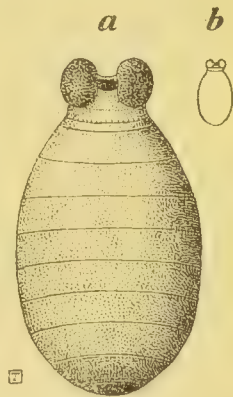


FIG. 335.—PUPA OF A TSETSE-FLY.

(After Austen, from 'Tsetse-Flies.')

a, Magnified; *b*, natural size.

tumid, tuberculated lips, connected by dorsal and ventral ridges enclosing a pit, in which the posterior stigmata can be seen.

The larvæ of *G. palpalis* measure 4·5 by 1·75 millimetres, and the pupæ 5 to 5·75 by 3 millimetres.

According to Kinghorn, forty-seven to fifty-three days elapse from the birth of the larva to the escape of the imago in *G. morsitans*.

Bionomics.—As *G. palpalis* is most probably the sole means of propagation of human trypanosomiasis, it is important to have some idea of what is known as to its bionomics, which have been carefully studied by Hodges and Bagshawe.

The main resort of the fly is to be found in bush near water, especially in the undergrowth composed of shrubs, bushes, vines, creepers, tall grass, cane-break tangle, and herbaceous plants. Tall trees alone will not afford the protection necessary for the fly unless they overhang the water, or their foliage reaches so low as to mix with the undergrowth.

The fly is, however, not met with behind a wide strip of papyrus, though it may be found on its water edge. This is explained by Bagshawe on the grounds that papyrus grows best in shallow water, which means that the ground is swampy, a condition which prevents the fly from depositing its larvæ. From a resort such as this a fly can travel for feeding purposes, or be carried by attraction or artificial means. It appears probable from Bagshawe's experiments that a single flight will not reach 70 to 80 yards, but flies can be carried to almost any distance by the agency of boats and floating islands of papyrus. Human traffic also increases the dissemination of the fly, as it is apt to pursue human beings for considerable distances.

Female flies appear to travel farther in search of food than males, probably because they more urgently require it. Bagshawe suggests that this can be made use of in finding the breeding-grounds, where he says plenty of males as well as females are to be found, while females alone may be met with at some distance therefrom. The feeding range, therefore, varies considerably.

Flies bite mostly during the middle part of the day, and not so much at dawn or in the late afternoon.

According to Hodges, the chief conditions required for a breeding-ground are loose, dry, friable earth, situate not more than 20 yards away from the high-water mark of a stream, and protected from sun and rain by the shade of trees and undergrowth.

Such conditions are found on steep banks along lakes, rivers, watercourses, etc., and the larvæ are to be looked for at the bases of shrubs and trees, in the undergrowth, and in earth-filled hollows in tree-trunks and branches at no great distance from the ground.

Bagshawe found the larvæ principally at the roots of bananas with scrub and water in the immediate neighbourhood; at the roots of a shrub called *Allophyllus*, belonging to the Sapindaceæ, especially in the dry season; at the roots of large figs and of the wild date-

palm (*Phoenix reclinata*) ; while he also found a few pupæ in dry earth sheltered by overhanging rocks on wooded banks.

The breeding season appears to be at the commencement of the rains, as Bagshawe generally found empty pupal cases in the dry season.

The pupæ apparently have their enemies which eat them. These are minute winged insects probably belonging to the Chalcididæ, though this is not definitely known.

Pathogenicity.—*Glossina palpalis* is the carrier of *Trypanosoma gambiense*, and *G. morsitans* of *T. rhodesiense*, both of which are the causes of sleeping sickness in Africa.

Classification.—Newstead in 1911 revised the genus *Glossina*, and published a classification based on the male genital armature. We have, however, adopted Austen's revised classification in 1911, which, slightly modified, is as follows :

A. Hind tarsi entirely dark (female of *Glossina tachinoides*—basal half of first and extreme bases of succeeding joints pale, ***Glossina palpalis* group.**

I. Ground colour of abdomen ochraceous buff, with interrupted dark brown deep transverse bands and sharply defined pale hind borders to segments. A very conspicuous square or oblong pale area in the centre of the second segment. Small species : Body length 7 millimetres—*G. tachinoides* Westwood 1850.

II. Abdomen not so marked.

1. Third joint of the antenna dusky brown to cinereous black.

(a) Dorsum of abdomen dark sepia brown, median paler area on second segment, broad, more or less quadrate or irregular, hypopygium of male buff or ochraceous buff—*G. caliginea* Austen 1911.

(b) Dorsum of abdomen blackish-brown, median paler area triangular, hypopygium of male grey—*G. palpalis* Robineau-Desvoidy 1830.

2. Third joint of antenna pale—*G. pallicera* Bigot 1891.

B. Hind tarsi not entirely dark (except in *G. austeni*).

I. Upper surface of abdomen with pale ground colour, drab grey, buff, or ochraceous buff, marked with very conspicuous dark brown or clove brown transverse bands interrupted in the middle line—***Glossina morsitans* group.**

(a) Last two joints of front and middle tarsi with sharply defined dark brown or black tips.

(1) Large species : Wide head, darker anteriorly ; abdominal bands deep—*G. longipalpis* Wiedemann 1830.

(2) Smaller species : Narrower head—*G. morsitans* Westwood 1850.

(b) Last two joints of fore and middle tarsi very narrowly darker, and sometimes the colour is absent in the former—*G. austeni* Newstead 1912.

(c) Last two joints of fore and middle tarsi pale. Body length 8 to 10 millimetres—*G. pallidipes* Austen 1903.

II. Upper surface of abdomen not so banded.

(a) Wings dull sepia coloured, palpi (except in *G. tabaniformis*) long and slender—***Glossina fusca* group.**

1. Third joint of antenna fringed anteriorly and posteriorly with hairs conspicuous when magnified 15 diameters.

- (a) Longest hairs in front of third joint equal in length from one-quarter to one-third of width of third joint; palpi moderately long—*G. tabaniformis* Westwood 1850.
- (β) Longest hairs in front of third joint equal in length from one-half to one-third of width of third joint; palpi noticeably long and slender—*G. nigrofusca* Newstead 1910.
- 2. Third joint antennæ fringed anteriorly with five short hairs, scarcely noticeable when magnified 15 diameters.
 - (a) Pleura drab grey, hind coxæ buff or greyish-buff—*G. fusca* Walker 1849.
 - (β) Pleura dark grey, hind coxæ mouse grey—*G. fuscipleuris* Austen 1911.
- (b) Wings pale, palpi short—**Glossina brevipalpis group.**
 - (1) Dorsum of thorax with four sharply defined dark brown oval or elongate spots, arranged in a parallelogram, two in front and two behind the transverse suture proboscis bulb, with brown or dark brown tip—*G. longipennis* Corti 1895.
 - (2) Dorsum of thorax without such spots, and proboscis bulb not brown or dark brown at the tip.
 - (i.) Wings with upper thickened portion of anterior transverse vein dark and distinct—*G. brevipalpis* Newstead 1910.
 - (ii.) Wings with anterior transverse vein — *G. medicorum* Austen 1911.

Recently Grünberg has described a new species, *G. ziemannii* Grünberg 1912, but its position at present is not quite certain.

Hæmatobosca Bezzi 1911.

Stomoxydinae resembling *Hæmatobia*, but with no bristles on the first and third longitudinal veins, and with fourth longitudinal vein almost as strongly bent as in *Musca*; therefore first posterior cell only very narrowly opens. Distribution: Southern Europe and China.

Type.—*Hæmatobosca atripalpis* Bezzi 1895.

European Species.—*H. atripalpis* Bezzi 1895.

Asiatic Species.—*H. perturbans* Bezzi 1907, found at Tang-San, China.

Hæmatobia Robineau-Desvoidy 1830.

Synonym.—*Siphona* Meigen 1824.

Stomoxydinae resembling *Stomoxys*, but with spatulate maxillary palps nearly as long as the proboscis; arista feathered dorsally and ventrally, and third longitudinal vein bristly proximally. Body robust, head broad and squat. Distribution: Europe, India, etc.

Type.—*Hæmatobia stimulans* Meigen 1824.

European Species.—*H. stimulans* Meigen.

Asiatic Species.—*H. sanguisugeus* Austen 1909, *H. rufipes* Brunetti 1910 in India.

Bdellolarynx Austen 1909.

Flies like *Hæmatobia*, but without sexual colour dimorphism. Arista with long hairs above and with six fairly long hairs below. No bristles on first and third longitudinal veins.

B. sanguinolentus Austen 1909 is a blood-sucker found in India and Ceylon.

MUSCINÆ.

Musca Linnæus 1761.**Musca domestica** Linnæus 1761.

Musca: face in its lower part silky yellow, shot with blackish-brown. Median stripe black; antennæ brown; palpi black.

Thorax dusty grey, with four equally broad longitudinal stripes.



FIG. 336.—*MUSCA DOMESTICA* LINNÆUS (× 6).

Scutellum grey, with black sides. Wings tinged pale grey with yellowish base. Legs blackish-brown. Abdomen yellowish, with dorsal blackish-brown line, except the last segment, which is entirely blackish-brown. Eyes separated by a wide frontal stripe in the female, and near together in the male. Length, 6 to 7 millimetres; wing breadth, 13 to 15 millimetres.

Remarks.—It has been known for many years that flies can carry micro-organisms on their legs. In 1888 Celli proved that flies, fed upon pure cultures of typhoid bacilli, were able to transmit virulent bacilli with their excrement. Early observations also proved that flies were capable of transmitting cholera. In the Spanish-American War, in the Army Concentration Camps of 1898, flies were found to be spreaders of typhoid. Lime was

sprinkled on the fæcal pits, and the flies on the soldiers' mess-table were noticed to have their legs whitened with the lime.

The flies which breed in human excrement in America are: (1) *Musca domestica*, house-fly; (2) *Drosophila ampelophila*, fruit-fly; (3) *Fannia canicularis*, little house-fly; (4) *F. brevis*, little house-fly; (5) *Stomoxys calcitrans*, stable-fly; (6) *Phora femorata*; (7) *Sarcophaga trivialis*.

Of these the most common are the house and the stable flies. The house-fly is 98 per cent. of all flies infesting houses.

In the Boer War of 1900-02 flies were held to be great spreaders of typhoid. In 1902 a paper, entitled 'An Inquiry into the Influence

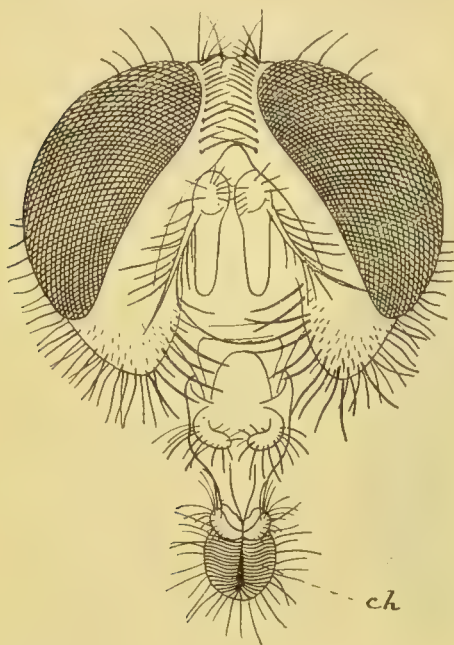


FIG. 337.—HEAD OF *MUSCA DOMESTICA* LINNÆUS: FEMALE.

(After C. J. Martin.)

ch., Pseudo-tracheæ.



FIG. 338.—LEG OF *MUSCA DOMESTICA*.

(After C. J. Martin.)

of Soil, Fabrics, and Flies in the Dissemination of Enteric Infection,' was published by Firth and Horrocks in the *British Medical Journal*, and they showed that the ordinary house-fly (*Musca domestica*) can convey enteric infective matter from excreta or polluted materials, or objects on which they may walk, rest, or feed. Such infective matter appears to be attached to their heads (mandibles), legs, wings, and bodies. Klein has recently grown the typhoid bacilli from flies caught in an infected area.

Flies have long been accused of being the spreaders of dysentery, and recently this view has been experimentally proved by several authors, including one of us. Other diseases, including intestinal myiasis, are said to be spread by flies.

The flies found by Newstead in houses in Liverpool, or bred from refuse and excreta, were *Musca domestica* in quite 90 per cent. of all flies, while the other species met with were—*Calliphora erythrocephala*, the blow-fly ; *Scatophaga stercoraria*, the dung-fly ; *Borborus equinus*, a small fly ; *Stomoxys calcitrans*, the stable-fly ; *Fannia canicularis* ; *F. scalaris* ; *Anthomyia radicum*, the root-fly ; *Psychoda phalænoides*, the owl-midge.

Morphology.—The vertex shows three ocelli, situated on a slightly raised ocellar triangle, which is surrounded by another triangle, the vertical triangle.

Between the upper and lateral edges of the clypeus (face) and the lower edge of the epicranium can be seen the crescentic opening of the ptilinum.

The proboscis consists of the rostrum, the haustellum (proboscis proper), and the labellæ. The rostrum is a truncated cone containing the pharynx ; the haustellum is grooved anteriorly to contain the labrum, epipharynx, and the hypopharynx. Posteriorly it is strengthened by a sclerite called the 'theca,' which distally carries the fork (*furca*).

The labrum and the epipharynx, with the hypopharynx, as is usual, form the pharyngeal tube, while the hypopharynx contains the salivary or hypo-

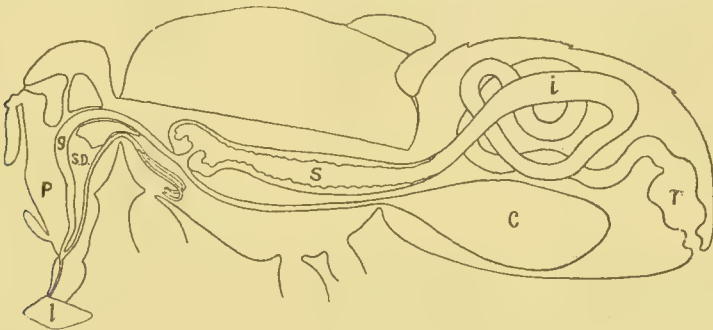


FIG. 339.—ANATOMY OF MUSCA DOMESTICA.

(After C. J. Martin.)

l., Labella ; *P.*, proboscis ; *S.D.*, near salivary duct ; *g.*, gullet ; *S.*, midgut ; *i.*, intestine ; *C.*, sucking stomach ; *T.*, rectum.

pharyngeal tube. The labellæ are complicated organs with a number of channels (pseudo-tracheæ) on their distal surface.

Each labella has lobes anterior, middle, and posterior, with respectively twelve, twenty-one, and three channels, which eventually run to the oral aperture, which lies at the base of the oral pit. This pit is kept open by two discal sclerites. In the oral pit the pseudo-tracheæ cease, and the sides of the channels are covered by overlapping teeth.

The pro- and meta-thoraces are much reduced, while the mesothorax is well developed, and shows a typical structure. The venation of the wings may be briefly described by saying that the costa and subcosta are well marked, and the usual costal and first costal cells are present. Radius 1 cuts off the subcostal cell ; R. 2 and 3 the first radial, and R. 4 and 6 the third radial ; while media 1 and 2 bound the radial and fifth radial cells, which are separated by the radio-median nerve. Median 3 and cubitus 1 cut off the median and second median cells, which are separated by the medio-cubital vein. The anal vein is incomplete, and therefore does not separate the cubital and anal cells.

The abdomen consists of eight segments in the male, and nine in the female. The first segment in both sexes is rudimentary, and fused with the second. The second, third, fourth, and fifth are well developed. The sixth, seventh,

and eighth in the male are atrophied, and surround the anal and genital orifices. The sixth, seventh, eighth, and ninth in the female form the long ovipositor, which can be retracted into the abdomen.

The pharyngeal tube mentioned above ends in the pharynx, which has a chitinous wall, the fulcrum. The œsophagus runs into the thorax, where it opens into the proventriculus, and sends a long duct to the trilobed crop which lies in the abdomen. The proventriculus is really a valve which leads to the chylific ventricle. This tube is narrow in front and wide behind, and much coiled. At the junction with the Malpighian tubes it becomes the intestine, which runs to the rectum. There are the four usual rectal glands.

The salivary glands are two long tubes whose ducts unite in the head and open into the salivary duct of the hypopharynx. The labial glands lie in the proboscis at the base of the labellæ, and by their secretion keep the tip moist.

The reproductive organs consist in the female of ovaries, spermathecæ, accessory glands and ducts, and the ovipositor. In the male they consist of testes, vasa deferentia, an ejaculatory duct, and penis.

Life-History.—This was first studied by de Geer in 1752-78, next by Bouché in 1834, Packard, junior, in 1873, and more

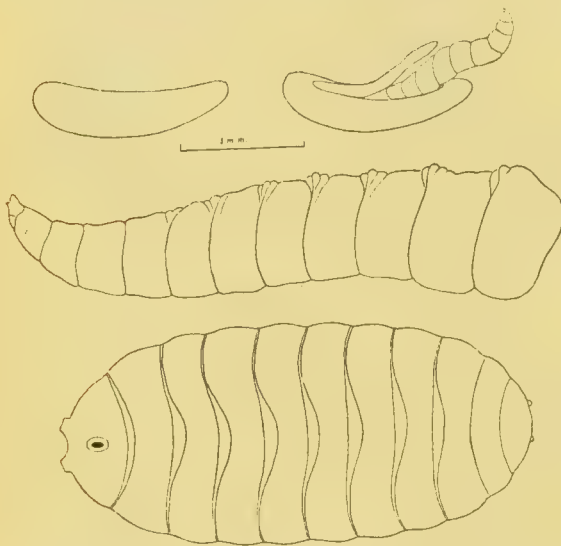


FIG. 340.—EGG, LARVA, AND PUPA, OF *MUSCA DOMESTICA*.

(After C. J. Martin.)

recently by ourselves and a number of other people. The most recent works are those by Newstead in Liverpool and Hewitt in Manchester.

The house-flies lay their eggs by preference in human faecal matter when somewhat decomposed, in horse-manure, goat-manure, cow-dung, and in fermenting vegetable substance, on which the larvæ can feed when hatched.

But these grubs can eat textile fabrics and paper when in need of nourishment. Usually

the fly works its way into the rubbish heap or loose earth to lay its eggs, but this is not invariable.

The time required for the development to be gone through depends upon the temperature of the air, being most rapid from 22° to 35° C.; upon the food, being more rapid when animal food is available; on moisture, which is most necessary; and upon fermentation, which is also necessary. The egg takes from one to three days to hatch into the larva, which lives rather less than a week, and then turns into the pupa, which produces the imago.

The whole time required is usually twelve to twenty days, and never less than eight days.

Aldridge gives the following table for India :

Stage.		Hot weather.		Cold weather.
Eggs	..	One day	..	Two days.
Larvæ	..	Five days	..	Fourteen days.
Pupæ	..	Three days	..	Five days.

In Colombo, Ceylon, we found the development to be quick, and to resemble the times given in Aldridge's hot-weather table.

Egg.—The imago becomes sexually mature in ten to fourteen days, and eggs are laid as soon as the fourth day after fertilization, usually 120 to 150 eggs being laid in a batch. The egg is cylindrically oval, being broader posteriorly, and has two curved ribs along its dorsal aspect. It hatches by splitting at the dorsal portion of the anterior end.

Larva.—The larval life is divided into periods or instars by the ecdyses.

First Instar.—The larva is 2 millimetres in length, with a slender body, the head being at the narrow end, with a spiny area on the anterior ventral edge of each segment, and posteriorly two stigmatal openings. This stage lasts twenty-four to thirty-six hours.

Second Instar.—The larva develops a pair of anterior spiracles. This stage lasts twenty-four hours.

Third Instar.—The larva eats vigorously for the first two days, and then, ceasing to feed, still increases in size. This stage lasts three to four days, and ends in pupation. The larva has a well-developed alimentary canal.

Pupation.—Pupation takes place in three to four hours, and consists of the larvæ contracting (especially anteriorly) inside its own skin, from which a puparium with rounded ends is formed. Length about 6.3 millimetres, which is at first creamy-yellow, but later becomes dark brown. This is a typical coarctate pupa, around which the spiral locomotory pads may be seen.

Pupa.—The pupal stage lasts about three to five days, when the imago, dilating its frontal sac, ruptures the anterior end into dorsal and ventral portions, the whole separating by a circular split at the sixth segment.

Fly.—The young fly is at first underground or in the middle of a rubbish-heap, through the interstices of which it makes its way to the surface by the aid of its ptilinum or frontal sac. When first hatched it is rather grey in colour, and has to allow its wings to dry before it is able to fly.

Habits.—After hatching the fly sets about to obtain food, and on this point it is not particular as to the kind, as anything, from typhoid fæces and dysenteric fæces to a pudding, are quite agreeable to its oral lobes. It also has a liking for human sweat, much to the annoyance of a person desiring a rest on a tropical afternoon. It works all day, but rests at night in any place which is dark. It is not known whether it has a particular preference for the spots on which to defæcate, as fly-specks are abundant. It is believed to defæcate about fifty times in twenty-four hours. A number of

experiments have been performed to see how far *Musca domestica* can fly, but they are not satisfactory. It is believed that a female fly becomes sexually mature and deposits ova in ten days after leaving the pupal case, that she lays four batches of eggs at intervals of ten to fourteen days, and that then she dies, but these figures must be received with great caution. Jephson believes that the limit of life of an adult fly is three weeks, but a hibernating or æstivating fly must live much longer. Indeed, a fly has been known to live sixteen weeks.

Enemies.—The enemies of the house-fly are numerous, and include fungi (e.g., *Empusa muscæ*), protozoa (?), nematode worms (?), mites (i.e., larvæ of *Trombidium muscarum* Riley, *T. muscæ* Oudemans, the genus *Pigmeophorus*, nymphs of *Tyroglyphus*), spiders, pseudo-scorpions, centipedes, larvæ of beetles, ants, wasps; also members of Cynipidæ, insects which produce galls on plants (e.g., *Figites anthomyiarum* and *F. scutellaris* attack the maggots, while *Spalangia niger* of the Pteromalidæ lays its eggs in the pupæ); and *Stenomalus muscarum* is also a pupal parasite, as is *Nasonia brevicornis*, *Pachycrepoides dubius*, and *Muscidifurax raptor*. Toads, lizards, and rats are expert fly-catchers.

Pathogenicity.—It is a carrier of the bacilli of enteric fever, dysentery, cholera, infantile diarrhœa, frambœsia tropica, anthrax, tuberculosis, ophthalmia, oriental sore, and parasitic worms (e.g., *Ascaris lumbricoides*).

Calliphora Robineau-Desvoidy 1830.

These are the blow-flies or bluebottles, of which *C. erythrocephala* Meigen is the common species. It and the following have been found in the human intestine: *C. azurea*, *C. vomitoria*. *C. limeus* is the cause of nasal myiasis.

Chrysomya Robineau-Desvoidy 1830.

Chrysomya macellaria Fabricius 1794.

Synonyms.—*Musca macellaria* Fabricius 1794; *Lucilia macellaria* Robineau-Desvoidy 1830; *L. hominivorax* Coquerel 1858; *Calliphora infesta* Philippi 1861; *C. macellaria* Jorge 1878; *C. anthropophaga* Conil 1878; *Compso myia rubrifrons* Macquart; *Somomyia montevidensis* Bigot.

In all this fly has twenty-six synonyms, largely due to Walker, Macquart, and Robineau-Desvoidy, but these were all carefully consolidated by Arribáizaga.

Muscinæ with blue bodies, red front to the head, and three black lines on the thorax. The body, which is less than 10 millimetres in length, is covered with stiff black hairs.

Life-History.—The female deposits some three to four hundred eggs in a space of a few moments in some wound or decaying matter, but as the same fly may oviposit in different places at different times, the total number of eggs laid by one fly must number some hundreds, or perhaps even thousands. The eggs are white and cylindrical, 1 millimetre in length, and marked by a prominent unilateral ridge. They hatch in from one to nine hours, and produce a whitish footless

larva, rather slender, with twelve segments, armed with minute spines. It is most active and burrows into the tissues of the affected animals or into the mass of putrid flesh or decaying matter. It grows rapidly and matures in from five to seven days, when it endeavours to escape from the wound or cavity on to the ground, when it wriggles off and buries itself in the ground at a suitable



FIG. 341.—CHRYSOMYIA MACELLARIA: FEMALE ($\times 4$).

place, and becomes the brown cylindrical pupa with rounded ends. The pupa is about $\frac{2}{5}$ inch in length, and matures in some nine to fourteen days.

Habits.—It is a pest to man and animals.

Distribution.—America, from Canada to Patagonia, but most common in the tropical and subtropical belts. It is killed by cold winds. In the Southern United States it occurs from July to October. It is also found in the West Indies. 7

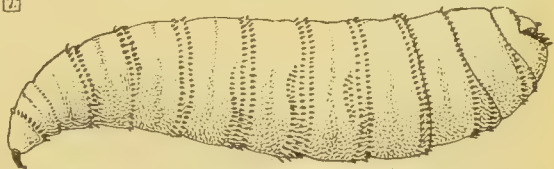


FIG. 513.—CHRYSOMYIA MACELLARIA: LARVA ($\times 4$).

(After Blanchard.)

Pathogenicity.—It attacks cattle after castration, spaying, branding, dehorning, and when wounded by ticks or barbed wire. It will enter the uterus if there is placental retention, and will attack the navels and mouths of young calves. Horses and mules may be attacked in the sheaths and vaginæ, and in the navel in colts. Hogs are especially liable to be attacked, but sheep rarely, unless after being worried by dogs. Man is attacked when sleeping in the open air, and more rarely when driving. The symptoms

produced in man will be detailed later under Nasal Myiasis in Chapter XLIX.

Treatment.—Injections of chloroform water are the best means of getting rid of the larvæ, but the frontal and other sinuses may have to be opened to remove them if in large numbers.

Prophylaxis.—The use of mosquito curtains and protection to the nose by handkerchiefs are important in man. Wounds of animals should be washed with weak carbolic lotion and dressed with pine tar or oakum and tar.

Chrysomya viridula.

Causes nasal myiasis in Central America, and will attack ulcers.

***Pyenosoma* Brauer and Bergenstamm 1893.**

The larvæ of *Pycnosoma putorium* Wiedemann 1830 are said to be parasitic in man and the domestic animals in Abyssinia, the Belgian Congo, and Lorenzo Marques.

This fly resembles *Chrysomya*, but the three dark stripes on the dorsum of the thorax are wanting.

Pathogenicity.—It causes nasal myiasis in man, while other species—e.g., *P. megacephala* and *P. marginale*, etc.—are found in cattle.

***Lucilia* Robineau-Desvoidy 1830.**

Flies of this genus—e.g., *L. cæsar* Linnæus and *L. sericata*—deposit their eggs on ulcers. *L. nobilis* Meigen has been found in the auditory meatus. According to Peiper, *L. cæsar* Linnæus and *L. regina* Macy have been recognized as causes of intestinal myiasis.

***Cordylobia* Grünberg 1903.**

***Cordylobia anthropophaga* E. Blanchard.**

Synonym.—*Ochromyia anthropophaga* E. Blanchard, *G. grünbergi* Donitz.

The larva of this fly, which is called 'ver du Cayor,' because it was first noticed in Cayor, in Senegambia, burrows into the skin and causes a painful swelling. It extends from Senegal to Natal.

Life-History and Morphology.—It is not certain whether the fly lays its eggs upon the ground or upon the clothing of people and the skin of animals. Hence it is not known whether the larva creeps from the ground on to the human being or animal, or hatches in the clothing and simply enters the skin.

The larva, which measures about 12 millimetres, is composed of twelve segments, of which the anterior or cephalic is bluntly pointed in front and truncated behind, and carries two black mouth hooklets on its ventral surface. External to these hooklets lie the antennal protuberances. On the third to the eleventh segments there are minute, rather characteristic, brownish, chitinous, recurved spines. The greatest breadth is at the level of the sixth to seventh segments, while the last segment has a flattened posterior surface which

carries the posterior stigmata. It is parasitic in men, monkeys, and dogs. The pupa measures 10·3 by 4·6 millimetres, and looks like any ordinary muscid pupa.

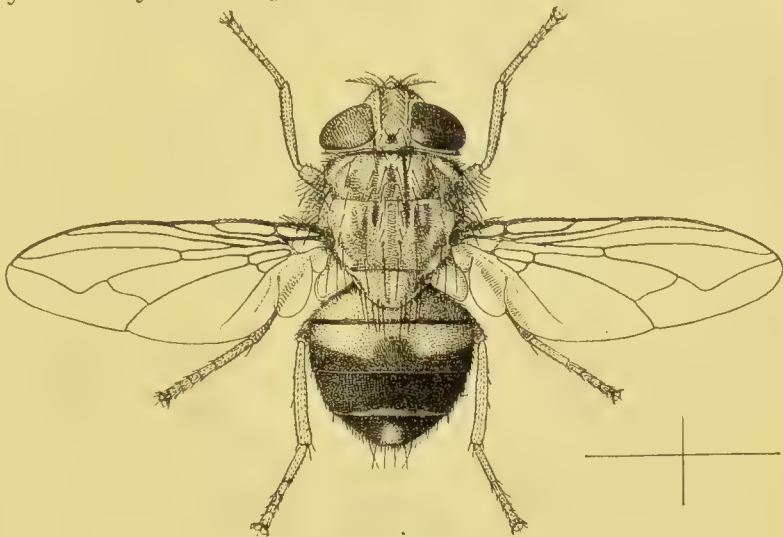


FIG. 343.—CORDYLOBIA ANTHROPOPHAGA BLANCHARD: FEMALE ($\times 4$).

The fly measures 9·5 millimetres, and has a yellowish-coloured head, body, and wing. The thorax is marked dorsally by longitudinal dark stripes, while the abdomen has also blackish markings, and the wings are of a brownish tinge. The female is distinguished from the male by the eyes being separated by a broad frontal stripe; in the black colour of the third and fourth abdominal (except the margin) segments; and in the blackish quadrangular median patch on the second abdominal segment. In the male the eyes join.

Cordylobia rodhaini Gedoelst 1905.

Synonym.—Lund's Larva.

Under this term a larva is described as occurring in the Congo Free State which possesses habits similar to those of *Cordylobia anthropophaga*.

The larva of this species also occurs at times under the skin of man in the Belgian Congo.

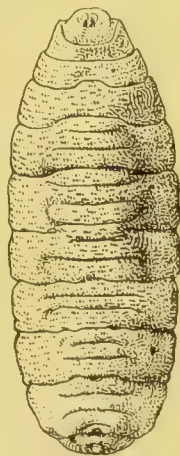


FIG. 344. — LARVA OF CORDYLOBIA ANTHROPOPHAGA ($\times 4$).

(After Austen.)

Auchmeromyia Schiner and Brauer Bergenstamm 1819.

Auchmeromyia luteola Fabricius 1805.

Synonym.—*Musca luteola* Fabricius 1805.

The larva of this fly is called the 'Congo floor-maggot.' It was found by Dutton, Todd, and Christy, living in the floor of native

huts to the depth of 3 inches. At night these larvæ came out, and sucked the blood of persons sleeping on the ground, or on beds but little raised therefrom, but not on high beds.

The native names for the larvæ are, 'Mabinzu,' 'Nchichi,' 'Ntunga,' 'Mvidi,' and 'Kiso.'

Morphology.—The fly is widely distributed in tropical and sub-tropical Africa. It is 10 to 12 millimetres in length, tawny in colour, with small black hairs giving it a smoky appearance. The head is large, as broad as the thorax. The eyes are separated by a considerable space. The proboscis is folded beneath the head into a deep groove. The palpi are club-shaped, with a long, yellow, flattened third joint, which carries an arista with black hairs on its upper and lower borders.

The dorsum of the thorax is marked by longitudinal black and brown stripes, and shows a well-marked transverse suture. The



FIG. 345.—AUCHMEROMYIA LUTEOLA FABRICIUS: FEMALE ($\times 3$).¹

squamæ are large, yellow in colour, and cover the halteres. The first abdominal segment has a narrow dark line posteriorly, the second a central median dark line, which joins with a posterior dark line. The third segment is dark brown, except for a narrow yellow anterior streak. The fourth segment is dark-coloured, with a posterior light brown band. The fifth segment is small, and contains the genital apparatus.

The legs are buff-coloured, with black hair and bristles. The fifth tarsal joint is jet black, and has a large cream-white pulvillus.

Life-History.—The fly deposits its eggs on the ground of the hut, especially on spots on which urine has been voided. The larva is semitranslucent, of dirty white colour, acephalous and amphipneustic, and has eleven distinct segments. The first segment is divisible into two portions, of which the anterior carries the mouth-parts. The broadest segments are the ninth and tenth. There are

distinct dorsal and ventral surfaces, at the junction of which in each segment there are protuberances, with a spine and a pit. The ventral surface is flattened, and has three footpads transversely arranged at the posterior margin of each segment. The last segment is large, and carries the posterior spiracles and the anus.

The mouth, which is provided with teeth, leads into an œsophagus, which ends in a proventriculus, and has a dorsal diverticulum. The ventriculus is short. Malpighian tubules mark the commencement of the intestine. The hind gut is coiled. The salivary glands are well marked.

The larva becomes a dark brown or black pupa, 9 to 10.5 by 4 to 5 millimetres, with an anterior conical and a posterior rounded end, and marked by annular ridges. The pupal stage lasts two to three weeks.

Habits.—The fly does not bite man. The larva, as described above, attacks man and fills its dorsal œsophageal pouch with blood, and thus acquires a red colour.

Pathogenicity.—As far as is known it is non-pathogenic.

In 1911 Roubaud described a new genus, *Chæromyia* Roubaud 1911, of which the larvæ of two species, *C. boueti* Roubaud 1911 and *C. chærophaga* Roubaud 1911, were blood-suckers attacking African wart-hogs and African ant-eaters.

***Auchmeromyia prægrandis* Austen 1910.**

A saffron-yellow fly. It occurs in South Africa.

***Pollenia* Robineau-Desvoidy 1830.**

The larvæ of *Pollenia rudis* Robineau-Desvoidy have been found in a case of gastric myiasis in man.

***Bengalia depressa* Walker.**

By an error this fly was said to cause cutaneous myiasis in Natal, Rhodesia, British Central Africa, Uganda, and the Sudan, the true causal agent being *Cordylobia anthropophaga* Grünberg. The life-history of *B. depressa* is unknown.

FAMILY ANTHOMYIDÆ Latreille.

Diptera with arista naked or pectinate. Thorax with complete transverse suture. First posterior cell completely open. Abdominal bristles often absent.

This family includes a number of genera known to be troublesome to man—*Fannia* Robineau-Desvoidy, *Hylemyia* Macquart, *Hydrotæa* Robineau-Desvoidy—which may be recognized by the following characters: (a) Arista bare—*Fannia*; (b) arista plumose—*Hylemyia*; (c) arista pubescent—*Hydrotæa*.



FIG. 346.—AUCHMEROMYIA LUTEOLA : LARVA
(× 3).

Fannia Robineau - Desvoidy 1830.

Fannia canicularis Linnæus 1761.

Synonyms.—*Homalomyia canicularis* Linnæus, *Anthomyia canicularis* Linnæus.

This species has frequently been reported as being passed in human fæces.



FIG. 347.—*FANNIA CANICULARIS* LINNÆUS: FEMALE ($\times 8$).

The fly is commonly found in houses in Europe and North America. The larvæ normally live in vegetables, by means of which they enter the human digestive tract. They are provided with branched processes on the segments.

Pathogenicity.—Blankmeyer gives an account of a case of this infection which is said to have lasted some twelve years, being associated at first with abdominal pain, bloody diarrhœa, severe pains in the region of the liver. After the initial attack the pains continued, but instead of diarrhœa, constipation resulted, with severe headaches. The abdomen was distended.

The patient was treated with raw pumpkin seeds and then given a saline purge, and passed 1,000 to 1,500 *Fannia* larvæ. After this he still passed a few larvæ for some days, but eventually recovered. This is a curious case, in that the larvæ lived for years inside the man, and because it is not clear how such an enormous infection was possible. Recently Cheyril has collected and described seven authentic cases of myiasis of the urinary passages caused by the larva of this fly.



FIG. 348.—LARVA OF *FANNIA CANICULARIS*.

Fannia desjardensii Macquart.

Synonyms.—*Homalomyia desjardensii* Macquart, *Anthomyia desjardensii* Macquart.

Wellman describes cases of this myiasis in the alimentary canal of human beings in Angola who showed

dysenteric symptoms, and which he successfully treated with castor-oil, then santonin, and then castor-oil again.

The disease is locally known as 'ovanyo,' a term which signifies maggots. The editors of the *Journal of Tropical Medicine* in 1907 asked for information with regard to an African myiasis called 'muculo,' but as far as we know this disease has not been traced. Wellman says that the term is not used in Angola. In *H. desjardensii* the larvæ become pupæ in seven to nine days, and the pupæ insects in another thirteen to fifteen days.

Other Species.—Peiper also lists *F. scalaris*, *F. incisurata*, *F. manicuta*, *F. saltatrix* as being causes of intestinal myiasis.

Hydrotæa Robineau-Desvoidy 1830.

Hydrotæa meteorica Linnæus, which usually attacks animals' eyes and nostrils, is said to attack man also.

SUBORDER III. PUPIPARA.

Synonym.—*Eproboscidæ*.

The Pupipara are flies which appear to have become altered owing to their parasitic life. They possess a well-defined proboscis, which is said by Austen to resemble that of the *Glossinæ* by being armed at its tip with teeth. Wings

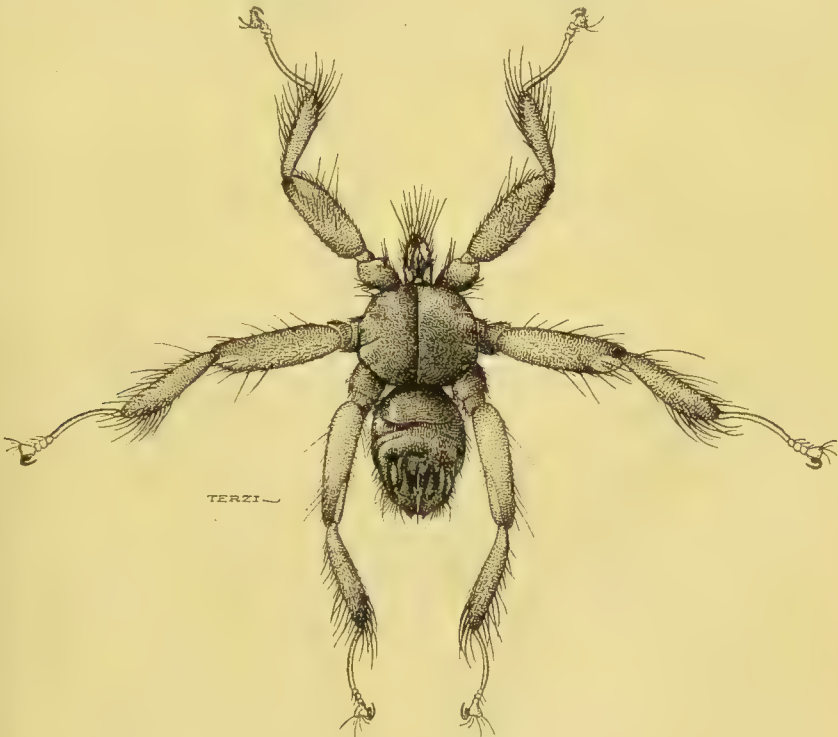


FIG. 349.—PENICILLIDIA DUFOURI WESTWOOD FROM A BAT : FEMALE (× 8).

have been lost in several species, either entirely or after the imago has become parasitic, though they may exist throughout life in other species. Their feet are provided with extra ungues to enable them to cling to the hairs, etc., of the host. They do not lay eggs, but produce a larva, which soon becomes a pupa.

The suborder is divided into four families : (1) Hippoboscidae ; (2) Nycteribidae ; (3) Braulidae ; (4) Streblidae.



FIG. 350.—NYCTERIBIA SP. ?

The Nycteribidae are parasitic on birds and bats. In this family comes *Penicillidia dufouri* Westwood, which is the carrier of *Achromaticus vesperuginis* Dionisi 1898 (*vide* p. 376). The Braulidae are parasitic on bees, and the Streblidae on bats, and therefore will not be considered further.

FAMILY HIPPOBOSCIDÆ.

Pupipara with horny flattened heads and bodies, and with one jointed antenna furnished with a terminal arista. The first joint of the tarsus is usually abbreviated in all, but certainly in the first two legs.

Wings may be well developed, or rudimentary, or entirely absent.

This family is composed of forms parasitic on mammals, and includes the following genera: *Hippobosca* Linnaeus 1761, *Allobosca* Speiser 1902, *Olfersia* Wiedemann 1830, *Pseudolfersia* Coquillett, *Lipoptena* Nitzsch 1818, *Melophagus* Latreille 1802, and *Ornithoetona* Speiser 1902, *Lynchia* Weyenberg 1881, and *Ornithomyia* Latreille 1802.

Hippobosca is parasitic on cattle, horses, dogs, etc., all over the world ; *Allobosca* is parasitic on lemurs in Madagascar ; *Ortholfersia* on kangaroos in Australia ; *Lipoptena* on deer all over the world ; and *Melophagus* on sheep.

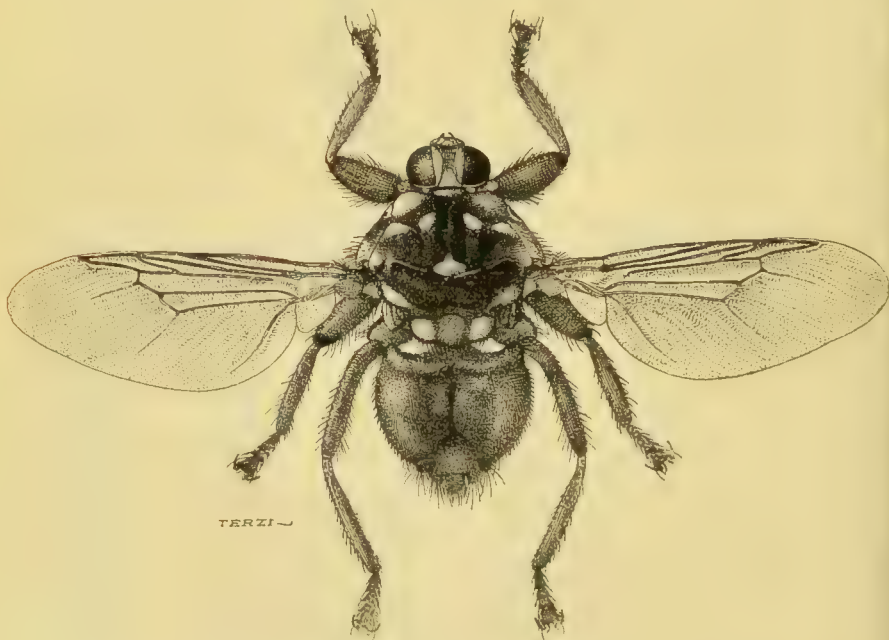


FIG. 351.—HIPPOBOSCA RUFIPES VON OLFERS: FEMALE (× 4).

Hippobosca rufipes von Olfers is thought to be capable of transmitting *Trypanosoma theileri*.

Hippobosca equina Linnaeus is known on horses in the New Forest, England
Hippobosca capensis Leach on dogs in Africa, India, Persia, and South

Europe, *H. camelina* Leach and *H. maculata* Leach are found in the Sudan and Egypt, and in addition to these *Melophagus ovinus* Linnæus is found all over the world.



FIG. 352.—LARVA AND PUPA OF HIPPOBOSCA RUFIPES VON OLFFERS ($\times 4$).

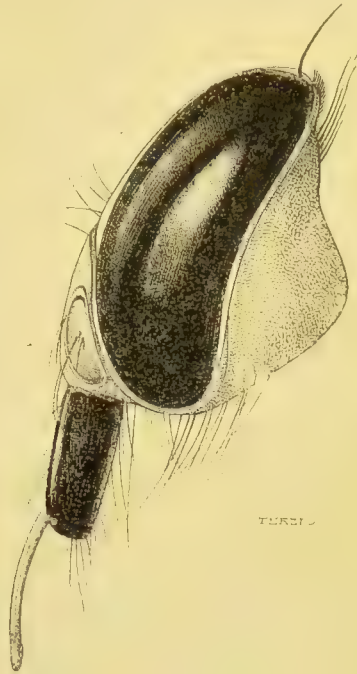


FIG. 353.—HEAD OF HIPPOBOSCA RUFIPES: FEMALE.

REFERENCES.

General.

- AUSTEN (1906). British Blood-Sucking Flies.
 AUSTEN (1907). Blood-Sucking Flies, Ticks, etc.
 AUSTEN (1909). Annals and Magazine of Natural History, series viii., iii. 285.
 (Descriptions of *Lyperosia*, *Stygeromyia*, *Hæmatobia*, *Bdellolarynx*, *Stomoxys*, *Philæmatomyia*.)
 AUSTEN (1909). African Blood-Sucking Flies.
 CLUSS (1902). Myiasis Tübingen.
 CLUSS (1903). Sitzung. Ges. Nat. Frde. Berlin, 400. (Parasitic Muscid larvæ.)
 GRÜNBERG (1907). Die Blutsaugenden Dipteren. Jena.
 HUBER (1899). Bibliographie d. klin. Entomologie. München.
 MEIGEN (1818-1838). Syst. Besch. d. bek. Europ. zweifl. Insect. 7 vols. Hamm.
 PEIPER (1900). Fliegenlarven als gelegentliche Parasiten des Menschen.
 SCHINER (1860). Fauna Austriaca. Die Fliegen. Wien, 1860.
 SERGENT (1909). Les Insects Piqueurs et Suceurs.
 THEOBALD. British Flies, vol. i.
 VERRALL (1901 and 1909). British Flies. Vols. i. and v. only published.
 WALKER (1851). Insecta Britann. Diptera. London.
 WERSUNG (1906). Zeitschrift für Klin. Med., lx. 122.

Æstridæ.

- BRAUER (1863). Die Æstriden. Wien.

Dermatobia.

- OLIVA (1909). Annali Med. Naval., p. 183.
 PEIPER (1906). Loc. cit.

Cordylobia.

- AUSTEN (1907). Proceedings of the Entomological Society. (A very important paper.)
 AUSTEN (1908). Journal Royal Army Medical Corps.

Tabanidæ.

- HART (1895). Bulletin Illinois State Laboratory of Natural History, vol. iv., 1895.
 HINE (1906). U.S. Dep. Agriculture Bureau, Entomology, No. 12, Part II. (habits and life-histories).
 PATTON (1909). Archiv f. Protistenkunde, p. 333.

Auchmeromyia luteola.

- DUTTON, TODD, AND CHRISTY. Liverp. Sch. Trop. Med. Memoir XIII.

Bengalia depressa.

- THEOBALD (1906). Second Report, Wellcome Research Laboratories, London.

Stomoxys.

- STEPHENS AND NEWSTEAD (1907). Annals Trop. Med. and Parasitology.
 TULLOCH (1906). Proceedings of the Royal Society. 1906.

Glossina.

- AUSTEN (1903). Monograph of the Tsetse-Flies. London.
 AUSTEN (1904). Liverp. Sch. Trop. Med. Memoir XIII.
 AUSTEN (1911). Handbook of the Tsetse-Flies. London.
 HODGES (1909). The Distribution and Bionomics of *Glossina palpalis*. Sleeping Sickness. Bureau, London.
 MINCHIN (1905). Proceedings of the Royal Society, vol. lxxv.
 STEPHENS AND NEWSTEAD (1906). Liverp. Sch. Trop. Med. Memoir XVIII.

Musca.

- ALDRIDGE (1904). The Spread of the Infection of Enteric Fever by Flies. R.A.M.C. Journal, 1904.
 CASTELLANI (1904-1909). Ceylon Medical Reports.
 CHALMERS (1907). Report on Sanitation of Colombo.
 FRANKLIN (1906). Some Observations on the Breeding-Ground of the Common House-Fly. Indian Medical Gazette, September.
 HEWITT (1907-1908). Quart. Journ. Micro. Scien.
 HOWARD (1901). Carriage of Disease by Flies. P. 39, Bulletin No. 30 of U.S. Depart. of Agriculture.
 HOWARD. U.S. Depart. of Agriculture. Farmer. Bulletin No. 155, p. 12.
 LOUNSBURY (1902). The House-Fly. Department of Agriculture, Cape of Good Hope.
 NEWSTEAD (1907). Annals Trop. Med. and Parasitology.

Chrysomyia.

- PEIPER (1900). *Loc. cit.*

Oscinidæ.

- PERRY AND CASTELLANI (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine.

Fannia.

- BLANKMEYER (1907). Journ. American Med. Assoc., vol. xlviii., p. 1505.
 CHEVREL (1909). Archives de Parasitologie, xii. 369.

Pupipara.

- AUSTEN (1903). Ann. Natur. History, series vii., vol. xii.
 BIGOT (1885). Ann. Soc. Ent. Franc., series vi., tome v. 1885.

Sepsidæ.

- ALESSANDRINI (1900). Archives de Parasitologie, xiii., 3, 337 (Myiasis due to *Piophilæ casei*).

CHAPTER XXVI

SIPHONAPTERA AND RODENTIA

Siphonaptera—Sarcopsyllidæ—*Dermatophilus penetrans*—Pulicidæ—Pulicinæ
—*Pulex irritans*—*Xenopsylla cheopis*—Coleoptera—Rodentia—Murinæ
—*Epimys rattus*—*Epimys norvegicus*—References.

SIPHONAPTERA Latreille 1825.

Synonyms.—*Rophoteira* Schellenberg 1798, *Aptera* Lamarck 1801, *Aphaniptera* Kirby and Spence 1826, *Pulicidæ* Stephens 1829.

Definition.—Hexapoda with laterally compressed bodies and distinctly separated thoracic rings. Wings absent, except for two lateral plate-like appendages on the meso- and meta-thorax.

The antennæ are three-jointed, and embedded in grooves. The third joint has nine more or less separated pseudo-joints.

Remarks.—Fleas have recently come into considerable prominence, owing to the work of the Indian Plague Commission and that of Dr. Verbitski, of St. Petersburg, who have shown that they are to be looked upon as the main agents by which plague is spread from rat to rat, and from rat to man.

Fleas may also carry blood-parasites—as, for example, *Trypanosoma lewisi*—and, again, they may serve as intermediary hosts for the cysticercus of tapeworms, as in the case of *Dipylidium caninum*.

History.—The knowledge concerning fleas is of recent date. In 1758 Linnæus started with one genus and species, *Pulex irritans*; the second genus was that of the *Chigoe* in 1815, under the term *Rhynchoprion penetrans*; and the third genus was created by Curtis in 1832 under the heading *Ceratophyllus*. The first general systematic treatise was by Kolenati in 1863, the second by Taschenberg in 1880, and the third by Baker in 1904.

Recently much work has been done on these parasites by Rothschild and Jordan.

Morphology.—The head is small, and may or may not possess eyes, which, when present, are only simple pigment masses. Directly behind the head is the antennal groove, in which the antennæ, which are important organs to the flea, lie protected from harm. This groove is continued upwards to the

mid-line of the vertex by an incassation which divides the frons from the occiput. The groove may be open or closed by a process of the gena.

The antennæ are composed of three joints, of which the third, often called the club, may be unsegmented, segmented on the posterior border only, or completely segmented into nine more or less separate pseudo-segments.

The frons may carry a tubercle or notch, situate rather nearer the mouth than the centre of the head, while laterally the eyes, when present, are to be seen. The area of the head below the eyes and extending from the perioral ring to the antennal groove is the gena. A process of this area may be prolonged backwards, so as to meet the hind edge of the post-antennal part of the head, and so to close the antennal groove below in those species which

possess a closed antennal groove.

The occipital area carries usually three rows of bristles, the first near the base of the antennæ, the second in the middle, and the third near the hinder edge of the head, which are continued forwards on to the frons, and probably delineate the four segments of which the head is composed.

Anterior and ventral to the frons and gena lies the perioral ring, which carries the mouth appendages, which consist of a labrum (epipharynx), mandibles, maxillæ, and palps, hypopharynx, and labium with palps. There does not appear to be a separate clypeus.

The labrum (variously known as epipharynx, hypopharynx, and by other names) is a hollow prolongation of the dorsal wall of head and pharynx. In front it is closed, while behind it opens into the cœlom. Ventrally it shows a groove, converted into a canal when it is articulated with the mandibles laterally. The mandibles consist of basal segments attached to the sides of the mouth, and an anterior portion which projects freely forwards, and shows fine serrations anteriorly. The inner aspect of the mandibles possesses a groove, converted into a trilobed channel



FIG. 354.—*XENOPSYLLA CHEOPSIS*: MALE.
(After Jordan and Rothschild, *Journal of Parasitology*.)

1, Labrum, mandibles, and labial palps (at the junction of the last named with the head is seen the triangular maxilla); 2, maxillary palpi; 3, antenna; 4, pronotum; 5, mesonotum; 6, metanotum; 7-12, ordinary abdominal tergites; 13, seventh tergite with bristle (behind this is seen the small eighth tergite); 14, ninth tergite, with sensory plate; 15, tenth tergite; 16-24, sternites of abdominal segments; 25-27, metasternite; 28, mesosternite; 29, prosternite.

by articulation with the fellow of the opposite side and the hypopharynx. The maxillæ are triangular chitinous plates, each possessing a four-jointed maxillary palp. The labium (which, of course, represents the second maxilla with their palps) is single posteriorly, where it is attached to the perioral ring, while in front it is divided into two one-to-thirteen jointed palps (labial palps), which form a sheath or rostrum for the other mouth-parts.

The hypopharynx consists of a basal portion, which is a chitinous plate concave ventrally, extending forwards in the head from the infra-œsophageal ganglion to the mandibulo-basal articulation, and an anterior portion, which projects from the basal portion forwards, and contains the canal from the salivary pump.

This anterior portion of the hypopharynx articulates laterally with the

mandibles, and its canal, opening ventrally, forms the triradiate canal mentioned above, which is continuous with the salivary groove on the mandibles.

The thorax is composed of the usual three divisions, but there are no signs of scutellum or post-scutellum. There is generally one, but there may be two or three rows of bristles on each segment. The pronotum may have a comb. The metanotum may be dentate or serrate apically. Laterally the metathorax is typical, showing a sternite, episternite, and epimerite, while the mesothorax shows a sclerite, divided into two by an internal incassation running from the coxa upwards. These two divisions represent the episternite and the epimerite. The episternite has the anterior and ventral portion separated off by an oblique incassation to form a sternite. The prosternite, or sternite of the prothorax, is not divided. Generally these various sclerites show bristles.

With regard to the abdomen, the first to seventh segments are more or less normal, but the eighth to tenth are modified sexually. The tergites of the second to the seventh segments are normal, carrying bristles and combs in different species. The seventh tergite has a subapical bristle. The first



FIG. 355.—ANATOMY OF A FLEA.

(From the *Journal of Hygiene*, 1906.)

- 1, Mouth ; 2, pharynx ; 3, salivary glands ; 4, stomach ; 5, Malpighian tubes ; 6, intestine ; 7, rectum.

segment has no sternal sclerite, hence the first visible sternite belongs to the second segment. The third to the sixth sternites carry a ventral row of bristles. The seventh has a considerable number of bristles. The sexually different segments must be considered according to sex. In the female the eighth tergite is very broad ventrally, but the sternite is reduced to an elongated plate lying between the ventral edges of the tergite.

The ninth tergite carries the sensory plate, with usually fourteen (there may be more) setiferous grooves. The ninth sternite is membranaceous laterally, and extends far ventrally, where it is strongly chitinized, and lies inside the seventh or eighth segment. It forms the ventral wall of the vagina, which is joined just anterior to it by the duct of the receptaculum seminis.

The tenth tergite carries a short conical stylet, while the sternite, which is triangular, carries a long bristle ventrally before the apex and shorter bristles at the apex.

The eighth tergite of the male is small, while its sternite is large, and from its cavity the copulatory organs project. The accessory genital organs belong to the ninth segment, the sides of whose tergite form the clasping

organ laterally. The internal ventral angle of the clasper is prolonged into a manubrium, above which is a tubercle-like projection. The outer side of the clasper has three processes, which are different in *Pulex* and *Læmopsylla*. The ninth sternite has an internal vertical arm and a ventral horizontal arm. The latter appears beyond the eighth sternite. The penis can be seen between the ninth sternite and the claspers.

Internal Anatomy.—The mouth, which is situate below the base of the labrum, opens into the aspiratory pharynx, which communicates, viâ a long œsophagus, with the stomach. Just before this organ the œsophagus is swollen into a bulb, which represents the proventriculus.

At the junction of the stomach with the intestine are the openings of the four Malpighian tubes. The intestine is divided into small intestine, colon, and rectum, the last mentioned opening at the anus.

The salivary apparatus is, as usual, separate from the alimentary canal. It consists of two glands, on each side of the body, lying in the fat-body in front of the stomach. The duct from each gland joins, forming a common duct on each side, which runs forward to open into the salivary pump. This is a hollow, chitinous organ, supplied with powerful muscles, situated at the anterior end of the ventral surface of the hypopharynx.

The duct of this pump, running forwards through the hypopharynx, opens viâ the triradiate canal already mentioned as formed by the junction of the hypopharynx with the mandibles, into the groove of these organs.

The Act of Biting.—The flea apparently carefully selects the spot at which it is to bite, and then pierces a hole by means of the labrum. This hole is then enlarged by the mandibles, through whose grooves salivary secretion is pumped into the skin. This secretion irritates the vessels, causing a local rush of blood to the part, and this blood is drawn by the suction of the pharynx up a tube formed by articulation of the labrum with the mandibles. This tube, of course, is embedded in the skin, which is pierced by its two component parts.

There are therefore two tubes in the mouth-parts of a flea—an efferent, carrying the salivary secretion, and an afferent, carrying the blood, which is taken to the stomach, and hæmolyzed and digested. It appears that the black residual mass is capable of further digestion by the rectal glands. Further bionomics will be given under *Xenopsylla cheopis*.

Life-History.—The egg is oval, waxy white or opaque porcelain in appearance, smooth, and with a length of about 0.5 millimetre. It is generally deposited between the hairs of the host, and falls off on to the ground. In two to four days the larva is hatched. This larva is an elongated, worm-like little creature with fourteen segments. The head is well developed, and has strong mandibles suitable for biting. It lives on dead organic matter, and moults three times as a rule—i.e., three to four days, and again six days, and again seven to fourteen days after hatching. It then spins a cocoon, inside which the pupa becomes the imago in about five days, the whole time required for development being fourteen to thirty-three days.

Dispersal.—Fleas are dispersed mainly by their host travelling about. Such a host as a rat may, of course, be carried by merchandise, and, again, merchandise itself can spread fleas.

Capture of Fleas.—If it is desired to capture fleas, allow a suitable animal to remain in the place, when the fleas will gather on it.

Then chloroform the animal, and comb the stupefied or dead fleas on to white paper.

Remedies.—The remedies for fleas are, first and best, a clean house—*i.e.*, plenty of soap and water applied to the floors, etc. Otherwise naphthalene, pyrethrum powders and benzene may be used.

A flea cannot jump more than 4 inches—an important fact to be noted.

Flea larvæ are delicate little things, and cannot stand disturbance; hence fleas will not be found in houses kept well swept and dusted, but will abound in infected empty houses.

Classification.—The Siphonaptera are classified by Rothschild into three families: (1) Sarcopsyllidæ, (2) Pulicidæ, (3) Ceratopsyllidæ.

Only the first two are of importance, the last-named being found on bats.

FAMILY SARCOPSYLLIDÆ Taschenberg 1880.

Synonym.—*Rhynchoprionidæ et Hectopsyllidæ* Baker 1905.

Siphonaptera without ctenidia. Labial palps rather long, but very weak and fragile; pale, slightly chitinated, formed of one or two segments. Small maxillæ little prominent. Piercing apparatus very developed; mandibles large and strong. Genal extremity always prolonged below and in front into a process, placed behind the insertion of the mandibles. Notæ of thoracic segments shorter than that of the first abdominal.

Genera.—*Echidnophaga* Olliff 1886, *Hectopsylla* Frauenfeld 1860, *Dermatophilus* Guérin 1838 or 1839, which, according to Jordan and Rothschild, may be recognized in the following manner:—

- I. Hind coxa with patch of spines on inner side—*Echidnophaga*.
- II. Hind coxa without such a patch of spines:

(a) Hind femur with large basal tooth-like projection—*Hectopsylla*.

(b) Hind femur simple—*Dermatophilus*.

We need only consider *Dermatophilus*.

Dermatophilus Guérin 1838.

Synonyms.—*Rhynchoprion* Oken 1815 *nec* Hermann 1804, *Sarcopsylla* Westwood 1836.

This genus contains the species *Dermatophilus penetrans* Guérin, distinguished by having a distinct eye, and *D. cæcata* Enderlein 1901, with a rudimentary eye. The latter species was found behind the ear of *Epimys rattus* in Brazil.

Dermatophilus penetrans Guérin 1838.

Synonyms.—*Pulex minimus cutem penetrans* Catesby 1743, *Pulex minutissimus nigricans* Barrère 1743, *Acarus fuscus sub cutem nidulans proboscicæ acutiore* P. Brown 1756, *Pulex penetrans* Linnæus 1767, *Rhynchoprion penetrans* Oken 1815.

This is the insect variously known as the *Chigoe*, or jigger, and believed to have been discovered by Oviedo in 1551. The home of this little insect appears to be South America, especially Brazil, from which it was conveyed to West Africa about the middle of last century, arriving on the West Coast at Loanda from Rio Janeiro by a ship, the *Thomas Mitchell* in 1872, whose crew was suffering from jiggers. It was probably noted on the Gold Coast for the first time in the early seventies. It appears to have spread across Africa by Stanley's Expedition and by trade routes, arriving in East Africa in 1895, and from East Africa it spread to India in 1899 by the 4th Bombay

FIG. 356.—*DERMATOPHILUS PENETRANS*:
MALE. (MICROPHOTOGRAPH.)

Infantry, but luckily the infection did not spread beyond Bombay. In 1900 it reached Madagascar. It affects not merely man, but domestic and wild animals. Perhaps the most noted feature is the way in which it attacks pigs. On the Gold Coast it appeared to be largely kept in existence by these animals. It is very easily captured in the free state by taking a little pig with a pale abdomen, and placing it on its back on the ground on which infected pigs are living. After watching a few moments, a black speck will appear on the pig's abdomen, and quickly another and another. These black specks are jiggers, which can easily be transferred to a test-tube. On examination, they will be found to be males and females in about equal numbers. It appears likely that a number of different species, if not genera, are included under the term *D. penetrans*, and there is

FIG. 357.—*DERMATOPHILUS PENETRANS*:
FEMALE. (MICROPHOTOGRAPH.)

without doubt room for investigation into jiggers taken from wild and domestic animals and man.

If the reader will look at the list of synonyms, it will be clear that, by the law of priority, the name of this little insect should be *Rhynchoprion penetrans*, and not *D. penetrans*, as the name *Rhynchoprion* Oken is dated 1815; but Rothschild has recently pointed out that *Rhynchoprion* was applied in 1804 by Hermann to a tick, and also by Oken to other ticks in 1815.

Geographical Distribution.—It occurs in Mexico, West Indies, Central and South America, through the whole of tropical Africa, and as far south as Mashona—*i.e.*, 30° N. to 30° S. In Asia it does not appear to flourish; it has only infected Bombay, and will probably not become naturalized, as the monsoon conditions do not appear good for it, for it flourishes in a warm, dry, sandy soil.

The female only becomes endoparasitic and when it first arrives in a place, and is unknown, may cripple people, and cause loss of one or more toes.

Morphology.—The general account already given of the morphology of

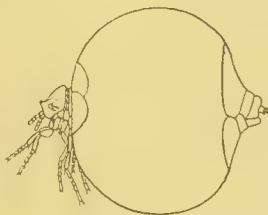


FIG. 358.—*DERMATOPHILUS PENETRANS*:
PREGNANT FEMALE.

fleas and the special characters indicate the morphology sufficiently for the purposes of this book.

Life-History.—The males and females live in dry, sandy soil as reddish-brown little insects about 1 millimetre in length, and are very active. They live by sucking the blood of warm-blooded animals. When impregnated, the female burrows into the skin of a warm-blooded animal, whether bird or mammal. The abdomen now swells enormously into the size and appearance of a small pea. If one of these small peas is examined, it will be seen to show the head and thorax anteriorly, and the two last abdominal segments posteriorly. The head is in the bottom of the burrow in the skin, and the posterior abdominal segments block the opening.

The eggs are expelled through the opening in the skin, after which the female jigger is expelled by ulceration. The egg develops into a larva with thirteen segments. This larva spins a cocoon, inside

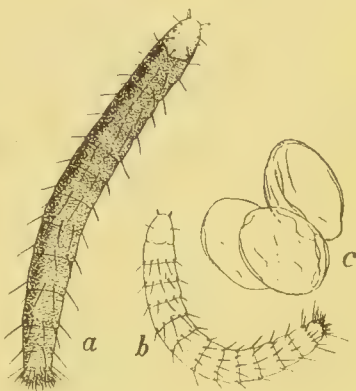


FIG. 359.—*DERMATOPHILUS PENETRANS*.

(After Newstead, *Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology*.)

a, Larva; b, younger larva;
c, empty cuticles of eggs.

which is the pupa, which gives rise to the imago in about eight to ten days.

Pathogenicity.—This will be described later (Chapter LXVII.), but, it may be mentioned that it includes irritation, pus formation, ulceration, and formation of a sore, which may become infected with bacteria, and cause loss of a toe or a leg, or even tetanus may develop.

FAMILY PULICIDÆ Stephens 1829.

Siphonaptera with body compressed or elongated, always larger than in the preceding family. Head, in comparison to the rest of the body, small; top round; venter protected with hairs; often no eyes. The antennal groove is at times covered by a chitinous

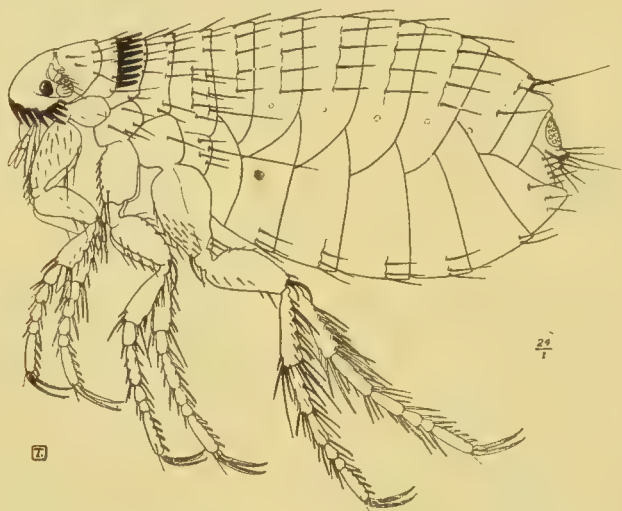


FIG. 360.—CTENOCEPHALUS FELIS BOUCHÉ.

This drawing shows the combs on the head and prothorax.

plate. The end segment of the antenna is either segmented or unsegmented. Thorax wide; pronotum often with ctenidia. Abdomen never so swollen that the original form is lost. Female never endoparasitic.

There are three subfamilies: *Pulicinae* Tiraboschi, *Typlopsyllinae* Tiraboschi, *Hystriopsyllinae* Tiraboschi.

SUBFAMILY PULICINÆ.

Pulicidæ with eyes.

The more important genera of the Pulicinae may be arranged as follows (modified after Jordan and Rothschild):—

- A. Ctenidia on prothorax and head—*Ctenocephalus*.
- B. Ctenidia on prothorax, and only two teeth on cheek at genal angle—*Chiastopsylla*.

C. Ctenidia on prothorax only.

I. Pygidium freely projecting behind—*Pygiopsylla*.

II. Pygidium not freely projecting behind.

(1) Club of antenna completely segmented—*Cerato-
phyllus*.(2) Club of antenna incompletely segmented—*Hopto-
psyllus*.

D. Ctenidia absent on prothorax and head.

I. Terminal segment of antennæ short, only distinctly segmented posteriorly. Hind coxa with a comb; fifth tarsal segment with four lateral and one subapical bristle.

(1) Forms with small mesial tubercle—*Mæopsylla*.

(2) Forms without small mesial tubercle :

A. Mesosternite with internal rod-like incrassation from insertion of the coxa upward.

(a) Anterior angle of genal edge prolonged backwards into a triangular lobe; pronotum stronger than metanotum—*Pariodontis*.(b) Anterior angle of genal edge not produced into triangular lobe—*Xenopsylla*.B. Mesosternite without internal rod-like incrassation from insertion of the coxa upward—*Pulex*.

II. Terminal segment of antennæ segmented all round; hind coxa without a comb; fifth tarsal segment with four lateral bristles and one subapical hair.

(1) Terminal segment of antennæ symmetrical; genal process with a number of bristles—*Parapsyllus*.(2) Terminal segment of antennæ asymmetrical; proximal segments sloping backwards. Genal process with only one to two bristles—*Phopalosylla*.

III. Terminal segment of antennæ segmented all round; symmetrical. Hind coxa without comb. Fifth tarsal segment with five lateral bristles at least, and subapical hair.

(1) Antennal groove open behind.

(a) Abdominal tergites with one row of bristles, except first, which bears two. First hind tarsal segment shorter than second—*Coptopsylla*.

- (b) Abdominal sternites with very numerous short bristles. First mid-tarsal segment longer than second—*Goniopsyllus*.
- (2) Antennal groove closed behind.
Abdominal tergites with one row of bristles
Lycopsylla.

SUBFAMILY TYPHLOPSYLLINÆ.

Pulicidæ with eyes absent or very rudimentary. Head rounded in front. Body thin.

Genera.—*Ctenopsylla* Kolenati, *Ctenophthalmus* Kolenati, *Typhlopsylla* Wagner, *Neopsylla* Wagner, *Typhloceras* Wagner, which can be recognized as follows :

- I. Third tarsal with five lateral bristles on each side—*Typhloceras*.
- II. Third tarsal with four lateral and two accessory bristles—*Ctenopsylla*.
- III. Third tarsal with four lateral and no accessory bristles—*Neopsylla*.
- IV. Third tarsal with three lateral and two accessory bristles—*Typhlopsylla*.

SUBFAMILY HYSTRICHOPSYLLINÆ.

Abdominal tergites with one or more ctenidia ; posterior tibial spines in numerous short, close-set, transverse rows on posterior border, with about four spines in each row ; female with four antepygidial bristles on each side.

Genera.—*Hystrihopsylla* Taschenberg, *Macropsylla*.

THE FLEAS OF RATS AND MICE.

The table on p. 749 gives the fleas observed on rats, mice, and field-mice, by Tiraboschi and Rothschild.

Of these, the following are found on :—

Epimys norvegicus Erxleben 1777.

Pulex irritans Linnæus, *Xenopsylla cheopis* Rothschild, *Ctenocephalus felis* Bouché, *C. canis* Curtis, *Ceratophyllus fasciatus* Bosc, *C. londiniensis* Rothschild, *C. penicilliger* Grube, *Ctenocephalus musculi* Dugès, *Neopsylla bidentaliformis* Wagner.

Epimys norvegicus is the true host of *Ceratophyllus fasciatus*.

Mus musculus Linnæus 1758.

Ceratophyllus fasciatus Bosc, *C. londiniensis* Rothschild, *C. walkeri* Rothschild, *Odontopsyllus charlottensis* Baker (?), *Ctenocephalus serratriceps* Taschenberg, *C. musculi* Dugès, *Typhlopsylla assimilis* Taschenberg, *T. agyrtes* Heller, *Hystrihopsylla tripectinata* Tiraboschi.

Pulicidæ	{	Pulicinae	Pulex	P. irritans L.		
			Xenopsylla ..	{ X. cheopis Roth. X. brasiliensis Baker.		
			Hoplopsyllus ..	H. anomalus Baker.		
			Ctenocephalus	{ Ct. felis Bouché. Ct. canis Dugès.		
			Ceratophyllus	{ Cer. fasciatus Bosc. Cer. londiniensis Roth. Cer. anisus Roth. Cer. niger Fox. Cer. penicilliger Grube. Cer. walkeri Roth. Cer. pinnatus Wag. Cer. gallinæ Sch. Cer. abantis Roth. Cer. lucifer Roth. Cer. pollionis Roth. Cer. agilis Roth. Cer. californicus Baker.		
				Odontopsyllus	{ Od. charlottensis Baker. Od. telegoni Roth.	
					Pygiopsylla ..	{ P. colossus Roth. P. hilli Roth. P. rainbowi Roth.
				Ctenopsylla ..	{ Ct. musculi Dugès. Ct. spectabilis Roth. Ct. taschenbergi Wag. Ct. aganiffies Roth. Ct. ellobius Roth. Ct. pectuniceps Wag. Ct. selenis Roth.	
					Stephanocircus	{ St. thomasi Roth. St. dasyuri Skuse. St. simpsoni Roth.
				Typhlopsyllinæ ..	Ctenophthalmus	{ Ct. ægyrtes Heller. Ct. assimilis Tasch.
					Typhlopsylla ..	{ Typhl. pseudogyrtes Baker. Typhl. prosuma Wag.
			Chiastopsylla ..		Ch. rossii Waterst.	
			Neopsylla ..		{ N. bidentatiformis Wag. N. pentacanthus Roth. N. isacanthus Roth.	
			Hystrichopsyllinæ	Typhloceras ..	Typhl. poppei Wag.	
		Hystrichopsylla		{ Hystr. tripectinata Tirab. Hystr. talpæ Curtis. Hystr. narbeli Galli-V.		
				Macropsylla ..	Macr. hercules Roth.	
		Sarcopsyllinæ ..		Dermatophilus	{ D. penetrans L. D. cæcata Enderlein.	
			Echidnophaga	{ Ech. murina Tirab. Ech. gallinacea Westw. Ech. myrinecobis Roth. Ech. lispus Roth.		

Epimys rattus Linnæus 1758.

Pulex irritans Linnæus, *Xenopsylla cheopis* Rothschild, *Ctenocephalus felis* Bouché, *C. canis* Curtis, *Ceratophyllus fasciatus* Bosc, *C. londiniensis* Rothschild, *Ctenopsylla musculi* Dugès, *Dermatophilus cæcata* Enderlein, *Echidnophaga rhynchopsylla* Tiraboschi, *E. gallinacea* Westwood.

Of all these fleas, the most important with regard to plague are :—

A. Spreading the disease from rat to rat—*Xenopsylla cheopis* Rothschild and its allies; *Ceratophyllus fasciatus* Bosc and its allies; *Ctenopsylla musculi* Dugès; *Ctenocephalus felis* Bouché; *C. canis* Curtis.

B. Spreading the disease from rat to man—*Pulex irritans* Linnæus, *Xenopsylla cheopis* Rothschild, *Ctenocephalus felis* Bouché, *C. canis* Curtis, *Ceratophyllus fasciatus* Bosc.

Of all these, the most important is *Xenopsylla cheopis* Rothschild, and it is believed that its true host is *Epimys rattus*.

Citellus beecheyi Richardson.

This is the ground squirrel of California, which has been proved to play an important part in the plague infection of that country, and its fleas have been recently studied, and it has been found that *Hoplopsyllus anomalus* Baker is capable of carrying the bacillus, and according to McCoy *Ceratophyllus acutus* Baker can also convey the disease from squirrel to squirrel.

Pulex Linnæus 1758.

Pulicineæ with head without notch on the frons; antennal groove closed behind by a genal process. Strong incrassation separating occiput and frons. Eye large, a little pointed below, with two bristles beneath it, and one on the oral edge. Anterior angle of genal process projecting somewhat downwards, and usually bearing a small tooth (remains of a comb). Anal coxa is pear-shaped, carrying a number of hairs on the inner posterior portion, as well as in front, and carrying a row or patch of short spines near apex. Greatly reduced thorax, the tergites being short, each with a row of bristles, but without subapical spines on the mesonotum. Mesosternite characteristic, very narrow, with ventral edge close before apex, stigmata not being entirely covered. No internal rod-like or cariniform incrassation from the insertion of the coxa to the dorsal edge.

Male with eighth tergite with small manubrium; clasper with very large flap, on inside of which are two processes, forming a kind of claw. Manubrium of clasper large, curved. Ninth sternite boomerang-shaped, with its upper end pointed. Internal wire-like spring of ninth sternite and penis making several coils.

Female.—No hairs above stigma of eighth sternite. Stylet with long apical bristle and short bristle near apex. Anal sternite truncate; bristles confined to the apical edge.

Species, *P. irritans* Linnæus.

Pulex irritans Linnæus 1758.

Synonyms.—*Pulex vulgaris* Raius 1710, *P. ater* Linnæus 1746, *P. hominis* Dugès 1832, *P. simulans* Baker 1895, *P. dugesi* Baker 1904.

This, in a much restricted sense, is the *P. irritans* of Linnæus, which included all fleas, but now the term is restricted to the parasite of man. It is essentially an Old-World flea, those of America being but distantly connected, but has become now cosmopolitan through trade. It appears to have been introduced into the eastern tropics by European trade. It is absent from

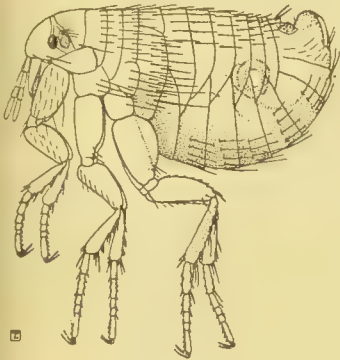


FIG. 361.—PULEX IRRITANS :
MALE.

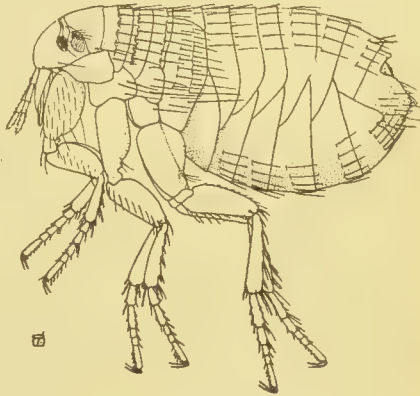


FIG. 362.—PULEX IRRITANS :
FEMALE.

the Sahara and the Haussa countries south of it, but it abounds all through Africa where there are European settlements.

The question whether there are different varieties on the different races of mankind is not settled. Baker described a *Pulex dugesi* or *P. irritans dugesi* from West Mexico on *Citellus macrourus* and man, but is the only person who indicates this.

P. irritans is also found on animals, particularly the badger (*Meles taxus*) in England ; on dogs, cats, rats, and other animals in various parts of the world.

Xenopsylla Glinkkewicz 1907.

Synonym.—*Læmopsylla* Jordan and Rothschild 1908.

Pulicinae with third segment of antennæ distinctly segmented only on posterior side. Eye round ; one bristle below, one in front of eye, third at oral edge. Frons without tubercle ; four-segmented labial palpus ; closed antennal groove. Pleura of the mesosternite divided by a suture into an episternite and an epimerite, with the dorsal apical bristle of the seventh abdominal tergite remote from the edge of the segment, with short spines on the inner surface of the coxa of the third leg, with a rod-like incrassation on the inside of the coxa of the second leg ; fifth tarsal segment with four lateral bristles besides the subapical hair.

are any number of intermediate species. It breeds frequently throughout the year.

It is essentially a house-rat, living in the tiles or thatch of the roof, or in holes and recesses in the floor, but it will live in the crowns of cocoanut-trees.

Its pathogenicity is important, for it is the plague-rat of Upper India. It is supposed to have entered Europe with the Asiatic invasion.

***Epimys norvegicus* Erxleben 1777.**

Synonym.—*Mus decumanus* Pallas 1778.

Large, heavy rats, with heavy, uniformly tapering tails; dark coloured dorsally, lighter coloured ventrally; only 89 per cent. of the length of the head and body. Heavy, flesh-coloured feet, short round ears, and broad, heavy snout.



FIG. 363.—HEAD OF *EPIMYS*
RATTUS.

(After Hossack.)



FIG. 364.—HEAD OF *EPIMYS*
NORVEGICUS.

(After Hossack.)

Colour: brown on the dorsum and dirty white on the venter. Foot-pads large; heart-shaped mammæ 10 to 12 in number.

This is the brown, sewer, or ship rat, which is supposed to have come from China to Europe, and from Europe to India. It is the plague-rat of Bombay. It is very prolific, producing several litters of 8 to 10 young per annum.

Destruction of Rats.—The destruction of rats may be brought about by natural enemies, such as owls, and cats, etc., by traps, or by poison, but none of these methods work rapidly on a large scale; therefore attempts have been made to obtain some bacterium which will produce a fatal disease capable of being spread from rat to rat without being pathogenic to man and domestic animals. Two important bacteria are at present in use—viz., Danysz bacillus and Neumann's bacillus, to which may perhaps be added Issatchenko's bacillus, which, however, is by no means so satisfactory, as it loses its effect when passed through several generations of rats.

Danysz bacillus, which is probably the *Bacillus typhi murium* of Löffler, was obtained in 1900 from an epidemic among harvest-mice, and is often sold as Liverpool virus, Pasteur virus, and Laroche virus; in the tropics it quickly loses its virulence.

Neumann's bacillus, obtained in 1903 from the urine of a child suffering from cystitis, and often called 'ratin,' is believed by some observers to be efficacious. The prepared virus is supplied in tins, and is distributed about the rat-runs in spoonfuls wrapped in paper. In Ceylon no good results have been obtained.

On a small scale the gas evolved from the Clayton apparatus is useful in killing rats, etc., in ships and houses. This method of destruction is described on page 1042.

Personally, we advise the use of rat-traps and phosphorus paste smeared on cubes of bread, together with fumigation by Clayton's apparatus. With regard to the cubes of bread, we draw attention to the value of Black's method of smearing the hands of the bread-cutters and the tables with aniseed oil, because rats refuse to eat bread handled by man if they can perceive the human scent.

It has been advocated that laws should be passed making compulsory the destruction of rats by municipalities and other local authorities.

REFERENCES.

Siphonaptera.

- ADVISORY COMMITTEE REPORTS ON PLAGUE IN INDIA (1907-1908). J. Hygiene
 BAKER, C. (1904). Proc. U.S. Nat. Mus., xxvii.; xxix., 1905.
 BAKER, C. (1905). Entomologica, xx.
 JORDAN AND ROTHSCHILD (1906). Thompson Yates and Johnston Laboratory Reports, vii. 1.
 JORDAN AND ROTHSCHILD (1908). J. Parasitol., i. 1. (Full literature.)
 KOLENATI (1863). Horæ. Soc. Entomol. Rossicæ, ii.
 ROTHSCHILD (1906). Entomologist, xxxix.
 ROTHSCHILD. Journal of Hygiene, vi., 1906.
 SHARP. Cambridge Natural History: Insects, II.
 TASCHENBERG (1880). Die Flöhe.
 TIRABOSCHI (1904). Archiv. de Parasitologie, viii.; xi., 1907.
 TYRREL (1884). Trans. Ottawa Natural Club. (Anatomy.)
 WAGNER (1893). Horæ Soc. Entomol. Rossicæ, xxvii.; xxviii., 1894; xxix., 1895; xxxi., 1898; xxxv., 1902; xxxvi., 1903.

Coleoptera.

- BRAUN (1906). Parasites of Man. (English edition.)
 WELLMAN (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine, vol. x., p. 185.

Rats.

- BOELTER (1909). The Rat Problem. London.
 HOSSACK (1907). Aids to Identification of Rats connected with Plague. Allahabad.
 HOSSACK (1908). Memoirs of the Indian Museum, No. 1. Calcutta.
 SHIPLEY (1908). Journal Economic Biology, III., 3, 61 (Rats, their Habits and Parasites.)

CHAPTER XXVII

VEGETAL PARASITES: FUNGI

Thallophyta—Algæ—Fungi—Phycomycetes—Ascomycetes — Basidiomycetes
—References.

THE vegetal kingdom is usually divided into the following four chief groups:

I. Thallophyta, a great variety of plants whose vegetative body may consist of one or many cells forming a more or less branched thallus.

II. Muscineæ, or Bryophyta, including cormophytic forms as well as forms with a leaf-like thallus.

III. Pteridophyta, or fern-plants.

IV. Phanerogams, or flowering-plants.

THALLOPHYTA.

All vegetal parasites of man belong to the Thallophyta, which consist of two classes:

CLASS A. THE ALGÆ.—These possess chromatophores, while many species are provided with chlorophyl.

CLASS B. THE FUNGI.—These possess neither chromatophores nor chlorophyl.

CLASS A. THE ALGÆ.

The Algæ contain four orders:

- I. Cyanophyceæ.
- II. Chlorophyceæ.
- III. Pheophyceæ.
- IV. Florideæ.

Only the order Cyanophyceæ has importance from the point of view of human parasitology. This order contains two families:

- I. Nostocaceæ, organisms containing chlorophyl.
- II. Bacteriaceæ, organisms not containing chlorophyl.

The family Bacteriaceæ is very important, containing most of the pathogenic micro-organisms of man. As, however, the study

of bacteria forms a special branch of science, on which numerous works and textbooks are available, we shall not deal with it, limiting ourselves to the description of the non-bacterial fungi.

CLASS B. THE FUNGI.

Fungi play a very important rôle in human, animal, and vegetal pathology; they also play an important part in some biological processes—for instance, *fermentation*.

The study of fungi is called 'mycology,' and a disease due to a fungus is termed a 'mycosis.' Thus 'otomycosis' means a mycosis of the ear; 'onychomycosis,' a mycosis of the nails; 'dermatomycosis,' a skin disease due to fungi.

The investigation of fungi began long before that of *bacteria*. In 1837 Remak discovered the parasite of *favus*, which was more completely described by Schönlein in 1839. Between 1841 and 1844 Grüber described the fungi found in thrush and ringworm.

Morphology.—Fungi are Thallophytes without chlorophyl, and do not contain starch or chromatophores. Their vegetative body, or thallus, consists generally of a mass of filaments or threads termed the 'mycelium.' The threads or filaments forming the mycelium are called 'hyphæ.' The mycelial threads or hyphæ may be *septate* or *non-septate*. Their walls do not consist of ordinary cellulose, but of a substance known as *fungus-cellulose*, which does not stain blue by iodine and sulphuric acid.

Nutrition.—The fungi, being unprovided with chlorophyl, cannot make use of the carbon dioxide of the air, and therefore derive their carbonaceous food material from complex organic compounds, as, for instance, decaying organic substances.

Mode of Life.—Fungi live as parasites or as saprophytes. They may live one way or the other, according to circumstances. Fungi are parasites of man, of the lower animals, and of plants.

Biological Characters.—Recent researches have shown the great biological analogies between fungi and bacteria as regards production of toxins, agglutination, and immunization phenomena, etc. Charrin and Ostrowsky, Concetti, Roger, and others, have obtained a soluble toxin from *Monilia albicans*. Auclair and Verliac have isolated from *Nocardia bovis* a toxic product soluble in ether, which they call 'actinomycetine.' They state that the injection of this substance produces the same lesions as the fungus. Ceni, Besta, Otto, and others, have obtained various toxins from fungi of the genus *Aspergillus*.

Concetti and G. H. Roger, by vaccinating animals with cultures of *Monilia candidans*, have noticed a production of specific agglutinins and immune bodies.

Plato, Bloch, Truffi, and others have prepared trichophyton vaccines by killing with heat, and triturating cultures of these fungi. By injecting these vaccines into patients suffering from trichophytoses, they have observed a general reaction, with fever,

PLATE V.

CULTURES OF SOME TROPICAL FUNGI.

1. *ENDODERMOPHYTON CONCENTRICUM* BLANCHARD 1901.
Typical culture on glucose agar three weeks old.
2. *ENDODERMOPHYTON CONCENTRICUM* BLANCHARD 1901.
Old culture on glucose agar.
3. *ENDODERMOPHYTON INDICUM* CASTELLANI 1911.
Fairly old culture on glucose agar.
4. *ENDODERMOPHYTON INDICUM* CASTELLANI 1911.
Young culture on glucose agar.
5. *EPIDERMOPHYTON RUBRUM* CASTELLANI 1909.
Culture on glucose agar.
6. *TRICHOPHYTON VIOLACEUM* BODIN 1902 ; VAR. *DECALVANS*
CASTELLANI 1911.
Culture on Sabouraud's agar.
7. *CLADOSPORIUM MANSONI* CASTELLANI 1905.
Culture on Sabouraud's agar.
8. *MICROCOCCLUS NIGRESCENS* CASTELLANI 1910.
Culture on Sabouraud's agar.

PLATE V.



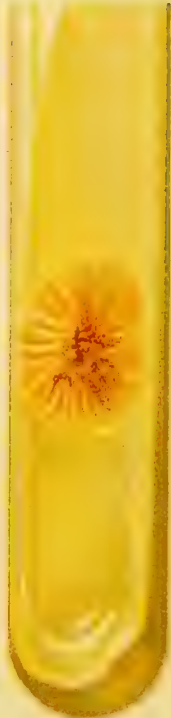
1



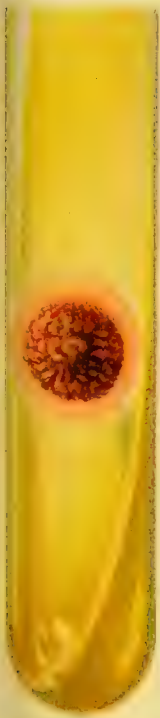
2



3



4



5



6



7



8

CULTURES OF SOME TROPICAL FUNGI.

similar to the reaction obtained in tubercular patients by injecting tuberculin. De Beurmann has described a cuti-reaction in patients affected with sporotrichosis.

Widal and Abrami have introduced a general diagnostic method, 'sporo-agglutination,' based on the fact that the blood of patients suffering from diseases due to fungi contain specific agglutinins for the spores of such fungi.

Other biological reactions—complement fixation, etc.—have been described.

Reproduction.—The seeds of the Phanerogamia may be said to be represented in the fungi by the roundish or oval-shaped bodies called 'spores.' The spores multiply by budding, producing daughter spores, identical with the parent spores. Under certain conditions the spore, by a process of germination, gives rise to a true mycelial filament, which ramifies, producing mycelial hyphæ. Some of the terminal hyphæ are shorter and structurally different from the other hyphæ, and they become organs of fructification, which produce spores. The formation of spores upon these hyphæ takes place in various modes, of which five different types may be distinguished.

1. *Conidia or Exospores.*—These are non-sexual spores, which take origin by a process of budding or septation from the extremity of a germinal mycelial hypha or *sporophora*. The spores may all be of the same size, or, at other times, some are much larger, *macroconidia*, others smaller, *microconidia*. The conidia are at first always unicellular, but later they may divide and become multicellular.

2. *Chlamydospores or Endoconidia.*—These are asexual globular spores of great size, and provided with a thick membrane. Chlamydospores are terminal or intramycelial.

3. *Endospores or Conidia.*—These spores take origin inside a special spore-case structure, or *sporangium*, which is often terminal and aerial. Endospores which are free and provided with organs of locomotion (cilia or flagella) are called *zoospores*, and the sporangium is known under the name of *zoosporangium*.

Ascus Fructifications, or Asci, are special sporangia, containing four or eight or a multiple of eight spores arranged in a single line. These spores are called *ascospores*. Each ascospore presents two membranes, *one internal, one external*. The external membrane frequently shows a pore, which is called the *germinating pore*.

Basidia Fructifications.—Basidia are large elongated cells, each of which supports at its apex two or four slender processes (sterigmata), each terminating in a small roundish conidium or basidio-spore.

4. *Zygospores.*—These are the product of a process of conjugation or modified sexual act between two special hyphæ. These hyphæ give rise to small club-shaped branches, which come into contact and fuse together, forming a new large cell, which presents a very resistant double wall. The special branches (*gametes*) which come

into contact and unite to produce the *zygospore* do not show any apparent sexual differentiation.

5. *Oospores*.—These are formed by a complete sexual act or fertilization, and can therefore be compared with a fertilized ovum.

The female element (*oosporangium*, *oogonium*) contains one or more roundish protoplasmatic masses (macrogametes or *oospheres*, *female gametes*), and presents a thick wall pierced by several *pores*. The male gamete (*antheridium*), which originates on a delicate special hypha, comes into contact with the oosporangium, sending a protoplasmatic process through it. In other cases the *antheridium* divides into several motile bodies called *microgametes*, *antherozoids*, or *spermatozoids*, which come into contact with the oosporangium, and fertilization takes place. In some rare cases the transformation of the oosporangium into an oospore is in reality a process of parthenogenesis.

Classification.—Fungi are divided into five orders :

I. Myxomycetes.—Higher fungi, mostly aerial, with many-celled mycelium ; reproduction by asexual spores.

II. Phycomycetes.—One-celled thallus, becoming septate only during sporulation ; reproduction takes place by asexual and sexual spores.

III. Ascomycetes.—Reproduction by asexual spores ; presence of *ascus fructifications*.

IV. Basidiomycetes.—Reproduction by asexual spores ; presence of *basidia fructifications*.

V. Hyphomycetes, or Fungi Imperfecti.—Fungi of very different groups, the botanical position of which cannot be determined with certainty in the present state of our knowledge. The thallus consists of filaments, and reproduction takes place only by conidia.

The fungi parasitic in man are practically all found among the Phycomycetes, the Ascomycetes, and the Hyphomycetes. Only one species of importance is found among the Basidiomycetes, and none among the Myxomycetes.

ORDER PHYCOMYCETES.

This order is divided into three suborders :

I. Chytridiæ.

II. Oomycetes (*Oosporaceæ*).

III. Zygomycetes or *Zygosporaceæ*.

The Phycomycetes parasitic on man all belong to the suborder Zygomycetes.

SUBORDER ZYGOMYCETES.

These fungi reproduce sexually and asexually. The sexual reproduction takes place by formation of *zygospores*. The asexual reproduction takes place by the formation of conidia, gonidia (endospores), and chlamydospores (endoconidia).

The Zygomycetes are divided into four families, among only one of which—the Mucoraceæ—are found human parasites.

FAMILY MUCORACEÆ.

These organisms have a ramified thallus, branches taking origin laterally or by dichotomy. Some species are provided with *rhizoids*, root-like hairs by which they are attached to the surface on which they grow. From the surface of the mycelium some aerial branches called 'gonidiophores' take origin, each of which supports on its distal extremity a pear-shaped, globular or claviform sporangium called *gonidangium*. The *sporangium* is at first separated from the gonidiophore by a septum, which later protrudes into the lower portion of the sporangium to form a variously shaped structure termed the *columella*.

Inside the sporangium or gonidangium *endospores* or *gonidia* develop by free cell-formation.

The sporangial protoplasm not used in the formation of endospores gives rise to a peculiar mucilaginous substance, which at a later period, by absorption of water, causes the bursting of the sporangium. Each endospore or gonidium, when it has become free, gives rise to a mycelial tube by germination. This mycelial tube ramifies, and a new mycelium is formed.

In some species, under certain conditions, a sexual reproduction may take place. This consists in the conjugation of undifferentiated non-motile gametes, which leads to the formation of zygospores.

Many species, when vegetating in unfavourable media, reproduce only by formation of conidia and chlamydospores.

The Mucoraceæ are extremely common as parasites or saprophytes of plants and animals. A mycosis due to these parasites is often termed 'mucormycosis.'

Mucoraceæ can be easily grown on sugar culture media—for instance, Sabouraud's maltose agar—or even on ordinary agar. The optimum temperature for their growth is between 35° and 40° C. The Mucoraceæ require plenty of oxygen, and therefore the media tubes must never be closed with rubber caps. When there is not enough oxygen, the Mucoraceæ lose their characteristics, and give rise to monilia-like, or yeast-like forms.

Classification.—Four genera of Mucoraceæ are found to contain species parasitic on man:

Family Mucoraceæ	{	Mycelium ramified, no rhizoids— <i>Mucor</i> .
		Mycelium non-ramified, with or without rhizoids; the peduncle supporting the sporangium terminates in a special formation encircling the base of the columella— <i>Lichtheimia</i> .
		Mycelium with rhizoids; columella ovoid— <i>Rhizomucor</i> .
		Mycelium with rhizoids; columella hemispheric, shaped like a mushroom— <i>Rhizopus</i> .

Genus *Mucor* Micheli 1729.

Ramified mycelium; absence of rhizoids

Mucor mucedo Linnæus 1764.

Synonyms.—*Mucor vulgaris* Micheli 1729, *M. sphærocephalus* Bulliard 1791.

The hyphæ carrying sporangia (sporangioophores) are long and erect; the sporangium is globular, 100 to 200 μ in diameter; its colour brownish; its surface covered by fine, minute crystals of

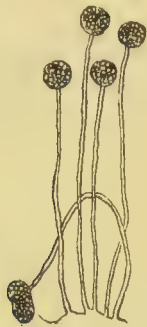


FIG. 365.—*MUCOR MUCEDO*
LINNÆUS.



FIG. 366.—*MUCOR PUSILLUS* LINDT.
(After Lindt.)

oxalate of calcium. The spores (gonidia) are elliptical, with a smooth surface. The columella is ovoid-shaped, and generally yellowish. Occasionally very large zygosporophores may be observed.

M. mucedo L. is very common, living in organic substances in decomposition—for instance, horse-dung. It is the cause of a deadly disease in bees—the so-called ‘mucorine,’ or May’s disease—but is seldom found in man. Fürbringer has observed it twice in cases of pulmonary infarcts.

Mucor pusillus Lindt 1886.

Mycelium at first white, then yellowish. The hyphæ carrying sporangia are much shorter than in the preceding species. The sporangium is globular, at first pale greyish, then dark greyish. Its diameter varies between 50 and 80 μ . The columella is claviform, ovoid or spherical, yellowish or brownish. The spores are smooth, spherical, 3 to 3.5 μ in diameter.

M. pusillus is often found in bread which has been soaked in water. It is very pathogenic to rabbits; it has once been found in man in a case of otomycosis by Jakowski.

Genus Lichtheimia Vuillemin 1904.

Non-ramified mycelium; rhizoids may be present or not; peduncle supporting sporangium terminates in a formation encircling the base of the columella.

Lichtheimia corymbifera Cohn 1884.

Synonym.—*Mucor corymbifer* Cohn 1884.

Mycelium at first white, then yellowish. The sporangia are pear-shaped, 10 to 70 μ in diameter; columella conical, dark greyish or brownish; spores elliptical, 2 to 3 μ . The hyphæ carrying sporangia are ramified in corymbiform formation. This parasite has been

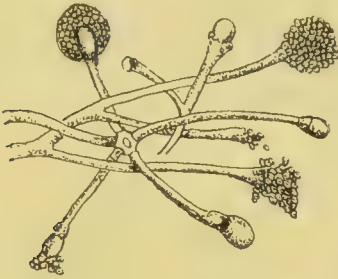


FIG. 367.—*LICHTHEIMIA CORYMBIFERA* VUILLEMIN.
(After Lichtheim.)

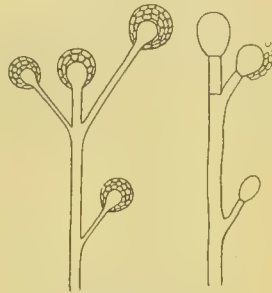


FIG. 368.—*RHIZOMUCOR PARASITICUS* LUCET AND COSTANTIN.
(After Lucet and Costantin).

observed several times in man, giving rise to a mycosis of the ear (Hückel, Siebenmann, Graham), of the nose (Siebenmann), of the lungs (Podack). A case of generalized infection has been recorded by Paltauf (see p. 765).

Lichtheimia ramosa Lindt 1886.

Synonyms.—*Mucor ramosus* Lindt 1886, *Lichtheimia ramosa* Vuillemin 1904.

Closely resembles *L. corymbifera*, but rhizoids are often present. The spores are larger, ovoidal, 4 to 7 μ in length. The columella is always smooth.

This species has been observed in man by Jakowski in a case of otomycosis. According to Vuillemin, it is frequently found in the nasal mucosa of horses.

Genus Rhizomucor Lucet and Costantin 1900.

Rhizoids generally present, columella of ovoid shape..

Rhizomucor parasiticus Lucet and Costantin 1900.

Mycelium at first greyish, later brownish. Sporangium globular, 35 to 80 μ . Hyphæ carrying sporangia are often ramified, and are between 1 and 2 centimetres in length. They are often provided at their basal portion with rhizoids.

The columella is ovoid or pyriform; dark brownish; spores ovoid; longitudinal diameter, 4 μ ; transverse diameter, 2.5 μ .

R. parasiticus is pathogenic for guinea-pigs and rabbits. It was found in the expectoration of a woman by Lucet, Costantin, and

Lambry. The patient had been considered at first to be suffering from tuberculosis. She recovered under a potassium iodide and arsenical treatment.

Rhizomucor septatus von Bezold 1889.

Synonyms.—*Mucor septatus* von Bezold, *Rhizomucor septatus* Lucet and Costantin 1889.

Rhizoids present; sporangia of a brownish-greyish colour, spherical, with a smooth, or occasionally slightly moriform, surface; diameter about 30 to 35 μ ; columella spherical, brownish; spores roundish or slightly oval, from 2.5 to 4 μ .



FIG. 369.—RHIZOMUCOR SEPTATUS VON BEZOLD.
(After Siebenmann.)



FIG. 370.—RHIZOPUS NIGER
CIAGLINSKI AND HEWELKE.
(After Ciaglinski.)

The spores are of a yellowish or brownish colour; spherical or ovoid, with a smooth surface.

This species was found by Siebenmann in a case of otomycosis.

Genus Rhizopus Ehrenberg 1820.

Rhizoids present; columella hemispheric; mushroom-like.

This genus contains only one species.

Rhizopus niger Ciaglinski and Hewelke 1893.

Synonym.—*Mucor niger* Ciaglinski and Hewelke 1893.

The mycelial filaments are provided with abundant rhizoids forming a snow-white mass. Sporangia globular, of black colour when ripe. Spores ovoid, smooth. Columella is at first globular, but later takes a cylindrical shape, and when the spores have become detached, shows a peculiar mushroom-like appearance.

This species was discovered by Ciaglinski and Hewelke in a case of black mycosis of the tongue.

General Remarks on Mycoses due to Species of the Family Mucoraceæ.—These mycoses are generally called mucormycoses. They have been recorded several times in man.

MUCORMYCOSIS OF THE NOSE.—Several cases are on record in which species of Mucoraceæ (generally *Lichtheimia corymbifera*) were found in various affections of the nose. Their pathogenic rôle in such affections has not been demonstrated with certainty.

MUCORMYCOSIS OF THE TONGUE.—Ciaglinski and Hewelke, and later Seniysiak, have described cases of so-called 'black tongue,' due to *Rhizopus niger*.

MUCORMYCOSIS OF THE EAR—OTOMUCORMYCOSIS.—Several cases are found in the literature (Siebenmann, Böke, Huckel, etc.). Almost always *Lichtheimia corymbifera* was present. In the tropics we have observed two cases in which *L. ramosa* occurred. When the fungus is in great quantity, the patient complains of tinnitus aurium and deafness—the same symptoms as those produced by a plug of cerumen in the external auditory meatus.

MUCORMYCOSIS OF THE LUNGS.—This condition is rare. Fürbringer has described two cases in which *L. corymbifera* was found at the autopsy in some hæmorrhagic foci in the lungs. Lucet, Costantin, and Lambry described a case of bronchitis in a woman due to *Rhizomucor parasiticus*. The expectoration was rather scanty and mucopurulent, but without blood. Mycelial threads and spore-like bodies were present. Cultures were made, and the fungus grown. The condition lasted several months. Potassium iodide was given, and later, owing to the symptoms of iodism, various arsenical preparations.

GENERAL MUCORMYCOSIS.—One case only is on record—that of Paltauf. The patient during life presented fever, slight jaundice, enlargement of the spleen and liver, with signs of diffuse bronchitis and obscure nervous symptoms. At the post-mortem the brain presented several foci of a friable, yellowish substance; the other internal organs showed nodules of various size, some rather hard; others had undergone a purulent change. In all these formations mycelial threads were found; in the lung-nodules fructifications (sporangia) were also present, which enabled Paltauf to determine the fungus as *L. corymbifera*. According to him, the infection must have originated from the intestine, which showed several ulcerative lesions containing the same fungus.

ORDER ASCOMYCETES.

These fungi are characterized by their mode of reproduction—viz., by spores originating inside special cells called *asci*. The spores (ascospores, endospores, gonidia) inside the asci are generally four or eight or a multiple of eight. While these fungi live a parasitic life, no asci are found, and reproduction takes place by germination and conidia. The fungi belonging to this order are often pleomorphic, their morphological characters changing according to the medium on which they live.

The Ascomycetes are divided into two suborders:—

I. *Gymnoascees*.—Asci not enclosed in any special enveloping structure.

II. *Carpoascees*.—Asci produced in special fructifications.

SUBORDER GYMNOASCEES.

Of the *Gymnoascees*, only two families—the *Saccharomycetes* and the *Gymnoasceæ*—are parasitic on man.

FAMILY SACCHAROMYCETES.

These organisms are generally round or ovoid cells, presenting a cell wall of single or double contour; the internal protoplasmatic mass often shows granules and vacuoles. During active vegetation as parasites they reproduce by a *budding process*, hence the name of *budding fungi*; when living on artificial media, under unfavourable nutritive conditions, or in the absence of oxygen, they may multiply by formation of endospores or ascospores.

The organisms are, as a rule, unicellular plants, but at times the cells elongate to form mycelial hyphæ—so much so that occasionally a complicated ramifying septate mycelium is produced. This occurs, for instance, when the organisms are cultivated in certain fluid culture media—for example, fluid beer-wort. In such cases side-buds, which separate into conidia-like bodies, may also develop on the hyphæ.

The family *Saccharomycetes* contains three genera:

I. *Genus Endomyces*.—Reproduction by external spores, ascospores, and spores situated inside the mycelial tubes.

II. *Genus Saccharomyces*.—No true mycelial threads; reproduction by budding and ascospores.

III. *Genus Cryptococcus*.—Reproduction by budding only; no ascospores; no mycelial threads.

IV. *Genus Coccidioides*.—Temporary genus, not yet well defined.

The fungi belonging to the genus *Saccharomyces*, *Cryptococcus* and *Coccidioides* are commonly known under the name of 'blastomycetes' (or yeasts), while the diseases due to them are termed 'blastomycoses.'

Genus Endomyces Reess 1870.

Reproduction by external spores, ascospores, and spores situated inside the mycelial tubes.

Vuillemin believed at one time that the thrush fungus belonged to this genus. Recent researches carried out also by one of us have demonstrated that the condition known as *thrush* may be caused by various fungi. These fungi, as a rule, do not reproduce by ascospores, and, as justly remarked by Pinoy and Vuillemin himself, belong to the genus *Monilia* (see p. 821). For the fungus isolated once by Vuillemin, which has all the characteristics of the genus *Endomyces*, Landrieu has suggested the term *Endomyces vuillemini*.

Endomyces vuillemini Landrieu 1912.

Synonym.—*Endomyces albicans* Vuillemin 1898.

This fungus was found by Vuillemin in 1898 in thrush patches.

Parasitic Life.—This fungus forms white patches on the tongue and buccal mucosa. The patches are easily detached. A particle of the patch examined under the microscope shows: Septate mycelial threads, simple or ramified, the articles of which are straight or somewhat bent. Each article or cell is about $20\ \mu$ in length, and 3 to $5\ \mu$ in breadth. At the terminal portion of each mycelial thread three or four shorter ovoid elements are found which reproduce by budding. Some similar ovoid or roundish globular refringent cells can be observed, originating laterally at the septations of the mycelium. These globular elements, which were at first considered to be spores, become detached, and reproduce by germination.

Saprophytic Life—Culture Characters.

—The fungus grows well on slightly acid, Sabouraud's and other media; does not grow abundantly in alkaline media; does not ferment lactose and is Gram-positive.

In cultures the fungus appears under two forms: 1. A filamentous form, showing the mycelial threads simple or ramified. 2. A globular form, morphologically similar to a typical yeast, and reproducing by budding. Both forms may be found in the same culture.

The fungus in cultures reproduces by—

1. Chlamydospores or external spores; large globular cells 10 to $20\ \mu$ in diameter, with thick resistant walls. The chlamydospores are situate at the terminal extremity of some mycelial hyphæ, and represent modified mycelial articles.

2. Asci containing four ascospores.

3. Internal Spores.—These are oval cells with membrane, protoplasm and nucleus similar to the external spores. The internal spores are arranged in a single string inside some mycelial tubes.

Pathogenicity.—The fungus was found by Vuillemin in a case of *thrush*, a condition generally due to fungi of the genus *Monilia* (see p. 821).

Genus Saccharomyces Meyen 1838.

No proper thallus. Reproduction by budding and endospores or ascospores; fermentation of glucose and saccharose.

As already stated, the fungi of this genus, as well as of the genera *Cryptococcus* and *Coccidioides*, are usually called Blastomycetes, and the diseases induced by them blastomycoses.

The fungi of the genera *Saccharomyces*, *Cryptococcus* and *Coccidioides* have a great importance in dermatology, as they give rise to peculiar

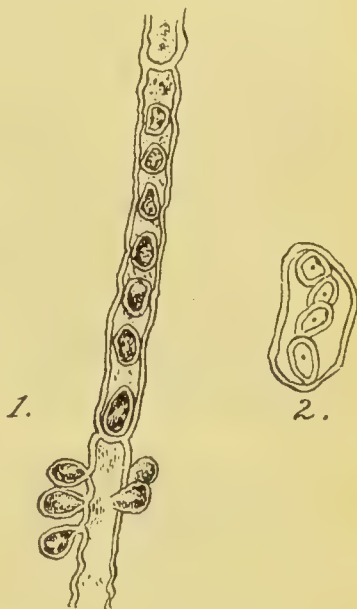


FIG. 371. — ENDOMYCES VUILLEMINI LANDRIEU.

(From a culture. After Vuillemin.)

1, Mycelial threads, with ecdospores and conidia; 2, nasus fructification.

ulcerative affections of the skin, often resembling a syphilide or a tuberculide. The first cases of blastomycosis were observed in America by Posadas, Wernike and others, who at first believed them to be a protozoal infection. Later Gilchrist, Ricketts, and others recognized the true nature of the parasites. Cases of blastomycosis are frequent in tropical countries. By some authors (Sanfelice, Roncali, etc.), cancer has been considered to be of blastomycetic origin.

***Saccharomyces blanchardi* Guiart 1906.**

Found at an operation on a patient who had been considered to be suffering from tubercular peritonitis. The fungus had produced in the peritoneum a large whitish gelatiniform mass, weighing about 1 kilogramme. The fungus grew well on all sugar media.

On maltose agar it produced crateriform colonies of a snow-white colour; was pathogenic to rabbits, in which it induced a general mycosis, terminating fatally.

***Saccharomyces granulatus* Vuillemin and Legrain 1900.**

Observed by Vuillemin and Legrain in a tumour of the sub-maxillary bone. Cells ovoid, 4 to 5 μ in length, and 3 to 4 μ in breadth. Cultures pinkish or pinkish-red; ascospores and chlamydospores present.

***Saccharomyces tumefaciens* Busse 1897.**

Synonym.—*Saccharomyces subcutaneus tumefaciens* Curtis 1896.

Found by Curtis in a myxomatous tumour. It appeared in the tissues in the shape of spherical bodies 16 to 20 μ in diameter, each surrounded by a zone of amorphous substance. Grows well on all sugar media; in very old cultures ascospores are seen.

***Saccharomyces samboni* Castellani 1907.**

Cells roundish—6 to 8 μ in diameter—easily grown on various media producing white colonies, which rapidly coalesce. Found by Castellani in Ceylon in a few cases of intertriginous dermatitis of the cruro-scrotal region. A similar or identical organism has been observed by Whitfield in England in a case of the same dermatitis.

***Saccharomyces ellipsoides* Rhees 1870.**

Found by Maggiora and Gradenigo in two cases of chronic otitis media. The cells are elliptical, about 6 μ in maximum diameter; presence of ascospores. Maggiora and Gradenigo do not consider this fungus to be pathogenic.

***Saccharomyces membranogenes* Steinhaus 1906.**

Found together with the diphtheria bacillus, in a case of fatal diphtheria. Pathogenic for guinea-pigs, rabbits, and mice.

Saccharomyces hominis Klein and Gordon 1903.

Isolated in some cases of tonsillitis clinically resembling diphtheria. Roundish or oval cells, 5 to 7 μ in diameter. Pathogenic for guinea-pigs and rabbits.

Saccharomyces anomalus Beauverie and Lesieur 1912.

Synonym.—*Willia anomala* Beauverie and Lesieur 1912.

Found by Beauverie and Lesieur in the sputum of a tubercular patient.

Saccharomyces anginae Vuillemin 1901.

Found by Achalme and Troisier in a case of tonsillitis showing white patches; is easily cultivated.

Saccharomyces balzeri Balzer, Burnier, and Gougerot 1911.

Synonym.—*Parendomyces balzeri* Balzer, Burnier, and Gougerot 1911.

Grows on culture media under the type of oval or roundish yeast-like cells, proliferating by budding. Isolated by Balzer, Burnier, and Gougerot from a gummatous affection.



FIG. 372.—CRATERIFORM COLONIES OF *SACCHAROMYCES BLANCHARDII* GUIART.

(After Blanchard, Schwartz and Binot, from Brumpt.)

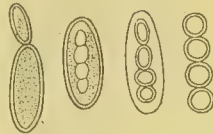


FIG. 373.—*SACCHAROMYCES ANGINÆ* VUILLEMIN.

(After Troisier and Achalme.)

Saccharomyces roseus Maggiora and Gradenigo 1890.

Found by Maggiora and Gradenigo in the Eustachian tube, and considered by them to be non-pathogenic. Cultures of pink colour.

Genus Cryptococcus Kützing 1843.

Reproduction by budding only; endospores and ascospores unknown; most species do not ferment sugar media (glucose and saccharose).

Cryptococcus dermatitis Gilchrist and Stokes 1898.

Synonyms.—*Blastomyces dermatitis* Gilchrist and Stokes 1898, *Cryptococcus gilchristi* Vuillemin, *Zymonema gilchristi* de Beurmann and Gougerot.

Found by Gilchrist and Stokes in a case of chronic ulcerative dermatitis, and later in a case which had been diagnosed as a tuberculide of the skin. After Gilchrist and Stokes's cases, other cases of blastomycosis due to an identical or similar organism have been described by Hyde, Oppenheim, Ricketts, and others. Ricketts

considered these fungi to be species of *Oidium*, and proposed the name '*oidiomycosis*' to indicate the disease produced by them.

C. gilchristi in the affected tissues has the appearance of a typical yeast—i.e., large, globular cells, 10 to 16 μ in diameter, reproducing by budding. In cultures, besides these globular elements, rudimentary mycelial tubes may occasionally be found, presenting lateral or terminal conidia; ascospores are absent. The fungus does not ferment glucose or saccharose.

***Cryptococcus hominis* Vuillemin 1901.**

Synonyms.—*Saccharomyces* (sp.?) Busse 1894, *Atelosaccharomyces busse-buschki* de Beurmann and Gougerot 1909, *Atelosaccharomyces rudeli* de Beurmann and Gougerot 1911.

Found in abscesses in a woman by Busse. In the pus the fungus presented itself in the shape of oval bodies, with a membrane having

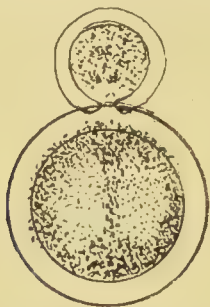


FIG. 374. — CRYPTO-
COCCUS GILCHRISTI
VUILLEMIN.
(After Gilchrist.)

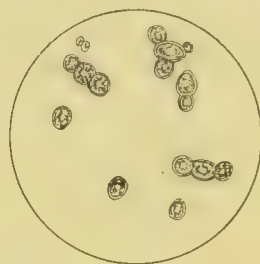


FIG. 375.—CRYPTO-
COCCUS LINGUÆ
PILOSÆ LUCET.
(After Lucet, from
Brumpt).

a double contour. These elements were arranged in groups, each group being surrounded by a capsule. Culturally the fungus showed only roundish budding forms, no mycelium, no asci.

***Cryptococcus lingua-pilosae* Lucet 1901.**

Synonym.—*Saccharomyces lingua-pilosae* Lucet 1901.

Found by Lucet and others in cases of so-called 'black tongue.' It appears on the surface of the hypertrophied lingual papillæ in the shape of roundish bodies, with double contour, 3 to 6 μ in diameter. Grows easily on sugar media. Attempts to reproduce the disease have failed.

The condition known under the name of 'lingua nigra' is caused in addition to the above fungus, in some cases by *Rhizopus niger*, in other cases by *Nocardia lingualis*.

***Cryptococcus plimmeri* Costantin 1901.**

Found by Plimmer in many cases of cancer; is probably only a saprophyte. In the tissues roundish bodies of various sizes, 4 to

40 μ in diameter are seen, occasionally budding, and either free or intracellular. Cultivation has succeeded only on one occasion.

Cryptococcus degenerans Vuillemin 1896.

Synonym.—*Blastomyces vitrosimile degenerans* Roncali 1896.

Found by Roncali and others in malignant tumours, sarcomata, and carcinomata. Easily grown; on potatoes it attains a much larger size than on any other medium. Pathogenic for guinea-pigs.

Cryptococcus corsellii Neveu-Lemaire 1908.

Found by Corselli and Frisco in a sarcoma of the mesenteric glands. The fungus appeared in the tumours under the shape of black masses. It was easily cultivated, and found pathogenic to guinea-pigs, rabbits, and dogs.

Cryptococcus hessleri Rettger 1904.

Synonym.—*Blastomyces hessleri* Rettger 1904.

Isolated by Hessler from a small tumour which developed on a patient after a razor-cut. Easily cultivated, especially on alkaline media. Pathogenic for the rabbit and guinea-pig.

Cryptococcus breweri Verdun 1912.

Synonym.—*Atelosaccharomyces breweri* Verdun 1912.

Found by Brewer and Wood in an abscess of the vertebral column. Reproduction by budding only. Does not ferment any sugar.

Cryptococcus tonkini Legendre 1911.

Synonym.—*Blastomyces tonkini* Legendre 1911.

Found by Legendre in two cases of blastomycosis in Indo-China. Pinoy considers that the characters given are not sufficient to create a new species for it.

Cryptococcus sulfureus Beauverie and Lesieur 1912.

Found by Beauverie and Lesieur in certain pharyngeal lesions of a case of typhoid. Ferments slightly dextrose, saccharose, and lactose.

Cryptococcus lesiewurii Beauverie and Lesieur 1912.

Found in a case of stomatitis. Ferments dextrose only.

Cryptococcus salmoneus Sartory 1911.

Described by Sartory. Found in cases of stomatitis.

Cryptococcus guillermonti Beauverie and Lesieur.

Found by Guillermond and Lesieur in cases of stomatitis.

Genus Coccidioides Rixford and Gilchrist 1897.

Temporary genus not yet well defined, with intermediate characters between *Saccharomyces* and *Monilia*. One species only: *Coccidioides immitis* Stiles 1897.

Coccidioides immitis Stiles 1897.

Synonyms.—*Coccidioides pyogenes* Rixford and Gilchrist 1897, *Oidium coccidioides* Ophüls 1905, *O. protozoides* Ophüls 1905, *Posadasia esferiforme* Canton 1898, *Oidium immitis* Verdun 1907.

Discovered by Wernicke in 1882 in America in a patient with patches resembling a tuberculide, and gummata. In the lesions roundish bodies are seen of various sizes, 3 to 80 μ in diameter, with a well-defined thick membrane. Inside some of the bodies, numerous spores may be seen.

Cultures.—The fungus grows under two types: (1) a saccharomyces-like type, reproducing by budding; (2) a filamentous type.

The colonies are roundish, slightly elevated, but deepening into the medium. They are grey or white, but when old often become brownish. In old cultures chlamydo-spores may be present. The biochemical properties of the fungus are not known.

Pathogenicity.—The fungus induces in man a type of blastomycosis. It is pathogenic to monkeys, mice, guinea-pigs, and rabbits. It probably lives saprophytic in nature.

FAMILY GYMNOASCEÆ.

Spherical perithecium, the walls of which are formed by mycelial filaments. At the extremities of these mycelial threads ascus fructifications are found. Besides vegetating under this type, the Gymnoasceæ can also vegetate under a filamentous or conidial form without any formation of asci. It is under this second form that most of the Gymnoasceæ parasitic on man vegetate.

The genera *Microsporon*, *Trichophyton*, *Achorion*, are at the present time considered to belong to the family Gymnoasceæ on account of the following facts:—

1. These three genera, as demonstrated by Matruchot and Dassonville, have the greatest resemblance to the filamentous type of some typical Gymnoasceæ.

2. A species of Gymnoasceæ, *Ctenomyces serratus*, when living saprophytically, shows perithecia and ascus fructifications; when inoculated into animals, vegetates under a filamentous form very similar to a *Trichophyton*, and gives rise to a *Trichophyton* eruption.

The genera of the Gymnoasceæ containing human parasitic species are the following: (1) *Microsporon*; (2) *Trichophyton*; (3) *Epidermophyton*; (4) *Achorion*; (5) *Endodermophyton*; (6) *Lophophyton*; (7) *Oospora*; (8) *Montoyella*.

Genus Microsporon Gruby 1843.

The fungi belonging to this genus are generally parasitic in the hairs and hair follicles, but may attack glabrous parts. When parasitic in the hairs, they are characterized by the mycelial spores being roundish, small (2 to 3 μ), and irregularly arranged in a mosaic-like manner. They are easily cultivated on Sabouraud's and other sugar media (see Genus *Trichophyton*, p. 778). In cultures

the microsporons proliferate by *sprouting* with branching of the mycelium ; and also, often, by—

1. *Spore-Bearing Hyphæ*—of type *Acladium*, the conidia being oval, 3 to 4 μ in length, and 2 to 3 μ in breadth. They are not supported by short stigmata, as is the case in the genus *Trichophyton*.

2. *Terminal Septate or Non-Septate Spindles*.—These structures are found at the end of certain filaments, and may be considered to be modified terminal conidia. They are large fusiform structures, 30 to 60 μ in length, and 15 to 18 μ in breadth. They have granular contents, and may be septate or non-septate. The surface, especially at the apex, presents some peculiar hair-like formations which are not observed in the spindles of the fungi of the genus *Trichophyton*.

3. *Chlamydospores*.—Certain mycelial articles become expanse, ovoid, or ampulliform, 12 to 18 μ in length, and 6 to 8 μ in breadth. Their protoplasm may be granular, and the membrane may become much thicker and have a double contour. These elements are chlamydospores. They are generally found when the fungi vegetate under unfavourable conditions. Another structure often seen in fungi of the genus *Microsporon* are the so-called *denticulate* or *pectinate bodies*, which are mycelial segments, generally curved, showing on one side—the convex side as a rule—several small protruding processes. Bodin has demonstrated these processes to be mycelial tubes arrested in their development.

Pleomorphism.—After a time, and often rapidly, the cultures of microsporons lose their characteristics and become pleomorphic. This phenomenon is not very prominent, however, in the most important species—viz., *Microsporon audouini*, while it is very accentuated in some microsporons of animal origin, especially *M. minimum*, in which, according to the complete investigation carried out by Bodin, two types may be met with:—

1. THE DOWNY TYPE (*Acladium* type).

2. THE GLABROUS TYPE (*Endoconidium* type).

1. THE DOWNY TYPE is found on the ordinary sugar media in which there is an abundant development of white duvet. Microscopically, fructifications of the type *Acladium* are seen, the spore-bearing hyphæ presenting numerous lateral sexile conidia. Subcultures will always give rise to the same downy type.

2. THE GLABROUS TYPE is observed on wart agar. The growth has a smooth surface, without duvet. Microscopically, short strings of hyaline ovoid or cylindrical conidia are seen inside the terminal segments of the fertile hyphæ. Lateral conidia are absent.

Mode of Infection.—Infection takes place from man to man in the case of microsporons of human origin ; from the lower animals to man in the case of microsporons of animal origin. The human microsporons (*M. audouini*, *M. velveticum*, *M. umbonatum*, *M. tardum*) do not seem to be inoculable into the lower animals.

TABLE SHOWING MICROSPORONS PARASITIC ON MAN.

Genus.		Species.
Microsporon Gruby 1843	{ of human origin	M. audouini Gruby 1843.
		M. velveticum Sabouraud 1907.
		M. umbonatum Sabouraud 1907.
		M. tardum Sabouraud 1909.
	{ of animal origin	M. minimum Le Calvé et Malherbe 1898.
		M. lanosum Sabouraud 1907.
		M. felineum C. Fox and Blaxall 1896.
		M. fulvum Uriburu 1907.
		M. pubescens Sabouraud 1909.
		M. villosus Minne 1907.
		M. tomentosum Pelagatti 1909.
		M. iris Pasini 1912.
		M. flavescens Horta 1912.
		M. depauperatum Guéguen 1912.

Some species (*M. audouini*, *M. velveticum*, *M. umbonatum*, *M. tardum*) seem to be parasitic on man only; others (*M. lanosum*, *M. felineum*, *M. minimum*, etc.) are parasitic on the lower animals, but occasionally infect man.

Microsporon audouini Gruby 1843.

This parasite was described by Gruby in 1843, but his investigation was forgotten, till Sabouraud, in his classical researches on ringworm in 1892, demonstrated the plurality of species of the fungi found in this affection, and showed that a form of *tinea capitis* was due to the microsporon described by Gruby.

Parasitic Life.—Around the affected hairs the fungus forms by means of its mycelial spores a white opaque sheath, extending 2 or 3 millimetres above the opening of the hair follicle. The sheath is composed of a mosaic of small, roundish, or polyhedral spores, the diameter of which varies between 2 and 3 μ . In the interior of the hair a few mycelial filaments of the fungus may be observed. The fungus very seldom attacks glabrous parts of the body.

Saprophytic Life—Cultures.—*Microsporon audouini* grows well on Sabouraud's maltose agar and other media. The rate of growing is slow. In maltose agar the growth becomes evident about a week after inoculation under the appearance of a plaque of a so-called 'satiny aspect,' beneath the surface. In a few days more, aerial hyphæ develop, extending above the surface. When the development is complete—generally this takes about six to eight weeks—the growth is roundish, covered with short greyish duvet, and presents often a central knob, and some concentric rings of a whitish-greyish colour. The cultural characters, however, are variable, and pleomorphism occurs. The cultural characters have been thoroughly investigated by Sabouraud, Fox and Blaxall, Bodin, and others. The fungus very slowly liquefies gelatine; on potatoes it produces a brownish discoloration compared by Sabouraud to the colour of dried blood.

Reproduction.—This takes place—

1. By sprouts from the mycelial tubes.
2. By small terminal and lateral conidia, there being spore-bearing hyphæ of type *Acladium* (see Fig. 376).
3. By large unilocular or multilocular spindle conidia. These spindles are large structures 30 to 60 μ in length, and 15 to 18 μ in breadth. They may be septate or non-septate.
4. By formation of chlamydospores.

Pathogenicity.—*Microsporon audouini* causes the most obstinate form of tinea capitis. The patches affected are often large, scaly, and present stumps, provided with an opaque whitish sheath. It seldom attacks glabrous parts of the body. *M. audouini* is extremely common in England; but rare in the South of Europe

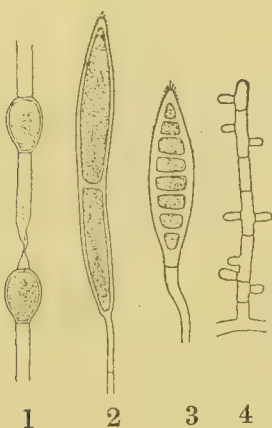


FIG. 376.—MICROSPORON AUDOUINI GRUBY.

(After Bodin.)

1, Chlamydospores; 2, spindle; 3, pluriseptate spindle; 4, spore-bearing hypha, type *Acladium*.



FIG. 377.—MICROSPORON AUDOUINI GRUBY.

(From cultures.)

1, Septate spindle body; 2, mycelium, with denticulated structures.

Italy), and extremely rare in the tropics. We have never seen cases of ringworm due to *M. audouini* in Equatorial Africa or Ceylon, but a few cases have been described in Brazil, in Madagascar, and in Senegal.

M. audouini seems to live only on the human subject, but closely allied species have been found by Fox in cats, by Bodin in dogs, and by Bodin, Fox, and others, in horses.

***Microsporon velveticum* Sabouraud 1907.**

Resembles closely *M. audouini*, but the cultures are more velvety, the duvet being white instead of greyish, and of closer growth. Not inoculable into guinea-pigs. This species seems to be fairly common in North America.

Microsporon umbonatum Sabouraud 1907.

Found by Sabouraud in two cases of microsporiasis of the scalp contracted in Russia. The appearance of the growth when it has reached complete development (about twenty-five to thirty days after inoculation) has been compared by Sabouraud to the appearance of an ancient round shield, with a central conical formation representing the *umbo* of the shield. Not inoculable into guinea-pigs.

Microsporon tardum Sabouraud 1909.

Found by Sabouraud in cases of microsporiasis capitis to be clinically identical with the type caused by *M. audouini*. Differs from *M. audouini* by the growth being much slower and scantier, and the duvet being shorter.

Microsporon lanosum Sabouraud 1907.

Synonym.—*Microsporon audouini* var. *canis* Bodin 1897.

Commonly found in dogs. May affect man, causing a type of severe tinea capitis; may also produce forms of tinea barbæ and tinea corporis.

On Sabouraud's agar the growth is at first similar to *M. audouini*, only more abundant and more downy. Later—twenty-five to thirty days from inoculation—the central portion of the growth becomes umbilicated, the depression being surrounded by a ring of snow-white duvet, which in very old cultures may become yellowish. Pleomorphism is common.

Microsporon felineum C. Fox and Blaxall 1896.

Common in the cat in England, North America, and Belgium; may infect man, attacking hairy and non-hairy regions of the body. On Sabouraud's agar the growth is rather abundant, discoid, with flattened surface, showing no furrows, and covered with a large amount of grey duvet. The fungus is easily inoculable into cats, dogs, and guinea-pigs.

Microsporon minimum Le Calvé and Malherbe 1898.

Synonyms.—*Microsporon audouini* var. *equinum* Bodin 1896, *Trichophyton minimum* Le Calvé and Malherbe 1898.

Very common in foals; may infect man, giving rise to a mild type of tinea corporis, which gets cured spontaneously.

On Sabouraud's and glucose agar the growth is deeply furrowed, and, in contrast to all other microsporon, duvet is absent, or, when present, is very scanty, very short, and of a pinkish colour.

Microsporon fulvum Uriburu 1907.

Found by Uriburu in cases of tinea capitis in the Argentine. It grows very rapidly on Sabouraud's agar, the growth presenting a central *umbo*, or projection, surrounded by a brownish powdery ring. The peripheral zone of the growth is covered with white duvet.

Microsporon pubescens Sabouraud 1909.

Discovered by Sabouraud in a case of tinea capitis contracted in New York. It grows rapidly on Sabouraud's medium, the culture being characterized by the presence of abundant but very delicate silky duvet. At complete development—about thirty days from inoculation—the growth may have a flattened surface, or some furrows, radiating from the centre, may be present. The central portion, which is covered with rather long, white duvet, is encircled by a zone of powdery appearance; outside this there is the peripheral zone covered by the extremely delicate characteristic silky-like duvet.

Microsporon villosum Minne 1907.

Found in Belgium by Minne in a child suffering from ringworm of the hair clinically identical with the type caused by *M. audouini*. On Sabouraud's agar the growth at complete development is about 6 centimetres in diameter; the central portion is flattened, with powdery, slightly brownish surface. This is surrounded by mammillary, downy formations, which decrease in size towards the periphery.

Microsporon tomentosum Pelagatti 1909.

Found by Pelagatti in Sardinia in a case of microsporiasis capitis, clinically identical with the usual type caused by *M. audouini*. It grows rapidly on Sabouraud's agar. The growth at complete development has a somewhat flattened appearance, but several furrows are present, originating from the central portion, which may be umbilicated. The whole surface is covered by thin white duvet.

Microsporon iris Pasini 1911.

Discovered by Pasini in Italy in some cases of microsporiasis capitis, clinically somewhat different from the usual type. The fungus grows well on Sabouraud's agar. At complete development—twenty-two to twenty-six days from inoculation—the growth presents a central knob covered with white duvet, and surrounded by white and brick-red rings, alternating.

The microsporiasis capitis due to this microsporon is characterized by the hairs remaining nearly of normal length, and presenting a white-greenish discoloration.

Microsporon flavescens P. Horta 1912.

Isolated by Horta from some circinate squamous patches situate on the neck of a child in Brazil. Grows rapidly on Sabouraud's agar: the growth is of a yellow colour; there is a depression at the centre, from which radiate four or five shallow furrows. Pleomorphic duvet appears quickly.

Microsporon depauperatum F. Guéguen 1912.

Isolated by Guéguen from some circinate, dry, squamous patches. In cultures the membrane of some nucleal filaments presents peculiar thickenings. Spore-bearing hyphæ are not so well differentiated as in other species.

Genus Trichophyton Malmsten 1848.

The mycelial spores, as found in the affected parts and hairs, are large (4 to 7 μ). In cultures reproduction takes place by conidia, supported by short sterigmata, and terminal spindles. Presence of spiral hyphæ. Hairy and non-hairy parts of the body may be attacked.

General Considerations.—During their parasitic life the species of the genus *Trichophyton* vegetate according to two types: (1) mycelial filaments; (2) mycelial spores.

The mycelial filaments consist of long cylindrical cells, separated by septa. The so-called mycelial spores are simply a modification of the mycelial filaments, due to the septa being much closer, so that the cells limited by them are almost as broad as they are long. The term 'mycelial spores' is incorrect, as they are not organs of reproduction, but only vegetative organs.

When the shape of these mycelial spores or sporulating mycelia is roundish or oval, the filament takes a moniliform appearance. Moreover, these cells are easily dissociated. Such a type is called 'fragile mycelium.' To this type belongs, for instance, *Trichophyton sabouraudi* R. Blanchard.

When the mycelial spores are square, the filament straight, and its articles long, the mycelium is called 'resistant.' This type is observed, for example, in *Trichophyton tonsurans* Malmsten.

Cultivation.—Most *Trichophytons* can be cultivated, some cannot. The best medium is Sabouraud's maltose agar, the composition of which is the following:—

Maltose	4 grammes.
Peptone Chassaing	1 gramme.
Agar	1.50 grammes.
Distilled water	100 c.c.

On this medium, however, pleomorphism is of frequent occurrence.

Pleomorphism.—Cultures on maltose and other sugar agars of all *Trichophytons*, with the single exception of *T. sabouraudi*, becoming old, lose their characteristics and become covered with abundant white duvet. In these cultures, which can be considered degenerate, and are generally called 'pleomorphic,' organs of fructification are usually absent. By transplanting these cultures, the same pleomorphic, downy type of growth will be obtained; never again will the growth show the characteristics of the original young cultures directly obtained from the lesions. It is impossible to return to the original type, even by animal inoculations.

To prevent pleomorphism, Sabouraud advises the following medium :

Agar	..	..	..	..	1.8 grammes.
Pepton Chassaing	..	..	..	..	3 to 5 grammes.
Water	..	..	..	..	100 c.c.

On this medium the growth of the various *Trichophytons* is much less abundant than on sugar media, but the cultures are fairly characteristic, and do not become pleomorphic.

Experimental Inoculations.—Certain *Trichophytons* can be easily inoculated experimentally into man and many of the laboratory animals—guinea-pigs, rabbits, etc. Sabouraud advises the inoculation of portions of the cultures to be made into a small flictena, artificially induced by burning, such as by applying to the skin a lighted match.

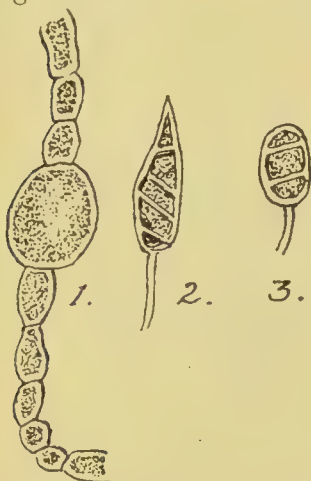


FIG. 378.—TRICOPHYTON.
(Preparation from cultures,
after Bodin.)

1, Chlamydospore; 2 and
3, septate spindle bodies.

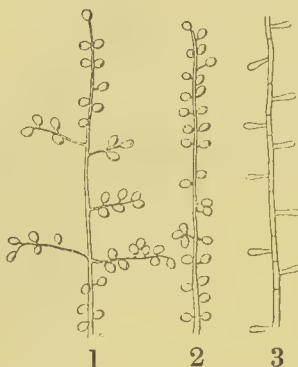


FIG. 379.—FRUCTIFI-
CATIONS.

1, 2, Spore-bearing
hyphae (*Trichophyton*);
3, spore-bearing hypha
(*Microsporon*).

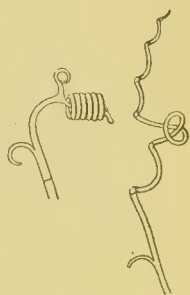


FIG. 380.—TRICOPHYTON: SPIRAL
BODIES.

The *intravenous* injection may induce generalized lesions of the internal organs.

The *intraperitoneal* injection as done by Citron may induce a type of peritoneal pseudo-tuberculosis.

Mode of Infection.—Infection may take place from man to man—this is generally the case with *Trichophytons* of the group *endothrix*—or from the lower animals to man—this is usually the case with the *Trichophytons* of the *endo-ectothrix* and *ectothrix* type. There is also little doubt that *Trichophytons* may live saprophytically in nature, this explaining sporadic cases of trichophytoses in man.

Reproduction.—This takes place by—

1. Lateral and terminal conidia, supported by short sterigmata.
2. Chlamydospores; these are rare.
3. Large terminal septate and unseptate spindles.

Classification.—*Trichophytons* can be divided into the following groups:—

I. ENDOTHRIX.—The fungus develops in the interior of the hair ; does not cause suppuration ; and is of human origin only.

II. ECTOTHRIX (ENDO-ECTOTHRIX).—The fungus is present only on the surface of the hair, or both on the surface, forming a sheath, and in the interior ; often pyogenic, and of animal origin. They are divided into two groups—those having small spores (type *microïdes*) and those having large spores (type *megalosporon*).

III. TRICHOPHYTONS NOT INVADING THE HAIRS AND HAIR FOLLICLES.—The fungi do not attack the hair or hair-follicles, and do not cause suppuration.

The species constituting the third group are: *T. albiscicans*, *T. blanchardi*, *T. ceylonense*, *T. macfadyeni*. It is to be noted that the botanical position of these fungi is not yet certain.

TABLE SHOWING TRICHOPHYTONS FOUND IN MAN (PARTLY FROM SABOURAUD).

I. Endothrix			<ul style="list-style-type: none"> T. tonsurans Malmsten 1845. T. sabouraudi R. Blanchard 1895. T. pilosum Sabouraud 1909. T. violaceum Bodin 1902. T. glabrum Sabouraud 1909. T. soudanense C. Joyeux 1912. T. sulphureum C. Fox 1908. T. fumatum Sabouraud 1909. T. flavum Bodin 1902. T. effractum Sabouraud 1909. T. plicatile Sabouraud 1909. T. circonvolutum Sabouraud 1909. T. exsiccatum Uriburu 1909. T. polygonum Uriburu 1909. T. regulare Sabouraud 1909. T. umbilicatum Sabouraud 1909.
II. Ectothrix (endo-ectothrix)	Type <i>microïdes</i> (small spores)		<ul style="list-style-type: none"> T. mentagrophytes Ch. Robin 1853. T. farinulentum Sabouraud 1910. T. persicolor Sabouraud 1910. T. granulosum Sabouraud 1908. T. lacticolor Sabouraud 1910. T. radiolatum Sabouraud 1910. T. felineum R. Blanchard 1895. T. denticulatum Sabouraud 1910.
	Type <i>megalosporon</i> (large spores)	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> Faviform type Downy type 	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> T. verrucosum Bodin 1902. T. ochraceum Sabouraud 1909. T. album Sabouraud 1909. T. discoides Sabouraud 1909. T. equinum Gedoelst 1902. T. rosaceum Sabouraud 1902. T. vinosum Sabouraud 1910. T. nodoformans Castellani 1912.
III. Not attacking the hairs (tropical trichophytons)			<ul style="list-style-type: none"> T. albiscicans Vieuwenhuis 1907. T. blanchardi Castellani 1905. T. ceylonense Castellani 1908. T. macfadyeni Castellani 1905.

I. *Trichophyton endothrix*.**Trichophyton tonsurans** Malmsten 1845.

Synonyms.—*Trichomyces tonsurans* Malmsten 1845, *Oidium tonsurans* Zopf 1890, *T. megalosporum endothrix* Sabouraud 1894, *T. crateriforme* Bodin 1902, which is the term in current use in dermatological literature.

Causes a type of tinea capitis somewhat rare in England, but common on the Continent. The hairs are broken 2 to 4 millimetres from the scalp, and the stumps are variously bent. The diseased hairs have a powdery, greyish appearance, and on pulling them out the roots are not black, as in normal hairs. It belongs to the type Endothrix. The mycelial cells are large (4 to 5 μ), quadrangular (so-called resistant mycelium type).

Grows well on maltose agar and other media; on maltose agar colonies are white or yellowish, often crateriform, and present a velvety surface at first, later powdery. In hanging-drop cultivations spore-bearing fructifications can be seen.

T. tonsurans, besides producing a type of tinea capitis, produces also a form of tinea corporis and a trichophytosis of the nails.

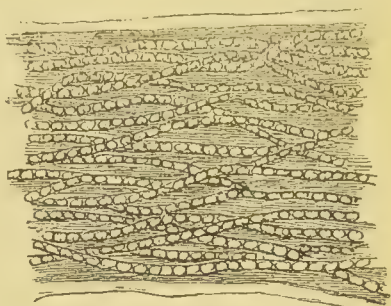


FIG. 381.—TRICHOPHYTON TONSURANS MALMSTEN.
(Preparation of a hair in liquor potassæ, after Sabouraud.)

Trichophyton sabouraudi R. Blanchard 1895.

Synonym.—*Trichophyton acuminatum* Bodin 1902. This is the term commonly used in dermatological works.

This *Trichophyton* is of the type Endothrix. Mycelial threads have a moniliform appearance, and their articles become easily dissociated (so-called fragile mycelium). Grows well on maltose agar, giving rise to conical white colonies; often acuminate with central plumes, and occasionally may present yellowish or pinkish rings; older cultures may present a powdery surface of a dark pinkish colour. Pleomorphism always absent. In hanging-drop cultures aerial filaments with lateral conidia are seen.

T. sabouraudi causes a form of tinea capitis called by Sabouraud 'tondante peladoide,' and also a variety of tinea circinata.

The tinea capitis induced by this fungus is also known under the name of 'black-dotted ringworm.' The hairs get broken lower than in the type of ringworm caused by *T. tonsurans*. The stumps are on the same level as the surface of the scalp, and appear as black dots.

Trichophyton pilosum Sabouraud 1909.

Very similar to *T. sabouraudi*, from which it differs only by the cultures being covered, when old, by a dense, short, white duvet.

Trichophyton soudanense C. Joyeux 1912.

Endothrix; very similar to *T. tonsurans*. In the hairs the mycelial spores are generally rectangular, arranged in long strings. On Sabouraud's agar the growth appears three to four days after inoculation as a small yellow nodule; later, the peripheral portion of the growth appears white. It has been found by C. Joyeux in cases of tinea capitis in the Sudan.

Trichophyton violaceum Bodin 1902.

Discovered by Sabouraud in cases of tinea barbæ; type Endothrix. The growth on maltose agar is of a light brownish or greyish colour, with moist surface, and later becomes violet.

This species is common in Italy and North Africa. In Ceylon this fungus, or a variety of it, produces a type of very common ringworm of the scalp in children, with white patches covered by enormous numbers of pityriasic squamæ. The patches remain permanently bald. The Ceylon fungus is endo-ectothrix, and although culturally is hardly distinguishable from *T. violaceum*, may possibly be a different variety (var. *decalvans* Castellani).

Trichophyton glabrum Sabouraud 1909.

Closely allied to *T. violaceum*, but shows a more rapid growth, and no violet pigmentation develops. Surface smooth and moist.

Trichophyton sulphureum C. Fox 1908.

Described by Colcott Fox in some cases of tinea capitis in England. Endothrix type. On Sabouraud's agar the growth is characterized by a central reddish nodule, which later becomes crateriform, assuming a speckled appearance. The rest of the culture has a delicate but distinct primrose or sulphur colour.

Trichophyton flavum Bodin 1902.

Synonym.—*Trichophyton cerebriforme* Sabouraud 1909.

Differs from *T. tonsurans* by the cultures being cerebriform, and by becoming creamy-white when old.

Pathogenicity.—Induces a type of tinea corporis and a form of sycosis. Inoculable into guinea-pigs.

Trichophyton plicatile Sabouraud 1909.

Colonies closely resemble those of *T. tonsurans*, but have a creased appearance with white, powdery surface. Found by Sabouraud in cases of sycosis. Sequeira has observed it in a case of trichophytic granuloma.

Trichophyton circonvolutum.

Endothrix; somewhat similar to *T. plicatile*; the growth has a convoluted surface. Found by Sabouraud in cases of trichophytosis contracted in the Sudan and Dahomy.

Trichophyton exsiccatum Uriburu 1909.

Found in Argentina by Uriburu. Endothrix; very slow growth; crateriform colonies, with surface finely cracked, and of a dry aspect.

Trichophyton polygonum Uriburu 1909.

Endothrix. The growth is at first roundish, then takes a characteristic polygonal outline. The central part is crateriform.

Trichophyton regulare Sabouraud 1909.

Endothrix; very similar to *T. tonsurans*, the cultures being at first crateriform; then, the edges of the crater becoming undermined, the growth takes a peculiar pouch-like shape, with several radiating small sulci. The characters of the fungus show always the greatest regularity, never changing; hence the name *T. regulare* given to it by Sabouraud. This fungus was found by Dalla Farera.

Trichophyton umbilicatum Sabouraud 1909.

Endothrix; cultures are deeply umbilicated; present at the periphery fine radiating hyphæ, forming a sort of aureola.

Trichophyton fumatum Sabouraud 1909.

Cultures crateriform taking when old a yellowish-brownish colour, compared by Sabouraud to the colour of a dead leaf. This *Trichophyton* is fairly common in some parts of Italy.

Trichophyton effractum Sabouraud 1909.

Cultures at first very similar to those of *T. tonsurans*, being crateriform; when old, the growth becomes very dry, and the surface splits from the edge.

II. *Trichophytons* Endo-Ectothrix.**Trichophyton mentagrophytes** Ch. Robin 1853.

Synonyms.—*Microsporon mentagrophytes* Robin 1853, *Sporotrichum mentagrophytes* Soccardo 1886, *Trichophyton gypseum* Bodin 1902, *T. asteroides* Sabouraud 1909.

Endo-ectothrix; mycelial spores are mostly situated outside the cuticle of the hair, while a few are found in the interior. The latter are 5 to 6 μ in size; those outside, forming the parasitic sheath, are of very unequal size (2 to 11 μ).

On Sabouraud's agar the growth is of white colour; the centre is somewhat elevated and covered by duvet; the rest of the growth has a powdery surface, and often presents several radiating furrows. At the periphery numerous tapering projections are observed. This *Trichophyton* is of animal origin, being found in horses, cows, dogs, and, perhaps, pigs and sheep. In man, it is pyogenic, causing a type of trichophytic sycosis, kerion, and also a pustular type of tinea corporis.

The following five species are very closely allied to *T. mentagrophytes* :—

***Trichophyton farinulentum* Sabouraud 1910.**

Synonym.—*Trichophyton gypseum* Bodin 1902 *pro parte*.

Found in cases of kerion by Sabouraud. On maltose agar the growth is at first discoid, umbilicated, with a white powdery surface and several radiating furrows. Later, the central part becomes raised, forming a knob covered with white duvet. On agar media not containing sugars the growth is at first smooth, without any duvet, of moist appearance and yellow colour; while later the central part becomes downy, and the peripheral portions take a powdery aspect.

***Trichophyton persicolor* Sabouraud 1910.**

Synonym.—*Trichophyton gypseum* Bodin 1902 *pro parte*.

Found by Sabouraud in cases of pustular ringworm of the palms of the hands and of the beard. In contrast to all other species of *Trichophyton*s, it grows better on agar without sugar than on sugar media. The cultures are of a pinkish-reddish colour. The appearance of the colonies has been aptly compared by Adamson to the skin of a very ripe peach.

***Trichophyton granulosum* Sabouraud 1908.**

Synonym.—*Trichophyton gypseum* Bodin 1902 *pro parte*.

The growth on Sabouraud's agar is discoid, often umbilicated; powdery surface of a white-yellowish colour, with granular formations or prominences dotted all over.

This *Trichophyton* is found in the horse, in which it produces a peculiar type of trichophytosis, with extremely numerous, very small, patches. It has been observed in man in Italy by Dalla Farera.

***Trichophyton lacticolor* Sabouraud 1910.**

Synonym.—*Trichophyton gypseum* Bodin *pro parte*.

The cultures are discoid, flattened, with shallow furrows radiating from the centre. The colour is cream-white, with occasionally a slight yellow tinge. In old cultures there is abundant pleomorphic duvet. Can easily be inoculated into the guinea-pig.

***Trichophyton radiolatum* Sabouraud 1910.**

Synonym.—*Trichophyton gypseum* Bodin *pro parte*.

Isolated by Sabouraud from cases of kerion. Very similar to *T. mentagrophytes*, from which it differs in cultures by the colour being of less pure white, and by the radiating projections being less marked or absent. After three to four weeks abundant white pleomorphic duvet appears.

***Trichophyton felineum* R. Blanchard 1895.**

Synonyms.—*Trichophyton niveum* Sabouraud, *T. radians* Sabouraud 1909.

Endo-ectothrix; causes often a pustular ringworm of the body; less frequently attacks the hairs. In the pustules free spores and a few mycelial elements are seen; in the affected hairs the spores forming the parasitic sheath are of large dimensions, 7 to 9 μ in diameter. The growth on Sabouraud's medium is umbilicated, with a white powdery surface and numerous radiating projections at the periphery.

Pathogenicity.—This fungus is found in the cat, and probably also in horses, cattle, dogs, sheep, and pigs. In man it causes a type

of kerion celsi and also a type of vesiculo-pustular tinea corporis, called by Sabouraud 'trichophytosis circinata disidriiformis,' and 'herpes iris vesiculosus' by Bielt.

Trichophyton denticulatum Sabouraud 1910.

Synonym.—*Trichophyton niveum* Sabouraud *pro parte*.

Almost identical with *T. felineum*, but in cultures the radiating projections are much shorter and more pointed.

Trichophyton verrucosum Bodin 1895.

Endo-ectothrix, megalosporon, faviform. This fungus, though producing typical trichophytic lesions when parasitic, shows cultural characters somewhat similar to an achorion, the growth, which is white, being often convoluted or cerebriform. It is found in donkeys, and may infect man. The same or similar species are found parasitic on the horse and on some birds, and may also affect man.

Trichophyton ochraceum Sabouraud 1909.

Type Ectothrix, of animal origin; cultures somewhat similar to favus. On maltose and glucose agars the colonies are characterized by an ochre yellow knob; portions of the growth may be covered by an extremely short, almost invisible, duvet. On ordinary agar the surface of the colonies is cerebriform. Optimum temperature, 25° C. It is easily inoculated into guinea-pigs.

Trichophyton album Sabouraud 1907.

The cultures are extremely like favus, but are generally less bulging, more deeply umbilicated, and more regularly folded; the growth deepens in the medium; some white duvet present. Optimum temperature, 25° C. Can be inoculated into guinea-pigs.

Trichophyton discoides Sabouraud 1909.

Endo-ectothrix, megalosporon, faviform. Somewhat similar to *T. album*, but the growth, which is almost a perfect disc, has a more flattened surface. There is often a central knob. The whole growth has a brownish-yellowish colour, with a moist surface, somewhat resembling the non-pigmented cultures of *T. violaceum*.

Trichophyton equinum Geddoelst 1902.

Endo-ectothrix, megalosporon, downy-culture type. Mycelial spores of oval shape, 4 to 6 μ in length, 2 to 4 μ in breadth. On maltose agar the growth is orbicular, with abundant duvet; later on, the portion of the growth which is in contact with the medium becomes yellowish and afterwards dark red. It is parasitic in the horse, and may infect man.

Trichophyton megnini R. Blanchard 1895.

Synonyms.—*Trichophyton roseum* Bodin 1902, *T. rosaceum* Sabouraud 1902.

Endo-ectothrix, megalosporon, downy-culture type. Mycelial spores found in the hairs are very large, 8 to 9 μ in diameter. On maltose agar the growth is at first white, with a velvety appearance, later, pinkish, or of a deep rose colour. Duvet becomes very abundant in old cultures. It is parasitic in fowls and pigeons; may infect man, causing a variety of tinea barbæ without suppuration.

Trichophyton vinosum Sabouraud 1909.

Endo-ectothrix, megalosporon, of downy-culture type. Is very similar to *T. megnini*, but the colour of old cultures is of a deep wine-red colour. Abundant duvet. Found by Sabouraud in a case of tinea circinata.

Trichophyton nodoformans Castellani 1912.

Found in Ceylon in cases of dhobi itch and tinea barbæ; not very abundant in the lesions. On Sabouraud's agar the growth is white, with a powdery surface and a central small knob. The growth deepens in the medium, and the submerged portion has a characteristic brick-red colour, which generally disappears after repeated transplantations. The surface growth is whitish.

Glucose Agar.—Growth somewhat more abundant than in Sabouraud's agar. Colour of the surface and submerged growth white. Red pigment usually absent.

Maltose 4 per cent.—Scanty growth, no pigment.

Glycerine Agar.—Growth fairly abundant, no pigment.

Agar.—Scanty growth, whitish.

Saccharine.—Same as agar.

Adonite.—Same as agar.

Pathogenicity.—The fungus gives rise to a peculiar type of tinea cruris, with very thick, elevated margins and deep-seated nodules. It has pyogenic properties, and may spread to other parts of the body, in addition to the inguinal regions. It is capable of affecting the hair follicles. In one of our cases the fungus affected the hairs of the beard, producing a typical 'kerion barbæ.'

III. *Trichophytos not affecting the Hairs.***Trichophyton albiscicans** Nieuwenhuis 1907.

Discovered by Nieuwenhuis in tinea albigena. In fresh preparations from scrapings spores are absent; the mycelial tubes are straight, occasionally showing a double contour; they are often dichotomous. On Sabouraud's agar the growth is very slow, whitish, with a powdery surface.

Trichophyton blanchardi Castellani 1905.

Synonym.—*Trichophyton sabouraudi* Castellani 1905.

Temporary species, as the fungus has not been grown. In fresh preparations from the lesions the mycelial tubes are not, as a rule, quite straight; they are often banana-shaped; do not show a double contour; the mycelial segments are separated, the mycelial spores are shed without forming a filament by their union, and are of various sizes. All attempts at cultivation have failed. It is the cause of tinea Sabouraudi tropicalis.

Trichophyton ceylonense Castellani 1908.

Found by Castellani in cases of tinea nigro circinata. Temporary species, cultivation having not been obtained; possibly a variety of *T. blanchardi*. In fresh preparations the spores are very few in number, roundish, rather large ($4\ \mu$), showing a double contour. The mycelial tubes are about $3\frac{1}{2}\ \mu$ in breadth, straight, or variously bent. It is found in tinea nigro circinata.

Trichophyton macfadyeni Castellani 1905.

Found by Castellani in some cases of tropical tinea corporis. In fresh preparations mycelium and spores are rather of small dimensions. The mycelial tubes are regularly shaped, do not show swellings, and are about $2\frac{1}{2}\ \mu$ in breadth. The free spores are very numerous, and present a peculiar ovoid shape, the maximum diameter being $2\frac{1}{2}$ to $3\frac{1}{2}\ \mu$. In stained preparations the spores present a bipolar staining. The fungus grows with difficulty; on the rare occasions when the inoculations are successful, the growth is very slow, the colonies coalesce, forming a brownish mass, with deep furrows, and deeply rooted in the medium.

Genus Epidermophyton Lang 1879
emend. Sabouraud 1907.

The fungi belonging to this genus, which has been thoroughly investigated by Sabouraud, grow superficially on the skin without invading the hairs and hair follicles; do not produce suppuration. Reproduction takes place principally by pluriseptate spindles, with, on the average, four to six cells. The septa, as noted by Pinoy, may not be complete, and the cavities may communicate. Spiral hyphæ, as found in most species of *Trichophyton*, absent; pectinate structures, as found in the *Microsporons*, absent; no spore-bearing hyphæ, with lateral conidia of type *Acladium*, as noted both in



FIG. 382.—TRICHOPHYTON
MACFADYENI CASTELLANI.

(Stained with fuchsin.)

the *Trichophytons* and in the *Microsporons*. The cultures undergo rapid degenerative changes, losing their characteristics, and becoming covered with abundant uniform, long, whitish duvet (pleomorphism). They are not inoculable into guinea-pigs, except Pinoy's *Epidermophyton simii*. The species so far known have been isolated from human lesions, except the *Epidermophyton* discovered by Pinoy in monkeys.

TABLE OF EPIDERMOPHYTONS.

Genus.	Species.
Epidermophyton Lang 1879, em. Sabouraud 1907	<i>E. cruris</i> Castellani 1905.
	<i>E. perneti</i> Castellani 1907.
	<i>E. rubrum</i> Castellani 1907.
	<i>E. simii</i> Pinoy 1911.
	<i>E. repens</i> Ekland 1883 (doubtful species).

Epidermophyton cruris Castellani 1905.

Synonyms.—*Trichophyton cruris* Castellani 1905, *Epidermophyton inguinalis* Sabouraud 1907, *T. castellanii* Brooke 1908.

Found in cases of tinea cruris in Ceylon by Castellani, and in France by Sabouraud. The fungus is very abundant in recent cases, extremely scarce in old ones. The mycelial tubes in recent cases are generally straight, have often a double contour, and the segments are somewhat rectangular, their breadth being $3\frac{1}{2}$ to $4\frac{1}{2}$ μ . Branching is not rare. The spores are rather large (4 to 7 μ), roundish, and have generally a double contour; they do not collect in clusters. In chronic cases degeneration forms of the fungus are met with; the mycelium may be banana-shaped, may show several constrictions, or long strings of ovoid elements may be seen.

This *Epidermophyton* grows well, but rather slowly, on Sabouraud's agar. The growth begins to be visible after four to eight days, the colonies being at first of a peculiar yellow colour, lemon-yellowish or orange-yellowish, occasionally with a greenish tinge. Later they become white, with pulverulent surface, and may be acuminate or crateriform. Pleomorphism, with abundant white duvet, develops quickly.

This fungus in Ceylon is the commonest species found in cases of tinea cruris. It is not inoculable into guinea-pigs. Attempts at reproducing the eruption in man by inoculating pure cultures have also failed.

Epidermophyton perneti Castellani 1907.

This fungus has been described by Pernet. It differs from *E. cruris* by growing much more rapidly on Sabouraud's agar and by the cultures having a delicate pinkish colour, which is generally lost in subcultures. It is very rare in Ceylon.

Epidermophyton rubrum Castellani 1909.

Synonym.—*Trichophyton purpureum* Bang 1910.

This fungus was described by Castellani in Ceylon in 1909 and by Bang in France in 1910. On Sabouraud's agar the growth begins to appear four to six days after inoculation as a raised red spot, which gradually enlarges. At complete development the growth is of a deep red colour, either with a central knob or crateriform, and is partly covered with a white, delicate duvet. In old cultures the white duvet is much more abundant and thicker, and may hide the red pigmentation almost completely.

On *glucose agar* (4 per cent.), which is the best medium for this fungus, the growth is of a very deep blood-red colour, and the red pigmentation may spread to portions of the medium itself. In old cultures abundant white—occasionally white-greenish—duvet is present. This may hide the pigmentation, but, scraping out the duvet, the red pigmentation will be found to be still well-marked. On ordinary agar and glycerine agar the fungus grows fairly well, but there is no red pigmentation.

Epidermophyton simii Pinoy 1911.

Discovered by Pinoy in a trichophytic-like eruption observed in a monkey. Completely described by the same author. On Sabouraud's agar the growth is at first yellowish-orange, somewhat similar to *E. cruris*; later, the growth is whitish and covered with white duvet.

Pinoy's fungus has several interesting botanical features, some of which are those of the genera *Microsporon* and *Trichophyton*. In contrast to the typical *Epidermophytons*, it presents spore-bearing hyphæ with lateral conidia, and is inoculable into guinea-pigs, in which it produces a trichophytic-like eruption.

Epidermophyton repens Eklund 1883.

Very doubtful species, found by Eklund in cases of psoriasis. It is not the ætiological agent of the disease.

Genus Achorion Remak 1845.

The fungi belonging to this genus often show during parasitic life much longer mycelial segments than *Trichophytons* and *Microsporons*; masses of them, developing in hair follicles, form the well-known sulphur-coloured *scutula* which always develop round a hair. In the hairs the mycelial tubes are frequently trichotomous and tetrachotomous, forming structures which have been compared in appearance to the skeleton of the human foot, and called 'favus tarsi.'

Cultures.—Sabouraud has noted that in hanging-drop cultures the spores sometimes develop very slowly, sometimes rapidly. When the development is slow, there is formation of numerous

chlamydospores of various sizes, with a double contour membrane. When the development is rapid, one notes that the mycelium ramifies quickly in every direction, with presence of very few or no chlamydospores. The following structures may be noted :

1. *Claviform Bodies*.—The terminal portion of some filaments becomes swollen and claviform. These claviform filaments have been compared by some authorities to the 'spindles' of the *Trichophyton*s and *Microsporons*, but they are slenderer, and not septate. The French authors call these formations 'chandeliers faviques,' on account of their shape somewhat resembling a candle-stick.

2. *Favus Yellow Bodies*.—The protoplasm of some filaments collects itself at the terminal ends, the filaments becoming much thinner, and terminating in roundish or oval bodies, which must be considered to be terminal chlamydospores. It is to be noted that in the typical *Achorions* of human origin conidia-bearing hyphæ are not seen, while these are present in the *Achorions* of animal origin, in which separate spindles may also be present.

Media.—*Achorions* grow well on all the usual sugar media, especially Sabouraud's agar and glucose agar. They generally liquefy gelatine fairly rapidly.

Pleomorphism.—Very common in all *Achorions*. If a culture becomes pleomorphic, it is impossible to make it revert to the original characters.

Transmission.—In the case of *achorions* of human origin infection takes place from man to man ; in the case of *Achorions* of animal origin infection takes place from the lower animals. It is not impossible that *Achorions* may live saprophytically in nature.

TABLE OF ACHORIONS.		
Genus.		Species.
Achorion Remak 1845	{ Of human origin (typical)	{ A. schoenleini Lebert 1845.
	{ Of animal origin (non-typical)	{ A. quinckeanum Zopf 1890. A. gypseum Bodin 1907. A. arloingi Blanchard 1891.

Achorion schoenleini Lebert 1845.

Synonyms.—*Oidium schoenleini* Lebert 1845, *O. porriginis* Montague, *Oospora porriginis* Saccardo 1886, *Oidium schoenleini* Zopf 1890.

Causes the well-known affection called *favus*, which is characterized by the presence of peculiar disc-shaped crust formations, called *scutula*, of a sulphur-yellow colour, and emitting an offensive odour compared to the smell of mice's urine.

The fungus may infect the hairs or glabrous parts of the body ; it may attack the nails. In the hairs the mycelium is very abundant, the segments being comparatively long. Sometimes the mycelial threads divide into three or four branches, each of which

terminates in a single row of roundish spores. This is known as *favic tarsus*.

Cultures.—The fungus is easily cultivated on various media. On Sabouraud's agar and on glucose agar the growth, when completely developed, is convoluted or cerebriform, and somewhat bulging. It has been compared by Sabouraud to the appearance of a sponge. The colour is white-yellowish, like that of old wax. After a time cultures become pleomorphic and abundant; white duvet is present. To prevent pleomorphism, media not containing sugars should be used (see p. 822).

A. schoenleini liquefies gelatine in between three to four days, while the *Trichophytons* take generally between fifteen to twenty days.

By inoculation of pure cultures of the fungus favus lesions are produced in man, dogs, mice, rabbits and fowls. The inocula-

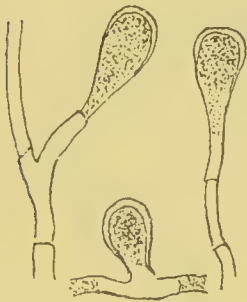


FIG. 383.—SO-CALLED YELLOW BODIES IN CULTURES OF ACHORION SCHOENLEINI LEBERT.
(After Bodin.)

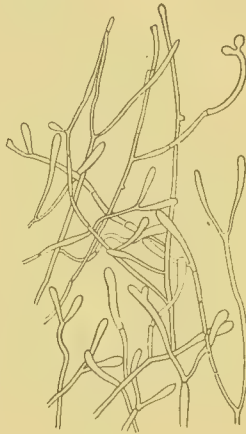


FIG. 384.—CLAVIFORM BODIES IN CULTURES OF ACHORION SCHOENLEINI LEBERT.

tion in guinea-pigs does not give rise to typical favus lesions with scutula, but to circinate trichophytic-like lesions.

Reproduction.—This takes place—

1. By sprouting.
2. By elongated fusiform structures analogous, according to some authorities, to the so-called 'spindles' of the *Trichophytons* and *Microsporons*, but they are slenderer and not septate. These formations are called by the French authors 'chandeliers faviques,' on account of their shape somewhat resembling a candlestick.
3. By so-called 'favus' or 'yellow bodies,' which are structures 8 to 15 μ in diameter, generally terminal, showing a double contour, and containing a granular substance. These structures should probably be considered to be chlamydospores (see also general remarks on the genus *Achorion*).

Sabouraud admits only one species of human *Achorion*, but

Neeb and Unna have described as many as nine: *Achorion cysticum*, *A. tarsiferon*, *A. moniliforme*, *A. demergens*, *A. akromegalicum*, *A. dikroon*, *A. radians*, *A. euthythrrix*, *A. atacton*. Sabouraud's opinion is the one generally accepted at the present time.

***Achorion quinekeanum* Zopf 1890.**

The fungus appears in the lesions in the shape of numerous mycelial filaments associated in so many small segments constituting the spores. Grows readily on Sabouraud's agar, producing white, downy colonies.

This fungus botanically holds an intermediate position between the typical *Achorions* and the *Microsporons* and *Trichophyton*s, conidia bearing hyphæ of the type *Acladium* being present. It produces, however, typical favus lesions with scutula.

Pathogenicity.—Is the cause of favus in mice, and may occasionally infect man, in whom, too, it induces typical favus. It can be inoculated into guinea-pigs.

***Achorion gypseum* Bodin 1907.**

Found by Bodin in 1907 in a typical case of favus. On Sabouraud's agar the growth, which is roundish, presents a little white duvet in the centre, while the rest has a glabrous surface of yellowish colour. Old cultures become pleomorphic, with presence of abundant white duvet all over the growth. Botanically the fungus is closely allied to the *Trichophyton*s and *Microsporons*, but gives rise to typical favus, with scutula, when inoculated in mice and guinea-pigs. The inoculation of pleomorphic cultures does not cause any eruption.

***Achorion arloingi* R. Blanchard 1891.**

Synonym.—*Achorion arloingi* Busquet 1891.

Incompletely known species. Was isolated from a human trichophytic-like eruption by Désir de Fortunet and Courmont. Is said to be inoculable into mice, rabbits, and man.

Genus *Lophophyton* Matruchot and Dassouville 1899.

Mycelial filaments, either tortuous, very thin, or thick, with granular protoplasm. No spores present. One species only.

***Lophophyton gallinæ* Mégnin 1881.**

Synonyms.—*Epidermophyton gallinæ* Mégnin 1881 *Lophophyton gallinæ* Matruchot and Dassouville 1899, *Achorion gallinæ* Sabouraud 1910.

In the lesions mycelial filaments are seen, some thin and tortuous, without practically any protoplasm; others of much larger dimensions, with granular protoplasm. No spores observed. The fungus is easily cultivated, and is inoculable into rabbits, mice, and fowls, in which it gives rise to typical favus lesions. In man it does not produce favus, but merely trichophytic-like erythematous, squamous patches.

Genus *Endodermophyton* Castellani 1909.

The fungi belonging to this genus are characterized by their growing between the superficial and deep strata of the epidermis

forming an interlacing felt of mycelia, which detaches the horny and granular layers from the rete Malpighi. They do not invade the hair follicles, and do not cause suppuration. They have been cultivated by Castellani.

Cultures.—Botanically, these fungi are closely allied to the *Achorions*, as remarked by Sabouraud and Pinoy, who have examined Castellani's cultures. Attempts at cultivation failed for a long time, as they generally do not grow on solid media direct from the scales. These, after being treated with alcohol for five to ten minutes, must be placed in glucose-broth tubes, one scale in each tube. Most of the tubes become contaminated with bacteria, but in those which remain clear, after a time (five to ten days) a few delicate, short, white filaments will be seen originating from the scale. The growth slowly increases until, after three to four weeks, it takes the appearance of a small, white, fluffy mass, with a dark spot (the scale) in the centre. Portions of the broth cultures are sown on solid sugar media, on which growth takes place now quite easily. Fungi can then be indefinitely subcultured on solid media. The fungi grow much more abundantly on glucose agar, 4 per cent., than on Sabouraud or any other media.

Reproduction.—In hanging-drop cultures long mycelial filaments are seen; no conidia-bearing hyphæ are present; reproduction is apparently by sprouting, branching taking place; but further investigation is necessary on the subject.

Pleomorphism.—Pleomorphism is much less marked than in the *Trichophyton*s, *Epidermophyton*s, and *Achorions*. Old cultures, however, may lose their characteristics, becoming covered with duvet.

TABLE SHOWING ENDODERMOPHYTONS FOUND IN MAN.

Genus.	Species.
Endodermophyton Castellani 1909	{ <i>E. concentricum</i> Blanchard 1901. { <i>E. indicum</i> Castellani 1911. { <i>E. castellanii</i> Perry 1907.

Endodermophyton concentricum Blanchard.

Remarks.—Manson, in 1872, described a trichophyton-like organism in the squamæ of *tinea imbricata*; with the laboratory technique of that time attempts at cultivation did not succeed. Blanchard considered it non-cultivable, and called it *Trichophyton concentricum*; on the other hand, Nieuwenhuis stated that it was quite easily cultivable, and was characterized by the colonies being crateriform. His researches were not confirmed. In recent years the general opinion has been that aspergillus-like fungi were the real cause of the disease. Tribondeau described fructifications somewhat similar to those of an *Aspergillus*, and created for the fungus the genus *Lepidophyton*. Wehmer has described it as a true *Aspergillus*—*Aspergillus tokelau*. Castellani, from the investigations he has carried out in Ceylon, has come to the conclusion that *Aspergillus* and aspergillus-like fungi have nothing to do with the

disease. When they are present in the squamæ, they are merely saprophytes or contaminations. By using a special technique he has succeeded in growing what he considers to be the true fungi causing the disease; he has isolated two species, and suggests that the specific term *concentricum* should be retained for one of them.

Endodermophyton concentricum is very abundant in the lesions, forming a felting of interlacing mycelial threads with mycelial articles, regular in shape, rectangular or somewhat square-shaped,



FIG. 385.—ENDODERMOPHYTON
CONCENTRICUM BLANCHARD :
GLUCOSE-AGAR CULTURE.

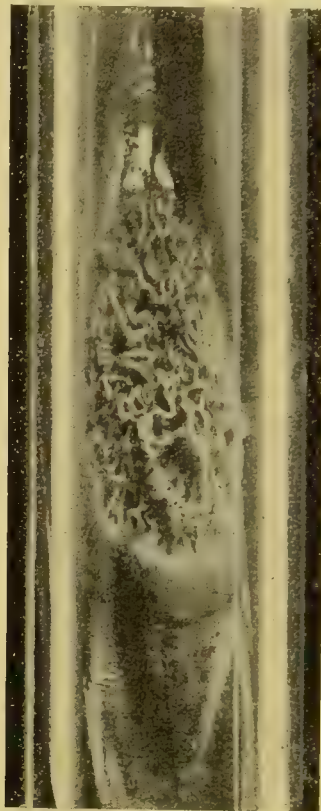


FIG. 386.—ENDODERMOPHYTON
CONCENTRICUM BLANCHARD :
OLD GLUCOSE-AGAR CULTURE.

and usually straight. If the liquor potassæ be left to act some time, the mycelial articles, which are of very variable length, and $2\frac{1}{2}$ to $3\frac{1}{2}$ μ in breadth, will be seen to have a double contour. *Aspergillus fructifications*, described by so many authors, when present, are due to contaminations; they form no part of the fungus. Cultivation of this fungus has been obtained by Castellani, using the method mentioned in the paragraph above on the genus *Endodermophyton*.

The principal cultural characters on solid media, when the growth is fifteen to twenty-one days old, are as follow :—

Glucose Agar (4 per cent.).—Growth abundant; surface cerebriform or crinkled. The growth and the medium show a slight amber colour, which later on may become of much deeper hue. Duvet as a rule absent, but in

old cultures which have been transplanted many times and are degenerating, some very scarce, short, whitish duvet may appear.

Sabouraud Agar.—Growth comparatively scanty, whitish-grey, mostly submerged. The colonies are whitish, have generally a small central knob, and never show any duvet. The submerged portion is very firmly embedded, and often presents projections deepening in the medium. Colour of the medium unchanged.

Glycerine Agar.—Similar growth to Sabouraud's agar. When the colonies coalesce, the growth shows a knobby surface. No duvet.

Ordinary Agar.—Scanty growth, somewhat similar to Sabouraud. No duvet.

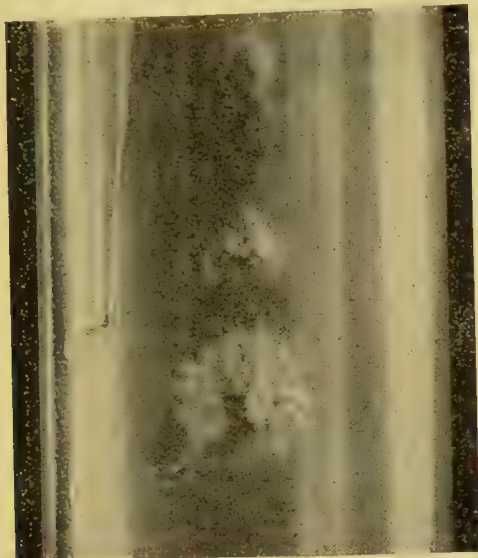


FIG. 387.—ENDODERMOPHYTON CONCENTRICUM BLANCHARD: AGAR CULTURE.



FIG. 388.—ENDODERMOPHYTON CONCENTRICUM BLANCHARD: MALTOSE-AGAR CULTURE.

Mannite Agar (4 per cent.).—Appearance somewhat similar to glucose, but growth less abundant. The medium may take a slight amber colour. No duvet.

Saccharose Agar (4 per cent.).—Growth rather scanty, similar to Sabouraud. Duvet absent.

Nutrose Agar (4 per cent.).—Very slow growth. Separate young colonies have a central knob; they coalesce later into a knobby mass.

Maltose Agar (Acid).—Similar to Sabouraud.

Maltose Agar (Alkaline).—Similar to Sabouraud.

Adonite Agar.—Not very abundant; cerebriiform; duvet absent.

Galactose Agar.—Knobby or cerebriiform.

Lævulose Agar.—Knobby.

Raffinose Agar.—Cerebriiform.

Inuline Agar.—Cerebriiform.

Saccharine Agar (4 per cent.).—Somewhat knobby surface; duvet absent.

Lactose Agar.—Similar to Sabouraud, but surface growth more abundant.

Gelatine.—Very slow liquefaction of the medium.

Milk.—Very scanty growth. After a time the medium becomes separated.

Sugar Broths (Maltose, Lactose, etc.).—Slight growth at the bottom of the tube; no production of acid or gas.

Hanging-Drop Cultures.—In hanging-drop cultures (Sabouraud's broth) long mycelial threads are seen. Reproduction is apparently by sprouts from the mycelium, branching taking place.

Pathogenicity.—The fungus is the cause of a common type of *tinea imbricata*. Castellani has demonstrated that the inoculations into human beings of cultures of the fungus reproduce a typical form of *tinea imbricata*, and that from the scales of the eruption, experimentally induced, the same fungus is recoverable. For further details see Chapter LXIII. on *Tinea Imbricata*.

Endodermophyton indicum Castellani 1911.

This fungus was found by Castellani in some cases of *Tinea imbricata*. The microscopical appearance of the fungus in the scales is

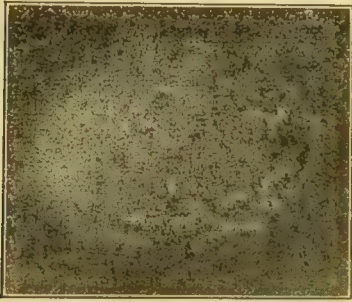


FIG. 389.—PATCH OF EXPERIMENTAL *TINEA IMBRICATA* IN A SINGHALESE BOY, OBTAINED BY INOCULATING A CULTURE OF *ENDODERMOPHYTON INDICUM*.

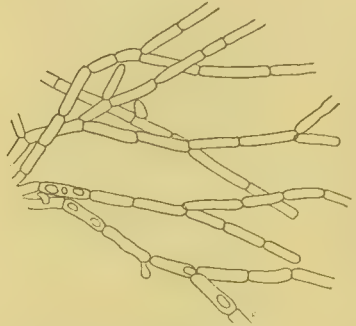


FIG. 390.—*ENDODERMOPHYTON INDICUM* CASTELLANI: HANGING-DROP CULTURE.

identical with *E. concentricum*. The principal cultural characters on solid media, when the growth takes place in the dark, about 80° to 85° F., without rubber caps on the tubes, and is between fifteen and twenty-one days old, are as follow:—

Glucose Agar (4 per cent.).—Growth fairly abundant, with surface somewhat convoluted or furrowed. Portions of the growth, often the central, is of a deep orange, or pinkish-orange, or red-orange, occasionally of bright red colour. The surface of the rest of the growth often appears white and powdery, being covered by a very short delicate white duvet.

Sabouraud Agar.—Slow growth, with powdery surface, either with central knob, or convoluted. The growth does not deepen in the medium so much as *E. concentricum*.

Glycerine Agar.—Growth abundant, white or amber colour; delicate white short duvet present on some portions of the growth.

Ordinary Agar.—Growth fairly abundant; knobby surface covered by snow-white very short delicate duvet.

Mannite Agar.—Growth knobby or convoluted, covered by short white duvet.

Saccharose Agar.—Cerebriform, covered by white duvet.

Saccharine.—Crinkled surface; delicate white duvet present.

Maltose Agar (Acid).—Somewhat similar to Sabouraud's, but the surface growth is more abundant.

Maltose Agar (Alkaline).—Similar to acid maltose, but the white duvet is more abundant.

Lactose Agar.—Knobby surface covered by snow-white duvet.

Nutrose Agar.—Yellowish crinkled surface; short white duvet present.

Lævulose Agar.—Scanty growth, yellow or orange ; scarce ; very short white duvet present.

Galactose Agar.—Fairly abundant ; surface convoluted with abundant, short snow-white duvet.

Raffinose Agar.—Same appearance as galactose.

Inuline Agar.—Same appearance as in galactose and raffinose agars.

Adonite Agar.—Cerebriform ; surface covered with snow-white duvet.

Gelatine.—Very slow liquefaction.

Lit. Milk.—Very scanty growth. After a time the medium may become separated.

Various Sugar Broths (Maltose, Lactose, etc.).—Slight growth at the bottom of the tube. No production of acid or gas.

The annexed table shows at a glance the different cultural characteristics of the two fungi in the principal media.

COMPARISON BETWEEN THE CULTURAL CHARACTERS OF ENDODERMOPHYTON CONCENTRICUM AND OF ENDODERMOPHYTON INDICUM.

Media.	<i>E. concentricum</i> .	<i>E. indicum</i> .
Glucose agar ..	Amber colour, duvet absent in young cultures.	Deep orange, at times pinkish or red, very short white delicate duvet often present.
Sabouraud-agar	Growth scanty, mostly submerged, grey - whitish duvet absent.	Surface growth more abundant, powdery white.
Agar	Scanty, mostly submerged ; similar to Sabouraud agar ; no duvet.	Fairly abundant, knobby, well-marked snow-white duvet.
Glycerine agar	Growth mostly submerged ; surface growth very scanty ; similar to Sabouraud agar ; no duvet.	Surface growth very abundant ; crinkled appearance ; white short duvet present.

The above characters are based upon the appearance of cultures kept in the dark at a temperature 80° to 90° F., and without rubber caps. If any of these conditions are altered, the cultural characters are changed. If rubber caps are used, both *E. indicum* and *E. concentricum* may assume a bright red colour. If, however, subcultures are made from these, using tubes without rubber caps, the fungi again show the characters given above.

Hanging-Drop Cultures.—Long mycelial filaments are present. No free spores are seen ; reproduction is apparently by sprouts from the mycelium.

Pathogenicity.—The fungus is the cause of a certain number of cases of tinea imbricata. The type of the disease caused by this fungus seems to be more superficial than that caused by *T. concentricum*, but further researches are required on this subject. Castellani has succeeded in experimentally reproducing the disease by inoculating coolies, who had volunteered, with pure cultures of the fungus. The skin was first scarified with a sterile knife ; then a certain amount of a pure agar culture of *E. indicum* was well rubbed in. After fifteen to twenty-one days the first signs of the eruption

appeared, and the typical patches of *tinea imbricata* developed. From the scales of the experimental cases a fungus was grown absolutely identical with the strain of *E. indicum* with which the individuals had been inoculated.

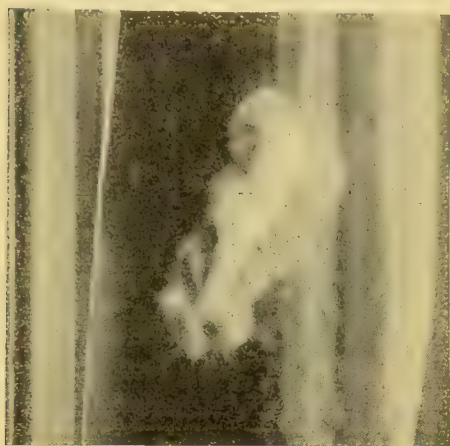


FIG. 391.—ENDODERMOPHYTON INDICUM CASTELLANI: AGAR CULTURE.



FIG. 392.—ENDODERMOPHYTON INDICUM CASTELLANI: GLUCOSE-AGAR CULTURE.

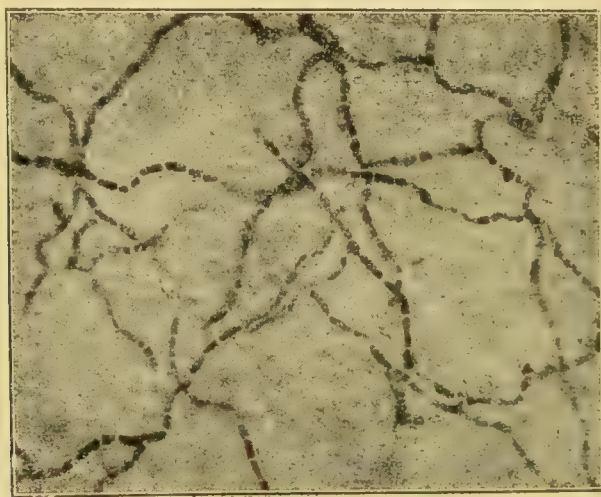


FIG. 393.—ENDODERMOPHYTON INDICUM CASTELLANI IN THE SCALES.

Endodermophyton castellanii Perry 1907.

Found by Castellani in cases of *Tinea Intersecta*. In the scales the mycelium is fairly abundant ; no free spores are seen. Mycelial segments uniform, rather straight, and, provided the liquor potassæ be left to act for sufficient time, they often show a double contour. Their breadth is $2\frac{1}{2}$ to $3\frac{1}{2}$ μ . Each mycelial

segment has two roundish refringent dots, one at each extremity. Has been cultivated only on one occasion, the cultures being extremely similar to those of *E. indicum*. It is the cause of *tinea intersecta*.

Genus Oospora Wallroth 1883.

Mycelium slender, septate; differentiated nuclei present; some mycelial threads abstrict at their extremities chains of spores.

Oospora canina Costantin-Sabrazès 1893.

Synonym.—*Mycoderma caninum* Verdun 1912.

Causes the favus of dogs; may be transmitted to man, but seldom gives rise to typical lesions, the eruption as a rule resembling ringworm. In the lesions oval or roundish bodies, 5 to 6 μ in diameter, are seen, and thin mycelial filaments. The fungus is easily cultivated on Sabouraud's agar. The growth is of a red colour, and after a time becomes covered with abundant white duvet. It is inoculable into dogs and mice, in which it induces typical favus. The only mode of reproduction so far known is by chains of conidia.



FIG. 394.—ENDODERMOPHYTON CASTELLANII PERRY.

Genus Montoyella Castellani 1907.

Temporary genus. Two kinds of mycelial threads: some slender, ramified, septate; others much thicker, having numerous intermediate chlamydospores. From the thicker filaments delicate hyphae take origin, which terminate in large pear-shaped or globular conidia.

Montoyella nigra Castellani 1907.

Temporary species. Colonies on maltose agar are black. If glycerine agar is used, the medium takes a black colour. This species, discovered by Montoya, is common in black pinta.

Montoyella bodini Castellani 1907.

Temporary species. Colonies whitish or greenish.

SUBORDER CARPOASCEES.

This suborder of Ascomycetes is characterized by the fact that the *asci* are not free, and do not take origin directly from the mycelium. They are produced in special fructifications.

Of the suborder Carpoascees, only two families, the *Perisporiaceæ* and the *Pyrenomyces*, contain species parasitic on man.

FAMILY PERISPORIACEÆ.

The ascogenous hyphæ are enclosed by a compact envelope of interwoven, sterile filaments. On the rupture or disintegration of this envelope (perithecium) the ascospores become free. In many cases reproduction takes place also by means of conidia.

TABLE SHOWING PERISPORIACEÆ PARASITIC IN MAN.

Family.	Genus.	Species.
Perisporiaceæ	Penicillium Link 1809	<i>P. crustaceum</i> Linnæus 1763.
		<i>P. minimum</i> Siebenmann 1889.
		<i>P. barbæ</i> Castellani 1907.
		<i>P. montoyai</i> Castellani 1907.
		<i>P. pruriosum</i> Salisbury.
		<i>P. brevicaulæ</i> var. <i>hominis</i> Brumpt and Langeron 1910.
	Sterigmatocystis Cramer 1869	<i>S. nigra</i> von Tieghem 1867.
		<i>S. nidulans</i> Eidam 1883.
	Aspergillus Micheli 1725	<i>A. fumigatus</i> Fresenius 1775.
		<i>A. flavus</i> De Bary 1870.
		<i>A. bronchialis</i> Blumentritt 1901.
		<i>A. nigrescens</i> Robin 1889.
		<i>A. repens</i> De Bary 1870.
		<i>A. malignus</i> Lindt 1889.
		<i>A. pictor</i> R. Blanchard 1895.
		<i>A. barbæ</i> Castellani 1907.
		<i>A. bouffardi</i> Brumpt 1905.
	Madurella Brumpt 1905 (temporary)	<i>A. herbariorum</i> Wiggers 1780.
		<i>A. fontoynti</i> Guéguen 1909.
		<i>M. mycetomi</i> Laveran 1902.
	Indiella Brumpt 1906 (temporary)	<i>M. tozeuri</i> Ch. Nicolle and Pinoy 1908.
		<i>M. bovoi</i> Brumpt 1910.
		<i>I. mansonii</i> Brumpt 1906.
		<i>I. reynieri</i> Brumpt 1906.
		<i>I. somaliensis</i> Brumpt 1906.

Genus *Penicillium* Link 1809.

The whole fruit-bearing hypha with its sterigmata and conidia resembles a hair-pencil, hence the name of the genus (*Penicillium* = hair-pencil). The conidiophore hypha shows verticillate branches, which give rise to slender fusiform formations (sterigmata) abstricting chains of conidia.

Penicillium crustaceum Linnæus 1763.

Synonyms.—*Mucor crustaceus albus* Linnæus 1763, *Monilia digitata* Persoon, *Penicillium glaucum* Linnæus 1809, *P. expansum* Linnæus, *P. crustaceum* Fries 1829.

An extremely common saprophyte found on bread, cheese, fruits, and various organic substances in a state of decomposition. The

conidia are spherical or slightly elliptical, of bronze colour, with smooth surface; maximum diameter $4\ \mu$. This fungus grows well at any temperature between 2° and 35° C., and is very resistant.

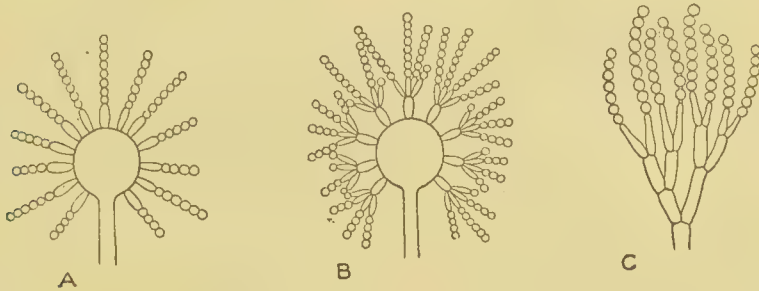


FIG. 395.—A, ASPERGILLUS FRUCTIFICATION; B, STERIGMATOCYSTIS FRUCTIFICATION; C, PENICILLIUM FRUCTIFICATION.

(After Brumpt.)

It has been found by Maggiora and Gradenigo in two cases of otitis media. Heinhorn has observed it in the vomiting of four cases of acid dyspepsia together with *Aspergillus herbariorum*.

Wertheim has observed that the intravenous inoculation of *P. crustaceum* is pathogenic to rabbits, dogs, and lambs.

Penicillium minimum Siebenmann 1889.

Conidia are roundish, smooth, of a brownish-black colour; smaller than in *P. crustaceum* being 2.5 to $3\ \mu$ in diameter. Was found in a case of acute otitis by Siebenmann.

Penicillium montoyai Castellani 1907.

Synonym.—*P. pictor* Neveu-Lemaire 1908.

Conidia roundish or slightly oval, smooth, 3 to $4\frac{1}{2}\ \mu$ in diameter. Grows well on maltose agar and ordinary agar; cultures of dark greyish colour. Discovered by Montoya in cases of pinta, of the greyish-violet variety. Similar species, not yet well defined, are found in other varieties of pinta.

Penicillium brevicaulis var. **hominis** Brumpt and Langeron 1910.

Found by Brumpt and Langeron in two cases of onychomycosis. In the lesions septate mycelial threads were seen, 2 to $10\ \mu$ in diameter, and large groups of chlamydospores, generally terminal, 10 to $30\ \mu$ in diameter. The fungus is easily cultivated on Sabouraud's agar and other sugar media, also on potatoes and carrots.

Optimum temperature $25^{\circ}\text{C}.$, but grows well also at $37^{\circ}\text{C}.$ Conidia spherical or occasionally ovoid, of a chocolate colour.



FIG. 396.—*PENICILLIUM BREVICAULE* VAR. *HOMINIS*.
BRUMPT AND LANGERON.
(After Brumpt.)



FIG. 397.—*PENICILLIUM BREVICAULE* VAR.
HOMINIS BRUMPT AND LANGERON.
(Preparation from the diseased nails,
after Brumpt.)

***Penicillium barbæ* Castellani 1907.**

Found by us growing on the beard of natives of equatorial Africa, and in natives of Ceylon.

***Penicillium pruriosum* Salisbury.**

Doubtful species found by Salisbury in the vaginal mucus of a woman suffering from intense vaginal pruritus.

Genus *Aspergillus* Micheli 1725.

The conidiophore hyphæ are not ramified, and terminate into ovoid or roundish formations, which support numerous claviform elements (sterigmata), each of which supports a chain of roundish conidia.

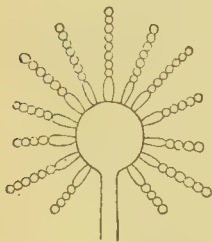


FIG. 398.—*ASPERGILLUS* FRUCTIFICATION.
(After Brumpt.)

Aspergilli are generally saprophytes, but they may become parasites. They are easily grown on acid media, liquid or solid, and also on alkaline media. Iron and manganese have a favourable influence on the growth and sporulation of these fungi.

A medium much used is Raulin's liquid, the formula of which is: Cane-sugar, 70 grammes; tartaric acid, 4 grammes; ammonium nitrate, 4 grammes; ammonium phosphate, 0.60 gramme; potassium carbonate, 0.60 gramme; magnesium carbonate, 0.40 gramme; ammonium sulphate, 0.25 gramme; zinc sulphate, 0.07 gramme; ferrous sulphate, 0.07 gramme; potassium silicate, 0.07 gramme.

Fungi of the genus *Aspergillus*, when growing parasitically in the tissues, often lose their characteristics; the typical fructifications are absent, and only mycelial threads and roundish or oval yeast-like bodies are seen.

***Aspergillus fumigatus* Fresenius 1775.**

This is the commonest *Aspergillus*, and is very often found on various cereals, straw, hay, etc. On solid media it produces a brownish-black culture if the medium is alkaline or neutral, greenish

if the medium is acid. The mycelial filaments are more or less ramified, the breadth varying between 2 and 3 μ . The conidiophore hyphæ are much thicker than the mycelial tubes, being, on the average, about 5 μ in breadth. The sterigmata, which are situated very close together, are 6 μ long; the conidia are roundish, 2.5 to 3 μ in diameter, smooth, colourless. Optimum temperature, 37° C.; the growth stops below 20° or above 55° C.

Pathogenicity.—This *Aspergillus* is the species most frequently found in man, giving rise to an aspergillosis of various organs. The spores are very resistant. Perchloride of mercury is the antiseptic which has the greatest destructive action on the spores. The effects on the human organism are due, in addition to mechanical action, to toxins secreted by the fungi. Lucet has found in cultures of *A. fumigatus* in Raulin's liquid a pyrogenic substance;



FIG. 399.—*ASPERGILLUS FUMIGATUS*
FRESENIUS.



FIG. 400.—*ASPERGILLUS BRONCHIALIS* BLUMENTRITT.
(After Blumentritt.)

Ceni and Besta have isolated toxic products soluble in ether and alcohol, which act on the muscular and nervous system of dogs and rabbits. (See also Remarks on Aspergillomycoses, p. 806.)

***Aspergillus flavus* De Bary 1870.**

Synonyms.—*Monilia aurea* Gmelin 1791, *Eurotium flavum* De Bary 1870, *Aspergillus flavescens* Wreden 1874.

Mycelium colourless; conidiophore hyphæ terminate in roundish formations of a gold-yellow colour. The conidia are dark yellow, roundish, 5 to 7 μ in diameter, with a surface showing numerous minute mammillar prominences. Found by several observers (Wreden, Siebenmann, etc.) in the ear. Optimum temperature 37° C.

***Aspergillus bronchialis* Blumentritt 1901.**

Mycelium of a white colour, much ramified; conidiophore hyphæ are 6.2 to 12.6 μ in diameter, 280 to 300 μ in length. Conidia

roundish, 3 to 4 μ in diameter, with a smooth surface, of a greyish-greenish colour. This *Aspergillus* was found by Chiari in the bronchi of a patient who had died from diabetes ; it was investigated by Blumentritt. It has not yet been found as a saprophyte.

***Aspergillus fontoynti* Guéguen 1909.**

Found by Fontoynt and Carougeau in a European living in Madagascar, who was suffering from multiple abscesses of the neck. In the pus and in the first cultures obtained the fungus had no true aspergillar appearance ; it had to be subcultured several times before the typical aspergillar fructifications appeared. Conidia 4 to 5 μ in diameter, with surface finely verrucose. Optimum temperature, 22° to 25° C.

***Aspergillus malignus* Lindt 1889.**

Synonym.—*Eurotium malignum* Lindt 1889.

Colourless mycelium, composed of short articles. Conidiophore hyphæ erected, terminating in pyriform formations, 22 to 24 μ in

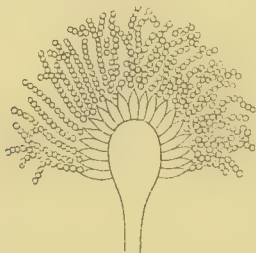


FIG. 401.—*ASPERGILLUS MALIGNUS*
LINDT.

(After Lindt.)

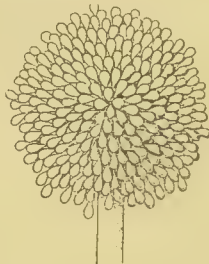


FIG. 402.—*ASPERGILLUS REPENS*
DE BARY.

(After Siebenmann.)

diameter, on which are situated the sterigmata, which are 10 μ long and 4 to 5 μ in breadth. Conidia roundish of a greenish-bluish colour.

Pathogenicity.—This *Aspergillus* was found by Lindt in a case of otomycosis ; according to this author, it is very pathogenic for rabbits.

***Aspergillus herbariorum* Wiggers 1780.**

Synonym.—*Mucor herbariorum* Wiggers 1780, *Aspergillus glaucus* De Bary 1870.

Mycelium at first colourless, later yellow or reddish-yellow. This *Aspergillus* is characterized by the large size of the conidia, which are 9 to 15 μ in diameter. It is in nature a common saprophytic fungus. It has been found by Dunn in 1896 in the nasal cavities of a man, and by Einhorn in 1900 in the vomit of a case of hyperchloridia.

Aspergillus repens De Bary 1870.

Synonym.—*Eurotium repens* De Bary 1870.

This fungus is very similar to *A. herbariorum*, but for the smaller size of the conidia. Mycelium of a yellowish-green colour. Conidia large, 7 to 8.5 μ . Found by Siebenmann in the ear three times. Its pathogenic rôle is doubtful.

Quevedo has described an aspergillus very similar to *A. repens*, which he believes to be the cause of a type of encephalo-myelitis in horses in South America. He calls the organism *A. mayidis*.

Aspergillus pictor R. Blanchard 1895.

Synonym.—*Trichophyton pictor* R. Blanchard 1895.

The term *Aspergillus* (*Trichophyton*) *pictor*, introduced by Blanchard in 1895, before the plurality of species of the fungi found in pinta was demonstrated, is now used to denote the species of *Aspergillus* which is found in the pure violet variety of pinta. This fungus shows the typical morphological characters of the genus *Aspergillus*. It grows easily on various sugar media. On maltose agar the growth has at first a whitish colour, which afterwards changes into greenish, to become violet or greenish with a violet tinge at a later period. The colour of the growth may vary according to the medium on which cultivation takes place. The conidiophores are comparatively thick; the conidia are globular, with a smooth surface.

Several other species of aspergillar and aspergillar-like fungi are found in pinta, but their botanical position has not yet been defined with certainty.



FIG. 403. — *ASPERGILLUS PICTOR* R. BLANCHARD.
(After Montoya y Florez.)

Aspergillus bouffardi Brumpt 1905.

Found by Bouffard in a case of black mycetoma, and completely described by Brumpt. Mycelium whitish in some zones, dark brown in others. Conidiophores erect, white, each terminating in a claviform structure, bearing some short chains of roundish conidia. Conidia 1.3 to 2 μ in diameter, roundish with a smooth surface, white. Chlamydospores present, 5 to 10 μ in diameter. Attempts at cultivation did not succeed.

Aspergillus barbæ Castellani 1907.

Found by us in natives of Uganda, and in natives of Ceylon. Conidia spherical, 4 to 5 μ , of a brownish colour.

Aspergillus nigrescens Robin 1889.

Doubtful species, which, according to Wienfeld, causes a faviform eruption.

Genus Sterigmatocystis Cramer 1869.

Conidiophores terminate in roundish or ovoid formations, on which are situated short cylindrical structures—*primary sterigmata*—surmounted by similar elements—*secondary sterigmata*. Each of the secondary sterigmata abstricts a chain of roundish conidia.

Sterigmatocystis nigra Cramer 1859.

Synonyms.—*Sterigmatocystis antacustica* Cramer 1869, *Eurotium nigrum* De Bary 1870, *Monilia pulla* Persoon, *Aspergillus nigricans* Wreden 1874, *A. niger* von Tieghem 1867.

Primary and secondary sterigmata; erected conidiophores; hyphæ more than 1 millimetre in length (3·5 to 4·5). Conidioglobular, 3·5 to 4·5 μ in diameter, provided with a membrane of a brownish colour. Commonly found in decaying organic substances.

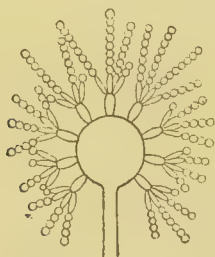


FIG. 404.—STERIGMATOCYSTIS
FRUCTIFICATION.
(After Brumpt.)



FIG. 405.—STERIGMATOCYSTIS
NIDULANS EIDAM.
(After Eidam, from Brumpt.)

It was first observed in man by Cramer, who observed it in the ear of a deaf patient. Later it was observed by Fürbringer and others in mycotic affections of the lungs.

Sterigmatocystis nidulans Eidam 1883.

Synonym.—*Aspergillus nidulans* Eidam 1883.

Mycelium of a greenish colour. Conidiophores are erect, 0·5 to 0·8 millimetre in length. Presence of primary sterigmata, supporting secondary sterigmata, each of which gives rise to a chain of conidia. Conidia small (2 to 3 μ in diameter), globular, of a greenish colour. The fungus has been completely investigated by Pinoy: grows badly in Raulin's liquid, better on Sabouraud's; is non-pathogenic for rabbits. This species is found living saprophytically in certain nests, hence the name *S. nidulans*. In man it has been found in several cases of otomycosis. Nicolle and Pinoy have found it, or a very similar species, in a case of mycetoma with white granules.

Remarks on Aspergillomycoses and Sterigmatocystomycoses.—These affections are common in man and the lower animals.

I. ASPERGILLOSIS OF THE LUNGS; ASPERGILLAR PSEUDO-TUBERCULOSIS; PNEUMOMYCOSIS OF ASPERGILLAR ORIGIN.—*Aspergilli*

develop sometimes in the mucosa of the trachea, of the bronchi, and even in the pulmonary alveoli, without giving rise to any pathogenic effect. In other cases the fungi induce pseudo-membranous and ulcerative lesions. A very serious affection is a form of pseudo-tuberculosis (pseudo-tuberculosis aspergillina), characterized by the presence of mycotic nodules in the lungs, liver, kidneys, and other organs. This affection, due to *A. fumigatus*, is very common in some parts of France among pigeon-breeders (*gaveurs de pigeons*). The same affection attacks the pigeons. The infection is probably caused by spores of *A. fumigatus* being present in the grains used for feeding the pigeons.

2. ASPERGILLOSIS OF THE EYE.—*A. fumigatus* has been found several times in ulcers of the cornea (keratomycosis aspergillina).

3. ASPERGILLOSIS OF THE EAR (OTOMYCOSIS ASPERGILLINA).—Various species of *Aspergillus* have been found in the ear. In some cases they may give rise to a serious otitis, deafness, and tinnitus. Aspergillosis of the ear is not rare in the tropics. Syringing with hydrogen peroxide two parts and alcohol one part is useful.

4. ASPERGILLOSIS OF THE NOSE.—*A. glaucus* and *A. fumigatus* have been found in the nasal cavities; the first apparently does not cause any disturbance. The second causes various inflammatory symptoms.

5. ASPERGILLOSIS OF WOUNDS AND ULCERS.—In wounds not properly treated, and in old ulcers, *Aspergilli* have been occasionally found.

6. ASPERGILLOSIS OF THE URETHRA.—In several cases a black urethral discharge has been observed, due to *Sterigmatocystis nigra*.

7. ASPERGILLOSIS OF THE SKIN.—Montoya's investigation has shown that several varieties of pinta are due to fungi of the genus *Aspergillus*. Another important tropical skin disease, tinea imbricata, was believed until recently to be due to an *Aspergillus*—*A. tokelau* Wehmer 1903. In our experience the fungi of tinea imbricata never shows aspergillar fructifications, and cannot be considered to be *Aspergilli*.

Aspergilli may also cause some varieties of mycetoma.

Genus *Madurella* Brumpt 1905.

White thallus, living parasitic in animal tissues—connective tissue, muscles, and bones. Mycelial threads of various sizes, 1 to 8 or 10 μ in breadth, septate, at times ramified. No special fructification; reproduction takes place only by fragmentation of the thallus. Sclerotia often dark brownish, containing a variable number of large roundish bodies, 8 to 30 μ in diameter (chlamydo-spores).

This genus contains two well-defined species and a doubtful one: *Madurella mycetomi* Laveran 1902, *M. tozeuri* Ch. Nicolle and Pinoy 1908, *M. bovoi* Brumpt 1910.

Madurella mycetomi Laveran 1902.

Synonym.—*Streptothrix mycetomi* Laveran 1902.

Description.—All the characters of genus *Madurella*. Attempts at inoculation in the lower animals have failed.

Cultures.—Wright, in a case of black mycetoma in America, cultivated a white fungus which in old cultures showed black

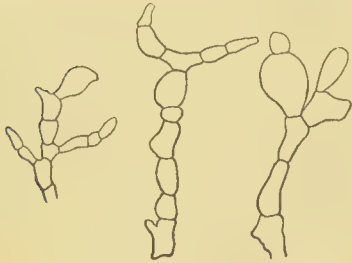


FIG. 406.—*MADURELLA MYCETOMI* LAVERAN.
(After Brumpt.)



FIG. 407.—GRAINS OF *INDIELLA REYNIERI* BRUMPT.
(After Brumpt.)

sclerotia. Brumpt doubts whether Wright's hyphomycete is *M. mycetomi*. Chatterjee has also grown a fungus in India from a case of mycetoma with black granules. Brault has successfully cultivated the fungus in Africa; the cultures are very similar to those of *M. tozeuri*, but numerous sclerotia are present.

Pathogenicity.—This fungus causes Carter's black mycetoma.

Madurella tozeuri Ch. Nicolle and Pinoy 1908.

Synonyms.—*Oospora tozeuri* Ch. Nicolle and Pinoy, *Mycoderma tozeuri* Verdun 1913.

Causes a variety of black mycetoma in Algeria and Tunis. Masses of the fungus give rise to small, hard black grains. During parasitic life the mycelium is septate, ramified, 1 to 4 μ in breadth; chlamydospores present. On maltose agar the fungus grows best at 35° C., giving rise to whitish colonies, which later become yellowish, while the medium becomes of a brownish or black colour. Structures similar to the so-called 'favus claviform bodies' have been observed; some hyphae consist of strings of small cylindrical elements 4 μ in length and 2 μ in breadth. In cultures definite sclerotia are generally absent. This fungus has been successfully inoculated by Pinoy in the pigeon.

Madurella bovoi Brumpt 1910.

Temporary Species.—Bovo, in Italy, in a case somewhat resembling madura foot, found microscopically mycelial filaments and spore-like bodies of black colour. The fungus was not cultivated. Bovo believed it might be *Aspergillus fumigatus* or *Sterigmatocystis nigra*. Brumpt considers it to be more probably a *madurella*.

Genus *Indiella* Brumpt 1906.

White thallus, living parasitic in various animal tissues—connective tissue, muscles and bones. Mycelial threads 1 to 8 or 10 μ . septate, ramified, never secreting—in contrast to the fungi of genus *Madurella*—any black pigment. Masses of mycelial threads form sclerotia-like bodies or grains of various shape containing chlamydospores.

***Indiella mansonii* Brumpt 1906.**

Mycelial threads are septated, white, thin, 1.5 to 2 μ when young, larger (3 to 5 μ) and of irregular shape when old. Numerous spherical chlamydospores, generally terminal, 5 to 12 μ in diameter. Grains (sclerotia) very small, of $\frac{1}{5}$ to $\frac{1}{4}$ millimetre, white, lenticular or reniform, very hard, do not soften by keeping in caustic potash. The fungus has not been grown.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of Manson's white mycetoma, of which only one case is known.

***Indiella reynieri* Brumpt 1906.**

White thallus. Most mycelial filaments are very thin, 1 to 1 $\frac{1}{2}$ μ , septated; some—those at the periphery—are of irregular shape, much broader (4 to 5 μ), moniliform. Nearly every mycelial thread has at the peripheral extremity a terminal chlamydospore, 5 to 20 μ , often septate in two or three cells. Grains or sclerotia are small, less than 1 millimetre in diameter, coiled up like the excrementa of earth-worms.

Pathogenicity.—This fungus causes a variety of mycetoma with white grains (Reynier's white mycetoma), of which there is only one case on record—a European patient who had never left France. The case was observed and reported on by Dr. Reynier.

***Indiella somaliensis* Brumpt 1906.**

Mycelial threads extremely thin (0.5 μ), septated at long intervals; when old, may be broader and take a moniliform appearance. The ampulliform formations, 1.5 to 2.5 μ in diameter, which are often seen, are probably intercalary chlamydospores. The grains formed by dense felting of mycelial threads are of a yellowish-reddish colour, slightly ovoid or roundish, extremely hard, the cementing substance in which the mycelial threads are embedded not softening in liquor potassæ. This fungus has not been grown, but, according to Brumpt, a nocardia easily grown can be found living symbiotically in the tissues with *I. somaliensis*.

Pathogenicity.—This fungus causes Bouffard's white mycetoma, which is common in Somalia and India.

FAMILY PYRENOMYCETES.

Ascomycetous fungi in which the asci are contained in a perithecium presenting an orifice at the apex for the escape of the spores. According to some authors, species of this family have been found parasitic in man. This is very doubtful, though Schubert states that he found in the nasal mucus of a patient an organism closely allied to *Botrytis bassiana*, which latter species, as is well known, causes the disease of silkworm called muscardin.

ORDER BASIDIOMYCETES.

Basidiomycetes have a septate mycelium, and are devoid of sexual reproduction. They reproduce by formation of basidia. Other accessory fructifications may be present—as, for example, chlamydospores. The basidia are of two principal types: (1) auto-basidia; (2) protobasidia.

The autobasidia are large, unseptated cells, giving rise at their apices to four delicate sterigmata, each of which bears a spore.

The protobasidia are septated, and appear in two chief forms:

A. Septated into four cells, each giving rise to a spore from a lateral inserted sterigma.

B. Septated by walls intersecting at right angles, each cell ending in an elongated tubular sterigma.

Of the Basidiomycetes one species (*Ustilago phyodytes*) of the family Ustilagineæ is of special importance while two others (*U. carbo* and *Tilletia levis*) may produce otomycosis.

Ustilago hypodytes Schlecht.

Synonyms.—*Dendrodichium microsporus* Brigi, *Sporotrichum dermatodes* Kane.

The mycelium penetrates the stem and leaves of reeds (*Arundo donax*) in some parts of Provence, Italy, and Greece. After a time the mycelium produces innumerable so-called brand spores by a process of segmentation of its profusely branched hyphæ. In this way the mycelium is transformed into a brown dark mass of spores.

These brand spores, as regards the mode of their formation, may be considered chlamydospores. The brand spores are resting spores; they are scattered by the wind, and after an interval of rest they germinate, producing conidiospores of a basidium-like type.

The spores of *U. hypodytes* are the cause, according to most authors, of a peculiar affection found among workers who have to do with the cutting, etc., of reeds (*A. donax*). This affection is called 'frienite,' or 'frien disease.' The patient complains of symptoms somewhat resembling hay-fever—sneezing, headache, etc.—and, in addition, shows an erythematous erysipeloid eruption on the uncovered part of the body, and often also on the genital organs, which may become greatly œdematous. Desquamation follows.

According to other observers, the cause of this peculiar disease is to be found, not in the spores of *Ustilago*, but in an insect—*Aclerda berlese*, discovered by Berlese—which often swarms on various reeds. The workers in manipulating the canes, squash some of these insects, and the irritating juice exuding therefrom produces a dermatitis of an erythematous type.

REFERENCES.

The current literature on vegetal parasites is mostly found in the *Archives de Parasitologie*, edited by Blanchard; in the *Centralblatt f. Bakteriologie*, and in the principal journals of dermatology, such as the *British Journal of Dermatology*, the *Archiv für Dermatologie und Syphilis*, the *Annales de Dermatologie*, *il Giornale Italiano Malattie della Pelle*, and others.

- BRUMPT (1910). *Parasitologie*. Paris. (An excellent manual.)
 CASTELLANI (1904-1912). Various papers in the *Journal of Tropical Medicine* and *British Journal of Dermatology*.
 GEDOELST (1911). *Synopsis de Parasitologie*. Bruxelles.
 GUIART AND GRINBERT (1911). *Précis de Diagnostique*. Paris.
 HORTA (1912). *Memorias Inst. O. Cruz*.
 LOUR, C. (1911). *Edinburgh Medical Journal*.
 PINOY (1908-1913). Numerous papers in the *Bulletin de la Société de Path. exot.*, and other journals.
 SABOURAUD. *Les Teignes* (1910). Paris. (Important publication, with full bibliography on fungi of the genera *Trichophyton*, *Microsporon*, and *Achorion* of temperate zones.)
 VERDUN (1913). *Parasitologie*. Paris. (Very good manual.)

CHAPTER XXVIII

FUNGI (*concluded*)

Hyphomycetes — *Nocardia* — *Monilia* — *Trichothecium* — *Glenospora* — *Sporotrichum* — *Trichosporon* — *Pityrosporum* — *Hemispora* — *Malassezia* — *Enantiothamnus* — *Cladosporium* — *Scopulariopsis* — *Acremonium* — *Monosporium* — References.

ORDER HYPHOMYCETES (MUCIDINEES OR FUNGI IMPERFECTI).

THIS order contains groups of very different fungi, the botanical position of which cannot be conclusively determined in the present state of our knowledge. Reproduction is by conidia only. For the classification of these fungi it is necessary to take into account, not only their morphological botanical characters, but also their biological characters and pathogenic properties.

The following genera of hyphomycetes contain species parasitic in man: (1) *Nocardia* Toni and Trevisan 1889, (2) *Monilia* Persoon 1801, (3) *Trichothecium* Link 1824, (4) *Glenospora* Berk and Curtis, (5) *Sporotrichum* Link 1809, (6) *Trichosporon* Behrend 1890, (7) *Pityrosporum* Sabouraud 1895, (8) *Hemispora* Vuillemin 1906, (9) *Malassezia* Ch. Robin 1853, (10) *Enantiothamnus* Pinoy 1911, (11) *Cladosporium* Link 1809, (12) *Scopulariopsis* Bainier, (13) *Acremonium* Link 1809, (14) *Monosporium* Bonord and Saccardo 1898.

Genus *Nocardia* Toni and Trevisan 1899.

Mycelial filaments of various sizes, but generally very thin ($1\ \mu$ or less), often branching, non-septate, and without differentiated nuclei. In certain species during parasitic life some mycelial threads terminate in club-like formations and show a radial arrangement. It is doubtful whether these club-like formations form intrinsic parts of the fungus or are partly products of reaction of the invaded tissues. Masses of mycelia may form in the tissues peculiar grains (sclerotia) of various size, shape, colour and consistency. Some species are facultative aërobic, others strictly anaërobic. All are Gram-positive, and several acid-fast. In cultures the mycelium very often undergoes fragmentation, and only bacillary and coccus-like bodies may be seen. These fungi are parasitic in man and lower animals, and may live as saprophytes or parasites on plants.

Pinoy divides the genus *Nocardia* into two :—

1. **Nocardia** Toni and Trevisan.—Bacillary-like mycelium ; no well-defined spores ; club-like formations generally absent ; facultative, aërobic.
2. **Conistreptothrix** Pinoy.—Well-defined spores with distinct membrane ; club formations often present ; anaërobic.

There are many points in favour of Pinoy's classification, which will probably be accepted generally in the early future.

TABLE SHOWING NOCARDIAS PARASITIC IN MAN.

(Genus.)	Species.
Well-defined club-like formations present	<i>N. bovis</i> Harz 1877. <i>N. israeli</i> Kruse 1896. <i>N. thibiergei</i> Ravaut and Pinoy 1909. <i>N. rosenbachi</i> Kruse 1896.
	<i>N. foersteri</i> Cohn 1874. <i>N. asteroides</i> Eppinger 1890. <i>N. maduræ</i> Vincent 1894. <i>N. brasiliensis</i> Lindenberg 1909. <i>N. garteni</i> Brumpt 1910. <i>N. pelletieri</i> Laveran 1906.
	<i>N. luteola</i> Foulerton and Jones. <i>N. dassonvillei</i> Brocq-Rousseu 1907.
	<i>N. aurea</i> Du Bois St. Severin. <i>N. carougeau</i> Brumpt 1910. <i>N. minutissima</i> Burchardt 1859. <i>N. liquefaciens</i> Hesse 1892.
	<i>N. pulmonalis</i> H. Roger, Bory and Sartory 1909.
	<i>N. tenuis</i> Castellani 1911.
	<i>N. hominis</i> Foulerton 1906.
	<i>N. rivierei</i> Verdun 1912.
	<i>N. candida</i> Petruschky.
	<i>N. odorifera</i> Rubmann 1895.
	<i>N. fusca</i> Kareacki 1911.
	<i>N. decussata</i> Langeron and Chevalier 1912.
	<i>N. carnea</i> Rossi Doria 1891.
	<i>N. enteritidis</i> Pottien 1902.
	<i>N. buccalis</i> H. Roger, Bory and Sartory 1909.
	<i>N. lasserei</i> Verdun 1912.
	<i>N. lingualis</i> Guéguen 1908.
Club-like formations absent or rare or not very distinct	<i>N. ponceti</i> Verdun 1912.

The modern tendency is also to place in the genus *Nocardia* the *Bacillus tuberculosis*.

***Nocardia bovis* Harz 1877.**

Synonyms.—*Actinomyces bovis* Harz 1877, *Discomyces bovis* Rivolta 1877, *Nocardia actinomyces* Toni and Trevisan 1889, *Streptothrix actinomyces* Rossi-Doria 1891, *Oospora bovis* Sauvageau and Radais 1892, *Actinomyces bovis sulphureus* Gasperini 1894, *Nocardia bovis* R. Blanchard 1895, *Cladothrix actinomyces* Mace 1897, *Discomyces bovis* R. Blanchard 1900, *Streptothrix spitzi* Lignières and Spitz 1903.

This *Nocardia* is the cause of some cases of human and bovine actinomycosis, and of the actinomycotic mycetoma. The fungus lives parasitically in most tissues, in which it gives rise to degenerative and purulent changes. In the pus small, soft yellow granules—so-called 'sulphur grains'—are seen. These sulphur grains consist of masses of mycelium. At the periphery of the granule the threads are radially arranged, and their free extremities become club-like, 10 to 20 μ in length and 8 to 10 μ in breadth. These peculiar club-like formations have been considered by some authorities to be degeneration forms of the fungus, but Brumpt has demonstrated that they are young active forms, and disappear in old granules. Other writers consider that these club-like formations do not form an intrinsic part of the fungus, but are due to reactive changes in the tissues.

Cultures.—The fungus grows easily on agar, glycerinated agar, gelatine, broth, potato, and other media. Optimum temperature, 35° to 37° C. On glycerinated agar the fungus grows fairly rapidly, giving rise to small, dry, coarsely granular, brown-yellowish colonies, which latter coalesce together. The fungus is Gram-positive, but not acid-fast.

Saprophytic Life.—The fungus is found saprophytic on the spikelets of some cereals (*Phleum pratense* Linnæus, *Hordeum miurnum* Linnæus, etc.).

Pathogenicity.—The experimental reproduction of the disease by inoculating pure cultures has not so far succeeded. Wright therefore goes so far as to say that *Actinomyces bovis* is a contamination.

Varieties.—Gasparini describes three varieties: *N. bovis*, *N. bovis sulphurca-alba*, *N. bovis luteo-rosea*. Caminiti has described a variety which he thinks may be a new species.

***Nocardia israeli* Kruse 1896.**

Synonyms.—*Streptothrix israeli* Kruse 1896, *Cohnistreptothrix israeli* Pinoy 1911.

Found in some cases of human and bovine actinomycosis. It differs from *N. bovis* by being strictly anaërobic. Inoculations of pure cultures have reproduced actinomycotic lesions, while so far such experimental lesions have not been obtained by using cultures of *N. bovis*.

Wright states that *N. israeli* is the real cause of actinomycosis, while *N. bovis* would be only a contamination or a saprophytic agent. We agree, however, with Pinoy's opinion that the clinical features of actinomycosis may be due to several germs: in man Pinoy has found *N. bovis* and *N. israeli*; in oxen *N. israeli* in most cases, but also *N. bovis*, the actinobacillus, and mixed infections.

The actinobacillus of Lignières and Spitz, very common in South America, gives rise to a type of actinomycosis of cattle affecting generally the tongue and neck, in which no grains are found. The germ in the affected tissues appears in the shape of a club-like bacillus. Cultivation is difficult, the best medium being glucose serum agar. The colonies are minute, bluish,

or translucent, with irregular edge. The germ generally dies out after two or three subcultures. Pinoy and Ravaut have described a case of meningitis in man due to this bacillus.

Nocardia foersteri Cohn 1874.

Synonyms.—*Streptothrix foersteri* Cohn 1874, *Oospora foersteri* Radais et Sauvageau, 1892, *Discomyces foersteri* Blanchard 1895, *Cohnistreptothrix foersteri* Pinoy 1911.

Mycelial threads very slender, seldom ramified, often terminating in a chain of rod-like or coccus-like elements. Masses of the fungus form some peculiar white bodies or concretions (Désmarres' dacryolithes), about 2 millimetres in diameter, which are occasionally found in the lachrymal canals of man.

The fungus has been cultivated with difficulty aërobically and anaërobically by several authors, among whom Kastalky, Axenfeld, Morax, and Landrieu. The last-named has made a thorough investigation of the fungus, which, according to him, shows a slow growth and gives rise on maltose agar to small cerebriform colonies of a grey-stone colour.

The peculiar concretions found in the lachrymal canals were first studied by Cesoin in 1670 and Sandifors in 1779. Désmarres, in 1842, considered them to be calculi composed of lime salts, and indicated them by the name of dacryolithes. Gruby believed they were induced by the fungus of Favus, but his observations remained unpublished. A. de Graefe, in 1854, first stated in a published work that these concretions were of mycotic origin. He thought they were due to *Achorion schoenleini*, while Conheim and others believed them to be caused by *Nocardia* (*Streptothrix*) *buccalis*. In 1875 Cohn described the fungus under the name of *Streptothrix foersteri*.

Nocardia rosenbachii Kruse 1896.

Synonym.—*Streptothrix rosenbachii* Kruse 1896.

Isolated by Rosenbach in a case of dermatitis, called by him 'erysipeloid.' Mycelial threads very slender; some terminate in club-like swellings. Can be cultivated on the usual laboratory media. Does not liquefy gelatine.

Nocardia asteroides Eppinger 1890.

Synonyms.—*Cladothrix asteroides* Eppinger 1890, *Streptothrix eppingeri* Rossi-Doria 1891, *Oospora asteroides* Sauvageau and Radais 1892, *Nocardia asteroides* R. Blanchard 1895, *Discomyces freeri* Musgrave and Clegg 1907.

Found in mycetoma and in cases of abscess of the brain. Mycelial threads very slender (0.2μ wide); the mycelial articles become easily dissociated, when they look bacillus-like. This fungus is acid-fast and is very similar to *Bacillus tuberculosis*, but grows much more quickly on ordinary media: obligative aërobe. Inoculations in the rabbit and guinea-pig produce a form of pseudo-tuberculosis histologically indistinguishable from true tuberculosis.

McCallum has found a *Nocardia* very similar to *N. asteroides* in a case of peritonitis.

Nocardia brasiliensis Lindenberg 1909.

Found by Lindenberg in a case of mycetoma of the leg in Brazil. Small white-yellowish, soft, moriform granules (0.1 to 0.5 millimetre), consisting of very delicate ramified mycelial tubes (0.0521 μ in diameter). Easily cultivated. Pinkish growth on Sabouraud's medium.

Nocardia maduræ Vincent 1894.

Synonyms.—*Streptothrix maduræ* H. Vincent 1894, *Nocardia maduræ* R. Blanchard 1895.

It causes Vincent's white mycetoma, very commonly found in Africa and Asia. The 'grains' which are found in the pus of such cases are soft, white, or slightly yellowish, and have a *mulberry-like* surface. At the periphery of the grains radiating filaments are found, but claviform swellings are usually absent; mycelial threads are always very slender (1 to 1½ μ). The fungus can be grown on the ordinary media; facultative aerobe. On glycerinated agar it forms discoid colonies, white in the centre and reddish at the periphery. In the cultures the mycelial threads are as slender as in the grains. Some of the mycelial threads have at their extremities short chains of small conidial elements. Gram-positive, but not acid-fast.

It is to be noted that this fungus very rarely produces bone lesions. Most strains are inoculable into monkeys.

Nocardia pelletieri Laveran 1906.

Synonyms.—*Micrococcus pelletieri* Laveran 1906, *Oospora pelletieri* Thiroux and Pelletier 1912, *Nocardia pelletieri* Pinoy 1912.

Very thin, delicate mycelium, easily dissociated. Some mycelial threads appear as strings of coccus-like bodies. Gram-positive. Thiroux and Pelletier have succeeded in growing it on Sabouraud's agar. Growth rather slow; colonies small, cerebriform, of a coral-red colour.

This species is closely allied to *N. maduræ* Vincent, from which it differs by the more abundant sporulation and the colonies being of a brighter red (coral-red) colour.

Pathogenicity.—Causes a type of mycetoma with small red grains, common in Senegal.

Nocardia dassonvillei Brocq-Rousseu 1907.

Synonym.—*Streptothrix foersteri* (Gasperini 1890).

Very thin ramified, mycelial threads, which easily become fragmented and dissociated into bacillary-like bodies. Numerous spherical coccus-like bodies (spores) present. Gram-positive. The fungus grows fairly well on gelatine, giving rise to small white, roundish colonies. This fungus has been found by Landrieu and Liégard in a case of conjunctivitis in an old lady who powdered her face extensively several times daily with rice-powder. The authors

suggest that the fungus may have been present in the rice-powder, as the same fungus is known to be found in several decaying cereals.

Gasperini isolated in 1890 from the air a *Nocardia* which he identified to be *N. foersteri*. Further researches (Landrien) have shown Gasperini's fungus to be *N. dassonvillei*.

Nocardia decussata Langeron and Chevalier 1912.

Synonym.—*Discomyces decussatus* Langeron and Chevalier 1912.

Found by Langeron and Chevalier in a patient presenting peculiar whitish, dry, squamous patches. The fungus grows on ordinary media extremely slowly. Colonies milk-white, the central portion of which is slightly elevated and flattened, but has a minute nodule in the middle; very often four furrows, forming a cross, are seen. The mycelial threads are thin, non-septate, and are easily dissociated into roundish bodies, 1 to 1.5 μ in diameter.

The pathogenic rôle of this fungus is doubtful.

Nocardia carougeau Brumpt 1910. X

Synonym.—*Discomyces carougeau* Brumpt 1910.

Discovered by Fonteynont and Carougeau in cases of juxta-articular nodules. In the nodules thin mycelial threads are seen, at times ramified, collected in bundle-like groups or arranged radially. Gram-positive. Attempts at cultivation have failed.

Nocardia thibierge Pinoy and Ravaut 1909.

Discovered by Pinoy and Ravaut in a case of peculiar nodular affection of the subcutaneous tissues and muscles. In the lesions very thin (0.2 μ) fragile mycelial threads are seen, often dissociated in bacillary-like bodies. Masses of mycelia embedded in amorphous cementing substance form minute grains or sclerotia, with a maximum diameter of about 80 μ . Some filaments terminate in club-like formations about 3 μ in breadth, which are acid-fast.

The fungus is easily cultivated, aërobically and anaërobically. On maltose agar it produces small white colonies; on broth it develops only at the bottom of the tube.

Nocardia pulmonalis H. Roger, Bory and Sartory 1909.

In the parasitic stage may appear in the shape of bacillary-like bodies, about 0.5 μ in diameter. In cultures (maltose broth) thin mycelial filaments, 0.5 μ in diameter, are present, some branching, some terminating in club-like formations. Some mycelial threads are very fragile and become fragmented into strings of bacillary or coccus-like bodies.

Pathogenicity.—Causes a type of pseudo-tuberculosis. In the expectoration occasionally small white granules, composed of masses of the fungus, are present. Sartory has found the fungus in a case of otitis.



FIG. 408. — *NOCARDIA PULMONALIS*
H. ROGER, BORY AND SARTORY.
(After Roger and Sartory.)



FIG. 409.—*NOCARDIA BUCCALIS*
ROGER, BORY AND SARTORY.
(After Roger and Sartory.)

***Nocardia candida* Petruschky 1901.**

Found in sputum.

***Nocardia aurea* Du Bois St.-Séverin 1902.**

Found in a case of ulcerative conjunctivitis.

***Nocardia odorifera*.**

Found by Rullmann in a case of chronic bronchitis.

***Nocardia liquefaciens* Hesse 1892.**

Synonym.—*Cladothrix liquefaciens* Hesse 1892.

Gives rise to white colonies on gelatine, and later liquefies the medium. Was isolated from a case of actinomycosis.

***Nocardia ponceti* Verdun 1912.**

Not cultivable on agar or gelatine. Grows well on serum, where it takes a bacillary-like form. Found by Moorhof, Dor, and Poncet in a case of myomycosis resembling actinomycosis.

***Nocardia fusca* Karwacki 1911.**

Isolated by Karwacki from the sputum of a tubercular patient. Dark yellowish colour.

***Nocardia luteola* Foulerton and Jones.**

Found in a case of purulent conjunctivitis.

***Nocardia carnea* Rossi-Doria 1891.**

Isolated by Baldoni from a case of chronic bronchitis. Red colonies.

***Nocardia garteni* Brumpt 1910.**

Synonyms.—*Cladothrix liquefaciens* No. 2 Garten 1895, *Discomyces garteni* Brumpt 1910.

Liquefies gelatine. On potatoes gives rise to white colonies, while the medium takes a greenish colour. Was isolated from a case of actinomycosis.

Nocardia enteritidis Pottien 1902.

Found in cases of enteritis by Pottien.

Nocardia buccalis H. Roger, Bory and Sartory 1909.

Synonyms.—*Oospora buccalis* H. Roger, Bory and Sartory 1909, *Discomyces buccalis* Brumpt 1910.

Thin mycelial filaments (0.7 to 0.8μ). Some ramified mycelial threads are very fragile, becoming fragmented into strings of bacillary-like or coccus-like bodies. Can be cultivated.

Pathogenicity.—May give rise to a form of stomatitis somewhat resembling thrush. It has been found also in tonsillar abscesses.

Nocardia lasserei Verdun 1912.

Synonym.—*Nocardia* sp. (?) Lasserre 1904.

Found by Lasserre in 1904 in an ulcerative lesion situated on the pharynx and upper lip. Mycelial filaments very thin (0.5 to 0.75μ); fragile, club-like formations present. Can be cultivated. Pathogenic to rabbits and guinea-pigs but only by intracerebral injection.

Nocardia lingualis Guéguen 1908.

Synonym.—*Oospora lingualis* Guéguen 1908, *Discomyces lingualis* (Brumpt 1910).

In the parasitic stage the fungus appears in the shape of bacillary bodies, less than 0.3μ in diameter. In cultures it shows a mycelial type with very thin filaments. It is probably non-pathogenic; it has been found in cases of lingua nigra in association with *Cryptococcus linguæ pilosæ*.

Nocardia rivierei Verdun 1912.

Isolated by Riviere (1896) in a case of multiple abscesses. Is cultivable on ordinary media.

Nocardia hominis Foulerton 1906.

Synonyms.—*Streptothrix hominis* Foulerton 1906, *Oospora hominis* Ridet 1911.

Discovered by Foulerton in a case of multiple abscesses; was present also in the expectoration of the same patient. Foulerton has found similar fungi (*N. hominis* III.) in cases of appendicitis.

Nocardia minutissima Burchardt 1859.

Synonyms.—*Microsporum minutissimum* Burchardt 1859, *M. gracile* Balzer 1883, *Sporotrichum minutissimum* Saccardo 1896, *Discomyces minutissimus* P. Verdun 1907, *Microsporoides minutissimus* Neveu Lemaire 1906, *Oospora minutissima* Ridet 1911.

Mycelial threads extremely thin (0.6μ); seldom ramified. The

mycelial segments get easily dissociated, and have then the appearance of bacilli. Is the cause of erythrasma. Michele, Ducrey, and Reale claim to have cultivated it.

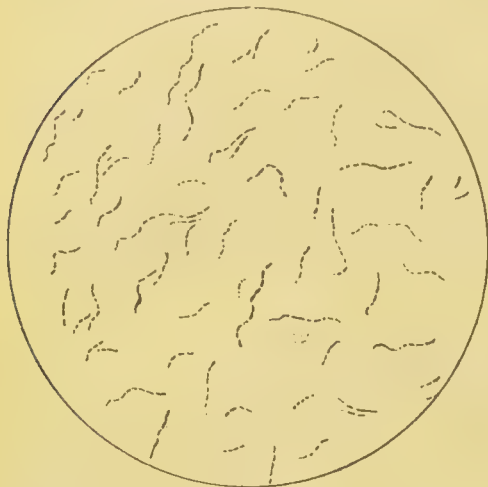


FIG. 410.—*NOCARDIA MINUTISSIMA*
BURCHARDT.



FIG. 411.—*NOCARDIA TENUIS*
CASTELLANI.

Nocardia tenuis Castellani 1911.

Found by Castellani in a tropical nodular affection of the hair of the axillary regions. In the parasitic stage, which is the only one known, cultivation having so far failed, the germ appears in the shape of bacillary-like bodies, varying in size ($\frac{1}{2}$ to $1\frac{1}{2} \mu$), packed together and embedded into an amorphous cementing substance. The bacillary bodies are either straight or bent, seldom branching. Gram-positive, but not acid-fast. Masses of this fungus embedded in amorphous cementing substance form the nodules of trichomycosis flava of the axillary regions.

In the black variety of the affection *Nocardia tenuis* is associated with a black pigment-producing coccus—*M. nigrescens* Castellani 1911. In the red variety the same *Nocardia* is associated with a red pigment-producing coccus.

For the growth of the black pigment-producing coccus, sugar media are more suitable than ordinary agar. On Sabouraud's agar the colonies of this coccus appear twenty-four to forty-eight hours after inoculation. They are roundish, at first white, but after a couple of days the centre of each colony turns black; at this pigmentation slowly spreads eccentrically. After a time the colonies coalesce into a jet-black mass. On glucose agar the coccus presents the same characters. On ordinary agar the pigmentation is much less marked or almost absent.

The red pigment-producing coccus, on the other hand, grows better and shows more pigmentation on ordinary agar than on maltose or glucose agar.

Genus *Monilia* Gmelin 1791.

Septate mycelium, the segments of which become easily dissociated. Fertile hyphæ often bear at their extremities short chains of rather large oval or roundish conidia. Temporarily we include in the genus *Monilia* certain genera recently introduced,

which according to many authorities have not yet been sufficiently defined. These genera are *Zymonema* De Beurmann and Gougerot 1909, *Parasaccharomyces* 1909, *Parendomyces* Queyrat and Laroche 1909, *Monilia* De Beurmann and Gougerot 1909. The fungi of the genus *Monilia* are generally easily grown on ordinary laboratory media, the best being Sabouraud's maltose agar and glucose agar. They usually grow better on slightly acid than on alkaline media. They grow also on ordinary agar. They generally grow under two types—the yeast-like type and the filamentous type.

Biological Characters.—Some species clot milk, others have no action on this medium; some species liquefy gelatine and serum. Certain fungi of this genus, when growing on serum, produce a peculiar zone of brownish or black discoloration of the medium all round the growth. The biochemical properties and sugar reactions vary from species to species. Rabbits can be immunized for these fungi, and the immunization and agglutination reactions may be used in the differentiation of the various species.

Pathogenicity.—Fungi of this genus are the ætiological agents of thrush, some types of bronchomycoses, and some dermatomycoses.

Classification.—There has been and there is still a great deal of confusion in the classification of such fungi. Many of the species of this genus can hardly be distinguished on purely morphological and botanical characters. We are of opinion that the classification should be based, not only on morphological data, but also on biochemical characters and immunization phenomena. Among the biochemical properties, the most important are the actions on milk, gelatine, serum, and on sugar broths. A large number of sugars should be used in the same manner as is done in the classification of the various species of intestinal bacteria. It is to be noted that the reactions with certain sugars are constant, while with others (for instance, mannite) may vary. It is to be noted also that in analogy to intestinal bacteria, a species may be trained to ferment certain sugars on which it did not act when recently isolated.

While taking all this into account, we believe the investigation of the various biochemical reactions to be of great value for classifying these fungi.

***Monilia albicans* Robin 1853.**

Synonyms.—*Oidium albicans* Robin 1853, *Syringospora robini* Quinquaud 1868, *Saccharomyces albicans* Rees 1877, *Monilia albicans* Zopf 1890, *Endomyces albicans* Vuillemin 1898.

One of the fungi giving rise to thrush. Widely different descriptions have been given of the so-called thrush-fungus. Some authorities (Hewett) state that the organism liquefies gelatine; others affirm the reverse. Several writers give it as clotting milk, others as having no action on this medium. Castellani has demonstrated that man can be affected by numerous different species of *Monilia*, and that the term thrush-fungus (*Oidium albicans*, *Endomyces albicans*,

TABLE SHOWING PRINCIPAL BIOCHEMICAL AND CULTURAL
OF THE FUNGI IN ALPHABETICAL ORDER: REACTIONS

Genus Moullia.	Litmus Milk.	Glu- cose.	Laevu- lose.	Mal- tose.	Galac- tose.	Saccha- rose.	Lac- tose.	Man- nite.	Dul- cite.	Dex- trin.
M. albicans Robin	AC	AG	AGs	AGs	AG	Avs	O	O	O	O
M. blanchardi Cast.	$\frac{\text{Avs}}{\text{Alk}}$	AGs	A	A	A	A	O	O	O	O
M. bronchialis Cast.	O	AG	AG	AG	O	AGs	O	O	O	A
M. burgessi Cast. . .	$\frac{\text{O}}{\text{Alk}}$	AGs	A	AGs	A	AGs	O	O	O	O
M. chalmersi Cast.	$\frac{\text{As}}{\text{Alk}}$	AG	AG	As	AGs	AG	O	O	O	O
M. decolorans Cast. and Low.	DC	AG	AG	AG	A	A	O	O	O	A
M. enterica Cast.	$\frac{\text{O}}{\text{Alk}}$	AG	AG	AG	AG	AG	O	As	O	As
M. faecalis Cast. . .	$\frac{\text{A}}{\text{DPs}}$	AG	AG	AG	AGs	AGs	O	O	O	O
M. guillermondi Cast.	$\frac{\text{O}}{\text{Alk}}$	AG	AG	As	A	AG	O	O	O	O
M. insolita Cast. . .	$\frac{\text{As}}{\text{Alk}}$	AG	AG	AG	AG	AG	O	As	O	O
M. intestinalis Cast.	ADs	AG	AG	As	A	A	O	O	O	O
M. krusei Cast. . .	O	AG	AG	O	O	O	O	O	O	O
M. lustigi Cast. . .	$\frac{\text{As}}{\text{D}}$	A	AGs	Avs	A	AGs	O	O	O	A
M. negrii Cast. . .	$\frac{\text{Avs}}{\text{Alk}}$	AG	AG	As	AGs	AG	O	O	O	O
M. nivea Cast. . .	$\frac{\text{O}}{\text{Alk}}$	AG	AG	AG	AG	AGs	O	O	O	O
M. nitida Cast. . .	$\frac{\text{A}}{\text{DC}}$	AG	AG	A	A	A	A	A	O	Avs
M. paratropicalis Cast.	$\frac{\text{As}}{\text{Alk}}$	AG	AG	AG	AG	AG	O	O	O	Avs
M. pseudo-tropicalis Cast.	ACs	AG	AG	O	AGs	AG	AG	O	O	O
M. perryi Cast. . .	$\frac{\text{As}}{\text{D Alk}}$	A	AGs	A	A	AGs	O	O	O	O
M. pinoyi Cast. . .	O	AG	AG	AG	O	O	O	O	O	O
M. pulmonalis Cast.	$\frac{\text{O}}{\text{Alk D}}$	AG	AG	AG	AGs	AG	O	Avs	O	O
M. rhoi Cast. . .	$\frac{\text{As}}{\text{Alk}}$	AG	AG	Avs	AGs	AG	O	O	O	O
M. rosea Zenoni . .	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—
M. rotunda Cast. . .	AC	A	A	A	A	O	A	O	O	O
M. rugosa Cast. . .	$\frac{\text{A}}{\text{PsCs}}$	As	As	As	As	As	O	O	O	O
M. tropicalis Cast.	A	AG	AG	AG	AGs	AGs	O	O	O	O
M. zeylanica Cast.	ACs	A	A	A	A	A	As	O	O	A

ABBREVIATIONS USED IN THE TABLE.—A=acid; G=gas; C=clet (milk), clear (broth and peptone water); CTP=clear at first, then thin pellicle present. D=decolorized. P=peptonized (milk), pellicle (broth). Alk=alkaline. $\frac{\text{A}}{\text{Alk}}$ =acid, then alkaline. s=slight; vs=very slight.

CHARACTERS OF CERTAIN SPECIES OF MONILIA, WITH NAMES
AFTER FIFTEEN DAYS' INCUBATION AT 35° C.

Raf- finose.	Ara- binose.	Ado- nite.	Inulin.	Sor- bite.	Broth.	Pep- tone Water.	Indole.	Gram.	Gela- tine.	Serum.	Neutral Red.	Colour of Growth on Maltose Agar.
O	O	O	O	O	CTP	C	O	+	+	+s	O	White
As	O	O	Avs	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	OB	O	White
As	O	O	AGs	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	OB	O	White
AGs	O	O	O	O	CTP	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	OB	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
AGs	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	OB	O	White
AGs	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
AG	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
As or O	O	O	O	O	CTP	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	CTP	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
As	O	O	Avs	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
A	AGs	O	O	O	CTP	C	O	+	O	OB	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	O	O	—	Pink
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	{ Amber- yellowish
O	O	O	O	O	C	C	O	+	O	OB	O	
Avs Gvs	O	O	Avs	O	C	C	O	+	O	O	O	White

B=brown pigmentation of the medium. O=negative result—viz., neither acid nor clot in milk; neither acid nor gas in sugar media; non-production of indol; non-liquefaction of gelatine or serum, as the case may be. +=positive result, liquefaction of medium.

Monilia albicans) has been in the past used to cover a number of different species, in the same manner that the term *B. coli* was for years applied to a multitude of different intestinal bacteria, when a few fermentation tests only were carried out. As the species *M. candidans* has to be divided into many species, we keep the term *M. albicans* for the species which we are now describing, and which clots milk and liquefies gelatine.

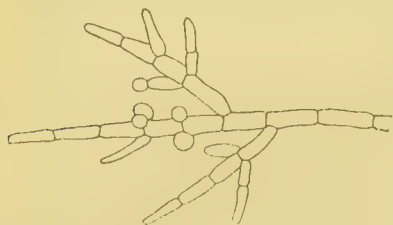


FIG. 412.—*MONILIA ALBICANS*
ROBIN.

Parasitic Life.—This fungus forms white patches on the tongue and oral mucosa. The patches are easily detached. A particle of the patch examined microscopically shows septate mycelial threads, occasionally ramified, with segments straight or somewhat bent, and easily dissociated. Each segment is about $20\ \mu$ in length and 3 to $5\ \mu$ in breadth. At the terminal end of each mycelial thread three or four shorter ovoid elements are found, which reproduce by budding. Some similar ovoid or roundish globular refringent cells may be observed originating laterally at the septations of the mycelium. These globular elements (conidia) become detached, and reproduce by budding.

Cultures.—The fungus grows best of all on slightly acid Sabouraud's maltose agar or on glucose agar, but grows fairly well also on all alkaline media. In cultures the fungus appears under two forms—a globular form, morphologically similar to a typical yeast, and reproducing by budding; a filamentous form, showing mycelial threads, simple or ramified. *Asci* and *internal spores*, as in the genus *Endomyces*, are absent. On Sabouraud's and glucose agar the growth is abundant, smooth, of a creamy-white colour; on ordinary agar the growth is less abundant. Gelatine and serum are very slowly liquefied. Milk is rendered acid, and after a time it clots. The sugar reactions are given in the table.

Pathogenicity.—*M. albicans* is one of the fungi which gives rise to *thrush*. This condition may be due to several different fungi—*M. candidans*, *Endomyces vuillemini*, *M. tropicalis*, etc. *Thrush* is generally restricted to the oral mucosa, but in certain cases it may spread to the œsophagus, stomach, intestine. *M. candidans* has been found also in a few cases of bronchomycosis.

***Monilia tropicalis* Castellani 1909.**

Synonym.—*Endomyces tropicalis* Castellani 1909.

Found by Castellani in Ceylon in many cases of bronchomycosis. In the expectoration round or oval shape yeast-like cells are seen, and at times segments of mycelium. Cultures are easily obtained on Sabouraud's or glucose agar, and even on ordinary agar. It grows more abundantly on slightly acid than on alkaline media.

On Sabouraud's and glucose agar the growth is abundant, creamy-white, with a smooth surface when young; often slightly crinkled when old. The growth is composed practically of only globular yeast-like cells, while in the water of condensation globular cells and mycelium may be found together. A little mycelium may be found, however, occasionally in the growth on the slope. Ascus formations are absent. Gelatine and serum are not liquefied; there is no brownish discoloration of the serum, as is the case with some other species of *Monilia* (*M. insolita*, etc.). Litmus milk is generally rendered acid, but is not clotted. The sugar reactions will be found in the table on pp. 822, 823. It produces acid and gas in glucose, lævulose, maltose, and also, in less amount, in galactose and saccharose.

Pathogenicity.—Is the commonest cause of a type of bronchomycosis (see Bronchomoniliasis, p. 1285). In Ceylon it has been found by Castellani also in a few cases of *pseudo-diphtheria* which terminated fatally. This case was a little native girl, who developed white patches on the tonsils, uvula, and soft palate. The microscopical examination revealed absence of *B. diphtheriæ* and presence of *M. tropicalis*. Symptoms of bronchopneumonia soon developed, and the child died. At the autopsy the fungus was found in enormous amount in the bronchi; it was pathogenic for guinea-pigs.

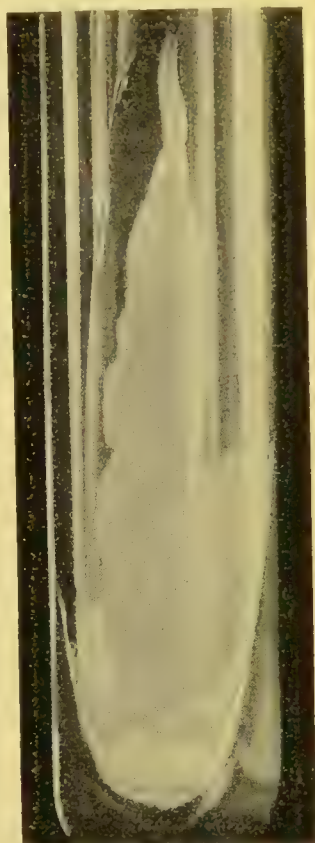


FIG. 413. — *MONILIA TROPICALIS* CASTELLANI.

Monilia paratropicalis Castellani 1909.

Synonym.—*Endomyces paratropicalis* Castellani 1910.

Found in some cases of bronchomycosis by Castellani. Microscopically and on Sabouraud's and glucose agars, identical with *M. tropicalis*. Does not coagulate milk. Differs from the typical *M. tropicalis* by producing acid and gas in saccharose (see table).

The same fungus, or a very similar one, was found in two cases of blastomycosis of the skin in Ceylon.

Monilia pseudo-tropicalis Castellani 1910.

Synonym.—*Endomyces pseudo-tropicalis* Castellani 1910.

Found by Castellani in a few cases of bronchomycosis. Differs from *M. tropicalis* and *M. paratropicalis* by clotting milk. For the sugar reactions see table,

Monilia bronchialis Castellani 1910.**Synonym.**—*Endomyces bronchialis* Castellani 1910.

Found in sputum. Colonies white. Has no action on milk, gelatine, serum. Sugar reactions are found in the table.

Monilia chalmersi Castellani 1912.

Found by Castellani in a case of bronchitis. Colonies of white colour. Renders the milk first slightly acid, then alkaline. Does not liquefy either gelatine or serum. Sugar reactions are collected in the table.

Monilia guillermonti Castellani 1910.**Synonym.**—*Endomyces guillermonti* Castellani 1910.

Observed in sputum once by Castellani. Milk is rendered alkaline. Serum and gelatine are not liquefied. For sugar reactions see table.

Monilia nivea Castellani 1910.**Synonym.**—*Endomyces niveus* Castellani.

Found in a sample of sputum which had not been collected in a sterile vessel. Of doubtful pathogenicity. For cultural and biochemical characters, see table.

Monilia nitida Castellani 1910.**Synonym.**—*Endomyces nitidus* Castellani 1910.

Observed in a sample of sputum by Castellani. Of doubtful pathogenicity. Milk is rendered first acid, then decolourized and clotted. Other cultural characters are found in the table.

Monilia zeylanica Castellani 1910.**Synonym.**—*Endomyces zeylanicus* Castellani 1910.

Found in sputum by Castellani. White colonies. Milk is rendered very acid and is slowly clotted. Gelatine and serum are not liquefied. For sugar reactions see table.

Monilia krusei Castellani 1909.**Synonym.**—*Saccharomyces krusei* Castellani, *Endomyces krusei* Castellani.

Found in sputum by Castellani. In sputum it appeared as a saccharomyces, and in cultures had all the characters of a saccharomyces at first, but after several generations a little mycelium was present on Sabouraud's agar. The sugar reactions are found in the table. It produces acid and gas in glucose and lævulose.

Monilia pinoyi Castellani 1910.**Synonym.**—*Endomyces pinoyi* Castellani 1910.

Found in sputum. Grows well on Sabouraud's and glucose agar, and other sugar media; also on ordinary agar, though less abun-

dantly. Does not clot milk; does not liquefy either gelatine or serum. Produces acid and gas in glucose, lævulose, maltose.

Monilia rugosa Castellani 1910.

Synonym.—*Endomyces rugosus* Castellani 1910.

Isolated from sputum by Castellani. Grows readily on Sabouraud's and other sugar media, and also on ordinary agar. The growth is very abundant, and from the very first is of a yellowish-amber colour and has a crinkled surface. The sugar reactions are found in the table. It is very doubtful whether this fungus really belongs to the genus *Monilia*.

Monilia enterica Castellani 1911.

Synonym.—*Endomyces entericus* Castellani.

Found in stools by Castellani. Milk is rendered strongly alkaline. Gelatine and serum are not liquefied. For sugar reactions see table.

Monilia fæcalis Castellani 1911.

Synonym.—*Endomyces fæcalis* Castellani 1911.

Found in intestinal contents by Castellani. Milk is rendered first acid, then decolourized, and, later, slightly peptonized. Gelatine is not liquefied; serum is not liquefied, but a brownish pigmentation develops on the medium all round the growth. For sugar reactions see the table (p. 822).

Monilia insolita Castellani 1911.

Synonym.—*Endomyces insolitus* Castellani 1911.

Found in stools and in the saliva. The milk is rendered first slightly acid, then alkaline. On serum a zone of dark pigmentation develops on the surface of the medium round the growth. The medium is not liquefied. For other cultural characters see the table.

Monilia intestinalis Castellani 1911.

Synonym.—*Endomyces intestinalis* Castellani 1911.

Found in stools and saliva by Castellani. Colonies on solid media white. Milk first rendered acid, then slowly decolourized. The growth on serum is not surrounded by a zone of dark pigmentation. Further cultural characters are found in the table (p. 822).



FIG. 414. — MONILIA RUGOSA CASTELLANI 1910.

Monilia rotunda Castellani 1911.**Synonym.**—*Endomyces rotundus* Castellani 1911.

Found in saliva and stools by Castellani. Milk is rendered strongly acid and clotted. Serum and gelatine not liquefied. The sugar reactions are collected in the table.

Monilia rhoi Castellani 1909.**Synonym.**—*Endomyces rhoi* Castellani 1909.

Found by Castellani in Ceylon in several cases of otomycosis, and once in a sample of tea. In the ear the fungus forms a whitish mass (generally embedded in wax), in which numerous long, septate mycelial threads, 2 to 3.5 μ in breadth, and numerous roundish free spores, 3.5 to 5 μ in diameter, are seen. On laboratory media it generally grows, showing a yeast-like type. Does not clot milk; does not liquefy gelatine and serum. The sugar reactions are quoted in the table.

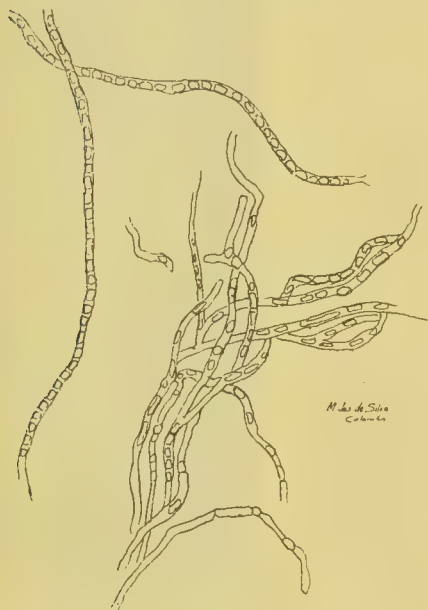


FIG. 415.—*MONILIA RHOI* CASTELLANI.

(From a fresh preparation. The free spores are not shown.)

In the cases of otomycosis the mycelium was abundant, the mycelial threads being very long and septate, 3 to 4 μ in breadth; very numerous free, round spores, 4 to 5 μ in diameter, were present. For cultural characters see table.

Monilia burgessi Castellani 1912.**Synonym.**—*Endomyces burgessi* Castellani 1912.

Isolated from the air. Grows abundantly on the usual sugar media, the growth being of a white creamy appearance. Does not render acid or coagulate milk. Does not liquefy serum or gelatine. On serum it produces a zone of peculiar brownish or black discoloration in the medium all round the growth. The sugar reactions are found in the table.

Monilia pulmonalis Castellani 1911.

Found by Castellani in sputum and also in samples of tea. For cultural characters see table.

Monilia lustigi Castellani 1912.

Found in samples of tea. Grows well on all sugar media, and also on ordinary agar, the growth being of a snow-white colour.

Renders litmus milk slightly acid, and then decolourizes it completely. Does not liquefy serum or gelatine. On serum it induces a narrow zone of black discoloration all round the growth. The sugar reactions are found in the table.

Monilia perryi Castellani 1912.

Found by Castellani in samples of tea-dust. The cultural characters and chemical properties are seen in the table.

Monilia blanchardi Castellani 1912.

Synonym.—*Endomyces blanchardi* Castellani 1912.

Isolated from tea-dust by Castellani. Grows abundantly on maltose, glucose, and other sugar media; also on ordinary agar, though less vigorously. The growth is of a white colour and smooth surface. Milk rendered at first very slightly acid, and then alkaline. No liquefaction of gelatine or serum. Does not produce gas in any sugar except, in small quantity, in glucose.

Monilia rosea Zenoni 1912.

Synonym.—*Oidium roseum non liquefaciens* Zenoni 1912.

The cultures on Sabouraud's and other sugar media are of a pinkish colour. Neither serum nor gelatine are liquefied.

Pathogenicity.—Was isolated by Zenoni in a peculiar case of hepatitis with fever and jaundice which ended fatally. Microscopically conidia and mycelial filaments could be seen very abundant in and about the smaller hepatic bloodvessels and the bile-ducts. The fungus is pathogenic to rabbits, guinea-pigs, and white rats.

Monilia subtilis Blanchard 1895.

Synonyms.—*Oidium subtile cutis* Babès 1895, *Mycoderma subtile* Verdun 1912.

Found by Babès in some ulcers on which the fungus produced white membranes. The mycelial threads were thinner than in most species of *Monilia*. There was dichotomous branching, and at the extremities of the mycelial threads ovoid conidia were present. Biochemical properties of the fungus not known. Pathogenic for the rabbit.

The same, or a very similar, fungus was later found by Clozel, de Boyer, and d'Antin in a peculiar pustular affection observed in cachectic children.

Monilia pulmonea Bennett 1842.

Synonyms.—*Oidium pulmoneum* Bennett 1842, *Oospora pulmonea* Saccardo 1886, *Mycoderma pulmoneum* Vuillemin 1891.

The organism was found in a case of pneumothorax by Bennett in 1842, it was observed again by Vuillemin in the sputum of a

tubercular patient in 1891, and in an ulcerative dermatitis by Balzer, Burnier and Gougerot in 1910. It grows under two types—a saccharomyces-like and a filamentous type. Colonies on glucose agar white. Biochemical reactions not given.

***Monilia candida* Bonorden.**

Commonly found vegetating in decomposing vegetable matter; occasionally seen parasitic in Mammalia, giving rise to white patches on the tongue and buccal mucosa, somewhat similar to human *thrush*. Once found in a child in some white patches present on the tongue. Mycelium thinner than in most *Monilias* (1 to $1\frac{1}{2}$ μ in breadth); conidia roundish, smooth, 7 to 8 μ in diameter. Biochemical actions of the fungus have not yet been investigated.

***Monilia kochi* von Wettstein 1885.**

Synonym.—*Rhodomycetes erubescens* Aster 1900.

Morphologically similar to *M. candida*; grows well on sugar media, where it produces pinkish colonies; was observed by Wettstein in a case of chronic acid dyspepsia. Biochemical properties not studied.

***Monilia montoyai* Castellani 1907.**

Synonym.—*Monilia pictor* Neveu-Lemaire 1908.

Discovered by Montoya in cases of white pinta. Some fertile hyphae are much thicker than others; the spores are large, globular (5 to 7 μ), and contain a large nucleus. Grows well on sugar media, giving rise to white-creamy colonies which rapidly fuse together. Biochemical properties of the fungus not known.



FIG. 416.—*MONILIA MONTOYAI*.

(After Montoya y Florez.)

***Monilia cutanea* de Beurmann, Gougerot and Vaucher 1909.**

Synonyms.—*Oidium cutaneum* de Beurmann, Gougerot and Vaucher 1909, *Mycoderma cutaneum* Verdun 1912.

Isolated by de Beurmann, Gougerot and Vaucher from a

case showing a peculiar gummatous condition clinically resembling sporotrichosis or syphilis. The fungus, on certain media (glycerine agar), vegetates as a saccharomyces, and ferments glucose; on other media (agar) mycelium and yeast-like cells are present, and the fungus does not ferment glucose any longer. On glucose agar the growth is white-yellowish, mammillary, with a radiating aureola. The fungus, unless injected in massive doses, is not very pathogenic to the rabbit, guinea-pig, and rat. Intraperitoneal injections of rather large doses induce in these animals a nodular peritonitis.

Monilia caoi Verdun 1912.

Found by Cao in the sputum of a tubercular patient in association with the tubercular bacillus. Yellowish colonies on ordinary agar. Pathogenic to rabbits. Biochemical reactions not given.

Monilia harteri Verdun 1912.

Synonym.—*Parasaccharomyces* sp. (?) de Beurmann and Gougerot.

Found by Harter in a case of enteritis which later developed hepatic bronchial and cutaneous lesions, due to the same fungus. On maltose agar and carrots the colonies are cream-white, and yeast-like cells only are generally found. In Raulin's liquid mycelial threads are present, septated, $2\ \mu$ in breadth. The fungus does not liquefy gelatine, does not coagulate milk; produces slight acidity, but not gas, in saccharose.

Genus Sporotrichum Link 1809.

During parasitic life the fungi of this genus appear as yeast-like cells. In cultures they show abundant septate or non-septate, ramified mycelium, and numerous oval or roundish spores, supported by short sterigmata. The dermatomycoses caused by these fungi are called sporothricoses; they are often characterized by the presence of gumma-like swellings.

Fungi belonging to this genus may live saprophytic in nature in vegetables, salads, etc., or parasitic in man and other mammalia and in insects.

TABLE OF SPOROTRICHIA AFFECTING MAN.

Genus.	Species.
Sporotrichum Link 1809	Sp. schenki Hektoen and Perkins 1901.
	Sp. beurmanni Matruchot and Ramond 1905.
	Sp. dori de Beurmann and Gougerot 1906.
	Sp. gougeroti Matruchot 1910.
	Sp. jeanselmei Brumpt and Langeron 1910.
	Sp. indicum Castellani 1908.
	Sp. asteroides Splendore 1909.
	Sp. lesnei Vuillemin 1910.

Sporotrichum schenki Hektoen and Perkins 1900.

Synonyms.—*Sporothrix schenki* Hektoen and Perkins 1900, *Rhinocladium beurmanni* Verdun 1913.

Discovered by Schenk in a case of gummatous lymphangitis in 1896 in North America. Easily grown on glucose, maltose, and other sugar media. Optimum temperature 30° to 38° C. Growth with an irregular surface, generally of white colour, but old cultures may present some brownish or black pigmentation. Glucose gelatine is slowly liquefied. Mycelial threads as a rule not very straight, rather bent, curved, or undulating; they are about $2\ \mu$ in diameter. Conidia present in small numbers, oval, supported by short sterigmata. Ferments lactose; has no action on saccharose.

Pathogenicity.—It is the cause of Schenk's sporotrichosis, found in North America. According to de Beurmann, this fungus is very little or non-pathogenic to rats and mice.

Sporotrichum beurmanni Matruchot and Ramond 1905.

Synonym.—*Rhinocladium beurmanni* Verdun 1913.

Discovered by de Beurmann in France, and completely investigated by himself and Ramond, Gougerot, Dor, Sicard, Pinoy, etc., in that country; by Adamson in England; by Lutz and Splendore in South America; by Carougeau in Madagascar, etc.



FIG. 417. — *SPOROTRICHUM BEURMANNI* MATRUCHOT AND RAMOND.
(After Gougerot.)

Parasitic Life.—In the tissues oval, yeast-like or short bacillary forms are seen, 3 to 5 μ in length and 2 to 3 μ in breadth, free or engulfed by phagocytes. Pinoy has described some minute oval forms the shape and size of piroplasmata inside the macrophages

In a case of general infection he has made the important observation that typical fructifications may be seen in the blood capillaries.

Cultures.—The best media are Sabouraud's maltose agar and glucose agar. The growth begins to appear between the fourth and the twelfth day. Optimum temperature 22° C. The growth may be whitish at first, but soon becomes completely black or of a brownish chocolate-like colour. The surface is cerebriform. Glucose gelatine is slowly liquefied. Mycelial threads about 2 μ in diameter, rather straight. Conidia oval, 5 to 6 μ in length and 3 μ in breadth, supported by short sterigmata. In contrast to *Sp. schenki*, the conidia are extremely numerous.

Ferments saccharose; has no action on lactose.

Pathogenicity.—Is the cause of by far the greatest number of cases of sporotrichosis in Europe (see Chapter LXIV.). Is very pathogenic to rats and mites.

Sporotrichum dori de Beurmann and Gougerot 1908.

Found by Dor in a case of gummatous sporotrichosis. In contrast to the typical *Sp. beurmanni*, the growth on maltose and glucose agars is slower; the colonies do not coalesce into a large mass, but remain separate and small, not exceeding 1½ millimetres in diameter. The colour is light brownish; never becomes black. Does not grow on gelatine. The mycelial filaments are very thin (0.5 to 1 μ), with short mycelial segments, occasionally dichotomous.

The fungus is not pathogenic, or very slightly so, for rats and mice.

Sporotrichum gougeroti Matruchot 1910.**Synonym.**—*Rhinocladium gougeroti* Verdun 1913.

Differs from the typical *Sp. beurmanni* only in small details, the principal ones of which are the black pigmentation of the colonies from the very beginning, and the extremely abundant sporulation.

Sporotrichum indicum Castellani 1908.

Found by Castellani in Ceylon. It is doubtful whether it is a separate species, or merely a variety of *Sp. beurmanni*. The mycelial threads are often somewhat larger (2 to 3 μ wide); conidia roundish (3 to 5 μ) or oval (4 to 5 μ long and 3 to 4 μ in breadth). The colonies on maltose and glucose agars may be of various colour—white-greyish, light brownish, dark brownish, black.

Sporotrichum jeanselmei Brumpt and Langeron 1910.

Was isolated by Jeanselme and P. Chevallier from a case of gummatous sporotrichosis, and was studied botanically by Brumpt and Langeron. It differs from *Sp. beurmanni* by the mycelial filaments being thinner. These are septate, ramified with short lateral branches supporting clusters of spores. The spores are oval or roundish 2.5 to 3.5 μ .

Sporotrichum asteroïdes Splendore 1909.**Synonym.**—*Rhinocladium asteroïdes* Verdun 1913.

Discovered by Splendore in South America. Is characterized by the presence in the infected tissues of spherical bodies, 4 to 12 μ in diameter, from which some bacillary-like formations radiate. The fungus grows well on maltose and glucose agars,

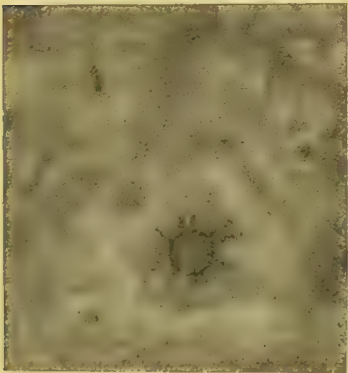


FIG. 418.—SPOROTRICHUM ASTEROÏDES SPLENDORE IN THE TISSUES.

Note radiate body.



FIG. 419.—SPOROTRICHUM ASTEROÏDES SPLENDORE.

1, Young culture; 2, old culture.
(From photographs by Dr. Splendore.)

the colonies being first white and later black. Pathogenic to man, rats and mice.

Sporotrichum lesnei Vuillemin 1910.

Synonym.—*Rhinocladium lesnei* Vuillemin 1910.

Differs from all the other species of *Sporotrichum* by the elongated shape and large dimensions of the conidia, which are 4 to 11 μ in length and 2.5 to 4 μ in breadth. Old cultures are of a dark sooty hue, and black chlamydo-spores may be present.

Genus Trichosporum Behrend 1890.

These fungi live parasitic on the surface of the hairs, but do not penetrate into their interior; during their parasitic life they vege-



FIG. 420.—TRICHOSPORUM.
(After Vuillemin.)

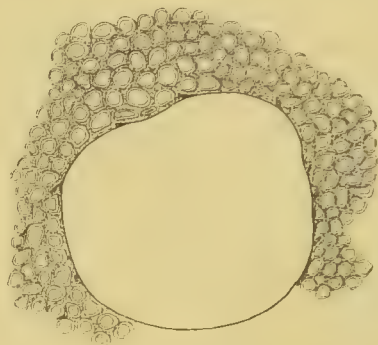


FIG. 421.—TRANSVERSE SECTION
THROUGH A PIEDRA NODULE.

tate in the shape of large oval or roundish elements, embedded in an amorphous substance. Saprophytically (cultures) they vegetate, forming mycelial threads and spores.

Trichosporum giganteum Behrend 1890.

This is the cause of *piedra* of Columbia; develops on the surface of the hair in the shape of large polyhedric cells 12 to 15 μ in diameter. Masses of the fungus form hard nodules along the hair. The fungus is easily grown on various media. In cultures the mycelial threads are septated, cylindrical, between 1 and 4 μ wide. The spores are of various dimensions, between 2 and 12 μ . The colour of the colonies is light brownish. Horta describes in the nodules of a variety of *piedra* certain large cyst-like bodies containing generally eight fusiform bodies. When the membrane burst, these bodies escape, being provided with one flagellum at each end. Pinoy is inclined to consider these formations to be asci containing ciliated ascospores.

Trichosporum beigeli Rabenhorst 1867.

Synonyms.—*Pleurococcus beigeli* Rabenhorst 1867, *Sclerotium beigelianum* Hallier 1868, *Hyalococcus beigelii* Schroeter 1886, *Chlamydomus beigelii* Trevisan 1889, *Micrococcus beigelii* Migula 1900, *Trichosporum beigelii* Vuillemin 1901.

This fungus has been found in Europe several times in nodosities of the hairs of the moustache. It lives parasitically under the form of ovoid or polyhedral elements massed together on the surface of the hair. These ovoid or polyhedral elements are much smaller than those of the preceding species, their maximum diameter varying between 3 and 4 μ . It is easily cultivated on ordinary media. In cultures mycelial threads are found, septate, slender (1.57 to 2 μ). In old cultures chlamydospores can be seen.

Trichosporum ovoïdes Behrend 1890.

Found by Behrend in the nodosities present on the moustache of a European patient; vegetates parasitically on the surface of the hair under the form of ovoid elements; 3 to 4 μ long and 1½ to 2½ μ wide. Grows easily on culture media; on potatoes the colonies are white, while the medium takes a brownish-black colour.

Trichosporum ovale Unna 1896.

Found by Unna in the nodosities present on the moustache of a European patient. Very similar to *T. ovoïdes*: in cultures, however, the mycelial threads are often corkscrew-like, and the spores have thick walls.

On potatoes the colonies are white-yellowish, and the substratum takes a brownish-black colour.

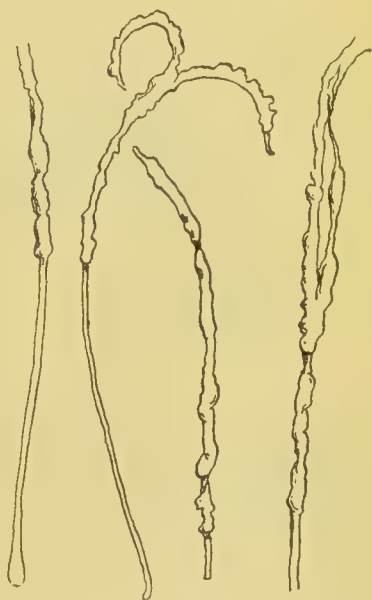


FIG. 422. — HAIR AFFECTED WITH TRICHOSPOROSIS.
(After Vuillemin.)

Trichosporum glycophile du Bois 1910.

Found by du Bois in a nodular affection of the pubic hairs in a diabetic patient. In the nodules roundish elements, 3 to 4 μ , were present, together with a coccus. The fungus was easily cultivated in symbiosis with the coccus on sugar media.

Genus Glenospora Berk and Curtis.

Polymorphic fungi. Mycelium septated, little ramified. Sporophores rather short, erected; may be absent. Conidia do not become detached from the mycelium.

Glenospora graphii Siebenmann 1889.

Synonyms.—*Graphium penicillioides* Hallier 1869, *Stemphylium polymorphum* Hallier 1869, *Verticillium graphii* Siebenmann 1889, *Glenospora graphii* Vuillemin 1912.

Mycelium at first white, later dark brownish. The filaments are septated, 2 to 3 μ in breadth, ramified. Fertile hyphæ are erected, often dichotomous or trichotomous, with terminal conidia, which are ovoid with a smooth surface, and of a greyish-brownish colour. It is easily grown on the usual laboratory media; gelatine is not liquefied. This fungus has been found in cases of otomycosis by Hassestein, Bezold, Siebenmann, etc., and in a case of keratomycosis by Morax and Pinoy.

Genus Trichothecium Link 1824.

Fertile hyphæ are erect, grouped together, each terminating in an oval, pear-shaped, or globular conidium. The only species so far observed in man is *Trichothecium roseum*.

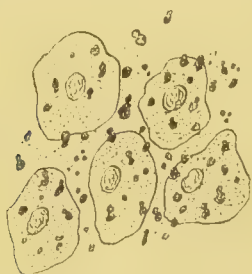


FIG. 423.—*PITYROSPORUM OVALE*
BIZZOZZERO.

(After Sabouraud.)

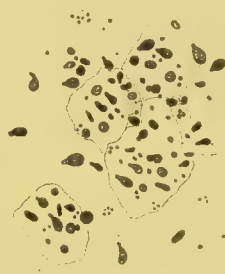


FIG. 424.—*PITYROSPORUM OVALE*
BIZZOZZERO.

(After Sabouraud.)

Trichothecium roseum Persoon 1801.

Synonyms.—*Trichoderma roseum* Persoon 1801, *Sporocephalum roseum* Persoon 1801, *Puccinia rosea* Corda 1837.

This species vegetates on decaying vegetable matter; the colour is at first white, then pinkish. Each fertile hypha terminates in a pear-shaped conidium, 10 to 20 μ in length and 8 to 12 μ in breadth.

This fungus has been found in cases of otomycosis by Stendener, who did not succeed in cultivating it. Some authorities believe it to be identical to *Glenospora graphii*.

Genus Pityrosporum Sabouraud 1895.

Oval or roundish cells, somewhat yeast-like; no mycelium; cannot be grown artificially.

Pityrosporum ovale Bizzozzero 1882.

Synonyms.—*Saccharomyces ovalis* Bizzozzero 1882, *Pityrosporum malassezi* Sabouraud 1895. Usual term: bottle bacillus of Malassez.

This organism was first described by Bizzozzero, who considered it to be a *Saccharomyces*. Malassez and Sabouraud associated this organism with the ætiology of pityriasis simplex capitis and pityriasis alba.

Its shape somewhat resembles a budding yeast or a flask. The size varies greatly; the maximum diameter of some individuals may be as much as 10 to 15 μ , but much smaller forms (3 to 5 μ) are found.

***Pityrosporum cantliei* Castellani 1908.**

Synonym.—*Saccharomyces cantliei* Castellani 1908.

Somewhat similar to *Pityrosporum ovale*, but the cells are generally roundish and on the average larger (5 to 16 μ). Probably the cause of a variety of seborrhœa of the scalp occasionally met with in children in the tropics.

Genus *Malassezia* Ch. Robin 1853.

Mycelium of various shape and size; non-ramified; spores collected in bunches like grape-bunches; only the parasitic stage known.

***Malassezia furfur* Ch. Robin 1853.**

Synonyms.—*Microsporon furfur* Ch. Robin 1853, *Sporotrichum furfur* Saccardo 1886, *Malassezia furfur* Baillon 1889, *Oidium furfur* Zopf 1890, *O. subtile* Kotliar 1892.

Mycelium abundant, septate, non-ramified; some mycelial threads are much larger than others; the breadth varies between 3 and 4 μ . The spores are roundish (3 to 5 μ in diameter), and run into clusters.

Attempts at cultivation have failed. It is the cause of pityriasis versicolor.

***Malassezia tropica* Castellani 1905.**

Synonym.—*Microsporon tropicum* Castellani 1905.

Mycelial threads generally thick (3 to 5 μ wide), with numerous swellings, constrictions, and other irregularities of shape; spores roundish (4 to 5 μ), with a double contour; are often collected in clusters. The fungus does not grow on artificial media. It is the cause of tinea flava or pityriasis flava of tropical climates.

Genus *Cladosporium* Link 1837.

Conidiophores of a greenish colour, with roundish or oval spores. These in hanging-drop cultures may appear as arranged in strings, but cannot become dissociated.

***Cladosporium mansonii* Castellani 1905.**

Synonyms.—*Microsporon mansonii* Castellani 1905, *Foxia mansonii* Castellani 1908, *Cladosporium mansonii* Pinoy 1912.

The fungus is found very abundantly in the lesions of tinea nigra; the mycelial articles are rather short—18 to 20 μ in length and 2½ to



FIG. 425.—*MALASSEZIA TROPICA* CASTELLANI.
(From a fresh preparation in liquor potassæ. Old case.)



FIG. 426.—*CLADOSPORIUM MANSONI* CASTELLANI.
(From a fresh preparation in liquor potassæ. The mycelial tubes are in reality not so regular in outline as in this drawing.)

$3\frac{1}{2}$ μ in breadth; non-ramified. Sometimes they may be irregular in outline, bent, banana-shaped. The spores are globular, and most of them very large—5 to 10 μ . They are frequently arranged in clusters.

The fungus is easily cultivated by inoculating scrapings of the affected patches on maltose agar. After two to four days roundish hemispheric colonies appear, which are black, but at first have usually a greenish tinge, and may present at the periphery some radiating, delicate, pale greenish hyphæ. These colonies may remain separate or more often gradually coalesce into a jet-black knobby mass, deeply rooted into the medium.



FIG. 427.—CLADOSPORIUM MAN-
SONI CASTELLANI.

(From a preparation stained with
fuchsin.)

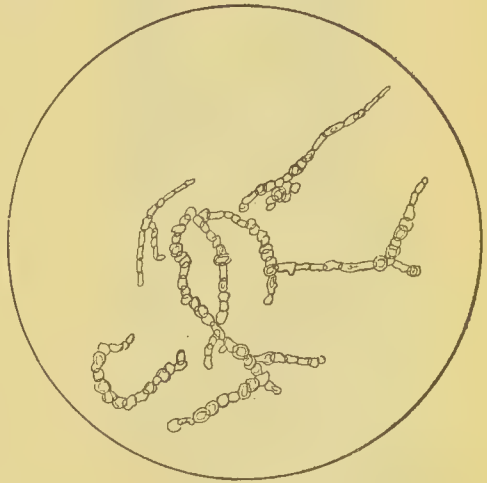


FIG. 428.—CLADOSPORIUM MAN-
SONI CASTELLANI: HANGING-DROP
CULTURE.

The fungus grows well, though less abundantly, on the other sugar agars, and also on ordinary agar. In *broth* and *peptone-water* the growth is very slow, and takes place at the bottom of the tubes, with formation of a black or greenish-black sediment. Gelatine is very slowly liquefied.

The *optimum temperature* for the growth of the fungus is between 30° and 32° C.; above 35° C. and under 25° C. the growth is much slower, and may be nil under 20° C.

This fungus is the cause of *tinea nigra*.

Cladosporium madagascarienses Verdun 1912.

Found by Fontoynt in a patient with some ulcerated nodules of the leg in Madagascar. The fungus grows easily on Sabouraud's

and other media, giving rise to black cerebriform colonies. In hanging-drop cultures shows the typical features of the genus.

Cladosporium herbarium Persoon has been demonstrated by Nasse to be the cause of the black spots so often found on imported frozen meat.

Genus *Hemispora* Vuillemin 1906.

Mycelial filaments thin, hyaline, septated, ramified. Each conidiophore terminates into an ampulliform structure (proto-conidium), which later divides into several spore-like segments (deutero-conidia).

Hemispora stellata Vuillemin 1906.

Common in nature. Found by Vuillemin parasitic on *Aspergillus repens*, forming white roundish colonies, which present in relief

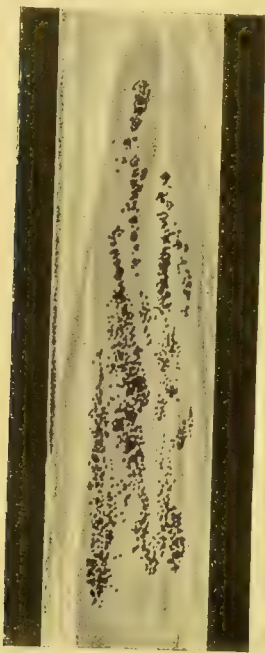


FIG. 429.—*CLADOSPORIUM MANSONI* CASTELLANI: YOUNG AGAR CULTURE.

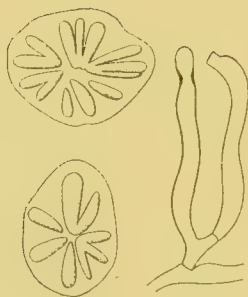


FIG. 430.—*HEMISPORA STELLATA* VUILLEMIN.
(After Vuillemin.)

stellar or marguerite-like brown patches. Cultures on the usual laboratory media do not show anything characteristic, the growth being cerebriform of a yellowish-brownish colour.

Pathogenicity.—May cause gummatous and purulent lesions in man, as noted by Gueguen, Gougerot, de Beurmann, and Clair.

Genus *Enantiothamnus* Pinoy 1911.

Conidia have a verticillar disposition, and are situate at the septa which separate the mycelial segments.

Enantiothamnus braulti Pinoy 1911.

This fungus was discovered by Brault in some nodules on the gluteal region of an Arab, and was completely investigated botanically by Pinoy. In the lesions mycelial threads were present, septate, 1 to 3 μ in breadth. On Sabouraud's agar the colonies are white with the central portion yellowish. The characteristic feature is the presence of conidia in a verticellar arrangement at the mycelial septations. The fungus is pathogenic to the guinea-pig.

Genus Scopulariopsis Bainier.

Thin mycelial threads (0.5 to 1.5 μ) are septated; colourless. Conidiophores erect, each terminating into a tapering structure, which



FIG. 431. — *ENANTIOTHAMNUS BRAULTI* PINOY.
(After Brault and Pinoy.)



FIG. 432. — *SCOPULARIOPSIS BLOCHI* MATRUCHOT.
(After Vuillemin.)

supports a chain of ovoid spores. In very old cultures some peculiar whitish formations are seen, which, according to some authorities, may represent uncompletely developed perithecia.

Scopulariopsis blochi Matruchot 1911.

Synonyms.—*Mastigocladium blochi* Matruchot 1911, *Scopulariopsis blochi* Vuillemin 1911.

Found by Bruno Bloch in a case of gummatous lymphangitis, clinically very similar to an ordinary case of sporotrichosis. In cultures the mycelial threads are slender (0.5 to 1.5 μ in breadth), colourless, septated, very little ramified. Conidiophores, 20 to 30 μ in length, are tapering, and from the pointed ends chains of conidia take origin. Conidia elongated, ovoid, 3 to 4 μ in length and 1.5 to 2 μ in breadth. In old cultures white-creamy formations may be seen, which may possibly be undeveloped perithecia.

Scopulariopsis koningii Oudemans.

Synonyms.—*Monilia koningii* Oudemans, *Scopulariopsis rufulus* Bainier, *S. koningii* Vuillemin 1912.

A scopulariopsis isolated by Yanin in a case of subcutaneous gummata has been identified by Vuillemin as *S. koningii* Oudemans. The cultural characters are very similar to those of the previous species, but the peculiar white-creamy formations as observed in old cultures of *S. blochi* are not seen.

Genus *Acremonium* Link 1809.

Mycelial threads septate, little ramified. Sporophores tapering; each supports a terminal ovoid or elongated colourless spore.

Acremonium potronii Vuillemin 1911.

Found by Potron and Noisette in a case of subcutaneous gummata with fever, somewhat resembling typhoid before the gummata appeared. Easily grown on Sabouraud's agar; colonies white, then pinkish, and, later, orange-yellow. Serum is liquefied.



FIG. 433.—*ACREMONIUM*
POTRONII VUILLEMIN.
(After Vuillemin.)

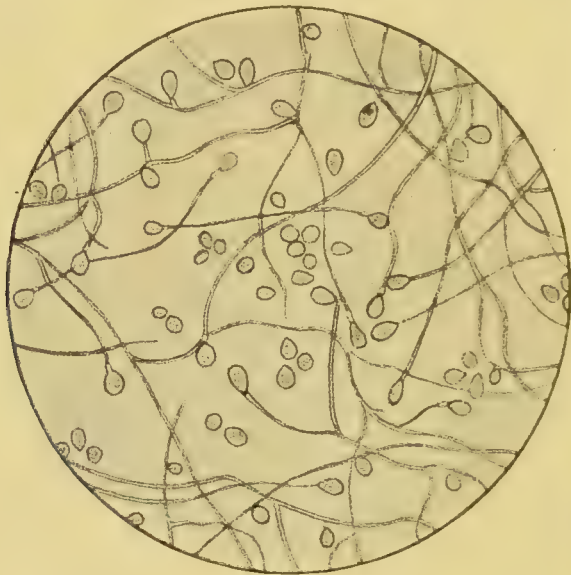


FIG. 434.—*MONOSPORIUM* *APIOSPERMUM*
SACCARDO.
(After Radaeli.)

In cultures the mycelial filaments are septated; numerous conidiophores are present of a peculiar elongated type, 15 to 20 μ in length. Conidia ovoid, with a smooth surface, 4 to 5 μ in length and 2 to 2.2 μ in breadth; of pinkish colour. This fungus is pathogenic to guinea-pigs.

Genus *Monosporium* Bonord and Saccardo 1898.

Mycelial filaments septated; conidiophores not erected, and each of them supports a terminal oval spore.

Monosporium apiospermum Saccardo 1911.

Easily grown, the cultures are whitish and covered with duvet ; may become brownish when old.

Mycelial tubes septated and of various size ; may reach 4 to 5 μ in breadth. Each conidiophore supports a terminal spore, which is either ovoid, 12 to 14 μ in length, and 5 to 6 μ in breadth, or roundish, 6 to 7 μ in diameter. No other kind of fructification is seen.

Pathogenicity.—This fungus has been found in Italy in cases of mycosis of the foot resembling madura foot, by Tarozi and Radaeli. Tarozi considered the fungus to be a *Nocardia*, while Saccardo and Radaeli have found it to be a new species of the genus *Monosporium*. Radaeli has made a complete pathological and clinical investigation of the condition.

REFERENCES.

The current literature is contained chiefly in the *Archives de Parasitologie*, the *Centralblatt für Bakteriologie*, and the principal journals of dermatology.

- BLANCHARD (1895). *Maladies Parasitaires*.
 BRAULT (1911). *Annales de Dermatologie*.
 BRUMPT (1910). *Parasitologie*. Paris.
 CASTELLANI (1912). *Transactions Royal Society of Medicine*.
 CHATTERJEE (1912). *Centr. f. Bak.*
 CLAYPOLE (1913). *Journal of Experimental Medicine*.
 DE BEURMANN (1912). *British Medical Journal*, and numerous previous papers in French medical journals.
 FOULERTON (1910-1912). *British Medical Journal* (several important papers on fungi of the genus *Nocardia*).
 GEDOELST (1911). *Synopsis de Parasitologie*.
 GALEOTTI (1912). *Sperimentale*.
 PERRONCITO (1902). *I Parassiti dell' uomo*. Milano.
 PINOY (1909-1913). Numerous important papers in *Bull. Path. Exot*.
 RADAELI (1911). *Sperimentale*.
 SPLENDORE (1909-1912). *Bull. Soc. Path. Exot ; Giornale Italiano Malattie delle Pelle*, etc.
 VERDUN (1913). *Parasitologie*. Paris.

PART III

THE DISEASES OF THE TROPICS



SECTION A

FEVERS

CHAPTER XXIX

MALARIA

Synonyms — Definition — History — Ætiology — Climatology — Pathology — Chemical Pathology — Morbid Anatomy — Clinical description — Acute malaria — Quartan fevers — Tertian fevers — Subtertian fevers — Chronic malaria — Latent malaria — Masked malaria — Congenital malaria — Complications — Sequelæ — Diagnosis — Prognosis — Treatment — Prophylaxis — Summary — References.

Synonyms. — Ague, Paludism, Marsh fever, Remittent fever, Intermittent fever; Climatic, Jungle, Hill, Mountain and Coast fever. *French*: Fièvre palustre. *German*: Wechselfieber, Kaltesfieber, Malaria. *Italian*: Paludismo, Malaria.

Malaria used to be known by many local names in different countries, such as Kurunegala fever and Dambul fever in Ceylon; Roman fever, Sierra fever, etc.

The term 'malaria' is derived from the Italian *mal aria*, meaning bad air.

Definition. — Malaria is a term employed to signify a group of acute specific fevers caused by the protozoan parasites *Plasmodium malariae*, *P. vivax*, and *Laverania malariae* living in the blood of man, and disseminated by the agency of certain species of mosquitoes, in which these parasites undergo part of their life-history.

It will be obvious from the above definition that there are three distinct types of malarial fever, the first caused by *P. malariae*, the second by *P. vivax*, and the third by *L. malariae*. It will be observed that the term 'blood of man' is used in the definition. This is because at present we are not aware that the above-mentioned parasites are capable of living in any other vertebrate.

History. — The history of malarial fever has already been sufficiently noted in Chapter I., to which reference should be made.

The important questions which at present require further elucidation are :—

1. The nature and action of the toxins of the disease, especially with regard to the hæmolysins.

Brumpt believes that Schüffner's dots and Maurer's granules are caused by a toxin.

2. The formation of antibodies.

De Blasi has found antihæmolysins.

3. The form in which the malarial parasite lies dormant in the human body (with special reference to the parthenogenesis of the macrogametocyte).

The question of parthenogenesis is still much debated. Recently Neeb has investigated it in *L. malariae*, and has contrasted it with the schizont stage of the same parasite as follows :—

Character.	Segmenting Macrogametocyte.	Schizont.
Size	Almost fills the erythrocyte.	Fills about two-thirds of the erythrocyte.
Shape	Oval, not quite centrally situated.	Circular, and centrally situated.
Chromosomes	Large, coarse, purplish-brown in red-violet basis, which runs in a band-like curve along periphery.	Small, fine, separate, purple, arranged in a circle around the hæmozoin.
Cytoplasm ..	Resembles that of a typical macrogametocyte.	Resembles that of the chromosomes.
Hæmozoin ..	Coarse yellowish-brown granules excentrically placed.	Fine, dark brown or black granules usually concentrated into one centrally placed clump.

Ross believes that the ordinary asexual forms persist in the blood in small numbers, and, undergoing schizogony, are sufficient to account for the indefinite persistence of the infection.

Karrewij has found parthenogenesis to occur in *P. vivax* at the height of the febrile attack.

4. Whether Schaudinn is correct in believing that the eggs of the mosquito can become infected, and if so, whether that infection is capable of being spread by the next generation of mosquitoes.

With regard to this point the tendency at present is to believe that Schaudinn's observations will not be confirmed.

5. Whether any mosquito other than the Anophelinae carry the parasites.

So far, no evidence in favour of this has been brought forward.

6. Whether there is any animal other than man in which the parasites live in nature.

The investigations of Fermi and Lumbau in 1912, already referred to on p. 383, are steps in answering this question negatively, but many more observations in different countries are necessary before a final answer can be given.

Ætiology—EXCITING CAUSES.—Malarial fevers are produced by the parasites *Plasmodium malariae* Laveran 1881, *P. vivax* Grassi and Feletti 1890, and *Laverania malariae* Grassi and Feletti 1890, because they are always found in the blood or organs of persons suffering from the disease, and can be injected into healthy persons, producing in them typical fevers, the different stages of which correspond to the stages of the life-cycle of the parasite. These parasites can be spread from human being to human being by mosquitoes, in whose bodies they undergo development as already described. Infected mosquitoes can convey the parasites to healthy persons, living in either non-malarial or malarial climates, by their bites, producing attacks of fever typical for the type of parasite with which the mosquito was infected. The classical experiment is the infection of Sir Patrick Manson's son with tertian malaria by means of infected Anophelines sent from Rome to London.

There are, therefore, three factors necessary for the production of malarial fever: (1) the blood parasite; (2) the mosquito; (3) man.

1. The Blood Parasite.—We have drawn attention to three parasites in connection with malaria, and we believe these to be the only three at present known to cause the fevers, but it is necessary to say that this view is by no means universal. Some authorities believe in a quotidian form of fever due to a species of *Laverania*, or to two separate species of the same genus. These parasites, however, if they exist as distinct species, which we believe to be very doubtful, have not come within our observation, and we therefore agree with those writers who only acknowledge the three types mentioned above.

The descriptions of the structure and life-histories of these parasites have been given in Chapter XVI., and need not be referred to here.

The parasites are introduced into the human body as sporozoites, which pass from the salivary glands down the hypopharyngeal canal of the mosquito's proboscis into the blood when a human being is bitten by an infected Anopheline.

Once in the blood, three possibilities confront the parasites: they may either be killed and no infection result, or they may remain dormant in some form in the spleen, and not develop until predisposing causes, by lowering the vitality, give them opportunity, or they may at once proceed to develop and give rise to fever.

In this latter event, there is usually an interval between the period of the bite and the attack of fever, for it is evident that in order to influence the metabolism of the body so profoundly as to produce a rise of temperature, a certain amount of toxin must be generated. This requires a definite number of parasites, and hence the incubation period may be short if many parasites are simultaneously inoculated by the mosquitoes, or long if but few. As a rule it may be said that some nine to twelve days are required for the development of a sufficient number of parasites to produce fever.

During the incubation period, however, there may be slight symptoms of lassitude, or pains in various parts of the body coming

on at regular intervals, and often not much regarded, as they may pass off quickly. We are inclined to consider these as being due to parasites as yet not numerous enough to produce fever, and we think these symptoms of importance, as an attack of fever may be prevented by the prompt administration of quinine. This subject will, however, be further discussed under the Pathology of Latent Malaria.

The life-history of the parasite has a definite relationship to the disease, as can be noted by studying the diagrams. The rise of body-temperature is always associated with the sporulation of the parasite and the liberation of pyrogenetic toxins, the apyretic interval with the growth and maturation of the parasite in the red corpuscle. This point has been recently carefully studied by Ross

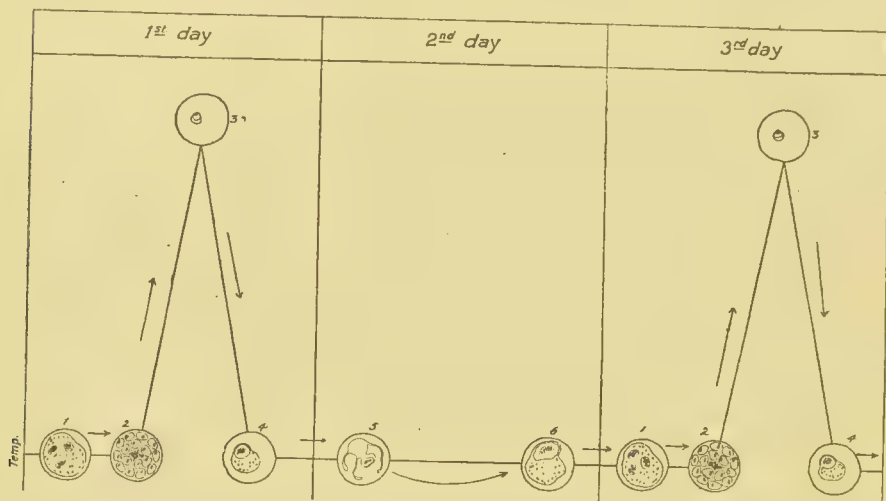


FIG. 435.—DIAGRAM OF A TEMPERATURE-CHART IN SIMPLE TERTIAN MALARIAL FEVER.

- 1, Schizont, with commencing sporulation; 2, sporulating schizont; 3, young trophozoite; 4, 5, trophozoites; 6, schizont.

and Thomson by their enumerative methods, and they find that there is a distinct correlation between the number of the asexual forms found in the peripheral blood and the fever, and that no fever exists unless these forms exceed some hundreds per cubic centimetre of blood. These forms persist through the apyretic interval before a relapse, but in small numbers, which increase for some days before the relapse takes place. The pigmentation of the cells and organs is due to the hæmzoin liberated by the disruption of the infected red cell. The liberated spores attack new erythrocytes, and so the numbers of the parasites may increase, until in certain pernicious cases it appears as though the majority of the red cells were infected with parasites, and, indeed, two or more may be noted in one cell. Such a condition must, of course, lead to death.

But this does not by any means always happen; for it is well

known that a malarial, especially a quartan, fever may wear itself out, the attacks becoming less and less severe until they cease.

This would appear to be due to acquired immunity, which no doubt explains the known fact that the European in West Africa on first arrival generally suffers from repeated attacks of fever, but he gradually becomes partially immune, and can then live there, with care, for years. Further, it would certainly explain, in part, the relative immunity of the native races in that region who are infected from earliest childhood, and no doubt this is the true cause of the racial immunity which some allege to exist. It is now known that the merozoites can, although very rarely, penetrate the placenta, and infect the foetus, giving rise to congenital malaria.

The three parasites produce very different results, apparently due to their habitats. Thus *Plasmodium malariae* and *P. vivax* as a rule live mainly in the circulating blood, in which the former sporulates, while the latter develops in the spleen: their toxins will therefore produce general symptoms. *Laverania malariae*, on the other hand, seems to affect the red corpuscles so profoundly that they are liable to adhere to the walls of the capillaries of the organs in which the parasite sporulates. Hence this parasite may produce severe local symptoms, due to the mechanical blocking of capillaries or to the more intense local action of the toxin, or to both of these causes, and therefore it is associated with what are called the pernicious fevers—that is to say, the fevers which produce severe effects on one or more organs—e.g., on the brain, causing coma or paralysis; or on the pancreas, causing hæmorrhagic pancreatitis.

At the onset, all three types of fever are apt to be irregular, because the parasites are of different ages, due to the different times of inoculation, but they settle down to a regular type, possibly because the amount of antitoxin generated is able to kill off those parasites which do not conform to the age-period of the majority. Sometimes, however, two distinct broods may exist, producing double fevers, or three distinct broods, causing triple fevers.

The malarial parasite acts not merely by destroying the corpuscle in which it lives and by altering the metabolism of the body by the pyretic toxin of Rosenau and his collaborators, but it also has a hæmolytic toxin, first described by Casagrandi and De Blasi, which destroys the red corpuscles, thus throwing more work on to the liver and leading to excessive formation of bile, with, as a result, diarrhoea and urobilin in the urine. If the blood-destruction is excessive, the liver is unable to convert the whole of the hæmoglobin liberated into bile, with the result that some may be left unaltered, and may produce hæmoglobinuria.

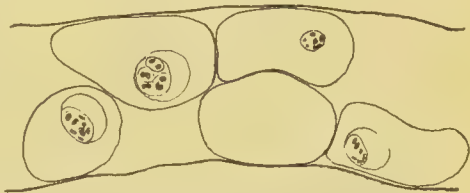


FIG. 436. — *LAVERANIA MALARIAE* IN RED CORPUSCLES BLOCKING A BRAIN CAPILLARY IN THE CEREBRAL TYPE OF PERNICIOUS MALARIA.

It appears, however, that an antitoxin is quickly formed, of the nature of an anti-auto-complement, which neutralizes this hæmolysin, and it further appears, from the experiments of Casagrandi on pigeons infected with *Hæmoproteus* (*Halteridium*), that the antitoxin may be a cause of the natural disappearance of the parasites and the cure of the disease. Of course this antitoxin is produced by the cells of the body, and anything which lessens its formation, such as starvation, gives the parasite a chance to grow and cause disease. Thus Casagrandi found that out of twenty-one birds infected in 1904, ten were still infected in 1905. On semi-starving

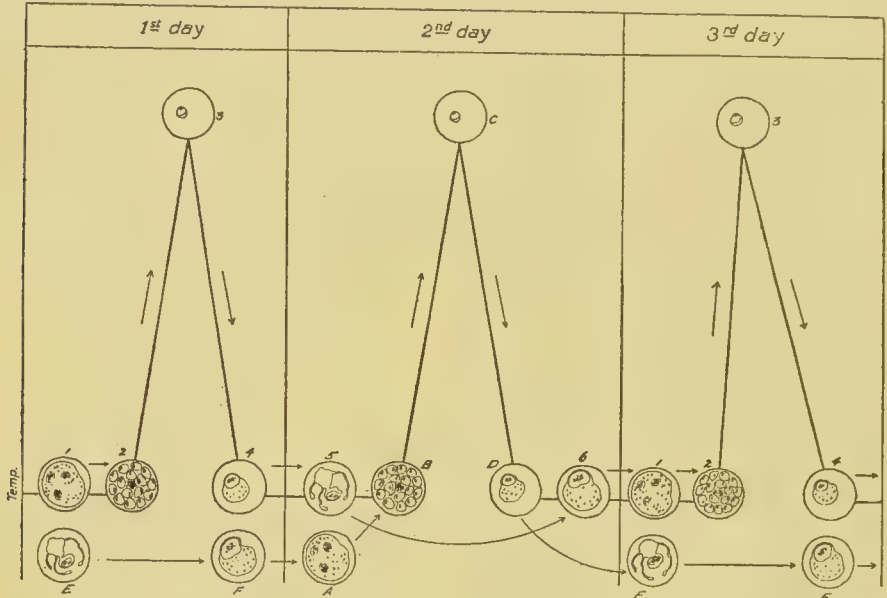


FIG. 437.—DIAGRAM OF A TEMPERATURE-CHART IN DOUBLE TERTIAN MALARIAL FEVER.

The fever of the first and third days is due to one brood of parasites and that of the second day to another brood.

1, Schizont of first brood ; 2, sporulating schizont of first brood ; 3-5, trophozoites of first brood ; 6, schizont of first brood ; A, schizont of second brood ; B, sporulating schizont of second brood ; C-E, trophozoites of second brood ; F, schizont of second brood.

two of these, he produced relapses, while two others treated with antitoxin obtained from guinea-pigs inoculated with pigeon's blood did not relapse.

It will thus be seen that a relapse may be due entirely to predisposing causes which lower the vitality of the body and prevent the production of sufficient quantities of the antitoxin.

Besides the difference pointed out above as to the place of sporulation, there is also a great difference in the time occupied by the cycle of schizogony. *Plasmodium malariae* requires seventy-two hours to complete its schizogony, or, in other words, it will liberate its toxins and cause an attack of fever in its human victim every seventy-two hours, while in an infection with only one brood of

parasites the intervening period will be without fever. This intermission is so marked that it was noted by the ancients, and formed one of their types of intermittent fever, and as the attack of fever occurred on the fourth day, after an interval of seventy-two hours, it was called a 'quartan,' or fourth-day fever, and as such is clearly described by Hippocrates. *Plasmodium vivax* requires forty-eight hours to complete its schizogony, and in single infections produces fever every forty-eight hours—i.e., on the third day—and therefore this type of fever is called 'tertian.'

Laverania malariae, on the other hand, does not appear to be so regular in the time of its schizogony, and may require from thirty-six to forty-eight hours for the purpose; but though typically producing a tertian fever, the effects due to its sporulation in the organs are much more severe and protracted than those produced by *P. vivax*. Clinically, therefore, there are two types of tertian malarial fever—a benign and a malignant. The former, caused by *P. vivax*, is generally called 'tertian malarial fever,' while the latter, caused by *L. malariae*, is called 'subtertian malarial fever,' or malignant tertian.

In addition to these clearly defined parasites, two others have been described by various authors, and have been named *Hæmaphysa præcox* and *H. immaculata* by Grassi and Feletti. The former was said to be pigmented, and the latter to be unpigmented. These parasites require only twenty-four hours for the completion of the cycle of schizogony; consequently they cause fever every twenty-four hours, which is therefore of the nature of a 'quotidian malarial fever.' Many authorities, with whom we agree, consider these parasites to be only stages in the development of *Laverania malariae*. Quotidian fever can be produced by three broods of *P. malariae*, or two of *P. vivax* or *L. malariae*, and does not require a special quotidian parasite.

Therefore there are only three parasites and three classes of fever to be considered—viz.: (1) *Plasmodium malariae*, causing quartan malarial fever; (2) *P. vivax*, causing tertian malarial fever; (3) *Laverania malariae*, causing subtertian malarial fever.

2. **The Mosquito.**—With regard to the Anophelinæ, we know positively that some can carry the germ while others cannot. Further, it appears quite evident that *Culex* and *Stegomyia* are not carriers of malaria. Daniels, as we have already stated, is inclined to suspect the *Ædinæ* as being possible disseminators of malaria in jungles, but there is no complete proof of this. Therefore we have at present only the Anophelinæ to consider.

The various species of the Anophelinæ which are more or less definitely known to carry malaria are:—

- Anopheles maculipennis Meigen 1818. Europe and North America.
- Anopheles bifurcatus Linnæus 1758. Europe.
- Anopheles pseudopunctipennis Darling 1910. Panama.
- Anopheles tarsimaculata Darling 1910. Panama.
- Anopheles (?) formosensis Tsuzuki 1902. Formosa.

Cellia albimana Wiedemann 1821. West Indies and South America.
Cellia argyrotarsis Robineau-Desvoidy 1827. America.
Cellia pharoensis Theobald 1901. Africa.

Myzomyia listoni Liston 1901. India.
Myzomyia funesta Giles 1900. West Africa.
Myzomyia hispaniola Theobald 1903. Spain and North Africa.
Myzomyia turkhudi Liston 1901. India.

Myzorhynchus barbirostris Van der Wulp. Asia.
Myzorhynchus sinensis Wiedemann 1828. Asia.
Myzorhynchus umbrosus Theobald 1903. Malay States.

Nyssorhynchus annulipes Walker 1850. Australasia.
Nyssorhynchus fuliginosus Giles 1900. Asia.
Nyssorhynchus maculipalpis Giles 1902. Africa and Asia.
Nyssorhynchus stephensi Liston 1901. India.
Nyssorhynchus theobaldi Giles 1901. India.
Nyssorhynchus willmori James 1904. Asia.

Pyretophorus costalis Loew 1866. West Africa.
Pyretophorus superpictus Grassi 1900. Europe, Africa, and Asia.
Pyretophorus chaudoyei Theobald 1903. Africa.
Pyretophorus myzomyifacies Theobald 1907. Algiers.

But there are many more which are suspected to be carriers—e.g., Daniels suspects *Stethomyia fragilis* Theobald, and Banks suspects *Myzomyia ludlowii* Theobald.

The presence of Anophelinæ, however, does not indicate that there must be malaria in the locality, an important point to which Celli was the first to call attention.

England, for example, though it possesses three species of the Anophelinæ—viz., *Anopheles maculipennis* Mg., *A. bifurcatus* L., and *A. nigripes* St., of which the two former certainly can carry malaria—is practically free from the disease. Nuttall, Cobbett, and Strangeways-Pigg believe that this condition has been arrived at by the reduction of the numbers of the mosquitoes by drainage.

On the other hand, there is no evidence of the existence of malaria without some of the Anophelinæ. On the contrary, there is evidence that where there are no Anophelinæ there is no malaria. Further, it is highly probable that the endemic malaria of Mauritius and Réunion is due to the introduction of *Pyretophorus costalis* Loew, as has been pointed out by Ross. There is also the evidence that in places where successful anti-anopheline measures have been carried out, as in Ismailia, malarial fever has ceased to exist.

In order that there may be plenty of these insects, there must be a certain degree of warmth; for as a rule they hibernate in the winter of the temperate zone, coming out in the spring, and increasing in numbers, to reach a maximum in the warm days of autumn. In the tropics, of course, the heat is present all the year round. Heat alone, however, will not suffice for the mosquito, for there must be water for the development of the larvæ and pupæ. Hence, in the dry season in the tropics, there may be few mosquitoes visible, while their numbers will increase remarkably after the rains.

In the dry season the mosquitoes and their larvæ æstivate, and wait for more suitable conditions.

There is, however, a third factor to be considered, and that is the effect of the temperature upon the parasite in the mosquito. For ages it has been noted that the fevers due to *P. malariae* and *P. vivax* occur in the temperate zone in the earlier period of the year—i.e., in the spring—while the worst fevers, due to *L. malariae*, do not occur until the summer or autumn. This point has been carefully studied by Grassi, Jancsó, Holländer, and others, and the result of their experiments tends to show that temperature has most effect upon the oökinete before it pierces the wall of the stomach of the mosquito and becomes encysted. It would appear that if the temperature is below 15° to 16° C., no further development of the oöcyst will take place in any form of parasite. Further, *P. malariae* will develop at a lower temperature than the other two, while *P. vivax* will also develop at a low temperature, but *L. malariae* requires a distinctly higher one.

This may be the reason of the scarcity of *L. malariae* in the temperate zone, except in the summer and autumn, and its common occurrence in the tropics, and, possibly, this is also the reason of the rarity of *P. malariae* in the low country of the tropics, while its presence in the hills is common.

Here may also lie the explanation of the universal distribution of *P. vivax* in both the tropics and temperate zone; for Jancsó's researches show that it can develop through a wide range of temperatures.

But these are not the only factors concerning the Anophelinæ and malaria, for Schaudinn showed that the mosquito eggs may be infected by the malarial parasites, and this at once raises the question whether they cannot be carried viâ eggs, larvæ, and pupæ into a second generation of mosquitoes. If so, this would explain some outbreaks of malaria, but so far Schaudinn's work has not been confirmed.

Another point of importance is the fact that when new lands are opened, it is asserted that people suffer more severely from malaria than can be explained by any theory brought forward at present. For example, it is stated that if a zone of forest on a steep hillside be burnt in the dry season, and then cleared by coolies, who return every night to the quarters where the other estate coolies also sleep, these clearing-coolies will suffer severely from malaria, while their fellows working on other portions of the estate will be but little affected. The explanation of this is not that emanations have arisen from the soil and invaded the bodies of the coolies—indeed, after the description of the life-history of the malarial parasite already given, this would be a *reductio ad absurdum*—but merely that the exposure to the sun or the harder work has lowered the vitality of these coolies, and has given the germs already in their system a chance to develop.

It has also long been thought that the mechanical opening of new

ground by digging produced the disease, but Ross has pointed out that in Mauritius the digging of earth for years caused no malaria, until some new factor was introduced, which occurred in the sixties of last century ; this factor we now know to have been the introduction of *Pyretophorus costalis* into the island.

When an attack of malarial fever occurs in a person living in a place where there are no Anophelinæ, it is the result of infection obtained in some other place where these mosquitoes are to be found.

It may safely be concluded that, as far as our present knowledge goes, certain of the Anophelinæ are the only carriers of malaria, and upon this public prophylaxis must be based.

A female mosquito, apparently, can live for at least a month (Ross) if not longer. This does not include such dormant periods of its life as the hibernation in the cold or æstivation in dry seasons, when it may live for a long time in damp places.

The eggs of the Anophelinæ are laid only in natural collections of water supplied with water-plants, such as the back eddies of streams, close under the banks, which are especially good breeding-places. The young imagines, apparently, do not usually travel, but remain near the place where they are developed. Occasionally, they can be carried long distances by ships, trains, coaches, carts, etc., but this is the exception and not the rule. Winds do not appear to carry them far, as they generally take shelter from a high wind. The natural enemies of the Anophelinæ are numerous, including all insectivorous animals, such as bats and birds, together with fish, which eat the larvæ.

The Anopheline not merely carries the germ, but because of its length of life, a single individual may be capable of infecting several human beings ; for it must be remembered that there is no proof that the mosquito is in any way deleteriously affected by the malarial parasite.

3. **Man.**—The female Anopheline requires blood for the purpose of providing its eggs with sufficient nourishment, and will, therefore bite any vertebrate it may come across in order to obtain the same.

The malarial parasites have, so far, only been found in man, and hence, until they are found in some other vertebrate, we are not justified in assuming that the Anophelines can obtain them from any other source. In the tropics the native population is undoubtedly the great source of the gametocytes by which the infection of the mosquito is brought about, because the majority of them do not protect themselves against mosquito-bites. Of the native population, the children are the greatest source of infection, because, as has already been explained, the adults obtain a partial immunity. But in considering the native as a source of infection, care must be taken not to forget the European, whose blood is sometimes swarming with gametocytes.

Ross has pointed out that, in considering the amount of malaria in a particular locality, imported cases must be distinguished from indigenous cases.

and that the latter should be further classified according to the month in which they are infected. He has further attempted, by mathematical formulæ, to investigate the infection-rate of the disease, which method he terms 'pathometry'; but it is very difficult to obtain the necessary data for these calculations. He points out that the number of infections in a given locality during a given period depend upon—

1. The number of persons with gametocytes in the blood.
2. The number of Anophelines which have bitten these people and become infected.
3. The number of infected Anophelines which live long enough to transmit the infection—*i.e.*, at least a week.
4. The number of these surviving infected Anophelines which get the chance of biting man again.

It is by no means easy to determine, even approximately, in a district the number of Anophelines capable of carrying malaria; but an attempt might be made to follow Ross, and determine the output from one or two of the more important breeding-places by enclosing a given area with mosquito-netting, and counting daily the numbers of Anophelines which hatch out. A calculation of the areas of the breeding-places, together with the numbers hatching per diem, will give a rough estimate of the increase during that time. Associated with this, a census may be taken of the Anophelines found inside damaged mosquito-curtains very early in the morning. This is a method we have used in Tropical Africa and found of service, for it supplies not merely the number of the Anophelines, but also the percentage which are infected, though of course the error is likely to be considerable. Ross proceeds to show mathematically that the increase or diminution of the malaria really depends upon the ratio to the population of Anophelines capable of carrying the parasite; and also how an epidemic gradually increases, and how it diminishes, when the Anophelines are reduced; and proves that, in order that there may be a reduction of the malaria in man, there need only be a reduction in the numbers, and not an extermination of the Anophelines, which is what would appear to have happened in England, and to be the cause of the disappearance of malaria therein.

Investigation of an Endemic Region.—In investigating malaria in an endemic region, it is necessary to find out—

1. The specific diagnosis of the parasite or parasites causing the malaria.
2. The population of the area.
3. The average number of infected persons.
4. The average number of infected persons carrying the gametocytes in their blood.
5. The species of Anophelinæ in the district, and their breeding-grounds.
6. The species which carry the parasite.
7. The species in which the parasite is found in nature.
8. The number of Anophelines in the affected area.

No remarks need be offered with regard to 1, 2, 4, 5, 6, and 7.

With regard to 8, the method suggested by Ross should be adopted; and as regards 3, the quickest and the best method is to estimate the spleen-rate.

Ross suggests that the term 'endemic index,' which was introduced by Stephens and Christophers to denote the percentage of persons carrying parasites in their blood, should be extended to include not merely that factor, but also the proportion of people with spleens enlarged by malaria.

He therefore proposes that the endemic index should be made up of a parasite-rate and a spleen-rate, of which the latter is the more convenient, and if applied to children under fifteen years of age, is useful, provided that kala-azar does not occur in the locality investigated. Children are chosen because the adults have acquired a partial immunity, as already explained.

But the endemic index as defined by Ross is sure to be higher than the mere spleen-rate, and therefore the blood must be examined in the children whose spleens are not enlarged, and the parasite-rate must be added to the spleen-rate to obtain the true endemic index.

In all calculations such as the above, the statistical error must be borne in mind, and Poisson's formula, or the modification by Pearson which Ross recommends, must be applied.

Let N = total number of children under fifteen years of age in a locality.

n = number examined for spleen-rate.

x = number with enlarged spleen.

$\frac{x}{n} \times 100$ = spleen-rate.

e % = percentage of error.

Then by the Poisson-Pearson formula the percentage error will be:—

$$e \% = \frac{200}{n} \sqrt{\frac{2x(n-x)}{n}} \sqrt{1 - \frac{n-1}{N-1}}$$

PREDISPOSING CAUSES.—The causes which predispose to the disease may be classified into :

1. Those which promote infection with the parasite.
2. Those which promote the increase of the parasite in man after its inoculation.

1. THOSE WHICH PROMOTE INFECTION WITH THE PARASITE.—The first of these is residence in an area which contains not merely persons with gametocytes in their blood, but also mosquitoes capable of carrying the disease, associated with an atmospheric temperature suitable for the development of the parasite in the mosquito.

The second is any cause which produces large numbers of mosquitoes capable of spreading the disease. This will be not merely a suitable air-temperature, but also moisture. Hence low-lying, marshy places, and the wet season, are important predisposing causes.

The third is occupation, for this may compel people to live in malarial countries, to reside in the low-lying marshy portions of the same, to work in rice-fields covered with water, etc. Age is a predisposing factor, as mosquitoes have more opportunity of biting a young child than an adult. Sex has no influence.

2. THOSE WHICH PROMOTE THE INCREASE OF THE PARASITE AFTER ITS INOCULATION.—These predisposing causes are subdivisible into : (a) racial ; (b) personal ; (c) meteorological.

(a) *Racial*.—There is no doubt that the native races suffer less than an immigrant race in a tropical country, where there is always malaria present, and this we believe to be mainly due to the acquired partial immunity of the native race, as already explained.

(b) *Personal*.—It will be obvious from the above remarks that the parasite cannot produce the markedly deleterious effects which we term malarial fever, unless there be a sufficiently large number present. Further, there appears to be a tendency on the part of the body to manufacture protective substances, which keep the growth of the parasite in check. Anything, therefore, which interferes with the production of these checking materials will enable the parasite to grow and multiply, and will thus become a predisposing cause of the disease. Such conditions are: (1) chills; (2) starvation or overfeeding; (3) the onset of another acute disease; (4) the presence of some chronic ailment, which may often be but slight.

(c) *Meteorological*.—We have already drawn attention to the relationship between the temperature of the external air and the development of the parasites in the mosquito. It now remains to point out that a similar relationship exists between that condition and the development of the parasite in the human being.

Ross is of the opinion, not merely from observations upon man infected with malaria, but also upon birds infected with *Halteridium*, that high air-temperatures are favourable to the increase of the malarial parasites in man. High air-temperatures are therefore a cause of the relapses met with so frequently in the hot dry season of the tropics.

The reverse is also true; hence the benefit of sanatoria at high altitudes in the tropics, and also of sending a fever-stricken patient to cooler climates, provided the change from the hot to the cold climate be not sudden, but gradual.

Climatology.—The geographical distribution of malaria is determined by a combination of the conditions suitable for the production of large numbers of mosquitoes capable of carrying the germ, and of those suitable for the development of the parasites in the mosquitoes, together with the presence of human beings with numbers of gametocytes in their blood.

The virulence in one region more than in another may depend upon the type of parasite. Thus, *Laverania malariae*, which is a more virulent parasite than *Plasmodium malariae* or *P. vivax*, being very common on the West Coast of Africa, renders that area peculiarly dangerous.

Generally speaking, malaria is most prevalent in the region of the Equator, and diminishes gradually north and south till the Arctic and probably Antarctic Circles are reached. The malarial area lies between 63° north latitude (mean summer isotherm of 15° to 16° C.) and 35° south latitude. Its geography may alter considerably in the course of years. Thus regions in England, Holland, France, Germany, and Austria-Hungary are much less malarial than they formerly were. On the other hand, it has been known to affect countries which at one time were immune. Thus Ross says that he believes that Mauritius was infected in the early sixties of last century by the introduction of a mosquito capable of spreading the

disease, and hence the epidemic which occurred in that island. Réunion is another example. Barbadoes is said to have no malaria and no anophelines. Therefore the geography to be described is that known to exist at present.

AFRICA.—The worst malarial region in the world is probably the West Coast of Africa, from Senegal to the Congo, but the whole of Africa, except portions of Cape Colony, is malarial.

ASIA.—Malaria is widespread throughout Asia, being very marked in certain districts of India, especially the swampy land at the foot of the Himalayas, in Ceylon, and Borneo; while Arabia, Syria, the Straits, Siam, and China are also malarial. Little is known about Siberia.

AUSTRALASIA AND POLYNESIA.—Malaria occurs in the north of Western Australia, the Northern Territory, North Queensland, Torres Straits Islands, New Guinea, Finschafen, the Solomon Islands, and the Bismarck Archipelago.

AMERICA.—Malaria exists in Central America, the West Indies, the coast of the Mexican Gulf, the north of South America, including British Guiana, and the north of Brazil as far as Rio de Janeiro. Paraguay and Bolivia are infected, as are Peru and Chili, but the south part of South America is less infected. Many places in the United States are malarial, but Canada is not markedly infected, except about the northern shore of Lake Ontario, while Greenland is supposed to be free.

EUROPE.—Great Britain and Norway are practically free, but most of the other countries have endemic foci, particularly Russia, Italy, Greece, Turkey, and Austria-Hungary.

In France malaria exists in the south and west; in Switzerland in the canton of Tessin; in Germany along the course of the Rhine, and in the lowlands watered by the tributaries of the Danube. Sweden has also some endemic spots.

Apart, however, from mere geographical distribution, it will be obvious that the necessary conditions for malarial propagation are best supplied in the tropics, especially near the Equator, where there is generally a considerable amount of atmospheric moisture and rain as well as heat.

The wet season has also a great influence, supplying the necessary moisture which at other times may be lacking. The effect of altitude has already been mentioned.

Pathology.—In malaria the body is invaded by protozoal parasites, which grow and increase at the expense of the red cells of the blood, and in doing so, manufacture toxins, of which we know two—viz., a pyrogenetic toxin and a hæmolyisin.

Red blood cells are found in the whole of the circulatory organs, but are generally contained in arteries, veins, and capillaries. In two places, however—viz., the spleen and bone-marrow—they come intimately into relationship with the parenchyma cells. Whatever function the spleen may in future be found to possess, as regards the malarial parasites it probably acts as a purifier to the blood

which passes through it. Perhaps the bone-marrow assists in such a function.

Parasites contained in red cells should, therefore, be able to pass all over the body, and should be found equally distributed, no matter what organ is examined. This would be so if the parasite did not seriously damage the red cell, and, by its toxins, the endothelium of the vessels, especially that of the capillaries, in which the blood-flow is slowest. It would appear as though the damage done to the red cell by the quartan parasites is not severe enough to cause them to be caught in the capillaries. Therefore the whole life-history of the quartan is spent in the circulation, and sporulating forms can be readily seen in finger-blood.

Tertian parasites, on the other hand, seriously affect the red cells, causing swelling, degeneration, and decolorization. The trophozoite and schizont stages are easily seen in the peripheral circulation. Still, the sporulating forms are more common in the spleen, which may be looked upon as having filtered them off from the blood which passes through it.

The subtertian parasites act deleteriously on the corpuscles, making them smaller and darker. They rarely appear in the peripheral circulation in the sporulating condition, while they abound in the spleen and internal organs. On examining the organs post mortem, it will be found that the schizont and sporulating forms are found in the capillaries, while the trophozoites are found attached to the walls of the arterioles and venules.

The sporulating parasites give rise to hæmozoin, which escapes from the corpuscle along with the merozoites, and will therefore be most commonly found in those tissues and organs in which sporulation takes place—*e.g.*, spleen, liver, and bone-marrow—and will give them a definite coloration, varying from a reddish-brown to a black, according to the quantity present.

This pigment will, of course, be also met with in the peripheral blood, both free and inside mononuclear leucocytes, for, on escaping from the parasite, the hæmozoin is seized by the mononuclear leucocytes, macrophages, and the endothelial cells of capillaries; therefore, in acute malaria, it will be distributed evenly through the organ affected. The pigment is later conveyed from the blood-vessels into the tissues by the phagocytes, and is found in the connective tissue of the organ close to the bloodvessels. Eventually it disappears, being partially digested by the phagocytes and tissue cells, and partially removed by the lymph. This process, however, cannot continue without causing irritation of the connective tissue.

Not merely does pigment escape from the sporulating parasite, but also hæmolysin, which damages the red cells, and causes the appearance of another pigment, yellowish in colour, called 'hæmosiderin.' This is deposited in the parenchyma cells of the organs—*e.g.*, the liver—and may perhaps damage them. The presence of this hæmolysin has been confirmed by the researches of Simpson.

Another toxin—this time pyrogenous—also escapes from the

sporulating parasite, and may be the cause of the hyperæmia found in the internal organs—*e.g.*, the spleen and the liver in acute malaria—and may also cause the destruction of the parenchyma cells of those organs. After a series of attacks the blood capillaries and lymph spaces in the liver and spleen remain permanently dilated, and separated by only a slight amount of damaged parenchyma tissue. Later, regeneration of the parenchyma takes place, but the organ will remain permanently altered, even though all pigmentation may have disappeared.

In the case of the subtertian parasite, serious local damage may be caused to the brain, the intestine, the pancreas, or other organs by the parasites massing in the capillaries and forming, with free pigment and swollen endothelial cells laden with pigment and parasites, regular thrombi, sufficient to impede the circulation, and thus to still further damage the toxin-poisoned organ. Finally, the toxins are excreted by the skin and by the kidney, and in doing so may damage the latter organ.

There are two main conditions, the pathology of which must be explained—*viz.*, acute and chronic malaria. In acute malaria there are the effects produced by each of the three parasites, of which the subtertian is liable to seriously damage important organs.

Chronic malaria should also be described according to the three types, but there is at present lack of material to evolve such a description. Chronic malaria may, however, pass to an advanced condition called 'malarial cachexia,' which shows itself in three ways—as (1) a rare acute cachexia; (2) a more common chronic cachexia; (3) cachexia with amyloidosis.

In addition, there are the pathological features of latent malaria and the relapses to be discussed.

Before, however, proceeding to describe the actual morbid anatomy of these conditions, a few words must be said upon what we know of the chemical pathology of the disease and on the blood changes which take place.

Chemical Pathology.—The pyretogenous toxin has already been mentioned among the poisons of animal origin, and, though long suspected of being present, its actual occurrence was first proved by Rosenau and his collaborators. Probably it is the poison which acts deleteriously upon the tissues of the organs and causes metabolic changes, but this is only a matter of conjecture.

We know that the heat output in the cold stage of the attack is markedly diminished—a condition met with in many fevers—but the chemistry of the metabolic changes is but little known. During the attack the urine is at first increased in quantity, which is thought to be due to the rise of blood-pressure internally, owing to the contraction of the cutaneous vessels during the cold stage. Notwithstanding this increase in quantity, the specific gravity is raised, because of the increased metabolism caused by the toxins, as is shown by the large increase in solids. The colour is dark, and the acidity of the urine is increased, as in most fevers. Nitrogen is

excreted in excess, which is largely due to the increase of urea. Chlorides, sulphates, and bases, especially potassium, are all increased in quantity. Phosphates, however, are diminished during the actual attack, but increased as it is passing off, and are considerably increased in the intermission. Phosphoric acid is therefore retained in the body during the attack.

As would be expected, iron is excreted in increased quantity, probably due to hæmozoin and hæmosiderin, but this increase does not really appear until after the actual attack is over, and then continues for some days.

As before remarked, the urine may contain a considerable quantity of urobilin, and the indigo-blue may be also increased.

Schlesinger's test for urobilin in the urine is performed by adding to the unfiltered urine an equal quantity of a solution of 10 parts of zinc acetate in absolute alcohol, shaking the mixture, and adding a few drops of a solution of lugol, stirring and filtering, when a fluorescence will appear, varying in intensity according to the quantity of urobilin present.

The diazo-reaction is said to be obtainable in about 5.5 per cent. of cases. Serum-albumin may be present after severe attacks, and proteose has been reported, as well as nucleo-proteid.

When the intermission comes, the urine diminishes in quantity, but nitrogen is still excreted at a higher rate than it should be, though less than during the attack.

Chlorides are diminished, phosphates increased; sulphates, though still higher than normal, are less than during the attack, while the excretion of the bases is diminished. The excretion of iron is marked, and the toxicity of the urine is said to be considerable.

During convalescence the most marked features are the polyuria, with low specific gravity, which in subtertian fevers may be so marked as to alarm the patient, while in quartan and tertian it may be so slight as to escape attention. There is also increase of chlorides and potassium salts excreted.

Urriola states that if the urine in malarial cases is centrifuged, four types of pigment granules may be found: (1) very fine granules; (2) larger granules in groups; (3) large masses; (4) granules in leucocytes and hyaline casts. It is, however, difficult to exclude extraneous matters.

As regards the fæces, the most noticeable feature is the increase in the excretion of bile and iron, both of which are related to the blood-destruction. Ross and Thomson have shown that the quantity of fæcal urobilin (stercobilin) shows a marked correlation with the occurrence of the fever being increased during the attack.

The sweat of a malarial patient is well known to have a peculiar odour, and contains substances very toxic to rabbits.

The above chemical features point to the fact that the toxins of malaria are excreted from the body by the sweat and the urine, and that during the fever there is very active nitrogenous, potassic, chloride, and sulphate metabolism.

That there may be other toxins as yet unknown is obvious from the fact that the *Plasmodia* cause marked shivering and a sensation

of coldness, even though the actual blood temperature is rising. It would appear as though this is due to the constriction of the cutaneous vessels by some poison which acts on non-striped muscle, for the arrectores pilorum are also affected, producing goose-skin. *Laverania malaricæ*, however, because it sporulates internally, and not in the peripheral blood, causes chills more rarely than the other two.

De Blasi has shown that an antihæmolysin is formed in the human body, and Casagrandi, as already mentioned, has performed experiments on *Halteridium* in birds, tending to show that this substance has a restraining power against increase of the parasites.

The only other remarks we can offer on the chemical pathology are limited to the nature of the pigments, hæmozoin, and hæmosiderin.

HÆMOZOIN.—Hæmozoin is the black pigment formed from hæmoglobin by the malarial parasites while living in the erythrocytes, and is afterwards distributed over the body on the disruption of the red cells. It is taken up by phagocytes, as already described, and removed from the bloodvessels to the connective tissue, in which it can be seen in the liver and spleen. It is soluble in alkalis, but not in water, alcohol, chloroform, ether, or acids. It contains iron, but in the form of an organic compound, which will not give the Berlin-blue reaction. Eventually it disappears from the connective-tissue cells, but whether it is eliminated from the body or used in some altered form we do not know. As it is formed by malarial parasites, it is peculiar to the diseases caused by them. Brown considers that it is formed by the action of a proteolytic enzyme from the parasite acting upon the hæmoglobin of the erythrocyte, and that therefore it is formed from hæmatin, a conclusion also arrived at by Carbone and V. Ascoli.

HÆMOSIDERIN.—This is the yellow pigment found in the form of yellow granules in the parenchyma cells of the liver, spleen, kidney, bone-marrow, endothelium of capillaries, and occasionally in leucocytes, after any great destruction of blood cells. In malaria it is undoubtedly due to the action of hæmolysins destroying the red cells. It contains iron in the form of an inorganic compound, and gives the usual Berlin-blue reaction. It is insoluble in alkalis and acids, but is soluble in alcohol.

The Blood.—The parasites live in the blood, in which they produce changes by their own action and by that of their toxins.

The malarial parasites, being true blood parasites and living in the red cells, form the most important feature of the pathology of the blood, but their structure and life-history having already been described in the chapter on Protozoa (p. 378), it only remains to estimate their numbers.

Ross estimates that a medium-sized person of 68 kilogrammes (150 pounds) body weight possesses 25,000,000,000,000 erythrocytes. In a severe infection he estimated the parasites as numbering 12 per cent. of the corpuscles—*i.e.*, 3,000,000,000,000—and, further, he considers that if they fall below 1 to 100,000 corpuscles—*i.e.*, 250,000,000—they will cause but little disease. Certainly, large

numbers of parasites can exist in the body and go through their life-cycle in the spleen without causing symptoms. This condition is called 'latent malaria,' and can be easily converted into active malaria by any cause which depresses the vitality of the body.

ERYTHROCYTES. — In quartan malaria the corpuscle containing the parasite is a little smaller than a normal corpuscle, and, if anything, more darkly coloured. In tertian malaria it is swollen and more lightly coloured, and on treatment with Leishman's stain exhibits fine red granules (Schüffner's dots), which are to be looked upon as a sign of degeneration of the corpuscle. In subtertian malaria the corpuscles when stained in the same way may exhibit Maurer's dots or clefts, which appear as large, irregular red formations, and also Marshall-Flehn's bluish

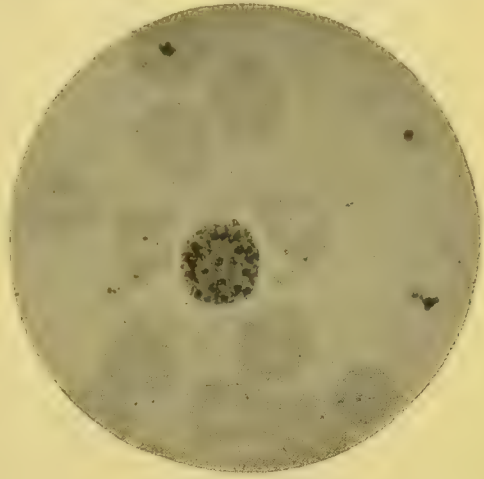


FIG. 438.—BLOOD FILM SHOWING SCHIZONT OF *PLASMODIUM MALARIÆ*.
(From a microphotograph by J. J. Bell.)



FIG. 439.—BLOOD FILM SHOWING HEAVY INFECTION WITH *LAVERANIA MALARIÆ*.
(From a microphotograph by J. J. Bell.)

dots, the significance of which is uncertain. The red cells may become transformed into brassy bodies, which are shrunk red corpuscles which have taken on the colour of brass. These are corpuscles which have undergone some form of necrosis, probably due to the hæmolysin, though it has been thought that they were infected corpuscles in which the parasite had died as a result of the necrosis.

Partial decolorization of the erythrocytes has been recorded in subtertian infections, and is especially well marked

in those containing crescent bodies. Bignami thinks that in the subtertian fever the red corpuscles, which are infected with the

parasite, have a diminished elasticity, and therefore are not so capable of circulating, and cling to the walls of small capillaries.

As every sporulation causes the destruction of red cells, anæmia is one of the marked features of malaria. This destruction takes place at each paroxysm, and though in quartan and tertian fever it may be slight, in subtertian fever it is apt to be considerable.

After a certain number of attacks of fever the loss becomes much less than in the earlier seizures.

When the fever is intermittent, regeneration takes place quickly, so that before the next paroxysm the normal number of erythrocytes may be nearly reached; but even in quartan and tertian fevers, if long-continued, anæmia will result.

The histological changes in the unaffected corpuscles are pallor and poikilocytosis, with demi-lune and crescentic forms, and in severe cases megaloblasts, with polychromatophilia and basic granular degeneration, together with normoblasts, may be noted. The tonicity of the corpuscles is increased after a number of attacks, according to Viola. In the blood of malarial cachectics the brothers Sargent have described basophile formations having the shape of a figure 8, with a double contour, and Brumpt and others have described basophile rings with a single contour. Laveran considers these appearances to be due to artefacts.

LEUCOCYTES.—The leucocytes are at first increased during the paroxysm, and then markedly diminished, so that a leucopenia is the characteristic of the simple malarial fevers. The normal ratio of white to red corpuscles is 1 to 500 or 600. From observations of Stephens and Christophers this may be 1 to 90, 1 to 200, 1 to 290, or 1 to 300 during the rigor (*i.e.*, leucocytosis), becoming 1 to 764 (*i.e.*, leucopenia) when the rigor is completed, and when the temperature falls altering to 1 to 968. Billet has shown that if curves are made of the leucocytic count and the temperature in simple tertian and quartan fevers, the two curves follow one another in their rises and falls. In pernicious malaria there may be leucocytosis.

Another important matter is the relative increase of the large mononuclear leucocytes, and this is better marked during the leucopenia of apyrexia than during the leucocytosis of the attack, for Thompson finds that it is usually low during the rigor and the febrile stage, but with the decrease of the fever it may become as high as 90 per cent. of the total leucocytes. This mononucleosis is observed for a long time after an attack of fever, even when quinine therapy is persisted in continuously.

The following are some examples of the differential count according to various observers:—

Kind of Corpuscles.	Da Costa.	Billings.	Christophers and Stephens.	Bastianella.
Polymorphonuclears ..	67·00	65·04	50·2	39·0
Large mononuclear and transitional	15·94	16·90	31·4	41·0
Lymphocytes	15·33	16·90	18·1	19·1
Eosinophiles	00·83	00·96	00·4	00·6

It must be remembered that this relative increase in the mononuclears has been noted in other protozoan infections.

Phagocytosis is particularly seen in the large mononuclear and transitional leucocytes, and to a less degree in the polymorphonuclear leucocytes and very rarely in the eosinophiles. In these cells clumps of pigment and the residue left after segmentation of a schizont are not uncommonly seen. If, however, something abnormal takes place in the red corpuscle, a phagocyte may engulf it and its parasite, or only the parasites if they have escaped from the red cell, or only the débris of the red cell.

Vacuolization and diminution of the staining power of leucocytes are to be seen. Myelocytes are said by Da Costa to be found in subtertian infection up to 0·51 per cent. Eosinophiles diminish during the paroxysm, and increase during the apyrexia.

HÆMOGLOBIN.—This is, of course, reduced, but the colour index may vary sometimes, being less than normal. Ross and Thomson find that it falls markedly with an attack of fever, but rises rapidly during convalescence.

THE SPECIFIC GRAVITY OF THE BLOOD.—Diminution of the density of the blood begins at the onset of the attack, and becomes more marked as it proceeds, and may amount to a diminution of 6·2 degrees. This fall is probably due to destruction of red cells and the breaking up of large parasites, which more than balances any loss of liquid by vomiting, diarrhœa, sweating, and polyuria.

The diminution is most marked in full-blooded persons, in primary affections, and first attacks, less in later attacks, and least in chronic malaria. The density recovers after treatment by quinine.

CHRONIC MALARIA.—In chronic malaria there is a leucopenia and a marked decrease in the numbers of the red cells, which is but little affected by febrile attacks.

POST-MALARIAL ANÆMIA.—Bignami points out that there are cases in which, in spite of the cessation of the malarial fever, the anæmia tends to progress, and these he calls post-malarial anæmias. They are generally induced by age, malnutrition, overwork, pregnancy, nursing, etc., and are not due merely to the malarial infection. Bignami divides these into four types, according to the characters of the blood.

First Type.—This form of anæmia comes on after attacks of ordinary acute malaria, and is characterized by well-marked diminution in the erythrocytes, the presence of normoblasts, diminu-

tion of the colour-index, and leucopenia associated with relative mononuclear increase. In this type the prognosis is good.

Second Type.—The second type is severe, and the prognosis is exceedingly bad. It is characterized by great diminution in the red cells, presence of poikilocytes, megalocytes, normoblasts, and megaloblasts, with leucopenia and relative mononuclear increase.

Third Type.—This is rapidly fatal, and has similar characters to the second type, but is without normoblasts.

Fourth Type.—This type is really grave chronic anæmia, resembling the first type, but being specially characterized by the paucity of the normoblasts and the marked leucopenia.

Morbid Anatomy.—The morbid anatomy of malaria has been most carefully studied in recent years by Bignami in Italy and Ewing in America. It may be considered under the following headings :—

A. ACUTE MALARIA.

1. Lesions caused by *Plasmodium malariae*.
2. Lesions caused by *Plasmodium vivax*.
3. Lesions caused by *Laverania malariae*.

B. CHRONIC MALARIA.

1. Lesions caused by *Plasmodium vivax*
2. Lesions caused by *Laverania malariae*.
3. Malarial cachexia.
4. Latent malaria.

A. MORBID ANATOMY OF ACUTE MALARIA—I. LESIONS PRODUCED BY PLASMODIUM MALARIE.—*Plasmodium malariae* goes through the entire process of schizogony in the circulating blood, and hence is evenly distributed all over the body, and therefore does not especially accumulate in any one organ. Marchiafava and Bignami mention that they have made two autopsies, one on a case of acute quartan malaria, in which the patient died of nephritis, and the other in a case of the same fever, in which the patient died of spinal disease. All they noted with regard to the visceral lesions were: *Spleen* enlarged, not softened nor very melanotic; *liver* and *bone-marrow* not markedly melanotic; *parasites* in the spleen and in the blood, but not in the brain.

Colonel Sir W. Leishman has mentioned that he has received films from the peripheral blood and spleen of a fatal case, in both of which the parasites were very numerous, but he was not in a position to state whether the patient died of malaria or not. If *P. malariae* is to produce severe symptoms, it would appear necessary for it to exist in very large numbers.

2. LESIONS PRODUCED BY PLASMODIUM VIVAX.—It is rare for death to ensue as the result of an infection with *P. vivax*. Still, this does occur at times when there is a heavy infection. Ewing has described a case of tertian infection causing coma,

hæmoglobinuria, and either causing or associated with catarrhal colitis, the principal features being the pigmentation of the bone-marrow, liver, and spleen, which last was also enlarged. The blood and spleen showed large numbers of *P. vivax*. The kidneys and colon were inflamed, and the endothelial cells of the brain were swollen and contained pigment.

3. LESIONS PRODUCED BY *LAVERANIA MALARIÆ*. — We have already insisted several times upon the fact that *L. malarie* differs from the other malarial parasites in sporulating in the organs, generally in the spleen, but at times choosing one organ and at other times another. The organ in which it sporulates in large numbers suffers most, and produces symptoms which give the characters of that particular type of malarial fever.

Thus the parasite may attack principally the brain, the intestine, the heart, or the pancreas, producing marked signs of disease therein. Therefore the conditions of the organs vary with the localization of the parasite.

In general the body is pale, with a yellowish tinge, which may be noted superficially in white races, but which may only be observed in the subcutaneous tissues in native races. The heart may be small or dilated, the muscle flabby and pale, and ecchymoses may be present in both the epicardium and endocardium. The lungs may be normal, anæmic, or hyperæmic and congested. Hæmozoin is not easily detected in the lungs because of the usual pigmentation. As first described by Laveran, a sclerosis of the lungs is not infrequently met with.

The liver is generally enlarged, and varies from a dark brown to a slate colour. It is soft and congested, and the outlines of the lobules are usually indistinct. The gall-bladder is full of dark-coloured bile.

The spleen is enlarged, with a tense capsule, but its consistency is much less than normal, and at times it may be almost diffuent in very acute cases. Its colour varies from a deep brown to black.

The stomach and intestines may show but little change, except in the choleraic forms, in which their mucosa may be intensely congested and dark red in colour, except where the Peyer's patches and the solitary glands stand out clearly. The intestine is darker red in certain places, giving it a mottled appearance, and the contents may be blood-stained fluid with flakes of mucus. In fact, the appearance post mortem and the history, if death takes place rapidly, so much resemble those of cholera that in regions where that disease is prevalent mistakes may arise, though, indeed, the dark pigmentation should enable errors to be avoided. We have not infrequently met with dark pigmentation of the small and large bowels in cases of pernicious cerebral malaria. This pigmentation is due to hæmozoin, as can be easily proved by microscopic examination.

The lymphatic glands may be swollen, while the pancreas is usually normal, but it may be very rarely swollen and hæmorrhagic—i.e., in a condition of hæmorrhagic pancreatitis.

The suprarenal capsules may be congested. The kidneys are more or less normal, but sometimes they are congested, with punctiform hæmorrhages in the pelvis and cloudy swelling in the parenchyma. The serous membranes, the pleura, and peritoneum, show as a rule nothing remarkable, except, perhaps, a little pigmentation. The bone-marrow is generally hyperæmic and chocolate-brown in colour. The brain may appear normal, but in the cerebral type of pernicious malarial fevers there will be marked changes. In slight cases there may be only œdema without pigmentation or petechiæ. Sometimes there is brownish pigmentation without petechiæ, and with or without œdema. Typically, however, there are:—(1) Hyperæmia of the leptomeninges which may be œdematous and thickened; (2) brownish, or even blackish,

pigmentation of the cortex; and (3) punctiform hæmorrhages in the white matter under the cortex or elsewhere. The spinal cord exhibits changes similar to those in the brain, while the retina shows numerous hæmorrhages.

Microscopical Examination.—After death, parasites may be found in the blood of the heart, spleen, bone-marrow, and at times in the capillaries of the brain, intestines, pancreas, etc.

The parasite, however, is much shrunken, and the typical forms seen during life are not distinct after death. Thus the ring form shrinks and becomes a rounded disc, with the chromatin particle situated at the periphery. The fully developed schizont is more typical, the merozoites being arranged in a ring around the central pigment block. The mononuclear leucocytes will be noted to have pigment granules, while the polymorphonuclears may show phagocytosis. In films from the internal organs macrophages with parasites and red cells may be seen.

In the heart there may be a few parasites, but very rarely the capillaries will be found filled with red cells containing numerous parasites, and the heart muscle laden with hæmosiderin, as has been described in a pernicious cardiac form of malaria.

The lungs may contain parasites in all stages of their existence, as well as pigmented macrophages, and leucocytes. It is, perhaps, doubtful whether there is a true form of malarial pneumonia. Bignami has stated that the pneumococcus is always present, and that a pneumonia in a malarial patient is a double infection.

The capillaries of the liver are much enlarged, with swollen endothelial cells often laden with pigment. These capillaries are filled with blood cells containing parasites and leucocytes with pigment. The perivascular lymph-spaces are swollen, and Küpfer's cells contain pigment. The liver cells are compressed between the dilated capillaries, and contain hæmosiderin and bile-pigment, and, in addition, isolated cells or groups of cells may be necrosed, but this is rarely extensive. The portal canals are infiltrated with red cells, containing parasites in all stages of development.

In the spleen the red cells of the pulp are seen to be filled with schizonts and crescents, while pigment is present in leucocytes and macrophages. The kidneys show pigmentation in the walls of the capillaries of the glomeruli, as well as those lying between the tubules; but parasites are rare in the former, though common in the latter situation. Phagocytes are not uncommon containing pigment, red cells, and parasites. The cells of the glomeruli degenerate, and are thrown off into the capsule along with exudation, and the epithelial cells of the convoluted tubules degenerate, and are cast off into the lumen.

The suprarenal capsule shows irregular areas of vascular dilatation full of erythrocytes, many of which contain parasites, while macrophages may also be present.

The capillaries of the abdominal fat are often full of red cells containing parasites. The bone-marrow is chocolate-coloured in the small bones, and brownish-red in the long bones. Often it is soft and diffuent, and contains sporulating parasites and, in particular, crescents (gametocytes), which are thought to start their life here.

When the intestine shows the choleraic appearances described above, the capillaries of the mucosa and villi are filled with parasites in all stages of schizogony, and leucocytes with pigment masses. The epithelial cells are necrotic, but the submucosa and deeper layers escape injury, and their blood-vessels contain nearly normal cells.

The brain in pernicious cerebral fevers has its capillaries filled with sporulating parasites and mononuclear macrophages containing degenerated parasites, while the arterioles and venules are freer, and only contain young forms. Sometimes no parasites are to be seen, and only pigment in the endothelial cells, which may be swollen and fatty, or may be found free in the vessel, and may have parasitic inclusions. The nerve cells may be affected, showing damage to or disappearance of Nissl's bodies, and sometimes degeneration of their nuclei, the whole cell being sometimes filled with small granules. There may be fibrolysis—*i.e.*, degeneration of the neurofibrils—only small argento-

phile granules remaining. Rod-like cells attached to the processes of the ganglion cells may be seen. The punctiform hæmorrhages are due to the diapedesis of apparently normal red cells.

B. MORBID ANATOMY OF CHRONIC MALARIA.—The lesions of chronic malaria fall principally upon the spleen, the liver, and the bone-marrow. We are not acquainted with any records of post-mortems on persons suffering from chronic malaria due to *Plasmodium malarie*.

I. LESIONS DUE TO PLASMODIUM VIVAX.—The best recorded case of this infection is that given by Ewing of a man who suffered from the disease for about a year, and died from endocarditis about three months after the last attack. The spleen was enlarged, firm and dark, and contained parasites and pigment in endothelial cells about the Malpighian bodies. Some hæmosiderin could also be seen. The liver showed no gross signs indicating malaria, but, microscopically, pigment was collected in large intracellular masses in the portal canals and slightly in a few endothelial cells throughout the lobule. Macrophages also contained pigment. The marrow was but slightly pigmented, showing a few endothelial cells with black pigment.

2. CHRONIC MALARIA WITHOUT DEFINITION OF THE PARASITE.—These lesions are generally due to *Laverania malarie*, and, as stated above, affect the spleen, liver, and bone-marrow.

The spleen is always enlarged, often considerably, and is firm in consistence, but its colour varies from a slate to a dark red, which depends upon the amount of pigment deposited therein. Usually there are some adhesions indicating old perisplenitis. On section it generally appears quite black, but this depends upon the amount of pigment; the capsule is thickened; the Malpighian follicles stand out clearly, as they are enlarged and non-pigmented. Microscopically the capillary vessels are seen dilated and separated by splenic pulp, or by connective tissue containing giant cells. The pigment may be diffused through the organ, but is generally either collected around the follicles or extracellular, and contained in the lymphatics of the arterioles or septa, both of which are thickened.

The liver is larger and harder than usual. If pigment is present, it will usually be gathered around the periphery of the lobules, which will, therefore, stand out clearly. Later the pigment becomes perivascular, and finally disappears. The capillaries or lymph-spaces may be considerably dilated, and the liver cells atrophied by pressure. On the other hand, proliferation of the hepatic cells and repair of the damage may be seen taking place. Atrophy of the liver is not usual, but may occur in old people from thrombosis of the portal vein, and is then associated with necrosis.

The bone-marrow is usually pigmented, and of a chocolate hue in the small bones, while in the long bones it may be reddish, except, perhaps, in the very centre. This colour is due to the replacement of the fat by vascular tissue.

3. MALARIAL CACHEXIA.—This may be acute when it develops after a few attacks of fever, but more commonly it comes on as a sequela to chronic malaria. The anæmia is marked, and there is fluid about the ankles and in the abdominal cavity. The spleen is enormously enlarged, as is also the liver, while the bone-marrow is yellow, sclerotic, or gelatinous. Parasites may be found, or they may be absent.

A special form of cachexia is that in which amyloid changes are found in the kidney along with parenchymatous nephritis, associated more rarely with amyloid changes in the intestine, spleen, and liver, with sometimes simple ulceration of the intestine.

4. LATENT MALARIA.—*Plasmodium vivax* and *Laverania malarie* can exist in the spleen of persons who show no sign of fever or malarial cachexia. These parasites can go through their life-cycle in that organ, and in the case of *L. malarie* in the liver also, but it would appear that they are restrained from invading the circulation by the action of some antitoxin, and therefore do not increase to such numbers as to cause toxic symptoms.

Relapses.—It is obvious from the above that, if the restraining influences which conduce to the condition of latent malaria are removed, an attack of malaria will follow, or if there has been a previous attack, a relapse will take place.

Observers have always had a difficulty in admitting that the ordinary form of the parasite could be latent and cause a relapse, though there appears no doubt that this can take place. Schaudinn, as has already been mentioned, considers that the macrogametocyte is capable of undergoing parthenogenesis and forming merozoites, thus starting a cycle of schizogony anew and causing fever. Craig and other observers insist upon conjugation, causing a rejuvenescence of the parasite and a relapse of the fever.

THE CLINICAL DESCRIPTION OF MALARIAL FEVERS.

ACUTE MALARIA.

As there are three parasites—*Plasmodium malarie*, *P. vivax*, and *Laverania malarie*—there are therefore three clinical entities—quartan malarial fever, tertian malarial fever, and subtertian malarial fever—due to these parasites.

Quartan and tertian parasites go through their whole life-history in the circulating blood, and though the tertian sporulating forms are found in internal organs, such as the spleen, yet they do not tend to accumulate in those organs or to produce special effects. On the other hand, the subtertian parasite sporulates entirely, or almost entirely, in the internal organs; and if one particular organ is especially attacked by the parasites, there will be special clinical features to that phase of the disease, which have for many years been alluded to as the perniciousness of this type of fever, and these pernicious symptoms will depend upon whether the parasite is principally localized in—(1) the cerebro-spinal nervous system; (2) the gastro-intestinal mucosa; (3) the pancreas; (4) the heart; (5) the lungs; and (6) the liver.

THE QUARTAN FEVERS.

Quartan malarial fever depends for its symptoms and course upon the life-history of *Plasmodium malariae*, introduced into the blood of man by an Anopheline mosquito. Its clinical course will depend entirely upon whether the parasites are of approximately the same age, or whether they have been introduced into the body on different days.

If only parasites of approximately one age exist in the blood, a typical quartan malarial fever ensues, with an interval of seventy-two hours (the length of time which a merozoite takes to become the fully developed schizont). Such a fever is called '*quartana simplex*,' or simple quartan fever.

If the parasites have been introduced on two different days, and are therefore of different ages, the patient will develop fever on two successive days, and be free from it on the third day; such a fever would be called '*quartana duplex*,' or double quartan fever.

If, however, the parasites were introduced on three successive days, the fever may be daily—that is to say, may be a quotidian fever—and this could only be recognized as belonging to the quartan fevers by its parasite being discovered microscopically; such a fever would be called a '*quartana triplex*,' or triple quartan fever.

Simple Quartan Fever.

Incubation.—This has not been determined with any degree of certainty. It is without doubt longer than either tertian or sub-tertian. Celli, by experiment, came to the conclusion that it might be very long—two months or more.

By the experimental inoculation of blood, Marchiafava and Bignami calculated the maximum incubation at 18 days, the minimum at 11 days, and the mean at 14·3 days. We are not aware of any experiment to determine the incubation period after the bite of infected mosquitoes.

The Febrile Attack.—Generally there are prodromata before an attack of quartan fever. Some few hours previously the patient may complain of giddiness, weakness, malaise, headache, or even nausea and vomiting. If the blood is examined during the occurrence of these symptoms, the parasites will be seen to be schizonts, and the commencing formation of merozoites may also be noted.

In a short time the definite attack begins. It may roughly be divided into three stages: (1) The cold stage; (2) the hot stage; (3) the sweating stage.

1. *The Cold Stage.*—The patient begins to feel cold, either in the legs, arms, or back. This sensation increases until actual shivering sets in. In quartan fever the rigors are well marked and characteristic, and the patient may shiver until he shakes the bed; the teeth may chatter, the lips become blue, the arms and legs cold, and goose-skin may be present. If the blood is examined in this stage,

some of the parasites may be seen fully sporulated, or only young parasites may be found.

During this cold stage, which is the most uncomfortable of the three stages, the internal temperature is rising rapidly, and the internal organs must be somewhat congested during the chill; for there are symptoms of intense headache, visual disturbance, vomiting, and at times diarrhœa. The temperature, which rises before the chill begins, varies at first from 100.4° to 102.2° F., but generally rises rapidly to its maximum—about 104° or 105° F.

The cold stage does not last long, fifteen to thirty minutes being the average time, but it may be longer or shorter, and may be irregular, being preceded by a transient sensation of heat.

2. *The Hot Stage.*—Gradually the shivering ceases, and the patient begins to feel warmer and more comfortable, though sensations of

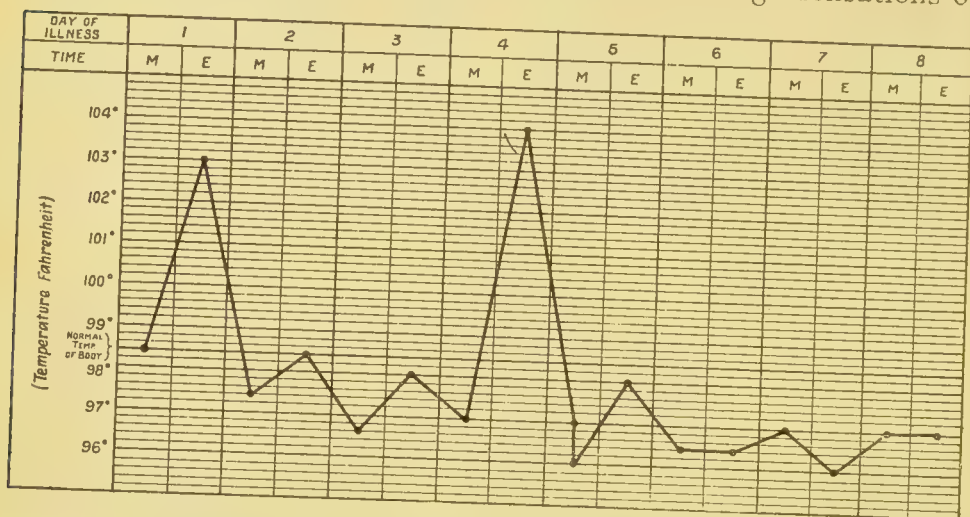


FIG. 440.—TEMPERATURE CHART OF A CASE OF SIMPLE QUARTAN MALARIAL FEVER IN THE GENERAL HOSPITAL, COLOMBO.

cold and heat may succeed one another. By degrees the sensation of heat increases, until the patient becomes burning hot, and as in the cold stage he desired to wrap himself up with coverings, now he desires to throw these off. The skin feels hot and dry, the pulse and respirations increase, the conjunctivæ become injected. Vomiting and diarrhœa may take place, and an erythematous rash sometimes appears. The temperature reaches its maximum, and soon declines.

This stage may last about three to four or more hours.

3. *The Sweating Stage.*—Towards the end of the hot stage the forehead is noticed to be damp, and presently the sweat begins to appear profusely, and great relief is felt by the patient. As the sweating increases, the temperature falls rapidly and the pulse-rate declines. As the temperature approaches normal the patient may fall into a sleep, from which he will wake feeling much better, and

with a normal or subnormal temperature. The total duration of the attack may be about eight to ten hours.

The Interval.—After awaking from his sleep the patient feels quite well, though weak, and generally goes about his ordinary work during the two days of this interval. But signs are not wanting that everything is not well; for the temperature is often subnormal and the pulse slow, while in the blood the developing parasites may be traced, and leucopenia with relative mononuclear increase noted. At the end of seventy-two hours the apyrexial interval will end in an attack of fever, as described above.

Irregularities.—Prolongation of the attack has been noticed. Marchiafava and Bignami state that it may very exceptionally last for more than twenty-four hours, in which case the temperature shows two chief undulations—one near the beginning and the other near the end of the attack—separated by a marked remission.

Children.—Children may show neither cold nor sweating stages. Very often convulsions take the place of the cold stage, but these may be so slight as not to be noticed. On the other hand, they may be very severe.

The Course of the Fever.—Quartan, rightly or wrongly, is believed to have a great tendency to relapse, to go on for months, and even, it is said, for years, if not treated. The parasites rarely appear to multiply to any great extent in the blood, and hence pernicious symptoms are usually absent. If left to itself, the fever is supposed to gradually die out, but to recur at times. Spontaneous cure is, however, rare.

Double Quartan Fever.

In this form there is an attack of fever on two successive days, and an apyrexial interval of twenty-four hours.

Typically the two attacks should be equal in severity, but often this is not so, for one attack is less severe than the other. As already stated, this may be due to two groups of parasites, inoculated on separate days. But sometimes quartana simplex may become quartana duplex, and this is explained by the fact that there may be a double infection, but that while there are many of one brood of parasites, and hence fever, the other brood may be so few at first that they require time to develop to such numbers as are necessary for the production of fever. Consequently quartana duplex may at first show itself by a very slight rise in the temperature on the second day, which increases gradually till equal to that produced by the stronger infection.

Triple Quartan Fever.

This is a quotidian or daily fever produced by three broods of quartan parasites coming to maturity on three successive days, and can only be diagnosed by an examination of the blood. The three attacks may be similar, and may begin at the same hour, or they may vary in severity and begin at different times. In

quartana triplex sometimes an attack may be 'subintrans'—that is to say, the cold stage of one attack may begin before the sweating stage of the other attack is finished; but this is not common, and usually there is a distinct interval of normal or subnormal temperature.

A simple or a double quartan may become a triple quartan in the manner described above for the origin of a double from a simple fever. On the other hand, it may start as quartana triplex, and become a duplex, and finally a simplex. This may be due to the weakening of certain groups of parasites. Sometimes a triplex may directly become a simplex from the linking together of two other groups of parasites at the same time.

Rarer Forms of Quartan Fever.

Quartan parasites are believed not to cause continuous fever, but very rarely they may cause subcontinuous or remittent fever. Such a condition is due to the presence in the blood of parasites of all ages, which, therefore, are continually sporulating and disturbing the metabolism, thereby producing the remittent type of fever.

Mixed infections may occur with either of the other two parasites, and an intermittent irregular fever be produced, only to be diagnosed by the microscope.

THE TERTIAN FEVERS.

Tertian malaria includes all the fevers caused by *Plasmodium vivax*.

These fevers may be classified into :—

1. Simple tertian fever—tertiana simplex.
2. Double tertian fever—tertiana duplex.
3. Irregular subcontinuous tertian fevers.

Tertian is the most widely distributed of all the malarial fevers, and the most common, for reasons already given (p. 855).

Simple Tertian Fever.

Simple tertian fever is characterized by attacks recurring every forty-eight hours, and separated by an apyrexial interval, which is the length of time required by *Plasmodium vivax* to pass from the merozoite to the fully developed schizont.

The clinical description may be divided into—(1) the attack of fever; (2) the apyrexial interval.

The Attack of Fever.—There may be no prodromata, or, on the other hand, these may be most characteristic. When present, they take the form of pain in the head and the back, and especially in the bones of the limbs—more particularly the joints—which lead to their being considered to be rheumatic, together with a feeling

of lassitude and illness. On the day succeeding these sensations the patient may feel quite well, but on the next day they may recur. If treated in this stage, the fever may never develop, but if neglected, it will appear in the course of a few days.

After a feeling of illness, giddiness, nausea, or vomiting, with perhaps a slight rise of temperature, the patient suddenly becomes very cold and shivers, and his symptoms resemble in detail those already described for quartan malarial fever, except that they may not be so severe. In about ten to thirty minutes the warm stage begins.

As the chills diminish, sensations of warmth appear; at first pleasurable, they soon become intense, and the patient feels burning hot. The skin is hot, flushed, and dry; the conjunctivæ injected; the pulse full, quick, and often dicrotic, and the pains in the head, back, and limbs increase. A slight cough may be noted; vomiting is common, and sometimes diarrhœa occurs. Very often the white skin shows a sallow or slightly yellowish tinge, which is also present in native races, but can only be seen in the conjunctivæ. The heart-sounds are usually normal, but sometimes a soft systolic murmur can be heard. In the lungs, at times, sonorous and sibilant râles occur. The spleen is enlarged and tender, which is characteristic, and a soft murmur over the splenic area, like a uterine soufflé, is said to be sometimes heard. Skin eruptions have been described; the commonest in our experience is erythematous or urticarial. Herpes may occur on the lips.

The temperature begins to rise before the chill, and continues to ascend during the cold stage, reaching a maximum in the hot stage, which may be anything from 102° to 108° F., but is generally about 104° or 105° F. The warm stage may last four or five hours, when it passes into the sweating stage.

The mouth becomes moist, and sweat gradually comes out all over the body, and soon a most profuse perspiration may take place, and the pulse, respirations, and temperature may fall to normal in about four hours, when the patient, as in quartan fever, goes off into a sleep. The attack lasts about ten to twelve hours, and generally begins in the morning, but may take place at any time of the day.

Peculiarities.—As in quartan, so in tertian fever, children may have neither chill nor sweating stage, but may, on the other hand, show convulsions.

Apyrexial Interval.—This lasts about thirty-six hours, during which the temperature is often subnormal. In the interval the patient may feel well, but his blood will show developing parasites, reduced erythrocytes, and a leucopenia with a mononuclear increase.

Double Tertian Fever.

When parasites mature on two separate days, fever is produced every day, which is therefore quotidian in type, and is called a double tertian (*tertiana duplex*). The attacks are similar to those described above, but usually are shorter, and, of course, the apyrexial in-

interval is shorter. As a rule, the attacks begin at the same hour each day, but sometimes one attack is later than the other. Very often one attack is not so severe as the other, but if left to itself without treatment, it may become similar to the more severe attack. Double tertians may arise by a simple tertian anticipating. If this is continued after the double tertian is developed, or if one of the attacks of a double tertian anticipates, in course of time it will join in with the originally previous attack, so that a person who is in the sweating stage of one attack may suddenly start the cold stage of the other.

Clinical Course.—Left to itself, tertian malaria tends to a spontaneous cure after a series of attacks, but relapses may occur. Groups of more severe attacks alternate irregularly with groups of

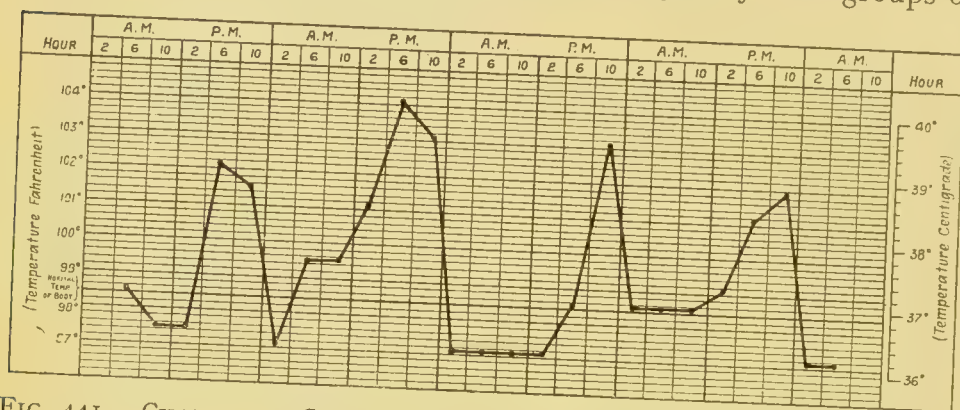


FIG. 441.—CHART OF A CASE OF DOUBLE TERTIAN MALARIAL FEVER IN THE GENERAL HOSPITAL, COLOMBO.

milder attacks. Usually, recurring attacks take place about the same time on the succeeding days.

The anæmia of tertian fevers is more easily overcome than that of quartan, and great exhaustion is only seen in old debilitated subjects.

Two interesting points may be noticed—(1) anticipation of the attacks; (2) retardation of the attacks. Anticipation of the attacks means shortening of the apyrexial interval, so that they begin at short intervals. Retardation means prolongation of the apyrexial interval, and is generally due to the action of quinine, but may be due to spontaneous weakening of the parasite.

Irregular Subcontinuous Tertian Fevers.

Irregularity may be brought about by parasites maturing at different times on the same day, and thus producing an almost continuous fever with exacerbations and remissions; but tertian fever is rarely duplicated—that is to say, it rarely shows two distinct attacks in one day. Prolongation of the attack produces a fever resembling the subtertian, while in very chronic tertians just the reverse may take place—viz., prolongation of the apyretic

intervals—so that fever appears at the end of seven, eight, fourteen, or sixteen days.

Irregularity may also be produced by mixed infections of *Plasmodium vivax* with *Plasmodium malariae*, or with *Laverania malariae*.

THE SUBTERTIAN FEVERS.

Subtertian malarial fever derives its name from the fact that though really a tertian fever, its attacks are very prolonged. It is caused by *Laverania malariae*, and though known as long ago as the days of Celsus, has in modern times been accurately studied by Baccelli, Marchiafava, and Bignami.

The various fevers classified together under the term 'subtertian' may be divided into :—

1. Simple subtertian fever.
2. Double subtertian fever.
3. Irregular subtertian fevers.
4. Remittent subtertian fevers.
5. Bilious remittent fever.
6. Pernicious subtertian fevers.



Simple Subtertian Fever.

This form of subtertian fever usually shows intermissions based upon a tertian type.

The incubation period has been studied by Marchiafava and Bignami, who considered it to be of nine to ten days' duration when acquired by natural mosquito infection, and to vary from nine to nineteen days when acquired by experimental mosquito infection. Prodromal symptoms resembling those of tertian fevers may exist before an attack.

The cold stage may be entirely absent, but it often occurs, and is sometimes severe. Sometimes the attack begins with the warm stage, in which the symptoms are very severe pains in the limbs, back, and head, with gastro-intestinal disturbance in the form of vomiting, diarrhœa, and coated tongue. The skin is often flushed and dry and sometimes icteric, while the eyes are injected. The sweating stage is never absent, and may be marked. The spleen is usually tender, as well as the liver. The four-hourly temperature chart is most characteristic, for the invasion takes place with a rapid rise to 104° F. to 105° F., after which the temperature remains high, oscillating about 1° F. The oscillation which immediately precedes the crisis is larger than the others, and is called the pseudo-crisis. After this the temperature rises to its highest point (precritical elevation), and then suddenly falls (crisis) below normal, where it remains, as a rule, until the next attack. It may, however, rise from subnormal to normal, and just prior to the next attack show a distinct depression. This typical temperature may, however, be

greatly masked by an absence of the sudden rise at the invasion, or of the precritical elevation, or by an exaggeration of the pseudo-crisis, making the single attack appear double.

Lastly, the whole attack may be shorter than usual, and resemble, as regards the temperature, a simple tertian fever.

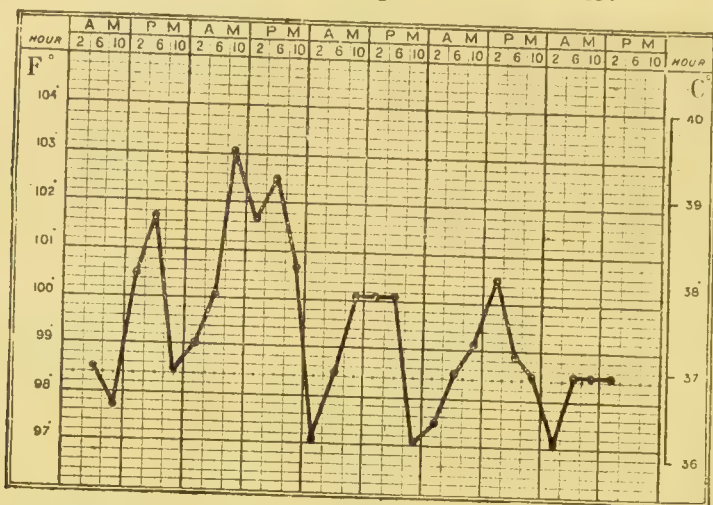


FIG. 442.—CHART OF A CASE OF SUBTERTIAN MALARIAL FEVER.

The curve is most typical on the second day, before quinine was administered.

The duration of the attack in subtertian fever is about twenty-four hours or more, while the interval will be twenty-four, ten, or even eight hours in duration, varying, of course, with the length of the attack.

Double Subtertian Fever.

This is a quotidian fever, caused by two broods of *Laverania malariae*. The cold stage is less marked than in a quotidian fever, due to quartan or tertian parasites. The temperature rises rapidly, the fastigium is very short, and the fall is to below normal. There is nothing particular to remark about the warm or sweating stages, which resemble those of the simple subtertian fever. The whole attack only lasts six, eight, or twelve hours.

Irregular Subtertian Fevers.

When several broods of *Laverania malariae* exist together in the blood, it is obvious that, instead of sporulation taking place regularly every day or every other day, it will be irregular, and hence the attacks will run into one another and produce an irregular type of fever, which is commonly met with on the West Coast of Africa.

Remittent Subtertian Fevers.

Remittent fevers arise by prolongation of ordinary attacks, or by anticipation or subintrance, so that two attacks become continuous, the onset of the second attack beginning before the first one is concluded. Duplication may also lead to a remittent fever.

These fevers may be mild or grave, and may become pernicious. The symptomatology is briefly as follows: After one or two days of prodromal lassitude, pains, and sensations of chilliness, etc., fever comes on without any cold stage. The skin becomes hot and dry, and often turns yellowish, and headache, with pains in the different parts of the body, is a source of trouble to the patient.

The tongue is coated; thirst is sometimes intense, and may be associated with vomiting and purging, together with pains in the region of the liver, spleen, and stomach. The toxins affect the brain, causing sleeplessness, restlessness, and delirium. The liver and spleen are both enlarged and tender, and at times there is slight cardiac dilatation on the right side. The temperature is characterized by high fever with remissions.

The time of the remission is by no means certain. It may take place in the morning and the rise in the evening. Under treatment the parasites rapidly disappear from the peripheral circulation, but last longer in the viscera, so keeping up the fever. Mild attacks get well under the week, but without treatment they would soon become the more serious or grave type of fever, which shows three variations—the first resembling typhoid in its clinical features; the second distinguished by the bilious vomiting and diarrhœa, with marked enlargement of the liver and jaundice, which is often called bilious remittent fever; and the third with a tendency to hæmorrhages, local gangrene, hæmoglobinuria and great weakness, sometimes called 'adynamic remittent fever.' Only the bilious remittent requires further consideration here, as *Malarial Hæmoglobinuria* will be treated in the next chapter on Tropical Hæmoglobinurias.

Bilious Remittent Fever.

This is a type of subtertian remittent fever in which there is great blood-destruction, and consequently much bile-production. We have seen it repeatedly in Africa, and it is said to occur in all highly malarious districts.

The attack begins as an ordinary remittent fever, but is associated with jaundice, bilious vomiting, and usually bilious diarrhœa, though in its place there may be constipation. The patient also complains of pain and tenderness in the stomach and liver. After a few days' illness the symptoms may gradually subside, or, with or without hiccough, epistaxis or hæmatemesis, the temperature may rise considerably, and the patient, becoming comatose, dies.

We have noted at times a curious intermission in the symptoms, unfortunately of short duration, after which high fever ensues, quickly followed by coma and death.

Pernicious Subtertian Fevers.

As already explained, the subtertian parasite may undergo its life-history in the capillaries of some one organ in particular. When this happens, the organ in question suffers, not merely from acute

poisoning with the malarial toxins, but also from lack of nutrition owing to the blocking of the capillaries by swollen endothelial cells and by blood-corpuscles filled with parasites, leucocytes filled with pigment, free pigment and merozoites. These two conditions produce symptoms indicating the organ affected, and, moreover, produce a high mortality, hence the term 'pernicious fevers.' In addition to this localized type, a large number of parasites in the general circulation may also cause pernicious symptoms.

The pernicious fevers are classified into :—

A. PERNICIOUS FEVERS WITHOUT LOCAL SYMPTOMS.

1. Algide pernicious fever.
2. Diaphoretic pernicious fever.
3. Hæmorrhagic pernicious fever.
4. Scarlatiniiform pernicious fever.

B. PERNICIOUS FEVERS WITH LOCAL SYMPTOMS.

1. With cerebro-spinal symptoms.
2. With gastro-intestinal symptoms.
3. With cardiac symptoms.
4. With pulmonary symptoms.

A. PERNICIOUS FEVERS WITHOUT LOCAL SYMPTOMS.

Algide Pernicious Fever.—The patient is, as a rule, first seen in a condition of such extreme collapse as to make the practitioner suspicious of cholera. The nose is sharp, the cheeks sunken, the lips and extremities cyanotic, the nails livid, the pulse small, soft, and frequent, becoming thready and imperceptible, the skin cold and clammy, and the respiration laboured. The patient may, however, be conscious, and be able to answer questions and to complain in a weak voice of severe thirst. This is a very serious and fatal form of pernicious malaria, and generally kills the victim in a few hours.

Diaphoretic Pernicious Fever.—In this type the sweating of the third stage of an attack is so exceedingly copious that not merely is the bed saturated, but a pool may even form on the floor. Such excessive excretion of sweat is dangerous, as the patient becomes more and more exhausted as it goes on, and a most dangerous collapse may ensue.

Hæmorrhagic Pernicious Fever.—This form of pernicious fever is apparently rare. It is characterized by hæmorrhages from the skin and mucosæ of the nose, bronchi, intestines, stomach, and generative organs during the attack, but not during the intermission.

This condition rapidly produces acute grave anæmia, with thready pulse, coma, delirium, convulsions, and death.

Scarlatiniform Pernicious Fever.—Scarlatiniform pernicious fever is characterized by a diffuse scarlatiniform rash all over the body, with desquamation of the horny layer and erythema of the fauces, and may lead to a typhoidal state in which the patient dies.

B. PERNICIOUS FEVERS WITH LOCAL SYMPTOMS.

With Cerebro-spinal Symptoms.—Briefly, it may be stated that no diagnosis of hemiplegia or of any brain or spinal disease without such obvious cause as traumatism should be diagnosed in malarious districts without first examining the blood to see whether the subtertian parasite is present.

It would appear that almost any group of peculiar nervous symptoms, including even chorea, in a patient infected with malaria, may be the direct result of the parasites, and may therefore be amenable to treatment by quinine.

With this understanding, it is possible to mention a few of the many forms in which this protean malady may present itself, which may be classified as :—

1. Comatose pernicious fever.
2. Delirious pernicious fever.
3. Tetanic pernicious fever.
4. Eclamptic pernicious fever.
5. Meningitic pernicious fever.
6. Hemiplegic pernicious fever.
7. Aphasic pernicious fever.
8. Amaurotic pernicious fever.
9. Bulbar pernicious fever.
10. Cerebellar pernicious fever.
11. Ataxic pernicious fever.

Comatose Pernicious Fever.—This may begin suddenly or slowly. If the latter, there may be weakness, sleepiness, headache, disturbance of vision, stupor, or delirium, which ends in coma. But more often the patient is brought to the hospital quite comatose. He lies flat upon his back, with usually no paralysis and no alteration in the reflexes. The pupils may be contracted and give the idea of opium-poisoning, while the patient cannot be roused to answer questions, but will only frown or groan.

Hæmorrhages may be found on the skin and in the retina. The urine, which may have casts and a little albumin, is usually passed involuntarily, as are the motions. The heart is dilated, and the pulse, at first slow, soon becomes quick, and towards the fatal termination very quick and thready. Respiration may be quiet or noisy. If death is to take place, the patient becomes colder and colder, the tongue dry and thick, and respiration ceases.

If he is about to recover, the coma will gradually pass away; he will be able to answer questions when roused, and after a time gradually recovers consciousness. The speech is most peculiar, being scanning in character.

The coma may be present one day, but the next day the patient may be slightly better, with a subnormal temperature and a slower fuller pulse; towards evening, however, the temperature rises, and the coma returns. This second attack is, as a rule, fatal. The fever may be remittent or intermittent. In the latter case it returns before death. Quinine treatment by injection and otherwise appears to be of no avail at times, and after two or three days of coma, even when the parasites have disappeared from the peripheral blood, the person may die.

Delirious Pernicious Fever.—In this form, delirium is the most marked feature, and in a short time is followed by exhaustion, coma, and death. Such cases are apt to come on suddenly, and to be mistaken for drunkenness, sunstroke or mania. The fever is usually very high. Recovery is supposed to occur, but we have never seen these cases end otherwise than fatally.

Tetanic Pernicious Fever.—Patients delirious from malaria may show trismus, contraction of the limbs, opisthotonos, retraction of the abdomen, and conjugate deviation of the eyes. The contractions of the muscles may relax and increase as in tetanus, and there may be priapism. The attack may resolve, or end in death with high temperature.

Eclamptic Pernicious Fever.—Children during an attack of fever may develop convulsions, followed by stupor, or even coma and death.

Meningitic Pernicious Fever.—Fever with signs of meningitis may be found in young persons and children. The symptoms are vomiting, slow pulse, headache, retraction of the head, and rigidity of the neck, convulsions, hyperæsthesia, and irregularity of pulse, going on to coma and death.

Hemiplegic Pernicious Fever.—The patient may be suddenly taken ill with fever, and develop a typical hemiplegic attack.

Aphasic Pernicious Fever.—In this type motor aphasia develops with or without other paralyses.

Amaurotic Pernicious Fever.—During an attack of pernicious fever a patient may complain that he is unable to see. When treated with quinine, as a rule sight soon returns, but more rarely blindness may result, due to thrombosis of the retinal vessels, and consequently retinal hæmorrhages and optic neuritis. One eye only may be attacked. This condition must be differentiated from quinine amaurosis. In malarial amaurosis the pupils react to light, and vision is, as a rule, not completely lost. In quinine amaurosis the pupils are widely dilated, and do not react to light, while other symptoms of cinchonism, such as deafness, severe tinnitus aurium, etc., will be present.

Bulbar Pernicious Fever.—A fever with bulbar symptoms—that is to say, difficulty of speech and deglutition, with facial paralysis, or with the weakening of the muscles, as shown by disturbances of equilibrium in a malarial district—may be a pernicious fever, and can only be diagnosed by a blood examination.

Cerebellar Pernicious Fever.—The patient presents cerebellar ataxia and vomiting, and complains of severe headache.

Ataxic Pernicious Fever.—This probably belongs to the same class as the bulbar, for the symptoms—slow and scanning speech, great muscular weakness, exaggeration of tendon reflexes, ataxia, together with vomiting—all indicate a bulbar lesion. Subtertian parasites are found in the blood. At first there is no fever, but this may develop later. Such patients generally recover on quinine treatment, or, indeed, they do so spontaneously.

Pernicious Fevers with Gastro-intestinal Symptoms.—The gastro-intestinal symptoms may be classified into :—

1. Choleraic pernicious fever.
2. Dysenteric pernicious fever.
3. Hæmorrhagic pancreatitis.
4. Peritonitic pernicious fever.

Choleraic Pernicious Fever.—This is merely a great exacerbation of the ordinary gastro-intestinal symptoms commonly met with in malarial fever. There is vomiting, abdominal pain, and severe diarrhœa. A microscopical examination of the dejecta may show a few leucocytes in stages of degeneration. An examination of the blood will show the parasites.

During the attack the patient is pale or cyanotic, the eyes sunken, the skin cold and clammy, but the temperature may be raised, and hiccough, severe thirst, and painful cramps in the lower limbs may also be present. The urine is scanty or suppressed. Collapse, delirium, or coma, may precede death, or the patient may be sensible to the end. If the patient is to recover, the algidity diminishes, the diarrhœa ceases, and after a long sleep he awakens refreshed, and convalescence sets in.

Dysenteric Pernicious Fever.—In this type there are motions which contain blood and mucus tinged with bile. The fever is high, and there is great distress and prostration, with small rapid pulse. Under quinine treatment the patient may rapidly recover.

Hæmorrhagic Pancreatitis.—Hæmorrhagic pancreatitis, which is by no means unknown in Ceylon, has been found post mortem to be caused by malarial parasites, but, as far as we know, no diagnosis of the condition has been made during life. The symptoms are those usually described for hæmorrhagic pancreatitis from other causes—viz., the acute onset, with pain in the epigastric region, with signs of partial intestinal obstruction often associated with marked collapse.

Peritonitic Pernicious Fever.—A case of pernicious fever, with symptoms resembling peritonitis, has been recorded by Graham. In this case no parasites could be found in the peripheral blood, and quinine administered by the mouth was useless, but injections of quinine were curative. The peritonitic symptoms are, however, found in cases in which the suprarenal glands are especially attacked, and this may have been one of these cases.

Pernicious Fevers with Cardiac Symptoms.—The right heart has been noticed to be enlarged in attacks of malarial fever, and some-

times these symptoms become marked, with severe pain in the cardiac region, accompanied with vomiting of blood, while the patient passes into an algide condition and dies.

Pernicious Fevers with Pulmonary Symptoms.—These may be: (1) Pneumonic; (2) pleuritic.

Pneumonic.—This is generally of the nature of a broncho-pneumonia, and is accompanied with blood expectoration in the red corpuscles of which parasites may be seen, dyspnœa, and cough. The symptoms are better in the remission of the fever, and worse during the attack. The blood is full of parasites. In many cases broncho-pneumonia in malarial patients is not due directly to the malarial parasites, but is a complication due to the pneumococcus.

Pleuritic.—Intermittent pleuritic pernicious fever has been described, with sharp pricking pain, dry cough, and friction sounds, which improve in the remission, and become worse again in the attack.

Appendicular Symptoms.—Appendicular malarial attacks have been described by some authors.

Orchitic Symptoms.—Cases of acute orchitis due to malarial parasites have been described by various observers.

Dry Gangrene.—Dry gangrene of the feet and legs has been described by Tomaselli and others as being due to endarteritis of malarial origin.

CHRONIC MALARIA.

Chronic malaria may result from infection by any of the three malarial parasites, but is usually caused by *Laverania malariae*, the subtertian parasite.

The symptoms of chronic malaria are repeated attacks of slight fever, which may pass unnoticed; enlargement of spleen and liver; and pigmentation of the skin and mucosæ. This pigmentation is particularly to be noted in the tongue in dark races, while in white races Gerhardt's urobilin icterus may be seen in the skin. Other symptoms are œdema about the feet, associated with anæmia, which may be marked; the presence of malarial parasites in the peripheral blood during an attack of fever; and often palpitation and dizziness, bronchitis and digestive troubles, and a general disinclination for exertion and work. The urine shows an increase of urea and urobilin. If this state of affairs is allowed to continue, it may pass into malarial cachexia, with enormous enlargement of the spleen, which is firm to the touch and not tender or painful, associated with a profound secondary anæmia, and great reduction of red cells and hæmoglobin, with increase of mononuclear leucocytes.

In malarial cachexia the apyrexial intervals are long, during which search may in vain be made for the parasite in the peripheral blood, but it is usually found during the febrile attacks, which may be quite mild. This is a condition, however, in which blood examination does not help the diagnosis as it does in other forms

of malaria, and the clinical symptoms require to be studied, for the disease resembles kala-azar, while it may also be mistaken for agchylostomiasis.

Chronic malaria, of course, is due to insufficient treatment of the acute disease by quinine.

Malarial Relapses.—The cure of an attack of malaria, unfortunately, does not end the disease, for relapses are the rule and not the exception; in fact, using an expression of Mannaberg's, 'Malaria is one of those infectious diseases in which a relapse may be considered as an essential feature.' The reason is that the parasites are not all killed off by the quinine. There are two different types of relapses: the first, after a short interval, may be called the true relapse; the second, after a longer interval, may be called the recurrence. Relapses and recurrences are probably caused by parasites belonging to the cycle of schizogony, and by the parthenogenesis of the macrogametocyte, which belongs to the cycle of sporogony.

Relapses of quartan fevers take place at irregular intervals, and the suggestion that they are most usual at about the twentieth day is not correct. Tertian fevers relapse most commonly from the fifth to the eighteenth day, and subtertian about the end of a week after the original attack, but these times are extremely variable. These relapses are historically interesting, as they probably represent the quintans, sextans, septans, octans, nonans, etc., of ancient authors.

Recurrences take place after long intervals without fever and without reinfection. Exactly how long the parasites can lie dormant in the human body and then wake to activity and cause fever is not known. Intervals of two and three years are readily credited nowadays, but it is in our experience certain that the length of time may be much longer.

Parasites can certainly be found in the blood of persons long after they have left the tropics; thus, Ross mentions that they were found in a case in Liverpool four years after absence from any malarious locality, and also states that his own father suffered from attacks once or twice a year, even after nine years' residence in England.

It is probable, then, that the old idea that the malarial parasite can exist or lie dormant for years in the system, and awake to renewed activity when given a suitable opportunity, is true. During the apyrexial intervals it must, of course, be going through a cycle of schizogony, but not in sufficient numbers to cause disease. These parasites will increase rapidly, and cause fever when the general vitality of the body is lowered by any of the predisposing causes, already mentioned, but especially by a chill, coming into action.

Malarial Reinfections.—In tropical countries where there are plenty of Anophelines and many inhabitants, European and native, adults and children, with numerous gametocytes in their blood, reinfections are found to be common. Many cases of apparent

recurrence in these countries must be reinfections, which, of course, may be with the same or a different species of parasite from that causing the first fever. Repeated infections are the great cause of the quotidian and irregular fevers of the tropics.

Latent Malaria.—This term is employed to denote cases in which, without any sign of illness, malarial parasites can be found in the blood in small numbers. Craig states that out of 1,267 cases in which malarial parasites were demonstrated in the blood, 21 per cent. were latent, and the majority of these were found to be caused by the subtertian parasite.

Masked Malaria.—Malaria is capable of being masked or concealed by some concurrent disease—e.g., dysentery or phthisis. The same term, '*masked malaria*,' is used when the symptoms indicate some other illness, while a blood examination shows that the real cause of the disease is malaria. Thus, after an accident, the symptoms may point to cerebral abscess, but, on examination of the blood and the discovery of the parasites, followed by treatment with quinine, the urgent symptoms disappear. Masked malaria is generally caused by the subtertian parasite. The more important forms of masked malaria are neuralgias, particularly of the trigeminal, and especially of its frontal branch, paralyzes and chronic diarrhœa, and also, according to Craig, pneumonia. These conditions emphasize the importance of systematic blood examination in all cases of disease of the tropics. Under the heading '*Masked Malaria*' must come cases of '*Malarial Pseudo-Addison's Disease*,' in which patients who have been suffering for years from malarial infections, with or without severe attacks of fever, develop diffuse or patchy pigmentations, with severe asthenia, wasting, and diarrhœa, with or without blood in the motions. The spleen is not enlarged, and parasites are seldom found in the peripheral blood, though at times leucocytes containing hæmozoin may occur.

These conditions are due to the localization of the parasites in the supra-renal capsules.

Congenital Malaria.—The question of congenital malaria has been much debated, but Dumolard and Viallet have recorded a case in which a woman suffering from malaria gave birth to a child, in which blood from the umbilical cord during life and from the heart after death contained malarial parasites identical with those in the maternal blood and placenta.

Complications.—Many other diseases may occur in the human body at the same time as an attack of malaria, but of all, the most important are typhoid, dysentery, pneumonia, and nephritis.

Typhoid, as a complication, is, of course, due to the *Bacillus typhosus* occurring in a person who is also infected by malarial parasites, and in that sense, therefore, the old term '*typho-malaria*' is correct.

Dysentery may be a complication due to the *Löshia tetragena*

or to the dysenteric bacilli, but it may also be directly caused by the malarial parasite alone.

As to whether there is or is not a malarial pneumonia is a vexed question ; personally, we are of the opinion that a severe subtertian fever may produce symptoms resembling a pneumonia, but that true lobar pneumonia, when present in a malarial subject, is due to the pneumococcus, and is therefore a complication.

Nephritis may be found in tertian and subtertian fevers, being directly due to the irritation of the kidney by the malarial toxins.

Sequelæ.—The possible sequelæ of malaria are very numerous, and may be classified into those belonging to the nervous system and sense organs, the blood, the liver, and the spleen.

The subtertian parasite may leave severe traces of its action upon the brain after pernicious attacks, and, indeed, the mind may never regain its old condition. Apart from the milder alterations of disposition and character, actual *insanity* in the form of mania or melancholia may result.

Neuritis in some form is sometimes of malarial origin, but it is quite possible that alcoholic and arsenical poisoning, and, indeed, beri-beri, may have been confused with it. We have seen cases of polyneuritis of malarial origin, but the condition is rare. *Neuralgias* have already been mentioned, and are probably in some cases due to the direct influence of the malarial toxins. *Tinnitus aurium*, *vertigo*, *deafness*, *anosmia*, and *loss of taste*, are said in some cases to be malarial in origin.

Severe and long-continued *anæmia* may result as a consequence of malaria caused by the subtertian, and much more rarely by the other parasites. The classification and characters of these anæmias have already been given in the section on Pathology, to which reference should be made (p. 867).

Cirrhosis of the liver of malarial origin is, in our experience, much less frequent than admitted by many writers. *Cirrhosis* of the liver is common in the tropics, and in certain cases is due to alcohol ; but one of the writers has pointed out that, at all events in Ceylon, a polyfibrosis of liver, pancreas, and kidney can be met with which has no malarial origin.

The *enlargement of the spleen* has already been described, and rupture as the result of blows or injuries is by no means unknown, though not common, and requires prompt surgical attention. We have only come across one case in our experience.

Diagnosis.—A positive diagnosis may be made if—(1) the fever shows the typical quartan and tertian periodicity, but a quotidian periodicity has no diagnostic value, as it may be found in many other fevers ; (2) parasites are found in the peripheral blood ; (3) hæmozoin is recognized in the mononuclear leucocytes. Malaria cannot, however, be eliminated from the diagnosis when all three are absent. Splenic puncture, and the subsequent examination of the blood obtained in this way, would help considerably, but is not

devoid of risk. A marked mononuclear increase may arouse suspicions, but by itself is quite useless.

It is generally stated that a fever which within four days is not influenced by quinine in full doses is not malaria. This is correct as regards malarial fevers due to tertian and quartan parasites, but not always as regards those caused by the subtertian parasite. We have met with cases in which the fever has remained unaffected while the parasite can be found in the peripheral blood, notwithstanding several weeks' quinine-therapy by various methods.

In malarial cachexia James has pointed out that the microscopical is inferior to the clinical examination, drawing attention to the fact that a four-hourly temperature-chart carefully kept during one of the febrile attacks will often show the typical curve of subtertian fever. In such difficult cases the clinical signs, together with the reaction of the disease to quinine, must be utilized.

In latent malaria the frequent increase of the urobilin in the urine may be of some slight help in the diagnosis, as pointed out by Plehn, together with indefinite periodical rheumatoid pains.

The differential diagnosis of the various forms of malarial fever should be confirmed, no matter how evident the clinical symptoms may be, by microscopical examination.

The most important diseases to differentiate from malaria are typhoid, insolation, liver abscess, kala-azar, Malta fever, influenza, yellow fever, dengue, and seven-days' fever. For the differential diagnosis see the chapters on these fevers.

The pernicious forms of malaria, in whatever way they attack the patient, will in most cases be readily diagnosed by blood examination, as will also the masked form of the disease.

Fevers due to septicæmia caused by a streptococcus, the pneumococcus, and the gonococcus, may resemble malaria, but can be excluded by blood examination, as can influenza when it gives rise to an intermittent type of fever.

Prognosis.—The principal factors upon which a prognosis can be made are climate, race, age, sex, species of the parasite, type of the fever, presence or absence of complications, duration of the symptoms, and idiosyncrasy against quinine.

With regard to climate, the prognosis will be worse for warm climates, and in low-lying places with high air-temperatures.

As regards race, the resident of the Temperate Zone not having acquired the disease in childhood, on becoming infected in the Tropics has not so good a prognosis as a member of a native race. Elderly and feeble persons or young children have also a worse outlook, and pregnancy may complicate the disease with abortion.

Tertian and quartan parasites afford a better prognosis than subtertian, in which case the patient is decidedly in greater danger.

Simple quartans and tertians give the best prognosis; quotidian fevers are more serious, subtertian fevers still worse, and pernicious symptoms most grave.

Complications increase the gravity of the case, especially typhoid and gastro-intestinal disturbances.

The prognosis is bad if the symptoms have gone on for some time without treatment or without apparent improvement, notwithstanding quinine-therapy.

If a person is definitely unable to stand the usual doses of quinine, he should not be allowed to live in the Tropics, as the prognosis in a case of subtertian malaria must be very serious.

The mortality among natives is usually low, but among Europeans in Tropical Africa it is high.

With regard to statistics, there are great errors in the diagnosis—kala-azar, agchylostomiasis, and typhoid being frequently grouped together under the heading 'Malaria.'

There can, however, be no doubt that malaria causes the greatest amount of sickness in all tropical countries, and may in certain localities be largely responsible for the death-rate, while in others it may not contribute nearly so largely.

Treatment.—The aim of the treatment of malaria is to kill the parasites, and to aid the excretion of the toxins and relieve the symptoms of the patient.

Fortunately, since the days of the Countess del Chinchon, the world has known the value of cinchona bark in malaria, and later it learnt that this important action was due to an alkaloid, quinine, which exists in the bark in the form of a hydrate. In 1867 Binz showed that quinine killed infusoria, and he believed that this action was due to its checking oxidation.

Quinine is usually sold in the form of the sulphate, $[(C_{20}H_{24}N_2O_2)_2 \cdot H_2SO_4]_2 \cdot 15H_2O$, which is only soluble 1 in 800 of cold water, but is readily soluble in water acidulated with a mineral acid. The solution gives a bluish fluorescence.

It must be remembered, however, that it may not be pure, and may contain lime, chalk, magnesia, starch, etc. It is also important to remember that it is incompatible with alkali, alkaline carbonates, and astringent infusions.

Quinine sulphate is by no means the best preparation, for the hydrochloride, $(C_{20}H_{24}N_2O_2) \cdot HCl \cdot 2H_2O$, is soluble 1 in 40 of water; but better than this are the acid salts of the sulphate, called the 'bisulphate,' $(C_{20}H_{24}N_2O_2)H_2SO_4 \cdot 7H_2O$, which is soluble 1 in 11 parts of water, and of the hydrochloride, called the 'bihydrochloride,' $(C_{20}H_{24}N_2O_2)2HCl$, which is soluble 1 in 1 of water. Numerous other preparations are on the market, of which quinine bihydrobromide is recommended in persons who suffer from deafness, and quinine valerianate in those who are very nervous; while quinine tannate, which is not nearly so bitter as the other compounds, especially when made up with chocolate, has been used by Celli in quinine prophylaxis for children and in cases of hæmoglobinuria.

Euquinine, which is quinine ethylcarbonate, $C_2H_5O - CO - OC_{20}H_{23}N_2O$, is also not so bitter as the ordinary preparations,

and is therefore suitable for administration to women and children, but it has the disadvantage of being expensive and very insoluble in water, and must be given in cachets or dissolved in acidulated water. It has not such deleterious effects on the stomach and nervous system.

Another remedy which contains quinine sulphate, and which was much vaunted in days gone by, is Warburg's tincture, which is said to be prepared by macerating for seven days the following ingredients—

	Grains.
Aloes socotrinæ	240
Rhei	80
Fructi archangelicæ officinalis	80
Radicis inulæ helenii	40
Croci	40
Fructi fœnicali	40
Cretæ preparatæ	40
Radicis gentianæ	20
Radicis curcumæ zedoariæ	20
Cubebæ	20
Myrrhæ	20
Polypori officinalis	20
Opii	2½
Piperis nigræ	4
Cinnamomis	8
Zingiberis	8

in a pint of 60 per cent. alcohol for a week; then pressing, filtering, and dissolving in the filtrate—

	Grains.
Quininæ sulphatis	175
Camphoris	20

and after three days' filtering, making up to the pint with alcohol. The dose of this mixture is 1 to 4 drachms.

Other preparations can hardly be said to have any particular interest.

In order, however, to bring these various preparations into line with one another, it is necessary to have some arbitrary standard, and this is generally taken as quinine sulphate, which is reckoned as equal to 1. The hydrochloride will then be 0.9, the bisulphate 1.24, the bihydrochloride 1.02, the bihydrobromide 1.23, the valerianate 1.01, the tannate 3.67, euquinine 1.0, and Warburg's tincture 1.09.

EFFECTS ON MAN.—When taken by the mouth, quinine should be dissolved in the acid gastric juice, converted into the bihydrochloride, and absorbed completely into the blood from the stomach, especially if food is taken at the same time. If this does not happen, then such a salt as the sulphate may not be absorbed at all, as it will be precipitated in the alkaline intestinal contents. When given in large or frequent doses, it is apt to irritate the stomach. As to what happens to it in the blood, there are two distinct views—one pointing to rapid elimination, and the other to the fact that it undergoes changes in the tissues. It would appear to be retained longer in the body if absorbed together with food.

It can also be administered by intramuscular injections, when it is said to be largely precipitated at the site of the injection. We have no knowledge personally of this precipitation, and our experience is that intramuscular injections have been most satisfactory, though it must be admitted that there are observers who think that administration *per os* is more valuable than that by intramuscular injections. It may also be given intravenously, as will be explained later.

Quinine in small doses is a vascular tonic, but in large doses it is a cardiac depressant, producing a fall in the arterial pressure, with decrease in the pulse-rate and strength. This is an important matter, to be remembered in administering the drug to the old and the feeble, especially by intravenous or intramuscular injections. On the nervous system it acts as a stimulant, and also increases the flow of blood to the brain. In the tissues it is partly destroyed by oxidation, and therefore the whole quantity administered is hardly likely to be obtained in the urine. Excretion takes place by the kidney almost entirely in the form of quinine dihydroxyl. It can be recovered from urine by acidulating with sulphuric acid, treating with solid picric acid, filtering until clear, digesting with 3 per cent. caustic soda solution, and extracting with chloroform, from which the quinine can be obtained by evaporation.

When given in large doses, the cerebral congestion which it produces causes buzzing in the ears, deafness, due to congestion of the middle ear, and headache, both of which can be treated by bromides, with or without a little ergot. It may also cause erythematous, erythemato-papular, vesicular, and urticarial eruptions.

Quinine Hæmoglobinuria.—In persons who have suffered from malaria there is no doubt that quinine can cause hæmoglobinuria, but the way in which it acts is doubtful. Stephens believes that the hæmoglobinuria stands in no relationship to the dose of quinine, and, further, that a second dose may not produce the result, and that it is the blood condition of the malarial patient which is the determining factor. Our experience has tended to show that there is a direct relationship between the quinine and the hæmoglobinuria. Quinine acts in this way by causing hæmolysis of the red corpuscles. Stephens and Christophers found that 0.001 to 0.00082 gramme of quinine hæmolyzed 1 c.c. of a suspension of normal human red cells at 37° C. The hæmolytic action naturally increases the quantity of bile produced. This deleterious action can be prevented by giving calcium chloride or calcium lactate, which increases the resistance of the red cells to hæmolysis. For further remarks on this subject, see the next chapter, on Tropical Hæmoglobinurias.

Amblyopia.—Amblyopia may result as the effect of large doses of quinine, and appears to be due to constriction of the retinal arteries in temporary cases, and to degeneration of the retinal ganglion cells and their processes in permanent cases.

Action on the Uterus.—Quinine appears to act upon the uterus, and may therefore produce an unpleasant effect in pregnancy,

though whether this is really due to the quinine or to the malaria, or to the two combined, is doubtful.

EFFECT UPON MALARIAL PARASITES.—Quinine appears to particularly affect the merozoites, trophozoites, and schizonts, and to act much less vigorously, if at all, upon the gametocytes.

It appears to act most vigorously upon the merozoites, perhaps because they are free in the plasma; next upon the young trophozoites, whose cytoplasm is broken up, and finally it and the nucleus destroyed; but it has no such powerful effect upon the fully-grown schizont, and will not prevent sporulation.

With regard to the gametocytes, it probably has a deleterious action upon the young forms, but certainly not upon the fully-grown micro- and macrogametocytes. It is thought probable that it may act upon the very old form of microgametocyte, but this cannot take place, as a rule, with regard to the ordinary fully-grown microgametocyte, for Anophelines can be infected by the blood of persons containing the two kinds of gametocytes even when treated vigorously with quinine. On the macrogametocyte, particularly that of *Laverania malariae*, it appears to have no action. Hence to get the full effect of quinine on the parasites it must be present in the blood at the time of sporulation, in order that it may kill the merozoites, young sporonts, and schizonts. In order to produce this effect, it is judged that the quinine must be present in the blood in a strength of at least 1 in 20,000. According to Thomson, though quinine has no direct destructive action upon the crescents, it reduces their numbers to less than one per cubic millimetre of blood if given daily in doses of 20 to 30 grains for three weeks; this action is believed to be due to cutting off the source of supply by killing the asexual forms. Methylene blue in doses of 12 grains daily is said by Thomson to reduce the number of crescents, probably by some direct destructive action. Quinine-resisting forms of the parasite have often been reported from South America, and have recently been studied by Ross and Thomson, who have found a true parasitic relapse during thorough quinine treatment. In these cases the quinine dosage must be increased. We have administered 2 grammes by intramuscular injection and one by the mouth as a single dose in such a case with very beneficial results.

TIME OF ADMINISTRATION.—From the above it will be obvious that the best time to give quinine to a healthy person for purposes of prophylaxis, or to a convalescent for purposes of effecting a cure, will be at meal-times, and preferably directly at the end of the meal, so that it can enter the blood with the products of digestion, and so obtain its fullest action. It has been our rule in most cases to advise that it should be taken directly after the early morning meal.

The hæmolytic action of quinine must be remembered, and the fact that it may by this action give the liver more work by extra bile production. Consequently, it is most necessary to remind the

above class of patients to take care that the bowels are open regularly, and to correct by suitable aperients any irregularity that may exist.

With regard to mild quartan and tertian fevers, there is not the slightest doubt that excellent effects are obtained by giving the drug four hours before the attack—*i.e.*, before the sporulation of the parasite is due. In this way the merozoites are most likely to be killed. This may be modified by giving the drug twice daily, one dose of 10 grains by the mouth in the morning, and the other dose of 10 grains at the above-stated time. This method we have found most useful, as it allows for irregularity in sporulation.

In many cases, however, we give the drug three times a day, without regard to the conditions of parasitic life, and this method is apparently not less successful.

In more severe forms of quartan and tertian, and in cases of subtertian fever in which the patient is seen for the first time during the attack, the drug should be given intramuscularly or by the mouth, when it may be administered on the fall of the temperature, when the gastric irritation is lessening, and then continued by one of the above methods.

In cases of serious and of pernicious attacks, time must not be wasted in waiting for temperatures to fall or for symptoms to improve, otherwise the patient will die, and there must be no hesitation in giving either an intramuscular or an intravenous injection, according to the severity of the symptoms.

METHOD OF ADMINISTRATION.—For practical purposes there are only four methods of administration :—

1. By the mouth.
2. By the rectum.
3. By intramuscular injections.
4. By intravenous injections.

By the Mouth.—If expense is no object, take the most soluble drug that can be got, and use either the bihydrochloride or the bisulphate; otherwise the sulphate must be used. In cases of women or children, euquinine may be used with advantage, but it should be remembered that it is very insoluble and expensive.

The forms in which the chosen drug may be administered are :—

1. Powder.
2. Solution.
3. Tabloid, tablet, or pill.
4. Cachet or capsule.

It is presumed that no doctor would allow his patient to take quinine in a cigarette-paper, though non-medical people are found who have got into the habit of using this method.

As regards the powder, it is an efficient method of administering the drug to the healthy, if given directly after a meal, but the taste is most unpleasant. It is certainly the cheapest method.

The acid preparations—for example, the bihydrochloride and bisulphate—may be dissolved in water, but should have some flavouring added to disguise the taste, while the sulphate requires an acid, which may be provided by suspending some of the powder in natural limejuice; but in order to dissolve the sulphate properly a mineral acid should be used, in the strength of 1 minim to each grain, but more than this will be required if the unpleasant after-taste is to be avoided.

In hospitals the sulphate must be used, as it is cheap and effective, but it is as well to have it periodically reported upon by an analyst, in order to see what is really being given to the patients. For hospital use it may be dissolved in dilute sulphuric acid, and have some cheap form of flavouring added.

We have used Warburg's tincture on the West Coast of Africa with apparent success in cases of chronic subtertian infection, which resist the ordinary methods of administering quinine, but care is required, as it has a depressing effect upon the heart in these cases.

Tabloids, tablets, and pills are pleasant methods of taking quinine for prophylaxis, convalescence, and mild attacks. Moreover, they are extremely useful for journeys, being readily carried, but in order to be successful they must not be old and hard. The hydrochloride or bisulphate should be used and the solubility tested from time to time in water, otherwise the tabloid must be reduced to powder and taken as indicated above.

Pills and capsules are quite good when fresh, but they are apt to get hard when old, and are then useless, and must be opened and the powder used, if they form the only supply available.

The quinine tannate chocolates are, of course, only used for prophylaxis in children.

By the Rectum.—This method may be useful in gastric disturbance, but is not to be compared with the intramuscular. Twenty grains of the bihydrochloride are made into a solution in water, and then mixed with an ounce of mucilage of starch solution, and used as an injection. It is advisable to add a few drops of tincture of opium.

Intramuscular Injections.—We are not in favour of hypodermic injections of quinine—*i.e.*, of injections simply under the skin—but strongly recommend intramuscular injections in all cases of malarial fever in which there is gastric disturbance, where, for any reason, the quinine is apparently failing to act, when the disease is becoming chronic, or in serious subtertian infections. For this purpose the bihydrochloride should be dissolved in normal (0.75 per cent.) saline solution, and carefully sterilized. Baccelli's formula is 10 grammes of quinine and 0.075 gramme ($1\frac{1}{8}$ grain) of salt dissolved in 10 grammes ($2\frac{1}{2}$ drachms) of water, one-tenth of which is used for an injection; but the greatest care must be taken that this solution is properly sterile. A good formula for a solution which does not cause pain is Gaglio's or Giemsa's: Quinine hydro-

chloride, 10 grammes; aquæ destillatæ, 18 grammes; ethylurethane, 5 grammes, of which one-twenty-fifth portion is used for an injection (1.5 c.c. of the solution contains 0.5 gramme of quinine).

If, however, the solution is to be prepared and sterilized while the patient is waiting for treatment, much time is lost. We therefore recommend the tropical practitioner to purchase and keep by him the sterilettes, which are little hermetically sealed vials, containing either a gramme (15 grains) or half a gramme ($7\frac{1}{2}$ grains) of quinine in solution. These sterilettes may be purchased from Squire and Sons, or Martindale, of London; Nachfl, of Berlin; or Molteni, of Florence. Giemsa's solution may be obtained in similar sterile vials from L. Bartels, Hamburg.

The technique is simple: First cleanse the skin of the patient carefully with 1 in 40 carbolic lotion; then break off the glass seal of the vial at the nick in the neck, and pass the open mouth of the vial through a flame; then draw up the contained fluid into a sterilized all-glass syringe provided with a platinum iridium needle. Plunge the hypodermic needle deeply into the deltoid or gluteus maximus, and make the injection. Withdraw the needle, and place a little pad of wool, wrung out in 1 in 40 carbolic lotion, on the site of the injection. Performed carefully in the above manner, there need be no fear of tetanus or abscess formation, and the injection can be repeated at will. If necessary, a stimulant or an injection of ether may be given in the old and feeble before this intramuscular injection. After repeated injections of quinine, even if administered antiseptically, hard swellings may appear at the seat of the injections. In such cases the hypodermics should be stopped for a few days, and an ice-bag may be applied to the painful part.

Notwithstanding the objections to this method brought forward recently by some authorities, we still strongly recommend it, as we have found it to be most successful in intractable cases, and have never so far seen any untoward symptoms. We advise that the hypodermic syringe and needle should be sterilized by rinsing with 1 in 20 carbolic acid after boiling, as the carbolic acid does not interfere with the action of the quinine, and has an unfavourable influence upon any tetanus spores which may by any chance be present. Care should be taken that not too much carbolic lotion is left in the syringe and needle; otherwise a precipitate will form.

Intravenous Injection.—In cases of pernicious infection with subtertian parasites, no delay should be made in giving the patient an intravenous injection, but the effect of quinine on the circulation must be remembered, and if the pulse is bad, it is advisable to give a hypodermic injection of ether as a preliminary. The same vials and apparatus should be used in the intravenous as in the intramuscular injection.

The injection should be made into the median basilic or median cephalic veins, and not less than 1 gramme (15 grains) should be injected at a time. The skin over the selected vein should be rendered thoroughly aseptic by soap and water and carbolic lotion, and then a bandage tied round the arm, so as to retard the flow of venous blood and make the selected vein stand out. Then the

needle should be inserted into the vein (care being taken that there is no air in needle or syringe) in a sloping direction, with the point towards the heart, so that the injection can flow with the circulation. The point of the needle should be felt to be loose (*i.e.*, in the vein). The bandage must now be loosened and the injection made *slowly*, the effect on the pulse being noted. The needle is now withdrawn, and an aseptic pad fixed in position by a bandage.

DOSE.—To adults we generally give three times a day by the mouth 5 to 10 grains of the ordinary preparations (sulphate, hydrochloride, etc.). The routine treatment in the Ceylon clinic and hospitals is a mixture composed of quinine sulphate, 5 to 10 grains; dilute sulphuric acid, 5 to 10 minims; syrup of orange, 1 drachm; distilled water, 1 ounce. We give euquinine in slightly larger doses, though there is no danger in administering large doses.

By intramuscular or intravenous injections we give 10 to 15 grains, by the rectum 30 grains; but when given by the last method, some tincture of opium should be added, to prevent irritation, which otherwise is liable to occur. Five or ten grains of potassium bromide added to each dose of quinine will, to a certain extent, prevent tinnitus aurium. In cases in which the heart is weak a few minims of tincture of digitalis should be prescribed.

Children suffering from malaria stand quinine well, and the minute doses advised in so many treatises on the diseases of children are, in our experience, utterly inadequate in the tropics. Infants under one year of age may receive from $\frac{1}{2}$ grain to $1\frac{1}{2}$ grains six times a day; children between one and three years of age from 1 grain to 2 grains six times a day, and those between three and ten years 2 to 3 grains six times a day.

Nocht has advised the administration of quinine in small repeated doses of $2\frac{1}{2}$ grains five times a day. This method is useful when there is a tendency to hæmoglobinuria and in pregnant women in whom the administration of full doses may induce abortion; but this action has been greatly exaggerated, many cases ascribed to quinine being due to some other cause. We have often given 15 grains of quinine daily to pregnant women, but divided into small doses of 2 to 3 grains (Nocht's method), and in severe cases have pushed the drug without bad effects. The addition of a little opium may prevent bad effects.

DURATION OF TREATMENT.—When the fever has subsided and the patient is feeling better, the administration of quinine must not be discontinued, because there is the fear of a relapse, caused by parasites which have not yet been destroyed, and which may be living in the spleen; or, again, there is the fear of the parthenogenesis of the macrogametocyte. In order that the treatment may be successful, the quinine must be continued for a long time. Our routine practice has been to continue with 10 grains in the morning and 10 grains in the evening for a week after the cessation of the fever, 5 grains in the morning and 5 grains in the evening for about two weeks after, then 5 grains every day, with a double dose once a week, for about three months. In some cases when the fever has ceased it is advisable to associate some iron and arsenic with the

quinine, but these drugs should not be given during the febrile attack.

IMMUNITY OF THE PARASITE.—The immunity of the malarial parasite against quinine has as yet been but little studied, but this is a subject of the greatest importance at the present time, when quinine prophylaxis is being extensively employed. It has, however, been commonly noticed that the doses of quinine have often to be increased in order to cure an attack of fever in the individuals who have taken quinine more or less irregularly, and that persons who have taken quinine regularly when in an endemic area may have an attack of malarial fever after leaving this area and ceasing the drug.

PROPHYLACTIC USE.—This will be discussed in the section on Prophylaxis (p. 903).

New Salts of Quinine. — Dihydroquinine hydrochloride (0.6 gramme = 1.0 gramme quinine hydrochloride) is said to have a specific antimalarial action, but aurochin, chitenin, and tetrahydroquinine are not satisfactory.

OTHER DRUGS.—It is almost a work of supererogation to mention other drugs in the treatment of malaria, such as cuprein, methyl blue, atoxyl, and treatment by the serum of immune animals, and by violet light or in the dark. Methylene blue, however, has been used by several authors in the dose of 2 grains every four hours. In our experience its efficacy cannot be compared to that of quinine.

Surveyor has recommended the administration of 2 grains of picric acid twice or three times a day by the mouth as a method of destruction for the crescents of *L. malariae*. The drug can also be administered by injections of sodium picrate. Nicolle and Conseil and others have tried salvarsan in malaria, with only moderate results. If used, it must be combined with quinine. Recently neosalvarsan has been found to be useless in subtertian fevers, but it and salvarsan act upon *Plasmodium vivax* intravenously or intramuscularly. The dose of neosalvarsan is 1.5 grammes, and that of salvarsan 1.0 gramme.

SYMPTOMATIC TREATMENT OF ACUTE MALARIA.—The practitioner who works in the tropics must often be prepared to do the nursing as well as the medical treatment. When the attack begins, the patient must go to bed, and in the cold stage wrap up well with blankets. At the same time arrangements must be made in case of sickness or diarrhoea. The treatment of this and the warm stage must be to encourage perspiration, by warm lime-drinks, hot tea, etc., in order that the toxins may be passed out as quickly as possible. Ziemann recommends hot-air baths to bring on the perspiration. We have tried this method a few times, but have not been greatly impressed with the advantages.

The headache may be relieved by cold applications, and where there is no ice, dissolve some salt and juice of fresh limes or lemons, together with some vinegar or weak acetic acid and Florida water or eau-de-Cologne in a small basin of water, and, after soaking handkerchiefs in this mixture, apply them one after the other, changing as they get warmed, to the patient's forehead.

A little stimulation of the auricular branch of the pneumogastric by applying some of this cool lotion to the lobule and behind the ear is most refreshing to the patient.

Another method of relieving the headache and pains about the body is to give phenacetin and caffeine. Phenacetin or antipyrin should only be given in small doses (gr. ii.-iiij.), and not to debilitated patients.

When the sweating begins, the patient usually feels much better, but care must be taken to change the damp clothing, and when this stage is drawing to a close a sponge over with tepid water is most refreshing, after which he will probably go to sleep, and wake feeling much better.

TREATMENT OF SYMPTOMS AND SPECIAL CONDITIONS.—Vomiting is often distressing, and can be relieved by sips of iced soda-water or champagne. When there is no ice, cover the bottle with a thin layer of flannel soaked in water, and hang in the breeze. If these simple remedies fail, and the symptom is really urgent, apply a mustard-leaf to the pit of the stomach, or give a mixture containing chloroform or a hypodermic of morphine. If, despite all this treatment, the vomiting still continues, the stomach may be washed out with slightly alkaline water. Hiccough is not often present, and would be a most unpleasant sign. It can be checked by the mustard-leaf, by codein, or by a hypodermic of morphia (gr. $\frac{1}{4}$).

Not infrequently the patient is worried by a sharp, dry cough, which is best treated by codein or morphia in some form, *e.g.*:—

Codeinæ	..	..	..	..	..	gr. $\frac{1}{4}$.
Syrupi toluatanæ	..	..	..	..	..	ʒi.
Aquæ chloroformi	..	..	..	..	..	ad ʒi.

administered every four hours.

Constipation must not be allowed, and should be promptly relieved by a dose of calomel (1 to 3 grains), if necessary, followed by a saline. Ziemann strongly recommends washing out the rectum with warm normal saline solution as a routine practice, but though we have used this in bad cases, we have no experience of it as a routine practice.

Diarrhœa is at first useful in ridding the body of excess of bile and other waste products. Prolonged diarrhœa must be treated with astringents (bismuthi subnitratæ or salol gr. x. every 4 hours). Meanwhile it should be borne in mind that though quinine is absorbed by the stomach, still, with much diarrhœa there is often gastric disturbance, and therefore, if the drug is given by the mouth in these conditions, its utility may be small.

Splenic pain and liver pain are not, as a rule, severe enough to make special treatment needful, but occasionally the splenic pain may be severe (due to perisplenitis), when hot fomentations will relieve it, if it is thought necessary to use them.

Hyperpyrexia must be treated by cold sponging—if possible, with ice; if not, with the mixture mentioned above, or by cold packs, cold baths, and cold enemata.

Algidity requires special treatment with hypodermic saline injections and warm applications to the body, and especially to the region of the heart. The saline injections consist of sterile normal saline solution, and are injected by gravity from the ordinary glass reservoir via a long piece of indiarubber tubing and a stout hollow needle, such as those in the Potain's aspirator-case. The usual sites for the injection are the sides of the chest, just below the armpit, and the outer aspect of the thighs. At least a pint should be injected in one place. Oxygen inhalations, if available, may also be used. Diaphoretic pernicious fever requires stimulants, hypodermics of atropine, and ether or strychnine, and treatment as for algidity.

Hæmorrhagic perniciosa may be treated with calcium chloride, and with local applications or injections of adrenalin. Scarlatina form perniciosa obviously calls for dilution of the toxins by saline injections. In pernicious cases, when the patient becomes delirious or comatose, the practitioner must be careful that the attendants in whose charge he is left are really trustworthy, as unfortunate accidents have been known to happen. Particularly we warn the practitioner to make sure that the bladder has been emptied, especially in delirious patients, not by mere casual inquiry, but by percussion of the abdomen. In choleraic perniciosa the treatment for cholera should be adopted in addition to quinine. In dysenteric perniciosa the treatment must be that suggested for mild dysentery, and, in addition, quinine, while the pseudo-Addison's disease is best treated in our experience by 10 minims of adrenalin, given twice daily in addition to quinine.

DIET.—During the attack the strength must be maintained by light food, such as Brand's essence or chicken-broth, and stimulants, in the form of brandy or champagne, may be required. Milk or whey may also be given, and in cases of stomach irritation albumin water.

During remissions broths and clear soups and milk-puddings should be allowed. In the intermission of a quartan or tertian, and during convalescence, regular meals of good plain food may be given.

TREATMENT OF CONVALESCENCE.—The important point to be remembered in convalescence is to continue the quinine in smaller doses for at least three months after the attack. The patient should be placed on a tonic with iron and arsenic in some form, and if he has been seriously ill he must have a change to a colder climate. The patient must be impressed with the fact that he must not discontinue the quinine on arriving in a cooler climate, as an attack of fever will surely take place if he does so.

TREATMENT OF CHRONIC MALARIA.—If a person is constantly suffering from attacks of malarial fever, he should be sent, whenever possible, for a change to a cooler climate in the hills or to the temperate zone, but should, of course, continue the quinine treatment. If he cannot afford a change of climate, he must be placed in bed

and given rest from work, and a course of quinine therapy by intramuscular injections carried through.

TREATMENT OF MALARIAL CACHEXIA.—The most important feature, in addition to quinine treatment, is to send the malarial cachectic for a change of climate, as mentioned above, and treat the anæmia with iron and arsenic. A course of injections of cacodylate of quinine is often useful.

Prophylaxis.—The very great success which has followed every serious attempt at prophylaxis undertaken during the last few years has made it the urgent duty of each community to scientifically apply a well thought out scheme of a not too expensive nature to its district with the view of reducing the malaria endemic therein.

In order that a disease may be scientifically prevented, a thorough knowledge of its ætiology must be acquired and disseminated not merely among medical men, but also among the public. We know that malaria depends upon—

1. The presence of numerous human beings infected with male and female gametocytes.
2. The presence of numerous Anophelines in which the gametocytes are capable of developing into sporozoites.
3. Free access of these Anophelines to the infected human beings.
4. Air-temperatures suitable for the development of the malarial parasite in man and Anophelines.
5. Free access of infected Anophelines to non-immune human beings.

To summarize, there are three factors : (1) Man ; (2) the Anopheline ; (3) the air-temperature.

In the tropics this third factor is in favour of malaria, and it cannot be altered ; therefore methods of prophylaxis must be devoted to the human being and the Anopheline.

MAN.—The preliminary step with regard to man is to ask his intelligent assistance, and for this purpose education with regard to disease in general and malaria in particular is required. First of all it was necessary to bring the medical profession into touch with the discoveries made by Manson, Ross, and Grassi, and this has been done. Secondly, it was and is necessary, by lantern lectures, illustrated pamphlets, etc., to convince the educated public of the tropics of the monetary loss caused to the Government, the planter, the merchant—*i.e.*, to the employer of labour—by malaria. Unless this can be done, the money necessary for the effective prophylaxis will not be forthcoming. No one will deny that malaria is the greatest cause of sickness in the tropics, though there may be places where its mortality is low and places where it is high ; but that which people fail to recognize is the financial loss caused by this sickness.

Therefore we quote the well-known example of the Adriatic Railway Company, which, according to Ricchi, used to spend on

account of malaria among 6,416 workmen living in malarious areas no less than 1,050,000 francs per annum.

But a serious attempt should be made to impress the uneducated masses of the tropics with some sort of knowledge about the disease. This can best be done by simple kindergarten-like instruction, with demonstration of actual living specimens of *Anopheles* and their eggs, larvæ, and pupæ, together with the presence of a young child with a huge spleen and of a person suffering from malarial cachexia, and then at the close of the lecture, to distribute illustrative pamphlets in the vernacular, written in simple language, reviewing the subject of the lecture, together with, if possible, the demonstration of the larvæ in a neighbouring stream or pool.

This attempt to instruct the lower classes of the tropics may not be productive of much immediate good, but it may bring home to them that malaria is a potent factor in causing illness and death among their infants and young children, and that it is caused by the bite of a particular kind of insect, and can be to a great extent prevented by proper treatment with quinine.

Another method employed is to give the teachers of the elementary vernacular schools a course of instruction in elementary hygiene, including, of course, malaria, so that they may be able to give their pupils elementary instruction in these matters.

In such instruction no pamphlet or book should be used, otherwise there is a danger of the knowledge being acquired by rote. The only way, however, to bring about any result by this method is to award a special grant to the school, based upon the knowledge of the scholars.

All these methods have actually been and are being carried out, but in any case they are only preliminaries, and any good which may result therefrom will not be immediate.

Another preliminary matter is to use the knowledge acquired concerning the life-history of the *Anophelines*, and not to build houses, coolie-lines, etc., in ravines and valleys, or on the margin of water likely to be a breeding-ground for these insects. Place the buildings on high ground, and, bearing in mind the fact that native children harbour gametocytes, build the better-class houses away from the lower-class native town or village.

Quinine.—Leaving now these preliminaries, we come to the actual question of prophylaxis by reducing the malaria in man by quinine administration, as recommended by Koch, Celli, Plehn, Lustig, Negri, and others.

Koch's method consists in taking a large dose (15 grains) of quinine on two consecutive days every eight or ten days for three months, while Celli's method consists in taking about 6 grains (0.40 gramme) of quinine daily; Plehn's, in taking 8 grains of quinine every fourth day. Our own method is to give 5 grains daily, and, in addition, a double dose (10 grains) once a week; and in order to enable the patient to remember the routine, we advise him to take the double dose on a Sunday. For children 1 grain of quinine may

be given for every three years of age, or euquinine may be used with advantage in doses of 2 to 5 grains daily. It is not very bitter, and may be given with a little sweetened condensed milk, as advised by Watson, or chocolates of tannate of quinine (2 to 5 grains), as advised by Celli, may be administered.

All these methods, if properly carried out, give good results, but it must be remembered that unpleasant symptoms may arise after a long use of quinine, of which the most frequent in our experience is a tremor of the hands; but various other nervous symptoms may appear—*e.g.*, irritability.

The advantages of quinine prophylaxis are, however, in excess of its disadvantages, and we strongly recommend its use. In Italy special laws have been passed, due to the efforts of Celli, which render quinine prophylaxis practicable among the poorer classes. The quinine is manufactured by the State and distributed gratis to the poor, while employers of labour are compelled to supply it to their work-people. Governments, municipalities, etc., can also help in this way by giving free quinine to the populace.

The systematic free distribution of quinine powders, tinted if necessary, and enclosed in papers, with a vernacular label informing the recipient that there is no charge, is also useful among the native population, as is the distribution of quinine to children in the schools by the teachers. It is, however, necessary to see that the quinine is actually taken. The distribution must be carried out by itinerary dispensers, for the native will not travel far to obtain quinine.

By this method Koch freed Stephansort, in New Guinea, from malaria, but there is a doubt as to whether the disease will not recur if this method alone is used. It must be remembered that free quinine distribution on a large scale is very costly.

Bite-Prevention.—The next method is to prevent man from being bitten by Anophelines. This may be effected by the constant and intelligent use of the mosquito-curtain; by rendering the dwelling, or certain portions of it, gnat-proof; or by the application of chemicals which will keep the mosquitoes away.

Firstly, with regard to the mosquito-curtain, the mesh must be suitable—*i.e.*, twenty to twenty-four meshes to the square inch. It should be tightly spread over the bed by means of the mosquito-curtain railings of the bed, and be tucked in under the mattress: on no consideration whatever must it be allowed to hang loosely or to fall on to the ground. It should be in position in the early afternoon, and must be in good repair, for if it is torn it is worse than useless, becoming a mosquito-trap. It must be kept clean, especially at the top, which is apt to accumulate all sorts of queer things from the roof. Never travel into a malarious region without your own net, as the condition of those in rest-houses may be far from good.

Secondly, with regard to gnat-proof rooms or houses, these can be easily constructed at but slight cost by using wire-netting of

twenty to twenty-four meshes to the inch, preferably the latter. Rooms and verandas enclosed in this way are a great convenience, preventing not merely molestation from mosquitoes, but also from other insects.

The Irrigation Department of Ceylon possesses movable mosquito-proof rooms, which its engineers can take with them as their work requires. These are constructed of a wooden framework, supporting the gauze, and have a double door. They are only 12 feet by 12 feet by 8 feet, and can therefore be erected inside the room of a native house if desired, or on a veranda. The cost is small.

Hospital wards ought certainly to be rendered gnat-proof in malarious districts, as persons are often found in the wards with their blood teeming with gametocytes. Hence, if there are any suitable Anophelines in the hospital, the chance of future patients suffering from other diseases becoming infected is considerable.

With regard to coolies, the third method has been tried to a certain extent with success—viz., that of rubbing all over the body an oil composed of $1\frac{1}{2}$ parts of citronella oil, 1 part of kerosene, and 2 parts of cocoanut oil, to which 1 per cent. of carbolic acid is added. Coolies seem to like this mixture, which is called the 'bamber-green oil.'

Electric fans and punkahs are secondary methods of preventing Anophelines from biting human beings.

SULPHUR.—According to some authorities, mosquitoes and flies will not bite persons who take small doses of sulphur regularly.

The Anophelines.—It has already been indicated that it is not necessary to exterminate the Anophelines in order to prevent malaria, but that all that is needful is to reduce their numbers. The objection has been raised to Anopheline destruction that as fast as they are destroyed in a given area others will immigrate into that place from surrounding areas.

Ross has rather aptly answered that objection by pointing out that if the human birth-rate in a place was suppressed without attracting special immigration, the population would soon decrease, and Professor Pearson, on conjectural bases, has shown that if mosquito propagation is suppressed within the circular area of a mile, the mosquito density at the centre will be 3 per cent., a quarter of a mile from the centre 18 per cent., and at the periphery 75 per cent. of the density surrounding that area. A square one mile wide will have a central density of 2 per cent., at a quarter of a mile from the boundary 11 per cent., and at the boundary 50 per cent. of the surrounding density. No experiments have, however, been carried out to determine whether these assumptions are correct.

There is, however, no doubt that Anopheline reduction leads to the reduction of malaria. The work done under Ross's direction at Ismailia proves this, for the cases of malaria were reduced from 1,551 in 1902 to 37 in 1905, and these latter were all relapses. The

cost of this is given as 50,000 francs for drainage and filling up of pools, with a yearly expenditure of 18,300 francs, which worked out at 2·3 francs per head of population.

Travers and Watson at Klang and Port Swettenham, in the Malay States, by similar methods reduced the cases of malaria admitted into the hospitals from 610 in 1901 to 23 in 1905, while the cases from the surrounding district in which no antimalarial methods were employed were 197 in 1901 and 353 in 1905. The children found infected in the two towns in 1905 amounted to 0·5 per cent. of those examined, while in the surrounding district they were more than 23 per cent. The financial saving is also shown by the fact that Government employes in 1901 obtained 236 sick certificates, amounting to 1,026 days' leave, and in 1905 only 4, amounting to 30 days' leave. The cost to the end of 1905 was £10,100, with a yearly expenditure of £410. The cost up to the end of 1905 worked out at £1 4s. per head of the population.

Similar work has been done in Hong Kong by Dr. Thompson.

In Panama, under American rule, the measures taken are very elaborate and systematic, because the sanitarian is given a free hand, and economy is not considered where health is in question, with the result that malaria and yellow fever have disappeared. There can therefore be no doubt that the destruction of *Anopheles* will lead to the diminution of malaria.

The Insect.—The measures which are used may be classified into those directed against the insect and those against the larvæ. With regard to the insects, fumigation with some substance such as sulphur (2 pounds to be burnt for every 1,000 cubic feet of space) or pyrethrum will stupefy them and cause them to fall to the ground, when they can be swept up and burnt. This is useful in dealing with individual houses prior to residing therein. The insects may also be destroyed in houses by the use of the hand-net as advocated by Ross and Gorgas, while the use of a hand-fan is also recommended.

The Larva.—It is, however, against the larvæ that measures are most easily taken, and these include :—

Engineering works—

1. Draining swamps.
2. Draining roads.
3. Filling in hollows.
4. Training streams.
5. Planting trees at intervals, not close together (this is both ornamental and useful), or the thinning down of dense plantations until the trees are at intervals.

6. Segregation either of the whole community, by altering the residences from some very infected area, or partial segregation of a chosen portion of the community from the worse-infected portion.

Sanitary works—

1. Removal of small collections of water.

2. Oiling collections of water with kerosene (crude petroleum) by means of sprays every ten days.

Recently Wise and Minnett have recommended that 1 ounce of crude carbolic acid be added to every 16 cubic feet of water, thus giving a dilution of 1 in 16,000, which they maintain will kill the larvæ without injuring any animal which might happen to drink the water.

3. Screening wells, cisterns, cesspits, etc., with wire gauze.
4. Removal of plants likely to contain water and act as breeding-places (the following may be specially noted : bamboos, pineapple plants, travellers' palms, fibre plants). Water-weeds in streams should also be removed, as the larvæ are often found to be protected by these against their natural enemies. Water-weeds should be removed before oiling.
5. Introduction of fish, especially 'millions,' into collections of water.

It is always easy to find some local fish which will eat larvæ readily. Thus, in Bengal the larvæ-eating fish are : *Haplochilus panchax*, *H. melastigma*, *Ambassis nama*, *A. ranga*, *Anabas scandens*, *Barbus ticto*, and several species of *Trichogaster*. Tadpoles and water-boatmen also eat mosquito larvæ.

6. Growth of weed in water, especially *Lemna*, the duckweed.
7. Attention to the non-stagnation of water in gutters.

Summary.—Every district must be considered separately, and a systematic malarial survey having been made, those methods should be applied which seem most adapted for success. A combination of methods must be better than any one individual method. In any case, a definite scheme should be devised, and thoroughly and continuously carried out. But a word of caution is necessary. Having made the survey and estimated the cost, firstly, leave a good margin for contingencies, and, secondly, insist upon an adequate supply of money being provided ; but it is not necessary to embark upon an expensive scheme, as a great improvement can be effected with but little expenditure. It is, however, important to make a beginning, and to attempt to gain the confidence of the public, as to-day there is no difficulty with the authorities, who are usually very willing to help.

The methods mentioned above may be summarized as follows :—

Reduction of Bites.—Mosquito-net, screening the house, use of fans, use of hand-net, use of protective oils.

Mosquito Reduction.—Insects may be killed by hand-net, by culicids, by natural enemies, or inconvenienced by diminution of dense vegetation.

Larvæ may be attacked by removing, oiling, or screening collections of water, natural or in plants, by introducing fish or beetles into water, or by the engineering works mentioned above.

The smaller methods are usually carried out by gangs of workmen—mosquito brigades—under trained supervisors.

Case Reduction.—By quinine prophylaxis and by segregation.

Relative Values.—The relative merits of protection against mosquitoes and quinine prophylaxis have been investigated by Celli, whose results are embodied in the following table :—

RELATIVE VALUES OF QUININE PROPHYLAXIS AND ANTIMOSQUITO PROTECTION.

Method of Prophylaxis.	None.	Quinine Prophylaxis alone.	Antimosquito Protection alone.	Quinine Prophylaxis plus Antimosquito Protection.
Percentage of infections ..	33%	20%	2.5%	1.75%

REFERENCES.

Only a few references are given here, but they include works in which more detailed lists of publications are published. The most useful general references are 'Atti della Società per gli Studi della Malaria,' and 'Paludism,' which comprises the Transactions of the Committee for the Study of Malaria in India.

General Literature.

- CRAIG (1907). Osler and M'Crae's System of Medicine.
 CRAIG (1909). The Malarial Fevers. London. (A most excellent work.)
 KELSCH AND KIENER (1889). Traité des Maladies des Pays Chauds. Paris.
 MANNABERG (1905). Nothnagel's Encyclopedia of Practical Medicine, with references.
 MANSON (1907). Tropical Diseases, with many references.
 MARCHIAFAVA AND BIGNAMI (1902). La Infezione Malarica. Milan.
 MARCHIAFAVA AND BIGNAMI (1902). Twentieth Century Practice of Medicine, with references.
 ROGERS (1910). Fevers in the Tropics. Second edition. London.
 ROSS, R. (1911). The Prevention of Malaria. Second edition. London. (A standard work of the greatest importance.)
 STEPHENS AND CHRISTOPHERS (1907). Practical Study of Malaria.
 THAYER (1907). Allbutt and Rolleston's System of Medicine, with references.
 ZIEMANN (1906). Mense's Handbuch der Tropenkrankheiten, vol. iii.

Special Literature.

- Atti della Società per gli Studi della Malaria, 1899-1912.
 Memoirs of the Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine, Nos. 1, 2, 3, 6, 9, 10, 14, 20.
 Reports of the Malarial Committee of the Royal Society, 1899.
 Reports of the Advisory Committee for Tropical Diseases. London, 1907.

Special Articles.

- ASCOLI, V. (1910). Policlinico.
 BLASI (1908). Annali d. Med. Navale, vol. i. 1908.
 CASAGRANDE. Annali. d. Ig. Spermatates, xvi. 611.
 CASTELLANI (1904). Ceylon Medical Reports.
 CELLI (1903). La Malaria, Roma.
 CHALMERS (1900). Malaria on the Gold Coast. Lancet.
 CHALMERS (1902). Malaria in Ceylon. London.
 DANIELS (1907). Studies in Laboratory Work. London.
 JAMES (1905). No. 2, Scientific Memoirs. India.
 JAMES (1905). No. 19, Scientific Memoirs. India.

- LAVERAN (1898). *Traité du Paludisme*. Paris.
 LAVERAN (1903). *Prophylaxie du Paludisme*. Paris.
 NEGRI (1909). *La Bonifica Umana*. Paria.
 NUTTALL, CORBETT, AND STRANGWAYS PIGG (1901). *Studies in Relation to Malaria*. *Journal of Hygiene*, vol. i.
 SCHAUDINN (1904). *Malaria in St. Michel di Lene*. *Arb. aus. d. k. Gesundheitsamte*.

Pathology.

- BARKER (1895). *Johns Hopkins Hospital Reports*.
 BIGNAMI (1840-93). *Atti d. Acc. Med. d. Roma*.
 EWING (1901). *American Journal of Medical Sciences*.
 EWING (1902). *Journal of Experimental Medicine*.
 LAFORA (1912). *Journal für Psychologie und Neurologie*. August.

Pernicious Fevers.

- ALBERT (1902). (Tetanic), *Archiv. de Med. et Pharm.* Paris.
 BASSI. (Hæmorrhagic), *Gazz. d. Ost.* Milan.
 BROWNE, M. H. (1905). (Aphasic), *Journal of Royal Army Medical Corps*, p. 648.
 OSLER (1900). (Gangrene), *Johns Hopkins Hosp. Bull.*, xi. 41.
 REGIS (1905). (Psychoses), *Bull. Med.*, p. 615.
 SPILLER (1900). (Disseminated sclerosis), *American Journal Medical Sciences*.
 TORTI, F. (1912). *Therapeutice Specialis Mutinæ*. (The celebrated work on the pernicious fevers.)

Latent Malaria.

- CRAIG (1906). *American Medicine* (1903, 1904, 1905). *Philippine Journal of Science* (1906).
 SCHAUDINN (1903). (Parthogenesis of Macrogamete), *Arb. aus. d. kaise. Gesundheitsamte*. 1903.

Congenital Malaria.

- DUMOLARD AND VIALLET (1909). *Bulletins de la Soc. Med. des Hôpitaux*, p. 229.

Pharmacology and Chemical Physiology of Quinine.

- GIEMSA AND SCHAUMANN (1907). *Beihefte Archiv f. Schiffs- u. Tropen. Hygiene*, No. 3.

Prophylaxis.

- BOYCE (1909). *Mosquito or Man*. London.
 CELLI (1912). *La Diminuzione della Malaria in Italia*.
 HEHIR (1910). *Prophylaxis of Malaria in India*. Allahabad.
 HERRICK (1912). *Journal Royal Army Medical Corps*. London.
 KOCH (1899-1900). *Deutsche Med. Wochenschrift*, pp. 88, 296, 397, 541, 733, 781, 801.
 LUSTIG (1912). *Campagna Antimalarica in Sardegna*. Firenze.
 ROSS, R. (1902). *Mosquito Brigades*.
 ROSS, R. (1905). *Logical Basis of Mosquito Reduction*. *British Medical Journal*, vol. i., 1025.
 ROSS, R. (1908). *Malaria in Mauritius*.
 ROSS, E. H. (1911). *The Reduction of Domestic Mosquitoes*. London.
 SCHILLING (1909). *Tropenhygiene*. Leipzig.
 TRAVERS AND WATSON (1906). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*.
 TREVES (1908). (Preventive Medicine at Panama.) *Proceedings of the Royal Society of Medicine*, vol. i., No. 8.
 WISE AND ANNETT (1912). *Annals Trop. Med., and Parasitology*, vi. 3. Liverpool.

Salvarsan and Neosalvarsan.

- CESTAN, R., AND PUJOL, M. (1912). *Gaz. des Hôpitaux Civ. et Mil.*
 WERNER, H. (1912). *Deutsche Medizinische Wochenschrift*, Oct. Berlin.

CHAPTER XXX

THE TROPICAL HÆMOGLOBINURIAS

General remarks—Malarial hæmoglobinuria—Quinine hæmoglobinuria—Blackwater fever—References.

GENERAL REMARKS.

HÆMOGLOBINURIA, or the presence of more or less altered hæmoglobin in the urine, is found in a number of conditions which may be approximately classified into :—

1. **The Symptomatic Hæmoglobinurias**, which occasionally occur in the course of such diseases as malaria, Raynaud's disease, the acute specific fevers, and after severe burns.

2. **The Toxic Hæmoglobinurias**, which are brought about by the action of a number of drugs, as, for example, quinine and its salts, chlorate of potash, antipyrin, carbolic acid, and naphthol.

3. **The Specific Hæmoglobinurias**, which are specific diseases, such as blackwater fever and paroxysmal hæmoglobinuria.

In the tropics we are concerned with one entity in each of these groups—viz. :

1. Malarial hæmoglobinuria.
2. Quinine hæmoglobinuria.
3. Blackwater fever.

I. MALARIAL HÆMOGLOBINURIA.

Definition.—Malarial hæmoglobinuria is simply a hæmoglobinuria caused by *Laverania malariae* Grassi and Feletti 1890.

History.—This form of hæmoglobinuria has been much confused with quinine hæmoglobinuria and with blackwater fever. It is simply a hæmoglobinuria occurring in the course of pernicious malarial fever.

Ætiology.—The ætiological factor is *L. malariae* Grassi and Feletti 1890, together with some other factor, which inhibits the production of antihæmolysins.

Climatology.—The distribution is coextensive with the distribution of the more severe forms of malaria, and is therefore most evident in the tropics and subtropics.

Pathology.—As has been shown by de Blasi, Brem, and Zeiler, the malarial parasites give rise to a hæmolysin which probably varies in quantity and quality with different strains of parasites, but is kept in check by the action of antihæmolysin, which is formed in the body, but which under certain circumstances—*e.g.*, exposure to the weather, etc.—may fail to be produced in sufficient quantities, and hæmoglobinæmia with hæmoglobinuria may occur. Brem found that three parts of a hæmolysin extract from a case of pernicious malaria completely destroyed (hæmolyzed) one part of a 5 per cent. suspension of erythrocytes in twenty minutes. This hæmolysin is thermolabile. Zeiler and Brem have also demonstrated the presence of antihæmolysin in the serum of normal individuals as well as in that of persons suffering from pernicious malaria. It would therefore appear as though the presence or absence of hæmoglobin in an attack of pernicious malaria depends upon the relationship between the quantity of hæmolysin produced, and the amount of antihæmolysin also produced.

Symptomatology.—The symptoms are those of an attack of pernicious malaria, in which the main feature is the presence of hæmoglobinuria, the other symptoms being high fever, shivering, vomiting, great prostration, and rapid anæmia.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis is to be made by first demonstrating the presence of *L. malarix* in the blood, and then by the rarity of jaundice.

Treatment.—This is the same as for other forms of pernicious malaria (p. 891).

Prophylaxis.—The prophylaxis is the same as for malaria.

2. QUININE HÆMOGLOBINURIA.

Definition.—An acute non-contagious fever caused by the administration of any of the ordinary salts of quinine in certain cases of malarial cachexia and chronic malaria, and characterized by hæmoglobinæmia and hæmoglobinuria.

Remarks.—Sir Patrick Manson has pointed out that an attack of hæmoglobinuria can be produced at will by the ingestion of a single small dose of quinine, and Ketchen has recorded a case of seven consecutive attacks in the same individual in whom each attack was the sequel to a dose of quinine. We have met with similar cases, but our maximum as to attacks of hæmoglobinuria due to quinine is six attacks in one year.

History.—Veratas in Greece, in 1858, was the first to draw attention to this form of fever, and to definitely ascribe the hæmoglobinuria to quinine, and he was followed and supported by Tomaselli, Grocco, and many other Italian and Grecian observers. Later Plehn, Koch, and others, have strongly advocated this theory, but these last observers have applied this one hypothesis for the explanation of all the conditions included under the term 'blackwater fever.'

Climatology.—The attack can take place anywhere for the first time, provided that the individual is suffering from chronic malaria, etc., and the unknown factor or factors to be mentioned below, and has taken the requisite dose of quinine.

Ætiology.—The causation of this condition is the administration of quinine in cases of malarial cachexia and chronic malaria, but this is not the entire ætiology, otherwise the condition would be more commonly met with than at present, and also it is quite safe to administer quinine to the majority of cases of chronic malaria and malarial cachexia without causing hæmoglobinuria. Moreover, the administration of a dose of a salt of calcium prior to the quinine will prevent the hæmoglobinuria, which in the same individual has occurred after such administration.

From one observation which we have made we would throw out the suggestion that one of the other factors in quinine hæmoglobinuria may be the condition of the kidney, and that the site of the hæmolysis may be in that organ.

Pathology.—The pathology of quinine hæmoglobinuria is but little understood, but it has been very ably studied by Barratt and Yorke, who demonstrated the action of quinine in alkaloidal form, and as the bihydrochloride as well as hydrochloric acid and sodium hydrate upon healthy red blood cells, and found that :—

1. All the above-mentioned agents produced hæmolysis.
2. In equimolecular concentration the hæmolytic power is nearly the same.
3. The hæmolysis produced by quinine (alkaloid) resembled a catalytic action, and took place at a monomolecular rate.
4. During life it is not possible to reach a percentage of quinine in the blood sufficient to cause hæmolysis, owing to the toxicity of the drug.

With regard to the action of the quinine, some observers believe that it produces the hæmolysis by lowering the osmotic pressure of the blood plasma.

Morbid Anatomy.—We are not acquainted with any direct observations on this subject, but the appearance of the kidney in people who have died from pernicious malarial fever in which large doses of quinine have been administered without success resembles both macroscopically and to some extent microscopically the kidney seen in blackwater fever.

Symptomatology.—The general symptoms resemble those of an attack of blackwater fever, but are not so severe, and the jaundice is absent.

Diagnosis.—The history of the attack following the administration of quinine in persons suffering from malarial cachexia or chronic malaria may give a clue.

It is suggested that the rate of hæmolysis of the erythrocytes, when treated with quinine, may be compared with that for normal erythrocytes similarly treated. The method adopted to test hæmolysis is to allow 1 c.c. of blood from the pricked finger to fall drop by drop into a 1 per cent. solution of

potassium oxalate, which also contains 0.45 per cent. of sodium chloride, until a proportion of four parts of blood to one part of the oxalate is reached. Then the mixture is added to 10 c.c. of a 0.9 per cent. solution of sodium chloride, and centrifugalized until the red cells are completely precipitated, when the supernatant fluid is pipetted off, and then sufficient 0.9 per cent. solution of sodium chloride is added to make a 2.5 per cent. emulsion of red cells. This emulsion is then placed in a series of test-tubes containing various strengths of an isotonic solution of quinine made up with 0.9 per cent. sodium chloride when necessary. The tubes are incubated for three hours at 37° C., and stirred with a glass rod every fifteen minutes, and the result noted at the end of the time.

Prognosis.—This is usually good.

Treatment.—Quinine administration should be stopped, and calcium lactate administered, and the ordinary treatment for blackwater fever as indicated below should be carried out.

Prophylaxis.—Europeans about to visit or reside in the tropics should be given a test dose of 10 or 15 grains of quinine by the mouth, in order to exclude idiosyncrasy.

3. BLACKWATER FEVER.

Synonyms.—Malarial Hæmoglobinuric fever, Bilious Hæmoglobinuric fever, Bilious Remittent fever, Malignant Bilious fever, Hæmorrhagic Malarial fever, Melanuric fever. *French*: Fièvre Bilieuse Hématurique, Fièvre Bilieuse Hémoglobinurique, Fièvre Bilieuse Grave, Fièvre Bilieuse Mélanurique, Fièvre Jaune des Créoles ou des Acclimatés. *German*: Gallenfieber, Schwarzwasserfieber. *Italian*: Febbre emoglobinurica.

Definition.—Blackwater fever *sensu stricto* is an acute specific fever of unknown causation, characterized by great blood destruction, jaundice, and hæmoglobinuria.

History.—The knowledge of this fever is recent, for it does not appear to have been noted by Torti, the celebrated writer on pernicious fevers, nor by his predecessors, and the first information of its existence appears to have been given by the French naval surgeons Lebeau, Daullé, and Le Roy de Méricourt in 1850-53, who drew attention to the disease in Madagascar and Nossi-Bé, after which it is mentioned as occurring in Senegal, Cayenne, and the Antilles. In 1858 Veratas described its occurrence in Greece, and in 1859 Cummings met with it in America.

The clinical signs were carefully described by Dutroulau in 1858; by Corre in 1861, who showed that the colour of the urine was due to hæmoglobin, and not to bile or blood, as had been thought; by Barthélemy and Benoît in 1865; Bérenger-Féraud in 1874 (in which year Tomaselli first described it in Italy); Pellarin in 1876; and O'Neill in 1882. Kelsch and Kiener in 1889 gave an excellent description, together with a history of the disease up to that date. In 1890 Schilling met with it in Kaiser Wilhelm's Land, and Grocco and Cardarelli in Italy, after which a series of papers by Mahly, Easmon, Eyles, and Papafio appeared on the disease as

seen on the Gold Coast, where it is called 'atridi assara,' which means 'bilious fever.' The name 'blackwater fever,' now universally adopted, was, as far as we know, first used by Easmon.

More recently researches have been made as to its nature and treatment by Koch, Plehn, Crosse, Prout, Stephens, Christophers, Bentley, Barratt, Yorke, Cardamatis, Leishman, Balfour, and others.

Climatology.—The disease occurs most commonly in tropical Africa and in certain localities in India, but it has also been reported from many parts of the tropics.

In Europe it is found in South Italy, Sicily, Sardinia, Greece, and Southern Russia. In Africa it occurs in Algeria, and through the whole of the tropical area of West, Central, and East Africa. In Asia it is well known in India, especially in the Duars, the Terai, Assam, the Jeypore district of Madras, and the Canara district of Bombay. It is also found in China, Cochin China, and Farther India. In America cases have been recorded in the southern regions of the United States, in Central and South America—especially Brazil—and the West Indies. It is not known in Egypt and Ceylon, and there are many other parts of the tropics from which it has not been reported.

Ætiology.—The causation of blackwater fever has been much complicated by the confusion arising from the non-recognition of quinine and malarial hæmoglobinurias, but when these conditions are admitted there is still the serious disease, 'blackwater fever,' to be explained, and its causation appears to us to be some as yet unknown protozoal parasite.

The various theories which have been advanced to explain the ætiology of blackwater fever are:—

1. The malarial fever.
2. The theory of malaria, together with some other factor.
3. Malarial anaphylaxis theory.
4. An unknown agent theory.
5. Balfour's theory.

1. *The Malarial Theory.*—All the old writers on the ætiology of blackwater fever attributed its cause to malaria, in much the same way as they classed most tropical fevers under the same term.

When these fevers came to be differentiated, blackwater fever was assigned to the action of *Laverania malarix*; but of late years cases have occurred in which this parasite has not been found, but only *Plasmodium malarix* or *P. vivax*, because these parasites are very commonly met with in the tropics.

The older writers maintained that blackwater fever existed wherever there was severe malaria, and that it was not found where this was absent, and they instanced Southern Italy, where malaria causes a mortality of 7 to 10 per 1,000, as a region where blackwater fever is common, and compared it with North Italy, where the malarial mortality is only 1 per 1,000, and where blackwater fever is rare. Further, it was pointed out that the people attacked with blackwater fever had always previously suffered from malarial fever, and had generally had several attacks. This view may be said to have been supported by Stephens, who states that the blood of persons examined during the day preceding the hæmoglobinuria contained parasites in 95·6 per cent. of cases, while during the day of the attack these parasites were found in

only 61·9 per cent., and during the day after the attack in only 17·1 per cent. Stephens and Christophers point out that, though they only found malarial parasites in 12·5 per cent. of all their cases, still they found evidence of malarial infection, as exemplified by the presence of pigment in the leucocytes or by an increase in the percentage of the large mononuclear cells in no less than 93·8 per cent. Further, the presence of a hæmolysin in malaria has been demonstrated by de Blasi and others.

The reply to these points is that the geographical distribution of blackwater fever is only known in a very general way, and even this superficial knowledge is against the theory that it is due to malaria. Incidentally, we may mention that no one has attempted, as far as we know, to make a spot-map of a district where there is much blackwater fever, showing as far as possible where the disease was really contracted, and to compare this with a similar map made for the cases of malaria in that district. Nor, as far as we know, has anyone attempted to show whether the epidemiological phenomena of blackwater fever coincide with those of malaria. The West Coast of Africa would appear to be a suitable place for these inquiries.

The malarial theory is disposed of, in our opinion, in that it has many times been recorded as occurring in persons who have never suffered from malaria; indeed, according to Craig, it has occurred in people who have not only never been known to suffer from malaria, but in whom neither before, during, nor after an attack have the parasites been found, and, finally, in whom a post-mortem examination failed to reveal any evidence of malaria. Our opinion is more or less confirmed by the fact that an attack of blackwater fever is uninfluenced by quinine. However, at the present time there are few advocates of the theory that it is simply a malarial infection. Here, perhaps, may be mentioned the fact that Donovan considers that it is malaria, but due to a species of *Laverania* as yet unrecognized.

2. *Malaria, together with some other Factor.*—As malaria by itself has proved rather weak ætiologically, some other factor has been brought in to support it. Thus Corre suggested chills, Béranger-Féraud mercury, and others acute and chronic alcoholism, syphilis, severe muscular exertion, mental excitement, and change of climate; but of all theories, that connecting malaria with quinine has been the most popular.

Malaria and Quinine.—More recently Stephens has supported the theory that the disease is partly of malarial origin, aided by a second factor—viz., quinine.

In his article in Osler's 'System of Medicine,' Stephens sums up his view: 'Blackwater is not a disease *per se*, but rather a condition of blood in which quinine, other drugs, cold, or even exertion, may produce a sudden destruction of red cells. The condition is produced only by malaria, and generally by repeated slight attacks, insufficiently combated by quinine. In such cases of chronic malaria—*i.e.*, in those suffering from anæmia, with repeated attacks of fever and repeated doses of quinine—blackwater fever sooner or later almost certainly supervenes—at least, in tropical climates.'

These statements are too sweeping if genuine blackwater fever is meant, otherwise the home of the disease would be Ceylon, whereas it is so rare that we have never heard of a genuine non-imported case; for in this island there are Europeans and natives with just the conditions required by Stephens, and yet they do not develop blackwater fever, because the only two cases which we have met with or heard of in Ceylon in ten years were most probably cases

of quinine hæmoglobinuria. On the other hand, Stephens's remarks are correct if applied to quinine hæmoglobinuria.

Stephens accounts for the difference between India and Africa as regards the prevalence of blackwater fever by the common malarial parasite being the tertian in India and the subtertian in Africa. Certainly the tertian is very common in Ceylon, though the subtertian is also frequently found. Another point which is difficult to explain is the frequency of the disease in Assam, and the less frequent occurrence in other parts of India where malaria is common.

According to McCay, who has carefully investigated the action of quinine in causing hæmoglobinuria, sulphuric acid and the sulphates cause a decrease in the total inorganic salts of the plasma, which he thinks implies a decrease in its osmotic tension. Water, therefore, passes into the red cells, causing them to swell up, and, if the decrease in osmotic tension of the plasma is sufficient, to burst.

He considers that the causation of blackwater fever is threefold:—

- (1) Injury to the stroma of the red cell by the malarial parasite.
- (2) The action of the malarial hæmolysin.
- (3) The administration of sulphates.

He thinks that, though the first and second causes may bring about the disease, still quinine sulphate or any other sulphate, by its action on the plasma, is the exciting cause if the former are ineffectual. On the other hand, he finds that chlorides cause an increase of the resisting power of the erythrocytes to hæmolysis. Quinine hydrochloride, especially when combined with sodium chloride and dilute hydrochloric acid, causes usually a marked rise in the resistance. Therefore, according to him, it is not the quinine, but the sulphuric acid in the form of quinine sulphate, which produces the hæmolytic action. In addition to sulphates, McCay found that alkaline carbonates, compounds of alkalis with vegetal acids and potassium salts, diminished the inorganic molecules of the plasma, thus tending to help hæmolysis. We have, however, seen hæmoglobinuria following the administration of euquinine, the hydrochloride, and even the tannate of quinine. We have already referred to Barratt and Yorke's experiments on this subject, and need not repeat what we have written above.

Malaria, Quinine, or Depressing Influence.—Deeks and James maintain, from the study of 230 cases of blackwater fever in Panama, that it is a manifestation of malarial toxicity usually induced by repeated attacks, but also appearing coincidentally with an acute attack, and may be determined by any depressing influence or quinine.

This is really a malarial toxicity and other factor theory. In order to produce the requisite conditions, they maintain that there must be a population non-immune to malaria, of which infection there must be a large portion due to *L. malarie*, and malaria must be in such quantity as to produce an almost continuous infection, and this must be associated with a neglect of prompt and continuous administration of quinine, especially in primary attacks.

Against the view that it is caused by malaria treated with insufficient dosage of quinine, followed by a large dose of quinine, we may quote the

fact that we are personally acquainted with a case of malaria associated with depressing influences in which the infection was *L. malarix*, which had remained latent for a considerable period, and which for some weeks was treated by quite inadequate doses taken by the mouth, and after severe fever varying from 104° to 105·8° F., and lasting for two days, 1 gramme of the bihydrochloride of quinine was administered by the mouth, and 2 grammes given at the same time by intramuscular injection, with the result of a quick and lasting cure of the malaria without any signs of blackwater fever. This case appears to us to answer every point required by the supporters of the malaria quinine theory of blackwater fever, and it may further be stated that the original infection with *L. malarix* was in West Africa in one of the endemic regions of blackwater fever.

3. *Anaphylaxis*.—In 1909 Cleland advanced the theory that the disease might be an expression of anaphylaxis to the malarial parasite brought about by the presence in the serum of a foreign protein in the shape of disintegrated merozoites. But this is open to serious objections, though recently supported by Cardamatis, who considers that quinine might be able, when converted into the albuminate, in certain unknown conditions to act as an antigen, which, when combined with the malarial toxin, might produce antibodies, which might provoke a sensitiveness to quinine in the person suffering from malaria, when a further dose of the drug would produce anaphylaxis, perhaps because it combines with the antibodies, or perhaps by its transformation into a hypertoxic substance.

4. *Unknown Agent*.—Sir Patrick Manson, in 1893, first promulgated the theory that blackwater fever was a disease distinct from malaria, and supported this by the peculiar distribution of the disease, which is widespread in tropical Africa, and very local in India.

Sambon, in 1898, having in mind the hæmoglobinuric fevers of animals, brought forward the theory that human blackwater fever would probably be found to be a babesiasis, and has informed us that on one occasion Sir Patrick Manson and he saw one body in a red blood-corpuscle of a case of blackwater fever which very closely resembled the bacillary form of Theileria.

The parasites which have been described are becoming numerous. There is a bacillus by Yersin in the renal epithelium, which has since been shown to be a strain of *Bacillus coli communis*; while the other parasites suggested as possible ætiological factors are a blood parasite by F. Plehn, which he now identifies with the subtertian malarial parasite; and a double-contoured parasite in the red corpuscles by Fisch, which has not been confirmed. A body resembling a *Babesia* has been described by Forau, but has been criticized by Stephens, as resembling the fragmentation and flagellation of erythrocytes commonly seen in malarial anæmia in the tropics. Lastly, Leishman has described cell inclusions varying from 1 to 5 μ in diameter, and usually found in large mononuclear cells of endothelial origin. These inclusions are either structureless, homogeneous, circular forms, or ring forms. They are embedded in the cytoplasm of the cell, and usually assume a chromatin colour with Romanowsky's stain. As a rule, several inclusions are found together in the same cell; more rarely they are solitary. Leishman considers that possibly they are Chlamydozoa. These bodies have been adversely criticized by several

observers, especially by von Schilling-Torgau, who considers them to be plasmosomata, and Low has found similar bodies in other diseases, but some of the forms deserve serious investigation. Balfour has seen these inclusions in a case of blackwater fever and in a case of malaria.

5. *Balfour's Theory*.—Balfour suggests that the disease is not of parasitic origin, but due to the injection of some powerful hæmolysin introduced by the bite of some unknown insect or arachnid.

In our opinion blackwater fever is a disease of its own, though we freely admit the existence of hæmoglobinuria from quinine as well as from other drugs.

Predisposing Causes.—The predisposing causes of blackwater fever appear to be first racial, second bodily. With regard to the first, the immigrant European suffers more than the native, though the disease also attacks natives and half-castes. This racial distinction is, therefore, probably due to some acquired or inherited immunity. It is said that a person is usually not attacked until after residence for at least a year in the endemic area.

The second series of predisposing causes appears to be anything which lowers the vitality of the body—cold, change of climate, another disease—*e.g.*, malaria, syphilis—or certain drugs.

Pathology.—As the ætiology of the disease is uncertain, the pathogenesis is also little understood. Working on the theory that the disease is of malarial origin, Christophers and Bentley have brought forward an explanation of the pathology. Their views may be summarized as follows:—

Laverania malarix, the subtertian parasite, acts upon the endothelial cells of the blood capillaries of various organs, but especially upon those of the spleen and liver, stimulating them to excessive destruction (erythrokatalysis) of red blood cells by phagocytosis.

This phagocytosis results in the production of an auto-hæmolysin of the nature of a hæmolytic amboceptor, which is retained in the endothelial cells until set free by some exciting cause, which may be a chill, overexertion, etc. The result of this excitation is to suddenly set free in quantity this hæmolysin, which destroys the red cells by solution in the plasma (lysæmia), principally in the blood of the liver and kidney, and to a less extent in that of the spleen.

The lysæmia produces hæmoglobinæmia, which is best demonstrated by receiving the blood into hypertonic citrate solution, and then centrifugalizing, when the serum is observed to be of an orange, rarely of a reddish, colour. The amount of hæmoglobin present in this condition was estimated by Christophers and Bentley to be from 1 to 3.75 per cent. of that present in normal blood. This hæmoglobin quickly appears in the urine as oxyhæmoglobin, which may become methæmoglobin on standing. All the hæmoglobin probably does not escape by the kidney, for there is evidence of increased production of bile, and it is possible that only such quantity as the liver is incapable of converting into bile appears in

the urine. It is, however, by no means certain whether the pigment escapes only by the glomeruli or through the tubules, or by both, and it is also uncertain whether the hæmoglobin can pass through the cells of a normal kidney.

Barratt and Yorke, on the other hand, find that the hæmoglobinuria is not dependent upon hæmolysinæmia, but that it is due to a hæmoglobinæmia the origin of which they were unable to determine. Further, they, supported by de Haan, consider that the suppression of urine is due to a mechanical blocking of the renal tubes by the formation of large firm coarsely granular casts in the ducts of Bertini. Plehn, however, ascribes this suppression to a nervous inhibition of the glomerular secretion. Many authors ascribe the suppression to nephritis caused by the disease. Recently the subject has been reinvestigated by Yorke and Nauss, who support the mechanical theory, and find that it is considerably facilitated by any factor which tends to lower the blood-pressure, and by that means the secretion of water by the glomeruli, but that if the blood-pressure is kept up by the injection of saline solutions, the tendency to suppression is decreased. This is of importance in guiding the treatment of the condition.

Morbid Anatomy.—There are three cardinal features in the morbid anatomy of a case which has died during blackwater fever, and these are: (1) Jaundice of the tissues; (2) liquid blood; (3) swollen congested kidneys. In addition, there may be the signs of acute or chronic malaria in the liver, spleen, and bone-marrow.

On making the post-mortem, the yellow staining of the skin and organs is most marked. The kidneys are enlarged, dark red to black in colour, while microscopically they show degeneration of the epithelium of the convoluted and other tubules, the lumen of which is filled with granular material, while the glomeruli may contain granular material, and show desquamated capsular cells.

The liver is enlarged, and the gall-bladder full of inspissated bile. Microscopically, areas of necrosis, with thrombi in the sublobular veins and quantities of hæmosiderin in the cells, many of which may be in a state of fatty degeneration, are to be seen.

The stomach and small intestine are often hyperæmic, and the bone-marrow is yellowish, and either fluid or gelatinous.

The Blood.—The blood is thin and watery, and there may be hæmoglobinæmia and cholæmia, with lessened tonicidity. The red cells and hæmoglobin are greatly reduced, and the former may include shadow cells and small fragments of cells, and deep staining round cells (spherocytes) in the early stages, and later may show degenerative changes such as polychromatophilia and basophilia, while megaloblasts and normoblasts are present. Malarial parasites or pigment may be seen.

During the fever there is marked leucocytosis, with polymorphonuclear and mononuclear increase, but when the fever disappears there is leucopænia, with a mononuclear increase.

The Urine.—The urine is dark red to brownish-yellow in colour, becoming sometimes black, like stout, the reddish tinge not being seen until it is diluted, when it shows with the spectroscope the absorption bands of oxy- or methæmoglobin—the latter only if the urine has stood some time. The reaction is faintly alkaline, and the specific gravity is often less than normal. A considerable amount of sediment falls when the urine is left to stand. This sediment is composed of dark brown granular material, which is the débris of the broken down red cells, very few of which remain intact. Hæmatoidin crystals are sometimes met with. On boiling the urine, and then allowing it to stand for some time, a bright purple colour develops (Plehn's reaction). If some of the urine is made alkaline with potash and then boiled, a purple colour, due to hæmochromogen, is produced (Stephens and Christophers' reaction). The urine resists decomposition for some time.

The presence of urobilin can be detected by acidulating with a little acetic acid, extracting with amyl alcohol, and examining with a spectroscope, when a broad band to the red side of F will be seen. Bile pigments are seldom present, and may be recognized by Gmelin's or Maréchal's reactions. There is a considerable amount of albumin present in the form of serum albumin, serum globulin, and nucleo-albumin. Phosphates are said to be diminished. The hæmosozic value is higher than that of the red corpuscles of the blood.

Symptomatology.—Usually the patient has resided six months or longer in one of the regions mentioned above, and naturally has had attacks of malarial fever, and has taken quinine.

Prodromata.—Prodromata may be almost entirely absent, but usually the patient complains of lassitude, pains all over the body, loss of appetite, restlessness at night, and an entire lack of energy during the day, and a yellowish tinge may be noted in the conjunctivæ or skin for a day or so.

Attack.—Suddenly the patient feels chilly, and shivering fits may occur, accompanied by headache, severe pains in the back and legs, and an intense feeling of weakness and nausea, which, as a rule, quickly ends in retching and then vomiting, first of food, and then of green bile. The tongue is coated with a dirty-yellowish fur, and there is much thirst and constipation, the fæces at first being dark-coloured, and often scybalous.

The liver and spleen are enlarged and tender; the skin is hot and dry, and if not already tinged yellow, rapidly becomes so, deepening in tint as time goes on. It is said that itching is sometimes felt, but we have never noted this. The conjunctivæ are tinged yellow, like the skin. The temperature rises quickly to 103° or 104° F., and the pulse is regular, rapid, small, and compressible. At first the urine may appear normal, but sooner or later the characteristic stout-like colour appears, with pains in the back and burning sensations in the urethra. On the other hand, this may be the first feature of the attack, and causes the patient to send at once for the

doctor, though he may not at the time feel ill, or it may occur at the height of the fever, as Kelsch points out.

The mind may be clear or the patient may be brought to the hospital quite unconscious, and may remain so for days, or delirium may set in. After a few hours perspiration appears, and the temperature remits to about 100° F., the urine clears, and a mild case may recover, while in a severe case, instead of the remission, hyperpyrexia, coma, and death may ensue.

Usually, however, after the remission the temperature again rises (post-hæmoglobinuric fever), and the shiverings, vomitings, and pains return, while diarrhœa, with motions full of bile, and sometimes also with blood or hæmoglobin, comes on. A motion with hæmoglobin may present a most striking appearance, being mainly green in colour, with a reddish deposit on the surface.

This second paroxysm may be the last, or it may be succeeded by several others, after which the patient may recover. On the other hand, he may die during these attacks from exhaustion, or from hyperpyrexia and coma, or from anuria and uræmia.

Convalescence.—After the attacks the patient is exceedingly weak, and convalescence is protracted, and is liable to be complicated at any time with anuria, leading to fatal uræmia.

Varieties.—Kelsch and Kiener recognize two distinct types—a mild and a severe—of which the latter is subdivided into three—viz., the ordinary severe, the fulminating with a rapidly fatal issue, and the uræmic type.

Complications.—The most usual complication is the passage of hæmoglobin or blood *per anum*, giving rise to 'dysenteric motions,' as they are often called. Muco-pus is, however, generally absent. Inflammation of the tonsils and salivary glands has been noted.

Sequelæ.—There is nearly always grave anæmia and much weakness as the result of an attack, with often stomach and intestinal derangements, but of all, the most serious is nephritis, leading to uræmia.

Diagnosis.—Blackwater fever is easily recognized, as a rule, the diagnosis being based on the hæmoglobinuria with high fever and jaundice. The only disease with which it could be confounded is yellow fever, in which, however, there is never hæmoglobinuria. Acute yellow atrophy of the liver and Weil's disease are easily distinguished by the urine, which does not contain hæmoglobin.

Prognosis.—The mortality in our experience varies greatly, being very high in some epidemics and low in others. The mortalities given by Skelton are as follows: F. Plehn, 4 per cent.; A. Plehn, 6.8 per cent.; Stendel, 16 to 17 per cent.; Koch, 21 per cent.; Bérenger-Féraud, 23 to 24 per cent.; Schellong, 42 per cent.; Reynolds, 50 per cent.

Bad signs are:—

1. Persistent vomiting.
2. Hiccough.
3. Profuse diarrhœa.

4. High fever.
5. Sudden decrease in the tension and increase in the frequency of the pulse.
6. Diminution or cessation of urine.
7. Coma.

Good signs are :—

1. Little gastro-intestinal disturbance.
2. Low temperature.
3. Good pulse.
4. Clear mind.

It is usually said that a person should not return to the tropics after suffering from blackwater fever, but many people do return, and appear to remain in excellent health. Of course, there is the great risk of further attacks.

Treatment.—In treating the disease, the important features to be remembered are that the patients are generally infected with malaria ; that they suffer from a great blood destruction, and therefore from great weakness ; that, as a result of the blood destruction, a severe strain is thrown on the liver and kidneys, and that the latter are apt to be damaged by the hæmoglobin. In fact, some people think that the hæmolysis takes place in the kidney, but in any case there is danger of blocking of the renal tubules, of nephritis, anuria, and uræmia. Lastly, the disease is apt to relapse.

From the very commencement, no matter how mild the symptoms may be, the patient must be put to rest in bed, and have careful nursing. Another most important matter is to flush out the kidneys, and this should be done by getting water into the system in some way. If the patient can take liquids by the mouth, use Sauerbrunnen, soda-water, albumin-water, whey, cold or warm tea, barley-water, or toast-water, in quantity.

If the vomiting is such that liquids are not retained, try saline injections by the rectum, and if this cannot be done because of diarrhoea, use saline subcutaneous injections as described in malaria. It is also most necessary to keep up the heart's action and the blood-pressure, and since 1897 we have used hypodermic injections of digitalin, and at times also of ergotin, for this purpose. The digitalin also helps the renal secretion, and according to the experimental work of Yorke and Nauss, it is of importance to maintain a high blood-pressure and a good renal secretion in order to prevent suppression of urine.

The condition of the stomach, liver, and kidneys may counter-indicate stimulants at times, but there is no doubt of the value of champagne and brandy when it can be administered. Chlorides, in the form of sodium chloride or, better, calcium chloride, should be given, in order to increase the tonicity of the blood. Calcium chloride may be given in doses of gr. xv. to xxx., well diluted, every four hours, but care must be taken not to prolong the administra-

tion more than a few days. In bad cases Bellet recommends subcutaneous injections of 100 to 200 c.c. of the following mixture :—

Calcium chloride	..	..	..	4 to 5 grammes,
Sodium chloride	..	..	..	10 grammes,
Distilled water	..	..	..	1,000 grammes,

two or three times in the twenty-four hours.

Calcium chloride has a tonic effect on the heart, and acts also on the renal cells, and is therefore very suitable for the treatment of this disease. Calcium lactate may be used in place of the chloride.

If malarial parasites are found in the blood, they should be treated by intramuscular injections of quinine bihydrochloride, but no sulphate or bisulphate of quinine should be given. If quinine be administered by the mouth, the tannate is the most suitable preparation. It is advisable to give the quinine according to Nocht's method—that is to say, in minute doses ($2\frac{1}{2}$ grains) often repeated.

The vomiting should be treated as in malaria, and constipation with calomel and enemata.

The pain in the back caused by the irritated kidneys when hæmoglobinuria is taking place may be relieved by fomentations, or, if necessary, by a hypodermic injection of morphia, which, indeed, relieves many symptoms. If anuria sets in, the skin must be made to act by vapour baths, before which a hypodermic of pilocarpine may be given, or by cupping over the kidneys and free purgation.

Headache may be relieved by cool applications to the head.

Dr. O'Sullivan-Beare strongly recommends the decoction or the fluid extract of the root of *Cassia beareana* Holmes; the latter can be obtained from T. Christy and Sons, Old Swan Lane, Upper Thames Street, London, and should be administered in 1 fluid drachm, well diluted with water, every two hours at first, and afterwards at longer intervals. We have no experience of this drug, but its introducer praises it highly, stating that it relieves all the symptoms quickly. Skelton says he has never seen it do any good, but that it does no harm.

So well is the disease known in West Africa that several native remedies exist.

With regard to other drugs, atoxyl is said to be useless. Cantley has used turpentine in mild attacks.

Hearsey has recommended that liquor hydrargyri perchloridi ℥xxx., sodium bicarbonate gr. x., water to 1 ounce, be administered every two or four hours for the first twenty-four hours, and then every three hours until the urine clears. Care must be taken not to induce mercurial poisoning. Nightingale has had good results with Hearsey's mixture, but also recommends sodium dimethylarsenate administered in 1-grain doses thrice daily until the temperature is below normal for twenty-four hours. It is stated to soothe the gastric irritation and to clear the urine. Cholesterin in doses of 1 gramme has been given at intervals of four hours until two to three or four doses have been administered. It is given in suspension in thick milk, or as intramuscular injections in olive oil, and has been advocated on account of its antihæmolytic

action, but we do not favour this drug. Extract of pituitary gland has been recommended in cases of cardiac failure.

Diet.—The diet must be fluid, preferably in the form of whey, milk, chicken broth, albumin-water, and Benger's food ; but strong meat-extracts should be avoided.

If the vomiting is troublesome, and there is no diarrhœa, rectal feeding might be tried. Plenty of aerated water should be allowed.

Climate.—A patient will require a change to a temperate climate in order to recuperate after a severe attack.

Prophylaxis.—Very little can be said with regard to the prophylaxis, as the knowledge of the ætiology is incomplete. As black-water fever generally develops in persons who have suffered from malaria, quinine prophylaxis should be carried out in the manner already described in the chapter on Malaria, attacks of malaria being treated by quinine tannate in small repeated doses, or the drug should be preceded by a dose of calcium lactate.

REFERENCES.

- BALFOUR (1913). *Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene*, p. 35. London.
- BARRATT AND YORKE (1909). *Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology*. Liverpool, p. 1.
- BÉRENGER-FÉRAUD (1874-78). *De la Fièvre Bilieuse Mélanurique des Pays Chauds*. Paris, 1874.
- BÉRENGER-FÉRAUD (1878). *De la Fièvre Bilieuse Inflammatoire aux Antilles et dans l'Amérique*.
- BILLET (1908). *Bulletin de la Société de Path. Exotique*, vol. i., No. 7.
- CARDAMATIS (1912). *Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique*, p. 521. Paris.
- CHRISTOPHERS AND BENTLEY (1908). No. 35, *Scientific Memoirs*. India.
- EYLES (1893). *Malarial Fever as met with on the Gold Coast*. Lancet, February 4.
- FINK (1912). *Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene* (several papers). London.
- KELSCH AND KIENER (1889). *Traité des Maladies des Pays Chauds*. 1889.
- LEISHMAN (1912). *Journal of the Royal Army Medical Corps*, p. 151. London.
- LOW, G. (1912). *Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene*. London.
- MCCAY (1908). *Glasgow Medical Journal*. March.
- PLEHN, A. (1903). *Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene*, Bd. vii., p. 541.
- SKELTON (1908). *Journal Royal Army Medical Corps*, June.
- STEPHENS (1907). *Allbutt and Rolleston's System of Medicine*, vol. ii., part ii., p. 289.
- STEPHENS (1907). *Osler's System of Medicine*, i. 448.
- STEPHENS (1903). *Thompson and Yates and Johnston, Laboratory Reports*, vol. v., part i., 217.
- STEPHENS AND CHRISTOPHERS. *Reports to the Royal Society*, Series I., V., and VIII.
- TOMASELLI (1897). *La intossicazione clinica e l'infezione malarica*. Catania, 1897.
- VINCENT (1906). *Bull. Société de Biologie*, December, 1906.
- YORKE AND NAUSS (1911). *Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology*, p. 287. Liverpool.

CHAPTER XXXI

THE RELAPSING FEVERS

The relapsing fevers—The relapsing fever of Europe—The relapsing fevers of America—The relapsing fever of Asia—The relapsing fevers of Africa—References.

THE term 'relapsing fever' includes several diseases caused by different spirochætes—for example, the European relapsing fever is caused by *Spiroschaudinnia recurrentis*, the North American by *S. novyi*, the West African by *S. duttoni*, while that in India is due to *S. carteri*. These fevers are best classified geographically as follows :—

The relapsing fever of Europe ;
The relapsing fevers of America ;
The relapsing fever of Asia ;
The relapsing fevers of Africa.

Marchoux, in drawing attention to the loss of virulence in *S. marchouxi*, when passed directly through a succession of fowls, points out that in nature this virulence is maintained by passage through the tick *Argas persicus*, and he suggests that there may be a common type for all the blood spirochætes, which may be merely varieties whose pathogenic powers have been fixed by being transmitted by various arthropods. Hence, perhaps, the variations seen in the *Spiroschaudinniæ* of relapsing fever in man.

THE RELAPSING FEVER OF EUROPE.

Synonyms—*English*.—Febris Recurrens, Five Days' fever, Spirillum fever, Five Days' fever with relapses, Typhus Recurrens, Seven Days' fever (not Rogers'), Icteric Typhus, Remittent fever, Bilious Typhoid, Epidemic Remittent fever, Miliary fever, Relapsing fever. *French*: Fièvre à Rechute. *German*: Rückfall-fieber, Die Hungerpeste. *Italian*: Febbre Ricorrente.

Definition.—An acute specific relapsing fever, caused by *Spiroschaudinnia recurrentis* Lebert 1874, and perhaps spread by some blood-sucking animal—possibly by bugs or lice.

History.—Hippocrates was the first writer to describe an epidemic of relapsing fever in Thasos, but this knowledge was entirely lost, and the reference was not understood until after relapsing fever

was properly defined. Strother and other observers refer to fevers with relapses in London and in Ireland in the eighteenth century. In 1826-27 there was an epidemic of fever in the United Kingdom, during which it was recognized that there were two distinct types of typhus—viz., a mild and a severe. In 1842 this mild type again appeared in Scotland, and, to a lesser extent, in England, and continued in the years 1843, 1846, and 1847. In 1843 Henderson of Edinburgh defined this mild type as a fever distinct from typhus, and about the same time it was recognized in Germany, and somewhat later in Russia.

In 1868 there was an epidemic in Berlin, when Obermeyer, one of Virchow's assistants, first saw a spirochæte in the blood of a patient; but he does not appear to have been very certain about this at the time, for he waited till the next epidemic in 1872, and even then did not publish his account till 1873. This spirochæte was named *S. recurrentis* by Lebert in 1874, and *S. obermeyeri* by Cohn in 1875, and was proved by Münch, of Moscow, to be the cause of the disease by the successful inoculation of blood containing the spirochætes into healthy human beings—an experiment which has since often been repeated accidentally at post-mortems. It has been inoculated with success by Metchnikoff and others into monkeys and mice. In 1888 Sakharoff suggested that this organism was a protozoon—a view which increasing knowledge tends to support.

In Russia, where the disease has been well known since 1863, there is a popular belief that it is spread by the bed-bug *C. lectularius* L., which belief was supported by Flüge in 1891. In 1897 Tictin found that he could infect monkeys by inoculation of the blood obtained by crushing bugs which had very recently been fed on a patient—i.e., within forty-eight hours.

Spirochætes have been found in bugs during relapsing fever epidemics by Karlinski in 1902, and later by Schaudinn. Nuttall has successfully transmitted *S. recurrentis* from mouse to mouse by the bites of bugs. Dönitz's hypothesis, that *S. recurrentis* is conveyed by ticks, has not been supported by experiments.

Climatology.—The disease is endemic in Russia, Ireland, Turkey, Denmark, Norway, Bohemia, and in some parts of Poland and Germany, while the same or a similar type is found in Lower Egypt, in Southern China, and perhaps in the Philippines. There, however, appears to be some doubt about the presence of the disease in these islands; the authority for the statement is McCrae, in Osler's 'System of Medicine.'

Ætiology.—This type of relapsing fever is caused by *S. recurrentis* Lebert 1874, which is generally to be found in the peripheral blood during the attacks, but is usually absent in the apyrexial interval, though individuals may occasionally be found after prolonged search.

This spirochæte is carried from the sick to the healthy probably by some blood-sucker—possibly in some cases by the bed-bug

C. lectularius L, but more probably the disease is spread by the agency of lice. It can also be spread by direct inoculations such as may take place accidentally in laboratories or at post-mortems.

Pathology.—The life-history of *S. recurrentis* is but little known, and may possibly resemble that of *S. duttoni*, which has already been described. The presence of the spirochætes in the blood is associated with fever, which must be due to toxins produced by these organisms, though the severity of the symptoms bears no relationship to the number of the organisms found in the peripheral blood. The spirochætes disappear from the circulation when the temperature falls to normal. The disappearance of the parasites from the blood is brought about by the presence of antibodies (agglutinins and parasitocidal substances). In those cases, however, in which relapses occur, the blood remains infectious during the intervals. This is due to some parasites resisting the action of the antibodies. These resistant spirochætes after a time multiply again in large numbers, giving rise to the relapse. Levaditi and Roche have demonstrated that serum collected after a first attack destroyed the spirochætes which caused the attack, but had no effect whatever on the spirochætes which caused the second attack. The relapses, therefore, are caused by the survival of resistant types of spirochætes, and recovery depends upon the existence of protective substances in the blood. The immunity acquired after one or several attacks may last for some weeks or months. Animals can be hyperimmunized by repeated inoculations after recovery from the first attack. The serum of such hyperimmunized animals shows definite protective and curative properties.

Morbid Anatomy.—The principal pathological feature of the post-mortem is the enlargement of the liver and spleen, the latter organ reaching, it is said, a weight of 1 to 2 kilogrammes. On section, the spleen is dark-coloured and soft, with enlarged follicles, and on microscopical examination shows congestion and a cellular increase. The liver is enlarged, and its lobules are poorly defined, while microscopically cloudy swelling and fatty infiltration may be seen, as well as leucocytic infiltration into the portal system. The kidneys are enlarged and congested, and microscopically show cloudy swelling and fatty degeneration of the cells, while the stomach shows signs of inflammation, and the heart is soft and flabby. The bronchi are generally congested, and contain frothy mucus, and the lungs show hypostasis. The brain may be congested, and all the organs may be stained yellow with bile.

Symptomatology.—The incubation is said to vary between two and twelve days, but in accidental inoculations it is about seven days. During this period prodromal symptoms, in the form of slight malaise, may be felt. The onset is usually sudden, but it may be gradual, the patient suffering from rheumatic-like pains, headache, and constipation. When it begins suddenly, there are rigors, with severe frontal headache, pains in the back and limbs,

epigastric pain and tenderness, associated with a sense of weakness. The face becomes flushed, the conjunctivæ injected, and the temperature rises to 103° to 104° F., with a pulse-rate of 110 to 120, quickened respirations, and sometimes nausea and vomiting.

The temperature continues high until the sixth or seventh day, during which period the skin is yellowish in colour, hot and damp from perspiration, with often a rose-coloured macular eruption, disappearing on pressure, on the thorax, abdomen, and legs, which lasts for a day or so. The tongue is moist, red at the tip, and covered with a white fur. Vomiting of greenish-yellow matter may occur, but nausea is always present, and thirst is common; the bowels are usually constipated, and diarrhœa is more a complication than a feature of the disease. The liver is enlarged and tender, and so is the spleen, which may reach a considerable size. The heart sounds are normal, but the pulse-rate is quick, reaching 120 to 140, or even more, per minute; but it is not dicrotic. The erythrocytes and the hæmoglobin are reduced in amount, while a polymorphonuclear leucocytosis is present. Spirochætes can be found in the blood, and occasionally can be seen engulfed by leucocytes. There is generally a troublesome cough, with scanty bronchitic expectoration, and râles, which can be heard over the chest and trachea. The respirations follow the pulse-rate, being increased to 48 to 50 per minute if the temperature is high. The pains in the muscles and joints continue, and sleeplessness may result, while a noisy delirium is not rare, but stupor is uncommon. The urine is febrile, and may contain a little albumin. About the sixth or seventh day the crisis, sometimes ushered in by a rigor, intervenes, with violent perspiration, or diarrhœa, with or without epistaxis, and with a sudden rapid fall of temperature, while the pulse and respirations also return to normal, and the patient falls into a deep sleep, and awakens much better.

The *intermission* now begins, during which the temperature, the spleen, and liver return to normal, and the patient's strength slowly improves. The disease may now end; but this is exceptional, and more usually, about the fourteenth day from the first commencement of the illness, the *relapse* occurs, beginning with a rigor and symptoms resembling the attack, but often more severe, and, after lasting three or four days, terminating in a crisis, which generally ends the illness. Very rarely is there a second relapse, in which case the same symptoms occur, but much less severely, and a third relapse is most uncommon. Convalescence is sometimes slow.

Complications.—The complications are numerous, affecting the lungs in the form of bronchitis and pneumonia, or the alimentary canal as dysentery, diarrhœa, and hæmatemesis; while cerebral hæmorrhage, conjunctival hæmorrhage, iritis, and corneal ulcers, have all been recorded.

Abortion often complicates the first relapse in pregnant women.

Diagnosis.—In the first instance, before the relapsing character has appeared, the disease requires to be diagnosed from malaria, typhus, typhoid fever, yellow fever, and seven days' fever. The principal positive signs indicating relapsing fever are:—(1) Presence of the spirochætes in the blood; (2) agglutination or Löwenthal's reaction, which consists of taking a drop of blood from the suspected case and adding it to another drop of blood containing spirochætes taken from a patient, mixing the two drops together, and covering with a cover-glass, which is then sealed and placed in an incubator at 37° C. for half an hour. A positive reaction is indicated by the clumping of the spirochætes into non-motile masses. Malaria can be diagnosed by the discovery of the malarial parasite in the blood.

Typhoid is indicated by the absence of marked leucocytosis. Widal's reaction is not of much help during the first week. Typhus can be separated by the absence of spirochætes, by a negative Löwenthal's reaction, and by the presence of its characteristic rash. Yellow fever can be diagnosed by its black vomit, though at first the differentiation may be impossible without a microscopical examination of the blood. Seven days' fever is characterized by its slow pulse and, of course, by the absence of spirochætes. Weil's disease may be distinguished by the more marked jaundice and by the absence of spirochætes.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is usually favourable. Marked jaundice is a bad sign, while pregnant women generally abort. The mortality appears to vary considerably, being, according to Murchison, only 4 per cent. in the United Kingdom; while, according to Sandwith, it is 14·4 per cent. in Egypt, which is nearly the same percentage as that reached in Russia. The causes of death are toxæmia in the first attack, and collapse in the first intermission, but it may be caused by one of the above-mentioned complications.

Treatment.—Salvarsan or neosalvarsan should be administered either by intramuscular injection or, better, intravenously. This is a specific treatment, most efficacious, but care should be taken not to inject a large dose, as certain patients, especially, it seems, those suffering from Asiatic relapsing fever, stand the drug badly, cases of death having been recorded, even after a medium dose, such as 7½ grains (0·5 gramme). According to Mouzels, an intravenous injection of 4 or 5 grains (0·3 gramme) does not give rise to any unpleasant symptom, and is generally sufficient to make the spirochætes disappear from the blood and cure the attack. If, however, another attack of fever develops, a second injection of the same dose may be given. As regards symptomatic treatment, this consists of relieving pains in the head and muscles by small doses (2 to 3 grains) of salicylates, aspirin, antipyrin, or by quinine. If these pains are very severe, opium or a hypodermic injection of morphia may be necessary. The epigastric pain may be relieved by fomentations sprinkled with tincture of opium, while vomiting

should be treated with ice, champagne and bismuth mixtures, though occasionally morphia or codeine may be required. Effervescing ammonium carbonate mixtures are often grateful.

A dry, troublesome cough may be relieved by codeine or small doses of heroin; in other cases an expectorant mixture will be found useful. Constipation must be relieved by laxatives or enemata, and high temperatures by cool sponging, which, however, will but seldom be required. The complications must be met by the treatment laid down in textbooks on general medicine.

Prophylaxis.—Prophylaxis should aim at keeping biting animals, such as bugs, from the patient, which may be done by furnishing hospitals with iron bedsteads, which can readily be taken to pieces and cleaned, and by strict cleanliness.

THE RELAPSING FEVERS OF AMERICA.

The relapsing fevers of America comprise :—

1. North American relapsing fever.
2. Central American relapsing fever.
3. South American relapsing fever.

1. Relapsing Fever of North America.

Definition.—An acute specific fever caused by *Spiroschaudinnia novyi* Schellach 1907. Mode of infection not known.

History.—Relapsing fever has been known in America for many years, being recognized as far back as 1844; but it was considered to be identical with the European type until, in 1906, an Englishman who repeatedly travelled between New York and the West Indies was treated by Carlisle in New York for fever which relapsed, and in which spirochætes were found. Novy and Knapp studied these spirochætes, and showed that they were distinct from *S. duttoni*. Later, Mackie also studied them by the agglutination method, and agreed with Novy, who had concluded, from morphological reasons, that they were distinct from *S. carteri*. Finally, in 1907, Manteufel compared them with true *S. recurrentis*, and found that the serum of a person suffering from their type of fever did not agglutinate true *S. recurrentis*. Subsequently Schellach, after studying and comparing the different spirochætes, named this particular species *S. novyi* Schellach 1907.

Climatology.—The disease is known in North America and in Europe. In America the disease is acquired naturally. In Europe the cases recorded are due to laboratory infection.

Ætiology.—The cause of the disease is *S. novyi* Schellach 1907.

Symptomatology.—The symptoms appear to be much the same as in the European type of fever. The incubation period seems to be at least five to seven days in duration, though cases have been recorded in which symptoms developed almost immediately after

exposure to infection. In experimental cases it varied between six and eight days. The duration of the first attack is about five to six days, and it often begins with rigors; the tongue is moist, except in grave cases, and the jaundice is mild, except in severe cases; but the vomiting of bile is not uncommon, while diarrhœa is only moderate in amount. Tympanites, hiccough, and hæmorrhages from the nose, stomach, and bowels as well as the kidney, may be present in severe cases. The apyrexial interval is usually seven to ten days, and is followed by the relapse, which is not uncommonly absent. Usually there is only one relapse, and more rarely two to five relapses.

Mortality.—The mortality is not high, varying between 2 and 6 per cent.

Treatment.—The treatment is the same as in the European type.

2. Relapsing Fever of Central America.

Darling has described cases of relapsing fever in Panama, clinically similar to the Northern American type, but the organism has not been definitely classified.

3. Relapsing Fever of South America.

In South America (Colombia) a relapsing fever occurs in which the *spirochaudinnia* resembles more closely *S. duttoni* than *S. novyi*. According to Robledo, this parasite is carried by *Ornithodoros turicatus*.

THE RELAPSING FEVER OF ASIA.

Definition.—An acute specific relapsing fever caused by *Spirochaudinnia carteri* Manson 1907, and spread by some blood-sucker not definitely known. It is quite probable that there are in Asia several varieties of the disease.

History.—Relapsing fever is one of the endemic diseases of India, being traceable back into the eighteenth century. The credit of first clearly defining the disease, however, rests with Lyall in the epidemic fever in the Punjaub in 1852-53; but Vandyke Carter, in 1876-77, in the Bombay Presidency found spirochætes in the blood of patients suffering from fever, and his work on the subject, published in 1882, is to be regarded as the Indian classic on this fever. Schellach, in 1907, separated this spirochæte from *S. recurrentis* and *S. novyi* by finding that it is not agglutinated by the serum of animals infected with these parasites. Rogers points out that the disease has often been confounded with typhus fever in India. In 1911 Stott suggested that two varieties of fever may be included under this term, and recent research shows that several varieties of relapsing fever probably exist in India. Types of relapsing fever, which may possibly be different from the Indian ones, occur in China and French Indo-China, while the Arabian type may be identical with the West African relapsing fever.

Climatology.—The real home of the disease appears to be the Bombay Presidency, but it is also known in the Punjab and in the Kumaon Hills of the North-Western Provinces.

Ætiology.—The cause of the disease is the spirochæte found by Vandyke Carter in 1877. It is inoculable into man, as was proved by Carter inoculating himself twice, with an interval of two and a quarter years. It can also be inoculated into monkeys, but not into rats and mice. Bugs are capable of retaining it alive in their alimentary canals for from four to seven days when obtained from monkeys, but do not appear to be so effective in obtaining it from man, as only one in fifty-three were found infected after feeding on human beings. Infected bugs are capable of transmitting the disease to monkeys. Rogers, however, thinks that mosquitoes may be found to be more effective than bugs. Mackie has brought forward evidence in favour of *Pediculus corporis* being a carrier of the spirochæte.

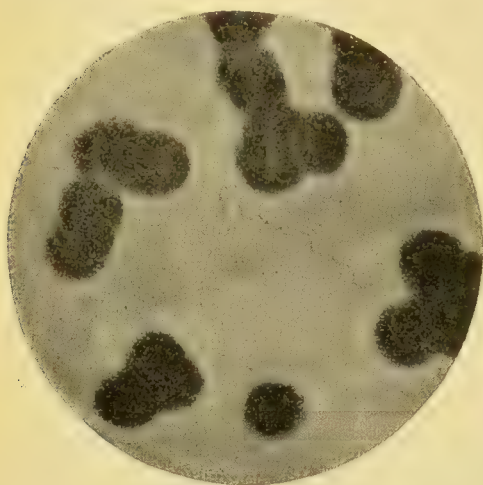


FIG. 443.—SPIROSCHAUDINNIA FROM A CASE OF ASIATIC RELAPSING FEVER.

(From a microphotograph by J. J. Bell.)

S. carteri is separated from *S. duttoni* by the latter being far more easily inoculable into animals and producing numerous relapses when injected into monkeys, while, according to Lamb, the former only causes one relapse. Moreover the two spirochætes may be differentiated by immunization and agglutination tests. *S. macaci*, observed by us in monkeys in Ceylon, appears to be closely related to *S. carteri*, and may be identical with it.

Strong, experimenting with white mice, has come to the conclusion that the Indian *Spiroschaudinnia* is closely allied to the European and North-American types.

Pathology.—The morbid anatomy resembles that of the European type.

Symptomatology.—In accidental inoculations in the post-mortem room the incubation period varies from three and a half to seven days, during which prodromata resembling those of the European type may occur.

The onset is generally sudden, but in most cases without the rigors defined in Europe, though chilliness occurs, and the disease progresses as in the Obermeyer fever. On the fall of temperature to subnormal, however, on the sixth or seventh day, which is associated with profuse perspiration and polyuria, instead of the patient feeling better, he often becomes collapsed, with a small weak pulse and a cold clammy skin, in which condition he may

resemble at first sight a cholera patient. In the first intermission, which lasts from three to twelve days—generally about eight days—the patient improves slowly, there being much debility, and in one case in six there is a sudden temporary rise of temperature after the crisis. Spirochætes are not to be seen in the blood, but Carter and Pisani have described peculiar structures. The first relapse occurs about the fourteenth day of the disease, and the seventh of the intermission, and resembles the first attack, but the temperature may reach a higher level, and the illness is shorter, ending in a crisis.

The second intermission may last about ten days, being longer than the first, and a second relapse takes place, often commencing with chills. The liver does not markedly enlarge, but the spleen increases in size. The fever is remittent or intermittent, and the crisis is not marked. It is now rare for the disease not to end, but after an interval of fourteen to seventeen days a third relapse may take place, with a sudden rise of temperature, which lasts one to four days. Very rarely a fourth intermission of about eleven days ends in a fourth relapse, lasting only two days.

With regard to the frequency of the relapses, Rogers gives the following percentages :—

Without relapse	..	..	..	23·8 per cent.
With one relapse	..	..	..	49·2 „
With two relapses	..	..	..	20·0 „
With three relapses	..	..	..	5·0 „
With four relapses	..	..	..	2·0 „

Varieties.—The typical course may be varied in about 25 per cent. of cases, and present (a) a *short, irregular, remittent fever*; (b) a *so-called bilious remittent fever*, called by Carter ‘*icteric fever*.’

(a) *Short, Irregular Remittent Fever.*—This is very like malaria, from which it is only to be diagnosed by blood examination.

(b) *So-called Bilious Remittent Fever (Icteric Fever).*—So-called bilious remittent fever very closely resembles typhus fever, and to some extent yellow fever, showing deep jaundice, with an eruption of red spots. The temperature is irregular, and the pyrexia prolonged; prostration comes on early, and may develop into a ‘*status typhosus*.’ The death-rate of these cases is high, being 70 per cent. They are to be diagnosed from typhus by the blood examination, and from yellow fever by the absence of black vomit.

Complications.—These are the same as in the European type.

Diagnosis.—This is based on the microscopical examination of the blood.

Prognosis.—A prolonged, irregular first attack, ending by lysis, and attacks showing marked jaundice are bad omens.

The mortality is higher than in Obermeyer’s type, being 18·02 per cent., of which about one-half take place in the attack and one-quarter in the first interval, and one-fifteenth in the first relapse, and the remainder from complications.

Treatment.—The treatment and diet differ in no respect from that already laid down, except that these patients often stand large doses of salvarsan badly, and therefore one should not give more than 5 grains of the drug by intravenous injection; moreover, the disease being of a severer type than the European form, and sudden heart failure being common, cardiac stimulants should be given during the attack, and preparation made for preventing the collapse by means of hypodermics of strychnine and ether, or camphor in ether, as well as by hot bottles, blankets, etc.

Prophylaxis.—See remarks with reference to the European type.

THE RELAPSING FEVERS OF AFRICA.

The relapsing fevers of Africa may be classified as follows:—

1. West African relapsing fever.
2. East African relapsing fever.
3. North African relapsing fever.

1. The Relapsing Fever of West Africa.

Synonyms.—Tick fever (Livingstone), African Tick fever.

Definition.—An acute specific relapsing fever caused by *Spirochaudinnia duttoni* Novy and Knapp 1906, and spread by *Ornithodoros moubata* Murray.

History.—The peoples of Africa from time immemorial have had a dread of tick-bites, which they thought caused fever, and this appears to have been noted by Livingstone, Kirk, Hinde, and many other people, with the result that a tick fever of an unknown nature was spoken of as occurring in Africa. Nabarro, in August, 1903, was the first to observe a spirochæte in human beings in Uganda, but as his publication, through no fault of his own, did not appear till much later, his discovery was forestalled by those of Ross and Milne in 1904, and Dutton and Todd, also in 1904, who found the cause of the tick fever to be a spirochæte, the latter observers also proving that it was introduced into the blood by the bite of a tick—*Ornithodoros moubata*. Since that date Koch, Todd, Novy and Knapp, Breinl and Kinghorn, and others, have studied the disease carefully. Fränkel has proved by biological tests that the spirochæte of East African relapsing fever differs from *S. duttoni*, as observed in West Africa, and Nuttall proposed the name *S. rossii* Nuttall 1908 for this new species; but recent researches seem to have proved the identity of the two conditions.

Climatology.—The disease is found in Angola, the Congo Free State, Uganda, and German East Africa and Portuguese East Africa, and in the Valley of the Zambesi. Franco, Robledo and others have described a spirochætiasis in Colombia, which is caused by a spirochæte morphologically resembling *S. duttoni*, and said to be spread by *Ornithodoros turicatus*, with reference to which it may be noted that Büldow observed relapsing fever in the Andes

in 1865. Robledo asserts that it is spread by the bite of *Ornithodoros megnini*.

The climatic conditions required appear to be heat and moisture, but according to Franco's observations, the disease can occur at an altitude of 7,000 feet. No observations appear to be recorded as to variations due to season. Carter's investigations would tend to show that Arabian relapsing fever is either a separate form of fever, or is allied to this West African form, as it may be spread by an *Ornithodoros*.

Ætiology.—The cause of the fever is *S. duttoni* Novy and Knapp 1906, which is proved to be distinct from the other spirochætes, because an animal immunized against one of these is capable of being successfully inoculated by it. *S. duttoni* can be inoculated into a number of animals—namely, dogs, goats, sheep, rabbits, guinea-pigs, rats, and mice—but not into cats, chickens, pigeons, or goldfish. The spirochætes can pass through the placenta into the circulation of the foetus, which they infect. These organisms are easily seen in the blood during an attack, but disappear during an apyrexial interval.

The life-history in the vertebrate has been worked out by Breinl, who, as already described, showed that just before the crisis the spirochætes become encysted and undergo schizogony into small bodies, from which the new generation develop. Leishman has demonstrated that when the spirochætes pass into the intestinal sac of the tick they lose their motility and their characteristic appearance, while the central core of chromatin segments into small masses, which are set free into the lumen of the gut. These small bodies, which resemble small rods, or are rounded, like micrococci, appear to multiply in the body of the tick, and to pass into the cells of the Malpighian tubules and into the tissue of the ovary. In the latter position they enter the immature eggs, and can be traced through all stages of development into the adult ticks. In the embryo, and in all the later stages of development up to and including the adults, they are found as small chromatin bodies lying in the cells of the Malpighian tubules. Inoculation of crushed tissue containing these bodies produces a typical infection. From his experiments, Leishman concludes that it is by these chromatin bodies that the disease is carried from the egg to the new generation of ticks, and that infection of man does not take place viâ the salivary glands, but by the small bodies gaining access to the wound produced by the tick's bite, by being voided in the Malpighian secretion passed by the tick during feeding, or perhaps by regurgitation of the intestinal contents. More recently Leishman and Hindle have shown that the tick produces infection only as the result of its infected faeces contaminating the tick-bite. This is a typical example of the contaminative mode of infection.

The principal predisposing causes are anything which facilitates the life of the tick, such as bad hygienic conditions, which are well exemplified by the native huts of Africa. These huts contain many

cracks in the walls and floor, which afford shelter to the tick, and hence predispose to the disease.

Pathology.—Very little can at present be said as to the pathology. The post-mortem reveals only an enlarged firm spleen, while smears taken from the liver and lungs show large numbers of spirochætes.

Symptomatology.—The symptomatology still requires careful investigation on the lines carried out by Carter in India, but much good work has been done on the subject by Dutton, Todd, Ross, and others.

The period of incubation is usually about seven days, but it may extend to eleven or twelve days.

The tick-bite may be accompanied by local inflammatory symptoms, but in some cases the bite is not even noticed. According to Wellman, natives believe that when the tick-bite is accompanied by a severe local reaction, the individual probably escapes fever, and Nuttall calls attention to the possible protective effect of a local reaction.

Usually mental heaviness, lack of activity, profuse sweating, and constipation, are mentioned as prodromal symptoms.

The attack may come on gradually, with a feeling of malaise, faintness, and a disinclination for food, or even vomiting, and a slight rise of temperature. In a few hours the temperature will have risen to 103° to 105° F., associated with headache, pains in the back and limbs, and intense pain in the region of the spleen, and chilliness. There is vomiting, first of food, and then of bile, with often diarrhoea, and even at times streaks of blood in the motions. The spleen is generally found to be enlarged, and spirochætes in scanty numbers occur in the peripheral blood, but may be hard to find.

The next day the symptoms are worse, and the patient is hot and restless, complaining of thirst and splenic pain, and often troubled by a cough. The temperature shows a morning fall, without improvement in the symptoms, and an evening rise, during which the pains increase, and the patient may become delirious. The liver does not enlarge, but the spleen projects below the costal margin. Spirochætes are now found in greater numbers, but diminish remarkably before the crisis. There is a slight decrease in the red cells and hæmoglobin, and a marked leucocytosis before the crisis, while polychromatophile degeneration is noted in the red cells, and a very marked increase in blood platelets. The symptoms last three to four days, and end by a crisis marked by profuse sweats and a fall of temperature below normal. On the day before the crisis there is a pseudo-crisis, with a fall of temperature, but no improvement in the symptoms.

The patient feels weak and tired, but slowly regains his appetite and strength, and no parasites are found in the blood. The disease may now terminate, or the intermission may last from one to twenty-one days, according to Ross; but five to eight days is more usual.

The first relapse begins with a rise of temperature and a return of the original symptoms, and also of the parasites into the peripheral blood. After lasting three to four days, it ends in a crisis marked by sweating, and showing a pseudo-crisis on the preceding day.

Intermissions and relapses follow one another regularly or irregularly, the intervals being from one day to two months, and the relapses usually lasting three days, and showing a pseudo-crisis on the second day and a crisis on the third day. As many as five to eleven relapses may take place, and end by reducing the patient both in weight and strength. Œdema of the eyelids has been noted in the relapses.

Complications and Sequelæ.—Iritis is very frequently observed.

Clinical Varieties.—According to Ross, there appears to be a marked difference in the severity of the attack in new-comers, such as Europeans, and natives. Though the attack shows much the same symptoms in natives as in Europeans, it is often far less severe, and the spleen may not enlarge. The attack frequently lasts twenty-four to forty-eight hours, and ends by crisis, after which the patient rapidly recovers, as a rule without a relapse. Should this, however, take place, it is found to be less severe than the attack. Koch believes that these mild attacks and the native immunity are due to infection in early childhood. Dutton and Todd, on the other hand, describe cases very much resembling that in the European, with enlargement of the spleen, and with more than one relapse, leaving the patient anæmic, thin, and weak. Hence it may be concluded that the disease shows two types in natives—a mild type and a severe type—and that the latter may end in death.

Diagnosis.—This can only be made by finding the spirochætes. Löwenthal's method of agglutination can be applied in doubtful cases.

Prognosis.—This is usually good for both the natives and Europeans, but death may occur in both races, and is signalled by a rapid fall of temperature without improvement of the symptoms.

No figures have so far been recorded with regard to the mortality, but it may be taken that it, as a rule, is low, though under adverse circumstances it may be high. Dutton and Todd record that of twenty men who contracted the disease in one caravan, ten died.

Treatment.—This is the same as for the European form (see p. 929).

Prophylaxis.—The prophylaxis is based on the avoidance of localities where ticks abound and the destruction of these parasites. Koch rightly advises that Europeans should camp at least 20 to 30 yards away from infected native huts and rest-houses.

The Relapsing Fever of East Africa.

The relapsing fever found in Uganda and East Africa is clinically indistinguishable from the West African type, and is carried by the same tick, but the *Spiroschaudinnia*, according to Fränkel, is a different species (*S. rossi* Nuttall 1908). Recent researches seem, however, to identify it with the West African type.

The Relapsing Fever of North Africa.

Synonyms.—Algerian relapsing fever; Egyptian relapsing fever; Egyptian Homa el Hugga, Homa el Naxy, Naushah.

Definition.—An acute specific fever caused by *Spiroschaudinnia berbera* Sergent and Foley 1910, and probably spread by the agency of lice.

History.—It was noticed by the surgeons of Napoleon's army in Egypt, and later by Griesinger in 1851, when it was called 'bilious typhoid'; while more recently Sandwith, Cummins, Bousfield, Balfour, and Graham-Smith, have published excellent accounts of the disease. In 1910 Sergent and Foley differentiated *S. berbera* Sergent and Foley 1910 in a case in South Oran.

Climatology.—It is known to exist in Algeria, Tunis, Tripoli, Egypt, and the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan.

Ætiology.—It is caused by *S. berbera* Sergent and Foley 1910, spread by the agency of lice, as shown by Nicolle, Blaizot and Conseil (see Chapter XVI.).

Symptomatology.—The length of the incubation period is not known, but is believed to be more than twelve days. The fever, which may be associated with rigors, reaches its height during the first twenty-four hours, and afterwards shows morning remissions. The spleen enlarges, and the liver becomes tender and painful in some cases; but jaundice is generally absent. Vomiting is present, but diarrhœa is absent. The attack is apparently not very severe. Apyrexia lasts from two to nine days, and is followed by one, two, or, more rarely, three, relapses.

Diagnosis.—The spirochætes must be found in the blood, as the cases may occasionally resemble cerebro-spinal meningitis and acute rheumatism.

Prognosis.—This is usually good, the mortality being nil in fifty cases.

Treatment.—This is the same as for the other relapsing fevers.

REFERENCES.

European Relapsing Fever.

- BIRT (1913). Journal of the Royal Army Medical Corps, London.
 CASTELLANI (1912). Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene. Leipzig.
 FEHRMANN, E. (1910). Archiv f. Sch. u. Trop. Hygiene.
 KARLINSKI (1902). Centralb. f. Bakt., xxxi. 566.
 NUTTALL (1908). J. Parasit., i. 2, 143.
 OBERMEYER (1873). Centralb. für die Med. Wissenschaft, 1873, xi. 145.

REFERENCES

- RABAGLIATI AND BULLOCK (1905). Allbutt and Rolleston, System of Medicine, i. 1167.
 SANDWITH (1905). Medical Diseases of Egypt, i. 33.
 SANDWITH (1906). Journal of Infectious Diseases, iii. 3.
 TICTIN (1894). Centralb. f. Bakt., xv. 840. *Ibid.*, 1897, xxi. 179.

American Relapsing Fevers.

- CARLISLE (1906). Journal of Infectious Diseases, iii.
 DARLING (1909). Archives of Internal Medicine.
 NOVY AND KNAPP (1906). Journal of Infectious Diseases, iii. 291.
 ROBLEDO (1909). Bulletin de la Société Exotique, iii. 117.

Asiatic Relapsing Fevers.

- CARTER (1882). Spirillum Fever. London.
 CHOKSY (1909). Transactions Bombay Medical Congress.
 HERMANT (1912). Bulletin de la Société de Path. Exotique. Paris.
 MACKIE (1907). Preliminary Note on Bombay Spirilla Fever.
 MOUZELS AND NGUYÊN-XUAN-MAI (1912). Bulletin de la Société de Path. Exotique. Paris.
 PISANI (1897). Pathology of Relapsing Fever. Calcutta.
 ROGERS (1908). Fevers of the Tropics, p. 149. Oxford.

African Relapsing Fevers.

- BREINL AND KINGHORN (1906). An Experimental Study of the Parasite of the African Tick Fever, Memoir XXI. Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine.
 DUTTON AND TODD (1905). The Nature of Human Tick Fever in the Eastern Part of the Congo Free State, Memoir XVII. Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine.
 HODGES AND ROSS (1905). British Medical Journal, vol. i. London.
 KOCH (1906). Über Afrikanischen Rekurrens. Berlin. Klin. Wochenschrift, 7.
 NABARRO (1904). Reports of the Royal Society's Sleeping Sickness Commission. No. 6.
 NUTTALL (1909). Journal of the Royal Army Medical Corps, xii. 2, 123.
 ROSS AND MILNE (1904). British Medical Journal, ii. 1453.
 ROSS (1907). Allbutt and Rolleston, System of Medicine, vol. ii., part i., p. 301.
 WERNER (1906). Zur Epidemiologie des Afrikanischen Rekurrens. Arch. für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene, xxiv. 776.

North African Relapsing Fever.

- BALFOUR (1911). The Spirochæte of Egyptian Relapsing Fever. Khartoum Reports.
 BOUSFIELD (1911). Notes on Human Spirochaetosis. Khartoum Reports.
 CUMMINS (1910). Journal of the Royal Army Medical Corps, 199. London.
 NICOLLE, BLAIZOT ET CONSEIL (1912). Arch. Inst. Pasteur, Tunis.
 SERGENT AND FOLEY (1908). Bulletin de la Société Pathologie Exotique, p. 174.
 SMITH, G. A. (1909). On some Cases of Relapsing Fever in Egypt, and the Question of Carriage by Domestic Vermin. London.

CHAPTER XXXII

THE SPOTTED FEVER OF THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS AND TSUTSUGAMUSHI DISEASE

The spotted fever of the Rocky Mountains—Tsutsugamushi disease—The tick fever of Miana—The intermittent tick fever of Wyoming—References.

SPOTTED FEVER OF THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS.

Synonyms.—Black fever, Blue disease, Rocky Mountain spotted fever, Spotted fever of Montana, Rocky Mountain fever, Pyroplasmosis hominis, Spotted fever of Idaho, Tick fever of the Rocky Mountains.

Definition.—An acute endemic febrile disorder, associated with a petechial or purpuric eruption of the skin, which occurs after the bites of infected ticks [*Dermacentor andersoni* Stiles 1905 (which is probably the same as *D. venustus* Banks 1908) and perhaps other ticks, e.g., *D. modestus* Banks] in certain regions of the Rocky Mountains.

History.—The first case of the disease is believed to have occurred in Bitter Root Valley, in 1873, and from that date until 1902 it is said that about 200 cases were observed, with a mortality of 70 to 80 per cent. During this period it was generally known as the 'black fever,' the 'blue disease,' or the 'spotted fever.'

In 1898, according to Anderson, Major M. W. Wood made an unpublished report on the disease to the Surgeon-General of the United States army. In 1899 Maxy wrote a paper on 'The So-called Spotted Fever of Idaho,' which he described as an acute, endemic, non-contagious, but probably infectious febrile disorder, characterized clinically by a continuous, moderately high fever, severe arthritic and muscular pains, and a profuse petechial or purpuric eruption of the skin, appearing first on the ankles, wrists, and forehead, but rapidly spreading to all parts of the body. In 1902 Gwim and McCullough read separate papers on the disease at a meeting of the Montana State Medical Association, and in the

same year Wilson and Chowning were deputed to investigate it in the Bitter Root Valley. As a result of their investigation, they concluded that it was caused by a *Babesia*. They believed this *Babesia* to be parasitic in a squirrel (*Spermophilus columbianus*), and to be spread to human beings by a tick, *Dermacentor reticulatus* (= *D. andersoni* = *D. venustus* Banks nec Marx). In 1903 Anderson was instructed to investigate the disease, and as a result of his inquiries he supported Wilson and Chowning as regards both the parasite and the tick. In 1905 Stiles published his zoological investigation into the cause, transmission, and source of Rocky Mountain spotted fever, in which he failed to find evidence of the existence of the parasite in man or squirrel, and of the transmission by the tick. His researches were supported in the same year by Ashburn. In 1906 King found distinct experimental evidence of the transmission of the disease by the tick. From 1906 until his recent death Ricketts has been working at the ætiology of the malady, and has proved that the tick *D. andersoni* spreads the disease—a conclusion which he has supported by experiments on guinea-pigs and monkeys; but he says that the credit for proving the transmission of the disease from man to man by the tick must be given to McCalla and Brereton. In 1908 Ashburn and Craig published an excellent paper on this and the tsutsugamushi disease, which they indicate to be distinct from one another, and in this paper Ashburn accepts the transmission by the tick. Ricketts in 1909 found that there were really two different ticks implicated in the spread of the disease, and these were recognized as *D. venustus* Banks 1908 = *D. andersoni* Stiles = *D. venustus* Marx 1897, *pro parte*, and *D. modestus* Banks, of which we have been unable to find a description. It is obvious that there is great confusion as to the correct nomenclature of the ticks causing this fever. We follow Stiles, and call the best-known tick *D. andersoni*.

Climatology.—The disease is only known in the United States in Montana, Idaho, Nevada, Wyoming, and Oregon. In Montana it is found in the Bitter Root Valley, on the eastern slopes of the Bitter Root Mountains, and from there to the western bank of the Bitter Root River, by which it is apparently bounded, the worst area being from Lo-lo to Como, a distance of about fifty miles in length, but only about four to five miles in breadth. This country has a considerable snowfall, which, though it begins to melt in March, lies on the mountains until mid-June. The melted snow drains into the river, which does not reach low-water until July. It is only during this period that the ticks (*D. andersoni*) appear in large numbers, and infest men and animals, who pass through the forests, thickets, and uncultivated regions. The disease is also known at Rock Creek, 20 miles, and at Bridger, 200 miles, east of the Bitter Root River. In Idaho it occurs throughout the entire valley of the Snake River, including its tributaries, and the foot-hills in the neighbourhood. In Wyoming it is found at

Cody and Meeteetse. In Nevada it is only known in the north, in the valley of the Quinn River, where it was recognized as far back as 1887. In Oregon it is said to be mild, and to be found only in the eastern portion, towards Idaho.

It will be noted that these districts extend from 40° to 47° N. latitude, and that the elevation is about 3,000 to 4,000 feet above sea-level.

Wilson and Chowning noted that the cases occur from March to July, as is shown by the following list, taken from their report :—

March	..	..	..	..	..	6 cases.
April	..	..	..	..	..	24 "
May	..	..	..	..	..	46 "
June	..	..	..	..	..	35 "
July	..	..	..	..	..	5 "
Spring (exact month not known)	..	..	..	..	..	10 "
Total						126 cases.

This seasonal occurrence is associated, as stated above, with the prevalence of *D. andersoni* during the same months.

Ætiology.—According to Wilson, Chowning, and Anderson, the cause of the disease is a *Babesia*, but Stiles, Ashburn, and Ricketts have failed to find this parasite. The bacterial growths so far obtained from cultures of internal organs or of the blood can be considered as merely accidental contaminations. On the other hand, Ricketts has shown that blood taken from a human being suffering from the disease can be inoculated successfully into guinea-pigs and monkeys (*Macacus rhesus*), and that the transmission from animal to animal can go on apparently indefinitely (100 generations). These inoculations produce a disease characterized by an incubation, a fever, an eruption, and post-mortem appearances similar to those found in human cases. No bacteria can be cultivated from the internal organs or blood of the infected animals, but the virus exists not merely in the serum, but so closely attached to the corpuscles (white and red) that it cannot be separated from them by washing ; moreover, it will not pass through the pores of a Berkefeld filter. Immunity follows an attack, and hyper-immunity can be induced in guinea-pigs.

The virus can be acquired and transmitted by the larva, the nymph, and the male or female adults of *D. andersoni*, and in a few instances can pass through the eggs into a second generation of ticks. According to Ricketts, the Idaho disease is spread by *D. modestus*, and the Montana by *D. venustus* Banks 1908 *nec* Marx 1897 (= *D. andersoni* Stiles 1905). He is inclined to think that there is a difference between the two forms of fever, especially as the former has a death-rate of some 5 per cent. and the latter of about 90 per cent.

Infected ticks are found but sparingly in Nature. Thus, of 513 ticks found on animals, 296 or more were allowed to attack guinea-pigs, with the result that only one of the animals took the

disease after an incubation of seven days. The infected guinea-pig was found to have thirty-six male ticks upon it, all of which had come from a horse.

A tick fed on a human being suffering from the disease communicated it first to a man and afterwards to a woman by its bites. Ricketts, examining the blood of patients and the eggs of infected ticks, has observed peculiar bacillary-like structures, which show bi-polar staining. He has not succeeded in cultivating the germ.

With regard to predisposing causes, there are sex and age influences to be noted. Men are more frequently attacked than women, and the most common age is from fifteen to fifty years, both of which merely signify that persons performing outdoor work run a greater risk of infection than those otherwise employed.

Pathology.—As the causation of the disease is unknown, remarks with reference to the pathology must necessarily be limited to the morbid anatomy.

Morbid Anatomy.—Rigor mortis is well marked, and the skin shows lividity in dependent and petechiæ in non-dependent parts, and at times the marks of the tick-bites may still be visible.

The pleura, lungs, and pericardium, and most of the organs, are normal, but petechiæ may be seen on the epicardium; while the liver and spleen are enlarged, congested, and soft, and the kidneys are congested, and may show subcapsular hæmorrhages.

Histo-pathology.—The microscope shows capillary congestion of the organs, with an excess of leucocytes, and an extravasation into and pigmentation of the skin. Acute parenchymatous degenerations of the heart muscle, the spleen, liver, and kidneys, are also to be noted.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period varies from two to seven days, during which prodromata, in the form of irritation in the tick-bites, from which pains may radiate, and chilliness with malaise and nausea, may be experienced.

The illness often begins with a distinct chill, accompanied by severe headache, pains in the back and other parts of the body, and a rapid rise of temperature to 103° to 104° F., associated with a furred tongue, a dry skin, yellow and congested conjunctivæ, an irritating cough, epistaxis, and the passage of febrile urine.

The fever continues to rise, with slight morning remissions, until a maximum of 105° to 107° F. is reached about the fifth to the twelfth day. About the third day (second to seventh) a macular eruption appears on the wrists and ankles which quickly spreads up the arms and legs on to the back, forehead, chest, and abdomen, so that the whole body is included in about one to two days. The macules vary in size from 1 to 5 millimetres in diameter. They are not elevated, and at first disappear on pressure, but later become permanent, and finally turn petechial about the sixth to the tenth day. Associated with the eruption is a dusky-red mottling of the skin, and often a subicteric tinge of both the skin and the conjunctivæ. The eruption is, however, by no means

always well marked, and, in fact, mild cases have been reported in which it was absent.

The pulse is from the first very rapid, reaching from 110 to 150 per minute, and not as a rule in proportion to the temperature. At first full and strong, it becomes gradually feebler and smaller, and is often dicrotic, and in severe cases may be intermittent and irregular. The blood shows a diminution of the erythrocytes and hæmoglobin, with a slight increase in the total number of leucocytes and a relative increase of the mononuclear leucocytes; but in considering these blood-counts, allowance must be made for the altitude at which the disease occurs. Œdema of the face and limbs may be present in severe cases.

At first the tongue is covered by a thick white fur, but later it becomes dry, cracked, and brownish, and sordes collect on the teeth. Nausea may be present during the first week, but is more common in the second, and generally lasts till the end of the illness. Constipation is usually present throughout the attack, and the liver is often slightly enlarged, while the spleen extends beyond the costal margin, and is tender. There is usually a slight sore throat, and there may be signs of a mild bronchitis, associated with an increase in the number of respirations, which may reach from twenty-six to sixty per minute.

The urine presents the usual febrile character, and often contains a trace of albumin, which occasionally may reach considerable proportions, and be accompanied by a few granular casts. More rarely the urine may be scanty or even suppressed. The mind is usually clear, but in severe cases a low muttering delirium may occur.

After the fever has reached its height on the fifth to the twelfth day, the temperature either declines by lysis, and recovery takes place, or it remains high, and, a typhoid state developing, death ensues. If the former event is to take place, the temperature, falling by lysis, reaches normal about the fourteenth to the eighteenth day, the eruption commences to fade, and desquamation begins, which extends all over the body, while the other symptoms gradually abate and the patient becomes convalescent. If, however, death is to ensue, the temperature remains about 104° to 106° F., but sometimes shows a sudden final fall just before the fatal event.

Convalescence may take some time, and it is said that the sites of the eruption are clearly visible even twenty-four days after recovery if a warm bath is taken.

Complications.—Pneumonia is a comparatively frequent complication, but gangrene of the fingers, toes, and skin of the scrotum and penis may occur. Nephritis, cardiac weakness, and meningitis are possible complications.

Diagnosis.—The malady may be difficult to differentiate from typhoid fever, typhus, and the Japanese river fever. From *typhoid fever* it can be distinguished by the more acute onset, the petechial

eruption, commencing on the hands and wrists, the absence of marked intestinal symptoms, and the presence of leucocytosis. In doubtful cases all the modern bacteriological methods—serum reaction, search for the *Bacillus typhosus* in the blood, stools, and urine—will have to be used to exclude typhoid.

The distinction between spotted fever and *typhus* on clinical grounds seems to us impossible. Though in typhus the disease may end more often by crisis than by lysis, all the other clinical symptoms, and the appearance of the eruption, are practically identical; in fact, Sambon and others believe that the Rocky Mountain spotted fever and typhus are the same entity. Possibly typhus and Rocky Mountain spotted fever are due to two varieties of the same organism, or two very closely allied species, in the same way as African, European, American, and Asian relapsing fevers are due to very closely allied organisms. It is to be noted that guinea-pigs are susceptible to inoculation of Rocky Mountain fever virus, but not to typhus fever.

The *Japanese river fever* may present a course very similar to the Rocky Mountain spotted fever, but the presence of one or more eschars near the genitals or the axilla, and the eruption beginning on the face, and not becoming petechial, are characteristic.

Prognosis.—It appears that the prognosis is much more serious in some localities than in others. In Montana the mortality has been as high as 90 per cent., while in Idaho it has always been very low ($2\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.). The reason for this difference is not apparent. When the eruption is not much marked and not generalized, the prognosis is favourable.

Treatment.—Quinine has been advised and given in large doses, but it does not show any specific effect. Atoxyl and salvarsan have no effect. The treatment can be only symptomatic. To relieve the severe headache cold applications may be used, or, with prudence, small doses of antipyrin, or pyramidon, or Dover's powders. Large quantities of water should be drunk, so as to flush out the kidneys. The water may be slightly acidulated. Tepid sponging is useful and refreshing. When the temperature rises above 103° F., cold sponging should be used, and, if necessary, the cold bath or cold pack. Should the pulse become small and irregular, cardiac stimulants must be administered. The room should be darkened, and the patient kept undisturbed.

The diet should be liquid, chiefly milk and broths. Alcoholic stimulants may be indicated in some cases.

Prophylaxis.—This consists in avoiding as much as possible localities where the ticks are abundant, and destroying these arachnids. A tick should be removed by applying ammonia, turpentine, kerosene, or carbolyzed vaseline, and then the bite may be cauterized with pure carbolic acid. Some authorities advise the internal administration of quinine, but this does not prevent the development of the fever.

TSUTSUGAMUSHI DISEASE.

Synonyms.—Japanese River fever, Flood fever, Island disease (Shima disease), Kedani disease ('kedani' is the hair-louse), Akamushi disease ('mushi' is the Japanese for a bug or insect; 'akamushi' means 'red insect'), Shima mushi disease (Island bug disease), Tochu-bio, Shashitsu.

Definition.—Tsutsugamushi disease is an acute endemic febrile disorder caused by the bite of a mite, *Trombidium akamushi* Brumpt 1910, producing a small local necrotic area, painful enlargement of the proximal lymphatic glands, and an exanthematous eruption.

History.—Tsutsugamushi disease is said by Ashburn and Craig to have been mentioned under the term 'shashitsu' in Chinese writings more than one thousand years ago, when it was described as a fever due to the bite of a mite, which produced a pustule in summer-time in people who entered those parts of the country which had been flooded by the spring rains. The Japanese literature on the subject is considerable, but the descriptions written in European languages are not extensive, the earliest contributions being by Palm in 1878 and Baelz in 1879, while Ashburn and Craig, in 1908, give an excellent account of the disease and its causation, together with a comparison with the spotted fever of the Rocky Mountains.

Climatology.—The geographical distribution is limited to the island Nippon, of Japan, where it is confined to the districts Akita-ken and Nugata-ken ('ken' means a 'district'), in which certain lands are flooded in June, in the former district by the Rivers Omonogawa and Minasegawa, and in the latter by the Rivers Shinanogawa, Akagawa, Uwonumagawa, and Hajadegawa. Further, it is limited to certain parts of the regions flooded by these rivers. The floods only last a few days, and the regions do not become dangerous till after a few weeks, when a red mite appears, which may attack any person entering these places. In fact, so great is this danger that the lands have been abandoned, except by the very poor, who enter them in order to cultivate hemp or corn, or to gather mulberry-leaves to feed silkworms. The disease is to a limited extent transportable with corn, hemp, and other articles. It occurs most frequently from the middle of July to October.

Ætiology.—The causation of the disease is not known, but there are three theories which have been supported by various investigators.

These theories are :—

1. *The Bacterial Theory.*—Many bacteria have been described as the cause of the disease, the first being a *Proteus*, found by Bälz and Takana, associated with staphylococci and streptococci in the lungs, sputum, and urinary sediment.

2. *The Protozoan Theory.*—Ogata considers that the cause of the disease is a *Plasmodium*, which he states he has found in the blood of numerous patients. Ogata's observations have not been confirmed.

3. *The Chemical Theory.*—Tanaka believes that the true cause is a toxin contained in the body of the mite, and introduced by its bite. Further investigation will probably reveal that the disease is of protozoal origin.

The only certain facts which we know concerning the ætiology of this disease is that the symptoms follow the bite of the larva of *Trombidium akamushi* Brumpt, and that immunity is not conferred by an attack. This larva (akamushi), which, though bright red or orange in colour, is so small that it is almost invisible to the naked eye, is found in large numbers on the inner surfaces of the ears of field-mice (*Arvicola natanedzumi* Sasaki) caught in July and August in the infected regions. The akamushi of other regions do not cause the disease, which, of course, is against the chemical theory as to the ætiology. Miyajima claims to have infected monkeys by inoculating blood derived from a person suffering from the disease, and also by the bites of the mites. Mice and guinea-pigs are said to be immune—a statement which, however, is opposed by Ogata.

Only poor people enter the infected lands during the months of July to October, and as any person who does so is liable to infection, the disease is mostly found among the poor.

Pathology.—The post-mortem reveals a small ulcer, sometimes still covered by an eschar at the site of the bite, and enlargement of the proximal lymphatic glands. The spleen is enlarged and softened, the lungs are œdematous and congested, and the bronchial mucosa is often slightly swollen and reddened, and the kidneys are inflamed. We are not acquainted with any description of the histology of the organs.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period varies from four to ten days (4-7 Scheube), during which there may be a feeling of prostration, giddiness, and general malaise, but definite prodromata are wanting.

The disease begins with a chill and rigors, accompanied by severe pain in the forehead and temples, and a sensation of weakness, while the temperature quickly rises to 101° to 103° F. The patient usually complains of pain in certain enlarged lymphatic glands, which, on inspection, are found to be tender, quite distinct from one another, and freely movable under the skin. A search in the region drained by these glands may reveal a circular vesicle, measuring 2 to 4 millimetres in diameter, but more usually one or more black or brownish necrotic areas of skin, surrounded by a dullish red areola, are found. These areas indicate the sites of the bites of the mite.

The temperature continues to rise during the next few days, reaching a maximum in the second week, when it may be as high as 105° F. During this time the eschar has been thrown off the necrotic area, and reveals a circular punched-out ulcer, the periphery of which is red and infiltrated, but not painful nor tender. About the fifth to the seventh day an eruption appears on the

face in the form of large red papules, which may become confluent on the cheeks, giving the face a swollen appearance. From this situation the eruption spreads all over the body, but more in the form of maculæ than papules. These maculæ, which are 2 to 5 millimetres in diameter, fade on pressure, but quickly return when the pressure is removed, and do not itch. Between the spots on the trunk and forearms follicular papules may be noted, but the eruption is not so well marked on the arms and thighs.

At first the pulse is full, and not very rapid, varying from 80 to 100 per minute; later it may become small and quick, and at times dicrotic. The first cardiac sound is often impure, and the transverse diameter of the cardiac dulness may be increased.

In the blood the red cells are found to be diminished, and the hæmoglobin proportionately reduced. In mild cases there is often an increase in the large mononuclear leucocytes and lymphocytes, but in severe cases the total number of leucocytes is often diminished, though there may be a relative polymorphonuclear increase.

The tongue is at first moist and slightly coated, but later it becomes dry, brown in the centre, and glazed at the tip and edges. The gums in some cases are spongy, and bleed, while sordes may collect on the teeth, and a few punctiform spots be noted on the palate. The epigastrium and left hypochondrium are tender; the liver, however, is not as a rule palpable, though the spleen is usually slightly enlarged.

The nose and throat are normal, but the rate of the respirations is increased, and the breath-sounds are harsh and accompanied by rhonchi, which can be heard all over the chest. Usually there is a certain amount of coughing, but the expectoration is scanty.

The urine is diminished in quantity, high-coloured, and may contain albumin, and often gives the diazo-reaction. Strangury may occur.

The conjunctivæ are early injected, a feature which becomes more marked as the disease progresses, and is associated with lachrymation.

From the very first there is a great hyperæsthesia all over the body, and there may be delirium at night, and difficulty in hearing.

About the fourteenth day of the illness the eruption begins to fade and the fever to remit, and in the next five or six days the temperature falls by lysis to normal, and, the general condition rapidly improving, convalescence begins. Recovery is usually quick, and by the twenty-first day from the commencement of the attack the patient is well.

In bad cases, however, coma and hyperpyrexia may develop in the second week, and cause the death of the patient. In other cases death may be caused by complications, which may arise either in the second week or during convalescence.

Varieties.—Severe types of the disease end in death about the ninth to the fifteenth day from hyperpyrexia, cardiac failure, pulmonary œdema, or from complications. Mild types, showing

only the bite and the enlargement of the lymphatic glands, and associated with but little fever or eruption, quickly end in recovery.

Complications.—The commonest complications are parotitis, melæna, mania, and cardiac failure with pulmonary œdema.

Diagnosis.—The differential diagnosis from Rocky Mountain spotted fever and typhus has already been discussed (p. 945). At the onset—when the inguinal or other lymphatic glands are enlarged and painful—plague might be suspected. The presence of the necrotic area, and, in any doubtful case, the microscopical examination of the gland juice, which in plague contains numerous bi-polar staining bacilli, will enable a diagnosis to be made.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is good in the young, and in second and third attacks, which are always milder than the first. It, however, gets worse as age progresses, and especially in first attacks. The mortality is about 30 per cent., but increases markedly with age, being only 12.5 per cent. in the first, and 57 per cent. in the seventh decade of life.

Treatment.—Quinine is generally administered, but it does not influence the fever to any marked extent. Salvarsan might be tried. Narcotics may be required to combat the sleeplessness, and constipation must be relieved by purgatives and enemata. Phenacetin, antipyrin, and salicylates are generally badly borne by the patient.

Prophylaxis.—The prophylaxis consists in the avoidance of the infective regions during the months of July to October inclusive, while the cultivation of the infected regions, and especially the planting of *Eucalyptus globulus* and *Paulownia imperialis*, are advised, as well as the smearing of the exposed parts of the body with eucalyptus oil and balsam of Peru, which are said to keep away the mites.

The natives believe that the manuring of the infected lands with human fæces for three consecutive years will make them free from the mites, provided there is no flooding during that period.

THE TICK FEVER OF MIANA.

Definition.—A specific fever of unknown cause, brought about by the bite of a tick (*Argas persicus* Oken 1818).

Historical.—Dupré, in 1809, first described this disease, stating that the bite of *A. persicus*, locally known as 'Guerib-guez,' 'Garib-guez,' 'Miané-bug,' or 'punaise de Miana' (Mallet de Mianéh), was at times dangerous, producing prolonged illness. Kotzebué, in 1819, stated that the natives were immune, and only foreigners suffered. Fischer de Waldheim, in 1823, said that the bite was fatal, and Heller, in 1858, described the effects as being caused by the mechanical injury of the bite of the tick. Taschenburg, in 1873, considered the symptoms to point to a disease, and not merely to the effects of the bite of the tick; and Schlimmer, in 1874, considered the immunity of the natives to be due to the fact that they had been bitten, and so become vaccinated. Mégnin, in 1882, showed that the bite *per se* was not dangerous, and later was supported by Fumouze and Loundsbury.

Ætiology.—The causation of the disease is quite unknown, but some virus must be inoculated when the tick bites, for the disease is apparently confined

to Persia; and the experiments of Mégnin, Loundsbury, and others show that in certain regions the effects of the bite are insignificant.

Manson thinks that this virus will some day be found to be a spirochæte, which, indeed, is not unlikely, as *A. persicus* is well known to be the carrier of *Spiroschaudinnia marchouxi* Nuttall 1904, which causes a very fatal disease in fowls. Native Persians probably develop a relative immunity due to previous slight infections, but new-comers suffer severely.

Symptomatology.—The knowledge of the symptoms of the disease is very meagre. Severe pain is felt at the site of the bite of the tick, and this is followed by remittent fever lasting from a few days to several weeks, delirium, convulsions, and even at times by death.

Treatment.—The treatment is entirely symptomatic, but salvarsan might be tried.

Prophylaxis.—According to Nuttall, the Persians burn their villages when they suffer severely from the attentions of the tick. In order, however, to devise a rational method of prophylaxis, it must be remembered that *A. persicus* is essentially a parasite of the domestic fowl and other birds, and that its eggs are laid in batches of 20 to 100 in cracks in the walls, and take three weeks to develop into the larva, which, after sucking blood, in eight days becomes the nymph. This may require several weeks before it becomes the adult, which is said to feed only once a month. After considering this life-history, it will be obvious that fowls should be disinfected with a kerosene emulsion, creozone, or oil of sassafras in the case of old birds, while young birds may be isolated in cages until the ticks drop off. Houses and fowl-houses should be cleansed and treated by lime and corrosive sublimate, and old nests and roosts should be burnt, and after that the new fowl-houses may be sprayed with kerosene emulsion.

THE INTERMITTENT TICK FEVER OF WYOMING.

Definition.—An intermittent fever due to the bite of *Dermacentor andersoni*.

History and Geography.—This fever was described by Kieffer in 1907 as being found at Fort D. A. Russell, in Wyoming, United States of America, but his account so far has not been confirmed.

Ætiology.—The fever comes on after the bite of *D. andersoni*—i.e., the same tick which causes the spotted fever of the Rocky Mountains—but no specific organism has so far been described.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period varies from three to seven days, after which the disease begins suddenly with a rigor, nausea, vomiting, and pains in the joints and muscles. The temperature rises between 103° and 104° F., and continues high for twenty-four to forty-eight hours, after which a remission of forty-eight hours occurs, and then another attack, and so on for three to seven attacks. Less frequently the attack resembles typhoid, with a ladder-like rising temperature and abdominal symptoms, but Widal's reaction is absent. There is marked decrease of the erythrocytes and hæmoglobin, and a slight lymphocytosis, due to increase in the number of the large mononuclear leucocytes.

Treatment.—Hypodermic injections of arsenic in some form are recommended as the best treatment for the disease. Salvarsan should be tried.

REFERENCES.

Spotted Fever of the Rocky Mountains.

- ANDERSON (1903). Spotted Fever (Tick Fever) of the Rocky Mountains. Hyg. Lab., U.S. Pub. Health and Mar. Hosp. Service, Wash., Bulletin 14.
 RICKETTS (1907). Transactions of the Chicago Pathological Society.
 RICKETTS (1909). Journal American Medical Association.

- RICKETTS (1909). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*.
 RICKETTS (1910). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*.
 RICKETTS (1909). *Bulletin Johns Hopkins Hospital*.
 WILSON AND CHOWNING (1904). *Studies in Pyroplasmosis Hominis. Journal of Infectious Diseases*, i. 31.

Tsutsugamushi Disease.

- ASHBURN AND CRAIG (1908). A Comparative Study of Tsutsugamushi Disease and Spotted or Tick Fever of Montana. *Philippine Journal of Science*, B., vol. iii., p. 1.
 BAELZ AND MAWAKAMI (1878). Die Japanische Fluss oder Ueberschwemmungsfieber. *Archiv für Path. Anat. Berlin. Virch. Archiv*, lxxviii. 373.
 OGATA (1906). Vorläufige Mitteilung über die Ätiologie der Tsutsugamushi (Kedani) Krankheit. *Deutsche Med. Wochensch.*, xlv. 1868.
 PALM (1878). Some Account of a Disease called Shima Mushi or Island Insect Disease by Natives of Japan. *Edinburgh Medical Journal*, p. 128.
 SCHEUBE (1885). Klinische Beobachtungen über die Krankheiten. Japan. *Virch. Archiv*, xcix. 368.
 SCHEUBE (1910). Die Krankheiten der Warmen Länder, p. 488. Jena.
 TANAKA (1899). Ueber Ätiologie und Pathogenië der Kedani Krankheit. *Centralb. f. Bakteriologie*, p. 432.

The Tick Fever of Miana.

- DUPRÉ (1809). Voyage en Perse fait dans les Années 1807, 1808, and 1809. Paris.
 FISCHER DE WALHEIM (1823). Notice sur l'Argas de Perse (Mallèt de Mianèh). *Mem. Soc. Imp. de Nat. de Moscow*, vi. 269.
 KOTZEBUE (1819). Voyage en Perse à la Suite de l'Ambassade Russe en 1817. Paris.
 LOUNSBURY (1903). *Agricultural Journal of Cape Town*, ix.
 NUTTALL (1899). On the Rôle of Insects, Arachnids, and Myriapods as Carriers in the Spread of Bacterial and Parasitic Diseases of Man and Animals. *Johns Hopkins Hosp. Reports*, vol. viii., p. 46.
 NUTTALL (1908). *Ticks*. Cambridge.
 SCHLIMMER (1874). Terminologie Médico-Pharmaceutique et Anthropologique Française-Persane sur les Maladies Endémiques et Particulières les plus intéressants des Habitants de la Perse. Teheran.

The Intermittent Tick Fever of Wyoming.

- KIEFFER (1907). *Journal of American Medical Association*, April 6.

CHAPTER XXXIII

THE KALA-AZARS

Indian kala-azar—Infantile kala-azar—Tropical febrile splenomegaly—
Tropical afebrile splenomegaly—References.

INDIAN KALA-AZAR.

Synonyms.—Kala Dukh, Dum-Dum fever, Non-Malarial Remittent fever, and Cachectic fever.

Definition.—A subacute or chronic specific febrile disease caused by *Leishmania donovani* R. Ross 1903, and possibly spread by means of some *Clinocoridae*.

History.—In 1869, when the district of the Garo hills was first occupied by the British, a disease believed to be a very severe form of malarial cachexia was found to be endemic. This disease the Garos called 'kala-azar,' which means the black fever, so named from the appearance of the victims. In 1875 it began to spread, and became epidemic, and by its high death-rate attracted attention. In 1882 the first account of the disease was published by Clarke from notes of 120 cases compiled by McNaught, the Civil Medical Officer of the district. In 1889, when it had spread into Assam, following the lines of human intercommunication, Giles investigated the epidemic, and concluded that it was agchylostomiasis. In 1894 Stephens, in his yearly report, stated that the disease, though allied to, was distinct from malaria. In 1897 Rogers reported that it was malarial, and this was further supported by Ross in 1899. In 1902 Bentley ascribed the disease to *Micrococcus melitensis*, on the basis of serum reactions.

Up to this point the history of the disease remarkably resembles the present history of blackwater fever. A change now comes over the ætiology, for, in 1900, Sir William Leishman found the parasites already described under the heading *Leishmania donovani* in films taken post mortem from the spleen of a soldier who died in Netley from fever contracted at Dum-Dum, but he did not publish this discovery till 1903. In July, 1903, Donovan observed the same parasite in blood obtained by splenic puncture performed during life. In 1904 Christophers published a valuable report on the parasite and the disease, and in the same year Rogers observed the development of the parasite into a flagellate organism when splenic blood was incubated at 22° C. in citrate of soda solution. In 1907 Patton showed that the parasite could be found in numbers

lying in the leucocytes in the peripheral blood, and, further, that it became flagellated in the alimentary canal of bugs. In 1905 Pianese found similar parasites in cases of splenomegaly in children in the South of Italy, and afterwards Nicolle made the same observation in Tunis (see p. 362), but this condition is now considered to be a separate disease.

In addition to the above-named investigators, much work has been done by Sir Patrick Manson, Low, Statham, and others.

Climatology.—Kala-azar is endemic in parts of India, especially on the East, in Assam, Madras, and Calcutta, but can at times become epidemic. It is also found in Arabia, Ceylon, Burma, Indo-China, and China. In North Africa it is known in the Sudan and Egypt, while a similar condition has been reported in Tunis and Algeria, in Sicily, in Crete, and other islands of the Mediterranean. Probably it is much more widespread than is at present known.

Ætiology.—The parasite *Leishmania donovani* is the cause of the disease, and it is possibly introduced into the human body by the bite of some species of the Clinocoridæ. Donovan is inclined to implicate a *Conorhinus* (*C. rubro-fasciatus* de Geer).

It is interesting to note that Lafont has found a trypanosome in *C. rubro-fasciatus* in Réunion and Mauritius (*vide* p. 345).

The predisposing causes appear to depend upon, and be capable of explanation by, the habits of bugs, as shown by Patton. Thus the disease, when epidemic, always spreads relatively slowly along channels of human intercommunication, and apparently is directly due to the introduction of an infected human being into the district. It runs in families, in which children particularly suffer, while the class of people who are mainly affected are the poorer sections of the European and native communities. Season and sex appear to have no influence, but there is no doubt about the infection of the dwelling, nor of the capability of the disease spreading from one dwelling to another.

Pathology.—Introduced into the body, the parasite appears to enter the endothelial cells of a capillary bloodvessel or lymphatic, and to grow therein, and to increase in numbers by simple fission until a very large number—Leishman says upwards of 220—may be counted in one cell. The organs principally affected in this manner are the liver, spleen, bone-marrow, and lymphatic glands, and, to a less extent, the pancreas, kidneys, suprarenals, testicles, and lungs.

The parasites may now escape from the enclosing cell by rupture, and are then taken up by the leucocytes, particularly by the polymorphonuclears, but also by the mononuclears and rarely by the eosinophiles, by means of which they appear in the peripheral blood even in early cases, but are much more common late in the disease, especially if there is diarrhœa due to ulceration of the intestine, in which condition the polymorphonuclear leucocytes are increased in numbers in the peripheral blood, and many of them contain parasites. The further development takes place in the bug, and has been already described, but the full life-cycle has still to be worked out.

By some means or other the parasite irritates the organ it infects, causing marked changes in the spleen, liver, and bone-marrow, and also causing ulceration of the intestine and skin.

The Blood.—The examination of the blood is most important because, firstly, the parasite may be found in a leucocyte if carefully looked for, even in the early stages of the disease; secondly, the leucocytic changes are of the utmost importance. There is marked anæmia—54·2 per cent. of Rogers' cases giving from 4,000,000 to 2,500,000 corpuscles per cubic millimetre—and the hæmoglobin is reduced in proportion to the erythrocytes, the colour-index being normal. There is a most marked leucopenia, and Rogers reports that in 42·1 per cent. of his cases the leucocytes were 1,000 or less, in 30·3 per cent. 1,000 to 2,000, and in 22·6 per cent. 2,000 to 3,000. The proportion of white to red, according to the same author, is less than 1 : 1,500 in 67·9 per cent., or, if inflammatory cases are excluded, in nearly 90 per cent. of the cases he examined. There is a reduction in the polymorphonuclear leucocytes and in the eosinophiles, and an increase in the mononuclear leucocytes and lymphocytes. The diminution of the polymorphonuclear leucocytes is thought to explain the tendency to bacterial infections. The coagulability of the blood is decreased, which explains the tendency to hæmorrhage, and renders splenic puncture very dangerous. The alkalinity of the blood has been shown by Archibald to be diminished—a fact which may be of some secondary diagnostic importance.

The Urine.—The urine in our cases did not show anything abnormal.

Morbid Anatomy.—The body is much emaciated, and there is marked muscular atrophy, together with œdema, enlargement of the spleen, and often of the liver, ulceration of the skin and intestine, sometimes hæmorrhage in various places, and generally the presence of some complication. The spleen is greatly enlarged, firm, and deep red in colour, though it may at times show malarial pigment. The capsule and septa are thickened, and the whole organ is congested with blood, and contains numerous mononuclear cells and macrophages full of parasites.

In the liver, which may or may not be enlarged, the most marked changes are in the intralobular capillaries, which are dilated and contain macrophages, derived from their endothelial wall, full of parasites, while the liver cells are atrophied and degenerated. Cirrhosis has been noted in some cases.

The bone-marrow contains numerous parasites in the usual cells, and, as in malaria, the yellow marrow is converted into red, and is soft and diffuent. The skin may show papules and ulcers, in which the parasites can be found, while the colon is often ulcerated, or shows the cicatrices of old ulcers.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period appears to be very variable, and, indeed, it is difficult, in a chronic disease of this nature, to decide when it first begins. It is said to range from three weeks to several months.

The onset may be heralded by a rigor, which may be repeated

daily, and by an attack of irregular, high, remittent fever, which may early show two remissions per diem in a four-hourly temperature chart. This double remission is considered by Rogers to be almost diagnostic of the disease. Towards the end of the third to sixth week of the fever the temperature declines, and the initial stage of the disease may be said to have terminated. During this period, however, the spleen and liver will have enlarged, and may be both painful and tender. Headache is present at times, but is not severe. Nausea and vomiting are unusual, while the bowels are regular, and there is no abdominal distension. The pulse may be slow or quick.

The attack, however, may begin with a continuous fever, which shows two fluctuations in the twenty-four hours, which Rogers considers as almost diagnostic of the disease. In other cases the disease may begin with gastro-intestinal disturbances or with dysenteric symptoms, or quietly, without any marked initial stage, the patient gradually developing an enlarged liver and spleen, anæmia and weakness.

The course of the disease, after the decline of the temperature, is marked by what is called an apyrexial interval; but it appears that—in some cases, at all events—there is a slight daily rise of temperature, not exceeding 100° F. After some weeks this apyrexial interval ends in an attack of fever resembling the onset.

Periods of apyrexia and pyrexia now alternate with one another, while the spleen, and sometimes the liver, enlarge. Anæmia commences and increases, while asthenia not merely appears, but deepens, until the wretched patient presents the typical appearance, which may be described as follows:—He is thin and wasted, with the abdomen much swollen and protuberant, the chest so thin that the ribs show clearly, the arms and legs wasted, the cheeks sunken, the nose sharp, and the ankles puffy, while the skin and tongue are often



FIG. 444.—INDIAN KALA-AZAR.

The distension of the abdomen by the greatly enlarged spleen should be noted. (Photograph of a case in the Tropical Clinic, Colombo.)

distinctly darker than they should be, the former being furfuraceous.

On examining the swollen abdomen, the enlarged spleen may be felt reaching almost to the pelvis, while the enlargement of the liver may be marked or may be absent. In this condition intestinal disturbances in the form of diarrhoea or dysenteric attacks are common, and may be due to the actual disease or to complication with true dysentery. Dyspeptic symptoms may also be present.

Hæmorrhages may occur from the nose, the gums, the stomach, the bowels, or under the skin. Papular eruptions are to be seen, especially on the thighs, and ulcers may be present. The weakened, emaciated patient may now die of asthenia, but more usually the long-drawn-out illness is brought to a close by some complication. The total duration varies from about seven months to two years, and generally ends fatally.

Complications.—It appears as though the reduction in the number of the polymorphonuclear leucocytes laid the patient open to invasion by pathogenic bacteria, for septic infections, such as cancrum oris, or lung infections—for example, pneumonia, phthisis, and pleurisy—or abdominal troubles of the nature of diarrhoea, dysentery and cystitis, are not uncommonly met with, and may cause the death of the patient. Sometimes, after a severe attack of septicæmia or some other complication, the disease is found to be cured, but this is rare.

Diagnosis.—The only certain method of diagnosis is to find the parasite, and as Donovan and Patton have reported its frequent occurrence, even in early stages, in the peripheral blood, this should be possible, especially if aided by dilution with normal saline solution, and centrifugalization and examination of the leucocytes. In our experience, the search for the parasite in the leucocytes of the peripheral blood requires an extremely long time, and is often negative. If the parasites cannot be found in the blood, an attempt may be made to find them by the examination of the exudate obtained by exciting artificial pustulation of the skin by some irritant, as suggested by Major Cummins. Failing this, there is puncture of the spleen or of the liver, and withdrawal of blood, which can be examined by the microscope. The diagnostic puncture of the spleen in the tropics is, however, not to be undertaken lightly, because splenic enlargement due to leukæmia is by no means unknown, and puncture of the spleen in this disease, or, indeed, in that of chronic malaria, may lead to most unfortunate results. The blood of the peripheral circulation should therefore be examined to exclude leukæmia.

Certainly, the first thing to do is to examine the peripheral blood and exclude leukæmia. Secondly, the coagulability of the blood should be tested by Wright's method, and if found to be decreased, the puncture should not be performed. Thirdly, if the puncture is to be carried out, the liver should be chosen for exploration, not the spleen, particularly in the later stages, in which hæmorrhages

are to be feared. In the early stages there may not be so much risk, but it must be done with the greatest care, aseptically, and the patient must be kept at rest for some time afterwards, the site of puncture being covered with an aseptic pad and a firm bandage. The syringe should be sterile, and *perfectly dry*. Rogers recommends that a dose of 30 grains of calcium chloride in a couple of ounces of water be administered directly after a puncture, in order to promote coagulability of the blood.

In the early stages the diagnosis has to be principally made from acute malaria and typhoid, when the positive signs in favour of kala-azar are: (1) Presence of the characteristic daily double remission of the fever; (2) absence of constitutional symptoms, proportional to the severity of the fever; (3) absence of malarial parasites and Widal's reaction, though, of course, the latter reaction is negative in true typhoid during the first week; (4) marked enlargement of the spleen; (5) great leucopenia, especially in relation to the erythrocytes, which, however, may also be found in typhoid and malaria; (6) increase in mononuclear leucocytes; (7) presence of *Leishmania donovani* in the leucocytes.

In advanced cases the diagnosis has to be made from malarial cachexia and agchylostomiasis by (1) the presence of *Leishmania donovani* in the leucocytes of the peripheral blood, or in the juice from the liver and spleen; (2) by the absence of the typical febrile attacks of subtertian or tertian fever; (3) by the absence during the febrile attack of malarial parasites; (4) by the absence of agchylostomes, or, if they are present, by the continuation of the symptoms after their expulsion. Mixed infections of kala-azar and malaria may occur.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is extremely bad, for the mortality appears to vary from 70 per cent. with vigorous quinine treatment to 98 per cent. without this. It is true that some people recover after having nearly died from a complication, or, more rarely, without this episode, but why they recover is not known.

Leucocytosis and increase of the polymorphonuclears are considered to be good signs, while leucopenia and polymorphonuclear decrease are bad signs. Complications, of course, increase the gravity of the prognosis.

Treatment.—The aim of the treatment is to kill the parasites, and for this purpose Manson and Low recommended the trial of intramuscular injections of atoxyl every day or every other day in doses of 3 grains. Manson has reported two successful cases.

Rogers recommends large doses of quinine—*i.e.*, 60 to 90 grains per diem, to be given until the temperature falls and becomes of a low, intermittent type, and then 20 grains every morning.

In our experience the best treatment is the administration of quinine in massive doses by intramuscular injections, supplemented by a course of quinine cacodylate injections, or atoxyl injections. One of our patients apparently recovered on a treatment of quinine sulphate (30 grains) and euquinine (30 grains)

daily by the mouth, together with a daily intramuscular injection of quinine hydrochloride (15 grains) alternating with one of quinine cacodylate (4 grains). Manson has advised antimonial preparations, and Roger a staphylococcal vaccine. Salvarsan has been tried with little success.

The further treatment is purely symptomatic; thus parasites such as agchylostomes, ascarides, etc., must be got rid of. The patient should have good hygiene and good food. Hæmorrhagic symptoms should be treated by calcium chloride, and diarrhœa and dysenteric symptoms require the remedies mentioned under Dysentery, Chapter LIII.

The question whether inoculation with the scrapings of a Delhi boil does any good has not yet been answered. Some authorities have recommended senega or *Quillaia saponaria* (soap bark), because of the saponin contained therein. Archibald has recommended calcium lactate in order to increase the alkalinity of the blood.

Prophylaxis.—It would appear as though prophylaxis should be conducted on the lines of bug extermination, already described in Chapter XXIII., and some attempts on these lines have apparently been somewhat successful. It appears that, in contrast to what is the case with infantile kala-azar, dogs are not carriers of the disease.

INFANTILE KALA-AZAR.

Synonyms.—Febrile splenic anæmia (Fede). *Anæmia infantum a Leishmania* (Pianese), *Leishmania anæmia* (Jemma and di Cristina), *Marda tal biccia* (Malta), *Ponos* (Greece), *Malattia da mensa* (Sicily).

Definition.—Infantile kala-azar is a subacute or chronic specific disease due to *Leishmania infantum* Nicolle, and clinically closely resembling Indian kala-azar, but occurring in childhood.

Historical.—Fede several years ago described in Italy a form of splenic anæmia among young children characterized by irregular fever, progressive anæmia, and a fatal ending. He considered it a disease by itself, separating it from the non-febrile type of splenic anæmia. Pianese in 1905 called attention to the similarity of the symptoms of Fede's splenic anæmia with kala-azar, and described parasitic bodies in the spleen of the affected children morphologically identical with *Leishmania donovani*. Later Nicolle suggested for the disease the name of 'infantile kala-azar,' and completed the study of the parasite, which he called *Leishmania infantum*. Gabbi considers the disease to be identical with Indian kala-azar, having found it also among adults. A fuller account of the history will be found on p. 362.

Climatology.—The malady is met with in Southern Europe and in the northern regions of Africa. Future investigations will probably show that it is endemic in many other countries.

Ætiology.—The malady is due to *Leishmania infantum* Nicolle. The description of this parasite will be found on p. 362. Nicolle has succeeded in reproducing the disease in monkeys, and less typically in dogs. He has also found that dogs may be spon-

taneously affected with *L. infantum*; in fact, in his opinion, the dog acts as a reservoir of the virus, and its ectoparasites, such as fleas, may possibly serve as the transmitting agents to human beings. These views have been tested experimentally by Basile with satisfactory results.

The majority of the cases occur in young children of two to three years of age, among whom there is a slight preponderance of males, and often occurs in more than one member of a family, and more often it begins in the spring or early summer.

Pathology.—The pathology has been carefully studied by Pianese, who finds that the post-mortem lesions are similar to those observed in Indian kala-azar, the spleen and liver being greatly enlarged. Microscopically, there is great increase of the lymphoid tissue in

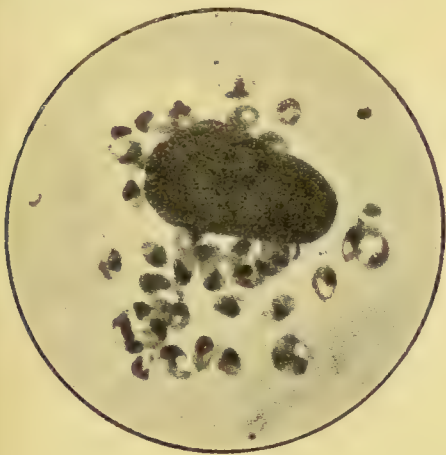


FIG. 445.—*LEISHMANIA INFANTUM*
NICOLLE.
(After Marzinowsky.)



FIG. 446.—CHILD SUFFERING FROM
INFANTILE KALA-AZAR.
(After Marzinowsky.)

the spleen and hypertrophy of the islands of Langerhans in the pancreas. In the bone-marrow there is hyperproduction of the myeloid and lymphoid tissues.

Symptomatology.—The disease begins in a very insidious manner, and is usually first noticed when the child has some disturbance of the alimentary canal, such as an attack of vomiting and diarrhoea, when the spleen may or may not be found to be enlarged; and as the child is anæmic and has a very irregular fever, the complaint was wont to be diagnosed as malaria, especially as some seizures are apt to come on suddenly, and to be associated with rigors.

The child becomes pale, ceases to be interested in its games, and suffers from attacks of diarrhoea alternating with periods of constipation, from attacks of irregular fever separated by apyrexial intervals, and from epistaxis.

After the above symptoms have lasted some time, the spleen begins to enlarge, and presently protrudes from under cover of the ribs; the attacks of fever become more marked; hæmorrhages from

the nose and gums and into the skin are seen, and the diarrhœic or dysenteric attacks become pronounced. The child now wastes and becomes progressively anæmic; the face, conjunctiva, and whole body taking a peculiar white tinge, and the disease may be said to be fully established.

With regard to the special symptoms, the fever is very irregular, with exacerbations sometimes twice a day—in the morning and in the evening—and sometimes several times a day. High temperatures at times appear in cycles, or there may be sudden falls to subnormal temperatures.

The alimentary canal is always disturbed, but the appetite is preserved, and may even be increased, although the little patient is suffering from alternate attacks of diarrhœa and constipation; but this is not always so, and some observers have recorded anorexia. The motions may be very foul, containing undigested food, and at times blood and mucus. Ulcerative stomatitis, and even noma, may occur, and the last may appear on the face or on the genitalia. Noma appears to be not uncommon in Greece.

The spleen, as stated above, is always enlarged from the time of the full establishment of the symptoms, but this enlargement is not stationary. On the contrary, it steadily increases until an enormous size is sometimes reached, so that it fills the left side of the abdomen and projects across the median line into the right half, causing the abdomen to bulge and become prominent. On palpation it is found to move, and notches may be felt through the attenuated abdominal wall. It moves with the respiratory movements, and may be altered in position from side to side, and up and down by manipulation. There is not, however, any constant relationship between the progress of the disease and the size of the spleen. Jemma, Di Cristina and Critien state that it diminishes with a persistent and profuse diarrhœa, especially during the last few days of life.

There is not always a concord between the temperature and the pulse-rate; on the contrary, the latter is almost constantly rapid, even during the apyrexial intervals, but may rise to 150 to 160 beats per minute during attacks of fever. Hæmic murmurs may occur over the heart, but are rare. The blood is pale, and shows a decrease in the number of erythrocytes (1,500,000 to 3,000,000), and in the hæmoglobin (below 50 per cent.), which, however, is reduced in proportion to the red corpuscles; and also in the leucocytes (1,500 to 3,000), though the leucocytic formula is mononuclear (70 to 80 per cent.), being especially composed of medium-sized cells. The mononuclears are increased at the expense of the polymorphonuclear cells, which make up the remaining 20 to 30 per cent. There is usually some poikilocytosis and anisocytosis, but nucleated cells are rare or absent. The opsonic index is diminished below that which is normal for a healthy child, and is especially low for *Bacillus coli communis*, which is held to be responsible for the frequency of the intestinal symptoms. Œdemas of

the face, hands, genitalia, and feet, coming on suddenly and disappearing suddenly, are not unusual; they have a tendency to bilateral symmetry, but are influenced by the position of the patient, and may occur at any stage of the disease. At times they are painful and may show signs of inflammation.

The liver is very generally enlarged, but to a much less extent than the spleen. On palpation, its edge is felt to be smooth and hard, and is not tender.

As the spleen and liver enlarge, the abdomen also enlarges and becomes prominent, while the superficial veins may stand out distinctly, and there may be a slight degree of ascites at times.

The urine is usually normal, but there may be slight signs of albuminuria, or a decrease in the output of urea. The lymphatic glands are as a rule not enlarged.

The mental and physical activity of the child decreases as the disease progresses; it emaciates, and becomes extremely pallid, thereby assuming a prematurely aged appearance. The bones become evident, especially the ribs and shoulder-blades, and the child dies from exhaustion, often due to an attack of dysentery or diarrhoea. Spontaneous recovery may take place, but this is rare.

Complications.—Respiratory complications are not unusual. Bronchitis is common, while broncho-pneumonia and pleurisy may occur, as may a rapidly developing fatal dyspnoea, which is probably due to oedema of the glottis. Perhaps noma, as already mentioned, is a fairly common complication in Italy and Greece, and should come in this place as a complication rather than a symptom of the disease. Otitis media has been recorded not merely as a complication, but also as a cause of death. Agchylostomiasis associated with lipuria has been recorded as a complication.

Diagnosis.—The symptoms more or less closely resemble those of kala-azar, but differ in that this disease occurs in children and is inoculable into dogs, while kala-azar occurs mostly in young adults and is not inoculable into dogs. The temperature chart may resemble that of kala-azar, but is generally more irregular. The characteristic clinical symptoms of the disease are the enlarged spleen, the irregular fever, and the pallor occurring in a child. The essential feature in the diagnosis is the parasite which may be obtained by splenic puncture, by liver puncture, by examination of the bone-marrow obtained by a modified trocar and cannula, as designed by Caccioppoli, to which a Potain's aspirator with a strong pump is attached; rarely by blood examination. Other methods are by vesication and examination of the fluid; and by lumbar puncture, if there are cerebral symptoms.

Having obtained the splenic or hepatic pulp, etc., the diagnosis may be obtained by microscopical examinations and by cultivation on the medium devised by Novy and McNeil, and modified by Nicolle, usually known as the N.N.N. medium.

It has been suggested by Cochrane that removal of one of the post-cervical lymphatic glands might be adopted as a diagnostic method. The removed

gland is cut, and a smear made, when numerous parasites may be seen. This method is said to be the most certain means of diagnosis. It is recommended that the glands be removed under the influence of a local anæsthetic.

Differential Diagnosis.—The differential diagnosis has to be made from kala-azar, undulant fever, enteric fever, malaria, other forms of splenic anæmia, and syphilis.

Kala-Azar.—This fever occurs in adults, and is characterized by the double daily rise of the temperature, and by the absence of successful inoculation into dogs. In this disease the spleen is not so markedly enlarged.

Undulant Fever.—In contrast to undulant fever, in infantile kala-azar the temperature is much less regular, never showing a typical undulating type; the enlargement of the spleen is much greater; the articular symptoms are lacking, and Wright's agglutination test is negative.

Enteric Fever.—From enteric, infantile kala-azar differs by the splenomegaly, by the irregular fever, by the absence of Widal's reaction.

Malaria.—The absence of the typical blood parasites, and the fact that quinine has no influence on the irregular fever, are points of diagnostic value.

Other Forms of Splenic Anæmia.—From the splenomedullary leukæmia infantile kala-azar is distinguished by the leucopenia; from syphilitic splenomegaly by the history and inutility of mercury and salvarsan; from the various types of infantile afebrile splenomegaly, by the fever and the presence of the parasite; from the splenomegaly found in rickety children, by the absence of deformity of the bones and by microscopical examination.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is decidedly unfavourable, but cases do recover spontaneously, as recorded by Nicolle and Spagnolio.

Treatment.—So far the treatment is most unsatisfactory, but the children should be removed, if possible, from the endemic areas, as this appears to have a beneficial effect.

Some of the remedies which have been used are atoxyl (15-centigramme doses), salvarsan, arsenophenylglycin, emetique of aniline, benzoate of mercury (2 to 4 milligrammes as a daily injection), senega, perchloride of mercury, electro-mercurol alone and with arseno-benzol, thiarsol (5 to 15 milligrammes by subcutaneous injection), arseniate of soda. Iron cacodylate associated with Röntgen-ray treatment has also been tried.

Splenectomy has been performed, but this can hardly have much influence on a disease in which the parasites are in the bone-marrow, liver, and lymphatic glands.

Prophylaxis.—The important findings of Nicolle and Basile indicate that the dog is the usual reservoir and fleas the usual carriers of the disease. If this is so, the examination of the dogs, together with the destruction of all infected dogs in an endemic region, is urgently necessary, while common cleanliness will diminish the breeding of the fleas in a house. It appears to us that Nicolle and

Basile have sufficiently indicated the possibilities of this method of infection being correct to make the simple methods of prophylaxis of such a fatal disease imperative even before the full proof of the researches has been obtained.

TROPICAL FEBRILE SPLENOMEGALY.

Synonyms.—Pseudo-kala-azar, Tropical splenomegaly, Esplenomegalia tropical (Columbia).

Definition.—A chronic irregular febrile disorder of unknown causation, characterized by splenic hypertrophy and gastro-intestinal disturbance, followed by emaciation.

History.—A form of febrile splenomegaly resembling kala-azar has been long known in the tropics; but the typical parasites of that infection cannot be found either during life or after death. Though well known, there is but little literature upon the subject. Woolley first gave an excellent account of the disease as seen in the Philippine Islands, and Day and Ferguson as seen in Egypt. We have repeatedly in local publications called attention to the disease in Ceylon. Recently Gabbi has ably described the disease in Italy.

Climatology.—The disease has been reported from India, Ceylon, Egypt, China, South America, the Philippines, Arabia, Tunis, Algiers, and Italy.

Ætiology.—The causation of the disease is quite unknown. Gabbi suggests that it may be a filterable virus.

Pathology.—It is thought probable that the disease may be a primary infection of the alimentary canal, and that the fibrosis is secondary, but we would rather distinguish this from the ordinary forms of polyfibrosis, and would consider that the seat of the disorder was in the spleen and liver, and that the alimentary canal signs were secondary.

Morbid Anatomy.—On post-mortem examination, the body is seen to be emaciated as a rule, but there may be œdema of the feet and legs, and there may be ascites if the liver is seriously affected. Upon opening the abdomen, the principal object of interest is the extremely enlarged firm spleen. The liver may be enlarged and smooth, and does not show the hobnailed appearance of alcoholic cirrhosis, while the lymphatic glands in various regions of the body may be slightly enlarged. The intestines show signs of catarrhal or ulcerative enteritis. The bone-marrow is diffuent and pale in colour. Hæmorrhages may at times be found in different parts of the body. Microscopical examination reveals hyperplasia of the lymphoid elements of the spleen, associated with hyperplasia of the fibrous tissue, dilatation of the vascular sinuses, and sometimes hæmorrhages. The microscopic examination of the liver shows the usual appearances of monolobular and polylobular cirrhosis. The bone-marrow is seen to be congested and hæmorrhagic, and the hyaline cells are increased, while the granular cells are reduced.

Symptomatology.—The onset of the disease is quite gradual and unnoticed by the patient, although at times a history of diarrhœa,

dysentery, or of attacks of fever may be obtained. Usually the patient comes to the hospital complaining of weakness and vague rheumatic pains, although he may come in the later stages because of the ascites. On examination, the patient is found to be more or less emaciated, and to have a large firm spleen projecting from under the ribs, and sometimes making a considerable protuberance of the thin abdominal wall. The amount of anæmia is usually not extreme, the average number of red corpuscles being between 2,500,000 and 3,500,000, while microcytes, megalocytes, and polychromatophilia are not unusual. The leucocytes are more or less normal. Frequently there is some fever of an irregular type, and there may be exacerbations, and at times there may be a double remission similar to that found in kala-azar; but there may be long periods of apyrexia. In addition, in a few cases there may be all the signs and symptoms of cirrhosis of the liver, with the abdomen distended from ascites.

By some authorities the disease has been subdivided into two stages—the first or splenic stage before, and the second or hepatic stage after, the hepatic cirrhosis. The first may last for many years, but the latter is much shorter, lasting a variable number of months, and ending fatally by the patient passing into a condition of coma, sometimes accompanied by jaundice. Death in the first stage is, in our experience, not rare, and may be due to hæmorrhages or exhaustion.

Complications.—Pregnancy is a serious complication, and may hasten the end, even after the child has been born. Agchylostomiasis and other parasitic diseases may occur along with tropical febrile splenomegaly.

Diagnosis.—The leading features of the disease are the great enlargement of the spleen, associated with wasting and irregular fever, in people in whom examination fails to reveal any obvious parasitic cause. Tropical febrile splenomegaly must be differentiated from kala-azar by the absence of *Leishmania donovani* in the spleen pulp as obtained by puncture. It can also be distinguished from chronic malaria by the absence of the typical parasites or pigment from the splenic juice, and from cirrhosis of the liver by the presence of the enlarged spleen. From leukæmia it is easily distinguished by the absence of a leucocytosis. From infantile kala-azar it may be distinguished by the absence of *Leishmania infantum*, as seen in the splenic juice. The disease can be distinguished from Banti's disease by the febrile attacks, and apparently splenic removal does not effect a cure.

Prognosis.—The illness is very chronic, but the prognosis is bad, as no cure is at present possible, and the patient tends to go from bad to worse.

Treatment.—Arsenical injections are the most valuable, and salvarsan may be tried. Removal from the endemic area is advisable.

Prophylaxis.—As the ætiology is unknown, nothing can be said under this heading.

AFEBRILE SPLENOMEGALY.

Synonym.—Pseudo-Banti's disease.

Definition.—A chronic afebrile disorder characterized by splenomegaly and severe anæmia.

History.—This disease is commonly known in the tropics, but there is no literature on the subject as far as we know.

Climatology.—We have observed it in tropical Africa, Ceylon, and India, and probably it will be found in many other places.

Symptomatology.—The disease begins insidiously in either children or adults, but usually the case is not observed until either the anæmia becomes well marked or the splenomegaly attracts attention. The symptoms are more or less severe anæmia and a painless firm enlargement of the spleen, without increase in size of the liver or other important signs. The blood shows the ordinary signs of a severe anæmia, but no parasites can be observed. There is no diarrhœa, and the mucosa of the mouth is not inflamed or ulcerated. The lungs are normal.

Diagnosis.—The disease can be differentiated from malaria by the absence of fever and of the absence of the parasites in the blood and spleen. From kala-azar by the absence of the parasites in the spleen; from forms of febrile splenomegaly by the absence of fever; from leucocythemia by the absence of the great increase of the white blood cells. From other forms of splenic anemia it may be differentiated by the absence of any history of rickets syphilis, etc.

Prognosis.—Patients appear to live for years.

Treatment.—This is purely symptomatic, but arsenic may be administered.

REFERENCES.

The most complete and valuable references, together with excellent descriptions of the history, clinical signs, and treatment of the Leishmaniasis, may be found in the *Kala-Azar Bulletin* (1911-1912), which was published separately by the Bureau of Sleeping Sickness, but is now merged in the *Tropical Diseases Bulletin*.

Indian Kala-Azar.

- CHRISTOPHERS (1904). Nos. 8 and 11, Scientific Memoirs of India.
 JAMES (1905). No. 19, Scientific Memoirs of India.
 LEISHMAN (1906). Allbutt and Rolleston's System of Medicine, vol. ii., part ii.
 MANSON (1908). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, II., iii. 147.
 MANSON AND LOW (1909). British Medical Journal, i. 843.
 NICOLLE (1908). Bulletin de la Société de Path. Exot., vol. i., No. 3.
 PATTON (1907). Nos. 27 and 31, Scientific Memoirs of India.
 ROGERS (1908). Fevers in the Tropics.

Infantile Kala-Azar.

- BANDI (1913). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
 GABBI (1908). Policlinico.
 NICOLLE AND CASSUTO (1907). Académie de Médecine.
 NICOLLE (1909). Annales Institut. Pasteur.
 NOVY (1908). The Journal of the British Medical Association.
 G. PIANESE (1905). Gazz. Internaz. Medicina.
 G. PIANESE (1909). Policlinico.
 VISENTINI (1913). Quart. Journal Micro. Science.

Tropical Febrile Splenomegaly.

- CASTELLANI AND CHALMERS (1910-11). Ceylon Medical Reports, etc.
 DAY AND FERGUSON (1909). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, iii. 3, 379. Liverpool.
 GABBI (1912). Malaria. Roma.
 WOOLLEY (1906). Philippine Journal of Science. Manila.

CHAPTER XXXIV

THE TRYPANOSOMIASSES

African trypanosomiasis—South American trypanosomiasis—References.

THE AFRICAN TRYPANOSOMIASSES (SLEEPING SICKNESS).

Synonyms.—Sleeping dropsy, Negro lethargy, Morbus dormitivus. *French*: Maladie du Sommeil. *German*: Afrikanische Schlafkrankheit, Trypanosomen Fieber. *Portuguese*: Doença de Sonno. *Italian*: Malattia del Sonno, Letargia dei Negri. Native names are very numerous—Lalangola, Láá La-negulo, N'tansi, Mongota, Kónje Márree, Kaodzera, Ndulu, Tula Manugina, Nelavare, Dadane, Toruahehue, etc.

Definition.—The African trypanosomiasis are acute or chronic specific infections, caused by *Trypanosoma gambiense* Dutton 1902, and disseminated chiefly by *Glossina palpalis* Robineau-Desvoidy, or caused by *T. rhodesiense* Stephens and Fantham 1910, and spread by *G. morsitans* Westwood 1850, and characterized by an inflammatory condition of the lymphatic system leading to meningo-encephalitis and meningo-myelitis. It is probable that there are other species of trypanosomes causing the disease.

History.—The earliest mention of sleeping sickness so far discovered is by John Atkins, in his little book entitled 'The Navy Surgeon,' published in 1734, in the appendix to which he describes 'the sleeping distemper,' common among the negroes on the Guinea Coast among whom he had travelled in 1721. In 1803 Winterbottom gave an interesting account of the disease as he met with it on the West Coast of Africa near Sierra Leone. His description is quite understandable, and he draws attention to the presence of the enlarged glands of the neck, the association of which with the disease was so well understood that slave-traders would not buy slaves who had enlarged glands.

In 1808 Moreau de Jonnés described the disease in negro slaves in the Antilles. In 1849 Clarke on the Gold Coast, Davis and Daniell on the Guinea Coast, and Ferreira, came across it at St. Thomas. During the next twenty years a number of observers described sleeping sickness, among whom it is important to note that Guérin met with it in 1869 in Martinique in negro slaves who had been imported from Africa. In 1876 Corre gave a good description of the disease as he knew it in Senegal.

In 1891 the first case was brought to London, and was studied by Sir Stephen Mackenzie; and in 1900 two more cases were brought to London, this time under the care of Sir Patrick Manson. The morbid anatomy of these cases was carefully studied by Dr. Mott, who has done so much to clear up the pathology of this disorder.

In 1901 Forde and Dutton found a trypanosome, *T. gambiense* Dutton 1902, in the blood of a patient suffering from a peculiar type of fever on the Gambia (Gambia fever, Dutton's disease). In 1902-03 Castellani in Uganda found a trypanosome in the cerebro-spinal fluid of persons suffering from sleeping sickness, and in 1903 reported that it was the ætiological basis of the disease. Low and Castellani gave a clinical account of the disorder which is largely followed in this chapter. They called attention to two constant symptoms which had not been remarked by previous observers, the fever and the peculiar tremors; and Christy published many interesting epidemiological features concerning the disease. In 1903 Sir David Bruce and Nabarro showed that the trypanosome was spread by *Glossina palpalis* Robineau-Desvoidy, a conclusion already reached by Sambon and Brumpt on epidemiological grounds. From 1903-05 much clinical, experimental, and epidemiological work was done by Dutton, Todd, and Christy, the Commissions of the Royal Society and various Governments, and by the members of the Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine. Kleine, in a series of important researches, has experimentally shown that *T. gambiense* undergoes a cycle of development in *G. palpalis*—a fact which has been fully confirmed and extended by Sir David and Lady Bruce, Hamerton and Mackie, and Miss Robertson, as well as Fraser and Duke.

Koch, Laveran, Mesnil, Minchin, Blanchard, Greig, Gray, Tullock, Kinghorn, Montgomery, Martin, Pittaluga, Lebœuf, and Roubaud, have all studied the disease and its epidemiology, and an International Conference was held in 1907 in London, and a Bureau for the study of the disease founded. This Bureau for some time issued monthly bulletins, which are most valuable to the student of the disease; but recently it has become converted into the Bureau of Tropical Diseases.

In 1910 Stephens and Fantham created a new species of Trypanosome (*T. rhodesiense* Stephens and Fantham 1910) for the parasites found in cases of sleeping sickness in the Luangeva Valley in Rhodesia, because the trophonucleus of a certain percentage of short forms was situate either close to, or even on the aflagellar side of, the kinetonucleus. In 1912 Kinghorn and Yorke showed that this Trypanosome was transmissible by *G. morsitans* Westwood 1850; and in the same year these observers pointed out the importance of the meteorological conditions on the development of the trypanosome in the fly. Further work has been done by Sanderson, Murray, Shircore and others. As regards the history of the treatment, arsenic was long ago considered beneficial for the trypanosomiasis of animals, Livingstone being the first to apply

the drug to a horse for the purpose of treating nagana. Since then it has been used for the same purpose by several persons, notably by Lingard (1893) for surra and by Bruce (1896) for nagana, while Laveran and Mesnil introduced sodium arseniate in 1902 for the same disease, E. J. Moore and Chichester advocated the use of hypodermic injections of arsenic, and Thomas and Breinl of the same of sodium arseniate. In the meanwhile Manson had treated several cases of sleeping sickness with arsenic (*liquor arsenicalis*); and Ehrlich and Shiga had treated various experimental trypanosomiasis with colouring compounds belonging to the benzo-purpurin group, of which trypan-red is the best known. Laveran and Mesnil also did some valuable researches on the subject. Thomas, in 1905, first brought the drug 'atoxyl' to the notice of the profession as a means of treatment of experimental trypanosome affections; and Kopke, in 1906, tried it in human beings affected with sleeping sickness.

The beneficial action of atoxyl in sleeping sickness was further confirmed by Broden, van Campenhout, Manson, Koch, and many others. In 1907 Ehrlich and his pupils, Franke and Roehl, discovered the very important fact that trypanosomes may, after a time, become atoxyl-resistant. Ehrlich therefore suggested mixed or alternating treatment with various preparations, and the same suggestion, though based on different grounds, was made by Moore, Nierenstein, and Todd. Plimmer and Thomas introduced tartar emetic, which has been found to be very beneficial, especially if associated with the atoxyl treatment.

Geography and Epidemiology.—The disease was first noticed on the West Coast of Africa at Sierra Leone, but was soon found to extend far southwards, and was also noted to be imported from this endemic area at times to the West Indies, where, however, it soon died out, becoming neither epidemic nor endemic. This fact clearly proved that, though the disease may be introduced by man along channels of intercommunication into a strange country, some other factor is necessary before it can spread from the infected new-comer to the inhabitants. This factor we now know to be a tsetse-fly.

In 1882 the disease had a geographical distribution from Senegal to Loando, and also to the islands of the Gulf of Guinea. Gradually, as civilization spread, it became known that the disease was not confined to the coast, but extended far inland. Thus, in 1898 it was known to be at Jebba, on the Upper Niger, and at the Stanley Falls, on the Upper Congo. In the meanwhile Stanley had travelled across Africa with a large number of Congolese followers, and had relieved Emin Pasha and his people at Wadelai, on the Victoria Nile. These followers of Emin Pasha, together with some of Stanley's expedition, who had settled in the country about Kavali, to the west of the Albert Nyanza, were brought by Sir F. Lugard, for political reasons, to Busoga and Uganda. It appears not improbable that Christy and Hodges are correct when they state that

they believe that the disease was carried from the Congo by Stanley's men, and that they and Emin Pasha's people brought the disease with them into Busoga and Uganda when they were moved from Kavali. But, be that as it may, the fact is clear that when, in 1900, the Cooks first noticed the disease in Uganda, it was widespread, and had been there for some time, and it seems probable that Busoga was infected in 1896. Certainly, in 1901, Mengo, the Sese Islands, and the western shores of the Victoria Nyanza, were infected, and the disease spread in 1902 to the eastern shores and to German East Africa.

In 1904-05 Dutton and Todd found that it had become widely disseminated throughout the Congo Free State, spreading by human agency along trade routes, and expressed the opinion that before long it would pass from the Congo into Eastern Rhodesia; and this prophecy appears to be coming true, though, the trypanosome found in Rhodesia being a different species, it is more probable that the disease has been endemic there, and not recognized for a long time. It appears also to be spreading northwards from Uganda, for Greig, in 1904, found it at Wadelai, on the Victoria Nile, but not as high as Nimuli. It invaded the Lado earlier than 1908, and in 1909 the disease was recognized definitely in the Bahr-el-Ghazal Province of the Sudan.

Therefore the distribution of the disease at the present time may be said to extend along the West Coast of Africa, from St. Louis, in Senegal, to Mossamedes, in Angola; from the coast to Timbuctu on the Niger; through the whole of the Congo into Uganda and Rhodesia; from Uganda and Busoga southwards to German East Africa; and northwards into the Bahr-el-Ghazal Province. The discovery of the tsetse-fly in Arabia makes it possible that the disease may some day still farther extend its area.

There does not appear to be any seasonal influence.

Ætiology.—From 1903 we have believed in the plurality of species of the trypanosomes affecting man in Africa. At the present time two species are generally accepted: *Trypanosoma gambiense* Dutton 1902, and *T. rhodesiense* Stephens and Fantham 1910. The latter species was till recently covered by the term *T. gambiense* and we think it probable that there are other species concealed under the name of *T. gambiense*. We have always considered the Uganda strain to be slightly different, at least as regards virulence, from the Gambia strain. Nor can the trypanosomes of the lower animals be completely excluded as a cause of human trypanosomiasis, for, though rarely, an infection appears possible. In support of this statement we quote the case of Professor Lanfranchi, who has never left Europe, but who has accidentally become infected with a laboratory strain of a trypanosome considered to be *T. brucei*, which was found in his blood by himself and by Finzi, one of his assistants, and this has been confirmed by Bertarelli and one of us. Notwithstanding this unfortunate accident, the Professor, with great fortitude, has carefully and scientifically studied his own

case in a most excellent manner. He suffered from irregular attacks of fever for about two years, and from general debility associated with large patches of cutaneous œdema, but his mind, after two years' infection, has remained perfectly clear and no drowsiness has developed, neither is there any tremor in the tongue or body. He has been treated at the Pasteur Institute in Paris by Martin with atoxyl and diemetique, and his blood has been thoroughly investigated by Mesnil and Blanchard; but at the time of writing these investigations have not been completed, and the species of trypanosome has so far not been definitely recognized.

T. gambiense Dutton 1902 probably lives in antelopes, and *T. rhodesiense* Stephens and Fantham 1910 in hartebeest, waterhogs, and domestic dogs. From these natural hosts or reservoirs the trypanosomes are conveyed to man, and from man to man, by the agency of certain tsetse-flies. *T. gambiense* is transmissible by *Glossina palpalis*, and to a less extent by *G. morsitans*, and *T. rhodesiense* by *G. morsitans*, in which flies they undergo a true cycle of development, as was first demonstrated by Kleine for *T. gambiense* and by Kinghorn and Yorke for *T. rhodesiense*.



FIG. 447.—TRYPANOSOMA IN CEREBRO-SPINAL FLUID.

Preparation from the cerebro-spinal fluid of a case of sleeping sickness.

Whether the trypanosomes infect the eggs, and so pass to a new generation of flies, as suggested by Sambon, or not, is at present unknown; but the influence of meteorological conditions, and especially atmospheric temperature, upon the development of the trypanosome in the fly, has been demonstrated by Kinghorn and Yorke, who have shown that it proceeds more rapidly at a high temperature.

The *Glossinæ*, when they bite a man or animal, inject into them the infective trypanosome which is living in their salivary glands, and this appears to be, from a practical point

of view, the only mode of infection, though Koch suggested that the disease may be spread by sexual intercourse, and other authorities through the agency of mosquitoes.

Sambon believes that the trypanosome will be found to infect the larvæ of the flies, and that the infection will be found to be due to the second generation; but at present there is no proof of this. For the description of the trypanosomes and of the flies, observations of the mode of infection, etc., Chapters XV. and XXV. should be consulted.

Race has not been noted to have any influence, and the predisposing influences of sex (female), as noted by Manson, and of age (young children), as noted by the French observers, require confirmation.

Occupation, however, has a considerable influence, for persons who live near the shores or work along the shores of lakes and streams, such as fishermen, are more liable than others to contract the type due to *T. gambiense*, because of the distribution of *glossina*

palpalis; and porters marching through fly-zones are very exposed to bites of the *glossinæ*.

Pathology.—The pathology of the disease has been mainly elucidated by Mott and the Portuguese Commission (Bettencourt, Kopke, Rezeide, and Maude), and appears to be a chronic inflammation of the lymphatic system, probably caused by toxins produced by *T. gambiense* or *T. rhodesiense*.

The trypanosome either enters the lymph-stream directly after the bite of the fly, and is blocked in the lymphatic glands, which it inflames, and through which it passes to the blood-stream and cerebro-spinal fluid, or, less probably, it enters the blood-stream first, and escapes by rupture of a capillary into a lymph gland. But the polyadenitis is not the only change induced, for the lymphatic tissues of the intestine (solitary or agminated glands) are also inflamed, and the heart and other organs infiltrated with lymphocytes. This stage is marked by fever, but sooner or later, as a result of this lymphatic disease, changes are induced in the membranes and substances of the brain and spinal cord (chronic meningo-encephalitis and meningo-myelitis), especially along the course of the vessels, which result in the proliferation of the neuroglia and in a lymphocytic accumulation around the vessels. These two processes compress the vessels, and lessen the supply of blood to the cells of the brain and spinal cord, in which, as the result of malnutrition, changes ensue, which produce the typical symptoms of the cerebral stage of the disease, which is often called 'sleeping sickness.' The trypanosome apparently cannot pass through the placenta, as infected women give birth to healthy babies.

Towards the end secondary infections with bacteria may take place, the most constant of these being due to streptococci and the pneumococcus, which probably shorten the life of the patient.

Cerebro-Spinal Fluid.—The cerebro-spinal fluid was first studied by Castellani, and it may be noted here that it was during his researches on the leucocytic formula that he discovered trypanosomes for the first time in sleeping sickness. More recent researches are those by Broden and Rodhain and others. During the first stage of the disease it is usually of normal appearance, and clear, while on centrifugalization there is practically no sediment, though occasionally a few small mononuclear cells may be present, and trypanosomes are, as a rule, absent.

In the sleeping-sickness stage it is often slightly turbid, and contains an amount of serum albumin and serum globulin; and on centrifugalization some sediment is obtained, consisting of a few cells, which are mostly mononuclear leucocytes, endothelial-like and vacuolated cells, while trypanosomes are almost constantly present, and also often aflagellate, roundish or oval forms, with one or two chromatin masses, as described by one of us in 1903. These may probably be compared to the so-called latent forms described in the spleen by Breinl and others, though Laveran and other authorities consider them to be degenerated or fragmented forms.

Morbid Anatomy and Histopathology.—The macroscopical changes found post mortem are principally in the central nervous system and in the lymphatic glands, but pathological changes brought about by complications may also be noted.

The body is usually emaciated and anæmic, rigor mortis is well marked, and the skin may be normal, or dry and desquamating, or may show pustular eruptions on the hands and forearms, or ulcers on the feet which are generally due to jiggers (*Dermatophilus penetrans*). Enlargement of the lymphatic glands of the neck and groins is generally easily seen. On opening the brain-case, it will be noted that the under surface of the scalp is pale, that the dura mater may or may not be adherent to the bone, that the cerebro-spinal fluid is increased in quantity, and the gyri of the brain are often flattened. On careful examination, the pia arachnoid will be found to be thickened in places, and may or may not be adherent to the grey matter. The brain substance, which is generally firmer than normal, but may be soft and œdematous, is usually congested, and the fluid in the ventricles is increased.

With regard to the spinal cord, it will be seen that there is an increase of fluid, which, if examined with the microscope after centrifugalization, generally shows leucocytes and trypanosomes. The cauda equina may be found at times surrounded by gelatinous tissue. The cord itself is often congested, and hæmorrhages have been described.

The lymphatic glands of the submaxillary region, anterior and posterior triangles, around the bronchi, of the mesentery, behind the peritoneum, as well as those of the inguinal and femoral regions, may one or all be enlarged, congested, and even hæmorrhagic. At times abscesses are found in these glands, but they are due to secondary infection. The abdominal cavity often contains some straw-coloured fluid, and the pericardial fluid may also be excessive. There may be some increase in size of the lymph-follicles and Peyer's patches of the small intestine. The lungs may show signs of pneumonia and other complications. The other organs are usually not markedly affected.

The microscopical examination of the organs has been performed with the greatest care by Mott and Breinl and the members of the Portuguese Commission (Bettencourt, Kopke, Rezeide, and Maude).

The utmost care must be taken to distinguish between the lesions due to the trypanosomes and those caused by terminal infections such as the diplococci, streptococci, and colon bacilli; for these infections may give rise to chromatolysis in the nerve cells and degeneration in the nerve fibres of the brain (pons and medulla) and spinal cord (especially in the posterior and lateral columns), and perhaps in the peripheral nerves, which have nothing to do with the disease in question. With this proviso the microscopical examination is characterized by a round-celled infiltration surrounding the vessels of the pia-arachnoid of the brain and spinal cord. This infiltration, first described by Mott, is best seen in the membranes, where there is

an accumulation of cerebro-spinal fluid, and in the brain, around the vessels of the medulla, pons, cerebellum, and those entering the base. The process appears to begin with a growth in size, and then a proliferation of the neuroglia elements, which has been minutely described by Eisath, and is found, not merely around vessels which show a small-celled infiltration, but around those which do not. Round cells are found later in the meshes of this proliferated glia.

These cells are (a) lymphocytes; (b) peculiar cells called the 'plasma cells of Marschalkó,' characterized by the nucleus becoming situated at one end of the cell, and staining blue with methylene blue and eosine, while a clear halo separates it from the cytoplasm, which stains pink; (c) 'morula cells of Mott,' which are large round or oval cells with an eccentric blue nucleus and a cytoplasm containing a clear eosinophile area; (d) a few mononuclear leucocytes; (e) a few polymorphonuclear leucocytes. The cells of Marschalkó are considered by Mott to be derived from lymphocytes, and the morula cells to be degenerated cells of Marschalkó.

As regards the origin of the lymphocytes, Mott considers that they may possibly be derived from the blood-stream, but are more likely formed by proliferation of the endothelial cells of the perivascular lymphatic space. According to Breinl, a layer of blood cells may be found external to the round cells, and hæmorrhages may be found in the cord. The ependyma of the lateral ventricle also shows a proliferation and dense fibrous formation at times. With regard to the parenchymatous elements, Mott considers that there may be increase in neuroglial nuclei and lymphocytes in the perineural spaces, while there is atrophy of the dendrons and diminution of the Nissl bodies, and alteration in the nucleus, which becomes large, clear, and eccentric. These changes are most marked in the cerebral cortex and medulla, and less so in the spinal cord. The cells of the posterior spinal ganglion, however, show chromatolysis. The central canal of the spinal cord may be dilated, but is more generally occluded by proliferation of the cells of the ependyma. It is interesting to note that Mott did not find any of these changes in the brain and spinal cord of a cured case of trypanosomiasis, who died several years later of cystic disease.

The next series of characteristic changes are in the lymphatic glands, in which trypanosomes are often found. These changes begin with a conversion of the lymphocytes into cells of Marschalkó, and these, again, into morula cells. The endothelial cells of the lymph sinus proliferate and take on a phagocytic action, containing lymphocytes, red blood cells, and chromatin particles. At the same time the gland becomes intensely congested, and the fibrous tissue of the capsule and septa proliferates, so that they and the walls of the lymph sinuses and of the vessels become thickened.

A lymph nodule therefore appears to be surrounded by a fine connective meshwork, containing few lymphocytes, but many red corpuscles and phagocytes. As time goes on, the inflammation in

the gland subsides, and it becomes less vascular, firm, and hard, and full of dense fibrous tissue. Secondary infection, however, may occur with the formation of abscesses.

Microscopically, the lungs may be found to be hyperæmic, even when normal, to the naked eye, while the complication of pneumonia will give rise to the usual appearances. The heart shows a small-celled infiltration in all its layers, with sometimes hæmorrhages. Vianna has noted in animals infected with *T. gambiense* cysts in the muscles similar to those of *T. cruzi*, and appears to have found them also in the muscular and nervous tissues from a case of sleeping sickness. The liver and spleen may show thickening of the capsule, while the latter is very congested, and its trabeculæ are in-

creased in thickness. In natives signs of chronic malaria are almost constantly present in the spleen and liver. The bone-marrow may be very cellular, with congested vessels and hæmorrhages.

Symptomatology.—

The course of the disease may be roughly divided into three stages—the incubation, the febrile, called also glandular stage, and the cerebral stage.

Incubation. — The duration of the incubation period is not certainly known in man, but may be considerably shorter than was believed by the old authors: probably in most cases it does not

exceed two or three weeks, and, according to Martin and Lebœuf's observations in Europeans, it may be even less than ten days. On the other hand, some infected individuals may not show any sign of disease for months, and, it is said, even five or six years. The bite of the infected *Glossina* gives rise, as a rule, only to very slight local irritation, which quickly subsides, and is often overlooked by the patient.

Febrile or Glandular Stage (the So-called Trypanosome Fever).—The onset of the disease is characterized by attacks of fever almost constantly associated in Europeans with an erythematous eruption. This fever lasts about a week, and disappears, to recur again later for the same or much longer periods. It is generally of an inter-



FIG. 448.—NEGRO PATIENT IN THE EARLY STAGE OF SLEEPING SICKNESS.

mittent or remittent type. During an attack the pulse-rate and the respirations are increased, and there is often enlargement of the liver and spleen, though how much of this may be due to recurrent malaria is not known; the pulse often remains rapid during the apyrexial periods. Neuralgic pains and headache may also be complained of.

An erythematous eruption is often found on Europeans. It begins, as a rule, with badly defined, pinkish patches, which clear in the centre until a ring is produced; if a portion of the ring fades a crescent may be produced. This circinate eruption may appear on any part of the body, but is especially frequent on the trunk; in some cases, instead of rings, solid infiltrated patches, the size of a half-crown or larger, are present. Rubeloid spots and a mottled appearance of the skin are not rare. A vesiculo-papular eruption has also been described, but is rare in our experience. Dermotographia is common in Europeans. In full-blooded negroes the erythematous eruption may not be noticeable: in them very often a dry, scaly condition of the skin is found. These various eruptions are called *Trypanides*. Patches of localized œdema may be seen in some cases.

The most typical sign of the disease in this stage is enlargement of one or more lymphatic glands, especially those of the neck, in the posterior triangle (Winterbottom's sign).

The enlarged glands are in this period generally fusiform, and of rather soft consistency. Another early symptom, noted by Kerandel, is a general, intense, deep hyperæsthesia. As repeated attacks of fever increase, the patient may become anæmic and asthenic, but the febrile condition may last for years, and, indeed, in this stage the disease may be cured.

The Cerebral Stage (the So-called Sleeping Sickness).—After the febrile stage has lasted some time (weeks or months), and even years, a change begins to appear in the habits and disposition of the patient. Previously bright, intelligent, and hard-working, he be-



FIG. 449.—NEGRO PATIENT IN THE LATE STAGE OF SLEEPING SICKNESS.

comes apathetic, dull, with a disinclination for exertion, preferring to sit quietly or to lie down. He also becomes careless in his work and dirty in his habits, and at the same time a difficulty in walking begins to be noticed. In this condition the sleeping-sickness stage of the disease may be said to have been properly entered. Typically, the patient is dull and apathetic, but can be easily roused, and answers questions rationally, without difficulty in speech. Sleep may be excessive, but is not the prominent symptom so often described, the condition being more one of lethargy, from which the patient can be easily roused. Fine tremors are noticed in the tongue at first, later in the hands and arms, and sometimes also in the legs, and even in the abdominal muscles. The tremor of the tongue and hands may be a very early symptom and may be present in the febrile stage. These tremors may occasionally be so severe that they cause the whole body to shake, and at times epileptiform fits, general or localized, may be seen. The gait is peculiar, there being apparently a difficulty in raising the feet, so that the patient shuffles along ; but there is no paralysis as a rule, and the superficial reflexes are normal ; the deep reflexes may be exaggerated and then lost ; there is no clonus. There is inco-ordination in some cases, and Romberg's sign may be present. As the disease advances, rigidity appears, especially in the muscles of the neck and legs which latter may assume the position of flexion of the thighs on the abdomen and the legs on the thighs. Babinski's sign is generally absent. Sensation is at first normal, but there may be hyperæsthesia in the region of the fifth nerve and other nerves, and at times the patient complains of headache. The pupils are equal, moderately contracted, and react to light and accommodation. There is nothing abnormal in the organs of special sense as a rule. There is usually fever, the temperature rising in the evening from 100° to 104° F., and falling to subnormal in the morning ; but this may be varied in many ways : thus for a period the temperature may be almost normal or subnormal, while for some days before death it becomes, as a rule, permanently subnormal.

There are no special symptoms, such as rigors or sweating, associated with the rise of temperature. The pulse is quick (90 to 140), but it is independent of the temperature, being quick with a low temperature. It is regular, but small and very low in tension, and generally is imperceptible at the wrist for some time before death. The heart as a rule shows no abnormal symptoms, though systolic inorganic murmurs may be present. The respirations are regular and equal, but are increased in number, especially towards evening, varying from 20 to 30 ; before death they not uncommonly take on the Cheyne-Stokes type. Congestion and œdema, with patches of pneumonia, are not infrequently met with before death. The appetite is good, and may even be increased ; digestion is usually satisfactory, but constipation may be marked, or there may be occasionally diarrhœa. The tongue is frequently flabby and covered with white fur ; the fæces of native patients are typical of a vegetable

diet, and show the usual parasites of a tropical country. The spleen and liver may be enlarged, which perhaps may partly be due to malaria.

The Blood.—The examination of the blood is complicated, because its condition is bound to be influenced by the secondary infections with other parasites, animal and vegetal.

With this understanding trypanosomiasis causes in a certain number of cases a gradual diminution of the red cells to 2,000,000 or less, with a corresponding decrease in the hæmoglobin; but it is to be noted that, as first observed by Low and Nabarro in several cases, the actual number of erythrocytes may be above normal. The red cells are usually normal in appearance, but normoblasts may be seen. The leucocytes are normal in number, as a rule, with

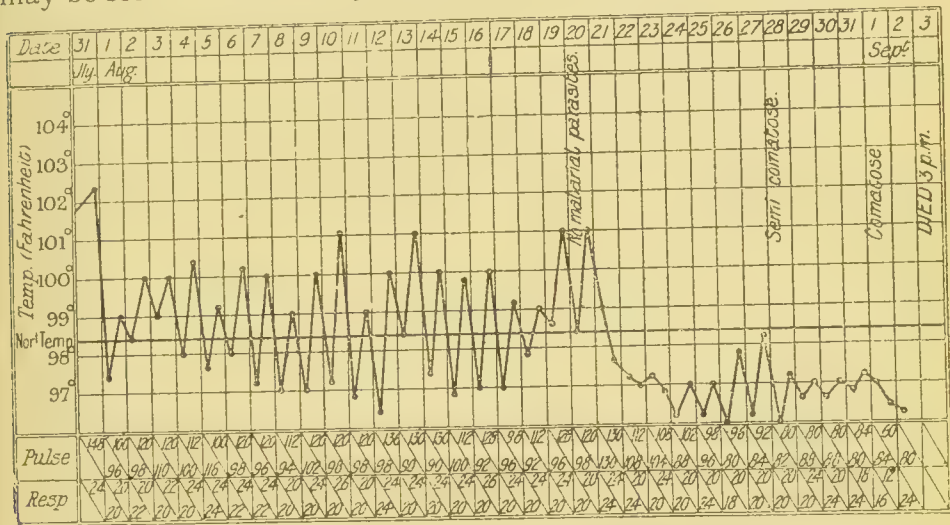


FIG. 450.—TEMPERATURE CHART OF A CASE OF SLEEPING SICKNESS.

(From Low and Castellani Reports of the Royal Society on Sleeping Sickness.)

an increase of mononuclear cells, while there may be a terminal polymorphonuclear increase before death.

In fresh preparations the red cells are not evenly distributed, nor do they form rouleaux, being generally clumped into masses. This phenomenon of *auto-agglutination* was first noticed by Kanthack, Durham, and Blandford in the lower animals inoculated with nagana; and in man, in cases of sleeping sickness, by Dutton, Todd, and Christy, and may be of diagnostic value. The phenomenon of auto-erythrophagocytosis has occasionally been noted.

The chemical examination of the blood in trypanosome infections of animals has been performed by Takinoff and by Nierenstein, the latter of whom found, by Moore and Wilson's method of testing the alkalinity of the ash, that the acidity of the blood was increased, probably due to the formation of amido-acids, either secreted by the parasites or produced by their action upon the proteids of the serum. The acidity was tested by phenolphthalein and Congo red,

and the alkalinity, which remained fairly constant, was tested by dimethyl-amido-azo-benzol.

The animals were infected with *T. brucei* and *T. equiperdum*, but so far no observations have been made on human blood.

Urine.—No abnormality is found in the urine, but the reaction, amount of phosphates, etc., of course, varies with the food taken. In native patients it is very often alkaline.

Sexual desire and menstruation are normal at first, but later are lost. The lymphatic glands throughout the body, but especially those of the neck, and more especially those of the posterior triangle are enlarged. It is to be noted, however, that in the last stages the lymph glands often undergo a process of fibrosis, becoming smaller and harder. The skin becomes dry and rough, but may be perfectly normal, though a papulo-pustular eruption may be noted on the backs of the hands and forearms. Nutrition suffers, and the patient generally becomes much emaciated.

As the disease progresses the muscular weakness and emaciation become worse and worse, the tremors more pronounced, the saliva dribbles from the mouth, the urine and fæces are passed involuntarily, and bedsores form, while the intelligence becomes more and more affected, and the patient passes into a state of coma, with a permanently subnormal temperature and an absence of pulse at the wrist, and in a short time is liberated from his sufferings by death. The duration of the cerebral or sleeping-sickness stage varies from a few weeks to several months. Since the atoxyl treatment has become of general use, Hodges has noted that convulsive and mental symptoms are more prominent, and that death is often sudden, without being preceded by a period of coma.

Varieties.—When the disease is due to *T. rhodesiense*, it generally runs a more rapid course, seldom exceeding four or five months. Lethargic symptoms may not appear, and the enlarged glands in the posterior triangle of the neck may be absent, while enlargement of the epitrochlear glands seems to be frequent.

Complications.—The patient is often infected by parasites other than trypanosomes; thus, *Plasmodium* and *Laverania*, *Filaria*, *Schistosoma mansoni*, *Agchylostoma duodenale*, *Ascaris lumbricoides*, *Trichurus trichiura*, *Strongyloides stercoralis*, *Trichomonas intestinalis*, *T. vaginalis*, *Dermatophilus penetrans*, and *Löschia* may all be found. The commonest complication during the last stage is a cerebro-spinal meningitis, due to streptococci, the pneumococcus, or the meningococcus.

Pneumonia, laryngitis, and oedema of the glottis are not rare, while iritis is seen at times, and symptoms of mania, delirium, and epilepsy may frequently be observed.

Diagnosis.—In the first stage (trypanosome fever) the disease may be readily confused with malaria and other fevers, but in endemic areas the true nature of the malady may be often suspected on certain clinical data, the principal of which are the attacks of fever not influenced by quinine, the erythematous eruption in

Europeans, the rapid pulse frequently present also during the apyrexial periods, the asthenia, the deep hyperæsthesia (Kerandel's symptom), the fine tremor of the tongue (Low-Castellani's symptom), the cervical polyadenitis (Winterbottom's symptom). During the sleeping-sickness stage the clinical diagnosis is based, in addition to the above symptoms, on the drowsiness and apathetic appearance of the patient, on the remarkable wasting and debility and the more marked, and occasionally generalized, tremors. Symptoms of mania and other mental conditions may also be present. To make a definite diagnosis, the demonstration of *Trypanosoma gambiense* or *T. rhodesiense* in the body of the patient is necessary. The following methods should be used:—

1. *Microscopical Examination of the Peripheral Blood from the Finger or Ear.*—This procedure is often a failure, even using thick films.

2. *Scarification of the Erythematous Eruption and Examination of Blood Films.*—This method is more useful than the first, but may fail.

3. *Nabarro's Method.*—Repeated centrifugalization of 10 c.c. of citrated blood, and examination of the third sediment. The results are good.

4. *Dutton-Todd's Method.*—Some citrated blood is centrifugalized in small tubes and the leucocytic layer examined for trypanosomes.

5. *Greig - Grey's Method.*—Aseptic puncture of the enlarged cervical glands, with a sterile syringe. The gland-juice is examined for trypanosomes. This, from a practical point of view, is the most valuable method. To Mott belongs the credit of having first suggested the search for trypanosomes in the lymph glands as a diagnostic method. Balfour has devised a "gland-holder," which is useful in some cases.

6. *Castellani's Method.*—Centrifugalization for fifteen minutes of 10 c.c. of cerebro-spinal fluid, aseptically removed by means of lumbar puncture. The sediment is examined for trypanosomes, by making fresh and stained preparations. The result is almost constantly positive in the sleeping-sickness stage, but negative, as a rule, in the trypanosome-fever stage.

The technique to perform lumbar puncture is as follows: The patient may be given chloroform, but usually a local anæsthetic spray is sufficient. Lay the patient on the right or left side; flex the thighs on the abdomen. Then make the skin of the lumbar region aseptic, and, feeling with the tip of the finger the position of the laminæ, thrust the sterile needle between the laminæ of the third and fourth lumbar vertebræ, $\frac{1}{2}$ inch from the median line, obliquely outwards and forwards into the canal. The fluid will escape, and can be collected in a sterile tube. After withdrawing the needle, the area should be covered with an aseptic pad and bandage.

7. *Inoculation of Susceptible Animals.*—Ten c.c. or 20 c.c. of blood are aseptically removed from a vein, and inoculated into susceptible animals, or 10 c.c. of cerebro-spinal fluid may be inoculated. The animals most suitable are monkeys, guinea-pigs, and dogs. The most suitable monkeys, according to Thiroux and

d'Anfreville, are those of the species *Cercopithecus ruber*, while some other species—e.g., *C. fuliginosus*—are almost refractory.

The following biological phenomena and reactions may sometimes be of diagnostic value :—

1. *Auto-Agglutination*.—In many cases of sleeping sickness, in wet preparations of blood examined microscopically with a low power, the red corpuscles are not evenly distributed, nor are they arranged in rouleaux, but are clumped together—'agglutinated'—in irregular masses. This appearance is not specific of trypanosomiasis, having been found in cases of filariasis, malaria, syphilis, and yaws.

2. *Complement-Fixation*.—Levaditi and Mutttermilch have applied the Bordet-Gengou reaction to trypanosome infections. According to them, the complement can be fixed by using as antigen an extract of trypanosomes separated from red cells.

3. *Levaditi and Mutttermilch's Leucocytic Attachment-Reaction*.—Levaditi and Mutttermilch have shown that trypanosomes treated with the specific serum (heated at 55° C.) develop a property of becoming attached to leucocytes, and that this phenomenon is specific. The test may be used for identifying a trypanosome or for diagnosis, but, according to Laveran and Mesnil, is not very reliable in the case of *T. gambiense* infections.

Attempts have been made to evolve agglutination reactions, trypanolitic precipitin, and other biological tests for purposes of the diagnosis of sleeping sickness, but so far with little success.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is serious, but not quite so serious as it was before the introduction of atoxyl and the mixed atoxyl tartar emetic treatment. If the patient is in the early stage, and can be removed from the endemic area and put under good hygienic conditions, and atoxyl treatment, the disease may be cured, or at least a marked improvement may be obtained. Great care, however, is necessary before saying that a patient is really cured, and at least two blood injections into susceptible animals should be performed before giving a decided opinion. If, however, the patient is compelled to live in the endemic area, and cannot be treated with atoxyl, the outlook is most hopeless. It is to be noted that there are several strains or varieties of *T. gambiense* of different virulence. The Uganda and French Congo strains, as noted by Laveran and Mesnil, cause a more acute type of the disease than the Gambia strain, and *T. rhodesiense* is in laboratory animals more virulent than *T. gambiense*, and the disease caused by it in man runs a more rapid course.

Treatment.—The only medicaments which have been so far found to be of any real value are, first, arsenic, in the form of atoxyl, and, in a less degree, antimonium, in the form of tartar emetic, the best method of treatment being a combined treatment with the two drugs.

Atoxyl.—We recommend Manson's method of administration—2 to 3 grains of atoxyl by intramuscular injection every third day for at least two years; or Borden and Rodhain's method—7½ grains of atoxyl by intramuscular injection every fifth day. Koch recommended the subcutaneous injection of 7½ grains (½ gramme) on two successive days every ten days for two months, when the treatment is to be stopped until further symptoms develop, and

when this occurs the treatment should be repeated. The drug can be obtained or imported from any chemist in sterile vials ready for hypodermic medication. The injection of atoxyl is occasionally followed by a febrile reaction, due, according to some observers, to the absorption of products of trypanolysis.

Atoxyl is sodium-*p*-aminophenyl arseniate, $\text{—NH}_2\text{C}_6\text{H}_4\text{AsO} \begin{smallmatrix} \text{ONa,} \\ \text{OH} \end{smallmatrix}$ and contains from 25.95 to 20.78 per cent. of arsenic, according to the amount of water of crystallization. Mono-acetylated atoxyl is $\text{CH}_3\text{CONHC}_6\text{H}_5\text{AsO} \begin{smallmatrix} \text{ONa} \\ \text{OH} \end{smallmatrix}$.

According to Mesnil and Nicolle's observations, and the more recent observations of Nierenstein, it is not the arsenic in these compounds which is to be looked upon as the effective agent, but the amido-group, which may possibly be the effective agent in trypan red, afridol blue, afridol violet, and para-fuchsin, which do not contain arsenic, but possess amido-groups, and affect trypanosomes in a similar manner to atoxyl. According to Ehrlich, Levaditi, and Yamanouchi, atoxyl undergoes a reduction in the animal tissues. Ehrlich has prepared two derivatives of atoxyl, one of which, already mentioned (arseno-phenylglycin), is very effective in mice on atoxyl-resistant trypanosomes. Levaditi and Yamanouchi have also prepared an active derivative of atoxyl, which they call trypanotoxyl. Nierenstein thinks that atoxyl is oxydized in the tissues, and it is only in the nascent state that it becomes efficacious.

Soamin.—Owing to the fact that large doses of atoxyl lead to such unpleasant results as optic atrophy, gastro-intestinal inflammation, and peripheral neuritis, other arsenical preparations have been recommended; and the firm Burroughs and Wellcome has introduced, under the trade name of *soamin*, a preparation somewhat similar to atoxyl, but said to be less poisonous. It is given in the same doses as atoxyl, but the therapeutic results do not appear to have been very successful. *Soamin*, according to the published formula, is $\text{C}_2\text{H}_4\text{NH}_2\text{AsO}(\text{OH})(\text{ONa}) \cdot 5\text{H}_2\text{O}$.

Arseno-phenylglycin.—Ehrlich has prepared a derivative of atoxyl, called *arseno-phenylglycin*, which is from two to four times less toxic than atoxyl itself.

This preparation has been tried by Ehrlich, Mesnil, Kerandel, and others upon lower animals experimentally infected with *Trypanosoma gambiense*, and has been found to be very effective, being also a prophylactic. It has been used in man by Kleine in the same doses as atoxyl, but has now been abandoned.

Liquor Arsenicalis.—When for special reasons it is impossible to carry out the treatment by injections, arsenic may be given by the mouth in the form of Fowler's solution, which must be given, well diluted in water or milk, in 5-minim doses, and gradually increased to 15-minim doses.

Löffler and Rüh's neutral solution of arsenious acid (1 c.c. of which contains 1 centigramme of arsenious acid) may be given in doses of 2 c.c. daily for three days, and then continued in doses of 1 c.c. per diem for several weeks, after which it must be temporarily discontinued, but must after a time be restarted, and in this manner continued for months, provided no ill-effects are produced.

Salvarsan and Neosalvarsan.—The action of Ehrlich's two preparations in sleeping sickness is as a rule less efficacious than atoxyl. They have been used by Broden and others.

Atoxylate of Mercury.—This preparation, introduced by Uhlenluth, has given less satisfactory results than atoxyl.

Quinine Derivates.—Morgenroth and Halberstaedter have shown that some quinine derivatives, such as hydroquinin, have a preventive and curative effect in certain experimental trypanosomiasis.

Ipecacuanha Derivates.—The emetin salts might be studied in regard to their possible action on trypanosomes.

Anarcotine.—This opium alkaloid has recently been suggested by Johnson.

Combined Therapy.—As the result of the important observations of Ehrlich on the phenomenon of chemio-resistancy, which may be acquired by trypanosomes after a long use of the same drug, numerous combined treatments have been suggested. Of these, the most important are : (1) antimony and atoxyl ; (2) mercury and atoxyl ; (3) orpiment and atoxyl ; (4) various dyes and atoxyl.

Antimony and Atoxyl Treatment.—Antimony salts, as well as phosphorus, were first suggested by Mesnil as likely to be of use in trypanosomiasis. To Plimmer and Thomas belongs the credit of having experimentally shown the powerful trypanocide action of antimony. In man the subcutaneous or intramuscular injections of the various salts of antimony (sodo-tartrate of antimony, sulphide of antimony and soda, etc.) are very painful. Manson therefore gives the drug by the mouth or by the rectum, and other authors by intravenous injection. Apparently the trypanocide action of antimony is more powerful in the lower animals than in man, in whom the results are inferior to those given by atoxyl. A mixed antimony and atoxyl treatment is, however, of advantage in most cases, an atoxyl injection (3 grains) being given every third day, or $7\frac{1}{2}$ grains every fifth day, and sodio-tartrate of antimony (Plimmer's salt) administered daily—2 grains dissolved in a large quantity of water (2 pints) by the mouth or by the rectum. Tartar emetic, however, is best given by intravenous injections, using solutions of 1 in 100 or 1 in 1,000. The dose of the drug to be given is 5 to 10 centigrammes per injection. It is important that none of the fluid of the injection should escape into the surrounding tissues, as a violent inflammation may result. These injections should be administered monthly on ten consecutive days for a long period. The injection of salts of antimony may produce a marked fall in the blood-pressure, dyspnœa, and signs of collapse, and therefore Thiroux suggested that subcutaneous injections of caffen should precede ten or fifteen minutes their administration. To prevent the irritation caused by injections of watery solutions of tartar emetic, Plimmer has advised the use of antimony suspended in sterile olive oil.

Mercury and Atoxyl.—Mercury was first introduced in 1902 for the treatment of sleeping sickness by Low and Castellani, using intravenous injection of Baccelli's sublimate solution (hydrargyri perchloridi, 0.10 gramme ; sodii chloridi, 0.50 gramme ; aquæ destillatæ, 100.00 c.c. ; 1 to 4 c.c. per intravenous injection), in association with arsenic and quinine by the mouth. A fall of the temperature was observed in some cases, but the fatal course of the disease was not influenced. Moore, Nierenstein, and Todd have used mercury and atoxyl in combination or alternation, with the idea that mercury might act upon the latent form of the trypanosome, while atoxyl would influence the active form. In man this combined treatment has apparently not given any better results than atoxyl alone.

Orpiment and Atoxyl.—This combined treatment, consisting of atoxyl and an inorganic salt of arsenic such as orpiment, has been recommended by

Laveran and Thiroux, and has already been used in man with good results. The orpiment should be given in pills, in the dose of 2 grains of orpiment two or three times daily. The administration of orpiment frequently causes diarrhoea. Thiroux therefore incorporates in the orpiment pills some opium. Thiroux's formula is :—

Orpiment	..	..	..	..	20 grammes
Extr. opii	..	..	..	..	0·40 gramme
Gumm.	..	..	..	..	} q.s.
Pulv. glyceriz.	..	..	..	..

To be divided into 200 pills.

Various Dyes and Atoxyl.—Combined treatments of Mesnil's afridol and atoxyl, Ehrlich's parafuchsin and atoxyl, picric acid, safranin tryptaflavin, and other dyes and atoxyl, have been suggested, but in man the results have not been so successful as in the lower animals.

In addition to the atoxyl treatment or combined treatments malaria and the intestinal parasites must be treated if present. The patient should, if possible, be removed from the area of infection and placed under good hygienic conditions and on good food, and no case should be considered to be cured until the injection of the blood, on more than one occasion, into susceptible animals fails to infect them.

Prophylaxis.—At the present time prophylaxis must be undertaken on the assumption that the disease is spread from place to place by man along channels of human intercommunication, and from man to man by *Glossina palpalis* and *G. morsitans*, and that at least in the case of *T. rhodesiense* there are animals which act as reservoirs of the virus. With regard to these flies, further information is required as to their bionomics, though Bagshawe's and Hodges' researches, as well as those of Zupitza, Sander, Minchin, Kinghorn and Yorke, Carpenter, and others have thrown some light on the subject.

Before enumerating the principal prophylactic measures to be recommended, we wish to draw attention to the fact that these, as pointed out by Bagshawe, will be useless without the co-operation of the natives. This co-operation may be obtained by explaining to them at every possible opportunity the reason for the measure taken. In this missionaries and native chiefs may be of the greatest help. With this proviso we consider the following to be the principal prophylactic measures :—

Public Prophylaxis.—The different Governments should be invited to co-operate to prevent persons travelling from districts where the disease exists into non-infected regions, and medical posts of inspection should be established for the examination of natives. According to some authorities (Dutton, Todd), all natives presenting enlarged glands should be considered, from a practical point of view, as trypanosome carriers, and prevented from emigrating. This is, perhaps, going a little too far, inasmuch as, in our experience, and in that of Low, Bagshawe, Koch, Hodges, etc., numbers of natives have enlarged glands, though not suffering from trypanosomiasis; and, on the other hand, cases of trypanosomiasis occur in which there is no enlargement of the lymphatic

glands. We admit, however, that gland palpation may be of some use in formulating an approximate idea of the extent of the dissemination of the disease.

The sick should be removed from the fly regions, and segregated in places where the *Glossina palpalis* and *G. morsitans* are not found, or where the temperature and climatic conditions are unfavourable to the development of trypanosomes in the flies. They should be treated with atoxyl before being moved.

In the regions where the disease is due to *Trypanosoma gambiense* which is mostly carried by *Glossina palpalis*, villages should be removed, if possible, from the fly zones; and the occupations carried on in fly zones, such as fishing, should be discouraged. This has been done in certain regions round the Victoria Nyanza Lake, but the result has not been completely successful, as infected flies were found to be plentiful three years after the measures had been carried out. The waste land became full of game and wild animals, some of which are probable reservoirs of the infection. Duke, in fact, has found *T. gambiense* in two marsh antelopes or situtunga (*Tragelaphus spekei*).

Clearing of the bush along the water's edge for 100 yards, and round a village for 300 yards, at least, is to be advised.

European bungalows should be segregated from native quarters. Houses should be rendered gnat-proof, and natives bringing water from streams should not be allowed to enter the house, as they are liable to be surrounded by tsetse-flies which have followed them. Indeed, some authorities look upon the bath-room as a source of European infection.

Destruction of the Animals on which the Fly feeds; Destruction of the Pupæ.—Koch recommended the destruction of the crocodiles by poison, and by collecting and destroying their eggs. Unfortunately, the crocodile is not the only animal on which the fly feeds. The blood of many other vertebrate animals is palatable to the fly, and therefore this method of prophylaxis is without much practical importance.

Minchin has suggested the breeding of the jungle-fowl to destroy the pupæ, which, as discovered by Bagshawe, are found in the turf among the roots of banana and other trees. Balfour and others have suggested trapping the adult flies in various ways. Further information, however, is necessary on the enemies of the pupæ and adult tsetse-flies.

In regions where the disease is due to *T. rhodesiense*, which is carried by *G. morsitans*, besides clearing operations of the bush near the villages, destruction of the wild game may be necessary.

Personal Prophylaxis.—Natives in the fly zones should be encouraged to wear suitable clothing, and the reason explained to them. Europeans should be careful not to expose their legs and hands to be bitten. High boots, puttees, or leggings should be worn, and where the flies abound gloves and veils, though very uncomfortable, are of service. White clothes are better than dark ones, as it has

been long observed that the tsetse-fly, as well as many other insects, have a preference for black or dark colours. The use of volatile substances such as citronella oil has been advised by some. Unfortunately, the odour of such substances is repellent to many persons.

Morgenroth and Halberstaedter have shown that certain derivatives of quinine, in the lower animals, prevent an experimental trypanosome infection, and Bagshawe suggests that a daily dose of quinine may be useful in man.

Vaccination.—Attempts at vaccination have not yet entered a practical stage, as inoculation with dead or attenuated viruses have so far failed in the lower animals.

Summary of Prophylactic Measures.

I. General measures—

1. Co-operation of various Governments.
2. Formation of medical posts of inspection at suitable places to prevent infected natives entering non-infected areas.
3. Segregation of the sick, if possible, in districts free from *Glossinæ*, or where the climatic conditions are unfavourable for the development of the trypanosome in the fly.
4. Clearing of the bush near villages and along the water's edge, especially at landing-places, fords, and ferries.
5. In certain cases—especially with regard to *T. rhodesiense*—the destruction of large game, especially antelopes. (This is still *sub judice*.)

II. Personal measures—

1. Avoidance of bites by wearing white clothing, high boots, puttees, and the putty pattern of leggings.
2. Immediate disinfection of a bite by painting it with tincture of iodine or by applying a solution of formalin (1 in 40).

SOUTH AMERICAN TRYPANOSOMIASIS.

Synonyms.—Oppilação; Canguary (both indicate agchylostomiasis); *Schizotrypanose* on *Douença* de Carlos Chagas, *Coreotrypanosis* (*coris* = bug); *Molestia* de Carlos Chagas.

Definition.—South American trypanosomiasis is an acute or chronic specific disease caused by *Trypanosoma cruzi* Chagas 1909, and spread by the bug *Lamprophya megistus* Burmeister, and perhaps other allied bugs.

History.—In February, 1909, Chagas reported that he had frequently found a new trypanosome, which he named *T. cruzi*, in the intestine of a species of *Lamprophya*, which occurred in the State of Minas in Brazil. He also reported that he was able to infect marmosets, dogs, cats, guinea-pigs, and rabbits by the bites of the infected insects, and also to grow the parasite on blood-agar.

In May, 1909, he announced that he had made an investigation of the mines of the State of Minas, and found the *Lamprophya* in large numbers in the houses of the poorer inhabitants. He noticed that the bite was painful, and that the insect was very voracious, and also that it generally attacked people, especially children, at night, biting the face, from which fact the inhabitants called it 'barbeiro' or 'barber.'

He suspected this *Lamprophya* of causing a disease marked by extreme

anæmia, which occurred especially among the children, and he was able to find in the blood of a two-year-old child during an attack of fever a trypanosome identical with *T. cruzi*, morphologically and biologically. Since then Chagas has not merely worked out the life-history of the trypanosome in man and in the *Lamus*, but he has also studied carefully the clinical and pathological aspects of the disease, while Vianna has reported upon the histopathology, Dias on the blood, and Guerreiro on the urine.

More recently Chagas has shown that in all probability the armadillo commonly called 'tatu,' and scientifically *Dasypus novemcinctus*, or less correctly *Tatusia novemcincta*, may be the reservoir for *Trypanosoma cruzi*, and that *Triatoma geniculata* (synonym *Conorhinus geniculatus*) of the family Reduviidæ is one of the carriers of the same trypanosome. He also believes that *Triatoma infestans* and *T. sordida* may be carriers. It may be stated that *T. geniculata* lives in the burrows of the armadillo, the flesh of which is rather a delicacy.

With regard to the history of the discovery of a trypanosome in man in South America, Sambon informs us that in 1904 de Lacerda published a paper entitled 'Etiologia de Beri-Beri' in the *Brazil Medico*, in which he stated that he had found trypanosomes in films taken from the spinal cord of a case of beri-beri. We have been unable to obtain this paper, and therefore cannot verify the statement, nor can we say whether the disease, which de Lacerda was considering, was beri-beri or some other complaint. It would, however, be interesting to have this historical problem elucidated.

Climatology.—At the time of writing the disease is only known among the poorer inhabitants of the State of Minas in Brazil, where it appears to attack the whole population, so that the children all become affected and either recover, die, or pass into the chronic stage.

Ætiology.—The disease is caused by *Trypanosoma cruzi* Chagas 1909. This trypanosome, which is remarkable because of the large size of its kinetonucleus, is capable of being transmitted by *Lamus megistus*, and perhaps by species belonging to other genera of the Reduviidæ—e.g., *Triatoma*—to domestic animals, and to man. The reservoir of the trypanosome appears to be an armadillo—*Dasypus novemcinctus*.

In the blood three forms are seen: the first with a large nucleus and loose chromatin and a terminal kinetonucleus; the second narrower, with an oval nucleus and dense chromatin; the third with a long nucleus. The parasite undergoes schizogony in the lungs, after which the merozoites enter the red blood cells and become trypanosomes again. Sporogony takes place in the bug *Lamus megistus*, the final forms being found in the salivary glands, from which they pass during the act of biting into the vertebrate. (For a description of the parasite and its life-history, see pp. 327-330.)

Pathology.—The trypanosomes enter the cells of the various tissues and organs of the body, but especially those of the muscular system, and more particularly those of the muscles of the extremities and back. Inside these cells they assume Leishmania-like forms without flagella, but provided with trophonucleus and kinetonucleus.

These forms divide by binary division, and so increasing in numbers, dilate the cell considerably. During this process there is no reaction upon the part of the surrounding tissue, but after a time the cell membrane ruptures, and the parasites which have already become flagellate inside the dilated remains of the cell, which is virtually a cyst, escape. With this escape of the parasites into the tissues the local inflammatory reaction appears, and with the appearance of the trypanosomes in the blood the general symptoms make themselves evident. Whether the parasites produce any toxins or not is unknown, but it is probable that they do so, because of the fatty degeneration described in the liver, as well as because of the other pathological features.

As a result of this activity on the part of the parasites and of the reaction on the part of the body, local pathological changes take place in different organs, and these are in general agreement with the symptoms exhibited by the particular case.

At present there is no evidence of any secondary infection being responsible for any of the essential pathological features of the disease.

Morbid Anatomy.—In an autopsy upon the body of a person dying from the acute phase of the infection, a certain amount of serous effusion is remarked upon opening the abdomen. The liver is seen to be enlarged, and to be in a state of fatty degeneration. The spleen is also enlarged, hyperæmic, and very soft, as are the mesenteric glands. On opening the chest serous effusion is seen in both pleural cavities, as well as in the pericardial sac. The pericardium shows signs of hæmorrhagic pericarditis, while the enlarged heart is in a condition of intense myocarditis. The lymphatic glands of the mediastinum are also swollen and hyperæmic. In the neck the thyroid gland is seen to be enlarged, as are the lymphatic glands. The dura mater is congested, and there is leptomeningitis and encephalomeningitis, and firm adhesions between the leptomeninges and the cerebral cortex. The liquor cerebro-spinalis is increased in amount. There is a generalized myxœdematous condition under the skin.

Histopathology.—As already stated, the most likely place to find the parasites is in the muscular system. In the heart they occupy the central undifferentiated protoplasmatic portion of the muscle cell, and growing therein, destroy the sarcoplasm, and convert the body of the cell into a parasitic cyst without affecting the processes. When this cyst ruptures, the now flagellate parasites escape into the intermuscular tissue, and give rise to patches of interstitial myocarditis. No changes are to be seen in the larger bloodvessels of the heart, nor can parasites be found associated with patches of pericarditis, or endocarditis which may be present. In the skeletal muscles the parasites are mostly found in those of the extremities and the back. Here, again, the parasites grow in the centre of the muscle fibre (Fig. 96, p. 329).

In the central nervous system a similar process appears to take place. The parasites invade a neuroglia cell, which becomes con-

verted into a parasitic cyst on the rupture of which a patch of inflammatory reaction is produced. Parasites have never been seen to invade the nerve cells or the leucocytes of the central nervous system (*vide* Figs. 451 and 452).

A similar invasion of the medulla or cortex of the suprarenal capsule and inflammatory reaction can also be seen in the kidneys, the hypophysis, and the thyroid gland. In animals the parasites have been seen in the testicular tubules, but they have not been noted in the human ovary.

Symptomatology.—There are two principal varieties of the disease—the acute and the chronic.

In the *acute stage* the disease begins with a violent attack of fever in a young child or a new-comer into the district. This fever shows

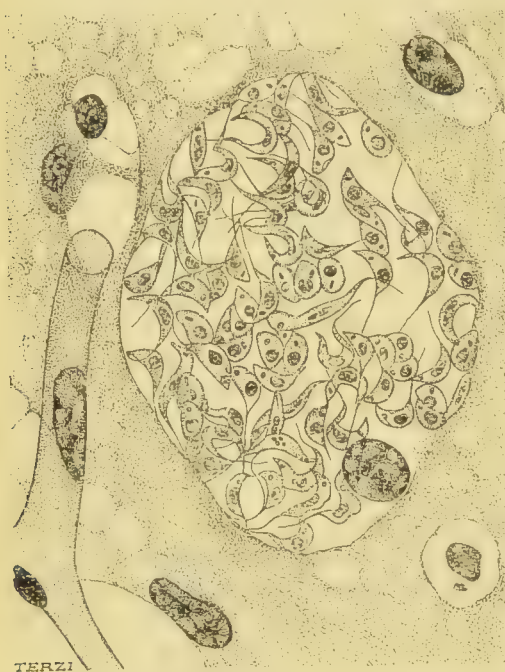


FIG. 451.—NEUROGLIA CELL OF BRAIN DISTENDED TO A CYST AND FILLED WITH *TRYPANOSOMA CRUZI*. ($\times 2,000$.) (After Vianna.)

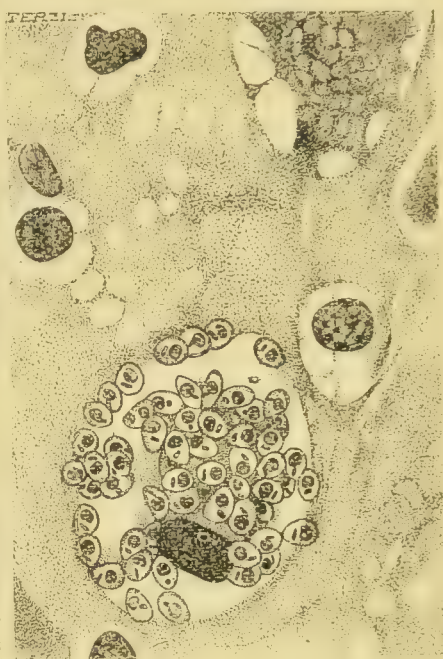


FIG. 452.—*TRYPANOSOMA CRUZI* IN A NEUROGLIA CELL OF THE BRAIN. ($\times 2,000$.) (After Vianna.)

a morning remission and an evening rise, and is associated with a palpable increase in the thyroid gland, oedema of the face, in which characteristic crepitation can be felt by palpation, enlargement of the lymphatic glands in various regions of the body, but especially of the neck; and fugitive oedemas in different parts of the body—as, for example, the forehead and extremities. The spleen enlarges and becomes painful, and the liver also becomes enlarged, and there may be signs of meningitis, and also of albumin in the urine. After a time the attack of fever passes off, only to return after periodical intervals. During an attack the typical trypanosomes can be found in the blood, but during the apyrexial interval they

are absent. After these attacks have lasted some time the child either dies, recovers, or passes into the chronic stage.

In this *chronic stage* the children show signs of marked thyroiditis and loss of hair, with hypertrophy of the lymphatic glands, a dull expression, a peculiar bluish-bronze pallor, tachycardia, and intestinal and nervous disorders, especially convulsions.

Chagas has classified the various symptoms of the chronic stage of the disease into five subvarieties :—

1. The pseudo-myxœdematous form.
2. The myxœdematous form.
3. The cardiac form.
4. The nervous form.
5. The chronic form with acute or subacute exacerbations.

1. *The Pseudo-Myxœdematous Form.*—In this subvariety of the chronic stage there is usually hypertrophy of the lateral lobes of the thyroid gland, more rarely a globular enlargement of the central lobe. This hypertrophy is usually well marked in quite young children, but is by no means evident in older children. In young children the face is thin and the skin of a peculiar light bronze colour, said to be quite different from the pallor of an anæmia. In older children the skin colour is violet-bronze. These colourations are believed to be associated with a parasitic invasion of the suprarenal capsule.

There is enlargement of the lymphatic glands in the neck, axillæ, and groins, while the parotid gland is also often hypertrophied.

In young children the liver and spleen may be found to be enlarged, but in older cases the abdominal signs are not well marked.

With regard to the circulatory system, there may be tachycardia, sinus irregularities, and an extra systole, and the blood-pressure may be lower. Convulsions have been noted, and at times slight fever, while the occurrence of conjunctivitis is also recorded.

2. *The Myxœdematous Form.*—In this form the thyroid gland is atrophied, and associated with the usual symptoms of myxœdema, such as the rough skin, loss of hair, and the presence of a firm œdema not pitting on pressure, together with an arrest of mental development in young children, or a mental degeneration in older persons. The lymphatic glands of various regions are enlarged, and there may be inflammatory eye affections.

3. *The Cardiac Form.*—In the cardiac form there is disturbance of the heart's action associated with arrhythmia, allarrhythmia, extra systole, or sinus irregularities. The greater number of the cases would be classed under Mackenzie's '*Rhythmus nodalis*.'

4. *The Nervous Form.*—Various brain and spinal cord symptoms are seen in this disease—e.g., spastic paralysis in the legs, athetosis in the arms, aphasia, pseudo-bulbar paralysis, or suprabulbar paralysis. They are associated with the other symptoms of the disease.

5. *Acute or Subacute Exacerbations.*—The principal feature of this form is the preponderance of fever, and this may be due to

exacerbations of an old infection or to new infections. This form is the cause of much mortality, and is separated from the acute form by the rarity of the parasites in the blood, and by the history of the long duration of the illness. As a rule it occurs in patients who show marked hypertrophy of the thyroid gland, and there may also be signs of suprarenal insufficiency.

Blood.—The hæmatology has been investigated by Dias, who finds that the hæmoleucocytic formula has a great similarity to that found in African trypanosomiasis. As a rule there is no globular anæmia, but there is a definite diminution in the hæmoglobin and in the specific gravity. The leucocytosis is slight in the acute and exceptional in the chronic cases. In acute cases there is a macrolymphocytosis.

Metabolism.—Guerreiro, from careful experiments associated with urine analysis, concludes that there is a true liver insufficiency in most forms of the disease, but not in the cardiac form unless associated with other symptoms.

Sequelæ.—Chagas considers that *infantilism* may be a sequel of the disease, especially as it is associated with hypothyroidism.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis must be effected by finding the parasite in the blood during a febrile attack. The disease is most likely to be confounded with agchylostomiasis, from which it can be recognized by the absence of the typical ova in the fæces and the presence of *T. cruzi* in the blood, though, of course, both infections may occur together.

It might also be mistaken for malaria during the febrile attack, especially as there is splenic enlargement, but the absence of the malarial parasite and the presence of *T. cruzi* in the peripheral blood will enable a diagnosis to be made.

In the chronic stage it may be mistaken for goitre, especially when the myxœdematous or pseudo-myxœdematous symptoms are present, and the diagnosis will depend upon the discovery of the parasite or the history.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is most serious in the acute attacks and the acute or subacute exacerbations. The severer cardiac forms are also of grave import.

Treatment.—The indications for treatment are the same as those for African trypanosomiasis, associated with treatment for hypothyroidæ.

Prophylaxis.—The prophylaxis must aim at the prevention of the *Lamus* biting man.

REFERENCES.

African Trypanosomiasis.

THE most useful references are the Reports of the various Sleeping-Sickness Commissions, Laveran and Mesnil's 'Trypanosomes et Trypanosomiasés,' and the Bulletins of the Sleeping-Sickness Bureau, which has now become the Tropical Diseases Bulletin. A good general account may be found in W. H. Hoffmann's monograph (*vide infra*).

ARCHIBALD (1909). Third Report Wellcome Laboratory, p. 98.

BAGSHAW (1913).—Proc. Soc. Trop. Med.

BOYCE AND BREINL (1908). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, ii. 1.

BRODEN AND RODHAIN (1909). Rapport sur les travaux du Laboratoire de Leopoldville.

BRUCE, MINCHIN, AND SAMBON (1907). Proceedings of the First International Conference on Sleeping Sickness. London.

- BRUCE, NABARRO, AND GREIG (1903 and 1908). Reports of the Sleeping-Sickness Commission of the Royal Society.
- CASTELLANI (1903). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
- CASTELLANI (1903). Reports of the Sleeping-Sickness Commission of the Royal Society.
- DUTTON AND TODD (1903). Memoir XI., Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine.
- DUTTON AND TODD (1905-06). Transactions of the Epidemiological Society, xxv. i.
- DUTTON, TODD, AND CHRISTY (1904). Memoir XIII., Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine.
- DUTTON, TODD, AND HANNINGTON (1907). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, i. 161, 201.
- HODGES, MINCHIN, TULLOCH, ETC. (1902 and 1908). Reports of the Sleeping-Sickness Commission of the Royal Society.
- HOFFMANN (1912). Erg. d. All. Pathol. (Good general account.)
- KERANDEL (1908). Bull. Soc. Path. Exot., i. 261, 515.
- KERANDEL AND MORAX (1908). *Ibid.*, i. 398.
- KERMORGANT (1908). *Ibid.*, i. 247.
- KINGHORN AND MONTGOMERY (1908). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, ii. 53.
- LANFRANCHI (1913). Gaz. Med.
- LAVERAN (1908). Bull. Soc. Path. Exot., i. 503.
- LAVERAN AND THIROUX (1908). Annales de l'Institut Pasteur, xxii., February; Bull. Soc. Path. Exot., i. 28, 617.
- LEVI (1907). Policlinico.
- LOW (1903). Reports of the Sleeping-Sickness Commission.
- LOW AND CASTELLANI (1903). Reports of the Sleeping-Sickness Commission.
- MANSON (1908). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, ii. 33.
- MARTIN AND DARRE (1908). Bull. Soc. Path. Exot., i. 15, 569.
- MARTIN, LEBŒUF, AND ROUBAUD (1908). *Ibid.*, i. 144, 258, 351, 355; (1909) La Maladie du Sommeil. Paris.
- MESNIL (1908). Documents Français sur la Maladie Sommeil.
- MOORE, NIERENSTEIN, AND TODD (1907). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, i. 275.
- MOTT (1907). Histological Observations on Sleeping Sickness. New York.
- NABARRO (1908). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
- NIERENSTEIN (1908). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, ii. 227, 249. (1911). Ber. Deut. Chem. Gesellschaft.
- OTTOLENGHI (1908). Atti Accademia Fisiocritici.
- SHIRCORE (1913). Trans. Society of Trop. Med.
- THOMAS AND BREINL (1905). Memoir XVI., Liverpool School of Tropical Medicine.
- WINTERBOTTOM (1803). An Account of the Native Africans in the Neighbourhood of Sierra Leone. London.

South American Trypanosomiasis.

All the more important papers are to be found in the Memorias do Instituto Oswaldo Cruz, Rio de Janeiro, for the years 1909, 1910, 1911, and 1912.

- CHAGAS (1909). Archiv f. Schiff- u Tropen-Hygiene, 120, 351. Leipzig.
- CHAGAS (1909). Brazil Medico, April 22. Rio di Janeiro.
- CHAGAS (1909). Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique, 304. Paris.
- CHAGAS (1910). Revista Médica de Sao Paulo, Nos. 22 and 23.
- CHAGAS (1911). Memorias do Instituto Oswaldo Cruz. Rio di Janeiro (Clinical).
- CHAGAS (1912). Brazil Medico. August. Rio de Janeiro.
- DIAS (1912). Memorias do Instituto Oswaldo Cruz. Rio di Janeiro (Blood).
- GUERREIRO (1912). Memorias do Instituto Oswaldo Cruz. Rio di Janeiro (Urine).
- VIANNA (1911). Memorias do Instituto Oswaldo Cruz. Rio di Janeiro (Pathology).

CHAPTER XXXV

DENGUE AND ALLIED FEVERS

Pappataci Fever—Dengue Fever—Seven Days' Fever—Dengue-like Fevers—References.

PAPPATACI FEVER.

Synonyms.—Three days' fever, Phlebotomus fever, Sandfly fever, Summer fever. *German*: Hunds-krankheit, Sommerfieber, Endemischer Magenkatarrh. *French*: Fièvre des trois jours, Fièvre de Pick, Fièvre de Pym. *Italian*: Febbre gastrica, Febbre estiva, Febbre climatica, Influenza estiva, Influenza malarica, Mal della secca, Febbre dei tre giorni. *Latin*: Febricula *pro parte*, Gastro-enteritis endemica, Gastro-enteritis climatica.

Definition.—An acute specific fever of unknown causation, lasting three days, and characterized by nervous symptoms, pains in various parts of the body, and gastro-intestinal disturbance, and spread by the agency of *Phlebotomus papatasii* Scop 1786.

History.—In 1804 Pym described a fever of three days' duration as occurring in the Mediterranean basin, and this was confirmed by Burnett in 1816. From that time constant references may be found to this complaint in the English Army reports concerning Malta, where it was sometimes called 'summer fever.' In 1855-56 there were a considerable number of cases in that island, due to the passage of the troops *en route* to the Crimea. The fever was also described by Cicoli in 1874-75 in Pola, by Pick in 1887, by Karlinski in 1889, by Taussig, who was the first to suspect *P. papatasii*, in 1905, and in the same year by Panec. In 1906 McCarrison differentiated it in Chitral, but James had previously noted its existence in Mian-Mir. In 1907 it was noticed that although undulant fever had almost disappeared from Malta there were no less than 340 admissions for 'simple continued fever' into the Army hospitals, and in this year Gerrard and Marratt drew attention to this fever. In 1909 Doerr, Franz, and Taussig published their classical account of the ætiology and symptomatology of the disease, thus placing it upon a sound basis, and in the succeeding year Birt confirmed and

extended these discoveries, and in the same year Tiraboschi found it in South America, and Phillips in Cairo. In 1911-12 Miorcec and Laplanche found it in Crete, Niclot in Oran, Sergeant in Biskra, Léger and Séquinaud in Corsica, and Wall described it again in Chitral.

Climatology.—It is found in all the countries bordering on the Mediterranean and Adriatic Seas, and it is known in India, Egypt, and South America. It is possible that it may be found to be cosmopolitan in its distribution.

In temperate climates it only occurs in the summer months, and, when studied epidemiologically, it is found to be correlated with the distribution of *Phlebotomus papatasi*. How the infection is maintained during the winter months is not understood, as the imagines do not live through the winter, and as a relapse after a long period is unknown. Doerr believes that the female flies transmit the infection to their progeny, which in turn restart the disease during the succeeding summer. It is, however, by no means certain that the infective agent disappears from the blood when it ceases to be infective on inoculation.

Ætiology.—The causation of the fever is quite unknown, but the researches of Doerr, fully confirmed by Birt and others, have proved that a virus exists in the blood of patients suffering from the disease; that this virus is infective during the first day, and up to the end of the second day of the fever, but not later; that it is filterable through a Pasteur-Chamberland candle F; that *Phlebotomus papatasi* Scop 1786 is the carrier of the disease, but does not become infective at once after feeding, but, on the contrary, is not infective under a week, after which it can convey the infection. This proves that the organism undergoes development in the fly. How long the fly remains infective is not known with certainty, as it usually dies after ten days' captivity, but it is probable that the disease is transmissible to young broods of flies. The incubation period of the experimental cases varied from three days sixteen hours to seven days, and a few of these cases showed only the gastro-intestinal symptoms, without any sign of fever. Animals have so far not been infected with fever except one small monkey by Tedeschi and Napolitani.

Pathology.—Antibodies appear to be generated during an attack, as Doerr has shown that the serum from convalescents may neutralize infective serum; moreover this action may be demonstrated during a period varying from one week to two years after an attack. An attack of fever confers a relative immunity, as relapses are seen, but reinfections are believed never to occur, and the natives of an endemic region are believed to be immune, possibly because there has been a previous attack during childhood.

Morbid Anatomy.—In the few post-mortems which have been performed, the signs exhibited have been those of the complication from which the patient died, as the disease *per se* is not fatal.

Symptomatology.—The incubation varies from three to seven days. Prodromal symptoms in the form of malaise, vague pains, discomfort, and weariness, are generally present in India, but rare in Europe and Africa.

The onset is sudden, with a slight rigor or a feeling of chilliness and severe frontal headache, lumbar and body pains. The conjunctivæ are injected and the cheeks slightly flushed. The skin is hot and dry, and the temperature rapidly rises, reaching 104° F., or rarely 105° F., in twenty-four hours. The pulse may reach 100 to 116, but is often unduly slow. The patient is very irritable, and intolerant to sounds. Movements of the eyes are painful, the conjunctivæ are injected, and often show a red band running from the cornea across the sclera. Sleep is impossible at times, but at other times the patient may be very drowsy. The tongue is coated on the dorsum with a white or brown fur, and the edges may be red. The appetite is lost and the sense of taste destroyed, but vomiting is uncommon, though there is pain in the epigastrium and sometimes diarrhœa. The mouth and throat are congested and irritable, and the gums may show a tendency to bleed, and there may be a little bronchitis. The cough is generally dry, with thick, tenacious, muco-purulent expectoration. The tonsils may be enlarged and the uvula congested, but this is not constant. The liver and spleen are normal. Vertigo and faintness may be present, and pains in the joints, especially in the elbow and knee, as well as in the bones and muscles; and burning sensations in the palms and soles. Cramps are not uncommon. Excitation is frequent, and delirium occasionally seen.

The blood shows a marked leucopenia—4,000 to 5,000 leucocytes per c.c.—and the differential count is as follows :—

Polymorphonuclears	61·7
Lymphocytes	21·3
Mononuclears	14·0
Eosinophiles	2·7

The blood-pressure is normal during the attack, but somewhat diminished during convalescence.

The urine is diminished in quantity, but is of normal colour, specific gravity, and acid reaction, and does not contain albumin, except rarely, and then only a trace. Ehrlich's diazo-reaction is negative.

The skin is usually dry throughout, but profuse sweating may occur, and erythemata of a morbilliform or a multiform character may be seen, as well as a few roseolæ.

In thirty-six to forty-eight hours the temperature falls slowly to normal, but may show a terminal rise. This fall is often accompanied with epistaxis, more rarely with sweating, vomiting, or diarrhœa. When the temperature falls the symptoms abate, but much weakness is felt, the convalescence being prolonged.

Diagnosis.—The principal points about the diagnosis are the sudden onset and the slowness of the pulse as compared with the temperature, and the short duration. There is no certain sign for

diagnosis except human inoculation, and as the incubation is so long the fever will have declared its character before the inoculated person develops the attack. Cuti- and ophthalmo-reactions have failed to be demonstrated. The differential diagnosis from malaria can be established by failing to find the parasite in the blood, and by the absence of enlargement of the spleen ; from typhoid fever by the sudden onset ; from influenza by the absence of the catarrhal symptoms, the slowness of the pulse, and the leucopenia, but both diseases may exist together ; from sunstroke by the absence of the severe symptoms, nervous symptoms, and the lower temperature ; from dengue fever it can only be distinguished by the fever ending the third day.

Varieties.—An afebrile variety, with only headache and body pains, is described, as well as an abortive form lasting two days. Relapses may also occur.

Complications.—The complications are bronchitis and phlebitis.

Sequelæ.—Pains in the bones, neuritis, and a peculiar loss of memory may be sequelæ.

Prognosis.—This is good, as no one has been known to die of the uncomplicated complaint.

Treatment.—The treatment is purely symptomatic, and consists in sending the patient to bed, in administering a saline purgative, and following this by aspirin in 5 to 15 grain doses given three times a day. This treatment is said not merely to relieve the pains, but to render the attack milder. Pyramidon also promptly relieves the pains, while it has been recommended that the phlebotomus bite should be painted with tincture of iodine.

Franz and Kolar recommend the subcutaneous or intravenous injections of colloidal silver, but this hardly appears necessary in such a mild fever. Atoxyl has been found to be useless, and quinine to be harmful.

During convalescence a change of air and an iron tonic may be recommended.

Prophylaxis.—The only obvious means of prophylaxis consists in isolating the sick and protecting them against the phlebotomus by means of mosquito curtains of a sufficiently fine mesh. It must be remembered that the little fly only bites in darkness, and only in houses.

As regards ordinary prophylaxis, a fine mosquito curtain, together with the use of camphor, is to be tried. Fumigation by burning pyrethrum may also be tried.

DENGUE.

Synonyms.—Febris Endemica cum Roseola, Exanthesis Athrosia, Knokkelkoorts, Arthrodynie, Fièvre Rouge, and probably the 'seven days' fever.'

There are upwards of one hundred known synonyms for this fever, many of which refer to it as a form of rheumatism, or give it fanciful terms, such as 'breakbone' or 'breakheart,' 'broken wing' or

'giraffe fever.' It is sometimes called 'three days' fever,' a term by which Pappataci fever is also known.

The word 'dengue' is said by Vambéry to be of Arabic origin, and to mean weakness, but it might equally be of East African, Indian, or Spanish origin.

Definition.—Dengue is an acute specific non-contagious fever of unknown causation, characterized by two febrile paroxysms, separated by an intermission or remission, without jaundice, albuminuria, or hæmorrhages, and with a marked leucopenia, and a pulse which varies directly with the temperature. It is spread by the agency of *Culex fatigans* Wiedemann.

History.—It appears to have been first recognized at Batavia, in Java, in the year 1779, by Bylon, though it may have been noted by Pazzio previous to this in 1764-68 in an epidemic in Seville. It was soon discovered in other places, being found from 1779 to 1780 in Egypt, Arabia, Persia, and North America, and in 1784 in Spain, to which it appears to have come from the West Indies, and in 1818 in Peru. In 1824-28 it occurred all over the tropical and subtropical zones, and in 1830-70 it formed a series of large and small epidemics in the same regions. From 1871-73 there was an epidemic implicating East Africa, Egypt, Arabia, India, Burma, Indo-China, and China, and spreading later to America and North and West Africa—*i.e.*, practically to all the tropical regions. In 1876-88 it was epidemic in Hong Kong, Egypt, Syria, and the Mediterranean, and in the Fiji Islands in 1885, to which it was conveyed by a European suffering from the complaint. In 1889 it was especially prevalent in Asia Minor, Turkey, and Greece. From 1890 to 1895 there were outbreaks in Senegambia and Hong Kong, and in 1894 it was introduced into North Queensland. From 1895-96 there were epidemics in Bombay and in Charleston. In 1897-98 it was epidemic in Georgia, Florida, and Texas. In 1901 it occurred in Penang and Asia Minor; in 1902 in Hong Kong, Singapore, Madras, Rangoon, and Upper Burma. In 1906 it occurred in Saigong on a French warship, and recently it has been prevalent in Singapore, West Australia, and Ceylon. Manson says that an epidemic or pandemic takes place about once in twenty years.

The discovery of the disease, therefore, appears to have been first made by Pazzio and Bylon, and the first full clinical description given by Dickson in 1828.

The first attempt to find a causation for the disease was by McLaughlin in 1886, who found micrococci in the blood, but this was disproved by Klein, Wright, Crookshank, and Macfadyen. In 1903 Graham stated that he had observed small hyaline, unstainable rods or dots in the red blood-corpuscles, which he considered to be protozoal parasites of the nature of Plasmodia. This discovery has been refuted by Carpenter and Sutton, Guiteras, Agramonte, Kiewiet de Jonge and Hahn, Still and Ashburn, and Craig. Graham fed *Culex fatigans* Wiedemann on patients suffering from dengue, and claimed to have found his parasites in these mosquitoes up to

the fifth day after feeding. He did not find any oökinetes or oöcysts, but he says he found spores in the cells of the salivary glands of the mosquitoes from forty-eight hours to one month after they had fed on infected blood. Further, he states that he caused a typical attack of dengue by injecting subcutaneously a solution, in normal saline, of the salivary glands of a mosquito, which had bitten a dengue fever patient twenty-four hours previously. He only performed one experiment, because the illness caused was very severe, but he succeeded, after an incubation of four to six days, in infecting healthy people by the bites of morquitos (*Culex fatigans*) fed on dengue-fever patients.

Though Ashburn and Craig (in 1907) have not supported Graham by finding the parasite, they have supported him, as will be presently described, by proving that a typical attack of dengue can be produced by the intravenous inoculation of filtered and unfiltered blood from an infected patient, and that the disease can be, and usually is, transmitted by the bite of *Culex fatigans* Wiedemann.

Climatology.—The history of the disease indicates roughly its geography, which lies mostly in the tropics, but can extend to the subtropical zones. Cases have been reported from Southern Europe. Its usual boundaries are $32^{\circ} 47'$ N. and $23^{\circ} 23'$ S., but during warm weather it may spread to $36^{\circ} 10'$ N., and even to 42° N. and 28° S. in exceptional cases. It is, therefore, a disease of tropical climates, and of warm weather in other climates. It appears to be favoured by low-lying lands near the sea, well supplied with water, and not to be found at high altitudes; but there are exceptions to this.

When the distribution of dengue is compared with that known for *Culex fatigans*, it will be seen that the two coincide most remarkably. In fact, at the present time it appears as though the geographical distribution depends upon the distribution of that insect, together with the importation or presence of infected persons.

Ætiology.—We are indebted to Graham and Ashburn and Craig for our knowledge of the ætiology of this disease.

There appears to be no doubt that dengue fever is caused by some unknown living organism which requires over two days to increase so as to produce the symptoms of the disease when inoculated into human beings.

Both Graham and Ardate have observed small bodies in the red blood-corpuscles, which are described as small, usually round, but sometimes elongated, bodies about one-fifth to one-third of the size of a red corpuscle. They divide up into minute granules, which become extra-corpuscular and complete a cycle of schizogony.

This organism exists in the blood, as can be shown by the intravenous injection of 20 c.c. of dengue-fever blood producing typical attacks of the disease, the incubation usually being two to three days; but it is so small that it will pass through the pores of a filter which will retain *Micrococcus melitensis*, which is only 0.4μ in diameter, as is demonstrated by the production of the disease by

intravenous injections of filtered dengue-fever blood, the incubation being two to three days, as before.

The organism can be transmitted by the bites of *Culex fatigans*, which appears to be the principal agent in the spread of the disease, the incubation period being about three days sixteen hours. Further, there is a natural immunity against the disease in some people, and also some degree of acquired immunity of unknown duration obtained by an attack.

The points in the ætiology which require further research are the nature of the organism and its chemical products; the changes, if any, which the parasite undergoes in the mosquito; the length of time during which the mosquito can carry the infection; whether any mosquito other than *Culex fatigans* can spread the disease—especially as Legendre believes that some species of *Stegomyia* spreads the disease at Hanoi; and how long the acquired immunity lasts in man. In conclusion, it may be said that there is no evidence of infection other than by the bite of the mosquito.

Pathology.—There is but little that can be written on this subject, as the cause of the disease is unknown, and therefore, of course, its action cannot be explained.

Morbid Anatomy.—This appears restricted to the description of the complication which killed the person—viz., peritonitis or pleuritis.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period, judging from experimental infection by mosquito-bites, varies from three to six days. Prodromata are usually absent, but general malaise may be felt during a period not exceeding three days before the onset.

The attack is usually sudden, and introduced by severe pain in some part of the body, or merely by the sensation of extreme fatigue, or by chilliness and shivering, or by deep flushing of the face. In children convulsions or delirium may usher in the illness. In any case the temperature rapidly rises, the pulse quickens, and the skin and mucosæ become markedly congested, especially about the face, mouth, and throat. The conjunctivæ are injected, the eyes watery, and sometimes vomiting and purging are also present. The disease now progresses for one, two, or three days, after which there is, as a rule, a remission or an intermission.

During this period the temperature rises to 103° to 106° F., and the pulse increases proportionately with the temperature to 90 to 140 per minute. Severe pains in the head, and especially in the eyeballs, are experienced, and, in addition, pains in different parts of the body, especially in the lumbar region and the legs. Often the joints are painful, usually without any sign of redness or swelling. This pain in the joints appears really to be due to the muscles in the neighbourhood, as the joint can often be passively moved without pain, while active movement induces almost agony. There are, however, rare cases in which the joints are affected, as is shown by redness and swelling. As regards the alimentary canal, the tongue is moist, but becomes covered with a white-creamy fur. There is

no appetite, nausea and vomiting are not uncommon, and constipation or diarrhœa may be present. The lymphatic glands are not enlarged. The circulatory system is not affected, except that fainting occurs at times, while a sensation of præcordial discomfort or of suffocation may be complained of. Insomnia and delirium are not infrequent, but meningitis and neuritis must be uncommon if they occur at all, though hyperæsthesia of the skin may be observed. The skin shows the congestion already mentioned, which is not always present, being at times replaced by the opposite extreme of pallor. Jaundice, if it occurs, is rare. Hæmorrhages are rare, and will be mentioned as a complication. The changes in the blood have been carefully worked out by Ashburn and Craig. The erythrocytes are usually normal in appearance and number, but a few poikilocytes may be seen, while the hæmoglobin and colour-index are also normal. Leucopenia is so constant as to be of diagnostic importance, varying from 4,860 to 1,200, the average being 3,800 per cubic millimetre. The leucocytes are normal in appearance, but there is a marked increase of the small lymphocytes and a decrease in the polymorphonuclear leucocytes. The urine appears to be usually quite normal, except that it is high-coloured, but may contain a minute trace of albumin, and in severe cases Guiteras says the diazo-reaction can be obtained.

On the third day the temperature usually falls but rarely reaches to normal. This fall may be accompanied by the usual signs of a crisis—namely, profuse perspiration, the passage of much urine, violent diarrhœa, and bleeding from the nose—but in many cases these signs may be absent. The patient now feels better, except for slight pains, and a genuine intermission in the disease is established. In other cases, however, this intermission may be entirely wanting, and the temperature may only remit, remaining at 100° to 102° F.

The intermission or—generally—remission lasts until the fifth day of the illness, when the temperature rises to some point usually below 103° F., and at the same time a rash appears on the palms and backs of the hands, and rapidly spreads to the arms, the trunk, and the legs. This rash may be of two types—a measly eruption of small, circular, dark red papules, which almost entirely disappear on pressure, or a scarlatiniform eruption of close-set bright red points, which may coalesce and form large red patches. Eruptions intermediate in appearance between these two types may, however, be present, and occasionally only an abortive or no eruption at all occurs.

This rise of temperature may last from a few hours to a day, and generally declines by crisis, with or without perspiration, on the sixth day. The skin eruption usually lasts from two to eight days, after which occasionally there is a desquamation, which may continue for two to three weeks.

The typical disease shows a first attack, a remission or intermission, and a second attack, though the two attacks may become merged together. The typical rash may be absent, and sometimes

the disease is so mild that it ends on the third day with the first crisis.

Convalescence may be quick and permanent, but, on the other hand, it may be protracted and complicated with sequelæ.

Varieties.—It is now generally agreed that seven days' fever is merely a variety of dengue fever, and therefore for comparison we attach a description of it to this chapter.

Megaw distinguishes the following varieties :—

1. *The Evanescent Type*, with only a short slight attack of fever, and corresponds with one variety of the old *febricula*, and cannot be recognized except during an epidemic of dengue fever.

2. *The Interrupted Fever Type*.—This is the three days' fever, followed after one or two days of apyrexia, with another attack, and is typical dengue fever. True intermission is, however, rare, a fever of the saddle-back type being much commoner.

3. *The Saddle-Back Type*.—This is the so-called seven days' fever.

4. *The Continued Fever Type*.—This is rare, and is characterized by a lack of the usual remission or intermission of the fever.

Complications.—The rarity of the symptom of hæmorrhage may perhaps justify its mention as a complication. It takes place from the mucosæ, as already mentioned, of the nose, stomach, intestines, and uterus. Hyperpyrexia may occur as a complication, but is rare, and pleurisy, pericarditis, orchitis, endocarditis, and meningitis sometimes complicate the disease and alter its characteristics. We have seen enteric develop in three typical cases of dengue, and appendicitis in two cases.

Sequelæ.—The most important sequelæ are the pains in the joints and muscles, which worry patients considerably. Relapses are said to take place, but Ashburn and Craig doubt whether any occur a short time after an attack, as the persons who were supposed to relapse, in their experience, really suffered from malarial fever; for, as a matter of fact, there is an acquired immunity for some little time after an attack which prevents such relapses.

Diagnosis.—This is based on the sudden onset with extremely severe muscular pain, the remission or intermission in the course of the fever on the third or fourth day, the rash generally appearing on the fifth or sixth day. The diseases most likely to be mistaken for dengue are yellow fever, malaria, influenza, scarlet fever, measles, rheumatic fever, smallpox, and tonsillitis.

Yellow fever is recognized by its slower pulse, jaundice, and hæmatemesis; *malaria* by its blood parasites; *influenza* by the absence, as a rule, of any eruptions and the presence of catarrhal symptoms; *scarlet fever* by the presence of the sore throat with enlarged cervical glands; *measles* by the catarrhal symptoms and the absence of the severe pains; *rheumatic fever* by the swelling of the joints; *smallpox* may be with difficulty recognized until the eruption comes out; and *tonsillitis* may be recognized by examining the throat. In the tropics, where *enteric* is frequently atypical and

often begins suddenly, there may be difficulty during the first few days in distinguishing the two diseases. The very severe pains are, however, rare in enteric, and the course of the fever will clear the diagnosis.

Prognosis.—This is quite good, as the mortality is usually nil, but in Australia it caused 1 death in 1,000 cases, principally in those under five and over sixty years of age.

Treatment.—No rational treatment can be given, as we do not know what the nature of the cause will prove to be. Symptoms must, however, be relieved. The fever and headache may be combated with cool sponging and cool applications; the pains by hypodermic injections of morphia or doses of Dover's powder; this will also relieve the nervous symptoms, which otherwise will require bromides. Antipyrin, phenacetin, and aspirin, may be administered with care, and the bowels should be opened by calomel. The diet must be low, and stimulants should not be given.

Prophylaxis.—Protection against mosquitoes, as described under Malaria, excluding, of course, quinine prophylaxis, is the correct method of preventing the disease.

SEVEN DAYS' FEVER.

Remarks.—In our opinion the seven days' fever is dengue or a variety of it. Having had the opportunity of seeing dengue in the Philippine Islands and other countries where the disease is common, we find that the condition called seven days' fever in India and Ceylon is clinically identical with it.

History.—This disease was described by Rogers in 1905-08 as a sporadic fever of Indian seaport towns. It is probably identical with Crombie's simple continued fever, and, according to several observers, including ourselves, is a form of dengue.

Climatology.—So far, in India and Ceylon it has been found in towns in low-lying districts near the sea, and is believed not to spread inland. In Calcutta it occurs from May to September, and is very common in Colombo during the same months.

Ætiology.—Rogers found a motile bacillus related to the coli bacillus in the blood, which he thinks may possibly be the cause of the disease. It resembles the *Bacillus coli communis* in size and shape, and possesses flagella; is decolourized by Gram; produces a diffuse haziness in broth; slowly liquefies gelatine; grows on agar like *B. coli*; does not produce gas in glucose agar; nor gas, nor acid, in dextrose, lævulose, and maltose broths; nor does it ferment arabinose, galactose, saccharose, lactose, inulin, salicin, erythrite, mannite, or dulcitol. It is agglutinated in 1 in 20 and 1 in 40 dilutions of the serum of seven-days' fever patients. These observations have not been confirmed. Clayton suggests that the disease is carried by mosquitoes. The fever is commonly found among Europeans, and especially among people having to do with shipping, and also in new-comers.

Pathology.—The morbid anatomy is unknown, as the mortality is nil.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period is unknown, and no prodromal symptoms have been recorded. The invasion is sudden, with a rapid rise of temperature to 102° or 105° F., but the pulse is not as quick as it should be, compared with the temperature.

The face is flushed, and the palpebral conjunctivæ injected, and some rose-coloured spots may appear on the skin. Pain is felt in the back and, less commonly, in the limbs. After the initial rise there is usually a gradual marked remission of the temperature for two to three days, when the fever again rises, producing the typical saddle-back remission. After the second

rise the temperature gradually or quickly falls to normal, and the disease ends about the seventh to eighth day. There is generally frontal headache, and the

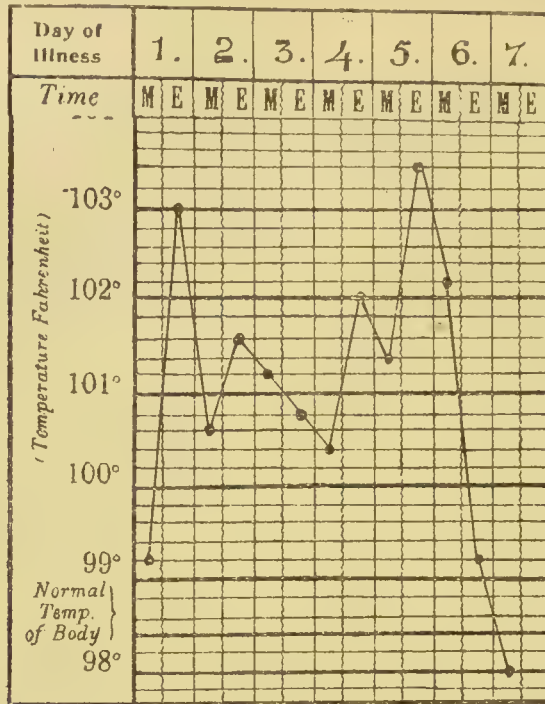


FIG. 453.—TEMPERATURE CHART OF A CASE OF SEVEN DAYS' FEVER.

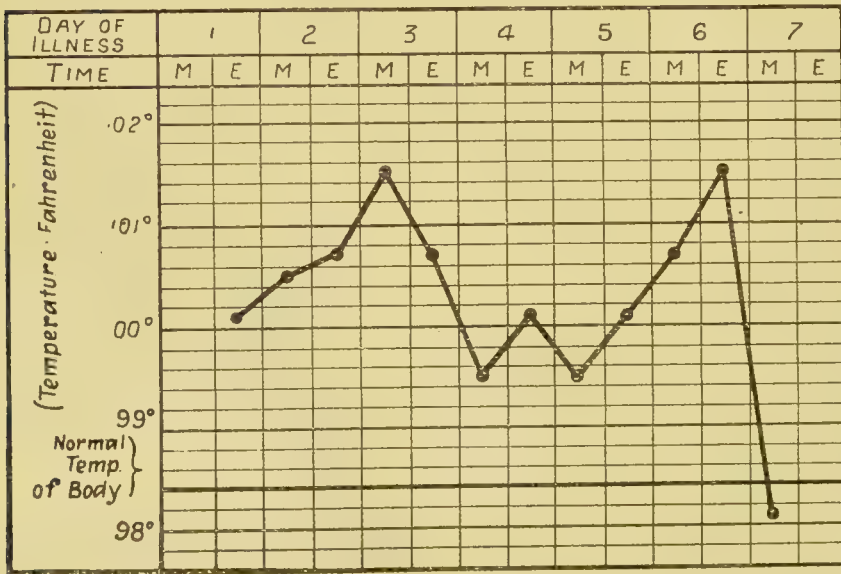


FIG. 454.—TEMPERATURE CHART OF A CASE OF SEVEN DAYS' FEVER.

tongue is furred on the dorsum, while the edges are red. Nausea and vomiting are not common; the bowels are usually normal, though constipation or diarrhoea may occur. The abdomen is often distended, and may be painful.

The liver is usually normal, but may in a few cases be slightly enlarged, and the spleen is at times enlarged. The respiratory and circulatory organs are normal, except that the pulse is often slow as compared with the temperature.

The blood shows a slight reduction of the erythrocytes and a marked leucopenia—2,000 to 4,000 per c.c. The polymorphonuclear leucocytes are reduced, and the lymphocytes and mononuclears are increased. Nothing abnormal is found in the urine, except the usual appearance of febrile urine.

Rashes are frequent. The most common is a mottling or a diffuse erythema of the extensor surfaces of the forearms on the fourth to sixth day, which may fade before the temperature falls.

There are no complications or sequelæ, and the prognosis is excellent, as the mortality is nil. Mild recurrences in following years may be met with but relapses in the same year, though rare, do occur, as we have met with such a case. Convalescence is rapid.

Diagnosis.—It can be distinguished from malaria by the absence of parasites, and the slow pulse with high fever; from influenza by the absence of respiratory symptoms.

Treatment.—This is purely symptomatic.

DENGUE-LIKE FEVERS.

Synonym.—Climatic fevers.

Under this heading come the fever of the Antilles, the fever of the Red Sea, the six days' fever of Asia, the fever of Massowah, the six days' fever of the canal zone in Panama, and the pseudo-dengue fever of Cochin-China, which are all closely allied to dengue fever, lasting about seven days, and being associated with pains in different parts of the body, and having, in brief, the symptoms described above for seven days' fever or for dengue fever.

REFERENCES.

Pappataci Fever.

- DU BIRT (1910). *Journal Royal Army Medical Corps*. London.
DOERR, FRANZ, AND TAUSSIG (1909). *Das Pappataci-fieber*. Leipzig.
McCARRISON (1906). *Indian Medical Gazette*. Calcutta.
SEIDELIN (1912). *Yellow-Fever Bulletin*. Liverpool.

Dengue Fever.

- ASHBURN AND CRAIG (1907). *The Philippine Journal of Science*, ii. 93.
CHARLES (1872). *Indian Medical Gazette*, p. 25.
CLAIR (1911). *Traité de Grall et Clarac*. Paris.
COLEMAN (1907). *Osler and McCrae's System of Medicine*, ii. 489.
DICKSON (1828). *American Journal of Medical Sciences*, iii. 3.
GRAHAM (1903). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, vi. 209.
MANSON (1907). *Tropical Diseases*, p. 252.
MANSON (1906). *Allbutt and Rolleston's System of Medicine*, vol. ii., part ii., p. 345.
ROGERS (1908). *Fevers in the Tropics*, p. 242.
ROSS, P. H. (1908). *Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology*, ii. 193. (Prevention.)
VAN DE BURG (1905). *Mense's Tropenkrankheiten*, ii. 95.

Seven Days' Fever.

- ROGERS (1908). *Fevers of the Tropics*. Oxford.

Dengue-like Fevers.

- DEEKS, W. E. (1912). *Journal of American Medical Association*.
PERRY, J. C. (1912). *United States Public Health Reports*.
POLECK (1912). *Arch. f. Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygien*.

CHAPTER XXXVI

YELLOW FEVER

Synonyms—History—Climatology—Ætiology—Pathology—Symptomatology
—Diagnosis—Prognosis—Treatment—Prophylaxis—References.

Synonyms.—Bilious Remittent fever, Acclimatizing fever, Inflammatory fever, Febris Flava, Pestis Americana, Typhus Icteroides. *French*: Fièvre Jaune. *German*: Gelbfieber. *Italian*: Febbre Gialla, Fiebre Amarilla. In addition there are a large number of local names such as Bulam Fever (Grenada); Kendal's disease (Barbadoes); Pest of Havana (Cuba); Maladie de Siam (Martinique); Febre remittente bilioso dos bezos quentes (Brazil); Febre amarelle dos acclimatados (Brazil); Magdalena fever (Columbia).

Definition.—An acute specific non-contagious fever of unknown causation, characterized usually by two paroxysms of fever, separated by a remission or intermission, and accompanied with albuminuria, jaundice, and hæmorrhages, with usually a normal number of leucocytes and polymorphonuclear leucocytes. It is spread by the agency of *Stegomyia calopus* Meigen 1818 (synonym, *S. fasciata* Fabricius 1805 *non* O. F. Müller 1764).

History.—Yellow fever is believed to have originally been a disease of the Antilles, and to have attacked the troops of Christopher Columbus in 1495 in the Isle of Spain (St. Domingo), from which it was carried by the Spaniards to the mainland of America. The endemic home of the disease at the present time is the east coast of Mexico, where it was reported in 1509 at Vera Cruz, and Central America from Cape Tampies to Cape Gracias à Dios, and the Greater and Lesser Antilles. From this area it can spread by ships to various parts of the world, where it may become epidemic.

The first clearly written description of yellow fever is that by P. du Tertre, in Guadeloupe, in 1635, but it soon became well known from the epidemic in Cuba in 1648-49; Jamaica, 1655; San Domingo, 1656; Martinique, 1688; and Vera Cruz, 1690. In 1698 it was recognized that the disease was being carried from place to place by ships, and a quarantine ordinance was brought into force, which lasted from 1709 till 1790, when the extensive wars of the period caused it to be ineffective, with the result that between 1791 and 1815 most extensive epidemics took place, and gave

ample opportunity for the study of the disease. In 1794 Drysdale, of Baltimore, in 1797 and 1805 Rush, in Philadelphia, and in 1802 Vaughan, in Wilmington, drew attention to the large numbers of mosquitoes and other insects which abounded in their respective towns during yellow-fever epidemics, though rare in preceding years. With regard to bilious remittent fever, a good account of this disease was given in 1842 by Burton in the first volume of the *British Medical Journal* (then called the *Provincial Medical Journal*). In 1848 Nott, of Mobile, accused some insect or mosquito of being the possible carrier of yellow fever. In 1876 Dowell, of Galveston, showed that mosquitoes and yellow fever obeyed the same natural laws, and in 1878 it was demonstrated in Mobile that quarantine of the patients, together with sulphur fumigation, could control the epidemic. But it was not till 1881 that Charles Finlay, of Havana, directly attributed the spread of the disease to the mosquito. In 1882 Gererd, having caused a mosquito to suck the blood of a patient on the fourth day of the fever, then allowed it at once to bite his hand, with the result that he developed in due course a mild attack of yellow fever. The credit of having supported the mosquito theory for many years in numerous publications belongs to Finlay.

In 1883 Freire of Rio de Janeiro thought that he had discovered the cause of the disease in the shape of a micrococcus, and later C. Valle, C. Finlay, and Gibier each described specific bacteria. Sternberg studied the disease for years, but could find no definite bacterial or other cause. He, however, in a certain number of cases, came across a bacillus, which he called 'X.' In 1897 Sanarelli announced that he had found a bacterium (*Bacillus icteroides*) which he believed to be the cause of the disease, and, further, he prepared a serum for its treatment. Sanarelli's findings were at first confirmed by a large number of observers.

In 1900 Reed and Carroll announced that *Bacillus X* belonged to the colon group of bacteria, and *B. icteroides* to the hog-cholera group, and was probably identical with *B. cholerae suis*. In our experience *B. icteroides* is not identical with *B. cholerae suis*, but is a distinct species, although it plays no part in the ætiology of the malady, and is merely the cause of a secondary infection. In the same year Reed, Carroll, Agramonte, and Lazear proved that the disease could be produced by the subcutaneous injection of infected blood into a non-immune person; that the disease was not contagious, and was only spread by the bites of *Stegomyia calopus*. The agency of the mosquito was speedily confirmed by Guiteras, Ribas and Lutz, Marchoux, Salimbeni and Simond, Parker, Beyer and Pothier, and later by Rosenau, Parker, Francis and Beyer.

In 1903 Parker, Beyer, and Pothner concluded that the ætiological cause was *Myxococcidium stegomyia*, found in infected mosquitoes which they believed to be an animal parasite closely resembling a *Coccidium*. Carroll, however, refuted this, as did Marchoux, Salimbeni and Simond, and finally Rosenau, Parker, Francis and

Beyer clearly proved that *M. Stegomyia* was a yeast normally found in mosquitoes. In 1905 Rosenau, Francis and Beyer showed that the disease could be communicated by the inoculation of infected blood filtered through the closest-grained Pasteur-Chamberland B filter which they could obtain, and therefore came to the conclusion that the causal agent of the disease must be of ultramicroscopic size.

In 1909 Seidelin described the presence of minute bodies (*Paraplasma flavigenum*) in the red cells of persons suffering from yellow fever, and Stimson a spirochæte (*S. interrogans*) in the tissues. The description of *Paraplasma flavigenum* is given at p. 377.

In the meanwhile the theory of the propagation of the disease by *Stegomyia calopus* has been put to the practical test of prophylaxis with most excellent results in Havana, Texas, Mexico, and New Orleans, and in the works of the Panama Canal. The late Sir Rubert Boyce did excellent work in drawing attention to the yellow fever of West Africa, where it is extremely deadly at times, and which is probably a secondary endemic centre.

It is impossible to close this history without drawing the reader's attention to the great benefit conferred upon mankind by the labours of Reed, Carroll, Agramonte, and Lazear, the last-named dying from yellow fever following an experimental bite of an infected mosquito.

Climatology.—As already stated, the endemic area includes a portion of the Atlantic coasts of Mexico and Central and South America, as well as the Antilles. Some of the more important endemic centres at the present time are Guatemala, Spanish Honduras, Nicaragua, Costa Rica, Salvador, French Guiana, Dutch Guiana, along the Rivers Magdalena, Orinoco, and Amazon, and in Ecuador. There is evidence that the Cape Verde Islands were infected in 1510-15, and that the Gulf of Benin received its yellow fever from this source in 1520, and it is possible that it has been endemic on the West Coast of Africa from that date. Boyce was of the opinion that it has been a disease of Africa from time immemorable, but, though these early historical points cannot satisfactorily be settled, there is more evidence that the true home is Central America, and that Africa is a secondary endemic area, in which very serious outbreaks have been recorded in the past, and where the disease is at times epidemic.

Ross has suggested that *Stegomyia* may not be sufficiently numerous in West Africa to permit the disease to gain a firm footing.

From the endemic centre the disease can spread by the agency of ships until it reaches 46° 56' N. (Quebec) and 34° 54' S. (Monte Video), which correspond to the isotherm of 60° F. (16° C.) for the mean temperature of the hottest month of the year. At its northern limits the disease is generally very mild, but at its southern limits it may be very severe.

The areas most usually affected are the Atlantic coasts of North America, as far north as Charleston (32° 46' N.), and of South

America as far south as Rio de Janeiro ($22^{\circ} 54' \text{ S.}$). Another region commonly affected is the West Coast of Africa, from Senegambia to Saint Paul de Loando.

Europe has frequently been attacked—*e.g.*, England (Swansea) in 1865, France in 1861, Spain and Portugal in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, the last infection being in Madrid in 1878, and Italy (Leghorn) in 1804.

The disease has apparently more than once reached the Pacific, for it spread in 1740 to Guayaquil, in Ecuador, and in 1854 to Peru.

The distribution corresponds with that of *Stegomyia calopus*, and the fact that the disease is endemic in warm climates and more marked in the hot season, while it disappears in the winter of temperate climates, reappearing in the summer, coincides with the habits of the mosquito. Further, the facts that it is carried by infected ships and that it may affect low-lying regions near the coast, particularly ports, in which the dwelling-houses are especially attacked, are explicable by its mosquito transmission.

It appears to us that the fever associated with black vomit, found among children in 'Grande terre,' Gaudeloupe, must either be a form of yellow fever or closely allied to it (p. 1112). At the same time it is interesting to note the general similarity between pappataci fever, dengue, and yellow fever, which appear to form a group of closely allied diseases.

Yellow fever has recently been recorded by Hudellet at Dinguira, Mahina, Ouida, between Kayes and the Niger in the Sudan, while cases have been recorded in Java.

Ætiology.—The causal agent exists in the blood of an infected person, as can be proved by the fact that the subcutaneous inoculation of 0.1 c.c. of the infected blood into non-immune persons, produces attacks of the disease, but it cannot be spread to man by post-mortem wounds. This causal agent appears to be of exceedingly small size, for diluted blood filtered through a Pasteur-Chamberland B bougie can still cause the disease if inoculated intravenously into a non-immune.

According to Seidelin, it is a small protozoon (*Paraplasma flavigenum* Seidelin 1909) found in the red blood cells (*vide* p. 377).

It is obviously a living organism, and not a chemical substance, because of the time it takes to develop in man and the mosquito; for the incubation period in man is usually three days. The mosquito, in order to become infected, must bite a patient during the first three days of his illness, and then twelve days must elapse before the infected mosquito can transmit the disease.

The proof of the transmission of the disease by *Stegomyia calopus* was worked out by Reed, Carroll, Agramonte, and Lazear, by constructing a gnat-proof building divided into two gnat-proof compartments, into the first of which infected mosquitoes were liberated and allowed to bite a non-immune, while other non-immunes slept in the second compartment. The man in the first compartment developed an attack of yellow fever, while the others did not.

Non-immunes living in gnat-proof houses, with articles of clothing

and bedding soiled with urine, fæces, black vomit, etc., from cases of yellow fever, did not contract the disease, though after this experiment was finished some were infected by means of the bites of infected mosquitoes, thus proving that they were not immune.

Marchoux and Simond extended this knowledge by showing that a *Stegomyia* can live for some thirty days, and lay seven batches of eggs. Those laid after the twelve days' incubation by an infected mosquito are also infected, and can transmit the contagium vivum to a second generation of mosquitoes, but these cannot infect non-immunes until fourteen days after hatching as imagines.

Further, the contagium vivum can apparently only exist in man and *Stegomyia calopus*, though it is true that a chimpanzee, after an incubation of three days, suffered from a typical attack of yellow fever, induced by experimental mosquito-bites, as was shown by Thomas in 1907. No other mosquito so far has been proved to carry the infection.

It appears, also, that the development in the mosquito depends to some extent upon the air temperature, as in the case of the malarial parasite.

Thomas has succeeded in producing a reaction in a chimpanzee five days after infection by the bite of an infected *Stegomyia*, and in guinea-pigs from four and a half to thirteen days after being bitten by infected *Stegomyia*. With reference to these experiments, it is well to remember that in yellow fever epidemics it is stated that dogs and fowls are supposed to be ill, but from what cause is unknown. Manson has suggested that the disease may be kept up by animals.

The ætiology may therefore be summarized by saying that the causation is an animal parasite, living in the blood stream of man and in the body of *Stegomyia calopus* Meigen 1818 (*S. fasciata* Fabricius 1805 *non* O. F. Müller 1764), by the bites of which it can be transmitted to man and the chimpanzee.

Unfortunately, according to Theobald, it is necessary to change the old name *Stegomyia fasciata* Fabricius 1805 to *S. frater* Desvoidy 1827 or to *S. calopus* Meigen 1818, though there is some doubt as to whether the latter, which is, of course, the older term, really applies to the insect we know as *S. fasciata*. The reason for this change is because the term *fasciata* was used by O. F. Müller in 1764 (not by de Villers, often wrongly spelt Villiers) for a *Culex* distinct from *S. fasciata* Fabricius 1805. More recently there seems to be some doubt as to the correctness of the new term—that is, *S. calopus*—and a return to the old term, *S. fasciata*, may be necessary.

Pathology.—In yellow fever the cells of the liver swell, and, pressing upon the bile capillaries, obstruct the flow of bile and cause a hepatogenous jaundice, characterized by yellow staining of the skin and tissues, and by the presence of bile in the urine. Further, the swelling blocks the intralobular capillaries, causing congestion of all the viscera drained by the portal vein, but especially of the pyloric end of the stomach and the duodenum, because of the arrangement of the veins from those parts. This stagnation of the blood may allow a secondary bacterial infection to take place, which shows its effect on the intestine and spleen.

The liver cells degenerate so extensively in bad cases as to cause the urea function to be considerably lessened in activity, and thereby a condition of ammoniæmia comes about, which produces most serious toxic effects upon the brain and other organs. In addition, the disease in some way seriously affects the endothelial lining of the blood capillaries, producing hæmorrhages in various parts of the body. If these leading features of the pathology are borne in mind, the post-mortem appearances and the symptomatology will be easily understood.

An attack generally confers a lasting immunity upon a person, and second attacks are rare; and it appears that the so-called racial immunity of people living in endemic regions is really an acquired immunity, due to mild attacks in childhood. Relative immunity can be acquired by inoculation of infected blood heated to 55° C. for five minutes. Further, it is found that the serum of a convalescent has some protective power.

The Blood.—There is no marked alteration in the numbers or appearance of the erythrocytes, even in fatal cases. A few normoblasts are said to be present at times. On the other hand, there is a decided loss of hæmoglobin, though this is rarely much reduced in the first three or four days; and hæmoglobinæmia is said to occur in fatal cases before death. But this does not appear to coincide with the fall of specific gravity, which may be present without loss of hæmoglobin.

The leucocytes do not appear to be distinctly increased in numbers, varying from 3,200 to 20,000 per cubic millimetre, the increase, when present, being largely caused by polymorphonuclear leucocytes. The coagulation of the blood is diminished, and ammoniæmia is thought to be present in bad cases.

The Urine.—Albumin appears early—as a rule, on the second day—and increases in quantity remarkably, especially in severe cases. During convalescence it may disappear, or may last for months. Bile is present about the fifth or sixth day, and red blood cells may also occur, though leucocytes are rather rare. Casts are present—first hyaline, then granular, and finally epithelial. Urea is diminished in bad cases, and the diazo-reaction is believed to be absent in uncomplicated cases.

The Vomit.—The vomit is often distinguished as white, red, and black. The white is acid, colourless or bile-stained, and is composed largely of mucus. The red vomit contains bright blood, while the black is acid, containing hydrochloric acid, epithelial cells, red corpuscles, fat, débris, and micro-organisms, its colour being due to the presence of hæmoglobin, turned to acid hæmatin by the hydrochloric acid.

Morbid Anatomy.—The skin is yellow from bile-pigment, and blotched with post-mortem lividity and hæmorrhages. The mucosa of the tongue is fissured, and the mouth may be covered with blood. The liver is yellowish or brownish in colour, marked by hæmorrhages. The cells are swollen and in a state of advanced fatty degeneration.

The gall-bladder contains inspissated bile, sometimes mixed with blood. The spleen is normal in size, but may be congested and soft. The stomach and intestines may be full of blood, usually in the form of a black homogeneous tarry fluid containing black particles, and the mucosa of the stomach, especially that of the pylorus and duodenum, is usually much swollen, and the mesenteric glands may sometimes be enlarged. The kidneys are, as a rule, normal in size, and show signs of some congestion. Bowman's capsules are said to be dilated, but this is not constant. The cells of the tubules show fatty degeneration, and the lumen may contain granular debris. The supra-renal capsules may be hyperæmic or show fatty degeneration, but neither of these is constant, and hyperæmia or fatty degeneration of the pituitary body and the thyroid gland have been described, but are not important. The bladder is usually empty. The heart shows ecchymoses, and effusions may be found in the pericardium. The lungs may be congested, and hæmorrhages may be found beneath the pleura. The uterine mucosa is congested, and there may be blood in the cavity. The meninges of the brain are congested, and hæmorrhagic spots may be seen.

Symptomatology.—An exact knowledge of the length of the incubation period is of the utmost importance from a prophylactic point of view. Calculated from experimental mosquito-bites, it varies from two days twenty-two hours to seven days five hours, but the latter figure was in a man who had had a mild attack. With regard to the former period, it is the shortest actual record, but some more doubtful figures, as low as two days one hour, are given. Excluding the man with the slight attack, the incubation period, as generally given by American observers, would be from two days twenty-two hours to six days two hours. Marchoux, Salimbeni and Simond consider that the incubation may be as long as twelve days, and draw this conclusion from inoculation of modified blood serum, and also from natural infection. Carter's careful clinical records, however, give the incubation period as varying from three to five and three-quarter days.

The average time appears to be about five days, but to be on the safe side at least six to seven days must be allowed.

The fever is divisible into two paroxysms, separated by a remission or intermission. The first attack is characterized by headache, pale, then flushed, face, injected eyes, and pains in the body, and after the second day albuminuria; while the second attack shows the jaundice from which the disease obtains its name, and the hæmorrhages, of which black vomit and black motions form such ominous signs.

Prodromata are usually absent, but general malaise may be felt for some little time previously. The attack begins with a sensation of coldness, with or without rigors, and with severe frontal headache, pains in the back and limbs, while the face, at first pale, becomes flushed and painful, the skin congested, the eyes brilliant and injected, and photophobia is often present. The temperature

rapidly rises to 103° F. or more ; the respiration quickens and is laboured ; the pulse is quick, full, and bounding, reaching to 100 or 120 per minute. The appetite is lost, and there is usually vomiting, associated with pain and tenderness in the region of the pylorus, and usually constipation. The urine is generally diminished, acid in reaction, with a high specific gravity, and albumin is present from the first or second day. Its passage may cause a sensation of burning. During this stage there is often insomnia.

On the second to fourth day the remission sets in, the temperature either dropping with a crisis, accompanied by sweating, to normal, or remitting to about 100° F., the flush and pains disappearing. In the former case the disease ends and convalescence begins. More usually, however, after a few hours' remission, during which the patient feels much better and sleeps well, the temperature again rises to 104° or 105° F. ; but a most characteristic feature, called 'Faget's sign,' now shows itself, in that the pulse does not increase in rapidity as the temperature rises. On the contrary, as days go on, the pulse-rate tends to become slower and slower, without regard to the temperature. This sign depends upon the severity of the case, being most noticeable in severe types, in which it may be only 70 to 60 per minute, though associated with a high temperature.

During the second attack all the symptoms of the first paroxysm return, but the congestion of the skin is not so marked, and the yellow tint of jaundice appears for the first time, and deepens as the illness proceeds. The vomiting and tenderness in the stomach return, and are associated now with much thirst and prostration. The tongue is dry and furred, with red tip and edges. Hæmorrhages may now occur from the nose, mouth, or uterus, and the bad signs of black vomit and melæna may appear. The urine diminishes in quantity, and the albumin increases. In bad cases its excretion may totally cease. There is generally much restlessness, and often delirium.

Two courses are now possible. The first is that after three to four days' illness the temperature may decline, the urine increase in amount, the albumin diminish, and the vomiting gradually cease ; while sweating may occur, and the patient, passing into a deep sleep, awakens on the road to convalescence. The second is that the temperature does not decline, the jaundice deepens, hæmorrhages appear under the skin, and from the regions indicated above, hiccough, subsultus tendinum, clammy sweats, anuria, coma, and convulsions lead to death, which may, however, take place before the full development of these symptoms by cardiac or respiratory failure.

Varieties.—Three varieties may be recognized, though some authors describe more. These are the mild, the severe, and the malignant. The mild type consists of simply the first paroxysm, in which the temperature does not rise above 102° F., the urine contains albumin, and the fever ceases by crisis on the second or

third day. The severe type shows the characters given above as typical for the disease. The malignant type begins with high fever, 105° to 107° F., with violent vomiting and the early appearance of black vomit and melæna, when the patient quickly becomes delirious, and dies in the initial fever.

Complications.—Any pre-existing pathological condition is serious in yellow fever, but renal and cardiac affections are perhaps the worst. Gangrene, abscesses, congestion of the lungs, and intussusception are possible complications arising in the course of the disease.

Sequelæ.—Boils and abscesses, dysentery and hepatitis, are the common sequels, but usually convalescence is not complicated or protracted.

Prognosis.—The mortality is very variously given, usually 10 to 25 per cent. for the United States and Europe, and 45 to 80 per cent. for the endemic area and West Africa. The extremes are 0.5 to 94.5 per cent.

All cases of yellow fever must be considered serious, especially if complicated with pre-existing disease, and constant care must be taken to measure the daily quantity of urine passed, and to estimate the amount of albumin; for marked diminution of the urine, especially anuria, is a grave sign. High temperatures, black vomit, melæna and other hæmorrhages, and marked disturbance of the nervous system, are all bad omens.

Diagnosis.—The typical symptoms in an epidemic will hardly be mistaken for any other disease, but the mild early case is very difficult to recognize. The best signs for a positive diagnosis are the early albuminuria, the epigastric tenderness, and, later, the jaundice, with Faget's sign, and the black vomit.

The most important diseases to differentiate in the first stage are dengue, subtertian malaria, blackwater fever, and relapsing fever. Dengue may be recognized by the absence of albuminuria, the preliminary rash, and leucopenia; subtertian malaria by the parasites in the blood, and in some cases the typical four-hourly temperature chart; blackwater fever by the hæmoglobin in the urine and the mononuclear increase; relapsing fever by the parasites in the blood and the leucocytosis.

Treatment.—The modern treatment of yellow fever is based upon the work of Sternberg, Touartre, and Anderson.

As the cause of the disease is unknown, the treatment must aim at the prevention of the spread of the infection, the rapid elimination of the toxins, and the alleviation of the symptoms. To prevent the spread of the disease, the patient's bedroom must be rendered gnat-proof. The excretion of the toxins must take place by the bowels, skin, and kidneys, and therefore it is necessary to encourage the action of all three. The bowels are opened by a small dose of calomel, given more for the purpose of disinfecting the alimentary canal than for any other reason, followed by doses of sodium sulphate until the purgative action has been produced. After this

the action of the bowels can be maintained by enemata of 1 tablespoonful of sodium sulphate dissolved in a pint of warm water, and given morning and night.

When there is severe headache, a hot mustard foot-bath may be given, which should relieve the head. After this the patient is warmly wrapped up in blankets, care being taken that he is not oppressed by the clothing, for only those who have been seriously ill can appreciate how embarrassing the weight of heavy blankets is to the heart. It is hoped that by these means the action of the skin will be stimulated.

In order to dilute the toxins, and at the same time to stimulate the action of the kidneys, an alkaline treatment, with plenty of fluid, is required. This can be effected by administering 2 to 4 quarts of iced Célestin variety of Vichy water in the twenty-four hours, or the same quantity of any alkaline mineral water, to each pint of which 30 grains of sodium bicarbonate have been added ; or Sternberg's celebrated mixture of—

Sodii bicarbonatis	..	..	gr. cl.
Hydrargyri perchloridi	..	..	gr. $\frac{1}{3}$
Aquæ	..	..	ad \mathfrak{z} lx.

may be prescribed in 3-tablespoonful doses every hour ; or an effervescing drink can be made up of sodium bicarbonate and fresh lime-juice, but care should be taken that this is mixed in such quantities as to be neutral, and it may, if necessary, be combined with sodium sulphate. If this alkaline treatment cannot be given by the mouth, then the bicarbonate of soda must be administered as warm enemata.

As regards symptoms, if there is great pain, this can be relieved by a small dose of phenacetin, while severe lumbar pain may be relieved by hot fomentations ; but if no urine is passing, the warm mustard bath will be better.

Vomiting is treated by sips of iced Vichy, iced champagne, a blister to the pit of the stomach, a dose of a mixture containing chloroform, or a hypodermic injection of morphia. If there is much fever, this must be treated by cool sponging, and cool applications to the head.

Black vomit should be treated by the application of the ice-bag to the pit of the stomach, and hæmorrhages in general should be met with doses of calcium chloride or hypodermic injections of adrenalin or ergotin.

In these bad cases it is advised by some authors to rub olive oil into the skin in quantity, with a view of ladening the endothelial cells of the blood capillaries with fatty particles, and so protecting them against the action of the toxins.

Anuria requires treatment by hot fomentations to the loins, or cupping and hot-air baths, and Carroll recommends the injection of 15 grains of urea, either hypodermically or by the rectum, with a view to stimulating renal activity, on the ground that in these

bad cases the production of urea by the liver is not sufficient for that purpose.

Cardiac failure requires hypodermic injections of strychnine, camphor dissolved in ether or oil, or simply ether.

No food should be given for two or three days, but only the alkaline drinks, and champagne if necessary, the idea being to relieve the stomach and prevent the accumulation of waste products in the system, and so to save the kidney from too much work.

After this time, or if the temperature is below 102° F., milk and lime-water, toast-water, and barley-water may be given. With a view to saving tissue waste and getting fat into the circulation, pure frozen cream, cold white wine-jelly or lemon-jelly, should be given, or olive oil administered by the mouth or rubbed into the skin, as indicated above.

After the temperature has been normal for some three days, chicken-broth, custard-pudding, blanc-mange, etc., can be tried, and a few days later the diet can be gradually increased.

Strong beef extracts and strong alcoholic stimulants should be avoided, the best stimulant being iced champagne in tablespoonful doses.

Prophylaxis.—Yellow fever is generally conveyed from one place to another by ships, but in order to produce an epidemic several factors are necessary—viz., cases of the disease from which *Stegomyia calopus* may become infected, together with conditions of temperature, moisture, etc., suitable for the development of the germ in the mosquito, and also for the propagation of the mosquito itself, together with the presence of non-immune people for the mosquito to infect. It is also necessary to bear in mind that the incubation period is usually from three to six days, and therefore quarantine must be of at least five days, or, to be on the safe side, of six or seven days' duration. In order that the mosquito may become infected it must bite a patient during the first three days of the illness, and another twelve days must elapse before it is able to infect non-immunes. Therefore an infected ship must be anchored at least a quarter of a mile from the shore and from other ships. The sick must be placed in mosquito-proof rooms, the crew quarantined for at least six to seven days, and the whole ship disinfected by a Clayton's disinfecter, preferably between 9 a.m. and 3 p.m., while the mosquitoes are quiescent. Dock-labourers working on suspected or disinfected ships should live in special gnat-proof buildings, and be under medical supervision.

With regard to an infected area, it must be remembered that *Stegomyia calopus* is essentially domestic in its habits, that it is active from 3 p.m. till early morning, but that it is quiescent between the hours of 9 a.m. and 3 p.m., when, therefore, visits can be made to infected areas without risk. Further, the mosquito is known to bite dead bodies and suck the blood, but this will seldom infect

it, as a patient generally lives longer than the three days during which the disease can be communicated to the mosquito. Lastly, it can pass through a screen with fifteen meshes, but not through one with twenty meshes to the inch.

The mosquito does not die after laying its eggs, but lives until it has laid seven batches—*i.e.*, some thirty days. The eggs laid twelve days after infection are capable of carrying the infection into the second generation, which can spread the disease fourteen days after becoming imagoes.

When a person is moved from an infected room, disinfection should be begun at once. All cracks, openings, etc., should be closed with paper, and fumigation carried out, preferably by means of sulphur dioxide gas, or if there is an objection to this because of the damage it causes, pyrethrum may be used, but must be burned in the proportion of 1 pound to 1,000 cubic feet of air-space if the mosquitoes are to be merely stupefied, and 2 pounds if they are to be killed; or tobacco, 1 pound per 1,000 cubic feet, may be used.

In addition, if an epidemic is to be eradicated, cases must be at once notified to the central authority, and patients must be strictly treated in mosquito-proof rooms, and every person, immune or non-immune, must use mosquito-curtains, while an anti-mosquito scheme on the lines mentioned under Malaria must be undertaken. Special care must, however, be taken to eradicate, after a careful survey, all the breeding-places, not forgetting those in old tins, cocoanut-shells, gutters, small pools, etc. In endemic areas, houses and public buildings should be rendered gnat-proof. Lastly, when an epidemic breaks out in any place, it may be taken for granted that the importation took place at least two to three weeks prior to the discovery, for this is the time required for the incubation of the germ in the mosquito and in man; and it may also be assumed that mild cases are probably being treated for influenza or malaria. Therefore a house-to-house visitation is almost necessary, in order to find out the extent of the outbreak.

Given a free hand and plenty of money, there should be no difficulty in dealing with a threatened epidemic, but the public must be won over to assist, and offenders must be fined for transgressions against sanitation, as is done by the Americans in Panama, the offences being the presence of mosquito larvæ, imperfect screening of the house, accumulation of water, etc.

Boyce summarizes the prophylactic measures as follows:—

A. Where there is reason to believe that yellow fever is endemic.

- (1) Segregation of non-immunes, partial or complete, town planning.
- (2) Screening—
 - (a) The bed.
 - (b) The veranda.
 - (c) The house.

- (3) Systematic mosquito destruction—
 - (a) Removal of breeding-places.
 - (b) Screening of water cisterns.
 - (c) Oiling, and infliction of fines.
 - (d) Drainage.
 - (e) Bush clearing.
- (4) Education.
- (5) Quarantine administration.

B. Where yellow fever has broken out.

- (1) Removal of all non-immunes outside the infected area, and deflection of the traffic outside the infected area.
- (2) Isolation of cases and suspected cases.
- (3) Provision for isolation of contacts.
- (4) Early notification.
- (5) Fumigation.
- (6) Emergency mosquito measures—
 - (a) Removal of receptacles.
 - (b) Oiling.
 - (c) Screening.
 - (d) Drainage.
- (7) Education.
 - (a) Lectures.
 - (b) Meetings.
 - (c) Pamphlets.
- (8) General organization of the medical forces.

No anxiety need now be felt as to the spread of yellow fever to Asia when the Panama Canal is open, for it appears as though not merely yellow fever, but all infectious and contagious fevers are bound to be eradicated from the Canal zone under the able American rule.

REFERENCES.

The Tropical Diseases Bulletin and the Bulletins of the Yellow Fever Institute, Treasury Department, United States Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, and of the Yellow Fever Bureau in Liverpool are most important, and the last-named embraces dengue and pappataci fever also.

A. B. (1804). *Prospetto sulla origine, natura, e carattere della peste, di contagi della febbre gialla di America.* 8vo br. Lucca.

AGRAMONTE (1912). *New York Medical Journal.*

AUGUSTIN (1909). *History of Yellow Fever, New Orleans.*

BALLY, M. (1823). *Histoire Médicale de la Fièvre Jaune observée en Espagne et particulièrement en Catalogue dans l'Année 1821.* 8vo m.p. Paris, Imprim. Royale.

BALME, A. (1822). *Observations et Reflexions sur les causes, les symptômes et le traitement de la Contagion dans différentes maladies et spécialement dans la peste d'Orient et la Fièvre Jaune.* 8vo. Paris: Lyon.

BANCROFT, ED. NAT. (1811). *An Essay on the Disease called Yellow Fever, with Observations concerning Febrile Contagion, Typhus, Dysentery, and the Plague, partly delivered as the Gulstonian Lectures before the College of Physicians, in the Years 1806 and 1807.* 8vo. cart. London: T. Cadell and W. Davies.

BÉRENGER-FÉRAUD (1890). *La Fièvre Jaune.* Paris.

BLANE, GILBERTO (1820). *Elementi di Logica Medica illustrati da esempi e prove di Fatto. Contenenti un Esposizione della Febbre Gialla.* Trad. dall' Inglese. 8vo. m.p. Pisa.

- BONNEAU, J. D., ET SULPICY, ENG. (1823). *Recherches sur la Contagion de la Fièvre Jaune en rapprochement des Faits et des Raisonnements les propres à l'ecclaircir cette Question.* 8vo. Paris.
- BOYCE (1911). *Yellow Fever and its Prevention.* London. (1910). *Health Progress and Administration in the West Indies.*
- BROWN (1800). *Yellow Fever.*
- CAILLIOT, LOUIS (1815). *Traité de la Fièvre Jaune.* 8vo m.p. Paris : Megniggnon.
- CARROLL (1902). *Journal of the American Medical Association*, p. 117.
- CLARKE (1797). *Yellow Fever.* London.
- DARISTE (1825). *Recherches pratiques sur la Fièvre Jaune.* 8vo. m.p. Paris.
- FEBBRE (1824). *Ricerche Patologiche sulla Febbre di Livorno del 1814. Sulla Febbre Gialla Americana e sulle Malattie di Genio Analoghe.* 8vo. m.p.
- FIÈVRE JAUNE (1853). *Second Rapport sur la Quarantaine ; Conseil-General de Santi.* 8vo cart. London : Eyre et Spottiswoode.
- LUND (1808). *Diseases of Hot Climates.* London.
- MANZINI, N. B. (1858). *Histoire de l'Inoculation preservat de la Fièvre Jaune pratique par ordre du Gouvernement Espagnole à l'Hôpital Militaire de la Havane.* 8vo. Paris : J. B. Bailliére et Fils.
- MARCHOUX, SALIMBENI, AND SIMOND (1903). *Ann. d'Hyg. et de Méd. Colon.*
- NOC (1912). *Rev. Hyg. Sanit.*
- O'HALLORAN, THOMAS (1822). *A Brief View of the Yellow Fever as it appeared in Andalusia during the Epidemic of 1820, together with the Mode of Treatment adopted, and an Account of the Appearances on Dissection.* 8vo cart. London : Burgess and Hill.
- PALLANI, G. (1804). *Parere Medico sulla Malattia febbrile che la dominato nella città di Livorno l'Anno.* Firenze.
- PARKER, BEYER, AND POTHIER (1903). *A Study of Yellow Fever.* Washington.
- REED, CARROLL, AND AGRAMONTE (1901). *Journal of the American Medical Association.*
- RHO (1906). *Annali Med. Navale.*
- ROCHOUX, J. A. (1822). *Recherches sur la Fièvre Jaune et Preuves de sa Non-contagion dans les Antilles.* 8vo br. Paris : Berchet Jeune.
- SEIDELIN (1912). *Yellow Fever Bureau Bulletin.*
- STIMSON (1909). *Transactions, Society Tropical Medicine.*
- THOMAS (1909). *Transactions, Society Tropical Medicine.*
- TOMMASINI, G. (1805). *Sulla Febbre Gialla Americana, sulla Febbre di Livorno e sulle Malattie di Genio Analoghe.* 8vo m.p. Parma : Luigi Massi.
- TOMMASINI, G. (1834). *Ricerche Patologiche sulla Febbre di Livorno del 1814. Sulla Febbre Gialla Americana e sulle Malattie di Genio Analoghe.* 8vo. Firenze : A. M. Cardinali.
- TORRIGIANI, F. (1805). *Della Febbre Gialla.* Pisa.
- TOUARTE (1898). *Yellow Fever.*
- TOWNE (1762). *Diseases of the West Indies.* London.
- WARREN (1740). *Malignant Fever in Barbadoes.*

CHAPTER XXXVII

UNDULANT FEVER

Synonyms — Definition — History — Climatology — Ætiology — Pathology — Symptomatology — Diagnosis — Prognosis — Treatment — Prophylaxis—References.

Synonyms.—Mediterranean fever, Malta fever, Bruce's Septicæmia, Gibraltar fever, Neapolitan fever, Cyprus fever, Munhinyo (Uganda). *Latin*: Febris Undulans, Febris Sudoralis, Septicæmia Melitensis. *French*: Melitoccie, Fièvre Caprine, Fièvre Capriense. *German*: Malta Fieber. *Italian*: Febbre Mediterranea, Febbre Maltese.

Definition.—Undulant fever is a chronic, rarely an acute, febrile disorder, with many undulatory relapses, caused by *Micrococcus melitensis* Bruce, and probably other closely allied germs, and usually spread by the agency of goat's milk.

Remarks.—It is probable that, like enteric, the term 'undulant fever' may cover in reality a group of infections due to very closely allied germs. Nègre and Raynaud have described a *M. paramelitensis*, and previously to them Sergent and Zammit a *M. pseudomelitensis*. These germs have been proved to differ biologically from the common type of *M. melitensis* by means of agglutination and absorption tests.

History.—Undulant fever has probably existed in the neighbourhood of the Mediterranean for centuries, and passages are cited from Hippocrates recounting cases of long-drawn-out fevers, with short apyrexial intervals lasting as long as 120 days, which may perhaps refer to the disease.

In the eighteenth and the early part of the nineteenth centuries references were made to protracted fevers occurring in Malta by various observers—*e.g.*, Howard in 1786, Hennen in 1816-25, Davy in 1842-62—but it is difficult to be certain what disease is referred to. During the Crimean War there appears to have been a very large temporary increase of the fever incidence in Malta, much of which was undoubtedly enteric, but some of it was not. The change in the type of fever appears to have been so marked that some people thought that a new disease had been imported from the Crimea by the returning troops.

In 1859 Marston, having personally suffered from the fever, first gave an accurate account of its clinical history and post-mortem appearances under the term 'Mediterranean remittent' or 'gastric remittent fever,' distinguishing it clearly from enteric and what he called 'Maltese fever.'

From this date there seems to have been much confusion, for it was often diagnosed as some form of rheumatism, but the disease appears to have been clearly recognized by Boileau, Chartres, Thomas, and others. In 1879 Veale gave an account of it as seen in invalids at Netley, as did Fazio in Naples, who not merely described the disease, but suggested that it might be found to be of bacterial origin.

In 1886 it was proved to be a separate pathological entity by Bruce, who discovered a micrococcus in the spleen. In 1887 he found the organism several times, and was able to cultivate it on agar-agar, and to reproduce the disease by inoculation in monkeys, from which he again obtained the organism in pure culture. In 1889 he published the first full account of the clinical symptoms, and in 1891 he grew the micrococcus from blood aspirated from the spleen during life. Thus, Bruce proved that this organism, which he called *Micrococcus melitensis*, was the true cause of the fever.

In 1897 Wright and Semple showed that the disease could be diagnosed by the agglutination of the micro-organism by the serum of patients, and in the same year Hughes published a full historical and clinical account.

In 1904 a Commission was appointed by the Admiralty, the War Office, and the Civil Government of Malta to investigate the disease. This Commission (J. C. Kennedy, Zammit, Horrocks) demonstrated that the micrococcus leaves the body mainly in the urine, and is then capable of existing for a long period outside the body. Zammit discovered that the milk of many goats agglutinated *M. melitensis*, and Horrocks isolated the germ from such goats, which it does not appear to affect injuriously, living in the blood-stream, and also occurring in the milk, by means of which the disease is conveyed to man.

Prophylaxis on the lines indicated by the ætiology has resulted in the reduction of the disease in British troops in Malta from 643 cases in 1905 to 7 cases in 1907, and 1 case in 1910. In 1906 Lamb and Pai proved that the organism existed in India in men, while Foster did the same for goats.

In 1912 Bassett-Smith drew attention to the fact that, though the disease has been reduced by prophylactic measures in some places, it has spread to (or been diagnosed in) Spain, Portugal, and France. In the same year Nègre and Raynaud described *M. paramelitensis* and their findings have been recently confirmed by Bassett-Smith, who has fully described a case of para-undulant fever contracted in the South of France.

Climatology.—The endemic areas of the disease are, undoubtedly, firstly, the coasts and islands of the Mediterranean, Italy, France,

Greece, etc.; and, secondly, India, especially the Punjab, where the causative organism has been obtained in human beings and goats. We have met with cases in Ceylon. Recently it has been reported from many other parts of the world—in fact, it may be said to be cosmopolitan, and to extend into the interior of the continents. A case contracted in Northern Nigeria has been reported by Low.

It is certainly a disease of tropical and subtropical climates, and exists, in addition to the two localities mentioned, in Russia, East and South Africa, Uganda, where it is called 'munhinyo,' the Sudan, Mauretania, China, the Philippine and Fiji Islands, North and South America, and the West Indies. It occurs all through the year, but is more common in the warm weather in Malta.

Ætiology.—The cause, as has been indicated in the history, is *M. melitensis*, and some extremely closely allied bacteria, *M. paramelitensis* Nègre and Raynaud 1912, and *M. pseudomelitensis* Sergent and Zammit 1908, which can be differentiated by agglutination and absorption tests. *M. melitensis* is found in the spleen, liver, kidney, lymphatic and salivary glands, the blood, bile, fæces (rarely), and probably in the alimentary canal (as Eyre's researches on rabbits indicate), the urine, and the milk. It does not occur in the expired air, the sweat, the saliva, or in scrapings from the skin.

It can be inoculated, and it may be found in the stomach of mosquitoes which have fed upon patients, but neither they nor any other biting fly, such as a *Stomoxys*, or a flea, have been proved capable of spreading the disease. It is, however, very resistant, and can live for eighty days in dust, or in water, fresh or salt, for a month, but has never yet been found naturally in air, dust, soil, or water, neither have any of these in a natural way been proved capable of spreading the disease. It is, however, true that dust, infected with damp organisms from a culture, has infected monkeys, as have suspensions of the organism when applied to mucosæ of the nose or throat. It appears, however, to be best conveyed to animals in food, especially milk.

The organism has also been found by the serum reaction to be present in 50 per cent. of the goats examined in Malta, and has also been obtained from the milk of 10 per cent. of the goats investigated, and, when looked for, it has been found in the blood of goats and other animals. The milk of such animals contains agglutinin for the germ (Zemmit's lacto-reaction). Notwithstanding this infection, the animals are quite healthy, though a chronic mastitis, as observed by Neri, may occasionally be noted. It appears to be conveyed to man by infected milk; the best evidence in favour of which is the infection of a ship's crew by the milk of goats, which were being conveyed from Malta to America, 53 per cent. of which were found to be infected.

The distribution of the disease, therefore, depends upon the consumption of infected goat's milk, for people who use this milk will be more liable to infection than others—hence its occurrence in

Malta and the Mediterranean districts, in South Africa and India. This is also the reason why the richer classes are more affected than the poorer, and why individual institutions are picked out. It also explains why there is no age or sex incidence, why infants rarely suffer, and why occupation and surroundings have but little influence.

How the disease spreads from goat to goat is not known. Brumpt states that they drink human and animal urine if deprived of salt, and in this way the infection may be kept up. The percentage of infected goats has been found to be 3·4 per cent. in Algeria, 29 per cent. in St. Marthal, 30·7 per cent. in Tunis, 34·2 per cent. in Marseilles, and 50 per cent. in Malta.

Mules, asses, horses, oxen, cows, rabbits, and fowls, are all apparently capable of spreading the infection, while often they do not show any sign of disease.

The question of the human carrier is only just coming forward with any degree of prominence as a factor to be considered in the spread of the disease, but Shaw has drawn attention to this possibility in Malta, where many of the dock labourers showed agglutinins in their blood for *M. melitensis*, and Missiroli has obtained the micrococcus from the blood of an apparently healthy man who subsequently developed the fever typically in fifteen days, and slightly in five days.

Four modes of infection are described: (1) By the alimentary canal, which is the usual method; (2) by the respiratory system, inhaling dust contaminated by goat's urine, which is rare; (3) by the cutaneous system, which is very rare; (4) by sexual intercourse, which is possible.

A variety of *M. melitensis*, called *M. paramelitensis*, is described by Nègre and Raynaud as the cause of a variety of fever termed 'para-undulant fever.'

Pathology.—The micrococcus enters the blood-stream via the mucosæ of the alimentary canal, and causes a genuine septicæmia, with enlargement and congestion of the spleen as the most marked feature; so that the disease somewhat resembles typhoid fever in many of its characters, without, however, producing such typical intestinal lesions as that disease. According to some authors (Ross, etc.), the germ can be conveyed by mosquitoes, but this has not been proved. For clinical and experimental reasons Bruce believes that one attack produces an immunity, but Manson and Bassett-Smith doubt this. The organism produces hæmolysins while the reaction on the part of the body is shown by the formation of agglutinins, which may last from four to ten years, and a specific serum, which may be useful for immunization. There is also an immune body in the blood suitable for complement deviation, and this corresponds with the quantity of the agglutinins.

Morbid Anatomy.—The morbid anatomy shows an enlarged and congested spleen, some congestion of the liver, kidney, and mesenteric glands, duodenum, jejunum, large intestine, and lungs. The

spleen is usually much enlarged, weighing from 10 to 44 ounces. It is dark red in colour, and may be soft and friable, and is very congested, with enlarged Malpighian bodies. The liver is congested and enlarged, and shows cloudy swelling, with a round-celled infiltration between the lobules. The kidney is congested, and may show a glomerular nephritis. The alimentary canal may not merely be congested, but the colon may also be ulcerated, particularly in cases of hæmorrhage. The lungs are congested, especially at the bases, and may show patches of consolidation.

Symptomatology.—Monkeys fed with infected milk require an incubation of fifteen days, while in human beings the period, according to Johnstone, is fourteen days.

The prodromata are usually malaise, chilliness, headache, muscular pains, and dyspepsia. The onset comes on gradually, and the patient continues his work though feeling ill, while the temperature rises in a ladder, being higher each evening, and remitting somewhat in the morning. About the fourth or fifth day of the illness a doctor is consulted for the headache, and pains in the body and limbs, which may have been thought to be rheumatic. The patient looks ill, and his temperature is found to be about 103° F., his pulse 80 to 90, and his tongue coated dorsally with a white fur, while the edges are red, and may be indented by the teeth. There is usually a slight sore throat and a tender epigastrium, with some bronchial catarrh or congestion of the lungs, and enlargement and tenderness of the spleen, which develop in the course of a week or so.

All these symptoms continue for about a couple of weeks, the temperature remaining high— 103° to 105° F.—but at the end of this period the fever declines, and the temperature may become normal, while the patient feels much better. In a day or so, however, a relapse occurs with much the same symptoms as the attack. This relapse subsides, and another follows, relapses and intermissions recurring for months.

The temperature now becomes undulating, with a marked rise at night and fall in the morning, while the patient becomes more and more anæmic, weak, and wasted. The alimentary canal is irritated, as is shown by the dyspepsia and the constipation or diarrhœa. The throat may be sore, the gums spongy, and bleed on pressure; the spleen is often enlarged and painful, and the lungs may show signs of bronchitis, and occasionally lobular pneumonia, while the heart is easily excited, and hæmic murmurs are heard. The patient shows signs of prostration and headache, and pains all over the body are felt. Insomnia and hysterical emotions are not uncommon, but actual delirium is not usual, and the memory may be impaired, while neuritis—*e.g.*, sciatica—may occur. The skin is pale but damp, due to local or general perspiration, which is very common, and occurs with each remission of the temperature, the sweat being of a peculiar disagreeable odour. Sudamina is not uncommon after the third week. Desquamation

may occur, as well as prickly heat, boils, bedsores, subcutaneous abscesses or hæmorrhages.

The joints may become swollen and very painful, but the skin over them is seldom reddened. Of all the joints the hip, shoulder, ankle, and knee appear most commonly affected. Inflammation or neuralgia of the testes may occur, and at times the parotid also becomes inflamed.

The blood has been more particularly studied by Bassett-Smith and Gabbi, who find a secondary anæmia with a loss of 20 to 40 per cent. of the corpuscles, with some poikilocytosis and an even greater reduction of the hæmoglobin. The leucocytic count is normal, but there is a decrease in the polymorphonuclears, and an increase in the mononuclears up to as much as 80 per cent. in some cases. Phagocytosis is said to be diminished, as is also the bactericidal power of the blood.

Agglutination is a useful test, but must be in a dilution of at least 1 in 50, otherwise errors in diagnosis will result. Bassett-Smith recommends a high dilution (1 in 1,000), but in our experience 1 in 80 is generally sufficient, with a time-limit of thirty minutes. This reaction is said to last for a very long time—*i.e.*, two to seven years. Birt and Lamb have made this serum reaction the basis of prognosis, which is considered to be unfavourable if continuously low, or rapidly altering from a high to a low figure. Agglutinins are present also in the saliva (saliva-reaction of Polacci and others).

The urine is passed in fair quantity, and has a slightly acid reaction, with a deposit of urates and phosphates, but there is very seldom any albumin, though bile may be present in severe cases, and the specific germ can be found in the urine even two years after an attack. Albuminuria and nephritis may occur, and very rarely hæmaturia.

The patient is now anæmic, and prostrated by the repeated attacks of fever, when gradually the symptoms begin to improve, the intermissions lengthen, the attacks lessen in length and severity, the temperature becomes normal or subnormal in the morning, rising a little at night. Gradually this evening rise diminishes until it stops, the tongue clears, the symptoms abate, and convalescence begins after an illness of from 20 to 300 days, with an average of 90 days.

Varieties.—Two varieties distinct from the typical description given above are recognized by Hughes—*viz.*, a malignant and an intermittent—to which a third or ambulatory variety may be added.

The Malignant Variety.—Suddenly, without warning, the patient is attacked with high fever, the temperature rising to 104° or 105° F., with severe pains all over the body, flushed face, and all the other symptoms already mentioned, but in an aggravated form, and often associated with basal pneumonia, and diarrhœa with offensive stools.

After a little the symptoms abate somewhat, but instead of improving, the pulse becomes intermittent, the breathing is laboured,

and vomiting becomes serious, and the patient gradually passes into the typhoid state, when hyperpyrexia sets in, and death takes place from the fifth to the twenty-first day of the illness.

The Intermittent Variety.—The onset in this variety is very gradual. When the attack is fully developed, the temperature is about normal in the morning, but rises in the afternoon to 99° or 105° F., this rise being accompanied by malaise, irritability, and chilliness. During the night sweating occurs, and the temperature falls to nearly normal. This fever continues usually for about six weeks, but may be prolonged for about six months, and is usually unassociated with any serious symptoms—in fact, so mild may the attack be that it is not discovered until the patient's general health begins to be unsatisfactory, and he seeks medical advice.

The Ambulatory Variety.—Apparently at times the organism may produce such little effect that the infected person may be unaware that he is suffering from any complaint, and may pursue his daily vocation. Thus, out of 525 dock-hands examined by Shaw at Malta for the serum reaction, 79 gave positive results; and of 22 tested, 9 contained the organism either in the blood or urine, or both.

Para-undulant Fever.—This is a variety with the typical symptoms, but due to a *Micrococcus paramelitensis* described by Nègre and Raynaud, which seems to be distinct from *M. melitensis*.

Complications.—Ulcers may, though rarely, occur in the small and large intestine, and give rise to hæmorrhage, while persistent vomiting, diarrhoea, hyperpyrexia, pneumonia, pleuritic effusion, and cardiac failure all form serious complications. Orchitis is common.

Sequelæ.—Paralysis, wasting of muscles, loss of memory, tremulousness, and neurasthenia are possible sequelæ.

Diagnosis.—The principal clinical signs on which to base a diagnosis are the prolonged undulant character of the fever, the profuse sweatings, and the articular symptoms.

Bacteriological methods of diagnosis should be always resorted to whenever possible. The agglutination reaction, if the blood is sufficiently diluted (at least 1 in 80), the test properly performed, and carried out using a known and reliable strain of the germ, is, in our experience, sufficiently certain, but in any doubtful case the blood should be investigated for the presence of *M. melitensis*, using nutrose media or the dilution method. In case of a negative result, the examination should be repeated at least three times at different periods of the disease.

Nicolle and Conor consider that many of the errors are due, firstly, to leaving the serum in contact with the clot, and state that either the blood should be used at once or the serum separated from the clot; and, secondly, in order to prevent obtaining positive reactions with non-undulant fever serum, that sera, to be tested, should be heated to 56° C. for half an hour in order to destroy the non-specific agglutinins, as first recommended by Nègre and Raynaud.

Saisawa and others have applied to Malta fever the Bordet-Gengou complement-deviation reaction, but the technique is rather complicated for routine work, and the results have not been very good.

The presence of a high opsonic index for *M. melitensis* may help the diagnosis.

The diseases from which Malta fever must be distinguished are typhoid, recognized by a positive Widal reaction, malaria, recognized by the presence of the blood parasites, and kala-azar, by its parasite in the spleen juice.

Prognosis.—The prognosis in the usual form and the mild type is good, the dangers being syncope and complications. The sudden malignant type is rare, but very fatal. The mortality is placed as low as 2 per cent. by Bruce, but others have reckoned it as high as 13 per cent. for the army in Malta, and 9 per cent. for the civilian population.

Treatment.—The treatment is entirely symptomatic, as no drug is known which will kill the parasite, and the vaccine and serum treatment has not been successful. The recently introduced Trambusti's serum, however, seems to be more efficacious than previous ones, and is worth further investigation. It is prepared by inoculating animals with a nucleo-proteid vaccine, according to the method of Lustig and Galeotti. The principal symptoms which require treatment are fever, pain, gastric and intestinal disturbances, congestion of the mouth and throat, nervous symptoms, and hæmorrhages. Attention must be paid to the skin, lungs, and heart.

The patient also requires the utmost care as regards nursing, and in the acute stages the bed-pan should be used. Chills must be avoided by the use of warm clothing, and the room should be rendered gnat-proof to keep off flies. Care must be taken that the bladder is emptied regularly.

The fever is best treated by tepid sponging when moderate, and cold sponging and ice-packs when severe. As regards pains, headache is treated by bromides, with or without morphia, or small doses of phenazone or phenacetin with caffeine may be used; pains in the joints by hot fomentations with belladonna or opium; general pains by a hypodermic injection of morphia. Scott's dressing may be applied to a swollen and painful joint, and pain in the soles of the feet may be treated by cold-water applications. Vomiting is to be treated as described under Malaria. Constipation is met by a dose of calomel and a saline, and the bowels kept open by compound liquorice powder or enemata. Diarrhœa is controlled by some ordinary astringent mixture, or bismuth, or tannalbin powders in some form, while Dover's powder is very useful, as it also relieves pain.

If the colon is affected, the treatment may be on the same lines as for a mild attack of dysentery, boracic enemata being used. Small doses of calomel— $\frac{1}{6}$ grain—three or four times a day as an intestinal disinfectant, are useful. The dyspepsia may require treatment on the ordinary lines. A mouth-wash of glycothymoline or glycerin borax and myrrh, or listerine, should be used, and the throat cleaned by an alkaline spray, and then astringed by a gargle. The nervous symptoms are soothed by cool sponging, or by the bromide and morphia mentioned above. Hæmorrhages must be controlled by rest, applications of ice, careful regulation of food, and administration of adrenalin and calcium chloride. The skin must

be carefully watched, and prickly heat, boils, or threatening bed-sores promptly treated, and special care must be taken that after sweating, which often occurs at night, the clothes are changed. The lungs should be watched for signs of congestion and pneumonia or pleurisy, which must receive the usual treatment. The heart must be carefully studied, and digitalis, strychnine, iron, or some other cardiac tonic administered as required. Bassett-Smith recommends vaccine and yeast therapy. The vaccine is prepared from the strain infecting the patient, and given in doses of 100 to 500 millions of germs, and the yeast in doses of 2 drachms twice a day. The vaccine should be given only when the fever is of a low type.

Low diet is necessary during the attack ; but if milk is used, care must be taken that it is not goat's milk, or derived from an infected source, otherwise, while treating the patient, a process of reinfection may also be carried out. During the intermission the patient should be given light nutritious food, care being taken to see that it is really digested.

Stimulants, in the form of champagne or brandy, are often necessary in severe cases, because of the cardiac and general depression.

De Brum claims to have had good results in the treatment of Malta fever by giving massive doses of quinine (1 drachm daily). Gabbi uses thymol enemata.

Prophylaxis.—The prophylaxis appears to be simple and to consist in the avoidance of goat's milk. The Gibraltar authorities have completely stamped out Malta fever by prohibiting the importation of goats from Malta, which, together with the diminution of the disease in Malta, clearly demonstrates the great practical value of the work performed by the late Commission. The average number of cases in the British troops stationed at Malta before 1906 used to be 240 per annum ; since 1906 condensed milk only is supplied, and the number of cases has steadily decreased, until in 1910 one case only was recorded.

The prophylactic measures may be summarized as follows :—

A. General Measures.

- (1) Notification.
- (2) Isolation.
- (3) Disinfection.
- (4) Sterilization of milk and water.
- (5) Good hygiene.

B. Personal Measures.

- (1) Personal cleanliness.
- (2) Prevention of infection from mother to child.
- (3) A reliable vaccine will probably be prepared in future.

C. Veterinary Measures.

- (1) Investigation of goats by serum and lacto reaction.
- (2) Slaughter of infected goats.
- (3) General immunization of the goats by vaccines.
- (4) Prevention of importation of infected animals.
- (5) Inspection of stables, etc.

REFERENCES.

The most important references are found in Reports of the Commission for the Investigation of Mediterranean Fever (1905-07. Reports I. to VII. London), the Tropical Diseases Bulletin, London, 1912; and in Bulletin Officielle International d'Hygiène Publique, vol. iv., No. 7, 1912.

AXISA (1906). British Medical Journal, September.

BRUCE (1887-1908). Practitioner, xxxix.; *ibid.*, 1887, p. 161; *ibid.*, 1888, p. 241; British Medical Journal, 1889, i. 1101; Osler's System of Medicine, 1908, iii. 17.

BASSETT-SMITH (1904). British Medical Journal, ii. 325.

BASSETT-SMITH (1913). Journal of Tropical Medicine.

BIRT AND LAMB (1899). Lancet, vol. ii.

BOUSFIELD (1907). Journal of the Royal Army Medical Corps.

GABBI (1909). Policlinico and Malaria, 1-12.

HUGHES (1897). Mediterranean Fever. London.

LAMB AND PAIN (1906). No. 22, Scientific Memoirs. India.

LOW, G. C. (1911). Soc. Tr. Tropical Medicine, vol. ii.

MARSTON (1863). Army Medical Report, iii. 486.

NÈGRE AND RAYNAUD (1912). Comptes Rendus de la Société de Biologie, vol. lxxii., Nos. 15, 18, and 24. Paris.

NICOLLE AND CONOR (1912). Archives de l'Institut Pasteur, Tunis, No. 3.

STRACHAN (1906). South African Medical Review.

VEALE (1879). Army Medical Report, xxi. 260.

WIMBERLEY (1907). Indian Medical Gazette.

WRIGHT (1897). Lancet, i. 656.

CHAPTER XXXVIII

PLAGUE

Synonyms — Definition — History — Climatology — Ætiology — Pathology — Symptomatology — Diagnosis — Prognosis — Treatment — Prophylaxis — References.

Synonyms.—Black Death, Pestis, Lues. *French*: La Peste. *German*: Die Peste. *Italian*: Peste Bubbonica. *India*: Mahamari. *Japan*: Yeki. *China*: Kota-wen. *Uganda*: Kaumpuli.

Definition.—Plague is a septicæmia caused by the *Bacillus pestis*, which produces an epizootic in rats, from which it spreads to man and other animals by the agency of fleas.

In man it causes an acute specific fever, characterized by an inflammation of the lymphatic glands; a secondary septicæmia, with hæmorrhages, skin necrosis, and often a secondary pneumonia; or it may give rise to a primary pneumonia or a primary septicæmia. The pneumonic forms are highly infectious, spreading from man to man by aerial convection.

History and Epidemiology.—Plague, because of its epidemicity and its high mortality, is much feared, and has been noticed from early times to be associated with a mortality among rats. Thus, the Bible contains an account of an epidemic disease in the Philistine country which produced buboes in human beings and killed rats ('mice of the field'), and there is also reference in Simpson's work on plague to the fact that Sennacherib's army was attacked by a pestilence in which field-mice were in some way concerned.

But it was not until the outbreak in Pelusium, a great Egyptian market, in A.D. 542, that the disease was seriously considered, for it spread to Byzantium, at that time the city of the world, and then passed into Asia, and through North Africa into Western Europe as far as Ireland, lasting in epidemic form for about 200 years.

The next outbreak is in the eleventh century, when it spread as a pandemic, reaching a maximum in the fourteenth century, and gradually declining, until suddenly, in the seventeenth century, it left Western Europe, and in 1884 it vanished from Eastern Europe, and practically from Asia Minor, remaining, however, in the district of Assyr, in West Arabia.

This great pandemic stirred Governments to take prophylactic measures, and Count Bernabo, of Reggio, is found impressing stern quarantine laws in 1374, while the Venetians, in 1403 and subsequent years, laid the foundations of modern prophylaxis by erecting the first lazaretto, or depot for the isolation of the sick, by instituting the quarantine for forty days (hence the term), and by the disinfection of clothing and merchandise. Further, they compelled the ship coming from an infected port to hoist a yellow flag, and to allow an inspection of the crew and passengers before it was given pratique.

In the meanwhile plague occurred in India, where the first records are to be found in a sacred Hindu book, the 'Bhāgavat Purana,' believed to be 800 years old, which describes a disease in man associated with death among rats, and advises the vacation of a house in which dead rats are found. Plague is known to have formed epidemics in the eleventh, twelfth, fourteenth, fifteenth, sixteenth, and seventeenth centuries, after which, apparently, it disappeared, only to reappear in Gujarat and Sindh in 1812. In 1823 it was discovered that plague existed in the districts of Gashival and Kumaon, but no one has been able to determine from whence it came, or how long it had existed in those places. It is now said to be endemic there, and to form the focus for the epidemic of Delhi in 1825, and Rohilcund in 1836. In 1836 plague broke out in Rajputana—the so-called Pali Plague, from the place first infected—and lasted two years. Since then plague has been introduced into India from China, and has spread therein, as will be explained later. With regard to China, it is difficult to obtain any exact information, but it is possible that plague may have been introduced at some time by Mohammedans returning from Mecca viâ Burma to the province of Yunnan, where, according to Minakata, it was known some time between 1736 and 1809, for a Chinese author who lived during this period gives an account of a disease which caused death in men and rats. From that time plague has been endemic in Yunnan, from which it appears to have spread southwards, reaching Pakhoi, on the southern coast, about 1867, where it disappears and reappears at intervals without apparently affecting other regions, until 1894, when, after an absence of ten years, it again reappears, and, infecting the district of Kaochoo, spreads viâ Canton to Hong-Kong. In June, 1894, Kitasato found the causative bacillus in cases in Hong-Kong, and this was confirmed by the independent discovery of the same bacillus a little later by Yersin in the same town. In 1896 it spread from China to Bombay, from which it has gradually extended over the larger portion of India, causing an enormous number of deaths.

In 1897 a most important international conference was held at Venice, when protective measures were agreed to, and regulations framed to combat the disease, based upon the view that the sick person and his personal effects were the chief source of danger, and a quarantine of ten days from the last infected port was placed upon healthy ships. In 1898 the pandemic spread from India to Madagascar, and from there to Lorenzo Marquez and Mauritius. In 1899 it affected the Malay States, the Philippine Islands, New Caledonia, the Sandwich Islands, Australia, San Francisco, New York, Asunción, Rosario, Buenos Ayres, Rio de Janeiro, Oporto, Lisbon, and Alexandria. In 1900 it passed from Rosario to Cape Town, and also appeared in Glasgow.

In 1903 a Second International Conference was held in Paris, which issued a series of regulations confirming those of the Venetian Conference, except that the quarantine of ships was reduced to five days, and that the agency of the rat in the disease was clearly recognized, and regulations for its destruction framed. Further, this Conference established an International Sanitary Office in Paris for the purpose of collecting and transmitting sanitary information to the different countries. In 1904 Johannesburg was attacked, in 1905 Persia and Russia, in 1906 Leigh, and in 1907 Accra, on the Gold Coast, in which year the disease was widespread throughout the world, occurring in India, Persia, Arabia, Egypt, Tunisia, Algeria, West Africa, South Africa, East Africa, Russia, Glasgow, Argentina, Brazil, Chili, Paraguay, Peru, Uruguay, United States, Australia, New Zealand, Japan, China, and Indo-China.

Turning to Africa, which has already been mentioned to have been often infected, it is now known to possess two infected endemic areas—viz., Ben-ghazi, in Tripoli, and Buddu, Koki, and Nkole, in Uganda, from the latter of which an epidemic is supposed to have spread into the Kissiba district of German East Africa.

Such a pandemic as the one just described could hardly exist without numerous careful inquiries into its causation and spread, for Governments were interested in its prevention. Therefore Austrian, German, and Russian Commissions were appointed, and did excellent work. In 1898 the first

Plague Commission of India was appointed, and was followed by an Advisory Committee of the India Office, Royal Society, and Lister Institute, appointed in 1904, and, finally, in conjunction with this committee, the Second India Commission was appointed in 1907, and has done excellent work in tracing the ætiology to the rat-flea.

In the meanwhile individual observers had also studied the disease—*e.g.*, Lustig of Florence, and Haffkine of India, had brought forward protective vaccines, while Verybitski, of St. Petersburg, showed, in 1904, the importance of the flea as a cause of the disease.

According to Nicolas plague is almost constantly present in New Caledonia, where the bacillus is believed to exist in a latent form.

In 1909-10 in Manchuria there was a very severe epidemic of pneumonic plague with a few cases of the bubonic type. It was studied by Strong, Kitasato, Teague, Galeotti and others.

Climatology.—At the present moment the so-called endemic regions are an area in the Kurdistan Hills, with a secondary area in Irak, in Mesopotamia; another area about the Himalayas—*i.e.*, Kumaon and Gurwhal, in India, Thibet and Yunnan, in China—and four lesser areas—*viz.*, Benghazi, in Tripoli, Uganda, in Central Africa, Azeer, in Arabia, and the trans-Baikal Province of Siberia—but only the first two are of real importance as far as we know. On the strength of these two different regions an attempt has been made to differentiate two distinct types of the disease: the first, the Western Asiatic, being mild, and pneumonic cases rare, while it is often self-limited, not capable of wide distribution, and not associated with an epizootic in rats; the second is the Indo-Chinese plague, or the disease, as it is known to-day. It seems, however, hardly likely that such a distinction will be supported when the disease in the first area is carefully studied. Climate appears to have but little influence on the distribution of the disease, and soil apparently none. The hot season of the Tropics and the winter season of the Temperate Zone are deleterious to the spread of the disease. The reason for this appears to be the effect of temperature on the bacilli in the flea, which disappear rapidly from its stomach above 85° F., and are very ineffectual at that temperature, while at 70° F. they are virulent. Moreover, as has already been stated in the chapter on Fleas, high temperatures restrain the adults from laying eggs and the larvæ from developing. When temperatures below 50° F. are reached, it is found that rats die before the bacilli pass into the blood, and therefore the fleas do not become infected when sucking the blood. A temperature of about 70° F. is therefore best for the propagation of an epidemic.

Ætiology.—The ætiology of plague has been placed on a sure footing by the labours of Kitasato, Yersin, Cantlie, Thompson, Ogata, Kolle, Martini, and the Special Committee already mentioned, together with the Second Indian Commission.

It is caused by the *Bacillus pestis* of Kitasato and Yersin, which is found in the fluid of the initial cutaneous vesicle, the buboes, the spleen, the blood, and the sputum in cases of pneumonia. When inoculated into monkeys, cats, rats, guinea-pigs, squirrels, mon-gooses, bats, jerboas, etc., it causes the typical disease, while in

bovines and equines it only causes local reactions. Canines, birds, and reptiles appear to be immune. It causes a natural epizootic in rats, which apparently is the true disease, from which that of man must be looked upon as an offshoot. In rats it produces either an acute or a chronic attack, the post-mortem appearances of which are different.

In the acute type a bubo is found in 85 per cent. of infected rats, being present usually in the neck or axilla. If the bubo is absent, a plague rat can be recognized by the subcutaneous congestion, the purplish-red appearance of the muscles, the waxy, mottled, or finely granular appearance of the liver, the hæmorrhages, and the pleural effusions. The diagnosis can be confirmed by finding the bacilli in the bubo, the spleen, or the blood.

The chronic type of the disease consists of encapsuled caseous foci, or abscesses containing bacilli, and found in the spleen and other organs. This form plays no part in the spread of the disease.

The epizootic does not continue with equal virulence all the year round, for it appears to be profoundly altered by the temperature being diminished in the hot weather of the Tropics and the cold weather of the Temperate Zone. Thus in Bombay the Plague Commission found 1,766 plague-infected rats in one week in the season December to May, and only 20 to 30 in the season June to November. The cause of this variation has already been given.

But all rats are not equally infected, for it was found in Bombay that there were two principal species, *Epimys norvegicus* and *E. rattus*, and that during the epizootic period no less than 1,334 of the 1,766 belonged to the former species, while in the non-epizootic period it alone carried on the disease. The reason assigned for this difference was that the numbers of the flea population of the two rats were very different, *E. norvegicus* possessing about double the number of *E. rattus*. Further, it was noticed that the curve of *E. norvegicus* infection began to rise about ten days before that of *E. rattus*, which points to the origin of the infection of the latter from the former in the first instance.

E. norvegicus, which is not nearly so numerous in Bombay as *E. rattus*, lives outside houses, for the most part in sewers, drains, and stables, and has a great facility for burrowing, and is a good climber. It, however, has never been found above the third floor of a house. It forms its nest in one of its burrows, and breeds all the year round, but has two special seasons, one in March, and one from June to October, the average family being eight.

E. rattus is more common in Bombay than *E. norvegicus*, especially in houses, where it increases, relatively to the other, up to the third floor, but above that level it alone infects the house. It is not so common in gullies, compounds, stables, go-downs, and food and tea shops as *E. norvegicus*. The common meeting-ground of the two species appears to be the lower floors of houses, gullies, and go-downs. Though a domesticated rat, it can climb and burrow. It forms its nest in cupboards, heaps of firewood, etc., and breeds

all the year round, but especially from June to October, the average family being five.

The spread of the plague from *E. norvegicus* to *E. rattus*, according to the experiments of the Commission, is neither by direct contact, nor by air, soil, or food, but solely by the flea. Contact was excluded by placing healthy rats in the same room with plague-infected animals from which the fleas had been removed, when it was found that none of them developed plague. The experiment was kept up for a long time, replacing dead infected rats with freshly infected rats, and, further, the room was never cleaned out, so that the healthy animals lived in contact with the infected urine and fæces, and even ate food polluted therewith, and yet not one contracted plague, thus excluding transmission by contact, soil, and food.

Again, when healthy animals were suspended in cages 2 feet from the ground, so that the fleas could not get to them, or placed on the ground, and surrounded by 6 inches of tangle-foot, over which a flea cannot pass, as it is said to be incapable of jumping more than 4 inches, or surrounded by a curtain of wire gauze so fine that a flea could not penetrate it, and exposed to infection, they escaped, though others not so protected became infected, thus disproving aerial infection. Further, the transmission by the rat-flea was proved by constructing a glass box, inside which two wire cages were placed at a little distance, but side by side, each standing in a tray filled with sand. Each cage had a lid, through which rats, food, water, etc., could be introduced, and the whole apparatus was covered in with fine muslin to prevent the escape of the fleas. A plague-infected rat and a number of rat-fleas were placed in one cage. When this rat died, a healthy rat was placed in the other cage and after some time the dead body of the infected rat was removed, when it was found that the new rat became infected with plague, and fleas containing plague bacilli were found upon it. This experiment was repeated many times, 45 per cent. of the exposed rats taking the disease. Further, fleas infected by biting plague rats when placed upon healthy rats produced the disease in 55 per cent. of the experiments.

The Commission calculated that the blood of an ordinary plague rat in two-thirds of the cases contains more than 100,000,000 bacilli per cubic centimetre, and that a flea's stomach could hold 0.5 cubic millimetre of blood. Therefore when the flea gorged itself on the average plague-stricken rat it received at least 5,000 bacilli. These bacilli are found only in the stomach and in the alimentary canal posterior to that viscus, especially the rectum, and escape from the flea solely with the fæces. It was proved, however, that the bacilli multiplied in the body of the flea by allowing infected fleas to feed solely on uninfected rats, a fresh one being supplied each day, when abundant bacilli were found up to the twelfth, and once to the twentieth day, thus proving that multiplication must have taken place, otherwise the original number of bacilli would have become

much diluted by the feeds with fresh blood. Further, it was discovered that the proportion of fleas in whose stomach multiplication took place was six times greater in the epidemic than in the non-epidemic season. In the former season the bacilli could be found easily up to the fourth and even to the twelfth day, while in the latter never after the seventh day. Infected fleas were found to transmit the disease for seven to fifteen days.

The method of infection probably is in one of two ways, either faecal pollution of the proboscis, or else faecal pollution of the wound made by the proboscis, which was found quite large enough for the purpose of introducing the bacilli into the skin. Both males and females can transmit the disease, but it was found that one infected flea alone was unlikely to do so. The flea most commonly found on rats, and the one by which the infection in these experiments was usually spread, was *Xenopsylla cheopis*, but others—e.g., *Ceratophyllus fasciatus* and *Pulex irritans*—were found also capable of causing the disease.

With regard to the spread of the disease to man, the Commission believes that the infection generally comes from *Epimys rattus*, because the habits of that rodent bring it into close relationship with man, and because the curve of its epizootic begins to rise ten to fourteen days before that of the epidemic. This period is calculated to be made up of three days, during which the flea leaves the dead rat, to which is added another three days, which is the incubation period of plague in man, and five and a half days, which is the average duration of the fatal illness in man.

Xenopsylla cheopis appears to be the flea by which plague is spread from *Epimys rattus* to man. This rat-flea will not merely bite man when it cannot get rat's blood, but is capable of living for three to four weeks on man's blood, and is often found on human beings after inspection of plague-stricken houses.

Further, it is believed that the spread of plague is due, not to migration of rats, but to the carriage of infected rats on ships, and of fleas in merchandise or on human beings. The Commission apparently consider the last to be the most important method.

Pneumonic plague, which occurs only in 2·5 per cent. of cases during bubonic epidemics, spreads from man to man by bacilli carried by the air, for Strong and Teague demonstrated that the sputum in invisible droplets containing viable plague bacilli was frequently to be found in the air near a patient. Teague and Barber have shown that the fine droplets of sputum disappear very quickly unless there is a considerable amount of aqueous vapour in the atmosphere, as is found in very cold climates, and hence the tendency for pneumonic plague to spread in those rather than in warm climates. On the other hand, the bubonic or septicæmic is not spread from man to man, but from rats to man. The epizootic is the real disease, and the epidemic is only an offshoot.

The above ætiology explains fully the predisposing causes of sex, women staying more in the house than men ; of house, of season, of

climate, and also the carriage of the disease from one place to another by people, fodder, grain, bales of cotton and clothing, rags, etc.

Verjbitski in 1908 showed that bugs could act as carriers of the bacilli, and this has been confirmed by Jordansky and Kladnitsky, while Walker considers *C. rotundatus* to be one of the carriers of plague in India, having found 22 per cent. infected with *B. pestis* when collected from infected native huts. Moreover, he successfully transmitted the disease from man to the rat by means of *C. rotundatus*.

In California, Wherry, McCay, and others have shown that the ground-squirrel (*Citellus beecheyi*) is subject to plague, and that its commonest flea, *Ceratophyllus acutus* Baker, is the vector from squirrel to squirrel, and, further, that this flea will bite man. Further, they record a subacute case of plague in a boy where the infection was believed to be acquired by contact with ground squirrels. With regard to the outbreak in Manchuria and North China, Gray has shown that it started among men who handled the tarabagan (*Arctomys bobæ* Schreb), which is susceptible to epizootic plague, and that these men on returning to their homes introduced the disease into three provinces, as pneumonic and septicæmic plague, while it was spread by the agency of the breath and personal contact of clothes and belongings by coolies travelling in parties and sleeping together in overcrowded insanitary inns, especially as the cold of the winter induced an indoor existence. These travelling parties infected adult males who stayed at the inns or were travelling, and so it spread to the ordinary population. No infected rats could be found, in 20,000 examined, while isolation of the patients and their contacts, together with efficient disinfection, were sufficient to diminish the death-rate. This shows how important the pneumonic form of plague may be in epidemics, especially in cold weather, but it is also to be noted that although it starts from association with an epizootic, it tends to die out without being succeeded by a bubonic outbreak, but it may infect rats and so cause a bubonic outbreak. Recently there has been an epizootic in Suffolk, and a few cases of bubonic plague in man.

Attention may be called to epidemic diseases in the lower animals due to bipolar staining bacilli, somewhat resembling the plague germ. We have observed one such epidemic in cats in Ceylon in 1904. A bipolar staining bacillus was found to be the cause (*Bacillus feliseptiens* Castellani), but the cultural characters were somewhat different from those of the true plague bacillus.

Pathology.—Plague is a hæmorrhagic septicæmia in the rat, which is communicated to the human being by flea-bites. The site of inoculation is sometimes marked by a vesicle, the contents of which contain the *Bacillus pestis* in considerable numbers. The bacilli then travel viâ the lymphatics to the nearest lymphatic glands, which they may traverse, and, passing through the thoracic duct, enter the blood stream, and cause a septicæmia. More usually they remain and grow in the peripheral lymph sinuses of those glands in

which they or their toxins cause degenerations of the cells, periglandular serous infiltration, and, later, degeneration of the walls of the bloodvessels and hæmorrhage. The lymphatic glands are matted together by the exudation from the primary bubo. The glands usually affected are the femoral, inguinal, axillary, iliac, or cervical, which may briefly be classified into the groin, the axillary, and cervical glands.

The recent Indian Commission points out that the reason why the groin glands are so frequently attacked is simply because they drain the largest skin area, for they say that the areas drained by the glands of the neck, axilla, and groin are in the proportions of $1 : 1.8 : 5$, while the number of cervical, axillary, and inguinal buboes are in the proportions of $1 : 1.3 : 5.8$, and that therefore there is no seat of election as to where the plague bacillus enters.

From the primary bubo the bacilli may travel along the lymphatics to the next chain of glands, in which they produce the secondary bubo, and from this they may enter the blood stream viâ the lymphatics. The bacilli, however, may gain direct access to the blood stream through the injuries to the walls of the veins in the primary bubo. Once the blood stream is reached the disease becomes a septicæmia, and affects the lymphatic glands, forming tertiary buboes; the lungs, causing bronchitis, and secondary pneumonia; the spleen, liver, kidneys, skin, and other organs; and, finally, leaves the body through the kidneys, skin, and mucosæ, escaping in the urine, fæces, and sputum (if there is pneumonia), as well as by any discharges or hæmorrhages from the skin. The excretion, viâ the sputum and saliva, can proceed for a period of at least forty-eight days after the temperature is normal. Further, as in chronic plague in rats, the bacilli may be found in abscesses, some two and a half months after an attack. The chemical pathology of the disease is not well known.

Strong, Crowell, and Teague, from a study of the pathology of Mukden plague, have concluded that epidemic pneumonic plague results from inhalation of the bacilli. The primary infection appears to be the bronchi, while it extends along the bronchioles by continuity into the infundibula and air-cells, or through the walls of bronchioles into the lung tissue, causing a peribronchial inflammation. From these centres the infection spreads to the adjacent pulmonary tissue and to the visceral pleura, the bacilli growing rapidly, and causing first a lobular pneumonia and later a lobar pneumonia, while the blood becomes quickly infected, causing a septicæmia. Secondary pathological changes take place in the spleen, bronchial glands, heart, bloodvessels, kidneys, liver, and tonsils, which may at times become primarily affected. No sign of any intestinal plague was found, although plague bacilli must have been repeatedly swallowed in the bronchial secretions and saliva by the patients.

Morbid Anatomy.—The characteristic features of a plague post-mortem are the hæmorrhages and the buboes, which have been

studied in detail by Dürck. The skin in the region of buboes and on the head, arms, neck, and shoulders may show hæmorrhages, which arise from the action of the toxins upon the endothelial cells of the vessels. These cells increase in size, and perhaps in number, and some macrophages arise, after which they degenerate, and allow hæmorrhages by rhexis to take place. These hæmorrhages therefore may be petechial or diffuse, and will contain bacilli. Besides these, however, vesicles, pustules, or carbuncles, may be seen.

The vesicle arises from the irritation caused by the bacilli in the skin, producing inflammation with exudation, which may go on to pustulation, or, the vesicle drying up, the cutis may become much inflamed and degenerated, forming the so-called carbuncle, which in no respect resembles a true carbuncle.

The primary bubo shows a periglandular infiltration, which may spread from the site of the enlarged glands in all directions. When this gelatinous exudate is cut into, the enlarged glands can be seen matted together, grey or yellowish-grey in colour, with a soft centre and numerous hæmorrhagic spots, or perhaps large hæmorrhages. The secondary buboes are seen to consist of degenerated glands without the œdema, but with endo- and peri-glandular hæmorrhages. The tertiary buboes contain hard hyperæmic glands marked by hæmorrhages.

The muscles of the body, but especially those of the abdominal wall, will be seen to be hæmorrhagic. The spleen is enlarged and congested, and shows hæmorrhages, and contains bacilli. The liver may be slightly enlarged and hæmorrhagic, with cloudy swelling, and fatty degeneration of the cells. The lungs usually show some bronchitis, and often patches of secondary broncho-pneumonia. The right heart is usually dilated, and the musculature shows fatty degeneration, cloudy swelling, and hæmorrhage. Primary broncho-pneumonia may, however, exist, and be followed by a septicæmia, and bubo formation. The stomach is hyperæmic and hæmorrhagic, while the solitary glands and Peyer's patches of the intestine are swollen, and the mesenteric glands enlarged. The kidney may be normal, or show hæmorrhages. The nervous system seldom shows any changes, but hæmorrhages and meningitis may occur.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period varies from two to ten days, the average being three days. During this period there may be prodromal symptoms in the form of general malaise, headache, gastro-intestinal disturbance, pain, or feeling of discomfort in the site of the future bubo, chilliness, giddiness, and mental dulness.

The onset is usually sudden, with rise of the temperature to 103° to 104° F., pulse of 120, and respirations 30 to 40, and marked prostration, with an aggravation of the prodromal symptoms—*i.e.*, severe headache, furred tongue, vomiting, diarrhœa, pains in the back and limbs and at the site of the future bubo, marked chilliness or a rigor, staggering gait, and marked mental dulness.

In a few hours the disease becomes properly established, when the patient presents a typical facial expression of fear or anxiety, the eyes being bloodshot, bright, and staring, the face drawn, and the nostrils dilated. The temperature rises during the first day, but may remit a degree or so on the second day, but if so, it rises quickly again to the same or a higher degree than at first. As a rule, however, the temperature is most irregular. Towards the end it may fall by lysis, if recovery is to take place, or fall rapidly to normal or subnormal, and then as rapidly to rise about 107° F., or may simply rise directly to about 107° F., and death ensue. There is much thirst, and the tongue is coated at first with a whitish fur, but later it becomes covered with sordes, as do the teeth and lips. Vomiting is frequently met with, as well as diarrhoea; but the abdomen is not tender, unless there are enlarged abdominal glands. The spleen is always, and the liver often, enlarged. Cardiac dilatation is an important feature of the disease, and systolic murmurs may be heard. The pulse is rapid, reaching 120 to 180 early in the disease, and later becoming, in bad cases, not countable. At first it is full and of moderate tension, but later it becomes small, weak, and intermittent.

The coagulation of the blood is diminished. Plague bacilli can be found culturally in about a third of the cases examined. The number of erythrocytes and the amount of hæmoglobin are distinctly increased above the normal, and there is a great leucocytosis—*i.e.*, 90,000 to 100,000 and more—but in the septicæmic form there may be a leucopenia. The leucocytosis is almost entirely due to an increase in the polymorphonuclear leucocytes.

The breathing is rapid, and the breath sounds harsh, with moist râles, but signs of lobular pneumonia and pleuritis may also occur. The sputum in this type of pneumonia is very hæmorrhagic and full of bacilli.

Buboes of varying sizes may be noted in the groin, the axilla, or the neck, and are very painful, respectively causing the patient to lie with the leg drawn up close to the chest wall, or the head bent towards the affected side. They usually appear during the first twenty-four hours, and they may decline or suppurate.

The skin is hot and dry, and may show vesicles, pustules, or areas of necrosis, often called 'carbuncles' (they are, of course, not true carbuncles). Hæmorrhages, in the form of petechiæ or ecchymoses, may be seen under the skin, and epistaxis, hæmatemesis, melæna, and hæmaturia may occur.

The quantity of urine is usually diminished, and the specific gravity is high, and plague bacilli may be found. If hæmorrhages have occurred in the urinary tract, there will be erythrocytes and leucocytes, with albumin and globulin, though, apart from this, there is often a trace of albumin present, while anuria is generally present before death. Pregnant women always abort.

As the disease progresses the patient becomes weaker and weaker, the mind wanders, and a wild delirium may occur; but later a low

muttering delirium passes into coma, and death ensues from the third to the fifth day. In favourable cases the tongue becomes moist and clean, the temperature declines by lysis, the pulse-rate diminishes, and convalescence begins, but may be much prolonged by suppuration of the buboes or a secondary septicæmia. Even now death may occur from cardiac failure, suppuration, septic infection, or secondary hæmorrhage.

Varieties.—Four variations of the disease are recognized : (1) The ambulatory type ; (2) the bubonic type ; (3) the septicæmic type ; and (4) the pneumonic type.

The Ambulatory Type.—This is the mildest form of the disease, and is characterized by but little fever, with slight enlargement and tenderness of a group of lymphatic glands. If the area of skin drained by these glands is carefully investigated, a primary vesicle will often be seen at the site of the inoculation, and considerably helps in the diagnosis, for its fluid contains typical bacilli. The symptoms of this type resemble those already described as prodromata.

The Bubonic Type.—This type agrees with the general description, the bubo being usually in the groin, less commonly in the axilla, and least commonly in the neck. The fever reaches its maximum on the fourth to fifth day, and lasts till the seventh to tenth day, when it falls by lysis, though it may rise again if suppuration is taking place in the buboes. The attitude of the patient depends upon the position of the bubo, as described above.

The Septicæmic Type.—Here the onset is sudden, and the temperature high, with very rapid pulse, marked prostration, and delirium. Vomiting is severe, and diarrhœa, with motions mixed with blood, not uncommon. Hæmorrhages occur in the skin and from the regions indicated above, and death rapidly takes place in from eighteen hours to three days.

The Pneumonic Type.—There are two distinct types of pneumonia in plague—a pneumonia secondary to bubonic plague and a primary pneumonia. This latter begins suddenly without prodromata after an incubation of two to five days, with chilliness, high fever, headache, anorexia, and rapid pulse. Within twenty-four to thirty-six hours the temperature is 103° to 104° F., and the pulse 110 to 130 beats per minute. Cough and dyspnœa appear within twenty-four hours, when the expectoration is at first scanty, but soon becomes abundant. At first it is only composed of mucus, but it soon becomes tinged with blood and later very hæmorrhagic, and is full of bacilli. The conjunctivæ become injected, and the tongue coated with a white or brownish fur. The breathing is very rapid, and dulness may or may not be present over the bases ; the breath sounds are usually tubular and crepitant, and sibilant râles are heard, while the vocal fremitus is increased. Dyspnœa and cyanosis are early marked features, as is the fluid bloody sputum which is found by the second or third day, and is full of bacilli. Pleuritis, with its usual symptoms, may also occur. Prostration is extreme ;

the heart becomes very weak and the pulse rapid, while the spleen is usually not palpable. A marked leucocytosis may occur. This is a very fatal type of the disease; delirium and coma appear, and cases die at the end of sixteen hours, or three or, more rarely, four days.

Sequelæ.—Cardiac weakness, with proneness to syncopal attacks, paralyses, septic infections of the buboes, or a general septic infection, or gangrene of the lung, may occur.

Diagnosis.—This, in the bubonic type, which is commonest, is based on the acute onset with high fever, great prostration, and the presence of a bubo. Difficulty may arise in the diagnosis between the bubonic type of plague and climatic, venereal, and symptomatic buboes; between pneumonic plague and ordinary pneumonia; and between septicæmic plague and various fevers.

In venereal bubo there will be found ulcers on the genital organs, or, at least, the patient will give a history of such. In climatic buboes and various symptomatic buboes due to small ulcerative lesions on the legs, etc., the general condition of the patient is usually far from being so grave as in plague. In any doubtful case bacteriological methods should be employed. A little of the fluid from the suspected bubo is withdrawn, under aseptic precautions, by means of a sterile syringe, and films are made and stained with methylene blue, diluted carbol-fuchsin, or Leishman's stain. The presence of bipolar-staining bacilli is sufficient, for all practical purposes, to diagnose the case as one of plague, though it is desirable, whenever possible, to complete the investigation by cultural methods.

In *pneumonic plague* the expectoration is generally fluid and greatly hæmorrhagic, and is not purulent as it frequently is in catarrhal bronchitis or in bronchial pneumonia, nor is it tenacious as in croupous pneumonia; the examination of the sputum—instead of the sputum, the lung juice, obtained by puncture with a sterile syringe, may be examined—will reveal the presence of numerous plague bacilli, easily distinguishable from the pneumococcus by their being Gram-negative.

Septicæmic plague may be distinguished from malaria by the absence of Laveran's parasites, from relapsing fever by the absence of spirochætes, but it is to be noted that cases of mixed infection occur. In India, as observed by Polverini and others, cases of mixed infection of plague and relapsing fever are not rare. The diagnosis between septicæmic plague and cryptogenic septicæmias due to the pneumococcus and other germs, as well as occasionally the differential diagnosis from typhus and typhoid, may be impossible without a complete bacteriological examination of the blood.

The simple microscopical examination of thick films of blood (Manson-Ross method) for the presence of bipolar-staining bacilli is often a failure. The so-called *dilution method* introduced by Castellani for the search of the *Bacillus typhosus* in the blood of typhoid patients is useful also for the search of the plague bacillus, as proved by Kolle and others: 10 c.c. of blood are collected, under aseptic precautions, with a sterile syringe from a vein, and immediately distributed in several flasks of alkaline broth, each containing 300 cubic centi-

metres of the medium. In this way the bactericidal substances of the blood are greatly diluted, and the growth of the plague bacillus facilitated. Agglutination tests are not of much use in the diagnosis of plague.

In places far from bacteriological laboratories Broquet recommends that a gland or a portion of a gland obtained as soon after death as possible should be placed in a vial containing 125 to 175 c.c. of a mixture of neutral glycerine (30° B.) 20 c.c., distilled water 80 c.c., and carbonate of lime 2 grammes. The mouth of the vial or flask is flamed and sealed with paraffin. On arrival at the laboratory the glycerine is wiped off the gland, which is made into an emulsion with normal saline, and injected, half into a guinea-pig, and half into a rat. It is stated that by this method virulence is maintained for thirteen days, which is of great importance in the tropics. A dead animal should be immersed in a solution of strong disinfectant in order to kill the fleas, and should then be placed in sawdust or other packing in a hermetically sealed air-tight metal case, and forwarded for examination, if the distance is not too far, to the laboratory.

Prognosis.—Simpson quotes Procopius of Cæsarea as saying with regard to the plague in Byzantium, that many whose death the physicians predicted recovered, while those who were supposed to be about to recover often quickly died, from which it may be inferred that the prognosis in cases of plague has to be most guarded, for dangers are numerous even in convalescence—*e.g.*, cardiac failure.

The prognosis varies with the character of the epidemic, some being milder than others, and is better when the number of cases is declining. It also varies for the type of the disease, being best for the ambulatory and worst for the pneumonic. As 75 per cent. of the deaths occur before the sixth day, after that time the prognosis improves.

A good pulse, a clear mind, a normal quantity of chlorides and no albumin in the urine, are good signs. High fever, rapid, thready pulse, violent delirium, sudden fall in the temperature, disappearance of the buboes on the fourth or fifth day, and anuria, are bad signs. But in all cases be cautious about the prognosis, and remember the physicians of Byzantium. In pneumonic plague the prognosis is most unfavourable—*e.g.*, in the Manchurian epidemic of pneumonic plague no case in which the bacteriological diagnosis was positive was known to recover.

Treatment.—The treatment should aim at killing the bacillus and neutralizing its toxins, and naturally one hopes to find those requirements supplied by sera. Unfortunately no such serum has as yet been found, though encouraging reports have been recorded by Choksy and Polverini concerning Lustig's sera and Yersin's, and by others concerning Cruz's serum. Whatever the serum, it should be given in large doses (30 to 50 c.c., and even more) by subcutaneous injection. A second and a third injection can be given during the course of the disease, but one should keep in mind the possibility of anaphylactic symptoms in people previously inoculated with serum. Several such cases have been recorded by Darling. The serum may be given also by intravenous injection.

Yersin's serum is prepared by the inoculation of horses with fresh agar cultures, and is such that 0.1 c.c. should protect a mouse

from a dose of bacilli, which otherwise would kill it in two to three days. The dose for man is 60 to 300 c.c., given intravenously and also subcutaneously near the buboes. Lustig and Galeotti's serum is prepared by injecting a horse with a vaccine which contains nucleo-proteid from cultures. The mode of action of these sera is said by some not to be bactericidal, but to encourage phagocytosis.

Though admitting that the serum treatment is far from being perfect, we advise its use at the very beginning, as it gives somewhat better results than the ordinary symptomatic treatment or the so-called antiseptic treatment, such as the internal administration of carbolic acid.

As regards the symptomatic treatment, the first indication is to keep the patient in bed, because of the danger of syncope, and to give him good nursing and fresh air. Fever must be treated by sponging and cool or cold applications; buboes by cold applications and ichthyol, and when they suppurate an incision must be made, and the wound treated aseptically. Not much good is to be obtained by excising the glands even in an early stage, though several authors—*e.g.*, Terni—have recommended it. The heart's action must be maintained by digitalis, strophanthus, and strychnine. Restlessness may require a hypodermic of hyoscin; hæmorrhage will require treatment by calcium chloride; the so-called carbuncles must be treated antiseptically; pneumonia and bronchitis require the ordinary treatment; and if there is constipation, calomel and a saline purge may be given; while vomiting is to be treated as described under Malaria. A sufficiency of fluid should be given, so as to keep up the action of the kidneys.

The diet should consist of broths and milk, while stimulants are usually required.

Prophylaxis.—*Bacillus pestis* being conveyed by the rat-flea from rats to man as a rule, and more rarely from man to man, it is obvious that prophylaxis must include methods directed against rats and fleas, and methods for the protection of human beings.

The spread of the disease from place to place is thought to be mainly by the flea being carried by human beings on their person, or in their clothing, or by means of the merchandise, or by rats.

The prophylaxis will be considered under two headings—Public Prophylaxis and Personal Prophylaxis.

PUBLIC PROPHYLAXIS.—It is necessary, in order to prevent a country from being infected with plague, to institute a Sanitary Service, which should consist of a central authority for collecting and dealing with information on a large scale, and to which will be attached bacteriologists, who will carry out the necessary bacteriological examinations and prepare prophylactics; and a Port Sanitary Branch, for investigating and disinfecting ships.

It is as well, if possible, to limit the communication with infected areas to as few ports as possible, and to provide isolation hospitals for the sick, and for the healthy coming from infected areas. The length of quarantine is fixed at present at five days, but this appears

to be too short, if the findings of the Indian Commission with regard to fleas are considered.

Attempts can be made to prevent the disease crossing land frontiers by the medical inspection of persons coming by rail, road, or river, but this method of prophylaxis is liable at any time to break down.

It would appear most necessary to disinfect the clothing and persons of all people coming from infected areas, as they may carry fleas, and this is most difficult to effect ; but it is not so difficult to disinfect merchandise by Clayton's apparatus.

In addition, rats must be caught regularly in places situated in danger zones, and inspected to see if any are becoming diseased, for the epizootic begins before the epidemic.

But of all things the most difficult, as well as the most important, appears to be the recognition of early cases, and pneumonia, buboes, and sudden deaths must be regarded with the greatest suspicion.

When an epidemic begins, there are two periods, as Simpson points out, at which the populace takes fright, and has to be firmly handled ; one at the beginning, and the second when the deaths begin to increase rapidly in number. Riots and assassinations of magistrates, medical officers, and inspectors may occur, and must be foreseen.

As diagnosis is so difficult at first, a house-to-house inspection by competent medical officers will be necessary to find out the number of cases, and in no instance must a body be allowed to be buried without being viewed by a medical officer. If this is not done, it will be impossible to gauge the extent of the disease.

Rats must, of course, be regularly and systematically examined, and their mortality curves constructed. The sick must be isolated, and the persons and clothing of contacts disinfected to kill the fleas. Every infected house must be disinfected by filling the adjoining houses with the gas from Clayton's apparatus, and after this the house itself. If this method is not carried out, the rats will simply pass from the infected to the non-infected houses, and spread the plague. Village houses might be burnt, which is cheaper and a fairly effective method, though, of course, the rats will escape. The gas in question is generated by burning sulphur at a very high temperature in a special apparatus, when SO_2 and SO_3 and some unknown gases are evolved, which are passed into the ship, house, warehouse, etc., and drawn through by an exhaust-pipe until a 3 per cent. mixture of gas and air comes out, when the exhaust is stopped, and gas passed in until 10 to 12 per cent. is reached, at which it is allowed to remain for four hours. This gas kills rats, rat-fleas, and other insects, and plague bacilli, and if dry, will not injure food-stuffs, except fruit and some vegetables, nor will it harm merchandise or machinery. A mixture of equal parts of cyllin and petrol constitutes a reliable pulicide and bactericide.

Rats may also be killed by means of Danysz's virus, which is a bacillus easily recognized from *Bacillus pestis*, and kills the rat by a

septicæmia, causing œdema of the intestinal walls, infiltration of Peyer's patches, and enlargement of the spleen, with sometimes peritonitis, and only then enlargement of the lymphatic glands. Danysz's virus is administered, by Simpson's method, on bread, and is said not to affect human beings, though recently complaints of illness of persons living in places where some sort of virus was being used has been recorded. Danysz's and similar viruses are very often inert and inefficacious in the tropics.

Bannerman has strongly advised cats as a method of rat extermination.

It appears to us that Black's methods of dealing with an outbreak of plague are the best. First of all, he localizes the outbreak, and begins his prophylactic measures in a circle well outside this area, and works towards the centre. This is of great importance, because beginning in the centre and working towards the periphery merely disseminates the disease. Secondly, he has recognized the fact that rats will not eat food handled by human beings, and therefore the people who handle and cut the bread into cubes prior to dipping it into poison have their hands smeared with oil of aniseed, as is also the board on which the bread is cut. The poison which he has used with great success is phosphorus paste. The phosphorus is mixed with glucose to prevent spontaneous combustion, and then a paste is made with a fatty base such as lard, but it is advisable to vary from time to time the fatty base. To our minds these little points make all the difference between failure and success. Liston advises the centralization and isolation of the stock of grain in villages, and an organization of the system of the refuse disposal, while the stabling of cattle in houses should be prohibited. He lays stress on the disinfection of the clothes of travellers coming from infected areas. Traps equivalent in number to 2 per cent. of the population should be used to catch rats.

PERSONAL PROPHYLAXIS.—Ever since the middle of the eighteenth century there has been an idea that a vaccine should be obtained for the purpose of protecting the individual. Wespreni and, later, Samoilowitz and Cerutti tried artificial inoculation, but the results were by no means satisfactory, persons dying from plague as the result of the inoculation. Recently a number of vaccines have been prepared for the purpose of personal prophylaxis, which may be classified into: (1) Vaccines composed solely of the chemical products of the bacilli; (2) vaccines composed of chemical products and dead bacilli; (3) vaccines composed of living attenuated bacilli.

Chemical Vaccines.—In 1897 Lustig and Galeotti prepared a plague vaccine, composed of the nucleo-proteids of the bacilli obtained by shaking agar cultures with 1 per cent. caustic potash solution, and after two hours adding 0.5 per cent. acetic acid, and thus obtaining a precipitate of nucleo-proteids. It is administered by subcutaneous or intramuscular injections in doses of from 2 to 3 milligrammes. This method has been adopted in La Plata with success, and has been experimentally supported by Rowland.

Vaccines composed of Chemical Products and Dead Bacilli.—The most important is Haffkine's plague prophylactic, prepared by growing the bacillus for four to six weeks in broth, and then sterilizing at 65° to 70° C. for one hour, and then decanting into bottles, with or without the addition of a little carbolic acid. The dose for an adult man is 3 c.c., for an adult woman 2 to $2\frac{1}{2}$ c.c., and children in proportion to their age (or size). The injection is made subcutaneously into the arm or loin under strict antiseptic precautions. Three or four hours after inoculation the temperature rises, and in twelve hours reaches 102° to 103° F., while tenderness and swelling may occur at the site of the inoculation, and malaise and general discomfort be felt, which disappear in one to two days, and the swelling in about a week or so. There is no doubt of the benefit of this prophylactic, which gives protection for a considerable number of weeks, and perhaps months. Haffkine considers that the active principle lies in the liquid, but it appears more likely that it is in the dead bacilli. Haffkine's vaccine has been very extensively used in India and other countries since several years, and on the whole has given extremely good results.

The German Plague Commission used a growth of the bacilli on agar killed by heating to 65° C., and then suspended in normal saline, to which 0.5 per cent. carbolic acid was added.

Terni and Bandi used the sterilized exudate from the peritoneum of guinea-pigs inoculated intraperitoneally with plague bacilli, and killed some little time before they would have died naturally. The exudate is diluted with a solution of carbolic acid and sodium carbonate and chloride, and given in a dose of 1.5 to 2.5 c.c. By this method plague aggressions are produced and used.

Klein has advocated an 'organ prophylactic,' obtained by drying and powdering buboes, spleens, lungs, and livers of infected animals. The dose for an individual is from 5 to 7 milligrammes, made into an emulsion with warm, sterile, distilled water, and injected subcutaneously, but it has not yet been tried on man as far as we know.

Vaccines composed of Living Attenuated Bacilli.—Strong and Kolle have recommended the use of living virulent cultures, and Strong has practically shown that this method of vaccination can be carried out without danger. This vaccination consists of the intramuscular injection of one whole twenty-four hour agar slant of the living virulent culture in the adult, and one-quarter to one-half of such a culture in a child. The reaction is not excessive. About ten days after the inoculation Strong has observed a marked rise in the opsonic index, and that the phenomenon of complement fixation is given by the blood serum, thus proving the presence of specific antibodies.

Strong and Kitasato are of the opinion that Governments should unite to deal with plague by attacking it in the endemic centres by general vaccination of the population.

Masks.—These used to be worn in the Middle Ages as a prophylactic measure, the use of which has been demonstrated by Strong and

Teague, and by Barber and Teague, in epidemics of plague pneumonia. The best mask is a hood of heavy Canton flannel-cloth covering the entire head and tied round the neck, and provided with a window in front composed of sheet celloidin.

REFERENCES.

- Advisory Committee of the India Office, Royal Society, and Lister Institute. *Journal of Hygiene*, vi. (1906), vii. (1907), and viii. (1908). The Transactions of the Bombay Medical Congress, held in 1909, and of the Hong Kong Congress in 1911, contain several very valuable papers on Plague, and the current literature is found in the *Tropical Diseases Bulletin*.
- BANNERMAN (1900). *Statistics of Haffkine's Anti-Plague Vaccine*. Bombay.
- BARBER (1912). *The Philippine Journal of Science*.
- CHOKSY (1903). *Treatment by Lustig's Serum*. Bombay.
- CHOKSY (1909). *Bombay Medical Congress*.
- EAGER (1908). *The Present Pandemic of Plague*. Washington.
- Indian Plague Commission (1908). *Ætiology and Epidemiology of Plague*. Calcutta.
- KLEIN (1906). *Bacteriology of Oriental Plague*. London.
- LUSTIG AND GALEOTTI (1897-1912). Numerous valuable articles in *Deutsche Med. Wochenschrift*, etc.
- POLVERINI (1901). *La Peste*. Firenze.
- ROWLAND (1910). *Journal of Hygiene*.
- SHIVAYAMA (1912). *Transactions of the Hong Kong Congress*.
- STRONG (1907). *The Philippine Journal of Science*, B., vol. ii. Manila.
- STRONG (1912). *The Philippine Journal of Science*, B., No. 3. Manila.
- SIMPSON (1905). *Treatise on Plague*. Cambridge.
- SIMPSON (1909). *Plague on the Gold Coast*. London.
- TEAGUE (1912). *The Philippine Journal of Science*.
- TEAGUE (1912). *The Philippine Journal of Science*.

CHAPTER XXXIX

ENTERIC FEVER IN THE TROPICS

Synonyms — Definition — History — Climatology — Ætiology — Pathology — Morbid Anatomy — Symptomatology — Diagnosis — Prognosis — Treatment — Prophylaxis — References.

Synonyms.—Typhoid Fever, Abdominal Typhus, Gastric Fever, Pythogenic Fever, Endemic Fever, Autumnal or Fall Fever, Remittent Fever of many writers, Common Continued Fever, Slow or Lent Fever, Nervous Fever, Little Fever, Irregular Low Fever, Low Fever, Bilious Fever, Bilio-gastric Fever, Bilious Continued Fever, Night-soil Fever, Cesspool Fever.

French Synonyms.—Fièvre Typhoïde, Dothiénentérite, Fièvre Continue, Fièvre gastrique, Fièvre nerveuse, Enterite septicémique, Adéno-méningée, Fièvre méningogastrique.

German Synonyms.—Abdominaltyphus, Nervenfieber, Darmtyphus, Gastrisches Fieber.

Italian Synonyms.—Febbre tifoide, Tifo addominale.

The Latin synonyms are very numerous, and have been classified by Murchison into :—

(a) From supposed resemblance to typhus : Typhus nervosus, T. mitior ; T. gangliaris vel entericus, Ileo-typhus ; Typhios, Typhus (of many old writers).

(b) From mode of prevalence : Febris non-pestilens.

(c) From its remittent character : Febris semitertianæ seu composita ; Tritæophya typhodes.

(d) From its length : Febris lenta.

(e) From septic symptoms : Febris putrida, Febris putrida quæ vulgo lenta appellatur ; Febris putrida aut biliosa ; Febris a putredine orta.

(f) Resemblance to hectic fever : Febris hetica.

(g) Occurrence of gastric symptoms : Febris gastrica, Febris acuta stomachica aut intestinals ; Synochus biliosis.

(h) From intestinal symptoms : Febris mucosa, Febris pituitosa, Febris mesenterica maligna, Febris intestinalis.

(i) From supposed origin from worms : Febris verminosa, Typhus hyterico-verminosis.

With regard to the nomenclature, we have adopted the term Enteric Fever, used by Ritchie in 1846, because we describe under the term three distinct diseases caused by distinct micro-organisms, all of which produce symptoms either identical with or so closely resembling one another as to be nearly impossible of separation at the present time.

Definition.—The term ‘enteric fever’ is used at the present time to indicate three clinically similar fevers: typhoid fever due to *Bacillus typhosus* Eberth 1880, and the paratyphoid fevers due to *B. paratyphosus* A. Shottmüller 1901 and *B. paratyphosus* B. Shottmüller 1901 and closely allied bacilli.

History.—The history of enteric fever may be considered under two headings—viz., the general history of the disease, and the special history of its occurrence in the tropics.

It is quite impossible to recognize it with any degree of certainty in the meagre descriptions written by Hippocrates and the ancient physicians, which may or may not have referred to this disease. In the Middle Ages enteric fever, typhus fever, and relapsing fever were always confused with plague until Fracastorius, in the sixteenth century, distinguished typhus (which included enteric fever and relapsing fever), or febris pestilens, from plague, or febris vere pestilens. Spigelius, in 1624, is probably the first writer to clearly recognize the symptoms of enteric fever, because he described in Padua a disease characterized by fever, abdominal pain and tenderness, diarrhœa and delirium, having remissions and relapses, and associated with the post-mortem appearances of inflammation in the ileo-cæcal region. Similar descriptions can be found in the writings of Willis in 1659, who drew a distinction between febris pestilens and a febris lenta, the latter being associated with the enlargement of the mesenteric glands. Sydenham, in 1685, described a fever lasting fourteen to thirty days, and associated with diarrhœa, vomiting, epistaxis, etc., as distinct from febris pestilens. In 1715 Baglivi of Rome described the hemitritæus of older writers under the term ‘febris mesenterica.’ This fever was characterized by being irregularly remittent, lasting from fourteen to twenty-one days, and associated with inflammation of the intestines and mesenteric glands. Lancisi thought that the enteric ulcers were caused by round worms. Hoffman’s febris petechizans vel spuria, Strother’s lent fever, Gilchrist’s nervous fever, Huxham’s slow nervous fever, Riedel’s febris intestinalis, and Manningham’s febricula, are all synonyms of enteric fever. In 1810 Hildenbrand distinguished between contagious typhus and a non-contagious nervous fever, which were respectively named typhus exanthematicus and typhus abdominalis by German authors.

In 1813 Bretonneau of Tours associated this fever with hyperplasia of the solitary and agminated glands of the ileum, and gave it the name ‘dothienenteric’ (from *δοθήνην*, a tumour, and *έντερον*, the intestine).

In 1829 Louis gave the fever the name ‘fièvre typhoïde,’ and the work of Gerhard of Philadelphia in 1837, Shattuck of Boston in 1839, Barlow in 1840, Bartlett in 1842, Ritchie in 1846 (who introduced the term ‘enteric fever’), Jenner in 1849-51, completed the clinical differentiation of enteric fever from typhus, from which relapsing fever was also being separated. Thus arose the clinical conception of enteric fever, but in the meanwhile many theories

had been promulgated as to its causation ; thus Bretonneau held the view that it was spread by means of contagion, but this opinion was slow in gaining definite support. In 1847 Canstatt pointed out ' *that truly the exhalations of the sick man, his excrements, and possibly the typhus eruption in the skin, are the carriers of the contagion.*'

In 1850 Riecke recorded outbreaks due to drinking-water becoming contaminated with sewage ; Murchison implicated milk.

In 1880 Eberth discovered the *B. typhosus* in the mesenteric glands and spleens of persons dying from enteric fever, and in 1884 Gaffkey cultivated the bacillus so discovered.

In 1885 Fraenkel and Simmonds obtained definite animal reactions in guinea-pigs, mice, and rabbits ; and more recently Grünbaum, Metchnikoff and Besredka reproduced the typical characters of the disease in chimpanzees ; and Bland-Sutton described deaths of lemurs and monkeys in London which were associated with post-mortem appearances resembling enteric fever.

The diagnosis of the disease was greatly facilitated by Grüber and Durham's, Widal and Grünbaum's, works on agglutinins and specific agglutination reactions. Later, the cultivation of the bacilli from blood obtained by splenic puncture, and by the dilution method as devised by Castellani from the circulating blood, assisted the diagnosis ; while the bile enrichment method and the Conradi-Drigalski's and the McConkey medium generally aided the investigation of the disease. Chantemesse has devised an ophthalmo-diagnostic method. The diagnosis of a mixed infection has been rendered easier by the absorption test as introduced by Castellani in 1902, which is of use also in the determination of closely-allied bacteria. The *B. typhosus* has been found to be capable of living for weeks in the spleen, and for years in the gall-bladder, of people who are designated 'typhoid-carriers,' as the bacilli escape in the fæces in the latter case. The bacilli have been shown to occur naturally in water-supplies, earth, dust, fomites, flies, shellfish, and milk, etc. The subject of relapses has been studied by Chantemesse and Widal in 1892, Wright and Lamb in 1899, and Durham in 1901.

Attempts to obtain an antityphoid serum by Macfadyen, Hewlett, and Chantemesse, have not been successful, but Wright and Semple devised a vaccine in 1897 which was perfected by Leishman, and has been much used and has rendered great service ; later Castellani brought forward vaccination with attenuated living bacilli and a mixed typhoid + paratyphoid A + paratyphoid B vaccine dead or living (attenuated) as a method of prophylaxis, while recently Besredka and Metchnikoff advise a living, not attenuated, sensitized vaccine.

The subject of variation of the *B. typhosus* has been studied by Twort, Horrocks, and Penfold.

In 1895 Gilbert gave the name '*para-colon*' to bacilli occupying an intermediate position between *B. coli* and *B. typhosus*. In 1896 Archard and Bensaude used the term '*paratyphoid*' as a name for

such organisms when capable of producing the symptoms of enteric fever, but this name dropped into oblivion, only to be revived by Shottmüller in 1901, when he clearly demonstrated his *B. paratyphosus A* and *B. paratyphosus B* as the cause of two forms of enteric fever, the diagnosis of such cases being obtained by the specific agglutinative reactions, or, better, by cultivation from the circulating blood. This is the reason why the symptoms characteristic of enteric fever are ascribed to three allied organisms—viz., *B. typhosus* Eberth, *B. paratyphosus A* Shottmüller, and *B. paratyphosus B* Shottmüller.

The presence of typhoid fever in the Tropics has, even in recent times, been much debated, and apparently the view has been held that it was overlooked by the older tropical physicians. This, however, is quite erroneous, for typhoid fever was early recognized in the Tropics after its separation as a clinical entity by the workers in the Temperate Zone. Thus Scott and Milley, in 1830, showed that it existed in Tasmania; Levacher, in 1840, in St. Lucia; while it was recognized in 1841 on the Niger River, in West Africa, and in Martinique, and somewhat later in Sierra Leone and Gaboon. In 1842 an epidemic is mentioned as occurring in Rio di Janeiro in Brazil, and others in Tahiti in 1847, 1849, 1853-54, and also in Damascus in 1852, and in Cayenne in 1852-53. Other epidemics were recorded in Cuba in 1853-54, while in the latter year Scriven definitely proved its existence in India by demonstrating the typhoid ulcers found by post-mortem examination. In the same year Thomson described enteric fever in New Zealand, and Ripley about the same time in Fiji. In 1865 Massey recognized it in Newera Eliya, in Ceylon, while its occurrence in Trinidad and the Bermudas was known in 1866, and Davidson, in 1868, described it in Madagascar. In 1877 Defant said that it was common in Senegambia.

Notwithstanding all this early work, the fact of its prevalence in the tropics was not generally recognized, the disease being concealed under the terms 'remittent fever' and 'malarial fever' with ulcers, which latter became the so-called 'typho-malarial fever,' which we now know to be a mixed infection—enteric fever complicated by malaria. The cause of this long delay in the general diagnosis appears to have been the slow recognition of the disease by the profession as a whole in England, which reflected itself upon India and the British Colonies. While the authority of Morehead, who in the first edition of his book, 'Researches on Disease in India,' stated that typhoid fever was unknown in that country, is also believed to have had a deterrent effect upon the diagnosis of enteric fever therein. He, however, soon doubted the correctness of his original statement, for in 1860 he writes that in 1856 he recognized the disease in Bombay, and he quotes a lecture given by Goodeve on seven cases of undoubted typhoid fever; still, he is of the opinion that typhoid fever will be found in extra-tropical India or in inter-tropical provinces in the near proximity of the tropics.

Another point which prevented the general recognition of enteric

fever was the supposed antagonism of malaria to it, and the immunity of malarial districts from its attacks. These views were simply based upon the opinion that all remittent fevers were malarial, and that swelling and ulcerations of Peyer's patches could take place in these fevers; and the practitioner in the tropics was carefully warned that he was not justified in asserting the existence of typhoid fever from the mere character of the post-mortem appearances, and that the so-called 'typhoid symptoms' were not peculiar to one form of fever, but might occur in all.

Such teaching probably had a marked effect upon the diagnosis of enteric fever in the tropics until the recent establishment of bacteriological institutions, wherein a bacteriological diagnosis could be made.

Still more recent is the general recognition of the fact that the disease may be prevalent among the natives; in Ceylon, however, the fact that the malady is common among natives has been recognized for several years, and typhoid wards for natives have been established, as well as a special typhoid hospital started.

It may now be said that it is well known that enteric fever is prevalent in many, if not most, tropical countries, and that it occurs, not merely in Europeans, but in natives also.

Ætiology.—Enteric fever is caused by the *B. typhosus* Eberth, *B. paratyphosus* A Shottmüller, *B. paratyphosus* B Shottmüller, and other closely allied germs, such as the *Bacillus metatyphi* of Mandelbaum and the variety of typhoid bacillus described by Raymond and Nègre. The description of these germs may be found in any manual of bacteriology. It is probable that there are several varieties of each of these germs. Of the *B. typhosus*, for instance, two varieties can be easily differentiated—one, the most frequently met with, rendering milk alkaline after an initial acidity; the other making milk *permanently acid*.

With regard to the *B. typhosus* of Eberth, it is found in the intestine, not merely during the attack of fever, but during the incubation, and for a period extending perhaps as long as thirty years after an attack—that is to say, the bacillus has been grown from the fæces of a person thirty years after an attack of enteric fever; but whether it had existed in the bowels for the whole period is naturally not known, but it is possible. In other words, the bacillus can live in the bodies of people for years after an attack. These people are reservoirs or carriers of the bacillus, and may be called *intestinal carriers*. People who pass the bacilli in their fæces during the period of incubation are called *precocious intestinal carriers*; the patients passing the bacilli during the attack and convalescence are called *acute intestinal carriers*; while people who continue to pass the bacilli in their fæces for a year or less than a year after an attack of enteric fever are called *temporary or transitory intestinal carriers*; and those in whose fæces the bacilli are found after an interval of longer than a year are called *chronic intestinal carriers*.

In addition, there are carriers who are not known to have had

an attack of typhoid; that is to say, there may be people in whom the *B. typhosus* Eberth may live for an unknown period without showing any pathological signs at any time. These are known as *paradoxical intestinal carriers*. This is possible, but it is also probable that some of the carriers in question may have been cases of ambulatory typhoid, and therefore really belonged to the class of *chronic intestinal carriers*. As to the habitat of the bacilli while in the carrier, it seems that the gall-bladder is of the greatest importance, while during the actual attack of fever the bacilli are to be found not merely in the intestinal contents, but also in the mesenteric glands, the spleen, and the circulating blood. Now, the proportion of female carriers to male carriers is as five is to one. This is a curious fact, and, moreover, the bacillus is often found in the gall-bladder. Now, the frequency of gall-stones in women as compared with men is as three is to one; further, it is a well-known fact that gall-stones are often discovered for the first time at an autopsy; in fact, it is believed that only 10 per cent. of the persons suffering from gall-stones show any sign of the disease during life, and it is a curious fact that the percentage of persons showing signs of gall-stones after an attack of enteric fever is 14 per cent.

All these factors considered together, along with the known fact that *B. typhosus* has been isolated on several occasions from the centre of gall-stones removed by surgical operations, tend to support the view that the gall-bladder is, at all events in some cases, the home of the *B. typhosus* in a chronic carrier. Fornet, in 1909, has, however, stated that he believes the bacilli found in the fæces of a carrier are not descended from those which caused the attack of fever, but are derived from a reinfection which does not produce any clinical symptoms, because the human host has attained a tolerance to the parasite, which therefore leads a saprophytic existence, presumably in the lumen of the intestines.

The discharge of bacilli by means of the fæces appears to be intermittent, and not continuous, which is a most important fact, as the duration of the possible intermission is not positively known, and therefore it is difficult to say definitely when the carrier is really clear of the parasite.

The reason why women are more commonly carriers than men is said to be due to the loss of resisting power brought about by the decrease in the alexins of the blood during the menstrual and puerperal periods, and this is supported by the fact that, while the incidence of enteric fever is greater in females from fifteen to twenty years of age, the possibility of becoming a chronic intestinal carrier increases steadily from the fifteenth to the forty-fifth year. A more probable reason seems to us to be that women are more liable than men to affections of the gall-bladder.

With regard to age, it appears that the transitory carriers are generally young—five to twenty years of age—while the chronic carriers are usually old—thirty to forty-five years of age.

The greatest infectivity of a carrier is during the incubation period,

and the first weeks of the attack of fever; but chronic carriers are important in producing the endemicity of enteric fever in houses, groups of houses, and streets, as well as in institutions, etc.

As to the method of infection of the healthy by the carrier, evidence is being produced in favour of food contamination. So far, the evidence produced in favour of milk contamination by carriers is very strong, and it is quite possible that water, dust, fomites, etc., will all in course of time be shown to often obtain their infectivity from carriers.

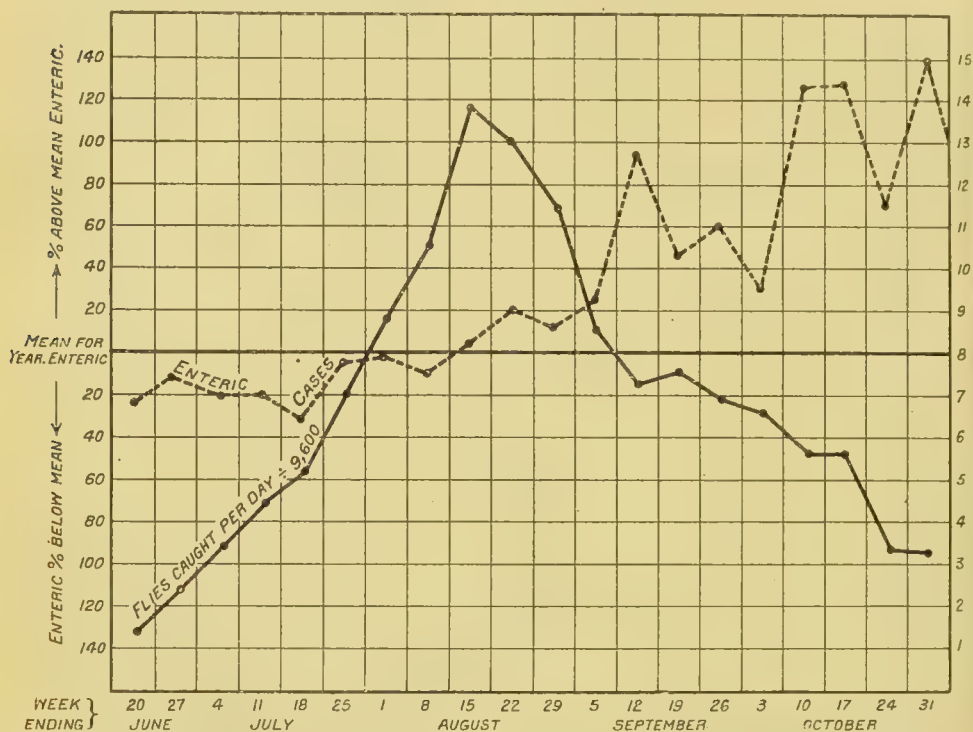


FIG. 455.—CURVES ILLUSTRATING NUMBER OF FLIES AND CASES OF ENTERIC FEVER. (After C. J. Martin.)

The question of the infection of the house-fly (*Musca domestica*) by means of the bacilli in the fæces of carriers is most important, because the fly may take the bacilli into its crop or alimentary canal, where they not merely increase in amount but also increase in virulence. Moreover, according to Nicoll's work, it is probable that larvæ may become infected, and this infection pass to the adult insect. The mouth-part of the fly consists of a proboscis (*vide* Fig. 337., p. 724), with oral lobes provided with very fine tubules—so fine that solid particles larger than microscopical cannot easily reach the true mouth, while liquids pass up readily. It is a matter of everyday observation that the house-fly apparently tastes everything on which it settles—that is to say, it extends its proboscis and presses on the substance on which it is standing by means of its oral lobes. When this proceeding is carefully examined, it is

seen that the fly is regurgitating a little fluid from its crop viâ the pseudo-tracheæ of the oral lobes on to the solid substance, with the view of attempting to dissolve some of the solid substance so that it may be able to pass readily along the minute pseudo-tracheæ. This simple act is of the greatest importance pathologically, because the house-fly is an exceedingly foul feeder, and may absorb the liquid from the fæces of a case of enteric fever or from those of a carrier.

In this way the bacilli enter its crop, only to be extruded on to sugar, bread, milk, meat, the rim of a cup, etc., and in this way to gain entrance to the human victim. Naturally, the presence of carriers increases greatly the opportunity for the infection of flies. But it is not merely by the mouth that the fly can infect food materials and utensils, but also by means of its fæces; for the fly defæcates very frequently, and the typhoid bacilli can pass from its alimentary canal in an enhanced condition of virulence—according to some authors—on to food, drink, or utensils, and so reach the human host.

Intestinal carriers are not the sole carriers of the enteric germs, for, though more rarely, the bacilli can escape in the urine of people who have recovered from enteric; these people are called *urinary carriers*. It is not uncommon to find bacilli in both the fæces and the urine in the case of transitory carriers, but it is much more uncommon to find them in the fæces and the urine in the case of chronic carriers if precautions are taken to prevent the contamination of the urine during or after micturition.

In urinary carriers the *B. typhosus* has its habitat generally in the renal pelvis, which is usually chronically inflamed or cystic, and it has also a secondary habitat in the chronically-inflamed bladder; but it appears possible that it may also live in recesses in the pelvis of the kidney, the bladder, the urethra, the prostate, and the vesiculæ seminales, from which bacilli pass into the urine. The methods of urine infectivity are the same as fæcal infectivity.

To summarize, the reservoir or carrier of the *B. typhosus* Eberth is a human host who has suffered from enteric fever, and who affords food and protection for the bacilli in the gall-bladder in the case of intestinal carriers, or in some recess or recesses in the urinary tract from the pelvis of the kidney downwards, and in the male in the prostate and vesiculæ seminales in the case of urinary carrier. This carrier passes the bacilli into the exterior in the fæces and urine, and these may, in cases of defective hygienic surroundings, directly infect air, food, or drinking-water, or may be conveyed by fomites or by flies to the victim's hands, or food, or food utensils.

The problem of the carriers of the paratyphoid bacilli is a similar one. *B. paratyphosus B* is commonly met with in Europe, where it is disseminated by means of intestinal carriers when it lives in the gall-bladder; but its urinary carriers have so far not been recognized. It has, however, been found in the common house-fly in 1911 by Nicoll. Its infectivity and its auto-infectivity are well

known. *B. paratyphosus A* is prevalent in India and Ceylon, where precocious and acute carriers are common ; while it is known that it can live in the gall-bladder for a considerable time and pass out in the fæces, and several outbreaks of enteric fever have been traced to this source.

With regard to the general question of carriers, the persons most liable to be carriers are first of all those who have had attacks of enteric fever, and, secondly, nurses and other attendants upon these patients ; while the carrier who is likely to prove most dangerous in spreading the infection is a person who is in any way engaged in the preparation or the handling of food intended for other people to consume, because the infection of the hands is a prolific source of infection for healthy people.

So far we have merely referred to *Musca domestica* Linnæus as an important intermediary host for these bacilli, but the fruit-fly, *Drosophila ampelophila* Loew, has been definitely implicated by Dutton in 1909. With regard to the accusations against the bug, *Clinocoris lectularius* Linnæus, and the flea, it can only be said that there is as yet no definite proof that it plays an active part in the spread of enteric fever.

To summarize, it may be stated that *B. typhosus*, *B. paratyphosus A*, and *B. paratyphosus B* can escape from the bodies of precocious, acute, temporary, chronic, or paradoxical carriers by means of the fæces or the urine, and can infect food and drink directly or indirectly through the agency of flies, and by means of this infected food or infected hands the bacilli can gain entrance into another human host, and set up the infection anew. Of the foods and drinks which are of importance, the first and most important is milk, while water, shellfish, fish, and dried fish, may also be mentioned as of great importance. Attacks have also been traced to ice, and, indeed, no food or cooking utensil can be considered free from possible infection. Of great importance in the tropics are uncooked green vegetables, which are grown in gardens often manured by means of human excrement. Fæcally-polluted dust and fæcally-polluted clothes must also be assigned a prominent place in connection with the spread of the disease.

With regard to the *epidemicity* of enteric fever, it will be clearly understood that the basis of the epidemic as the basis of the endemic is the carrier, but the characters of the epidemic will largely depend upon the means by which the bacilli are introduced into the new non-immune hosts. Often this is by flies ; hence the name ' autumnal fever ' sometimes applied to the disease, because the local epidemic takes place after the time of their greatest prevalence. Epidemics due to milk will be found to agree with the distribution of this food by, generally, one dairy. The present writers once, during an outbreak of enteric fever and dysentery in a tropical town, bought by chance a sample of milk which, on investigation, was found to contain the *B. coli*—a sure proof of human fæcal contamination, which might have arisen from watering the milk,

because water is often added by the seller to the milk of *Bos indicus*, and this escapes the notice of the buyer, because the milk is much richer than that of *Bos taurus*, and therefore does not appear to be diluted. As the water may have come from some polluted source—*e.g.*, a well or a roadside drain—this is very dangerous. Epidemics due to oysters and other shellfish will agree with the seasonal use of these shellfish, and may even be traced to certain breeding-grounds which may be situate near the mouth of a sewer, or in which the oyster-bed itself has become infected with bacilli. Another good instance of the cause of small epidemics is the tracing of the infection by Hamer to the fried-fish shops so common in London. But the infection of food materials will not give rise to the sudden widespread epidemic which will arise if the water-supply is contaminated. Maidstone, in 1896, had 35,000 inhabitants, of whom 1,900 persons suffered from enteric fever during the months of September, October, and November, due to contamination of the town's water-supply. In the tropics polluted wells are a prevalent cause of endemic and epidemic enteric fever. The present writers were acquainted with a town in which so-called 'remittent,' really typhoid, fever was very prevalent, and where in a certain area the wells and the cesspits, which always contained water, were only separated by a wall one brick thick.

The bacilli do not live when dried; still, it is probable that they can live, attached to particles of dust, long enough to contaminate food which in certain tropical regions may become covered with dust.

Predisposing Causes.—With regard to predisposing causes, it was long considered that the native of the tropics enjoyed a partial or, as some said, an absolute immunity against enteric fever. This cannot now be maintained, as we know definitely that enteric fever is quite common in all races. The position at the present time is that, while certain authorities consider that a considerable number of cases of enteric fever still lie hidden under the terms 'remittent fever' and 'simple continued fever,' and perhaps 'febricula,' as applied to natives, and especially to native children, who are not often treated by physicians trained in modern methods, still, there are others who maintain that there is a partial immunity in some races—*e.g.*, such an immunity is said to exist among the native Egyptians, Sudanese, and Japanese, which is believed to be due to racial inheritance. This question has been investigated by the Board for the Study of Tropical Diseases in the Philippine Islands, and ably reported by Chamberlain, who finds that epidemics of great severity among Filipinos are rare or unnoticed; that Widal reactions performed on the blood of 591 healthy Filipinos suggest a comparatively recent attack of enteric fever in about 6 per cent. of adults, but do not indicate that the disease is prevalent in childhood; that the native Filipino scouts show a lower typhoid rate than the white troops, possibly due to failure to diagnose the atypical cases; that more than one-third of the cases of enteric

fever, whether among Americans or Filipinos, are entirely atypical, and cannot be diagnosed without laboratory methods. One-half of the total number of cases can, however, be diagnosed clinically, and do not differ from enteric fever as seen in the Temperate Zone. He concludes that much work still needs to be done among the natives to estimate the actual amount of mild and atypical enteric fever which is occurring, and to determine why extensive and destructive epidemics are not more often seen.

Our own experience in Ceylon causes us to believe that the disease is very prevalent among the natives of that island, and as dangerous among them as in Europeans. If reference is made to the table of causes of death in the races of Ceylon given in Chapter V., it will be noted that—

Race.		Enteric Fever.	Simple Fever.	Remittent Fever.
		Per Cent.	Per Cent.	Per Cent.
European	..	10·1	1·7	1·5
Sinhalese	..	7·6	12·0	0·3
Tamils	.. ..	0·7	17·3	3·8

Added together, these give—Europeans, 13·3 per cent. ; Sinhalese, 19·9 per cent. ; Tamils, 21·8 per cent. The incidence of enteric fever among these peoples is probably more nearly approximating the conjoint figures than those given solely under Enteric Fever. Tamils are labourers on estates, and cases of fever among them are generally lumped together under the heading of Malaria.

Age is another predisposing cause, for there appears to be a general consensus of opinion that twenty to twenty-five years of age is a period more susceptible to the disease than the other periods of life, but no age period is free from attacks.

During the first journey from the Temperate Zone to the Tropics the metabolism of the young resident in the Temperate Zone is possibly somewhat disturbed, leading to a weakening in the anti-bacterial and phagocytic reactions, as some authorities maintain ; and hence, perhaps, his great liability to attacks of enteric fever and other complaints. It must not be forgotten that the young new arrival is apt to eat too much, to drink too much, and, being stimulated by the heat—the bad effects of which at first he does not notice—is apt to work too hard and play too hard, or, in other words, to attempt to exhaust his system in every possible way, and to thoroughly disregard the evil effects of the sun ; and we consider these indiscretions play a certain rôle in the relative frequency with which these young new arrivals become infected.

Young people often live together in what are called '*chummeries*'—i.e., several of them live together in a house, while one of them runs the messing. These houses, having no proper supervision, are allowed to become most insanitary, especially with regard to the

servants' quarters, which are naturally the nearest to the kitchen and the places in which food is stored. The pollution of food in these places is often self-evident to the naked eye, while the whole place teems with flies. Moreover, the weakening of the system by venereal disease plays a part in producing the heavy incidence of enteric fever in new arrivals. In Bengal 50 per cent. of the cases in Europeans occurred within one year of arrival from Europe.

In India the disease is believed to be common among native children and among Europeans born in India; thus it was noticed by Rogers that 41·67 per cent. of the cases were under fifteen years of age, whereas in Europe and America only 9·45 of cases are under fifteen years of age.

As regards sex, we have already drawn attention to the apparently special incidence upon women between fifteen to forty-five years of age.

With regard to the condition of life, the poor whites living in insanitary conditions are very liable to be attacked, and this may account for the prevalence of the disease among Europeans born and living in India, as may the natural habits of children playing among earth and rubbish, which are often more or less faecally polluted. But of all predisposing causes, that of bad sanitation stands out pre-eminently first; thus Europeans are apt to get the disease most commonly in the dry season, when it is spread by dust and flies, and the natives in the wet season, when it may be due to water contamination.

With regard to meteorological conditions, we have observed that anything which prevents the heavy rainfall at the proper season tends to an increase in the enteric, dysentery, etc., rates; and, absurd though it may read, certain observations which we made some years ago led us to believe that the eruption of Mount Pelée may have had a disturbing effect upon the meteorological conditions, producing less rainfall, and preventing the filthy drains and other places being properly flushed, and thus indirectly causing an increased incidence of epidemic intestinal diseases.

Pathology.—Enteric fever is a septicæmia which is produced by the bacilli already mentioned entering the body by the mouth, and passing into the small intestine and colon, the lymphoid tissue of which they invade. In this tissue they increase in number, and pass viâ the lymphatics to the abdominal lymphatic glands and spleen, in all of which they multiply. No doubt they very soon reach the blood, but are probably quickly destroyed and their toxins neutralized, and so long as this continues the patient is without definite signs of the disease. This constitutes 'the period of incubation' or latency, and may possibly be the explanation of those persons who, though chronic carriers of virulent typhoidal germs, maintain that they themselves have never had any illness.

If the quantity of bacilli produced are only sufficient to barely neutralize the antitoxin substances in the blood, then an ambulatory or an abortive attack may ensue.

When, however, the bacilli multiply in such numbers that, though still largely destroyed by the bacteriolysins of the blood, still there is insufficient antitoxin to neutralize their liberated toxins, then the fever begins. The possible explanation of the intermittent type of the fastigium of the tropics is that the supply of antitoxic substances in the blood waxes and wanes. The evidence in favour of the above theory is the presence of the bacilli in the fæces in the incubation period, the presence of enlarged Peyer's patches; mesenteric glands and spleen found accidentally in post-mortem examinations of people who have died from other causes, and in whom enteric fever was not suspected; the possibility of cultivating the bacilli from specimens of the circulating blood obtained during the first week of the fever; and the constant necessity for immediate dilution of this blood if a successful culture is to be obtained.

Relapses can be explained as being due to any cause which so disturbs the metabolism of the body that the antitoxin production decreases, and the germs again gain entrance to the blood in such quantity as to produce fever.

The endotoxin contained in the bacilli has a markedly stimulant effect upon endothelial cells, causing them to swell and to block small lymph capillaries, thus causing patches of focal necrosis in the liver.

The bacilli can occur in any part of the body, but they have a predilection for the lymphatic system. When arrested in the lymphatics of the skin, they give rise to the rose-coloured maculo-papules so characteristic of the disease. The appearance and distribution of these red maculo-papules in the skin of the anterior abdominal wall, chest, and back is believed by Greenhalgh to agree with the cutaneous distribution of the nerves which supply the small intestine, the mesenteric lymph nodules, and the spleen. But this seems hardly possible, as papules can appear on the arms, legs, and other regions. It would appear as though local heat was a more important factor in their production than nerve-supply. The bacilli may attack the respiratory system, giving rise to bronchitis, pneumonia, etc., and they are commonly found in the gall-bladder, in which they cause cholecystitis, and may give rise to gall-stones. They also pass through the kidney into the urinary passages, and at times appear in large quantities in the urine (bacilluria).

They are also capable of living locally in the tissues, giving rise to inflammation, abscess formation, and local death of the tissue.

It has already been noted that they can live for years in the gall-bladder and the pelvis of the kidney, producing the chronic intestinal and urinary carriers, who are liable to infect, not merely themselves, but others also.

Auto-infection may possibly be the explanation of such cases as have second or even third attacks, within a short period after the first attack.

The typical gradual onset of the disease may be explained by the struggle between the antitoxins of the body and the bacterial toxins.

The occasional sudden onset seen especially in the tropics may be due to lowered resistance, owing to many causes—*e.g.*, climatic influences, other infections, etc.

Immunity is generally acquired after an attack, but second attacks are by no means rare; moreover, the immunity is homologous—*viz.*, an attack of typhoid fever will protect against *B. typhosus*, but not against the paratyphoid bacilli.

The fever is due to a lessened loss of heat rather than to an increased production of heat, and this is the reason why, in ordinary cases, there may not be marked emaciation.

Morbid Anatomy.—On opening the abdomen in a typical post-mortem, the bowels will usually be seen to be distended with gas, and the small intestine will be noticed to present marked areas of congestion, especially near the ileo-cæcal junction.

The mesenteric glands will be observed to be enlarged and congested, as will the spleen and at times the liver. If there has been a perforation, a fæcal odour will be perceived on opening the abdomen, and there may be gas, fæcal matter, round worms, or pus in the peritoneal cavity, while careful search will reveal the perforation; but care must be taken not to artificially perforate the gangrenous, or almost gangrenous, intestinal wall by manipulation.

On opening the intestines, it will be noted that the most important site of disease is, as already stated, in the ileum near the ileo-cæcal valve; while the contents of the bowel will be noted to be of a yellowish colour, unless there has been a hæmorrhage, when blood will be seen, or unless medicines have been administered, which alter the colour of the motions. The Peyer's patches in the lower few feet of the ileum will be enlarged, prominent, and whitish in colour, and covered, perhaps, with yellowish sloughs, or perhaps containing ulcers, which may be in the form of one large central or several small ulcers.

On inspection, a typical ulcer will be noted to have its long axis in the same direction as the long axis of the bowel, to be of oval form, with thin and undermined edges, and a base formed from the muscularis mucosæ, the infiltrated submucosa, or from the muscular or even the peritoneal coats of the bowel; while in cases of perforation a rent may be noticed through this last coat, permitting communication between the lumen of the bowel and the cavity of the peritoneum. In cases of extensive hæmorrhage injection of water into the carefully dissected out mesenteric artery may demonstrate more or less correctly the source of the bleeding. The solitary glands will also be seen to be enlarged and congested with sloughs or roundish ulcers, while the mucosa around these and the Peyer's patches will be seen to be intensely congested and red in colour. This congestion may be traced for a considerable distance along the ileum and into the jejunum, but it is rare to find the duodenum or the gastric mucosa in a state of acute congestion.

Tracing the bowel downwards into the ascending colon, it will be noticed that the mucosa of the cæcum and ascending colon is often

congested, and at times the solitary glands will be seen to be swollen; but as a rule they are not ulcerated.

These typical appearances may be varied by finding only one or two Peyer's patches enlarged, and perhaps only one or two small ulcers, and very rarely there may be no signs beyond a catarrhal inflammation of the mucosa of the bowel. On the other hand, the ulceration in the region of the ileo-cæcal junction may be so extensive that there are only ridges and islands of intensely congested mucosa left, while at other times pieces of the bowel may be black and almost or quite gangrenous.

The mesenteric glands will be seen to be swollen and congested, and on section they will show marked congestion and perhaps pus.

The spleen is enlarged and swollen, dark red in colour, friable, with a tense capsule, while the liver may also be enlarged and congested, and may even on rare occasions show multiple abscesses brought about by a septic pylephlebitis. The gall-bladder and bile-ducts may be congested, or more rarely may contain pus, while the bile is usually light-coloured and watery, but may be inspissated. The pancreas is usually normal, but we have seen it congested and even hæmorrhagic. The suprarenal capsules are generally normal in uncomplicated cases. The kidneys are usually enlarged and congested, with a capsule which strips off readily. On section, both cortex and medulla are seen to be congested, with often fatty degeneration, and more rarely small abscesses or infarcts. The pelvis is congested, but the ureter and bladder are usually normal, though signs of cystitis may be found at times.

With regard to the thorax, if there is much meteorism, the diaphragm may be noted to be pushed up considerably higher than usual. The trachea and bronchi may show signs of inflammation, and in the lung pneumonia, hæmorrhagic infarcts, pyæmic abscesses, and purulent infarcts may be seen. The heart is usually flabby and without any sign of rigor mortis, and is often pale, soft, and friable, from fatty degeneration. Rarely will vegetative or ulcerative endocarditis or aortitis be found.

In the neck the thyroid gland may in cases of great rarity be seen to be enlarged, and even to have abscesses. There may be congestion and ulceration of the larynx and tonsils, but they are not common in our experience. The tongue will be seen to be covered with sordes, and may, perhaps, show fissures.

The brain is often congested, as are the meninges, but meningitis and other naked-eye signs are rarely met with. Venous and, much more rarely, arterial thrombosis may be seen, while Zenker's vitreous degeneration may be found, especially in the adductors of the thigh, the rectus muscles of the abdomen, the pectoralis, and the diaphragm, and very rarely one of these degenerated muscles may be found ruptured and surrounded by hæmorrhages. The bone-marrow may also be congested and show signs of focal necrosis.

Finally, there may be the signs of the complications or sequelæ—

as, for example, the arthritis of the joints, the abscesses in various parts of the body, etc.

The pathological history of these post-mortem appearances may now be briefly related, beginning with the history of the lesions of the Peyer's patches.

At first a Peyer's patch or lymphoid follicle is hyperæmic, but this is followed by a proliferation of the lymphoid and epithelioid cells of the follicles, together with a swelling of the endothelial cells of the capillary vessels, and these together produce a more or less definite blocking of the capillary vessels, which causes an anæmia, and produces the whitish colour of the hyperplastic Peyer's patches, to which attention has already been drawn. The typical bacilli can be found lying in the centre of the follicle, and also in the lymphatic vessels, not merely of the follicle, but also of the submucosa. Such is the condition of the follicle about the eighth to the tenth day, and now one of two things may happen : either the excess of lymphoid cells undergo fatty degeneration and absorption, with the result that the blood-flow returns, and the follicle becomes normal ; or the blockage of the bloodvessels is increased by fibrinous thrombosis, with the result that the superficial portion of the swollen follicle dies and forms a slough, which, separating from the edges towards the centre, becomes an ulcer some time during the second week. These ulcers may increase in depth by an extension of the necrosis, and may lead to perforation ; on the other hand, there may be a formation of granulation tissue over the base, which subsequently leads to fibrous tissue formation, and thus eventually to the healing of the ulcer, which process is completed by the growth of the mucosa over the young fibrous tissue. The site of a previous typhoid ulcer is often clearly visible as a depressed pigmented area, which, on microscopical examination, is seen to consist of atrophic mucosa covering a fibrous submucosa, which is also often atrophic.

The mesenteric glands show at first hyperæmia and cell proliferation, among which the typical bacilli can be found. Pus formation may also be found at times.

The spleen early becomes hyperæmic, and swells considerably, remaining enlarged until the third or fourth week. The capsule becomes tense, and the pulp assumes a dark red colour. The swelling is due to the hyperæmia and cellular infiltration with leucocytes, endothelial cells, and macrophages, among which the typhoid bacilli may be found. During the third week the pulp becomes softer, and the Malpighian bodies become prominent, and absorption begins to take place, which produces a paler colour in the pulp, and eventually leads to an increase in the amount of fibrous tissue.

The liver shows cloudy swelling and fatty degeneration of the cells and spots of focal necrosis, which may be produced by accumulations of epithelioid cells in the lymphatic spaces of the portal system, or to small areas of necrosis of liver cells owing to occlusion of adjacent capillaries. These foci are associated with clumps of the specific bacilli.

The kidneys show cloudy swelling of the cells of the convoluted tubules, but in the cases when the kidney is specially involved there may be considerable hyperæmia, together with perivascular cellular exudation and granular degeneration of the cells of the convoluted tubules.

The heart muscle may show fatty or, rarely, waxy degeneration, while endarteritis obliterans in the small arteries is said to be seen in cases of sudden death without obvious cause.

In the nervous system there are no very marked changes, but pigmentation of the ganglion cells and leucocytic infiltration of the perivascular spaces may be seen, as well as fatty degeneration of the nerve-fibres.

The bone-marrow is generally congested, and may show signs of focal necrosis, with hyperplasia of lymphoid cells and clumps of typhoid bacilli.

Symptomatology.—Enteric fever is a very protean disease, the description of which is usually divided into incubation period, onset, course, subdivided into weeks, relapses, and terminations in death or convalescence. In general terms, it may be stated that the fever presents physical signs and symptoms not unlike those seen in the Temperate Zone, but a number of cases are atypical.

These atypical cases may have a slight and short attack of fever presenting but few symptoms, and very liable to be overlooked, or the attack may be ushered in by some other fever—as, for example, malaria or seven days' fever. We will first describe a typical attack with mild or severe symptoms.

Incubation.—The incubation period of enteric fever ranges in its known extremes from three days to twenty-three days, or much longer. The shortest known period—that is to say, the one with three days' incubation—was exceptional, the infection being due to swallowing a culture of virulent bacilli, and therefore it may be excluded for ordinary purposes. It is by no means easy as a rule to define the incubation period, and it is usual to agree with Murchison, and to state that it is most commonly about two weeks (ten to fourteen days), but that it is often less than this, and may possibly be as short as four or five days; while, on the other hand, it is often longer, and no definite maximal limit can be mentioned, because the study of typhoid carriers has demonstrated that persons, apparently in good health, may be infected with the bacillus, and it has further been shown that these people may suffer from auto-infection, all of which naturally complicate the question of the duration of the period of incubation.

We therefore conclude that the usual incubation period for enteric fever is about two weeks.

During this period the patient may apparently show no signs or symptoms of the disease, though at times headache and general malaise may be felt.

Onset.—Typically the onset is gradual, the patient attending to his ordinary duties, though suffering more markedly from the

feeling of malaise and lassitude and from headache than during the period of incubation, and associated with these symptoms there may be constipation, or there may be diarrhœa with pains in various parts of the body, but especially in the back, the iliac regions, or the legs. At times there is a troublesome cough. The disinclination for exertion, mental or bodily, increases, as does the headache and the pains, until the patient feels so ill that he consults his medical attendant, when it is found that the temperature is raised above normal (100° to 101° F. in the morning) ; that it is higher in the evening (103° to 104° F.) than in the morning ; that the pulse, though accelerated (80 to 90 per minute), is relatively slow as compared with the temperature, and may be dicrotic ; while the tongue is coated on the dorsum, though red at the tip and along the margins ; the headache is generally frontal, and there may be thirst, vomiting, or epistaxis, as well as abdominal tenderness and slight distension, especially in the right iliac region. If the case is observed early, a step-like rise of the temperature may be noted—that is to say, the evening temperature is always slightly higher than that of the preceding evening—while the morning remission is less, until about the third or fourth day, when the temperature reaches 103° to 105° F. at night.

The onset, however, is often atypical in the tropics, the symptoms being but little marked, and the patient, though feeling wretched and ill, perseveres with his work, and may never consult a doctor until well into the second week of the fever, and in some cases may even advance farther in the illness than this before the complaint is diagnosed.

With regard to the other atypical onsets, it is well to remember that the disease is a septicæmia, and that, following the account of the pathology given above, any organ or system of the body may be specially attacked. Thus, for example, the nervous system may be specially attacked, with the result that the most urgent symptom is a neuralgia, an earache, a backache, or pains resembling those of pleurisy ; or, again, there may be signs as though cerebro-spinal meningitis were coming on, or there may be early delirium. If the respiratory system is specially attacked, the signs will be those of bronchitis, pneumonia, or suggestive of acute tuberculosis. If the alimentary canal is selected, there will be symptoms indicating irritant poisoning or appendicitis ; if the renal system is marked out for attack, they will resemble the signs of acute nephritis. The above remarks do not by any means cover all the possibilities of the onset, but enough has been said to indicate the remarkably protean nature of the signs and symptoms of enteric fever, and of the way in which it imitates other diseases.

The First Week.—The early days of this week are as a rule occupied by the onset of the fever, as described above, and often the medical attendant does not see the patient until about the end of the third or fourth day of the illness. In the tropics, however, the attack is at times ushered in by some other fever—as, for example,

malaria, by which its symptoms are more or less masked. It is, however, possible, even at this early stage, to observe, associated with the symptoms of the predominant disease, signs and symptoms which arouse suspicion of enteric fever. This suspicion is presently converted into certainty as these signs increase in evidence, while the symptoms of the original ailment decrease and finally disappear. The signs and symptoms to which we specially refer are the alteration of the temperature chart from one of remittent or intermittent fever in malaria to one of more continued fever, with more marked headache, slowing the pulse, the appearance of diastolic murmurs, the signs of abdominal distension, the local pains, the tenderness, and perhaps the gurgling in the right iliac region, and the altered condition of the tongue.

During this first week the facies of the patient becomes at times typical—*i.e.*, the cheeks are flushed and the eyes bright, and there may be some photophobia. The decubitus is almost always dorsal. As the week proceeds, the patient becomes more or less apathetic, listless, and drowsy. Headache, noises in the ears, and pains in various parts of the body are the marked symptoms of this week, while sleeplessness is often another marked symptom. Delirium is, however, rare. The temperature continues high, being usually from 103° to 104° F. in the evening, with a remission of a degree or so in the morning; but in our experience a much greater remission than a degree or so is by no means unusual, and the temperature, as already mentioned, may assume an intermittent character. The pulse is about 80 to 100 beats per minute, often with more or less diastolic murmurs, while the blood-pressure varies, the systolic being about 120 millimetres, and the diastolic about 90 millimetres of mercury. At this stage of the disease there is usually little or no change in the blood, though slight leucopenia may be present. The specific agglutinin reaction is not available, but the bacilli can be cultivated from the blood. In uncomplicated cases the spleen is more or less normal at the commencement, but enlarges distinctly towards the end of the week. The respiratory symptoms may cause the patient much annoyance, especially the dry, hacking cough, and there may be signs of mild tonsillitis, pharyngitis, laryngitis, or bronchitis. Pneumonia must be looked upon rather as a complication than as a symptom of the disease. The gastro-intestinal symptoms present much variability. The mouth is often dry, and the patient may be worried by thirst. The lips and teeth are normal, but the tongue, which is moist, is generally coated by a white fur on the dorsum, while the tip and edges are red. There is little or no desire for food; the stomach is irritable, and vomiting may occur, especially if indiscretions in feeding are allowed. The abdomen is more or less distended, especially in the region of the right iliac fossa, where it is often painful and tender, as, indeed, it may be in other places. There may be constipation or there may be diarrhoea; the motions may be of an ordinary colour, but more typically they are ochre-yellow.

It is not often that hæmorrhage is seen during this week, and is then generally small in amount ; but its presence is, in our opinion, a relatively serious symptom. The urine is generally diminished in quantity, high in specific gravity, dark in colour, with a markedly acid reaction, but there is usually no albumin, no casts, and the diazo-reaction cannot be obtained.

The skin is hot and dry, with, however, paroxysms of greater or lesser amount of perspiration, followed by the presence of more or less sudamina. The typical rose spots do not as a rule appear before the seventh day, and therefore will not be described under this week. At times a bluish subcuticular mottling is to be observed, especially on the abdominal wall, towards the end of this week of quite a different nature to the bluish spots (*taches bleuâtres*), which are generally assigned to the action of lice. There is often a yellowish coloration of the palms of the hands, the lateral aspects of the fingers, and the soles of the feet, sometimes called 'Philipowicz's sign,' which, however, is by no means characteristic of enteric fever.

The most marked feature of the week is the gradual increase in severity of the disease as marked by the growing apathy and dulness of the patient ; the aggravation of the symptoms, with the exception of the pains which tend rather to abate towards the end of the week ; the enlargement of the spleen ; the possible occurrence of the typical spots ; and the continued fever.

The Second Week.—The signs and symptoms described in the first week continue to increase, with the exception of the headache and local pains, which usually diminish and disappear by about the middle of the week. The tendency to hæmorrhage is, however, more marked, and the danger of perforation of the bowels has now to be considered, while the typical rose-coloured rash should appear to a greater or lesser extent ; the specific agglutinin reaction should be obtainable, as well as the diazo-reaction in the urine, while the specific bacilli are much more difficult to obtain from the circulating blood, but can still be recovered from the spleen, the fæces, the rose spots, and often from the urine. Liver or gall-bladder symptoms and other complications may appear. With this introduction the signs and symptoms of the second week may be considered in slightly more detail.

During this week the patient, who may have been up and about, is generally confined to bed, and may be seen for the first time by the physician. The facies are dull, apathetic, and listless ; the reaction time is prolonged for answering questions ; the hearing may be diminished ; and the patient is drowsy. At night there may be sleeplessness and mild delirium. There may be slight sub-sultus tendinum. The decubitus is dorsal. The temperature continues high, varying from about 102° to 105° F., while the pulse is generally relatively slow (90 to 100 beats per minute), although it may reach to 120. The dirotism may have disappeared, but the blood-pressure has generally diminished somewhat, and the first

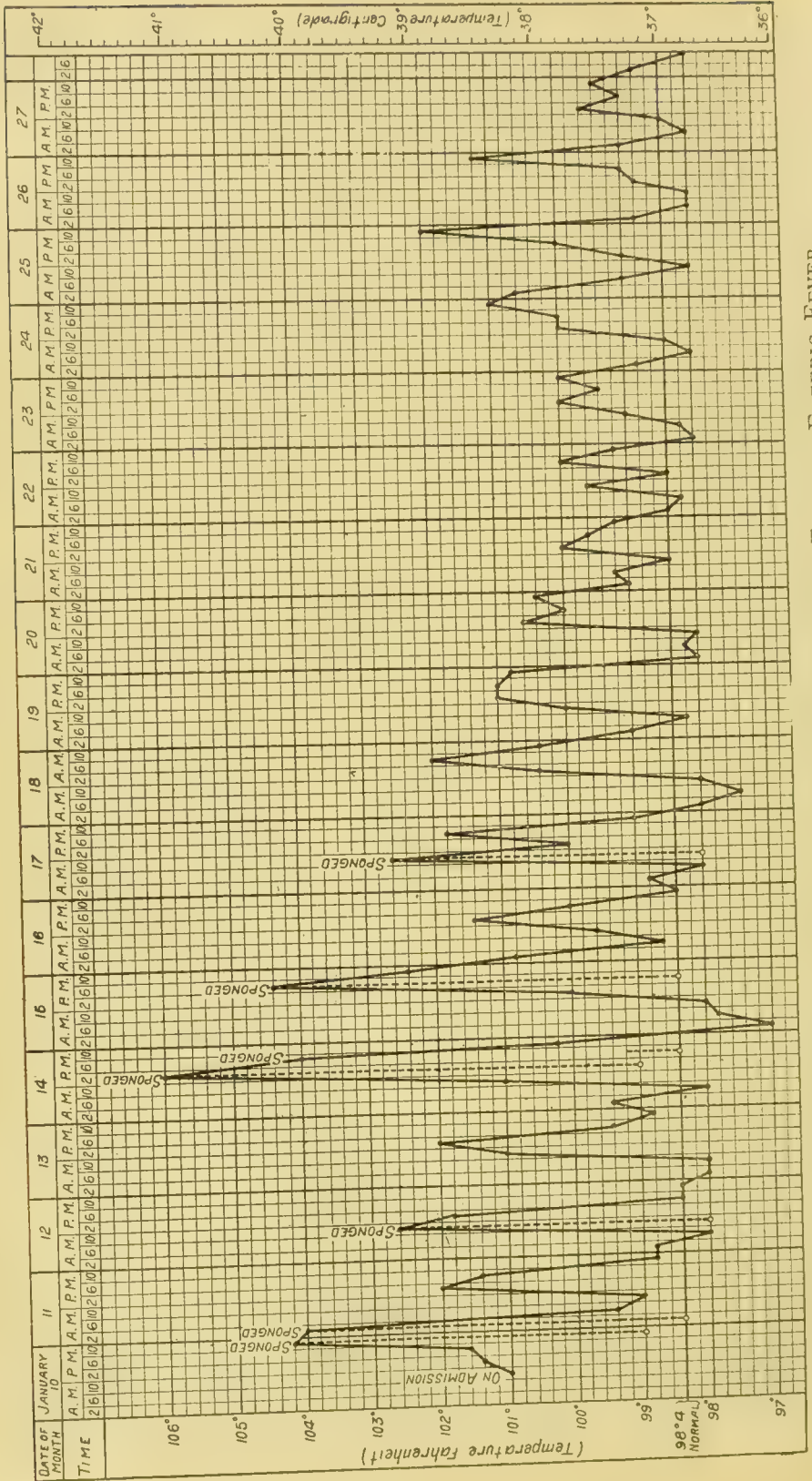


FIG. 456.—TEMPERATURE CHART OF THE INTERMITTENT TYPE OF ENTERIC FEVER.

sound of the heart is not as appreciable as normal. The circulation is as a rule not good ; the extremities are apt to be cool, or even cold ; and the hands and feet, or more usually the tips of the fingers and toes, may be of a bluish colour. The nails often show signs of lack of vitality, and transverse ridges may be observed. Philipowicz's sign may disappear, or may persist through the week, and even later. The typical rose-red or pink maculo-papules appear in successive crops on the front of the abdomen or chest, beginning about the seventh to twelfth days, though in exceptional cases they may occur as early as the fifth day, or they may be delayed as late as the twentieth day, while they may be entirely absent. Their number and presence depends upon some unknown secondary cause, and not upon the severity of the attack, to which they bear no reference. They are pinkish or rose-red, circular, slightly elevated, isolated maculo-papules about 4 millimetres in diameter, usually few in number, which disappear temporarily on pressure, but reappear as soon as the pressure is removed. They usually last three to five days, more rarely as long as ten days, and as a rule undergo no change until they fade and disappear, leaving occasionally a brownish stain. They are not associated with any subcuticular mottling, and are but rarely met with on the face, though they may at times be found on the arms and legs. They continue to appear until the end of the second week, during the third week, or even during convalescence.

The lips and tongue at the commencement of the second week are in much the same condition as at the end of the first week, and if the attack is of mild or medium virulence, they may remain in this condition during the whole week ; but if the attack is severe, and if the patient passes into the typhoid state, they alter in appearance ; for in this condition the patient lies on his back, breathing through the partially open mouth, with the lips and teeth covered with the dark brown scabs, formed from epithelial débris, micro-organisms, and food, which are called 'sordes.' The tongue becomes dry, and is covered with a brown or brownish-black fur or crust, and may have painful cracks ; but this condition is largely due to oral sepsis, and is not part of the disease, and may be more or less avoided by careful nursing and oral antisepsis. The pharynx is generally more or less inflamed, and may be ulcerated, as may the tonsils. Gastric disturbance, if present in the first week, is not continued into the second week as a rule, and it is rare to observe vomiting in this week unless there is some complication. There may be constipation or there may be diarrhoea, and the motions are often of a yellowish colour, with alkaline reaction and somewhat offensive odour, and may contain sloughs, which will be recognized as greyish-yellow fragments of tissue about an inch in length.

Hæmorrhage is said to occur in about 10 per cent. of cases, but our experience would indicate that it is more frequent than this. It varies from a mere trace to a serious hæmorrhage, and most usually occurs from the end of the second to the end of the third week—that is to say, during the period of separation of the sloughs.

Often there are little or no signs or symptoms to mark a slight hæmorrhage, but a profuse hæmorrhage produces serious symptoms. Often a hæmorrhage takes place without warning, but as it is known to be possible, the attendants will be on the outlook for signs ; and our experience is that there often is warning given by the presence of a trace of blood in the motions, in the slight increase of the pulse-rate, or a slight drop in the temperature. In sudden severe cases of hæmorrhage the facies alter, becoming pinched and pallid ; the pulse increases in frequency, and the temperature drops perhaps quite suddenly. In very severe cases a sudden fatal collapse may take place before any sign of blood has been visible in the motions.

More or less meteorism is always present during this week, and at times this becomes a great trouble to the patient, and very rarely may reach to such a degree that it embarrasses the heart's action. It is dangerous in that it favours perforation, which may occur in this week, but is more commonly met with in the third week, under which heading it will be described.

Usually the spleen is distinctly enlarged during this week, and the blood shows an anæmia due to the reduction of red blood cells, while the hæmoglobin and the leucocytes are also reduced. The leucopenia is due to a reduction of the polymorphonuclear leucocytes and eosinophiles, while the mononuclear leucocytes are usually increased in numbers. The presence of a marked leucocytosis would indicate the occurrence of some complication. The coagulability of the blood is reduced.

Pain and tenderness may occur in the right hypochondrium over the area of the gall-bladder, and is often due to a slight attack of cholecystitis, which may also be indicated by slight enlargement of the liver, slight jaundice, and rigidity of the abdominal muscles.

The lungs should be carefully watched during this period, as lobar pneumonia may occur, and as the symptoms are not marked, and rusty sputum is rare, it may be overlooked.

Rarer symptoms during this week are local neuritis, tetany, eye troubles, and ear complications ; but muscular cramp is by no means rare, and may cause great inconvenience to the patient.

The urine is febrile, and may contain albumin. The diazo-reaction may appear before the rash, or may be deferred as late as the end of the third week. Bacilluria is found in about one-third of the cases, while urobilin and indicanuria are also fairly frequently met with. Acetone and diacetic acid occur, but may be due to the starvation. In mild cases the patient may show marked improvement during this week, and the temperature may decline gradually, and reach normal about the fourteenth day. This, however, is rare, and usually the temperature keeps high during the whole week, and the patient enters the third week with all the signs and symptoms of the fully-developed attack.

The Third Week.—During the third week the temperature may gradually fall to normal about the twenty-first day in typical cases, and with this the various symptoms may subside and convalescence

begin. In moderately severe cases all the symptoms described in the second week may continue, but the fever may be less, and may gradually remit towards the end of the week. In the severer cases the fever continues, and the patient passes into a condition commonly called the 'status typhosus.' This is the week in which there is a great danger of hæmorrhage and perforation of the intestine.

In the severe cases the temperature remains high; the pulse becomes quick; the tongue, teeth, and lips become covered with sordes; the diarrhœa and abdominal distension become worse; and the toxæmia produces delirium, at first mainly at night, but later more or less continuously; or the patient may develop a quiet state of delirium, lying quietly in the bed with the eyes open and staring, and quite unconscious of the surroundings. The muscles are markedly irritable, and show fibrillar contractions, tremblings, and twitchings, with or without subsultus tendinum. Emaciation now progresses, and the anæmia is more marked. This is the time for the pharyngo-typhoid ulcer to appear, and tympanitis develops.

The great danger of the third week is perforation, which is said to occur in about 3 per cent. of cases. It may take place in the mildest of cases, and we have seen it in a case in which only two small ulcers could be found at the post-mortem examination, so that no case can be said to be free from this danger.

The symptoms are often sudden, severe, stabbing pain in some part of the abdomen, and often referred to the region of the right iliac fossa, but may also be referred to the left iliac fossa. This sharp pain disappears, but is replaced by a more general pain all over the abdomen, which may be persistent or intermittent. At times this general pain may be absent. Sometimes, but by no means always, there is vomiting. Usually there is more or less collapse, as indicated by the pinched features and the quick, small, thready pulse. The temperature generally falls, but quickly rises again; the abdomen becomes distended; the liver dulness is encroached upon by the tympanites, and the breathing becomes thoracic; while the urine may be suppressed. The prostration increases, and the patient may gradually sink and die. In other cases peritonitis may intervene before death. A small perforation may not present the above typical symptoms, and may be only suspected at first by the fall of temperature and the rise of the pulse-rate.

The Fourth Week.—In typical cases the temperature has fallen to normal by the commencement of this week, and the tongue has begun to clean and all the symptoms abate and gradually disappear, and convalescence begins. Now comes the danger of a relapse, as towards the end of this week the patient begins to get hungry.

In severe cases the symptoms may continue unabated, and complications may occur.

In protracted cases the patient lies in the status typhosus with a high temperature, passing urine and fæces involuntarily, and may

die from cardiac failure, from perforation, or some other complication.

The Fifth and Sixth Weeks.—These should be weeks of convalescence, but at any time a relapse may take place, while complications and sequelæ may occur.

Varieties.—The various types of typhoid fever may be classified in the following sequence: Ambulatory, abortive, mild, typical, severe, and the masked.

The ambulatory is typically presented by a person who feels ill for some days or weeks, but goes about his usual work, feeling exceedingly wretched, until, perhaps, someone, noticing how ill he looks, may take his temperature, and perhaps find it over 104° F.; thereupon the patient seeks advice for the first time, and may be well into the second or even third week of the disease. More rarely a patient may go through the whole attack without medical assistance. Often, however, the illness may begin with the ambulatory variety and end with an exceedingly severe attack.

The mild, the typical, and the severe, have been included in our general or typical account given above, and these are estimated to be about two-thirds of all cases of enteric fever.

The masked type of fever is that in which one special group of symptoms is pronounced, as, for example, the nervous, with the severe headaches, neuralgias, early delirium, and other marked mental symptoms—*e.g.*, mania or the signs of meningitis. Another example is that in which the pulmonary symptoms are specially marked—*e.g.*, the early bronchitis or the pneumonia. Other examples are the severe gastro-intestinal symptoms, imitating poisoning, or the signs of an acute nephritis. Lastly, the type in which hæmorrhages begin early and are persistent is often spoken of as the hæmorrhagic type.

One curious form may be just mentioned, as, for example, the spleno-typhoid, in which the spleen is very markedly enlarged, without signs of malaria or relapsing fever.

Complications and Sequelæ.—The most important complication is malaria, but seven days' fever and certain unclassified fevers of intestinal origin are frequently met with during the first week, and complicate the diagnosis. Bedsores and boils are not infrequent complications, and loss of hair is a frequent sequel. Venous thrombosis in the femoral vein is a frequent complication, and infarction may occur in various organs. Arterial thrombosis is much rarer. Acute ascending myelitis is noted, while joints may be attacked, giving rise to a typhoidal arthritis, and the spine to a typhoidal spondylitis. Periostitis of various bones is not rare. Inflammation of the thyroid gland may also occur. Hæmorrhage and perforation have been noted. Iritis, orbital cellulitis, and purulent choroiditis have been recorded as due to typhoid fever, but purulent otitis media and mastoiditis, described as associated with typhoid fever, are generally due to other causes than the typhoid bacilli. Appendicitis and meningitis may also occur.

Relapse.—One of the most important sequels to an attack of enteric fever is the relapse which may occur at any time during the three or four weeks following the fall of temperature to normal. It usually resembles an ordinary attack of typhoid fever.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis of enteric in typical cases is not difficult, being based principally on the slow onset of the fever, the enlargement of the spleen, the presence of roseola at the beginning of the second week, the apathetic appearance of the patient, the leucopenia. Every medical man, however, practising in the tropics has noticed that enteric fever there, much more frequently than in temperate climates, presents an atypical course. The temperature chart may be very irregular, sometimes of a well-marked remittent or intermittent type (Fig. 456); the enlargement of the spleen may be absent during the whole course of the disease, or in other cases it may be much more enlarged and harder than is usually the case; roseola, invisible, of course, in natives, may be absent in Europeans, while at times these may present a profuse rash. In a few cases some of the peculiarities met with, especially the very irregular type of temperature, are explained by the presence of two infections—typhoid and malaria. Individuals who have had an attack of malaria may harbour in their spleen Laveran's parasites for a long time without any symptoms. As soon, however, as the resistance of the organism is diminished by any cause like a chill, a disorder in dietetics, or the onset of some disease, an attack of malarial fever develops. When these malarial carriers develop typhoid, the malarial infection breaks out again, and probably modifies the course of the temperature. It must be admitted, however, that in the largest number of cases no such explanation can be found. With these clinical difficulties the bacteriological diagnosis of typhoid fever acquires in the tropics even more importance than in temperate climates.

The bacteriological diagnosis of typhoid is based on the following researches:—

1. Agglutination test.
2. Hæmocultures.
3. Search for the typhoid bacillus in stools and urine.
4. Spleen puncture.
5. Ophthalmo-reaction and cuti-reaction.
6. Subcutaneous inoculations of dead cultures and Vincent's splenic diagnosis.
7. Complement fixation, etc.

The first two processes are really the only ones of practical importance, but a few words may be said also on some of the others.

AGGLUTINATION TEST (WIDAL REACTION).—This test is based on the work of Grüber, Durham, Widal and Grünbaum. The microscopical method is mostly used. The simplest way is to place on a slide 19 loopfuls of broth and 1 of blood, and mix the whole gently together. A loopful of this dilution is then mixed with a loopful of a young typhoid broth culture, a hanging-drop made,

and the preparation examined microscopically for agglutination after one hour. The technical details may be found in any textbook on bacteriology. It suffices here to say that the blood should be sufficiently diluted—at least 1 in 40—and the agglutination should be first tried, using the typhoid bacillus, and if this is negative, the paratyphoid A and the paratyphoid B bacilli. If the medical man in attendance cannot perform the test himself, he should send the blood to a bacteriological institute. The sample of blood is obtained by pricking the finger and collecting a few drops of blood in a capillary tube. After closing both ends in the flame, the tube is packed in cotton-wool, and despatched to the bacteriological institute. A macroscopic test (sedimentation test) is also in use, and various forms of apparatus (agglutinometers) can be obtained, which enable the general practitioner to carry out the test himself without using a microscope.

In the tropics, even at the present time, one is apt to be asked what value is to be placed on the result of the agglutination reaction. Some medical practitioners are inclined to be sceptical, while others tend to base their diagnosis solely on the result of the test. We would emphasize the fact that in enteric fever, as in any other bacterial disease, in order to come to a definite diagnosis the results of the clinical examination and those of the laboratory must not be dissociated.

The practitioner should give his attention to the following points :—

Reaction Negative.—(1) The reaction is generally absent during the first week of the disease.

(2) In some very rare cases—in our experience generally of very malignant type—the test may remain negative during the whole course of the malady.

(3) The reaction with the *B. typhosus*—which is generally the only bacillus of the typhoid group used for the test—is negative in two varieties of enteric fever—paratyphoid A and paratyphoid B.

Reaction Positive.—(1) When the reaction is positive, it should be remembered that the blood may contain specific agglutinins many years after an attack of typhoid is over. In the event of fever in such a case the medical man who would solely rely on the Widal test would easily fall into error.

(2) The reaction is not rarely positive in cases of jaundice, but recent researches have demonstrated the fact that these cases are in reality often due to the colecystitis caused by *B. typhosus*.

(3) The reaction may be positive in vaccinated persons.

(4) One must be sure that the test has been carried out with sufficiently diluted blood. A dilution of 1 in 40 is sufficient for ordinary purposes.

HÆMOCULTURES.—Two methods may be used—the so-called ‘dilution method,’ introduced by Castellani in 1898, and the ‘bile-enrichment method,’ introduced by Drigalski and Conradi, and modified by many authors. The latter is at the present time to be

preferred, being simpler. The former is still of use when a mixed infection is suspected, as, for instance, a typhoid-pneumococcus infection. The pneumococcus and many other germs would grow very badly, or not at all, in bile media.

Dilution Method.—The region of the bend of the elbow is cleaned with spirit or ether, then disinfected with perchloride lotion (1 in 1,000), then a little spirit or ether is poured again on the skin. When this has become dry, a few c.c. (2 to 5) of blood, by means of a sterile all-glass syringe, are taken aseptically from a vein of the region, generally the median basilic. The blood is immediately added to several large sterile flasks (at least three), each containing 200 or 300 c.c. of faintly alkaline broth. The flasks are incubated at 37° C. Generally, after twelve to twenty-four hours in positive cases, the broth becomes cloudy, and shows a growth of the germ.

The germ, of course, must be further identified in the usual way by cultivation in milk, various sugar broths, and by the agglutination test. The method gives satisfactory results, the *B. typhosus* having been found by Schotmüller, Auerbach, Widal, Pinot, Vegrès, and others, in a percentage varying from 70 to 100 per cent. The novelty of the method is the dilution of the blood in a very large amount of broth instead of employing the usual small quantities of the medium. This simple innovation makes all the difference in the result. With the old methods the majority of observers failed to detect the germ. These satisfactory results are probably due to the fact that the blood being greatly diluted, the agglutinins are also diluted, and any bactericidal properties of the blood serum greatly weakened.

Gildemeister recommends dilution in sterile water, while Cummins and Cumming consider 0.5 per cent. taurocholate of soda to be a very efficient medium.

Bile-Enrichment Method.—Two to five c.c. of blood are withdrawn from a vein by means of a sterile syringe (see above), or if a vein puncture is objected to, a deep prick is made in a finger, and the blood collected and dropped in Coleman and Buxton's glycerine-ox-bile medium, which consists of ox-bile 90 c.c., glycerine 10 c.c., peptone 2 grammes, distributed in small flasks, each containing 20 c.c. of the medium.

OPHTHALMO-DIAGNOSIS.—Chantemesse has introduced a method of diagnosis similar to the ophthalmalmo-diagnosis of tuberculosis. An extract of typhoid bacilli, specially prepared, is used. A drop is instilled into the conjunctival sac; after two to three hours, if the case is typhoid, the conjunctiva becomes very red, and the inflammation persists for two or three days.

CUTI-REACTION.—Attempts have been made by several authors to evolve a method of cuti reaction for enteric in analogy to what has been done in tuberculosis. The results have not been very satisfactory. Better results have been obtained by the use of live attenuated cultures, as suggested by one of us.

SILVESTRI'S TEST.—A small amount of broth typhoid culture killed by heat is injected subcutaneously. If the case is typhoid, this procedure induces a sharp rise of the temperature for a day or two.

VINCENT'S SPLENO-REACTION.—Vincent has noticed that in many cases after the subcutaneous injection of dead vaccine the spleen becomes temporarily distinctly larger. The reaction is specific—viz., a patient suffering from typhoid shows an enlargement of the spleen if he is injected with typhoid vaccine, but not if injected with paratyphoid A or paratyphoid B vaccines.

SPLEEN PUNCTURE.—The point of maximum spleen dulness is found, the skin is disinfected by painting with tincture of iodine, and the puncture made by using a sterile syringe supplied with a long, strong needle. A few drops of spleen blood and juice are obtained with facility, and should be immediately sown in bile-glycerine medium. The method gives good results, but is not advisable as a routine procedure.

BACTERIOLOGICAL EXAMINATION OF STOOLS AND URINE FOR B. TYPHOSUS AND PARATYPHOSUS A AND B.—A small portion of the stool recently passed and collected into a sterile vessel is smeared on several large McConkie's agar plates. These are incubated for twenty-four to forty-eight hours at 35° to 37° C., and then any suspicious white colonies further investigated. As is well known, on McConkie's medium the colonies of coli-like bacteria are red, while those of the typhoid and dysentery group appear whitish. Instead of McConkie's agar, the Drigalski medium may be used.

Bacteriological Examination of Urine.—The urine should be collected aseptically. In women a catheter should be used. In males this is not necessary. It is sufficient, after purifying the glans and meatus first with a disinfecting lotion, and then boiled water, to make the patient pass his urine. Any germs of the anterior portion of the urethra will probably pass with the first portion of urine, which is thrown away, while the last portion is collected into a sterile vessel, and immediately sown in tubes containing Coleman and Buxton's bile-glycerine medium. These are incubated at 35° to 37° C. for twenty-four to thirty-six hours, and then the further bacteriological investigation is carried out in the usual manner by making plates, etc.

Diazo-Reaction.—A chemical laboratory test often used is Ehrlich's diazo-reaction, which, however, is positive in several other febrile conditions.

Differential Diagnosis.—The term 'enteric fever,' as already stated, is used to cover three infections—typhoid fever, paratyphoid fever A, and paratyphoid fever B, which clinically, at least in the tropics, cannot be distinguished from one another. Enteric fever imitates many diseases, and many diseases resemble enteric fever, and render the differential diagnosis complicated and difficult. Of the many fevers which may possibly be mistaken for some usual or unusual attack of enteric fever, we have chosen the following for differential diagnosis—viz., malaria, the relapsing fevers, dengue, undulant fever, plague, yellow fever, typhus, influenza, trichiniasis, acute miliary tuberculosis, appendicitis, pneumonia, rat-bite disease, psittacosis, enteric-like fevers, ulcerative endocarditis, and pyæmia.

Malaria.—Intermittent fevers are hardly likely to be confused with enteric fever, but remittent fevers are liable to cause difficulty, and may be recognized by the presence of the parasites in the peripheral blood, by the presence of pigment in the leucocytes, by the enlargement of the spleen, and the reaction to quinine. Moreover, the attack of fever is usually sudden, the temperature quickly rising to 105° F., while the pulse is, as a rule, not dicrotic, and if the fever has lasted a few days, there is generally some sign of anæmia. It must, however, be remembered that malaria is a not infrequent complication of the first week of an attack of enteric fever in the tropics, as malarial carriers are very apt to develop this fever when commencing an attack of enteric fever.

Relapsing Fevers.—In these fevers the onset is sudden, and characterized by chills and severe pains in some region of the body, while a careful examination of the blood in a first attack should reveal the *Spiroschaudinniae*.

Dengue.—Dengue begins suddenly with often severe pain in some part of the body, and often congestion of the conjunctiva, and perhaps a sensation of chilliness. It must not be forgotten that typical cases of dengue fever sometimes develop enteric fever.

Undulant Fever.—This disease very closely resembles enteric fever, and during the first week can only be definitely recognized in a locality in which both diseases occur by cultivation of the specific germ from the blood, while later the sweating and the undulating type of fever, together with the articular symptoms, are characteristic.

Plague.—The ordinary severe type of plague may be recognized by the sudden onset, the severity of the symptoms, the mental dulness, and the full development of the typical symptoms and bubo in a few hours.

The milder forms of plague are more difficult to recognize, because there is little fever; but the enlargement of a group of lymphatic glands will arouse suspicion as to the true nature of the disease.

Plague pneumonia may be distinguished from the pneumonic form of enteric fever by an examination of the sputum.

Yellow Fever.—Mistakes are most apt to occur at the commencement of a yellow-fever outbreak before the disease is recognized. The diagnosis may be effected by the rapid onset of the fever, the tenderness in the region of the pylorus, and by the albuminuria which is often present on the first day, and later by the vomit. But in such an important point as the diagnosis between yellow fever and typhoid fever, bacteriological examination of the blood and motions should not be neglected.

Typhus.—This fever may be distinguished by its sudden onset, and by the early appearance of mental symptoms, and especially by the early appearance of delirium and coma, while the macular petechial eruption appearing on the fourth day materially assists the diagnosis. Brill's disease is merely a mild form of typhus, and may be differentiated by the appearance on the fifth or sixth day of a maculo-papular eruption, which does not disappear on pressure, and does not appear in crops.

Influenza.—The diagnosis between influenza and enteric fever can be made by the presence of catarrhal symptoms in the former.

Trichiniasis.—The presence of œdema of the eyelids, together with swelling and painful tension of the muscles, associated with dyspnoea, are in favour of trichiniasis. The blood should be examined for any signs of eosinophilia, while the worms may be discovered in the motions.

Acute Miliary Tuberculosis.—The differential diagnosis here is very difficult, and is complicated by the fact that the two diseases

may occur together. The fever in acute miliary tuberculosis is irregular, and the pulse and respirations are rapid, and there is embarrassment of the breathing, often leading to cyanosis; but the diagnosis is very difficult, and may have to depend entirely upon bacteriological research.

Appendicitis.—In appendicitis the onset is usually abrupt, and the pain in the right iliac fossa is distinctive, but there are cases which closely resemble enteric; but it must be remembered that the typhoid bacillus can cause appendicitis.

Pneumonia.—Enteric fever may, though very rarely, begin with a typical attack of pneumonia, when the specific bacilli may be found in the sputum; otherwise a diagnosis must be made by the examination of the blood, or later, when the more typical symptoms of enteric arise in the second week.

Rat-Bite Disease.—This may be recognized by the history and by the blotchy, measly eruption, and by the fact that the fever ends for the first time after a few days, to reappear again later.

Psittacosis.—This enteric-like fever may be suspected by the history of there having been sick parrots in the house in which the patient has been residing, and this can be confirmed by the isolation of the specific bacilli from the blood.

Enteric-like Fevers.—These can only be diagnosed by the bacteriological examination of the blood.

Ulcerative Endocarditis.—Usually in this complaint there are recurring chills, irregular fever, substernal pains, and endocardial murmurs, while bacteriological examination of the blood may not merely differentiate it from enteric fever, but may indicate the germ which is causing the endocarditis.

Pyæmia.—In the first week this may be difficult, and depend upon the bacteriological examination, but the usually intermittent fever, the prostration, and the sweats, may give rise to suspicion. The marked leucocytosis may also arouse suspicion.

Weil's Disease.—This may be recognized by the early onset of jaundice.

Diagnosis of Mixed Infections.—As already stated, mixed infections, especially typhoid and malaria, typhoid and paratyphoid, typhoid or paratyphoid and coli-like germs, are not rare. In the typho-malarial-infection cases the microscopical examination of the blood will reveal Laveran's parasites. As regards the diagnosis of the second group of mixed infections—viz., typhoid + paratyphoid, or typhoid + coli infections—the diagnosis is based on:—

1. Hæmocultures.
2. Castellani's absorption test.

The technique for hæmocultures has already been given. We may here remind our readers that the finding in the blood of some other organism besides the *B. typhosus* does not mean always that the case is a real mixed infection. The organism found may play only a

saprophytic rôle, especially if the blood does not contain *specific* agglutinins for the germ.

Absorption Test.—The usual agglutination tests are not, as a rule, sufficient to make a diagnosis of mixed infection, because coagglutination does not always mean multiple infection. If the blood of a typhoid patient agglutinates the *B. paratyphosus*, besides the *B. typhosus*, one is not justified in coming to the diagnosis of a mixed infection brought about by the *B. typhosus* and the *B. paratyphosus* B, because it is well known that the blood of a typhoid patient may contain, besides the specific primary of homologous agglutinins for the typhoid bacillus, secondary or non-specific or heterologous agglutinins for *B. paratyphosus* B and many other bacilli, such as many strains of coli. This has been demonstrated by many authors. Grüber and Durham, as long ago as 1896, demonstrated that the typhoid sera may agglutinate Gärtner bacilli. Zupnik and Poser have found out that 89 per cent. of typhoid sera react with paratyphoid B, and 40 per cent. with paratyphoid A.

Boycott, who has made a very complete investigation of the subject, has noted that 59 per cent. of typhoid sera present coagglutinations; 55 per cent. reacted with Gärtner, or Brion and Kayser; 41 per cent. with Schotmüller B; 33 per cent. with Hertryck; and 12 per cent. with Schotmüller A.

The more typhoid agglutinin is present, the more, as a rule, subsidiary agglutination is found.

To distinguish between primary and secondary agglutinins, and to facilitate the diagnosis of closely allied organisms and mixed infections, the absorption test, introduced by Castellani in 1902, is useful. This test has been further studied, and the technique improved, by Boycott, Bainbridge, O'Brien, Cummins and Cumming, and others.

Castellani found out that in rabbits immunized for typhoid only, whose serum agglutinated besides the typhoid bacillus, also certain 'coli' germs, the saturation with an excess of typhoid bacilli would remove not only the primary (specific, homologous) typhoid agglutinin, but also the secondary (heterologous, non-specific) coli agglutinin; while in a serum derived from rabbits immunized both for typhoid and coli bacilli, neither saturation with typhoid alone nor coli alone, but only both together, simultaneously or successively, would remove the whole of the agglutinins present in the serum.

He experimented with various other germs, and applied the method to the differentiation of closely allied bacilli and mixed infections in man. For practical clinical purposes it may be said that if the blood of a typhoid patient presents, besides agglutination for the *B. typhosus*, also agglutination for, say, *B. paratyphosus* B or A, or a coli-like germ, and if this agglutination for the *B. paratyphosus* B or A, or coli-like, persists to a great extent after saturation with *B. typhosus*, the case is very probably one of true mixed

infection: typhoid + paratyphoid B, or paratyphoid A, or colic-like, as the case may be.

Of course, as with every other biological test, the results obtained cannot be accepted as absolute, but are only of relative value.

To remove the typhoid agglutinin from the typhoid serum, this is diluted, and an excess of typhoid bacilli from young agar cultures added and kept in contact for two hours. The serum is then tested for agglutination for the various germs. A similar technique is used for removing the specific paratyphoid B, paratyphoid A, agglutinins, etc.; to the serum is added an excess of paratyphoid B or paratyphoid A, etc., bacilli. For technical details one should consult books on advanced bacteriology.

Prognosis.—The mortality is in the tropics about 20 to 25 per cent. for ordinary hospital practice and rather lower for private practice. Unfavourable symptoms are the early appearance of hæmorrhage, severe nervous symptoms, considerable meteorism, and severe diarrhœa. A bad sign, pointing to a probable relapse, is the temperature falling while the pulse remains rapid. Severe hæmorrhages are of grave import, as is perforation. Sudden death may occur at any stage of illness and during the convalescence, but is, fortunately, very rare.

Treatment.—The treatment of enteric fever may be divided into:—

- A. The treatment during the attack.
- B. The treatment during the convalescence.

A. The Treatment during the Attack.—This may be subdivided into:—

- I. Treatment of a simple uncomplicated case.
- II. Treatment of special symptoms.

I. The treatment of a SIMPLE UNCOMPLICATED CASE may be considered under the following headings: (1) General hygiene; (2) nursing; (3) diet; (4) medicines.

1. *General Hygiene.*—A well-ventilated, airy, and well-lighted room should be chosen, and all superfluous furniture, hangings, belongings, etc., removed, except such few things as may be desirable to render the general appearance cheerful. Special attention should be paid to the bed, because the patient is to remain in bed for about one month after reaching a permanently normal temperature. The bed should not be too broad or too narrow, and should have a wire-woven mattress, which is part of the bed. Over this a soft horsehair mattress should be placed, and a reserve mattress should be kept handy. Over the horsehair mattress two folds of blankets should be placed, and then the sheet, and in the middle third there should be the draw-sheet, with its water-proof sheeting. The bed should be provided with an easily movable mosquito-net. The whole room should be thoroughly cleansed once a day by means of damp cloths dipped in Jeyes' fluid. All motions and urine should be protected against flies, and, after being inspected by the physician, should be disinfected with Jeyes' fluid

or crude carbolic acid, which is allowed time to act before the contents are thrown away. A separate set of feeding appliances should be reserved for the patient, and these should be sterilized after use. All fomites should be soaked in Jeyes' fluid or carbolic lotion for some hours immediately after use and before being washed. A large piece of ice is very useful to keep down the temperature of the room in the tropics.

2. *Nursing*.—The most important feature of the treatment of a case of enteric fever is the nursing. Two nurses, one for the day and one for the night, are absolutely necessary, and their work may be rendered easier, and the patient considerably benefited, if the patient is over the average weight, by the use of a Skeffington lifter, or, failing this, by some simple apparatus based upon the plan of this ingenious lifter. The temperature should be recorded every four hours, and as hæmorrhage is so common in the tropics, both nurses should be warned, and should be instructed to be on the watch for the slightest suspicion of this symptom. Moreover, they should be instructed how to act when it occurs, in order that there may be no delay. The nurse should also be warned to be careful as to the disinfection of her own hands. Nurses who are to attend enteric-fever cases should be selected from among those who have been vaccinated, in order to prevent the possibility of infection; failing this, a course of intestinal disinfection at the end of nursing a case of enteric fever is not without its benefits, as many nurses contract the disease.

The patient should be sponged all over with tepid water twice a day, in the morning and in the evening, and this may be repeated if the temperature rises above 103° F. An excellent plan is to add to the water a little of a lotion of thymol 40 grains, spirits of lavender 2 ounces, rectified spirits of wine 3 ounces, dilute acetic acid 3 ounces, in 16 ounces of rose-water. The patient generally finds this admixture to be most refreshing.

From the first the back should be carefully inspected and dried, and dusted with a powder composed of boric acid, zinc oxide, and starch, or some similar powder. Any irritated region should be bathed with rectified spirits.

The mouth must be carefully attended to, and a mouth-wash of glycothymoline, listerine, or other antiseptic mouth-wash, must be used, while the teeth should be carefully cleaned by the nurse by means of a small stick carrying a little cotton-wool.

The bed-pan or slipper and the urine-bottle must be used throughout the illness and the early part of the convalescence.

When the temperature is high, a *light* ice-bag to the head is useful.

3. *Diet*.—With regard to the diet, the patient should not be unduly starved, but should be given liquid food in small quantities at stated intervals. The best basis for the dietary is good chicken-broth and milk, and special attention should be paid to the fact that the liquid actually given to the patient is chicken-broth, and

not some greyish warm water, with yellow fat floating on the surface. To this broth some Plasmon may be added, if desired. With regard to the milk, it should be boiled and diluted in the proportion of 1 to 2 with either soda-water, Perrier-water, lime-water, or barley-water, and attention should be paid as to whether it is properly digested or not by examining the fæces. If it is not digested, it must be replaced by malted milk, zymonized or peptonized milk, or by whey. Junket and weak tea may also be used. The patient should be given plenty of water to drink, either plain or as albumin-water, and it is very soothing to occasionally rinse out the mouth with soda-water. But no very warm or very cold foods or drinks should be given.

4. *Medical Treatment*.—The less medicine given to a person suffering from uncomplicated and mild enteric fever the better for the patient.

Some mild medicine, *e.g.*, an intestinal antiseptic, or quinine in some form, is often given—*e.g.*, the quinine and chlorine made by pouring about 30 minims of strong hydrochloric acid upon 30 grains of chlorate of potash, and dissolving the chlorine gas so evolved in 12 ounces of water, which constitutes the first bottle, and should be dispensed in a non-actinic bottle with a glass stopper. The second bottle contains quinine bihydrochloride 36 grains, syrup of lemons 1 ounce, also dissolved into 12 ounces of water. One table-spoonful from each bottle is mixed and taken three times a day. A thin slice of orange is sucked after each dose to remove the unpleasant taste. Some authorities prefer giving tincture of iodine 2 to 3 minims in an ounce of water every three to four hours; others prefer β -naphthol 2 to 3 grains mixed with bicarbonate of soda 2 to 3 grains, or eucalyptus oil or cinnamon oil 2 to 3 minims in a suspension.

Constipation must be counteracted by a simple enema or an enema with a little turpentine if there is some tympanites every other day.

After the second week urotropine may be given in 10-grain doses three times daily in order to disinfect the urine and gall-bladder.

II. THE TREATMENT OF SPECIAL SYMPTOMS.—The special symptoms which require treatment may be considered.

- | | |
|-------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Tympanitis. | 7. Delirium. |
| 2. Hæmorrhages. | 8. Cardiac failure. |
| 3. Perforation. | 9. Phlebitis. |
| 4. Diarrhœa. | 10. Bedsores. |
| 5. Cholecystitis. | 11. Abscesses. |
| 6. Hyperpyrexia. | 12. Bone lesions. |

1. *Tympanitis*.—Tympanitis is to be treated by fomentations, turpentine stupes, by the administration of 15 minims of turpentine every three hours, or 3 to 5 minims of cinnamon oil at the same intervals, or by a hypodermic injection of $\frac{1}{50}$ grain of eserine.

2. *Intestinal Hæmorrhage*.—The nurse should be prepared on the onset of this complication to stop all food and drink except a few sips of cold water, to apply an icebag to the abdomen, and to raise the bedclothes on a cradle and to administer either the enema

mentioned above or to give a capsule of 3 minims of turpentine, or both. This is of the utmost importance, as then time is not wasted in getting the treatment under way. When the physician is certain that a perforation has not occurred, a hypodermic injection of morphia is very useful, but this should not be given so as to hide the signs of a perforation. The turpentine capsules may be continued three or more times a day, and calcium lactate in 10-grain doses may also be given.

3. *Perforation*.—The only chance is to perform a laparotomy, and deal with the perforation surgically; but this must be done as soon as possible. After the operation the Fowler-Murphy after-treatment should be carried out, and the patient placed as nearly as possible in upright sitting position as possible with comfort. This position is maintained for four days. At the same time a continuous administration of salt solution *per rectum* is carried out, and so arranged that the patient obtains 2 to 6 litres per diem for a week, and Wainwright's special apparatus for this purpose may be employed.

4. *Diarrhœa*.—This may be checked by tannalbin, 10 to 20 grains, three times a day, or tannigen in the same dose. A very useful adjunct is an enema containing Dover's powder, 5 grains; tannin, 10 grains; mucilage of gum, 1 ounce; and thin starch solution, 1 ounce. Bismuth preparations should, if possible, be avoided, as they are apt to obscure traces of blood which may be valuable hints of a possible hæmorrhage.

5. *Cholecystitis*.—This should be treated by urotropine, and when chronic by antityphoidal vaccination, or a surgical treatment may be advisable.

6. *Hyperpyrexia* must be combated by tepid, cool, or even iced sponging, by immersion in baths of a temperature between 75° to 85° F. Antipyretic drugs should not be given.

7. *Delirium*.—Acute mental symptoms require sedatives or relief of intracranial pressure by lumbar puncture.

8. *Cardiac Failure*.—This may require to be combated by hypodermic injections of digitalin or camphor in ether, or by strychnine and by saline injections.

9. *Phlebitis*.—This usually occurs in one of the legs, which must be wrapped in cotton-wool after applying ichthyol in lanoline (2 per cent.).

10. *Bedsores*.—These are usually quite preventable, but great care is necessary to dry and to disinfect the back and to harden the skin with spirit lotion. When the sores have developed they should be disinfected twice daily with hydrogen peroxide, and a xeroform or zinc oxide powder applied. In some cases a protargol ointment (5 per cent.) or a balsam of Peru ointment (1 to 2 per cent.) are useful.

11. *Abscesses*.—Local inflammations should be treated with ice-bags, and when pus has formed incisions must be made.

12. *Bone Lesions*.—A stiff jacket may be necessary to relieve the

pain of a typhoid spine, and the osteitis or periostitis may require surgical treatment.

B. The Treatment of Convalescence.—This may be subdivided into—(I.) The treatment of a simple case; (II.) the treatment of sequelæ; (III.) the treatment of the acute carrier.

I. THE SIMPLE CASE.—The most important factor is to keep the patient in bed without any change of diet until twenty-one days after the temperature has permanently reached normal, and then to gradually increase and modify the dietary. The patient should not be allowed to sit up or to get out of bed until the temperature has remained normal for about four weeks. In the meanwhile the urotropine treatment should be carried out, and, if possible, a bacteriological examination of the urine and fæces should be made six weeks after the permanent return to a normal temperature.

II. THE TREATMENT OF THE SEQUELÆ.—The phlebitis has been mentioned, and as it is followed by œdema will require a bandage or elastic stocking. Post-typhoidal neuritis requires massage and electricity. Nervous sequelæ are not very uncommon, giving rise to a temporary form of mental weakness, or to types resembling disseminated sclerosis, myelitis, etc.

III. THE TREATMENT OF THE ACUTE CARRIER.—If a patient has become an acute carrier, he should be treated by antityphoid vaccination, as already described, and urotropine should also be administered, for this drug, in addition to its action on the kidney, is excreted during twenty-four hours by the liver cells and by those of the gall-bladder. A dose of 15 grains per diem is said to be sufficient to destroy the *B. typhosus* in a gall-bladder in ten days, but the complete cure of carriers is very difficult, even having recourse to surgical measures.

Prophylaxis.—The essential features in the prophylaxis of enteric fever are a pure water-supply, a good system of drainage, and sewage and dust disposal, a pure food and milk supply, the destruction and prevention of fly-breeding grounds.

Another essential feature is the watering of the streets with anti-septic solutions when there is much dust, and lastly, and by no means least, the search for, discovery, isolation when possible, and treatment of the typhoid carriers.

Antityphoid inoculation is giving good results. Firth's figures worked out by Pearson's methods show that out of 55,368 inoculated persons in the army in India, 61 were attacked by typhoid, and out of 12,074 non-inoculated 45 were attacked; while another series of figures showed 58,481 inoculated and 34 attacked, as against 10,927 non-inoculated and 22 attacks.

The Vaccine used in the army is the Wright-Leishman, made from cultures not more than forty-eight hours old, which are sterilized at 53° C., and to which, when cold, 0.4 per cent. of lysol is added. This vaccine is to be used during the period extending from three weeks to three months after its preparation, and is to be injected under the skin opposite the insertion of the left deltoid.

The first dose is 500 million bacilli, and the second, given ten days after, is 1,000 million bacilli, and sometimes a third dose of 1,000 million is also given. Inoculation takes place at 4 p.m., and the soldier goes to bed at 8 p.m., when the reaction begins, and is on light duty for two days. There is practically no negative phase, and the reaction consists of a localized hyperæmia with œdema and some slight fever, malaise and chilliness. Occasionally the symptoms are more severe, but usually disappear in forty-eight hours. Many other vaccines can be used: the Pfeiffer-Kolle vaccine, the Vincent vaccine, the nucleo-proteid vaccine of Lustig and Gulcotti, etc. An attenuated live vaccine has been introduced by one of us, and a non-attenuated sensitized live vaccine has been prepared by Metchnikoff and Besredka, and extensively used by Alcock.

Mixed Vaccines.—As paratyphoid A and B are common in the tropics, in addition to typhoid fever, one of us has advised the use of mixed vaccines of *B. typhosus*, together with *B. paratyphosus* A and *B. paratyphosus* B, both as a dead and as a living vaccine.

The preparation is simple, and consists in taking several tubes, each containing 10 c.c. of broth, and inoculating some of them with two loopfuls of an agar culture of *B. typhosus* forty-eight hours old, while other tubes are similarly inoculated with *B. paratyphosus* A and others with *B. paratyphosus* B. All these strains must be non-virulent and rich in antigen, as determined by animal experiments. The inoculated tubes are kept for twenty-four hours in the incubator at 35° C., and are then heated in a water-bath at 55° C. (dead vaccine) or at 50° C. (living attenuated vaccine) for one hour.

The contents of the tubes are then mixed in sterile Petri dishes in the proportion of two tubes (20 c.c.) of typhoid vaccine and one tube (10 c.c.) of paratyphoid A and one tube (10 c.c.) of paratyphoid B. The mixed vaccine therefore contains two parts of typhoid and one part of paratyphoid A and one part of paratyphoid B. It is better to standardize by counting the germs before mixing.

Of this mixed vaccine three inoculations are given, the first composed of 300 millions of typhoid, 150 millions of paratyphoid B, and 150 millions of paratyphoid B. At the second and third inoculation at one week's interval a double dose is given. The mixed vaccines are harmless, and apparently induce a certain amount of protective substances for the three infections.

REFERENCES.

- The literature on Enteric Fever is very large, and for the more important references the reader is advised to consult the 'Index Medicus.'
- BAINBRIDGE AND O'BRIEN (1912). *Journal of Hygiene*. Cambridge.
- BIRT (1907). *Journal Royal Army Medical Corps*. London. (Typhoid and Paratyphoid Fevers.)
- CASTELLANI (1899). *Riforma Medica*.
- CASTELLANI (1902-1903). *Zeitschrift für Hygiene*.
- CASTELLANI (1913). *Proceedings of the Society of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene*.

- CASTELLANI (1904-12). Ceylon Medical Reports.
- CHALMERS (1907). Report on the Sanitation of Colombo. Colombo.
- CUMMINS AND CUMMING (1910-12). Journal of Royal Army Medical Corps. London.
- ESCALLIER (1912). Thèse de Paris. Paris. Rechute de Fièvre Typhoïde.
- LEDINGHAM AND ARKWRIGHT (1912). The Carrier Problem in Infectious Diseases. London. (Most excellent articles, with references on Typhoid and the Paratyphoid Fevers).
- LEISHMAN (1910). Journal of Royal Institute of Public Health. London. (Antityphoid Inoculation.)
- LÜDKE (1912). Münchener Medizinische Wochenschrift. September. Munich.
- PERGUIS (1904). Presence du Bacille d'Eberth dans le Sang. Recherches par le Procédé de Castellani Modifié. Paris.
- ROBERTS (1906). Enteric Fever in India and other Tropical and Sub-tropical Regions. Calcutta.
- ROGERS (1910). Fevers in the Tropics. 2nd edition. London. (An Excellent account of Typhoid Fever in India.)
- WOLF (1912). Thèse de Lyon 28. Fièvre Typhoïde à Lyon.
- WRIGHT (1904). A short treatise on Antityphoid Inoculation.

CHAPTER XL

THE UNCLASSIFIED AND COSMOPOLITAN FEVERS IN THE TROPICS

General remarks—Unclassified fevers—Hyperpyrexial fever—Double continued fever—Low intermittent non-malarial fever—High intermittent non-malarial fever—Mossman fever—Nasha fevers—Van der Scheer's fever—Im-Pyeng—Tientsin fever—Enteric-like septicæmias—Cosmopolitan fevers—Typhus—Macular fever of Tunisia—Psittacosis—Rat-bite disease—The exanthemata—Variola—Alastrim—Vesicular fever—Papular fever—Febrile gastro-enteritis—References.

General Remarks.—A number of indefinite fevers remain to be described, for, since malaria became a well-defined disease, it has been discovered that there are a number of fevers which were previously confused with it. In 1898 Crombie made an attempt to arrange these fevers in some order according to their clinical symptoms, defining a simple continued fever, which appears to be the same as Roger's seven days' fever, a low fever, and a non-malarial remittent, which was undoubtedly typhoid. Since then Manson has described a double continued fever, Thompson and Bennet a hyperpyrexial fever, and Castellani defined several distinct types of fever in Ceylon, and Archibald and Statham have done the same in Africa, while Cobb has described a fever in Bengal.

THE UNCLASSIFIED FEVERS OF THE TROPICS

Cobb's Pigmentary Fever.—This latter is peculiar, and reads like a mild attack of insolation. It occurs in the hottest months of the year. The onset is sudden, the temperature rising to 103° to 104° F., with headache, nausea, and vomiting, associated with a peculiar pigmentation of the nose and cheeks. The fever is continued, and lasts eight to ten days. The pigmentation slowly fades some months after the fever is over. It requires further investigation.

Robles' Fever.—A peculiar form of continued fever, which is said not to be typhoid and not to be malaria, is described by Robles, of Quezaltenango, and Gann, of British Honduras.

Robles has separated from the blood of the patients a micrococcus resembling *Micrococcus melitensis*, but liquefying gelatine. The patients, who are usually derived from the younger members

of the poorer classes, are anæmic and debilitated, and live under insanitary conditions. The fever is very irregular, being at first remittent, but becoming intermittent, while the periods of apyrexia increase in length and frequency as the disease progresses. The symptoms are but slight, consisting of headache, malaise, furred tongue, thirst and anæmia, with slight constipation. The spleen is either not enlarged or but slightly so, while the liver is a little tender on firm pressure. The duration of the disease is from two to three weeks to several months. Convalescence is long drawn out, there being much debility and disinclination for mental or physical exertion. The prognosis is good, as recovery is the rule. The best treatment is change to a cooler climate, good sanitation, a light, nourishing diet, and a tonic of iron and strychnine.

Forrest's Fever.—Forrest has described a fever in Rangoon which he called 'Rangoon local fever,' which lasts three to fifteen days, and shows a temperature curve resembling a parabola, ascending and descending gradually. The maximum temperature is 104° F., and the blood shows a polymorphonuclear leucocytosis.

Local Fevers.—The fevers described in China associated with urticaria and eosinophilia are now believed by Lambert to be caused by *Schistosoma japonicum*, and will be mentioned later. A peculiar *urticarial fever* has been described by Nägele from German South-West Africa, characterized by severe nervous symptoms, vertigo, loss of muscular power, severe neuralgic pains, and an urticarial eruption, followed by exfoliation of the skin. The blood is said to show nothing abnormal. Bassett-Smith has suggested that it may be due to some food-toxin. In addition, a number of short fevers have been recorded which appear to closely resemble dengue fever. These are 'the fever of the Antilles,' the 'fever of the Red Sea,' the fever of Massowah, and the pseudo-dengue fever of Cochin-China. Some long-continued fevers with local names appear to us to be allied to the unclassified septicæmias, which we propose to mention. With regard to the black-vomit fever of children in the region called 'Grande terre in Guadeloupe,' we should be inclined to consider it as allied to yellow fever, pending further investigations. Another peculiar local fever is that called 'Ichang' in China. Hume has attempted to classify these fevers into a typhoid colon group, a dengue group, and an influenza group; but they are not easily classified at present.

We shall now describe some of these indefinite and cosmopolitan fevers.

FEVERS OF UNKNOWN CAUSATION.

HYPERPYREXIAL FEVER.

Remarks.—There is a peculiar form of fever which we met with in 1897 in two cases on the Gold Coast, and which was first described by Thompstone and Bennett in Southern Nigeria.

Climatology.—It is known to occur on the West Coast of Africa and in Ceylon.

Ætiology.—The causation is entirely unknown, but peculiar bodies (Fig. 457) have been seen in smears from the spleen. We are inclined to consider them contaminations.

Pathology.—Nothing is known as to the pathology of the disease.

Morbid Anatomy.—There is nothing characteristic to be seen in an autopsy.

Symptomatology.—The illness begins with a mild fever which looks like a typical malarial attack, the temperature falling after the ordinary sweating stage, though no malarial parasites appear in the blood. The next day the temperature is almost normal, and no anxiety is felt about the patient. But on the third day the temperature begins to rise, and reaches 104° to 107° F., at which it will remain if only drugs are used; but if cool bathing is resorted to, the temperature will fall temporarily, rising in due course until cool bathing is again performed. This struggle continues, despite any medical treatment that may be employed, until, at the end of six to seven days, the cool bathing ceases to have its effect, and the temperature goes on until 110° F. is reached about the eighth day, and the patient, after having been delirious, becomes comatose and dies; or, in about 50 per cent.

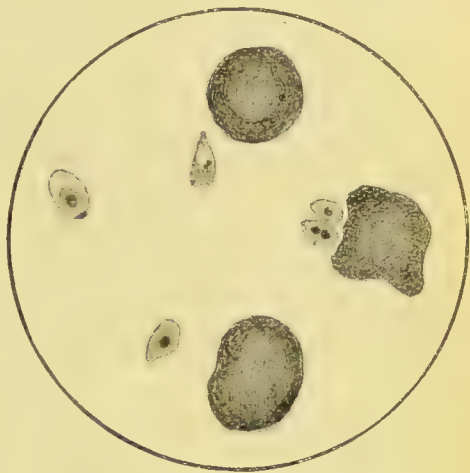


FIG. 457.—BODIES FOUND IN A CASE OF HYPERPYREXIAL FEVER.

of Thompstone and Bennett's cases, the temperature remains at about 105° F. for three weeks, and then gradually falls to normal about the sixth week.

The spleen, liver, abdominal organs, urine, and blood, appear quite normal, except that coagulation is said to be quick. The conjunctivæ are injected, and the mind is clear until the terminal delirium sets in. The ætiology is quite unknown.

Treatment.—Cool sponging, cool baths, and cool packs, are the only useful treatment.

DOUBLE CONTINUED FEVER.

This disease, which closely resembles enteric fever, was first met with by Manson, and subsequently by Thorpe and Rousseau in China.

The disease begins insidiously, the temperature rising to 104° F., and remitting about 3° F. per diem, with slow pulse, a moist red tongue, and constipation. The spleen is slightly enlarged, and all the other organs are normal. After ten to fifteen days the temperature falls gradually by lysis to normal, at which it remains for two to seven days, when a second paroxysm

of fever sets in of the same type as the first, only lasting some ten days, after which the patient becomes convalescent. There is, however, a considerable amount of anæmia, and it is a long time before the strength is regained. There are no complications or sequelæ.

Treatment must be symptomatic ; quinine is useless.

LOW INTERMITTENT NON-MALARIAL FEVER.

Remarks.—This fever has been described by Crombie in India. Cases of similar or identical nature have been later observed by one of us in Ceylon, by Murray in Siam, and by various observers in China.

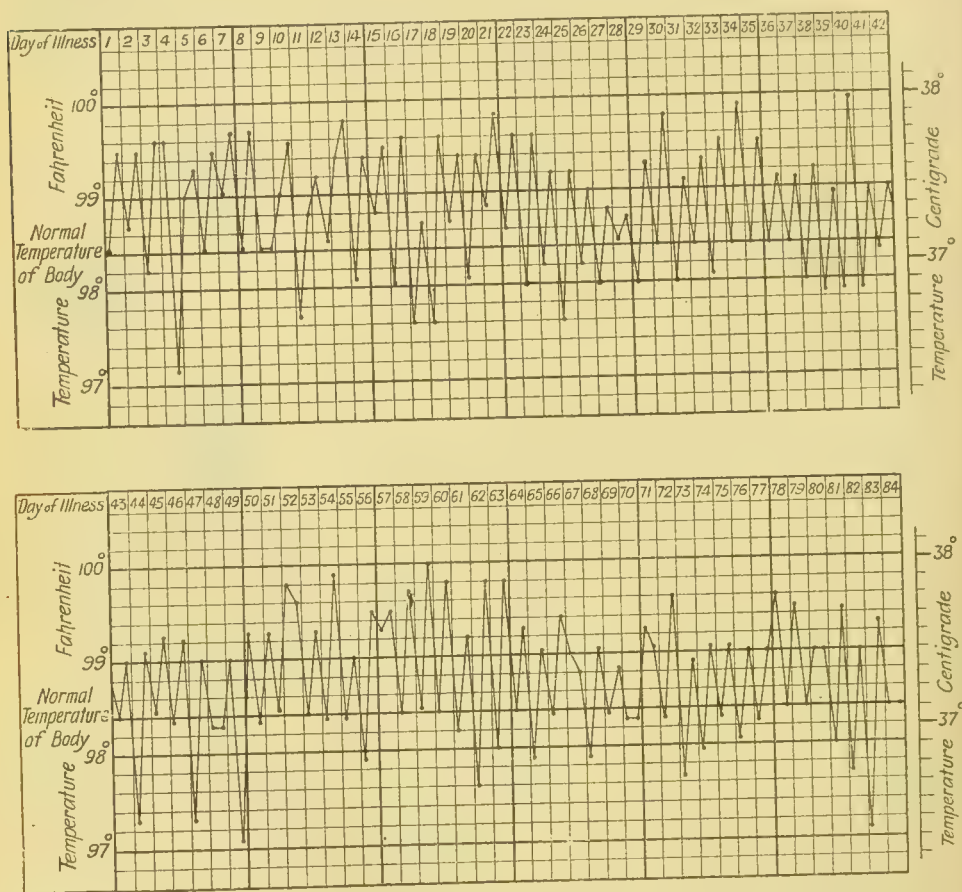


FIG. 458.—TEMPERATURE CHART OF A CASE OF LOW INTERMITTENT NON-MALARIAL FEVER.

Symptomatology.—The onset of the disease is insidious, or it may follow what to all purposes appears to be a mild attack of influenza, the patient feeling out of sorts, feverish, and complaining of muscular rheumatoid pains all over the body. The type of the fever is intermittent. Every day, generally between the hours of ten and twelve, the patient feels somewhat chilly, but there is no shivering fit. The

temperature rises, the maximum varying between 99° and 102° F. The temperature never rises, in our experience, above 102° F. In the evening, between eight and midnight, the temperature slowly decreases and becomes normal. Occasionally the patient may perspire when the temperature falls, but this is not a constant symptom. The physical examination of the patient will reveal nothing abnormal, apart from, occasionally, signs of slight anæmia. The liver and spleen are not enlarged. In a few cases some superficial lymphatic glands may be slightly enlarged. In some cases the red blood cells are decreased. An interesting feature in most cases is the distinct increase in the number of eosinophile leucocytes, even when no evidence of intestinal worms can be found in the motions. The course of the fever is very long. We have seen cases lasting six months.

Diagnosis.—This fever may be diagnosed from *Malaria* by the absence of Laveran's parasites, and by the fact that the spleen is not enlarged; from *Malta fever*, a type of which it closely resembles clinically, by the absence of the *Micrococcus melitensis* in the blood, and the constant negative result of Wright's reaction; from trypanosomiasis by the absence of trypanosomes.

Prognosis.—This is good—*quoad vitam*—but the patient feels weak, tired, nervous, and unfit to do his work properly for months.

Treatment.—A change of climate is always beneficial, and often quickly stops the fever. A long course of injections of quinine cacodylate is useful in many cases. The ordinary preparations of quinine by the mouth or by injection do not influence the fever in the least.

HIGH INTERMITTENT NON-MALARIAL FEVER.

Remarks.—This has often been observed by us in children in Ceylon.

Symptomatology.—Apart, perhaps, from slight anæmia, the child does not show any symptoms except the fever. He takes his food well, runs about and plays, and seems apparently in his usual health. The fever begins in the late morning, and lasts several hours every day, reaching 103° to 104° F. and more. There is no shivering fit at the onset, nor perspiration when the temperature falls to normal. The blood does not show anything abnormal, except, occasionally, a slight degree of anæmia. The course of the fever is very long, lasting at times several months.

Treatment.—Quinine does not influence it in the least. As a rule, a change of climate stops the fever almost immediately.

MOSSMAN FEVER.

In 1910 Smithson described a fever, which he called Mossman fever, and which was characterized by enlargement of the posterior or subscapular group of axillary glands, which were tender, were mild, accompanied by fever which almost exclusively affects sugar-cane cutters. The blood is normal and the death-rate is low, but it may end fatally, apparently from a form of

septicaemia. It is thought that it may be due to some insect on the cane. The dermatitis often found in cane cutters is described on p. 1547.

NASHA FEVER.

Synonyms.—Nakra fever, Nakhra Jawhur.

Remarks.—Under the above terms Fernandez, in 1894, described a fever characterized by swelling of the nasal mucosa as occurring in Bengal.

Climatology.—It is found mostly in the months of April to August, and is rare in the cold weather.

Ætiology.—The causation is unknown.

Symptomatology.—The illness is ushered in by a chill associated with high fever and hyperæmia, with swelling of the mucosa of the nose, and pains in the head, neck, shoulders, and small of the back. The face is flushed, the pupils contracted, and there is an eruption of small papules, often accompanied by bronchial symptoms.

The fever, which is usually remittent in character, disappears in three to five days, when the nasal swelling also subsides.

Relapses may occur in one to four weeks, and sometimes a severe relapse may end in delirium, coma, and death.

Treatment.—A saline purgative and a mild diaphoretic are first administered, and then the nose is sprayed with iced water two to three times a day, or the congestion is relieved by pricking the mucous membrane. Tannin and 10 per cent. cocaine solution may also be applied to the nasal mucosa.

VAN DER SCHEER'S FEVER.

Synonym.—Five days' fever.

Definition.—A fever usually lasting for five days, and associated with an eruption of red macules and papules about the size of a pin's head, occurring on the trunk. It may be a form of dengue.

Remarks.—This fever, first described by van der Scheer, has also been investigated by Neeb, but its nature is at present not understood.

Symptomatology.—The illness begins suddenly with severe headache and backache, the temperature rising to 104° to 105° F. in the evening, but remitting considerably in the morning. Sometimes there is bilious vomiting and delirium. On the third day the eruption appears as macules or papules about the size of a pin's head on the chest, which spread to the back and abdomen. After five days' remittent fever the crisis comes on the sixth or seventh day, when the temperature rapidly falls below normal. This fall is accompanied by moderate sweating. In more severe cases the crisis is absent, and cardiac failure setting in, the patient dies cyanosed.

Some days after the crisis there is a furfuraceous desquamation associated with pruritus on the palms of the hands and soles of the feet, and at the same time there is a considerable loss of hair and a bitter taste in the mouth.

Diagnosis.—It can be distinguished from malaria, relapsing fever, etc., by the absence of parasites in the blood, and from measles by the absence of the catarrhal symptoms, from scarlet fever by the absence of a sore throat, and from dengue fever by the temperature tracing.

Treatment.—The treatment is purely symptomatic, but it is recommended that injections of caffeine be administered on the sixth day to prevent a possible attack of cardiac failure.

IM-PYENG.

According to Landis and Matignon, there exists in Corea a fever called by the inhabitants Im-Pyeng. It is most frequently met with in the country

districts from February or March to July, when it is most common among the poor, but affects all classes of society. It would appear to us to be allied to dengue fever.

Ætiology.—The causation is unknown, but it is regarded as contagious by the inhabitants of Corea. Matignon considered that it resembled relapsing fever, but was unable to find a *Spiroschaudinnia* in the blood.

Symptomatology.—The disease begins with headache, backache, or vague pains, which may become violent, while the temperature may rise to over 104° F. in the evening, but remits considerably in the morning, rising again in the evening to about 102° F., and again remitting considerably in the morning, and this fever may be accompanied with delirium. The fever continues for some seven to ten days, but usually after the sixth or seventh day the fever declines, and reaches normal in twenty-four to thirty-six hours, this decline being associated with a profuse perspiration.

Sequelæ.—The patient is left with both general and cardiac weakness after an attack.

Treatment.—Quinine sulphate in association with antipyrin is the treatment usually adopted.

TIENTSIN FEVER.

A somewhat similar fever has been reported by A. C. Fox from Tientsin, but in his cases the fever lasted from ten to fourteen days. He thinks it may have been a paratyphoid infection.

ENTERIC-LIKE AND UNCLASSIFIED SEPTICÆMIAS.

General Remarks.—Archibald, Balfour, Castellani, and others have from time to time differentiated cases of fever due to some but slightly known bacillus which they have obtained from the blood and motions by means of cultivation. These septicæmias are probably to be found in all tropical countries.

Definition.—These unclassified septicæmias may be defined as long fevers more or less resembling enteric fever, but differing therefrom and from each other in the nature of the causal organisms, of which we distinguish at the present time two principal types—*Archibald's bacillus* and the *Bacillus asiaticus* Castellani 1905 (for the cultural characters see table on pp. 1380 and 1381).

ARCHIBALD'S FEVER.

This is an unclassified septicæmia found in the Anglo-Egyptian Sudan, and caused by a bacillus belonging to the *B. cloacæ* group, which apparently has entered through the alimentary canal.

Symptomatology.—As a rule the symptoms presented by the patient are not unlike those of the second week of enteric fever. There is high fever, ranging from 101° to 103° F., associated with drowsiness and perhaps delirium, but this is often absent, with furred dry tongue, but without diarrhœa or tympanites, and with or without some very slight enlargement of the spleen. Sometimes the temperature falls to normal after a week, but this intermission is followed by a prolonged fever of a remittent type,

or instead, the fever may be more or less remittent from the commencement.

Complications.—Complications in the form of pneumonia, abscesses, femoral thrombosis, etc., may occur.

BACILLUS ASIATICUS FEVER.

This fever was differentiated by Castellani in Ceylon by obtaining the specific bacillus from the blood and motions. There are two varieties of the bacillus, which may be called *B. asiaticus* Nos. 1 and 2 (for the specific characters see table on pp. 1380 and 1381). Culturally these bacilli are identical, but the biological reactions are slightly different. The possibility of a double infection of one of these bacilli or Archibald's bacillus with those of enteric fever must not be forgotten. The diagnosis will then depend upon the absorption test.

Symptomatology.—*B. asiaticus* No. 1 is associated with a long, protracted, rather low fever of medium severity, which shows usually a remittent or an intermittent character (*vide* Fig. 459). *B. asiaticus* No. 2 produced a fever resembling certain types of protracted

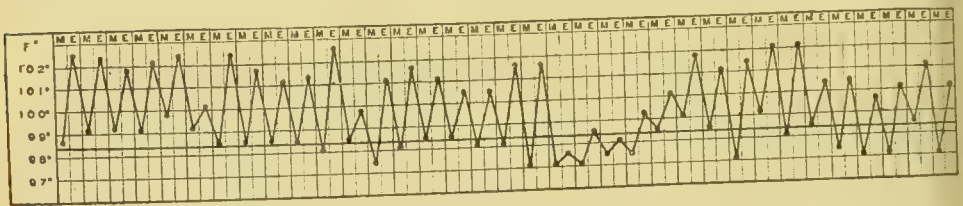


FIG. 459.—PORTION OF TEMPERATURE CHART OF A CASE OF BACILLUS ASIATICUS NO. 2 FEVER.

enteric fever, but without any enlargement of the spleen, without roseolæ, but associated with rather severe abdominal pains of long duration, though as a rule there is no diarrhoea and the stools never contain blood or mucus.

One case due to *B. asiaticus* No. 1 was associated with a severe agchylostome infection, while one due to *B. asiaticus* No. 2 was associated with a heavy ascaris infection. The fever did not stop when the patients got rid of the parasites.

Diagnosis.—The only possible method of diagnosis is the early bacteriological examination of 5 to 10 c.c. of the blood taken aseptically from the median basilic vein, and examined as already described for enteric fever, while an attempt may also be made to isolate the bacillus from the fæces. The specific bacillus will be agglutinated by the patient's serum in high degrees of dilution.

Treatment.—The cases must be treated on the lines already laid down for enteric fever (p. 1078), but the most suitable special treatment is the injection of autogenous vaccines prepared like the typhoid vaccines, provided the acute symptoms are over and the fever is of very low type.

WHITMORE'S FEVER.

Captain A. Whitmore has described several cases of a glanders-like disease in Rangoon, characterized by intermittent fever, broncho-pneumonic symptoms, and often multiple abscesses in various parts of the body. The bacillus isolated seems to be very similar to *B. mallei*.

COSMOPOLITAN FEVERS IN THE TROPICS.

Pyrexias due to *B. coli* and allied germs are very common, the starting-point being often a lesion in the genito-urinal tract; it is common in women after childbirth.

In addition to the fevers peculiar to, or commonly found in, the Tropics, many cosmopolitan fevers occur.

Influenza might really be considered to be a tropical disease which has invaded and become endemic in the Temperate Zone; for most epidemics have come from Asia, where it is endemic.

Some cases of enteric-like fever have been met with due to *B. ceylonensis* Castellani. *Cerebro-spinal meningitis* is met with apparently throughout the Tropics, for it is known on the West Coast of Africa and its hinterland, and in Asia. Its high polynuclear leucocytosis is of importance in its recognition.

Mumps and *whooping-cough* are met with. *Diphtheria* is more frequent than generally stated, but is apt to be overlooked, owing to the old belief that it does not occur in the Tropics. It is more frequently observed in hill-stations and in the cooler times of the year. *Pfeiffer's glandular fever* is known, but is rare.

Rheumatism is distinctly uncommon. *Septic infections* and intoxications as primary diseases, due to pyogenic organisms, are not uncommon. *Erysipelas* is often diagnosed, but the symptoms are usually not those of the ordinary disease of Europe, being probably due to filariasis or animal stings.

Certain cosmopolitan diseases—viz., *typhus*, *psittacosis* and *rat-bite disease*—may be mentioned in greater detail, as may the *exanthemata*.

TYPHUS.

Synonyms.—Spotted fever, Prison fever, Fleckfieber, Typhus Exanthématique, Tifo Esantematico, El Tarbardillo, Vlekkoots, Homma Typhuisa, Synochus Putrida.

Definition.—Typhus is an acute specific fever of unknown cause, said to be very infectious, but in what manner is not known, and characterized in most cases by a sudden onset, a macular petechial eruption, and severe toxæmia, which, after a definite course, generally ends by crisis.

History.—The early history of typhus is wrapped in obscurity by reason of its confusion with plague; for though Hippocrates mentions the word 'typhus,' he applied it to stuporous and delirious conditions, and does not appear to have been acquainted with the fever in question. This confusion with plague continued until Fracastorius, in the sixteenth century, gave such an account as enabled them to be separated from one another, though the nomenclature at first indicated that they were related, and it was not until

1760 that the term 'typhus' was first applied to the disease by Boissier de Sauvages.

During the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries typhus was well known in Europe, but included typhoid and relapsing fevers, from the former of which it was distinguished by a long series of researches, beginning with those of Strother, Gilchrist, and Huxham in the early eighteenth century, and ending with Still's classical work in 1837, while the history of the differentiation from the latter has already been described in the chapter on the Relapsing Fevers.

For a long time the disease passed unrecognized in the tropics, and, indeed, in the *Lancet* of 1871 it is even debated as to whether it could exist in those regions; but though it is impossible to deny that Lyell, in his observations in 1852, mistook relapsing fever for it, and that Fairweather in 1869 was confusing it with typhoid, it would appear as though Lyons, in 1869, clearly recognized the disease as occurring in North-West India, where it is now well known to be endemic, and it has since been reported from many parts of the tropics.

Brill's disease appears to be a mild form of typhus fever, attenuated, perhaps, by environment and improved sanitation. He has failed to produce the disease in inoculated monkeys. An interesting historical paper by Crawford has shown that the only possible explanation of some of the old outbreaks is by means of some personal parasite, such as a louse.

Climatology.—Typhus is essentially a disease of temperate and cold climates, and therefore is well known to occur in Europe and America.

In the tropics it principally appears in places situated at high altitudes, or where there are cool seasons, in which case it disappears in a most remarkable manner as soon as the warm season sets in.

In Africa it is said by Hirsch to be endemic in Nubia, and has been carefully studied in Egypt by Sandwith, where he says that it has been definitely recognized since 1836, and where a few cases are reported every year in the spring months. It is also reported from Tripoli, Tunis, Algeria (rarely), and Morocco. In Asia it appears to occur only in epidemic form in Asia Minor and Syria, but is believed to be endemic in Persia, and possibly also in Afghanistan, because it is said to be regularly imported into India by caravans from this country. In India an endemic area exists on the west of the Indus, stretching from Beloochistan in the south to Yusufzai, Hazara, and Kashmir in the north, and then passing eastwards along the ranges of the Himalayas, where it is especially prevalent at Kulu, and also passing southwards into the district of Rawal Pindi. In Ceylon we have met with a few cases in European sailors, who have, however, acquired the disease elsewhere. It occurs in Indo-China; in Northern China, where it is endemic, becoming epidemic every spring; and in Japan, where it occurs yearly in the province of Hiogo. It does not occur in Australasia or Oceania. In tropical America it is endemic in Mexico, rare in Central America, absent in the West Indies, the Guianas, Colombia, and Venezuela, and is rare in Brazil, though it is common in Peru and Northern Chili.

Ætiology.—The causation of typhus remains undiscovered, though many researches have been made, first by Hallier, who in 1868 described a fungus as the causal agent; and then by Klebs, who found bacilli in 1881; and by Mott and Blore, who in the same year described minute screw-like, motile organisms as present in the blood during life, and micrococcal-like bodies found in cells between the muscular fibres of the heart after death.

In 1891 Hlava described ovoid bodies which he believed to be part of a streptobacillus; in 1892 Thoinot and Calmette saw flagellate bodies; and in 1892 Lewaschew found a motile organism, sometimes like a thread, sometimes oval and flagellate; in 1893 Dubieff and Brühl described a diplococcus; in 1899 Balfour and Porter found another diplococcus. In 1903 Gottschlich described a *Babesia* existing in non-motile endocorpuscular and flagellate free forms in cases in Egypt, but these parasites may have only been cellular degenerations; and, lastly, Horiachi described a bacillus which he isolated from the fæces and urine of Japanese troops which in the war in Manchuria suffered from a disease which was probably typhus. Krompecher, Goldzieher,

and Augyán have described intracorpuseular bodies somewhat resembling a *Babesia*. Yersin and Vassal, in 1908, succeeded in communicating the disease directly from one man to another by inoculation, but failed to reproduce it in rats, guinea-pigs, and rabbits. Their experiments tend to prove that the infective agent exists in the blood from the second to the fifth day of the disease. Nicolle, Anderson, and Goldberger have experimentally infected monkeys by inoculation of blood from cases of typhus fever. Nicolle has also shown that the virus is filterable.

With regard to the spread of the disease, there is a great conflict of opinion as to whether it is infectious; most certainly it does not cross air-spaces, though it seems to be associated with bedding, fomites, furniture, and dirt, which causes the suspicion that the agent may be an animal parasite. Moreover, the fact that it only appears in the cool season of the tropics, and its rapid disappearance in the warm season, is also in favour of its transmission by some animal. Therefore suspicion is aroused that it may be spread by a blood-sucking parasite, perhaps an insect.

Patton has recently shown that *Clinocoris lectularius* Linnaeus 1758 is found along the north-west frontier of India; and Husband and MacWalters draw attention to the fact that the distribution of this bug curiously coincides with the distribution of typhus in India.

These latter observers point out that in an epidemic occurring in a gaol, the hospital was found infected with bugs, which occurred nowhere else. On the destruction of these pests the epidemic ceased. Moreover, they draw attention to the fact that predisposing causes of typhus, such as dirt, overcrowding, and the way in which the infection hangs about bedding, buildings, and furniture, are easily explicable on the bug hypothesis. Sambon, in his article on Rocky Mountain fever in Allbutt and Rolleston's 'System,' advances arguments in favour of the identity of Rocky Mountain and typhus fevers; but Husband and MacWalters' researches are not in favour of a tick being the carrier of the disease. It may be that typhus and Rocky Mountain fevers are caused by allied protozoan parasites spread by different blood-suckers. In Glasgow the flea was suspected to be the cause of the dissemination of the disease. Nicolle suspects *Pediculus vestimentorum*, and this has been confirmed on epidemiological grounds.

Pathology.—The cause being entirely unknown, the pathology can be but briefly mentioned. The infective agent exists in the peripheral blood from the second to the fifth day, and probably is also found in the enlarged and congested spleen. After the fifth day it is not known what definitely happens to it, but the eruption appearing about that date leads to the belief that it enters the skin.

Morbid Anatomy.—The spleen is enlarged and engorged if the post-mortem takes place up to the middle of the second week, but not later. There is œdema of the lungs and hypostatic pneumonia, cloudy swelling and fatty degeneration of the heart, cloudy swelling of the liver and kidneys, and hyperæmia of all the organs.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period of the naturally acquired infection is not well known at present, varying from four to eighteen days, but more probably being about eight to twelve days.

Prodromal symptoms are often entirely absent, or consist of vague feelings of fatigue, giddiness, and headache.

The onset is sudden, being characterized by frontal headache, pains in various parts of the body, of which pain in the chest, giving rise to the suspicion of pneumonia, is important; marked rise of temperature from 101° to 104° F.; quick pulse (100 to 120); flushed face and suffused eyes; quickened respirations, and a sensation of great weakness. During the next two or three days the temperature continues to rise at night, with remissions in the morning, to a maximum of about 104° to 105° F. on the second to fourth days, during which time the tongue becomes dry, swollen, and cracked, with a thick brown deposit on the dorsum, while the tip and sides are red; nausea may be experienced, but vomiting is rare, and the bowels are either constipated or normal.

The nervous system is early affected, the patient being apathetic, drowsy, with a dull expression. The changes in the blood are of the utmost importance, and should be carefully studied. There is always an increase in the red cells, with a corresponding increase in the hæmoglobin, and a leucocytosis, which is usually well marked, being on an average about 24,000 per cubic millimetre, but varying between the extremes of 8,000 and 54,000. The differential leucocyte count is also of importance, for in cases uncomplicated with malaria or other protozoal infections the polymorphonuclear increase is a characteristic feature, and may exceed 90 per cent.; while the mononuclears and lymphocytes may be reduced, especially if the case is to end fatally, while eosinophiles are often entirely absent—a most characteristic feature in a case in the tropics, where worm-infection is common. The mononuclear decrease is, however, not evident in cases about to recover, nor is it present in natives in the tropics, who, of course, are liable to previous protozoal infections, and this may lower the relative polynuclear count in these regions to 60 per cent. or less.

Though there is an increase in the red and white corpuscles, the specific gravity is said to be lower than normal, which is rather extraordinary, and must indicate, if true, considerable alterations in the plasma. As the disease progresses, the rapidity of the pulse increases, and may reach 140 per minute, and is usually small and of low tension. The blood pressure, according to Rizzuti and Scordo, shows nothing characteristic. The respirations are always quickened, and there are generally signs of pharyngitis, bronchitis, or broncho-pneumonia, while delirium is not uncommon, especially at night.

About the fourth to the fifth day the typical rash appears, which, though easy to see in white or light-coloured races, is very difficult to discern in dark-coloured peoples. There are generally three eruptions: first, a transient erythema; secondly, a macular, measly eruption, which becomes more or less hæmorrhagic; and thirdly, the petechial eruption; but it may safely be said that the first will only be rarely seen in native races, and the second may also not be visible if poorly marked, while the third is known to be absent in mild cases, and therefore in the tropics there may be cases in native races in which no eruption is recorded. Thus, Husband and MacWalters failed to find it in 20 per cent. of their observations, and in but very few of the 80 per cent. in which some rash was recorded was it distinct, and therefore could easily have been overlooked. It appears first on the abdomen or chest, and quickly spreads to the shoulders, back, and extremities, and in well-marked cases will cover the whole body, except the face, palms, and soles. The typical rash is composed of maculæ, but slightly raised, which disappear on pressure, and usually become hæmorrhagic after a couple of days. A petechial eruption may also appear somewhat later, but is often wanting, and when widespread is an indication of a bad prognosis. A miliary eruption may appear later in the attack, and be followed by a desquamation. After the appearance of the eruption the leucocytosis becomes more marked, as do the nervous symptoms, the patient suffering from severe delirium, which may become quite violent; or he may show a stuporous condition, which becomes a semi-coma, and in fatal cases deepens into a profound comatose condition.

About the eighth or ninth day a pseudo-crisis may be noticed, and later the eruption will be seen to fade and disappear, when the spleen also becomes normal, and the leucocytosis becoming more marked, the skin begins to act vigorously, and the temperature falls by crisis on the tenth to the twelfth day, or by lysis during two days, to normal, and convalescence begins. Usually recovery is quick, relapses being extremely rare. Death may take place during the first week or about the tenth day from toxæmia.

Varieties.—All cases of typhus do not follow the typical course, for mild, ambulatory, and abortive cases are recorded, as are also malignant attacks causing death on the second or third day.

Complications.—The most usual complications of typhus fevers are bronchitis and broncho-pneumonia, but relapsing fever, typhoid, and acute miliary tuberculosis may occur.

Diagnosis.—The important diagnostic signs of typhus fever are the leucocytosis, associated with the rash, and the extreme nervous prostration.

Relapsing fever may be differentiated by finding the spirochaetes in the blood and by the relapse; smallpox, by the precursory rashes, the fall of temperature when the true rash appears, and the presence of the eruption on the face; measles, by Koplik's spots, the coryza, and bronchitis; cerebro-spinal meningitis, by the retraction of the head and Kernig's sign; pneumonia, by the rusty sputum and the physical signs; malaria, by the presence of the typical parasites in the blood; influenza, by the catarrhal symptoms and the absence of the leucocytosis; and plague, by the discovery of the bacilli in the buboes or sputum.

Prognosis.—The case-mortality is variously stated as being from 10 to 50 per cent. The signs indicative of serious trouble and grave prognosis are the absence of eosinophiles in the blood, decrease in the number of the mononuclears, slow pulse, severe petechial eruption or nervous symptoms, alcoholism, pulmonary complaints, meteorism, gangrene, and cyanosis of the face.

The signs indicative of a hopeful prognosis are an increase in the eosinophiles and mononuclears, and the absence of the petechial eruption and slight nerve symptoms.

Treatment.—The patient should be placed in an airy, well-lighted room, sparsely furnished, and placed upon a diet of milk, broths, jellies, etc., while plenty of water is allowed to be drunk. Careful attention and nursing are required, especially when delirious. The temperature should be controlled by cool sponging, and the nervous symptoms by ice to the head, hyoscin, bromides, or morphine, while the heart is supported by hypodermic injections of strychnine, digitalin, etc. Nicolle finds that the serum of convalescents cases for ten to twelve days after the temperature has fallen to normal has prophylactic and curative properties when given in doses of 20 c.c.; repeated if necessary. He suggests that in grave cases it should be given intravenously. Salvarsan and neosalvarsan have been tried without any great success.

Prophylaxis.—The disease is apparently highly contagious, but this probably is due not to direct, but indirect action, through blood-sucking insects; hence fomites are dangerous, as are bedding, furniture, etc. All rooms should, therefore, be carefully cleaned, and special attention be taken to kill all vermin, but especially bugs and lice, as described in Chapter XXIII.

THE MACULAR FEVER OF TUNISIA.

Synonym.—La fièvre boutonneuse de Tunisie.

Definition.—An acute febrile disorder of unknown causation, characterized by a peculiar macular eruption on the abdomen, palms of the hands, and soles of the feet, which often persists for several days after the temperature has fallen to normal.

Remarks.—This fever was described by Conor, Bruch and Hayat in 1910 in Tunisia.

Ætiology.—The causation is unknown, and inoculations into monkeys were negative.

Symptomatology.—The onset is sudden and accompanied by rigors, fever, pains in the joints, injection of the conjunctiva, nausea, vomiting, constipation, and insomnia. The rash appears on the second to fourth day in the form of rose-red or dark red spots about the size of a lentil, which disappear on pressure. The blood shows a lymphocytosis of about 35 per cent. These spots appear upon the abdomen and the palms of the hands and feet. After lasting about two weeks the temperature falls to normal, and after a few days the rash dies away without any desquamation.¹

Diagnosis.—The characteristic feature of this fever is the distribution of the eruption and the fact that it frequently persists for several days after a normal

temperature has been reached. It most nearly resembles Brill's disease—that is to say, a mild form of typhus fever—which, indeed, it may well be.

Prognosis.—This is good.

Treatment.—The treatment is purely symptomatic.

PSITTACOSIS.

Definition.—A very fatal specific epizootic among parrots, which is capable of spreading to man and causing a febrile condition resembling typhoid fever in its characters, and which is very liable to be complicated with severe pneumonia.

History.—Ritter, in 1879, was the first to suspect that there was a connection between small epidemics of pneumonia limited to certain houses and an illness among parrots in the same houses. In 1880 Eberth obtained large numbers of micrococci from the bodies of grey parrots. Ritter's observations were confirmed by Ost of Berne, in 1882, and by Wagner of Leipsic, in 1885. In 1892, 500 parrots were shipped from South America for Paris, but no less than 300 died *en route* from enteritis. On arrival in Paris the surviving birds were divided into two lots, and sold to various people, with a result that within twenty-six days of their arrival an epidemic of psittacosis broke out, which resulted in forty-nine cases, with sixteen deaths. The epidemic was characterized by being of the *house type*, by which is meant that several persons in the same house were attacked by the complaint.

Smaller epidemics occurred in 1893 and 1894, and in the same year Banti, Malenchini, and Palamidessi reported an epidemic in Florence. In 1895 there were outbreaks at Prato, Cologne, and Paris; in 1897 at Genoa; in 1898 at Cologne; in 1901 at South Elpidio, Ancona, and Hull; in 1904 at New Hampshire, one of the Eastern United States of America.

Ætiology.—The disease is apparently due to a bacillus belonging to the paracoli group, first isolated from the wings of parrots which had died from the disease by Nocard in 1893, and subsequently found by Gilbert and Fournier in 1897 in the intestine of the sick birds, and also in the heart-blood of a man who died from the disease. The bacillus in question appears to be closely related to, but distinct from, the *Bacillus typhosus* of Eberth, and is pathogenic for parrots and other birds. It is possible that this bacillus exists normally in parrots, and only becomes pathogenic under circumstances of bad hygiene, when it causes an enteritis. The feathers, becoming contaminated with faecal matter, are cleaned by the parrot with its tongue in the usual way, so that its mouth and bill become infected, and by this means the disease is spread to persons who feed or caress the bird. Very rarely the disease spreads from man to man.

Pathology.—In parrots the disease causes a very fatal form of enteritis. In man it produces a septicæmia, often complicated by a pneumonia, brought about as a rule by the pneumococcus.

The post-mortem reveals lobular pneumonia in the lungs, fatty degeneration of the heart-muscle and liver, enlargement and softening of the spleen, and congestion of the kidneys, with swelling of the tubular epithelium.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period varies from seven to twelve days, after which the disease may begin suddenly with a chill, but more usually commences insidiously, like typhoid fever, with headache, malaise, etc., and a rise of temperature from 102° to 104° F., with a pulse-rate of 100 to 120 per minute, quickened respirations, cough, and muco-purulent expectoration. Râles may be heard over the lungs, while the spleen is enlarged, the tongue dry and furred, and diarrhœa or constipation may be present. Rose-coloured spots appear on the skin, and the patient becomes dull and stupid, in which condition he may remain for several days, and as a rule will recover in about fifteen to twenty days if no pneumonic complication intervenes. If, however, pneumonia sets in, the patient becomes much worse, and as a rule dies.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis is to be made by the discovery of sick parrots in houses in which people are suffering from typhoid-like fevers and pneumonia. Bacteriologically, attempts may be made to obtain cultures of the bacilli from the blood.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is grave in old people and when pneumonia sets in, the mortality being stated to be about 35 to 40 per cent.

Treatment.—The treatment must be conducted on the lines usually laid down for typhoid fever and pneumonia.

Prophylaxis.—The infected parrots appear always to come from South America ; therefore care should be taken that only healthy birds are allowed to be shipped, and that these are kept in good hygienic conditions during the voyage. On arrival at their destination, they should be quarantined for about a couple of weeks, and, if found to be infected, should be destroyed, and their dead bodies and cages burnt. The places in which they were kept should also be thoroughly disinfected. Parrots should not be allowed to take food out of people's mouths, and should always be kept in good hygienic conditions.

RAT-BITE FEVER.

Definition.—An acute febrile disorder of unknown causation, but probably caused by some protozoal parasite inoculated by a rat's bite.

History.—Rat-bite fever is mentioned in Japanese medical books from the most ancient times, but it was not until Miyake in 1901 reported eleven cases that any interest was taken in the disease. Since then some twenty-one Japanese investigators, according to Hora, have reported some thirty cases, which have recently been increased to forty-nine cases. It has also been recorded by Horder in England, by Proescher in the United States, and by Frugoni in Italy, who has given a very good general account of the malady. As we stated under this heading in the first edition of this book, there is a curious belief in Ceylon that a rat's bite is a serious injury, and is apt to be followed by a chronic disorder which is popularly called leprosy, but which, so far, we have never been able to see. In Ceylon the belief is that the rat's bite is only pernicious in the breeding season. And in Japan Hora's case is stated to have been due to a bite of a female rat which was suckling its young. It is said that the same disease may follow the bite of a weasel, and it is known that weasels kill rats, and therefore it is possible that infection may come in this manner to the weasel.

Morbid Anatomy.—The only post-mortem changes recorded are hyperæmia of the pia mater of the spinal cord and an increase in the cerebro-spinal fluid.

Climatology.—The disease is known in Japan, Ceylon, England, Italy, and America.

Ætiology.—The causation is unknown, though Horder has seen a spirochæte, Ogata a sporozoan parasite, and Proescher a bacillus.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period varies from one to three weeks, during which time the wound from the bite heals. The onset is sudden. The site of the bite becomes red and swollen, and an

THE EXANTHEMATA.

Scarlet fever has often been introduced into the Tropics, but it does not spread. Thus we have seen cases introduced into Colombo from the steamers, but there has never been an epidemic of scarlet fever in that town to our knowledge, nor have we seen an indigenous case.

Measles is endemic in most tropical countries, but differs in no important details as a rule from the same disease in the Temperate Zone, except that when first introduced into Fiji it gave rise to a severe epidemic, and is still severe in Oceania.

Chicken-pox in the Tropics is very often a disease of the adult, being most common in India in February to March. The majority of the cases are mild, but some are severe, and there may be great difficulty in diagnosing chicken-pox from smallpox. Varicella cannot be transmitted to man very readily by inoculation. Rabbits' cornea can be inoculated, and fine granulations have been described by several observers in the epithelial cells, which may be early stages of a cytoryctes arrested in its development, which would support the people who believe the two diseases to be closely allied.

VARIOLA.

Synonyms.—Smallpox. *French*: La petite vérole. *German*: Blattern. *Italian*: Vajuolo. *Spanish*: Viruelas. *Arabic*: Jadari.

Definition.—Variola is an acute specific fever of unknown causation spread by various agencies, but especially by air, and characterized by a more or less general eruption passing through the stages of papule, vesicle, pustule, crust, and often scar.

History.—There can be no doubt of the great antiquity of the occurrence of smallpox in India and Africa, but whether it arose *de novo* in these two centres we cannot say, but there is a suspicion that there are two varieties of the disease—viz., the ordinary smallpox, which may have had its origin in India and spread to Europe, and so to America, and later to the islands of Oceania; and an African variety variously known as South African Amaas, or milk-pox, which may have been imported by the negro slaves into the West Indies, where it is called West Indian modified smallpox. Apart, however, from conjectures of this nature, there are the facts that in India there was a special worship defined in the Atharvaveda, and there were special prayers to be said by the Brahmins when performing the operation of inoculation of smallpox virus. References in the Charaka-Saṁhitā and the Susruta-Saṁhitā make it almost certain that the disease was well known when they were written. It would appear that the disease was introduced into China, perhaps from India, in the course of the third century B.C.

Equally ancient is the evidence of the existence of smallpox in Africa, for Rüffer and Ferguson have found an eruption on the skin of a mummy belonging to the period of the twenty-eighth dynasty (1200-1100 B.C.), which they believe to be suggestive of smallpox, and it is quite possible that there has existed from time immemorable an endemic focus in Africa, perhaps in Central Africa.

From these two foci in Asia and Africa it would appear probable that the disease has spread all over the world. With its introduction and spread in Europe we are not concerned, but with that into America a few remarks must be made, as it is very interesting. It would appear not to have been known in America until after the advent of the Spaniards; it is first recorded as occurring in the West Indies in the year 1507, when it was introduced from Europe, as has happened on many occasions since—*e.g.*, into Chili in 1554—also by the agency of the Spaniards.

More interesting than this is the fact that it is recorded that importations of slaves from Africa were often followed by the appearance of the disease—as, for example, in Brazil—where, according to Piso, it appeared in 1560, being introduced in this manner.

With regard to Oceania, it has been introduced from Asia or America at various times—as, for example, Australia in 1838, from China to Sydney; the Hawaiian Islands in 1853, from San Francisco to Honolulu; while New Caladonia became infected in 1859, and Marquesas in 1863.

To-day the disease is widespread all over the world, but is especially common in the tropics, where institutes for the preparation of calf-lymph are urgently required in order that efficient vaccination, the only method of keeping the disease in check, may be successfully carried out.

Climatology.—It is believed that smallpox is perhaps most active at the present time in Central Africa, but if this is true certainly some portions of tropical Asia must come very nearly equal in endemicity, and briefly the disease, though worldwide in its distribution, is of the utmost importance in the tropics. When first introduced among peoples previously unaffected with the disease, it was most virulent—as, for example, its incidence on the Mexicans and the North American Indians.

Ætiology.—The causation is unknown, but various protozoal bodies have been described, of which the most important is *Cytoryctes variolæ* Guarnieri 1892, minute spherical homogeneous bodies 3 to 4 μ in diameter, and staining well with Romanowsky, when it takes on a chromatin coloration, while Councilman and his colleagues have described a complicated life-history (p. 440).

Whatever the virus may be, it is usually spread by the air, and enters the body by means of the respiratory passages. Cases are on record of the infection being probably carried by cotton from Egypt to England and there starting sporadic outbreaks, and this is possible

if the cotton was handled by an infected person. Hence the request for the vaccination and revaccination of cotton-workers.

Symptomatology.—This is described in all books on general medicine, and need be only very briefly repeated here.

Briefly, a typical attack of discrete smallpox, after an incubation of nine to fifteen days, begins with a chill in an adult and a convulsion in a child, and continues with high fever, severe headache, lumbar pains, and vomiting, with or without a scarlatiniform or morbilliform rash on the second day, which may be general or local; or hæmorrhagic rashes, which are either petechial or petchio-erythematous, which appear from the first to the third day. If these latter rashes are associated with hæmorrhages from the internal organs, they indicate the onset of hæmorrhagic smallpox. Generally the initial stage of the disease lasts two days, but it may be shorter and milder than that recorded above, or more severe. The peculiar odour of a smallpox case may be noted in these early stages.

The typical rash appears on the second, third, or fourth day as papules on the face, arms, back of the wrists and hands, and, later, on the trunk and limbs; and at the same time on the mucosa of the mouth, nose, and throat, and more rarely on the vulva, vagina, and rectum. Generally it is more marked on the extensor surfaces of the limbs than on the flexor surfaces, and is often most marked in areas where there has been pressure. The papules are bright red in colour, but this may not be very evident in the dark skin, 2 to 3 millimetres in diameter, and have a hard, shotty feeling. As the rash comes out, the temperature falls, and the initial symptoms improve. On the fifth to sixth day the papules become umbilicated vesicles, which turn into pustules when the umbilication disappears, and a surrounding areola of injection appears. During the maturation of the pustules the secondary fever appears, and the eyelids become swollen and closed. In the discrete form the fever disappears by the tenth to eleventh day, and convalescence sets in.

The confluent type of smallpox is more severe than in the above, and presents much less difficulty in its recognition, and need not be described.

Varieties.—There are, however, two varieties which are of importance in the tropics—viz., variola hæmorrhagica and varioloid—and these must be mentioned at greater length.

Variola Hæmorrhagica.—Hæmorrhagic smallpox is, or was, by no means rare in Africa, and is met with in Asia, though by no means so frequently.

There are two varieties: *Purpura variolosa* and *Variola hæmorrhagica pustulosa*.

Purpura Variolosa.—This variety commences with the same symptoms as ordinary smallpox, but they are much more severe. The fever is not considerable, and may be below 100° F., but the pains in the body, especially the backache, is very severe, and the vomiting may be very persistent and associated with severe epi-

gastric pain. The pulse and the respirations are both much increased in frequency. At the end of the second, or the beginning of the third, day an erythematous rash appears in some part of the body, very often in the groins and flexure of the joints, but it may be absent, or it may extend and become general. At the same time and in the same places appear red and purple petechiæ, and about the same time subconjunctival hæmorrhages in one or both eyes, while purple spots appear on the forehead, eyelids, and face, and ecchymotic areas in various parts of the skin, and also on the tongue and pharynx. The patient now becomes pale and anæmic, except where the blotches are situate, and bleeding occurs from the mucous membranes and internal organs, of which the most common are oozing from the gums and hæmaturia, but epistaxis, hæmatemesis, hæmoptysis, melæna, and metrorrhagia, may one or all be present. Even retinal hæmorrhages may occur.

The temperature is now below normal, the patient is restless, with often a sensation of weight in the præcordium. The pulse is now soft and compressible. Sordes form on the gums, and the patient dies on the third to sixth day, with a clear mind and often without any sign of the typical smallpox eruption.

Purpura variolosa fulminans.—Very rarely the disease is more severe, with a temperature of 105° F. or more, associated with delirium, coma, and collapse, and followed by death in a few hours without any signs of external hæmorrhage.

Variola hæmorrhagica pustulosa.—In this variety the initial symptoms are severe, and delirium sets in early. Hæmorrhages appear from and under the mucous membranes and under the skin, and at the same time the typical smallpox eruption appears, into which blood also passes. The symptoms resemble those of confluent smallpox, with the addition of hæmorrhages.

A milder form is when the hæmorrhage occurs only into the eruption, and may or may not be associated with hæmaturia and some bleeding from the mouth.

Varioloid.—Repeated vaccination is an excellent protective against smallpox, but if the disease does appear in a person who has been several times vaccinated, it is remarkably modified and is most difficult to recognize. Epidemics have been known to show such a mild type that the disease was mistaken for a length of time for chicken-pox, and have also been considered to be due to a new form of disease, to which such names as 'Cuban itch' and 'Philippine itch' have been given. Indeed, such epidemics have in some cases not been recognized until a fatal case has occurred; and Osler and McCrae have recorded a small outbreak in one of their wards for coloured patients in which the disease was at first mistaken for chicken-pox.

The varieties of 'Varioloid' are numerous. In the first place, there may be no eruption, and the usual initial symptoms may be slight, or they may be severe and accompanied by an erythema, but all symptoms disappear by the third or fourth day.

In other cases the disease begins with the usual symptoms, but at the end of the first day a few maculæ appear, which become vesicles in another twenty-four hours, when the constitutional symptoms begin to abate, and are full grown in about three to four days, when they are seen to be conical vessels, often without any depression, surrounded by a very faint red line. On the third to fourth day they become somewhat opaque, and then shrink and desiccate, forming small dry prominences on the skin, which finally desquamate, and the patient is convalescent. In other cases a few vesicles may become pustules by the sixth day of the eruption, which dry up and cast off their crusts in about a week.

Diagnosis.—The headache, the severe backache, the epigastric pain, the vomiting, the high temperature, and the rapid pulse, associated with an erythematous or petechial eruption on the abdomino-crural region, are important factors. The erythema, however, is apt to be irregularly distributed in blotches, but it does not affect the face. The petechial eruption is usually found about the flexures of the joints as small bright red petechiæ. Any acute febrile disorder associated with purpura should be suspected as being probably variola.

The typical eruption comes out on the second or third day of the illness as hard shotty papules on the forehead, face, arms, and legs, which have become papulo-vesicles and pustular, presenting umbilication, and not flattening on pricking.

From Varicella.—The first point in the differential diagnosis between smallpox and chicken-pox is to remember that it is very difficult, and that the most distinguished physicians have owned to not one mistake, but a series. No one point of absolute diagnostic value can be given, but the following table will indicate some of the points :

Sign or Symptom.	Chicken-pox.	Smallpox.
Initial symptoms	Absent as a rule, but may resemble smallpox.	Usually well marked, but may be absent.
Temperature ..	Does not fall with the appearance of the rash.	Falls with the appearance of the rash.
Situation of rash	Most marked on the trunk.	Most marked on the face and limbs.
Vesicles	Develop in twelve to twenty-four hours ; are rarely umbilicated ; collapse on pricking ; all stages, papules, vesicles, and flattened scabbing, puckered pocks, appear together.	Papules hard and shotty ; are slow in developing ; vesico-pustules are more commonly umbilicated ; eruption more uniform, and the scabbing margin is not puckered.

From Measles.—The diagnosis from measles may be made as follows :—

Sign or Symptom.	Measles.	Smallpox.
Catarrhal symptoms	Lachrymation, coryza, cough present from the beginning and marked.	Usually absent, but there may be some conjunctival effusion.
Filatow or Koplik's spots	Usually present.	Absent.
Eruption ..	Appears on the third to fourth day as minute pink papules behind the ears, on the forehead, chin, cheeks, neck, limbs, and chest. Papules not hard or shotty.	Initial measly eruption on the first or second day on face, trunk, and limbs simultaneously. If partial, appears in the abdomino-crural area. Papules hard and shotty.
Temperature ..	Reaches its height with the appearance of the rash.	Falls with the appearance of the rash.

From Influenza, etc.—In German measles the initial severe symptoms are absent, and in the fourth disease the face is free, while in influenza the typical eruption fails to appear.

From Typhus.—The diagnostic features are :—

Sign or Symptom.	Typhus.	Smallpox.
Erythema ..	Appears on the third to fourth day of the illness.	Appears on the first or second day of the illness.
Typical eruption ..	Petechial. Appears on the fourth or fifth day, and is rarely seen on the face.	Papulo-pustular. Appears on the third or fourth day, and is common on the face.

From Hæmorrhagic Diseases.—Any case of high fever of an acute nature associated with purpura may be smallpox. It is extremely difficult to separate hæmorrhagic measles and scarlet fever from hæmorrhagic smallpox, but in the former diseases there is not so much bleeding from the mucous membranes. The isolation for sixteen days and vaccination of all contacts, and the isolation of the sick are the most important.

Prophylaxis.—As smallpox is endemic in nearly all tropical countries, it is important that the natives should be taught concerning it, and the fact that vaccination is an excellent prophylactic measure, and this should be done by verbal instruction and by vernacular pamphlets, if possible illustrated ; in this way the native prejudices, which are usually not strong, must be overcome. Secondly, vaccination should be made compulsory by law ; and

thirdly, a vaccine service should be established. This vaccine service should consist of an institute for the preparation of lymph, with a reliable man to make the lymph, an inspector of vaccination, or more according to the needs of the country, and a series of native vaccinators.

Vaccination.—Vaccination from arm to arm is very dangerous in the tropics, as syphilis, yaws, relapsing fever, sleeping sickness, etc., may be inoculated. It should therefore only be performed when calf-lymph is not available, and only by means of children under eight years of age who are found to be healthy. These vaccinifers can be sent to suitable districts if necessary; and if the amount of lymph required is considerable, two or three drops of glycerine may be placed on the vesicles, which are then punctured in several places, and the mixture used for immediate vaccination. With regard to the systematic work, *lanolated* seed-lymph can be obtained from many institutes at present; for example, from the Lister Institute in London.

Preparation of Lymph.—The vaccine institute requires an inoculating-room, a preparation-room for the lymph, an office, a store-room, a good stable for the calves—all of which should be rendered flyproof, and should have cement floors and be as cool as possible, and have a good supply of water. The special apparatus required are means for sterilization, Dornig's hand roller machine for trituration, and Entrican's machine, fitted with a small Geryk pump, for filling the tubes, as well as the ordinary glass and other materials of a laboratory.

The lymph should be obtained as *lanolated* seed-lymph from a reliable institute, and should be inoculated into fair-skinned heifers, not into black-skinned heifers, which should be specially fed during and after inoculation.

When tubes of calf-lymph cannot be obtained, monkeys may be directly inoculated from cases of variola, and the calves may then be subinoculated from the monkeys, and if calves cannot be obtained rabbits may be used.

All animals should be carefully isolated and watched for some days before being used for inoculation.

When lymph first arrives in a tropical country from the temperate zone it requires to be acclimatized—that is to say, its virulence should be increased by passing it through about three calves before use, otherwise failures may occur.

The calves are vaccinated on the shaved and cleaned abdomen by linear incisions, about 1 inch apart, into which the lymph is gently rubbed, and a sterile cloth tied over the vaccinated area. No straw should be given for bedding, but a wooden grating should be used, and the calf's head should be secured by two tie-ropes to prevent it kicking the inoculated area. The lymph may be collected after 96 to 120 hours by removing the contents of a vesicle by means of a Volkmann's spoon.

The lymph is now weighed and mixed with an equal weight of

sterile distilled water, and after being worked into a paste is triturated until it is in an extremely fine condition, and if urgently required is treated with a stream of chloroform vapour for fifteen to thirty minutes, after which sterile air is bubbled through until no chloroform remains, and another part of sterile water and 2 parts of sterile glycerine, or 3 to 5 parts of anhydrous lanoline are added. The lymph is now filtered through a special fine sieve into test-tubes till nearly filled, and stored in cold climates for four to five weeks at a temperature of 15° to 20° C., when the number of micro-organisms is found to have decreased considerably. The chloroform method of purifying the lymph is to be preferred in the tropics, as it is much quicker. The technique is found in any modern work on the preparation of lymph.

A bacteriological examination is always necessary, especially to discover whether tetanus bacilli are present, and if these are found the lymph must be rejected. The lymph must be stored at temperatures at 5° to 10° C.; if this precaution is not used the lymph becomes inert very quickly in tropical countries.

The capillary tubes are filled in a vacuum in the Entrican filling-machine.

Lanolated lymph not being sterile is more apt to contain a large number of micro-organisms.

In vaccinating natives the left arm should be used about the middle, and not near the shoulder.

ALASTRIM.

Synonyms.—*African*: Varioloid varicella, Amaas, Kaffir milk-pox. *American*: West Indian modified smallpox, Epidemic varioloid varicella.

Definition.—An acute specific fever resembling in all its symptoms and pathological appearances a mild form of variola.

History.—As already stated in the history of smallpox, there is a possibility that there were originally two distinct endemic foci of variola—viz., Asia and Africa—and therefore, bearing in mind the different varieties of relapsing fever, it is hardly surprising that there should be at least two varieties of smallpox, even though the clinical symptoms are similar, and Guarneri's bodies are found in both. Moreover, the disease is known in Africa and America, and there is no reason why it should not occur also in Asia when the considerable intercommunication between India, Ceylon, and China with Africa is considered. One of the earliest descriptions is by Anderson in 1866 of an epidemic in 1865 in Jamaica, and there was another epidemic described by Dickson and Lasselle in 1903, while Korte gave an account of amaas, or Kaffir milk-pox, in 1904. In 1905 Welch and Schamberg gave an account of it in their work on 'Acute Contagious Diseases,' in 1908 Scheult described it as seen in Trinidad from 1902 to 1904, while Grant in 1910 describes 'amaas'

as seen in South Africa, and in the same year Ribas describes it as seen in Brazil in 1909, and Carini as seen in the States of St. Paul, Minas, and Paraná.

Ætiology.—The causation would appear to be the same as ordinary smallpox, as it is generally agreed that Jenner's vaccination is protective, and Guarnieri bodies have been found, and the classical reaction in the inoculated cornea of the rabbit has been produced; after sixty hours the Guarnieri bodies have been recovered from the cornea, but it would appear to be due to an attenuated virus.



FIG. 462.—ALASTRIM. (After Ribas.)

The question which has been much debated is whether it is smallpox, chicken-pox, or a new disease halfway between the two. In the first place, there are still some persons who disbelieve in the difference between variola and varicella, but their objection is usually disregarded. In the second place, alastrim differs from varicella because of—

1. Confluence of the vesicles in certain cases.
2. Its frequency among adults.
3. The partial protection by Jenner's vaccine.

It differs from variola vera by---

1. Its low mortality (1 to 2 per cent.).
2. Because it is less severe in children than in adults, and is often found among babies, in whom the vesicles are often small.
3. There is no secondary fever in children.
4. Though Jenner's vaccine is in some degree protective, the disease can occur after recent successful vaccination.
5. Jenner's vaccination can be successfully carried out shortly after an attack of alastrim.
6. According to some authorities, an attack of smallpox does give a lasting immunity to alastrim.

Provisionally we may conclude that it is probably a slightly different form of disease from true variola.

Symptomatology.—It begins with high fever, severe pains, and vomiting, with very often delirium. The rash comes out on the third day, when the temperature descends, the symptoms disappear, and the patient feels so well that he may resume his ordinary avocations. Secondary fever is usually absent, especially in children, but may occur about the eighth day. Papules become pustules and scabs, and these drop off, leaving little scarring, but only pigmentation.

Complications.—Hæmorrhagic cases are unknown.

Mortality.—The death-rate is remarkably low, about 1 to 2 per cent.

Prophylaxis.—The usual isolation, quarantine, and vaccination of contacts and cases must be adopted.

VESICULAR FEVER.

Definition.—A febrile disorder associated with acute pain in some region of the body, followed by the appearance of a vesicular eruption which becomes general.

Remarks.—This is a fever which at its commencement resembles an attack of chicken-pox, and when it is fully developed closely resembles modified smallpox. We have seen several such cases in Ceylon during the last ten years.

Ætiology.—The causation is unknown.

Symptomatology.—At no stage of the illness is the patient severely ill, but the commencement is ushered in with sometimes pain in some part of the body, followed in a day by a rise of temperature to about 101° F. and a quick pulse. The eruption may appear at first in the region of the pain, or may be general from the commencement, which, however, is not relieved, and may, on the contrary, have extended to other regions of the body. The pain gradually disappears, a scattered general eruption of vesicles appears, and the temperature becomes normal, while the patient feels better. The vesicles are discrete, dome-like, or flattened; later, a few may become umbilicated. The size is generally much less than those of chicken-pox, and a few may become umbilicated. There is little

or no inflammation of the base. The contents are at first clear and then purulent. Superficial scabbing may occur, and, as a rule, no scars are left, though rarely some scars may be found.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis is based upon the characters of the eruption, there being no true pustulation, with scabbing and scars, as in smallpox, and by the fact that during convalescence Jenner's vaccination is generally successful.

In chicken-pox the vesicles are generally larger, and often leave thick crusts.

In alastrim the eruption is often confluent, pustular, and clinically almost identical with smallpox.

Prognosis.—This is good.

Treatment.—The treatment is purely symptomatic.

PAPULAR FEVER.

Definition.—A slight febrile disorder of unknown causation, characterized by a maculo-papular eruption and rheumatoid pains.

Remarks.—We have seen an epidemic of this peculiar fever in Ceylon; it resembled measles in the appearance of the rash, but was without any catarrhal symptoms.

Ætiology.—This is quite unknown.

Symptomatology.—The disease begins with a prodromal period, during which the patient suffers from malaise, depression, and rheumatoid pains, especially in the back, which are associated with chilliness. After three or four days the rash comes out suddenly all over the body, but most marked on the arms, trunk, and legs, the face being least affected. The eruption is morbilliform, being composed of bright red pin-head papules and red maculæ. It is, as already stated, visible on the arms, legs, and chest; while there may be a few maculæ on the palms of the hands and soles of the feet. The face is not much affected, and there the eruption is rather more macular than papular. Filatow's papules in the mouth are absent. There is generally slight fever lasting for a day or two. There are no catarrhal symptoms of the eyes, nose, or throat, no enlargement of the lymphatic glands. The eruption generally lasts between two to five days, and then fades without any desquamation and without leaving any marks. In most cases the eruption is associated with itching, especially on the arms, and in a few cases there is no fever.

Diagnosis.—It is to be distinguished from measles by the absence of the catarrhal symptoms, absence of Filatow's and Koplik's signs, and from German measles by its longer duration and the diffuse type of the eruption, and from toxic rashes of intestinal origin by the absence of any intestinal symptoms.

Prognosis.—This is good.

Treatment.—The treatment is symptomatic, small doses of aspirin or pyramidon being given to relieve the pains, and calamine lotion to alleviate the rash.

HÆMORRHAGIC FEBRILE GASTRO-ENTERITIS OF CHILDREN.

Synonym.—Fièvre a Vomissements noirs des Enfants.

Definition.—An endemic fever limited to 'Grande terre' in Guadeloupe, and characterized by black vomit and by occurring only in children.

Remarks.—This disease, which closely resembles yellow fever, was first described by Dr. Guesde in 1891.

Climatology.—It is only known in 'Grande terre' in Guadeloupe.

Symptomatology.—The disease begins suddenly with an attack of vomiting, and is followed by an attack of febrile bilious vomiting. The child then becomes very ill, with remittent fever, slight icterus, obstinate constipation, and later black vomit. After lasting from two to five days the symptoms may improve, sleep returns, the fever disappears, and the child gradually recovers; on the other hand, the symptoms may become worse, and the child die. Convalescence is prolonged.

Diagnosis.—The disease seems to us to be indistinguishable from yellow fever.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is always grave.

Treatment.—This is symptomatic.

REFERENCES.

Unclassified Fevers.

- BIRT (1908). *Journal Royal Army Medical Corps.*
 CASTELLANI (1904-12). *Ceylon Medical Reports*; (1907) *Journal of Hygiene*, vol. vii.; and *Lancet*; (1912) *Journal of Tropical Medicine.*
 COBB (1906). *Indian Medical Gazette*, p. 135.
 CROMBIE (1898). *Unclassified Fevers of Hot Climates. Journal of Tropical Medicine*, p. 128.
 FOX, A. C. (1912). *Journal Royal Army Medical Corps.*
 GRALL AND CLARAC (1911). *Traité Pratique de Pathologie Exotique Pox*, vol. ii. *Fièvres Climatiques.* Paris.
 LE DANTEC (1911). *Pathologie Exotique*, third edition. Paris.
 MANSON (1907). *Tropical Diseases.*
 MCCARRISON (1906). *Indian Medical Gazette*, p. 7.
 NAGELE (1912). *Archiv f. Schiff- u. Tropen-Krankhygiene.*
 ROGERS (1908). *Fevers of the Tropics.* Oxford.
 ROUSSEAU (1902). *Archiv. de Méd. Navale*, lxxvii. 129.
 THORPE (1903). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, p. 25.

Low and High Intermittent Non-Malarial Fevers.

- CASTELLANI (1905-09). *Ceylon Medical Reports.*
 CROMBIE (1898). *Journal of Tropical Medicine.*

Hyperpyrexial Fever.

- THOMPSTONE AND BENNETT. Referred to in Manson's *Tropical Diseases.*

Double Continued Fever.

- MANSON (1907). *Tropical Diseases.*

Typhus.

- BIRT (1912). Journ. Royal Army Med. Corps.
 KROMPECHER, GOLDZIEHER, AND AUGYÁN (1909). Centralblatt f. Bak.
 NICOLLE (1912). Bull. Path. Exot. Paris.
 RIZZUTI AND SCORDO (1912). Malaria.
 SANDWITH (1907). Medical Diseases of Egypt, i. 15.
 YERSIN AND VASSAL (1908). Bulletin de la Société de Path. Exot., i. 156.

Psittacosis.

- GILBERT AND FOURNIER (1897). La Presse Méd., p. 25.
 RHO (1906). Mense's Tropenkrankheiten, iii. 781.
 RITTER (1879). Deutsch. Arch. f. Klin. Med., xxv. 23.
 VICARY AND RICHARDSON (1904). Medical News, lxxxv. 780. New York.

Urticarial Fever.

- HOUGHTON. Quoted by Logan (*vide infra*).
 LAMBERT (1911). Transactions of the Society of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene. London.
 LOGAN, O. T. (1912). China Medical Journal.

Rat-Bite Fever.

- ARCHER (1910). Archiv f. Dermatologie.
 CAMPAGNA (1911). Clinical Dermos. d. R. Univ. di Roma.
 CRUICKSHANK (1911). British Medical Journal.
 FRUGONI (1911). Riv. Crit. Clinica Medica.
 HARA (1906). Sei-J.-Kwai Medical Journal, xxv., vii. 75.
 HATA (1912). Münch. Med. Woch.

SECTION B.

GENERAL DISEASES

CHAPTER XLI

PARAGONIMIASIS, KATAYAMA DISEASE, AND POROCEPHALOSIS

Paragonimiasis—Katayama disease—Porocephalosis—References.

PARAGONIMIASIS.

Synonyms.—Parasitic hæmoptysis, Pulmonary distomatosis, Endemic hæmoptysis.

Definition.—Paragonimiasis is a chronic or subacute general or local infection of man by means of *Paragonimus westermani* Kerbert, which produces cystic lesions, containing a thick, opaque, reddish fluid, in which are found at times the parasite or its eggs.

History.—The history of the discovery of the parasite in the tiger and man has already been given (p. 477). Its connection with disease in man has been worked out by Suga, Baelz, Manson, Miura, Katsurada, and Musgrave, the last observer giving the most complete account of the disease up to date.

Climatology.—Paragonimiasis is found principally in China, Corea, Japan, Formosa, the Philippine Islands, and Sumatra.

Ætiology.—*Paragonimus westermani* occurs in the cat, the dog, and the pig, but how it infects man is quite unknown. The path of entry into the human body is believed to be through the alimentary canal in food or drink, and thence to different parts of the body by means of the lymphatics; but this has not been proved, and other routes are therefore by no means impossible. It appears to be more common in males than in females.

Pathology.—The pathology of the disease is by no means clear, and how the various pathological changes are evolved is unknown.

Musgrave has classified the lesions into :—

1. The non-suppurating lesion.
2. The tubercle-like lesion.
3. The suppurating lesion.
4. The ulcerative lesion—

- (a) in the skin ;
- (b) in the bronchial mucosa ;
- (c) in the intestinal mucosa ;
- (d) in the bile-duct.

The simplest lesion appears to be an infiltration of the connective tissue of an organ with eggs, without any histological changes at first, but later with a proliferation of the connective tissue and the formation of a cirrhosis or a round-celled infiltration, with sometimes many eosinophiles, which may lead to abscess-formation, and finally to ulceration. The abscess-formation may at times produce caseous material, giving a tubercular appearance.

The non-suppurating lesion may therefore be simple infiltration of the tissue by eggs, with or without inflammation. On the other hand, cirrhotic changes may be seen, especially in the liver. In serous membranes an adhesive inflammation is often produced, associated with the presence of eggs in brown patches at the points of contact.

The inflammation of the organ may, however, proceed to pus-formation, resulting in a typical abscess. On the other hand, the tissues generally attempt to circumscribe this abscess by a fibrous wall, and thus produce what is called the typical lesion of the disease. In the centre of the abscess will be seen degenerated cells, blood, eggs, and perhaps a parasite. Then comes a capsular wall of fibrous connective tissue, smooth towards the centre, and joining the rest of the organ externally. Around this wall the connective tissue of the organ is proliferating and congested. In this way the typical little cysts, with dull blue-grey walls, smooth internally, and containing a thick, reddish fluid, with or without eggs or a parasite, are formed. These lesions may work their way to a cutaneous or mucous surface, and so open into a bronchus, or into the intestine, or the bile-duct, or on to the skin, thus giving rise to ulcers in those regions. The intestinal ulcers closely resemble dysenteric ulcers, and, indeed, may become secondarily infected with amœbæ or bacteria.

In course of time these lesions may show some attempt at healing and scar-formation, but generally this is not very successful.

Morbid Anatomy.—The body may be well nourished, but more usually is emaciated and anæmic. Ulcers can be seen at times in the axillæ and groin, leading into diseased glands. The muscles may contain abscesses. The pleura, pericardium, peritoneum, and, more rarely, the meninges, show the chronic inflammations and the non-suppurative lesions mentioned above. The lesions found in the lungs are diffuse cirrhosis, bronchiectatic cavities, pneumonia, and caseous abscesses, while those of the liver are cirrhosis, perihepatitis, and abscess-formation. The typical lesions mentioned above may be found in the spleen, pancreas, small and large intestines, kidneys, bladder, epididymis, prostate, and in the choroid plexus of the brain.

Symptomatology.—As the invasion of the body is so generalized, the symptoms are very varied. Musgrave differentiates for varieties—the generalized, the thoracic, abdominal, and cerebral; but there is nothing very characteristic about any of these types.

In the *generalized type* there may be fever, enlarged lymphatic glands, general muscular pains, and ulceration of the skin.

In the *thoracic type* there will be cough, with the expectoration of purulent or, more generally, blood-stained sputum, in which the eggs may be best seen by the addition of a little 0.1 per cent. solution of sulphuric acid. More rarely an adult parasite appears in the sputum, which also may contain Charcot-Leyden and creatinin crystals. The patient generally complains of pain in some part of the chest. The physical signs may indicate broncho-pneumonia or pleural effusion, which may be serous or purulent.

In the *abdominal form* of the disease there are only the vaguest symptoms of dull, aching pains and tenderness, while diarrhœa, appendicitis, epididymitis, or cirrhosis of the liver, may be demonstrated by the usual physical signs and symptoms. When diarrhœa occurs, the eggs may be found in the fæces.

The *cerebral type* is associated with epilepsy, which may be Jacksonian in character, while neuritis or paralysis may also be present.

The blood and urine have not yet been fully examined. Though generally chronic, the course may be acute if complicated by septic or other diseases.

Complications.—The most usual complications are tuberculosis and entamœbic dysentery.

Diagnosis.—With the above symptomatology, it will be obvious that the diagnosis depends entirely upon finding the eggs of the parasite in the sputum, the fæces, the scrapings from the ulcers, or the fluids obtained by puncture of a hydro- or pyothorax. Suspicions as to the presence of the disease will be strongest when cases showing any of the above signs occur in the endemic area.

Treatment.—The treatment must be devoted to relieving individual symptoms, but Musgrave recommends treatment by iodide of potash. Removal from the endemic area is, of course, indicated.

Prophylaxis.—Beyond general hygienic advice, it is impossible to indicate prophylactic measures, when so little is known about the life-history of the parasite.

KATAYAMA DISEASE.

Definition.—Katayama disease is caused by *Schistosoma japonicum* Katsurada 1904, and is characterized by diarrhœa and dysenteric symptoms, painful enlargement of the liver and spleen, with or without fever, dropsy, progressive anæmia, and sometimes pulmonary and brain symptoms.

History.—In 1887 Mazimi drew attention to a peculiar form of cirrhosis of the liver which was found in certain districts in Japan,

and was caused by the ova of some unknown parasite. His discovery was confirmed, and the ova were found in other organs besides the liver; and the disease, which became well known among Japanese medical men, was named 'Katayama disease,' from a town in Bingo, one of the districts in which it is common. In 1904 Katsurada, who was resident in the infected area, discovered that the ova were those of a *Schistosoma*, and, further, found the adults in the portal vein of a cat. He therefore named the parasite *Schistosoma japonicum*. In the same year Fujinami discovered a female worm in a human being. Meanwhile Catto found the same parasite in a Chinaman from Fukien, and described it in 1905, and in the same year Stiles and Looss gave accounts of the disease. In 1906 Woolley, in a most excellent paper, described its occurrence in the Philippine Islands. Logan has found it in a Chinaman from Hunan, and in 1909 Peake recorded three cases from a small town on the Siang River, in the Hunan province of Central China. In 1911 Houghton, Logan, and Lambert, drew attention to cases of fever with urticaria, and eosinophilia connected with infections with *S. japonicum*.

Climatology.—It occurs in Japan, China, and the Philippine Islands: in the first in the provinces of Bingo, Yamanashi, Hiroshima, and Saga; in the second it is reported up to date from Hunan, Honan, Hupeh, Kiangsi, and Anhui provinces, and from Fukien. In Wuhu 8 per cent. of all male cases entering the General Hospital show either latent, active, or overwhelming infection. In China only the low-lying lands appear to be infected; no cases from the hills or mountains are known.

Ætiology.—The cause of the disease is *S. japonicum* (*vide* p. 486), which is probably introduced into the body, either through the skin or by the mouth, in water polluted by human faecal matter. Several observers favour the idea of entry through the skin of the legs while standing in stagnant water, but nothing is definitely known. A very common viviparous snail found in large numbers in the flood basins of the Yang-tsze-kiang River is considered by Lambert to be a possible intermediate host.

The youngest age at which infection is believed to occur is between seven and eight years, and the oldest patient was fifty-four years of age. So far it is only known in males.

The persons most affected are farmers and boatmen.

Pathology.—By some observers the parasites are supposed to feed on the blood, and by others to produce toxins which cause the

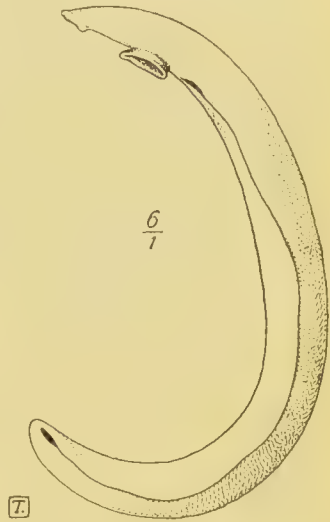


FIG. 463.—SCHISTOSOMA JAPONICUM.

(After Manson.)

progressive anaemia. The eggs apparently are spread through the body by the blood stream, and lodge as emboli in the organs, more especially in the alimentary canal and liver, where they give rise to a round-celled infiltration and connective-tissue formation resembling bilharziosis, and cause hæmorrhagic enteritis and cirrhosis of the liver and spleen.

Morbid Anatomy.—On opening the abdomen, signs of old peritonitis may be seen, the appendices epiploicæ being matted together, and at times there are also signs of old pelvic peritonitis. The liver is cirrhotic and less than its normal size, and its surface is studded by nodules, usually larger than those of alcoholic atrophic cirrhosis. Glisson's capsule is thickened, and shows much connective tissue with round-celled infiltration, in which lie the ova of the worm.

The small and large intestines and appendix may be thickened, and their mucosa is swollen and hyperæmic, and shows patches of ulceration and necrosis, and, in addition, papillomata, resembling those of bilharziosis. The eggs may also be found in the mesentery and in the mesenteric glands, the wall of the gall-bladder, the pancreas, the walls of the mesenteric vessels, and the pylorus. The adult worms may be found in some of the veins of the portal system, especially at the bifurcations of the smaller mesenteric vessels.

In addition, the eggs may be found in fibrous and round-celled infiltrations in the lungs and in the brain. This infiltration often takes the form of nodules.

Symptomatology.—The early symptoms of the disease may be slight, or perhaps it may begin with attacks of fever, with urticarial rashes, in which there is marked eosinophilia, and this may be associated with cough, scanty expectoration, some impairment of resonance over the bases or other parts of the lungs, with fine crepitant râles on deep inspiration, and a diminution of the breath-sounds.

About two years later there are diarrhœic or dysenteric symptoms, with or without fever, and the presence of the ova in the fæces. Associated with these symptoms are abdominal pains, enlargement and tenderness of the liver, the hypogastrium shrinking, and the epigastrium enlarging and giving rise to a characteristic abdominal appearance. At the same time the dysenteric symptoms cease, and an irregular chronic diarrhœa sets in, with motions containing much undigested food, and associated with dyspepsia.

In course of time the preliminary enlargement of the liver may cease, and the organ may begin to shrink, but in any case the spleen becomes tender and enlarges, ascites appears, and the patient becomes steadily weaker, more and more anæmic, emaciated, and incapable of mental or physical work. The average of three differential blood-counts by Peake is as follows: Polymorphonuclears, 56.5 per cent.; mononuclears, 13.2 per cent.; lymphocytes, 15.6 per cent.; eosinophiles, 14.1 per cent., but the eosinophilia may reach 50 per cent. Attacks of fever may occur nightly, otherwise the

temperature may be subnormal. The vascular, respiratory, nervous, and urinary systems are usually normal. If, however, the ova affect the lungs, there may be signs of bronchitis, broncho-pneumonia, and fibrosis; and if the brain, those of Jacksonian epilepsy. In children the development is stunted. Death may result directly from the action of the parasite, or be due to some intercurrent disease.

Varieties.—Houghton recognizes the following types of the disease: (a) Typical cases, with enlarged liver and spleen, ascites, and blood in the motions; (b) cases with only splenic enlargement, and with or without blood in the motions; (c) cases with cerebral symptoms and marked eosinophilia, to which may be added—(d) urticarial fever, with marked eosinophilia in the early stages; (e) cases only showing eosinophilia, often associated with some other concurrent disorder; (f) latent cases showing ova in the motions, but no bodily disturbance.

The splenic type, when present without blood in the motions, may give rise to difficulties of diagnosis, which may be cleared up by an examination of the blood and fæces. The eosinophilia in these cases is from 25 to 51 per cent.

The cerebral type is exemplified by partial hemiplegia and slight disturbance of speech after high fever, and associated with an eosinophilia of about 50 per cent. Jacksonian epilepsy has also been reported as due to this parasite.

The urticarial fever is characterized by a remittent type of fever, usually ranging at first from 99° to 100° F. in the morning to 102° to 103° F. in the evening, and after a time from normal to about 100° F., associated with marked urticaria, followed by pale raised blotches on the arms, trunk, and legs, and associated with a marked urticarial rash. The fever lasts some weeks, and very closely resembles malaria at first, because the daily fall of temperature is associated with sweating.

Complications.—The infection is generally complicated by the presence of *Trichuris trichiura*, *Agchylostoma duodenale* or *Necator americanus*, and *Ascaris lumbricoides*. Dysentery is a complication which may occur and prove fatal to the patient.

Diagnosis.—The characteristic signs are chronic painful enlargement of the liver and spleen, associated with ascites and chronic

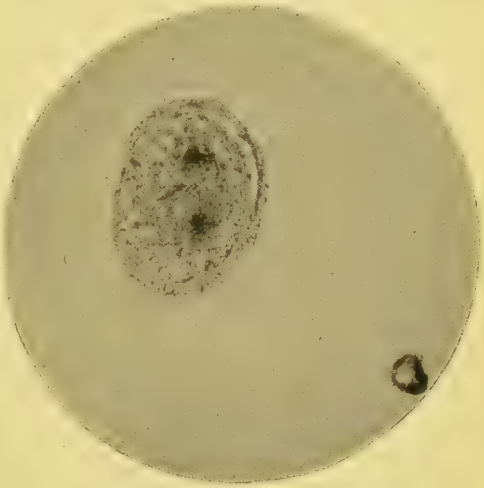


FIG. 464.—EGG OF SCHISTOSOMA JAPONICUM.

(From a microphotograph by J. J. Bell.)

irregular diarrhoea, and marked eosinophilia (10 to 50 per cent.). A definite diagnosis is to be effected by finding the ova in the fæces. These ova are large (0.1 by 0.07 millimetre), oval, non-operculated, laterally spined (75 per cent.), smooth, and transparent, with a double contour sometimes showing a *Miracidium*, and when kept in water for a short time give rise to a free-swimming ciliated *Miracidium*. These ova are apt to be mistaken for *Ascaris lumbricoides*, or less likely for an *Agchylostoma* ovum. The ova require to be looked for carefully.

Other points which assist in the diagnosis are the greatly exaggerated knee-jerks, the peculiar muddy complexion suggestive of anæmia, the lack of leucocytosis (the counts in uncomplicated cases being about 2,000 to 8,500 per cubic millimetre), and the emaciation without obvious cause.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is very bad, as the parasite directly or indirectly leads to the death of the patient. The mortality is not known, but Katsurada met with between thirty to fifty-four cases every year for five years in the infected area in Japan, and saw three to five deaths per annum, which he considered directly due to the parasite—*i.e.*, a mortality of about 10 per cent.—but he thinks that the indirect mortality would raise the percentage considerably.

Treatment.—The only treatment that can be suggested is to follow the example of the treatment in bilharziosis and intestinal schistosomiasis, and administer *Filix mas* and treat the dysenteric or diarrhoeal symptoms.

Prophylaxis.—Until the method of invasion of the parasite is known, not much can be said under this heading, except to avoid contaminated water in drinking and bathing—*i.e.*, to use boiled water in infected areas for both purposes. It would appear as though wading in swamps, lakes, etc., is very dangerous, and may be a method of infection.

POROCEPHALOSIS.

Synonym.—Porocephaliasis.

Definition.—Porocephalosis is the invasion of the body by the larvæ of *Porocephalus armillatus* Wyman 1848, and *P. moniliformis* Diesing 1836, and possibly other forms, which become encysted in the liver and lungs, and ultimately develop into nymphæ, which may, by their wanderings, cause inflammation of organs and serous membranes.

History.—*P. armillatus* was first found in man by Pruner in 1846, and has since been studied by Bilharz, Fenger, Aitken, Giard, Broden and Rodhain, Dutton and Todd, and one of us. *P. moniliformis* has been met with in Asia, and by Salm in Java. Sambon thinks that Welch's Indian parasite may have been *P. naja* Leuckart 1860, or *P. crocidura* Parona 1890, found in Blyth's musk shrew

Crocidura fuliginosa; and that Flint's case in America may have been an infection with *P. crotali* Humboldt 1808, but for details with regard to these parasites, see pp. 622 and 623.

Climatology.—*P. armillatus* is confined to Africa, being met with in negroes resident, or who have resided, therein. It has been reported from Egypt and various parts of the West Coast of Africa, but especially from the Congo.

With regard to *P. moniliformis*, it occurs in Java and the Philippine Islands. Welch described a peculiar parasite as occurring in the mucosa of the intestine of a man in India which he considered to be an *Echinorhynchus*, but which, judging from the drawing, might well be a *Porocephalus*.

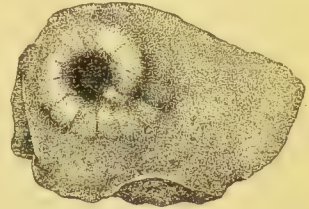
Ætiology.—The adults of both *P. armillatus* and *P. moniliformis* live in the nasal cavities and lungs of pythons and snakes, and though the life-history is as yet unknown, it is quite possible that Sambon's suggestion that the ova pass into the drinking-water, and so to man, may be correct. It is possible that the eggs hatch in the alimentary canal, and that the larvæ then pass into the organs.

Pathology.—The larvæ are found lying coiled in cysts in the liver and lungs. In due course these larvæ become nymphæ, which leave the cysts and wander through the body, appearing in the lungs and bronchi, causing bronchitis and broncho-pneumonia; in the peritoneal cavity, causing peritonitis; in the bowels, causing irritation. Perhaps they leave the body by the fæces; perhaps, also, by the sputum; but in any case they cause serious illness in, and death of, the victim.

Morbid Anatomy.—In opening the abdomen, the nymphæ may be found quite free in the peritoneal cavity, and may crawl up the hands and arms of the pathologist. They may also be found in the lumen of the alimentary canal, in the mucosæ, and thickness of the wall of the bowel. The larvæ may be seen encysted in the liver and lungs.

In the cysts they lie in a curved position, with the ventral surface on the outer aspect of the curve. The lungs show signs of bronchitis and pneumonia, and the peritoneum is usually chronically inflamed, but not always.

Symptomatology.—The symptoms of the early stages of the disease are at present quite unknown, but the terminal symptoms are emaciation and weakness, associated with attacks of bronchitis, pleurisy, or other respiratory symptoms. There may be cavities in the lungs, and the sputum may be offensive and may contain the parasites, of which as many as 75 to 100 have been recorded as being expectorated by a single patient. The liver is usually considerably enlarged.



TERZI.

FIG. 465.—POROCEPHALUS ARMILLATUS ENCYSTED IN LIVER.

(After Sambon, from our West African case.)

Diagnosis.—The disease has often been mistaken for phthisis; therefore any patient in the tropics suffering from the usual symptoms of phthisis associated with enlargement of the liver may be suspected, and the sputum and faeces carefully watched for the possible appearance of the parasites. When a parasite is found, it may not necessarily be either *P. armillatus* or *P. moniliformis*, but is more likely to be some form found in some animal which lives in the region where the patient resides or works.

Prognosis.—The disease is generally chronic. The prognosis is serious.

Treatment.—There is no known treatment.

Prophylaxis.—If the drinking-water is boiled or filtered, there ought to be no danger of infection.

REFERENCES.

Paragonimiasis.

MUSGRAVE (1902). The Philippine Journal of Science, book ii., p. 15. Manila.

Katayama Disease.

- BAYER (1905). American Medicine, x. 578.
 CATTO (1905). Journal of Tropical Medicine, vii. 78.
 CATTO (1905). British Medical Journal, i. 11.
 HOUGHTON (1910). Transactions of the Society of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene, vol. iii., No. 7, 342. London.
 KATSURADA. Journal of American Medical Association, xlv. 80 (review only). 1905.
 LAMBERT (1911). Transactions of the Society of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene, vol. v., No. 1, 38. London.
 PEAKE (1909). Journal of Tropical Medicine, xii. 64.
 SKINNER (1911). Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene, 129. London.
 STILES (1905). American Medicine, ix. 821.
 WOOLLEY (1906). Philippine Journal of Science, B., i. 83.

Porocephalosis.

- BRODEN AND RODHAIN (1907). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, p. 493. Liverpool.
 CHALMERS (1899). Lancet, i. (January 10). London.
 SAMBON (1910-12). Journal of Tropical Medicine. London. (Series of valuable articles, not yet completed.)
 WELCH (1872). Lancet, ii. 703. London.

CHAPTER XLII

THE FILARIASES

Synonyms—Definition—Filariasis caused by *Filaria bancrofti* Cobbold 1877—History—Climatology—Ætiology—Pathology—Clinical description—Filarial lymphangitis—Filarial orchitis and hydrocele—Lymphatic varix—Varicose lymphatic glands—Chylous effusions—Elephantiasis—Rarer affections—Filariasis caused by other Filaridæ—References.

Synonyms.—Filarial disease. *French*: Filariose, Maladies Filariennes. *German*: Filaria Krankheit. *Italian*: Filariasi.

Definition.—Filariasis is a term denoting the infection of man or animals by any species of *Filaria*—e.g., *Filaria bancrofti* Cobbold 1877, and some others.

FILARIASIS CAUSED BY FILARIA BANCROFTI Cobbold 1877

The diseases produced in man by *F. bancrofti* Cobbold 1877 include lymphangitis, orchitis, varix in lymphatics and lymphatic glands, chylous and lymphatic extravasations, and elephantiasis.

History.—The appearance of the huge leg of elephantiasis is so striking that it was early noticed by ancient Indian writers, who give descriptions of diseases which clearly refer to elephantiasis of the leg and of the scrotum, and also less clearly to lymph scrotum. Further, they appear to have known that elephantiasis could affect the hands and other parts of the body.

The word 'elephantiasis' was first used by Celsus to indicate leprosy, and in this he was followed by most writers until Galen, who included true elephantiasis under the same term, an error which became firmly established as time passed. In the ninth and tenth centuries Rhazes and Avicenna, and other Arabian physicians, described true elephantiasis of the leg under the term 'da-fil' or 'dau-ool-fil,' or elephantine disease, which, however, only served to make the confusion between the two diseases more complete. In the seventeenth century Leoniceus and Varandæus pointed out that they were two distinct clinical entities, and in 1709 Clarke described elephantiasis on the Malabar coast of India, under the term 'Cochin leg.' In 1712 Kaempfer described endemic hydrocele, under the term 'andrum,' as occurring in India, and being associated with erysipelatous eruptions on the scrotum, which recurred at the time of the new moon. He also described a large foot under the term 'perical,' but his description agrees more with Madura-foot than with elephantiasis, though it is probable that he was confusing both diseases under the same term. In 1750 Hillary, a most careful and skilled observer, gave the first full and accurate account of the evolution of the large leg of elephantiasis, which he clearly differentiates from true leprosy, describing the successive attacks of fever, the lymphangitis

and lymphadenitis, and the swelling of the limb, which, gradually becoming permanent and slowly increasing, produces the well-known condition.

He was ably supported in 1784 by Hendy, who, in a subsequent treatise in 1789, gave the first full account we have been able to trace of the development of elephantiasis of the scrotum, which he clearly recognized to be the same disease as that affecting the legs. He describes and figures an elephantiasis of the scrotum 24 inches in height and 6 feet in circumference at its base, and he further notes cases of spontaneous cure by sloughing. In 1809 and again in 1824, Alard wrote most excellent treatises on the elephantiasis of the Arabs.

In 1812 Chapotin was the first to describe hæmatochyluria in Mauritius, and he was followed by Salese in 1832, whose paper aroused so much interest in Brazil, where the disease had for long been well known, that in 1835 a conference on the subject was held in Rio de Janeiro, after which there were many investigations, among which may be mentioned those of Rayer in 1838, Quevenne in 1839, Sigurd in 1844, and Mozaé-Azema in 1858, the last-named observer reporting it in Réunion. In 1854 Jamsetjee described lymph scrotum. The result of all this work was to produce a consensus of opinion among Brazilian, French, and Indian physicians that hæmatochyluria and elephantiasis were merely different aspects of the same disease, and at the same time the classical researches of Danielssen and Boeck in 1848 on leprosy, and of V. Carter in 1860 on mycetoma, ended the confusion of these two diseases with elephantiasis.

In 1863 Demarquay, in Paris, discovered a *Microfilaria* in the fluid from a hydrocele in a person who had come from Havana, but this discovery passed unnoticed at the time. In 1866 Wucherer, stimulated by the discovery of *Schistosoma hæmatobium* in hæmaturia in Egypt, found a *Microfilaria* in the urine of a case of hæmaturia in Brazil, but at first thought it to be of no importance; but when, after two years of careful work, he regularly found the same small worm in the urine of persons suffering from hæmatochyluria, he published his discovery in 1868, in the same year in which Lewis independently found the same parasite in the urine of a case of chyluria in India. Lewis also found the same small worm in the blood and lymph of persons suffering from elephantiasis of the leg, and concluded that it was the cause of the chyluria and the elephantiasis. In 1876 Winckel found the same small parasite in the fluid from a case of chylous ascites.

In 1876-77 Bancroft discovered adult female worms in a lymphatic abscess in the arm, and in a hydrocele of the cord, and these worms were later described by Cobbold, who gave them the name *Filaria bancrofti*. About the same time Manson found the *Microfilaria* in the lymph from the enlarged lymphatics of a lymph scrotum and from varicose lymphatic glands, and suspected that the so-called malarial orchitis must be of filarial origin. He also obtained a female worm from a case of elephantiasis of the scrotum, and in 1879 Lewis found pieces of male and female worms; while in 1888 Sibthorpe obtained perfect specimens of a male and female from a lymph scrotum, the former being described by Bourne. Lastly, in 1898, Maitland drew attention to the occurrence of synovitis in cases of filariasis, which he considered could not be looked upon as accidental, and must be held to be of filarial origin, but this view cannot be regarded as proved.

In this way arose the knowledge that the causation of a form of lymphangitis, of lymphatic abscesses, of varices of lymphatics, and of lymph glands, of hæmatochyluria, of chylous extravasations, and of elephantiasis, was the invasion of the body by *Filaria bancrofti* Cobbold 1877.

In the meanwhile the epoch-making discovery of the agency of the mosquito in the dissemination of *Filaria bancrofti* was made by Manson in 1878, as well as the periodicity of the *Microfilaria*, which only appear in the blood in large numbers at night, and in 1899 he discovered that they retire to the vessels of the lungs during the day. With regard to this periodicity, Bahr has shown that it does not depend upon the human host, but upon the habits of the insect host being nocturnal when the host is *Culex fatigans*, and nocturnal and diurnal when the host is *Stegomyia pseudo-scutellaris*, which is a day-feeding

mosquito. Thorpe's view with regard to the diurnal and nocturnal periodicity is that it is caused by the irregular habits of the human hosts, but this latter theory has not been supported by Fülleborn's observations on Samoan natives. Low, Grassi, Noé, and Fülleborn, have supplied the information as to the method by which the *Filaria* escapes from the mosquito and enters man during the act of biting. While, therefore, much has been done to elucidate the nature of the lesions due to the worm, researches are still required with regard to the method by which the worms produce the various pathological phenomena attributed to them, especially elephantiasis, and the rôle of a secondary bacterial infection in the production of the lymphangitis, abscesses, and elephantiasis.

The morbid anatomy has been investigated by but few observers, notably by Mackenzie, Manson, Low, Young, and Bahr.

Climatology.—The fact that ancient Indian writers were acquainted with elephantiasis of the leg and scrotum, while Celsus does not appear to have known the disease, and the further fact, mentioned by both Hillary and Hendy, that elephantiasis was rare in Barbados at the beginning of the eighteenth century, together with Hillary's views that the disease was introduced into that island by negro slaves from Africa, awaken suspicions that the endemic home of filariasis is Asia, and that it has spread from thence to Africa, and from Africa to America. If this gradual dissemination of filariasis is correct, it may explain many features of the epidemiology which are difficult at the present time to comprehend.

Be this as it may, filariasis is now widely distributed throughout the tropics and the subtropics, extending from about 41° N. to about 28° S. in the Eastern Hemisphere, and from about 31° N. to about 23° S. in the Western Hemisphere.

In *Asia* it is known in Arabia, India, Ceylon, Burma, Indo-China, the Philippine Islands, Guam, China, and Japan.

It is known in *Australasia*, especially in Queensland, and in Oceania, especially in Fiji, in Samoa and the Friendly Islands, but is absent in the Sandwich Islands. It is also known in New Guinea.

In *America* it occurs in the Southern United States, in Central America, the West Indies, in Guiana, Venezuela, Brazil, Peru, and Columbia.

In *Africa* it is common on the West Coast, in South Africa, East Africa, Madagascar, Réunion, Mauritius, Morocco, and Egypt and Northern Africa.

In *Europe* it is said to exist near Barcelona and in Turkey.

In these countries its distribution is unequal, being in general more common along sea-coasts and the banks of large rivers, but presenting peculiar circumscribed endemic areas. Thus, Daniels points out that in the Shiré Highlands filariasis and elephantiasis are only found in immigrants, while along the lower Shiré River both are common.

Still more interesting is his observation that at the southern end of Lake Nyassa there was only one case of filariasis met with, and none of elephantiasis, while at the northern extremity both were frequently seen.

The distribution must depend upon the presence or absence of mosquitoes capable of disseminating the worm, but this aspect of the epidemiology still requires a considerable amount of research; further, the distribution of the suitable mosquitoes must depend upon many factors concerning which we are quite ignorant. When these conditions are better understood, the climatology will be rendered more explicable.

Two atmospheric conditions—viz., high air-temperature and considerable atmospheric humidity—have long been known to be associated with the prevalence of filariasis and elephantiasis, and the reason of this has recently been explained by Fülleborn's experiments on *Dirofilaria immitis*. This observer found, as the result of most careful experiments, that the *Dirofilaria* developed better in mosquitoes if the air-temperature was high, and in that respect resembled the malarial parasite; and, further, that at high temperatures the *Dirofilaria* are able to leave the proboscis more easily, and to penetrate the skin more quickly than at a low temperature.

Further, the moisture in the air is of importance, as the *Dirofilaria* passes from the proboscis on to the skin, and either makes its own way through this into the tissues, or enters the aperture of the mosquito's bite after it has withdrawn its stilettes, and, therefore, has to be for some time in contact with the skin, which, if dry, will have a harmful effect upon it, but if moist, will not be injurious to it.

With reference to Fiji, Bahr concludes that it is possible that at one time or another nearly every Fijian is the subject of filariasis, because 27·1 per cent. were found to harbour *Microfilaria* in their blood, and adult worms could be found in the lymphatics and other tissues, and others (25·4 per cent.) were found to suffer from filarial disease when no *Microfilaria* could be found in the blood; and, lastly, in patients while still under observation the *Microfilaria* have disappeared from the blood.

Ætiology.—The causation of the various pathological phenomena mentioned above is *F. bancrofti* Cobbold 1877, introduced into the body by the bite of a mosquito.

The known carriers of the worm, as given by Theobald, are *Culex fatigans* Wiedemann 1828, *Mansonia uniformis* Theobald 1901, *M. pseudotitillans* Theobald, *Pyretophorus costalis* Loew 1866, *Myzomia rossii* Giles 1899, *Myzorhynchus nigerrimus* Giles, *M. minutus* Theobald 1903, *Cellia albimana* Wiedemann 1821, *Stegomyia pseudo-scutellaris* Theobald 1910, while the worm is known to be capable of undergoing a part of its development in certain other mosquitoes already mentioned in Chapter XXIV.

The reason of non-completion of full development in any and every mosquito is not known.

After development in the thoracic muscles of the mosquito the embryo passes into the labium, and when the mosquito bites, it works its way through Dutton's membrane on to the skin, its passage being favoured, according to Fülleborn, by high air-temperatures

and moist conditions of the skin. Arrived on the skin, it may work its own way into the body through the skin like an *Agchylostoma* embryo; or it may enter through the aperture of the mosquito-bite when the stilettes have been removed, for before this takes place it is impossible for it to pass through this aperture, which is completely filled by these appendages.

Its further history and wanderings in the body are quite unknown until the adult condition is reached. The adults (males and females) are generally found lying together, though the females appear to be in preponderant numbers in lymphatic vessels, but they can also be found in the lymphatic glands; while dead and calcified worms have been found not merely in lymphatic glands, but also in the testes, epididymis, spermatic cord, and tunica vaginalis. Here the female produces the thin *Microfilaria*, which pass through the lymphatic glands and thoracic duct into the blood stream, in which they are found in large numbers at night, retiring in the day-time mostly into the bloodvessels of the lungs.

When taken into the mosquito's stomach they escape from their enclosing egg-shell, and, entering the thoracic muscles, complete the cycle of development.

It is interesting to note that in various parts of the tropics natives believe that elephantiasis and other filarial diseases may be transmitted through sexual intercourse.

The adults lying in the lymphatic vessels may mechanically cause obstruction to the flow of lymph, and thus produce varices, inflammation of vessels and glands, and if the varicose vessels rupture, extravasation of lymph or chyle.

While this ætiological relationship of the worm to the lymphangitis and lymphatic abscesses, to the varices in lymphatics and lymphatic glands, to hæmato-chyluria and chylous extravasations, is admitted by all observers, there are those who doubt this relationship with regard to elephantiasis. These authors base their objections upon the facts that the worm and its larvæ may be absent in well-developed cases, and that the disease can occur in countries in which filariasis is believed not to be present, both of which are quite true, but are capable of explanation. There is an undoubted general relationship between the number of cases of filariasis and of elephantiasis in a district. Where there is no filariasis, elephantiasis is either extremely rare or unknown; where there is abundant filariasis, there are also many cases of elephantiasis.

In investigating this point in a locality care must be taken to exclude immigrant cases of both filariasis and elephantiasis. Thus, Low failed to find either condition in the inhabitants of the forests of British Guiana and in the Wagandas, natives of Uganda, though immigrant cases were met with.

The adult *Filaria* has been found in the tissues removed by operation from a case of elephantiasis of the scrotum; and, further, the condition of elephantiasis is produced as a rule by a series of

attacks of lymphangitis, which in every particular resemble undoubted filarial lymphangitis.

It is true that a secondary bacterial infection may possibly assist the development of the disease, for a diplococcus has been found by Dufogeré, which he calls the 'lymphococcus,' and his findings have been confirmed by Foulerton. Le Dantec describes a similar organism, which he calls the 'dermatococcus'; but the main cause of elephantiasis in the tropics is *Filaria bancrofti*, though it is quite possible that, exceptionally, other causes may lead to occlusion of lymphatics and the formation of elephantiasis.

Pathology.—If the parent-worms live in positions in which they do not obstruct the flow of the lymph, and if they are not accidentally injured, no pathological effects will be produced on the host; and our observations support Manson's theory that the presence of the worms may produce no ill-effect upon the host, for we know of a case where for years they have produced no symptoms.

But if the parent-worms obstruct the circulation of the lymph mechanically—for example, when three or four come together in an important main lymphatic trunk—then the retained lymph is certain by mechanical pressure to damage the tributary channels. Further, if any accidental injury is inflicted upon the female parent-worm, this may cause abortion, and as a result the production of oval eggs instead of elongated embryos (Fig. 195), and these, as will be explained below, are liable to block up the small lymph channels of the skin or of a lymphatic gland. Therefore Low is quite correct in his statement that 'the *Filaria* is not entirely compatible with health,' for very slight causes will produce disease.

In certain districts from 5 to 27 per cent. of the population is infected with filariasis, and therefore if there are many mosquitoes capable of carrying the worm, there ought to be multiple infection of the individual host; and one would also assume that the heavier the infection, the greater the liability to obvious disease. Multiple infection would be more liable to occur in natives than in Europeans. As a matter of fact, heavy infections with the parent-worms have not yet been described, though it must be admitted that but few post-mortem examinations are on record; and, moreover, as Fülleborn has shown, it is at times by no means easy, even with the utmost care, to find the adult worms, though they may be found even in fair numbers after considerable search in those parts of the lymphatic system which appear to be least affected. When the case is one of varicose lymphatics, or lymphatic glands with clear lymph, the obstruction must be looked for below the junction of the lacteals with the receptaculum chyli, but when the fluid is milky, it is obvious that the obstruction must be beyond this point.

The cause of the obstruction may be a coiled-up mass of worms—e.g., Young found six females and one male in such a bundle—and they may be discovered behind a valve or in a dilated sinus. A

single female worm may, however, be found lying in a dilated lymphatic, the draining gland being probably blocked by the aborted ova. The irritation caused by the worms may lead to a permanent blocking of a main lymph channel, which will persist even after the irritating worms have died and disappeared, as has been observed by Mackenzie; or, again, the thoracic duct may be found dilated in part of its course, but quite patent throughout, though associated with enormous varicose glands and vessels and a complete absence of worms, which simply means that the parasites having caused the lesions have died and disappeared.

Bahr has shown that the worms lead to great fibrosis in the glands, and that lymphocytes are collected in clusters between the strands of this tissue. This fibrosis is associated with an excessive number of eosinophile cells in the glandular substance.

In chylous extravasations the blocking of the thoracic duct leads to engorgement of the renal, the lumbar, and the pelvic lymphatic channels with lymph, as well as that of engorgement and dilatation of the lacteal vessels themselves.

If the lymphatic vessels of the bladder or other parts of the urinary tract rupture as a consequence of this pressure, the result will be chyluria, and if, as often happens, some bloodvessels also rupture, there will be hæmato-chyluria. Wise states that in chyluria the milky opacity is due to a large amount of proteid, and not to fat, and this observation has been confirmed by Low, who in one case found the lacteals normal, and showed that the milky fluid was lymph proceeding from dilated lymphatics in the kidneys, ureter, and bladder. If the abdominal lymphatics rupture, there will be chylous ascites; if those of the tunica vaginalis, there will be chylocele.

If, on the other hand, the obstruction is posterior to the junction of the lacteals with the receptaculum chyli, then ordinary ascites, hydrocele, and varicose lymphatics of the scrotum (lymph scrotum), of the leg, and varicose groin glands, will result. More rarely the lymphatics of the arm may be affected in the same manner.

The lowered resistance of the tissues engorged with lymph renders them specially liable to inflammation, which may at times go on to abscess-formation, and which, if often repeated, will end in elephantiasis.

Manson believes that elephantiasis arises by a damage to the female worm, causing her to produce immature embryos, which lie coiled up in the egg-shell, instead of stretching it considerably. The immature egg is $50\ \mu$ in length by $34\ \mu$ in breadth, while the fully-developed *Microfilaria* is 250 to 300 μ in length by 7 to 8 μ in breadth; therefore it is not difficult to imagine that a lymphatic, along which the slim *Microfilaria* passes with ease, might be quite blocked by the immature egg, and that if sufficient channels in the skin or in the lymphatic glands were blocked, lymph stasis would occur, and, as a result, the connective tissues would become inflamed and hypertrophied, which, together with the excess of lymph,

would increase the size of the part. Manson bases this theory on his observation of eggs escaping from the ruptured vesicles of a lymph scrotum. Bahr is of the opinion that tropical elephantiasis can best be explained by the blockage of the lymphatic channels of the diseased area by the frequent and long-continued invasion of the adult *Filaria*. He finds that the *Microfilaria* may not reach the blood, but die in the gland or organ in which they are lying. He also finds that the periodical discharge of these *Microfilaria* may be a factor in the production of lymphangitis, orchitis, and funiculitis, and that the parent-worm may die after these inflammatory attacks.

It is believed that the smooth elephantiasis (elephantiasis glabra), in which the skin is smooth, is due to blocking of the channels in the groin glands, and rough elephantiasis (elephantiasis verrucosa), in which the skin is very nodular, is due to blocking of the small skin capillaries, but we are not acquainted with definite proofs of this theory.

The Blood.—The blood in filariasis does not exhibit anæmia unless there is hæmato-chyluria or diarrhœa; the number of leucocytes is normal, but there may be leucocytosis during the attacks of fever. The eosinophiles are at times increased.

Morbid Anatomy.—The morbid anatomy naturally varies with the variety of the pathological lesion produced.

In lymphangitis the lymphatic vessels will be found enlarged and inflamed, and abscesses of varying size may at times be found containing the dead worms, which are apt to become calcified by the deposition of lamellar plates of calcium carbonate in the interior of the worm. The calcified worms were first described by Wise as small yellow bodies, with the shape and structure of *Filaria*, which he found in the pelvis of the kidney. Bahr states that at a later stage the calcareous deposit may be gradually absorbed until only minute yellow spicules are left. The calcified (and also the living) worms are surrounded by eosinophile cells in large numbers. Bahr has found filarial abscesses to be of common occurrence amongst the Fijians in the substance of the gastrocnemius, the popliteal space, the groin, and in the quadriceps extensor in the leg, and over the internal condyle, in the axilla, in the latissimus dorsi and serratus magnus muscles in the arm. In these abscesses the dead worm was found associated with *Staphylococcus pyogenes aureus* and *Streptococcus pyogenes*.

With regard to the lymphatic vessel, Bahr is of the opinion that the worm, both during its lifetime as well as after its death, exerts an influence on the vessel wall, leading to proliferation of the endothelium and to an invasion of the vessel wall with fibrous tissue. In this manner the lymphatic becomes thickened, but shows also numerous cyst-like dilatations in which the dead worms may be found.

The fugitive swellings found in filariasis have been proved by Young to be composed of dilated lymphatic tissue. Inflammatory

masses adherent to the skin in various parts of the body have been found to contain the adult worm.

In lymphatic varix or varicose lymphatic glands the obvious lesions may, and generally do, form part of a much larger dilatation of the pelvic and lumbar lymph vessels and glands. The vessels are found enormously dilated with thickened walls, while the glands are riddled with dilated channels. At first the appearance of the gland may not be much altered, and on section it may show the appearance of a sieve riddled with holes, but in more advanced cases all appearance of a lymphatic gland disappears, and it is transformed into a large sac divided by fibrous tissue, septated into numerous compartments.

In chylous extravasations the thoracic duct may or may not be found impervious, but in any case the lacteals, the lumbar, pelvic, pudendal, and crural lymph vessels will be found enormously dilated, and the lumbar lymph glands converted into septated sacs. The site of the ruptured lymphatics is, however, by no means easy to find.

In elephantiasis the lymphatic vessels will be found dilated and thickened, and in early cases a round-celled infiltration may be seen in the connective tissue of the part ; but in later cases this has led to a hypertrophy of the connective tissues of the skin and the fasciæ, including those around the muscles, the vessels, and nerves, while all the tissues are sodden with retained lymph. The muscles of the affected regions are found to be in a state of fatty degeneration ; the bones may be thickened and covered with osteophytes, or more rarely atrophied, and still more rarely invaded by caseous abscesses.

Microscopically the epidermis may be normal, or thickened with atrophied or elongated papillæ ; the sweat glands and hair-follicles may or may not be degenerate.

In cutting into the tissue of a region affected with elephantiasis the skin may be noted to be thickened, and below it there will be found dense fibrous trabeculæ, with the spaces filled with yellow, oily, fatty substance, which exudes lymph, while the vessels and nerves will be found much increased in size.

The Clinical Description.—The clinical description of the various lesions will be arranged under the headings Filarial Fever, Filarial Lymphangitis, Orchitis, Lymphangiectasis, Phlebectasis, Varicose Lymphatic Glands, Chylous Effusions, and Elephantiasis of various parts of the body—*e.g.*, scrotum, leg, etc.—and, finally, a few remarks will be made with regard to rarer lesions.

FILARIAL LYMPHANGITIS.

Synonyms.—Elephantoid fever, Liliwa (Fijian term for a rigor), fever and ague (Barbadoes).

Definition.—Filarial lymphangitis is an inflammation of lymphatic vessels in any part of the body caused by *Filaria bancrofti*.

Remarks.—Attacks of lymphangitis, associated with an erysipelatous eruption of the skin, are extremely common in the tropics, and are often of a filarial nature, and by their repeated recurrences produce elephantiasis.

Symptomatology.—The attack often begins with a shivering fit, and a rise of temperature to any degree from 101° to 104° F., with vomiting and headache. In some cases there is no pain in the affected area, but a careful examination, or the sensation of pain on the part of the patient, will lead to the discovery of a red oedematous area of skin, from which the inflamed lymphatic may be noted extending towards the nearest lymphatic glands, which may or may not be inflamed and painful. Usually the temperature falls quickly in a couple of days to normal, and does not rise again, though it may be several days before the erysipelatous rash disappears and the lymphatics return to normal.

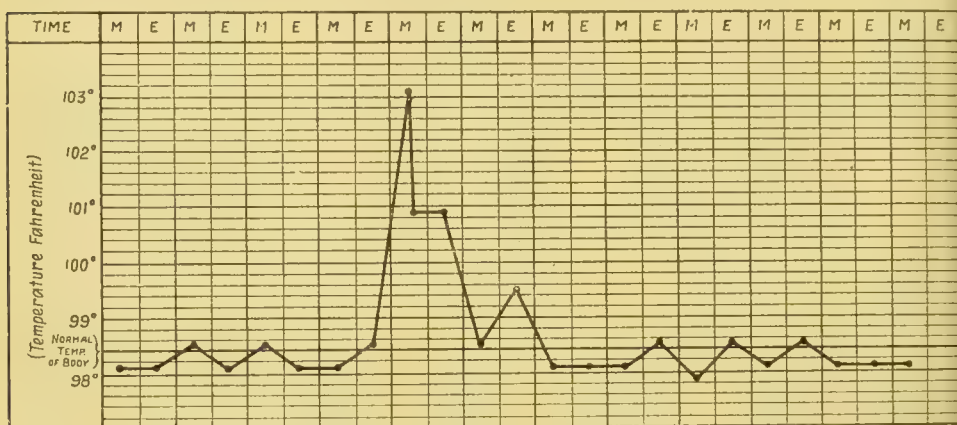


FIG. 466.—TEMPERATURE CHART OF A CASE OF ELEPHANTIASIS OF THE LEG DURING AN ATTACK OF FILARIAL FEVER.

Complications.—Rarely does this condition go on to abscess, which may be caused by a dead filarial worm or a secondary infection.

Sequelæ.—Sometimes, after the acute inflammation has subsided, a lymphatic can be felt as a hardened cord, which, if excised, will be found to contain adult *Filaria*.

Diagnosis.—The only condition which could reasonably be mistaken for this affection is a caterpillar sting, which closely resembles it in all details. The history of the case will indicate the correct diagnosis.

Treatment.—The treatment consists of rest in bed, a mild purgative, and a little phenacetin and caffeine to relieve the headache, while some of the old authors advise arsenic or tinctura ferri perchloridi, m x. xx. , given three times a day, well diluted. Locally, at first lead and opium lotion, and later an ointment, composed of ichthyol and lanoline, gives relief. If an abscess forms, it must be evacuated and treated on ordinary principles.

FILARIAL ORCHITIS AND HYDROCELE.

This complaint begins with pains in the testicle, fever, and at times rigor, pains in the back and lower part of the abdomen and groins, and bilious vomiting. The testicle enlarges, and is tender and painful, while an effusion forms in the tunica vaginalis of either lymph or chyle. The lymph thrown out is at first inflammatory, and may coagulate, and is usually absorbed after the fever subsides, but may persist and form a filarial hydrocele. The effusion of chyle is, however, more usually permanent, and forms one of the varieties of chylocele to be mentioned later.

Treatment.—The treatment consists of rest in bed and the application of lead and opium lotion, and cool applications, together with fairly vigorous purgation of the bowels.

FILARIAL LYMPHANGIECTASIS.

Synonyms.—Lymphatic varix, Lymph scrotum.

Definition.—Filarial lymphangiectasis is the dilatation of lymph vessels brought about by obstruction to the flow of lymph, due to the presence of *Filaria bancrofti*.

Remarks.—Filarial lymphangiectasis can, of course, take place in any part of the body, but the most common situations are in the

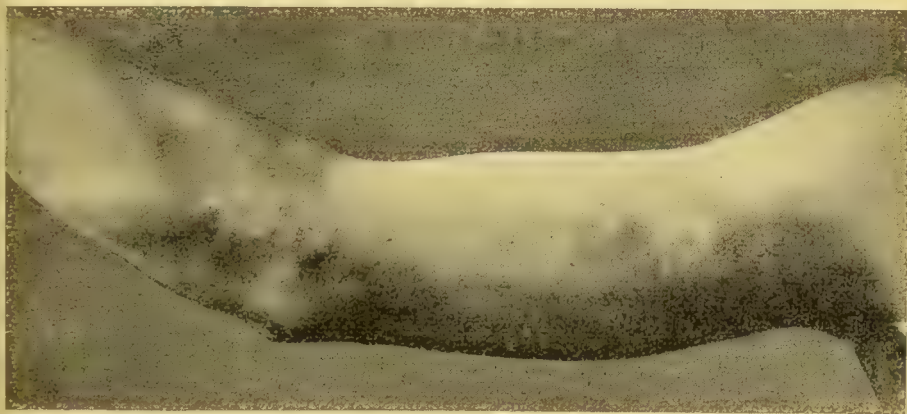


FIG. 467.—FILARIAL LYMPHANGIECTASIS.

scrotum, where it is called 'lymph scrotum,' in the spermatic cord, in the leg, and in the arm.

Symptomatology.—In the scrotum the affection begins with an attack of fever, associated with redness, swelling, and pain in that region. When the fever has subsided, the whole scrotum is found swollen and elastic. It may be smooth or rugose, and on inspection the skin shows a number of small clear vesicles, which, if ruptured, discharge either lymph or chyle containing filarial embryos, or, much more rarely, eggs.

If the vesicles are ruptured, the discharge of lymph may be quite considerable in the twenty-four hours, and may produce such marked exhaustion in the patient as to necessitate an operation.

In the spermatic cord the disease begins with pain and swelling in the testicle, cord, and lower part of the abdomen, associated at times with fever. When the acute symptoms have subsided, a swelling like a varicocele, which disappears in the prone position and reappears when standing erect, will be noticed along the cord, but the vessels constituting the swelling will be noted to be softer, less tortuous, and more like a series of pouches than a true varicocele.

In lymphangitis of the leg there is the same fever, with swelling of the glands, leaving a soft swelling in the groin, which disappears



FIG. 468.—FILARIAL LYMPHANGIECTASIS.

on lying down and reappears on standing up, and which has no impulse on coughing.

Treatment.—As the local condition is simply part of a much more generalized varicosity of the lymphatic vessels, it is best to treat it symptomatically with antiseptic dusting-powders, such as boracic acid, zinc oxide, and dermatol, etc.

If, however, lymphorrhagia is taking place and the patient is becoming exhausted, it is necessary to remove some of the diseased tissue and to ligate the dilated vessels, but in so doing it is as well to warn the patient that this will not cure the disease, and, indeed, may be followed by elephantiasis or even chyluria.

FILARIAL ABSCESES.

Manson, Low, Wise, Bahr and others have called attention to the frequency of filarial abscesses in various parts of the body. The most important are those found in the thorax and in the retro-peritoneal tissues. In the latter situation the symptoms may be those of peritonitis.



FIG. 469.—FILARIAL PHLEBECTASIS SIMULATING VARICOSE LYMPHATIC GLANDS, AND VARICOCELE: PATIENT IN THE UPRIGHT POSITION.



FIG. 470.—FILARIAL PHLEBECTASIS: SAME PATIENT LYING DOWN.
(Photograph taken from above. Note the disappearance of the swellings.)

FILARIAL PHLEBECTASIS (FILARIAL VARIX).

At times persons suffering from filariasis exhibit, as observed by us, marked varicose conditions of various veins. Occasionally in association with enlarged superficial veins large masses are to be

seen in the axilla, groins, and other regions, which on superficial examination might be taken for enlarged glands, but on palpation it can be ascertained that they are composed of veins, the same sensation being obtained as that experienced when palpating a varicocele. When these masses occur in the groins they disappear when the patient lies down.

VARICOSE LYMPHATIC GLANDS.

Synonyms.—*Helminthoma elastica*, *Adenolymphoceles*.

Definition.—Varicose lymphatic glands are glands enlarged, sometimes to an enormous extent, by dilatation of their lymph paths, brought about by obstruction to the flow of lymph.

Remarks.—The glands most commonly found enlarged in patients are the groin glands, less frequently those of the axillæ, while even the parotid lymphatic gland has been recorded to have been affected. In post-mortems, as already noted, the lumbar glands may be found converted into septated sacs.

Symptomatology.—The glands enlarge after attacks of fever, and are usually found as soft, elastic swellings, which are easily movable when small, and are covered with normal skin. They are found in the groin, inguinal or femoral regions, and in the axilla. If punctured with a hypodermic needle, lymph or chyle can be obtained at times containing *Microfilaria*. Usually small, they may assume enormous proportions, reaching below the knee, and seriously impeding locomotion.

Treatment.—They may be removed if necessary, but this should not be done without due cause, as they are only part of a more widespread disorder. Radium treatment has been advised by Sir Havelock Charles.

FILARIAL LYMPH AND CHYLOUS EXTRAVASATIONS.

Lymph and chylous extravasations are due to the rupture of dilated lymph or lacteal vessels into the urinary passages, the bowel, the tunica vaginalis, or peritoneum.

They may, therefore, be considered under the headings of Chyluria and Lymphuria, Chylous and Lymphatic Diarrhœa, Chylocele, and Chylous Ascites. Perhaps further investigations will show that Wise and Low are correct, and that in addition to hæmato-chyluria and other chylous conditions there may also be a pure hæmato-lymphuria, lymphatic diarrhœa, lymphocele, and lymphatic ascites.

Chyluria and Lymphuria.

Definition.—Chyluria is the passage of chyle with the urine, and is due to the rupture of dilated chyle-containing lymphatic vessels; when mixed with blood it is known as hæmato-chyluria. When lymph only is passed the term lymphuria, suggested by Low, should be adopted, and if mixed with blood, hæmato-lymphuria.

Pathology.—This has been worked out principally by Mackenzie and Manson, and more recently by Low and Wise. The presence of chyle in the urine is due to the rupture of dilated chyle-containing lymphatic vessels. Owing to some obstruction in the thoracic duct with varicosity of lymphatics below the seat of obstruction, the lymphatics in the bladder walls become dilated and rupture, and so the chyle passes into the bladder.

Low has demonstrated that *lymphuria* takes place when the blockage of the lymphatics is below the thoracic duct and receptaculum chyli. Chemically the only difference between lymph and mesenteric lymph or chyle is that the latter contains a much larger amount of fat, which is derived from the lacteals of the intestine. According to Delamere, the fat contained in lymph does not exceed 35 per cent., while in chyle it may be as much as 65 per cent.

Symptomatology.—The onset of the attack is usually abrupt, without marked symptoms, though vague pains may be felt, and at times there may be fever, pains in back, perinæum, and thighs. Usually, however, the patient simply asks advice because he is passing milky or bloody urine.

As a rule the urine clears in the course of time, but it is merely an intermission, and the symptoms will in due course recur, and intermissions and attacks will follow each other for years; on the other hand, however, it may be continuous, and not intermittent. The duration of the intermissions may be days, months, or years, while the attacks may be attributed to exertion or emotion. After continuing for some time it may lead to exhaustion, neuralgic pains in different parts of the body, disordered bowels, coated tongue, dry, harsh skin, and a state of cachexia.

If the urine clots in the bladder, there may be severe pain and strangury. The urine generally presents the appearance of milk, but may be pinkish in colour from admixture with blood, and a large portion may clot into a semitransparent gelatinous mass. It is usually passed in fair quantity, and it will be noticed that the morning urine is usually very clear, while that at night is much more milky or red. On standing, in true chyluria, the fat accumulates on the surface, giving rise to a cream-like appearance. Under the microscope, as a rule, no fatty globules, however minute, are observed, but white corpuscles, especially lymphocytes, and red corpuscles, and at times *Microfilaria* and crystals of calcium oxalate may be seen. The specific gravity is low, varying from 1015 to 1020. The reaction is usually acid. On shaking the urine with ether, the fat can be removed and estimated, when it will be found to vary from 0.6 to 3.3 per cent. After the removal of the fat, the urine can be tested for albumin, which is always present, and which usually persists for some time after the fat has disappeared. The quantity of albumin varies from 0.6 to 0.9 per cent. Albumoses and sugars are absent.

When the urine does not contain any distinct amount of fat one speaks of lymphuria, and if blood is present hæmato-lymphuria. The

same patient may have at times attacks of chyluria and hæmato-chyluria, and at other times attacks of lymphuria and hæmato-lymphuria.

Treatment.—The treatment is purely symptomatic, and consists of rest in bed, lying as much as possible in the prone position, while in some cases methylene blue may be given in 2-grain doses, together with salol, 5 grains, or urotropine in 5-grain cachets. The diet must be bland, non-irritating. Astringent injections into the bladder have been used, and gallic acid, nitrate of silver, acetate of lead, iodide of potassium, and thymol have been administered internally, but have not been found to be efficacious. Indeed, there is no justification for their use. Administration of quinine, combined with exposure to X rays, has been recommended by Musgrave and McDill.

If the urine clots in the bladder, it must be washed out under chloroform by means of an aspirator, and if this is not successful, the bladder may have to be opened and drained.

Chylous and Lymph Diarrhœa.

Diarrhœa with chyle or lymph and blood in the motions has been recorded, but is rare.

Chylocele or Lymphocele.

This may develop gradually, the tunica vaginalis filling up with an opaque fluid, which on tapping is found to be chylous, and may contain *Microfilaria*. It may, however, be preceded by an attack of fever and orchitis. It is said that the sac is less tense in the morning, and more so at night.

Treatment.—A chylocele does not grow to any large size, and only requires occasional tapping.

Chylous Ascites.

Chylous ascites is rarely met with in human beings, though we have seen two cases. It is common in animals as the result of filarial infection.

ELEPHANTIASIS.

Synonyms.—Elephant Leg, Cochin Leg, Barbadoes Leg, Galle Leg, Glandular Disease of Barbadoes, Elephantiasis Arabum, Da-Fil, Dau-ool-Fil, Pes Febricitans, Perical, Phlegmasia Malabarica, Elephantiasis Indica, Bucnemia Tropica, Morbus Elephas, Spargosis Fibroareolaris, Pachydermia, Hernia Carnosa, Elephantiasis Tuberosa et Scrotalis, Hypersarcosis, Mal de Cayenne, Sarcocèle d'Egypte, Roosbeen von Surinam, Shlipada, Kosharriddki, Barawa (Sinhalese).

Definition.—Elephantiasis is a chronic inflammatory hypertrophy of the fibrous connective tissue of a region of the body induced by

lymph stasis, and resulting in a considerable hypertrophy of the skin and subcutaneous tissues.

Varieties.—The most common varieties of elephantiasis are the affection of the leg, scrotum, vulva, arm, and breast, while other regions are much more rarely affected. The different varieties must now be briefly described.



FIG. 471.—ELEPHANTIASIS OF THE LEGS.

Elephantiasis of the Leg.

During attacks of filarial lymphangitis of the leg it is noticed that the limb becomes swollen, and though after the first attack it may resume its normal size, this does not happen after repeated successive attacks, and gradually the limb becomes more and more swollen, while the natural folds, especially the ankle fold, become much exaggerated by the swelling on either side, so that deep sulci are formed. The dorsum of the foot becomes swollen and puffy,

and is separated by the deep ankle sulcus from the swollen lower part of the leg. In these sulci the débris of the cast-off epithelium, together with the excretions of the skin, accumulate and give rise to a foul-smelling discharge, and ulcers may form. At first the skin is smooth and soft, forming the smooth variety of the complaint, which may persist, or it may become dark, hard, thick, and

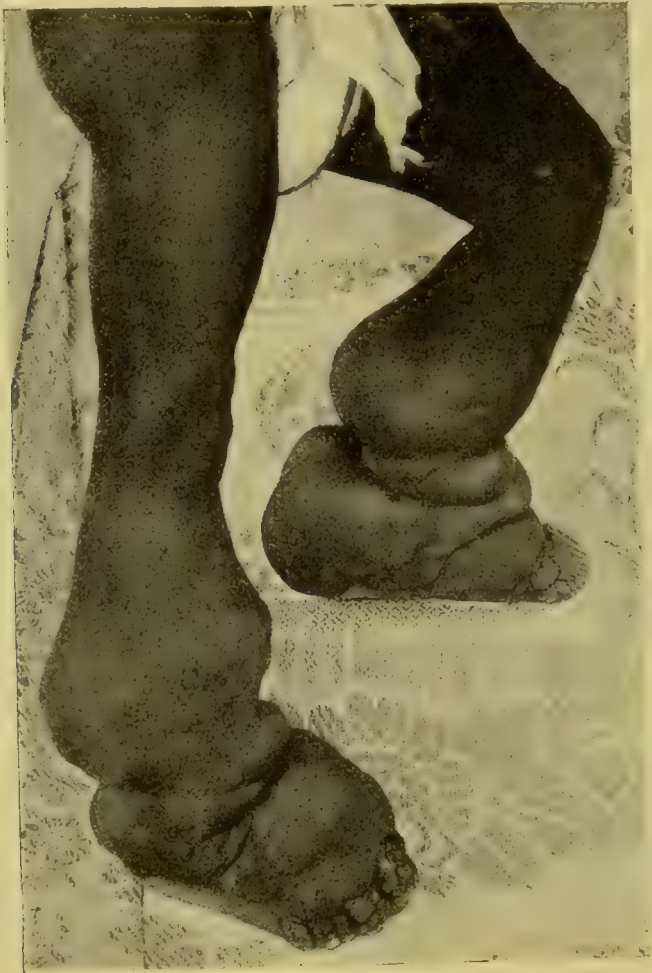


FIG. 472.—ELEPHANTIASIS OF THE LEGS.

rough, being elevated into bosses or warty elevations, forming the verrucose variety. The appendages now atrophy from malnutrition, the hairs may drop off, and the nails become rough and thickened, while the skin perspires less, and the sensibility is diminished. Ulcers may now form on almost any part of the foot. The swelling is more commonly met with below the knee, but the whole thigh may become implicated.

If left untreated, the size of the leg gradually increases with

repeated attacks of fever, and may reach considerable dimensions. After some years the attacks of fever may cease altogether, though the condition of the leg usually remains unchanged. In some rare cases elephantiasis may develop without the patient ever having an attack of fever.

Treatment.—A radical method of treatment has yet to be found. Of the various palliative ones the most satisfactory is perhaps that introduced by Castellani, which consists in keeping the patient at complete rest in bed, with thiosinnamin or fibrolysin injections and methodical bandaging. The details of the treatment are as follows : The patient is kept in bed and an injection of 2 to 4 c.c. of fibrolysin



FIG. 473.—ELEPHANTIASIS OF THE LEG: BEFORE TREATMENT.

Merk (which consists of thiosinnamin and salicylic acid dissolved in water) is given daily for three to six months, the injections being interrupted for a few days from time to time. The injections may be made in the affected parts, or deeply into the gluteal region, where they cause much less pain. After each injection the whole limb is tightly bandaged with flannel bandages, which are kept in place day and night. In some cases rubber bandages may be used with great advantage, especially in cases of verrucose elephantiasis, because they render the skin much smoother. Unfortunately, many patients cannot stand rubber bandaging. To increase the pressure on the hardest parts pads of inelastic material may be

applied before bandaging, and for this purpose small cylindrical gauze bags filled with ordinary small lead shot are found especially useful. In some cases massage of the whole limb before bandaging is useful. It is of the utmost importance that the pressure on the whole limb should be well distributed, otherwise the parts on which insufficient pressure has been made will be found to become swollen. It is also useful to keep the affected limb continually elevated by means of pillows, etc. In cases of verrucose elephantiasis in which the skin is covered with numerous horny masses, a spirit lotion of resorcin and salicylic acid (ac. salicylici, resorcin, āā gr. xxx. ; sp. rect., ñiv.) is useful in removing these horny masses.



FIG. 474.—THE SAME CASE AS IN FIG. 473: AFTER TREATMENT BY FIBRO-LYSIN AND BANDAGING, AND WITHOUT ANY OPERATIVE MEASURES.

In successful cases after three to six months of this treatment the affected parts are of much smaller size, the skin is smoother, more elastic, and can be pinched into folds. Long elliptical strips of the redundant skin and subcutaneous tissue may then be removed, the margins of the wound being stitched together. This would not be practicable before the medical treatment, as the skin being enormously thickened and inelastic, the coaptation of the opposed surfaces could not be obtained.

In our experience this treatment has generally only a slight and temporary effect in recent cases when the disease is in the acute

stage with frequent attacks of filarial fever. On the other hand, the treatment gives much better and more lasting results in old-standing cases, especially in those of the verrucose type, characterized by the enormous new formation of fibrous tissue and absence of fever. After treatment the patient should wear puttees or elastic stockings, and the rubber bandage should be applied from time to time.

Handley has treated cases by first preparing a vaccine from the diplococcus which he found in the blood, and administering this until the blood and lymph become sterile, and then performing his operation of 'lymphangioplasty,' by silk introduced by means of long probes, which are pushed along the subcutaneous tissues, through small incisions, until a path is made from the affected region to one with a normal lymph circulation. In the cases so far reported there was marked improvement at first after operation, but this did not last long. Madden and Ferguson report unfavourably on lymphangioplasty as a treatment for elephantiasis of the legs, as they find the temporary improvement not maintained, because the reactive changes in the tissues immediately around the thread eventually obliterate the new vessels.

Other methods of treatment consist in bandaging, massage, tapping with Southey tubes, and even amputation, but none of these are satisfactory.

Elephantiasis of the Scrotum.

The disease may begin as a lymph scrotum, or with recurring erysipelatous attacks, with a red inflammatory blush on the skin, and fever. After each attack the scrotum is larger than it was before, and it goes on growing, if left alone, until it may reach the weight of 224 pounds, as mentioned by Chevers, which is probably the largest ever described. When well developed it forms a triangular-shaped mass hanging down between the legs, with the base downwards, and the apex upwards towards the pubes. On its anterior and upper aspect there is an aperture which leads into a canal, formed by the inverted prepuce, at the bottom of which is the glans penis. The penis itself is buried in the tumour. The testicles are situated at the upper and back part of the tumour, and are usually surrounded by hydroceles.

If large, the base of the tumour is frequently ulcerated.



FIG. 475.—ELEPHANTIASIS OF THE SCROTUM.

Treatment.—The treatment is removal, which is a very easy operation, and very successful. Manson says that the mortality need not exceed 5 per cent.

The most important feature of the whole operation is to have the skin perfectly clean and aseptic, and to carefully choose the parts of the skin which are to be used as flaps.

An elastic tourniquet in a figure of eight is applied round the pelvis and the neck of the tumour. The skin flaps are now marked out and deepened, the vessels being carefully ligatured as they are exposed.

The testicles are then dissected by perpendicular cuts, and the penis is set free by dissection, after cutting down the canal already mentioned as formed by the prepuce. This is best done with a pair of scissors.

The general mass of elephantoid tissue is now cut away, gradually ligaturing the vessels as the cutting process goes on, this preventing the omission of any of the vessels. The tourniquet is now loosened, and any bleeding spot secured.

If there are hydroceles present, these are opened, and the sac turned inside out, and after any redundancy has been removed, it is stitched around the testicle in the inverted condition. The flaps are now brought together and stitched over the testes, a drain of some description being introduced at the lower portion of the wound if this is considered to be necessary. Skin flaps should, if possible, be made for the penis; failing this, the raw area must be covered with protective, and allowed to granulate. The whole wound must now be antiseptically dressed, and usually heals without difficulty.

Elephantiasis of the Vulva.

This arises in the same manner as elephantiasis of the scrotum, and may affect the labia majora or the clitoris. It is, however, very rare. The tumour, according to Manson, may weigh 8 to 10 pounds, or more. The treatment is removal.

Elephantiasis of the Breast.

Elephantiasis of the breast is very rare, but does occur, and the enlarged breast may reach to the pubes or the knee. It may affect one or both breasts. The treatment is removal.

Elephantiasis of the Arm.

This is rare, but may arise in the same manner as in the leg. One arm or both arms may be affected. Bahr reports that the natives of Fiji and probably of other South Pacific Islands are, in comparison with natives of other regions, peculiarly liable to this form of elephantiasis.



FIG. 476.—ELEPHANTIASIS OF THE LABIUM.

Elephantiasis of the Scalp.

Rarely the whole scalp is enormously thickened, and presents deep furrows.

Circumscribed Elephantiasis.

Large pendulous tumours of filarial origin, one to several, may be found.

RARER AFFECTIONS.

Lewis has recorded a case of filariasis in which chyle containing *Microfilaria* was discharged from both conjunctivæ, while Maitland has described cases of acute synovitis of the knee associated with filariasis as being of too frequent occurrence to be looked upon as merely coincidences.

REFERENCES.

- ALORD (1809-24). *Histoire de l'Eléphantiasis des Arabes*. Paris.
- BAHR, P. H. (1912). *Filariasis and Elephantiasis in Fiji*. London.
- BANCROFT (1877). *Lancet*, 70 and 495.
- CHAPOTIN (1812). *Topographie Médicale de l'Île de France*.
- CASTELLANI (1907). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, x. 250, 297.
- CASTELLANI (1908). *Journal of Cutaneous Diseases*, May.
- CASTELLANI (1908). *British Medical Journal*.
- DANIELS (1908). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, xi. 280.
- DUBRUEL (1909). *Bulletin Path. Exotique*.
- ESMARCH AND KULENKAMPFF (1885). *Die elephantiastischen Formen*. Hamburg.
- FÜLLEBORN (1912). *Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropenhygien*.
- GOEBEL (1911). *Chirurgie des Heissen Länder Erg d. Chirurgie*, Bd. iii.
- HANDLEY (1909). *Lancet*, January 2.
- HEBRA (1885). *Elephantiasis Arabum*. Wien.
- HENDY (1784). *Glandular Disease in Barbadoes*. London.
- HILLARY (1750). *Diseases, Acute and Chronic, Peculiar to the Island of Barbadoes*. London.
- HIRSCH (1885). *Historical and Geographical Pathology*, ii. 226 ; iii. 491.
- JAMSETJEE (1854). *Transactions of the Medical and Physical Society, Bombay*, ii. 341.
- KAMPFER (1712). *Amoenitates Exoticæ*. Lemgovia.
- LEWIS (1872). *Hæmatozoa in Human Blood*. Calcutta.
- LOW (1912). *Journal of the London School of Tropical Medicine*. Vol. i., part 3, *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, March 15, 1911.
- MAITLAND (1898). *Indian Medical Gazette*, 81, 32, 361. Calcutta.
- MANSON (1876-1909). Numerous publications in *China Maritime Customs*, *British Medical Journal*, *Lancet*, *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, and *Text-Book of Tropical Diseases*, Davidson's *Hygiene and Disease of Warm Climates*, Allbutt and Rolleston's *System*.
- RAYMOND (1767). *Histoire de l'Eléphantiasis*. Lausanne.
- YOUNG (1879). *British Medical Journal*, i. 1037. London.
- WHITE (1909). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*. London.
- WISE (1909). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, 227. London.

CHAPTER XLIII

LEPROSY

Synonyms—Definition—History—Climatology—Ætiology—Symptomatology
—Diagnosis—Prognosis—Treatment—Prophylaxis—References.

Synonyms.—Elephantiasis Græcorum. *French*: La Lèpre. *German*: Aussatz. *Italian*: Lebbra. *Norwegian*: Spedalskhed.

Definition.—Leprosy is a chronic general disease, caused by the *Bacillus lepræ* Hansen, which produces characteristic lesions in the skin, mucosæ, and nerves. The method of infection is unknown.

History.—Even at the present time there is occasionally much difficulty with regard to the diagnosis of leprosy from allied diseases, and therefore in ancient times and in the Middle Ages syphilis and skin diseases without doubt were confused with it. Hence the history is not easy to write. Nevertheless, such a repulsive and striking disease must have been noticed by the ancients, and therefore it is possible that the references in the Ebers Papyrus, and in the English Bible, the Rîg Veda, and ancient Japanese books, actually refer to what we call leprosy, together with other diseases. If this is so, leprosy is indeed ancient and widespread. It is probable that it passed from Egypt to Greece, and later to Italy, by means of Pompey's troops, and that it was disseminated throughout Europe by the Roman legions, by traders, and later, perhaps, by the Crusaders returning from the East. In any case, leprosy gradually increased in Europe from the days of Pompey till, in the thirteenth century, it existed to such an extent as to move Church and State alike to combat its ravages. Stern measures were enforced, and the lepers were isolated in lazarettos. They were compelled to wear a special dress, to use a clapper when passing along the roads, to only indicate with a stick the articles they desired to buy in a market; while they were forbidden to drink from public fountains, to touch children, to speak to a healthy person in a loud voice, or to eat with any person other than a leper. Further, the Church performed the Burial Service over a person who was diagnosed to be a leper, and therefore officially he was dead. The result of this appears to have been beneficial, as the number of lepers diminished rapidly in the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, since

when the disease has almost disappeared from many parts of Europe.

But while abating in Europe, it appears to have been introduced into Madeira and the Canary Islands about the end of the fifteenth century, and perhaps also into America by the Spaniards. The infection of the West Indies would appear, however, to have been mainly due to the negro slaves brought from Africa about the middle of the sixteenth century, after which the disease became common. There is great doubt as to whether it did not exist in South America in ancient times, but no clear evidence is forthcoming at present.

In India, Japan, and probably China, leprosy is most ancient, while it is very common in South China. During recent years the Chinese have been moving about the world, and are accredited with introducing the disease into Kamschatka, the Sandwich Islands, Polynesia, Columbia, California, Australia, New Zealand, and also into Indo-China.

Though very common in North and Tropical Africa, it appears to have been unknown in South Africa until introduced in 1756 by the Dutch from Java, who carried it through Cape Colony and the Orange Free State into the Transvaal. It must, however, be stated that some people think it has existed for a long time in South Africa.

It is said that the numbers of lepers have markedly increased in South Africa since the advent of the East Indian troops in the middle of last century.

As regards medical literature, Hippocrates says but little about the disease, and perhaps really refers to psoriasis, while Aristotle defines it better. It is not, however, until the first century that Aretæus of Cappadocia gives a clear description of the disease, and not till 1847 that the first modern clinical account by Danielssen and Boeck appeared. The pathology of the disease has been carefully studied by Virchow, Vandyke Carter, Leloir, Babès, Unna, Zambaco, Innes, Campana, De Amicis, Philipson, Mantegazza, and Bergmann. In 1871 Hansen discovered the bacillus, and in 1877 definitely associated it with the causation of leprosy lesions, and it has subsequently been studied by Neisser in 1879, and many others.

Many attempts have been made to cultivate this bacillus, notably by the Indian Commission, van Houten and Rost, and more recently by Keebrowsky, Clegg, Bayon, and Duval. In 1903 Stephansky and Dean, and later Rabinowitsch and Tidswell, discovered a peculiar leprosy-like disease in rats, the lesions of which contain bacilli closely resembling Hansen's bacillus in appearance, and not capable of cultivation. A diphtheroid bacillus has, however, been cultivated by Dean from two cases, and is said by him to be capable of being agglutinated by human leprosy serum. There is probably no connection between the human and the rat disease, though some authorities admit it. The condition has been recently investigated by Marchoux and Sorel, Bayon, and others.

The method of infection is at present unknown, though there are various theories, more or less ably defended, which will be mentioned later. Marchoux and Bourret consider that they have successfully inoculated a chimpanzee, and Nicolle and Blaizot have produced lesions resembling leprosy in lower monkeys. The condition of the eye has been much neglected until recent years, when the researches begun by Bull and Hansen as far back as 1873 have been extended by Grossman in 1906, de Silva in 1907, but most importantly by Borthen in 1899.

Deycke and Reschad inoculated the surface cream of sterilized unskimmed milk with material obtained from the under aspect of leprotic tubercles by throwing back a flap of skin. Incubated at 30° C. a growth forms in fourteen days, which is characterized by its bright orange tint. This organism they called *Streptothrix leproides*, and from this they obtain a neutral fat, 'nastin,' which is similar to a fat found in Hansen's bacillus, and this Deycke considered to be the agent which produced favourable symptoms when cultures of *Streptothrix leproides* were injected into patients. Later he noticed that these favourable conditions were associated with a leucocytosis, and therefore used nastin mixed with cinnamic acid, which is excreted as hippuric acid, the two acids being connected by benzoic acid as an intermediate product. He therefore used benzoyl chloride to extract the 'nastin,' and injected the 'benzoyl nastin' into patients, producing a reaction. Deycke believes that the nastin is only a carrier of the benzoyl chloride to the bacilli, which it deprives of their fat, and so allows the phagocytes to attack them. Four solutions were prepared: Nastin B 0, Nastin B 1, Nastin B 2, and K., this last being only benzoyl chloride, and being used to shorten and reduce the severity of the reaction if required. The others represent nastin in varying degrees of strength, Nastin B 2 containing an excess of nastin, while Nastin B 1 is that usually employed. Unfortunately no general success has followed this line of treatment.

Climatology.—At the present time there is but little leprosy in many parts of Europe, but it is still common in Iceland, while it is found in Spain, Italy, the Balkans, Turkey, Crete, and Cyprus. It is less frequent than formerly in Norway, Sweden, Greece, and some of the Mediterranean islands, rare in France and Germany, and almost extinct in Denmark, Belgium, Holland, Austria-Hungary, and England.

It is very common throughout the whole of Asia. In Ceylon there are numerous lepers, many of whom are treated in a leper asylum at Hendela, near Colombo, which is believed to be one of the best in the world.

In Australia the disease is known principally in Queensland and New South Wales, and also in Victoria; while in New Zealand it is known among the Maoris. It occurs in New Caledonia, Tahiti, and the Sandwich Islands.

It is spread sporadically over the United States, but is rare in

Canada, while it is well known in Mexico and Central America, and common in the West Indies. In South America it appears to be common in Colombia, Venezuela, the Guianas, and Brazil, but whether it is rare or simply not recognized in other countries is unknown.

It appears to be spread all through Africa, but is certainly rare in West Africa, more common in Central and East Africa, and decidedly more common in North and in South Africa, where there is the celebrated Robbin Island Leper Asylum. There are people who believe Egypt to be the original home of the disease, from whence it spread to Asia and Europe.

Ætiology.—The disease is caused by Hansen's bacillus, which morphologically has the greatest resemblance to the tubercular bacillus, and is stained by the same methods.

With regard to the cultivation of the bacillus there are three views:—

1. That it has never been cultivated.
2. That it can be cultivated as a streptothrix or nocardia.
3. That it can be cultivated as a bacillus.

1. *That it has never been cultivated.*—This till recently was the most generally accepted view.

2. *That it can be cultivated as a Streptothrix.*—This is the view held by Bordoni-Uffreduzzi, Babès, Rost, Kedrowsky, Shiga, Hewlett, Bayon, and others. They maintain that Hansen's bacillus in cultures becomes a filamentary branching non-acid-resisting organism, which, when injected persistently into animals, produces the signs of leprosy. From these animals, they say, it can be recovered as an acid-resisting bacillus. The strain separated by Kedrowsky, and further investigated by Bayon, is the one which in our opinion is the most important with a view to further researches. The growth of the germ is slow, and the colonies coalesce into a whitish mass. The inoculation of cultures into monkeys, rats, and guinea-pigs, gives rise, according to Bayon, to leprosy-like lesions, with very little tissue proliferation, no caseation necrosis, no vascular sclerosis, and with presence of numerous acid-fast bacilli. Serological reactions, such as agglutination and complement fixation, are rather in favour of Bayon's theory. Moreover, the inoculation of an extract of the cultures induces in leprotic patients a reaction with fever, comparable to that induced in tubercular patients by tuberculin.

3. *That it can be cultivated as a Bacillus.*—This is the view held by Clegg, Duval, and others. Clegg succeeded in cultivating his bacillus in symbiosis with an amœba. The cultures are chromogenic. The inoculation of this germ apparently does not produce leprotic lesions. Duval gives importance to a non-chromogenic always acid-fast bacillus he has isolated, which grows very slowly, and only on special media. He states that in addition to this bacillus he has at times grown a polymorphic organism, sometimes

diphtheroid, sometimes streptothric, and of varying degrees of acid-fastness. He compares this type of germ to those isolated by Kedrowsky and Bayon, and is not inclined to give it any importance.

The bacilli, which, as will be shown later, exist practically all over the body wherever diseased tissue is found, leave it by the nasal secretion, the tears, the salivary secretion, the sputum, the milk, the semen, urethral and vaginal secretions, and by the faeces, and are cast off with the scales of skin or the discharge of disintegrating tubercles. Of all these, the secretion of the nose appears to be of great importance, for, as Sticker and van Houten showed, the bacilli are very commonly met with in that situation. The bacilli are reported to have been found in *Culex pungens* and *Clinocoris lectularius* by Goodhue, of the Molokai Leper Settlement. Finally, notwithstanding one or two observations, the bacillus has never been found in earth, dust, air, water, or food.

With regard to inoculations of leprotic tissues and nodules into animals, experiments have been negative in rabbits, guinea-pigs, dogs, cats, bats, pigs, and birds, even though some experiments were thought at the time to be successful. Nicolle produced a hard indolent swelling with a few lepra bacilli by injection of leprous tissue in a *Macacus* monkey. Marchoux and Bourret have made inoculation experiments in a chimpanzee with partial success. In rats a peculiar skin disease, somewhat resembling leprosy, occurs spontaneously, as observed by Stephansky, Dean and Rabinowitsch. This has been recently investigated by Marchoux and Sorel, who have come to the conclusion that it is generally transmitted by contact, and not by parasitic agencies. They have not succeeded in cultivating the bacillus, while Bayon has cultivated a streptothrix very similar to the Kedrowsky strain isolated from human lesions.

With regard to the experimental inoculation of human beings, the only case cited as successful is Arning's inoculation of a Sandwich Island criminal in the arm with a leprous tubercle. This man developed a neuritis of the ulnar and median nerves four weeks after the inoculation, a tubercle five months later, the full signs of leprosy two and a half years later, and died a leper six years after the inoculation. It is, however, to be noted that he lived in a leprous country, and that there was leprosy in his family—facts which decrease the importance of the experiment.

There can, however, be no real doubt that the disease is in some way spread from human being to human being. In support of this there are many well-known facts—*e.g.*, the case reported by Benson, where an Irishman, having acquired leprosy in the West Indies, returned to Ireland, and died from the effects of the disease in about eleven months. During this period his brother not merely lived with him, but slept in the same bed, and, after his death, wore his clothes. In about four to five years this brother showed all the typical signs of tubercular leprosy, though he had only once been out of Ireland, and then only to visit England. Another

similar case may be quoted of a person who, acquiring leprosy in Tonkin, returned to Strasburg and lived with a nephew, who subsequently developed the disease. Turning to the evidence of history, there is the spread of leprosy throughout Europe, and, later, the rapid spread of the disease in the Sandwich Islands, where, though existing probably for many years, it increased from 1859, when it was hardly known, till in 1881 no less than 800 lepers were isolated, and it is said that no less than one-tenth of the population were affected. Another instance is the case of New Caledonia, in which the disease, though now common, is believed to have been introduced for the first time in 1860, and Pine Island, which is said to have been infected from New Caledonia; or Mauritius, which was infected by a single leper, and from which, later, the island of Rodriguez was infected, also by a single leper.

As to individual cases of infection by residence among lepers, the most noted is that of Father Damien de Venster, who went from Belgium as a missionary to the Molokai Leper Asylum of the Sandwich Islands in 1873, and who was first recognized to be suffering from the disease in 1882, from which he died in 1889.

Again, the prophylactic success of even partial isolation of lepers, as evinced in Europe in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, and to-day in Norway, Sweden, and Iceland, is in favour of the view that the disease passes from man to man. But it is not wise to hastily conclude that this transference is direct, for any of the above cases are easily explicable by the disease being conveyed by food or biting animals. The success of partial isolation might be simply to diminish the chance of infection by these means. Moreover, the fact that the attendants of the Hendela Leper Asylum of Ceylon have so far not been known to contract the disease is against the theory of direct contagion. Further, though there is evidence that married people may both suffer from the disease, there is no proof that sexual intercourse is a means of infection. Nor is there any evidence of heredity being a source of infection, for never has a child been born in a leprous condition, though it is said that 10 per cent. of the children of leprous mothers become sooner or later lepers themselves.

If the germs are not carried from one person to another by contact, sexual or germinal transmission, they might still be conveyed by air, dust, water, or food, and, indeed, all these theories have their supporters.

It does not appear likely that it is conveyed by air, otherwise it would surely be spread more commonly from patients to attendants in leper asylums. With regard to dust, it is quite true that, though some persons report the presence of a very few bacilli in earth taken from places frequented by lepers, the majority have failed to find them; and, again, what has been remarked with regard to air also applies to dust. The germs have never been found in the water of the most highly infected places.

Many articles of food have been suspected, especially fish, and

more particularly salted fish—a view which Sir Jonathan Hutchinson has strongly advocated; but even he admits that it will not explain all cases, particularly its presence in people who have no chance of eating cured fish.

After excluding all these, there is still the possibility of the infection being carried by some blood-sucking insect. This subject has been most ably discussed by Nuttall, who points out that Linnæus and Rolander considered *Chlorops (Musca) lepræ* to be the active agent; while Corredor suspected flies in general; Sabrazés, insects; Joly, *Sarcoptes scabiei* and *Pediculi*; and Sommer, mosquitoes. Nuttall himself says that the possibility of such transmission cannot be denied. Goodhue has demonstrated the bacilli in *Culex pungens* and in *Clinocoris lectularius*; and Marchoux and Bourret have suggested that some Simuliidæ might be the carriers of the disease. Flies, lice, bugs, fleas, ticks, etc., have all been studied recently without any great success.

It might be thought that, direct inoculation having failed, the infection by means of insects would be unlikely. But that is not so, because it is well known that the passage of bacilli through another animal may markedly modify the virulence of the germ. On the other hand, a great many facts are in favour of the insect spread of the disease—e.g., the infection in a family. The cases cited above as examples of contagion would be easily explicable by the action of an insect, as would the effect of isolation in preventing the disease. Moreover, the predisposing causes of dirt, poverty, etc., are also explicable on the same reasoning, especially the curious disappearance of the disease in the families of Norwegian peasants emigrating to America, where they became much cleaner in their habits. The difficulty of cultivating the germ on ordinary media is very suggestive of its being accustomed to live solely in animal tissues; while the abundance of the bacilli in the skin is also suggestive of that being the natural method of leaving the body. Everything in the history of the disease appears to us to favour its spread by animal agency.

Cases of infection by vaccination and variolization are on record. Natives of Ceylon generally state that the disease begins after a bite by a rat.

Pathology.—According to different theories, the bacillus enters the body viâ the skin, the nasal or respiratory mucosæ, the alimentary canal, or the generative organs.

The list is so comprehensive that it will be obvious that the real method of entry is entirely unknown. On arrival inside the body, the bacillus is *supposed* to come to rest inside a lymph-space somewhere, and there to grow and form colonies, from whence it can be disseminated through the body, perhaps by the blood and the lymph streams. It must be remembered, however, that the nature of the initial lesions is quite unknown. So enormously do the bacilli multiply in the body that there are few diseases which show an equal infection.

The pathogenesis of the lesions is not very well known, and there are many points of dispute which so far have not been settled. The early stages have been most carefully studied by Unna in the neurolepride, in which there is at first a dilatation of the capillary vessels of the skin, on the walls of which the typical bacilli can be found. The organisms now pass into the wall of the vessel, and appear to irritate the connective-tissue cells of the vicinity, which, becoming plasma cells, surround the periphery of the vessel.

There is a dispute as to whether any diapedesis of the white cells takes place. Thus Thin and Neisser support the view of a diapedesis, to which, however, Unna is opposed. According to the former observers, the cells of the leproma contain not merely plasma cells, but also leucocytes and lymphocytes, while according to the latter they are entirely plasma cells and their derivatives, for Unna holds the view that the bacillus has but little attraction for the white cell. The organisms pass from the vessel wall into the lymph capillaries, in which they grow. These early stages have not been seen in the typical leproma, in which the bacilli from the first are met with in the lymphatics, in which they grow luxuriantly, causing the considerable dilatation which is a marked feature of the lesion.

Now occurs a phenomenon concerning which there is much difference of opinion, for either the plasma cells increase in size, and, becoming multinucleated, engulf the bacilli, forming in this way the typical 'lepra cells' of Virchow—a view supported also by Neisser and others—or the bacilli attack the plasma cells, destroy their cytoplasm, and so damage the nucleus that it becomes achromatic and breaks into several pieces, which remain surrounded by, or on the side of, a mass of bacilli embedded in mucus, thus giving rise to a false appearance of a giant cell or chorio-plaque enclosing bacilli, as asserted by Unna and others. Unna's staining method with Victoria blue and saffranin colours normal bacilli blue, and dead bacilli yellow.

The lesions show large cells—the 'lepra cells,' containing large masses of bacilli—but in addition to these cells there are also masses of bacilli embedded in mucus, and not enclosed in cells, which are the 'globi' of older writers, and which in fresh preparations appear as large, rounded, brownish masses. Bayon believes that the bunches of bacilli arise partially by the choking of the lymphatics by phagocytes swollen by the numbers of the bacilli which they have engulfed, and partially by the endothelium of the vessel wall also becoming distended with bacilli. The nuclei of these cells degenerate and are eliminated, while the remnants of the cells, together with the bacilli, form 'the globi,' and when these remnants disappear the bacilli are left free in the tissues. The hyaline coating of many bacilli may be a product of the protoplasm of these cells or may be secreted by the bacilli themselves. Sometimes typical giant cells, called 'Langhans' cells,' are seen. Marchoux and Bourret consider the so-called lepra cells to be undistinguishable from the large mononuclear leucocytes.

The bacilli do not invade the surface epithelium, nor the layer of the cutis directly below this; nor do they affect the sweat glands, nor the hair sheaths superficial to the opening of the sebaceous glands.

The typical leproma, therefore, shows superficially epithelium, normal in every respect, except that there are no interpapillary processes. Below the epithelium there is a layer of connective tissue, free from bacilli, under which lies the typical lesion, composed of lepra cells, plasma cells, and connective-tissue cells, separated by a very slight amount of fibrillar connective tissue, and containing vessels, whose walls are thickened by an infiltration of the adventitia, media, and intima to such an extent that at times the lumen may be obliterated, while the lymphatic spaces are dilated and filled with bacilli surrounded by mucus, forming the 'globi.' Beneath the lesion the connective tissue may be more or less normal.

The attacks of fever and the erysipelatous eruptions, which will be described under the Symptomatology, are explicable by the dissemination of the bacilli throughout the body by the blood stream, the bacilli being contained in the large mononuclear leucocytes, according to Marchoux and Bourret, and by the embolism of the capillaries of the skin by bacilli and white cells, which, however, are soon recovered from.

Lesions may remain stationary for years, and retrogression may take place as the result of treatment, or spontaneously, in which case the dead bacilli are absorbed, and sac-like spaces left, which rarely become sclerosed by connective tissue. If on a surface, the leproma may soften, break down, and ulcerate, thus disseminating the bacilli in the discharge.

The bacilli may also enter into the nerves and cause a hyperplasia of the connective-tissue cells of the coats and the formation of typical leproma cells at first around the vasa nervorum, and later in the perineurium and endoneurium.

These cells press on the nerve fibres, causing a degeneration of the neurilemma, and later a disintegration of the arteries and a destruction of the nerve fibres, which finally results in the nerve being largely converted into connective tissue. In places where the nerve is apt to suffer from compression or other slight injuries, it becomes so thickened as to be easily palpable—a fact which Lie explains by saying that the bacilli which he found in the cutaneous nerves pass up the nerves and become located at spots liable to injury.

It is usually believed that the nerves only are affected, and that the paralyses, etc., are the results of disease of the peripheral nerves, but it has been shown that the bacilli attack the anterior cornua of the spinal cord, and therefore this may play a part in the production of the symptoms.

The bacilli may be carried by the blood stream all over the body, but show a selective affinity for certain organs, in which they develop the typical leprotic lesions. A certain number of leprotic subjects react to tuberculin injections, and give a positive Wassermann reaction.

Morbid Anatomy.—The skin lesions which may be found are the tubercles, which may or may not be ulcerated, and the pigmented and apigmented areas. On cutting into the leproma, it is seen to be situated usually in the cutis, and covered by the epidermis; but it may lie in the subcutaneous tissue, in which case it does not form a tubercle. It is yellowish-white in colour, firm in consistency, and if squeezed, usually a little clear fluid can be obtained. It will be noted that the sweat and sebaceous glands and the hair-follicles are compressed and as a rule atrophied, while vesicles and pustules may occur on the surface, which may be ulcerated and covered with crusts. The macules consist of round-celled infiltration, with but few large cells, which are generally free from bacilli. In the spots which during life were anæsthetic, which are derived from the macules, the corium is largely converted into fibrous connective tissue, which has caused glands and hairs to atrophy and disappear.

The typical lepromatous infiltration may occur, not merely in the skin, but in the mucosæ of the tongue, pharynx, larynx, epiglottis, and in the submucosæ of the intestine.

The liver, which is usually enlarged, shows a leprous infiltration of the portal systems, while the spleen, which may be also enlarged, shows the same along the course of its vessels, particularly while they are in the septa, and a similar infiltration may be seen at times around the bronchi.

The ovaries and testes may show infiltrations and fibrosis of the interstitial tissue, which destroys the secretory elements, and causes the sterility which is usually so marked among lepers. The lymphatic glands are often enlarged, infiltrated, and full of bacilli, especially the femoral. Nephritis and leprous infiltration of the

kidneys may be seen. The nerves most commonly affected are the palmar branch of the ulnar, the ulnar, the median, the peroneal, posterior tibial, and the great auricular. When exposed, the nerve is seen to show a fusiform, reddish-grey swelling, which, when examined, is found to consist of lepromatous tissue lying among the nerve fibres.

In the spinal cord there may be posterior sclerosis and meningitis, though it is doubtful whether these are really due to the disease or to some complication. The cells of the posterior cornu have been said to be atrophied, as well as those of the anterior cornu, in which Lie has found bacilli.

In the circulatory organs periarteritis and endarteritis are met with, while osteomyelitis, necrosis, caries, and absorption of the bones may be seen, and will be mentioned again later. Trophic changes in the joints and perforating ulcers are met with in the nerve form of the disease.

For a long time the presence of lepromata in the lung was disputed, but recently it has been proved that the lungs can become infected with leprotic lesions. The lesions of leprotic lungs are very similar to those of tubercular lungs, but are more solid, caseate less frequently, and are less prone to be destroyed. Some of the earliest signs are petechial hæmorrhages, which upon microscopical examination show a diffuse, small, round-celled infiltration, with occasionally a giant cell, but without fibrosis, but with a slight cellular exfoliation in the surrounding alveoli and congestion of the bloodvessels and capillaries. In these areas there are numerous intracellular leprosy bacilli (Wise). In addition there may be an acute and at times caseating parenchymatous inflammation or chronic diffuse interstitial inflammation. These are distinguished from similar tubercular affections by inoculation into guinea-pigs with negative results.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period is entirely unknown, and must necessarily remain so until the method of infection and the date of the onset of the disease is discovered; hence the statements made by the different observers that it may last for a few weeks or months up to many years. The method of invasion is also quite unknown. Sticker suggests that it begins with nasal symptoms—blocking of the nose, epistaxis, and frontal headache; other observers with skin eruptions. The truth appears to be that, so far, the initial lesions and their symptoms, if any, have escaped notice.

Before the eruption appears there are, in many cases, attacks of fever of an intermittent or irregular character, with a marked feeling of general illness, associated with headache and pains in different parts of the body, peculiar sensations of cold, formication or numbness in various places, and, above all, of abnormal local or general perspirations. These attacks of leprotic fever, without any definite clinical signs of leprosy, may occur at intervals for years. This fever is probably due to the dissemination of the bacilli through

the body, and may represent a septicæmic process due to the *Bacillus lepræ*.

After the general dissemination through the body, the bacilli appear to settle mainly in the skin or in the nerves, though, of course, there are many cases in which they settle in both. It is therefore convenient to distinguish the two varieties of the disease, first differentiated by Danielssen and Boeck—viz., 'lepra tuberculosa,' or 'nodular leprosy,' and 'lepra maculo-anæsthetica,' or 'smooth leprosy'—remembering that the division is artificial, and that numerous cases exist which show both forms.

TUBERCULAR LEPROSY.

After repeated attacks of fever the patient has a more severe one, during which an erythematous diffuse or macular eruption appears on the face and limbs. The fever subsides, and the maculæ may disappear or thicken and become tubercles, which are dermal lesions projecting from the skin or mucosæ, in addition to which there are subdermal infiltrations, which can be more easily felt than seen. If they disappear, it is only for the time, as new maculæ will appear with a new attack, and sooner or later the thickening will take place, and the nodules or tubercles, typical of the disease, will appear. Each outbreak of nodules is in some cases preceded by an attack of fever, with or without an erysipelatous-like eruption in the area to be affected, associated with enlargement of the lymphatic glands. In our experience, however, the fever may be absent in many cases.

The nodules may form all over the skin, but are most common on the face and limbs. In the former situation they appear on the forehead, cheeks, alæ of the nose, lobules of the ears, lips, and chin, and as they increase in size, totally alter the appearance of the patient, defacing the natural facial lines, and forming new furrows between adjacent nodules; while at the same time, in many cases, the hair of the beard, moustache, and eyebrows drops out. These changes result in the countenance becoming like that of a satyr or, when the furrows are more marked, like that of a lion; hence the terms 'satyriasis' and 'leontiasis,' which the ancients applied to the disease.

Eye lesions are more commonly met with in this form of the disease, for Gorthen, as the result of his investigations, concludes that only 8·08 per cent. of women and 1·67 per cent. of men suffering from tubercular leprosy escape without some form of disease of the eyes or their adnexa. Women are, however, less affected than men, but age shows no influence on the production of eye affections. In tubercular leprosy the eye is attacked by genuine leprotic lesions, and secondary infections are rare.

The supraciliary region, as has already been mentioned, is early attacked, and complete madarosis is not uncommon, and, later,

paralysis of the frontalis muscle sets in. The eyelids are often attacked by diffuse or nodular lepromata, which may be merely extensions from the disease already in the supraciliary region, or may be quite distinct lesions. As a result of ulceration of these nodules, the eyelids may be destroyed.



FIG. 477.—LEPROSY, SHOWING THE ERYSIPELATOUS-LIKE ERUPTION ON THE ARMS AND FACE.

The conjunctiva may be infiltrated, leading to hyperæmia, or, more rarely, anæmia, and producing lagophthalmos, ectropion, and, if cicatrization takes place, xerophthalmia.

The episclera is apt to become infiltrated along the external aspect of the corneo-sclerotic junction, resulting in white, grey, or yellow flattish masses, which spread round the cornea dorsally and ventrally, and are prone to invade its tissue in the form of a diffuse infiltration, which spreads from the outer side towards the pupil.

More rarely small spots form on the cornea, giving rise to the 'keratitis punctata leprosa' of authors.

The disease may also spread to the uveal region, in the form of an infiltration, which causes an anterior or posterior iritis ; or, more rarely, nodules may form in the ciliary body or near the canal of Fontana, giving rise to an irido-cyclitis or irido-choroiditis.

Lie has studied the pathology of these lesions, and has shown that it is rare for the optic nerve, the retina, the lens, and the vitreous humour to be affected.

The mucosæ of the nose may be attacked, with, first, blocking of the passage, and then, when the leproma extends down to the



FIG. 478.—TYPICAL TUBERCULAR LEPROSY, SHOWING THE LEONINE EXPRESSION, THE THICKENED SUPERCILIARY RIDGES, AND THE MADAROSIS.

cartilage and ulcerates, falling-in or destruction of the nose, with much disfiguration of the countenance, resulting from the cicatrization which follows the ulceration. The tongue may also be affected, and show numerous tubercles, separated by furrows, or it may be simply infiltrated. The walls of the mouth and pharynx may become lepromatous, which causes mastication and deglutition to be rendered difficult, while the same condition in the larynx makes the voice raucous, and may impede respiration, especially if there is ulceration and cicatrization.

The skin of the hands, arms, and legs also shows numerous raised

tubercles, which may ulcerate. The submaxillary, cervical, and femoral glands may be enlarged, and may suppurate. The testes often become fibrous, and menstruation becomes irregular and stops.

Blood.—In the early stages the blood shows no changes, but later it shows a diminution in the erythrocytes and a lowering in the colour-index. The red cells may show abnormalities in the form of poikilocytes, polychromatophilia, and basophilia. The number of



FIG. 479.—DIFFUSE INFILTRATION OF BOTH CORNEAS AND DEFORMITIES IN THE FINGERS OF THE RIGHT HAND.

leucocytes is generally normal, or, according to Bourret, diminished; while this observer records an eosinophilia in all stages of the disease, which he says may at times be quite considerable. There may be leucocytosis during the febrile attack. Neutrophile myelocytes may also be observed. According to our researches the leucocytic formula is extremely variable, and is of no help in the diagnosis of the malady. Some authors state that they have found the specific bacillus in leucocytes, or, more rarely, free in the peripheral

blood. Wassermann's reaction is, in our experience, often present even in cases where there is no history of syphilis or yaws.

Urine.—There are not many observations upon the urine. The most marked feature is a great increase in the ethereal sulphates. Brinton, of Rio de Janeiro, has isolated two ptomaines from the urine, one allied to choline and the other to muscarine.



FIG. 480.—LEPROMA OF THE TONGUE.

The nerves may become attacked, and the signs and symptoms of nerve leprosy be added to those of the tubercular, forming a variety of mixed leprosy.

The ulcerations generally become marked towards the end of the disease. If treated, they cicatrize and produce deformities; if left to themselves, they suppurate and produce amyloidosis, or,

becoming phagedænic, cause gangrene of the fingers or toes, and septic poisoning.

Complications, in the form of phthisis and amyloidosis, appear, causing fever, cough, and expectoration, diarrhœa, and enlargement of liver and spleen.

Unfortunately, in the midst of disease of almost every organ of the body, the mind is quite clear; but the patients are most irritable, and it is not surprising that, under these circumstances, the patients of a leper asylum require considerable tact in management, and are often peevish and discontented, and that small rebellions occur.

MACULO-ANÆSTHETIC LEPROSY.

In this form of leprosy the infiltration takes place principally into the nerves, with the result that first the fibres are irritated, and later they become destroyed. The first stage is therefore one of irritation of the nerves, with such symptoms as shooting-pains down certain nerves, especially the ulnar and the peroneal, accompanied with sensory disturbances, such as burning, numbness, formication, along with vasomotor disturbance—*e.g.*, flushings of the face, glossy skin—and motor disturbance, such as twitching of the muscles, particularly of the face.

Sooner or later a macular eruption appears, which is looked upon by some as due to a lepromatous infiltration of the skin, and by others as nervous in origin. This macular eruption may appear as flat red spots of various shapes and sizes, neither hyperæsthetic nor anæsthetic at first, which appear without fever or any general disturbance of the health. Other maculæ may appear which, instead of being red, are simply pigmented, while still others may be seen in which the pigmentation is less than usual. In any case the spots grow larger, the centres becoming pale, while the peripheries, which are usually raised, and occasionally marked with papules or vesicles, or covered with dry whitish scales, may coalesce with other spots, forming large areas.

The skin in the affected area becomes anæsthetic; the hairs fall out, and wrinkles and scales appear. After a time the areas cease to spread, the raised margin disappears, and the disease becomes quiescent.

Meanwhile the infiltration into the nerve trunks has proceeded to such an extent that a swelling can be easily felt in certain regions—as, for example, in the ulnar behind the internal condyle, in the great auricular over the sterno-mastoid, in the peroneal just below the head of the fibula, and in other nerves in suitable places if affected. With the destruction of the nerve fibres, the hyperæsthetic stage ceases and the anæsthetic stage of the disease begins. This is to be noticed along the ulnar side of the hand, forearm, and arm, or on the inner side of the foot, first of all, and afterwards in other places. It may be segmental in arrangement, restricted to the

distribution of a nerve, or in patches. At the same time the muscles may be found to be paralyzed, notably the interossei of the hands, but also those of the foot, if carefully looked for. The lower efferent neurones being affected, the symptoms resemble those of muscular atrophy of the Aran-Duchenne type, with the production of the *main-en-griffe* and the extension of the paralysis to the muscles of the forearm, and even at times, according to Jeanselme, to the deltoid. As a result of the paralysis of the muscles of the forearm the occurrence of dropped wrist is not uncommon.

In the lower limb the plantar muscles of the toes may be affected, while the spread of the paralysis to the peronei and extensors may



• FIG. 481.—MACULO-ANÆSTHETIC LEPROSY : CIRCINATE TYPE.

result in a dropped foot with an internal twist. The reflexes are exaggerated at first, but when paralysis sets in they diminish, and when the muscles waste, the reaction of degeneration may be obtained electrically.

Trophic lesions may also appear in the form of whitlows in the fingers and necrosis of the phalanges, or, instead of this, a simple absorption of the bone of the phalanx or metacarpal, so that the nail may ultimately appear to spring from the metacarpal, the wrist, or even, it has been said, from the elbow. Similar trophic lesions may appear in the foot. Bullæ may appear on the hands or feet, and when broken may form ulcers. Injuries to anæsthetic areas may also result in ulcers, which may be of the perforating

type. Fissures may form in the digits, hands, or feet, and, more rarely, dry gangrene may cause loss of the fingers or toes, or greater portions of the limbs, and, still more rarely, the bones of the fingers will soften and become osteomalacic. Trophic lesions of the elbow or knee, like Charcot's joints, have been recorded.



FIG. 482.—MACULO-ANÆSTHETIC LEPROSY.

Jeanselme, Bourrett, and one of us have studied the cerebro-spinal fluid, and have found in a few cases a lymphocytosis, but more usually no cells or bacilli.

The eye is far less commonly affected than in the tubercular variety, Borthen's figures showing that in anæsthetic leprosy no less than 36·83 per cent. of the female cases and 26·80 per cent. of the male cases escape without eye complications. True leprotic lesions are

much rarer, the eye being damaged by secondary infections brought about by the absence of the lachrymal secretion and the lagophthalmos. The forehead and supraciliary regions are often reddened and œdematous, but complete madarosis is rare; while paralysis of the frontalis, corrugator supercillii, and orbicularis palpebrarum cause lagophthalmos and ectropion; and as there is



FIG. 483.—LEPROSY: ULCER OF THE FOOT.

a diminution in the secretion of tears, xerophthalmia with posterior or total symblepharon, while desiccation and destruction of the cornea may result.

Secondary infections may lead to keratitis, onyx, hypopyon, iritis, irido-cyclitis, and destruction of the eye.

Sterility is not so frequent in nerve as in tubercular leprosy. The skin may become infected at an early or late stage of nerve leprosy, thus forming one of the types of mixed leprosy.

Mixed Leprosy.

This term has been used to comprise those cases of tubercular leprosy which develop nerve symptoms, and those of maculo-anæsthetic leprosy which develop nodules, as well as those general cases in which both nerve and skin lesions advance hand in hand.

Paraleprosis.—Zambaco, Von Duhring, Glück, Lebœuf, and others have drawn attention to various phenomena indicating an attenuated infection in regions in which leprosy has long existed. These conditions are mostly nerve or trophic changes—*e.g.*, thickening of the ulnar nerve, the curving of the fingers, the loss of phalanges, the atrophy of the muscles of the hand or face, which are present in the children or grandchildren of lepers. Further, it is believed by some authors that syringomyelia and Morvan's disease may be modified forms of leprosy. Paraleprosis, however, requires further investigation.

Complications.—The important complications of leprosy are nephritis, phthisis, chronic enteritis, and dysentery. Amyloidosis occurs in the internal organs if there is much discharge from ulcerated surfaces. An interesting case of mixed infection—leprosy and syphilis—has been described by Frugoni.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis of cases of the nodular type is generally easy, and may be readily confirmed bacteriologically by excision of a nodule and microscopical examination of a portion for Hansen's bacillus. The diagnosis of the maculo-anæsthetic cases presents greater difficulties, especially as in most cases the bacteriological examination of excised portions of the patches will give a negative result, though occasionally the examination of the blood taken from the patches or the surrounding zone may show a few mononuclear leucocytes containing bacilli. In these cases the diagnosis must be based on the presence of anæsthesia in the erythematous, non-pigmented or hyperpigmented patches. Another valuable sign will be, in many cases, the palpable enlargement of the ulnar, peroneal, and other nerves. The search for the lepra bacillus in the nasal mucus is sometimes useful to clear the diagnosis. This method of diagnosis may be facilitated by administering a full dose (30 grains) of iodide of potash, which often produces nasal catarrh. Sometimes this drug produces a general reaction accompanied by fever, and the appearance of fresh nodules. Lebœuf, acting on Marchoux's suggestion, has found Hansen's bacillus in the enlarged superficial lymphatic glands, and recommends the examination of the gland juice as a method of diagnosis. It is to be noted, however, that this examination will give a positive result much more frequently in nodular cases than in the macular type of the disease.

Some authors recommend the blistering of the skin, and examination of the liquid of the blebs for the presence of Hansen's bacillus. Thompson recommends for diagnostic purposes the injection of pilocarpine, with the view of discovering dry areas in the sweating skin.

Differential Diagnosis.—In countries where leprosy is endemic, other diseases are liable to be mistaken for it. One of the diseases most frequently mistaken, as has been pointed out by Powell and others, is frambœsia, which may be recognized by the presence of the *Treponema pertenue* and the frambœsiform appearance of the nodules.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is not good. The probability of a permanent cure is slight, but the disease may last a long time. Four to twelve years is laid down for the mixed or tubercular leprosy, and longer for the maculo-anæsthetic, and during that time a great deal can be done by appropriate treatment; and, indeed, the disease may be stopped for the time being, only, of course, to recur again. It has been shown by Lie that, even when all the skin eruptions have disappeared, and the patient is only troubled by anæsthesia, and the atrophy of the muscles, and may be thought to be cured, still the bacilli are present in the nerves and spinal cord.

Lebœuf from his recent investigations in New Caledonia has come to the conclusion that in a certain number of cases showing slight symptoms, an actual cure takes place.

Treatment.—So far no specific treatment has been found, though Carrasquilla attempted to prepare a serum by the injection of the blood of lepers into equines, and Abrahams and Hermann by inoculating the juice from lepromata into an animal. These sera have been found useless. Rost prepared a substance, which he called 'leprolin,' on the lines of tuberculin, but, unfortunately, the bacillus he was using was not the leprosy organism. Clegg's vaccine and Bayon's extract of Kedrowski's strain are still in the experimental stage. Tuberculin has been tried without success, and, in fact, very serious symptoms may follow its injection.

As regards symptomatic treatment, there is no doubt as to the great value of Chaulmoogra oil, which should be obtained by cold expression from the seeds of some species of *Gynocardia*, but may be adulterated with other oils, especially that of *Hydrocarpus wightiana*, or may be altered by being expressed when heated. It should be rubbed into the diseased patches, and also given internally in doses of 5 to 10 minims, working up gradually to 30 to 60 minims, in capsules, or in a pill with tragacanth and soap, or in an emulsion, or as Engel-antileprol capsules. To remove the after-taste a lime can be sucked. This treatment must be persisted in for a very long time, and should be combined with hot baths, and, in nerve cases, with doses of strychnine, $\frac{1}{60}$ grain three times a day, which may gradually be increased. After a length of time it is as well to make a slight break in the treatment, to prevent toleration, and therefore Unna's ointment of ichthyol, 5 per cent.; salicylic acid, 2 per cent.; and pyrogallol, 5 per cent., or some other ointment, may be temporarily substituted. But the Chaulmoogra oil must not be long discontinued, and must be persisted in for two years or longer if any good is to be obtained.

Neumann has advised the combination of salve and theonin with Chaulmoogra, given either by the mouth or hypodermically, but the advantages are doubtful, and Hollmann has recommended the use of eucalyptus oil in conjunction with opia leaves (*Jambos malaccensis*) or with Chaulmoogra oil.

Other remedies are legion—*e.g.*, X rays have been well spoken of, but must be pushed to the extent of almost burning the patient. A 10-inch spark-coil with a bifocal tube, situate 7 to 10 inches from the lesion, has been used. Hypodermic injections of perchloride of mercury, as advocated by Crocker (0.01 gramme every other day), have been found satisfactory at times—a treatment which we recommend in cases at the very beginning of the disease.

Cashew nuts (Beauperthuy treatment) have been applied to the lepromata with the idea of local caustic action. Thyroid gland, salol, salicylates, arsenic, Gurjon oil, chlorate of potash, iodine, hypodermic injections of iodoform, have all been tried and found wanting.

Hypodermic injections of 'nastin' have been tried. This is a fatty principle extracted by Deycke from cultures of *astreptothrix* (*Streptothrix leproides*), which he found in the nodules of leprotic patients. The nastin is combined with benzoyl chloride, and made into ampoules with sterilized olive oil by Kolle and Company, of Biebrich, on the Rhine. Each ampoule contains from 0.0005 to 0.0002 gramme of nastin, which is to be injected once a week, and in the small doses produces no local reaction, but in the larger doses causes considerable local inflammation. Deycke's views as to the method of action are that the nastin attaches itself to the lepra bacillus, and then the benzoyl acts on the bacillus, damaging it by removal of its fat, when the normal fluids of the body complete its destruction.

Wise and Minett and others have reported unfavourably on this treatment, but recommend benzoyl chloride in petroleum oil as a valuable nasal spray or paint, as it renders the discharge from the nose free from bacilli.

Castellani and Woolley, and more recently Nicholls, have tried a vaccine prepared by triturating nodules rich in bacilli in salt solution or broth, then filtering through gauze, and finally heating to 60° C. for an hour.

Pasini has tried Finsen light, and Beurmann radium, with good results, and Duque, Moreno, and Padilla have obtained considerable improvement, and it is said cures, by treatment with decoctions of 20 to 60 grammes or 2 to 5 grammes of the powdered mangrove *Rhizophora mangle*, which, given in small doses at first, and gradually increased, are well stood, and produce a gradual improvement in the symptoms; and in the course of a year, it is said, cases may be cured. A. Bertarelli has obtained temporary good results by treating a patient with hypodermic injections of a solution of carbolic acid. Wellman and Rocamara have tried salvarsan, and claim good results.

Surgical treatment on the ordinary lines is required for ulcers, whitlows, etc. Eye lesions should be treated as though the disease was non-leprous, and should not be neglected. Grossmann thinks that leprous infiltration might be arrested by the production of cicatricial tissue, by a corneal or pericorneal incision.

With regard to other measures, lepers should be provided with plenty of fresh air and good food, and their quarters should be kept strictly clean. Care should also be taken that they are supplied with some form of light work and amusement, and the institution of rural colonies, provided they are well supervised, is to be recommended.

Prophylaxis.—Beyond isolation and antiseptic precautions after handling leprous people, nothing more can be done, as so little is known about the causation of the disease. The financial burden of isolating large numbers of lepers is very heavy. Hence the difficulty of carrying out this very necessary method of protection completely and efficiently.

REFERENCES.

The current literature may be found in the periodical *Leprosy*, which started in 1897.

- BAYON (1912). South African Medical Record. Cape Town. (Present Position of Leprosy Research.)
- BENSEN (1877). Dublin Journal of Medical Science.
- BLACK (1906). Lancet, i. 1167; ii. 1064.
- BORTHEN (1899). Klinische Studien, iv. Leipzig. (This is the standard work on leprosy of the eye.)
- BOURRETT (1908). Bull. de la Société de Path. Exot., 56 (Blood Examination).
- BULL AND HANSEN (1873). Leprous Diseases of the Eye. Christiania.
- CAMPANA (1907). La Lebbra Roma.
- CASTELLANI (1906). Journal Ceylon British Medical Association.
- DANIELSSEN AND BOECK (1848). Traité de la Spédalskhed. Paris.
- DEAN (1905). Journal of Hygiene, v.
- DE SILVA (1907). British Medical Journal, ii. 1235.
- DEYCKE (1905). Deutsche Medicinische Woch., 1314 (1907); *Ibid.*, 3; 1907, *Leprosy*, vii. 3, 174 (Nastin).
- DUVAL (1912). British Medical Journal.
- FRUGONI (1909). Arch. f. Dermat. u. Syph.
- FRUGONI AND PISANI (1909). Arch. Scienze Mediche.
- GROSSMAN (1906). British Medical Journal, i. 11 (Eye Lesions).
- HUTCHINSON (1907). Leprosy and Fish-eating. London.
- JAMAMENTO (1908). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie.
- LEBŒUF, A. (1912). Bull. Path. Exot.
- LELOIR (1886). Traité Pratique et Théoretique de la Lèpre. Paris.
- MACLEOD (1909). British Medical Journal. (1912). British Journal of Dermatology.
- MANTEGAZZA, U. (1903). La Lepra. Florence.
- MARCHOUX AND BOURRETT (1908). Bull. de la Soc. de Path. Exot., 416 (Inoculation of a Chimpanzee).
- MARCHOUX AND SOREL (1912). Ann. Inst. Past.
- MINNET (1912). Journal of the London School of Tropical Medicine. London. (Nastin Treatment.)
- NEVE (1900). British Medical Journal, i. 1153 (Eye Lesions).
- NICHOLSON (1905). Journal of Tropical Medicine, viii. 293 (Treatment by Mangrove).
- NICOLLE (1905). Compt. rendus de l'Acad. de Science. Paris.
- THOMPSON (1907). Lancet, ii. 1514.
- TONKIN (1903). Lancet, i. 1077.
- UNNA (1896). Histopathology of the Skin, 118 (Neurolepride), 606 (Leproma).
- VAN HOUTEN (1902). Journal of Pathology and Bacteriology, viii. 260.
- WISE (1912). Journal of the London School of Tropical Medicine. London. (Pulmonary Lesions.)
- WOIT (1900). *Leprosy*, i. 50, 103, 179 (Spinal Cord).
- WOOLLEY (1907). Proceedings of the Society of Experimental Biology and Medicine.

CHAPTER XLIV

FRAMBCESIA TROPICA (YAWS)

Synonyms—Definition—History—Geographical distribution—Ætiology—
Histopathology—Symptomatology—Diagnosis—Prognosis—Treatment
—Prophylaxis—References.

Synonyms.—In the British Colonies the disease is usually called 'yaws'; in the French colonies 'pian.' In Venezuela and other South American countries the name 'bubas' is much used. German and Italian authors generally use the term 'Frambœsia,' which was first used by Sauvage in 1750 on account of the raspberry-like appearance of the eruptive elements. Charlouis in 1882 suggested the term 'Polypapilloma tropicum'; Noc, Stevenel, and Iman introduced the term 'Castellani's spirochætosis.' Other local names are 'gattoo' (West Coast of Africa), 'dubi' (Gold Coast), 'framosi' (Calabar), 'ab oukine' (Gaboön), 'tetia' (Congo Coast), 'momba' (Angola), 'parangi' (Ceylon), 'buena' (Burma), 'puru' (Borneo, Federated Malay States), 'patek' (Dutch Indies), 'tonga' (New Caledonia and Loyalty Islands), 'coco' (Fiji), 'tona' (Tonga Island), 'lupani tonu' (Samoa), 'galis pateros' (some parts of the Philippine Islands).

Definition.—A tropical specific infectious and contagious disease caused by a *Treponema*, and characterized by a framboesiform granulomatous eruption.

History.—It has been suggested by Hume, Adams, and others, that framboesia was the disease which afflicted the Israelites during their emigration from Egypt, and that therefore the term 'saraat' in the thirteenth chapter of Leviticus does not mean leprosy, as usually translated. Ali Abbas and Avicenna, who wrote at the end of the tenth century, mention a disease called 'safat,' or 'sahafati,' with symptoms not unlike those of framboesia; but most authors are of the opinion that the disease referred to by the two Arabian physicians was syphilis. The study of the disease first began to engage the attention of European physicians after the discovery of America. Oviedo y Valdez (1478-1557) describes it in his work, 'Historia General e Natural de las Indias.' Piso (1648) refers to the malady in his work, 'De Medicina Brasiliensis.' Rochefort (1656), Raymond Breton (1665), and Labat (1694), report it from the West Indies, stating that it occurs frequently among the

natives (Caribs), who called it 'pyans,' or 'yaya.' Bontius, in 1718, reported that frambœsia was endemic not only in the West Indies, but also in Java, Sumatra, and other Dutch colonies of the East, where it was known by the name of 'anboyna pox,' or 'pimple.' In the days of the slave-trade, outbreaks of frambœsia frequently occurred in the crowded ships carrying African slaves to America. Special hospitals for the isolation and treatment of slaves suffering from the disease were built on all the important estates in the West Indies. Occasionally in the countries in which it is endemic the disease may increase to such an extent as to cause veritable epidemics. An example of such an epidemic occurred in Dominica in 1871, when two special segregation hospitals had to be built for frambœsia patients.

In 1769 an outbreak of a peculiar disease occurred in Scotland. It was called 'sibbens,' or 'sivvens' (*sivvi*, Celtic for raspberry), and was apparently imported by sailors belonging to a vessel coming from the West Indies, which was wrecked off Wigton in Cumberland.

The so-called 'button scurvy' of Ireland, endemic there in the eighteenth and the beginning of the nineteenth centuries; the 'radesyge,' which broke out in Sweden and Norway in 1710; and the 'mal de chicot' in Canada, have likewise been considered by some writers to be forms of frambœsia.

Several authors have endeavoured to distinguish between 'yaws,' 'pian,' 'boubas,' and 'parangi'; but those who have had the opportunity to study the disease in different countries have all come to the conclusion that 'yaws,' 'pian,' 'boubas,' and 'parangi,' are simply different names for the same disease, though of course each of these terms is often used by natives to cover several closely allied conditions. The term 'boubas,' for instance, is used by the inhabitants of Brazil for various ulcerative conditions, such as frambœsia, leishmaniasis and blastomycosis, but most of the medical South American authorities use it as a synonym for frambœsia. Unfortunately, Breda used it to denote a form of leishmaniasis, and caused much confusion. The experimental researches of one of us in cases of frambœsia contracted in different parts of the world (tropical America, East and West Africa, etc.) show that 'yaws,' 'pian,' 'boubas,' and 'parangi,' are merely synonyms, but it is possible that there may be several varieties of the spirochæte which is the cause of the disease.

Since the time of Labat several authors have upheld the syphilitic nature of frambœsia. This theory was supported till recently by Sir J. Hutchinson. In recent times the disease has been investigated, both clinically and experimentally, by a large number of observers.

In 1882 Charlouis proved by actual experiment that syphilis and frambœsia are two different diseases. The clinical investigation of the disease by Numa Rat was also of great value. His report, published in 1891, has become classical,

Among the recent observers who have investigated the disease in various parts of the tropics are Neisser, Daniels, Wellman, Jean-selme, Powell, Braush, Martin, Halberstadter, von Prowazek, Ashburn, J. Craig, Nichols, Strong, Flu, Noc, Stevenel, Iman, and many others.

Geographical Distribution.—Frambœsia is essentially a tropical disease, as few, if any, genuine cases have been reported from places outside the tropical and subtropical zone, and in the tropics it is never found on the mountains and cold districts. At the present time a skin disease not unlike it has been reported from Greece by several writers.

Africa.—The disease till recently was said to be very rare in the northern regions of the continent, though some cases were reported from Algeria; the recent researches of Gabbi and Sabella have demonstrated, however, that it is common in Tripoli. It is apparently rare in Egypt, though, according to some writers, it is observed fairly frequently in the Sudan. It is very common on the West Coast, especially on the Gaboon River, in the Congo Free State, and in Angola. It is also found in Mozambique, in Madagascar, and the Comoro Islands. In Uganda and the region of the Great Lakes it is occasionally met with. It has been noted among the Kaffirs in South Africa, near Kimberley, by Griffith, and by many other observers in several other districts of South Africa, Rhodesia, and Nyasaland.

Asia.—The disease is very common in the Malay Peninsula, Assam, Upper Burma, Siam, Java, Batavia, and is extremely frequent in Ceylon, where the number of cases treated in the Government Hospitals during the last ten years has been on the average 3,500 per year. The patients treated in hospitals represent only a small portion of all the cases. In India it is very rare, though small outbreaks of the disease have been described by various observers. It occurs in certain parts of China, but is unknown in Japan and the central and western regions of the Asiatic continent. It is present in the Philippine Islands.

America.—It is very common in the West Indies, and occurs in British Guiana, Venezuela, Colombia, and Brazil. Cases have been reported from the southern United States, but never from the northern States nor from Canada.

Australasia.—The disease is present in Northern Australia, and occurs frequently in many of the Pacific Ocean islands—Samoa, New Hebrides, New Caledonia, and Fiji. It is absent in New Zealand and Tasmania.

Ætiology.—Different kinds of bacteria have been described as causative agents of frambœsia. Eijkman found some peculiar bacilli; Pariez observed numerous micrococci; Powell, in 1896, cultivated from two cases a yeast; Nicholls and Watts, in 1899, isolated a coccus which, inoculated into animals, failed to reproduce the disease. In February, 1905, Castellani observed a *Treponema*, or

spirillum, as he thought it at the time. This organism, which he called *T. pertenue*, is now generally admitted to be the cause of the disease. For the description of the organism, see p. 410.

Incidence of the T. pertenue in Frambæsia Lesions.—The presence of the *Treponema* is constant in the primary lesion and in the unbroken papules of the general eruption. It may be found in the spleen, lymphatic glands, and bone-marrow. In the blood it has not yet been demonstrated microscopically, though there is no doubt that the blood of the general circulation is infectious, inasmuch as monkeys inoculated with it develop typical yaws lesions in which the *Treponema* is abundantly present. The *Treponema* is absent in the cerebro-spinal fluid, and generally in the tertiary lesions.

Bacteriological Flora found in Open Sores of Frambæsia.—While *T. pertenue* is the only germ found in the non-ulcerated lesions, the ulcerated lesions of frambæsia are soon invaded by all kinds of germs. Apart from innumerable bacteria, various kinds of spirochætes are present. One form is rather thick, and takes up the stain easily. It is morphologically identical with the *Spirochæta refringens* of Schaudinn. Another form is thin, delicate, with coils varying in size and number, and with blunt extremities—*S. obtusa* Castellani. A third form is likewise thin and delicate, but tapers at both ends—*S. acuminata* Castellani; *T. pertenue* is also present in many cases.

Inoculation Experiments of Frambæsia in Man.—Paulet, in 1848, inoculated fourteen negroes with the secretion taken from frambœtic granulomata. All of them developed frambæsia, the inoculation period varying from twelve to twenty days, when at the seat of inoculation in ten cases the first nodule appeared, soon followed by a typical general eruption. In two cases apparently the eruption did not start from the seat of inoculation.

Charlouis, in 1881, inoculated thirty-two Chinese prisoners, who had never suffered from the disease, with crusts and scrapings from a case of yaws. The disease developed in twenty-eight of them, beginning invariably at the seat of inoculation. Moreover, he inoculated a native suffering from typical yaws with syphilis. The inoculation was quite successful, a primary syphilitic sore developing, followed by all the usual types of secondary eruption. That yaws patients are not immune against syphilis is proved also by Powell and Nichols and others, who have described several cases of syphilis supervening on yaws. Syphilitic patients may contract frambæsia naturally and experimentally.

Inoculation Experiments in Monkeys and Other Animals.—Neisser, Prowazek, Halberstadter in Java, and shortly afterwards Castellani in Ceylon, have shown that monkeys are susceptible to frambæsia. According to their experiments, the inoculation period varies from a minimum of sixteen days to a maximum of ninety-two. The appearance of the lesions developing at the seat of inoculation is practically the same in all cases—viz., an infiltrated

spot slowly increasing in size, and soon becoming moist, the secretion drying into a thick crust. Removal of the crust exposes a raw, granulating, red surface.

In the monkeys of a low class (genus *Macacus*, genus *Semnopithecus*) the eruption is, as a rule, localized to the seat of inoculation. The infection, however, is general, as is proved by the presence of *T. pertenue* in the spleen and lymphatic glands besides the local lesions. Halberstadter has obtained a general eruption in ourang-outangs. According to Castellani's experiments, splenic blood, obtained by puncturing the spleen of a patient affected with frambæsia, can reproduce the disease in monkeys. The inoculation of the blood of the general circulation also may occasionally produce

the disease. The inoculation of cerebrospinal fluid into normal monkeys has always proved negative.

Neisser, Halberstadter, J. Prowazek in Java, and later Castellani in Ceylon, have proved that monkeys successfully inoculated with frambæsia do not thereby become immune to syphilis, and, *vice versa*, monkeys successfully inoculated with syphilis do not thereby become immune to frambæsia. According to Levaditi, monkeys immunized for yaws do not acquire any immunity for syphilis, but monkeys



FIG. 484.—MONKEY INOCULATED WITH FRAMBÆSIA.

immunized for syphilis may acquire a partial immunity for frambæsia. According to Ashburn and Craig, monkeys of the species *Cynomolgus philippinensis* are susceptible to frambæsia, but not to syphilis.

The following facts are in favour of the *T. pertenue* being the specific cause of frambæsia :—

1. In the non-ulcerated papules, in the spleen, in the lymphatic glands of frambæsia patients, as well as in inoculated monkeys, the *T. pertenue* is the only organism present. No other germ can be demonstrated either microscopically or by cultural methods.

2. The extract of frambæsia material containing the *T. pertenue*, but, so far as our present methods of investigation permit us to say, no other germs, is effective when inoculated into monkeys.

3. The extract of frambæsia material from which the *T. pertenue*,

has been removed by filtration becomes inert, and monkeys inoculated with it do not contract the disease.

PREDISPOSING CAUSES.—As is the case in other infectious diseases, dirt and other insanitary conditions favour to a certain extent the development and dissemination of the disease. The malady is rare among Europeans, and also among the better-class natives, who live amidst good sanitary surroundings, while it is very common among the villagers and low-caste natives, who live in uncleanly overcrowded huts. Sex does not exercise any influence, nor does age to any great extent, though the disease is more frequently met with in children and young people. The native practitioners of Ceylon are inclined to ascribe an important predisposing influence to certain foods. Some incriminate a kind of fish called 'balla mal,' others a cereal known as 'kurrakan' (nut-cherr). Duprey inculpates in the West Indies the abuse of mango fruit.

Histopathology.—The histopathology of frambœsia has been investigated by Unna, Macleod, Jeanselme, Plehn, and more recently by Schüffner, Marshall, Shennan, Siebert, Ashburn, Craig, and Löhe. In the framboetic papules the surface epithelium is greatly increased in thickness, and numerous elongated down-growths are seen. The epithelial layers show many patches, in which the epithelial cells are swollen, vacuolated, and degenerating. Small, sharply circumscribed areas are also seen containing polymorphonuclear leucocytes and detritus. The layers near the corium and its processes are, however, almost normal in appearance. The connective-tissue corium forms a thin layer, from which narrow, elongated, papillary processes pass into the epithelium, some of them nearly reaching the surface. The corium is the seat of marked œdema. There is a diffuse cellular infiltration made up of polymorphonuclear leucocytes, large and small mononuclear leucocytes, eosinophiles, plasma cells, mast cells, connective-tissue cells, and some extravasated erythrocytes. In the older nodules the plasma cells are present in such enormous numbers as to dominate all the others. Macleod has shown that there is no perivascular mononuclear infiltration so characteristic of syphilis, nor any endothelial proliferation in the vessel walls. The framboetic lesion also differs from that of syphilis in affecting the epithelium rather than the cutis, in the more considerable œdema, and in the absence, as a rule, of the giant cells.

When the framboetic granulomata have reached a certain stage, a very well-marked hyperkeratosis is noticeable. One of us has called attention to the appearance of the films taken in the usual way from the granulomata, and stained according to Leishman's method. In such films it is interesting to note the presence of a large number of polychromatic red blood cells of very different sizes, some much larger than the normal erythrocytes, some much smaller. They are stained deep or light blue instead of pink, and sometimes have a granular appearance. The leucocytes present in

the films frequently contain in their protoplasm, and sometimes in their nuclei, roundish or oval, more or less deeply blue stained bodies, which are probably polychromatic micro-erythrocytes engulfed by phagocytes. Some of these bodies present peculiar

chromatin dots. In such films the Treponemata are almost constantly found. The Treponemata may be put in evidence also in sections by using the Volpino-Bertarelli or Levaditi's silver staining, as used by Spronk, Shennan, and Schüffner. The examination of sections so stained shows that the parasite is mostly found in the epithelial layers.

Symptomatology.—The course of frambæsia may be divided into three periods—a primary stage, comprising the development of the primary lesion or frambœsoma; a secondary or granulomatous stage, during which the characteristic frambœtic granulomatous eruption appears; a tertiary or late stage, in which the late manifestations of the disease develop—deep ulcerations and gummatous-like nodules. This division into three periods is somewhat arbitrary, as tertiary symptoms may appear during the secondary stage.

It has been stated again and again that the whole course of the disease lasts from three to six months in children, and six to twelve in adults, but according to our experience it has a much longer duration, and unless it becomes extinct after the secondary stage it may extend to many years. Indeed, we believe that in

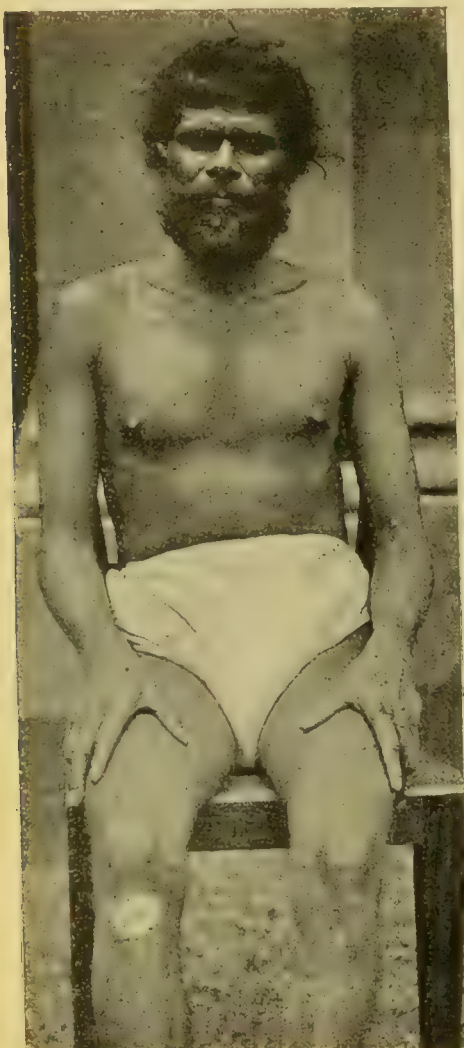


FIG. 485.—FRAMBÆSIA: PRIMARY STAGE, SHOWING THE PRIMARY LESION OR FRAMBÆSOMA BELOW THE RIGHT KNEE.

a certain number of cases, although there are periods during which the patient is apparently free from symptoms, the infection is merely latent, and sooner or later gives rise to renewed manifestations.

(a) **The Primary Stage Frambœsoma.**—After a period of incubation, varying in time between two to four weeks, characterized often by signs of malaise, rheumatoid pains, headache, irregular

rise of temperature, the primary lesion or frambœsoma appears at the seat of inoculation, which is always extragenital. The primary lesion is a papule, which after about a week becomes moist, developing a yellowish secretion, which dries into a crust. Often at the place of inoculation several papules appear, become moist, and coalesce into a single element, covered by a thick crust. If after some days the crust is removed, the primary sore will appear as an



FIG. 486 —CHILD WITH GENERAL GRANULOMATOUS ERUPTIONS, AND MOTHER WITH THE PRIMARY LESION (FRAMBÆSOMA) ON THE LEFT MAMMA.

ulcer, not rarely of large dimensions, with clean-cut edges and a granulating fundus. This ulcer may heal, leaving a whitish scar, which may later become pigmented; or in other cases it may develop into a granulomatous mass, not dissimilar to the granulomata of the secondary eruption, which appear later on, but frequently much larger. This large single projecting nodule is called 'mother yaw,' or 'maman pian' in French patois, 'buba madre' in Columbia of South America. Occasionally round it, before the

general eruption begins, several smaller granulomata develop like satellites. The primary sore never feels indurated, and is often painful during the first stage of development. Later it may be quite painless. Occasionally there may be pruritus. The proximal lymphatic glands may become hard and enlarged, but they do not suppurate.

The seat of the primary sore is usually extragenital. The lesion may develop on an old ulceration, an itch pustule, an insect bite, a wound, or a vaccination mark. The smallest abrasion is sufficient for the entrance of the virus. Most of our female patients presented the primary sore on one of the mammæ, developing on some crack or abrasion of the nipple and areola. In several other women the primary lesion was found on the skin of the trunk, just above the hip, this being due to the custom of the Ceylon woman carrying her child astride of the hip. Any framboetic element present on the scrotum or nates of the child, being continually rubbed against the skin of the mother, is likely to cause infection in the latter through any slight abrasion already present, or brought about by the friction. In men and children the primary lesion is frequently found on the hands, arms, and legs, but it may develop on any part of the body.

The primary lesion or framboesoma may heal before the general eruption begins, but, as a rule, is still present when the secondary eruption appears. We observed a case in which the primary lesion was still present six months after its first appearance, and when the secondary granulomatous eruption had nearly undergone complete involution. The duration of the primary lesion, therefore, may vary between a few weeks and several months. The primary lesion leaves a whitish scar, which later on may become pigmented. In some cases the scar is small and smooth, in others it is large and very thick. It is to be noted, however, that in Ceylon the disfiguring scar so frequently seen is partly due to the custom the natives have of cauterizing the sore deeply by very primitive methods. In other cases the large disfiguring cicatrix is due to the framboesoma having developed on an old ulcer, which on healing leaves a coarse scar.

(b) **The Secondary or Granulomatous Stage.**—The general eruption usually begins between one and three months after the first appearance of the primary lesion. It is preceded by malaise, headache, severe pains in the muscles, joints, and bones. In some cases there may be fever of an intermittent type. The patient, however, is ordinarily able to attend to his work. The general eruption develops as follows: Minute roundish papules, the size of pin-heads, appear on various parts of the body; some papules soon show a yellow point or minute yellow crust at their apex. Most of the papules remain of practically the same size for many weeks, and disappear, leaving occasionally some furfuraceous patches; others become larger, several often coalescing, and frequently acquiring a dark arcola in natives, a reddish one in Europeans. Some of the larger

papules increase in size, and develop into the characteristic large granulomatous nodules covered with a crust, honey-yellow or brownish, formed of desiccated secretion. If the crust covering the granulomata be removed, there will be seen a raw surface throwing up red or yellowish fungoid granulations secreting a thin, slightly purulent secretion, which soon dries into a crust. These framboetic granulomata are of various size, from a large pea to a nut, and may be found on practically any part of the body. They



FIG. 487.—FRAMBOESIA : GENERAL GRANULOMATOUS ERUPTION.

are extremely common on the upper and lower limbs, and on the face. On the scalp they are very rare. They may form rings round the mouth and anus, and may enclose sound skin (so called yaws ringworm). They may remain of the same size and appearance for months. Often, after a few weeks, the secretion diminishes, and a process of hyperkeratosis sets in. They then become of much harder consistency, and some of them, especially those on the dorsum of the feet and toes, may be covered with numerous small,

hard, verrucose-like protuberances. In the majority of cases—within three to six months in children, and six to twelve months in adults—the granulomata dry up, shrink, and disappear, leaving dark hyperpigmented spots, or occasionally apigmented areas, on their site, which are most persistent. In some cases the granulomatous eruption may continue for several years, new crops of nodules appearing from time to time in succession. Each frambætic granuloma generally undergoes involution within two to four months, leaving behind, as a rule, a dark area. Occasionally, how-

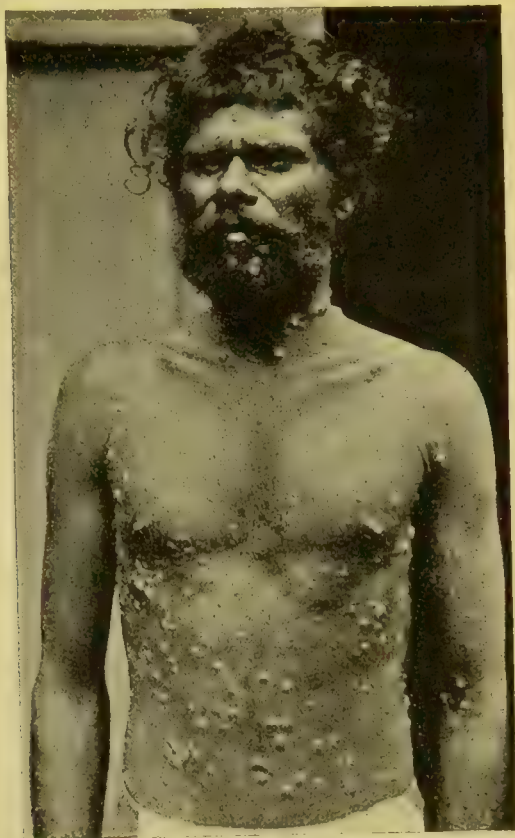


FIG. 488.—FRAMBÆSIA : SECONDARY STAGE, GENERAL ERUPTION.

ever, the granuloma does not regress so soon. In one of our patients a single granuloma persisted for two years after all the others had disappeared.

The granulomata are seldom painful, unless they develop between the toes, on the soles of the feet, or round the nails. They very often cause itching. The patient often exhales a peculiar offensive odour, which has been variously described as sour or musty. This is probably due to the growth of various bacteria, representing secondary infections beneath the crusts of the granulomata. This offensive odour is especially noticeable when the secondary infec-

PLATE VI.



tion is due to bacilli of Vincent's fusiform type and coarse spirochaetes. In such cases, if the sores are well washed with perchloride solution for two or three days, these organisms disappear, and the smell is no longer noticeable, though the granulomata do not undergo any change. Though the framboetic granuloma is the characteristic eruption of the secondary stage, there are during this stage other types of eruption or *framboesides*—papular, scaly, and occasionally ulcerative. An average ordinary case will present at the same time several typical framboesiform granulomata, numerous small reddish papules with the epidermis intact, other papules which have become moist and are covered by a tiny yellow crust, several furfuraceous patches here and there, and spots of increased



FIG. 489.—FRAMBOESIA: GENERAL ERUPTION OF THE SECONDARY STAGE.

pigmentation at the place of previous granulomata. Occasionally some granulomata break down, and large irregular ulcers form, presenting in their centre reddish papillomatous masses, which in our experience do not usually heal spontaneously. At times in the latter period of the secondary stage peculiar roundish or irregularly outlined whitish patches are present, especially on the back and arms, with a nutmeg-grater-like surface. On closer observation these patches are seen to consist of numerous hard, conical papules, containing in their centre an epidermic plug, which is easily removed, leaving a depression in the papules. Sometimes the plugs are spiny, and in this case the eruption closely resembles lichen spinulosus.

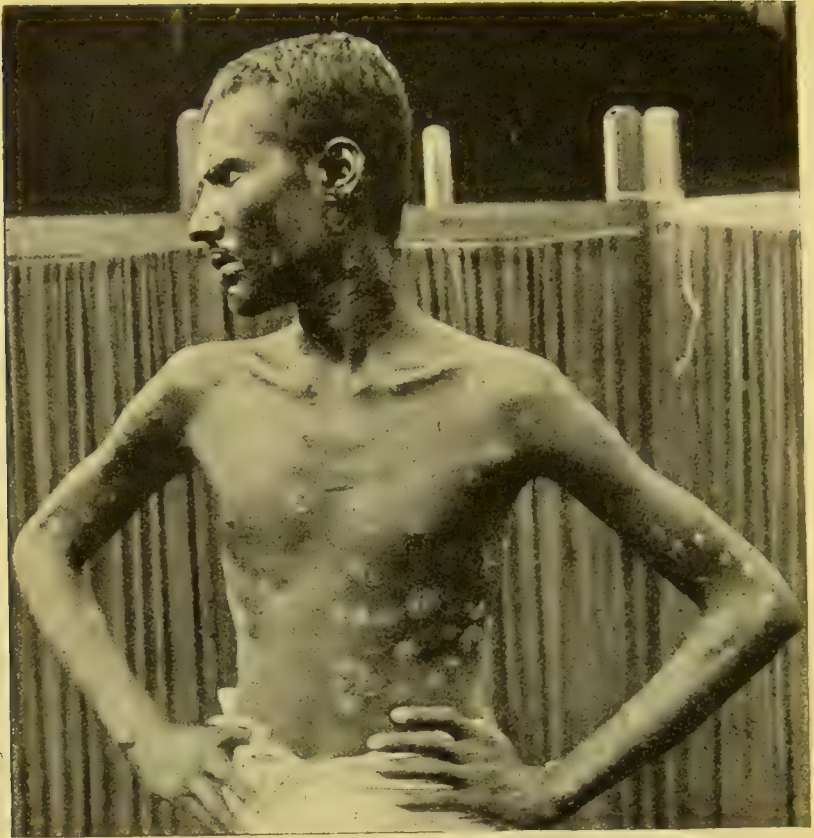


FIG. 490.—FRAMBÆSIA : SECONDARY STAGE, GENERAL ERUPTION.



FIG. 491.—FRAMBÆSIA : ERUPTION ON THE HANDS.

ERUPTIONS ON THE PALMS AND SOLES.—The granulomatous eruption very frequently attacks the soles of the feet. At first dark brownish or intensely livid spots appear ; the thick epidermis



FIG. 492.—FRAMBÆSIA : CIRCINATE ERUPTION.



FIG. 493.—FRAMBÆSIA : GRANULOMATA ON THE HEELS OF THE FEET.

is gradually pierced by frambæsial nodules similar to those found in other regions of the body. This affection of the soles is very painful ; the natives of Ceylon call it 'dumas.' Similar lesions may

occur on the hands. The granulomatous infiltration may attack the matrix and margins of the nails (framboetic onychia and paronychia). The nails become thickened, dry, brittle, and may be cast off entirely, though later they grow again.

After the granulomata have disappeared, occasionally at the same time peeling, whitish patches may be seen on the palms of the hands and soles of the feet closely resembling the syphilitic *psoriasis palmaris and plantaris*.

PECULIAR PITTED FRAMBOESIDE OF THE PALMS OF THE HANDS.—In several cases in the latter part of the secondary stage hard, round, flattened papules or small nodules, having a thick, hard, epidermic plug in their centre, may be observed on the palms and wrists. This plug falls off spontaneously or is easily pulled out, when a deep depression remains. The papules gradually disappear, but the de-



FIG. 494.—FRAMBOESIA : PITTED APPEARANCE OF THE HANDS.

pressions remain, and the palms acquire a peculiar pitted appearance. This condition of the palms may remain unchanged for several years after all symptoms of framboesia have disappeared. A somewhat similar appearance of the soles of the feet is occasionally met with.

LESIONS OF THE HAIR AND NAILS.—We have never noticed any change in the appearance of the hair, or alopecia. A few hair-follicles may be destroyed when the granulomata develop on the scalp, which, however, seldom occurs.

LESIONS OF MUCOSÆ.—These are not very common. During the secondary stage small granulomatous nodules may develop at the base of the tongue, also whitish patches closely resembling syphilitic leukoplakia. Small granulomata may develop on the nasal mucosa.

CONSTITUTIONAL SYMPTOMS—Fever.—As already stated, fever is frequently present, of intermittent or remittent type, before the

general secondary eruption begins. During the secondary stage it is usually absent, unless complications supervene.

LYMPHATIC GLANDS.—In a number of cases in our experience various groups of lymphatic glands are found to be enlarged. The enlarged glands are roundish or spindle-shaped, hard, painless, and never come to suppuration, unless a secondary pyogenic infection is present. The cervical and inguinal glands are most frequently enlarged.

ALIMENTARY SYSTEM.—As a rule, the digestive functions are not disturbed. In children slight diarrhoea may be occasionally noticed preceding the general eruption. The spleen and liver are frequently found enlarged in children, but this is probably due to preceding or concomitant malaria infection. The microscopical examination of the fæces of framboesia patients will frequently reveal



FIG. 495.—FRAMBOESIA : DACTYLITIS.

ova of various worms—*Ascaris lumbricoides*, *Trichuris trichiura*, and occasionally *Agchylostoma duodenale*—but this is of frequent occurrence also in normal natives.

RESPIRATORY SYSTEM.—As a rule the respiratory, as well as the circulatory, system is not affected. Occasionally small granulomatous ulcers are to be found in the nasal mucosa, and more rarely in the larynx.

LOCOMOTORY SYSTEM—Joints.—In some patients several of the large articulations may become swollen and very painful. The condition is often of an acute character, and may be accompanied by fever, so that an attack of articular rheumatism complicating the framboetic infection might be suspected. Sodium salicylate, however, is not beneficial, while the administration of large doses of potassium iodide speedily reduces the temperature to normal, and

cause the swelling of the articulation to subside. At other times one articulation only is involved, and the symptoms may become so serious as to suggest purulent arthritis. In many cases the smaller articulations become involved. The symptoms in such cases are not acute, and there is usually no fever.

Bones.—Inflammation of the periosteum of various bones is of common occurrence. Very frequent is a form of multiple periostitis of the digital phalanges, the cause of the multiple dactylitis so often seen in framboesia patients.

Muscles.—Contractures of various groups of muscles may be observed. Fairly common is a contracture of the flexor muscles of the forearms. This contracture is often permanent, and in our opinion is probably due to pathological alteration of the peripheral nerves, rather than being of direct muscular origin.

NERVOUS SYSTEM—Neuritis.—Neuralgic pains are often observed, but also a true form of neuritis must be admitted. We have seen in several cases clear symptoms of neuritis of the sciatic nerve, with severe pain along the course of the nerve, and signs of motor and trophic disturbances.

HYPERIDROSIS.—In several of our patients we have noticed hyperidrosis. The phenomenon was limited to the face in some cases, to the hands and soles of the feet in others. It never extended to the whole body, and generally affected symmetrical regions. Hyperidrosis is more frequently observed in children than in adults. In a case at the Colombo Clinic a boy of fourteen, presenting a general eruption of framboesia, the hyperidrosis of the face was so marked that large drops of perspiration were constantly dropping down. He was treated with potassium iodide. After a month the granulomata had disappeared, and the hyperidrosis was no longer noticeable. In some cases the hyperidrosis ceases suddenly without any treatment. The condition, however, may last for some weeks or months.

THE EYES.—Granulomatous and papular eruptions may develop on the eyelids. A slight periostitis of the orbital margin is not rare, the margin becoming thickened and very painful on pressure. The occurrence of iritis is denied by most authors. In the Colombo Clinic two typical cases were observed during the general granulomatous eruption. In both cases the affection was of moderate severity. There was photophobia, ciliary congestion, discoloration of the iris. Pupillary reaction was almost absent. Both cases recovered on large doses of potassium iodide without any local treatment.

THE GENITO-URINARY SYSTEM.—The primary lesion is rarely, if ever, found on the genital organs. In fact, in all the cases we have seen the primary lesion was always extragenital. Eruptions of the secondary stage, papular and granulomatous, frequently involve the skin of the penis and of the labia. Granulomatous ulceration may be found on the vaginal mucosa. The urine, as a rule, does not contain anything abnormal; only when there is fever—as, for

instance, when the articulations are acutely involved—then a slight amount of albumin may be present.

THE BLOOD.—There is often a certain degree of anæmia, never very severe. The number of red blood-corpuscles varied in our cases from 3,000,000 to 4,000,000, the hæmoglobin index (Fleischl) from 50 to 75. The red blood-corpuscles did not show anything abnormal in their shape. On several occasions a comparatively large number of polychromatic erythrocytes were noticed, staining blue instead of pink with Leishman's method. Many of these basophile red cells are micro-erythrocytes. The leucocytes varied from 7,000 to 11,000 per cubic millimetre. In the majority of cases an increase was noticeable in the number of the large mononuclears, even when there was no sign and no history of malaria. In almost all the cases the eosinophiles were increased, this being probably



FIG. 496.—FRAMBÆSIA: PSEUDO-MYCETOMA.

due—in part, at least—to the presence of intestinal worms, as revealed by the microscopic examination of the stools, which showed frequently ova of *Ascaris lumbricoides*, *Trichuris trichiura*, and in a few instances of *Agchylostoma duodenale*.

CEREBRO-SPINAL FLUID.—The liquid is in all cases perfectly clear, like distilled water. No cellular sediment on centrifugalization is found in most cases. In a few some rare monunuclear cells are found. The pressure is not increased. The physical and chemical characters do not show much variation from what is found in normal conditions. The density varied in our cases between 1003 to 1005. A certain amount of globulin was present, and a substance (dextrose?) reducing Fehling's solution. This reducing substance was in several cases distinctly in excess of what is observed in the normal fluid. No cholin is found. The reaction of the fluid is alkaline. The liquid is sterile; no *Treponemata* can be detected.

Tertiary or Late Stage.—The disease often terminates with the secondary stage. In some cases, however, the infection does not



FIG. 497.—FRAMBÆSIA :
TERTIARY STAGE.

become extinct, and tertiary lesions appear. These have been denied by many observers, but having been able to watch cases for several years through the whole course of the disease, we have no doubt as to their existence. Sometimes the secondary and tertiary stages merge into each other, but frequently the tertiary symptoms appear after the lesions of the secondary stage have undergone complete involution. The interval of time varies considerably in length, and may extend to many years. The characteristic lesions of the tertiary period are gummatous-like nodules and deep ulcerative processes. These gummatous nodules may develop in any tissues. When developed in the skin and subcutaneous tissues, they are indolent, and by their softening and breaking down ulcers are produced which may occasionally present clear-cut margins and a granulating fundus, and when several contiguous nodules break down, serpiginous ulcers are left. In other cases deep, irregularly-shaped ulcerations with very thick and undermined edges are seen ; in others—and these are the more numerous—large fungating ulcers are present. On healing, these various ulcers leave whitish scars, which are often thick and disfiguring. Frequently the scar-tissue undergoes retraction, and thereby causes permanent contractures and disfigurement. Lesions of the osseous type are very frequent, painful nodes developing under the periosteum of several bones, ribs, sternum, etc. In other cases a diffuse chronic periostitis is present, altering the normal shape of the bones. Contractures of various groups of muscles are frequently seen. Tertiary affections of the internal organs and of the central nervous system have not yet been described. The malady does not appear to be

hereditary ; in fact, it is worth noting that, in contrast to syphilis, parents generally contract the malady from their children.

Communicability.—Framboesia is usually conveyed by direct contact from person to person. It appears, however, that the germ is unable to enter through the normal skin, and that there must be some pre-existing abraded surface, small wound, or ulceration. Women are frequently infected by their children, the primary lesion appearing often on the mammæ. In the native women of Ceylon the primary lesion frequently develops on the skin of the trunk just above the hip, slight abrasions caused by friction being usually present on this part, owing to the habit they have of carrying their children astride of the hip. In our opinion, however, there can be little doubt that in certain cases insects may carry the disease. It is very noticeable that flies eagerly crowd on the open



FIG. 498.—FRAMBOESIA : TERTIARY STAGE.

sores of framboesia patients. In the hospitals, as soon as the dressings are removed, the framboetic ulcerations become covered with flies, sucking with avidity the secretion, which they may afterwards deposit in the same way on ordinary ulcers of other patients. Ants also are occasionally seen to go on to the framboetic ulcerations, as well as on to ordinary ulcers. In Nuttall's classical work on the rôle of insects as carriers of parasitic diseases several authors are quoted (Alibert, Hoish, Cadet, Wilson) who believe that the infection may be conveyed from one individual to another by flies. Wilson states that this belief prevails among the natives of the West Indies.

One of us made some experiments to prove that flies are instrumental in the dissemination of the disease. A number of flies were fed on scrapings from slightly ulcerated framboetic papules. The

flies (*Musca domestica* and allied species), before feeding on the framboetic material, were examined. The examination showed that they did not harbour any Treponemata, either on their mouth organs or on their legs. On examination after feeding, the majority presented coarse spirochætes, and a few of them also *L. pertenuis*. In another experiment flies fed on yaws material were placed on scarified spots over the eyebrows of several monkeys, and kept there for two hours by means of strips of gauze smeared with collodion at their margins. One of the monkeys became infected.

Modder suggests that *Ixodes bovis*—i.e., *Margaropus annulatus* var. *australis*—or some of the Argasidæ may be the transmitting agent.

Diagnosis.—In countries where the disease is endemic the diagnosis is generally easy, the large framboesiform nodules, capped with thick yellow crusts, being typical. By some observers the disease has been confused with *verruca peruviana* and with *syphilis*.

Verruca Peruviana.—This disease is strictly limited to certain valleys of the Andes at an elevation of from 3,000 to 10,000 feet. It is far more deadly than framboesia, the mortality rising to 30 and 40 per cent. It is usually accompanied by severe fever of long duration, and its eruptive elements, unlike those of framboesia, frequently attack the various mucosæ, and bleed with great facility.

Syphilis.—By some authors framboesia has been looked upon as a form of syphilis. The results of experimental investigations on yaws and syphilis prove conclusively that the two diseases are distinct, inasmuch as (1) patients suffering from syphilis may contract yaws, and patients suffering from yaws may contract syphilis; (2) monkeys successfully inoculated with yaws do not acquire any immunity against syphilis.

Syphilis has a world-wide distribution; framboesia, on the other hand, is restricted to certain parts of the tropics. Framboesia is extremely common in Ceylon, extremely rare in India. Syphilis is common to both countries. In Samoa, according to Turner, syphilis was unknown up to at least 1880, while framboesia has been endemic there ever since the group was discovered. In Fiji, too, up to a few years ago syphilis was not present, while framboesia was almost universal. Daniels has made the interesting observation that in British Guiana framboesia of late has disappeared, while syphilis is still rampant. As regards clinical features, framboesia differs from syphilis by the following characters: the primary lesion is, as a rule, extragenital; the principal type of eruption is a papule, which proliferates into a characteristic framboesiform granulomatous growth; there is an extremely well-marked pruritus. The disease is apparently not hereditary; in fact, in contrast to syphilis, parents generally contract the malady from their children. The histopathology differs also in the two diseases. In framboesia the proliferative changes of the epidermis are much more marked, the granulomata present a more diffuse plasma cell infiltration, and

their bloodvessels have no tendency to the thickening of their walls, which is so characteristic of syphilis. Giant cells are generally absent. Naturally these differential histological details must be considered collectively, as there is no individual histological character which exceptionally might not be present in both syphilis and frambœsia.

Boubas and Pian.—Some of the older authors believed that under the names of yaws, boubas, and pian three different diseases were indicated. All those, however, who have had opportunity to investigate frambœsia in different parts of the tropics have come to the conclusion that these various denominations are simply local synonyms indicating the same pathological entity, though, of course, each of these terms is sometimes used by natives to indicate, besides frambœsia, other clinically similar conditions. Comparative experimental investigations made by one of us have led to the same result, inasmuch as he has been able to demonstrate that monkeys successfully inoculated with Ceylon frambœsia become immune to boubas and pian, and *vice versa*.

Breda and De Amicis, in Italy, have not found *T. pertenue* in Italian emigrants returning from Brazil, and suffering from what they considered to be boubas; but Splendore has shown their cases to have been cases of Leishmaniasis and Blastomycosis. The fact is, that in South America the term boubas is used by the natives to cover several clinically similar diseases, while most medical writers use the term as a synonym for frambœsia. Rivas, Linderman, and Robledo have found the *T. pertenue* in their cases of boubas in Venezuela, Brazil, and Colombia. It is not to be excluded, however—in fact, it is probable—that future investigation will show that there are several varieties of *T. pertenue*.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is not serious so far as life is concerned. In 1908, in the Ceylon hospitals, 3,246 cases were treated, with twenty-three deaths; in 1904, out of 3,591 cases, sixteen died; in 1903, out of 3,254 cases, ten only died. The prognosis is far more serious in children than in adults. When the disease ends fatally the termination is generally due to secondary infection, the framboetic ulcerated lesions becoming phagedenic, and giving opportunity to septicæmia and pyogenic processes to develop. Though frambœsia rarely terminates in death, its long duration and great contagiousness render it a serious malady. The patients suffering from it are unable to attend to their work. Epidemics of frambœsia, therefore, are of the greatest consequence on tea, sugar, and other plantations, as they reduce the supply of labour.

Treatment.—The most efficacious and quickest treatment is by Ehrlich-Hata salvarsan or neo-salvarsan. These drugs seem to act in frambœsia more quickly and more powerfully than in any other spirochætal and treponemal condition; in fact, in frambœsia the *therapia sterilans magna* in Ehrlich's meaning, by a single dose, can often be obtained. Salvarsan was first tried with good results in experimental yaws by Nichols, and in patients suffering from the

disease by Strong in the Philippine Islands, and Castellani in Ceylon, while Alston in the West Indies made the interesting observation that the serum of patients treated with salvarsan showed remarkable curative powers when injected in framboesia patients. Recently the salvarsan treatment of framboesia has become general, having been used with very good results by De Gorge and Mouzels, Sabella, Born, and many others. The salvarsan treatment is especially efficacious in recent cases. Relapses, however, occasionally occur. In very old cases with tertiary lesions the treatment may fail.

MODE OF ADMINISTRATION AND DOSAGE.—Salvarsan may be given by intramuscular, subcutaneous, or intravenous injection; by the mouth in alkaline solution; and also by the rectum in the form of enemas or suppositories. We recommend the intramuscular and intravenous injections. The administration by the rectum in our experience does not give any good result, and of the oral administration we have no personal experience.

Intramuscular Injections.—The injection is generally given in the buttocks, with the usual precautions as regards the disinfection of the skin, and the use of a sterile all-glass syringe. The quickest method of disinfecting the skin is to paint it with tincture of iodine. The dose to be given in adult males is 0.40 to 0.50 gramme; in adult females and thin individuals 0.30 and 0.40 gramme. A dose exceeding 0.60 gramme should never be given either in males or females. In children the dose is 0.03 to 0.04 gramme for each year of age, or 0.008 gramme for each kilogramme of weight.

The injection of salvarsan in the same dose can be repeated after two or three weeks, if the first one has not been completely successful. The drug is not easily soluble, and various methods of preparing the liquid to be injected have been described. The simplest method is Ehrlich's. The salvarsan powder (0.30 to 0.60 gramme) is rubbed with a little methyl-alcohol (pure) in a sterile vessel, and then mixed with 10 to 20 c.c. of normal salt solution.

An alkaline or neutral solution is preferable, and is prepared by rubbing the drug in a sterile mortar with 10 to 20 drops of a 15 per cent. solution of sodium hydrate, and adding 8 to 10 c.c. of sterile distilled water, stirring continuously. In order to prepare a clear solution, it generally requires 1 c.c. to 1.2 c.c. of the sodium hydrate solution for 0.6 gramme of salvarsan; a suspension of the drug in olive-oil or some other fatty material may also be used. A good preparation of this type, which we have often used, is by Pasini.

The suspensions in oil may often be given with advantage subcutaneously in the interscapular region. The intramuscular or subcutaneous injection of salvarsan, especially the acid solution, is generally painful, and is followed by a hard infiltration, which lasts for some weeks. Occasionally a slough forms, which has to be removed surgically.

Intravenous Injections.—The dose is smaller than for the intramuscular injection, 0.4 gramme for men and 0.3 gramme for women

being sufficient. The preparation of the solution to be injected is as follows : One of the glass phials in which salvarsan is put up in the dose of 0.60 gramme is broken, and the contents (0.60 gramme of salvarsan) is carefully added to 30 or 40 c.c. of physiological salt solution made with distilled water in a sterile stoppered vessel. It is dissolved by shaking thoroughly, and by adding 1.2 c.c. (about 23 drops) of 15 per cent. sodium hydrate solution. A precipitate is formed which redissolves. The solution should then be diluted to 300 c.c. with normal saline ; 1 or 2 more drops of sodium hydrate may be required if the liquid is not clear. Each 50 c.c. of this solution contains 0.1 gramme of salvarsan. In man, 200 c.c. should be injected, in women 150, in children less, according to the rules given *supra*.

For the intravenous injections special apparatus has been devised, based on the principle of the Grantly douche. A convenient one, which may serve for all these forms of injection, has been placed on the market by W. H. Martindale.

PRECAUTIONS TO BE OBSERVED.—The solution should be prepared with sterile salt solution made with freshly prepared distilled water and chemically pure sodium chloride. It should be *perfectly clear* ; it should be slowly infused into the vein (200 c.c. in about eight minutes) ; it should not be cold (about the temperature of the body if possible) ; the patient should be in bed, and should be kept there for a couple of days. If signs of collapse occur during the infusion, it should be stopped at once, and an injection of caffein given.

NEO-SALVARSAN.—This preparation, discovered by Ehrlich and his co-workers, acts like salvarsan, but is less toxic, less painful, and has the great advantage of being more easily soluble. It is given by intramuscular or intravenous injection. The dosage in man is the same as for salvarsan—viz., 0.4 to 0.6 gramme or 0.01 gramme per kilogramme of weight—though larger doses up to 1 gramme have been given with impunity.

As regards the dosage and mode of administration, Castellani has shown that in infected rabbits the *dosis tolerata* is nearly three times larger than for salvarsan ; the *dosis sterilans* is one-tenth of the *dosis tolerata*.

The natives treat the disease in various ways. In Samoa the patient is rubbed down with sand and washed in the sea, after which the yaws are scraped with a shell. In the West Indies boiled and beaten-up leaves of the ' physic-nut ' are applied, or powdered alum and sulphur used. In Ceylon the *vedaralas* (native doctors) apply concoctions of various herbs, and give decoctions of sarsaparilla and other roots. They also use mercury disguised in various ways. The majority of European practitioners use potassium iodide. Others affirm this drug to be quite useless, and believe that cleanliness and good and abundant food are quite sufficient to bring about a cure.

In the Colombo Clinic for Tropical Diseases some experiments have been made on the various treatments, and the conclusion arrived at has been that the salvarsan and neo-salvarsan treatment is the most effective of all ; potassium iodide is often successful ; mercury has practically no effect whatever on the malady. Some cases may recover spontaneously, but this is certainly the exception, not the rule. The potassium iodide should be given in large doses (in adults 15 grains and in children 5 grains three times daily). Occa-

sionally cases are met with refractory to potassium iodide, and tertiary lesions are often intractable. The yaws patients usually bear large doses well. When severe symptoms of iodism set in, the dose should be temporarily decreased, or the treatment may be stopped altogether for a few days. An important point often overlooked by the practitioner is that the potassium iodide treatment should be prolonged for a considerable time after the complete disappearance of the eruption, inasmuch as clinical experience, as well as experiments on inoculated monkeys, prove that the specific *Treponemata* may, and do, persist in the lymphatic glands and internal organs long after the cutaneous manifestations have disappeared. Atoxyl has been tried by Neisser in monkeys experimentally inoculated with the disease, and by one of us in human patients. The results are occasionally fairly good.

Broden in 1910 and recently others have tried antimonial preparations with good results. The method of administration is by intravenous injection, as in sleeping sickness (see p. 966).

LOCAL TREATMENT.—This consists chiefly in keeping the skin scrupulously clean, washing the eruption twice daily with a perchloride of mercury solution (1 to 1,000), which greatly allays the itching. The ulcerated lesions may be dusted with iodoform, eucrophen, xeroform, or boracic acid. Mercury ointments may be beneficial, but in our experience are not sufficient to hinder secondary pyogenic infections. Caustics are not called for unless the ulcers become phagedenic. In such cases pure carbolic acid is best. Though the external treatment may be useful, one must bear in mind that it is not, as a rule, sufficient alone to cure the disease.

Prophylaxis.—In countries where frambœsia is endemic the slightest abrasions of the skin should be taken care of and properly treated with antiseptics. Frambœsia patients should be prevented from mixing with the rest of the population, and should be isolated in special hospitals till the disease is cured. Their skin lesions should be properly dressed, and thus prevented from becoming a source of infection through the agency of flies and other insects. Their huts and belongings should be thoroughly disinfected.

REFERENCES.

- ALSTON (1911). *British Medical Journal*. London.
 ASHBURNE AND CRAIG (1908). *Philippine Journal of Science*, B. Manila.
 BARRET (1905). *Pathological Society of London*, November.
 BLANCHARD (1906). *Arch. de Parasitologie*. Paris.
 BORNE (1906). *Geneeskundig Tijdschrift*.
 BRANCH (1906). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*. London.
 BREDA (1906). *Giornale d. mal. ven. e d. Pelle*.
 BROCHARD (1913). *Bull. Path. Exot*.
 CASTELLANI (1905-13). *Ceylon Medical Reports*. *Journal of the Ceylon Branch of the British Medical Association*, June 17, 1905; *Lancet*, August, 1905; *British Medical Journal*, November, 1905; *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, August, 1905, and January 1, 1906; *Deutsch. med. Woch.*, January 1, 1906; *Journal of Cutaneous Diseases*, 1908; *Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene*, Bd. XI., 1907 and 1911.
 CASTELLANI (1912). *Zeitschrift für Chemotherapie*.
 CLEMOW (1903). *Geography of Disease*. London.
 COCKIN (1912). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*.

- CROCKER (1905). Diseases of the Skin. London.
DE GORGE AND MOUZELS (1912). Bull. Soc. Med. Indo-Chine.
GABBI AND SABELLA (1912). Malaria.
JEANSELME (1903). Dermatologie Exotique.
LINDERMAN (1909). Bulletin de Path. Exotique.
LOHE (1909). Dermat. Zeitschrift.
MACLEOD (1902). British Medical Journal. London.
MANSON (1907). Tropical Diseases. London.
MARSHALL (1908). Philippine Journal of Science, B. Manila.
MARTINEZ SANTAMARIA (1913). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
MODDER (1908). Journal of Tropical Medicine. London.
NEISSER (1906), BAERMANN, HALBERSTAEDTER. Münch. med. Woch. ; quoted
in Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene, Bd. X., Heft 1.
NEISSER (1908). Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene.
NOGUCHI (1912). Journal of Experimental Medicine.
NUTTALL, G. F. H. (1899). On the Rôle of Insects as Carriers of Bacteria
and Parasitic Diseases. Johns Hopkins Hospital Reports, vol. viii.
NICHOLS (1909). Philippine Journal of Science ; (1911), Journal of Experi-
mental Medicine.
PERRY (1904-12). Medical Reports Ceylon.
PLEHN (1906). Mense's Handbuch der Tropenkrankheiten.
POWELL (1898-1905). Pathological Society, London, November, 1905 ;
British Medical Journal of Dermatology, 1898.
RANKEN (1912). British Medical Journal. London.
RAT, NUMA (1801). Framboesia (Yaws) : Its Nature and Treatment.
RIVAS (1906). Contribution al Estudio del Agente Patogeno de la Buba.
Caracas.
ROBLEDO (1909). Bulletin de Pathologie Exotique. Paris.
SABELLA (1912). Policlinico. Roma.
SIEBERT, W. (1908). Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene.
SCHEUBE (1910). Die Krankheiten der Warmen Länder.
STRONG (1910). Philippine Journal of Science.
WASSERMANN (1906). Deutsch. med. Woch., May 10.
WELLMANN (1905). Journal of Tropical Medicine, December. London.

CHAPTER XLV

VERRUGA PERUVIANA

Synonyms—Definition — History — Climatology — Ætiology — Pathology — Histopathology—Symptomatology—Diagnosis — Prognosis — Treatment — Prophylaxis—References.

Synonyms.—Peruvian wart, Verruga Blanda, Carrion's Fever, Verruga de Castilla, Verruga of the Andes, Verruga de Zapo ó de Quinua, Verruga Andicola, Verruga Mular, Verruga de Sangre, Fièvre de la Oroya, Verruga de Crapaud, Bouton des Andes. The word 'verruca' signifies in Spanish a wart.

Definition.—Verruga peruviana is a chronic endemic specific general disorder of unknown origin, not contagious, but apparently inoculable, and characterized by an irregular fever associated with rheumatoid pains, anæmia, followed by granulomatous swellings in the skin, mucous membranes, and organs of the body.

History.—It is probable that the disease existed in South America before the advent of the Spaniards, for the earliest references to it are found in Spanish works on Peru in the sixteenth century. The first record is by Agustin de Zárate, Treasurer of Lima, in his 'History of the Conquest of Peru,' written in 1543, in which he relates that warts or small tumours appeared on the face and other parts of the body, which were more deadly than smallpox, and almost as fatal as plague.

Garcilas de la Vega records that a quarter of the small army of François Pizarre perished from this cause, while Gomara, Garcilazo (1617), and other early writers, also draw attention to the disease. After this period writers on Peru either fail to mention the disease at all, or only write short paragraphs such as that in Cosme Bueno's geographical description of the province of Canta, published in 1764, in which it is mentioned under its ancient name of 'berrugas.'

The modern descriptions of the disease begin with the works of Tschudi in 1843, Malo in 1852, Smith in 1858, Salazar and Manuel Odriozola in 1858, Velez in 1861, and Dounon in 1871, the last-named giving a very clear account of the complaint.

But little interest was, however, taken in it until 1870, when a severe outbreak of fever took place among the workpeople laying the railway-line between Lima and Oroya. This complaint for

some reason was called 'Oroya fever,' although it did not affect Oroya. About the same time Dounon's excellent paper appears to have interested French naval surgeons, so that numerous investigations as to verruga and Oroya fever were made both by Peruvian doctors, such as Pancorvo and others in 1875, and French surgeons, such as Fournier in 1874, Bourse in 1876, and Tupper in 1877. During this period there was much disputation as to whether Oroya fever was related to verruga, or was a distinct clinical entity. In 1885 Daniel A. Carrion, a student of the Faculty of Medicine of Lima, who had for some time been studying the disease, attempted to settle this question by vaccinating both his arms with the blood from a verruga tumour on August 27, 1885, and on September 17 he began to suffer from the symptoms of Oroya fever, from which he died on October 5. In honour of this noble attempt to elucidate the ætiology of the fever, his compatriots have since referred to Oroya fever as Carrion's disease.

The unfortunate death of this brave young man stimulated inquiry, and a very large number of investigations were published, of which it is only possible to mention a few.

In 1885 Izquierdo announced the discovery of a bacillus in some specimens sent to him in spirit, which, of course, prevented anything of the nature of a thorough bacteriological investigation.

In 1887 Florez grew a coccus on agar-agar inoculated with the blood from persons suffering from verruga. In 1898 a most elaborate monograph by E. Odriozola appeared, which the reader interested in the subject is strongly advised to peruse.

In the same year Nicolle and Letulle independently described bacilli resembling those of tuberculosis in the skin lesions. Barton, in 1902, published the first careful bacteriological examinations of Carrion's fever, and from 1903 to the present time Biffi has written a series of able papers on the disease.

We are therefore confronted with two conditions described by authors—viz., a disease which may or may not begin with fever, and which ultimately ends with a most peculiar and typical eruption, verruga peruviana, and another disease characterized by an incubation period of twenty-one days, as proved by Carrion's inoculation, and of a severe type often ending in death, without the appearance of any eruption. Are these two conditions one and the same disease—that is to say, is Carrion's fever Peruvian wart without an eruption, or are the two separate pathological entities? Tasset, in 1872, held that they were separate entities, and that Carrion's fever was a typho-malarial fever, but since the inoculation of Carrion most authors have considered the two diseases to be one and the same, though every now and again some author has objected, and has held that Carrion's fever was typhoid. In 1901-02 Barton, as the result of careful bacteriological researches, concluded that in the blood and organs of persons dying from Carrion's fever a micro-organism could be found which, though similar to *Bacillus coli communis* in many respects, was easily separable therefrom. This

organism was fatal to inoculated animals, causing a septicæmia and, it is said, a verruga-like eruption in the skin. Biffi has carefully investigated this bacillus, and finds that it is present constantly and in abundance in persons suffering from Carrion's fever, but is absent in patients suffering from verruga peruviana without fever. It is agglutinated by the serum of persons suffering from Carrion's fever, but not by that of patients suffering from verruga who have not had fever. The micro-organisms are, however, not always of the same strain. Thus, Biffi has separated two different strains, one of which resembles Schottmüller's *B. paratyphosus B*, and the other Gärtner's bacillus. Biffi and Carbajal were unable to confirm Barton's results as to the presence of a skin eruption in animals inoculated by these strains. They therefore conclude that Carrion's fever is a separate pathological entity distinct from verruga, and that it is a fever belonging to the paratyphoid group, but differs from the usual types by being due to a different organism, and by occurring in patients suffering from verruga. In this finding they are supported by the clinical observations of several observers, among whom may be mentioned Eder.

The next question which must be considered is the nature of verruga peruviana, for recently it has been suggested that it is framboesia, and this has been specially emphasized, since it has been realized that it may run its course without any fever. Biffi, however, has clearly shown that they are separate, framboesia being contagious, verruga not; framboesia beginning with an initial lesion, verruga not; framboesia being due to *Treponema pertenue* Castellani, verruga not. We may therefore conclude that verruga peruviana is a definite pathological entity. Further researches in the disease have been made by Bassett-Smith, Mayer, and others.

Climatology.—Verruga peruviana is confined to South America, and to the western slopes of the Andes in Ecuador, Peru, Bolivia, and the northern parts of Chili, the most important endemic area being Peru, where it is almost limited to the departments of Ancachs and Lima, lying north and south of the tenth parallel, and on the western side of the Andes. The department of Ancachs comprises seven provinces, of which the provinces of Pallusca, Huaylas, Huaraz, and Cajatambo, which are on the western slopes of the Andes, are most affected, while that of Santa, which runs along the littoral, is almost free. The disease is, however, peculiarly limited to certain places in these provinces. The heights of these places vary from Cochabamba, in the province of Cajatambo, which is only at an elevation of 406 metres, to Cajatambo, in the same province, which is at an altitude of 3,350 metres, but according to Monge it is never naturally acquired at an elevation below 2,800 feet or above 9,000 feet, nor does it originate in the main valleys.

One striking peculiarity common to all the places is that they are in narrow valleys along tributaries of rivers. The principal infected areas are Tablachaca, Pallusca, Corongo, Pacatqui, and Ninabamba, in Pallasca; Huaylas and Caráz, in Huaylas; Yautan, Pariacoto

Rurasca, Nanca, Jangas, Pongor, Anta, and another district on a branch of the River Huarmey, in Huaraz; Cochas, Huaylillas, and Cajatambo, in Cajatambo.

In the department of Lima there are six provinces, of which Chancay, Canta, Huarochiri, and Yauyos possess endemic areas, which vary in height from 900 to 2,030 metres. In Chancay there is Huaycho; in Canta, Acos, Viscas, Yasu, Magdalena, and Yangas; in Huarochiri, Santa Eulalia, Palle, San Gerónimo, San Pedro de Casta, Surco, Cocachacra, Santa Ana, and Sisicaya; and in Yauyos, Omas.

The best-known area is that which lies along the railway from Lima to Oroya, which begins a little below the division of the River Rimac into the rivers Santa Eulalia and Cocachacra, along both of which the disease is endemic for some distance, including Santa Eulalia, San Gerónimo, Chaclla, Cupichi, San Pedro de Casta, San Pedro de Mama, Santa Ana, Corcona Cocachacra, San Bartolomé (where the stream which runs into the Cocachacra River is called the Aqua de Verrugas, because the people believed the disease came from drinking the water), Cuesta Blanca, and Surco.

Here again, as in the department of Ancachs, the disease is restricted to certain deep, narrow valleys, locally known as 'quebradas,' along which streams flow, and which are some 28 to 60 kilometres distant from the littoral, where the disease never occurs. A very important epidemiological point is that the disease only occurs in the summer when the rivers are in flood, and when all sorts of insects abound. Monge points out that earthquakes are correlated with small epidemics, probably because the disturbed population become more exposed to the infection, whatever that may be.

Ætiology.—The causation of verruga peruviana is quite unknown. Popularly the disease is believed to be conveyed by the drinking-water, which, however, has long been discredited. In 1875 Pan-corvo, taking into consideration the well-known fact that the persons who mostly suffer are people who work in the fields or disturb earth, suggested that it was an intoxication due to sulphuretted hydrogen liberated from the earth, a view which never received any marked support. Odriozola and Tamayo have failed to find any bacteria in people suffering from the eruption of Peruvian wart. It is said to occur in animals, especially quadrupeds, and not to be contagious. Chastang believes that some germ is inoculated by the thorns of *Cactus opuntia*. Long ago Raymondi suggested that verruga would, like rabies and syphilis, be found some day to be due to a definite virus. Translating Raymondi's views into modern thought, it would mean that the three diseases would be found to be due to a parasitic protozoon, and, indeed, there is no doubt about the truth of this with regard to syphilis, and with regard to rabies, and it is quite possible that verruga peruviana will some day be found to be of protozoan origin, thus confirming Raymondi's striking conjecture.

The study of the distribution of the disease in the various provinces of Peru, as detailed above, with the aid of a large-scale map, will impress the reader with the similarity to the distribution of Rocky Mountain fever, and will lead him to the conclusion that the ætiological cause must in some way be associated with some blood-sucking animal, perhaps an arachnid; and, indeed, this is supported by a fact well known—that the persons most prone to the infection are those who work in the fields. Such ideas must, however, be taken as mere suggestions, as at present there is no direct evidence in favour of them. Very minute bacillary-like rods, thicker in the middle than at the ends and variable in number, have been described in the red cells by Barton, Gastraburñ, Rabagliati, and Biffi. They become scanty after the eruption, and disappear during convalescence. Similar bodies have been seen by De Vecchi, Bassett-Smith and Martin Mayer. De Vecchi considers them to be products of degeneration.

Age, sex, and race appear to have no influence, though it has been asserted that the coloured races have a partial immunity, which is due to mild attacks at a very early age, as nearly every inhabitant in the towns of the endemic areas acquires verruga, and if reinfected has only a very mild attack, for, as a rule, an attack confers a lasting immunity. Strangers visiting an endemic area are attacked almost at once with the disease in its gravest form. The disease may be acquired by travelling through an endemic area, but there is much more risk of infection if a night is spent therein, and if the endemic zone is quitted before sunset the risk of infection is greatly diminished. Another important point is that newly-born infants may acquire the disease. Cole has made some inoculation experiments in monkeys with a certain degree of success.

Pathology.—As the causation is quite unknown, the account of the pathology must be limited to very few remarks. There appears great doubt as to whether verruga can be transmitted to animals by inoculation, though Odriozola relates that he inoculated a bitch with the blood from verruga lesions obtained from a post-mortem, with the result that the animal developed a typical skin eruption, and eventually died. The disease is said to occur naturally among animals—*e.g.*, horses, mules, asses, dogs, and fowls—but especially among quadrupeds, although Monge states that no one has definitely proved that this is the verruga of man, and the ordinary laboratory animals cannot be infected with the disease. The infection in man begins with a general illness, which would appear from the fever, the anæmia, and the pains in different parts of the body, to be of the character of a septicæmia, after which the typical eruption appears on the skin, mucous membranes, and internal organs, when as a rule the general symptoms of fever, etc., abate, from which one would infer that the organism had left the blood stream, and become located in the skin and other organs. It is possible that it leaves the body by way of the skin. If, however, the local lesion develops in such places as the meninges, the choroid plexus, the choroid coat

of the eye, the intestines, the œsophagus, or larynx, severe symptoms are apt to appear, and complicate the illness. If at the same time a paratyphoid-like infection takes place during the febrile stage, the true symptoms are masked, and a peculiar and very deadly type of fever, called 'Carrion's disease,' or 'Oroya fever,' is produced.

The morbid anatomy is characterized by marked pallor of the body, œdema and dropsy, hypostasis of the lungs, enlargement of the liver and spleen, and hyperæmia of the bone-marrow; but apart from these general signs, the characteristic features are the appearance of the verrugas in the skin and subcutaneous tissues, in the ocular and palpebral conjunctivæ, the mucosa of the nose, the lips, gums, palate, tongue, pharynx, larynx, trachea, œsophagus, stomach, small and large intestine, in the substance of the liver, spleen, lungs, thymus, thyroid, testicles, kidneys, and lymphatic glands, and at times in the leptomeninges, the choroid plexuses, the choroid coat of the eye, in the substance of the muscles, on the periosteum of bones, on the peritoneal coverings of organs, and on the pleura and pericardium.

Histopathology.—The histopathology of the disease has been carefully studied by Letulle, Jamayo, Escomel, Jeanselme, Hercules, Biffi, and De Vecchi. The miliary and nodular forms are of the same, taking origin around the capillary bloodvessels in the form of a neoplasm which is the reaction of the areolar tissue to some perivascular irritant. The connective-tissue fibres become swollen, and between them lie embryonic connective-tissue cells, while the interareolar spaces contain polymorphonuclear cells and macrophages. Microscopically a non-ulcerated skin lesion shows the cells of the surface epithelium swollen and distended with glycogen. The papillary layer of the cutis has disappeared, and the dermis proper is infiltrated with round cells, which are mostly mononuclear or polymorphonuclear leucocytes, separated by a slight amount of fibrillar connective tissue, which may in places be entirely absent. There is some doubt as to whether the connective-tissue corpuscles contribute to the round-celled infiltration, as has been asserted by Izquierdo; in any case, the recognizable connective-tissue cells are always swollen, and their nuclei are altered in various ways. The cellular infiltration is very vascular, and in the case of the older tumours almost cavernous in structure; hence the liability to hæmorrhage, which is such a marked feature of the disease.

The subcutaneous fatty tissue is always inflamed. In addition to these features, Letulle describes and figures some most peculiar structures seen, under a magnification of 400 diameters, between the cells of the epidermis, which he considers to be clasmatoocytes.

The growths appear to be often invaded secondarily with micro-organisms, especially if ulcerated, while the eosinophiles disappear and the mononuclears diminish. Myelocytes may be present, and may number 0.5 per cent., and there may be some large mononuclear cells like macrophages. The nuclei of the polymorphonuclears are simply bilobed.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period is not definitely known, and is stated to vary from eight to forty days, but to be most usually from twenty to thirty days, during which time prodromata, in the form of malaise, lassitude, and depression, may be experienced.

The Invasion.—The invasion is gradual, the prodromal symptoms increasing in virulence, while anæmia becomes apparent, and peculiar rheumatoid pains appear in different parts of the body. These pains are very striking and very misleading, for they may in some cases be limited to a single region, or even to a single joint or muscle; on the other hand, they may be more extensive, and lead to a diagnosis of some nerve disorder. As a rule, but not invariably, fever appears, and varies in intensity with the severity of the attack. There is usually insomnia and often delirium. Usually it is intermittent in character, the paroxysm beginning about noon with chills, severe pains, much thirst, and a rise of temperature to about 104° F., with a quick, soft, compressible pulse, and ending in about twelve hours by crisis, associated with sweating and an amelioration of the pains. The liver and lymphatic glands enlarge, but according to some authorities the spleen is not palpable. The patient rapidly becomes very anæmic and feeble, and usually constipated, but may at times suffer from severe diarrhœa. The destruction of red cells, according to Monge, is enormous, the number falling to 900,000 per cubic millimetre, with microcytes in large numbers, macrocytes, normoblasts (2,000 per cubic millimetre), megatoblasts (200 per cubic millimetre), polychromatophilia, and poikilocytosis, while the hæmoglobin value is always increased. There is the picture of the blood in a pernicious anæmia. There is always a marked leucocytosis, the count rising to 20,000 per cubic millimetre after the first few days, and increasing later. The polymorphonuclear leucocytes number about 75 per cent. The condition of the bone-marrow has been studied by Corvallo, who finds excess of normoblasts and neutrophile myelocytes.

Acute or Severe Form.—This is the stage during which Carrion's fever develops, the temperature becoming almost continuous, the pains and the diarrhœa severe, the urine dark and scanty, acid in reaction, with high specific gravity, increased indican and urobilin, but rarely albumin, and never blood. It contains something which reduces Fehling's solution. The anæmia becomes profound, the red cells being reduced to 500,000, according to Monge; nucleated red cells appearing, while death results in about two to three weeks.

Eruptive or Mild Form.—In milder cases, after the febrile stage has lasted from twenty days to eight months, the skin begins to itch, and an eruption appears on the face, neck, the extensor surfaces of the arms and legs, and at times on the conjunctivæ, the lips, tongue, gums, palate, and pharynx. This eruption shows itself at first as small, pinkish-red, erythematous spots, sometimes associated with small vesicles, or more rarely with bullæ or pustules. The erythematous areas speedily become papules, and finally nodules, which

may vary in size and in number. The usual size is about that of a pea.

When fully developed, they appear as elevated, cylindrical, fungiform, or irregular wart-like bodies, usually discrete, red in colour, generally firm to the touch (though they may be soft), and very liable to bleed. This type of eruption is the *forme miliare* (miliary type) of the Odriozolas and Salazar. In addition to these superficial tubercles there are deep subcutaneous nodules (nodular type), which lie under the unaltered skin, and from which at first they are quite free. These nodules may reach a large size, and become adherent to the skin, ulcerate, and reach the surface as large red fungating masses, which readily bleed. This is the *forme mulaire* of the above-mentioned authors. Both types appear on the skin, but the miliary type may also appear on the mucous membranes and internal organs, while the nodular type is confined to the skin, especially at the flexures of the elbows and knees. The first crop usually appears on the face, and the extremities may be discrete or confluent; in the latter case no healthy area of skin may be visible. The miliary eruption may appear when the general symptoms have abated, but the nodular is accompanied by fever.

The area of the skin on which the spots appear is usually œdematous, a feature most commonly observed on the legs. With the appearance of the eruption the fever declines, the general symptoms abate, and the patient feels better, but the blood shows a marked diminution in the red cells, some of which are nucleated, and a corresponding reduction in the hæmoglobin, and this anæmia may be aggravated by hæmorrhages from the nodules, which may be so severe as to cause the death of the patient. This blood condition has been carefully investigated by Monge, who finds that at the commencement of the illness there is oligocythæmia, microcytes, macrocytes, normoblasts, and megoloblasts (under 1,000 per cubic millimetre), with poikilocytosis, polychromatophilia, and granular red cells. The hæmoglobin value is raised. The white cells are increased, and there is slight polymorphonucleosis. The mononuclears have well-marked basophilic protoplasm. At this stage the verrugas may develop in the internal organs, and cause serious symptoms: thus in the larynx they will cause dyspnœa; in the bronchi, bronchitis; in the lungs, pneumonia; in the pleura, pleurisy; in the nose, epistaxis and difficulty in nasal breathing; in the œsophagus, dysphagia; in the intestine, bloody diarrhœa; in the meninges, brain symptoms; in the eye, amblyopia; and in the uterus, metrorrhagia.

After lasting from four to six months, during which several crops appear and disappear, each preceded by an attack of fever, the eruption finally disappears, and the nodules, becoming pale and drying up, disappear without producing a scar, while the ulcerated nodules dry up and heal by cicatrization, and the patient is left convalescent, but anæmic and feeble. According to Monge, systematic examination of the blood reveals the fact that a time arrives,



FIG. 499.—VERRUGA PERUVIANA: ERUPTION ON EXTREMITIES.
(After Biffi, from the *Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene*.)

which he calls *the critical period*, when the leucocytes are reduced, the polymorphonuclear leucocytes also diminish in numbers, and the eosinophiles, which have been practically absent, reappear, and a definite mononuclear increase supervenes. This critical period lasts four to five days, and changes completely the blood picture.

During the decline of the disease there is slight oligocythæmia and granular red cells, while the mononuclear cells are increased to 50 to 60 per cent. ; there is slight eosinophilia, and the hæmoglobin value is normal.

The course of the disease, however, is by no means as straightforward as depicted, for at times the eruption comes out poorly, and is limited in its distribution, or, having developed, may disappear, in which cases the general symptoms, which may have improved, are apt to return and cause a serious illness.

Varieties.—Slight cases may pass through the whole illness without fever, while more severe cases show intermittent or even remittent fever.

Complications.—The complications are numerous, and include septic poisoning, malaria, tuberculosis, and syphilis, but the most severe is that with Barton's bacillus.

Sequelæ.—The usual sequelæ are anæmia, dropsy, and affections of the nervous system.

Diagnosis.—The most important feature in the diagnosis is residence in one of the endemic areas, when a person complaining of vague pains and illness, with distinct anæmia, with or without febrile symptoms, should be regarded as most likely to be suffering from verruga. The rapidity with which the anæmia is developed is an important point in the diagnosis, for in the severe forms of the disease the number of the red cells will fall in three to four days to less than 1,000,000 per cubic millimetre, and even in slight cases there will be a marked diminution. Concurrently in the severe forms all the signs of the blood picture of pernicious anæmia will develop. This anæmia imprints a typical facies upon the patient. The febrile stage must be differentiated from malaria by the absence of the parasites in the blood, from typhoid by the serum reactions, from tuberculosis by skin and ophthalmic reaction, from rheumatism by the absence of the swelling of the joints, and from histoplasmosis by the absence of the parasite. The stage of eruption must be distinguished from frambæsia by the absence of the eruption on the trunk, by the tendency to hæmorrhage, and the absence of *Treponema pertenue*.

Prognosis.—With the possibility of such a serious complication as Carrion's fever arising, or in later stages of internal verrugas forming, the prognosis must be very guarded. A good sign is an early appearance of a widely-spread eruption, while a poorly-developed eruption associated with anæmia and marked weakness is of grave import. Monge states that the difference between two consecutive blood counts is of importance in deciding the prognosis

as an increase in the mononuclears and of the erythrocytes, and the appearance of eosinophile cells marks an improvement.

The appearance of the eruption *per se* should not be considered a good sign if there is still marked oligocythemia and polymorphonucleosis.

Especially serious is the disappearance of a poorly-marked eruption, and the reappearance of fever pains, etc. Cold weather and high altitudes are unfavourable, and complications increase the gravity of the case considerably, the former because it delays the



FIG. 500.—VERRUGA PERUVIANA: ERUPTION ON THE FACE, LIPS, AND TONGUE.

(After Biffi, from the *Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene*.)

development of the eruption and may cause it to abort, and the latter because it increases the tendency to hæmorrhage. The mortality varies from 10 to 40 per cent.

Treatment.—No specific treatment is known, but Odriozola recommends hypodermic injections of arsenic, and removal from the endemic region to the warm countries along the littoral will also be of benefit. Atoxyl, salvarsan, and neosalvarsan may be tried. Chills and cold baths must be specially avoided as being apt to stop the development of the eruption, and hence to endanger the life of the patient. Drugs appear to be useless in the febrile stage, and though decoctions of maize, of *Buttneria cordata* (Buttneriaceæ), *Buddleja incana* (Scrofulariaceæ), or *Schinus molle* (Terebenthinaceæ), have been popular, they are now believed to be useless.

Tonics of iron and arsenic are useful during convalescence, but

the iron is best administered by hypodermic injections. Carrion's fever must be treated in the same manner as typhoid fever.

Prophylaxis.—In the present state of our knowledge the only possible prophylaxis is to avoid the endemic regions.

REFERENCES.

There are numerous references in the 'Cronica Medica,' published in Lima, but the most important monograph is that by E. Odriozola, which is excellently illustrated with maps and coloured plates, and in which the subject is treated in the fullest manner.

- BASSETT-SMITH (1901-12). British Medical Journal.
 BIFFI (1908). Archiv f. Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene, xii. 1.
 BOURSE (1876). Archiv de Méd. Nav., p. 353.
 CHASTANG (1897). *Ibid.*, p. 417.
 COLE (1912). Arch. of Inter. Med.
 DOUNON (1871). *Ibid.*, p. 255. (A very excellent paper.)
 FOURNIER (1874). *Ibid.*, p. 156.
 HALL (1883). Lancet, ii. 845. (Verruga in Ecuador.)
 HIRSCH (1883). Handbook of Histology and Geographical Pathology, ii. 114.
 (A most useful account.)
 LETULLE (1898). Comptes Rendus de la Société de Biologie, p. 764.
 MAYER (1910). Cent. für Bakter.
 MONGE, C. (1911). Carrion's Disease, or Verruga Peruviana. Thèse de Lima, Lima. (Translation in the Journal of the London School of Tropical Medicine, 1912.)
 ODRIEZOLA, E. (1898). La Maladie de Carrion. Paris.
 ODRIEZOLA, M. (1858). Medical Times and Gazette, p. 280.
 SMITH (1858). Edinburgh Medical and Surgical Journal, p. 67.
 TSCHUDI (1843). Viages al Perú.
 VECCHI (1909). Beihefte Archiv f. Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene, No. 4.

CHAPTER XLVI

BERI-BERI AND EPIDEMIC DROPSY

Beri-Beri—Infantile Beri-Beri—Epidemic Dropsy—References.

BERI-BERI.

Synonyms.—Polyneuritis Endemica, Neuritis Multiplex Endemica, Hydrops Asthmaticus, Synclonus Beriberia, Myelopathia Tropica Scorbutica, Paraplegia Mephitica, Sero-phthisis Perniciosa Endemica, Panneuritis Endemica, Berbiers, Kakké (signifying a disease of the legs in Japan and China), Loempoe (Java), Kaki-lem-but, Hinchazon de los Negros y Chinos, Maladie des Sucreries (French Antilles), Hinchazon (Cuba), Inchação, or Perneiras (Brazil).

Etymology.—The word 'beri-beri' is said to be derived from the Sinhalese term, meaning 'cannot,' which is used as a phrase, which means 'I cannot,' employed in the sense that the person is too ill to do anything. There is another Sinhalese word which may equally be translated as 'cannot,' but this means that the person is unwilling to do something, not that he is too ill to do it. It is possible that the above interpretation of the word is correct, for Ceylon has long been in the hands of Europeans—*e.g.*, Portuguese, Dutch, and English—and therefore a term used therein would be widespread. There is no doubt that the word covered a large number of diseases, from which a definite pathological entity has gradually been separated out. It is to be noted, however, that—at all events, at the present time—the disease does not exist endemically in Ceylon, where there are only imported cases.

Definition.—Beri-beri is an acute or chronic, endemic or epidemic, disease, of unknown causation, which is characterized by degeneration of many peripheral nerves, especially the vagi, the phrenics, and those of the limbs, associated with gastro-intestinal disturbance, cardiac disturbance, and œdema.

History.—According to Scheube, it is possible that the first mention of beri-beri is to be found in the accounts given by Strabo and Pto Cassius of a disease which attacked a Roman army in 24 B.C. in Arabia. Kakké is also mentioned in a Chinese pamphlet belonging to the second century of the present era, and is minutely described in another belonging to the seventh century, while it is recorded as

occurring in Japan in the ninth century. In the tenth century a distinction was made between the atrophic, dry or paralytic, and the hypertrophic, wet, or dropsical forms of the complaint.

In 1758-59 Bontius was the first European doctor to give an account of the disease, which he described under the term 'beri-beri.' Later, Tulpius, a Dutch physician, also described the symptoms of the disease as seen in a person who had returned to Holland from the Indies. From that time the literature on beri-beri has grown until it has reached enormous proportions, but unfortunately there is no doubt that until recently several diseases, especially agchylostomiasis and epidemic dropsy, were confounded with it. Rogers in 1808, and later Davy, described the disease as 'beri-beria,' while the latter says that it is almost peculiar to Ceylon. There is little doubt that the condition described by Davy was in reality agchylostomiasis.

In 1847 Carter gave a description of the disease, indicating asthma as the principal feature, probably because of the cardiac dyspnoea. In 1873 Fayrer laid great stress on œdema as the important clinical feature. In 1877 Wernich defined the disease kakké in Japan, while van Meedervoort showed that it was the same disease as beri-beri. In 1886 Kynsey published an account of the anæmia or beri-beri of Ceylon, by which he really meant agchylostomiasis; hence the idea that beri-beri was due to *Agchylostoma duodenale*, and hence the large number of cases of so-called beri-beri in Ceylon years ago.

The scientific and clinical study of the disease has been largely due to the work of Oudenhoven, Da Sylva Lima, Overbeck de Rieyer, Baelz, Scheube, Pekelhäring and Winkler, Hamilton Wright, Jataki, Braddon, Fraser and Stanton. The workers on the ætiology of the disease are so numerous that this part of the history is best treated in the section on the causation.

Beri-beri is in certain regions a most serious disease. Thus Braddon says that in the Straits Settlements and Malaya, where the population is only 1,250,000, no less than 150,000 cases of the disease, with 30,000 deaths, have occurred in Government hospitals and infirmaries in the last twenty years; but he says that only one-third of the deaths of Chinese took place in those hospitals, and therefore the total deaths in that period would be about 100,000. It is also a great element in inefficiency, for it is reckoned that 33 per cent. of the sailors of the Japanese Navy prior to 1884 were continuously disabled by it. In 1904-05 it is said that 24 per cent. of the entire sick and wounded in the Japanese armies—*i.e.*, about 85,000 men—were also disabled by it. It is obvious, therefore, that the disease is of great medical and economic interest, for its incidence particularly falls upon the labourer, the sailor, the soldier, and the prisoners in the gaols, and hence hampers both the employer of labour and the Government. Braddon estimates the cost of the disease to the Government of Malaya as £10,000 per annum in direct hospital charges only.

Recently much work has been done by Eijkman, Vordeman, Fraser, Stanton, Funk, and many other observers, with the result that the consensus of opinion at the present time is that beri-beri is a *deficiency disease*—i.e., is caused by the deficiency of some essential substance in the dietary.

Climatology.—The endemic centre of beri-beri appears to be Eastern Asia, Japan, China, the Philippine Islands, Indo-China, Java, and Malaya. It is also said to occur in Brazil and, according to Plehn, in Réunion, Mauritius, Nossi-bé, Zanzibar, Cape Colony, Senegal, Angola, the Congo Free State, and the Cameroons. We have met with the disease on the Gold Coast in Chinese miners, but have not noted it in the native population, though it may possibly exist. Isolated epidemics, sporadic or imported cases, occur in England, Ireland, and other parts of Europe, the United States, Canada, and in Ceylon. In the last-named place it is now almost entirely absent, and, indeed, it is possible that many of the cases reported years ago may have been agchylostomiasis or some other disease. Imported cases from India and China are frequently met with in Colombo, owing to its possessing a large harbour where numerous vessels, with Chinese and Indian crews, call.

It is believed that the Bihimbo disease of the Chaka district of Uganda is beri-beri. The disease known in that country as mun-hiyo, and believed at one time to be beri-beri, has been demonstrated to be Malta fever. In the tropics it is said to occur more often in the cool wet months.

Ætiology.—The causation of beri-beri is at the present time believed to be due to the deficiency of some essential substance in the food, but as may be imagined in such a widespread and fatal disorder, the investigators have been many, and hence the theories are legion. In order to comprehend the present state of the question, it is necessary very briefly to review a few of these theories, which will be best done by following a method of classification.

A. Physical Cause.—The older writers, like Davy, considered that it was brought about by some unusual state of the atmosphere, but they said, honestly, that this was merely a cloak for their ignorance of the true cause.

B. Chemical Causes.—The chemical causes which have been advanced are:—

1. Arsenical poisoning (Ross).
2. Oxalate poisoning (Treutlein).
3. Carbon dioxide poisoning (Ashmead).
4. Food poisoning :—
 - (a) Ichthyotoxismus (Grimm and Miura).
 - (b) Sitotoxismus (Eijkman, Vorderman, Yamagiwa, Van Dieren); rice (Gelpke, Braddon, Fraser and Stanton); lathyrism (Le Roy de Méricourt).
5. Some deficiency in the food :—
 - (a) Deficient nitrogenous complex.
 - (b) Deficient nitrogen (Takaki).
 - (c) Deficient fat (Brémaud and Laurent).
 - (d) Deficient vegetables, together with an infection (Fales).
 - (e) Deficient phosphorus.
6. An intoxication from a germ living outside the body (Manson).
7. An intoxication or an auto-intoxication (Duerck).

1. ARSENICAL POISONING.—Ross, in 1900 and subsequent years, drew attention to the similarity between beri-beri and the arsenical poisoning which at that time was prevalent throughout Lancashire, being brought about through the agency of arsenical beer. He further supported this by finding arsenic in the hair in recent, but not in old, cases of the disease in Penang, and woke up a controversy as to whether arsenic existed in normal hair or not. But apart from the obvious reasons against this theory as an explanation for such a widespread disease, Herzog has definitely shown that no arsenic could be found in the hair of ten cases of different types of the disease. There is no doubt that cases of chronic arsenical poisoning do occur in the tropics, as we have seen, particularly in Europeans who have had to live for a long time on tinned food, but these cases are not beri-beri.

2. OXALATE POISONING.—The oxalate theory is based upon the fact that Maurer and Treutlein were able to produce a condition resembling beri-beri in fowls by giving them oxalic acid in their food. The latter observer considered that the acid removed the calcium salts from the body of these animals, and caused thereby a degeneration of the peripheral nerves and heart muscle, and considered that this was proved by curing them by the administration of calcium salts. Further, he showed that there was an excessive excretion of calcium in the urine of beri-beri patients. But polyneuritis has been produced in fowls by Eijkman by feeding them with cooked rice, and it is possible that neither oxalic acid nor rice, but an infection, was the cause of the disease, which may, of course, be quite different from true beri-beri.

3. CARBON DIOXIDE POISONING.—Ashmead believes that the disease is caused by the excessive inhalation of carbon dioxide, but outbreaks occur without any overcrowding, as we have seen ourselves.

4. FOOD POISONING.—(a) *Ichthyotoxismus*.—Grimm considers the ingestion of raw fish to be the cause of the disease, and Miura the consumption of species of the Scombridæ; but Wright has shown that in the gaol at Kwala Lumpur the disease infected forty-nine prisoners when no fish had been given for eight months.

(b) *Sitotoxismus*.—Rice poisoning at present is the favourite theory, and has had many supporters. Thus Eijkman and Vorderman consider that it is due to eating rice without husk, which is the natural protection. Gelpke considers that it is due to stale or badly-kept rice. Yamigiwa considers it due to rice improperly stored and preserved, as it occurs even when this rice is well boiled. Braddon, who is often wrongly quoted, ascribes the disease to the ingestion of a *poison* found in the rice, which is the result of the specific product of some organism—epiphyte or parasite—but he does not believe that the disease is due to the ingestion of the organism. Contrary to Eijkman and Vorderman, Braddon looks upon the husk as the dangerous element, as it is in this that the germ grows.

But the disease has been observed, according to Scheube, who quotes Fiebig and Voorthuis, in Brazil, the Moluccas and Liugga, where the people live on sago, fish, and game, and where the attacked Europeans had never eaten rice.

Travers details an interesting observation on this point concerning an epidemic of beri-beri in the Pudoeh Gaol of Kwala Lumpur, in August, 1895, when some of the cases were transferred to the Old Gaol, one and a half miles distant, on October 1, 1895, because the mortality in the Pudoeh Gaol was extremely high; and on October 25, 1895, sixty prisoners, showing no signs of the disease, and apparently in good health, were similarly transferred. From October 1 to December 14, 1895, all food supplied to the healthy prisoners in the Old Gaol, as well as to the beri-beri patients transferred from the Pudoeh Gaol, was cooked in the Pudoeh Gaol with the food for the other prisoners who were suffering from the disease.

This food was carried to the Old Gaol twice daily, and the diet was exactly the same in both gaols, the rice being taken out of the same bag and cooked in the same steamer. Further, it appears from Braddon's remarks that in 1895 a new scale of ordinary diets, with an increased amount of rice, was allowed, fresh fish was replaced by salted, and beans were omitted, and

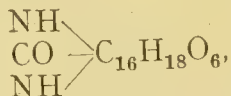
Braddon considers that it was this increase of the rice that increased the poison and made people ill ; but this ought to apply to both places.

Moreover, Braddon considers deductions adverse to rice in the above experiment to be fallacious, for he holds that the length of period of incarceration of the above prisoners is an important factor ; for the liability to acquire the disease, he says, increases with and varies directly according to the length of the time served in prison, which must be more than six months. He points out that it is not stated how many long-sentence prisoners were sent to the Old Gaol, which he thinks may not have been more than two or three ; and concerning these, he says, there is no proof that any of them were kept for the period necessary to acquire the disease by rice intoxication. He therefore concludes that Travers' experience affords no ground for opposing the theory that beri-beri is incurred through the consumption of certain sorts of rice.

5. SOME DEFICIENCY IN THE FOOD—(a) *Deficiency of Certain Nitrogenous Complexes*.—There is a growing tendency to consider that certain diseases—e.g., beri-beri, polyneuritis of birds, epidemic dropsy, scurvy, experimental scurvy, infantile scurvy, and ship beri-beri—are diseases due to the deficiency in some essential substance in the food. These diseases Funk classifies together as 'deficiency disease,' and characterizes them by certain general symptoms—e.g., (1) Cachexia, with great loss of weight ; (2) marked nervous symptoms, generally of the nature of peripheral neuritis. He divides these diseases into two groups—the beri-beri group comprising beri-beri, polyneuritis in birds, and epidemic dropsy ; and the scurvy group.

With regard to beri-beri, as already pointed out, Braddon drew attention to the importance of rice as an ætiological factor. Eijkman in 1897 had shown that it could be prevented and cured by the use of hand-milled rice. Fraser and Stanton showed that members of gangs of coolies, who had previously remained quite healthy, developed beri-beri when fed on white rice, while other members fed on brown rice remained healthy. The difference between these two forms of rice is that the white rice is deprived of its subpericarpal layers (*vide* pp. 80 and 81) by the process of milling.

These layers contain a substance called by Funk beri-beri vitamin, which is probably a base belonging to the pyrimidine group, and has the formula,—



and not $\text{C}_{17}\text{H}_{18}\text{O}_4\text{N}(\text{HNO}_3)$, as previously stated. This substance is soluble in water, alcohol, and acidulated alcohol, is dialyzable, and can be destroyed by heating to 130°C . It is present in the proportion of 0.1 gramme to the kilogramme of rice. According to Funk, this substance is essential for the metabolism of nervous tissue ; and if it is not present in the dietary, must be supplied by the animal body, and if this fails, the nervous tissues begin to break down, and as a result the signs and symptoms of beri-beri appear.

Fraser and Stanton believe that the phosphorus content of the rice is a good index as to whether it is harmless or harmful. A safe rice yields more than 0.4 per cent. of phosphorus pentoxide, while a dangerous rice yields less than this figure. Chamberlain and Vedder have suggested that potassium should be used instead of phosphorus for standardization purposes.

With regard to these findings there is an almost unanimous support from all sides, but the Philippine investigators, while believing that their studies support the polished rice theory, bring forward the curious fact that beri-beri began to diminish among their Native Scouts during the last half year of 1910 without any decrease in the general incidence of the disease in the islands, and *four months before the use of under-milled rice was introduced into the dietary*. They consider that the reduction was either due to unknown causes acting coincidentally with a reduction in the amount of rice in the dietary, together with the addition of a legume, or was due directly to these dietetic changes.

Investigations are proceeding in various parts of the world, and the results must be awaited before definite statements can be made ; but Eijkman Fraser and Stanton have done sufficient work to make imperative the use of brown rice cooked in ordinary vessels, and the exclusion of the white rice as a staple article of food.

Edie, Evans, Moore, Simpson, and Webster have separated an antineuritic base called 'torulin'— $\text{N}(\text{CH}_3)_3\text{C}_4\text{H}_7\text{O}_2(\text{HNO}_3)$ —from yeast, and Thomson and Simpson have noted rapid recovery of patients placed on a full diet, and given 1 ounce of yeast and 200 grammes of katjangido-beans daily.

Heiser reports that after being present for five years in the Culion Leper Colony in the Philippines, beri-beri disappeared in nine months on a dietary of unpolished rice.

The rice theory in some form is at the present time accepted all over the world, but there are still some observers who think that the actual agent of the disease is unknown, and that the malady may be of a parasitic nature. The following objections have been brought forward against the food theory :—

- (1) Beri-beri may occur in people who do not feed on rice. We have seen an epidemic among officers on a man-of-war.
- (2) The geographical distribution. In populations eating the same kind of rice some suffer from beri-beri and others do not.
- (3) Tamil coolies in Ceylon do not get beri-beri, though they suffer from this disease in the Straits Settlements. In both countries they are mostly supplied with the same kind of rice (Rangoon rice).
- (4) People recovered from beri-beri go back to their usual rice diet without again suffering from the disease. Thus in the Malay States the mortality is only 20 per cent. ; therefore 80 per cent. of sufferers recover. Do these people change their diet ?

(b) *Deficient Nitrogen*.—Previous to 1884, 33 per cent. of the sailors in the Japanese Navy were disabled owing to beri-beri.

In 1883 the *Ryujo*, a Japanese warship, went on a voyage of 271 days to New Zealand and South America, and developed 160 cases of the disease out of a crew of 350 men. Takaki investigated this outbreak, and came to the conclusion that there was too little nitrogen in the diet, the nutritive value of which was : Proteids, 109.29 grammes ; fats, 15.8 grammes ; carbo-

hydrates, 622.32 grammes. He therefore changed the diet to: Proteids, 196 grammes; fats, 43 grammes; and carbohydrates, 775 grammes; and on this dietary the warship *Taukuba* was sent the same cruise, taking 287 days, and only suffered from sixteen cases of the disease. Takaki attributed the success to the increased nitrogen, a portion of the rice being replaced by corn or bread; but Fales has pointed out that fresh vegetables were increased from 215 grammes to 450 grammes, and that therefore nitrogen alone may not have been the cause of the decrease of the disease. This dietary was applied to the Japanese Army and Navy, and beri-beri decreased enormously. But Baelz has pointed out that this decrease was associated with a great improvement in general hygiene, and that it also took place in barracks in which the food had not been changed. A similar decrease in the Dutch-Indian Navy, associated with a better diet, was attributed by some to the improved hygiene rather than to the diet.

(c) *Deficient Fat*.—Brémaud and Laurent believe that the disease is due to too little fat in the food, and consider that an epidemic at Chaudabum, in Siam, was stopped by causing fat to be more freely consumed by the healthy. This theory, however, has found but little support.

(d) *Deficient Vegetables, together with an Infection*.—Fales, from a study of an outbreak of an epidemic of beri-beri in the Bilibid prison, in Manila, came to the conclusion that the lack of fresh vegetables conduced powerfully to both beri-beri and scurvy.

In November, 1901, there were two cases of the disease, and no deaths, in that gaol. The food was then changed to a ration consisting of 97.17 grammes of proteids, 17.24 grammes of fats, 491.04 grammes of carbohydrates and 26.52 grammes of salts. In this diet there were 85.05 grammes of potatoes, and 453.60 grammes of rice. Put into other figures, this diet consisted of: Nitrogen, 172.1 grammes; carbon, 4,166.5 grammes; hydrogen, 61.9 grammes; sulphur, 13.2 grammes; salts, 140.2 grammes—the proportion of nitrogen to carbon being as 1 to 24.2. Whereas, calculating the weight of Filipinos at 125 pounds, it was estimated that proteids ought, according to Voigt's diet, to have been at least 94 grammes, fats 45 grammes, and carbohydrates 400 grammes; or, according to Molescott's diet, nitrogen, 256 grammes; carbon, 3,789 grammes; hydrogen, 143 grammes; sulphur, 23 grammes; salts, 172 grammes—*i.e.*, N:C::1:0.15.

The epidemic of beri-beri now began: December, 1901, 52 cases and 2 deaths; January, 1902, 169 and 12; February, 1,087 and 16; March, 576 and 15; April, 327 and 15; May, 310 and 19; June, 451 and 17; July, 233 and 33; August, 571 and 24; September, 522 and 31.

On October 20 the diet was again changed, and this time proteids were 101.71 grammes; fats, 19.37 grammes; carbohydrates, 395.73 grammes; salts, 29.13 grammes; including 119.07 grammes of potatoes and 255.15 grammes of rice. Nitrogen was 209.8 grammes; carbon, 3,816.2 grammes; hydrogen, 70.4 grammes; sulphur, 17.2 grammes; and salts, 185 grammes—N:C::1:13.4.

In October there were 579 cases and 34 deaths; November, 476 and 8; December, 89 and 3; half January, 1903, 4 cases and no deaths.

Along with the beri-beri there was an epidemic of scurvy, and Fales was of the opinion that both diseases were led up to by a deficiency of vegetables, the essential principle of which he believes to be potassium carbonate, of which rice contains only 0.01 grain per ounce, while potatoes contain 1.875 grains. Hence, according to Fales, the disappearance of the disease when a sufficiency of vegetables, especially potatoes, was given. But he says this deficiency was only a predisposing cause, which enables the micro-organism, whatever it is, which is the true cause of the disease, to flourish and produce the symptoms. In other words, the people get run down by a bad diet, and are ready for any disease, so that this does not clear up the aetiology.

Recently Ingram has drawn attention to an outbreak in the 81st Pioneers and the 2nd Battalion of the King's Own Scottish Borderers, at Aden, in which he could find no clear evidence that beri-beri was due to diet alone, whether insufficient proteids or excessive rice, or bad rice, but he considered

a diet rich in proteids good as a preventative. He could only find one thing in common in the two regiments—viz., both brought the disease with them—but was unable to find any source of infection, parasitic or otherwise.

(e) *Deficient Phosphorus*.—Schaumann and others have maintained that deficient organically combined phosphorus in the uncured rice is the ætiological factor.

6. AN INTOXICATION FROM A GERM LIVING OUTSIDE THE BODY.—Manson brought forward the hypothesis that a germ may live in the soil, the house, or the ship occupied by the human being, under certain conditions of temperature and moisture, and may grow and produce some kind of toxin which, being inhaled or swallowed, or otherwise introduced, causes the disease. Moreover, this germ may be carried by men from place to place.

He supports this theory by pointing out—(1) that when patients are removed from an endemic spot they at once begin to recover; (2) he quotes Hirota's observation that fifty-two infants nursed by beri-beric mothers showed signs of the disease, and did not improve when treated medicinally, but rapidly improved, if the disease had not advanced too far, when taken from these mothers and placed on artificial food or given to a healthy wet-nurse. Further, Herzog says that, according to Dr. Albert, similar cases are not very infrequent in the Philippine Islands, but the removal of the child from the mother is most difficult, as the people do not understand the necessity.

Manson rightly points out that these children must have been poisoned with some chemical substance, and not infected with a germ. But, of course, the germ causing the toxin might be in the mother's body.

Again, Manson points out that the disease clings to ships, in which it appears year after year when the tropics are reached. There is also evidence that the cause, whatever it is, clings to rooms for a short time.

7. AN INTOXICATION OR AN AUTO-INTOXICATION.—Duerck is convinced from the study of the pathology that the cause of the disease is a toxæmia, and points out that substances formed in the body by process of auto-intoxication may produce peripheral neuritis, but the epidemics of the disease are quite against a theory of auto-intoxication.

C. Parasitic Causes.—A great many observers are in favour of a parasitic cause for the disease, without committing themselves as to whether it is animal or vegetal. Among these may be mentioned Sambon, who considers that the specific agent lives in the patient's body. Scheube considers that it is an infectious, but not a contagious, disease, and says that the analogy with malaria is in some respects striking, and that it is spread by mechanical transmission of the disease by human intercourse in some way or another. This is quite true, because there are numerous instances of disease being imported by human beings into a fresh place and spreading, but the curious point is that it generally sticks to one race.

Thus, in Malaya it is a common disease among imported Chinese, and hardly known among the natives. In the Bilibid Prison, mentioned above, the prisoners included Filipinos, Spaniards, Chinese, Japanese, Indians, American negroes, Americans, and Europeans, but the disease fell most severely on the Filipinos, the Chinese being almost exempt, only one or two contracting the disease, while the Americans were immune. Van der Scheer suggested that perhaps insects, such as cockroaches, might be the spreaders of the disease, but Durham's investigations are contrary to this. It would seem as though the causal agent was spread by some parasite, for Daniels has carefully considered the question of infection, and does not find any evidence in favour of it being conveyed by the excreta of persons suffering from the disease, especially the fæces.

Further, he points out that infection by air and water can be excluded, as in Kwala Lumpur all races drink the same water, but only Chinese are attacked, even though they drink little unboiled water; and the immunity of prison officials from the disease while an epidemic rages among the prisoners excludes air. Disinfection appears, from Durham's results on Christmas Island, to be useless. As regards parasites, Durham and Daniels are both

against mosquitoes as being the cause—and, indeed, this is hardly likely—and also against bugs.

On the other hand, there appears to be some evidence in favour of *Pediculus capitis*, which is apt to cling to one race, and this is, according to Daniels, a plausible theory in explaining the racial selection of the disease. Experiments on an orang-outang with pediculi from a beri-beri case were negative, the lice rapidly disappearing. Daniels could not exclude fomites as a carrier of the disease in his observations. Only one observer, Taylor, is said to have produced the disease in animals by the inoculation of the blood from patients. Having thus briefly considered the general question of contagium vivum, and its method of entry into the body, it is necessary to review the various organisms which have been held to be the cause of the disease.

They may be classified into :—

ANIMAL PARASITES :—

(a) *Protozoa*.

1. Plasmodium in the blood (Glogner).
2. Protozoon in the urine (Hewlett and Korté).
3. Hæmatozoa in the blood (Fajardo and Voorthuis).

(b) *Nemathelminthes*.

1. Some form of *Trichinella* (Gelpke).
2. *Trichuris trichiura* (Erni and Kynsey).
3. *Agchylostoma duodenale* (Erni and Kynsey).

VEGETAL PARASITES—FUNGI :—

(a) *Coccoceæ*.

1. Cocci in the alimentary canal, etc. (Dangerfield).
2. Diplococcus in the urine (Tsuzuki).
3. Diplococcus from the blood and urine or organs post mortem (Okata and Kokubo).
4. Four kinds of cocci (Musso and Morelli).

(b) *Coccus and Bacillus*.

Pleomorphic organism obtained by Pekelhäring and Winckler from the blood.

Bacilli and cocci by Lacerda.

(c) *Bacilli*.

1. Bacillus by Taylor.
2. Bacillus by Rost.
3. Bacillus by Ogata.
4. Three kinds of bacilli by Nepveu.
5. Bacillus by Eccke.

Toxins from a bacillus in the alimentary canal (Hamilton Wright).

(d) *Fungi higher than Bacteria*.

Mouldy rice (Hose).

Protozoa.—Glogner's parasites were similar to malarial parasites, but were distinguished therefrom by being found only in splenic blood, by being always extracorporeal, and by increasing by gemination. They were more pigmented than malarial parasites. Scheube thinks that Glogner's cases were complications of beri-beri with malaria.

Hewlett and Korté centrifugalized the urine of beri-beri cases, and found small refractile spherical bodies, 2 to 3 μ in diameter, with a thick capsule and hyaline contents; others 20 μ in diameter, with a cytoplasm studded with refractile granules, and containing a single nucleus; and others 30 μ , with a thick capsule, an oval nucleus, and a rounded nucleolus. They further described the congestion of the glomerular vessels and hæmorrhages into the tubules of the kidney. Further, they saw a somewhat similar disease in monkeys, the urine of which contained highly refracted cells. They conclude that the above are either peculiar degenerate cells or protozoa, and suggest that the disease is a protozoan infection, and that the causal agent is eliminated by the urine. Fajardo and Voorthuis separately describe hæmatozoa.

partly free and partly in the red cells, which are similar to, but not identical with, the malarial parasites. Their organisms do not agree with one another, nor do they correspond to Glogner's.

Nemathelminthes.—Gelpke suggested that the disease might be due to a *Trichinella* in fish, but he has withdrawn this. *Trichiuris* and *Agchylostoma* need not seriously be considered, as this idea arose from a misunderstanding.

Fungi.—Pekelhäring and Winckler's bacillus has also been found by Hunter, and experimental inoculations by both sets of observers produced degenerations of the nerves. But it must be admitted with regard to bacteria that competent observers have found the blood sterile time after time.

Hamilton Wright's bacillus, which occurs in the alimentary canal, has been found by Dudgeon to be non-pathogenic for monkeys, and not to be agglutinated by the blood of beri-beri patients. Stanley's experiments on animals with mouldy rice have been negative. Finally, attention may be drawn to the researches of Holst, Nocht, and the Norwegian Ship Beri-beri Committee, which indicate that the so-called ship beri-beri is not beri-beri, as the symptoms are shortness of breath and weak heart, with weakness and dropsy of the lower limbs, but not paralysis of the limbs—*i.e.*, the degeneration of the nerves is not an essential phenomenon.

Predisposing Causes.—The disease can occur in all races, and at all ages, and in both sexes, but it is apt to cling particularly to one race in a country—*e.g.*, the Chinese in Malaya, the Filipinos in the Philippine gaol outbreak. This racial incidence is most marked. Thus, Braddon says that of the Chinese immigrants into the Straits and Malaya, it may be reckoned that of every 1,000 living, 120 suffer and 16 die of the disease. The Malayas are said to suffer but little, if at all. In the Bilibid Prison in Manila, on the other hand, according to Fales, the Filipinos suffered most severely, the Chinese were almost exempt, only one or two contracting the disease, while the Americans were entirely free.

With regard to age, it is most commonly met with in young adults between fifteen and thirty years, but it has also been noted in babies at the breast and in old men. It is more commonly met with in men than in women.

Recently occupation has been carefully investigated by Hunter and Koch in Hong-Kong, and they conclude that the disease is universally present throughout the community, but especially affects the working classes, while the professions, the merchants, and the leisured classes are practically, but not entirely, exempt. Other predisposing causes are disturbance of the soil and a high atmospheric temperature.

Important Features.—The peculiar features of the disease are that, though it generally occurs among rice-eating peoples, yet at times it occurs in other communities, as in the British regiment, in whose ration there was but a small quantity of rice, which was cured Rangoon rice. Finally, if observers are to be trusted, there are places where beri-beri occurs and rice is not eaten.

Pathology.—As the cause of the disease is unknown, but little can be said as to the pathology, but Mott and Halliburton have performed an experiment which throws much light on the disease. They injected blood taken from an acute case of beri-beri into a

cat, and found a fall of blood-pressure, with dilatation of the vessels of the stomach, intestines, and liver, as well as general venous engorgement, and they also noted dilatation of the right side of the heart, and microscopical hæmorrhages into the liver. This would clearly indicate that a poison capable of producing great vasomotor changes was circulating in the blood of beri-beri patients. In addition to the engorgements found in the cat, the human being suffers from congestion of the pharynx, and degeneration of the cardiac, muscular, and sensory nerves. The œdema is probably due to the vasomotor disturbance.

Durham considers that the urine indicates a serious diminution of the metabolism.

Morbid Anatomy.—The morbid anatomy and histopathology have been studied by numerous observers, among whom the investigations of Wright, Duerek, and Scheube must be especially mentioned. In acute cases there is always some œdema, but at times this may be excessive, and the veins of the neck are swollen. Hypostasis is always well marked, but may be excessive, especially about the face. There is often froth at the mouth. In chronic cases the body is pale, and may be swollen with dropsy or emaciated. In the former the post-mortem rigidity develops quickly, and is well marked. In the latter, however, it is not so marked. On cutting into the body the subcutaneous tissues are usually œdematous, and the veins are filled with dark fluid blood. There is a varying quantity of serous fluid in the abdomen, the chest, and the pericardium, and there may be petechial hæmorrhages under the visceral pleura, and pericardium in acute, but not in chronic, cases. The throat and tonsils are generally congested in acute cases, but they may be normal; the larynx may be congested or normal. The mucosa of the trachea and bronchi may be œdematous, with the lumen full of fluid. The lungs may be congested and œdematous, and may contain little air.

The right side of the heart is always greatly dilated in acute cases, and is also hypertrophied in older cases, but it is rare for the left ventricle to be hypertrophied, though it may be dilated to a moderate extent. The myocardium generally shows fatty degeneration, the striation is often absent, and segmentation and vacuolation of the fibres, with an increase of the interstitial tissue, can also be seen, and there is a round-celled infiltration beneath both endo- and epi-cardium in acute cases. (These changes are said by Scheube to be like those found in rabbits after section of both vagi.)

According to Wright, the entire nervous system of the heart is damaged in acute cases, the cells of the bulbar nuclei and the nucleus ambiguus on both sides being swollen, with excentrically placed nuclei and a disappearance of Nissl's bodies in the processes, and to a less extent at the periphery. These changes may also be seen in the first and second pair of the thoracic ganglia, and in the intrinsic ganglionic cells of the heart, while the vagal nerve-

endings show rounded droplets of altered myelin (neurokeratin?), especially near the nodes. In chronic cases only the vagi may show degeneration, the ganglia in the heart being normal.

In acute cases the stomach and duodenum are markedly affected, the mucosa being hyperæmic, with more or less marked hæmorrhagic extravasations, and even at times effusion of blood into the lumen of the viscus. This inflammation may extend to the ileum, or very rarely even to the cæcum, but usually the small and large intestines show nothing abnormal, for the acute irritation is located to the pylorus and the duodenum.

Microscopically there is an acute congestion with round-celled infiltration, with, according to Herzog, a very large number of eosinophile cells and necrosis of the glandular epithelium. The cells of Auerbach and Meissner's plexuses are degenerate, and the nerve fibres in the stomach and duodenum also show signs of degeneration. In chronic beri-beri these gastro-duodenal signs are absent.

In an acute case the lymphatic glands near the stomach and duodenum are enlarged and congested. The liver is generally enlarged and congested, and at times in a nutmeg-like condition, and, according to Hewlett and Korté, there may be extensive hæmorrhagic patches. Scheube and Plehn draw attention to a round-celled infiltration of the interlobular connective tissue, which the latter calls a beri-beric interstitial hepatitis. The cells show fatty degeneration, cloudy swelling, and at times necrosis. The spleen may show some cyanosis, and be slightly enlarged and indurated, but usually it is normal. The wall of the gall-bladder may be œdematous at times; the pancreas is normal. The suprarenals may be pigmented and congested with vacuolated cells. The kidneys are usually swollen and hyperæmic, and there may be hæmorrhages into the glomeruli, tubules, and pelvis, together with cloudy swelling and cellular infiltration. The ureters and bladder are usually normal.

The nervous system is markedly affected. The meninges of the brain may be hyperæmic, and there may be some hyperæmia of the brain substance itself, and increase of fluid in the ventricles, but the microscope shows nothing abnormal except in the bulb, where, according to Wright, there are the changes already mentioned in the vagal nucleus. Kustermann also describes acute degeneration of the vagal ganglia at the base of the fourth ventricle.

The spinal cord is usually normal. Hamilton Wright and others have described degeneration of the cells of the posterior spinal ganglia and anterior cornua of the lumbar cord, together with atrophy of Goll's column, in which histologically there is a thickening of the glia tissue and a complete disappearance of the nerve fibres, with the presence of many granular cells.

The peripheral nerves are usually normal to the naked eye, but may be injected and hæmorrhagic. Scheube and Baelz first showed that these nerves were degenerated, the muscular branches of the

nerves of the limbs being most affected, but even the fine sensory cutaneous branches were also attacked. The changes in the autonomic nervous system do not appear to have been closely studied, though several observers have recorded changes in the ganglia, and in the cardiac and other plexuses.

The degeneration of the nerve fibres has been carefully studied by Scheube, Baelz, Hamilton Wright, and Duerck. The neuro-



FIG. 501.—BERI-BERI: DROPSICAL OR HYPERTROPHIC FORM.



FIG. 502.—BERI-BERI: DRY OR ATROPHIC FORM.

keratin network becomes irregular, and its meshes wider, while its rods disappear. The medullary sheath becomes vacuolated, and its inner boundary ill-defined. In other places the neurokeratin network condenses into small rosary-like masses or larger lumps, somewhat regularly arranged. Later the medullary sheath breaks up into spherical or elongated masses separated by clear intervals. The axone undergoes first chemical changes, and then appears like a wavy cord, or as a series of comma-like segments, or twisted up

into a coil. Finally, both axone and medullary sheath disappear, while Schwann's sheath collapses, and so the nerve fibres become lost in the connective tissue of the endoneurium. Along with these changes there is a cellular infiltration of the perineurium, especially of the perivascular spaces, and also of the endoneurium. These cells are said to be like a similar infiltration met with in traumatic lesions of nerves, and to resemble the granule cells of the central nervous system. When fully degenerated, the nerve may consist simply of connective tissue. Regeneration has not been observed, but must occur—at all events, to some extent—in cases which recover.

The muscles show atrophied and normal fibres side by side. The diseased fibre first loses its striation, and becomes oval or round in transverse section. A colloid degeneration occurs, with proliferation of the nuclei of the sarcolemma. The fibre now appears of a homogeneous grey colour, and is very brittle. As it atrophies the connective tissue of the muscle increases in amount. The bone-marrow is said to be normal.

Symptomatology.—As the cause of the disease is unknown, and the invasion is insidious, the incubation period is also unknown. Hamilton Wright places it at some ten to fifteen days.

The disease is insidious in its onset, and is characterized by gastro-intestinal, cardiac, and nervous symptoms. For purposes of description three types may be recognized—viz., (1) the acute pernicious form; (2) the typical form; (3) the rudimentary form.

1. Acute Pernicious Form.—The acute pernicious form may exhibit itself in several ways. The most acute is when the person, without previous illness, suddenly dies, and the autopsy reveals that he has died of beri-beri.

The more usual history is that the patient feels a disinclination for food, followed in a short time by a sensation of depression or pain in the epigastrium, and nausea. Tenderness is evinced if pressure is made over the pylorus or duodenum, while the throat is seen to be congested. The temperature is usually normal, though slight febrile rises have been recorded. Soon the heart symptoms, characteristic of the attack, appear in the form of a sensation of oppression over the heart, throbbing vessels in the neck, epigastric pulsation, cardiac palpitation, and dyspnœa, while the slightest exertion increases the pulse-rate markedly. The right side of the heart dilates, and hæmic murmurs are heard. As a result of this cardiac disturbance the urine diminishes and dropsy appears, but this varies from being trivial to fairly considerable, with effusion into the pericardium, pleura, and peritoneum.

There may early be found patches of anæsthesia or hyperæsthesia, particularly in the course of the anterior tibial and musculo-cutaneous nerves. Paralysis now appears, and may be slight, or may be so extensive as to prevent all voluntary movements, and at the same time the anæsthesia may increase considerably.

Sooner or later the cardiac symptoms become worse; the peri-

cardial distress becomes agony, the lungs become engorged, and the unhappy individual, unable to obtain proper aeration of his blood, gasps for breath with open mouth and expanded nostrils, while the pupils dilate. His face becomes cyanosed, his extremities cold, and he becomes unconscious, and shortly dies of cardiac failure. During this dying agony the mind is clear almost to the last. The duration of such an attack is from twelve hours to a few days.

2. **The Typical Form.**—The typical form of the disease begins insidiously with malaise, lassitude, loss of appetite, dull pain in the stomach, tenderness on pressure over the pylorus and duodenum, headache, difficulty of breathing and palpitation, often some oedema along the shin, exaggerated knee-jerks, and a sensation of heaviness in the limbs, especially in the legs. Sooner or later a difficulty in walking sets in, and the knee-jerk diminishes and disappears, or the patient may suddenly find himself on wakening in the morning unable to raise himself. If he is capable of walking, the gait is peculiar, somewhat resembling that of locomotor ataxia, but generally being more of the 'high-stepping' type, the foot being raised with difficulty from the ground, brought forward with a jerk, and lowered abruptly. He walks with a support, and often with the legs wide apart, in order to give stability to his locomotion. He cannot stand long with closed eyes, and complains that he feels as though he were walking on something soft. In addition he suffers from cramp, and his calves are very tender, and sensations of pins and needles, burning, etc., may be felt. It will be noticed that the anterior tibial and the peroneal muscles are mostly affected, and that often there is a tendency for the foot to assume the equino-varus position, and that ankle-drop is often seen.

The forearms may also be paralyzed, and wrist-drop, with great loss of power in the grip, may be noted. As the paralysis proceeds the muscles waste, and electrical excitation is much altered. Miura's rule is that if the foot can be flexed on the ankle, the excitation is only diminished; if only the toes can be dorsally flexed, there is a partial reaction of degeneration; but if no dorsal movement is capable of being made, then the reaction of degeneration will be fully developed. The paralysis spreads to the muscles of the calf, the muscles of the thigh, and the gluteal region, and to those of the hand and arm; then to the abdomen, the diaphragm, the intercostals, and the larynx, and, in rare cases, to the intra- and extra-ocular muscles.

Fletcher has drawn attention to jongkok, or squatting test. The person places both hands on the top of the head, and slowly squats down on his heels, and then rises up again. In beri-beri this cannot be performed.

Associated with the paralysis there is at first hyperæsthesia, especially in the calf muscles; paræsthesia, as already mentioned; and partial anæsthesia, which may be characterized by saying that

the patient feels as though he were touched through some protecting cloth. There is also loss of sense of heat, and cold, and pain. This anæsthesia varies much in site and extent. Usually it begins about the feet and wrist, and moves upwards over the legs, thighs, fore-arms, and arms, and down into the fingers. It is this numbness of the fingers which incapacitates the patient from doing many simple actions. There is said to be a peculiar ring of anæsthesia around the mouth. The areas of loss of sensation do not correspond with segmental or nerve areas, but are remarkably patchy. The nerves of the affected regions may be tender.

The heart is also markedly affected, being dilated, especially the right side, with a diffuse apex-beat, a spacing of the sounds, so that the intervals may be nearly equal; while systolic murmurs may be heard, and reduplication of the second sound is common, particularly over the pulmonary area. Palpitation and epigastric pulsation are common, as is pulsation of the carotids and veins of the neck. The pulse is usually much increased in frequency and low in tension. The great danger of the disease is death from sudden cardiac failure.

The blood does not show much abnormality beyond a certain amount of anæmia. The differential leucocyte count contains about 50 per cent. of polymorphonuclears, 36 per cent. of lymphocytes, 4 per cent. of mononuclear leucocytes, and 10 per cent. of eosinophiles.

The urine may be much diminished when there is œdema, but when this is passing off there is a large increase in the quantity. The total solids are said to be below normal, urea and chlorides being diminished, phosphates and indican being increased, and albuminuria being rare.

Dropsy may or may not be present, but some œdema, most marked anteriorly in the legs, is a practically constant symptom. It usually begins along the shin in the form of a rather solid œdema. It may spread over the legs into the scrotum, on to the abdominal wall, and into the face and arms, and is characterized by being at times in peculiar localized patches, and if it takes place in the muscles, gives rise to an appearance like pseudo-hypertrophic paralysis. Along with the cutaneous œdema there is often exudation into the peritoneal, pleural, and pericardial cavities.

When the dropsy is marked there may be a great diminution of the urine. This dropsical condition is often improperly considered to form a separate variety of the disease, and is called the 'wet,' 'hypertrophic,' or 'dropsical' form, while another variety, called 'dry' or 'atrophic' beri-beri, is mentioned by many authors, the two forms being merely the early and late stages of the disease.

The tongue is usually clean; the throat may be slightly congested; digestion is fair, but a large meal will increase the præcordial or epigastric distress. Vomiting is a bad sign. The bowels are often constipated, the temperature normal or subnormal. The urine may be diminished, increased, or normal in quantity, according to the presence, the passing off, or the absence of œdema.

The larynx may be paralyzed partially or completely, and the voice rendered raucous or lost. The lungs may be œdematous.

In this condition the patient may remain, at times better, at times worse, for weeks and months, and may proceed slowly to recovery, with, of course, deformities if paralysis remains, or may die suddenly of cardiac failure when sitting up or getting out of bed, or from some complication.

3. Rudimentary Form.—There is a rudimentary, abortive, or ambulatory form in which the symptoms are so slight that perhaps the sufferer does not seek medical advice, but in whom there may be first increase and then diminution of the knee-jerks, patches of anæsthesia, some muscular weakness, some gastric catarrh, and general malaise.

Reinfection and Relapses.—An attack does not confer an immunity. On the contrary, it rather predisposes to another attack. It is probable that there are no relapses, but reinfections, even shortly after an attack, are common.

Complications.—Whenever fever develops in a beri-beri patient there is surè to be a complication. The most common are tuberculosis, dysentery, and malaria.

Sequelæ.—Many authors do not believe in sequelæ to beri-beri, but certainly there may be the contraction left after the paralysis and anæmia, and attacks of palpitation may occur.

Diagnosis.—The principal positive signs on which to base the diagnosis are: (1) Loss of knee-jerks; (2) patches of anæsthesia, and occasionally hyperæsthesia, on the legs; (3) pain on pressing the calf muscles; (4) œdema along the shin; (5) absence of marked albuminuria; and (6) the absence of fever.

Suspicious early signs in endemic areas are loss of appetite and a desire for lighter food, together with tenderness over the pylorus and duodenum, with exaggerated knee-jerks.

Several diseases have to be distinguished from beri-beri; first of all the different kinds of *peripheral neuritis*—e.g., alcoholic neuritis, by the history and the general tremulousness; arsenical neuritis, by the abdominal pains and the diarrhœa; lead paralysis, by the colic and the blue line on the gums.

Secondly, *dropsies* due to heart disease are recognized by the murmurs and the history of rheumatic fever, or other infectious disease; kidney disease, by an examination of the urine; agchylostomiasis, by the ova being found in the fæces; epidemic dropsy, by the fever and the absence of anæsthesia and paralysis; malarial cachexia, by the enlargement of the spleen, and perhaps the parasites in the blood; and kala-azar, by the enlarged spleen and liver.

Thirdly, certain *diseases of the spinal cord*; myelitis, by the loss of control over the bladder and rectum; locomotor ataxy, by the Argyll-Robertson pupil, etc.; pellagra, by the skin eruptions.

Fourthly, *certain intoxications*, such as ergotism by the gangrene and the history, and lathyrism by the absence of tender muscles.

Prognosis.—The acute pernicious form is always fatal, the rudimentary never. The general mortality varies in different countries, as follows :—

				Per Cent.
Sumatra	..	..	..	60 to 70
Hong-Kong	..	..	..	48·6
Malaya	..	..	..	19·7
Java	..	..	..	2 to 6
Japan	..	..	..	2·5 to 3·5

But it apparently depends upon many things, of which the most important is the avoidance of sudden cardiac failure. If the patient is treated carefully in bed the danger is much diminished, but if he is allowed to sit up and move about the danger is great. Complications are most unfavourable.

Treatment.—The treatment is essentially symptomatic, the patient being placed in bed, and care being taken to avoid anything which is likely to bring on cardiac failure. Especial care is required if the patient gets up or moves about. A cardiac tonic, in the form of strophanthus or digitalis, is advisable, and amyl nitrite, nitroglycerine, or trinitrin should be placed at hand, in order that they may be used at once if a sudden cardiac attack takes place. If the attack is severe, with great embarrassment of the right heart, it has been advised to perform venesection, and remove some 8 ounces of blood. Oxygen is useful during the attacks of dyspnœa. For the paralysis strychnine should be administered, and the muscles massaged to prevent atrophy and cramps. Electrical excitation is also good.

If possible, the patient should at once be removed from the place in which he is supposed to have acquired the disease.

Braddon strongly recommends atropine either as the alkaloid in hypodermic injections of $\frac{1}{150}$ to $\frac{1}{50}$ grain, according to the urgency of the symptoms, or in the form of the tincture of belladonna. He considers that the atropine is specially useful in cases of dyspnœa due to cardiac failure and pulmonary embarrassment, while he gives a mixture of tincture of belladonna $\frac{1}{2}$ drachm, tincture of scilla $\frac{1}{2}$ drachm, and citrate of potash $\frac{1}{2}$ drachm, in 4 ounces of water three times a day for three or more days.

With regard to after-treatment, any deformity, such as club-foot, must be rectified, as described in works on orthopædic surgery. Fraser and Stanton are preparing a remedial agent on the lines indicated by their researches, and this should be tried when available. In the meanwhile, only harmless rice—*i.e.*, brown rice with more than 0·4 per cent. of phosphorus pentoxide—should be given to the patients, and care should be taken that it is cooked in ordinary pots, and not under pressure. Thomson and Simpson recommend a full diet with 1 ounce of yeast and 200 grammes of katjangido - beans daily. Chamberlain and Vedder recommend that 5 c.c. of an extract of rice polishings be given daily to infants suffering from beri-beri, and this is administered in 20-drop doses

every two hours. The patient must be placed upon a good nourishing diet, with plenty of proteid and good vegetables, and rice should be eliminated from this diet. Careful nursing is necessary because of the danger of cardiac failure, and good hygiene is also necessary.

Prophylaxis.—Rice should be avoided as a staple article of diet, but if it has to be used it should be in the form of the Indian, country rice, or paddy, variously described as the cured, stale, unpolished, or parboiled rice. Great care should be taken with the cooking, for a good rice can be converted into a harmful rice by cooking, which should always be performed in ordinary pots, and never under pressure by steam. With regard to the different kinds of rice, Schüffner and Kuenen find that Rangoon rice contains 0.42 to 0.46 per cent. of P_2O_5 , while Siam and Java rice is much lower. They maintain that there should be a rice reform, and that a minimum legal limit of 0.5 per cent. P_2O_5 for dry rice should be imposed, or, failing this, the substitution of other foods, to make up the deficient ingredient, and a strict control of cured rice—*i.e.*, white rice. Pregnant and nursing women especially should have a liberal diet and harmless rice.

A good nourishing diet is most important.

Good hygienic surroundings—*i.e.*, good ventilation, the avoidance of overcrowding, plenty of sunshine, and exercise in the open air—may be mentioned.

It is as well to thoroughly disinfect with Clayton gas or sulphur and formalin any room in which beri-beri patients have been living, or any infected house or ship.

INFANTILE BERI-BERI.

Synonyms.—*Philippines*: Taon, taol suba.

Infants nursed by mothers suffering from beri-beri, and living on a defective dietary in the Philippine Islands, suffer from cedema, dyspepsia, and cyanosis, and often die suddenly. Post-mortem investigations show degenerations in the vagi, phrenics, intercostals, and anterior tibial nerves, but not so extensive as in adults. Chamberlain, Vedder, Andrews, and others conclude that this is an infantile beri-beri due to some deficiency in the mother's milk, and find that it causes 56 per cent. of the infantile mortality in the Philippines.

EPIDEMIC DROPSY.

Synonym.—Acute anæmic dropsy.

Definition.—Epidemic dropsy is an acute infectious disease of unknown cause, characterized by fever, dropsy, an erythematous eruption, and sometimes cardiac symptoms, but without paralysis or anæsthesia.

History.—In 1876-77 there was a great famine in Southern India, during which a dropsical disease, at the time called 'beri-beri,' was noted. It is possible that this dropsical disease was conveyed in some way from Madras to Calcutta, for in 1877 there was an outbreak of epidemic dropsy for the first recorded time in that city. It appeared when the rains were over, and extended through the cold season into 1878, disappearing when the warm weather commenced in April. It recurred again, and followed the same course in the cold season of 1878 and 1879, and it disappeared in the warm weather of 1880, reappearing this time in the warm weather of 1881. It only attacked natives of India, but it spread from Calcutta to Shillong, Dacca, and South Sylhet, and to Mauritius, by means of labourers passing through that town. Mauritius became infected in 1878, and was clear of the disease in 1879.

No further accounts of the complaint appeared until 1901, when it was again recognized in Calcutta and Madras. In 1902 it occurred in the Barisal Gaol in Bengal, and in 1907 it occurred in Assam and the two Bengals. It is probable that during the intervening years it has really been present in some part of India, but has been called 'beri-beri.' Recently Greig has come to the conclusion that it is a deficiency disease.

Climatology.—So far the disease has only been met with in India and Mauritius, and generally in the cold season.

Ætiology.—The causation of the disease is unknown, but there are various theories—*e.g.*, (1) that it is beri-beri; (2) that it is a post-dysenteric anæmia or hydræmia; (3) that it is due to nitrogen starvation; (4) that it is due to eating Burma rice, the action of which is explained in various ways; (5) that it is dāl poisoning; (6) that it is a special bacterial disease conveyed from person to person by the bed-bug.

This latter is Delany's theory, and is supported by the fact that the disease is epidemic, and spreads apparently by the agency of human beings, but not from man to man; that it begins with an initial fever, and has a rash, and that there is a local house infection; and, finally, by its sudden disappearance and reappearance. Other theories are that it is a ptomaine poisoning, or a bacillus in fish, or a rust or fungus on rice.

Pathology.—No remarks can be made on this part of the subject.

Morbid Anatomy.—There is subcutaneous œdema and fluid in the peritoneal and pleural cavities. The mouth and pharynx are œdematous, and the œsophagus may be ulcerated. The stomach is very congested, and may show hæmorrhagic patches, and the jejunum is congested, as are the mesenteric glands and the liver. The pancreas is normal. The aryepiglottidean folds and the lungs are œdematous and congested. The kidney is congested, and may show cloudy swelling, but the bladder is normal. The spleen is shrunken; the pericardium may be normal, but the heart is dilated.

Symptomatology.—Generally there are no distinct prodromata; occasionally the onset of the disease is preceded by diarrhœa.

Epidemic dropsy begins with an attack of fever without any initial rigor, the temperature rising to 99° to 104° F., and continuing of low type with remissions and, later, intermissions for a variable period of time, sometimes as long as a month. Associated with the fever, and, indeed, the most constant and characteristic symptom, is the dropsy, which, beginning in the feet and legs, may spread up the thighs to the abdomen, and even to the hands, arms, and face.

There is distinct anæmia after the disease has lasted a little time. Rogers records a count of 3,090,000 erythrocytes per centimetre, and a hæmoglobin count of 54 to 65 per cent. The colour index is said by other observers to be about normal, and the proportion of white to red cells to vary from 1 to 430 at the invasion, to 1 to 384 in the course, to 1 to 615 at the end. Leucocytes are apparently always increased in number, but only slightly. The differential count is :—

			Per Cent.
Polymorphonuclears	..	..	60.2
Lymphocytes	..	..	21.4
Mononuclears	..	..	11.7
Eosinophiles	..	..	6.7

No animal or vegetal parasites have been discovered in blood which is sterile.

The condition of the urine is described as very variable, but there is no albumin and no casts are to be found.

Effusions into the peritoneal and pleural cavities may take place. The alimentary canal is early irritated, and vomiting and diarrhœa are common occurrences. A rash appears early on the extremities in the dropsical areas; it is usually erythematous or 'measly,' but vesicles and hæmorrhages may be seen. Anæmia, as remarked, is progressive during the disease, and there may be cardiac dilatation with hæmic murmurs. In severe cases there may be cough and dyspnœa, due to œdema into the lungs. Recovery is the rule, but death may occur from cardiac or pulmonary complications.

Sequelæ.—The only sequela so far observed is cardiac weakness.

Diagnosis.—Epidemic dropsy shows the following characteristic signs: dropsy, slight fever, diarrhœa, rash, anæmia, and no albuminuria.

Its diagnosis from *beri-beri* is based upon the presence of fever, the persistence in some cases of the knee-jerk, the lack of paralysis, of painful muscles, and of anæsthesia. Some authorities maintain, however, that in epidemic dropsy there is no fever and no rash, and is indistinguishable from *beri-beri*.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is favourable except in the aged, the case mortality being only 2 to 8 per cent.

Treatment.—Rest in bed and the administration of calcium chloride, or iron and strophanthus, are the only remedies usually required. High temperatures should be treated by diaphoretics, quinine, and sponging.

Prophylaxis.—Segregation and disinfection are recommended, but no rational prophylaxis can be advised as long as the cause remains unknown.

REFERENCES.

Beri-Beri and Infantile Beri-Beri.

- ANDREWS (1912). Phil. Journ. of Science.
 ARON (1910). Phil. Journ. of Science.
 BONTIUS (1645). De Medicina Indorum, lib. iii., cap. i. De paralyseos
 quendam Specie quam Indigenæ beri-beri vocant.
 BRADDON (1907). Cause of Beri-Beri. London.
 BRADDON (1909). Bombay Medical Congress.
 CHAMBERLAIN AND VEDDER. Phil. Journ. of Science.
 DANIELS (1906). Beri-Beri. London.
 DUERCK (1907). Verhandlungen d. deutschen pathologische Gesellschaft,
 September; (1908) Beri-Beri. Jena.
 FALES (1907). Journal of the American Medical Association, p. 776.
 FRAZER AND STANTON (1909). Lancet, i., February 13; (1910) Philippine
 Journal of Science. British Manila; (1912) Hong-Kong Medical Con-
 gress. Hong-Kong.
 FUNK (1912). Journal of State Medicine, xx., 6, 341-366.
 HERZOG (1906). Philippine Journal of Science, i. 709; *ibid.*, 189.
 HEWLETT AND KORTÉ (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine, x. 315.
 HOLST (1907). Journal of Hygiene, vii. 619; (1911) Transactions of the
 Society of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene. London.
 HUNTER AND KOCH (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine, x. 265; *ibid.*,
 330.
 INGRAM (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine, x. 102.
 MALCOLMSON (1839). Practical Essay on the History and Treatment of
 Beri-Beri. Madras.
 MARSHALL (1822). Notes on the Topography of Ceylon.
 OUDENHOVEN (1848). Ned. Tijdschr. v. Geneesk, p. 577.
 SAMBON (1902). British Medical Journal, ii. 835.
 SCHAUMANN (1911). Transactions of the Society of Tropical Medicine and
 Hygiene. London.
 SCHEUBE (1890). Die Beriberi Krankheit. Jena.
 SCHEUBE (1910). Die Krankheiten der warmen Länder. (Bibliography.)
 Jena.
 STANLEY (1902). Journal of Hygiene, p. 369.
 STRONG AND CROWELL (1912). Philippine Journal of Science, Bd. VII. 4.
 Manila.
 VAN DER BURG (1887). De Heneesheer in Ned. Indie, ii. 444. Batavia.
 VAN OVERBECK DE MEYER (1865). Geneesk Tijdschr. von der Ziemacht.
 VEDDER (1912). Philippine Journal of Science, Bd. VII. 4. Manila.
 WRIGHT (1902). Ætiology and Pathology of Beri-Beri. Singapore.

Epidemic Dropsy.

- ANDERSON (1908). Indian Medical Gazette, xliii. 85.
 CAMPBELL (1908). *Ibid.*, 327.
 DELANY (1908). *Ibid.*, 167.
 GREIG (1911). Ind. Med. Gaz.
 MACLEOD (1906). Allbutt and Rolleston's System of Medicine, vol. ii.,
 part ii., p. 643.
 MACLEOD (1909). Bombay Medical Congress.
 PEARSE (1908). Indian Medical Gazette, lxiii. 128.
 ROGERS (1908). Fevers of the Tropics, p. 186.
 RUTHERFORD (1809). Indian Medical Gazette, xliii. 174.

CHAPTER XLVII

PELLAGRA

Synonyms — Etymology — Definition — History — Climatology — Ætiology — Pathology — Morbid anatomy — Histo-pathology — Symptomatology — Diagnosis — Prognosis — Treatment — Prophylaxis — References.

Synonyms.—*Italian*: Umor Salso, Scottatura di Sole, Malattia della Miseria, Mal del Sole, Malattia della Insolazione di Primavera, Risipola Lombarda, Mal della Spienza, Mal del Padrone, Jettatura di Sole, Cattivo Male, Mal della Vipera, Calore del Fegato, Salso, Pelandria, Pellarella, Pellarina, Psychoneurosis Maïdica, Mal Rosso, Maïdismus, Lepra Italica Maïdica, Scorbuto Montano, Scorbuto Alpino, Elephantiasis Italica. *Spanish*: Mal de la Rosa, Mal d'Asturias, Mal del Hígado, Calor del Hígado, Escamadura del Hígado, Flema Salada. *French*: Maladie de la Teste, La Gale de Sainte Ignace, Mal de Saint Amans, Mal des Saintes Mains, Mal de Sainte Rose, Mauvais Dartre. *German*: Der Lombardische Ausatz. *Roumanian*: Buba Tranjilor, Rana Tranjilor, Parleala, Jupuiala. *Greek*: Græci Elephantiasim. *Egyptian*: Inshup, Qushuf, Gofar, Lahoo. *South America*: Chichismo.

Etymology.—The name 'pellagra' is an Italian word, possibly coined by the peasants from two words—*pelle*, meaning 'skin,' and *agra*, meaning 'rough'—though other possible origins are also given. It was introduced into medical literature by Frapolli in 1771 in his work, 'Animadversiones in Morbum Vulgo Pelagram,' when he spelt it with only one *l* instead of with two.

Definition.—Pellagra is an endemic disease, usually of long duration and of unknown causation, which is characterized by cutaneous, gastro-intestinal, and nervous symptoms, which undergo exacerbations at recurrent intervals, usually in the spring or autumn.

History.—When it is considered that pellagra has been overlooked in quite recent years in America, Scotland, and England, and probably in many other parts of the world, it will not be thought to be astonishing that ancient literature is silent as to its existence in Europe, but the absence of these references by no means proves that the disease itself was not present. Strambio finds that some of the symptoms mentioned in Hippocrates may be those of pellagra, and says that his description of 'Sollicitudo' indicates a disease

resembling the mental condition found in pellagra during an acute exacerbation. We have searched through Hippocrates, and have been unable to find anything which to our mind bears any resemblance to pellagra. The peculiar symptoms from which St. Francis of Assisi, who lived in a district which to this day is pellagrous, suffered, markedly resemble pellagra, as he had an eruption upon his hands and feet, associated with an extraordinary mental condition; but though these speculations are interesting, they are far too uncertain to be of any use in determining the interesting point as to whether pellagra existed in Europe before the introduction of maize by Columbus. In 1578 the disease seems to have been known in Milan as 'pellarella,' but was confounded with eczema, leprosy, erysipelas, and scurvy, and no real importance can be attached to a simple name unaccompanied by any description of the disease to which it was applied. A slightly more definite reference is found in 1713 in Ramazzini's work, 'De Morbis Artificum Diatriba,' under the heading 'Agricolæ,' where he says: 'Easdem ob causas, iis persæpe contingunt dolores colici et affecto Hippocondriaca quam ipsi appellant, il mal del Padrone.'

The recognition that the cutaneous, gastro-intestinal, and mental symptoms exhibited by the sufferers constituted a clinical entity was first made by Gaspar Casal on March 26, 1735, but, unfortunately, was not published until 1762, when his work, 'Historia Natural Y Médica del Principado de Asturias Sequida de la Descripcion de la Enfermedad conocida por el Vulgo con il Nombre de Mal de la Rosa,' appeared. Casal gave a representation of the disease (Fig. 503), showing the eruption around the neck and down the front of the chest (called Casal's necklace), and on the dorsa of the hands and feet. With Sambon one of us has visited the



FIG. 503.—MAL DE LA ROSA.
(After Casal.)

Oviedo district of the Asturias in North Spain, where Casal first recognized pellagra, and find that, as regards the cases along the River Nero, the disease exists as it did in his days. On December 2, 1740, a learned monk named Feijóo wrote to Casal stating that 'Mal de la Rosa' existed in his native country, Galicia. Before Casal's publication appeared, the celebrated Thiéry visited Madrid, where he met Casal, and was shown cases of pellagra, and afterwards he observed one case himself. On his return to Paris he wrote a paper entitled, 'Description d'une Maladie appelée Mal de la Rose aux Asturies,' which was published in the second volume of Vandermonde's journal called 'Recueil Périodique d'Observations de Médecine, de Chirurgie, et de Pharmacie,' in May, 1755. It is pleasing to record that not merely did Thiéry give a most excellent description of the clinical signs of pellagra, but he also gave full credit to Casal for his, as yet unpublished, great discovery.

These publications of Casal and Thiéry laid the foundations of the modern knowledge of pellagra. We will now turn to the various countries, and study, very briefly, the history of the disease therein.

Italy.—Early in the eighteenth century the disease appears to be well known to the medical men of Cremona and Cremasco, as well as to Antonio Terzaghi at Sesto Calende on Lago Maggiore, and to Francesco Zanetti, who recognized it in 1769 at Canobis, also on Lago Maggiore. It will thus be seen that pellagra, hinted at in 1578 in Milan, written about by Ramazzini in 1713, had become a disease well known to the general practitioner and peasantry, and only required an historian to become recognized by the medical profession. This historian was found in Francesco Frapolli, one of the physicians in the large hospital in Milan, who in 1771 published his work, 'Animadversiones in Morbum Vulgo Pelagram,' in which for the first time the word 'pellagra' (spelt with a single *l*) was used. This work, followed by those of a number of authors, drew more attention to the disease, with the result that the Patriotic Society of Milan offered a prize for the best essay on the subject, while the Kaiser Joseph founded a special hospital for pellagrins, and placed it under the charge of Gaetano Strambio, whose justly celebrated work, 'De Pellagra,' appeared in three volumes during the years 1786-1789. In 1787 two young Dutch doctors, Jensen and Hollenhagen, and a young Frenchman, Levacher de la Feutrie, visited Italy to study pellagra, concerning which they published reports on their return to Holland and France. In 1799 Chevalier gave an account of Jensen's work in the *London Medical Review and Magazine*. In this way the knowledge of the disease called pellagra started and spread.

In the meanwhile a disease called 'Scorbuto Alpino' had been definitely recognized by Giuseppe Antonio Pujati in 1740 in Feltre, to the north of Venice, and the same disease was found later by Antonio Gaetano Pujati, the son of Giuseppe Antonio Pujati, and Nascimbeni in the Venetian Friuli, and this disease found its historian in Odoardi, a pupil of the older Pujati, who in 1776 published

his work, 'Di Una Specie Particolare di Scorbuto,' in which an account of Professor Pujati's discoveries was given. In this way the knowledge of the disease 'Scorbuto Alpino' was started, so that in Italy at this time there were described two separate diseases under different names, and found in different regions; and it was not till Fanzago in 1789 published his work, 'Memoria sopra la Pellagra del Territorio Padovano,' that these two diseases were recognized to be one and the same. After this date the literature concerning pellagra increased considerably, but no work of great importance appeared until 1810, when Marzari published his book, 'Saggio Medico-Politico sulla Pellagra e Scorbuto,' in which he laid stress upon 'maize' as the principal ætiological factor in the disease—a view which had previously been mentioned, but not so forcibly, by Casal and others. The importance of this work is that, ever since its publication, the maize theory in some form has been generally adopted in Italy. Marzari was of the opinion that it was the deficiency of the gluten in the maize which was the main agent of the disease, but he also suspected toxicity. From Marzari's time there are very numerous publications, among which may be mentioned those by Henry Holland in 1817 on the pellagra of Lombardy, published in the Medico-Chirurgical Transactions, by Zecchinelli in 1818.

Balardini in 1845, in his work entitled 'Della Pellagra, del Grano turco quale Causa Precipua di quella Malattia e dei Mezzi per Arrestarla,' promulgated the view that the causation was a fungus growing in the maize, which fungoid growth was called 'Verderame,' and was thought to be due to *Sporisorium maidis*. This publication was of the greatest importance, as it afforded an explanation as to why the disease should attack some people and not others, and thus gave the maize theory greater importance. This subject was further studied by Costallat and others, who produced symptoms in chickens by feeding them on maize containing verderame, which were said to resemble those of pellagra.

In 1872 Lombroso began to study pellagra, and continued to do so till he died in 1909. He believed that the disease was an intoxication produced by the toxins manufactured by organisms, harmless in themselves, and growing on maize. More recently a view has been promulgated that the disease is due to good maize, which in certain people produces the symptoms of the disease, and in others does not. Such, briefly, was the condition when Sambon in 1905 began his work, which he has continued up to the present time. This work, which is mainly epidemiological, has thoroughly shaken, if not completely destroyed, the maize theory, and has brought forward many facts which support strongly a parasitic theory of the causation of the disease as well as a probability of the infection being spread by one of the biting flies.

Spain.—The discovery of the disease by Casal in 1735 in the Oviedo district of the Asturias has already been mentioned, as well as the fact that Feijóo had recognized it in Galicia. The next

publication is by an Englishman, called Townsend, entitled 'A Journey through Spain,' and published in three volumes in London in 1791. In the second volume, on p. 10, there is a short clear account of 'Mal de Rosa.' This is the earliest known account of pellagra in English. In 1820 Eximeno made an inquiry into the disease, and came to the conclusion that 'Mal del Hígado,' 'Mal de la Rosa,' and pellagra were one and the same disease. In 1835 Mendez Alvaro recognized pellagra in the malady called 'Flema Salada,' and in 1847 Henriquez showed that 'Mal de Monte' was the same disease. In 1849 Roussel visited Spain, and recognized that the disease in France and that in Spain were the same clinical entity. Since that date many excellent works have been published in Spain on pellagra, notably by Calmarza and Roël, while of late the disease has been carefully studied by Huiteras, Pittaluga, and the physicians of Oviedo.

The maize theory of the ætiology of pellagra has never gained credence in Spain, and hence the term 'Spanish pellagra,' or a pellagra not due to maize, has been used by some Zeists as a medical synonym for a hoax.

Portugal.—Pellagra is known to exist in Portugal, but we are in the same condition as older writers, in that we can give no history of its recognition or spread.

France.—We have already noted Thiéry's publication in 1755, and the fact that in 1787 a young Frenchman, Levacher de la Feutrie, proceeded to Italy to study the disease, concerning which he subsequently published accounts in 1802 and 1806; but it was Hameau in 1818 who first recognized the disease in France as occurring around Teste-de-Buch, in the Plain of Arcachon. Hameau was not acquainted with the literature which had sprung up concerning pellagra, and his observations were in reality a rediscovery of the disease. In 1829 he read an excellent dissertation on the subject before the Society of Medicine of Bordeaux, under the title 'Description d'une Maladie Nouvelle.' It would appear that he considered it to be an infection in some way acquired from sheep. In all he observed no less than seventy-six cases.

There is, however, evidence in favour of the suggestion that pellagra had long existed in France, and this is to be found in the fact that the peasants used to call the disease 'Mal de Saint Amans,' because there was a statue to St. Amans in Bascons which was always moist, and this moisture was used by the pellagrins as an application to their eruption. According to Roussel, there was, another curious custom followed by the peasants of the Landes, which was to visit a certain statue in which the Christ was represented with red hands. The priest was wont to apply an ointment to these hands, from which the sufferers removed a little of the ointment and applied it to their own inflamed hands, feet, face, etc. From this interesting ceremony the disease was called the 'Mal des Saintes-Mains.' Other popular names, such as 'Mal d'Arouse' and 'Mal de Sainte-Rosa,' tend to show that the common people

were well acquainted with the disorder. Sambon has also informed us that some of Napoleon's soldiers became affected by pellagra during the campaigns in Italy, and certainly cases are recorded in the Hôtel Dieu and in the Hôpital Saint-Louis, while Jourdan published a paper on the disease in 1819.

Brière de Boismont in 1830 drew attention to the fact that pellagra occurred around Paris, and in 1847 Arduisset showed that the 'Maladie de la Teste' of Hameau was pellagra. In 1843 Marchand, after investigations extending from 1836 to 1842, emphasized the fact that pellagra was essentially a disease of *the country*, and not of the town. In 1845 appeared Roussel's account of his researches in France and Spain, to which reference has already been made. In 1865 Billod published his account of asylum pellagra as a pseudo-pellagra—that is to say, a pellagra not due to maize. Sambon and one of us have investigated the pellagra of the Landes, where the disease has greatly diminished, and this appears to be associated with a diminution in the malaria of the same region, which appears to be due in part, at least, to the improved cultivation of the soil, the drainage of swamps, etc., and the stocking of the waters with fish.

Austria.—The disease was first noticed in the Tyrol, where it is still very prevalent, and where it is being ably studied by Merk, Weiss, and others. In 1794 Nicolas and Jambon reported its presence near Vienna.

Hungary and Roumania.—In 1846 Lachaise drew attention to an epidemic of pellagra in Roumania, in 1856 Julius Theodori reported its presence in the Danube provinces, while in 1862 Bouchard pointed out that Sigmund said that the Hungarian pellagra existed solely in the vast plains bordering the Rivers Danube and Theiss—*i.e.*, in the Alföld—which were often covered by inundations. It is interesting to note that these rivers have been regulated, and that the disease is said to have considerably abated there. Be that as it may, there is to our personal knowledge a considerable amount of pellagra in Transylvania, where it has been studied by Höllander, Kaiser and others, and in Roumania, where Babès says there are more than 200,000 cases.

The British Islands.—Though reported as long ago as 1860 by Brown, and again in 1909 by Cranston Low in Scotland, no attention has been seriously paid to the disease until recently, when Sambon and one of us, searching through the British Islands, came across cases in both Scotland and England, and it appears probable that more definite information with regard to the spread of pellagra in these islands will soon be forthcoming. The interest with regard to these cases is that while it is impossible to mathematically exclude all possibility that a patient had never tasted a grain of maize, still it would be straining the maize hypothesis to an unjustifiable extent to try to make it apply to all of these cases. It is interesting to note that pellagra has been found as far north as the Shetland Islands.

Iceland.—We have no information as to the presence of pellagra in Iceland, with the sole exception of a statement by Holland that he had seen cases in Iceland resembling the pellagra which he had observed in Italy.

Africa.—Though first noticed in Egypt by Pruner in 1847 under the term 'leproses,' its recognition therein is principally due to Sandwith, who found it in 1893, and to Keating and Warnock, who have not merely kept that knowledge alive, but have added considerably to the study of the disease. There is, however, still a tendency to consider pellagra a part of the syndrome of agchylostomiasis. More recently pellagra has been recognized in other parts of Africa, and it is possible that it will eventually be found to be widespread in that continent.

America.—Notwithstanding careful inquiries, Wood has failed to discover any evidence of the existence of pellagra among the North American Indians during the eighteenth century, but he has found some evidence of cases in the early years of the nineteenth century. In 1864 Gray and Tyler first definitely reported cases in them, but though at times recognized, the disease was not generally admitted to be present until 1907, when Searcy reported eighty-eight cases, of which fifty-seven were fatal. From that date the works of Babcock, Lavinder, Siler, Roberts, Niles, Wood, and many others, have made the disease well known. In the meanwhile, pellagra has been recognized in the West Indies, Mexico, and other parts of America.

Asia and Oceania.—During recent years pellagra has been recognized in India, the Straits Settlements, the Philippine Islands, and the Sandwich Islands.

Summary.—The above history of pellagra demonstrates the ease with which the disease may be overlooked, even when abundantly present, by well-trained and most competent observers. It also impresses us with the fact that pellagra should be looked for in every country, without any preconceived idea as to its ætiology.

Climatology.—It appears probable that before many years have passed, pellagra will be found to be prevalent all over the world. At present it is known to exist in:—

Europe.—Scotland, England, France, Spain, Portugal, Italy, Austria (including the Tyrol, Bosnia, and Herzegovina), Hungary, Roumania, Russia, Servia, Bulgaria, Greece, and Turkey. Cases have been reported as far north as the Shetland Islands.

Africa.—Algeria, Tunisia, Egypt, Central Africa, Rhodesia, and South Africa.

Asia.—Asia Minor, Persia, India, and the Straits Settlements.

Oceania.—Sandwich Islands.

America.—United States, Mexico, West Indies, Brazil, Columbia, and the Argentine.

The feature of the last few years with regard to the climatology has been the recognition of pellagra as an endemic disease in Scotland, England, and the United States. Mere geographical distribution *per se* is not so important as an epidemiological inquiry

into the actual localities in which the disease occurs. Pellagra is essentially a disease of long duration, and patients are capable of moving far from the place in which the first symptoms appeared, and again the first symptoms often appear in early childhood and reappear after some years' interval, when the patient may be living in quite a different district from that in which he resided during his younger years. It is therefore necessary to prepare and study spot maps showing where the patients were first attacked by the signs and symptoms of the disease, and this is being done at the present time by Sambon, whose results will be awaited with interest. In general it may be stated that inquiries of this nature show that by far the larger number of cases occur in country districts, and not in towns, and that the densest localization is in houses near or alongside certain streams. In fact, study the localization in what country you will, as we have done in France, Spain, Italy, Austria, Hungary, Roumania, and Egypt, it is impossible not to be impressed with the relationship between pellagra and water. Generally the water is moving, and often it is moving rapidly, but this last does not appear to be absolutely necessary. As a rule, the nearer the dwellings are to such water, the greater the number of cases. Cases do, however, occur at a distance from water, but inquiry will often demonstrate that the affected people work near or have been in some way connected with a stream. Cases do occur in towns, but they are relatively few, and careful inquiry will usually elicit a perhaps almost forgotten fact that the disease really began after some visit to the country. Inquiries, however, must be made with care, otherwise wrong impressions may be obtained. One of the most interesting cases which we have met with was that of a young boy who was supposed never to have left a large town, and yet was suffering from pellagra. Careful inquiry elicited the fact that he was in the habit of going for a day or so every year to stay with some relatives who lived in a pellagrous area, and the time of the year chosen for this visit was one in which acute cases occurred. In a locality pellagra usually occurs among the poor, especially among field labourers; but it may also occur among the rich and among persons who habitually work indoors; it is, however, usually not difficult to trace a relationship between the commencement of the disease and a visit or residence in some pellagrous area, and very often, again, a relationship to water.

With regard to seasons, there is a universal consensus of opinion that most attacks appear in the spring or early summer (in Egypt with the Khamseen), after which there is a diminution in the cases, and although attacks may begin in the summer, they are not common. In the autumn, however, there is a definite, though secondary increase in the number of cases, which decrease almost to nil in the winter. These statements are well borne out by the curve of pellagra admissions into the Kasr-el-Ainy Hospital, Cairo, for the years 1906-1911 inclusive. This curve, for which we

are indebted to the kindness of Dr. Keating, was most carefully prepared by Dr. Stiven, and demonstrates the incidence of pellagra as seen in that hospital.

Pellagra may occur in hilly or even mountainous regions, where it is often very common—as, for example, the Tyrol—but can equally occur on the flat alluvial deposit of rivers—as, for example, the delta of the Nile. It would appear that pellagra extends from near the Equator to the Shetland Islands in the north, and to South Africa in the south, and that it encircles the world in an easterly or westerly direction. In our experience the one important factor to be certain that pellagra is endemic in a region is to find it in very young children born in the region from which they have never stirred.

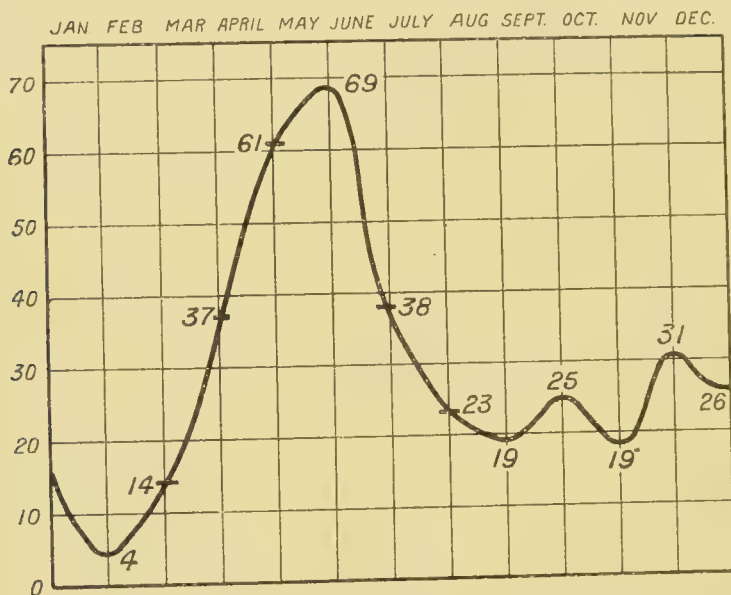


FIG. 504.—SEASONAL VARIATION IN THE ADMISSIONS FOR SIX YEARS OF PELLAGRA CASES INTO THE KASR-EL-AINY HOSPITAL, CAIRO.

(Specially prepared by Keating and Stiven.)

To summarize, pellagra has a world-wide distribution. It occurs in hills and plains. The cases are densest near moving fresh water, and usually begin in spring or autumn.

Ætiology.—The causation of pellagra is at the present time *unknown*, so that we are compelled to consider possibilities instead of facts—a point which we desire the reader to bear in mind while perusing the remarks we are about to offer for his consideration.

The extraordinary theories which we have found still in existence among medical men in the various pellagrous regions which we have visited are—(1) That it is not a disease, but merely dirt, and can be cured by turpentine, soap, and water. This theory of course applies only to the quiescent stage of a very chronic case, and is easily excluded by a little knowledge of the disease.

2. That it is not a disease *per se*, but merely a series of stray symptoms, and that no one has studied the cases from the commencement of the disease to its fatal termination. A study of merely Hameau's writings, excluding all the modern Italian, Roumanian, and American literature on the subject, would, we think, satisfy any unbiassed person that this view is untenable.

3. That it is not a disease *per se*, but merely symptoms of some other well-known disorder. The disease which it is most commonly said to belong to is agchylostomiasis, but most of our readers will themselves have treated many cases of agchylostomiasis without meeting with the symptoms of pellagra, and many will be acquainted with pellagrins who show no signs of agchylostomiasis.

The above can be easily dismissed, and would not have been mentioned if we had not personally met with believers in all of them. With regard to the more likely theories, we must discuss the following :—

- I. The deficiency theory.
- II. The maize theory.
- III. The parasite theory.

I. THE DEFICIENCY THEORY.—On pp. 80-83 we have briefly traced the evolution of foods and the effects of a low protein dietary, as well as the effects of certain nitrogenous complexes on man, and therefore need not recapitulate what we have written on those pages. On page 83 the substance called 'beri-beri vitamine' is discussed, and other references will be found in the chapter on Beri-Beri (p. 1212). Arguing upon the theory of the causation of beri-beri by the absence of a nitrogenous complex, some people have asked whether pellagra may not be due to the lack of some nitrogenous complex in the food; and, further, it has been suggested, or rather hinted, that this might explain, not merely the maize theory of pellagra, but those cases in which no maize has been eaten, but in which the diet has been largely oatmeal or rice. Thus, Nightingale in his paper on Zeism, which appears to us to be pellagra, finds that when steam-milled mealie bread alone was supplied to the prisoners in the Victoria Gaol in Rhodesia the disease broke out, and when this was stopped, and meat, vegetables and rice were substituted, the epidemic ceased; and when hand-milled rapoko (maize) was obtained, the effect, in Nightingale's words, was 'immediate and almost magical,' as the patients began quickly to recover. In this rapoko the husk was not eliminated by the hand-milling. The parallel between this and beri-beri is obvious. In our opinion there is one great flaw in this theory, and this is that pellagra may occur in people provided with an excellent dietary. To this it might be replied that some peculiarity of the individual's body destroyed the necessary vitamine, but this argument is, to our minds, rather strained.

II. THE MAIZE THEORY.—Much of a most convincing nature, if left unanalyzed, can be written in support of the maize theory in general. It can be pointed out that maize (*Zea mais* Linnæus) was originally a native of America, where it has been found in its ancient form of small grains in the graves of the Incas, and that it was introduced

by Columbus or his followers into Europe, where it did not grow well in certain countries, like the British Islands, which, therefore, remained free from the disease until the nineteenth century, when importation of maize took place in greater quantities than heretofore ; but where now there is plenty of maize sold as pop-corn for children, and it may possibly be made into bread, cakes, scones, porridge, etc., while whisky is often partially made from the same grain. On the other hand, it grew well in Spain, Italy, and France, and that its introduction into a country has always been followed by the appearance of pellagra in that country, and quotations supporting maize can be drawn even from the writings of its most vigorous opponent, Sambon, who states:—‘ From authentic documents of the time we learn that “ melica,” or “ fromentone ”’—*i.e.*, maize—‘ was grown in Cremona in the sixteenth century, and . . . in 1556 a Cremona nobleman offered the Duke of Florence ten *staia* of the new cereal.’ When this statement that there is plenty of maize in Cremona in 1556 is compared with the statement that pellagra was well known in Cremona about 1700 to peasants and medical men alike, a Zeist would maintain that, allowing for the disease being so liable to be overlooked, this was a remarkable coincidence. Another epidemiological fact which, taken by itself, would strongly support the maize theory is the well-known fact that in the delta of the Nile there is plenty of pellagra and plenty of maize, but as the Nile is ascended the maize diminishes, millet being used instead, and the incidence of pellagra also diminishes, and at present it is said to be unknown south of Assouan, which statement must be received with caution, as pellagra has so often been reported absent from places where it is now known ; and moreover, pellagra is known to exist in Central Africa. In Columbia pellagra is said to be found only in people who regularly take a drink made from fermented maize. This drink is called ‘ chicha ’ and the malady ‘ chichismo.’ The Zeist states that pellagra is found wherever maize is used, at all events, as an important article of food. As a matter of fact, maize, either growing or imported, is found all over the world, and pellagra would appear also to be found all over the world.

Against the maize theory there are the facts that tend to demonstrate that persons who are alleged never to have tasted maize have suffered from pellagra ; moreover, relapses have occurred after three, five, and even fifteen, years’ residence in gaols or asylums in which maize is not merely not allowed to be used as an article of diet, but care is taken, by inspection and by periodical chemical and microscopical examination, to exclude it. A Zeist would answer to these objections that there was some fallacy, and that nothing short of being the victim yourself would make it reasonably certain that maize was not consumed, and even then it might have been eaten unwittingly ; and, further, that all safeguards designed to prevent food sophistries in institutions break down.

Notwithstanding this, some of the Scotch cases appear to exclude

the possibility of maize being an ætiological factor, and prophylactic work on this basis has been so far a failure, for, although the disease has diminished in certain regions for a time, it has later returned with considerable vigour. With regard to the presence of pellagra in Europe before the introduction of maize, there is no trustworthy evidence, and the possible occurrence of the disease in the celebrated St. Francis of Assisi is only an interesting speculation.

After carefully considering all the facts in support of the maize theory, and comparing them with those against, we have come to the opinion that the maize theory, *in general*, is so far based upon insufficient foundations. It is, however, necessary to lay before the reader the various phases of this theory, which may be classified as follows :—

1. Photodynamic theory.
2. Deficiency.
3. Toxicity.
4. Infectivity.

1. *Photodynamic Theory*.—The special promoter of this theory is Raubitschek, whose work has tended to show that an exclusive maize diet, good or bad, proves deleterious to white mice and guinea-pigs if these animals are exposed to sunlight. He also suggests that an exclusive diet of other cereals, such as rice, millet, or wheat, might, under similar circumstances, produce the same phenomena. This theory maintains that photodynamic substances are introduced by the cereals into the blood, and these, under the influence of sunlight, become toxins, and thus cause inflammation of the skin and other symptoms resembling to some extent pellagra. Moreover, Raubitschek maintains that he has cured mice suffering from fagopyrism by keeping them in darkness, even though the diet was unaltered, and, further, that he has obtained favourable results by excluding light from the skin of pellagrins by means of darkened rooms, red windows, ointments, bandages, etc. Hirschfelder has searched for this fluorescent (photodynamic) substance in the blood serum of five patients suffering from severe pellagra, and found that there was no difference in the fluorescence between their serum and that of healthy persons. Moreover, fagopyrism only occurs in white animals, and not in black; whereas pellagra can occur in the jet black negro, which appears to us to be a strong objection.

2. *Deficiency*.—This theory has been mentioned above with regard to the absence of nitrogenous complexes, and it only remains to add that protein deficiency has also been brought forward as a possible explanation of the action of maize in producing pellagra, but has no sound foundation. Moreover, many people live on rice and potato, which have lower nitrogen ratios than maize.

3. *Toxicity*.—Volpino, Mariani, Bordoni, and Alpago-Novello, have made investigations with regard to inoculating maize extracts into patients, obtaining several general reactions. These

experiments support the latest view, which is really only the revival of an older view, that normal maize in certain individuals may produce pellagra, or, in other words, that there is an individual susceptibility to maize. This subject has been recently carefully investigated by Rondoni in human beings. He procured his maize from the domestic store of certain pellagrins, and having tested his cases for tuberculosis by von Pirquet's test, administered extracts of the maize by intramuscular injections to thirty-three pellagrins and thirty non-pellagrins. He did not find any violent reaction, as described by other writers, but he found that recent cases of pellagra and convalescents reacted more definitely than non-pellagrins, showing slight fever, headache, malaise, excitability, and sleeplessness, and considered that this increased sensibility might be considered as an anaphylactic reaction to some undefined factor in the maize extract. If this anaphylactic theory held, then any person who for a few weeks ate a quantity of maize at any time of the year should develop acute pellagra. The Illinois Commission attempted anaphylactic tests by von Pirquet's method, substituting maize extracts for tuberculin, and the result was negative.

A second theory states that pellagra is due to toxins produced during the spring by the germination of the maize. The objection to this is that some cases start in the autumn.

The third theory asserts that poisons are generated in the bowel from the grain (Neusser) by the aid of the *Bacillus coli communis* (De Giaksa). This latter theory of De Giaksa is supported by experiments, for he produced the symptoms in animals inoculated by the toxin produced by growing the *B. coli communis* in maize media.

Numerous observers have reported poisons in fermenting maize. Thus, Lombroso in 1871 obtained two alkaloids, one like conium and the other like strychnine, but the symptoms produced by these on men and animals were not like those of pellagra. Others have reported tetanic or narcotic poisons, etc.; but, on the other hand, Monselice failed to obtain any such poisons in damaged grain from pellagrous districts.

4. *Infectivity*.—At the present time the popular belief is that the disease is caused by maize damaged by being cultivated and harvested under unfavourable circumstances, and stored in such a damp condition that it becomes mouldy. This has been supported by Hirsch, who points out that a bad maize harvest is followed by an increase in the cases of the disease. The theories as to the substance in the damaged maize which causes the disease are manifold, and may be classed into (a) fungi, (b) bacteria, (c) chemical substances.

(a) *Fungi*.—Monti and Tirelli showed that fungi were commonly found in maize, those most usually met with being *Penicillium glaucum*, *Rhizopus nigricans*, *Mucor racemosus*, and species of *Aspergillus* and *Saccharomyces*. The special fungus, *Sporisorium maidis*, described by Ballardini in 1845 as the cause of the disease, is probably only *P. glaucum* or *M. racemosus*, the former being held

by some writers to be the causative agent, but its effects on men and animals are quite different from pellagra. *Aspergillus fumigatus* and *A. flavescens* (or *A. varians*) have been obtained by Ceni in pure cultures from the lungs, pleura, and pericardium of pellagra cadavers, but the symptoms of the disease are quite different from aspergillosis. Later, Ceni and Fossati have stated that the real cause of the disease is the toxin from the fungi.

(b) *Bacteria*.—Monti and Tirelli showed that many bacilli grow in maize—e.g., *Bacillus solanacearum*, and another like *B. subtilis*—and it has been shown by Paltauf that the so-called *B. maidis* of Majocchi and Cuboni is only the common potato bacillus. Another bacillus, called *B. pellagræ*, is stated by Carrarioli to produce toxins, which, when injected into animals, produce the typical symptoms of the disease.

Tizzoni has described a bacillus found in the cerebro-spinal fluid of pellagra patients and on maize, but this bacillus will be considered at greater length below.

The maize theory is therefore by no means proved, and, in fact, is at present very doubtful.

Parasitic Theory.—The parasitic theory of the origin of pellagra, which is supported by our own observations and by the recent Illinois Commission, who conclude that it is a disease due to infection with some living organism, may be classified into:—

A. *Vegetal parasite.*

Tizzoni's streptobacillus.

B. *Animal parasites.*

Alessandrini's theory, 1910.

Long's theory, 1910.

Perronocito's theory, 1910.

Babès' theory, 1911.

Sambon's theory, 1905.

TIZZONI'S STREPTOBACILLUS.—This is really a part of the maize theory, as Tizzoni has found the bacillus on maize; but it is also a genuine parasitic theory, because he has also found it in the blood, cerebro-spinal fluid, and organs of pellagrins after death. He has found it in both acute and chronic pellagra; it is a non-spore-bearer, and resists temperatures of 80° and 90° C. for one hour. It is easily cultivated, and is believed to be taken into the body with the food, so causing the infection. He claims that this organism is the cause of the disease, but this claim has been refuted by Wood, Raubitschek, the Illinois Pellagra Commission, and others, and therefore cannot be accepted as proven.

ALESSANDRINI'S THEORY.—From epidemiological researches mainly undertaken in Umbria, Alessandrini has come to the conclusion that there is some relationship between pellagra and drinking-water, and he has found a slender nematode worm in the drinking-water of pellagrous places. This worm, which he places in the family Filariidæ, he considers to be the cause of the disease.

He also states that he has found a filarial egg in the skin of pellagrins.

According to Sambon, who has seen Alessandrini's specimens, the thick-shelled egg belongs to one of the nematode worms infecting pigs. Alessandrini's theory has not received much support up to date.

LONG'S THEORY.—This theory suggests that pellagra is merely a phase of amœbic dysentery, but the Illinois Commission, as well as the observations of Sambon and one of us, do not support this theory. Dysenteric-like ulcers can be found in the intestine, but they often do not contain amœbæ.

PERRONCITO'S THEORY.—Perroncito has found bodies in the skin of pellagrins. This is an important statement, and further investigation of these forms is awaited with interest.

BABÈS' THEORY.—Babès states that he has found bodies resembling a Chlamydozoon in the skin.

SAMBON'S THEORY.—This theory is double-barrelled—*i.e.*, it brings forward the proposition that pellagra is a protozoan infection, and that it is spread by the agency of a biting fly.

Parasite.—His reasons for believing that it is a parasitic disease are almost entirely epidemiological. They are:—

1. *The Mononucleosis* present in the blood.

2. *The Presence of Long Intervals of Quiescence, followed by a Relapse.*—Thus, a young pellagrin with marked symptoms who comes to London, and receives most excellent food, without any admixture of maize, suffers from a mild relapse every year in the month of April. In this case there can be no question of maize causing these relapses. Further, we may state that the young person appears to be in the very best of health at the time of writing (January). Similar, but not such convincing, cases have often been reported in gaols and asylums, as mentioned above.

Siler and Nichols in Peoria Asylum filled two cottages with about sixty insane persons in each. One cottage was placed on a generous maize diet and the other on a maize-free diet. At the end of twelve months the maize-eaters had four certain cases and one doubtful case of pellagra, while the maize-free group included five certain and five doubtful cases of pellagra. Probably these were merely relapses of the disease which had occurred long before, but as we have only seen a summary of the Illinois Pellagra Commission Report, we cannot give details.

A point has been made that, while patients in asylums develop acute symptoms, the attendants do not, and this is held to be an argument against the parasitic cause of the disease. But this is just where the experience of Sambon and one of us differs from those of many authorities, because we have seen the disease begin so often in early childhood. The youngest case seen was three months of age, and we have obtained excellent histories of long intervals occurring between one series of acute attacks and the next. We look upon these asylum cases as probably relapses of earlier

attacks, and are therefore not surprised that attendants are not attacked, because probably the agent of the conveyance of the disease is not present in the vicinity of the asylum.

In other asylums, however, it is possible that, if suitable conditions were present, the disease might spread among the inmates.

3. *The Constant and Characteristic Topographical Distribution.*—We have already drawn attention to the topographical distribution, and to the fact that pellagra remains endemic in the same localities for very long periods, and we have also referred to the case of a young boy developing pellagra, though constantly residing in a town, after a brief visit to a pellagrous region. The case of the fishermen of Burano (*vide infra*) may also be quoted; and, finally, attention may be invited to many similar instances quoted by Sambon in his able 'Progress Report on the Investigation of Pellagra,' published in London in 1910. Associated with this, it may be mentioned that of two places almost contiguous one may be affected and the other not.

4. *Its symptoms, course, duration, morbid anatomy, as well as therapy, are similar to those found in parasitic diseases.*

5. *Spirochæte.*—Sambon found a spirochæte in the liquor from a bulla on the hand of a case of acute pellagrous dermatitis in Roumania.

These points will be dealt with under Pathology, and need not be discussed here.

Objections.—The principal objection to Sambon's theory is that up to the present no parasite has been definitely associated with the disease, but this may be at any time rectified in the near future.

The very few experiments performed on white rabbits, by injecting liquor cerebro-spinalis, blood from the erythema, or lymph from bullæ, subdermally or into the spinal canal, have produced no definite results, nor have attempts at intradermal inoculation of these animals with the same fluids been more successful. Neither have the attempts made by the Illinois Commission to transmit the disease to monkeys and guinea-pigs met with more success. Recently, however, Siler in a communication to Sambon has stated that injections of defibrinated blood taken from pellagrins have produced pellagra-like symptoms in monkeys.

In our opinion there is need for much more extended experiments, and we are supported in our belief by the finding of the Illinois Commission that '*Pellagra is a disease due to infection with some living organism.*'

Carrier.—Sambon, however, has not been content to remain with an incomplete theory, but has advanced the view that the disease is conveyed by some biting fly.

His reasons for this theory are:—

1. Pellagra is essentially a *disease of rural districts.*
2. It is in some way related to *moving water.*
3. It has a definite *seasonal incidence*—spring and autumn—which coincides with the appearance of certain flies.

4. It largely affects *field labourers* and new residents in endemic areas.

5. It is *not contagious*, and neither food nor water can account for its peculiar epidemiology.

6. In the endemic centres it *affects all ages*, both sexes (as a rule, females are more frequently attacked than males).

7. An endemic centre is one in which it is usually easy to find *young children* with the symptoms of the disease.

8. In endemic centres *whole families* may show signs of the disease, but outside these only one or two individuals may be affected.

Researches on the Island of Burano in the Venetian Lagoon.—With regard to the theory of a biting fly, he is supported by the inquiry into the pellagra of the Island of Burano made by himself, Major Belli, and one of us, in which it was found that the fishermen and the boys who went fishing with them were attacked by the disease, while the men who worked in the Venice Arsenal were said by the medical authorities to be free from the disease. The women, the girls, and the young children showed no signs of pellagra, with the exception of two or three women, who gave a history of working on the mainland or on other islands adjoining. Many of these young children, girls, and even women, were alleged never to have moved from Burano, with the exception in some instances of an occasional visit to Venice. These points are contrary to the maize theory, as all the inhabitants in Burano eat maize. They are also against a hereditary transmission of the disease, for with pellagrous fathers it would be imagined that the young children should show signs of pellagra, especially as the male influence is said to be preponderant by those who believe in the heredity of pellagra. They are against sexual infection, as the women would acquire the disease; they are against infection by contact, by kissing, etc., because certain men and boys have the disease, but the women and girls are remarkably free; they are against a parasite being carried from the sick to the healthy by house parasites, such as bugs or fleas, or personal parasites, such as lice. The difference between the persons who suffered from pellagra in Burano and those who did not, appeared to be the fact that the former either worked upon other islands or fished on the lagoon and up the streams leading into the lagoon. On the other islands and on *terra-firma* there are plenty of pellagrins, and everywhere there is a history of small black biting flies occurring on quiet days in the early morning or late evening.

Sambon considers that the peculiar feature of the erythema coming in the spring and the autumn must be a correlation with some insect, and considers that the Simuliidæ or some allied family would be the most likely to supply the requisite fly. He chose first the Simuliidæ because its larvæ lived in running water, and because it had two seasons, during which it appeared in swarms and attacked man and animals—viz., spring and autumn, and not in

summer—a fact which we have been able to confirm for one of the regions which we visited.

But there is one point against the Simuliidæ alone being the carriers of pellagra, and this is that they so far have not been found in the delta of the Nile, where pellagra is common; moreover, it is a well-known fact that pellagra diminishes rapidly as one travels up the Nile, and is at present believed to be rare in the neighbourhood of the first cataract, where *Simulium* has been found. Moreover, the Illinois Commission have been able to find but little to support the relationship of pellagra to *Simulium*.

The epidemiological evidence in favour of the spread by a biting fly is, however, very strong, and though *Simulium* may not be found everywhere, it would appear as though it or some allied fly may have a causal influence. The flies which have been found in pellagrous regions where *Simulium* is absent are those belonging to the Ceratopogoninæ, a subfamily of the Chironomidæ. This family has been but little studied, but it seems to us that investigations with a view to determining the relationship, if any, of these flies to the disease should be undertaken at an early date.

They can be found in pellagrous areas where *Simulium* is absent; they behave like the Simuliidæ as to their habits: they bite vigorously, they but seldom enter the houses, and they occur at the seasons when the erythema also appears. There is, however, no evidence directly connecting them with pellagra, and the whole matter requires investigation. More remarks on this subject will, however, be made presently.

Summary.—It appears to us that while at present the causation of pellagra is unknown, the path of greatest promise for investigations is that of a protozoan parasite and a biting fly.

With regard to biting flies we consider that the path of inquiry should be directed to not merely the Simuliidæ, but to the Ceratopogoninæ and allied flies.

Predisposing Causes.—Sex would appear to be a predisposing cause, because the disease is often more prevalent in women than in men, and this would not appear to be so mysterious as it seems at first sight, for if there is anything in Sambon's fly theory, the women ought to be more exposed to the flies than the men, because they wash the clothes in the neighbouring streams. In one place where this incidence was most marked the men worked all day underground in mines, and the women presumably in and about the houses, which were on the banks of a fly-infested stream. Here the children also were much affected. In interesting contradiction is the incidence in the women of Burano, who mostly work indoors and among whom pellagra was very rare; but it was common among the fishermen and boys who fish in the rivers, etc., where biting flies are common.

Age would not appear to have any marked influence, but it would seem as though the disease was very prevalent—in a mild form, at all events—in the early years of life, as the children of

a pellagrous district are often early affected, and some of these attacks are by no means mild, but very severe.

With regard to social position, poverty, lack of sufficient food, and bad hygienic surroundings, it was long considered that these had a marked influence in producing the disease, and though they may help, as they would, with almost any form of disease, still, the American and our own experience show that they have no real connection with pellagra, which can equally well occur among the well-to-do, the well-fed, and those living in circumstances of good hygiene, though more commonly met with among the poor and those ill-fed and living in circumstances of bad hygiene.

There is a definite correlation between the lowering of the general resistance of the body against disease and an acute exacerbation of pellagra. Thus pregnancy, an attack of any illness, but especially enteric fever, may induce either an exacerbation or the first-remembered attack of the disease.

Sunlight *per se* is not a casual factor, as far as we know, in the disease, but it is a powerful predisposing cause in helping to develop the dermatitis.

Pathology.—As the causation of pellagra is entirely unknown, the pathology must be purely speculative.

The *Zeists* see in the phenomena exhibited by the morbid anatomy and histopathology changes which appear to them allied to those found in scurvy, beri-beri, or ergotism, and believe that these changes support the maize theory.

The *Fagopyrists* see in the phenomena found in the skin lesions as well as in those of the rest of the body the signs and symptoms which can be produced in white animals fed on maize and exposed to sunlight, and believe that these changes support the photodynamic theory.

Those who support the *Parasitic Theory* quote the mononucleosis of the blood, the leptomeningitis, the perivascular infiltration, and the primary degeneration of the nerve cells, as well as the long intervals of apparent quiescence, as phenomena similar to those seen in syphilis and sleeping sickness, and therefore believe that these changes support the parasitic theory, which are further supported by recent experimental evidence.

Sambon, however, has extended the parasitic theory by arguing that the erythemata appearing on the hands, feet, face, and neck, and more rarely on the genital organs, in the spring and autumn, are brought about by the combined action of the parasite, whatever it may be, and sunlight in correlation with the habits of some biting fly. From epidemiological studies he suggested that some member or members of the family Simuliidæ (*vide* pp. 684-687) might be the insect in question. He came to this conclusion because of the known habits, life-history, etc., of the Simuliidæ, which were in general agreement with the epidemiology of pellagra. Since then his own studies with one of us have demonstrated that, although pellagra is common in the villages of the delta of the Nile,

so far no Simuliidæ have been found in that area. He points out that negative results are often fallacious, and must not be trusted too far; but he considers that it is possible that other biting flies, the existence of which was scarcely known when he brought forward his theory, may also be of importance in the spread of the disease. With regard to these at present little-known groups of flies, those belonging to the Ceratopogoninæ (*vide* pp. 676 to 680) present themselves for serious consideration, because some of them—*e.g.*, *Leptoconops* Skuse 1889 (used in a broad sense to include *Tersesthes* and *Mycterotypus*)—are known to be found in regions where there is endemic pellagra, and apparently no Simuliidæ. There is, however, nothing to directly connect these flies with the disease, and therefore the whole subject must be considered as purely speculative, but very suggestive in indicating a line of research, especially as so little is known as to the nature, distribution, habits, or pathogenicity of these fierce little flies.

The reason why there is such a confusion of ideas with regard to the pathology is not difficult to understand, as a post-mortem made on a case of acute pellagra within an hour or so of death is of great rarity, and has often been performed under conditions of difficulty as regards cleanliness or preparation. Post-mortems on cases of recurrences or of chronic pellagra have been abundantly performed under the best auspices, but the main features of the disease are often obscured by secondary changes; while even in the acute cases the phenomena are complicated by the presence of malaria, typhoid, tuberculosis, syphilis, etc.

Notwithstanding all these objections, there is some evidence in favour of an early lesion of the central nervous system, especially the posterior portion of the spinal cord in the lower cervical and dorsal regions, as congestion and hæmorrhages have been found there, while in the more chronic condition degeneration of the cells in the posterior cornu, in Clarke's column, and in the spinal ganglia have been seen, as well as the later degeneration of some of their axones. Further, according to Brugia, acute degenerative changes can be seen in the cells of the sympathetic ganglia of the cervical and abdominal regions associated with a diffuse, round-celled infiltration of the interstitial tissue, which eventually leads to sclerosis. Degenerative changes have also been recorded in Purkinje's cells in the cerebellum and in the cortical cerebral cells.

If these accounts are confirmed, they might be found to stand in relationship to the angio-neurotic process in the skin, the congestion of the alimentary canal, the vertigo, and the mental condition.

However, all these points are at present extremely obscure, and are only brought forward here because they appear to require investigation.

The lesions found in post-mortems in cases of acute pellagra, in our opinion, apparently support the theory of some protozoan

parasite, as suggested above, acting upon the central nervous system and the autonomic nervous system.

Morbid Anatomy.—The principal point in studying the morbid anatomy of pellagra is to attempt to distinguish between the appearances truly produced by the disease and the signs caused by complications. As we are unacquainted with either the ætiology or the pathology of pellagra, this is most difficult, and only an attempt, which may possibly be fallacious, can be made.

The Essential Lesions.—Our experience would indicate that in *acute cases* the body need not be emaciated, and that no trace of the erythema may be visible, but that the lines of demarcation can, as a rule, be easily seen on the arms, legs, and neck, as well as thickened or pigmented areas of the epidermis, bullæ, etc.

In these cases there may be fluid, and at times hæmorrhages under the cerebral dura mater, oedema and thickening of the pia-arachnoid, which, however, is not adherent to the cortex. The cerebro-spinal fluid is usually, but not always, increased in amount. In the cord there may be subdural hæmorrhages, sometimes extensive, especially in the region of the lower cervical and upper dorsal cords, and there may be congestion of that area of the cord; otherwise the naked-eye appearances of brain, spinal cord, and nerves, may be normal.

Sometimes the alimentary canal is almost normal, but this is rare, and usually there is more or less congestion and at times even ulceration of the mucosa of the small intestine, and the valves of Kekring may show small hæmorrhages. The ileum may be thinned, and Peyer's patches may be diminished in number and atrophied (these lesions are, of course, found in many diseases). The large bowel may be thickened, congested, and ulcerated, but the ulcers need not contain amœbæ. Pancreas, liver, and kidneys may show signs of cirrhosis (the above intestinal lesions are often associated with polyfibrosis). The mesenteric glands may be enlarged and congested. The spleen may or may not be slightly enlarged, and the suprarenal capsules may be larger than normal, and the cortex may be black, while the medulla is whitish in colour; but, on the other hand, the capsules may appear to be perfectly normal. In *chronic cases* the body is often emaciated and anæmic, the skin rough, hypertrophied in places and atrophied in others, the changes being marked on the face, neck, arms, hands, legs, and feet. The subcutaneous fat is diminished. The muscles, heart, liver, spleen, and kidneys, are all atrophied; the stomach is usually normal, but the intestines may be atrophied, as described above, and the rectum may be ulcerated. The nervous system shows a diffuse leptomeningitis, with marked thickening in places; the frontal convolutions may be atrophied in some cases and the motor convolutions in others. The bloodvessels may show calcareous degeneration, and there may be sclerosis of the postero-lateral and postero-median columns of the cord, and in the dorsal region there may be also lateral sclerosis. The posterior nerve-roots may be implicated, and the intervertebral foramina may be narrowed by a firm cartilaginous-like deposit.

The Complicatory Lesions.—Very often in pellagra post-mortems the signs of secondary septicæmia (bacillary or streptococcal), of agchylostomiasis, of malaria, of enteric fever, of bacillary dysentery, of amœbic dysentery, and of tuberculosis, may be seen, and complicate the pathological picture. In performing post-mortems, it is necessary to attempt to unravel the true lesions from those caused by complications. The so-called characteristic intestinal lesions described above are met with in many post-mortems in which there is no sign of pellagra.

Histopathology.—With regard to the autonomic nervous system, the nerve cells of the sympathetic ganglia of the neck and abdomen are described by Brugia as becoming swollen, and showing chromatolysis, with changes in the nucleus and nucleolus in acute cases. Associated with this there is

infiltration of the interstitial tissue and proliferation of the endothelial cells of the capillaries and circumscribed hæmorrhages.

With regard to the chronic cases, there is atrophy and reduction in number of the nerve cells and sclerosis of the ganglion. The atrophied cells may be pigmented, but this is by no means constant.

In the spinal cord our own observations, as well as those of others, show that the posterior area is congested, and hæmorrhages are often present. Degeneration has been met with in the cells of the spinal ganglia, in those of the posterior cornu, and in those of Clarke's column. In these cells the Nissl bodies and the fibrils disappear, while the nucleus is placed excentrically, and often peripherally. Degenerated nerve fibres have been found in the posterior roots, in Lissauer's tract, in Burdach's column, and in Goll's column, and less commonly in the lateral columns. Some of the cells of the anterior cornu also degenerate. Degenerated nerve fibres may also be seen in the peripheral nerves.

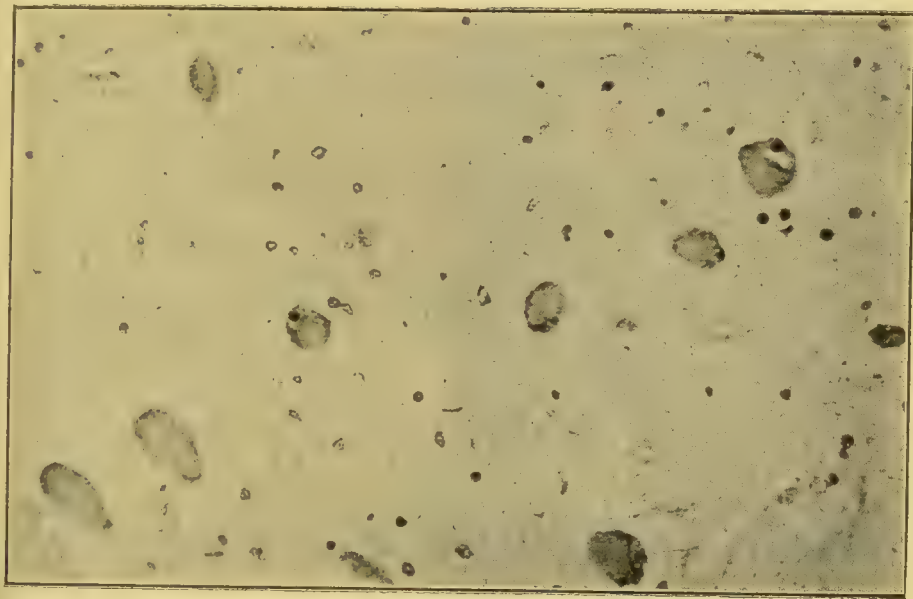


FIG. 505.—CELLS OF CLARKE'S COLUMN IN A CASE OF ACUTE PELLAGRA.
($\times 250$). (After Sambon and Chalmers.)

In the brain the cortical cells have been found to be degenerated, swollen, and even disintegrated; while Purkinje's cells in the cerebellum are also said to degenerate. Mott has shown that while the fibrils surrounding these cells may be intact, those passing through the cells disappear. A perivascular infiltration around the vessels of the brain has been described by some authors, but was not present in our specimens nor in those recently described by Mott. There is also an increase in the neuroglia tissue in our specimens, but there is no cellular infiltration into grey or white matter, or any sign of acute inflammation.

The cerebro-spinal fluid is usually present in considerable quantity, and exhibits a medium amount of tension. It is alkaline, specific gravity varying from about 1004 to 1007; it generally gives reactions indicating the presence of some protein and butyric acid, and it generally reduces copper sulphate. The number of cells per cubic millimetre varies, but is about thirty-five, according to Hindman, whose differential count is: Small lymphocytes, 36.3 per cent.; polymorphonuclears, 18.6 per cent.; large mononuclears, 19.2 per cent.; plasma cells, 7 per cent.; lymphocytes, 5.1 per cent. The liquor is sterile, and injections into rabbits have been negative.

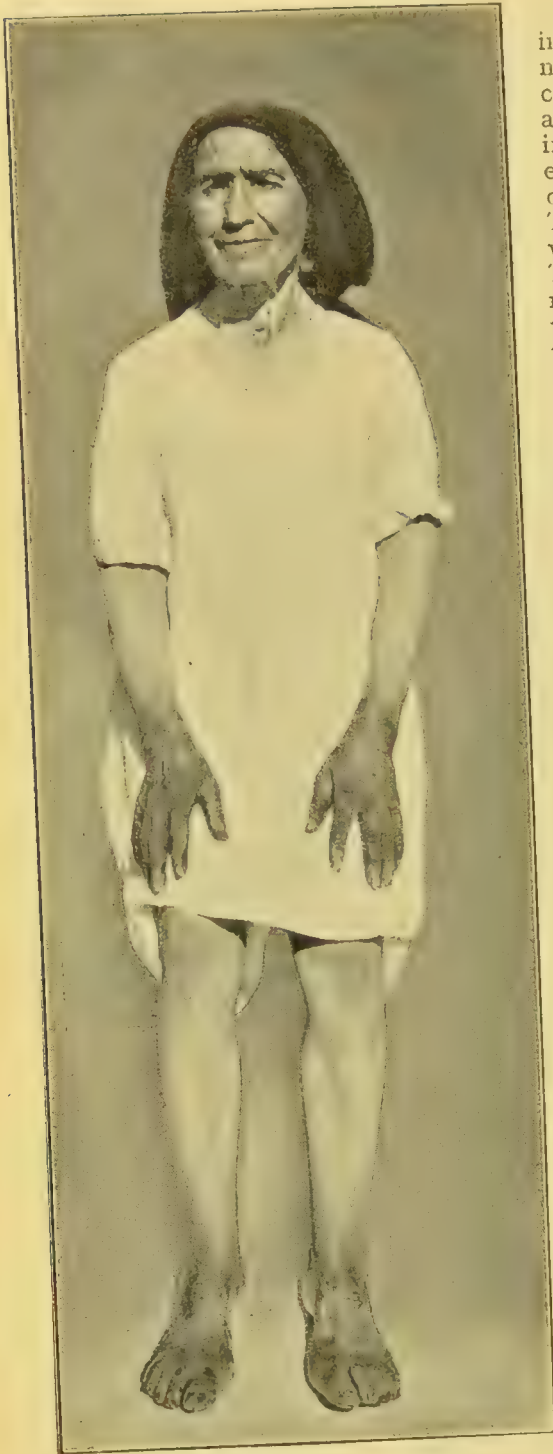


FIG. 506.—ACUTE EXACERBATION OF PELLAGRA.

Note the marked erythema on the hands and feet, and the less evident erythema on the neck and face.

(From a photograph by Terni.)

The skin has been recently re-investigated by the Illinois Commission, who find that the changes can be described as due to an angio-neurotic process. There is infiltration of the true skin, and especially the pars papillaris, and œdema of the connective tissue. The rete Malpighii is infiltrated with cells, but otherwise normal. The stratum granulosum is normal, but the stratum corneum is thickened, and shows parakeratosis.

In the blood there is a reduction in the numbers of the red cells, which usually appear quite normal. There is mononucleosis, and Low has described granules in the mononuclear leucocytes, which, however, he has also found in other diseases. Fatty degeneration and cloudy swelling have been recorded in the liver, but no constant changes have so far been found in the spleen.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period of pellagra is unknown, but it cannot be of long duration, as we have known it to occur in a child three months of age, and, as we have already advanced arguments against heredity, this case is in favour of a short incubation period. We have also met with a case in which the skin symptoms are said to have appeared about two weeks after return from a visit to a pellagrous area in a person who was said to have always lived in a non-pellagrous area. We are always very sceptical of these histories, and should not have mentioned it if it had not curiously coincided with the case recorded by Sambon, where he states that a child born in an Italian gaol was nursed by its own mother in gaol until five months old, and then sent to some peasants

living in a pellagrous area, when it developed pellagra in two weeks.

The description of a typical case is something of this nature :— A person, male or female, young or old, in apparently excellent health or in bad health, living or working in the sunshine of a spring day, notices that a sunburn appears on the backs of his hands, and perhaps the dorsa of his feet, if bare, and more rarely, also, on his face or neck. He thinks little of it, though the inflamed area burns, and may even blister. Perhaps he has a sore mouth, and perhaps he has a little diarrhœa or constipation. Perhaps he feels a little giddy in the morning, and perhaps he is easily tired. In a week or so the redness dies down, and the affected area is seen to be pigmented, and perhaps to have the skin thickened in places. In the course of a few days, or a week or so, these thickened areas desquamate, and the skin underneath may be found to be normal, or may be found to be slightly atrophic, and to appear whiter than the surrounding pigmented area.

The patient thinks no more of his troubles, the autumn comes, and he feels well, and during the winter there is no alteration in his good health. Perhaps the next spring may pass without a recurrence, and perhaps even several springs may elapse before the patient, who all this time may consider himself to be in excellent health, has a return of his symptoms. But though the interval may be long or short, surely this relapse will occur, and often it will be in a severer form than it was at first. It will usually recur in the spring, but it may take place in the autumn, or, much more rarely in our experience, in the summer.

This time the symptoms may be mild, as before, but, on the other hand, they may be severe; the erythema appears with severe burning sensations, and a real dermatitis, with bulla formation, may develop.

The tongue, lips, mucosa of the mouth and palate, may become inflamed, and show the presence of vesicles and ulcers. The parotid gland may enlarge (this is common in Egypt, but rare in other countries), the saliva may be so increased in amount that it pours from the mouth. There may be signs of dyspepsia, pains in the abdomen, and diarrhœa, or even dysentery may develop. The vertigo already mentioned may become quite distressing to the patient, who, upon quickly rising from a sitting or a lying posture, may even fall to the ground. The muscular power may now be diminished, and the patient may no longer be able to do his work; tremblings in various parts of the body, but more especially in the head and arms, may be noticed, and the legs seem scarcely able to support the victim, who now shows decided melancholic symptoms, avoiding his fellows, becoming highly emotional, and perhaps threatening, or actually committing, suicide, often by drowning in water.

Pains are felt in various parts of the body, but especially in the head, the stomach, and the feet. A most unpleasant symptom

is the burning sensation complained of by the patient after retiring to bed at night. So severe is this that patients have been known to strip off all their clothes and lie naked on their beds. By this time the unfortunate victim will have learnt by bitter experience that sunlight is deleterious to his condition, and will try to avoid it as much as possible.

Again, as winter approaches, the symptoms will diminish and die away, and the patient will feel better; but this time the skin does not recover itself, but remains thickened and pigmented in places, and thinned, whitened, and atrophic in other places.



FIG. 507.—HAND IN CHRONIC PELLAGRA.
(From a photograph by Sambon and Chalmers.)

Again, there may be only an interval till the next spring or autumn, or the succeeding spring, or there may be a longer interval, and again mild or severe symptoms may appear.

With repeated attacks the skin changes become marked, the mind becomes often permanently affected, and melancholic or maniacal symptoms are often observed.

Pain is often complained of in the back, and tenderness is found on pressure over the spinal nerves on either side of the dorsal or lumbar portions of the vertebral column. Muscular weakness is noted, especially in the legs. The knee-jerk is at first exaggerated, but later is diminished, and finally lost. Ankle-clonus and wrist-clonus are rare, and only occur when the knee-jerk is exaggerated, when there is tenderness on both sides of the dorsal and lumbar

cord, and when abdominal and epigastric reflexes are also increased.

There is no special gait, but there is a tendency to fall backwards or forwards, and hence, though the patient walks with the legs well apart, in a very bad case he can only take a few steps without falling down. There may be tremors in the legs and tongue. The bladder and rectum are not as a rule affected until the end, but there are exceptions to this, and contraction of the limbs does not take place till bedridden ; but moderate rigidity of the muscles of

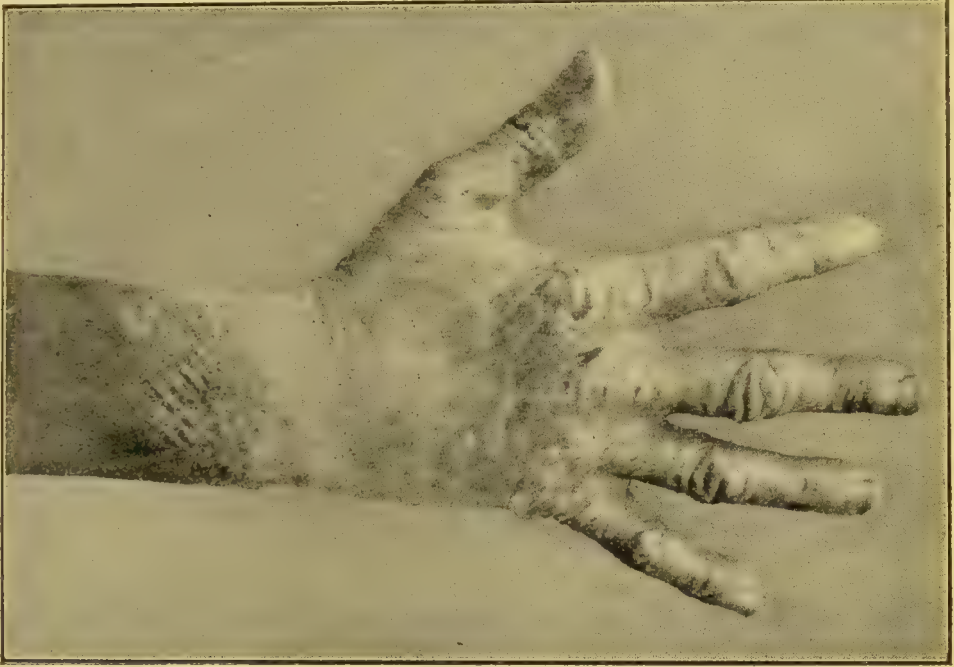


FIG. 508.—HAND IN CHRONIC PELLAGRA.

Note the thickening of the epidermis and the line of demarcation. The hands in both figures had been vigorously scrubbed by the patient to try to remove the scabs.

(From a photograph by Sambon and Chalmers.)

the arms and legs, associated with stiff and at times irregular spasmodic movements, has been recorded as occurring early in rare acute cases. A sudden rigidity of the body associated with retraction of the head has also been observed. These attacks last only a short time, but are recurrent. Trophic lesions, such as bedsores, are of rare occurrence. Hyperæsthesia may occur in different parts of the body, and pains (even of a lightning nature) may exist in the head and back, and be associated with cramps.

The facies of the pellagra patient is one of anxiety and mental worry. He cannot sleep, and there is often great mental depression and discontent, but some are excitable and irritable, while others

are stupid and morose. He loses his memory, and has vague feelings of pressure, weight, or pulsation about his head. From this he proceeds to refusal of food and suicidal tendencies, with delusions of sorcery and persecution, and has a tendency to suicide by drowning. Melancholia may now become confirmed, and may eventually pass into dementia.

Various paralyses develop, such as spastic paralysis, ptosis, hemianopsia, diplopia, amblyopia, and mydriasis. The extremities and bladder now become paralyzed, and the demented, paralyzed, rapidly emaciating patient, suffering from bad sweats, profuse diarrhoea, and sometimes dropsy, obtains a relief from his sufferings in death, the disease having usually lasted from ten to fifteen years.

Such is a general account of this rather protean disease, and we note that there is an onset in the spring, or more rarely in the autumn or summer, an intermission in the winter, and a relapse in the next or some following spring or autumn.

Very rarely a case of pellagra may be acute, lasting only a few months.

Children.—The disease is so common among young children in bad pellagrous districts, and so often can one, by careful inquiry, elicit curious facts that tend to show that pellagra, though occurring in the person in question in adult life, probably really began in infancy, that we are inclined to believe that the cases in young children are often overlooked, and we are supported in this belief by the mildness of the symptoms which we have observed in some children, which indicate merely a sunburn on the face, hands, arms, feet, legs, and perhaps the neck, associated with a little diarrhoea or constipation. The child recovers, the skin becomes normal, the attack is forgotten, and does not return until adult life, when the patient may have grown up and been living for years in a town, when a typical relapse appears—a new case—a town case, it would be classified by many authors—but a careful inquiry into the history of the case may elicit the fact from intelligent people that the first attack began in childhood, when it may be explained by the friends as being in reality a sequela of Jenner's vaccination.

Inquiry may often elicit the fact that when this occurred the patient, at that time a child, was living in the country, and often in close proximity to a stream—a fact which may be confirmed by a visit to the locality.

Another curious point with regard to some of these early cases is the history given by the friends of the development of some extraordinary habit of dietary, to the influence of which the disease is often assigned. These extraordinary cravings appear to us to be due to the dyspepsia (hypochlorhydria) so commonly met with in pellagrins.

We have rather insisted upon the occurrence of pellagra in young children because we are of the opinion that it is often overlooked.

Skin Eruption.—The skin eruption is usually limited to the regions exposed, being at first delineated in a most exact manner

by the clothing; but in very rare cases it may be universal, and it is said sometimes to appear limited, as though by clothing, in naked gipsy children. It appears on the dorsum of the forearms, and on the hands and feet, only reaching the flexor aspect after several attacks. The most common sites are the hands and forearms, elbows, feet, legs and knees, the upper part of the chest, the shoulders, neck, and face. More rarely it appears on the genital organs and around the anus in both sexes. Sandwith points out that in Egyptian peasants the ungual phalanx of the hand is seldom affected, due to the fact that when the hoe is grasped it is protected against the sun's rays. The nails and hair are not affected, but rarely there is a dry, scaly condition of the palms of the hands.

The skin eruption may show the following conditions:—(1) Congestion; (2) inflammation; (3) thickening and pigmentation; (4) atrophic thinning.

The affected part turns a bright, dark, or livid red colour, which at first disappears on pressure, and is generally delineated by a very clearly raised limiting line. Associated with this erythema there is a burning sensation, but usually no pain. In course of time the part becomes swollen and tense, and bullæ may form. After lasting a variable period of days or weeks, the eruption gradually subsides, leaving the skin rough, pigmented, and thickened, and thus earning the names of 'pellagra' and 'qushuf.'

This erythema disappears in the winter, but reappears the next spring with increased virulence, and in due course develops into a dermatitis, which produces an exfoliation of the epidermis in grey or brown flakes. Every attack leaves the affected area a little more pigmented, a little more thickened, and a little less elastic.

After lasting about four or five years the skin begins to atrophy, and becomes wrinkled and inelastic. This atrophy is most marked on the back, hands, and feet. Special terms have been given to the eruption when in certain areas—*e.g.*, the 'glove,' the 'boot,' Casall's 'necklace,' or 'cravat,' and the 'mask.'

Roberts has introduced the rather useful term 'dermotagra' for the dry, scaly thickened skin seen over the olecranon process, over the knees, and more rarely on the palms of the hands. Over the elbow and knee the skin is rough, thickened, and wrinkled; on the palms of the hands it is merely rough and thickened.

Another interesting dermatological feature of pellagra is the frequency of nasal or facial seborrhœa, which is to be especially noted in the nose where the sebaceous follicles are very prominent and filled with plugs of sebaceous material.

The Mouth.—The tongue is generally coated with a whitish fur during the onset of an attack, but later it becomes abnormally clean—'*Sandwith's bald tongue*'—red, swollen, and sometimes ulcerated near the tip. It may also become fissured, but in mild cases it recovers as soon as the attack is over.

During attacks the gums may become spongy, and may bleed,

and ulceration may appear, both here and on the palate, as well as on the pillars of the fauces. There may be pharyngitis, and more rarely œsophagitis.

The Blood.—The red cells are usually reduced in number, and the hæmoglobin proportionally reduced. Usually the form of the red cells is normal, but microcytes, and more rarely megalocytes, may be found. There is usually only a slight leucocytosis in uncomplicated cases, but there is in our experience generally a distinct mononucleosis. When the polymorphonuclear cells are increased, it would appear to always indicate a complication.

Circulatory Organs.—The blood-pressure is usually low, and the heart-rate may be markedly increased. Vasomotor changes can be observed in the coldness of the extremities, the bluish congestion of the feet and hands, the goose skin, and the neuromyolytic dilatation of the vessels of the face often giving rise to an appearance seen in alcoholics.

Respiratory Organs, etc.—The respiratory organs are not affected in pellagra unless there is some complication, but there may be an exudation of fluid into the pleural cavities in the late stages of the disease, as well as œdema of the bases of the lungs.

Urinary Organs.—Usually the urine is normal, or nearly so, and any great change must be considered to be a complication.

Sexual Organs.—Sexual power is usually diminished, especially in the later stages. Amenorrhœa, metrorrhagia, and inflammatory conditions of the vagina, uterus, ovaries, etc., are described, but must be considered as complications.

Special Senses.—The eyes suffer most in pellagra, but the changes—e.g., weakness of vision, photophobia, etc.—are not dependent upon the disease *per se*, but upon the weakness which it produces. The patients often complain of a saltish taste in the mouth.

Fever.—As a rule the temperature is but little altered from normal in pellagra, but it may be raised at intervals as high as 101° to 102° F. (Wood) for two to three days at a time, but it may also be subnormal in other cases.

Complications.—As may be imagined, in a disease of such long duration as pellagra, the complications are numerous, and include malaria, tuberculosis, agchylostomiasis, bilharziosis, eye affections, and many skin diseases, including itch.

The most interesting complication is enteric fever, which may give rise to the form often called 'typho-pellagra,' which is apparently simply a pellagrin with an infection with one or more of the organisms causing enteric fever.

Terminal infections with various micro-organisms have been noted, and complicate the post-mortem findings. Thus, Bon records the occurrence of *Streptococcus pyogenes* in the blood as found by examination immediately after death.

Diagnosis.—Everywhere since pellagra was first recognized there has been great difficulty in its diagnosis, and it would appear necessary to consider not merely the signs exhibited by the patient,

but the frame of mind in the observer in attempting to write upon this subject.

For the diagnosis of pellagra two conditions are necessary in the observer. The first is that he must suspect its presence, and be on the outlook for it in any and every country; and the second is that he must not be unduly swayed by any ætiological theory, and must be prepared to make a diagnosis of pellagra in a person of any age, any race, any social condition, living in any place, whether tropical, temperate, or frigid; resident in a town or in the country; and he must do this without consideration of the dietary or the surroundings, with perhaps the sole exception of being more intently awake to the possible occurrence of the disease in lunatic asylums.

As there are at present no microscopical, bacteriological, parasitological, hæmatological, or chemical reactions which can be said to be diagnostic of the disease, with, perhaps, the sole exception of the pellagra-like symptoms produced by the recent American Commission, by injecting defibrinated blood into monkeys, and as these animal injections are not within the range of practical politics for purposes of diagnosis, we must trust entirely to clinical manifestations.

The cardinal signs of the disease may be summarized into—(1) *the cutaneous signs*, (2) *the gastro-intestinal signs*, and (3) *the nervous signs*.

In order to make a definite diagnosis, there must be either the presence or a definite history of the cutaneous signs of pellagra associated with symptoms belonging to one of the other groups.

1. *Cutaneous Signs*.—When a person shows more or less symmetrical erythema, dermatitis, pigmentation, or a condition more or less resembling chronic dry eczema on either the backs of the hands, the dorsa of the feet, the face, the back and sides of the neck, or the front of the chest, especially if these eruptions are limited by a more or less definite elevated margin to the areas habitually exposed to light, suspicion should at once be aroused that the disease is pellagra. If a history can be obtained that this eruption appeared for the first time in spring or autumn, and more especially if a history of recurring attacks can be obtained, the suspicion becomes almost a certainty. If to these signs there are added the fact that the skin symptoms become worse on exposure to the sun, or that there are at the same time disturbances of the alimentary canal or of the nervous system, and especially if there is the presence or the history of *vertigo*, then the diagnosis is certain.

2. *Gastro-Intestinal Signs*.—Gastro-intestinal symptoms are usually present, but they may be extremely mild, and they may be absent. Those most commonly met with during exacerbations are—Salivation, stomatitis, dyspepsia due to hypochlorhydria, diarrhœa, dysenteric symptoms alternating with constipation, or simply constipation appearing or recurring in the spring or autumn.

A diagnosis cannot be made by these symptoms alone, which must be considered in conjunction with the cutaneous in order to arrive at a conclusion. If no cutaneous symptoms are visible, it is justifiable to place the patient in strong sunlight in order to see whether the dermatitis will appear.

3. *Nervous Symptoms*.—Of all the nervous symptoms early exhibited, the vertigo is the most common, and should be carefully inquired for, as the patient often does not associate slight morning vertigo with the disease, and will therefore omit to mention the fact.

Other important symptoms are the melancholia, the myasthenia, the tremblings, and often curious delusions, and the irritable condition of the temper, recurring in the spring or autumn; but these must be associated with evidence of skin lesions before a diagnosis can be made.

It will thus be observed that, while the diagnosis may be a matter of extreme simplicity in a typical case, it may also be one of great difficulty in atypical cases. Perhaps the greatest difficulty is met with in lunatics and young children.

1. *Lunatics*.—In these cases the patient has been admitted into the asylum suffering from one of the well-known forms of mental disease, but most probably from melancholia or dementia, more rarely from attacks of mania. It may be noted that at times he suffers from diarrhœa or dysentery, which is often assigned to what used to be called 'lunatic asylum diarrhœa' or 'dysentery.' It may also be noted that at times he spits considerably, which simply means that he has an excess of saliva; but, much more importantly, it is noticed that he suffers from *chronic eczema* on the back of his hands, from *angio-neurotic œdema* so called, both of which are often common in lunatics. Such cases require careful investigation, not with a view of making a diagnosis of pellagra, but with a view of excluding, if possible, the diagnosis that the case is really pellagra.

2. *Young Children*.—In young children the disease is very apt to be overlooked, and the red eruption on the face and hands, etc., followed by pigmentation, is generally attributed to sunburn or to eczema, while the alimentary disturbance is assigned to infantile gastro-intestinal derangements, and not connected with the skin lesions. A careful inquiry will show whether these symptoms have or have not a seasonal incidence, and in any case they should arouse suspicion of pellagra, which should only be eliminated after careful inquiry.

Differential Diagnosis.—As the symptoms are divisible into three groups, so the discussion of the differential diagnosis is equally capable of arrangement under the same three headings.

SKIN DISEASES.—The skin diseases which are to be differentiated from pellagra are classifiable into those resembling the acute cutaneous symptoms and those resembling the chronic cutaneous appearances.

1. *Resembling the Acute Dermatitis*.—Under this heading comes, first of all, *erythema solare*, from which pellagra may be distinguished

by the inflammation of the mouth, by the presence of the alimentary canal symptoms, and by the vertigo, as well as by the fact that the pellagrous eruption at times appears on parts not usually exposed to the sun, and by the fact that the lesions in sunburn are usually very superficial.

The same diagnostic points will help to differentiate pellagrous dermatitis from *erythema* or eczema due to winds, salt air, etc.

The erythema on the face, hands, arms, etc., in cases of *dermatitis venenata* may simulate pellagra closely. The pellagrous condition may be differentiated by the presence of gastro-intestinal nervous symptoms, by the less general extension of the eruption, by the less involvement of the eyelids, and by the more acute course.

From *acarine dermatitis* pellagra may be distinguished by the localization of the eruption, which does not appear on the trunk, by the absence of the vesiculo-papules and pustules, and by the absence of itching.

From *alcoholic erythemata* it may be recognized by the history of the attack and by the presence of the typical eruption on the hands and feet.

Some authorities have, however, described, under the term *pseudo-pellagra*, of alcoholic origin, an erythematous eruption on the hands associated with nervous symptoms which is indistinguishable from true pellagra, being, in fact, the same disease.

From *angioneurotic œdema* it may be differentiated by the absence of marked œdema and the presence of more inflammation in the skin, as well as by the more regular distribution of the eruption, and by the limiting line.

2. *Resembling the Chronic Dermatitis*.—From *chronic eczema* occurring in mentally sound persons or in lunatics pellagra is recognized by the typical distribution of the eruption, by the line of demarcation, and by the marked pigmentation, when present, and absence of pruritus. From *chronic syphilides* by the distribution of the eruption, and by the absence of any reaction to mercury. Here mention may again be made of the *dermotagra* on the palms of the hands, over the olecranon, and about the knee, in chronic cases of pellagra, which is apt to be overlooked, or to be considered as points in favour of a diagnosis of eczema rather than of pellagra.

From biotripsis (*vide* p. 1639), which it closely resembles, pellagra is differentiated by the limitation of the eruption to the areas so often mentioned above, by the presence of the line of demarcation. In biotripsis the skin is dry and wrinkled, and may be thickened in places with dark-coloured patches, alternating with shining, smooth, inelastic, atrophic areas; but this condition is by no means limited to the hands or feet, but spreads up the arms and legs, and is not visible on the face.

It is hardly possible that *Kaposi's disease* (*xerodermia pigmentosa*) could be mistaken for pellagra, nor is *ichthyosis* likely to be confounded with it.

The wrinkled skin of the *washerwoman's* fingers is hardly likely to be confused with the chronic thickening found in pellagra, though this disease is often found in women who wash clothes, and who explain their own dermal condition in this way.

GASTRO-INTESTINAL DISEASES.—Of all the gastro-intestinal diseases, *sprue* is the only one which in any way resembles pellagra, which can be readily distinguished therefrom by the presence of the skin eruption. It must, however, be remembered that the *psilosis linguæ pigmentosæ* of West Indian writers is really pellagra.

Attacks of *diarrhœa* or *dysenteric-like attacks* can only be recognized as belonging to the syndrome of pellagra if the dermal signs are present at the same time, or if they can be produced by exposure to the sun, or if there is a very definite history of their previous occurrence; unless, indeed, they are associated with marked ptyalism or bilateral swelling of the parotid glands, or some other symptom tending to indicate that pellagra was the cause. The special cases in which diarrhœa and dysentery require careful diagnosis are those in which they occur in lunatics.

TYPHO-PELLAGRA.—In this disease the dermal signs of pellagra are sufficiently evident to enable its diagnosis to be made, as a rule, without difficulty, while the diagnosis of typhoid fever can be made by the methods already described on pp. 1071-1076.

NERVOUS DISEASES.—Melancholia, dementia, mania, etc., can only be diagnosed as pellagrous when associated with its skin lesions; but here care must be taken not to mistake the dermal signs of pellagra for chronic eczema, etc.; but this point, having been already discussed above, need not again be argued.

Prognosis.—This would appear to be good in early cases, in mild cases, and even in moderately severe cases, if the patient can be removed from the pellagrous area and placed in good condition of food and hygiene in a non-pellagrous area.

But predictions as to a cure must be guarded, and it must be remembered that cases have relapsed after two, five, and even fifteen, years' intervals.

In severe cases the prognosis must be guarded, and the low blood-pressure remembered, as well as the possibility of sudden death from exertion after lying down.

Cases of typho-pellagra have a high mortality, and here the prognosis is obviously bad.

Complication with agchylostomiasis, tuberculosis, etc., also render the prognosis more unfavourable, as does continued residence in a pellagrous area.

Treatment.—There can be no doubt that the essential basis of the treatment of pellagra is to remove the patient from the pellagrous area in which he has been living to a non-pellagrous area; and, secondly, to give a good and liberal diet, preferably without any admixture of maize, although Devoto has shown that good maize not merely does no harm to pellagrins, but is very suitable for some of them, as it is their usual diet. If this is done, most early

cases quickly improve, and apparently are cured ; but, unfortunately, this is not so, because, even if they remain under these excellent conditions, sooner or later a recrudescence occurs. These recrudescences may be mild, but at any time they may become severe, even when maize is excluded from the dietary.

Arsenic.—This being so, it is obvious that some medicinal treatment is necessary, in addition to change of locality and diet, and apparently the best remedy is arsenic in some form. Of all forms of the drug, that most commonly in use, and also much vaunted, is 'atoxyl,' which is administered by intramuscular injection of 3 grains per diem.

Other methods of giving arsenic are salvarsan, neosalvarsan, and soamin, details of the administration of which can be found on pp. 1191-1193.

Other methods are the cacodylate of sodium, administered in 3-grain doses by intramuscular injection every third day until three doses have been given, and then every second day until three more doses have been administered, and then increasing to 5-grain doses every second day until the symptoms have improved.

Associated with these injections, it is as well to give liquor arsenicalis in small doses internally, and to continue this interruptedly for some three months after the symptoms have disappeared. In addition, it is as well to repeat the liquor arsenicalis some weeks before the advent of spring, and to continue it intermittently into the summer for a few years after an attack, in order to attempt to guard against the almost inevitable relapse.

Radio-Active Serum.—Nicolaidi has devised an artificial organo-mineralized radio-active serum from horse serum, together with all the organic and mineral salts of the blood, in a solution saturated with carbon dioxide gas, which was then rendered radio-active. This serum is administered by injections until twenty to twenty-five are given, when, according to the author, supported by several eminent authorities, most remarkable improvement in the cases resulted.

Symptomatic Treatment.—The patients must be protected from the sunlight by clothing, veils, hats, gloves, etc., and the dermatitis must be treated by emollient lotions, such as calamine, soothing and dark ointments, such as ichthyol in lanoline.

The indigestion should be treated by a mixture containing dilute hydrochloric acid and infusion of gentian.

The diarrhoea and dysentery should be treated as indicated on p. 1390 for bacillary, or on page 1370 for anæbic, dysentery.

With regard to the nervous symptoms, the irritation on retiring to bed and the sleeplessness should be remembered, and combated with cool bathing, and, when necessary, by doses of bromides, which, however, are apt to increase the depression.

The vertigo should be borne in mind, and precautions taken to prevent accidents being caused by it.

The mental condition should be cheered by pleasant surroundings, and in severe cases a watch taken to prevent the suicidal tendencies taking action.

Diet.—The diet must vary with the condition of the digestion and the bowels, and during attacks of dysentery or diarrhœa that laid down on p. 1391 should be adopted.

Complications.—Search should be made for signs of agchylostomiasis, ascariasis, etc., tuberculosis, malaria, etc., and these should receive their appropriate treatment.

Typho-Pellagra.—This serious complication, which is really only an attack of enteric fever in a pellagrin in whom the acute symptoms at once become aggravated, must be treated by a combination of the treatments laid down for enteric fever on p. 1078, and pellagra, as above.

Prophylaxis.—As the ætiology of pellagra is unknown, it is obvious that remarks as to prophylaxis must be more or less speculative. It does not appear to be directly contagious, and therefore isolation, quarantine, etc., appear to be useless. In accordance with the present ætiological views, it is advisable to attempt to avoid being bitten by flies in the early morning or late evening in the endemic areas by the use of protective veils, fly-brushes, etc. Protection against the sun, as described above, is also of great importance.

It is obvious that the consumption of diseased or damaged maize must be injurious, and the action taken by the Italian Government to prevent the sale of bad maize is not merely highly commendable, but must be most beneficial to the community at large.

Further, the excellent attempt to find out every pellagrin by means of local lists is good, as it enables the Government to know exactly the condition of this dreadful malady, provided the lists are carefully compiled; on the other hand, if these lists are inaccurate, they may result in much misconception of the incidence of the disease. The provision of one good meal a day to poor pellagrins during the spring and autumn is, in our opinion, highly to be praised. That these meals are good, we can certify from personal experience. We fail, however, to see the utility of the free distribution of salt, but it does no harm.

The methods adopted by the Italian and other Governments may be summarized as follows:—

1. *Laws and Regulations.*

- (a) Prohibiting the importation and sale of spoiled corn.
- (b) Government inspection of all corn dried, stored, or consumed. This includes the erection of public storehouses.
- (c) Provision of desiccating plants to dry corn.
- (d) Cases of pellagra to be reported, and lists to be kept and emended every year. Unfortunately, they are not always very accurate.
- (e) Formation of *locande sanitarie*—i.e., kitchens where excellent free meals are given to pellagrins, and, it is to be hoped, to other deserving poor people also.
- (f) Free distribution of $17\frac{1}{2}$ pounds of salt to every adult pellagrin and 11 pounds of salt to every child pellagrin per annum. This distribution is arranged by a ticket system.

- (g) Establishment and upkeep of *pellagrosaria*—i.e., special hospitals for the treatment of pellagrins.
 (h) Establishment of *pellagrological commissions* in every province affected with pellagra, with powers to work the laws and to investigate the disease.
 (i) Financial supply.

2. Formation of Rural Bakeries.

Model central bakehouse, controlled by Government, in which the only bread allowed to be used is baked from good, wholesome wheat-flour. The best model we have seen was in the Tyrol.

3. Improvement of Agriculture.

(a) By *cattedre ambulanti*, or farmers' institutes, designed to teach *locally* modern methods of agriculture, with the result that the farmers become less poverty-stricken.

(b) Advising the farmers no longer to plant second crops of inferior qualities of maize, called *quarantino*—(*Zea mais v. præcox*) and *cinquantino* (*Z. mais v. subpræcox*), which, being gathered in the wet month of October, were often only half ripe, and soon decayed.

(c) By organizing *agricultural shows*, which include the exhibition of *maize*.

REFERENCES.

The most useful reference is Salveraglio (1887), *Giornali della Società Italiana d'Igiene*, Milano, whose paper of 156 pages, entitled 'Bibliographia della Pellagra,' contains a list of the articles published up to 1887. Lavinder and Babcock's translation of Marie's 'La Pellagra,' brings the literature in English up to 1910. The most useful journals are the *Rivista Pellagologica*, published in Udine; the *Tropical Diseases Bulletin*, published in London; while the *Atti dei Congressi Pellagologici* and the Reports of the Triennial Meetings of the American Society for the Study of Pellagra, of which the years 1908, 1909, and 1912, will shortly be available, also contain valuable information. A very valuable series of papers is to be found in the publications of the United States Senate, and also in the United States Public Health Reports, and in the Transactions of the Society of Tropical Diseases, London.

- ANTONINI (1902). La Pellagra. Milano.
 BABCOCK (1910). Journal of South Caroline Medical Association, Charleston. (Psychology of Pellagra.)
 BABÈS AND SION (1901). Nothnagel's Special Pathol. u. Therap. Die Pellagra, xxiv. ii.; in addition, many publications in Romänisch by Babès up to 1912.
 BILLOD, E. (1865). Traité de la Pellagre. Paris. (A most useful work.)
 BOX (1913). Transactions Society of Tropical Medicine. London. (Pellagra in England.)
 CHEVALIER (1799). London Medical Review and Magazine, May. London. (The first paper on pellagra in English.)
 CUTTING (1911). Senatorial paper 706. Washington. (Often called the Dunning report.)
 GOODHUE (1912). Orleans Medical and Surgical Journal. (Pellagra in Hawaii.)
 HUERTAS, F. (1903). Archivos Latinos de Medicina y de Biología. Madrid.
 LOMBROSO (1898). Die Lehre von der Pellagra. Berlin.
 LONG (1910). Journal American Medical Association. Chicago.
 LOW (1909). Edinburgh Medical Journal. (Case of Pellagra from the Shetland Islands.)
 MERK (1909). Die Hauterscheinungen der Pellagra. Innsbruck. (A fine atlas.)

- MOTT (1913). Transactions Society of Tropical Medicine. London. (Nervous System in Pellagra.)
- NICHOLLS, L. (1912). Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene. London.
- NILES, G. M. (1912). Pellagra. Philadelphia and London.
- PROCOPIU (1903). La Pellagre. Paris.
- RAUBITSCHKE (1912). Deutsche Medicinische Wochenschrift. Berlin. (Fagopyrism.)
- ROBERTS, S. R. (1912). Pellagra. London.
- ROEL, F. (1880). Etiologia de la Pellagra. Oviedo. (Many reference plates, etc.)
- ROUSSEL (1845). Traité de la Pellagra et des Pseudopellagres. Paris. (This and all Roussell's publications are to be recommended for perusal.)
- SANDWITH (1905). Medical Diseases of Egypt, i. London. (A most excellent account; should be studied.) (1913). Society of Tropical Medicine. London. (Insufficiency theory.)
- SAMBON (1910). Progress Report on the Investigation of Pellagra. London. (The exposition of the parasite fly theory of the ætiology.)
- SAMBON AND CHALMERS (1912). British Medical Journal. (Pellagra in the British Islands.) For work done in Roumania *vide* leading article Journal Tropical Medicine and Hygiene, December 15, 1911; and for the work done at Burano, the same journal and article for October, 1912.
- STRAMBIO, JUNIOR (1890). La Pellagra. Milano.
- WARNOCK (YEARLY). Reports of the Lunatic Asylum at Abbassia, Cairo, Egypt; also (1902) Journal of Mental Science. London.
- WOOD, T. F. (1912). Pellagra. New York and London.

CHAPTER XLVIII

THE RARER PROTOZOAL INFECTIONS

Histoplasmosis—Rhinosporidiosis—The Sarcosporidiosis—Onchocerciasis—References.

Remarks.—In this chapter we group three general protozoal diseases with another general disease of unknown causation.

HISTOPLASMOSIS.

Definition.—Histoplasmosis is an acute specific infection caused by *Histoplasma capsulatum* Darling.

History.—This disease has been described by Darling, who also found the parasite, but being first discovered post mortem, the clinical signs are rather deficient. The first case was in a negro who, three months previously, had come from Martinique to the Canal zone of Panama.

Ætiology.—The disease is caused by the parasite *Histoplasma capsulatum* Darling, already described in the chapters on Protozoa. (*vide* p. 367).

Pathology.—The parasite infects epithelial and endothelial cells of the lungs, liver, and spleen. It also exists free in these organs. In the lungs it gives rise to pseudo-tubercles resembling miliary tubercles.

Morbid Anatomy.—In the first case there were ecchymoses and small nodules beneath the visceral pleura of both lungs, which was studded throughout with pale grey hyaline and miliary tubercles, 2 to 3 millimetres in diameter, while the remainder of the organs were of a bright red colour. The peribronchial glands were full of soft caseated tubercles. The heart was small, but normal. The liver was enlarged, pale, and in a condition of slight atrophic cirrhosis. The spleen was enlarged to about three times its usual size, very firm, with distinct Malpighian bodies. The kidneys were slightly cirrhotic; the pancreas, bladder, bone-marrow, and brain were normal, and no tubercle bacilli could be found.

Microscopically the lung tubercles were found to consist of alveoli, the walls of which were broken and collapsed, and were filled with alveolar epithelial cells distended with parasites. In the

liver the hepatic cells and the vascular endothelial cells were much infected with parasites. Some areas which stained badly were found to consist simply of the débris of cells with numerous parasites. The spleen showed intracellular and free parasites.

Symptomatology.—The symptoms closely resemble those of Indian kala-azar, there being irregular fever with enlargement of the spleen and liver, and severe anæmia with marked leucopenia.

Treatment.—Nothing is known as to the treatment or prophylaxis.



FIG. 509.—SECTION OF NASAL POLYPUS SHOWING RHINOSPORIDIUM SEEBERI AT 1 AND 2. ($\times 30$.) CEYLON CASE.

1 is reproduced much more highly magnified in Fig. 149, p. 437.
(Microphotograph.)

RHINOSPORIDIOSIS.

Definition.—Rhinosporidiosis is a chronic infection caused by *Rhinosporidium seeberi* Wernicke 1900, and characterized by the production of polypi on mucous membranes and papillomata on cutaneous surfaces.

History.—The disease was first recognized by Seeber in Buenos Aires, in a nasal polypus occurring in a young man aged nineteen years. In 1900 he gave a description of the parasite and its development, which we have been unable to obtain, but which is said to be a most excellent account. Later he found two other cases in the same town, and in 1900 the parasite was named *Coccidium seeberi* by Wernicke.

In 1903 Kinealy reported to the Laryngological Society a peculiar case of a polypus growing from the septum of the nose of an Indian in Calcutta in the form of a pedunculated, raspberry-like body, with whitish spots on the general red surface. On section this tumour was found to have peculiar bodies embedded in it. It was then carefully examined and described by Minchin and Fantham, who came to the conclusion that the peculiar bodies were Haplosporidians, and named them *Rhinosporidium kinealyi*. In 1905, Nair of Madras found similar nasal polypi in several people,

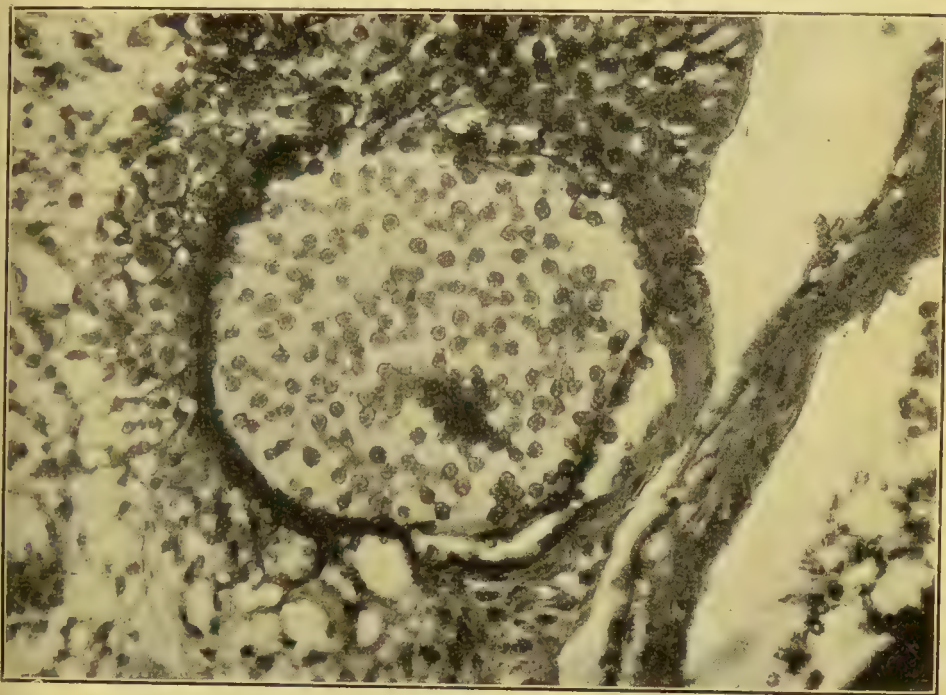


FIG. 510.—RHINOSPORIDIUM SEBEERI AS SEEN AT 2 IN FIG. 509. ($\times 300$)
CEYLON CASE.

(Microphotograph.)

who all came from the small native State of Cochin, on the west coast of India. These polypi were carefully described by Beattie in 1906.

In 1910 we observed the same parasite in a nasal polypus in Ceylon, and in the same year Ingram published an account of its occurrence in a conjunctival polypus and in a papilloma on the penis.

Climatology.—Rhinosporidiosis occurs in South America, in India, and in Ceylon, and quite possibly in other regions.

Ætiology.—The causation of the disease is the presence of *Rhinosporidium seeberi* Wernicke 1900 (*vide* p. 437).

Morbid Anatomy.—The nasal tumours are usually covered with stratified pavement epithelium, which sends prolongations into the deeper tissues, in which there is an active cellular proliferation. In this connective tissue the parasites may be seen.

Pathology.—The parasite spreads in the body by the rupture of the cyst and the liberation of the spores. We suspect that it may, at times, give rise to a condition resembling a septicæmia.

Symptomatology.—The patient has his attention drawn to his nose by profuse bleedings, and in a little time notices a growth. On examination this is found to be a small vascular pedunculated tumour, about the size and shape of a pea, freely movable and painless, attached to the anterior and upper part of the cartilaginous septum. In appearance it resembles a strawberry or a raspberry.

It may, however, form polypi in other regions, as, for example, on the conjunctiva or papillomata on cutaneous surfaces, as, for example, on the penis.

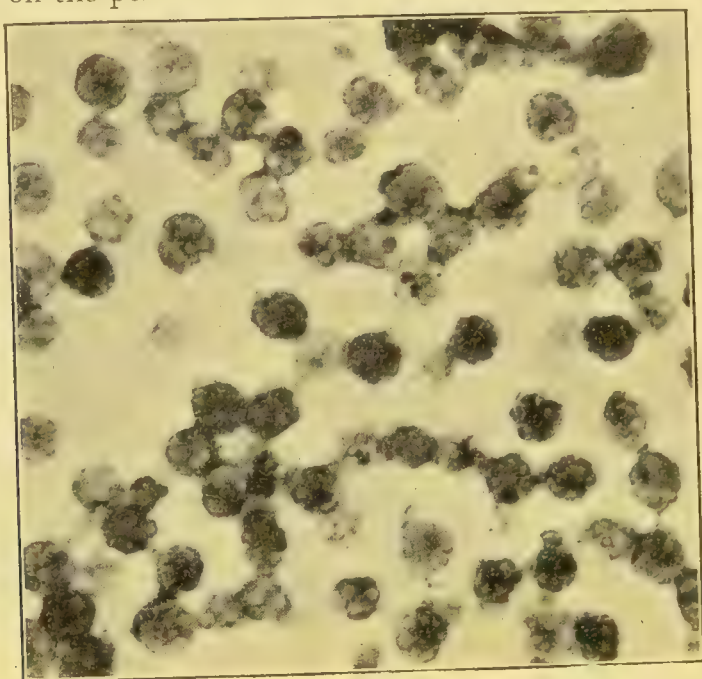


FIG. 511.—RHINOSPORIDIA SEBEERI AS SEEN AT 2 IN FIG. 509. ($\times 1,000$.)
CEYLON CASE.
(Microphotograph.)

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis can only be made by removal of the whole or a portion of the growth, which in most cases has the appearance of a nasal polypus, followed by a microscopical examination, when the parasite will be easily seen as a roundish cyst filled with granules which, when examined under a higher power, are seen to be the pansporoblasts.

Prognosis.—This is usually said to be good, but if it can cause, as we suspect, a general infection, it may be dangerous to life.

Treatment.—The treatment is to remove the growth and cauterize its base.

Prophylaxis.—As we are entirely ignorant of the life-cycle of the parasite or where it exists outside the human body, no remarks can be made as to the prophylaxis.

THE SARCOSPORIDIOSES.

Definition.—Sarcosporidiosis is a chronic infection caused by the invasion of the body by *Sarcocystis lindemanni* Rivolta 1878, *Sarcocystis muris*, and perhaps other allied organisms.

History.—In 1868 Lindemann found some indefinite bodies in the myocardium and on the valves of the heart of a person who had died of dropsy. It is thought that these bodies may possibly have belonged to the genus *Sarcocystis*, but it is very doubtful what they really represented. In 1887 Koch described the first genuine case in Egypt. In 1894 Baraban and St. Remy found these parasites in the laryngeal muscles of a man who had been executed. In 1902 Rosenberg reported a doubtful case, and Kartulis another doubtful case. In 1903 Et. and Ed. Sergent described a parasite which later was called *Sergentella hominis* Brumpt 1910 in the blood (*vide* p. 441), and in 1905 Castellani and Willey described rather different bodies also in the blood (*vide* pp. 441 and 442), which they were inclined to consider of protozoal origin, and later similar, but somewhat larger forms, were found by Castellani and Sturges in the blood of *Bos indicus*. In 1909 Darling described a case of sarcosporidiosis in a Barbadian negro in which the parasite appeared to be *Sarcocystis muris*.

Climatology.—Sarcosporidiosis being only a chance infection in man, and the parasite normally occurring in monkeys, buffaloes, cattle, sheep, pigs, rats, and other animals, it is obvious that not merely will the disease be very widespread, but that different varieties will occur in the different zoological regions. The cases so far described are in Central America, Europe, and Egypt, and doubtful cases in Algeria and Ceylon. We are suspicious that the Ceylon case may have some connection with *S. tennellæ*—*var. bubalis* Willey, Chalmers, and Philip 1904, which is very commonly found in buffalo meat in Ceylon.

Ætiology.—The causation of sarcosporidiosis is the presence of some species of *sarcocystis* in man, but the method of entry is not obvious. It would seem possible that eating undercooked meat infected with *Sarcocystis* might produce the infection, as Darling has shown that guinea-pigs can be infected by feeding them with rat's muscle containing *S. muris*, and by feeding them with the ripe sporozoites of the same species. In our opinion this is a very probable method of chance infection, because the buffalo meat in Ceylon is heavily infected (*vide* p. 435).

Morbid Anatomy.—The spores can be found in the blood and the parasites in the muscle fibres.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period in animals appears to be very long, some 152 to 164 days. During the invasion the patient suffers from an irregular fever, which may resemble enteric fever, and in severe cases this fever may be complicated with myositis and even necrosis of the muscles.

Diagnosis.—The symptoms are those of an irregular fever, which in some cases may be typhoidal-like, and in others of a very low

type without much general disturbance, while some cases may never show pyrexia. The nature of these fevers may be suspected by finding bodies resembling the spores of *Sarcocystis* (*vide* Fig. 148, p. 435) in the blood. Failing this, and especially if there are any signs of myositis, the diagnosis can be cleared by excision and examination of a piece of diseased muscle.

Prognosis.—This is good after the parasites have become quiescent, for no one has so far been known to die of the disease.

Treatment.—The treatment is entirely symptomatic.

Prophylaxis.—Meat should be carefully inspected, and any found heavily infected with *Sarcocystis* should be condemned, while all meat should be well cooked.

SERGEANTELLIASIS.

The brothers Sargent, in 1903, described a peculiar parasite (the description of which is found on p. 441) in a person suffering from night sweats and attacks of nausea. There was apparently no fever, and the general condition was good. This parasite, to which Brumpt has given the name of *Sergentella hominis*, might be the free spores of a species of *Sarcocystis*.

ONYALAI.

Synonyms.—Edyuo (Bukoba) ; Kafindo (Congo).

Definition.—An acute infectious disease of unknown causation, characterized by the appearance of bullæ containing blood on the surface of the body, the tongue, soft palate, or buccal mucous membrane.

History.—The disease was discovered by Yale Massey in Angola in 1904, and fully described by Wellman later in the same year in Portuguese West Africa, and by Feldman, in 1905, in East Africa, where it is called 'edyuo' by the natives of Bukoba. Mense (1906) thinks that the 'kafindo' disease of the Unyamwezi people of the Congo is the same disease. Hæmorrhagic bullæ in the mouth, but without general symptoms, have been described by Maxwell in Changpo, South China, as being due to the accidental introduction into the mouth of a kind of spider's web.

Ætiology.—This is unknown, but Wellman considers that it is not a manifestation of malaria ; nor is it a vegetal poisoning, nor a snake-poisoning, though the bite of *Bitis arietans*, the puff-adder, simulates some cases closely. Neither trypanosomes nor bacteria were found. It is not a purpura hæmorrhagica, nor Henoch's purpura, nor Schönlein's disease. Mense thinks it may be some kind of poisoning, perhaps with some species of the Euphorbiaceæ.

Symptoms.—The onset is sudden, and is accompanied by lassitude and a dazed appearance. Sometimes the parotids are tender, and the eyes may be somewhat reddened, and in about 66 per cent. of cases there is a slight rise of temperature. Numbness and pain in various parts of the body may be noted.

The appetite is poor; bullæ may be seen on the tongue and in the mouth and pharynx, while they also occur in the œsophagus, stomach, and bowels. The tongue is swollen and painful. Vomiting of blood is not rare, and bloody diarrhœa may take place. Hæmaturia has been noted, and cerebral hæmorrhage, with the usual signs, has been seen. It is believed that hæmorrhage into the pancreas, liver, and spleen, may take place in some cases. Bullæ may also appear in the skin, ranging from the size of a split pea to several inches in diameter. The typical bullæ, whether on a mucosa or in the skin, extend deeply, involving the submucosa or the corium, and are crossed by fibrous trabeculæ, in the meshes of which lies partially coagulated blood, which appears dark through the skin or mucosa. The red corpuscles are not disintegrated, and can be seen by the microscope.

The disease is said to have a tendency to recur two or three times.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis from snake-bite may be effected only by the history, as the bullæ may not be visible on the skin or mucosa. Malaria can be excluded by the blood examination. Schönlein's disease, or peliosis, is diagnosed by the rash, painful swelling of the joints, and the purpuric eruption. Henoch's purpura is met with generally in children, and has joint symptoms, as well as a rash.

Prognosis.—Wellman reports three deaths in fourteen cases, and says that the malignancy varies in different seasons and districts.

Treatment.—Wellman thinks that arsenic in full doses is the best treatment. He says the natives use empirically *Geigeria wellmani* Hutch and *Albizzia anthelmintica* A. Broga. Massey recommends large doses of bicarbonate of soda and cod-liver oil.

REFERENCES.

Histoplasmosis.

- DARLING (1907). Journal of American Medical Association.
DARLING (1909). Journal of Experimental Medicine.

Rhinosporidiosis.

- BEATTIE (1906). British Medical Journal, vol. ii.

Sarcosporidiosis.

- CASTELLANI AND WILLEY (1904). Spolia Zeylanica ii., vi. 78-92. Colombo.
DARLING (1909). Archives of Internal Medicine.
DARLING (1910). Journal of Experimental Medicine. April.
SERGENT, ED. AND ET. (1903). Comptes Rendus de la Société de Biologie, October. Paris.

Onyalai.

- FELDMAN (1905). Medizinalberichte über die deutschen Schutzgebiete, S. 45.
MASSEY (1904). Journal of Tropical Medicine, September 1, p. 269.
MENSE (1906). Tropenkrankheiten, iii. 789.
WELLMANN (1904). Journal of Tropical Medicine, February 15, p. 55; April 15, 1908, p. 119.
WELLMANN (1905). New York Medical Journal, September 2, p. 495.
WELLMANN (1907). Atti della Società per gli Studi della Malaria, vii. 29.

SECTION C

SYSTEMIC DISEASES

CHAPTER XLIX

DISEASES OF THE RESPIRATORY ORGANS

General — Rhinitis spastica vasomotoria — Gangosa — Hirudiniasis — Rhinal chilopodiasis — Linguatuliasis — Rhinal myiasis — Bronchial spirochaetosis — Tropical bronchomycoses — References.

General Remarks.

DISEASES of the respiratory organs are of common occurrence in the tropics, in the form of acute or chronic inflammation of the nose, throat, larynx, bronchi, or lungs. Pneumonia is less common than in Europe, and must be carefully diagnosed from pneumonic plague, liver abscess, and malaria, by careful physical examination as well as by microscopical examination of the sputum and blood. Liver abscess may burst into the lung or pleural cavity, and may cause the expectoration of a peculiarly brown and viscid sputum. Emphysema and asthma are fairly common.

Phthisis is common, and appears to be increasing in the East, but it must be remembered that the pulmonary lesions of paragonimiasis, histoplasmosis, and certain bronchomycoses closely simulate this disease, and the examination of the sputum is imperative. The occurrence of porocephalus in the lungs must also be remembered, and the intense congestion in heat-stroke. There are several conditions which deserve special mention with regard to tropical disease.

RHINITIS SPASTICA VASOMOTORIA.

Synonyms.—Rhinitis Nervosa, Coryza Spasmodica, Dispnée Tropicale, Tropical Hay Fever.

Definition.—A rhinitis characterized by fits of sneezing, with the production of much nasal mucus, and obstruction of the nose from swelling of the mucous membrane over the turbinated bones. The affection has the greatest resemblance to hay fever.

History.—This disease appears to have been first described by Zegers in 1901, in Batavia, while Brero gives a full description in Mense's 'Tropenkrankheiten,' and we have seen several cases in Ceylon. O'Zoux has recorded numerous cases in the island of Réunion.

Symptomatology.—The affection is characterized by attacking adults, in whom it causes violent fits of sneezing, lasting from a few minutes to two hours, during which time the victim sneezes ten to seventy times, while fluid pours from the nose, tears roll down from the eyes, the conjunctivæ are injected, the eyelids swollen, the head aches, and the patient is unable to do his work. The attacks are repeated constantly, and may take place several times during the day, or may not recur for weeks. They may be associated with or followed by dyspnœic conditions resembling to some extent asthma. At the beginning the mucosa of the inferior turbinated bone may appear hyperæmic, but later it becomes swollen, and has a macerated appearance. The disease therefore closely resembles hay fever, but is supposed to be caused by dust acting upon the nasal mucosa of persons, the resistance of whose nervous system has been lowered by long residence in the tropics. We have frequently met with the disease in people exposed to the dust of tea and copra.

Treatment.—The only successful treatment in many cases is a change of climate, when the symptoms stop at once. When the patient cannot have a change of climate, atropine and strychnine pills, or small doses of quinine, may be recommended, and locally a spray of a solution of cocaine (1 per cent.) and adrenalin.

GANGOSA.

Synonyms.—Rhynchopharyngitis mutilans (Leys); Granuloma Gangrenosa; Kaninloma (Fiji).

Definition.—Gangosa is an ulcerative condition of the palate, nose, pharynx, and skin surfaces of the body, of unknown cause, which slowly spreads to the nose and larynx, destroying cartilage and bone, and causing much deformity.

History.—The disease appears to have been first described in 1828 by a Spanish Royal Commission to the Marianne or Ladrone Islands under the name 'gangosa,' which means 'nasal voice,' and is derived from *gangoser*, 'to snuffle.' It was carefully studied by Seligmann in British New Guinea in 1898 and 1904, who describes the implication of the skin of the face, and draws attention to the fact that it is the disease described by Sir William MacGregor as lupus and by the white residents as cancer. In 1906 the disease in the endemic area was studied by Fordyce and Arnold, by Leys in Guam, an island to the south of the Ladrone Islands, and by Mink and McLean in the Ladrone and Caroline Islands. In 1907 a paper appeared by Musgrave and Marshall on a case from the Batanes Islands, 120 miles north of Luzon, and by Stitt on a case

in a European in Guam. It has been recently studied by Angeny and Kerr. Breinl has found it on Murray Island, and thinks that it closely resembles the condition known in Fiji as Kaninloma.

Climatology.—There appears to be an endemic area for the disease, it being common in the Batanes Islands (where the cases are mistaken for leprosy), in the Ladrone Islands, Guam, and the Caroline Islands. It is also said to exist in Fiji, Murray Island, Panama, British Guiana, Ceylon, Nevis, Dominica, and Italy.

Ætiology.—Daniels and several other authors believe it to be a sequel to yaws, but Rat is opposed to this, as are Mink, McLean, Musgrave, and Marshall and Angeny, who point out that the disease is absent or very rare in many countries where yaws is common. Kerr, however, has noted that yaws is an almost constant antecedent of gangosa. Alvarez suggested that it was syphilis, but Musgrave, Marshall, and Leys are opposed to this, because no syphilis exists in Guam, where gangosa is common. There are no signs or symptoms of syphilis in this disease; Treponemata cannot be found, and mercury and iodide of potassium are without effect. It is not leprosy, because of the absence of nodules, infiltration, anæsthesia, and Hansen's bacillus. It is distinguished from epithelioma by the absence of the histological characters and metastases, as well as by the protracted course. It is excluded from tuberculosis by the absence of Koch's bacillus and other symptoms of the disease, and the failure to inoculate guinea-pigs successfully. It is therefore probably a separate disease of unknown causation. It appears to be equally common in males and females.

Pathology.—It appears to begin sometimes as a sore throat or coryza, or as a tubercle on the palate. In any case an ulcer soon forms, which, though superficial at first, eats through cartilage and bone, with periods of quiescence and of activity. This ulceration is due to a necrosis of the tissue elements, with very little reaction on the part of the body. This reaction is apparently limited to a small-celled infiltration, some giant-celled formation, and proliferation of bloodvessels with the formation of granulation tissue.

Morbid Anatomy.—The post-mortem may reveal signs of some concomitant affection—for example, tuberculosis, pleurisy, or cardiac hypertrophy—which have nothing to do with the disease, the important features of which are ulceration and destruction, together with scar formation in the larynx, pharynx, palate, nose, and perhaps the antrum of Highmore.

Histopathology.—Microscopically, the following changes are observed as the diseased area is approached from healthy tissue: First there is an œdematous infiltration, then an infiltration with round cells, which are principally lymphocytes, associated with another variety possessing more protoplasm, and a small dark nucleus. Sometimes there are giant cells and proliferating vessels, and there are always hæmorrhages. Then comes a layer of necrosis, forming the surface of the ulcer, at the edges of which the epithelium can be

seen, sending processes into the subcutaneous tissue, which consist of large vacuolated cells with pale vesicular nuclei. Some diplococci, micrococci, and bacilli have been noted, but no acid-fast bacilli or *Treponemata* have been seen.

Symptomatology.—The disease begins sometimes as a sore throat, and on examination a nodule may be seen on the back of the pharynx, the posterior pillars of the fauces, or the edge of the soft palate. This becomes a superficial ulcer covered with a brownish-grey slough.



FIG. 512.—GANGOSA.
(From a photograph by Arnold.)

This ulcer spreads rapidly at first, but more slowly later, and eats away first the soft parts, and then the bone of the palate, the nasal septum, and the cartilages of the nose, so that the skin falls in, and the nose and mouth are converted into one cavity. It may then extend on to the face or lip, or affect the larynx. When it spreads over the face it may involve the eyelids, erode the cornea, and even destroy the vision. In some advanced cases the entire front of the face is replaced by a large opening ringed about by foul ulcers. Sensation is diminished over the ulcer, and a most objectionable odour is exhaled, while a slight discharge of granular and necrotic

débris is generally present. The ulcers may also appear on the skin of the extremities or on parts of the body not usually covered with the clothing. At times the ulcers may remain quite superficial, spreading at one edge while healing at another. Scarring, similar to that seen after burns, may result, which by contraction may lead to obliteration of the palpebral fissures, the nasal orifices, and to reduce the size of the mouth, as well as to produce great deformities in the hands and feet. It may cause a chronic osteitis resembling that seen in syphilis. It appears to be in some way self-limited, as it does not attack the trachea or genital organs. The ulceration may progress continuously for a period of ten to thirty-five years, or it may advance at certain times and be quiescent at others, or it may cease at any time, leaving a chronic ulcer. Its duration varies, therefore, from a few months to many years.

With regard to the blood, Musgrave and Marshall report that their case showed no marked leucocytosis and no abnormal elements. The hæmoglobin was 80 per cent., the leucocytes 11,600 per cubic millimetre, the small lymphocytes 10 per cent., large lymphocytes 4.6 per cent., polymorphonuclears 82 per cent., eosinophiles 2.6 per cent., basophiles 0.4 per cent. Wassermann's reaction is generally positive. Kerr believes this to be due to progressive yaws.

The disease is not limited to the throat and nose, but, as already stated, may spread to the face or appear on the extremities, but as a rule the general health is but little affected.

Variety.—A fulminating variety has been described by Mink and McLean in children, which is fatal in forty-eight hours, and closely resembles diphtheria, without, however, the presence of the specific bacilli.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis has been practically discussed in the *Ætiology*, and need not be repeated, except to say that it must be made by a process of exclusion.

Prognosis.—The disease is rarely fatal, and all cases tend to ultimate recovery, but the course is very long and the disfigurement great. The general health is also good as a rule, although death may take place from intercurrent disorders, such as tuberculosis, dysentery, and other internal causes.

Treatment.—Nothing is at present known which is capable of arresting its progress. An application of a strong solution (1 per cent.) of permanganate of potash is recommended as a deodorant, and local application of tincture of iodine or the actual cautery.

Prophylaxis.—Nothing definite can be said under this heading, as the *ætiology* is quite unknown, but segregation of the patients in a colony or special hospital until they are cured is advisable. In Guam, according to Angeny, the disease is steadily decreasing, thanks to the measures taken of segregating the patients, and also probably to the improvement in general sanitation since the American occupation.

HIRUDINIASIS.

Definition.—Hirudianisis is the invasion of the nose, mouth, pharynx, or larynx by leeches.

Remarks.—Leeches have already been described in Chapter XXII. (p. 570), when it was mentioned that they were apt to invade the nose, mouth, pharynx, or larynx. Masterman has given a very excellent account of hirudiniasis as seen in Palestine.

Climatology.—Leeches are most troublesome in Algeria, Palestine, and Ceylon, less so in the Philippine Islands, Java, Sumatra, Australia, and Japan.

Ætiology.—It is the water-leech which lives in springs, which is the cause of the trouble to man, as it is apt to be swallowed with drinking-water. This is particularly liable to take place when the traveller drinks the water hastily at dusk.

Pathology.—The leech, when in the mouth, nose, pharynx, or larynx, does not suck blood until gorged, and then detach itself from the affected part, as is the rule when it attacks the skin, but apparently bites and sucks a little in one place, and then passes to another, and bites, and sucks again, and so on. Of course the sites of the bites bleed, and hence the patient may in course of time become very anæmic, and even die. It is hardly likely that a leech could live in the stomach if swallowed, though such an occurrence has been described.

Symptomatology.—The patient usually knows that he has swallowed a leech, and has felt the animal catch hold of the mucosa of the pharynx during the swallowing of the water. But children, and even adults, may be quite unaware of the accident having happened. The most important sign is the bleeding from the nose or mouth, or the hawking up of blood from the pharynx, or hæmoptysis from the larynx, accompanied by a short irritating cough, dyspnœa, and sometimes cyanosis from the impediment to the respiration. Rhinoscopic or laryngoscopic examination may be necessary in order to see the parasite, and will require to be done with cocaine. In the larynx the head of the leech is usually fixed just inside or outside of the vocal cords, and the body may flop backwards and forwards with respiration.

Diagnosis.—The bleeding and the examination with a nasal speculum or a laryngoscope make the diagnosis easy.

Prognosis.—This is usually good if the parasite is removed in time, but if left for long, removal may be too late, and the patient succumb.

Treatment.—Apply a pledget of cotton-wool soaked in 30 per cent. solution of cocaine to the parasite. This produces a paralyzing effect on the animal, and it can then be removed. As, however, the drug requires some time to act, and the leech might fall from the larynx into the trachea, it is advisable in these cases to make the patient lie prone on a couch, with the head hanging over, when the paralyzed parasite will be coughed up.

Prophylaxis.—Filtration of the water will prevent the parasite entering the body. Masterman says that a kind of carp, *Capoëla fratercula*, will keep the water free from leeches.

RHINAL CHILOPODIASIS.

Definition.—Rhinal chilopodiasis is the invasion of the nose by a species of the *Chilopoda*.

Ætiology and Symptomatology.—The *Chilopoda* have already been described in Chapter XXII., and it has been pointed out that *Geophilus carpophagus* Leach, *G. similis* Leach, *G. electricus* Leach, *G. cephalicus* Wood, *Lithobius forficatus* Leach, and *L. melanops* have been found in the nasal cavities, causing inflammation, with at times a great flow of mucus, while at others there is a stoppage of the discharge. Associated with this flow there is headache, with more or less marked remissions at times, and also general symptoms, such as convulsions, angina, dyspnœa, etc., which are thought to be produced reflexly by stimulation of the fifth nerve. The symptoms are thought to be produced mechanically, and not to be due to any action of venom secreted by the parasite.

Diagnosis is to be made by examination of the nose by a speculum.

Treatment.—The affection is not serious, and often the parasite is expelled by merely sneezing. More rarely chloroform-water injections, snuff, eau-de-Cologne, or turpentine injections are needed. Still more rarely will a sinus, such as the frontal sinus, require to be opened.

LINGUATULIASIS.

Lingualula serrata Frölich 1789 has been found occasionally in the nose of man in Europe and in the tropics (*vide p.* 618).

RHINAL MYIASIS.

Definition.—Rhinal myiasis is the invasion of the nasal cavities, frontal sinuses, etc., by the larvæ of certain species of the Muscidæ, but especially by those of *Chrysomya macellaria* Fabricius 1794.

Remarks.—The term 'myiasis' is used for the invasion of any part of the bodies of animals or man by flies. It is important to remember that this form of parasitism is often essential for the life-history of the fly, and also that the usual host is some animal, and that man is only an accidental host. It is probably some peculiar odour which has attracted the fly to the individual. Odours which are offensive to man appear to be attractive to certain flies, which have been led astray by these smells, and have been induced to lay their eggs or deposit their larvæ on plants instead of animals. Thus *Calliphora vomitoria* has been known to be attracted by the corpse-like odour of *Arum dracuncululus*, and to deposit its eggs upon this plant, and similarly *Chrysomya macellaria* has been attracted by the odour of decomposition exhaled by *Aristolochia gigas* var. *sturtevantii*, instead of ovipositing in some wound in an animal.

The particular form of myiasis which we propose to treat in the present section is 'nasal myiasis,' leaving to later chapters the descriptions of the intestinal and dermal myiasis.

Climatology.—Nasal myiasis is common in tropical and subtropical

America, especially from the Argentine to Texas and into the West Indies, which is the common range of *Chrysomya macellaria* Fabricius 1794. As a fact this fly extends from Patagonia to Canada, but is killed by cold winters, and is therefore not very abundant outside the more restricted zone. In the Southern United States it occurs most commonly from July to October. Nasal myiasis has also been reported in India, and we have seen cases in Ceylon. Ed. and Et. Sargent report cases from Algeria, but so far none have been reported from tropical Australia.

Ætiology.—In tropical America the common cause of nasal myiasis is *Chrysomya macellaria* Fabricius 1794, but it would appear that any case of rhinal myiasis is labelled as being caused by this fly, while this is really by no means correct, for Mr. Austen has already shown that one such case was due to a species of *Sarcophaga*. In India species of *Pycnosoma* and *Sarcophaga* have been recorded as causing myiasis, and in Algeria *Æstris ovis* Linnæus may be found (*vide* pp. 728, 730, 707, and 703).

Determination of the Species.—It is obviously incorrect to assume that the larvæ from a case of nasal myiasis are those of any given fly, and Mr. Austen has asked that in future some of the larvæ should be placed at once on the top of a pot of fairly dry earth, which is then covered with muslin. After the flies have appeared they should be allowed to remain undisturbed for about twenty-four hours in order that they may dry themselves, and in order that they may develop their specific colours, after which they may be killed with chloroform, screwed up in cigarette-paper, packed in small metal boxes, and forwarded to England for identification.

Habits of the Fly.—*Chrysomya macellaria* usually deposits its eggs in some wound in cattle—*e.g.*, in the wounds after castration, spaying, branding, dehorning, in barbed-wire wounds, and where ticks have been burst, or in the vulva, especially if there is a retained placenta, or in the navel or mouth of young calves. More rarely they lay the eggs in the wounds of horses and mules produced by barbed wire, in the sheaths of horses, the vaginæ of mares, and the navels of colts. Hogs are also liable to be attacked, but sheep are rarely attacked unless they have been worried by dogs.

In place of these more natural hosts the fly may at times attack man, probably being attracted by the odour of what to the human being is an offensive breath, or by an ozæna, or even a chronic catarrh. The fly then passes into one nostril, and if it is expelled dashes into the other nostril and quickly deposits its eggs, sometimes in large numbers.

Pathology.—The eggs deposited in the manner just described become larvæ in the course of a couple of days. The larvæ proceed to feed upon the tissues of the nose and to burrow deeply into the mucous membrane, down to and even through the bone. This feeding excites a violent reaction on the part of the body, which can be exemplified by the fever, the discharge, the pains, etc.

Morbid Anatomy.—The morbid anatomy includes the destruction of the nose, pharynx, hard and soft palates, larynx, etc. Fistulous

channels may be seen packed with larvæ and extending in all directions.

Symptomatology.—Some couple of days after a person suffering from a chronic catarrh, foul breath, or ozæna, has slept in the open, or has been attacked by a fly when riding or driving—*i.e.*, when the hands are engaged—signs of a severe catarrh appear, accompanied with inordinate sneezing and severe pain over the root of the nose or the frontal bone. Quickly the nose becomes swollen, and later the face also may swell, while examination of the nose may show the presence of the larvæ. Left untreated, the patient rapidly becomes worse, and pus and blood are discharged from the nose, from which an offensive odour issues. Cough appears as well as fever, and often some delirium. If the patient lives long enough, the septum of the nose may fall in, the soft and hard palates may be pierced, the wall of the pharynx may be eaten away, exposing the vertebræ, and even the hyoid bone may be destroyed. By this time, however, the course of the disease will have become quite evident by the larvæ dropping out of the nose, and if the patient continues to live all the larvæ may come away naturally.

Diagnosis.—Any case with the history of a fly having darted

77

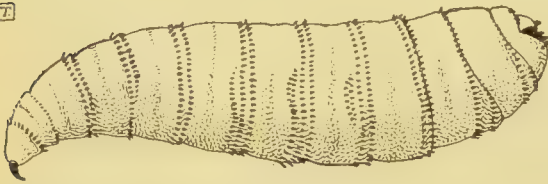


FIG. 513.—*CHRYSOMYIA MACELLARIA*: LARVA.
($\times 4$.)

(After Blanchard.)

into the nose should be assumed to be a case of nasal myiasis until proved by careful nasal examination not to be so. The onset of peculiar sensations at the root of the nose and along the orbital processes, together with the signs of an aggravated nasal catarrh occurring

in the endemic region especially in the months of July to October, when the fly abounds in the Southern United States, makes the diagnosis probable, and this becomes a certainty on finding a larva by examination or douching. The onset of the severe symptoms will clear the diagnosis if not evident at an earlier stage.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is always serious, as it is difficult to be sure that all the larvæ have been removed.

Treatment.—The best treatment is to douche out the nose with chloroform water or a solution of chloroform in sweet milk (10 to 20 per cent.), and to follow this with douches of mild antiseptics. Calomel may be insufflated after douching. It may be necessary to open the frontal or other sinuses, and to irrigate the passages.

Prophylaxis.—The prophylaxis consists in the avoidance of sleeping in the open air except under a mosquito curtain, and in the prompt treatment of any case in which a fly has been known to enter the nose.

BRONCHIAL SPIROCHÆTOSIS.

Definition.—Bronchial spirochætosis is a peculiar form of bronchitis characterized by the presence of enormous numbers of spirochætes in the expectoration.

History.—Bronchial spirochætosis was first described by Castellani in 1906. In 1909, Waters described numerous cases of the disease occurring in India, while Branch in the West Indies, and Jackson in the Philippine Islands have also observed cases.

Climatology.—The geography of the disease is not fully known, but its distribution appears to be extensive, as it is known in India, Ceylon, the Philippine Islands, and the West Indies.

Ætiology.—Enormous numbers of spirochætes are found in the expectoration, and these may be classified into various groups when coloured by Leishman's or Giemsa's stain. These groups are :—

1. Very thick individuals, from 15 to 39 μ in length, with irregular coils, which vary in number, but are never numerous. These forms generally take a bluish tint with the stain.

2. Individuals resembling *S. refringens* Schaudinn, and possessing a few graceful waves and pointed extremities.

3. Thin, delicate spirochætes, with numerous small uniform coils and tapering ends. Sometimes one of the extremities is blunt, while the other is pointed. This is perhaps the commonest type.

4. Extremely thin delicate organisms, with very few irregularly shaped coils.

There is little doubt, therefore, that the term *Spiroschaudinnia bronchialis* Castellani 1907 covers several varieties of spirochætes and possibly different species.

Symptomatology.—The disease presents two types—viz., acute broncho-spirochætosis and chronic broncho-spirochætosis.

Acute Broncho-Spirochætosis.—In the acute type the patient has fever, feels weak, and suffers considerably from a cough, the expectoration being scanty and of a mucous character, but very often the general condition, according to our experience, is not bad.

Chronic Broncho-Spirochætosis.—Chronic bronchial spirochætosis may follow on an acute attack, but very frequently, at least in Ceylon, the onset is quite insidious and slow. The patient has a chronic cough, which is frequently more severe in the mornings. The expectoration is not very abundant, and is muco-purulent in character.

In some cases for periods of two or three days, and even much longer, the expectoration contains blood, which is intimately mixed with the muco-pus, and varies in amount. Sometimes attacks of genuine hæmoptysis occur, one or two teaspoonfuls or more of blood being expectorated. In some cases there is no fever; in others a true hectic-like fever may be present. In some cases, however, the rise of temperature takes place in the morning, and not in the afternoon; in others the fever is present only occasionally, and is very

irregular. The physical examination of the chest reveals very little except a few dry or coarse moist râles. The general condition may remain fairly good for a long time, though a certain degree of anæmia is often present. A few cases waste rapidly.

The course of the disease is very prolonged, the first case observed by one of us in 1904 being not merely still alive in 1913, but practically cured.

Diagnosis.—The acute type is generally mistaken for influenza or malaria. The examination of the sputum in which no Pfeiffer's bacilli are found will distinguish the affection from influenza, and the examination of the blood will exclude malaria.

Cases of the chronic type presenting blood in the expectoration are generally diagnosed as phthisis. The examination of the sputum for tubercular bacilli will be always negative, and the animal inoculations will remain without effect. The ophtho- and cuti-reactions are negative in the great majority of cases.

Occasionally, however, cases of mixed infections of tuberculosis and spirochætosis occur, one such case being described by Branch.

Spirochætosis is easily distinguished from endemic hæmoptysis by the examination of the sputum, which will show absence of the ova of *Paragonimus westermani*, and from bronchomycosis by the absence of fungi.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is favourable *quo ad vitam*, but the disease may take a chronic course with anæmia and wasting.

Treatment.—Treatment with the ordinary expectorant mixtures is unsatisfactory, but in chronic cases the glycerophosphates and arsenic give somewhat better results.

Prophylaxis.—Nothing can at present be said with regard to this.

TROPICAL BRONCHOMYCOSES.

General Remarks.—Affections of the bronchi and lungs due to fungi are common in the tropics, though very little attention has been paid to them till recently. These conditions may be due to a variety of fungi, belonging to the following genera :

1. *Monilia* Gmelin 1791.
2. *Nocardia* Toni and Trevisan 1898.
3. *Aspergillus* Micheli 1729, *Sterigmatocystis* Cramer 1869, *Penicillium* Link 1908.
4. *Mucor* Micheli 1729 and *Rhizomucor* Lucet and Costantin 1900, *Lichtheimia* Vuillemin 1904.
5. *Sporotrichum* Link 1889.
6. Undetermined fungi.

The symptoms are somewhat similar, whichever fungus is the ætiological factor. In mild cases there are signs of slight bronchitis with muco-purulent expectoration, in which the fungi are found.

In severe cases the patient presents all the symptoms of phthisis with hectic fever and hæmorrhagic expectoration.

Mild cases may get cured spontaneously; but they are often benefited by potassium iodide. We will describe in detail the form of bronchomycosis due to fungi of the genus *Monilia*, as this type is extremely common in Ceylon, and it has been possible to investigate it more completely.

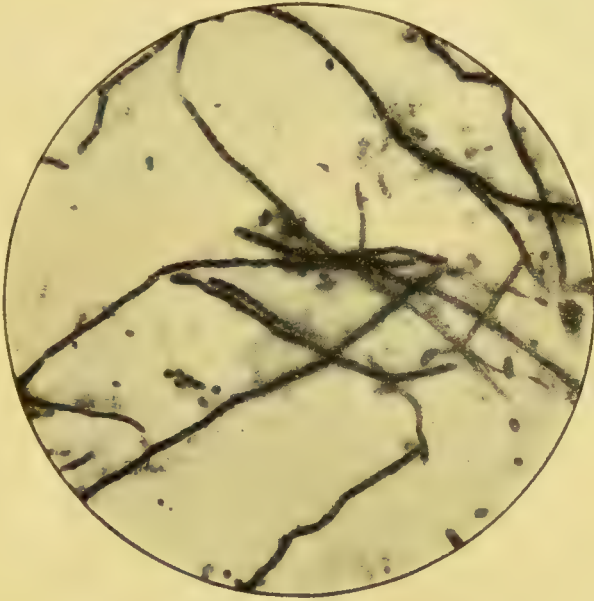


FIG. 514.—FUNGUS FROM A CASE OF BRONCHOMYCOSIS (UNDETERMINED).

Bronchomoniliasis.

Synonyms.—Broncho-oidiosis (Castellani); Broncho-endomycosis (Castellani); Bronchoblastomycosis.

Definition.—An infection of the bronchial mucosa due to fungi of the genus *Monilia* Gmelin 1791.

Historical.—In the tropics the condition has been studied by one of us, who since 1905 has published many cases, divisible into a mild type and a severe type of the disease, and has described several new species of *Monilia*.

Ætiology.—In Ceylon the malady is generally due to *Monilia tropicalis* Castellani 1910. The same fungus may be found in cases coming from South India and the Malay States. It would appear that the fungus is the real cause of the disease, as no other ætiological agents, such as the tubercle bacillus, etc., are found. Moreover, when the patient gets better, the fungus becomes very scanty or disappears completely. In some cases other species of the fungus may be observed, but it is doubtful whether all of these are really pathogenic. These species are *Monilia paratropicalis* Cast., *M. pinoyi* Cast., *M. guillermondi* Cast.,

M. negrii Cast., *M. nivea* Cast., *M. candida* Cast., *M. insolita* Cast., *M. pseudotropicalis* Cast., *M. lacticolor* Cast., *M. nitida* Cast., *M. lactea* Cast., *M. krusei* Cast., *M. rugosa* Cast. For the cultural characters of these species see pp. 822 and 823.

The infection may take place from man to man, and also probably by the fungi living saprophytically in nature. Monilia-like fungi are extremely common in Ceylon in tea-dust, and it is very probable that the so-called 'tea-factory cough' is a type of moniliasis.

Symptomatology.—A mild and a severe type of the malady may be distinguished. In the *mild type* the general condition of the patient is fairly good, there is no fever, and he simply complains of cough. The expectoration is muco-purulent and very often scanty; and no blood can be seen. The physical examination of the chest will reveal only a few coarse râles or absolutely nothing. The

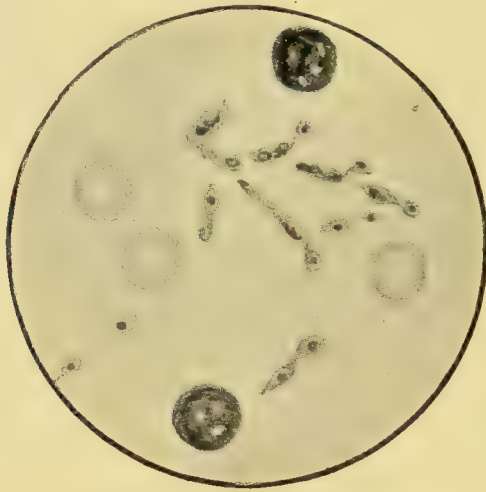


FIG. 515.—SPUTUM IN BRONCHOMONILIASIS (SEVERE CASE).
(From a preparation stained by methylene blue.)

condition may last several weeks or months, and may get cured spontaneously, or, continuing, may turn into the severe type. The *severe type* closely resembles phthisis: the patient becomes emaciated, there is hectic fever, muco-purulent and bloody expectoration. Occasionally true hæmoptysis occurs, a teaspoonful or more of bright blood being spat up at a time. The physical examination of the chest may show patches of dulness, fine crepitations, and pleural rubbing. This type is often fatal. Between these two extreme types there are of course cases of intermediate severity, apyretic or with subcontinuous and continuous fever and more or less marked bronchial and broncho-alveolar symptoms.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis of moniliasis is based on finding the fungus in the sputum. It is absolutely necessary that this should be collected in sterile petri dishes and examined as soon as possible, as sputum exposed to the air becomes contaminated with all sorts

of fungi in the tropics. In fresh preparations of the expectoration spore-like, roundish, or oval cells 4 to 6 μ are seen, often presenting a double contour, alone or more rarely with some mycelial articles. The fungus is Gram-positive.

To identify the fungus cultural researches are necessary. A particle of the sputum is smeared on maltose or glucose agar plates; after two or three days white, rather large, roundish colonies appear, easily distinguishable, even macroscopically, with a little practice, from the colonies of cocci and other bacteria. The fungus colonies are further investigated by inoculating maltose agar, ordinary agar, gelatine, serum, and a set of sugar broths. All the species of *Monilia* found in our cases grow well on ordinary agar, but much more abundantly on maltose and glucose agar, especially if slightly acid. On these media the growth, which is generally white with a smooth surface when young, slightly crinkled when old, is composed practically of globular, yeast-like cells, while in the water of condensation globular cells and mycelial elements are found together. A little mycelium may, however, be found also occasionally in the growth on the slope. For further details see pp. 822 and 823.

On serum all the strains produce at first a white growth, but some, later on, induce a peculiar brownish-black discoloration of the medium round the growth. Most species do not liquefy the medium.

On gelatine all the species grow fairly well; a few, including *Monilia albicans*, produce liquefaction of this medium. In milk some do not produce either acid or clot, others produce a temporary or permanent acidity, others clot the milk or peptonize it. The reactions in the various sugar broths are important, and in association with the behaviour of the fungi on serum gelatine and milk, give the data on which to differentiate the various species (*vide* pp. 822 and 823).

Differential Diagnosis.—Primary bronchomoniliasis as described in this chapter should be distinguished from the secondary bronchomoniliasis occasionally met with in cachectic patients suffering from cancer, diabetes, tuberculosis, etc. In such cases there is generally thrush of the oral mucosa, and the thrush *Monilia* spreads to the pharynx, larynx, and bronchial mucosa, while in primary bronchomoniliasis the oral mucosa is not, as a rule, affected.

From pulmonary tuberculosis the condition is distinguished by the absence of the tubercle bacillus in the sputum and the negative animal inoculations. Cases of mixed infection, however—tuberculosis, and moniliasis—are occasionally met with, the sputum containing both the tubercle bacillus and the *Monilia* fungi.

From broncho-spirochætosis it is recognized by the absence of spirochætes, from endemic hæmoptysis by the absence of the ova of *Paragonimus westermani* Kerbert.

Prognosis.—The cases of a mild type may recover spontaneously or under appropriate treatment. Those of the severe type usually end fatally.

Treatment.—Mild cases and those of medium gravity respond quickly to potassium iodide (gr. x. to xx.) given well diluted in water or milk three times daily. When potassium iodide causes severe symptoms of iodism, saliodin in the same doses (in cachets) may be administered. In the cases of the severe type we have seen no improvement from the many different treatments adminis-

tered. Potassium iodide, however, should always be tried in these cases, as well as balsams. The diet should be nourishing; hypophosphites and glycerophosphates may be tried to keep up the strength of the patient, as in phthisis.

Tea-Factory Cough.

This affection, common in Ceylon, is probably a form of bronchomycosis. Coolies working in tea-factories are occasionally observed to deteriorate in their general health, losing flesh and becoming easily tired, at the same time they develop a cough with mucopurulent expectoration. The physical examination of the chest reveals nothing except occasionally a few coarse râles. If these coolies are taken away from the factory and sent to work in the fields, all the symptoms slowly disappear.

A similar affection may be observed in tea-tasters. Tea-tasters, in order to judge of the quality of teas, not only taste infusions, but frequently fill their hands with the leaves and bury their noses in them, snuffing them up; in this way a certain amount of tea-dust enters their nasal cavities, and with the tea-dust the micro-organisms which are found in it. According to the researches of one of us, tea and tea-dust in Ceylon contain:—

1. Fungi of the genus *Monilia* constantly.
2. Fungi of the genus *Aspergillus*, *Sterigmatocystis*, and *Penicillium* frequently.
3. A peculiar *streptococcus*, somewhat different from *S. pyogenes*, frequently.

It is interesting to note that such germs are very rare or absent in samples of tea examined in England. The same organisms may be found, in Ceylon, in nasal cavities of tea-tasters; in their expectoration the *Monilia*-like fungi are practically constant, the *streptococci* very frequent, while *Aspergillus* and *Penicillium* fungi are rare. Guinea-pigs in whose nostrils tea-dust is daily insufflated for months, develop a broncho-alveolar moniliasis.

Bronchial Nocardiasis.

Synonym.—Bronchial streptomycosis.

This type of bronchomycosis has been studied by many investigators in Europe, among whom we may mention Foulerton, who has made a very complete study of the condition in England. One of us has observed two cases in Ceylon. The symptoms may closely resemble tuberculosis of the lungs. The sputum contains acid-fast rods, which closely resemble the tubercle bacillus, but are often longer, and the branching is much more definite. The subcutaneous inoculation of such sputum does not produce tuberculosis in guinea-pigs. Several species of *Nocardia* (*N. hominis* Foulerton, etc.) have been described, some of which are easily grown, others are grown with difficulty, and a few cannot be cultivated. The prognosis is bad, and the treatment unsatisfactory.

Bronchial Aspergillosis.

Synonyms.—Broncho-alveolar aspergillosis, Aspergillar pseudo-tuberculosis, Pneumomycosis of aspergillar origin.

Definition.—A form of bronchitis and broncho-alveolitis due to fungi of the genus *Aspergillus* Micheli 1723 and *Sterigmatocystis* Cramer 1859.

Historical.—The condition has been studied by Virchow, Lichleine, Dieulafoy, Chantemesse, Widal, one of us, Wise, and others.

Climatology.—The geographical distribution of the disease seems to be cosmopolitan. It is very common in certain parts of France. In the tropics we have seen some cases in Ceylon and Tropical Africa, and recently Wise has reported a case from British Guiana.

Ætiology.—The condition is due to fungi of the genus *Aspergillus* Micheli and *Sterigmatocystis* Cramer. It is common especially in people who have to handle various grains on which spores of those fungi are often found. In France it is extremely frequent among pigeon-breeders (*gaveurs de pigeons*), who fill their mouths with grain and blow it into the mouths of the pigeons.

It is probable that the deleterious effects caused by the fungi are due not only to a mechanical irritative action, but also to toxins secreted by the fungi.

Morbid Anatomy.—The lungs, and occasionally the liver, kidneys, and other organs, may show a type of pseudo-tuberculosis characterized by the presence of numerous mycotic tubercular-like nodules.

Symptomatology.—The presence of the fungi in the bronchi, when in small amount, may not give rise to any symptom. When the infection is heavy, symptoms of bronchitis with mucopurulent, and occasionally bloody, expectoration are present, and in severe cases the patient may have a serotiv temperature, with sweatings and great wasting.

Diagnosis.—This is based on finding the fungus. It is to be noted that in the sputum as a rule only mycelial threads are found, and cultivations are therefore necessary.

Prognosis.—Mild cases often recover, but in severe cases with bloody expectoration the prognosis is bad.

Treatment.—A change of climate and, when the condition is brought about by certain occupations, a change of occupation is very beneficial. Potassium iodide (gr. xv. to xx.) may be administered.

Bronchial Penicilliosis.

One of us has observed cases of bronchitis and broncho-alveolitis due to fungi of the genus *Penicillium*.

The symptomatology, diagnosis, and treatment are the same as in Bronchial Aspergillosis.

Bronchial Mucormycosis.

Cases of bronchitis caused by fungi of the genus *Mucor* Micheli 1729, *Lichtheimia* Vuillemin 1904, *Rhizomucor* Lucet and Costantin 1900, *Rhizopus* Ehrenberg 1820 may be met with, but are of rare occurrence. The symptomatology is the same as that of Bronchial Aspergillosis.

Bronchial Sporotrichosis.

A few cases have been described of a bronchitis due to fungi of the genus *Sporotrichum* Link 1889.

Undetermined Bronchomycosis.

One of us has described cases of bronchomycosis due to fungi which have not yet been classed.

REFERENCES.

Rhinitis Spastica Vasomotoria.

- BRERO (1905). Mense's Tropenkrankheiten, i. 218.
 O'ZOUX (1909). Bull. Path. Exot.

Gangosa.

- ANGENY (1912). New Orleans Medical and Surgical Journal.
 BRANCH (1906). Journal of Tropical Medicine, ix, 156.
 FORDYCE AND ARNOLD (1906). Journal of Cutaneous Diseases, xxiv. 1.
 LEYS (1906). Journal of Tropical Medicine, ix, 47.
 MINK AND MCLEAN (1906). Journal of the American Medical Association, xlvii. 1166.
 MUSGRAVE AND MARSHALL (1907). Philippine Journal of Science, ii. 387.
 STITT (1907). U.S. Naval Medical Bulletin, i. 96.

Hirudiniasis.

- MASTERMAN (1908). Journal of Parasitology, i. 182.

Bronchial Spirochætoses.

- BRANCH (1907). British Medical Journal.
 CASTELLANI (1906). Lancet, May 19.
 CASTELLANI (1906-13). Ceylon Medical Reports.
 CASTELLANI (1909). British Medical Association (Tropical Diseases section).
 JACKSON (1908). Philippine Journal of Science.
 WATERS (1909). Transactions Society of Tropical Medicine.

Tropical Bronchomycoses.

- CASTELLANI (1904-13). Ceylon Medical Reports. (1910). Philippine Journal of Science and British Medical Journal. (1911). Lancet. (1913). Journal of Clinical Research and Journal of Tropical Medicine.

CHAPTER I

DISEASES OF THE ALIMENTARY CANAL

General remarks—List of animal parasites—Diseases caused by animal parasites—Tæniasis—Strongyloidosis—Trichuriasis—Agchylostomiasis—Ascariasis—Oxyuriasis—Polyparasitism—Gordiaceiasis and Acanthocephaliasis—Diplopodiasis and Chilopodiasis—Gastro-intestinal Myiasis—Scoleciasis—The vomiting sickness of Jamaica—Earth-eating—Belyando spew—References.

GENERAL REMARKS.

THE diseases of the alimentary canal include a very large number of affections which are common to all parts of the world, and need not concern us here except to remark in passing on a few points. *Cancer* of the lips, cheeks, and tongue are frequently met with in Ceylon and other parts of the tropics. All forms of *dyspepsia* are common, but Marchoux and Brochet have specially called attention to the frequency of hyperchlorhydria and fermentation, which agrees with our own experience.

External hernia is common, but internal hernia is rare; we have only met with one example, and then of a most unusual form, the displacement being through a rupture in the transverse mesocolon, forming a hernia into the lesser sac. This hernia probably took place through the recessus intermesocolicus transversa (Bröscke). *Intussusception* and *volvulus* are known, as well as intestinal obstruction due to bands, and we have met with one unique case of fatal intestinal obstruction in a native found dead, caused by the compression of the rectum against the pelvic wall by an enormously distended bladder, which we had not thought to be possible.

Cancer of the stomach and bowels is by no means uncommon, but *gastric ulcer* is rare, and we have only met with one case. *Tuberculosis* of the bowel is generally secondary to tuberculosis in some other regions, but we have seen primary tuberculosis. *Appendicitis* is quite common in both Europeans and natives, and is caused by bacteria acting either directly, or introduced by the action of *Trichuris* and *Ascaris*. Appendicitis of schistosomic origin has been recorded by Mursell.

We would also call attention to the frequency of *intestinal sand*.

The true intestinal sand of animal origin composed of dark grey or colourless gritty particles, and largely composed of lime salts, is occasionally met with, but far more common is the so-called pseudo-intestinal sand composed of undigested remains of vegetable food (bananas, etc.), which may become encrusted with earthy salts. In these cases there may be diarrhoea and colicky pains.

LIST OF ANIMAL PARASITES.

The animal parasites of the alimentary canal are :—

(a) Protozoa.

BUCCAL PARASITES :—

1. *Löschia gingivalis* Gros.
2. " *dentalis* Grassi.
3. " *buccalis* Prowazek.
4. *Leishmania tropica* Wright var. *americana* Laveran and Nattan-Larrier.
5. *Spiroschaudinnia dentis* and many other spirochætes.
6. *Treponema mucosum* Noguchi and other treponemata.

INTESTINAL PARASITES :—

7. *Löschia coli* Lösch.
8. " *tetragena* Viereck.
9. " *histolytica* Schaudinn.
10. Several other species of *Löschia* of doubtful value.
11. *Vahlkamfia punctata* Dangeard.
12. *Paramœba hominis* Craig.
13. *Chlamydomorphys enchelys*.
14. *Cercomonas hominis* Davaine.
15. *Prowazekia asiatica* Castellani and Chalmers.
16. " *cruzi* Hartmann and Chagas.
17. " *weinbergi* Mathis and Léger.
18. *Tetramitus mesnili* Wenyon.
19. *Heteromita zeylanica* Castellani and Chalmers.
20. *Trichomonas hominis* Davaine.
21. *Lambliia intestinalis* Lambl.
22. *Eimeria stiedæ* Lindemann.
23. " *hominis* R. Blanchard.
24. *Isospora bigemina* Stiles.
25. *Chilodon dentatus* Dujardin.
26. " *uncinatus*.
27. *Colpoda cucullus* Guiart.
28. *Balantidium coli* Malmsten.
29. *Balantidium minutum* Schaudinn.
30. *Nyctotherus faba* Schaudinn.
31. " *giganteus* P. Krause.
32. " *africana* Castellani.

(b) Trematoda.

33. *Watsonius watsoni* Conyngham.
34. *Gastrodiscus hominis* Lewis and McConnell.
35. *Fasciolopsis buski* Lankester.
36. " *fülleborni* Rodenwalt.
37. *Kwan's fluke* Heanley.
38. *Heterophyes heterophyes* von Siebold.
39. *Echinostoma ilocana* Garrison.
40. " *malaynum* Leiper.

(c) **Cestoda.**

41. *Dibothriocephalus latus* Linnaeus.
42. " *cordatus* Leuckart.
43. " *parvus* Stephens.
44. " *brauni* Leon.
45. *Diplogonoporus grandis* Blanchard.
46. *Dipylidium caninum* Linnaeus.
47. *Hymenolepis nana* von Siebold.
48. " *deminuta* Rudolphi.
49. " *lanceolata* Bloch.
50. *Davainea madagascariensis* Davaine.
51. " *asiatica* von Linstow.
52. *Tænia* (*Tænia*) *solium* Linnaeus.
53. " (*Tæniarhynchus*) *saginata* Goeze.
54. " " *africana* von Linstow.
55. " " *hominis* von Linstow.
56. " " *philippina* Garrison.
57. " (?) *confusa* Ward.
58. " (?) *bremneri* Stephens.

(d) **Nemathelminthes.**

59. *Strongyloides stercoralis* Bavay.
60. *Trichinella spiralis* Owen.
61. *Trichuris trichiura* Linnaeus.
62. *Nematoderus gibsoni* Stephens.
63. *Trichostrongylus colubriformis* Giles.
64. " *probolurus* Railliet.
65. " *vitrinus* Looss.
66. *Agchylostoma duodenale* Dubini.
67. *Necator americanus* Stiles.
68. *Hæmonchus contortus* Rudolphi.
69. *Triodontophorus deminutus* Railliet and Henry.
70. *Cesophagostomum brumpti* Railliet and Henry.
71. *Cesophagostomum stephanostomum* var. *thomasi* Railliet and Henry.
72. *Physaloptera caucasica* von Linstow.
73. " *mordens* Leiper.
74. *Ascaris lumbricoides* Linnaeus.
75. " *texana* Smith and Goethe.
76. " *maritima* Leuckart.
77. *Toxascaris canis* Werner.
78. *Belascaris mystax* Zeder.
79. *Oxyuris vermicularis* Linnaeus.
80. *Gordius aquaticus* Linnaeus.
81. " *chiliensis* Blanchard.
82. *Paragordius varius* Leidy.
83. " *tricuspidatus* Dufour.
84. " *cinctus* von Linstow.
85. *Parachordodes tolosanus* Dujardin.
86. " *pustulosus* Baird.
87. " *violaceus* Baird.
88. " *alpestris* Villot.
89. *Echinorhynchus hominis* Lambl.
90. *Gigantorhynchus gigas* Goeze.
91. " *moniliformis* Bremser.

(e) **Crustacea.**

92. *Gammarus pulex*.

(f) **Diplopoda.**

93. *Julus terrestris* Linnaeus.
 94. „ *londinensis* Leach.
 95. *Polydesmus complanatus*.

(g) **Chilopoda.**

96. *Geophilus electricus* Linnaeus.
 97. *Scutigera coleoptrata*.
 98. *Chætechelyne vesuviana*.
 99. *Himantarium gervaisi*.
 100. *Stigmatogaster subterraneus*.

(h) **Diptera (Larvæ only).**

101. See the list in this chapter, p. 1319.

(i) **Coleoptera (Larvæ).**

102. Several described, but species not determined.

A number of these parasites, however, have not been recorded in the tropics, and others are believed to be non-pathogenic.

Pseudo-parasites.—Royal subdivides the pseudo-intestinal parasites into two classes:—

1. Those which are actually free-living animals, but introduced by accident in food or drink, cause intestinal derangements.
2. Parts of animals and plants introduced in the food and not destroyed by digestion.

Statistical information with regard to the prevalence of the various forms in different tropical regions is still wanting, but some valuable observations have been made, especially in the Philippine Islands. The relative prevalence of the various intestinal parasites in these islands has been carefully studied by Garrison, who finds that 84 per cent. of the investigated persons were infected with fifteen genera and about twenty species, multiple infections being the rule, the average number of infections being 2.25 per head.

The prevalence of the various parasites are as follows:—

	Per Cent.
<i>Trichuris</i>	59.0
<i>Agchylostoma</i> and <i>Necator</i>	52.0
<i>Ascaris</i>	26.0
<i>Amœbæ</i>	23.0
<i>Flagellates</i> and <i>Ciliates</i>	21.0
<i>Strongyloides</i>	3.0
<i>Oxyuris</i>	0.8
<i>Tæniæ</i>	0.7
<i>Schistosoma japonicum</i>	0.6
<i>Paragonimus</i>	0.4
<i>Opisthorchis</i>	0.3
<i>Hymenolepis</i>	0.1

Besides these, however, there were a number of undetermined forms. The infection with *Trichuris* is variously given in different countries—*e.g.*, Porto Rico (Commission), 7.27 per cent.; India (Fearnside), 6.95 per cent.; India (Dobson), 4.4 per cent.; Central

Africa (Daniels), 2.79 per cent. The infection with *Agchylostoma* and *Necator* is given in India (Calvert), 83 per cent.; (Dobson), 57.58 per cent.; (Fearnside), 65.83 per cent. *Ascaris* infection in West Africa (Wellman) is 50.97 per cent. Garrison considers his figure of 26 per cent., which is based upon adults only, as much too low. *Strongyloides* is placed in Central Africa at (Daniels), 1.5 per cent.; West Africa (Wellman), 0.65 per cent.; Porto Rico (Commission), 0.8 per cent. *Oxyuris* is given in India (Dobson) at 15.37 per cent.

DISEASES CAUSED BY ANIMAL PARASITES.

The pathogenicity of these intestinal parasites must now be considered. In Chapter XIV. we drew attention to the *Löschia* infecting the mouth and the alimentary canal, and need not repeat what has already been written. Dysentery, it will be remembered, can be caused by *Löschia tetragena*, and possibly by *L. histolytica*.

Diarrhoea or dysenteric-like conditions may be caused by flagellate organisms—e.g., *Cercomonas hominis*, *Trichomonas intestinalis*, *Tetramitus mesnili* Wenyon, and *Lamblia intestinalis* (vide Chapter LIII.). *Eimeria stiedæ* and *E. hominis* may also cause diarrhoea (vide pp. 421 and 422).

Diarrhoea and dysentery can also be produced by ciliate organisms—e.g., *Chilodon dentatus*, *C. uncinatus*, *Colpoda cucullus*, *Balantidium coli*, and perhaps *B. minutum*, *Nyctotherus faba*, and *N. giganteus*. With regard to these flagellates and ciliates more will be said later in the chapter on Dysentery and Diarrhoea (vide Chapter LIII.).

Schistosoma mansoni is the cause of intestinal bilharziosis, which will be described later (vide Chapter LIV.), while the ova of *S. japonicum* can be found in the fæces (vide Chapter XLI.). The infections by the nemathelminthes require rather longer descriptions—e.g., strongyloidosis, trichuriasis, agchylostomiasis, ascariasis, and oxyuriasis, which are important diseases in the tropics and a few words may be said on Tæniasis.

Trematodiasis.

In addition to the important members of the *Schistosomidæ* which are dealt with in Chapters XLI., LIV., and LVII., there are a number of relatively unimportant trematode infections which may be mentioned. These trematodiasis are caused by *Watsonius watsoni*, *Gastrodiscus hominis*, *Echinostoma cloacæ*, *Fasciolopsis buski*, *Fasciolopsis fülleborni*, and *Heterophyes heterophyes*.

Diarrhoea has been described as being caused by *Watsonius watsoni*, while *Fasciolopsis buski* causes dysenteric diarrhoea, *F. rathouisi* colic, *F. fülleborni* fever, and *Kwan's fluke* gastric disturbance, but the recorded cases are few, the method of infection is unknown, and the symptomatology has still to be carefully studied (vide Chapter XIX.). The presence of trematode worms

OVA OF INTESTINAL WORMS AS SEEN IN THE FÆCES.

TREMATODA.

- F, *Schistosoma japonicum* (after Leiper).
- P, *Schistosoma mansoni* (after Holcomb).
- G, *Fasciolopsis buski* (after Looss).
- H, *Heterophyes heterophyes* (after Looss).
- Q, *Dicrocoelium lanceatum* (after Looss).

CESTODA.

- J, *Dibothriocephalus cordatus*. (Outline only to show relative size. Figure K is placed inside it in order to economize space.)
- L, *Tænia solium* (after Leuckart).
- M, *Tænia confusa* (modified after Guyer).
- N, *Dibothriocephalus latus* (modified after Schauinsland).
- O, *Tænia saginata* (after Leuckart).
- R, *Hymenolepis nana* (after Stiles).
- T, *Hymenolepis lanceolata* (after Railliet).
- W, *Hymenolepis diminuta* (after Blanchard).
- S, *Dipylidium caninum* (after Diamare).
- V, *Diplogonoporus grandis* (after Brumpt).

NEMATODA.

- A, *Agchylostoma duodenale*.
- B, *Strongyloides stercoralis* (after Thayer).
- C, *Oxyuris vermicularis* (after Leuckart).
- D, *Necator americanus*.
- E, *Trichostrongylus instabilis* (after Ward).
- I, *Gigantorhynchus gigas* (after Ward).
- K, *Trichuris trichiura*. (Placed inside the outline of *Dibothriocephalus cordatus* for the sake of economy in space.)
- U, *Ascaris lumbricoides*.
- X, *Ascaris* sp. ? (We have seen large eggs of this nature in Ceylon.)

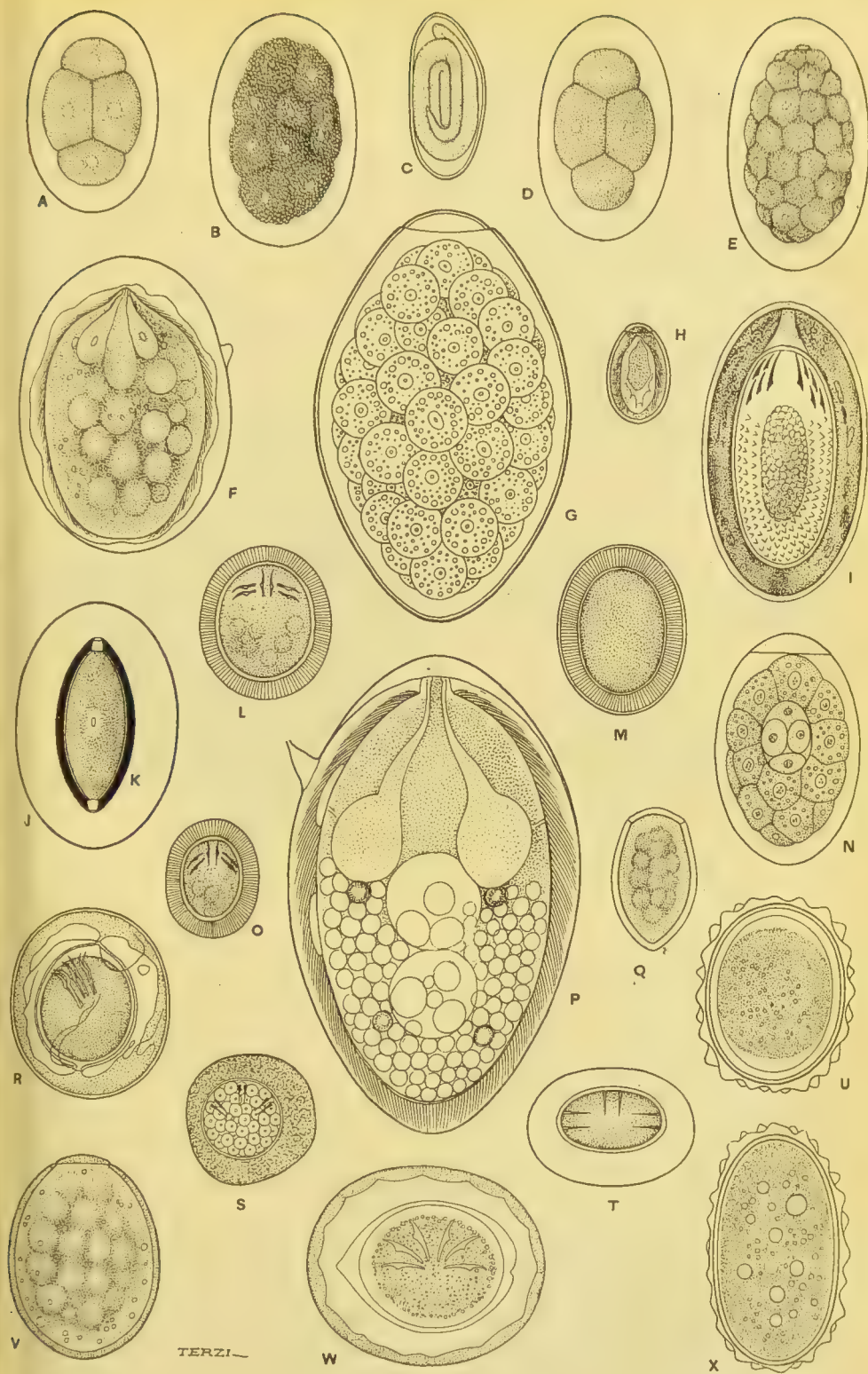


FIG. 516.—OVA OF INTESTINAL WORMS AS SEEN IN THE FÆCES.

can only be diagnosed by the discovery of the eggs or the adult in the fæces, and the treatment must be on the same lines as that described for agchylostomiasis.

Tæniasis.

Cestode Parasites (Chapter XX.) cause gastric and reflex symptoms, mostly of a vague nature. The former comprise salivation, diarrhœa, or constipation, with colicky pains, nausea, vomiting, or dyspepsia, while the latter include faintness, unequal pupils, disorders of vision and hearing, headache, itching of the nose or anus, vertigo, epilepsy, etc. Anæmia and skin eruptions have also been recorded. The treatment is the usual anthelmintic remedy of *Filix mas*, in capsules (six 10-minim capsules) or emulsions olei filicis $\bar{3}$ i. to $\bar{3}$ i.ss., gummæ acaciæ q.s., syrupi zingiberis $\bar{3}$ i., aquæ ad $\bar{3}$ ii. Fiat haust. To a child six to eight years of age olei filicis $\bar{3}$ ss., may be administered,

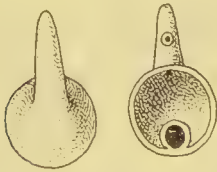


FIG. 517.—GASTRODISCUS HOMINIS.

(After Leuckart.)

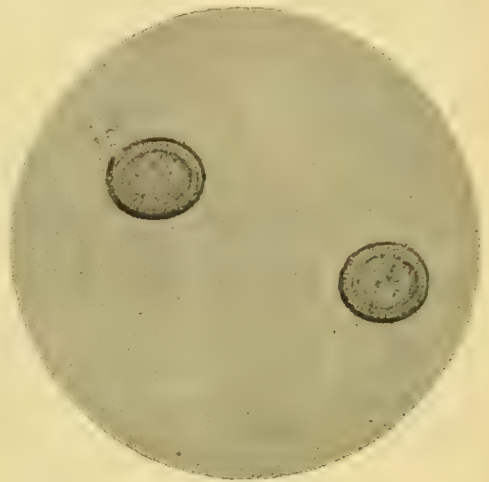


FIG. 518.—FÆCAL EGGS OF TÆNIA SOLIUM.

(From a microphotograph by J. J. Bell.)

followed by a saline purgative six hours later. Filmarosi, which contains the active principle of filix, may be given in capsules (two or three). Turpentine may be given in doses of 20 minims three times a day, or koussou 2 drachms, or kamala 1 drachm. Thymol has also been recommended. Naphthalene in 2-grain doses has been used in children.

Tæniasis is extremely common in certain parts of the tropics—as, for instance, Abyssinia—where some natives take every two months koussou flowers (*Brayera anthelmintica* Kunth). Several other native drugs have been used, among which, according to Annaratone, the following are the principal ones: Bulbs of *cossala* (Mol-lugoliro), *habbeciacco* (seeds of *Oxalis anthelmintica*), the bark of *Albizzia anthelmintica* (Bessina), flowers and leaves of buddleya, *polistachya* (*mattari*), the bacchæ of *Mæsa lanceolata* (Saoria), and of *Nijrsine africana* (*ssa'htso*), leaves, flowers, and fruits of *Celosia erygina* (*bellilda*), efficacious also for ascarides. Large doses of melon seeds are also used.

Rare Tæniases.

Some of the Tæniases—e.g., those due to *Tænia philippina*, *T. confusa*, *T. bremneri*, *T. hominis*, and *T. africana*—are so rare that no further mention is necessary beyond the descriptions which have been given in Chapter XX.

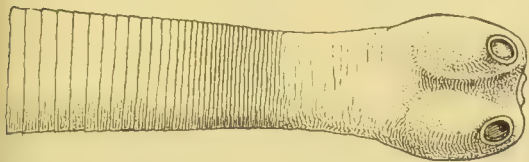


FIG. 519.—*TÆNIA SAGINÆTA*.
(After Braun.)

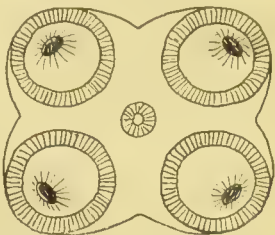


FIG. 520.—*TÆNIA AFRICANA*.
(After von Linstow.)

The Dibothriocephalises.

The Dibothriocephalises are produced by *Dibothriocephalus latus*, *D. cordatus*, and *D. parvus*. *D. latus* causes severe anæmia, and at times fever associated with serious symptoms, but this infection is not common in the tropics. The treatment is the same as for Tæniasis.

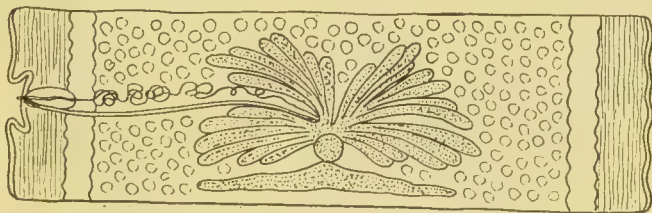


FIG. 521.—*TÆNIA AFRICANA*.
(After von Linstow.)

The Diplogonoporoses.

Diplogonoporosis is found in Japan, where it is due to *Diplogonoporus grandis*, and in Roumania, where it is caused by *D. brauni*. The recorded symptoms somewhat resemble those produced by *Dibothriocephalus latus*.

Hymenolepiasis.

Hymenolepis nana may give rise to severe reflex nervous symptoms, but only when present in considerable numbers. It has been found in Egypt, Siam, Japan, North and South America, and Europe, and is by no means a rare parasite in man. *H. diminuta* is a common parasite in rats, but does not occur so frequently in man, though a number of cases have been recorded in America and Europe. It does not cause any appreciable symptoms.

Dipylidiasis.

Dipylidium caninum has often been found in man, but is harmless.

Daraineasis.

Darainea madagascariensis is normally found in birds, but about nine cases have been recorded in children in Madagascar, Mauritius, Siam, and New Guinea.

Strongyloidosis.

Synonym.—Intestinal anguillulosis.

Strongyloidosis, usually called intestinal anguillulosis, is the infection of man with *Strongyloides stercoralis* Bavay 1876 (*vide* p. 519), which produces no symptoms if present in small numbers, but induces an intestinal catarrh leading to anæmia and an intermittent diarrhœa when in large numbers. The disease is met with all over the tropical world, and even in



FIG. 522.—*DIBOTHRIOCEPHALUS LATUS*
(PROGLOTTIS).
(After Braun.)

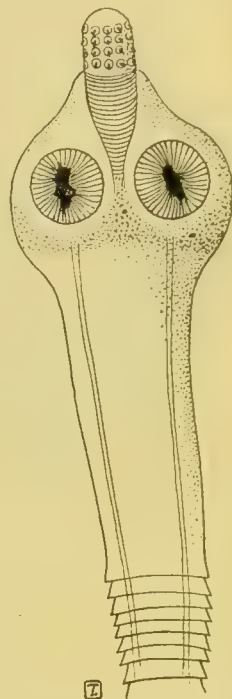


FIG. 523.—*DIPYLIDIUM*
CANINUM.
(After Diamare.)

the temperate zone. Diagnosis can only be effected by finding the rhabdite embryo (the so-called *Anguillula stercoralis*) or the eggs in the fæces, in which the latter will only be found when violent diarrhœa is present. The treatment is the same as for agchylostomiasis.

Trichuriasis.

Synonyms.—Whip-worm infection, Trichocephaliasis.

Nomenclature.—Büttner in 1761 first named the worm *Trichuris*, or thread-tail, for he mistook the posterior end for the anterior.

Linnaeus in 1771 called the worm *Ascaris trichiura*, but Goeze in 1782 changed the name to *Trichocephalus trichiura*, because he recognized the error made by Büttner. The term *Trichuris trichiura* Linnaeus must, however, stand, and the term for any disease associated with this worm must be 'trichuriasis.'

Definition.—Trichuriasis is an infection of the large intestine, appendix, or ileum by *Trichuris trichiura* Linnaeus 1771 (*vide* p. 563), which produces no symptoms unless it is present in large numbers, when anæmia, nervous and gastro-intestinal symptoms may appear.

History.—From the time of Barth, who, in 1845, was the first to ascribe a pathogenic rôle to the worm, there have been a large number of observers who have considered it to be the cause of gastro-intestinal and nervous symptoms, while Metchnikoff and

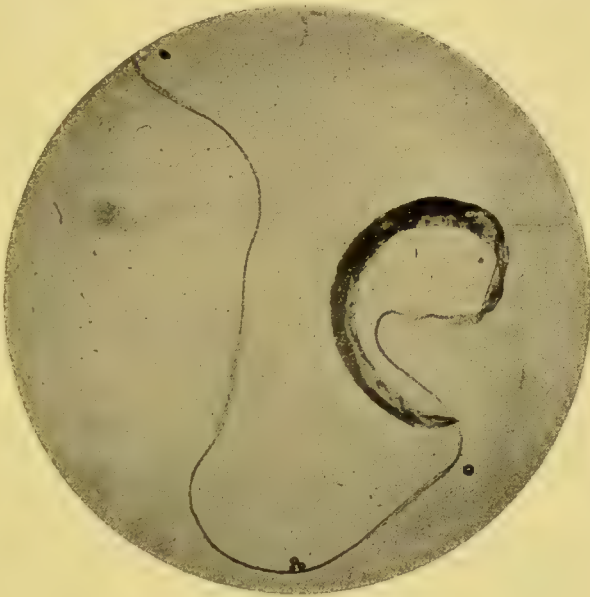


FIG. 524.—TRICHURIS TRICHIURA.

(Microphotograph by J. J. Bell.)

Guiart in 1901 considered it to be a cause of appendicitis. In the same year Girard drew attention to the possible transmission of pathogenic bacteria into the tissues viâ the wounds produced by the worm. In 1902 Schiller ascribed a case of high fever to the action of a heavy infection with the parasite. In 1908 Musgrave, Clegg, and Polk contributed an excellent monograph on the whole subject of trichuriasis, together with full accounts of four cases. Our own experience is in favour of the worm being occasionally directly the cause of appendicitis, for several times we have found it in the inflamed appendix removed by operation.

Geographical Distribution.—*Trichuris trichiura* is cosmopolitan in its distribution.

Ætiology.—Trichuriasis is caused by *Trichuris trichiura* Linnæus 1771, which, as far as is known, is really a parasite of man and monkeys, while allied forms exist in other animals. The eggs escape with the fæces, and require three to six months for the development of the embryo, which can then remain alive for years inside the shell if kept on moist earth. Usually the eggs gain access to man by means of contaminated food, especially uncooked vegetables, and to a less extent fruits. This is especially likely to occur in the tropics, where human fæcal matter is often allowed to be deposited in vegetable gardens. Musgrave, Clegg, and Polk report finding the ova in washings from fresh vegetables. Domestic animals, insects, flies, dust, etc., are also considered to be possible means of infection. When taken into the alimentary canal, it hatches and reaches sexual maturity in sixteen days.

It occurs more commonly among children than adults, women than men, and native races than European. But all these factors appear simply to depend upon good or bad sanitation, for the latter is the principal factor in producing infection.

Pathology.—It is believed that the worms attached themselves to the mucosa of the bowel by the head penetrating deeply into its tissue either viâ a gland or directly. In this position the worm is firmly fixed, and is more or less protected against the action of anthelmintics. They do not appear to be blood-suckers, nor is there any evidence that they produce toxins—at all events, in sufficient quantity to affect man. On the other hand, it is believed that micro-organisms can gain entrance to the blood through the wounds produced by the head, and this secondary infection may be the cause of the appendicitis and other pathological phenomena.

Morbid Anatomy.—A post-mortem simply reveals anæmia and dropsy, with at times appendicitis. The most marked feature is the presence of large numbers of *Trichuris trichiura*.

Symptomatology.—The symptomatology may be subdivided into the intestinal and appendicular varieties.

Intestinal Variety.—The illness begins with dizziness, tinnitus aurium, and a sensation of weakness, which may be followed by slight daily fever and later by œdema of the face and extremities, while anæmia appears and gradually progresses. Seen at this stage of the illness, the mucosa of the lips and tongue appear pale, the appetite is poor, and dyspepsia, followed later by nausea and vomiting, with or without slight diarrhœa, occurs.

The liver and spleen are normal, but a hæmic murmur may be heard at the apex of the heart, while the blood examination reveals a great decrease in the number of red cells and the presence of poikilocytes, but as a rule no nucleated elements. The hæmoglobin is also reduced, while the leucocytes are increased, and also in most cases there is an absence of an eosinophilia. The urine is normal. There is mental depression, restlessness, headache, and at times insomnia. As the disease progresses the anæmia becomes more and more marked, and death may eventually ensue.

Appendicular Variety.—The symptoms of this variety are the same as those for appendicitis arising from other causes. Operative treatment reveals the nature of the malady. The symptoms are the same as those for appendicitis due to other causes—viz., severe pain in the region of the appendix, tenderness on pressure, with often vomiting and fever.

Diagnosis.—The disease closely resembles agchylostomiasis, from which it may be differentiated by finding trichuris ova and no agchylostome ova in the fæces, and also by the absence of marked eosinophilia.

Prognosis.—The ordinary slight infection which is frequently met with may be considered to be harmless, but the prognosis is grave in those rare cases of very heavy infection presenting the symptoms described above.

Treatment.—The treatment at present advised is the administration of thymol by the mouth in the manner presently to be described for agchylostomiasis, and enemata of solutions of benzine.

Prophylaxis.—Good sanitation and proper disposal of sewage, associated with cleanliness in the preparation of food, as well as with personal cleanliness, constitute important prophylactic measures. Uncooked vegetables and skins of fruits should not be eaten.

Agchylostomiasis.

Synonyms.—Ancylostomiasis (this is the latinized Agchylostomiasis, and is a term much recommended by many authorities), Ankylostomiasis, Anchylostomiasis, Uncinariasis, Dochmiosis, Dochmiasis. *Latin*: Anemia intertropicalis, Hypoæmia intertropicalis, Geophagia (*pro parte*). *English*: Ceylon anæmia, Negro consumption, Tropical chlorosis, Egyptian chlorosis, Miners' anæmia, Tunnel-workers' anæmia, Hook-worm disease, Porto Rican anæmia. *French*: Anémie des Pays Chauds, Cachexie Africaine, Mal de Cœur, Mal d'estomac, Ankylostomasie. *German*: Ankylostomen-Krankheit, Tunnelkrankheit, Wurmkrankheit. *Italian*: Anchilostomanemia, Anchylostomiasi. *Spanish*: Aquilostomiasis. *Portuguese*: Oppilação, Amerellao, Canção. *Arabic*: Rihagan, Sufura, Tun-tun.

Definition.—Agchylostomiasis is a toxæmia resulting in a progressive anæmia, caused by *Agchylostoma duodenale* Dubini 1843 and *Necator americanus* Stiles 1902.

History.—The history of the discovery, together with the structure, life-history, and geographical distribution of the two parasites, has been described on pp. 554-561, and it now remains to give an account of the history of the disease produced by them in man.

If the references contained in the Ebers papyrus, as well as those in the 'Harita Samhita,' really refer to agchylostomiasis, they would make the history of the knowledge of the disease very ancient. It was, however, early recognized that there was a fatal disease of

unknown causation in the New World. Thus in 1648 Piso, in his work 'Historia Medica Brasiliæ,' gives an account of a fatal disease, Oppilatio (or Oppilação), present in Brazil, by which he probably meant agchylostomiasis. After him it was described by Père Labat in Guadeloupe in 1742, by Chevalier in St. Dominique in 1752, by Desportes in the same place in 1770, by Bayon in Cayenne in 1780, by Hunter in Jamaica and Rodschield in British Guiana in 1796, by Bryon Edwards in Jamaica in 1799, by Pitt in 1808 in the United States, and by Moreau de Jonnes in 1816 in Guadeloupe, while Chabert's celebrated account appeared in 1821. In Peru Castelnau found it in 1820, Jobim in Brazil in 1835, and Clarke in West Africa in 1860. In the meanwhile a peculiar anæmia had been found among miners, first of all in Hungary in 1786, and later in France, Belgium, Germany, and Cornwall, which for a long time was misunderstood, until Dubini's worms were found in the victims. In fact, nothing certain could be said about this peculiar form of 'tropical anæmia' or 'miners' anæmia' until Dubini found *Agchylostoma duodenale* as the cause of the disease, thus definitely separating agchylostomiasis from 'malarial cachexia,' and also clearing the diagnosis of miners' anæmia and tunnel disease. He proposed the name *Agchylostoma* for his new worm, deriving it from ἀγκύλος, meaning 'bent,' and στόμα, meaning 'mouth,' which he latinized into *Agchylostoma*, which therefore ought to remain the name of the worm, though *Ancylostoma* would doubtless have been a better rendering. Still, whether he misspelt the word or not, his name ought to stand. After his discovery the recognition of the disease spread, at first slowly, but later rapidly. Thus Bilharz in 1853 and Griesinger in 1854 recognized it in Egypt, and Wucherer in 1872 in Brazil, while Grassi and Parona, in 1877, drew attention to the importance of finding the ova in the fæces as a method of diagnosis, and in 1899 Ashford drew attention to the importance of the high eosinophilia. In 1898 Looss traced the method of infection by the skin, the lungs, trachea, etc., while more recently Sambon, Fülleborn, and v. Schilling-Torgau have traced a subsidiary route from the lungs viâ the blood-stream to the alimentary canal. In 1902 Stiles described *Necator americanus*, and in the same year Boycott and Haldane found the disease in the mines of Cornwall.

Climatology.—The disease will be found wherever there is a suitable temperature and moisture for the development of the parasites. It is therefore spread throughout the tropics of America, Africa, and Asia, and is also found in Queensland, New Guinea, and Fiji, and also in mines or tunnels in Europe, where the conditions of temperature and moisture resemble the tropics.

Ætiology.—The disease is due to the presence of *Agchylostoma duodenale* and *Necator americanus* in the body. These parasites, as far as is known, live entirely in human beings, and are therefore kept alive by 'patients' suffering from the disease and by 'carriers' or persons infected with so few worms that little or no symptoms

are produced. As already noted, the larvæ live in earth, and infection takes place by two routes, either through the skin or by the mouth. In the latter instance it is generally acquired by eating contaminated vegetables, or through the habit of geophagy met with in some natives. It is probable, in our opinion, that the pathological phenomena may, partly or principally, be due to toxins, either set free by the embryo in its travels from the skin to the alimentary canal, or inoculated into the blood-stream from the cephalic glands of the adult worm as it grips the villi of the intestine. But absolute proof is still required of the presence of these toxins, notwithstanding the work of de Giovanni, Loeb, Gabbi, Noc, Alesandrini, and many others. Weinberg's researches on various helmintotoxins must be specially mentioned. The Porto Rico Commission confirms the suspicion which had long existed as to a relative racial immunity, finding 71 per cent. of the cases in Europeans, 54 per cent. of the cases in mulattoes, and 41 per cent. of the cases in negroes, to vary from medium to very severe, though the degree of infection of the three races was in the proportions of 78 per cent., 72 per cent., and 76 per cent.

With regard to the two worms it is useful to note that *Agchylostoma duodenale* is larger and coarser looking, with thicker and coarser head, armed with four hooks on the buccal rim, and with the dorsal conical tooth not markedly projecting into the mouth. Female with sexual opening in the posterior third. Male with larger caudal bursa, with dorsal lobe. Ova slightly smaller. *Necator americanus* is smaller, with small and finely tapering head, simple chitinous lips on the buccal rim, dorsal conical tooth projecting well into the mouth. Female with sexual opening in the anterior half of the body. Male with smaller bursa and subdivided dorsal lobe. Ova slightly larger.



FIG. 525.—*NECATOR AMERICANUS*.
(Natural size.)

Pathology.—When the embryos enter the skin in sufficient numbers they cause an eruption of papules or vesicles, but some of these are more probably due to the pyococci and bacteria introduced along with the larvæ, which are the true cause of the dermatitis, as alcoholic extracts of the larvæ are said to produce similar lesions. These skin lesions are called 'bunches' in Cornwall, 'mazamorra' in Porto Rico, and 'ground-itch' in Assam. Smith has shown that experimental dermal infection with *N. americanus* causes local itching and a macular eruption, followed next day by a vesicular rash and swelling of the part, and on the fifth day marked swelling and enlargement of the lymph glands. This dermatitis disappears

by the twelfth day. There may be sore throat and uneasy sensations in the stomach for a few weeks, and the ova appear in the faeces about the middle of the seventh week.

It is not known what effect the journey from the skin to the alimentary canal has upon the host, but it is certain that in course of time a marked effect upon the blood and the organs of the body is produced, which often appears out of proportion to the number of worms which can be found in the intestine. Loeb and Smith find that the worm produces a substance which hinders the coagulation of the blood. Some observers—*e.g.*, Gabbi—have found that the blood of agchylostome patients is more toxic than the blood of healthy people, and contains more hæmolytic substances, but this has been denied by Marini. Padoa and others have observed that the processes of intestinal putrefaction are very



FIG. 526.—CASE OF AGCHYLOSTOMIASIS.
(Note the swollen face.)

marked in agchylostomiasis. In our opinion the anæmia is due to a complex of causes—*viz.*, the hæmolytic toxins secreted by the worm, actual loss of blood from the bites of the worms, and microbic secondary infections.

Morbid Anatomy.—An eruption about the feet, œdema about the ankles, with a peculiar dead-white appearance of the conjunctiva, are often seen on the post-mortem table. On opening the abdomen, it will be noted that the tissues are damp, the peritoneum sodden, the intestines very pale, and some straw-coloured fluid will generally be seen in the peritoneal cavity. All the organs appear damp and pale. The lungs are œdematous, the heart pale and fatty, with sometimes hypertrophy of the left ventricle. The liver is fatty; the spleen presents various appearances, but generally is shrunken; the pancreas is normal, as are the suprarenals; the stomach shows

chronic gastritis; the jejunum and ileum are usually contracted; and the mucosa is often dark red in colour, and marked by small hæmorrhagic points, which indicate the position of the bites. The agchylostomes may be found in large numbers, or may require considerable looking for. Sometimes they are firmly attached to the mucosæ. The kidneys are usually enlarged, pale, and fatty.

Symptomatology.—The first stage or invasion of the body by the embryos may be marked by dermatitis of various types, papulo-vesicular or pustulo-ulcerative. The dermatitis is generally situated on the soles of the feet, and called by the natives of the West Indies 'mazamorra' (ground-itch), and is also known as 'pani-ghao' and the sore feet of coolies. It is probable, as remarked by Balfour, that the symptoms of the initial dermatitis, urticarial wheals, redness, and itching, are due directly to the larvæ, while the pustular stage is caused by secondary pyogenic infection. The second stage is the development of a leucocytosis and an eosinophilia before the definite disease begins. The third stage is when the anæmia begins to be appreciable.

The patient becomes pale, weak, and dropsical, the pallor being most marked in the conjunctiva of the lower eyelid, which becomes of a peculiar dead-white appearance. The emaciation may be marked, but, on the other hand, it may be concealed by the dropsy. In many cases there is œdema round the ankles, and in others there may be general œdema, with often ascites, œdema of the legs, scrotum, or face. When the ascites is marked, the patient has a protuberant abdomen, and looks at first sight not unlike a person suffering from malarial cachexia or kala-azar. The tongue is said by some observers to have two purplish smears, one on each side of the median line, and to be pigmented, but this in our experience can be seen in normal natives. The appetite may be perverted and geophagy result, and in addition there are signs of dyspepsia due to the chronic gastritis, and there may be nausea, vomiting, heartburn, and pain over the pit of the stomach. The bowels may be constipated, or there may be diarrhœa. Ova of *Ascaris* and *Trichuris*, together with those of *Agchylostoma*, are often seen in the fæces. Occasionally a little blood and mucus are present, and Charcot-Leyden crystals may also occur.

Blood.—There is marked anæmia, which has been shown by Boycott and Haldane, by using Haldane and Lorrain-Smith's method of estimating the total volume of the blood, to be due to a hydræmia—that is to say, the total volume of the blood is increased without a corresponding increase in the cellular elements and hæmoglobin. This is analogous to the blood condition found in chlorosis, and is the reverse of that found in pernicious anæmia, the features of which are very rarely met with in agchylostomiasis.

The counts given by different observers vary. Thus, Ashford gives as the average of nineteen cases the following figures: Erythrocytes, 1,776,000; hæmoglobin, 21 per cent.; colour-index, 0·6; leucocytes, 7,000; eosinophiles, 10·3 per cent. Boycott and Haldane in seventeen cases found erythrocytes

from 4,072,000 to 1,533,000; hæmoglobin from 58 to 17 per cent.; colour-index from 0·71 to 0·56; leucocytes from 44,800 to 3,800; polymorphonuclears, 48·7 per cent.; lymphocytes, 14·4 per cent.; mononuclears, 5·9 per cent.; transitionals, 7·4 per cent.; eosinophiles, 23 per cent.; mast cells, 0·6 per cent. Ashford, King, and Gutierrez found erythrocytes from normal to 754,000; hæmoglobin from 8 to 101 per cent.; leucocytes from 5,000 to 10,000; polymorphonuclears, 54·5 per cent.; lymphocytes, 16·3 per cent.; mononuclears, 8·6 per cent.; eosinophiles, 17·1 per cent.; other forms, 3·5 per cent.

The red cells may show pathological changes and poikilocytes; megalocytes and polychromasia may be seen, as well as normoblasts and megaloblasts. The diminution of the colour-index is said to be the first pathological sign in the blood. In some very rare cases a condition of hyperglobulia has been observed instead of the usual oligocythæmia.

Boycott has shown that the principal leucocytic changes are to be seen in the blood before a condition of marked anæmia has set in, when it is found that there may be high leucocytosis—20,600 to 56,000—with a very high eosinophile figure of 56·2 to 66·2 per cent., while the hæmoglobin was from 98 to 80 per cent. When anæmia sets in, a leucocytosis is much less frequent, being met with in cases in which anæmia develops quickly. On the other hand, a leucopenia may be seen if the case is very anæmic. The reason for this alteration from a high state of leucocytosis without anæmia to that of leucopenia with severe anæmia might at first sight be thought to be explicable by the hydræmia producing the anæmia. Boycott, however, considers that this is not so, for he points out that leucocytosis can occur with marked anæmia, and that there is always a tendency on the part of the blood to restore its average volume and composition when altered from the normal, and comparing the normal leucocytic count of the hydræmia of chlorosis, says that, if there was no other factor, the leucocytic count of agchylostomiasis would not be affected by the hydræmia.

He thinks that the true explanation is probably exhaustion of the bone-marrow produced by the anæmia, and that it is partially due to a failure on the part of the individual to react to the stimulus to produce the eosinophile leucocytes. In any case, the leucocytic reaction does not bear any relationship to the anæmia. According to Boycott and Haldane, if the eosinophiles are deducted from the total number of the leucocytes, and the percentage of the remainder then calculated, it will be found to be nearly normal. The eosinophilia has been found to remain after the ova have quite disappeared from the fæces. Any inflammatory complication which leads to a polymorphonuclear increase may hide the true eosinophilia. The leucocytes are normal in structure, a few neutrophile, but no eosinophile myelocytes are to be seen. Wemberg and Mello have shown that the injection into guinea-pigs of extracts of various worms induces a certain degree of eosinophilia.

Reviewing this description of the blood, we would point out that it looks as though toxins were stimulating the production of the

eosinophiles, and at the same time preventing a proper formation of hæmoglobin, and finally producing the hydræmia. We must state, however, that occasionally we have come across severe cases showing no eosinophilia. Low has demonstrated that eosinophilia is generally well marked in children, while it may be absent in adults, and suggests that the eosinophiles, which are tissue cells at first, come into the blood in response to some stimulus set up by the infection, but gradually disappear as this stimulus weakens with the prolongation of the infection. As a result of the diminution of the production of hæmoglobin, the iron in the liver is diminished.

Patients often complain of palpitation or difficulty in breathing. The lungs will be found normal, but the heart may be displaced downwards and to the left, and be feeble, with a hæmic bruit at the base. The vessels of the neck may be seen to pulsate markedly. The pulse is quick, and may be weak, thready, dicrotic, and intermittent. The liver is very often enlarged, especially in children.

Fever.—Fever in agchylostomiasis was described years ago by Manson, Fernando and others, and more recently attention has been called to it by Gabbi and one of us. In some cases there is no fever, while in others this feature is present. In our experience three types of agchylostomiasis fever may be met with:—

1. The low intermittent type, which is the commonest, and in which the temperature seldom rises above 100° F.
2. An irregular type, at times intermittent, and at times sub-continuous.
3. An undulating type. This is very rarely observed.

Great care should be taken in making the diagnosis of agchylostomiasis fever to exclude other conditions—*e.g.*, malaria, Malta fever, kala-azar, trypanosomiasis, etc. There is much diversity of opinion on the origin of this fever. In our experience the fever is not due to the worm itself. It is of bacterial origin, being probably due to infections by intestinal bacteria entering the general circulation through the small wounds produced in the intestinal mucosa by the worm. The term 'agchylostoma fever' is, therefore, not quite appropriate. In several cases the fever continues long after the patient has got rid of the agchylostomes by adequate treatment.

Urine.—The urine is copious, pale, and often alkaline, with a specific gravity varying from 1010 to 1015. Albumin is rarely seen, but there is an increase of indigo-blue and urobilin, and there is albumosuria at times. The excretion of nitrogen is said to be much increased. Lussana believes that there are toxins in the urine which can be separated by the following method: The urine is condensed in a water-bath at 60° to 70° C. to a syrup, and then extracted with absolute alcohol, which is driven off, and the residue dissolved in sterilized water, and injected subcutaneously into rabbits. This is believed to produce diminution of the red corpuscles, loss of hæmoglobin and poikilocytosis, which speedily

disappear on stopping the injections. These findings of Lussana have been confirmed by some and refuted by other observers.

Mental and physical hebetude are marked, and other nervous symptoms may be observed. Children do not develop properly, and sterility, with delayed menstruation, has been noted.

When the anæmia becomes profound death may ensue from cardiac failure, but any intercurrent affection hastens the end in a case of agchylostomiasis.

Complications.—Any intercurrent disease is a serious complication, as also is pregnancy.

Diagnosis.—The definite diagnosis depends upon finding the ova in the fæces.

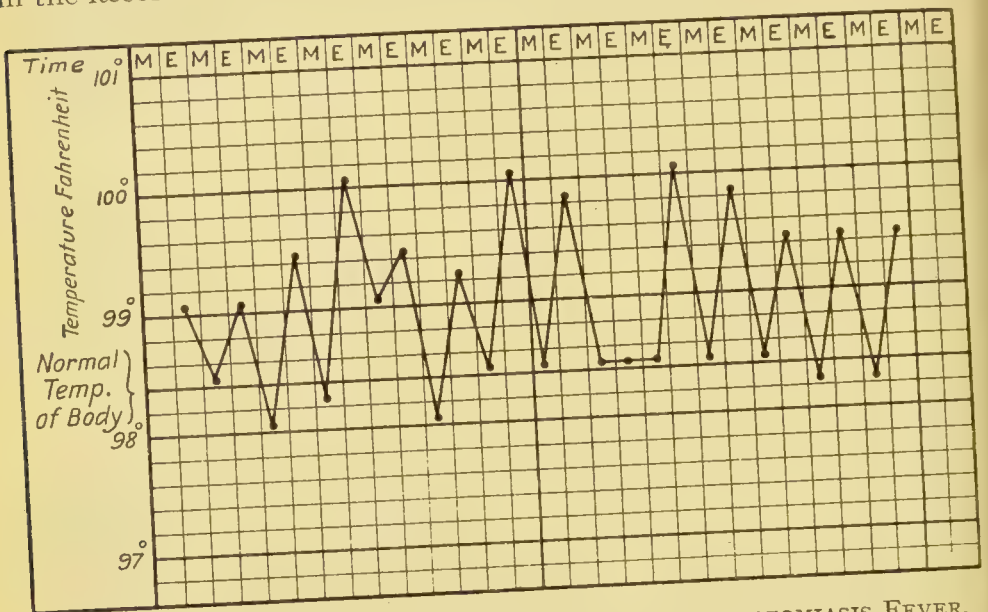


FIG. 527.—TEMPERATURE CHART OF A CASE OF AGCHYLOSTOMIASIS FEVER.
(From a case in the Clinic for Tropical Diseases, Colombo.)

Anæmia in tropical countries especially, if associated with dropsy, should at once lead the practitioner to suspect agchylostomiasis. It must be remembered, however, that it is by no means easy to find the ova in the fæces at the first examination, and that sometimes, even in the worst cases, they require to be looked for on several days. Occasionally it is useful to give an aperient to make the eggs appear in the stools.

To facilitate the search for the eggs in the stools several methods have been elaborated by Fülleborn, Pepper, and others. *Pepper's method* is based on the stickiness of the ova; a portion of the sedimented fæces is placed on a slide for a few minutes, and then gently immersed in water; after this, although all other materials are washed away, the ova still adhere to the slide. If this process is repeated several times, numerous eggs may accumulate on the slide. It is to be noted that eggs of *Ascaris*, *Trichuris*, etc., do not possess this physical property, and therefore do not remain on the slide.

Telemann's method is to shake up a small portion of fæces with equal parts of ether and hydrochloric acid, filter, centrifuge, and examine the bottom deposit.

Bass's method is to dilute the fæces with ten or more times their bulk of water, strain through two or three layers of gauze in a funnel, centrifuge, pour off fluid, fill up with diluted fæces, shake, centrifuge, repeat a third time, then examine deposit removed by a clean pipette.

Prognosis.—There is no doubt that agchylostomiasis is one of the great factors in producing the death-rate of a tropical native community, very often because it is not diagnosed. Ashford, King, and Gutierrez placed the deaths of Porto Rico caused by agchylostomiasis at 30 per cent. of the total death-rate, and we are not at all surprised at this, for our experience indicates that the disease is frequently entered in death certificates as anæmia, general dropsy, and malarial cachexia.

Treatment.—The aim of the treatment is to kill and remove the parasites, and this can be effected by thymol, eucalyptus oil, eucalyptol, beta-naphthol, or male-fern. A case must not be considered cured until the fæces show no ova on repeated examination after two or three weeks.

In all cases the patient should be carefully examined as to the condition of all his organs before treatment is begun, and should be placed on low or liquid diet for a day or so, and while being treated should be kept in bed, and care taken that the bowels have been well opened.

Thymol, introduced by Bozzolo, should be given in cachets, or as an emulsion. Generally 15 to 30 grains are given, and two hours later another 15 to 30 grains, followed in some cases by a third dose of 15 to 30 grains after another two hours. If the bowels do not act within four hours of the last dose, a saline aperient should be given. The treatment may be repeated on the following day.

Thymol is a very poisonous drug in large doses, causing first irritation of the cerebral centres, with excitement and vertigo, while a dark colour may appear in the urine, or, according to Blum, may be produced by the addition of hydrochloric acid to the urine. According to the same authority, this colour exists in the form of a chromogen in the urine, the chemical nature of which is threefold: thymolsulphuric acid, thymolhydrochinon sulphuric acid, and thymolglycuric acid. In larger doses the nerve centres are paralyzed, the blood-pressure falls, and the patient dies of collapse.

Thymol, however, is very insoluble in water—only 1 in 1,500 of cold water—but it is easily soluble in alcohol, ether, chloroform, glycerine, and turpentine; hence no alcoholic stimulant whatever must be given to a patient who is to take or has taken thymol, and not merely must care be taken not to order stimulants, but the nurses must be warned of the danger of giving them. Thymol is also soluble in oil. Hence no purgative of castor oil should be ordered after its administration. Thymol certainly should never be given

if there is marked visceral disease, nor do we think that it should be given in very profound anæmia—*i.e.*, when the number of red cells is below 1,500,000 per cubic millimetre. It is, however, very satisfactory in its lethal action on the worms, but the treatment must be repeated in many cases in a week, and again repeated if ova are seen in the fæces. Sandwith recommends a hypodermic injection of strychnine before thymol is administered.

Eucalyptus Oil and Chloroform.—A much less dangerous treatment is by oil of eucalyptus and chloroform, which should be preceded by a saline purgative given a few hours earlier.

The usual formula is:—

Olei eucalypti..	..	..	..	℥xxx.
Chloroformis ..	..	..	..	℥xlv.
Olei ricini ..	..	..	..	℥x.

One half to be given first thing in the morning, and the other half in half an hour. The chloroform is probably the active principle of this mixture. It does not work as satisfactorily as thymol, but it is safer, and can be used several days in succession. We use it often in children and debilitated adults. We have not seen the alarming symptoms described by some authorities as occurring in children and debilitated subjects. Some physicians prefer eucalyptol instead of the oil of eucalyptus. The difference is that eucalyptol is that portion which passes over between 347° to 351° F. when the oil is being distilled from the leaves.

Beta-naphthol can be given in cachets in 15 to 20 grain doses, administered in the same manner as thymol—*viz.*, one cachet every two hours for two or three times, with the same precautions as with thymol. The patients often complain of severe burning of the stomach after taking them. The drug should never be given to individuals suffering from diseases of the kidneys.

In debilitated patients beta-naphthol may be given in 5-grain pills made up with pulvis tragacanthæ composita and syrup. One to three pills, according to age, should be administered early in the morning on six successive days. No preliminary preparation is necessary. The results, however, as regards the destruction of the parasites, are not brilliant.

Nicol recommends—

Beta-naphthol (finely powdered)	..	℥iv.
Mucilaginis tragacanthæ	..	℥i.
Aquæ menthæ piperitæ	..	ad ℥vi.

of which 6 drachms (gr. xxx. of Beta-naphthol) is given to an adult male, 5 drachms to an adult female, and 1 to 2 drachms to children, for a dose. Three doses are given at intervals of two hours. Two hours after the last dose a saline aperient is given. Beta-naphthol does not keep well, and should be stored in $\frac{1}{2}$ -pound bottles, and kept in a cool place.

Male-fern, followed by castor oil, or calomel, or infusion of senna, has also been strongly recommended, and was generally used before Bozzolo introduced thymol in 1880. The Porto Rico Commission found it useless even in doses which produced toxic symptoms.

Nattan-Larrier recommends the following method of administering flin mas:—

First day: Milk diet and saline purge. Second day: Milk diet; a capsule containing 0.30 centigramme of oil of filix mas every ten minutes until twenty have been taken, followed in one quarter of an hour by a capsule of ether every three minutes until eight have been taken. After the last capsule, 15 grains of castor oil are administered, and, after half an hour, 25 grains of castor oil. Third day: A saline purge. Fourth day: Examination of the fæces and repetition of the treatment. Brimont recommends the essence of *Melaleuca viridiflora*.

Worms in the Fæces.—Whatever treatment be adopted its effect must be judged by the worms found on examining all the fæces passed during the first twelve to twenty-four hours after dosage. These fæces are stirred up with water, allowed to settle and the water decanted, and this process repeated several times, after which the deposit is placed on a flat dish with a black background, and the whitish or greyish little worms looked for.

Treatment of the Skin Eruption.—The area showing the eruption should be painted with a solution of salicylic acid in collodion (1 in 6) in the early stages, or later it should be soaked in a weak solution of carbolic lotion (1 in 100), and the vesicles, pustules, etc., should be opened and cleaned with 1 in 40 carbolic lotion, and the whole area dressed with a carbolic lotion or carbolic ointment dressing. The itching may be relieved by an ointment of salicylic acid gr. v. in 3ii. of zinc oxide ointment and vaseline. The dressing should be performed twice daily, and the internal treatment, as described above, begun at once, and repeated every week for some time.

Treatment of the Mouth.—For about two weeks after infection the patient should use a mild antiseptic gargle several times a day, and should be instructed to spit out his saliva, sputum, etc., and not to swallow it. The gargling should be performed before drinking or eating anything. The sputum should be collected and examined for larvæ.

Prophylaxis.—Prophylaxis must be based upon an attempt to kill the parasites in the human being, and to prevent the infection of the human being by the parasite, but in order to be successful in these methods it is absolutely necessary to educate both the rich and the poor of a district in the essentials of the disease. This must be done by illustrated lectures and pamphlets in the vernacular. An appeal must also be made to the people to come at once for treatment when suffering from skin eruptions or anæmia.

The first method is the most feasible, and has been tried on a large scale at Porto Rico, and on many estates and in mines. The quickest way is to examine the people for anæmia, and treat the anæmics with thymol, the eucalyptus-oil mixture, or β -naphthol, after the examination of the fæces. On estates the method of examining the blood of non-anæmic persons for an eosinophilia might be adopted, as the worms may be present before the anæmia shows itself. The fæces of persons showing eosinophilia should then be examined for ova, and treatment instituted on the findings.

Of course a certain degree of eosinophilia is also present in cases of ascariasis and other kinds of helminthiasis.

With regard to the second method, the formation and use of proper latrines may do much. With regard to estates, tea-bushes, etc., should not be allowed to grow right up to the coolies' lines, but a clear area should be left, and this should be treated from time to time with quicklime. Further, every alternate row of bushes might be left out in the half-acre adjoining the lines, and in the vacant spaces latrine-holes lined with lime might be dug. The use of bucket-latrines and the destruction of the fæces in a small crude incinerator would be better, and could be easily managed on estates.

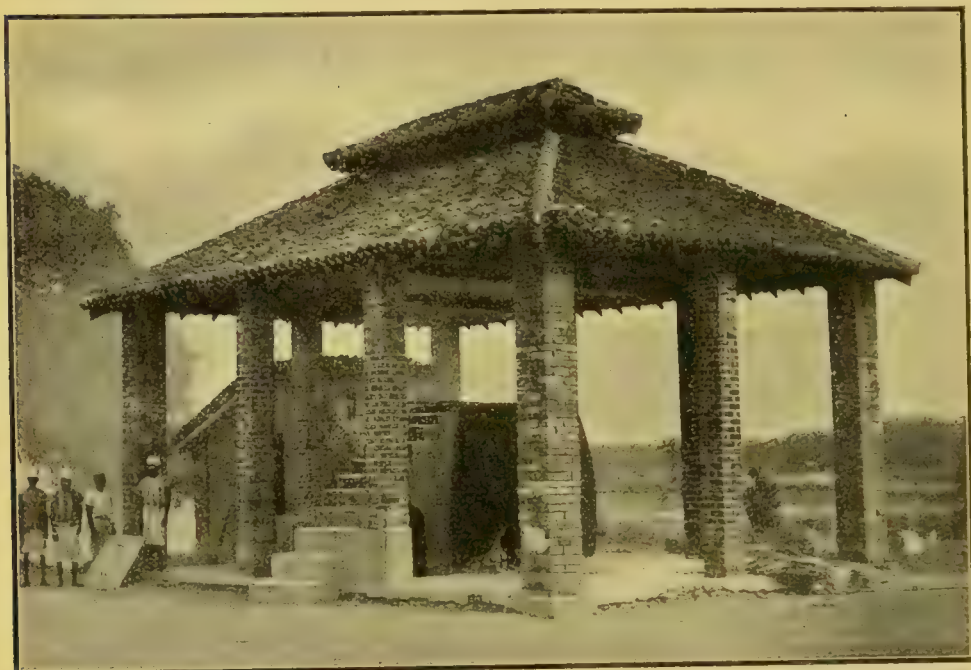


FIG. 528.—A CHEAP AND EASILY CONSTRUCTED INCINERATOR.

The best cheap latrine is 'Bailey's patent,' manufactured by the Empire Engineering Company of Cawnpore, at a cost of 118 rupees for a two-seat, and 360 rupees for an eight-seat latrine.

The figures show small incinerators in use in a mill and in a gaol in Colombo, but it must be remembered that fæces require a considerable amount of fuel and a considerable draught before they are properly burnt. There is, however, no need to go to great expense, and a simply constructed incinerator will often work well, if a little smell is not objected to. In order to calculate the size of latrine required, it must be remembered that an Indian community is estimated to pass 8 ounces of fæcal matter per diem in a mixed population of races, sexes, and ages, and 40 ounces of urine. The usual size of a galvanized iron latrine-bucket is 14 inches high by 12 inches broad at the mouth and 9 inches at the base, and it has a

cubic capacity of 0.9 cubic foot, and is said to weigh 10 pounds when full. Coir fibre is often mixed with the faecal matter in the proportion of $2\frac{1}{2}$ pounds of coir to 1 pound of faecal matter or 1 gallon of urine.

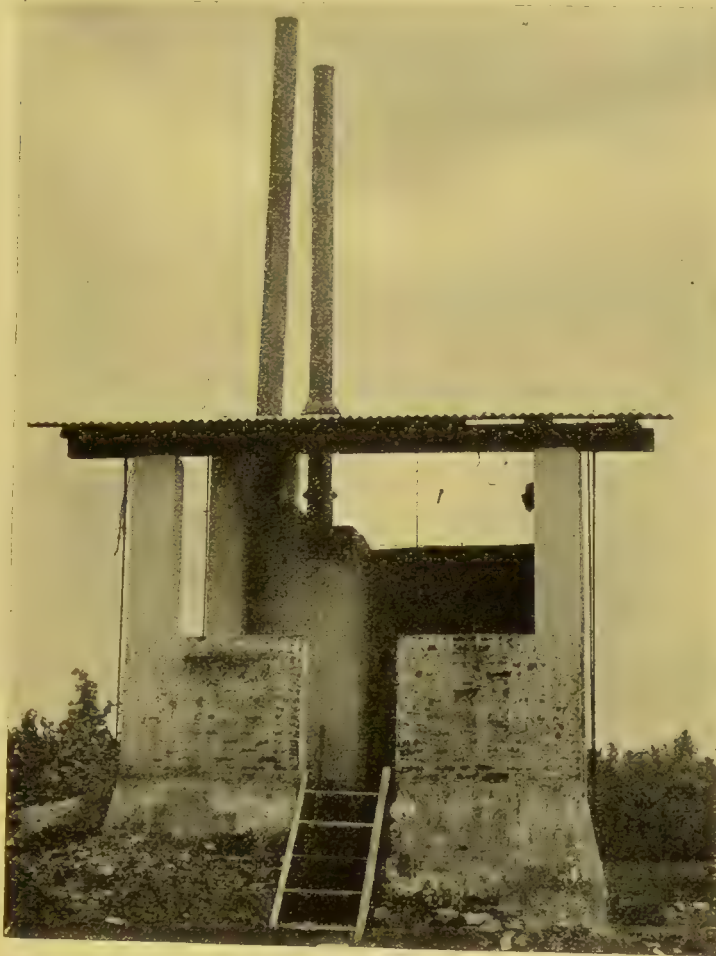


FIG. 529.—ANOTHER CHEAP AND EASILY CONSTRUCTED INCINERATOR.

Messrs. Freudenberg and Company, of Colombo, use a simple incinerator, and they have kindly supplied us with the following details of their process, which is carried out at night :—

- Average number of buckets of faecal matter burnt per night, 20.
- Average weight contents of a bucket, 26 pounds.
- Average quantity of ash left after burning the above, 5 buckets.
- Average amount of coir dust used per bucket, 2 pounds.
- Average amount of firewood used per burning, 2 hundredweight.
- Average amount of rubbish burnt at the same time, together with a few old gunny bags, $1\frac{1}{2}$ hundredweight.
- Average number of coolies whose faecal matter is dealt with, 400.
- Latrine coolies at $62\frac{1}{2}$ cents per diem to do the work, 2.
- Firing starts at 7 p.m., and is finished by 8 a.m. ; the highest temperature recorded was $1,050^{\circ}\text{C}$.

The urine can, of course, be separated from the fæces by using a Donaldson's separator latrine. The urine can then be disposed of by burial, and the fæces burnt.

There is no doubt that some such method would have excellent results in dealing with the problem in small communities and estates if carried out properly.

Badly infected lands might be treated with lime. It has been recommended that coolies should protect their feet by first dipping them in a bucket of tar, and then in one with sand.

The method of dealing with a large community is best exemplified by quoting the excellent work of the two Porto Rico Commissions, temporary and permanent, the former consisting of Ashford, King, and Igaravdez, and the latter of Igaravdez, Martinez, and Sein y Sein.

Patients attend at a central, or one of the outlying depots or dispensaries, where their stools are examined, and they are given medicines, and a card with the following instructions :—

1. Take one of the two purgatives given to you to-night (sodium sulphate).
2. Take at 6 a.m. to-morrow half the capsules [all the capsules equal 45 to 60 grains (3 to 4 grammes) of thymol, or 23 to 45 grains (1·5 to 3 grammes) of β -naphthol].
3. Take the other half at 8 a.m. the same morning.
4. Take the other purgative at 10 a.m.
5. You should neither drink wine nor any alcoholic liquor during the time you are taking these medicines.
6. Come for more medicines until the physician says you are cured.
7. Have a privy in your house. Do not defæcate on the surface of the ground, but in the privy.
8. Do not walk barefooted, so that you may avoid catching mazamorra in your feet. Wear shoes, and you will never suffer from anæmia.

In addition, farmers were requested to stop the pollution of the ground, and to introduce the use of shoes.

The result was that 11 per cent. of the population were treated in the year 1906-07 (89,233), and of these, 25·7 per cent. were cured, 17·4 per cent. practically cured, 40·5 per cent. were under treatment, 16·2 per cent. ceased to return, and 0·2 per cent. died, at a total cost of £9,600, of which £7,200 went in salaries and £1,100 in drugs.

Again, the highest credit must be given to the Americans for the fearless way in which they spend money on the prevention of disease and the free hand which they give to the sanatarian in the tropics.

In mines Oliver recommends that a solution of iron sulphate be used as a wash for the floors.

SUMMARY OF PREVENTIVE MEASURES.

Educational :—

Instruction of rich and poor with regard to the methods of infection, symptoms, treatment, and prophylaxis.

Personal Prophylaxis :—

1. Protection of the feet.
2. Protection of the hands.
3. Immediate treatment of the eruption on feet or hands.
4. Necessity of early treatment.

Public Prophylaxis :—

1. Search for and treatment of carriers.
2. Search for cases of the skin eruption and treatment of the same.
3. Search for cases of anæmia and treatment of same.
4. Provision of sanitary conveniences kept in good condition, and associated with a good system of conservancy.

Ascariasis.

Definition.—Ascariasis is infection with *Ascaris lumbricoides* Linnaeus 1758, *Toxascaris canis* Werner 1782, or *Belascaris mystax* Zeder 1800, the first named being much the most common.

Symptomatology.—The symptoms may be nil, or may resemble those of cestode infections, being partly gastro-intestinal, partly reflex, while skin irritation and eruptions may also be present. If, however, the number of parasites be very considerable, signs of toxic poisoning, or even of intestinal obstruction from interlacing of the worms, may develop, but the great danger is from the wandering of the parasites. If they wander up the bile-duct and into the liver, they may cause abscesses in the liver. We have found as many as eleven worms in the bile-duct, with a large number in the liver, three of which lay in abscess cavities. They may also enter the duct of Wirsung, and cause slight inflammation of the pancreas, or go into the appendix, and cause appendicitis. Further, they may pierce the bowel in cases of ulcerative conditions of the bowels, and enter the peritoneum or the bladder, or enter the lung, the nose, or the ear by the Eustachian tube—in fact, they may wander all over the body. The observer must, however, be careful to distinguish between the post-mortem and ante-mortem wanderings of these worms; in the former case the worms are generally found alive. The most important reflex symptoms are the convulsions so commonly met with in children. We have seen cases of fever resembling typhoid (typho-lumbricosis) which on post-mortem examination have shown no lesions of typhoid, but enormous numbers of ascaris.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis will depend upon the discovery of the eggs in the fæces.

Treatment.—The best treatment is santonin, with some form of purgative. Usually santonin is mixed with an equal quantity of calomel, and given in doses of 1 to 3 grains for an adult, and $\frac{1}{6}$ grain for every year of life for a child. The dose is given every morning for two or three days, and repeated again in a week if eggs still appear in the fæces. It is as well to remember that santonin may cause blue or yellow vision.

Oxyuriasis.

Definition.—Oxyuriasis is infection with *Oxyuris vermicularis* Linnaeus 1767 (see p. 547), and is common all over the world.

Symptomatology.—The symptoms are irritation in the region of the anus, with sometimes a distinct entero-colitis, and sometimes slight fever. It is usually stated that there is a sense of irritation in the nose. The diagnosis is to be made by finding the worms in the motions after a purgative. In girls the worms may enter the vagina and cause vaginitis.

Treatment.—The gravid females can be killed by rectal injections of quassia, alum (ʒi. to a pint), salt (ʒii. to a pint), but the young

forms require internal treatment with santonin and calomel, as described under Ascariasis. Flynn recommends sulphur (gr. iii.) three times a day in adults, and gr. i. ss. in children, given as a cachet or lozenge. A 10 to 20 per cent. calomel ointment, diluted unguentum hydrargyri (1 in 4), may be applied to the anus, or iodoform and naphthalin suppositories may be used.

Intestinal Polyparasitism.

We have investigated the question as to which parasites are commonly present in natives of tropical Africa and Ceylon, and find that it is the rule rather than the exception for their intestines to harbour more than one species of parasite.

Ætiology.—*Ascaris lumbricoides* is, in our experience, by far the most common parasite, and it is often associated with either *Trichuris trichiura* or *Necator americanus* (or *Agchylostoma duodenale*) in double infections, but triple infections with these three parasites are not uncommon, and quadruple infections of the three associated with *Strongyloides intestinalis* are also common.

Associated with one or more of these worms it is by no means unusual to find *Löschie* and flagellates, especially *Trichomonas hominis*, and more rarely ciliates—e.g., *Balanitidium coli*. *Oxyuris vermicularis* is fairly common in children, but tapeworms are not so frequently met with in Ceylon, India, and Equatorial Africa, while they are extremely common in Abyssinia.

In China and other countries *Trematode* infections must also be considered, and in the West Indies and Africa infection with *Schistosoma mansoni*.

Symptomatology.—The symptoms presented by the patients may be nil if the parasites are few in number, and will in any case depend mostly upon the action of that species which is known to be the more pathogenic or which is most abundant, but it may be very difficult or impossible to separate the symptoms caused by one parasite from those due to another. Cases may show signs of fever, anæmia, diarrhœa, and even dysenteric symptoms may appear if the infection is heavy.

Treatment.—The treatment must commence with that laid down for the parasite which is the more important from a pathogenic point of view—e.g., in the case of a double infection with *Agchylostoma* and *Ascaris*, the agchylostomiasis must be treated first and then the ascariasis.

Gordiaceiasis and Acanthocephaliasis (see pp. 564 and 565).

Infections with species of the Gordiacea and Acanthocephala are rare. Treatment would be on the same lines as for 'ascariasis.'

Intestinal Diplopodiasis and Chilopodiasis (see pp. 576 and 624).

Diplopodiasis and chilopodiasis are rare and unimportant, giving rise to intestinal pains and diarrhœa. The diagnosis is only possible on discovery of the parasites in the fæces. The treatment is the chloroform mixture, as for agchylostomiasis.

Gastro-Intestinal Myiasis.

Definition.—Intestinal myiasis is the invasion of the intestine by the larvæ of certain species of flies, but especially by those belonging to the genera *Sarcophaga* (p. 706), *Fannia* (p. 734), and *Aphiochæta* (p. 699).

History.—Many stray cases of myiasis have been reported from time to time, but these have been gathered together by Portshinsky in 1879 in the twelfth volume of the *Horæ Societis Entomologicæ Russicæ*, by Huber in 1899 in *Bibliographie der Klinischen Entomologie*, Heft 3 (Diptera), and by Calandruccio in the same year in the *Archives de Parasitologie*; by Pfeiffer in 1900 in his work *Fliegenlarvæ als gelegentliche Parasiten des Menschen*; in 1901 by Thébault in the *Archives de Parasitologie*; also by Wellman, and by Austen in an excellent paper read before the Society of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene of London in March, 1910. Cases are also referred to by Splendore (*Arch. de Parasitologie*, 1910), by Garrod, and by Soltau in the *Journal of Parasitology*, 1910. We have seen several cases in Ceylon.

Ætiology.—Intestinal myiasis may be produced by the larvæ of the following species :—

SARCOPHAGIDÆ :—

- Sarcophaga carnaria* Linnæus 1761.
- „ *hæmorrhoidalis* Fallen 1810.
- „ *hæmatodes* Joseph.
- „ *affinis*.

ANTHOMYIDÆ :—

- Fannia canicularis* Linnæus 1761.
- „ *incisurata* Lett.
- „ *manicata* Meigen.
- „ *saltatrix*.
- „ *des jardinsii*.
- Hydrotæa meteorica* Linnæus.

MUSCIDÆ :—

- Musca domestica* Linnæus.
- „ *corvina* Fabricius.
- „ *nigra*.
- Curtonevra stabulans* Macquart.
- Pollenia rudis* Fabricius.
- Calliphora vomitoria* Linnæus 1758.
- „ *erythrocephala* Meigen.
- „ *azurea*.
- Lucilia cæsar* Linnæus.
- „ *regina* Maly.
- Chrysomyia polita* Linnæus.

TACHINIDÆ :—

- Tachina larvarum* Meigen.

MICROPEZIDÆ :—

- Calobata cibaria* Meigen

SYRPHIDÆ :—

- Eristalis tenax* Fabricius.
 „ *arbustorum* Fabricius.
 „ *dimidiatus*.
Helophilus pendulinus Meigen.

PHORIDÆ :—

- Phora rufipes* Meigen.

THEREVIDÆ :—

- Thereva nobilitata*.

SEPSIDÆ :—

- Piophila casei* Linnaeus.

DROSOPHILIDÆ :—

- Drosophila funebris* Meigen.
 „ *melanogastra*.

CESTRIDÆ :—

- Spilogaster divisa* Meigen.
Gastrophilus pecorum.

Rarer forms of myiasis are those by larvæ of the Tipulidæ, by eggs and larvæ of the Culicidæ, and by the bots of *Gastrophilus equi*.

The eggs or larvæ of the above-mentioned flies enter the alimentary canal with the food, especially with vegetable food in an uncooked or partially cooked condition. Another method is for the fly to deposit its eggs on the nostrils and lips of children, from which they pass into the stomach and intestines, and a third method is entry of the larvæ into the rectum while using a privy. Intestinal myiasis is not uncommon in cattle, both in the Temperate Zone and in the Tropics. There seems to be no doubt that the larvæ can live for a considerable time in the intestine, but the most marked example of this is *Aphiochæta ferruginea* Brun, which is believed to be capable of passing through its entire life-cycle in the human colon, because both newly hatched and fully grown larvæ were passed by a patient every two months for nearly a year, notwithstanding the fact that nothing was said to be eaten which could have contained either eggs or larvæ. It is stated that species of the Phoridæ have been found in corpses, and it has been stated that the living larvæ, pupæ, and imagines of species of *Conicera* were found in numbers in a corpse exhumed at La Fayette, Indiana, U.S.A., two years after burial.

If there is any truth in this statement, it proves that the life-cycle of these flies can be completed in a parasitic state, and would explain the possibility of a patient suffering from myiasis for twelve years, and during treatment passing 1,000 to 1,500 larvæ (*vide* p. 734). Fenwick also reports cases in which it seemed probable that the whole life-cycle was completed in man. It is obvious that these statements require careful confirmation by other similar cases before they can be accepted without reservation.

Pathology.—The larvæ usually cause gastro-intestinal disturbance. Those of the Muscidæ may cause little or no disturbance, but those of the Œstridæ and Tipulidæ cause much disturbance.

Morbid Anatomy.—We are not acquainted with the details of any post-mortem examination in man, but in dogs the mucosa of the intestine is congested and marked by numerous small hæmorrhages, and it is thought that bacilli may enter the blood through these wounds.

Symptomatology.—After an incubation period varying from four to twelve days after the ingestion of the eggs, the patient, who has either felt quite well or has suffered from vague abdominal pains and anorexia, begins to feel ill with general malaise, headache, thirst, and faintness, and in children with rigors, convulsions, and even delirium. Vertigo may be felt, and generally there is some fever, which may last two to ten days or longer. Sometimes the continued fever and the diarrhœa renders the diagnosis of enteric fever probable. Pains vary from vague sensations to violent colic. Retching and vomiting may occur, and sometimes hæmatemesis, while dysenteric-like symptoms may also occur. When the larvæ attain maturity, they are sometimes violently evacuated.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis can only be made by *repeated* examination of the motions and the discovery of a larva, the nature of which may be determined in the same way as in nasal myiasis (p. 1281). Care must be taken that the larvæ really come from the bowels, and are not contaminations of the fæces.

Prognosis.—This is good.

Treatment.—The bowels should be cleared with a dose of castor oil and then an anthelmintic—*e.g.*, filix mas—should be administered. Thymol or santonin may also be used.

Prophylaxis.—All vegetables should be carefully washed and by preference cooked before being eaten, and fresh salads should be avoided.

Intestinal Scoleciasis (see p. 753).

Scoleciasis is the infection with the larvæ of beetles, and is very rare.

The Vomiting Sickness of Jamaica.

Remarks.—Under this heading Turton, in 1904, described a disease of children in the West Indies which, apparently, he considered to be a separate pathological entity. Recently Branch has given an account of the same disease, but regards it rather as a series of symptoms which, if full investigation were possible, might be found to be merely those of some known disease.

Ætiology.—The ætiology is unknown, and the post-mortem appearances are merely those of enlargement of the vessels of the brain and spinal cord, hypostatic congestion of the lungs, congestion of the mucosæ of the stomach and intestines, with the presence of a dark slimy substance in the lumen.

The disease is found in children from a few months up to nine years to ten of age, and usually in the months of December to March. It attacks more than one member of a family as a rule, and is apparently always associated with *Ascarides*.

Symptomatology.—The history appears to be as follows: Somewhere about midnight a child wakes up, and complains of pains in its stomach, and in a

little time it vomits its last meal. This gives temporary relief, but sooner or later the vomiting commences again, and consists of frothy mucus, accompanied at times with fever. Usually the patient recovers, but not infrequently the child passes into a state of collapse, with cold sweats, weak, rapid pulse, and shallow, irregular respirations, and death ensues, being preceded by convulsions.

Treatment.—The best treatment is santonin and calomel, followed by quinine.

Prophylaxis.—Nothing is known as to this.

Earth-Eating.

Synonyms.—Geophagy. *French*: Mal d'estomac.

Remarks.—Earth-eating is common in many parts of the tropics, especially in certain parts of Africa (*e.g.*, the Sudan and Southern Tunisia) and Asia (Malasia, Java, Borneo), but is observed also in Temperate Zones, in Europe, Northern China, and Japan. It is common in children and pregnant women. It is believed to be acquired by the children being left to crawl about and eat anything which comes to hand. It is also acquired by being taken as a remedy for syphilis and other diseases.

Christopherson says that it is common in the Sudan, where two forms of earth are eaten: (1) Karkooti (Nile mud); (2) taffel (some form of calcium carbonate). In Giava the earth eaten consists of bituminous clay, called 'ampor,' which is taken especially by pregnant women, who believe it will benefit their unborn babies. In Guatemala and other Central American countries natives occasionally eat a yellowish earth containing sulphur as a prophylactic against disease. In Japan it is said that the Ainu used to eat a paste made of starch and of diatomaceous earths in famine years.

Symptomatology.—The symptoms are usually emaciation and anæmia, with pain in the epigastrium and a sensation of hunger, while constipation is common. Earth-eaters frequently suffer from agchylostomiasis, and often have a yellowish muddy or earthy colour.

Belyando Spew.

Synonyms.—Grass sickness (Western Australia). Gastric spirochætosis (Ernest Black).

Definition.—A gastric disturbance characterized by vomiting; occurring suddenly after meals, and unaccompanied by nausea in certain tropical regions without any immediate cause.

History.—Under the above terminology Dr. Ernest Black has described to us a disease which he has met with in Western Australia.

Geographical Distribution.—It has long been known as a distinct disease in Queensland under the name derived from the Belyando district on the tropic 250 miles inland, and in Western Australia in certain tropical districts, chiefly coastal, where it is called 'grass sickness.' It also exists in some tropical districts in Brazil.

Ætiology.—The cause of the disease is unknown. Black has found a spirochæte in the mucous membrane of the stomach. This spirochæte is of variable size, small and slender.

Black thinks that, like other members of that class, it generates no free toxins, but its pathological effect is produced, on its death and disintegration, by the liberation and absorption of toxins.

The mode of conveyance is not conclusively determined, but it seems to be by means of contaminated food or water. In one district in Western Australia all the evidence pointed to milk as the medium. In Queensland, on the other hand, many years ago there was no fresh milk used in a district where the disease was common.

Climatology and Incidence.—In Queensland it persisted in the past in an endemic area in spite of a drought lasting several years. In Western Australia the outbreaks are strictly limited to the wet season, and start with the rapid growth of grass after the first rains. Hence its local name in that district.

Persons of both sexes, any age, and all races may be affected, those in robust health equally with those in ill-health.

Symptomatology.—The solitary symptom is vomiting, which occurs only after taking food. This may be within a few minutes, or may be delayed for some time after a meal. The character of the vomiting is quite distinctive, and reminds one of the action of apomorphia. It is very sudden, and rarely preceded, accompanied, or followed by any nausea, straining, or pain. There is seldom any premonitory sensation; consequently it is so sudden as often to be extremely embarrassing. It may occur after every meal or only after one or two meals in a day. It may be every day, or there may be intervals of one or several days between the attacks, which also vary in their duration. From the results of experiments, Black has come to the conclusion that the attacks are concurrent with and due to the death of some of the organisms, and that the intermissions are periods during which none or too few die. In the intermittent form there is little if any interference with the general health, but in the more or less continuous cases there is sometimes considerable loss of weight, the malnutrition then resulting in ill-health. There is no loss of appetite, but rather the reverse. If the attacks are short and the intermissions long, patients, especially children, sometimes increase in weight.

Treatment.—According to Black, the aim of the treatment is to destroy the causal organism in the mucous membrane of the stomach. Cyllin in palatinoids of 3 minims each with a wine-glassful of water three times a day is generally effectual and convenient. Thymol may be given in 1-grain doses three times a day, the patient being warned not to take any alcohol or oil. Chlorine solution, freshly prepared, has been strongly recommended. Other drugs suggested are carbolic acid, creosote, and β -naphthol. Whatever drug is used, it should be given at least half an hour before meals.

Prophylaxis.—Nothing is known about this.

Entalação.

Synonyms.—Mal d'engasgo, Dysphagie Tropicale, Tropical Cardiospasmus.

Remarks.—This disease has been known for a long time in certain parts of Brazil, having been described by Botelo, Langard, and recently by Paranhos. Bouchard has noticed a somewhat similar disease in pheasants which is due to a worm.

Climatology.—It appears to be localized to some districts in the interior of Brazil.

Ætiology.—The causation is unknown, but it has been suggested that it is a parasitic disease, that it is a neurosis, or that it is connected with eating diseased manioc. The last theory has been brought forward by Paranhos.

Morbid Anatomy.—No macroscopical lesions have so far been discovered.

Symptomatology.—The patient complains of severe difficulty in swallowing even liquids, and feels as though the food had stopped in the œsophagus and had not reached the stomach; hence the name 'd'engasgo,' meaning choked. During the attack the patient becomes anxious-looking, throws the arms about, and becomes dyspnoeic. The face is congested and the eyes protrude. The swallowed food is brought up by a process of regurgitation rather than of true vomiting. The attacks are recurrent, with intervals of freedom. After a time the patient may become cachectic from lack of nutrition, and die.

Treatment.—This is very unsatisfactory, and merely symptomatic. Bromides and chloral have been given, but a change of climate is essential.

REFERENCES.

- ANNARATONE (1912). Condizioni Igieniche Colonia Eretrea. Roma.
 BRANCH (1906). Journal of Tropical Medicine, ix. 374.
 CHALMERS (1903). Spolia Zeylanica.
 GABBI (1908). Riv. Critica Clinica Medica.

- GARRISON (1908). Philippine Journal of Science, Book III., No. 3, p. 191.
 SPLENDORE (1908). Arch. de Paras.
 STILES AND GARRISON (1906). Bull. Hyg. Lab. U.S. Public Health and Marine Hospital Service, Washington, 28, p. 74.
 STILES (1907). Osler and McCrae's System of Medicine, i. 525-637.

Trichuriasis.

- GARIN (1911). Enterite Trichocéphalienne. Paris.
 MUSGRAVE, CLEGG, AND POLK (1908). Philippine Journal of Science, B. III. 6, p. 545 (full literature).

Agchylostomiasis.

- Abstracts of Reports of Campaign against Agchylostomiasis (1906). Journal of Hygiene, vi. 656 (1908), viii. 553.
 ALESSANDRINI (1904). Polyclinico.
 ALLAN, W. (1912). Journal of American Medical Association.
 ALLARIA (1904). In scritti medici in onore di Bozzolo. Torino.
 BOYCOTT (1904). Journal of Hygiene, vol. iv.
 BOYCOTT AND HALDANE (1903). Journal of Hygiene, iii. 95; (1904), vol. iv.
 CAFIERO (1899). X. Congr. di med. interna.
 CALAMIDA (1901). Giorn. R. Acc. di med. di Torino.
 CALAMIDA, MESSINEO E (1901). Giorn. R. Acc. di Torino.
 CASTELLANI (1906). British Medical Journal.
 CASTELLANI (1903-12). Ceylon Medical Reports.
 CATTANEO (1903). Assoc. med. di Parma.
 CHANSON (1896). Comp. Rend. Soc. de Biologie.
 COSENTINO (1904). Lo Sperimentale.
 DE MATTEIS (1900). Gazz. degli Ospedali.
 GABBI (1908). Rivista Critica di Clinica Medica.
 GABBI E NADALÀ (1901). Gazz. degli Osped.
 GAGNONI (1903). Riv. di clin. pediatri.
 GIROTTI (1902). Gazz. degli Ospedali.
 LOW, G. C. (1912). Journal of State Medicine.
 LUNA, MARCHESE DE' (1902). Gazz. degli Ospedali.
 MANDOUL, JAMES E (1904). C. R. Acad. des Science.
 MARAGLIANO (1902). Gazz. degli Ospedali.
 MARINI (1904). Rivista Critica di Clinica Medica.
 MESSINIEO (1905). Giornale medico del R. esercito.
 MINGAZZINI (1900-01). Rass. intern. di medicina mod.
 MURSELL (1912). Lancet.
 NAAB (1902). Münch. med. Woch.
 PADOA (1909). Rivista Critica Clinica Medica.
 PRENTISS (1902). British Medical Journal.
 SANDWITH (1894). Observations on 400 Cases of Agchylostomiasis. London.
 SICCARDI (1908). Riv. Critica di Clinica Medica.
 STILES (1903). Bulletin 10, Hyg. Lab. U.S. Public Health and Marine Hospital Service.
 TURTON (1904). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
 VANNINI (1900). Il Policlinico.
 WEINBERG (1912). Bull. Inst. Pasteur.
 WINTREHERT (1881). Rev. de méd. franc. et étrang.

Earth-Eating.

- CHRISTOPHERSON (1910). Journal of Tropical Medicine, 3.

Entalção.

- PARANHOS (1913). Bullet. Pathol. Exot.

CHAPTER LI

SPRUE AND OTHER DIARRHŒAS

Sprue—Pseudo-Sprue—Hill diarrhœa—Low-country morning diarrhœa—Flagellate diarrhœa—References.

SPRUE.

Synonyms.—Ceylon sore mouth, Aphthoides Chronica, Tropical aphthæ, Impetigo Primarum Viarum, Diarrhœa Alba, Psilosis Linguae et Mucosæ Intestini, Phthisis abdominalis, Endemic diarrhœa, Cochin-China diarrhœa.

The term 'sprue' is a phrase used in Holland and Scotland for aphthous stomatitis in children, and was applied to this disease by Manson and Van der Burg, the latter calling the disease in Batavia 'Indische spruw.'

Definition.—Sprue is a chronic catarrhal inflammation of the alimentary canal, of unknown cause, characterized by a peculiar ulcerative condition of the tongue and mouth, and by the passage of large, pale, frothy motions, the symptoms waxing and waning periodically.

History.—Hillary, of Barbadoes, in 1766, in a most remarkably able manner, describes the disease for the first time under the name 'aphthoides chronica.' His account is well worth reading, and there can be no possible doubt that his description refers to the disease we now call sprue. The Indian physicians Twining (1835), Grant (1854), Cunningham (1877), mention symptoms indicating that they were acquainted with a disease of this nature, while Elliott of Ceylon gave a very good account of the malady, which he called 'phthisis abdominalis.'

At the same time—*i.e.*, 1864 to 1883—French physicians noted a peculiar form of diarrhœa, commonly met with in Cochin China, which perplexed them considerably, a large number believing that it was dysenteric in nature, while others considered that it was probably a new disease.

In 1880 Manson was the first after Hillary to clearly define the disease, which he called 'sprue'; and in the same year, and independently, Van der Burg described it under the term 'Indische spruw' in Batavia. In the next year (1881) Sir Joseph Fayrer delivered the Lettsomian Lectures on chronic white tropical diarrhœa. These three authors permanently established the disease as

a clinical entity. Since then many important papers and articles have appeared, notably Roux's 'Traité' in 1888, Thin's 'Psilosis' in 1897, and Cantlie's papers. The most modern account is Brown's monograph (1908), with a full history, and Begg's monograph on the diagnosis and treatment (1912).

Climatology.—The endemic home of sprue appears to be Asia, especially Malaya, Sumatra, Java, Siam, and Annam; but it also extends into Burma, India and Ceylon, China, Australia (East and South), New Caledonia, the Fiji Islands, and Japan. Possibly it exists in the West Indies, where Hillary originally described it, and it may occur all through the tropics; but if so, it must be rare in certain regions—as, for example, West Africa. Rare cases of sprue occur in Europe.

Ætiology.—The following theories have been or can be brought forward:—

1. Sprue is not a separate disease, but a complex of symptoms which may be met with in widely different pathological conditions.
2. Sprue is a climatic disease.
3. Sprue is a food disease.
4. Sprue is a deficiency disease.
5. Sprue is a disease due to helminths.
6. Sprue is a bacterial disease.
7. Sprue is a disease due to fungi.
8. Sprue is a disease of protozoal origin.

The first theory—viz., that sprue is not a separate disease, but a syndrome met with in various pathological conditions, such as chronic dysentery and pernicious anæmia—is not supported by any medical man with experience in tropical countries where the malady is endemic. The disease presents typical symptoms and a typical course, but as in dysentery, so in sprue, it is in our opinion probable that the clinical term covers several closely allied conditions—*e.g.*, it is possible that there may be a sprue of protozoal origin and another of bacterial origin.

The second and third ætiological hypotheses do not need to be discussed, though a hot climate and the immoderate use of spicy foods and alcohol may be predisposing causes.

The deficiency theory has been ably brought forward by Cantlie, who has noticed that some cases show signs of scurvy.

Helminthic Theory.—Some authorities consider *Strongyloides stercoralis* to be the cause of the disease, but in our experience the worm has nothing to do with the malady, being found in all sorts of pathological conditions.

Bacterial Theory.—Numerous different cocci, bacilli, etc., have been described, but so far none—including Thin and Macfadyen's bacillus—have been demonstrated to be the cause of the malady. Attention must be called to certain cases of pseudo-sprue described by one of us, and due to a bacillus of the Flexner group. These cases are not true sprue, as they get well spontaneously without leaving the tropics, or by a course of vaccine treatment prepared with the Flexner-like bacillus isolated from the stools.

The Hyphomycetic Theory.—This theory is very old, and is supported especially by Dutch and French observers. It is upheld at the present time by Le Dantec and many other authorities. This ætiological theory has been investigated by one of us in conjunction with Low. The conclusions arrived at are :—

1. Fungi are found with extreme frequency in the mouth and the intestine of sprue patients ; but in the tropics the same fungi may be found—though in less amount and less frequently—in the stools of normal people and individuals suffering from various diseases.

2. The commonest fungi found are those of the genera *Monilia* and *Saccharomyces*. The most frequently met with are *M. enterica* Cast., *M. fæcalis* Cast., *M. intestinalis* Cast., *M. rotunda* Cast., *M. decolorans* Cast. and Low.

3. Fungi cannot be considered to be the true ætiological agents of the disease ; they represent secondary hyphomycetic infections, and probably play a very important part in causing certain symptoms which are almost constantly found in sprue, such as the frothy diarrhœa. Castellani and Low have noticed that by giving very large doses of sodium bicarbonate to certain patients the fungi disappear from the stools and the frothy diarrhœa ceases, though the disease continues its course. They think that probably by giving very large doses of bicarbonate of soda the intestinal contents are rendered less acid and the growth of the fungi is checked ; it is well known that many fungi, especially of the genus *Monilia*, grow badly or not at all in alkaline media.

The Protozoan Theory.—The very long course of the disease, the eruption on the tongue and oral mucosa, the profound anæmia, with the peculiar chromatin dots in the red cells, are in favour of the disease being due to some protozoal agent. We are, in fact, inclined to consider sprue to be an infectious disease of protozoal origin, which may enter through the intestinal canal. Amœbæ have been described by several authorities, and spirochæte or treponema-like germs have been observed by one of us some years ago, and more recently by Macy and others, but nothing can be said about their possible ætiological rôle.

As regards the structures and cell inclusions described by various observers, their nature is not clear, and therefore will be mentioned in the histopathology.

Pathology.—With an unknown causation, it is not easy to write an account of the pathology. It would appear as though the primary lesions are beneath the epithelium in both the tongue and the intestine, and cause the superficial desquamation and catarrh. In the intestine the disease begins with submucous congestion, after which follows thrombosis of the vessels, and exudation of hæmoglobin, and a round-celled infiltration. The mucosa suffers because its blood supply is damaged, and therefore necrosis takes place, the glands and villi being affected. The œsophagus and stomach also suffer. The liver is at first enlarged and congested, but later becomes atrophied and small. The fact that the tongue, œsophagus, stomach, and intestines are affected would indicate that something

deleterious is being carried by the blood stream to these organs, rather than that something is acting from the surface. The irritation of the liver may be due to the same cause.

When once the mucosæ are damaged, the chemical processes of digestion and the absorption of their products must be interfered with; while at the same time the absorption of poisons from the alimentary canal must be easier. Indeed, there is evidence of this in the increase of indigo blue in the urine, which is at times marked.

These two conditions would lead to an atrophy of the liver, which organ is one of the great safeguards against a toxæmia of intestinal origin. When the liver is sufficiently damaged, a toxæmia is possible, and occurs; hence, possibly, the advantage of the treatment by liver-soup or other preparations of liver.

The damaged condition of the mucosa of the mouth and tongue makes mastication difficult. The denuded condition of the œsophagus causes the burning pain during swallowing; the condition of gastric and intestinal mucosæ causes the dyspepsia and diarrhœa of the disease. The diarrhœa is characterized by pale, frothy motions, the explanation of which is as follows:—

On opening the bowels post mortem, the observer is struck by the fact that, though there may be plenty of bile in the duodenum and in the higher portions of the bowel, this gradually disappears until, in the lower parts of the small intestine, the contents appear white. In normal fæces bilirubin should be changed into stercobilin (hydrobilirubin), which is urobilin, and is identical with that found in the urine.

Vaughan Harley has shown that in the upper third of the small intestine the normal fæces are of a yellowish colour, due to bilirubin. In the middle third they are of a whitish or greyish colour, probably owing to the bile-pigments being converted into chromogens, which become green in the lower third. After passing the ileo-cæcal valve, the bile-pigments are converted into urobilin by the action of putrefactive bacteria, but a considerable quantity of this is in the form of a chromogen. If the pancreatic juice is absent, a colourless form of urobilin is found, called leuco-urobilin, which, on oxidation by air, may be reconverted into urobilin. It would appear, therefore, that the intestinal flora has altered its character in sprue, probably owing to some abnormality in the pancreas or the bowel.

The Blood.—According to our own and Low's researches a certain degree of anæmia is always present in sprue, and in the last stage the profound anæmia is one of the characteristic features of the disease. In this stage the number of red blood cells is greatly reduced, often to less than one half million per cubic millimetre. The hæmoglobin index is low; there is not much change in the total number of leucocytes, but there is often an increase in the number of lymphocytes at the expense of the large mononuclear and polymorphonuclear cells. Nucleated red cells, though generally not numerous, may be present as well as poikilocytosis and basophilia. In fact,

the blood pictures in the last stage closely resemble that of pernicious anæmia. A very common feature is the presence of true chromatin granules in certain red cells.

Histopathology.—The histopathology of the disease requires much further study. The principal histopathological feature of the malady is a severe process of desquamation of the mucosæ of the digestive tract, together with atrophic changes of the mucosæ, glands, pancreas, and liver. One of us, in association with E. H. Ross, Low and Cropper, has studied certain histological features of the epithelial cells of the tongue and the condition of the blood.

Changes in the Epithelial Cells of the Tongue.—These cells present often a fatty degeneration, but an interesting feature is the great increase in the presence of certain inclusions, which, as demonstrated by one of us, may be found also in various kinds of stomatitis, including the usual tobacco variety, and even in normal people. These peculiar inclusions are of two types.

Type I.—This is by far the commoner. The cell presents a various number—one to twelve or fifteen—of roundish or oval formations of variable size, 2 or 8 μ in diameter, which in preparations coloured by Leishman's stain take up a reddish or purplish colour. They are apparently structureless, but they may present one or two small vacuoles. These inclusions stain beautifully by using H. C. Ross' jelly method, but even with this method do not show any structure. They are not fat drops, as they colour deeply with Leishman's stain instead of becoming dissolved in the alcohol. They do not appear to be of nuclear substance, as the masses are structureless. They do not seem to be parasitic, as they are structureless and homogeneous. The severer the inflammation of the tongue, whatever the cause, the more numerous are these bodies. The greatest probability is that they are merely masses of keratohyalin.

Type II.—Occasionally instead of structureless homogeneous masses, granular agglomerations somewhat resembling chlamydozoa are seen. Whether these are a stage of the former inclusions is not known, but they appear to be merely cell degenerations.

Changes in the Cells of the Blood.—These have already been mentioned under the heading Pathology.

Castellani, E. H. Ross, and H. C. Ross in a case of profound anæmia, of probably sprue origin, found certain peculiar bodies, often included in the lymphocytes and polymorphonuclear cells. These bodies generally appeared in the shape of roundish or oval bodies 2 to 4 μ and more in diameter, and including one or two more deeply stained dots. They were single or several together in the leucocyte, and using H. C. Ross' method stained a watery pinkish colour, with one or two deeper dots. Some were larger, with much more chromatin, and closely resembled the bodies found in syphilis, though of smaller size. The same bodies were once found in leucocytes and epithelial cells present in scrapings of the tongue, using E. H. Ross' method. Further investigation is necessary to see whether these bodies are parasitic or not, and whether they are in any way connected with the spirochaetic organisms so often found in the patches on the tongue.

Morbid Anatomy.—The body is emaciated, and the skin often

hangs loosely, and there may be œdema about the ankles. The tongue shows small areas of infiltration into the connective tissue, vesicles, and small ulcers. The filiform papillæ atrophy, and the fungiform papillæ become swollen and prominent. The pillars of the fauces and the tonsils may show subepithelial inflammation, and even suppuration and ulceration. The œsophagus is inflamed, and its mucosa is attenuated in places. The mucosa of the stomach may be pale and atrophied, or rough and cirrhotic. The mucosa of the small intestine may be slightly eroded, or may be so destroyed that the whole bowel is diaphanous with vascular arborizations; or there may be effusion into the solitary and agminated glands. The contents are bile-stained in the upper parts, and whitish lower down. The large bowel may be ulcerated. The liver is atrophied, but otherwise normal. The pancreas may be normal, inflamed, or cirrhotic. The peritoneum may be thickened and chronically inflamed, and in some cases show adhesions. The other organs are normal as a rule, but sometimes they are atrophied.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period of sprue is quite unknown, and the onset is insidious, without marked symptoms, which are usually merely failing strength and an undefined sense of illness. The disease may begin with diarrhœa and intestinal symptoms, or with mouth symptoms only.

Usually it begins with slight attacks of sore mouth, indigestion, and morning diarrhœa, often of a bilious nature; but as none of these are severe, and all are evanescent, the patient thinks little or nothing about them, and does not consult a medical man until the disease is well established. Three symptoms now worry the patient—viz., sore mouth, indigestion, and morning diarrhœa.

On examining the mouth, the dorsum of the tongue will be seen to have a whitish fur, through which the swollen fungiform papillæ are projecting. The sides and tip of the tongue are red and inflamed, with often small vesicles, small ulcers, and bare patches, which are very tender. Similar patches may be noted under the tongue near the frenum, on the inside of the cheeks, on the palate, and on the pillars of the fauces. A little ulcer, called Crombie's molar ulcer, may be seen near the two last upper or lower molar teeth. So tender is the mouth at times that deglutition, mastication, warm or spiced foods, acid or alcoholic liquors, cause much pain. In addition, mucus may be noticed clinging to the pillars of the fauces and to the back of the pharynx. This mucus is a source of great distress to the patient, as it accumulates in considerable quantities, especially if some warm fluid has been taken, and the effort to get rid of it makes him almost sick. On swallowing food, a burning pain is felt along the course of the œsophagus and over the sternum, as though there was something raw inside (as, indeed, there is). The voice is said by Thin to be altered at times, but we have not specially noted this.

The neck, thorax, and arms may show signs of emaciation. The abdomen is swollen, sometimes markedly so, especially in the

epigastric region, and the wall is soft and relaxed. The patient complains of dyspeptic symptoms—viz., a sensation of discomfort and distension after meals, with acid eructations, and sometimes vomiting. Early in the morning he feels symptoms of intestinal discomfort, and passes a few copious, greyish, offensive, frothy motions, and no more for the rest of the day. After these motions he may feel much better, and have a good appetite.

Examination of the *faeces* shows mucus, epithelial debris, and many bacteria, and often yeast-like fungi, and in some cases eggs of various worms may be present. The quantity of *faeces* passed varies with each motion, but is in excess of the normal, this being due to solids rather than liquids. The excretion of nitrogen and fat is increased.

The most complete analysis of urine and *faeces* has been carried out by V. Harley and Goodbody. The patient, weighing 36·87 kilogrammes, was on a milk diet, containing 12·99 grammes of nitrogen, 76·44 grammes of fat, 82·32 grammes of carbohydrates, and 1,960 c.c. of fluid. The urine passed measured 1,050 c.c.; specific gravity, 1·012; urea, 16·8 grammes; uric acid, 0·8 gramme; ammonia, 0·44 gramme; phosphates, 1·27 grammes; chlorides, 3·89 grammes. Total sulphates, 1·47 grammes, of which 1·35 grammes were alkaline and 0·12 aromatic. The average daily quantity of the motions was 255 grammes, of which 79·46 were water, 1·47 nitrogen, 35·92 fat. The nitrogen given in the food was 12·99 grammes, and that in the *faeces* 1·47 grammes; therefore 88·86 per cent. had been absorbed. The fat in the food was 76·44 grammes, and that in the *faeces* 35·92 grammes; therefore 53·01 per cent. had been absorbed. The colour of the *faeces* was greyish-green to greyish-white, but gave a distinct urobilin reaction, due to the leucourobilin. Schmidt's test for urobilin is performed by adding a concentrated solution of perchloride of mercury to the *faeces*, when a bright red colour is developed if urobilin is present. If there is much urobilin, the colour appears within five minutes; if little, in five to fifteen minutes; if very little, in half an hour. The colour deepens for twenty-four hours. More analyses on the above lines are required. With regard to the stomach, at times there is said to be complete achlorhydria (Manson).

The blood coagulates slowly, and there is always some reduction of the red cells, which may fall as low as 3,000,000 to 1,000,000 per cubic millimetre. The colour-index is low, and the structure of the cells is normal. The white cells are also reduced to about 6,000 to 2,800 per cubic millimetre. The ratio of white to red is about 1 to 400 in bad cases. A differential count shows an increase in the mononuclears and eosinophiles.

The urine requires more investigation, but as far as evidence goes at present it is not abnormal, showing only an increase in indigo blue and urobilin, and at times Cammidge's reaction for pancreatitis.

The buccal, intestinal, and other symptoms may markedly improve, even without treatment, but only to get worse again; and this is repeated time after time.

In due course the patient becomes very emaciated, weak physically, and depressed and irritable mentally. The skin becomes harsh; the mucosæ anæmic; the tongue becomes smooth, glazed, reddish-yellow, and small, and is often furrowed by cracks; indigestion is marked; and the diarrhoea is worse. The patient con-

tinues to lose weight, and emaciates rapidly, the skin hanging in loose folds, the abdomen blown out with gas, the liver small and atrophied, the ankles œdematous, while the pulse becomes slow and feeble.

After this has gone on for a long time, the emaciated, worn-out, irritable person dies of an acute attack of diarrhœa or cardiac failure. Sprue is essentially a chronic disease, with remissions, intermissions, and recurrences, but, unless taken seriously in hand, goes steadily from bad to worse.

Some writers distinguish three stages—a first stage, with oral and dyspeptic symptoms; a second stage, with marked intestinal symptoms; and a third stage, with toxæmia, emaciation, and anæmia; while cases are sometimes seen which are atypical—that is to say, where there are the mouth symptoms without the intestinal symptoms, and *vice versa*.

Complications.—The complications met with in the course of the disease are—Acute diarrhœa; dysenteric diarrhœa; hæmorrhage; meteorism; pancreatitis; myalgia; insomnia; helminthiasis, especially agchylostomiasis; impacted fæces; chronic appendicitis; jaundice; diabetes; and pernicious anæmia.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis of the disease is to be based upon the irregular chronic diarrhœa occurring especially in the morning, and associated with flatulent dyspepsia, causing distension of the abdomen, and the passage of fermenting, abundant, clay-coloured motions. With these symptoms there will be progressive emaciation and anæmia, and when to these the characteristic mouth-lesions occurring in a person living in the tropics are added, it is indeed difficult to imagine any disease with which it could be confounded. Van der Scheer considers that the discovery of fat in the motions is a diagnostic sign before the disease begins; but this condition may also be found in pancreatitis. Low says that the so-called psilosis pigmentosa of Barbadoes is pellagra. The diseases from which sprue should be distinguished are stomatitis, hill diarrhœa, chronic dysentery, and chronic pancreatitis.

Stomatitis.—All forms of stomatitis are very common in the tropics, and may be accompanied by intestinal symptoms such as diarrhœa. The stools, however, do not show the peculiar characteristics of sprue—viz., the white colour, the frothy appearance, and the copious amount passed in the twenty-four hours.

Thrush.—This is easily diagnosed by examination of the white patches, in which fungi of the genus *Monilia* will be found. It is, however, to be noted that in long-standing cases of sprue, as in all chronic complaints, thrush may develop.

Hill Diarrhœa.—The patient generally gives a history of residence at a high elevation, and the diarrhœa is as a rule present only in the morning, while mouth symptoms are absent. We have, however, seen several patients in whom sprue has developed after repeated attacks of what to all appearance was simply hill diarrhœa.

Chronic Dysentery.—In chronic dysentery there is an absence of the mouth symptoms, while the motions are not whitish in colour, and may contain blood and mucus during the exacerbations. The diarrhoea of dysentery is generally accompanied by griping, while that of sprue is not. In chronic dysentery pain is often felt on pressure over the sigmoid and descending colons. In some cases microscopical and bacteriological examination of the stools for entamœbæ and the Shiga-Kruse bacillus may be necessary to clear the diagnosis.

Though personally we consider sprue and chronic dysentery to be different diseases, still we have seen several cases of sprue developing in old-standing cases of chronic dysentery.

Chronic Pancreatitis.—Absence of the mouth symptoms of sprue and presence of tenderness in the region of the epigastrium and the passage of large quantities of fat in the motions, together with Cammidge's crystals in the urine, will enable the diagnosis of chronic pancreatitis to be made.

Prognosis.—The prognosis in any case of sprue is serious, because, unless the patient will honestly co-operate with the doctor, he will go from bad to worse. We are of the opinion that, no matter how mild the case may be, the patient should be warned of the danger.

If treatment is properly carried out, the prognosis improves considerably, but even then relapses are apt to occur.

Treatment.—The causation of the disease being unknown, the treatment must be symptomatic.

An attempt must be made to soothe the alimentary canal, and to give it as little work to do as possible, so that it may repair itself. This line of treatment will necessitate rest in bed and a careful diet, after the bowels have been swept as clear as possible of decomposing material.

While this is proceeding, care must be taken to avoid chills, as they aggravate the disease. Lastly, an attempt should be made to treat those symptoms which worry and annoy the patient.

The treatment, therefore, may be classified into:—

1. The Co-operation of the Patient.
2. Rest in Bed.
3. Suitable Clothing.
4. Removal of Fermenting Bowel Contents.
5. Diet.
6. Medical Treatment.
7. Change of Climate.

I. THE CO-OPERATION OF THE PATIENT.—The nature of the complaint and the dangers which the patient runs must be carefully explained to him, and the line of treatment sketched out. Further, he must be told that its success or failure largely lies in his own hands. If he has not the strength of will to persevere, even when at first success seems far from certain, he might as well not begin.

If he agrees to co-operate, then he must be carefully weighed, and a chart kept of his weights.

2. REST IN BED.—The second point is that the patient must remain in bed for a little time, and use the bed-pan and the urine-bottle, in order to give the bowels as much rest as possible, and warm water must be used in sponging.

3. SUITABLE CLOTHING.—The underclothes and pyjamas should be of wool or flannel, in order to avoid chills.

4. REMOVAL OF FERMENTING BOWEL CONTENTS.—The treatment should begin with a dose of castor oil, to remove the fermenting contents of the bowel.

5. DIET.—The various diets advised may be arranged as follows:—

- (a) The Milk Diet.
- (b) The Milk and Fruit Diet.
- (c) The Fruit Diet.
- (d) The Meat Diet.
- (e) The Meat and Milk Diet.

(a) *Milk Diet*.—The real basis of the treatment of sprue at present is the milk diet.

In the tropics, this milk should be obtained from a cow kept for the purpose, or from some really reliable dairy, as the danger of contamination is great. Even when the cow belongs to the patient, great care has to be taken that the milk is not adulterated by the household servants. We can never forget that once the milk of a peculiarly careful household, collected, apparently, under strict precautions, was found on analysis to be grossly adulterated. The lesson we have drawn from the above is to get a sample analyzed from time to time. This analysis costs but little, and the possibility of its being carried out at any time puts a certain amount of restraint upon would-be adulterators.

There is a considerable difference between the average composition of the milk supplied by *Bos taurus*, the straight-backed cow, and *B. indicus*, the hump-backed cow, which, in general terms, may be summarized by saying that the milk of the latter is much richer than that of the former. We have investigated this point, and are of the opinion that if 3 per cent. of fat is considered to be an average for *B. taurus*, then 5 per cent. should be reckoned for *B. indicus*.

In placing a patient upon a milk diet, the composition of the milk should be carefully considered, especially as regards the fat, for, as Harley and Goodbody have shown, no less than 47 per cent. of the milk-fat is passed out in the fæces.

Milk with high percentages of fat should, therefore, be diluted with whey, when the amount of nitrogen will be kept up, while the percentage of fat is diminished. Whey is easily made in the tropics by means of the juice of limes.

Preferably the milk should not be boiled or sterilized, but boiling, apparently, does not interfere with its beneficial properties, and therefore, if desired, or thought necessary—i.e., owing to the risk of typhoid—there is no harm in so doing. In cold weather it should be warmed before being taken. It can be aerated in a seltzogene if desired, and can be mixed with Vichy water. Finally,

it must be remembered that milk is not a perfect food for an adult, however suitable it may be for a child.

It is as well to begin with a small quantity, and to gradually increase the amount. Every medical man sooner or later adopts his own method of carrying this out, and we will, therefore, only give general directions. If the case is very severe, with vomiting and much diarrhœa, it is as well to begin with whey only, which the patient should sip slowly, and practically *ad libitum*—*i.e.*, about 7 to 8 pints per diem. As soon as the urgent symptoms are relieved, milk must be added to the diet, as whey alone is starvation.

If the case is of moderate severity, milk can be begun at once, 3 pints per diem being given in the more severe, and 4 pints in the less severe cases—*i.e.*, 60 to 80 ounces—which should be divided into not less than ten meals at regular intervals during the day. The milk must be slowly sipped or taken through a glass tube, which, of course, should be carefully boiled after each meal. On no account must the patient be allowed to drink the milk in gulps. It is, perhaps, as well to define a limit of time—say about twenty minutes—as the minimum time for a meal.

If the symptoms improve, it is necessary to increase the milk gradually every few days until 6 to 7 pints—*i.e.*, 120 to 140 ounces—are given; but in doing this, it is better to increase the number of meals rather than the quantity at a given meal. Twelve meals in the twenty-four hours are not difficult to arrange.

If the symptoms do not improve, the milk must be reduced gradually, or whey must be tried; but as soon as the urgent symptoms of diarrhœa and vomiting abate, the milk must be gradually increased, and, indeed, the starvation must not be long continued in any case. Starvation diets are dangerous in severe cases, when the patients are emaciated and weak; and hence, while they are being employed, great care is required in nursing.

If the milk is succeeding, the diarrhœa ceases, the mouth troubles diminish, and the patient feels better. The fæces will at first be pale and grey, but, as improvement continues, stercobilin will appear, as evinced by the brown colour. This change in the colour of the fæces is a most important sign.

But even if milk is agreeing with the patient, there will be much trouble, as there is often strong objection to milk only. Another difficulty is constipation, and this must be relieved by enemata. Sometimes the milk does not agree, causing vomiting and pain. Usually this can be relieved by alkalinizing the milk with bicarbonate, 1 grain to the ounce, or the citrate of soda, 2 grains to the ounce of milk (convenient tabloids of this salt are prepared by Burroughs Wellcome and Co.), or by adding Apollinaris or Ems water in the proportion of equal parts, or lime-water, 1 to 6 of milk. As soon as a definite improvement appears, and the weight begins to increase, the patient should be allowed to sit up, but great care must be taken to avoid chills. Milk diet should be persisted

in for a month or six weeks, but may be modified by the addition of fruit—*e.g.*, strawberries, bananas, or apples—as will be described later.

Then eggs may be beaten up in the milk; chicken-broth can be tried; then Benger's food, or some other simple food—Allen and Hanbury's, Mellin's, Albany food, Carnrick's soluble food, Sana-togen, or Plasmon. Then fish, chicken, or sweetbreads, with a biscuit, and, later, potatoes; and finally, the patient is put on to a diet of eggs, toast, dilute China tea, soups, white meats, custard-puddings, milk. But he must avoid dark meats, most vegetables, spiced foods, iced drinks, and all indigestible substances. Alcoholic drinks in every form are bad, both during the illness and afterwards. Nor is smoking to be encouraged; we, personally, are much against it.

But, unfortunately, a case of sprue is not so easy to treat as indicated above, for, while the food is being gradually and carefully increased, relapses are not infrequent, and a return to milk may be necessitated. The patient gets weary, and at times exceedingly angry about this dieting, and, indeed, is apt surreptitiously to kick over the traces, with disastrous results. The prohibition of alcohol also leads to trouble, but our experience about this is quite clear: if alcohol is taken, the progress of the patient is seriously hindered.

Before leaving the milk diet, two points ought to be mentioned, concerning one of which we have had considerable experience; concerning the other, none at all. First of all, there can be no reasonable doubt as to the advantages of liver-soup—*i.e.*, soup prepared from calves' or sheep's livers—in the milder cases of sprue, or in the return to ordinary food of a severe case. The liver treatment is really an old native remedy in Ceylon. We do not profess to advance views as to its action, but in a certain class of cases it is of benefit. Secondly, gall-pills or inspissated bile, as suggested by C. J. Martin, and pancreatic preparations have been advocated by some; but of these we have no experience.

(b) *Milk and Fruit Diet.*—A milk and fruit diet has been found to be even better than a pure milk diet in many cases. The milk is administered as already described, but, in addition, fruit is given. Strawberries are most highly recommended, beginning with $\frac{3}{4}$ pound and gradually increasing to $2\frac{1}{2}$ pounds per diem. They should be crushed, and eaten with sugar and cream. In lieu of strawberries, bananas (not plantains, though people often call bananas plantains, the difference being that a banana shows three cells on transverse section and a plantain five), pears, grapes, in the same weight as the strawberries or apples, from $\frac{1}{2}$ pound to $1\frac{1}{2}$ pounds per diem. If these cannot be obtained, the juice of oranges, papaya ($1\frac{1}{2}$ pounds per diem), avocado pears, mangosteens, and sapodilla, may be used.

Fresh Bael fruit is excellent, but must be carefully prepared. It may be boiled in water and then cut open and shredded by means of a fork into warm milk, in which it is pounded with castor-sugar, and finally strained through a fine strainer to remove all débris.

This should be used three times a day. Preserved fruit is said to be useful, if fresh fruit cannot be obtained. Acid fruits, such as pineapples and sour-sops, should be avoided, and, personally, we do not advise the use of mangoes.

(c) *Fruit Diet*.—This was first advocated by van der Burg, and usually consists of grapes and pears; but it appears as though almost any fruit which is not acid might be used.

(d) *Meat Diet*.—If the milk or fruit diets fail, it is advisable to try a meat diet, or this may be made the basis of treatment from the beginning. Cantlie is the great supporter of this dietary.

If the patient is very ill, it may be necessary to begin with raw-meat juice prepared by pounding sufficient good raw flesh in a mortar, so that, with the addition of 2 ounces of water and 20 minims of dilute hydrochloric acid, 6 ounces of meat-juice is obtained on straining. The quantity of meat required to obtain these 6 ounces will sometimes be quite considerable, and, as it varies in different regions, must be obtained by preliminary experiment. A little salt should be added to this juice, and 1 teaspoonful should be given every quarter of an hour in very bad cases, and rapidly increased in amount if successful.

As soon as the very serious symptoms subside, the meat diet should be started. Brown gives the following directions for preparing a meat diet: Take 2 pounds of good raw meat, free from fibrous matter, fat, and gristle, and 2 ounces of fresh suet, and mince and pound them up thoroughly. Sprinkle the pounded mass with a little salt, and divide into six portions. One portion, cooked in a small, well-buttered saucepan until the red colour has just disappeared, is given six times a day, as convenient. This portion, when cooked, is estimated as weighing 4 ounces. In addition, $\frac{1}{2}$ pint of plain warm water, rice or toast water, is sipped half an hour before a meat meal, and a little tea, with lemon-juice instead of milk, taken twice daily. It may, perhaps, be as well to remind the reader that rice-water is an infusion of roasted rice.

In about a week this meat diet should be changed to a modified meat diet, which is first produced by the addition of fruit, followed in a little time by chicken, then and gradually by eggs, biscuits, and fish, until the dietary already mentioned under Milk is reached.

With a modified meat diet some people combine curdled milk. This is based upon Metchnikoff's researches, which showed that if the *Bacillus acidi lactici* is taken with milk, it generates large quantities of lactic acid in the intestines, particularly in the large bowel, and that this acid interferes with intestinal toxins. Various preparations of the germ have been placed on the market, including 'Sauerin' made by Messrs. Allen and Hanbury, and said to be a pure culture of the germ. Brown gives the following directions for its use: 2 pints of milk are heated to 160° F., to kill off any bacteria which might happen to be present, and then are allowed to cool in a jug which has been boiled. When 100° F. is reached, 6 tablets of Sauerin are added, and 2 tablespoonfuls of sugar, when the milk is curdled in about three hours. This curdled milk is taken four times a day, between the meals of a modified meat diet, and is said to be efficacious.

It may be mentioned that curdled buffalo-milk is commonly used by the natives of Ceylon as a part of their food, and curdled milk is also used in India, and, indeed, in many other places by natives.

Under the heading of Meat Diets must be placed Cantlie's treatment, which consists of putting the patient to bed, applying a hot wet pack from the nipples to the groin for two hours, morning and evening, and giving three meals of 5 ounces of meat per diem, and, in addition, either beef-tea, beef-jelly, calves'-foot jelly, or a plain jelly every two hours. Castor oil is administered in 1½-drachm doses every morning for the first three days, and santonin in 3-grain doses morning and evening for three days. Strawberries, to the quantity of 3 to 4 pounds per diem, are also allowed between meals.

When the stools become solid, and show brown colouring matter, a poached egg and pounded chicken are added, and, later, minced chicken, and, still later, the undercut of meat, with stewed celery, seakale, vegetable-marrow, pulled bread, and thin slices of bread, baked in an oven for twenty minutes.

(e) *Meat and Milk Diet*.—Cantlie now advocates that when a patient is on a meat diet, this should be stopped every third or fourth day for twenty-four hours, and that milk only be given during this period.

6. MEDICAL TREATMENT.—It may be said at once that astringents as a rule are dangerous, and that antiseptics are not useful. Santonin, which must be yellow, has been strongly recommended by Begg, who gives 5 grains night and morning in salad oil; but we have seen no benefit by this treatment. Mixtures containing bicarbonate of soda are often used.

People complain that yellow santonin cannot be obtained, but it can be easily prepared from white santonin by exposure to the sun for a few days. The crystals are turned from time to time until yellow throughout, as demonstrated by crushing. The chromosantonin of Monte-Martini is not santonin, which, according to Lestini, is changed into formic acid and photosantonin acid and a red resinous substance. Peter Sys' remedy, which is much used in China, is simply powdered cuttle-fish bone.

Cantlie has had good results by the administration of 20 grains of ipecacuanha daily for two or three days in advanced cases.

The mouth may be treated with any appropriate mouth-wash—e.g., glyco-thymoline, glycerine and borax, diluted liquor aluminis, etc. The teeth require attention, and if there is any pyorrhœa, this should at once be treated by syringing or spraying between the teeth with peroxide of hydrogen solution. Pain may be relieved by painting the raw surfaces with 2 to 5 per cent. solution of cocaine, novocain, alypin, or stovain. The pain along the œsophagus requires morphia. Janowski recommends 5 to 10 drops of a solution of 1 in 1,000 adrenalin, which, he says, gives prompt and permanent relief for œsophagitis. The muscular pains may be relieved by massage, or by pilocarpine nitrate, given in $\frac{1}{10}$ to $\frac{1}{5}$ grain doses three times a day. Intestinal pain may be relieved by hot packs, as recommended by Cantlie. Acute diarrhœa must be checked by a dose of liquor opii sedativus or lead and opium pills. Dysenteric symptoms must be treated as described under Dysentery.

7. CHANGE OF CLIMATE.—It is obvious that, if possible, the patient should be transferred from the tropics to the temperate zone, but only if he is strong enough to travel. There is no advantage in putting him on board a ship in such a condition that he will probably die when changing from the warm to cooler weather. Personally, we are not in favour of a patient being sent from the low country to the hills. If he is able to travel, let him go to the temperate zone.

Prophylaxis.—Nothing of any practical value can be said under this heading.

PSEUDO-SPRUE.

One of us has called attention to some cases presenting clinical symptoms closely allied to sprue and due to bacilli of the Flexner group. Such cases have no dysenteric symptoms, but present the white frothy motions, the sore tongue, and the anæmia as found in typical sprue, but in contrast to this disease they may recover without any change from the tropics, and a vaccine treatment is very useful.

The Flexner-like bacillus found in these cases is identical with the typical Flexner but for the fact that litmus milk was rendered permanently acid instead of the medium becoming first acid and then alkaline. Minor differences with regard to some sugar broths may occasionally also be noted.

Motility.	Litmus Milk.	Lactose.	Saccharose.	Dulcite.	Mannite.	Glucose.	Maltose.	Dextrine.	Raffinose.	Arabinose.	Adonite.	Inulin.	Sorbit.	Galactose.	Levulose.	Inosite.	Salicin.	Amygdalin.	Isodulcite.	Erythrite.	Glycerine.	Indole.	Voges Prosk.	Redn. Nitrates.	Neutral red.	Gram.	Gelatine.	Serum.	Broth.	Pept. Water.		
O	A	O	O	O	A	A	A	A	A	A	O	O	O	A	A	O	O	O	A	O	As*	+	s	O	O	O	O	O	O	O	G.T.	G.T.

Abbreviations.—A, acid; G.T., general turbidity; s, slight; o, negative result, viz., neither acid nor gas in sugar media, non-motile, non-liquefaction of gelatine or serum, as the case may be.

HILL DIARRHŒA.

Definition.—Hill diarrhœa is a gastro-intestinal catarrh of unknown cause, occurring mostly at high altitudes in tropical regions, and characterized by the passage of several liquid, frothy, light-coloured motions in the early morning.

History.—Hill diarrhœa was first described by Grant in 1854, in the same paper as that in which he dealt with sprue and dysentery, and later as a disease quite distinct from sprue by Crombie in 1892. The latter writer held that it was liable to occur at an elevation of 6,000 or more feet in India, Europe, and elsewhere. In India he believed the monsoon to be a potent factor, associated, probably, with a diminished barometric pressure. We have seen cases in Ceylon occurring at a much less elevation—for example, at about 3,000 to 4,000 feet.

More recently Duncan has put forward the view that mica in the water is the causative agent. This mica is found in the laterite—i.e., weathered gneiss—which is a common geological formation in the tropics. Singer considers that he has met this disease in four out of six Europeans on an expedition to Abyssinia, when they reached a height of about 5,000 feet.

* Certain strains are distinctly acid on ninth day.

Ætiology.—The causation of the disease is quite unknown. The theories are:—Diminished atmospheric pressure, the irritation of mica, faecal contamination of the water, and exposure to cold.

Pathology.—Very little can be said under this heading, except to invite attention to what has already been written under the heading of Sprue with regard to the formation of leuco-urobilin, and to point out that it is obviously to the formation of this body, and not to anything wrong with the liver, that the colour of the motion is due. The morbid anatomy would appear to be totally different from that of sprue, and to be a congestion of the mucosæ of the stomach and bowels, with a proliferation of the mucosal lymph and fibrous tissue in chronic cases. On the surface of the mucous membrane of the small and large bowels there is a thick layer of mucus, but no ulceration.

Symptomatology.—The disease generally begins soon after the patient has arrived in the hills from the plains.

The onset is sudden, beginning with abdominal pain in the early hours of the morning, with the passage of large, frothy, greyish or whitish motions, which produce a sense of relief. The patient goes about his work, but in the early hours of the next morning the symptoms are repeated, and he will complain that his stomach feels blown out, and that he can hear gurgles, and this goes on morning after morning.

If now the patient leaves the hills and comes down to the plains to consult a doctor, he is astonished to find that he is quite well, and perhaps goes back to the hills without having obtained the medical advice which he desired. A relapse takes place, for which he does not as a rule seek advice, as he considers it a trivial complaint, until later he begins to feel dyspeptic, disinclined for his food or work, and now he will seek treatment, notwithstanding the fact that he feels better on returning to the plains. The disease may become chronic, and rarely may lead to a fatal result.

Sequela.—It is said that neglected hill diarrhœa may develop into sprue.

Diagnosis.—The history of the case and the absence of mouth symptoms are sufficient to enable the diagnosis as a rule to be made from sprue.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is good, as recovery is generally quick under suitable treatment, but in certain cases it is found necessary to abandon residence at high elevations.

Treatment.—The treatment is simple and effective. It consists in rest in bed, warm clothing, and $\frac{1}{2}$ to 1 drachm of liquor hydrargyri perchloridi, given fifteen minutes before each meal, and 12 to 15 grains of pepsin, ingluvin, or lactopeptin two hours after the meal. The diet is to be milk, which may be diluted as advised in the treatment of sprue.

Prophylaxis.—Persons liable to the disease should avoid the hills, especially in the monsoon season, and if compelled to go to high altitudes should do so by easy stages.

LOW-COUNTRY MORNING DIARRHŒA.

This affection is common in Ceylon, and somewhat resembles hill diarrhœa, but is found in the plains.

Symptomatology.—The patient wakes up about 3 to 4 a.m. with an urgent call to evacuate the bowels, but there is no abdominal pain or straining. After an interval of one to two hours the bowels are again evacuated, and perhaps again two or three more times in the course of the morning. The motions are liquid, generally yellowish or brownish, and do not contain blood or mucus. The condition lasts, as a rule, for months, but usually ceases on a change of climate.

Treatment.—A dose of tannalbin (gr. xv.-xxx.) or bismuth subnitrate (gr. xv.-xxx.) may be given at bedtime as a palliative.

Flagellate Diarrhœa.

Definition.—Flagellate diarrhœa is an acute or chronic specific diarrhœa due to *Cercomonas hominis* Davaine 1854, *Trichomonas hominis* Davaine 1854, *Tetramitus mesnili* Wenyon 1910, and *Lambliia intestinalis* Lambi 1859.

Climatology.—These parasites, and the diarrhœas associated therewith, appear to occur in temperate and warm climates alike. They certainly are very common in Ceylon, and have been met with in Africa and Hong-Kong. In the latter place Bell has described large parasites like encysted *Amœbæ*, showing circular movement, and breaking up into four pear-shaped, actively motile bodies containing a contractile vacuole, the only other parasite in the motions being *Cercomonas hominis*. We have seen similar cysts which are uninucleate, and which broke up into bodies which were obviously the *Cercomonas hominis*, with which the motion was teeming.

Symptomatology.—When in small numbers there may be no symptoms, or the only symptoms are those of diarrhœa, with liquid brown motions, containing yellow flakes, which are composed of epithelial cells and leucocytes around which the parasites are formed in large numbers. They are rarely the cause of dysenteric diarrhœa, characterized by the passage of blood and mucus, and the presence of fever, furred tongue, tenesmus, and abdominal pain.

Treatment.—The best treatment is to administer enemata of 3 pints of 1 in 3,000 solution of methylene blue twice daily, and to administer methylene blue (gr. ii.) by the mouth in cachets or pills. The patient should be told that the urine will become blue, otherwise he will be much alarmed. Thymol has been recommended.

REFERENCES.

Spree.

- THE most recent and fullest accounts are Carnegie Brown's excellent monograph on Spree and its Treatment, London, 1908; and Begg's Spree: Its Diagnosis and Treatment. London, 1912.
- BEGG (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine, p. 293.
- BERTRAND ET FONTAN (1887). De l'Entéro-colite chronique Endémique des Pays chauds. Paris.
- CAMMIDGE (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine, x. 293.
- CANTLIE (1905-07). British Medical Journal, ii. 1287; (1907), Journal of Tropical Medicine, x. 293.
- CASTELLANI (1905-12). Med. Reports.

- CASTELLANI AND LOW (1913). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*.
 FAYRER (1885). *Tropical Dysentery and Chronic Diarrhœa*. London.
 GALLOWAY (1905). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, vol. viii., October 2 and 16.
 HARLEY AND GOODBODY (1906). *Chemical Investigations of Gastric and Intestinal Diseases*. London.
 HARTIGAN (1905). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, vol. viii., March 1.
 HILLARY (1772). *Observations on the Changes of the Air, etc., in the Island of Barbadoes*. London.
 KELSCH AND KIENER (1889). *Traité des Maladies des Pays chauds*.
 LOW (1912). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*.
 MANSON (1880). *China Imperial Maritime Customs*.
 MAYO ROBSON (1907). *British Medical Journal*, vol. ii.
 THIN (1897). *Psilosis*, 2nd edition. London.
 VAN DER BURG (1880). *Indische Spruw*. Batavia.

Hill Diarrhœa.

- CROMBIE (1880). *Indian Medical Gazette*, vol. xv.; *ibid.* (1892), p. 129.
 DUNCAN (1905). *British Medical Journal*, p. 1283.
 GRANT (1854). *Indian Annals of Medical Science*, i. 342.
 YOUNGE (1905). *British Medical Journal*, vol. ii.

Pseudo-Sprue.

- CASTELLANI (1912). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*.

CHAPTER LII

CHOLERA

Synonyms—Definition—History, Geography, and Epidemiology—Ætiology
—Pathology—Symptomatology—Diagnosis—Prognosis—Treatment
—Prophylaxis—References.

CHOLERA.

Synonyms.—Cholera Asiatica. *Hindustani*: Haiza. *Tamil*: Enerum Vandee. *Chinese*: Ho-louan. *Arabic*: Duba.

Definition.—Cholera is an acute specific endemic or epidemic disease caused by *Vibrio cholerae* Koch 1883, and characterized by violent purging, vomiting, muscular cramps, suppression of urine, and collapse. It is probable that the term 'cholera'—in analogy to other diseases—covers a group of clinically identical affections caused by closely allied germs.

History, Geography, and Epidemiology.—Cholera appears to have been known in India from the most ancient times, for Charaka and Susruta describe symptoms which most probably refer to this disease. The name is of Greek origin, being perhaps derived from *χολέρα*, a spout, which may have been applied with the idea that the violent purging resembled the water rushing out of a spout. Apart from the two authors mentioned above, the earliest record of the disease is found in 1438, when Ahmed Shah's army is said to have been decimated by it. After this date there are several references; for it is mentioned by Vasco da Gama in 1490; an account is given of an outbreak in Goa in 1543, another in Pondicherry in 1768, and another in Calcutta in 1781-82, the last of which appears to have spread to Madras, Ceylon, and Burma in 1782-83. Outbreaks occurred in Travancore in 1792, and in the Mahratta country in 1794. But these are only a few of the recorded outbreaks, for, according to Macnamara, no less than sixty-six separate observers mention the disease between the years 1438 and 1817.

With regard to Europe, cholera was recorded at Nismes in 1564, but it and the sporadic outbursts in the seventeenth century may not have been true cholera. It also appears to have been endemic in Java as far back as 1629, and occurs yearly in Southern China and the Philippine Islands.

In 1817 began an epidemic which may have originated in Calcutta or in Jessore, and which lasted till 1823. During this time

it spread to the west coast of India, Arabia, Ceylon, Burma, Malacca, Penang, Singapore, and Manilla, reaching Mauritius in 1819 and China in 1820. This is certainly the first extensive epidemic ever recorded outside India. In 1826 the first pandemic, which was to last till 1837, and to spread into Europe, Africa, and America, began in India, through which it spreads lowly, and then passed to Europe and Africa by three routes, the first and earliest viâ Kabul, Bokhara, and Khiva to the Russian province of Orenburg, which was reached in 1829. The second route was through Persia, Tabriz, and Tiflis, to Astrakhan in 1830. In this year the two routes met at Nijni-Novgorod, where there is an annual peasant gathering. These peasants, on returning home, infected Moscow, and as there were military operations proceeding in Poland, the disease rapidly spread through Western Russia into Poland, and on to Germany, Austria, Sweden, and England. In 1831 France became infected, and from 1832-33 the whole of Europe was ravaged, and the disease spread to the United States, Mexico, Cuba, and Guiana, and even to Australia. In the meanwhile the epidemic had spread by the third route from Bombay to Arabia in 1826, and then to Syria, Turkey, Egypt, and finally to North Africa in 1834, after which it died down.

In 1840 troops were collected together in India for service in China, and as they travelled eastwards they carried the cholera, which was present in Bengal and Madras, to Malacca and China, in which country it was very prevalent in 1841, and through which it spread, reaching Northern Burma in 1842. It now proceeded north of the Himalayas, reaching Yarkand, from whence it passed to Bokhara and Afghanistan, and spread into the Punjab and the North-West Provinces in 1844, and into Persia in 1845, when it again travelled viâ Tabriz and Derbend to Orenburg in 1847, and so to Europe and America in 1848. In this year it was very prevalent in India, spreading again from Bombay to Arabia in 1851, and to Turkey in 1853; while it also again travelled viâ Persia to Russia in 1852, and so over Europe. This epidemic lasted till 1857, and affected the troops engaged in the Crimean War.

The fourth extensive epidemic began in 1863, and spread to Europe by the two usual routes—viz., viâ Persia and Arabia—and lasted till 1875, extending as usual to America.

The fifth epidemic began in 1879, when the disease passed from Mecca to Egypt, and so to Europe. It was during this epidemic that Koch discovered the *Vibrio cholerae* in Egypt in 1883.

The sixth epidemic (1891-96) appears to owe its origin in India to the great bathing festival at Karagola, on the Ganges, which, being only held once in thirty years, came as a surprise to the officials, who were not prepared for it. Cholera broke out among the pilgrims on February 8, 1891, and spread rapidly, reaching Europe in 1892.

The seventh epidemic began in 1900, and may be said to be continuing at the present time. It started in 1900 in India after a

severe famine, and spread extensively through that country, and then began to travel, reaching Japan in 1901; Arabia, Mecca, and Jeddah, Egypt and Erythræa, Syria, Persia, and the Philippines in 1902; Palestine, Asia Minor, and Mesopotamia in 1903; Persia, Russia, and Turkey in Asia in 1904; Russia, Germany, and the Philippine Islands in 1905; Russia (few cases), Burma, Siam, Singapore, Japan, China, and the Philippine Islands in 1906; Ceylon, Peshawar, Singapore, Philippines, Japan, Korea, Manchuria, China, Russia, Turkey, and Persia in 1907; China, Russia, Mecca, and Medina in 1908; and Russia in the beginning of 1909. In 1910 it was present in Russia and Italy. In 1911 it was recognized in Turkey, Roumania, Hungary, Austria, Italy, and Russia, and in 1912 in Turkey, Italy, and Russia.

Some places have always so far escaped the visitation of cholera. These are either situated in the colder regions, of which the climatic conditions are unsuitable for the propagation of the disease, or are islands to which the disease is less likely to be brought, or where precautions are taken. As examples of these islands may be mentioned the Andaman and Pacific Islands, Réunion, the Azores, etc. Tropical and Southern Africa have not yet been infected.

The climatic influences which appear to favour the development of the disease are low-lying areas, and soils easily permeable to water, especially if they are polluted with decomposing matter. It would, however, appear that the most inimical climatic conditions can be overcome if there is lack of cleanliness, especially with regard to drinking-water and food, together with bad sanitation, and the disease may spread where every climatic influence is opposed to it. With regard to the use of permanganate of potash in cholera, it was recommended in 1866 by Everest, who treated seventeen cases with Condry's fluid, with only one death. Dr. Mackie in the same year treated six cases similarly without a death. In 1884 J. W. Fry stated that the only thing he found of remedial use was an enema of diluted Condry's fluid. In 1910 Rogers reported favourably of the use of the permanganates given liberally in cholera.

Ætiology.—The cause of the disease is undoubtedly Koch's vibrio; still, this alone may not produce illness, for, as Dunbar showed in 1892 in Hamburg, people who had never suffered from the disease, and who were in good health, might still be passing quantities of the virulent micro-organisms in their fæces. It is evident, therefore, that these persons lacked some predisposing condition, and, further, that they must have been a fruitful source of infection. What this condition may be we do not definitely know, but it would appear that such factors as mental worry, underfeeding, and any slight disorder, but specially any derangement of the alimentary canal producing diarrhœa, are predisposing causes. With regard to these causes, it may be mentioned that unripe fruit, and especially melons, are regarded with suspicion in times of epidemics, probably because they cause diarrhœa, and thus predispose to the disease.

It may be that the vibrio merely lives in the lumen of the bowel in the cases in which it causes no symptoms, and only gains access to the epithelial cells and mucosa in cases of lowered vitality, and perhaps is only toxic in this situation ; but if this is so it still remains to be proved.

This lowered vitality would explain the apparently extraordinary cases which at times appear in gaols when the town is apparently free. The reason may be that short-sentence prisoners are generally on a very low diet, while long-sentence prisoners often have such hard manual labour to perform that they are exhausted at night. Therefore, if a carrier is introduced into a gaol, the disease may easily start apparently *de novo* among the incarcerated inmates.

The disease is communicable directly from man to man by contamination. As an example from our own experience, a medical man examines a patient suffering from cholera, and then proceeds to have his lunch, with the result that both patient and doctor were dead within twenty-four hours of cholera. Again, there is the chance of infection from dead bodies in performing autopsies, but graveyards are not important means of dissemination of the disease, because the germ rapidly disappears from the dead body. Fomites may also spread the contamination, but these are not the usual method of infection, which is generally by water. The vibrios pass out with the fæces, in which they are capable of living a long time (163 days) ; hence the great danger of fæcally contaminated fields, rubbish-heaps, gardens, etc. ; for if there is a poor sanitary system in the place, and if fæcal pollution of the drinking-water is possible, the disease may easily become epidemic, for it has been shown that the vibrios can not merely live, but multiply, in water, though the conditions under which they do this are not perfectly understood.

Two classical instances are usually quoted as evidence of the spread of the disease by water. The first of these is the infection in 1854 of a lady and her servant in Hampstead, where there was no cholera, by drinking the water of the Broad Street well, which was infected, the water being carried all the way from Broad Street to Hampstead because the lady in question had a special liking for it. The second is the infection of Hamburg in 1892 from the waters of the Elbe, in which cholera vibrios were found in the river-water and that of the hydrants.

As water is a method of infection, it is quite easy to understand that milk is specially dangerous, for it is often diluted with water, and, moreover, forms an excellent medium in which the germs can grow. Thus Haffkine and Simpson found that an outbreak of cholera in the Gaya Gaol was due to the contamination of the milk from which they obtained the vibrio.

Of great importance in the dissemination of the malady are the so-called vibrio-carriers—viz., persons who, though themselves in good health, still harbour the germ in their intestines, or individuals

who continue to harbour the germ for months and years after an attack is over.

The fact that the germs can live for a long time in faecal matter enables them to infect insects such as flies, and perhaps ants. With regard to flies, the germs have been found not merely on the exterior of the body, but also in the alimentary canal, in which they are believed to multiply. The habits of flies make them, therefore, an important possible means of dissemination of the disease.

Faecal matter may also pollute green vegetables, for in the East vegetable-gardens are often contaminated with human faecal matter. The most dangerous vegetables are those which are eaten raw, such as lettuces, watercress, and tomatoes. While, however, the above methods explain many points in the epidemiology of cholera, they do not afford a full explanation of the spread of the disease. As we have already said, the principal endemic centre is Lower Bengal, whence it can spread through India, and, indeed, over the greater part of the world, by human agency and along lines of human intercommunication, but in so doing it may miss places on the direct route of its march. The reason of this is not clear. Certainly climatic conditions may be of importance, and perhaps a low level of the subsoil water and a high earth temperature, together with an imperfect sewage disposal and contaminated source of the drinking-water of the place, may have something to do with this anomaly.

Another point which is by no means understood is the fact that the disease remains for years in the endemic region, and then suddenly spreads in epidemic and pandemic form, extending at times over the whole world.

The ætiology may, therefore, be summarized by saying that the disease is caused by Koch's *Vibrio cholerae* acting in the presence of some unknown bodily condition or conditions, and spread directly from man to man by fomites, water, insects, and food, but the reasons for its endemicity and epidemicity are unknown.

When travelling from one place to another, it always adopts channels of human intercommunication, which may be ships, rivers, roads, or railways. When introduced into a locality, it will give rise to a widespread epidemic if the sanitation is so defective that the germs gain access to the drinking-water, but will be far less extensively spread if due to food or insects, and will be merely sporadic if spread from man to man.

Vibrios slightly different from the typical Koch's vibrio have been isolated by many observers, among whom ourselves. Recently Thiroux has described one such (which often takes a bacillary type) in the cholera of Senegal, known locally by the name of 'N'diank.'

Pathology.—The vibrio grows in the lumen, the glands, the epithelial cells, and the mucosa of the small intestine, probably producing an endocellular toxin, which is set free and causes the symptoms.

The question of toxin formation has, however, been much debated. Thus, in 1905, Brau and Denier considered that they had obtained a soluble toxin. In 1906 Kraus said that he had obtained a soluble toxin which caused the disease, and in the same year MacFadyen obtained a virulent endotoxin. In 1907 Strong carefully investigated the subject, and concluded that he was unable to find a soluble toxin as described above, but that MacFadyen's endotoxin was the true toxin which caused the symptoms in man. This endotoxin causes great gastro-intestinal disturbance, leading to the passage of fluid from the blood to the bowel in the following order: First water, and then inorganic salts, especially sodium chloride; later, phosphates and potassium salts; and still later organic substances. This endosmosis causes a great concentration of the blood, producing a high specific gravity, which may reach 1073 to 1078, which is associated with a great increase in the erythrocytes—8,000,000 per cubic millimetre, according to Rogers and Megaw—with a corresponding increase of the hæmoglobin and of the leucocytes, which may number from 14,000 to 60,000 per cubic millimetre. At the same time the alkalinity of the blood is decreased and its coagulative power altered, while the oxygen contained therein is decreased.

The concentration of the blood causes a fall in the blood-pressure, which is indicated by the feeble compressible pulse, but which, to be studied properly, requires investigation by means of a Riva-Rocci's instrument, as has been done by Rogers and Megaw, who found that in typical collapse the blood-pressure might be only 60 to 50 millimetres of mercury, when the patient is markedly cyanosed and restless. If the case is not so serious, the pressure may be higher—70 to 80 millimetres of mercury—and if the patient is on the road to recovery it may reach to 90 millimetres. As a result of this low blood-pressure, the urine may be suppressed or scanty, with a high specific gravity, albumin, casts, and a large quantity of indican.

The body appears to react to the disease by the pouring out of substances from the blood which are probably bactericidal, though Edwards's attempt to prove this failed because of decomposition and the admixture of other micro-organisms.

When recovery is about to take place, the specific gravity of the blood decreases, the blood-pressure rises, and the urine becomes abundant. As convalescence continues, the great danger is secondary infection of the body by other micro-organisms, which may cause serious illness and even death.

Morbid Anatomy.—Usually post-mortem rigidity is very well marked, and the body keeps warm for some time after death. On cutting into the tissues, it is noticed that they are very dry, and that the blood is often thick and tarry. On opening the peritoneal cavity, the hand experiences a peculiar sticky sensation not felt in any other disease with which we are acquainted.

The stomach is usually empty, and the bowels are reddish in

appearance, with injected vessels. When a piece of small bowel is opened, the contents are usually found to be whitish or greyish grumous material ; more rarely will the contents be blood-stained. These contents consist of food particles, epithelial cells, red and white corpuscles, and micro-organisms. When allowed to stand, they separate into liquid and solid portions, the former containing albumin, and having a specific gravity varying from 1005 to 1015. The mucosa of the stomach and bowels is hyperæmic and swollen, and may be marked by ecchymoses. There is usually some enlargement of the solitary and agminated glands, as well as of the mesenteric glands.

The liver is generally congested, and the ducts full of bile ; the spleen is shrunken ; the kidneys are swollen, and often ecchymotic, with tubules blocked with granular debris and cells in a state of cloudy swelling. The right heart is often dilated, and the whole venous system full of blood, while the arterial system and the left heart is empty. The lungs are collapsed, dry, and anæmic, and the brain may be congested.

Microscopically, the vibrios may be seen in Lieberkühn's follicles in the epithelial cells, and in the mucosa of the intestine and the stomach. The kidney shows vascular congestion and destruction of the epithelium. Usually the vibrios do not penetrate into the blood stream, and therefore the disease is mainly a general intoxication ; but Rebowski records cases in which they have been found, in the liver, the kidney, and the heart, thus producing a general infection.

If the post-mortem is held on a case which has died during the state of reaction, pneumonia and the signs of other secondary infections may be found.

Symptomatology.—A typical case of cholera has an incubation period which varies from a few hours to a few days (three to six). The onset is usually sudden, but there may be prodromata in the form of diarrhœa, or merely a feeling of illness and malaise. The attack begins with diarrhœa, with or without colicky pains in the abdomen. The motions are at first fæculent, and contain bile, but soon assume the typical rice-water appearance, in which they are fluid and acholic, containing numerous white flakes, which, when examined, are found to be composed of mucus containing vibrios and epithelial cells, while exceptionally the motions contain blood. Vomiting generally appears early, food being first expelled, followed later by a watery fluid, with which bile and occasionally blood may be mixed. The patient complains of thirst, and at times of hiccough. As the purging and vomiting proceed the urine diminishes, and may stop, and fluid departs from the subcutaneous tissues, which therefore contract, so that the facies alter, the nose becoming sharp, the cheek-bones prominent, the eyes sunken, and the skin of the fingers becomes wrinkled like that of a washerwoman. Whilst this is taking place, the circulation becomes profoundly affected, the blood-pressure falls, the pulse becomes weak and rapid, the heart-sounds

diminish, and the lips, face, and nails become bluish. The patient now has difficulty with his breathing, and his voice becomes weak and husky. Painful cramps appear in various muscles, but especially in the calf, arm, and abdominal muscles, while the reflexes are diminished. The mind is quite clear, but the patient is apathetic, except when agonized by the cramps. The skin feels cold, and the axillary temperature falls below normal, but that of the rectum may be considerably raised. If no change for the better takes place, the patient passes into the algide stage, in which the failure of the circulation becomes more marked, the pulse almost disappearing at the wrist, the heart becoming weak and irregular, the respirations laboured, the skin cold and deeply cyanosed, the urine suppressed, while the diarrhoea may or may not cease, and the temperature falls far below normal. The first heart-sound becomes impure, or a hæmic systolic murmur may be present, and the second may be faint, and friction-sounds may be heard over both the pericardium and pleura. The patient may now become comatose, and death supervenes in from twelve to thirty-six hours after the onset of the attack. If recovery is to take place, the diarrhoea diminishes, the skin becomes warmer, the pulse and blood-pressure improve, and after a time bile appears in the motions, and the skin fills out with fluid again.

Sometimes convalescence is rapid. In some a secondary febrile condition ensues, which may last for several days, or even for a couple of weeks.

The patient may at times pass into a *status typhosus*, with flushed face, raised temperature, dry brown tongue, low muttering delirium, with subsultus and toxic tremblings, and toxic rashes, which may be erythematous, papular, or hæmorrhagic. The urine is diminished in quantity, has a high specific gravity, and contains albumin and casts. The motions are somewhat like those of typhoid, or may be bloody.

Death may take place during this stage from complications, or recovery may ensue after a long convalescence. The infection of the convalescent may be said to have ceased when on three separate days the bacteriological examination of the motions is negative.

The typical course of the disease, as described above, is often arbitrarily subdivided into three stages: (1) The stage of evacuation; (2) the algide stage; and (3) the stage of reaction, when the patient is about to recover.

Varieties.—Cholera cases at times present many varied features, which are usually classified into:—

1. *Ambulatory Cases.*—There are cases in which, without any signs of disease, the vibrio may be obtained from the fæces. These people are genuine carriers of the disease.

2. *Choleraic Diarrhoea.*—Choleraic diarrhoea is characterized by severe purgation, associated with the passage of yellowish motions, which contain the specific vibrio. This condition may be recovered from, or may pass into a typical attack of the disease.

3. *Cholerine*.—The patient is suddenly seized with abdominal pains, and passes numerous fæculent motions, followed by typical rice-water motions, which speedily cease, and the patient quickly recovers without further symptoms.

4. *Cholera Gravis*.—This is the typical form already described.

5. *Cholera Sicca*.—In this type the patient becomes rapidly collapsed, and dies before the typical symptoms of diarrhœa and vomiting can appear. The post-mortem and the bacteriological examination of the bowel contents reveal the true nature of the disorder.

Complications.—In rare cases hyperpyrexia has been noted during the attack, but usually all the complications occur during the stage of reaction, and are due to secondary infections. The most common are pneumonia, enteritis, and inflammation of the kidney. Pregnant women always abort, and the fœtus may show signs of the disease. The reason of this abortive tendency is, according to Schütz, because cholera has a powerful effect upon even the non-pregnant uterus, causing hæmorrhage during the stage characterized by muscular cramps.

Sequelæ.—After such a severe illness, it is usual to find more or less permanent damage to the health of the victim. Thus anæmia, inflammation of the parotid, gangrene, ulceration of the cornea, astigmatism, or other errors of refraction, a tendency to diarrhœa, and digestive disturbances, may persist for a long time.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis is easy during an epidemic, but it may be very difficult in the period when there are only a few sporadic cases preceding the outbreak.

So closely may cholera be simulated by ptomaine poisoning as regards the collapse, and by infections with germs of the paratyphoid group, which we have seen produce typical rice-water motions, that it is perfectly useless in a sporadic case to attempt to make an accurate diagnosis without a bacteriological examination, and even this has to be performed with the greatest care, as there are many vibrios which are undistinguishable without special tests from the *Vibrio cholerae* Koch. We recommend the following method:—

1. Make films from the rice-like flakes, and stain with diluted Ziehl carbolic fuchsin (1 in 50) for ten minutes, or with Löffler's blue, five minutes. If a large number of curved rods be present, cholera may be suspected; but a definite diagnosis should never be based on the simple microscopical examination, as comma-like germs are found in many cases of ordinary diarrhœa, and even in normal stools.

2. Take a rice-like flake, and smear it direct on to the surface of McConkie's lactose-agar plate, using a sterile bent glass rod or Kruse's platinum pencil. Inoculate with the same rod or pencil without recharging the surface of two more plates, and incubate at 35° C. The colonies of the cholera and cholera-like vibrios develop on McConkie's medium as delicate small, yellowish, roundish dots within twelve to eighteen hours. Any suspicious yellowish colony

should be examined, and the germ investigated as regards the following characters:—

(a) *Motility*.—The cholera vibrio is very actively motile.

(b) *Morphology*.—The cholera organism is often bent, comma-like, but may be straight, bacillus-like.

(c) *Agglutination*.—A strong anticholera serum should be used. We use the serum derived from hyperimmunized rabbits. This serum in Ceylon generally shows an agglutination limit which varies between 1 in 5,000 and 1 in 7,000 on the various strains of cholera vibrios kept in stock in the laboratory. Any vibrio found in stools which is agglutinated by this serum in a dilution not less than 1 in 4,000 can safely be considered, as a rule, to be the true germ of cholera. In doubtful cases, all the cultural characters should be studied, and Pfeiffer's test and Castellani's absorption test should be carried out.

Dunbar has recommended a special agglutinative test, which consists in mixing directly a drop of the stools with diluted immune serum. The cholera vibrios become agglutinated. This process is practicable only when the stools contain many vibrios.

3. Inoculate four tubes of peptone water with the suspected stools, the first with $\frac{1}{4}$ c.c., the second with $\frac{1}{2}$ c.c., the third with 1 c.c., and the fourth with 2 c.c.; or inoculate each of two Erlenmeyer flasks, capped with sterile filter-paper without wool-plugs, with 1 c.c. of the stools. The formation of a scum on the surface of the medium within eight to ten hours is suspicious of cholera. The pellicle and the upper portions of the medium should be examined microscopically for the presence of vibrios, and McConkie agar or ordinary agar plates should be made for further examination, as already described. The peptone water should be tested for the presence of indol, adding a few drops of pure sulphuric acid. In true cholera the indol reaction is generally present eight to ten hours after inoculation.

4. Inoculate the surface of three ordinary serum-tubes with the suspected stools, and incubate at 35° C. If within sixteen hours there is no zone of liquefaction in the medium, cholera may be practically excluded. If there is liquefaction, this may be due to the presence of the cholera or other serum-liquefying germs, or to the stools containing an amount of proteolytic substances. The liquefied serum may be plated on McConkie or ordinary agar plates, and any suspicious colony further investigated.

5. Dieudonné's special strongly alkaline blood agar may be used for the isolation of the cholera vibrio in fæces. On this medium the cholera germ grows well, while the coli and coli-like organisms scarcely vegetate. Of course the colonies which grow must be carefully investigated, as already described.

6. *Bandi's Method*.—The suspected fæcal matter is inoculated into a sedimentative tube containing peptone water and a certain amount of immune serum. After incubation at 37° C. for three to seven hours this tube shows, if the case is one of cholera, numerous small

flocculi, which at first are in suspension, and later sink to the bottom. These flocculi consist of agglutinated vibrios.

7. *Ottolenghi's Method*.—The suspected stools are inoculated in a medium consisting of pure bile mixed with a 3 per cent. of a 10 per cent. solution of sodium carbonate, which after incubation at 37° C. for some hours is plated and further investigated.

If material has to be sent to a central depot for bacteriological examination, certain precautions must be carried out. The faeces must be carefully collected, if possible into a bed-pan which has been scalded or boiled, or a loop of small intestine carefully removed post mortem. These specimens must be forwarded in a glass bottle, which, as well as the cork, has been boiled. It is, perhaps, hardly necessary to state that no antiseptic must be mixed with the specimens.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is usually bad at the beginning of the epidemic, but improves as the epidemic continues. The case-mortality may be stated to be on the average about 50 per cent.

Treatment.—The treatment of cholera must aim at the destruction and removal of the vibrios, the neutralization of the toxins, the prevention of secondary infection through the damaged intestinal mucosa, the healing of which must be assisted, and the relief of symptoms.

To promote these objects, the patient must at once be sent to bed, no matter how slight the attack may seem to be. His room should be airy, and he should not be allowed to leave the horizontal position. The bed-pan and urine bottle must be used, and the former should be slightly warmed.

The best treatment is that devised by Rogers, which is as follows:—

The patient is given as much calcium permanganate water (1 to 6 grains to the pint) as he can drink, and permanganate pills every quarter of an hour for two hours, and then one pill every half hour (any pill rejected by vomiting being immediately replaced). These pills are continued until the stools become green and less copious, which may occur in twelve to twenty-four hours. At the beginning of the second twenty-four hours eight pills are administered within four hours, and in severe cases this is repeated at the beginning of the third twenty-four hours. In mild cases after the first twenty-four hours the pills are only administered every four hours.

The composition of the pills is:—

Potassium permanganate	..	..	..	2 grains.
Kaolin and vaseline	as may be required	to make a pill.		

This pill is coated with a varnish composed of 1 part of salol and 5 parts of sandarach varnish, or with keratin. Pills kept for any length of time are apt to become hard and useless.

The patient must be kept warm, and supplied with plenty of water to drink, which preferably should be taken in sips, and sinapisms or turpentine stupes should be applied to the abdomen.

When collapse has set in, hot bottles must be applied to the

extremities and round the body, and when the pulse fails, the median cephalic vein should be opened at the elbow, and Rogers's special silver cannula, made by Messrs. Down and Company, inserted, and through this injections of hypertonic saline solution should be injected until the blood-pressure returns as tested by the pulse, or more preferably by a Riva-Rocci's instrument. If the blood pressure sinks below 70 millimetres, Rogers considers this to indicate the presence of a dangerous degree of collapse and an indication for an immediate intravenous injection. He takes the specific gravity of the blood by the simple method of placing a drop of blood in the centre of a small vial containing a mixture of glycerine and water of known specific gravity (at the mean temperature of the air), and if the droplet rises or falls, trying another vial of lesser or greater density until the right specific gravity is reached.

He concludes that, if the specific gravity is over 1060, while the blood-pressure is low, a copious intravenous injection may be safely administered. If the specific gravity is over 1065, even if the blood-pressure is over 70 millimetres, it is advisable to give an intravenous injection as the blood is dangerously concentrated, and a single evacuation may lead to a rapidly fatal collapse.

Restlessness, cyanosis, and cramps are also taken as indications for intravenous injection, especially if the blood from the pricked finger is black, and may be obviously thicker in consistency than normal.

The saline solution at present recommended by Rogers is:—

Sodium chloride	..	..	120 grains (8 grammes).
Calcium chloride	..	..	4 " (0.25 gramme).
Potassium chloride	..	..	6 " (0.4 ").
Water	..	..	To 1 pint (568 c.c.).

The temperature of the sterilized solution (in an emergency pure water filtered through cotton-wool, and boiled for fifteen minutes will suffice) has to be judged by the rectal temperature. If this is 99° F. or over, Rogers injects the fluid at about the normal temperature of the body (98.4° F.)—*i.e.*, the flask temperature is about 100° F. If the rectal temperature is a degree or so below 99° F., the temperature of the solution in the flask should vary from 102° to 104° F. If the rectal temperature is high—*i.e.*, over 100° F.—the solution should be run in below 98.4° F. ; if the temperature is over 102° F. the solution should not be warmed. About 4 pints of fluid are required for an adult male, but the case must be carefully watched, and the injection stopped if any distress of increased frequency of respiration is noted. These injections may have to be repeated several times, and therefore the cannula must be left *in situ*. At the same time, hypodermic injections of strychnine, provided there are no severe cramps, with or without atropine, should also be given, and warm rectal injections.

During this treatment the bladder must be carefully watched to see whether urine is being passed or not, and if suppression occurs, dry-cupping should be performed over each loin.

When the stage of reaction sets in, a mixture containing salicylate of bismuth gr. xv., bicarbonate of soda gr. v., liquor opii sedativus min. v., mucilage q.s., and chloroform water 1 ounce, should be given, and later one containing alkalis and digitalis is useful.

With regard to symptoms, the persistent vomiting may be relieved by small pieces of ice or by $\frac{1}{8}$ grain of cocaine dissolved in a teaspoonful of water, or by a dose of 10 minims of *mistura pepsini composita et bismutho* every half-hour until four doses have been given, or by one or two drops of tincture of iodine in water. Cramps are treated by massage, assisted by rubbing with dry powdered ginger, by hypodermic injections of morphia, or by inhalations of a mixture of chloroform and oxygen. Prostration must be combated by hypodermic injections of strychnine or of camphor in ether. Delirium must be relieved by bromides with tincture of hyoscyamus.

The treatment of complications, such as pneumonia, etc., must be conducted on the lines laid down in textbooks on general medicine.

Other methods of treatment may be briefly mentioned. Many disinfectants are recommended by different authors—*e.g.*, a mixture of sulphocarbolates of zinc, 2 grains; soda, 2 grains; calcium, 3 grains, dissolved in peppermint. Acetozone, alphazone, and medical cyllin are recommended by O'Gorman, and both he and Waters advise the administration of 15 minims of medical izar dissolved in 1 ounce of water every two hours. Salol has been strongly recommended by some writers, and Brown and Banerji praise an emulsion of eucalyptus oil with mucilage and syrup of lemons, of which 5 minims are given for a dose. O'Gorman advises copper arsenite for infants, while Duke recommends red iodide of mercury in the algide stage, and Chosky cyanide of mercury in $\frac{1}{16}$ -grain doses in syrup and water every two or three hours, but says this is apt to cause stomatitis during convalescence, which can be avoided by regulating the doses. Cantani long ago advised slow intestinal injections of 3 to 4 pints of a 1 per cent. solution of tannin, with or without 20 to 40 drops of tincture of opium, and warmed to 100° F. and given every three to four hours. Denier's serum treatment has been found useless by Strong, but Kolle's serum promises to be more useful. Berdnikoff gave 30 to 50 c.c. of Schurupon's serum intravenously and subcutaneously with success. Salimbeni used 100 to 350 c.c., together with salines, injected subcutaneously and intravenously. Several authors recommend treatment by repeated hypodermic injections of morphia.

With regard to diet, no food should be given during the acute attack, but merely liquids, which should consist of water, iced water, iced soda-water. Stimulants should only be given with great moderation, and carefully by the mouth, as at times they are apt to do more harm than good. In the algide state the liquids given should be warmed, and hot black coffee may be used as a cardiac stimulant.

When reaction sets in, only the mildest foods must be allowed, and then only with care. Begin with thin arrowroot, and continue with milk mixed with soda-water, and then with milk, barley-water, rice-water, etc. Sanatogen, plasmon, and somatose are also recommended. Meat-extracts should be avoided. As improve-

ment continues, the diet may be slowly and carefully increased, but the greatest care must be taken for a long time.

Prophylaxis.—The prophylaxis must be based upon the knowledge that the disease is carried by man, and is spread from one man to another by water, milk, contaminated food, especially green vegetables, and insects, especially flies and perhaps ants.

The methods which may be adopted are classifiable into private and public.

Private Methods.—At the beginning of an epidemic it is as well to circulate a printed notice in English and in the vernacular telling the householder what he should do to prevent the disease attacking his household. It is the duty of the head of every household to personally inspect twice a week at least his kitchen and go-downs, and especially his servants' latrines, and to see that the house and compound are kept in a clean, sanitary condition. He must also see that the filters are properly cleaned, and should flies abound in the house, their source should be diligently sought for, or, if it cannot be found and dealt with, the Sanitary Authority should be informed. He should also see that the whole household keep themselves strictly clean, especially the cooks.

With regard to food and drink, care should be taken that all cooking and serving vessels are thoroughly cleansed with boiling water, and that kitchen cloths are washed in a solution of cyllin or carbolic acid. Especial care should be taken with regard to the ice-safe, which is apt to become coated internally with green slime, which may cause diarrhœa. This ice-safe must be thoroughly cleaned with hot soda and water, and exposed to the sun at least once a week. Food must not be stored near latrines, and must be protected from flies and ants, and the rooms and cupboards in which it is placed must be thoroughly cleansed with soda and hot water at least once a week.

All water must be boiled and filtered, and stored in covered vessels, and all milk must be boiled and carefully protected from flies and other insects. Care should be taken that good milk is procured. No uncooked vegetables or salads should be used; fruit must be sparingly indulged in; and unripe fruit, especially melons, must be avoided. Balfour advises that jellies in particular should not be used during a dangerous season. Weak tea and lime drinks made with boiling water should be used as beverages.

All cases of illness, but especially diarrhœa, must be promptly treated by a medical man.

With regard to prophylactics, eucalyptus oil in 10-minim doses twice daily has been strongly recommended by some authors, but the most usual prophylactic is a protective inoculation, which was first introduced by Ferran in Spain, and has been studied and improved by Haffkine and Gamaleia; by Tamancheff, who added 0.5 per cent. carbolic acid to the sterilized prophylactic; and by Strong and others.

Haffkine originally used two prophylactics—a weak and a strong

—with the idea that the strong would produce too violent a local reaction; but this proving to be wrong, only the strong is now used. This prophylactic is prepared by intensifying the virulence of the vibrios by passing them through a series of rabbits, and then growing on agar, from which the growth is washed off by sterile broth which is made up to 8 c.c., of which one is injected hypodermically into the flank as a dose. There is some local reaction in the form of redness, swelling, and pain, and some general febrile reaction. The result is that after an initial diminution of the resistance against the disease this becomes considerably increased after the fifth day. Haffkine's statistics show that it diminishes by one-tenth the liability to the disease, and increases the chance of surviving if attacked. Thus, according to Powell, in 6,549 non-vaccinated there were 198 cases and 124 deaths, and in 5,778 vaccinated there were 27 cases and 14 deaths. Vaccination confers a partial immunity, which lasts about fourteen months, after which it diminishes, and finally disappears. Revaccination is, therefore, necessary after this period.

Strong's method is to spray agar which is contained in large flat-sided flasks with a twenty-four-old culture of the vibrio in broth, and then to incubate the flasks at 37° C. for twenty hours, and to suspend the subsequent growth in sterile water, which is first heated to 60° C. for one to twenty-four hours, then incubated at 37° C. for two to five days, and then filtered through a Reichel candle. Two c.c. (the equivalent of 10,000 units of immunity in a rabbit) of the filtrate, which must be sterile, are inoculated. This prophylactic, which is said to be capable of being kept for a year, produces no local reaction, and but slight general reaction, and increases the bactericidal and agglutinative powers of the serum considerably. Strong considers that it contains receptors separated from the vibrios, and that it probably acts by increasing the bactericidal and antitoxic powers of the epithelial cells of the mucosa of the alimentary canal.

One of us has prepared an attenuated live vaccine by heating emulsions of agar cultures to 45° C. or 48° C. for one hour.

A nucleo-proteid vaccine, according to Lustig and Galeotti's method, can also be prepared.

Public Prophylaxis.—It is the duty of the State to attempt to ward off cholera by preventing human beings introducing the germ. This involves the careful watching of the frontiers, especially along the lines of intercommunication, whether roads, railways, or waterways. Under the last heading must be included ships, boats, and rafts, for it must be remembered that cholera is very apt to be introduced by persons travelling along rivers.

Any suspicious case must be detained for five days in quarantine in suitable isolation hospitals erected near the frontiers, while the sick must be tended in special hospitals with all the precautions to be mentioned later.

Merchandise does not, as a rule, require any disinfection, unless

there is reason to suspect that some of it has been faecally contaminated from a case.

When an epidemic begins, the first duty is to form a special Cholera Board to deal with the outbreak, and this Board should be composed of financial and legal authorities, as well as of doctors and bacteriologists. This Board will form the central authority for the control of the epidemic. All suspicious cases must be reported to this central authority at once.

Then central and outlying bacteriological stations must be provided, and special hospitals and isolation hospitals built, and, if possible, nurses and medical men obtained who have some practical knowledge of the disease. If time permits, it is as well to have these vaccinated against the disease, but it should be remembered that five days must elapse before the immunity is effective.

Arrangements must then be made for the prompt bacteriological diagnosis of cases, for the prompt treatment of all disorders, especially intestinal, and extra dispensaries must be opened, and the public informed of the necessity of availing themselves of these medical arrangements. If necessary, a house-to-house inspection should be made, in order to find out if there are mild concealed cases, and nobody should be buried without a proper medical certificate.

All patients must be removed to the hospitals, and the houses disinfected with the Clayton gas apparatus, in order to kill not merely the germs, but also the flies and ants. If this is not available, formalin sprays, together with burning sulphur, may be used, Fomites should be carefully disinfected, and persons attending the sick must avoid infection by careful disinfection of the hands and by wearing overalls.

The dejecta of patients should be carefully disinfected with cyllin or carbolic acid, and no patient should be liberated from the hospital until bacteriological examinations of his faeces on three successive days are negative. This is a most necessary precaution, because otherwise he may spread the germs broadcast for a period of about six weeks at least.

Care must be taken to disinfect and bury the dead with least chance of the infection spreading. Cremation should be encouraged in preference to burial.

A systematic search must be made for the origin of the infection, and drinking-water, well-water, etc., must be regularly examined bacteriologically. Dangerous wells must be closed, and all wells may be Hankenized—*i.e.*, disinfected with permanganate of potash.

The milk, ice, and aerated waters should be taken under the municipal control, and not merely must care be taken that they are pure, but they must be tested bacteriologically from time to time.

Vegetables must be inspected, and the place where they are grown ascertained and inspected, in order to find whether there is faecal pollution. A crusade must be made against flies and dirt in general.

The disposal of sewage should, of course, have been dealt with before the epidemic has occurred; but if it is defective, attempts should be made to remedy this as far as possible, and a scheme at once started for proper collection and disposal.

Bathing-places must be carefully inspected, and bad places closed, and only pure water allowed to be used. No washing must be allowed near wells. Drugs must be given free, and means for inoculation of the prophylactic provided on a large scale.

When the epidemic is past, the sanitary defects found out during its course should be remedied, and not forgotten until another outbreak occurs.

Summary of Prophylactic Measures.

Public Prophylaxis :—

1. Protection of the frontiers by regular inspection posts and quarantine stations.
2. A central Cholera Board, with full staff and apparatus for bacteriological disinfection and hospital work.
3. Instruction of the populace by means of pamphlets.
4. House-to-house search for cases.
5. Search for carriers and sources of infection.
6. Distribution of medicines and disinfectants.
7. Provision of medical aid which can be readily obtained by anyone.
8. Crusade against house-flies.

Private Prophylaxis :—

1. Personal cleanliness.
2. Avoidance of foods liable to be contaminated or to cause diarrhœa.
3. Avoidance of pollution of foods, especially by flies.
4. Filtration and boiling of all water used for cooking, drinking, etc. Filters to be kept strictly clean.
5. Boiling of milk and protection against flies.
6. Clean, sanitary dwelling free from flies.
7. Anti-cholera vaccination.
8. Immediate application for medical aid in case of diarrhœal illness of any description.

REFERENCES.

The most useful general reference is Rogers's excellent work (1911), *Cholera and its Treatment*. London.

BLELL (1906-07). *Zeitschrift für Hygiene*, lv. 187. (Immunization with Nucleo-Proteid.)

CHOKSY (1907). *Lancet*, i. 1077.

DE BONIS (1912). *Pathologica*.

DIEUDONNÉ (1909). *Centr. f. Bakter.*

DUKE (1905). *Prevention of Cholera, and its Treatment*. Calcutta.

DUNBAR (1907). *Osler and McCrae's System of Medicine*, ii. 714.

GALEOTTI (1912). *Centr. f. Bakt.*

HAFFKINE (1895). *British Medical Journal*, ii. 1541. (Cholera Prophylactic.)

HIRSCH (1883). *Handbook of Geographical and Historical Pathology*. (New Sydenham Society.)

KOLLE (1909). *Deutsche Medizinische Wochenschrift*.

MACRAE (1894). *Indian Medical Gazette*, p. 407. (Flies and Cholera.)

MACNAMARA (1892). *Asiatic Cholera*. (History till 1892.)

- MEGAN (1912). *Lancet*.
O'GORMAN (1905). *Indian Medical Gazette*, xl. 414. (Treatment.)
O'MEARA (1908). *Indian Medical Gazette*, xliii. 375.
PANE (1912). *Riforma Medica*.
ROGERS (1909). *Proceedings of the Royal Society*. (Salines.)
ROGERS AND MACKELVIE (1908). *Indian Medical Gazette*, xliii. 165. (Saline
Injections.)
ROGERS AND MEGAW (1908). *Indian Medical Gazette*, xliii. 80. (Salines.)
SCHMITZ (1906). *Zeitschrift für Hygiene*, lii. 1. (Cholera Vaccines.)
SCHUTZ (1894). *Centralblatt für Gynakologie*, p. 45. (Influence of Cholera
on Female Genital Organs.)
SIMPSON (1894). *Cholera in Calcutta*.
SNOW (1855). *Report of the Committee for Scientific Inquiries into the
Cholera of 1854*. (Broad Street Pump Case.)
STRONG (1907). *Philippine Journal of Science*, ii. 413.
WALL (1893). *Asiatic Cholera*. London.
WHERRY (1905). *Some Observations on the Biology of the Cholera Spirillum*.

CHAPTER LIII

THE DYSENTERIES

The term 'dysentery'—Dysentery and dysenteric diarrhœa—Dysenteries caused by animal parasites—Protozoal dysenteries—Amœbic dysentery—Laveranic dysentery—Leishmanic dysentery—Ciliar dysenteries—Flagellate diarrhœa and dysentery—Spirochætic dysentery—Platyhelminthic dysenteries—Nemathelminthic dysenteries—Arthropodic dysenteries—Dysenteries caused by bacteria—Pseudo-dysenteries—References.

The Term Dysentery.—The term 'dysentery' is derived from *δυσεντερία*, signifying a bowel trouble, and was first employed by Hippocrates. As used at present, it covers a large number of distinct affections, induced by various species of animal and vegetal parasites. In England it used to be called the *Bloody flux*, in France *Ténésme*, and in Italy *Flusso sanguigno*. The Latin equivalent is *Tormina*, the German *Ruhr*; while the native terms applied to it are too numerous to be considered here, but we may mention the Sinhalese term *Lehedanpachanai* (*Leh*=blood, *hedan*=mucus, *pachanai*=diarrhœa), and the Indian term, *Rattam-seedam-banthalaporado* or *Wayatholechell*.

Dysentery and Dysenteric Diarrhœa.—The occurrence of a bowel disease in which blood appeared in the motions was well known to the ancients, for descriptions of such a condition can be found in the works of the old authors Charaka and Susruta, in which dysentery was called 'Atisar,' and acute dysentery 'Ama-apaka,' while the chronic variety was called 'Pakitsar.'

Hippocrates recognized two distinct types of disease of the bowels—one characterized by the number and fluidity of the motions, which he called *διαρροία*, and the other, which he termed *δυσεντερία*, by the presence of blood in the motions.

At first the term 'dysentery' included any disease in which there was a discharge of blood *per anum*, but Aretæus, Celsus, Archigenes, and Galen, and other ancient physicians, soon differentiated the disease more clearly by emphasizing the fact that there should be mucus as well as blood in the motions, and that the symptoms of tormina and tenesmus must be present. They further stated that the disease was due to an ulcerated condition of the bowels. Hence, according to these ancient writers, in order to make the diagnosis of dysentery, it was necessary to have blood

and mucus in the motions. Recent investigations have, however, shown that certain cases of diarrhœa and dysentery are brought about by the same organism, and that a form of diarrhœa which may be called dysenteric diarrhœa is only one phase of the clinical appearances of a dysentery, and is ætiologically in no way different from what might be termed a true dysentery, except in the severity of the symptoms and the post-mortem appearances. Briefly, dysenteric diarrhœas are dysentery under a somewhat different clinical aspect—viz., the stools do not contain blood and mucus, although the complaint is due to the same organisms as true dysentery. Hence it is not expedient to attempt to classify dysenteries by their clinical symptoms or by their post-mortem appearances, and any rational classification and description of the complaint must be based on the causation.

We therefore classify dysenteries and dysenteric diarrhœas into :—

A. Dysenteries caused by Animal Parasites :—

- I. The Protozoal Dysenteries.
- II. The Platyhelminthic Dysenteries.
- III. The Nematelminthic Dysenteries.
- IV. The Arthropodic Dysenteries.

B. Dysenteries caused by Bacteria.

C. Pseudo-dysenteries.

By the last expression we mean such forms of the complaint as may be due to the irritation of fish-bones, glass, cancer, or inflammations of organs adjoining the alimentary canal.

Early History.—Hippocrates associated dysentery with an ulcerative condition of the alimentary canal, and thus it was defined by Archigenes, but in the Middle Ages this knowledge was lost, and it was only Huxham and Broussais who associated the disease with colitis. The contagious nature of the malady was early recognized, and it was thought that its epidemics were due to miasmata. This was the condition of knowledge with regard to dysentery when bacteriological researches began to define it more exactly.

A. DYSENTERIES CAUSED BY ANIMAL PARASITES.

I. THE PROTOZOAL DYSENTERIES.

The protozoal dysenteries are classified into :—

- (a) Amœbic Dysentery.
- (b) Laveranic Dysentery.
- (c) Leishmanic Dysentery.
- (d) Ciliar Dysenteries.

It is convenient to describe as an appendix to these dysenteries the diarrhœas said to be due to flagellate organisms, though these

can in no way clinically be termed dysentery, and also the so-called spirochætic dysentery.

With regard to the term 'amœbic dysentery,' we prefer this term as less likely to be altered rather than the more correct nomenclature Löschiäl dysentery or Löschiäs.

(a) Amœbic Dysentery.

Synonyms.—*Löschiasis*, *Löschial dysentery*, Entamœbiasis, Amœbiasis, Entamœbic dysentery, Amœbic enteritis, Amœbic colitis. *French*: Dysenterie Amibienne, Dysenterie à Amibes. *German*: Amöbenruhr. *Italian*: Dissenteria Amebica.

Definition.—Amœbic dysentery is an acute or chronic specific disease of the intestine, caused most commonly by *Löschia tetragena* Viereck 1907 and by *L. histolytica* Schaudinn 1903 in some cases, and possibly by other species. These amœbæ enter the body with food or water, and produce colitis, rectitis, and enteritis, characterized by the passage of frequent motions, which generally contain blood and mucus, and are associated with abdominal pain and tenesmus. At times they also produce abscesses in the liver and other parts of the body.

History.—In 1860 Lambl noticed amœbæ in the motions of a child suffering from diarrhœa, and in 1870 Lewis found the same organisms in the motions of cholera patients; while Löschi, in 1875, gave a careful description of certain amœbæ which he found in the motions of a man suffering from chronic diarrhœa. Löschi's drawing signifies that he saw both the organism which we call *Löschia coli* and probably that which we now name *L. tetragena*. Further, he found that solutions of quinine of a strength of 1 in 5,000, when injected *per rectum*, temporarily benefited his patient, who, however, subsequently died of pneumonia, when a post-mortem revealed that the bowels were ulcerated. Löschi was able to infect dogs; but, on the other hand, Grassi, and later Cunningham and Lewis, showed that the motions of healthy people also contained Entamœbæ. Koch, in 1883, found amœbæ in the ulcers in cases of dysentery in Egypt, and Kartulis began a series of investigations, which finally ended by his defining the types of dysentery as 'endemic,' due to amœbæ, and 'epidemic,' due to bacteria. In 1891 Councilman and Lafleur introduced the term 'amœbic dysentery,' and Hlava, Quincke, Roos, Vivaldi, and many others published experimental researches on the infection of animals by amœbæ and the production of dysentery.

In the meanwhile a prolonged discussion took place, some observers denying, and others asserting, the pathogenicity of the amœbæ. Kruse and Pasquale were the first to throw light upon this difference of opinion by suggesting that both theories might be correct, and that there might be two species of amœbæ, one pathogenic and the other harmless; but this was not finally settled until the researches of Casagrandi and Barbagallo, together with those

of Jürgens, were confirmed and greatly extended by Schaudinn, who showed that there were two forms of amœbæ quite distinct from one another—viz., a *Löschia coli* Lösch, which was harmless, and another, *L. histolytica* Schaudinn, which was the true cause of entamœbic dysentery. Since that date the labours of Viereck and others have demonstrated the pathogenicity of *L. tetragena*, while Lesage has shown that species of harmless Entamœbæ other than *L. coli* may exist in the tropics. Gauducheau has isolated from a case of dysentery a small amœba which he calls *L. phagocytoides*, and which we have described in Chapter XIV., in which *L. minuta* and *L. nipponica* are also described.

During the last two years the labours of Hartmann, Whitmore, Wenyon, and others, have proved that the amœba which most commonly causes dysentery is *L. tetragena* Viereck 1907, and it is possible that *L. histolytica* and the other forms of amœbæ described in dysentery are the same as this amœba; but, on the other hand, they may be separate species, though not so commonly found as *L. tetragena*. Further researches are required to settle this question.

Climatology.—Amœbic dysentery is found throughout the tropical world, and also occurs in the Temperate Zone. In general terms it may be stated that amœbic dysentery is common in tropical and subtropical Africa, especially in Senegambia, Algeria, and Egypt. It is common in Mauritius and Ceylon, and is possibly not as rare in India as it is alleged to be. It is common in China, Indo-China, and the Philippines, and not infrequent in North America, but is said to be rare in Central America, in the West Indies, and the Guianas, while common in Brazil and Chili. In Europe it is endemic in Russia and Germany, and fairly frequently met with in the south, especially in Italy.

Our observations do not lend support to the theory that amœbic dysentery is more common in the hills than in the plains of the tropics, as we have frequently met with it in persons residing in the low country. We have noted the disease all the year round, but it would appear to be more prevalent towards the end of the dry and the beginning of the wet seasons, which probably merely means that the chance of drinking polluted water is greater at that time, for though the climatological characters are not well understood, the disease appears to bear a constant relationship to contaminated water.

Amœbic dysentery is generally endemic, and does not spread in epidemic, still less in pandemic, form. Probably, as medical science advances, it will be found to be of more frequent occurrence and of wide distribution.

Ætiology.—The prevalent opinion at the present time is that amœbic dysentery is generally caused by *Löschia tetragena*, Viereck 1907 and in some cases by *L. histolytica* Schaudinn 1903, but the possibility is not excluded of there being other pathogenic *Löschia*. The life-histories of the various species, as far as they are known, have already been described in Chapter XIV. The most common source

of infection is the drinking-water, which has been contaminated by fæces, and contaminated food, and especially green vegetables.

There does not appear to be any well-established racial or age predisposition, but the disease is less common in women than in men, perhaps because they are in some way less exposed to infection.

Pathology.—The spores of the amœbæ enter the body usually by the drinking-water, and less frequently by food, and produce the young amœbæ on arrival in the large bowel. These young forms enter the mucosa, probably by passing between the cells lining Lieberkühn's follicles, and then, entering the lymphatics, make their way through the muscularis mucosæ into the submucosa, where they live and feed upon the tissue cells, red cells, and perhaps leucocytes. They, however, invade not merely the tissue of the submucosa, but also the radicles of the portal vein, and at times the branches of the mesenteric arteries, in which they may cause thrombosis. From the radicles of the portal vein they may be carried to the liver, and cause hepatitis and hepatic abscess.

In the submucosa they induce cellular and œdematous infiltrations, which cause the mucosa to project in the form of small elevations, which generally show a minute blackish point or slough at the summit. This slough is cast off, and a small ulcer is formed, which rapidly deepens until it extends into the submucosa. These ulcers become infected with bacteria, and quickly extend by the joint action of the bacteria and the amœbæ, forming roundish or oval ulcers with undermined edges; in the latter case the long axis of the ulcer lies transverse to the direction of the bowel. These ulcers may deepen until the muscular and the peritoneal coats are exposed, and even perforated, which, of course, leads to peritonitis or abscess formation, according to the position of the perforation.

Amœbic dysentery would appear to undergo in many cases no spontaneous cure, but may at times remain quiescent, forming a type of latent amœbic dysentery, which may be found accidentally while performing an autopsy. When the ulcers heal, which they do by the formation of connective tissue, a distinct scar is formed, which is often black in colour from the action of the sulphuretted hydrogen of the bowel upon the iron of the blood. When cicatrization takes place, the lumen of the bowel may be constricted, causing stenosis and obstinate constipation. Peritonitic adhesions are also very common, binding the large bowel to the viscera or walls of the abdomen and pelvis.

Sometimes, when the infection is severe, the bowel becomes gangrenous; at other times the amœbæ may be carried to the liver or other parts of the body, and form abscesses, which, though most commonly met with in the liver, may still occur in the spleen, the salivary glands, and elsewhere.

Morbid Anatomy.—Usually the body of a person dying from amœbic dysentery is emaciated, and the abdomen is sunken. Rigor mortis begins, and passes off early, and decomposition sets in quickly. On opening the abdomen, it is noticed that the tissues

are dry, and that a peculiar odour is perceived ; the omentum may be normal or congested, and may or may not be adherent. The coils of the small intestine are usually normal, but may be congested. The large intestine is generally contracted and thickened, but may be gangrenous in places or along its entire length. There may be perforation and purulent peritonitis. The mesocolon may be congested, and œdematous or thin and fibrous, and adhesions to various organs may be noted. The mesocolic glands are usually enlarged and hyperæmic. The colon may be found adherent to the liver, the spleen, or the wall of the pelvis, while internally the

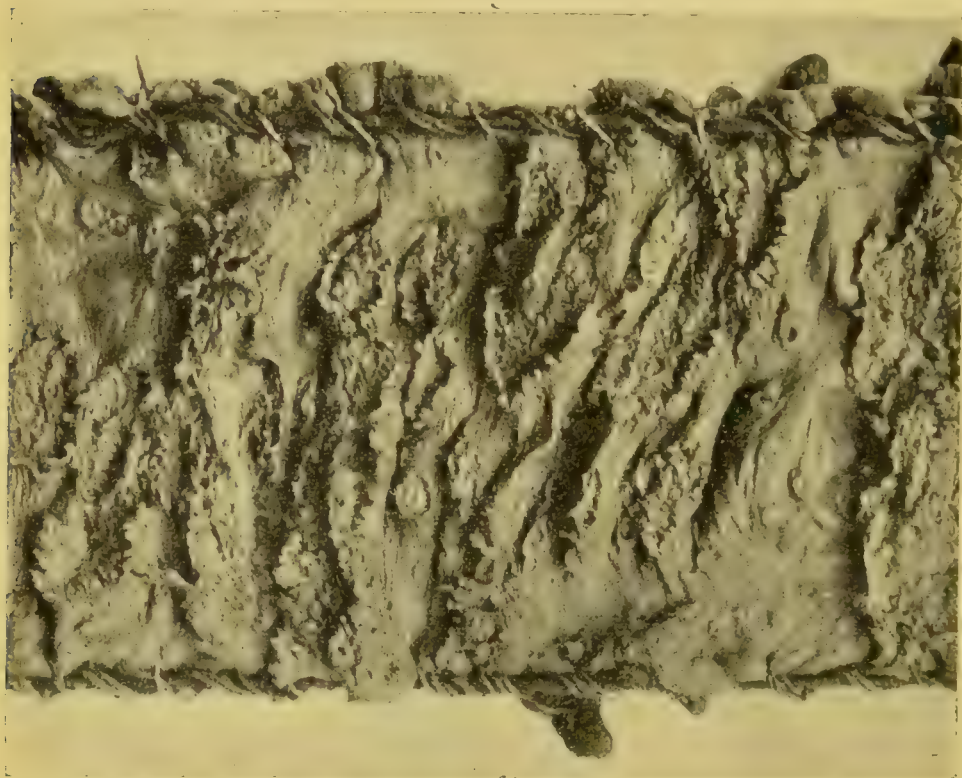


FIG. 530.—THE COLON IN A CASE OF AMŒBIC DYSENTERY.

mucosa will be found to be reddened and inflamed, and to show more or less numerous areas of ulceration and infiltration. These areas are most commonly found in the cæcum, the hepatic flexure, and the sigmoid colon, but may occur anywhere along the course of the large intestine. In places small nodules surrounded by a ring of dilated vessels may be observed, between which the mucosa may or may not be normal, while the nodules may show superficial or deep ulceration. Deeper circular or oval ulcers may be noted with their surface covered with a dark reddish slough, their edges undermined, and their base formed by the muscular coats. In the case of the oval ulcers, the longer diameter lies transverse to the long

diameter of the bowel, as a rule. The peritoneal coat may be normal, inflamed, or softened and gangrenous. Usually the muscular coat is thickened, as are the remains of the submucosa. Scrapings from these ulcers reveal blood cells, leucocytes, bacteria, and amœbæ. The small intestine may show small bright red nodules, and the Peyer's patches may be enlarged. The vermiform appendix is usually normal, but occasionally may be ulcerated.

The liver is often fatty, but may be congested and inflamed, or may show one or more abscesses. The pancreas is generally normal, but may be cirrhotic in chronic cases. The spleen is also usually normal, but may contain an abscess; the kidneys often show signs of parenchymatous inflammation. The heart and lungs are generally normal, but the former may be fatty or show brown atrophy, and the latter, especially the right lung, may show a hepato-pulmonary abscess.

Symptomatology.—The symptomatology of amœbic dysentery may be classified into :—

1. Acute Type.
2. Chronic Type.
3. Latent Type.
4. Mixed Type.

1. *Acute Type.*—The onset is abrupt, but may occasionally be preceded for a few days by slight diarrhœa, alternating with constipation. Pain is felt in the lower part of the abdomen, which may become very severe, while the motions are attended with much griping and straining. These motions, which rarely exceed thirty *per diem*, contain blood and mucus, and occasionally greenish material, and when examined by the microscope reveal leucocytes, mucus, Charcot-Leyden crystals, amœbæ, bacteria, and at times shreds of tissue.

The tongue is moist, and often coated with a white fur, and there is usually anorexia, and there may be nausea and vomiting, while digestion is usually much impaired. The abdomen is sunken, the liver and spleen normal, but tenderness is felt on pressure along the whole or a part of the large bowel.

The examination of the heart and lungs reveals, as a rule, no abnormality, but the pulse and respirations are quickened. The microscopical examination of the blood usually shows that the red cells are diminished, and sometimes that there is leucocytosis (upwards of 20,000 per cubic millimetre), and at times, as first pointed out by Billet, the number of eosinophiles is distinctly increased, even when there is no concomitant helminthiasis.

The urine is diminished in quantity, and sometimes contains albumin and casts; but the skin is generally normal, though there is often some fever of a remittent type, which, however, may be entirely absent.

When the temperature falls to normal, and the pain and tenderness abate, these may be favourable signs, or may be merely a prelude

Usually in these cases the motions are numerous from the first, and there is considerable fever, nausea, vomiting, and great constitutional disturbance. The motions are apt to be very offensive, and to contain sloughs, indicating a gangrenous condition of the bowel. Exhaustion may come on early, and the patient may die delirious or comatose, or, more rarely, from peritonitis, with or without perforation. More rarely improvement sets in, and the disease becomes chronic.

Complications.—The most usual complication is hepatitis and hepatic abscess; more rarely gangrene of the bowel and peritonitis may supervene during an attack; while hæmorrhage is a most unusual complication. The hepatitis is recognized by the tenderness in the right hypochondrium and by the rise in the temperature, but it and the hepatic abscess will be discussed in a subsequent chapter. In Ceylon we have observed cases of mixed infection, dysentery and enteric, the two infections developing apparently contemporaneously.

Sequelæ.—The important sequel to an attack of amœbic dysentery is liver abscess, but abscesses in other parts of the body such as the spleen may be met with. Stenosis of the sigmoid colon, due to the cicatrization of the healing ulcers, is well known, and will be dealt with under the heading of Bacterial Dysentery. Sprue is often said to be a sequel of dysentery, but this must be considered to be doubtful.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis between bacterial and amœbic dysentery by clinical phenomena only is, in our opinion, impossible in most cases, though several observers have attempted to define some differential points. These authors state that amœbic dysentery is to be distinguished from bacillary dysentery by its chronic course, its rare pyrexia, and the absence of toxic symptoms, while it is often followed by liver abscess. Apart from the last feature, the other so-called differential signs have, in our experience, no importance, as we have come across extremely acute cases of amœbic dysentery with fever and toxic symptoms.

The only certain method of diagnosis is by the discovery of *Löschia tetragena*, or, more rarely, *L. histolytica* in the stools. It is practically important to distinguish between *L. tetragena* and the harmless *L. coli*. The former is larger, and possesses an ectoplasm, which is easily differentiated from the endoplasm; it is more actively motile than *L. coli*, and often contains erythrocytes and bacteria. The nucleus of *L. histolytica* is eccentric, small, and generally indistinct, does not stain deeply, and has very little chromatin.

In order to expedite the diagnosis the French method is to add a drop of a 1 per cent. solution of methylene blue to the mucus before placing on the cover-slip, when the pus and epithelial cells will be stained, and the amœbæ more easily recognized as unstained, clear objects.

Prognosis.—The prognosis in a case of amœbic dysentery must always be guarded, as there is the possibility of hepatic abscess

as sequela of the mildest case. The prognosis is worst in the gangrenous cases, better in the acute, and still better in the mild chronic cases, but the danger of latency after an apparent cure must be remembered. In the acute type hiccough is an unfavourable sign, often indicating the approach of exhaustion and death.

Treatment.—It is of the utmost importance that the patient should be placed at rest in bed. For the same purpose the urine bottle and the bed-pan must be used. It is advisable to relieve the severe griping and straining by either a hypodermic injection of morphia or by small enemata of 40 minims of laudanum in 1 ounce of mucilage of starch, or by using a morphia (gr. $\frac{1}{4}$), or codeine (gr. $\frac{1}{4}$) suppository.

At first the bowels should be swept clean by a dose of castor oil (ʒiv. to ʒvi.), with or without a few minims of liquor opii sedativus or a few doses of saline may be given during the first twenty-four hours (see Bacillary Dysentery). After the castor oil has acted, or, simultaneously, the emetine treatment should be begun. One-third to one-half grain of emetine hydrochloride, dissolved in sterile normal saline solution, should be administered as a hypodermic injection three times a day for two or three days. Emetine hydrobromide may also be used in the same dosage, but is not quite so soluble. These drugs may be obtained in sterile tubes ready for injection.

If emetine cannot be obtained, then ipecacuanha should be administered in 5-grain doses every three or six hours, or in larger doses (gr. x. to xx.) twice daily, given either in the form of 'membroids' or as pills coated with salol varnish or keratin. Our experiments *in vitro* tend to show that membroids and salol varnish do not dissolve freely in peptic juice, while they do so in pancreatic juice. The salol varnish was very efficient, but care must be taken that too thick a coating is not used, as it may not dissolve in pancreatic juice. Practically, however, in man the membroids are better than the salol varnish. Martindale's method of stearin-coated pills is very good. In this way the nauseating effects of the ipecacuanha are often avoided without diminishing its efficiency, which is the result of using the de-emetized drug. Administered in the above methods, there is, in most cases, no fear of nausea, and the precautions usually advised need not be carried out. Rarely the membroids and salol varnished pills may be passed unaltered in the motions, and in such cases the drug should be given in cachets or in suspension in mucilage and chloroform water. When membroids are not obtainable, ipecacuanha may be given in cachets or pills (gr. x. to xx. twice a day), and should be preceded a quarter of an hour by a dose of 15 minims of tincture of opium, in order to prevent the possible vomiting.

With regard to ipecacuanha, it is of great importance to use the best Brazilian, which should contain 72 per cent. of emetine (methyl-cephaeline) in its total alkaloids, the other alkaloids being

cephaëline 26 per cent., and psychotrine 2 per cent.; on the other hand, Carthagena ipecacuanha contains cephaëline 57 per cent. and emetine only 40 per cent. The powdered ipecacuanha should have an alkaloidal strength of 2 per cent.

When the acute symptoms have passed away, intestinal irrigations are useful, and should be administered every other day, or once or twice daily. We generally use a solution of tannic acid (3 to 5 in 1,000), or a solution of the bihydrochloride of quinine in varying strength from 1 in 5,000 to 1 in 750. About $\frac{1}{2}$ to 3 pints should be very slowly injected by gravity from a glass douche vessel by means of a long soft rectal tube well greased with boric vaseline. This injection may be preceded by a cocaine or morphine (gr. $\frac{1}{4}$) suppository introduced half an hour previously.

Other substances used for rectal irrigations are:—Acetozone (1 in 2,000); alphozone (1 in 2,000); argentum nitras (1 in 2,000 or 1 in 1,000), useful in some very chronic cases; protargol (1 in 500). Creosote is recommended by Zanardini, and may be used by injecting 2 pints of 1 in 300 or 1 pint of 1 in 100. The injection, however, may be followed by symptoms of absorption—*e.g.*, dyspnœa and faintness. A solution of sodium hypochlorite may be used: two pints of 8 to 12 in 1,000 being recommended by Vincent once or twice a day, which is also useful for amœbic carriers.

In gangrenous dysentery the only chance of saving the life of the patient is to perform the operation of appendicostomy, and irrigate the whole lower bowel with quinine lotion (1 in 1,000) or collargol (1 in 500). The details of this operation are given under the heading Bacterial Dysenteries. With regard to the treatment of symptoms, the most important is the relief of pain by hypodermic injections of morphia or by fomentations sprinkled with opium and applied to the abdomen. As the case progresses favourably, a bismuth mixture or tannalbin in cachets (gr. xx. every two to four hours) may be given, while the irrigation may be diminished and stopped, and finally a tonic may be prescribed.

We are strongly of opinion that the ipecacuanha or the emetine should continue to be given in smaller doses long after the dysenteric symptoms have disappeared, in order to prevent relapses, and possibly, also, the development of a liver abscess, which is the most dangerous sequel. Among the other drugs which have been recommended in the treatment of amœbic dysentery are *Simaruba officinalis* and the so-called *Kho-sam* powder.

The former is recommended by Manson to be used as a decoction which is prepared by taking simaruba bark, pomegranate fruit-rind, and gum arabic, 15 grammes of each, and placing in a litre of warm water, which is boiled till reduced to half its bulk, and of this decoction 1 ounce is taken three or four times a day.

The latter (*Kho-sam* powder) is derived from the berries of *Brucia antidysenterica* and *B. sumatrana*, which grow in Indo-China. It is administered in pill form, 1 grain being given two to four times a day. Cinnamon has been often used in the past.

If cicatrization of the colon results with stenosis, then sigmoidoscopy must be performed, and the condition treated as described under Bacterial Dysentery. Liver abscess is considered separately. Abscesses in other parts of the body—*e.g.*, the spleen—are rarely met with, though it is possible that some of the inexplicable deep-seated abscesses may have their causation in amœbæ.

The *diet* should be the same as that to be described presently under the heading Bacterial Dysentery. During convalescence the food must be slowly and carefully increased, no acid or very warm substances being allowed.

Prophylaxis.—The prophylaxis consists in the drinking of only boiled and filtered water, and the avoidance of salads and uncooked vegetables.

Amœbæ, probably non-parasitic, were shown to exist in the drinking-water in Manila, and it was found that copper sulphate added to the water of the large reservoirs was useless, as was a large filter-bed, and that, in fact, the only safeguard was to sterilize the water by boiling.

(b) *Laveranic Dysentery.*

Definition.—An acute enteritis and colitis caused by *Laverania malariae* Grassi and Feletti, and characterized by high fever, associated with the passage of frequent motions containing blood and mucus.

Symptomatology.—The attack usually begins suddenly, with high fever, great distress, and prostration. The tongue is coated, the abdomen tender, and many motions are passed containing blood and mucus. Unless correctly treated, the condition becomes serious, and rapidly leads to the death of the patient.

Diagnosis.—The routine examination of the blood in all cases of tropical disease will prevent mistakes being made, as the presence of numerous subtertian parasites in the blood will reveal the nature of the complaint.

Treatment.—Quinine should be given in large doses, best by intramuscular injection, and the intestinal symptoms first treated with castor oil or salines, and then with astringents, such as bismuth subnitrate, tannalbin, and salol.

(c) *Leishmanic Dysentery.*

Definition.—An acute enteritis and colitis caused by *Leishmania donovani* Laveran and Mesnil, and characterized by the passage of blood and mucus in the motions.

Symptomatology and Treatment.—As already mentioned in the chapter on Kala-Azar, dysenteric symptoms closely allied to true dysentery may appear during the course of that disease, and must be treated on the same lines as those laid down for the treatment of kala-azar, together with symptomatic treatment as indicated above.

(d) *Ciliar Dysenteries.*

One variety of the ciliar dysenteries may be briefly mentioned—*viz.*, that caused by *Balantidium coli* Malmsten. Other less-known causes are *Colpoda cucullus*, *Balantidium minutum*, *Nyctotherus faba*, and *N. giganteus*.

Balantidic Dysentery.

Definition.—An acute or chronic ulceration of the large intestine caused by *Balantidium coli* Malmsten.

History.—Leeuwenhoek originally discovered the parasite *Balantidium coli*, but Malmsten described and named it. The latter observer found it in the motions of a man suffering alternately from diarrhoea and constipation. Other cases have been recorded by Strong, Bowman, Dehio, and Klemeniko.

Climatology.—The disease is known to occur in man in the Philippine Islands, Japan, and Europe, while the parasite is said to be constantly found in pigs. We have seen a case in Ceylon.

Ætiology.—The cause of the disease is *Balantidium coli* Malmsten, which may be different from the parasite found in pigs.

Pathology.—The method of infection is unknown. The parasite appears to enter the mucosa, in which it wanders, causing an inflammatory reaction and ulceration.

Morbid Anatomy.—The intestine may show a diphtheritic false membrane, with usually a number of ulcers in the rectum and colon, and on microscopical examination the parasites can be found in the mucosa surrounded by a round-celled infiltration.

Symptomatology.—The disease is insidious in its onset, being marked by attacks of diarrhoea, alternating with constipation and vomiting, with anorexia and the passage of mucus in the motions. Œdema of the face and limbs may set in, and death result from exhaustion.

In our patient, a little native girl, there was rather high fever, with persistent diarrhoea, great wasting, and severe anæmia. No blood in the motions. The *Balantidia*, which were abundant, were associated with numerous *Trichomonata* and *Cercomonata*; moreover, the patient harboured various worms, ova of *Agchylostoma duodenale*, *Ascaris lumbricoides*, and *Trichuris trichiura* being present. Some of the symptoms may have been caused by these parasites.

Complication.—The parasite may enter the liver and form cysts. It may be associated with other parasites—*Amœbæ*, *Trichomonata*, *Cercomonata*.

Treatment.—The symptomatic treatment laid down for amœbic dysentery may be tried, beginning with castor oil or salines, and followed by intestinal irrigations of tannic and boric acids or quinine. Ipecacuanha and emetine may be administered as described for amœbic dysentery. Large rectal injections of a solution of methylene blue (1 in 3,000), combined with the internal administration of the same drug in 2-grain doses in cachets or pills, may also be tried.

Prophylaxis.—It is not certain that the parasite found in the pig is the same as the human parasite, and, further, the method of infection being quite unknown, no useful remarks can be made with regard to prophylaxis.

(e) **Spirochætic Dysentery.**

Le Dantec has described a form of dysenteric diarrhœa due to spirochætes. Further researches are, however, necessary to determine whether the spirochætes are the true ætiological factor of the complaint. In our experience spirochætes may be found in the stools of several cases of bacterial and amœbic dysentery, and also in normal stools.

II. THE PLATYHELMINTHIC DYSENTERIES.

Fasciolopsis buski, *Schistosoma japonicum*, and *S. mansoni* cause dysenteric symptoms, which can only be diagnosed by the discovery of the eggs in the motions. The symptoms produced by the latter worms are described in detail in Chapter XIX., while those of the former still require detailed investigation.

III. THE NEMATHELMINTHIC DYSENTERIES.

Nemathelminthic dysentery is due to the sclerostome *Cesophagostomum brumpti* Railliet and Henry 1905, immature females of which were found by Brumpt in cyst-like nodules in the cæcum and colon of a negro in West Africa. Similar symptoms are caused by *Ces. stephanostomum* var. *Thomasi* Railliet and Henry 1909, discovered in South America by Thomas.

IV. THE ARTHROPODIC DYSENTERIES.

We have already drawn attention to the fact that diarrhœas and dysenteries may be caused by the presence of species of the Chilopoda and Diplopoda, and by the larvæ of flies in the intestine, but these are rare, and have already been sufficiently described in Chapter L.

B. DYSENTERIES CAUSED BY BACTERIA.

The Bacillary Dysenteries.

Synonyms.—*German*: Bacillenruhr. *French*: Dysenterie Bacillaire. *Italian*: Dissenteria Bacterica.

Definition.—The bacillary dysenteries are acute or chronic, endemic or epidemic, specific intestinal disorders caused by several varieties of bacteria, which are disseminated largely by means of the fæcal matter of dysentery carriers, as well as by that of persons suffering from these disorders. From the sources of infection the germs are conveyed to food or drink by the agency of flies, dust, surface water, and direct contact with any contaminated substance. Infection usually takes place by the consumption of contaminated food or drink, more rarely by direct contact with contaminated substances. In the body the micro-organisms cause a specific inflammation of the large, and occasionally also of the small, intestine, which is characterized by diarrhœa, usually accompanied by pain, tenesmus, and the passage of blood and mucus in the motions. More rarely the bacilli cause a general septicæmia.

History.—For years the theory of a bacterial causation for dysentery found many supporters, among whom may be mentioned Klebs, Prior, Ziegler, Hlava, Chantemesse, Widai, and Grigoriew, all of whom attempted to isolate a specific organism.

Maggiora, Laveran, Arnaud, and Escherich believed that the *Bacillus coli communis* was the true cause, while Celli described as the cause of the disease a bacillus fermenting glucose and clotting milk, which he called the *Bacillus coli dysentericus*; but according to his more recent description some strains produce very little or no gas in glucose media, and may not clot milk, and closely resemble Flexner's bacillus.

During an epidemic in the province of Oita, in Japan, Ogata isolated a bacillus which liquefied gelatine, stained by Gram's method, and produced intestinal ulcers in guinea-pigs and cats, a discovery which was confirmed by Vivaldi of Padua, but not by other observers.

In the same year Calmette announced that the *Bacillus pyocyaneus* was a cause of dysentery in Cochin China, an observation since confirmed by Lartigan in the United States, Adami in Canada, and others, but not generally accepted.

The elucidation of the ætiology of bacillary dysentery is due to the investigations of Shiga in Japan and Kruse in Germany during the years 1898-1900. They described as the cause of the malady a short bacillus, not decolourized by Gram, not clotting milk, not producing gas in any sugar media. There was at first some difference of opinion as regards motility, but Kruse's statement that the bacillus was always non-motile has been proved to be correct. Kruse was also the first observer to state that there was more than one variety of dysenteric bacilli.

In 1900 Flexner reported that he had isolated a moderately motile bacillus from cases of dysentery in Manila identical with Shiga's bacillus, and producing a severe muco-hæmorrhagic diarrhœa in a human being who was the victim of an accidental laboratory infection. This bacillus was later demonstrated to be non-motile, and to differ in several respects from Shiga's bacillus, notably in fermenting certain sugar media, and could be distinguished therefrom by the different biological tests. These results have been frequently confirmed by observers in different parts of the world. Strong isolated a bacillus slightly different from that of Flexner, also from cases in Manila.

In 1903 Hiss and Russell separated a bacillus which closely resembles Flexner's bacillus, but fails to ferment saccharose. This bacillus is often called the Y bacillus. In 1904 Castellani isolated a bacillus from cases in Ceylon which he named the 'paradysenteric bacillus.' In the same year Duval and Schorer isolated a bacillus which they believed to belong to the dysentery group, but which fermented lactose. Several other germs have been described by various authorities, while Kruse, Flexner, Lucet, Conradi, and others have made a detailed study of the pathogenesis of the disease.

Climatology.—Bacillary dysentery is found all over the world, in cold, temperate, and warm climates, but especially in the latter. In temperate climates the germs probably cause a type of the infantile diarrhœas, which are such potent factors in the infantile

mortality of those regions, while they are also responsible for the endemic and epidemic cases so frequently met with in Europe and America.

In the tropics they are also extremely common, occurring more frequently at the end of the dry and the beginning of the wet seasons. In certain regions and at certain times the virulence of the complaint appears to be increased, the reason of which is not at present apparent. Probably it depends upon the greater possibility of infection, owing to the drinking-water being highly contaminated in warm weather, or perhaps to the presence of multitudes of flies. The agency of these or other factors has not been completely inquired into. Whatever the cause may be, it is well known that at times the disease may spread in epidemic form over larger or smaller areas. These epidemics may be institutional, urban, or rural, or they may attack a district, a country, or a continent. Thus, celebrated epidemics are known to have occurred in Europe in 1538, 1717-19, 1779-83, and 1834-36.

Dysentery is particularly prone to occur whenever sanitation is defective, and hence is found prevalent in lunatic asylums and in armies in times of war; and this factor appears to be more potent than any climatological cause, and, indeed, may be the principal reason why the disease is so prevalent in the tropics, though the high atmospheric temperature of these regions must assist the growth of the organisms.

Ætiology.—Bacillary dysentery is brought about by micro-organisms, which belong, or are allied, to two main types, viz. :—

TYPE I. Shiga - Kruse *Bacillus dysenteriae* (does not ferment mannite).

TYPE II. Flexner *Bacillus dysenteriae* (ferments mannite).

These bacilli are found in the dejecta, and more easily by scraping the mucus from the surface of the bowel in a post-mortem. In addition to these main types, there are several varieties of less importance, not being so widely distributed. Some of these are :—

- A. Hiss's *Bacillus Y dysenteriae*.
- B. Strong-Manila *Bacillus dysenteriae*.
- C. Shiga-Tokio *Bacillus dysenteriae*.
- D. Castellani's *Bacillus paradysenteriae*.
- E. Rüffer and Willmore's *Bacillus El Tor* No. 1.
- F. Baerthlein's *Bacillus dysenteriae*.

Hiss divides the dysentery bacilli into four principal groups :—

Group 1. Ferments glucose only (Shiga-Kruse bacillus).

Group 2. Ferments glucose and mannite (*Bacillus Y*).

Group 3. Ferments glucose, mannite and saccharose (Flexner - Manila bacillus).

Group 4. Ferments glucose, mannite, saccharose, maltose, and dextrine (Harris's bacillus, Wollstein's bacillus).

Leitz, Kruse, and Shiga have called attention to the fact that while the fermentation of mannite is a reliable means of differentiation, not so much importance can be given to the fermentation of maltose, saccharose, and dextrine.

Lehman and Neumann give the following classification :—

1. Shiga-Kruse : No fermentation of mannite, maltose, saccharose.
2. Flexner : Ferments mannite and maltose.
3. Strong : Ferments mannite and saccharose.
4. B.Y. : Ferments mannite ; has no action on maltose and saccharose.

Bahr has noted that the various strains may vary their fermentative character when passing through flies.

In addition to these true dysenteric bacilli, there are some so-called pseudo-dysenteric bacilli, which have been classified by Torrey into three groups—*Bacillus A* of Duval and Schorer, *Bacillus B* of Duval and Schorer, *Bacillus C* of Duval—all of which are grouped together by the facts that they are dysentery-like bacilli which do not produce gas, but ferment lactose, and are believed to cause diarrhœa in children. Allied to these bacilli is the so-called alkaline bacillus, which acts on dextrose, and produces an alkali in milk and other media. Flexner believes that these bacilli are merely saprophytes. It is to be noted, however, that under the term *B. pseudo-dysentericus* Kruse described a non-lactose fermenting bacillus which is the cause of many outbreaks of asyllum-dysentery in Germany. Later he used the term 'pseudo-dysentery' to denote every variety of dysentery caused by bacilli other than those of the typical Shiga-Kruse strain.

Celli's *B. coli dysentericus*, according to the original description, is motile, clots milk, and produces gas in some sugar media, and therefore cannot be considered to belong to the dysentery group. According, however, to more recent descriptions by de Blasi and others, some strains of the *B. coli dysentericus* may not produce gas, and may not clot milk, and closely resemble Flexner's bacillus.

The true dysenteric bacilli may be differentiated from one another by their varying fermentative actions upon carbohydrates, by agglutination, Pfeiffer's reaction, and Castellani's absorption method ; and though we do not enter into particulars on bacteriological subjects, still, we consider it useful to collect in the form of a table the characters of the more important dysentery germs as well as other intestinal bacteria, emphasizing, however, the fact that the varying biological reactions of the bacilli are much more reliable than the fermentative changes.

The dysenteric bacilli are distributed mainly by the fæces of persons suffering from the disease, but there are also 'dysentery carriers' in the true sense of the word, who are perhaps not merely an important source of infection, but possibly *the important factor* in the dissemination of dysentery.

Strong and Musgrave have proved that infection takes place by the mouth by feeding a man with pure cultures of the dysentery bacillus, which quickly produced an attack of dysentery, characterized by motions containing blood and mucus, from which the typical bacilli were grown.

The most prevalent method of infection is direct contact with a patient or a carrier, or with articles or more especially food con-

taminated by them. The bacilli are conveyed from faecal matter to the mouth by the contamination of food or drink, or the utensils for preparing or serving the same. This method of infection is probably common in hospitals and asylums, cooks and all persons engaged in handling food being possible disseminators. Another method of dissemination would appear to be the dust, especially in places with badly polluted soils. Flies, as has been experimentally demonstrated by one of us, are capable of carrying the bacilli, and are therefore probably a prolific source of infection in tropical countries. Luckily the water-supply is very rarely infected. With regard to lower animals, Kruse and Bowman have recorded spontaneous bacillary dysentery in monkeys, due to bacilli of the Flexner group, and Messerschmidt has found a bacillus of Type Y in the faeces of apparently healthy rabbits, so that there may be a possibility that lower animals are of importance in the spread of the disease.

It would, however, appear that the bacilli are capable of living in the alimentary canal without causing the symptoms of the disease until the vitality of the host is lowered by some agency, such as a chill, an attack of diarrhoea, or some intercurrent disorder, when they are capable of producing their ill-effects.

This carrier problem in the ætiology of dysentery is of great importance, and though as yet it has never been *conclusively* proved that an outbreak has been due to a carrier, still it is known that the bacilli can be excreted in an intermittent manner by people suffering from mild relapses. The dysentery carriers are classified into—(1) healthy, (2) precocious, (3) convalescent, (4) relapsing, and (5) chronic carriers. The healthy carrier is rare, but May has found 22 out of 57·3 persons examined during an epidemic. The precocious are believed to be very rare. The convalescent and relapsing carriers are well known, of which the latter are of the greatest importance in spreading the disease. The chronic carrier excretes but few bacilli, but may be of importance in the spread of the disease. With regard to the geographical distribution of the principal forms of bacilli, it may be stated that the Shiga-Kruse bacillus is known in Africa, in Tunis, South-West Africa, and Uganda, in Asia, in Arabia, India, Ceylon, the Philippines and Japan, in the United States and in Europe. With regard to the Flexner-Manila bacillus, it has been found in India and Ceylon, in West Asia, Sumatra, Japan, China, and the Philippines, as well as in North America.

Pathology.—The bacilli taken into the body with food and drink pass to the intestine, in which they grow and multiply, and along the whole length of which they can be found. The researches of Flexner and Sweet have proved that the bacilli can abound in the small intestine, where no pathological lesion may be found. In the bowel they give rise to the toxins, of which two are known—one which acts upon the lower bowel, and the other on the nervous system. Both these toxins are absorbed into the blood, but the first, being excreted by the large bowel, causes the lesions well

known to be associated with dysentery, and explains the localization of these lesions. In the process of excretion this toxin first causes an exudation of lymph into the submucosa, and later into the mucosa. This lymph coagulates, and is invaded by a cellular exudate, and in due course the glands and the tissue of the mucosa and the muscularis mucosæ are destroyed by coagulative necrosis, with thrombosis of the vessels. This fibrinous or diphtheroid membrane is at first most marked on the summits of the ridges, and may not be found at the bottom between the ridges. It contains large numbers of micro-organisms of varying characters, while the depths of the submucosa may reveal accumulations of leucocytes, and the peritoneal coat may be œdematous. The micro-organisms destroy the fibrinous false membrane, which may separate off in flakes, thus causing ulcers, which are at first superficial, but later become deep and extensive. After treatment these ulcers heal with the formation of connective tissue, thus producing a scar in the mucous membrane, which in due course becomes pigmented from the sulphuretted hydrogen of the bowel acting on the iron of the blood. The other toxin may attack the nervous system, causing peripheral neuritis.

Very rarely do the bacilli enter the blood stream, and cause true septicæmia, though such cases have been recorded by Rosenthal and Markwald, the latter observer stating that he found the bacilli in the blood and intestinal contents of a fœtus which had been prematurely expelled from the uterus of a mother who was suffering from bacillary dysentery. Darling has actually grown the bacillus from the blood of cases of bacterial dysentery. Occasionally the bacilli affect the joints and very rarely the conjunctiva.

Morbid Anatomy.—On opening the abdomen, the peritoneum is found in general to be normal, but the bloodvessels of the large bowel are seen to be injected, and the mesocolons may be infiltrated with lymph, or firm and fibrinous. There may be adhesions of the sigmoid colon to the omentum, pelvis, bladder, or small intestines, while the splenic flexure may be adherent to the spleen and surrounding parts, and the hepatic flexure to the liver. The cæcum may show adhesions to the omentum, and more rarely there may be pericæcal abscess. Signs of a general peritonitis may be met with, and will generally be associated with a gangrenous or perforated condition of the intestine.

The small bowel is usually normal, but may be hyperæmic or, much more rarely, ecchymotic. The walls of the large intestine are usually considerably thickened and hyperæmic, and may at times be found to be gangrenous along a great or lesser extent of their course. On opening the large bowel, the mucosa will be seen to be covered with a coagulated exudate in the form of a false membrane, which is more evident on the summits of the folds, and is especially well marked in the sigmoid colon, the cæcum, and the ampulla of the rectum. Around the areas covered by the false membrane the mucosa is seen to be hyperæmic and œdematous.

TABLE SHOWING CULTURAL REACTION OF CERTAIN AEROBIC INTES.

	Motility	Litmus Milk	Lactose	Saccharose	Dulcitate	Mannite	Glucose	Maltose	Dextrin	Raffinose	Arabinose
<i>B. asiaticus</i> No. 1 (Cast.) ...	o	A/alk	o	A, G	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. asiaticus</i> No. 2 (Cast.) ...	o	A/alk	o	A, G	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. acidilactici</i> (Huppe) ...	o	A, C	A, G	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. aertrycke</i> ("Von Ermengem") ...	+	A/alk	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	o	o	A, G
<i>B. of Archibald</i> ...	+	A/alk	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	o	o	A, G
<i>B. of Asylum Dysentery</i> "8" (Eyre) ...	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. of Asylum Dysentery</i> "9" (Eyre) ...	o	A/alks	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. bentonensis</i> (Cast.) ...	+	A	A	A	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	o	o	A, G
<i>B. breslaviensis</i> ...	+	A/alk	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	o	o	A, G
<i>B. capsulatus</i> (Pfeiffer) ...	o	A, C	A, G	A, G	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. carvicida</i> (Briegleb) ...	+	A, C	A, G	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. ceylanensis</i> A (Cast.) ...	o	A, C	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. ceylanensis</i> B (Cast.) ...	o	A, C	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. cloacae</i> (Jordan) ...	+	A, C	A, G	A, G	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. coli anaerogenes</i> (Lounbke) ...	o	A, C	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. coli communis</i> (Escherich) ...	+	A, C	A, G	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. coli mutabilis</i> (Massini) ...	o	A, C	A, G	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. coli</i> , like "Norman Hall" ...	+	A	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	o	o	A, G
<i>B. coscoroba</i> ...	o	A, C	A, G	A, G	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. dysenteriae</i> (Kruse-Shiga) ...	o	A/alk	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. dysenteriae</i> , "Flexner" ...	o	A/alks	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. dysenteriae</i> , "Y" (Willmore Eltor) ...	o	A/alks	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. dysenteriae</i> , "Y" (Hiss and Russell) ...	o	A/alks	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. dysenteriae</i> , "Tor 22" (Willmore) ...	o	A/alks	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. dysenteriae</i> , "Tor R.H.B." (Willmore) ...	o	A/alk	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. dysenteriae</i> , "Tor R.E.T." (Willmore) ...	o	A/alks	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. entericus</i> (Cast.) ...	o	o	A, G	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. enteritidis</i> "Original A" (Gaertner) ...	+	A/alk	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. enteritidis</i> B ...	o	A/alk	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. of epidemic jaundice</i> ...	+	A/alk	o	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. faecalis alkaligenes</i> ...	+	Alk	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. gasiformans non-liquefaciens</i> ...	o	A, C	A, G	A, G	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. gintofensis</i> (Cast.) ...	o	D, A, C	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. gismai</i> (Cast.) ...	o	A/alks	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. grithal</i> ...	+	A, C	A, G	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. of hog cholera</i> , "Evans" ...	+	A/alk	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. of hog cholera</i> , "Maryland" (Smith) ...	+	A/alk	o	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. of hog cholera</i> , "McFadyean" ...	+	A	o	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. icteroides</i> (Sanarelli) ...	+	A/alk	o	o	o or A	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. kandiensis</i> (Cast.) ...	+	A, s, D, alk	o or A, s	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. lactis aerogenes</i> (Escherich) ...	o	A, C	A, G	A, G	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. levans</i> (Wolfkin) ...	+	A, C	A, G	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. lunavensis</i> (Cast.) ...	o	A/alks	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. madampensis</i> (Cast.) ...	o	A, C	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. moorae</i> ...	+	A/alk	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. morgan</i> No. 1 ...	+	o/alk	o	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. morgan</i> No. 3 ...	o	A, o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. morgan</i> No. 4 ...	o	A/alks	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. mustela septicus</i> ...	+	A, C	A, G	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. neapolitanus</i> (Emmerich) ...	o	A, C	A, G	A, G	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. negombensis</i> (Cast.) ...	+	o/alk	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. oxytocus perniciosus</i> (Wysokowitsch) ...	o	A, C	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>H. para colon</i> , "Le Sago" ...	o	A, C	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>H. para colon</i> , "Mair" ...	+	A, C	o	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>H. para colon</i> , "Day" ...	+	A/alk	o	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. para entericus</i> (Cast.) ...	+	A, C	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. paratyphosus</i> A (Schottmüller) ...	+	A	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. paratyphosus</i> B (Schottmüller) ...	+	A/alk	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. pseudo-asiaticus</i> (Cast.) ...	o	A/alk	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. pseudo-coli</i> (Cast.) ...	+	A, C	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. pseudo-dysenteriae</i> A (Kruse) ...	o	A	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. pseudo-dysenteriae</i> D 1 (Kruse) ...	o	A/alks	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. pseudo-dysenteriae</i> D 2 (Kruse) ...	o	A/alk	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. pneumoniae</i> (Friedländer) ...	o	A, C	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. psittacosis</i> (Nocard) ...	o	A/alk	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. proteus vulgaris</i> (Hauser) ...	o	A, C	o	A, G	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. pyogenus fastidus</i> (Paaset) ...	+	A, C	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. schaefferi</i> ...	o	A, C	A, G	o	A, G	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. suicholera</i> ...	+	A/alk	o	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. suispestifer</i> (Kruse) ...	+	A/alk	o	o	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G	A, G
<i>B. talavensis</i> (Cast.) ...	+	Alk, D	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. langallensis</i> (Cast.) ...	o	A/alks	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. typhosus</i> (Eberth) ...	+	A	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. vesiculosus</i> ...	o	A, C	A, G	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	A, G
<i>B. wesenberg</i> ...	+	A	o	A, G	o	o	A, G	o	o	o	A, G
<i>Y. cholerae</i> "Saigon" ...	+	A, s, C	A, s	o	o, D	A, s	A	A	A	o, D	o, I
<i>Y. proteus</i> (Einkler Prior) ...	+	A, s, C	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o
<i>Y. seylanicus</i> (Cast.) ...	+	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o	o

Abbreviations used in the table: A, acid; G, gas; C, clot; D, decolorized; Alk, alkaline; s, slight; A/alk, acid then alkaline; Gt, general non-production of indol, non-motile or non-liquefaction of gelatine or serum as t

TABLE OF ANAEROBIC INTESTINAL BACTERIA (FROM DISTASO).

Bacteria.	Motility.	Litmus Milk.	Lactose.	Saccharose.	Glucose.	Starch.	Indol.	Gelatine.	White of Egg.	Broth.	Gram.	Spores.	Appearance of Colonies in Deep Glucose Agar.	Formation of Gas in Agar.	Remarks.
<i>B. putrificus</i> Bienstock	+	DV	O	O	S+	O	+	Liq.	D	T	+	+	Of a hairy appearance	S+	—
<i>B. putrificus</i> coagulans Distaso	+	CD	S+	O	S+	O	O	Liq.	D	T	+	+	Of a hairy appearance	S+	—
<i>B. putrificus</i> flamentosus Distaso	+	C	O	O	S+	O	S+	Liq.	D	T	+	+	Resembling snow floc-culi	S+	—
<i>B. sporogenes</i> Metchnikoff	+	DV	S+	O	S+	O	S+	Liq.	D	T	+	+	Of a hairy appearance	S+	—
<i>B. sporogenes</i> zooglicus Distaso	+	CD	O	O	S+	O	S+	Liq.	D	T	+	+	Discoid	S+	—
<i>B. sporogenes</i> saccharoliticus Distaso	+	CD	S+	S+	S+	O	+	Liq.	D	T	+	+		S+	—
<i>B. sporogenes</i> regularis Distaso	+	CD	S+	S+	S+	O	S+	Liq.	D	T	+	+	Morula-like colonies	O	—
<i>B. welchii</i> (B. perrin-gens) Welch	O	CD	+	+	+	+	+	Liq.	O	T	+	SM	Round colonies, clean edge	+	Takes yellowish tint with iodine
<i>B. butyricus</i> Pasteur	+	C	+	+	+	+	O	O	O	T	+	SM	Round colonies, clean edge	+	Takes bluish tint with iodine in the stadium of clostridium
<i>B. brunei</i> Distaso	O	O	O	O	O	O	O	O	O	+	+	O	Of a hairy appearance	O	Takes black tint with iodine in the vegetative forms
<i>B. variabilis</i> Distaso	O	O	S+	S	S+	O	+	O	O	T	O	O	Round and transparent parent	+	—
<i>B. pseudoramosus</i> Distaso	O	C	S+	S+	S+	O	+	O	O	T	+	O	Round; non-transparent parent	O	—
<i>B. angulosus</i> Distaso	O	C	+	+	+	O	+	O	O	T	+	SM	Of a yellowish tint; triangular, non-transparent	S+	—
<i>B. anaerobicus</i> tenuis Distaso	+	O	O	O	S+	O	O	O	O	T	+	O	Almost invisible	O	—
<i>B. anaerobicus</i> Distaso	O	C	O	O	O	O	O	O	O	T	+	O	Almost invisible	O	—

As a rule, numerous ulcers are also to be seen, with clean surfaces, elevated edges, and a base formed by the submucosa. These ulcers may be very extensive, leading to the separation of large sloughs, or may extend deeply into the coats of the bowel, causing perforation and peritonitis, or in less serious cases to the exudation of much lymph into the peritoneum coat, which subsequently causes adhesions.

In post-mortem examinations of cases which have died from some other complaint it is not unusual to find the intestines matted together in the pelvis, the omentum adherent to the colon, and the colon to the bladder, etc. On opening such a colon, it will be found scarred by old dark-coloured cicatrices, indicating the position of

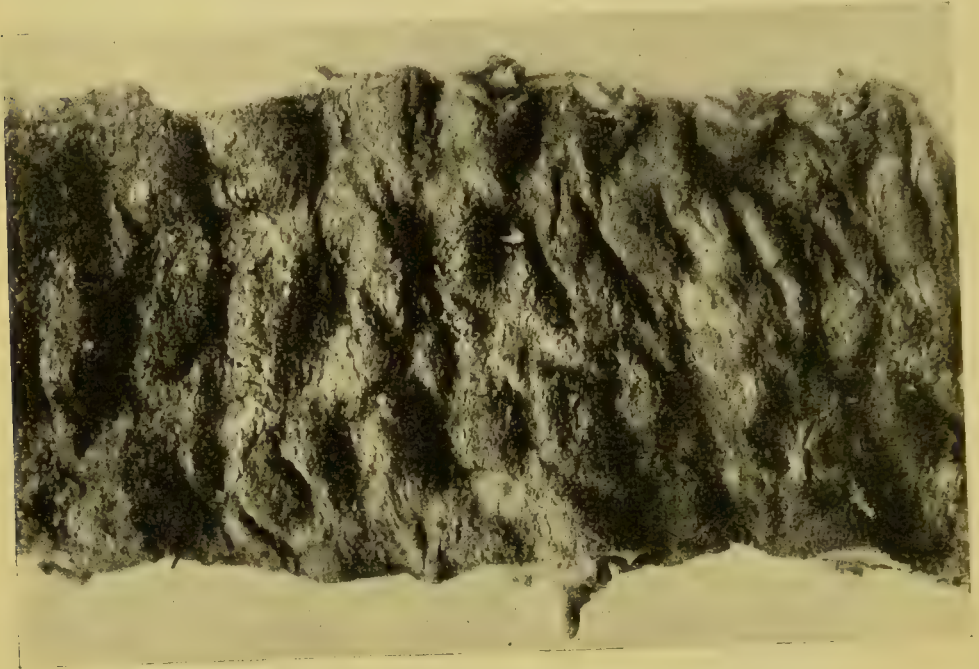


FIG. 532.—THE COLON IN A CASE OF BACILLARY DYSENTERY.

the healed ulcers of a previous dysentery. More rarely the cicatrization may have proceeded to such an extent as to cause narrowing of the lumen of the gut, and still more rarely may the process lead to abscess formation in the adherent omentum, the pus of this abscess slowly working its way into the anterior abdominal wall, and so to the exterior. The cæcum and other parts of the bowel may show polypi protruding from the mucous membrane, a condition often called 'colitis polyposa.'

In the epidemic diarrhoea of infants, the lesions which may be found are classifiable into hyperplasia of the agminated and solitary glands, superficial ulcers, lesions resembling those described above, or invisible lesions.

Microscopically, there is at first an exudation of fluid containing

but few cells into the submucosa, while the mucosa is congested, but the glands are seen to be quite normal. A little later the exudate into the submucosa is seen to have formed fibrin, and the vessels of this coat are noted to be dilated, to contain numerous polymorphonuclear leucocytes, which may be seen undergoing diapedesis into the surrounding tissue. In this stage the exudate has also affected the mucosa, the glands and tissue of which may be seen to be undergoing coagulative necrosis. In a still later stage nothing is to be seen of the mucosa, and in bad cases of the submucosa, except fibrinous exudate, mixed with cells and blood-vessels. Often, however, the submucosa shows dense collections of leucocytes. Where ulcers occur, the amount of exudate covering the muscular coat may be thin, while in other places it may be thick. The peritoneum is also generally infiltrated by a coagulated exudate.

Symptomatology.—The different appearances presented by the bacillary dysenteries may be grouped into :—

1. The acute type.
2. The gangrenous type.
3. The entero-dysenteric type.
4. Chronic dysentery.
5. Dysenteric diarrhœa.
6. Dysenteric infantile diarrhœa.

1. *Acute Bacterial Dysentery.*—The incubation varies from twenty-four hours to three or four days, and is not well known in natural infections. Usually after an incubation of a few days, during which the patient may not feel quite well, and may complain of constipation or diarrhœa, with loss of appetite and malaise, the disease begins with an attack of pain in the lower part of the abdomen, and an urgent desire to defæcate, which results in the passage of perhaps an ordinary formed fæculent motion, which temporarily relieves the pain. Soon, however, another attack of pain is felt, generally in the region of the umbilicus, from which it radiates to any part of the large intestine, and this is again associated with a desire to defæcate and the passage of a motion which is composed of fæcal matter, but may now be soft. The pain increases, and the desire to defæcate becomes more and more frequent, until almost constantly present, while any nourishment, however bland and un-irritating, at once produces a desire to defæcate. After a time the patient sits almost continuously upon the commode, straining violently, and passing at first motions of fæculent matter mixed with blood and mucus, and then blood and mucus mixed with a little fæculent matter, and finally nothing but a little blood and mucus. As a result of the straining and the passage of numerous motions, the anus becomes inflamed and very painful, and prolapse of the bowel is not uncommon, and adds greatly to the distress of the patient. The urine diminishes in quantity, and therefore may show

an increased quantity of urea, and at times may contain a trace of albumin. Pain is often complained of in the region of the bladder during and after straining at the commode. In slight cases the number of motions may be only about one every hour, but in more severe cases they number from fifty upwards, until they are passed almost continuously. This constant pain and desire to defæcate naturally weakens and exhausts the patient very quickly, for it prevents sleep and rest.

In ordinary cases the tongue is moist and coated with a white fur, and usually the patient is thirsty, but not markedly so, except in bad cases. Nausea is often present, and there is no desire for food, which is badly digested. There is often epigastric pain. Vomiting occurs, but is relatively unusual in cases which are taken in hand early and properly treated. The abdomen soon becomes sunken and tender, especially along the course of the large bowel, but this tenderness may be restricted to certain areas only of that bowel. On careful palpation the thickened bowel may at times be felt, but usually it is too tender to allow such manipulation. With the numerous motions, it may be imagined that constipation would not occur; but this is not so, for the disease may be limited to the lower bowel, and as it is the involvement of the rectum which causes the tenesmus and constant desire to defæcate, fæces may be accumulating in the higher region of the large bowel—a condition which may be recognized by the distension. Shiga, indeed, describes an ascending variety of acute dysentery, which, beginning in the rectum, spreads upwards along the large bowel, as well as a descending variety, which usually starts in the small intestine. The typical motions are composed of blood and mucus only, but in bad cases they may consist of a reddish albuminous fluid containing white shreds. The typical dysenteric motions have no fæcal smell, and microscopically show numerous micro-organisms, leucocytes, and red cells, and epithelial débris and cells. Usually there is some fever, ranging from 99° to 103° F. The pulse is quickened, and in bad cases may be not merely rapid, but irregular, when the heart will be found to be dilated, and perhaps hæmic murmurs may be heard; but these symptoms are unusual, except in grave cases. The blood usually shows a diminution in the red cells, and a slight polymorphonuclear leucocytosis. The lungs are usually normal. Delirium is unusual.

If the patient is to die, the motions assume the serous character mentioned above, the pulse becomes rapid and irregular, the temperature drops to subnormal, the motions diminish in number, hiccough appears, and exhaustion ushers in death generally during the second or third week.

If the patient is to recover, the motions become more fæculent, and the blood and mucus generally disappear, while the pain and tenesmus subside, the pulse returns to normal, the tongue cleans, and convalescence begins about the end of one week in mild, or of one month in more severe cases.

2. *Gangrenous Dysentery*.—This most severe type of the disease may begin insidiously with some slight fæculent diarrhœa, which may not attract attention until suddenly the patient becomes collapsed and dies within a few hours without the passage of the typical motions. Thus a prisoner may stand in the dock throughout the whole day, and then die in the night from gangrenous dysentery, while his sudden death may awake suspicions of suicide.

The more usual history is that, during an attack of acute dysentery, the abdominal pain and tenesmus become very severe, while the motions alter their characters, becoming exceedingly offensive, and containing gangrenous sloughs composed of the mucosa and the submucosa. These sloughs may be small or large, and even at times may be tubular. The motions are now exceedingly numerous, and sometimes hæmorrhage *per anum* may take place. The patient becomes extremely exhausted, the pulse small and frequent, the temperature falls to subnormal, and the extremities become cold up to the knees and elbows, while the motions are passed involuntarily, and death takes place in some two or three days from exhaustion. Recovery from an attack of gangrenous dysentery is extremely unusual, but when it does occur the pulse slows, the temperature rises, the motions become fæculent again, and the urine, which has been suppressed, reappears.

3. *Enter-Dysentery*.—This variety begins with one or more rigors, and a rise of temperature to 103° F. or more. The temperature keeps high, assuming either a continuous or a high remittent type, and is associated with a dry tongue, and a mouth covered with sordes, fœtid breath, headache, malaise, pains in various parts of the body, marked epigastric disturbance, and occasionally with ecchymoses under the skin in various parts of the body. The characteristic signs of abdominal pain and tenesmus are absent, and the motions, though containing blood and mucus, are mixed with considerable quantities of fæculent matter. The mind is clouded, the patient becoming very stupid, sleepless, and at times delirious. Abscesses may now appear in varying parts of the body, but especially in the parotid or the ischio-rectal fossæ, while carbuncles, bedsores, and peritonitis may also occur. Death usually ensues after a few days' illness from exhaustion, toxæmia, or hyperpyrexia.

4. *Chronic Bacterial Dysentery*.—Chronic dysentery appears after an attack of acute dysentery which has apparently been cured, but in which, after a period of quiescence, diarrhœa appears. About five or six motions, composed of watery, evil-smelling fæculent matter, are passed *per diem*, and may at times contain blood and mucus, or simply mucus. After a time these symptoms disappear, and the motions become normal, or there may be slight constipation. In due course, however, the diarrhœa returns, and these exacerbations recur for months and years, and seriously affect the patient's general health. The appetite becomes bad; the tongue red and smooth, or flabby and coated; digestion is impaired, and fermentative changes cause the bowels to be distended with

gas ; while hæmorrhage, slight or severe, may take place from the nose or under the skin. Profuse sweats may occur at night, and tend to exhaust the patient. Recovery may take place spontaneously, or after treatment, or the diarrhœa, continuing fitfully, may gradually wear out the patient, who may die of exhaustion or some intercurrent disease. Some authorities believe that chronic dysentery may become sprue. We do not agree with them, although, of course, sprue may develop in a case of chronic dysentery.

5. *Dysenteric Diarrhœa*.—The term 'dysenteric diarrhœa' may be applied to the non-bloody diarrhœa of chronic dysentery, and to those cases of diarrhœa which occur during an epidemic of dysentery, and in which the bacillus is either proved to be present in the motions, or the patient's blood agglutinates in high dilution one of the dysenteric bacilli. The attack may in no way differ from an ordinary attack of diarrhœa due to other causes, but is apt to recur and to turn into chronic dysentery.

6. *Dysenteric Infantile Diarrhœa*.—Diarrhœa is an extremely common disease among infants in the tropics, but has not yet received the attention which it has in the United States, in Europe, and in Japan, where it is called 'ekiri.' It is believed to be due to Flexner's bacillus, or more rarely to Shiga-Kruse's bacillus ; while the symptoms resemble entero-dysentery, being characterized by beginning with vomiting, and a rise of temperature from 103° to 104° F., a dry mouth, coated tongue, distended and tender abdomen, and the passage of motions containing fæculent matter, often green in colour, generally mixed with blood and mucus. The fever is of the remittent type, and as the disease progresses the child wastes, and may become convulsed or comatose and die, or may live for weeks, suffering from repeated attacks of diarrhœa, and finally die from exhaustion. If recovery is to take place, the temperature declines and the diarrhœa ceases, but the child is left in a pale and emaciated condition, from which it takes months to recover.

Complications.—Peripheral neuritis is not uncommonly met with, generally in a mild form, and often confined to one nerve. Arthritis is also not uncommon, while inflammation of the tendon-sheaths may also take place. In entero-dysentery parotid buboes are not uncommon, while abscesses in other parts of the body and peritonitis may develop. In gangrenous dysentery hæmorrhage may be a serious complication. Typhoid fever may occur at the same time as a dysenteric attack, and is a serious complication. We have met with several cases of appendicitis developing in people convalescent from dysentery.

Sequelæ.—One of the most important sequels of dysentery, to which Cantlie has drawn attention, is stenosis of the large bowel, and more particularly of the sigmoid flexure, due to cicatricial contraction of the healing ulcers. The symptoms are the onset of an insidious constipation, associated in due course with a sensation of distension in the abdomen, loss of appetite, and nausea. The constipation is apt to alternate with attacks of diarrhœa.

In due course the constipation becomes severe, and is accompanied with recurrent attacks of colic, in which the pain may be localized or radiating, and sooner or later vomiting occurs. On inspecting the abdomen a swollen region may be observed, and the attacks of colic may be seen to be associated with visible peristaltic movements, while more or less meteorism occurs. Succussion sounds may be heard over the dilated bowel. This condition is serious, and must be energetically treated.

According to some authors, 'sprue' is a sequel to dysentery, and we have, in fact, seen several cases of sprue developing in patients who had been suffering from chronic dysentery. We believe, however, the two diseases to be of different ætiology.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis of bacillary dysentery has to be made with special reference to pseudo-dysentery and amœbic dysentery, especially when there is blood and mucus in the motions, and from the various forms of diarrhœa when these signs are absent.

With regard to pseudo-dysentery, cancer and syphilis of the rectum and inflamed hæmorrhoids may give rise to tenesmus and the passage of blood and mucus, but can be differentiated by the history and by an examination of the rectum. Cancer of the colon and intussusception may also cause the passage of blood, with or without mucus and with or without tenesmus, but the history and a careful abdominal examination, together with the discovery of a localized swelling, should serve to distinguish these affections. Parametritis on the left side may cause diarrhœa, and more rarely the passage of blood and mucus, but the absence of tenesmus, the presence of pain more at the side of the uterus than in the sigmoid colon, should indicate the necessity of an examination *per vaginam* or *per rectum*, when the nature of the case will be cleared up. A careful examination of the fæces should exclude such causes as fish-bones injuring the rectum. Mercurial poisoning can be distinguished by the history, the presence of salivation, etc.

The diagnosis from amœbic, balantidic, and the other dysenteries of animal origin can only be made by the careful microscopical examination of the fæces, when the absence of these parasites will be made certain.

Positive diagnosis can, however, only be made by a bacteriological examination of the fæces and the determination of the specific bacillus. Agglutination tests with the patient's blood are not of much use in acute cases, as agglutinins are not present in the blood the first few days of the disease.

For the bacteriological diagnosis a shred of mucus or pus is smeared over a plate of McConkie's bile—salt-lactose-neutral red-agar, by means of a bent glass rod or Kruse's platinum pencil.

Two more plates of the same medium are prepared in a similar manner without recharging the rod or pencil.

Any white colonies which develop are further investigated as to their sugar reactions, and by using the agglutination and absorption methods.

Prognosis.—In the milder forms of acute dysentery, at times indicated with the term of 'paradysentery,' the prognosis is good, recovery being the rule, but the death-rate of severe acute dysentery is high, while the prognosis in gangrenous dysentery is very bad. As an average, the mortality of the various forms may perhaps range from 12 to 25 per cent., for there is no doubt that in Ceylon and other tropical countries dysentery is a more potent factor in the death-rate than malaria, though the latter may cause more illness.

The site of the disease is also a factor in determining the prognosis, being as a rule better if it is situate low down, and worse if high up in the bowel. According to Kruse, Shiga, Duval, Dopter, and our own experience, early serum treatment lessens the mortality considerably, and therefore improves the prognosis.

As regards age and sex, the prognosis is better for adults than for children, and for men than for women. Relatively, the European or new-comer into the tropics suffers more severely than the native resident race, but this racial difference is merely relative.

Treatment.—In all cases, however mild, the patient should be kept at rest in bed, and the urine-bottle and bed-pan must be used. The latter should preferably be slightly warmed before being used, especially in cool climates. Damp cotton-wool should be substituted for sanitary paper, in order to prevent irritation of the region of the anus.

All motions should be disinfected, after having been seen by the physician, with Jeyes' fluid or carbolic acid, and they should also be protected from flies. It is, however, most necessary that the motions should be saved for the physician to see, because they are extremely important in judging the progress of the case.

In **very mild cases** the bowels should be cleansed by an initial dose of one tablespoonful of castor oil, which may be administered in neat brandy, with or without a few drops of liquor opii sedativus or tincture of opium, and this should be followed a few hours later by the administration of astringents, such as bismuth salicylate 5 grains, and salol 5 grains, made into cachets, and taken every two or four hours at first, and less frequently when the character of the motions improves. In these mild cases tenesmus rarely requires any special treatment, and rectal injections are well borne, and may be administered twice daily, though in most cases they are unnecessary. These injections should consist of either boric acid (1 in 100), which is probably the best, salicylic acid (1 in 500), tannic acid (1 in 500), normal saline solution, or borax and bicarbonate of soda (5 grains of each to the ounce). In administering these enemata, the patient should lie on the left side, with the buttocks elevated on a pillow and the head placed low. A soft rectal tube should be smeared with vaseline and passed as high up the bowel as possible. Two pints of the enema are now run in by gravity from a glass irrigation vessel, and should be warmed to a temperature of about 99° to 100° F. The enema should be retained as long

as possible. This treatment, with an appropriate diet, soon gives relief, the pain disappearing, the motions becoming fæculent. During convalescence a tonic of hydrochloric acid, cinchona bark, and gentian is found to be very serviceable.

In **severe cases** the serum treatment should be used as soon as possible, though at times it is useful to precede it with a dose of castor oil or salts. Kruse's serum, Shiga's serum, the Lister Institute serum (Todd), and that of the Pasteur Institute (Vaillart and Dopter), are all good. A polyvalent serum, such as that of Shiga, is preferable in those cases in which a complete ætiological diagnosis of the malady cannot be made.

The serum, in our experience, should be given in large doses; thus that from the Pasteur Institute and the Lister Institute should be given in 20 c.c. doses twice daily, and in very severe cases four times daily. The injection should be made under the skin of the abdomen or flank, using the ordinary aseptic precautions. These injections, as a rule, need not be continued after the second or third day. They may be followed by urticarial-like eruptions and pains in the joints. Calcium chloride in doses of gr. xv. to xxx. may be administered if these symptoms are severe. When the blood and mucus have disappeared from the stools, salol (gr. x. every four hours) or the ordinary astringents, such as bismuth, subnitrate or tannalbin (gr. x. to xv. every two hours), should be prescribed.

Shiga's rules for the administration of the polyvalent serum are:—

- I. In mild cases inject one dose of 10 c.c.
- II. In cases of medium severity inject two doses of 10 c.c. at intervals of six hours.
- III. In severe cases inject 10 c.c. twice a day at intervals of six hours for two or three consecutive days.

The serum has a marked effect upon the disease, hastening the cure, ameliorating the symptoms, and reducing the mortality.

When the serum treatment cannot be carried out, the *saline treatment* is, in our experience, the most useful. Two drachms of magnesium sulphate and 2 drachms of sodium sulphate, dissolved in an ounce of water, should be administered, and then 1 drachm of each should be given every hour or every two hours until the motions become fæculent, and then every three or four hours for another day.

There is generally considerable pain in these more acute cases, and therefore a fomentation sprinkled with laudanum should be applied to the abdomen, and the tenesmus should be relieved by suppositories of morphia or of cocaine. If these remedies fail, then hypodermic injections of morphia or opium (gr. $\frac{1}{2}$) by the mouth must be given, for it is a most important factor in the treatment that the patient should not suffer more than can possibly be avoided from this distressing symptom. If prolapse of the anus or rectum occurs, it is important that this should be reduced and

relieved by an astringent ointment, such as hazeline or gall and opium.

Rectal injections may be given, as described above, but in sensitive cases it is as well to pass in a second tube alongside the enema-tube, so that, instead of the inflamed bowel being distended by the injection, it may be simply washed by the irrigation of the boric lotion.

During the treatment of the severe acute forms a great danger is to stop the saline treatment too quickly, and to allow constipation to occur, by which is meant that, though the patient may be having fifty to a hundred motions *per diem*, still, fæculent matter is being retained. On the other hand, there is danger in continuing the saline treatment too long, for in our experience this should be stopped on the third day if there is no improvement, and also when the motions become serous.

After the acute stage is over it may be found useful to employ some astringent drugs, such as tannalbin, 15 grains every two hours, or bismuth subnitrate (gr. x. to xx.), with or without salol (gr. v. to x.), every two hours, administered in cachets or emulsion or as enemata of boracic and tannic acid *per rectum*.

If there is a tendency to chronicity, fresh Bael fruit may be given. It must, however, be both fresh and ripe, and should be prepared by being boiled, and then shredded with a fork into warm milk, pressed and strained, and then a little sugar added. A tumblerful of the milk extract of Bael fruit may be taken twice daily.

Tincture of *Mansonia ovata* in 1-drachm doses is also recommended. Other remedies resembling the above are the roots of *Pelargonium tuberosa* and *P. flabellifolium*.

With regard to individual symptoms, *collapse* should be treated by the hypodermic injection of saline, *hæmorrhage* by calcium lactate.

Very severe cases, involving the whole of the large bowel, and gangrenous cases may be treated by appendicostomy and washing out of the bowel with a weak permanganate or boric acid solution.

The simple operation is performed as follows:—The patient is placed under chloroform, after the usual antiseptic preparation of the area of the operation. An incision of about 3 inches in length is made in the usual site for the operation of appendectomy, and, the layers of the abdominal wall having been incised, the peritoneum is carefully opened, and the appendix is searched for and brought forward into the wound, so that about 1 inch protrudes. Here it is stitched by four stitches to the muscles. The wound is now closed, the appendix being fixed to the skin by a couple of stitches. The wound is now dressed aseptically with a thin layer of wool and covered with colodion. The tip of the appendix is now removed, and a No. 8 or No. 6 catheter inserted. The wound is now dressed antiseptically and left for twenty-four hours, at the end of which time a large tube is placed in the rectum, and the whole bowel is irrigated with 1 per cent. solution of bicarbonate of soda to remove the mucus, and then with a boracic acid lotion, 1 drachm to the pint. This is repeated daily, but if the case tends to become chronic a solution of silver nitrate (10 to 40 grains to the pint) is used.

When the cure is effected, the small wound is easily closed.

Other methods of treatment include the calomel treatment much praised by Scheube and Kartulis, and begun long ago by the Indian physicians, and among the various forms in which it has been applied, Twining's pill of calomel, blue pill, and ipecacuanha used to be very celebrated. Plehn recommends that, after a preliminary dose of castor oil, $\frac{1}{2}$ grain of calomel be administered hourly until twelve doses have been taken during the day. The treatment is discontinued during the night, and repeated in the same manner during the second and third days, after which bismuth subnitrate is given in 6-grain doses hourly during the day for a long period of time.

Yellow santonin, 10·3 grammes in 8 grammes of olive oil, administered three times a day, has been recommended by Drake. Musgrave recommends that acetozone (strength 1 in 5,000; aerated if necessary) should be freely drunk, so as to prevent fermentation in the stomach and bowels. In all cases a mouth-wash—*e.g.*, glyco-thymoline—should be ordered. During convalescence the great point is to prevent chills and indiscretions in diet, which may induce attacks of diarrhœa. Turpentine, especially in combination with castor oil, has been recommended by some.

Cyllin and other similar disinfectants have been advised, but have not given any very good results in our experience.

The sour-milk treatment may be tried in subacute or chronic cases, with sauerin, lacto-bacillin, fermentactyn, or any other preparation on the market, or by using the ferment as prepared by the natives of the country. Constipation is counteracted by small doses of castor oil, liquid paraffin, Carlsbad salts, Hunyadi János, Apenta water, or enemata, but if of a marked nature should arouse suspicions of stenosis, especially if the ordinary laxative remedies do not ameliorate the condition. Under these circumstances sigmoidoscopy should be performed, and the stricture dilated by bougies or catheters.

Treatment of Dysenteric Infantile Diarrhœa.—The treatment of infantile diarrhœa and of dysentery in children is best conducted by administering a small dose of castor oil (ʒi. to ʒii.), followed by calomel (gr. $\frac{1}{6}$) or grey powder (gr. $\frac{1}{4}$), every hour until six doses are given in a child of two years of age. The dosage may be decreased or increased, according to age. Afterwards astringents such as tannigen (gr. iii.) or tannalbin (gr. v.) may be given every two to four hours.

In severe cases, due to the Shiga-Kruse or the Flexner bacillus, serum treatment is the best, 5 to 10 c.c. being injected twice daily.

The diet should be altered from milk to albumin-water, whey, diluted meat-juice, or clear soup.

Pain must be combated by hot fomentations, and convulsions by bromides given in gr. xv. as enemata, or in small doses by the mouth in albumin-water. Chloroform may require to be administered, while some authors recommend minute doses of morphia.

Treatment of Chronic Dysentery.—The treatment of chronic dysentery varies, for sometimes the malady is easily amenable to the treatment laid down for mild cases of acute dysentery, while at other times many remedies may be tried without success. After an initial dose of castor oil, tannigen in 3 to 8 grain, or tannalbin in 10 to 20 grain doses, in cachets, may be tried three to six times a day. In old-standing cases *pilula plumbi cum opio* should be given twice a day. Serum treatment should also be tried during the exacerbations, as indicated above. Bael fruit, the rind of the mangosteen, simaruba bark, etc., are all useful in this condition, and the lavage treatment is more useful than in acute cases. Rectal irrigations should always begin with 2 pints of 1 per cent. solution of bicarbonate of soda to remove the adherent mucus, and then the medicated enema may be administered, and may consist of boracic acid (1 per cent.), followed by an enema containing bismuth subnitrate and sodium salicylate suspended in a pint or less of mucilage, silver nitrate ($\frac{1}{2}$ to 1 grain to the ounce), copper sulphate (2 grains, with 5 minims of tincture of opium to the ounce of water), tannin (0.2 to 0.5 per cent.), resorcin (1 to 2 per cent.), creolin (1 drachm to the pint), lysol (1 per cent.), or formalin (1 in 5,000), may all be used. Silver nitrate, however, gives the best results. Perchloride of mercury (1 in 20,000) should not be used as a rectal enema, as it is dangerous, and may increase the symptoms instead of diminishing them. In chronic or subacute obstinate cases the *vaccine treatment* first introduced for dysentery by Castellani and Greig may be tried, using vaccines prepared from the dysenteric bacilli isolated from the stools of the patient. Forster has tried this treatment also in acute cases. In our experience it gives good results in several cases of the chronic type, but in acute dysentery is much inferior to the serum and saline treatment. If all these methods of treatment fail, appendicostomy should be tried.

Dict.—There is no point in the treatment of dysentery of greater importance than the diet. The bowel requires physiological rest, and therefore, in very severe cases, the diet must be restricted to albumin-water and whey, and brandy given only if absolutely necessary.

In milder cases the diet should consist of milk, which must be diluted with Perrier, soda, Vichy, or barley water, or may be mixed with powders of sodium bicarbonate (gr. vi.), potassium bicarbonate (gr. vi.), sodium chloride (gr. iii.), or sodium citrate (gr. xl.), to the pint of milk, and less in proportion. Arrowroot made with water or milk, at first thin and later thick and flavoured with a little brandy, is most useful. Benger's food and Horlick's malted milk are also useful. Strong meat-essences and alcohol should be avoided.

In all severe cases the food must be given in small quantities every two hours, about 4 ounces at a time, and must be taken very slowly, and should be neither very warm nor cold. In chronic dysentery this milk diet is of the greatest importance, and may, as already stated, be supplemented by the sour-milk treatment.

When convalescence begins, chicken-broth and milk-puddings may be added to the diet, and then lightly-boiled eggs and toast ; then chicken, cream, and fish ; but for a long time only white flesh should be allowed, and not much of this, for the diet should for several weeks consist largely of milk foods. Of especial importance in convalescence is the chewing of the food, and care must be taken not merely that the teeth are in good order, but that the patient is directed not to swallow any tough or very fibrous piece of food. Fruit must be avoided for a long time.

Prophylaxis.—One of the important prophylactic measures which is at present but little used, owing to practical difficulties, is the isolation of the convalescent until three bacteriological examinations of the *fæces* give a negative result. Another is the search for dysentery carriers in a locality in which the disease is endemic or occasionally epidemic. The treatment of a carrier must be the same as for a case of chronic dysentery, but here vaccination will be distinctly useful. The persons to be suspected are those with a history of dysentery, or with a history of having nursed a case of dysentery, and people occupied in the cooking or handling of food materials.

Another very important measure is the destruction by burning or the disinfection of the dysenteric motion by either crude carbolic acid or by Jeyes' fluid, together with its careful protection against flies before its final disposal.

The personal prophylaxis consists in drinking only filtered and boiled water, and using the same for cleaning the teeth, in avoiding salads and fresh vegetables and unripe fruit, and in carefully washing the exterior of any fruit in which this is likely to be eaten.

Various methods of vaccination have been tried by Kruse, Shiga, and Castellani, with apparently fairly good results. Castellani's method consists in giving first an inoculation of $\frac{1}{2}$ c.c. of dead vaccine (peptone-water cultures heated to 55° C. for one hour), followed after a week by a second inoculation of 1 c.c. of live vaccine (peptone-water cultures of a non-virulent strain heated to 50° C. for one hour). Broth cultures should not be used, as they give rise to very severe local and general reactions. A polyvalent vaccine may be prepared.

With regard to public prophylaxis, a modern method of collecting and disposing of the sewage of towns is necessary everywhere in order to prevent the disease from spreading, and there is no doubt that for this purpose the best method for tropical towns is the Shone or pneumatic system, as introduced into Rangoon, Bombay, and Karachi.

Good scavenging and strict hygienic laws are necessary to prevent the breeding of flies, and if an epidemic of dysentery occurs a special crusade against the common house-fly, if not begun before, should at once be undertaken, as has been done for other reasons in Liverpool and elsewhere, especially in America.

Dust should be diminished in the warm dry weather by the

efficient watering and brushing of the roads of towns, and in this water some cheap disinfectant such as permanganate of potash should be used, especially for the more important streets.

The drinking-water of all large towns should be filtered, though it must be admitted that this alone is not a sufficient safeguard against a water-borne epidemic.

C. PSEUDO-DYSENTERIES.

Definition.—Pseudo-dysenteries are diseases other than those defined above, which give rise to diarrhoea, with the passage of blood and mucus in the motions, and are sometimes associated with abdominal pain and tenesmus, and may readily, on superficial examination, be mistaken for true dysentery.

Remarks.—It should, however, be noted that the term 'pseudo-dysentery' has been used by Kruse to signify a form of bacterial dysentery commonly found among inmates of lunatic asylums, and later to denote every variety of the disease not caused by the Shiga-Kruse bacillus.

Ætiology.—The most common causes of the pseudo-dysenteries are cancer of the intestine, especially of the rectum, inflamed piles, gummata in the rectum, cancers of the large bowel other than the rectum, and intussusception. The native habit of eating the small bones of fish along with the flesh is apt to cause irritation of the rectum and a pseudo-dysenteric attack. Inflammations of the broad ligament, especially on the left side, are apt to be confused with a mild attack of dysentery. Poisons, such as mercury, ptomaines, ricin, abrin, etc., may also produce symptoms, resembling dysenteric attacks. Prout has described a form of dysentery in the Gambia due to drinking water containing the excreta of locusts.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis of these various conditions has already been discussed in the Diagnosis of Bacillary Dysentery, and need not be repeated.

Treatment.—The treatment must be adapted to the specific complaint, while the bowel symptoms may be relieved as indicated under the treatment of Bacillary Dysentery.

REFERENCES.

Protozoal Dysenteries.

Amœbic Dysentery.

The most generally useful book is *Amœbic Dysentery*, by Brown, published in 1910. The current literature is found in the Bulletin of the Tropical Diseases Bureau.

BARBAGALLO AND CASAGRANDE (1897). *Annali d'Igiene Sperimentale*. Roma.

CASTELLANI (1901). *Rivista Critica Clinica Medica*; (1902-3) *Zeitschrift für Hygiene*, Bd. xxxvii., xi.; (1905) *Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene*.

- CRAIG (1912). New Orleans Medical and Surgical Journal, lxxv., i. 1-17.
 DARLING (1912). Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene, September 2. London.
 FRANCHINI (1912). Malaria.
 KRUSE (1900). Deutsche Medizinische Wochenschrift, No. 41; (1901) Nos. 23 and 24; (1903) Nos. 1, 3, 12.
 RHO (1903). La Dissenteria e le due forme. Roma.
 ROGERS (1912). British Medical Journal, June 22, August 24; Lancet, October 19.
 VEPDER (1912). Transactions Hong Kong Congress.

Laveranic and Leishmanic Dysenteries.

The literature on these subjects may be found under Malaria (Chapter XXIX.) and Kala-Azar (Chapter XXXIII.).

Ciliar Dysenteries.

- BOWMAN (1909). Philippine Journal of Science, December. Manila.
 SOLOVIEFF (1909). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie, etc., xxix. 821.
 STRONG (1904). Philippine Journal of Science. Manila.

Platyhelminthic Dysenteries.

The literature on these subjects may be found under Katayama Disease (Chapter XLI.) and Intestinal Schistosomiasis (Chapter LIV.).

Arthropodic Dysenteries.

See the literature on Intestinal Myiasis (Chapter L.).

Bacillary Dysenteries.

The most generally useful work is Die Bazillenruhr (Jena), by Ludke (1911), which contains a very full bibliography.

- BAHR (1912). Report on Dysentery in Fiji.
 CASTELLANI (1904). Journal Ceylon Branch of the British Medical Association. Colombo.
 FLEXNER (1901). British Medical Journal, ii. 786. London.
 HUNT (1912). Journal American Medical Association. September.
 KRUSE (1900-1907). Deutsche Med. Wochenschrift; (1900) 40; (1901) 23, 24; (1903) 12; (1907) 8 and 9.
 LEDINGHAM AND ARKWRIGHT (1912). The Carrier Problem in Infectious Disease. London.
 MESERSCHMIDT (1912). Deutsch Med. Wochenschrift, September.
 MÜLLER (1912). Münch. Med. Wochenschrift, October.
 NUTTALL AND JEPHSON (1909). Reports Local Government Board (New Series), No. 16, 4, p. 20.
 SANDWITH (1907). Lancet, December.
 SCHEUBE (1910). Krankheiten der Wärmten Länder.
 SHIGA (1898). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie, xxiii. 599; xxiv. 817, 870, 913.
 TWORT (1907). Proceedings Royal Society London, lxxix., p. 329.
 VIOLLE (1912). Archiv Médicale et Pharm. Nav., July.

CHAPTER LIV

INTESTINAL SCHISTOSOMIASIS

Intestinal schistosomiasis—Epidemic gangrenous rectitis—References.

INTESTINAL SCHISTOSOMIASIS.

Synonyms.—Intestinal bilharziosis, Rectal bilharziosis, Hepatic bilharziosis, American bilharziosis, Sambon's disease.

Definition.—Intestinal bilharziosis is infection with *Schistosoma mansoni* Sambon 1907, the eggs of which invade and irritate the intestines and the liver, and cause inflammation.

History.—It has long been known that the eggs found in cases of intestinal, rectal, and hepatic bilharziosis are laterally spined, as Bilharz pointed out in 1851; and Sonsino once stated that the two worms must belong to different species, but this statement did not attract attention. In 1903, Manson first suggested that these eggs might belong to a new species of *Schistosoma*, and in 1907, Sambon first showed that a separate species really did exist, calling this *S. mansoni*, in which he has been supported by Holcomb, Firket, Broden, Grun, and others, though opposed by the great authority, Looss.

A description of the adult worms has been given by Da Silva and by Flu, confirming the differentiation of the two species.

The fact of the existence of a separate disease caused by the lateral-spined eggs of *S. mansoni* is supported by all authors who have studied the disease in America, where the patients are said never to have eggs in the urine, and never to suffer from urinary schistosomiasis. It is further supported by the work of Mathis and Baujeau on a case from Gaudeloupe, and by that of Turner in South Africa. Flu, after examining 1,000 eggs from fifteen cases of intestinal schistosomiasis in Paramaribo, never found one with a terminal spine. Reference may also be made to Letulle's paper on 'Bilharziose Intestinale,' published in 1905, to Madden's work in 1907, and to Symmer's work in 1902 and 1906, from the latter of which we have taken our two illustrations. Lastly, reference must be made to the admirable exposition of the disease by Mathis, Noc, and Léger in 1913. It will thus be seen that the recognition of the disease is becoming generally accepted, although this was by no means the case when this chapter was first written.

Climatology.—As far as is known at present, the disease exists in Egypt, Central Africa, Uganda, South Africa, the Belgian Congo, Central, South, and North America, and the West Indies.

Pathology.—The worms live in the portal vein, but are especially attracted to the bowels, in the capillaries of which they lay their eggs, which burst those vessels, and escape into the mucosa, causing therein a dense cellular infiltration, which leads to a thickening of the coats of the bowel, and to the formation of papillomata, which may become detached and form ulcers. Dense fibrous infiltration of the peritoneum may also occur, and contain both eggs and worms. The mucosa of the bowel is protected by a quantity of



FIG. 533.—INTESTINAL SCHISTOSOMIASIS.
(After Symmers.)

Polypoid growths in descending colon.

mucus. In the rectum the mucous membrane is apt to become hypertrophied, and to grow, forming large polypoid masses, or adenomata, which may protrude through the anus. The ova may affect the subcutaneous tissue of the sacral and coccygeal regions, and cause dense cellular infiltrations, giving rise to fistulæ, which may spread and infect a large cutaneous area.

When the ova reach the liver by the blood stream, they give rise to fibrous tissue formation or an abscess. The surface of the liver shows in places a whitish network and also flat, china-white plaques. On section a marked increase in Glisson's capsule may be seen, the portal vessels lying in circular or slightly oval areas of connective tissue. Gall-stones may also form round the ova in the gall-bladder.

The pancreas and spleen may also be infected, and the vulva and vagina.

The ova may also reach the lungs, causing a chronic interstitial pneumonia, and passing through these organs, may enter the heart and the general circulation.

Symptomatology.—The clinical appearances of the disease may be classified into three varieties :—

1. Slight infections.
2. Schistosomic dysentery.
3. Schistosomic tumours.

Slight Infections.—In these cases there are no symptoms, and the disease is discovered by the examination of the fæces by a microscope.

Schistosomic Dysentery.—The symptoms resemble those of chronic dysentery, consisting of pains in the abdomen and the passage of

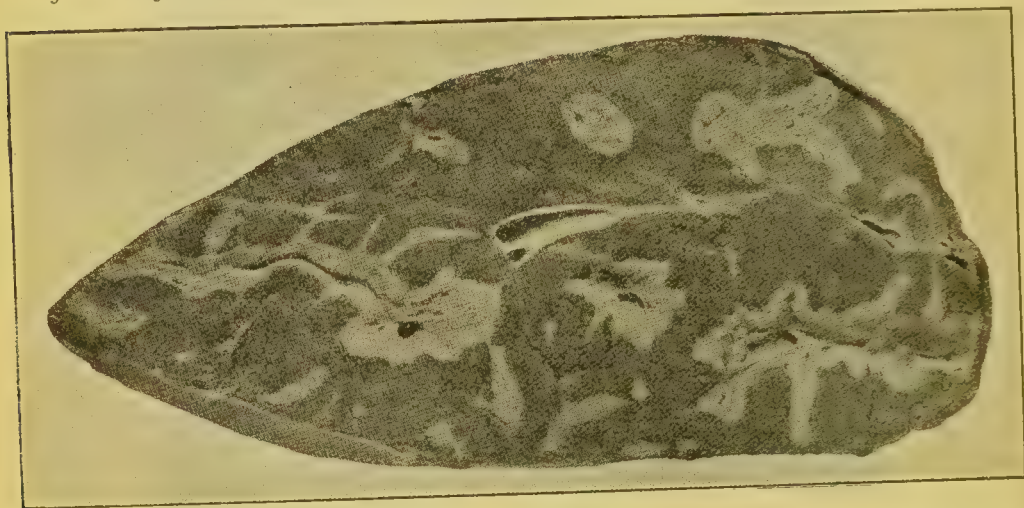


FIG. 534.—LIVER IN INTESTINAL SCHISTOSOMIASIS.
(After Symmers.)

Shows the increase of fibrous tissue in the portal canals.

blood and mucus. The fæces contain the characteristic ova. The attack begins with a hypersecretion of mucus, followed by frequent small motions containing but little fæcal matter and much mucus. The result of these frequent motions is to cause prolapse of the rectum. Papillomatous growths may form in the rectum, and can be distinguished from piles by their large number. They may protrude from the anus, when the removal and microscopical examination of a small portion will clear up the diagnosis. When the lower part of the rectum is involved, much agony from tenesmus and constant desire to defæcate is experienced. The rectal prolapse becomes very distressing, as it has to be constantly replaced by the patient himself, and as both the mucous membrane of the bowel and that of the anus become much inflamed and irritated.

In cases in which there is much sclerosis, with a scarcity or absence of polypi, the dysenteric symptoms are not so marked. On the contrary, the patient complains of constipation, not reliev-able by ordinary methods, alternating with bouts of diarrhœa.

Schistosomic Tumours.—When an emaciated patient in one of the endemic regions is examined, one or more abdominal tumours may be found in the region of the cæcum or colon. These tumours, which are fairly hard, are somewhat movable, and are usually elongated, with the long axis corresponding to the direction of the long axis of the bowel in the region in which the tumour is lying. The tumour, accidentally discovered, continues to increase in size for months and years, while the patient becomes very emaciated, and suffers from attacks of colic at times.

Liver and Pancreas.—The liver may be found to be enlarged and cirrhotic, the spleen also be enlarged, and there may be signs of cirrhosis of the pancreas.

If the patient removes from the endemic area, improvement will take place; but if he remains, then no cure appears to be possible, and he dies sooner or later from exhaustion.

Blood.—The blood in intestinal schistosomiasis requires further study, but it would appear that usually there is a marked anæmia, with oligochromæmia, slight leucocytosis, and very slight eosinophilia.

Urine.—In cases uncomplicated with the presence of *S. hæmatobium* there is no albumin, no sugar, and no ova in the urine.

Complications.—A case may be complicated with urinary bilharziosis, agchylostomiasis, and other intestinal parasitic diseases.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis must be made by finding the characteristic lateral spined eggs in the fæces.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is unfavourable. It must be noted, however, that in some cases the parasite does not give rise to any distinct pathological symptoms for a long time. One of us has observed in Uganda several natives with eggs of *S. mansoni* in their fæces, although they were apparently in good health. The stools, apart from the eggs of the worm, were normal.

Treatment.—But little can be done in the way of treatment. *Filix mas* may be administered with the purpose of eradicating the worms, and symptomatic treatment may be carried out as mentioned under Urinary Bilharziosis. Madden advises an enterotomy and a cleaning out of the bowel, when a tumour can be felt, and a Whitehead's operation may be done to relieve the rectal symptoms. Vincent has suggested that large intestinal irrigations of a solution of sodium hypochlorite (8 to 10 per 1,000) should be given, and other authorities tannic acid enemata (3 per 1,000). Some authorities recommend the intravenous or intramuscular injections of salvarsan.

EPIDEMIC GANGRENOUS RECTITIS.

Under this term Eckers and Manson describe a disease which may start in the rectum or in the colon in animals and natives in British Guiana and Venezuela, and perhaps elsewhere. It is known in the former region as 'caribi,' and in the latter as 'el becho.' It is said to be very contagious, which is against the native theory that it is caused by eating unripe maize.

The disease begins as an itching about the anus, followed by symptoms of acute dysentery, which increase in severity until there is a constant discharge of blood-stained or greenish foetid fluid. Prolapse and gangrene of the rectum may now occur, or convulsions may supervene, but in either case the patient dies.

Natives treat the disease by enemata of strong lemon-juice mixed with dilute rum, a dose of castor oil being given at the same time. Enemata and decoctions of *Spigelia anthelmia* are also prescribed. In children a portion of a lemon is roasted and inserted *per anum*. According to local medical men, this native treatment is more efficacious than boric-acid and similar enemata.

REFERENCES.

- BANDI (1913). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
 FLU (1908). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie, Parasit. u. Infekti
 GRALL AND CLARAC (1913). Traité Pratique de Pathologie Exotique, vi. 166.
 Paris.
 HOLCOMB (1907). United States Naval Bulletin, vol. i., No. 2, pp. 55-80.
 MADDEN (1907). Bilharziosis. London.
 MANSON (1907). Tropical Diseases. London.
 MATHIS AND BAUJEAU (1910). Bulletin de la Société Médico-Chirurgicale de
 l'Indochine. March.
 SAMBON (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine, x. 117 and 303.
 SYMMERS (1902). Journal of Pathology and Bacteriology; (1906) Patho-
 logical Studies, Aberdeen University.

CHAPTER LV

DISEASES OF THE LIVER AND PANCREAS

General remarks—Tropical liver—Amœbic abscess of the liver—
Opisthorchiosis—Clonorchiosis—References.

GENERAL REMARKS.

DISEASES of the liver and pancreas are of common occurrence in the tropics. The liver may be affected in the course of tropical fevers, especially in malaria and kala-azar, in the latter of which Rogers has described a special form of cirrhosis. The disease called '*infantile biliary cirrhosis of the liver*,' described by Ghose and Mackenzie as occurring in Calcutta and other parts of India in Hindu and Mohammedan children, appears to us to require reinvestigation, with a view to deciding whether it also is a variety of kala-azar. It is said to attack children under one year of age, and to be characterized by a low type of fever, associated with enlargement of the liver and spleen, jaundice, pale motions, dark urine, and sometimes vomiting of blood, œdema, and ascites, and ends fatally in three to eight months.

Acute yellow atrophy of the liver is not as uncommon in Ceylon as in Europe, for, on an average, we have met with one or two cases per annum. It occurs in Ceylon more commonly in men than in women, but the cause appears to be quite obscure.

An extraordinary case of acute severe hepatitis and gastritis, which caused a considerable hæmorrhage to take place, filling all the small biliary ducts, the gall-bladder, the common bile-duct, the duodenum, jejunum, and ileum with blood, has been recorded by one of us in Ceylon. The inflammation occurred in a stomach which was altered by chronic atrophic gastritis. The hæmorrhage was caused by the blood passing from the damaged hepatic capillaries into the minute bile channels, and was due to the destruction of the walls of these capillaries and the liver cells. No definite cause could be found for this condition, which is decidedly rare.

Congestion and inflammation of the liver, together with abscess, are common in the tropics, and require special consideration (p. 1405).

Atrophic cirrhosis of the liver is very common in the tropics, and though generally there is a history of alcohol, still, this is by no means always so, and sometimes the cause is not evident. We believe that cirrhosis of the liver of malarial origin is much less frequent than is admitted by many authors. It will be shown presently that various parasites cause cirrhosis.

Primary cancer of the liver has been met with, but is very rare. On the other hand, secondary cancer is by no means rare. The only *non-malignant growth* which we have met with was an angioma.

The protozoal parasites which occur in the liver are *Löschia tetragena*, the cause of liver abscess; *Leishmania donovani* and *L. infantum*, the causes of kala-azar and the infantile kala-azar; and the malarial parasites, as has already been noted. *Eimeria stiedæ* has not been found in the tropics in man.

With regard to the *trematode parasites* of the liver, *Fasciolopsis buski* (*rathouisi*) has been seen in a Chinese who showed obscure liver symptoms, and no doubt microscopical examination of the fæces would make diagnosis possible; but there is only one certain case, and the information regarding the symptoms is meagre. *Opisthorchis neverca* and *O. folineus* are the cause of opisthorchiosis, which will be considered later, as will clonorchiosis, caused by *Clonorchis sinensis* and *C. endemicus*. *Dicrocoelium lanceatum* is considered to be too small to cause any serious symptoms while living in the bile-ducts. *Schistosoma mansoni* and *S. japonicum* may both affect the liver (pp. 484-486).

With regard to *tape-worms*, *Tænia echinococcus* is not common, but we have met with one case of echinococcus in Ceylon, which was brought by a Boer prisoner, and Begbie has recorded another, not in the liver, but associated with the lung, in an old resident in Ceylon. One of us has recorded an invasion of the liver by *Ascarides*, and the formation of abscesses by the agency of these worms. We have also recorded *Porocephalus armillatus* in the liver.

Disease of the gall-bladder is common in the tropics, and we have met with acute and chronic inflammations. Gall-stones are often met with, probably as sequelæ to typhoid fever, but also arising from other causes. Suppuration of the bile-ducts we have only seen once, and œdema of the wall of the gall-bladder we have also only found once. *Obstructive* and *catarrhal jaundice* are met with fairly frequently in the tropics.

Rupture of the liver may take place as the result of traumatism, and recently Herzog has recorded this accident in a Filipino woman as the result of a native obstetrical practice, which consists of traction on a cloth wound round the abdomen. In this case the rupture had been caused by the perforation of the tip of the eleventh rib into the fatty liver.

In our experience, the pancreas is not infrequently found diseased. We have met with the following types of inflammation in Ceylon:—

1. Acute hæmorrhagic pancreatitis.
2. Acute suppurative catarrh of the ducts.
3. Subacute pancreatitis.
4. Chronic pancreatitis.
 - (1) Syphilitic in the fœtus.
 - (2) In the adult.
 - (a) Chronic interlobular pancreatitis.
 - (b) Chronic interacinar pancreatitis.
 - (c) Chronic interlobular and interacinar pancreatitis combined.

It should be remembered that the subtertian parasite is one of the causes of hæmorrhagic pancreatitis. In addition we have seen cancer of the pancreas producing a blocking of the duct of Wirsung, and leading to a ranula which contained many pancreatic calculi. We have once seen an ascaris in the duct of Wirsung associated with a hyperæmic condition of the gland.

After this brief general statement, we must consider congestion of the liver, abscess of the liver, opisthorchiosis, and clonorchiosis.

TROPICAL LIVER.

Synonyms.—Congestion of the liver, Hyperæmia of the liver, Indian liver.

Definition.—Congestion of the liver is a hyperæmia brought about by many conditions, especially gastro-intestinal disorders.

Remarks.—There can be no doubt that the European is apt to eat and drink more than is good for him on his first arrival in the Tropics, and that this is bound to lead to an increase of blood in the liver, which physiological condition may easily become a congestion, with later blood stasis and diminution of the functional activity of the organ.

Climatology.—Congestion of the liver is a cosmopolitan complaint, but is much more commonly met with in the Tropics than in the Temperate Zone.

Ætiology.—Congestion of the liver is brought about by indiscretion in diet, such as too much, too rich, or too highly spiced foods, by alcoholic excess, and by chills.

Pathology.—Post mortem the liver is found to be swollen, dark red in colour, and drips with blood when cut into. The cells are often laden with fat, and, in addition to the changes in the liver, there will be added the pathological changes which have caused the congestion, and which are generally to be found in the alimentary canal, as well as those which have caused the death of the patient.

Symptomatology.—The illness begins with frontal headache, malaise and loss of appetite, with nausea or sickness, and a bitter taste in the mouth on awakening in the morning. The tongue is coated, and there are the usual signs of dyspepsia, associated with

constipation and the passage of pale-coloured motions. The liver is enlarged and tender, and usually there is a sense of weight in the right hypochondrium, and pain below the right scapula or in the right shoulder, and there may be slight signs of jaundice in the yellow conjunctiva and sallow skin. The urine may be diminished in quantity, high-coloured, and with high specific gravity, and loaded with uric acid and urates. The nervous system is also affected, and the patient is usually very cross and irritable. The temperature is generally normal, but sometimes it rises, and when above 100° F. it is usual to call the disease hepatitis, instead of congestion of the liver. The common non-febrile variety lasts from two to seven days, but is liable to recur.

Varieties.—Congestion of the liver may be acute when associated with some other disease, or chronic when due to gastro-intestinal disturbance.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis is based on the painful enlargement of the liver, which, in the absence of other disease, is usually unaccompanied with marked rise of temperature.

Treatment.—In the acute attack it is as well to keep the patient in bed and begin the treatment with a dose of calomel (gr. ii. to gr. v.), followed a few hours later by a saline in the form of magnesium and sodium sulphates or Carlsbad salts. An effervescing mixture of ammonium carbonate (gr. iv. to gr. v.) and sodium bicarbonate (gr. xx.), with citric acid (gr. xv.), may be given every three hours, or a mixture containing ammonium chloride in some combination. At the same time hot fomentations or a thick coat of antiphlogistin may be applied to the region of the liver. The diet should consist of soups and milk, diluted with Vichy or barley water, and no alcohol in any form allowed.

When the condition has become chronic, the patient must be carefully dieted and placed upon a course of treatment with the above effervescing mixture and Vichy (Grande Grille), and when leave in Europe is available, should be sent to Vichy, Carlsbad, Harrogate, or Montecatini. He should avoid alcoholic stimulants and rich food of every description, and especially tinned food, and should restrict his diet to fowls, clear soups, fish, and well-cooked vegetables and milk, avoiding meat and curries.

Whenever the acute attack is over, the patient should be advised to take exercise daily—walking, riding, golf, or tennis, combined with the usual so-called liver exercises.

Prophylaxis.—Plain, simple, not highly spiced food should be taken, and such pernicious drinks as the heavy forms of beer, sherry, champagne, etc., should be avoided. If any form of alcohol is to be taken in the tropics, this should be Scotch whisky, well diluted, or light clarets, and then only in moderation. Chills must be avoided as carefully as possible, especially when there is a land wind, in the rains, and when changing from a warm to a cooler climate.

With regard to the cold bath, there is no doubt that the majority

of people are unable to stand this in the tropics, and therefore it is better to use water with the chill removed.

Some persons are, however, distinctly benefited by a cold bath and therefore individual peculiarities must be considered.

The most dangerous time for chills is in the night ; therefore it is as well to sleep with some light blanket placed over the abdomen, and in flannel night attire. In the daytime a woollen undervest or cholera-belt may be worn. The clothes must be carefully changed whenever they become damp.

AMŒBIC ABSCESS OF THE LIVER.

Synonyms.—Hepatic abscess. *French*: Abscès du Foie. *German*: Tropischer Leberabszess. *Italian*: Epatite Suppurativa.

Definition.—Amœbic abscess of the liver is a suppurative hepatitis, caused by *Löschia tetragena* (and perhaps other species of *Löschia*), usually preceded by an attack of amœbic dysentery.

History.—Liver abscess was known to the ancients, and was operated upon as far back as the days of Hippocrates, while Galen recognized its connection with dysentery, and Morgagni studied its morbid anatomy. During the nineteenth century the disease was carefully studied by French surgeons, beginning with those of the army of occupation in Egypt, and also by the French colonial doctors and the Indian army surgeons. The discovery of *Amœbæ* or *Löschia* emphasized the connection between liver abscess and dysentery. Kruse and Pasquale were the first to regularly find amœbæ in the liver abscess, and to state that, apart from the amœbæ, the pus was sterile. Later researches have confirmed this discovery, and have demonstrated that the pus of a liver abscess does not contain bacteria in most cases—a fact which agrees with our experience—and that the true cause of the malady is *Löschia tetragena* and at times *L. histolytica*.

Climatology.—Liver abscess is essentially a disease of the Tropics and subtropical regions. It is very common in India and Indo-China, rather less so in Ceylon, Malaya, Java, Sumatra, and rare in Southern China. In Africa it is common in Egypt and North and West Africa (Gold Coast). In America it appears to be less commonly met with, being rare in the United States, West Indies, and British Guiana. It is also found, though rarely, in the Temperate Zone, in Spain, Italy, France, and even in such a northern country as England. There is no seasonal variation.

Ætiology.—The cause of the suppuration is generally *Löschia tetragena*, occasionally *L. histolytica*, and perhaps other varieties of *Löschia*. It is more common in Europeans than in natives, and more so in males than females, and is usually a disease of adults. The most important predisposing cause is perhaps alcohol.

In monkeys one of us has recorded the occurrence of liver abscess due to an amœba (*Löschia nuttalli* Castellani 1907).

Pathology.—The *Löschia* pass from the bowel viâ the portal vein into the liver, where they produce coagulative necrosis of the liver cells, which become formless and break up into granular débris. This necrosis is thought to be brought about by means of toxins produced by the *Löschia*. The necrosed area undergoes liquefaction and forms the abscess, the contents of which consist of débris, endothelial cells, mononuclear leucocytes (rarely polymorphonuclears), red corpuscles, hæmatoidin, cholesterol, and rarely Charcot-Leyden crystals. The pus is usually sterile, and as a rule does not contain amœbæ, which are in the marginal wall of the abscess, and may extend into the liver tissue for some distance



FIG. 535.—AMŒBIC ABSCESS OF THE LIVER.

from the focal lesion. After the abscess has been opened, amœbæ may be found in the pus. The process of repair has not been fully worked out, but it appears as though the granulation tissue formed new connective tissue, in which new bloodvessels and proliferating bile-ducts may be seen, indicating the processes which may lead to repair.

Usually there is only one abscess, but it is not uncommon to find two, and there may be more. The abscess is generally found in the posterior part of the upper portion of the right lobe. It is rounded in form, with walls composed of degenerated liver cells and granulation tissue. Its contents may be thick, creamy pus, but more usually it is yellowish or brown coloured. On microscopical examination it consists largely of detritus, with a few

degenerated liver and pus cells. The bacteria found in the pus, when it is not sterile, are streptococci, staphylococci, *B. coli communis*, and *B. pyocyaneus*, and occasionally some anaërobic germs. The abscess varies much in size, from a small hollow containing only 1 or 2 ounces up to a huge cavity with a couple of pints or more of pus, while even larger have been described. The size of the liver, apart from the abscess, also varies, being sometimes increased and sometimes diminished. Apart from the liver abscess, there are usually signs of old or recent dysentery in the colon, though these may be absent. There may be abscesses in other parts of the body, but these are rare.

Symptomatology.—There is usually a history of a previous attack of dysentery, but this may be wanting. The disease begins in-

sidiously with signs of congestion of the liver and fever. This fever is important, being irregular, sometimes remittent, sometimes intermittent, sometimes with long apyrexial intervals.

The X rays may show that the movement of the diaphragm is diminished on the right side, and attention has also been called to the arched 'cupola-like' curve of upper aspect of the liver, as seen by radioscopy. The early stage, called by Rogers the 'presuppurative stage,' is of the utmost importance; for if it can be recognized and appropriate treatment applied, the disease may be stopped in a certain number of cases. If, however, this is not done, rigors may take place, and the fever usually becomes more severe, and a typical hectic temperature with night-sweats may ensue; while the patient complains of a dragging sensation on the

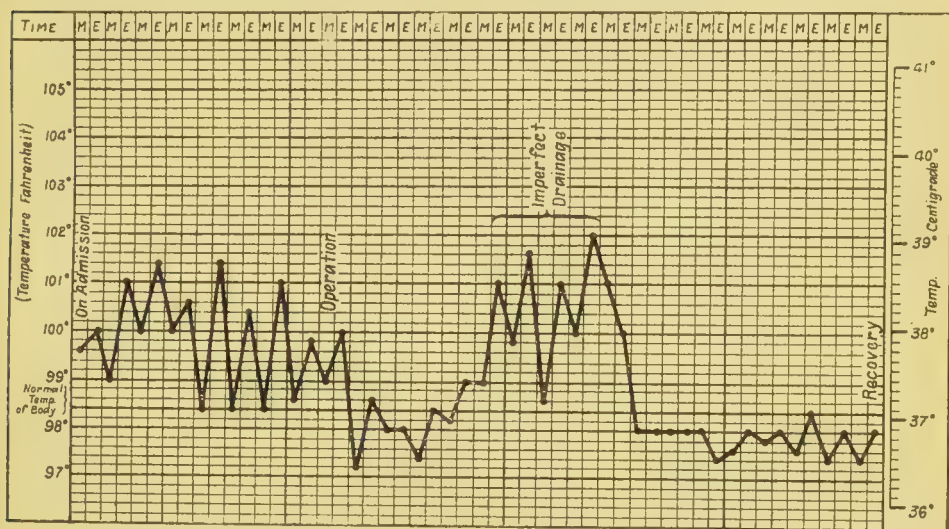


FIG. 536.—THE TEMPERATURE CHART OF A CASE OF ABSCESS OF THE LIVER.

right side, pain under the right shoulder-blade and in the right shoulder. This latter is a referred pain, due to the fact that the phrenic nerve arises from the fourth cervical nerve-root, the fibres of which supply the skin of the shoulder.

A patient with an abscess of the liver often possesses a most typical facies. He lies on his back, with his legs drawn up ; his face is drawn, and of a pale yellow colour, and the ocular conjunctiva possesses a peculiar bluey-whitish colour. It is said that sometimes the right pupil is dilated, but in our experience this is not a constant symptom. Generally he is emaciated, and deep inspiration is painful ; hence the breathing is costal in character, and often there is a slight cough. The hands and feet are often cold and clammy to the touch.

On inspecting the abdomen and chest, the right hypochondrium will be noticed to be bulging, while the liver is enlarged and tender. On palpating the front of the abdomen, the right rectus muscle may

be felt to become suddenly rigid—a most characteristic sign—while the left is not affected. On percussion the liver is found to be enlarged, and pain may be produced by pressure in the epigastrium or over an intercostal space. These painful spots are of importance in localizing the site of the abscess. On listening over the lower part of the chest, fine crepitations or friction sounds may be heard.

Usually liver abscess is accompanied by some anæmia and some increase in the number of the total leucocytes, but this appears to vary, being greater if the abscess is small and deeply seated, and less so if large and superficial. According to Rogers, the ratio of white to red corpuscles varies from 1 : 517 to 1 : 126. With regard to the differential count, the polymorphonuclear leucocytes are but slightly increased, but the lymphocytes are usually more than normal. Léger gives the differential count as being : Polymorphonuclears, 78·37 per cent. ; lymphocytes, 17·44 per cent. ; mononuclears, 3·15 per cent. ; and eosinophiles, 0·70 per cent., which closely agrees with Rogers' figures, which are : Polymorphonuclears, 74 to 87 per cent. ; lymphocytes, 7 to 22 per cent. ; mononuclears, 3 to 7 per cent. ; eosinophiles, 0 to 4 per cent. In some of our cases there was no polymorphonuclear leucocytosis, while on several occasions, even in non-malarial subjects, there was a relative large mononuclear increase. The number of sudanophile leucocytes tested according to the Cesaris-Demel method is often increased.

The urine is usually diminished, and its excretion is said to be altered, so that the greatest quantity is passed between 12 midnight and 12 noon, being especially increased in the early morning.

If the abscess is allowed to continue its own course, it may burst into the lung, causing signs of pleurisy and pneumonia, associated with the expectoration of characteristic brown or reddish-brown gummy, viscid, purulent matter ; or into the stomach, when a similar material will be vomited ; or into the bowel, when it will be passed *per anum*. It may also burst into the pericardium or the peritoneum, or into the vena cava, all of which cases are bound to end fatally. If it does not burst, the patient may die of exhaustion.

The duration of a liver abscess is very variable, being from a few weeks to several months, and even years.

Diagnosis.—The diagnostic points in abscess of the liver are : A history of dysentery ; fever, generally of a serotine type, with sweatings, not yielding to quinine ; painful enlargement of the liver ; the characteristic pain in the shoulder ; the rigidity of the right rectus ; the loss of movement in the right side of the diaphragm, and the frequent cupola-shape of the liver on radioscopy ; and, above all, the discovery of the pus by exploratory puncture, as described below.

The differential diagnosis between the presuppurative and the suppurative stages is often impossible without a puncture, but sweating, high intermittent temperature, if present and not influenced by the emetine treatment, is suspicious that suppurative changes have begun.

Pleurisy with effusion on the right side can be distinguished from liver abscess by the presence of Grocco's paravertebral triangle on the left side. Moreover, in pleuritic effusions the upper limit of the dulness is horizontal, while in liver abscess it is convex. Another diagnostic point to which Manson has drawn attention is that the enlarged liver gravitates with changes of position much more distinctly than pleural effusions. If the dulness in the mid-axillary line diminishes notably when the patient lies on his left side, the case is probably one of liver abscess. It is to be noted, however, that a right pleural effusion and a liver abscess may coexist. Pneumonia on the right side with congestion of the liver may also lead to difficulties, which must be met by careful physical examination and the microscopical and bacteriological examination of the sputum. Malarial fever can be diagnosed from the fever of hepatitis by examination of the blood and the presence of the enlarged spleen. In those cases of liver abscess in which fever is the only symptom the diagnosis may be extremely difficult, and may require all modern bacteriological methods to exclude Malta fever, malaria, septicæmia, and typhoid, etc. When in doubt, an exploratory puncture should always be made, for it can do no harm, and may relieve the congestion. When a long needle is introduced into a liver abscess, it moves regularly with respiration. Purulent cholecystitis in most cases gives no trouble on diagnosis, as the enlarged gall-bladder can be easily felt, and there is generally a history of hepatic colic.

Syphilitic gumma of the liver may show many symptoms in common with liver abscess, including the intermittent fever, as we have twice noted. The action of potassium iodide in full doses clears the diagnosis.

Cases of leukæmia, pseudo-leukæmia, tropical splenomegaly, and kala-azar have been mistaken for liver abscess, but in all these conditions the spleen is also greatly enlarged.

In this connection we may emphasize the necessity for the examination of the blood in order to exclude leukæmia, otherwise a fatal hæmorrhage may follow such a simple operation as puncture of the liver. Liver abscess is usually easily diagnosed from hydatid disease, but when purulent changes have taken place in the latter the diagnosis may be impossible, except by the history and the eosinophilia.

Prognosis.—If the abscess is left unoperated for a long time, the prognosis is very bad, as the danger of exhaustion and septic infection is great. If the abscess has burst into the lung, the prognosis is also bad, but better than if it had burst into the bowel. Since operative measures have come into more common use, the mortality has decreased, according to Dujardin Beaumetz, from 82 per cent. to 32 per cent. The operation wound may occasionally become phagedænic.

Treatment.—If a case is suspected by the symptoms and blood-counts to be in the 'presuppurative stage,' emetine or ipecacuanha

should be administered, and should be given with the precautions already mentioned under Amœbic Dysentery, and the latter must be continued for several weeks after every sign of hepatitis has disappeared.

If, however, an abscess is believed to have formed, there should be no delay in making an exploratory puncture.

For this purpose a needle $3\frac{1}{2}$ inches in length, but preferably not longer, because of the danger of injuring the vena cava, should be rendered sterile by boiling in plain water, but must not be dipped into an antiseptic lotion nor into spirit. This needle should be capable of being fitted on to a glass syringe or an aspirator.

The patient should be placed under chloroform, and all arrangements should be made so that an operation can be performed at once if necessary.

The needle should be driven into the liver in the region of any definite swelling or pain, or, failing these, through the eighth intercostal space in the anterior axillary line, about 1 or $1\frac{1}{2}$ inches from the costal margin.

The direction of the needle should be inward, slightly upward and backward, because the usual site of an abscess is in the upper and back part of the right lobe.

Aspiration by the syringe or the aspirator may reveal pus, or may fail to do so, in which latter event the needle must be carefully and slowly withdrawn, and its contents ejected on to a clean white dish, to see if it is composed of the grumous material of liver abscess. The needle should now be driven into the liver in different places and directions until some six to twelve punctures have been made. There is no danger in this procedure if performed with reasonable care, and it may even benefit the patient by performing what has been termed 'hepatic phlebotomy.' When the abscess has been located, the needle should be left *in situ* as a guide, and one of two procedures may be carried out : A. Aspiration ; B. Operation.

The operation should, however, be always performed if the abscess has already burst into the lungs, the peritoneal or pleural cavities.

A. ASPIRATION.—This is preferable if the abscess is small, and consists of evacuating its contents, and the injection of a solution of 1 grain of emetine hydrobromide in 2 ounces of water, or the repeated irrigation of the cavity with a solution of bi-hydrochloride of quinine (3 to 5 grains to the ounce) by means of Rogers' flexible sheathed aspiration cannula.

B. OPERATION.—An operation is necessary if the abscess is large, if the pus is not sterile, if the abscess has burst into the lungs or a serous cavity.

The site of the operation depends upon where the pus has been obtained. Two principal places may be mentioned : (1) through the thoracic wall ; (2) through the abdominal wall below the ribs.

Giordano and others have recommended a laparotomy and the localization of the abscess by the hand prior to the actual operation

for evacuation of the pus. This may be useful in certain cases when there are no signs indicating the position of the abscess.

1. *Operation through the Thoracic Wall.*—An incision should be made through the parietes, including the site of the puncture, through which pus was obtained. After the skin has been well retracted, a piece of a rib may require to be removed, thus exposing the diaphragm below the pleura, which must be incised and stitched to the margins of the wound, and the wound well packed with gauze.

The liver is now exposed, and two methods of procedure are open to the operator—either to push a pair of dilating forceps along the needle, which has been left *in situ*, and thus to open up the cavity and evacuate the pus, and then, after inserting a double drainage-tube, to wash out the cavity with the quinine solution mentioned above, close up the wound, fix the drainage-tube in position, and dress the wound aseptically, or to adopt Manson's special apparatus.

Manson, after the preliminary incision, thrusts a trocar and cannula into the abscess, and, after withdrawing the trocar, passes a drainage-tube stretched on a probe into the abscess cavity, and then, withdrawing first the trocar and then the probe, the drainage-tube is left in position in the liver abscess, and, being firmly gripped by liver tissue, prevents leakage of pus into the abdominal cavity.

2. *Operation through the Abdominal Wall.*—The usual method is to cut down upon the swelling or on to the liver, and if adhesions are found, to evacuate and drain the abscess. If there are no adhesions, the liver is fixed to the peritoneum by a few stitches of thick catgut or kangaroo tendon, but preferably not silk, and the wound is lined by iodoform gauze and left for two days, when, adhesions having formed, the abscess can safely be evacuated as described above. Manson's apparatus can, of course, be used in this position as well as through the thoracic wall.

Post-Operative Treatment.—The dangers of the operation itself are but slight. The pleura may be opened, and if this happens, it should be carefully closed by stitches.

The post-operative complications are many, and include hæmorrhage, pneumothorax, pyothorax, pyopneumothorax, gangrene of the lung, and delayed chloroform poisoning, while a second abscess is not uncommonly met with, and must be relieved.

After the operation the temperature should fall to normal, and if this does not happen, a second abscess or one of the above complications may be suspected, unless, indeed, it is due to imperfect drainage, which must at once be rectified.

The dressings should at first be frequently changed, usually twice a day, and the cavity irrigated with quinine lotion. Good drainage is the essential of the post-operative treatment, and care must be taken that the drainage-tube is not too rapidly shortened, otherwise the temperature is apt to rise.

On recovery, the patient should, if possible, be given a holiday

in the Temperate Zone. A short course of ipecacuanha after the operation wound has quite healed is distinctly indicated in order to prevent the formation of another abscess.

OPISTHORCHIOSIS.

Definition.—Opisthorchiosis is an invasion of the bile-ducts with *Opisthorchis noverca* Braun 1903 and *O. felineus* Rivolta 1885.

Remarks.—*O. noverca* is said to be common in dogs in India, but has only once been found in the dilated bile-ducts of an Indian in Calcutta, who died with dysenteric symptoms.

O. felineus has been found in the dilated bile-ducts, and incidentally also in the intestine of human beings, cats and dogs in Tomsk. It caused a form of hepatic cirrhosis.

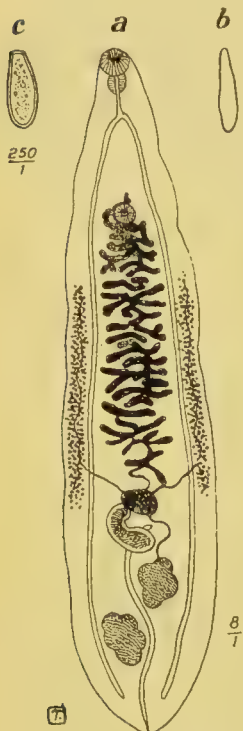


FIG. 537.—OPISTHORCHIS FELINEUS RIVOLTA.

(After Looss.)

CLONORCHIOSIS.

Definition.—Clonorchiosis is the invasion of the bile-ducts with *Clonorchis sinensis* Cobbold and *C. endemicus* Baelz.

Climatology.—These parasites occur in China, Indo-China, and Japan, *C. sinensis* being more commonly found in China, and *C. endemicus* in Japan. They were both until recently classified under the term *Opisthorchis sinensis*.

Pathology.—These parasites occur in dogs and cats, but the method of infection is quite unknown. In man they live in the bile-ducts, in the recesses in the wall of the dilated gall-bladder or of the bile-ducts, and in the duodenum. They may also be found in abscesses apparently unconnected with the liver. The ova are found in the alimentary canal and the fæces. The liver becomes enlarged, and may be darker in colour, while it is atrophied in the neighbourhood of the dilated ducts. The intestine may show catarrhal inflammation. Often

the spleen is also enlarged, and there may be ascites or œdema. Ova have been met with in the abdominal lymphatics, while the flukes themselves have been found in a lumbar abscess. The blood shows an eosinophilia.

Symptomatology.—There is an abnormal appetite, but the general health remains good for some time, though the liver enlarges and becomes painful, while jaundice may be present. The spleen also enlarges. The disease is apparently very chronic, but towards the end emaciation, ascites, œdema about the feet and legs, and diarrhœa lead to death from exhaustion. Abscesses may form.

Diagnosis.—The presence of the worms can only be diagnosed by finding the eggs in the fæces.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is bad, as no cure is known.

Treatment.—An attempt may be made to kill the worms by thymol or *Filix mas*; otherwise the treatment must be symptomatic.

Prophylaxis.—Nothing can be said as to prophylactic measures until the method of infection is known.

REFERENCES.

Infantile Biliary Cirrhosis.

GHOSE AND MACKENZIE (1895). *Lancet*, i. 321.

Liver in Schistosomiasis.

PHALEN AND NICHOLS (1908). *Philippine Journal of Science*, III., iii. 223.

Pancreatitis in Ceylon.

CHALMERS (1905). *Journal of the Ceylon Branch of the British Medical Association*, p. 1.

Liver Abscess.

CANTLIE (1907). *Journal of Tropical Medicine and British Medical Journal* (several papers).

CASTELLANI (1908). *Rivista Clinica Medica*.

COUTEAUD (1908). *Bull. Soc. de Path. Exotique*, i. 7, 421.

GIORDANO (1899). *Annali Med. Naval*.

MATHIS AND LÉGER (1911). *Recherches de Parasitologie et de Pathologie au Tonkin*. Paris.

MARCHOUX (1908). *Annali Med. Naval*, i. 1, 38.

RHO (1908). *Mense's Tropenkrankheiten* (Italian edition).

ROGERS (1908). *Fevers in the Tropics*, p. 173.

Opisthorchiosis.

LOOSS (1905). *Mense's Tropenkrankheiten*, i. 88.

Clonorchiosis.

LOOSS (1907). *Annals of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene*, vol. ii.

SCHEUBE (1903). *Diseases of Warm Climates*, p. 361.

CHAPTER LVI

DISEASES OF THE CIRCULATORY ORGANS, SUPRARENALS, AND THYROID GLAND

General remarks—Diseases of the circulatory system—Diseases of the suprarenals—Diseases of the thyroid gland—Goitre—Diseases of the spleen—Diseases of the thymus—Macies perniciosa—References.

DISEASES OF THE CIRCULATORY ORGANS.

DISEASES of the circulatory organs are common in the tropics as well as in other parts of the world. *Pericarditis* and *endocarditis* are not as common as in other regions, probably because rheumatism is rare, and therefore they are due to such other causes as gonococcal infection, etc. Atrophies of the heart, especially brown atrophy, are quite common as the result of some general disease. Heart-block is rare, but has met been with. Rupture of a perfectly normal myocardium, the pericardium being intact, is recorded by Herzog as due to fracture of the second, fourth, and fifth ribs.

Atheromatous degeneration of the arteries is quite common, and aneurism is found, generally affecting the thoracic aorta, while varicose veins and varicocele are usual, and, associated with hypertrophy of the heart, are very common among rickshaw coolies.

Thrombosis is often met with as the result of typhoid fever and other diseases, and we have seen thrombosis of a coronary artery with myomalacia cordis or aneurism of the heart.

Chlorosis is rare, though we have seen cases in European and high-class native girls. *Anæmia* is common, being generally due to agchylostomiasis, malaria, or kala-azar. *Leukæmia* cannot be said to be very rare, and is either of the spleno-medullary type or the lymphatic type. *Pseudo-leukæmia* and *Banti's disease* are also known.

General dropsy not due to heart or renal disease is generally agchylostomiasis or beri-beri.

The parasites of the circulatory organs are the malarial parasites,

the spirochaetes, *Trypanosoma gambiense*, *T. rhodesiense*, *T. cruzi*, *Leishmania donovani*, *L. infantum*, *Schistosoma hæmatobium*, *S. japonicum*, *S. mansoni*, and the *Microfilariae*.

Tropical Heart.

Under this heading MacLeod has described the conditions of palpitation and dyspnœa on going up hills, met with in persons who have resided long in the tropics. He assigns this to degeneration of the heart, brought on by the heat and by the exceptional work which it has to do owing to the changes in the circulation which result from the high temperature of the tropics. He considers this to be the basis of the syncopal form of heat exhaustion. Black believes that the condition is associated with subnormal blood coagulability, and recommends the administration of calcium salts. The salt he prefers is calcium lactate, which he gives in 10-grain doses. He points out that calcium salts are essential for the systole of the heart as well as for the normal coagulability of the blood, and refers their beneficial action to this property. He considers that citric acid or its salts should be avoided when calcium salts are administered, as they increase the calcium excretion.

DISEASES OF THE SUPRARENALS.

We have met with Addison's disease once in a European, and twice with hæmorrhage into both the suprarenal capsules—once in a still-birth after a breech presentation in a native child, and once in a case of acute suprarenal hæmorrhage in a European lady. This last showed symptoms so remarkable in character that a brief description may be given.

Acute Suprarenal Hæmorrhage.

After a year's residence in Ceylon, a young English lady, four months pregnant, was suddenly taken ill with fever associated with an abnormally quick pulse, great tenderness above the umbilicus, and pain in the small of the back on both sides. After a short intermission the fever returned, and rose to 104° F., with a pulse of 130, and quick respirations; the abdomen became much distended and very tender, and the bowels were constipated. All the organs were normal, as was the urine. Vomiting did not begin till near the end, when the tongue first became coated, and then dry. Hiccough intervened before death on the thirteenth day. Treatment was without success in any way, and an exploratory laparotomy revealed no abnormality beyond bowels distended with gas. On post-mortem examination, no pathological phenomena were seen, except hæmorrhages into both suprarenal capsules.

DISEASES OF THE THYROID GLAND.

Diseases of the thyroid gland are quite common in the parts of the tropics with which we are acquainted. Myxœdema has been seen by us in Ceylon; goitres, parenchymatous and adenomatous, have been met with by ourselves in Ceylon, and by Singer in

Abyssinia. Exophthalmic goitre has been especially noted as far from rare by Singer in Abyssinia and Émile in East and Central Africa, but is very rare in India and Ceylon.

GOITRE.

Synonym.—Endemic thyromegaly.

Goitre is much more prevalent in the tropics than has been realized hitherto, and we have met with it frequently in Ceylon and Africa.

Climatology.—It is a cosmopolitan disease which, though frequently met with in hilly districts, is also, in our experience, quite common in low-lying lands. It does not appear to be associated with any geographical or geological condition.

Ætiology.—The general tendency of the present time is to consider that goitre is a parasitic disease, and this view has been strengthened by the recent important experiments of McCarrison on men and Bircher on rats, which, together with the previous ones of Lustig, Grassi, and many others, tend to show that the causal agent lives in earth and passes via potable water to man, in whose alimentary canal it passes a parasitic existence. The nature of this *contagium vivum* is unknown, but McCarrison is inclined to suspect an Amœba. Chagas has shown that goitre is a part of the syndrome in chronic American trypanosomiasis.

Symptomatology.—A new-comer to an endemic district may notice after a few weeks' residence that the neck has begun to swell, and on examination this is found to be due to an incipient goitre. On removal from the district, or after almost any method of treatment, the swelling will decrease. If, however, the person continues to reside in the endemic region, the swelling will either continue or return, and this will continue to occur until a more or less permanent hypertrophy results. Usually the swelling affects the whole gland uniformly, but often one lobe may be more hypertrophied than the other. As time goes on the gland becomes permanently enlarged, and may undergo cystic or adenomatous changes.

Treatment.—The treatment consists in removal from the endemic area, and in a course of intestinal antiseptics—*e.g.*, salol and thymol. McCarrison recommends a polyvalent vaccine made from the bacilli found in the fæces of persons suffering from the disease. The sour milk treatment has also been recommended.

Prophylaxis. The most important prophylactic measure is to filter and boil the drinking-water when compelled to visit or live in an endemic region.

DISEASES OF THE SPLEEN.

The spleen is affected in malaria, kala-azar, relapsing fever, etc., as already described. Capsulitis is very commonly met with in post-mortems, but splenic abscess is, in our experience, rare, and may be of entamœbic origin. Infarcts and tuberculosis are, how-

ever, not so rare, and spleno-medullary leukæmia, as has been mentioned above, is not very rare. Rupture of the enlarged malarial spleen has already been mentioned, and may cause death within a few minutes, or the patient may live for several hours



FIG. 538.—GOITRE IN A SINHALESE WOMAN.

DISEASES OF THE THYMUS.

Only once have we encountered a persistent thymus gland with some enlargement of the lymphatic glands, and this was in a case of sudden death.

Macies Perniciosa.

Dr. Ernest Black gives the following account of this disease, which occurs among the aboriginal natives in the north of the State of Western Australia. It has also been reported among the tribes of the Northern Territory of the Commonwealth, where it is called 'living-skeleton' disease.

Though the white settlers regard it as a form of consumption, it is not tubercular, and it does not appear to be associated with any malignant growth. It does not correspond clinically with any known tabetic disease. In one case seen in the earlier stages the pancreas was most affected. There is a progressive enlargement of the liver and spleen, the abdomen becoming considerably distended. All the fat disappears and the muscles atrophy, but retain the power of movement. The appearance is quite characteristic—

extreme emaciation of the whole body, with a protruding abdomen. Ultimately, through increasing weakness, walking becomes impossible, a serious matter with these nomadic people, which may account for the fact that the few cases of long duration which were observed had remained near white settlements. The course of the disease is slow, but, so far as could be ascertained, it always terminates fatally. Only one case was seen in a child, who died within a year, whereas in the case of a woman who appeared to be middle-aged it was said to have already lasted over two years.

The cause of the disease is unknown. No parasite has been found in the blood of patients examined in the endemic areas.

Further investigation is necessary to see whether this disease is a type of tropical splenomegaly (*vide* pp. 963-965).

REFERENCES.

- ÉMILE (1907). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, p. 21.
 GLOGNER (1906). *Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene*, x. 17. (Rupture of the Spleen.)
 HERZOG (1908). *Philippine Journal of Science*, ii. 1, 55. (Rupture of the Heart and of the Spleen.)
 MACLEOD (1898). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, i. 3. (Tropical Heart.)
 MAXWELL (1919). *Transactions of the Society of Tropical Medicine*, ii. 9. (Abscess of Spleen)
 McCARRISON (1909). *Proceedings of the Royal Society, B.*, v. 81, No. B. 545, p. 31 (Goitre); (1913) *The Etiology of Endemic Goitre*. London.
 SINGER (1905). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, viii. 17. (Goitre.)

CHAPTER LVII

DISEASES OF THE URINARY ORGANS

General—Urinary Schistosomiasis—References.

GENERAL.

RENAL disease in all its forms is frequently met with in the tropics, where nephrolithiasis, pyonephrosis, and pyelitis, with all their associated phenomena are by no means rare. Stone in the bladder is common in certain regions, as is prostatic hypertrophy. But the only disease which really concerns us in this work is urinary bilharziosis, caused by *Schistosoma hæmatobium*. Tumours of the bladder are not common in our experience. Prostatic abscess is met with at times. We have observed various mycoses of the genito-urinary organs due to fungi of the genera nocardia, aspergillus, monilia, cladosporium. Native children in some parts of Africa (Sudan) suffer very often from a complaint called by the Arabs 'har boul,' characterized by severe burning on passing urine. This condition is due to concentrated acid urine and the presence of gravel.

URINARY SCHISTOSOMIASIS.

Synonyms.—Bilharziosis, Endemic hæmaturia, Bilharzia disease.

Definition.—Bilharziosis is infection with *Schistosoma hæmatobium* Bilharz 1852, the eggs of which irritate and invade the urinary tract, and cause hæmaturia and cystitis.

History.—The disease has been endemic in Egypt since ancient times, Ruffer having demonstrated calcified eggs of *S. hæmatobium* in mummies of the twentieth dynasty (about 1250-1000 B.C.). Hæmaturia was much noticed by the French army surgeons in 1799 to 1801; but it was not till 1851 that Bilharz made the discovery that the disease was due to *S. hæmatobium*.

Climatology.—Bilharziosis is prevalent in Africa, especially in Egypt and the Cape, but it is also met with in Asia, in India, Syria, and Mesopotamia, and in the West Indies. In Egypt, according to Sandwith, infection probably takes place in the early winter months when the floods have subsided.

Ætiology.—The cause of the disease is *S. hæmatobium*. The life-history, as far as is known, is described in Chapter XIX., p. 481.

The method of infection is unknown, but the eggs leave the body with the urine. Therefore it is possible that, as the parasite lives in water, infection may be by way of the skin or the mouth, but by which is not definitely known, though the skin infection has recently been supported by Williamson in Cyprus, who has shown that infection is connected with bathing in a certain river.

It occurs in any race and at any age, except infancy, but is more common in males than in females, due, it is thought, to the men washing in streams and working in the fields barefooted. According to Miss Elgood's investigations, the disease is common also in young girls, even in those who do not bathe, and who use filtered water. It is rare in Europeans, being much more common among the natives, in whom it is especially prevalent among the working classes, especially the field-labourers.

Pathology.—The worms live in the portal vein, but proceed to the venules of the bladder to lay the eggs. The irritation of these eggs excites a round-celled infiltration, sometimes of a very extensive nature, giving rise to a sort of bilharzial granulation tissue—that is, a tissue composed of round cells and eggs. Madden divides the pathological changes into two classes—the hypertrophic and the atrophic. In the former, which is more common in mucous membranes, there is proliferation of the epithelium, with the formation of flattened projections or papillomata, while vesicles may also form, and, according to Madden, by bursting, give rise to the ulcers which at times are seen.

The ova may escape from the mucosa, according to Looss, without the aid of ulceration, by working their way between the epithelial cells into the lumen of the viscus. Underneath the mucosæ the round-celled infiltration forms the typical bilharzial granulation tissue, and leads to much thickening of the wall of the viscus, and, proceeding to connective-tissue formation, may cause marked changes. Lesions may also be found from the pelvis of the kidney to the meatus urinarius, but are most common in the bladder.

Morbid Anatomy.—The earliest changes are found in the bladder in the formation of a general infiltration and thickening of the mucosa with bilharzial tissue. Over this thickened mucosa is a layer of adherent mucus, which is apparently protective. In this mucus numerous eggs are found. Later hyperæmic patches are found associated with vesicles, which are especially marked around the trigone, and contain a whitish fluid in which are eggs. The hyperæmic patches increase in size and thickness, and the whole bladder becomes much thickened. Papillomata of all shapes and sizes are formed principally on the trigone and the posterior wall of the bladder. These papillomata bleed readily, giving rise to the hæmaturia.

As the eggs increase in amount, connective tissue forms round them, and they die and become calcified, thus giving rise to brownish-yellow, sandy patches, not protected by mucus, and leading to an atrophy of the mucosa of the viscus.

The urine collects in the hollows between the papillomata, and, decomposing, gives rise to phosphates, which produce a whitish incrustation on the bladder wall. The orifices of the ureters may become obstructed, giving rise to backward pressure, causing hypertrophy of the ureters and hydronephrosis. Septic infection is very liable to spread from the bladder up the dilated ureters to the kidney. Bilharzial tissue may also form in the ureters and the pelvis of the kidney, and take the form of infiltrations and papillomata. Calculi may also form in the bladder, and interstitial nephritis in the kidney.

As the bladder becomes infiltrated, it rises in the abdomen, and may be felt above the pubes, and in this situation infection may spread to the abdominal wall. In this case the typical bilharzial tissue forms in the subcutaneous tissue, and, working its way to the surface, forms a sinus lined with bilharzial granulations containing eggs and discharging pus. These sinuses may spread, and a large area of skin become involved.

Bilharzial tissue may also form in the prostate and urethra.

Symptomatology.—The incubation is not known, but, according to Sandwith, it varies from three to six months. At first no symptoms are exhibited, but in course of time frequency of micturition, with a sensation of burning in the perineum or along the urethra, may be noted, while there is some straining after passing urine. In due course hæmaturia appears, beginning with a few drops of blood either at the end of micturition or after the urine has been passed. Usually there are no symptoms with this hæmaturia, but there may be scalding. The urine is clear and acid, but some mucus may be passed, which, if centrifugalized or allowed to settle, shows the typical ova and, of course, red cells, leucocytes, and epithelial cells. Usually the general health is good, but pains in various directions may be felt—*e.g.*, in the back, the perineum, the gluteal region, or down the legs.

Sooner or later the urine begins to stagnate in the hollows in the mucosa formed by ulcers and by papillomata. When this happens, the urine becomes alkaline and turbid, containing pus and phosphates, as well as decomposing blood and ova. With this decomposition of the urine cystitis appears, and the sufferings of the patient begin in earnest, with at first increased, and later almost constant micturition, scalding pains in the perineum and the scrotum, together with tenesmus, which increase until he can rest neither day nor night. In order to add, if possible, to his miseries, the prostate may enlarge or a stone may form in the bladder, which may be composed of uric acid or oxalates covered with phosphates, or simply of phosphates. If the bladder is examined in this stage, it will be found to be thickened, and may be felt above the pubes. Fistulæ may form in the abdominal wall above the pubes, or the urethra may be attacked. The urethral symptoms begin with localized pain and the formation of a lump, which develops an abscess, and later urinary fistulæ.

The patient now becomes weak and anæmic, and begins to suffer from pyonephrosis. The enlarged kidneys, and at times even the ureters, may be felt through the abdominal wall. In course of time septicæmia sets in, and the patient dies. On the other hand, cases which have left the endemic area may slowly recover, the ova ceasing to be passed.

Complications.—Retention of urine from blocking of the urethral opening by papillomata or a stone may occur. Stone in the bladder, as has already been mentioned, is an important factor in increasing the sufferings of the patient, but its symptoms may be masked by those of the disease. Urinary fistulæ has already been referred to, and cancer may also occur as a complication of the disease, but is said to be rare. Agchylostomiasis and pellagra and other diseases may also complicate a case.

Diagnosis.—The only certain diagnosis is by the discovery of the ova, but hæmaturia in the endemic area must always be regarded with suspicion. Centrifugalization is necessary when the ova are in small numbers.

Prognosis.—The prognosis depends largely upon the possibilities of infection, and is therefore better if removal from the infected area is possible; for, according to Sandwith, most cases cease to pass eggs within three years of leaving that area.

Treatment.—No known medicine will kill the parent worms, though various treatments, such as injections of sulphuretted hydrogen and carbon dioxide gases into the bladder, have been suggested. The drug most strongly recommended is the liquid extract of male fern, in 5-minim doses, three times a day, continued for a long time. It is said to reduce the hæmaturia and lessen the discharge of eggs. Madden recommends the washing out of the bladder with injections of silver nitrate, beginning with 1 in 10,000, and increasing the strength gradually; or quinine in a 4 per cent. solution; or adrenalin in normal saline solution.

In addition, boracic acid, in 5-grain doses, three times a day, or helmithol, in 15-grain doses, three times a day, urotropine, salol, benzoic acid may be given, or the ordinary buchu and hyoscyamus mixture may be administered. Large quantities of water or Vichy water should be drunk to wash out the urinary passages.

If a calculus is present, it must be removed by lithotripsy or by perineal, not suprapubic, cystotomy. Cock's operation of cystotomy and drainage of the bladder gives relief in the later stages, but Madden says that this only lasts for a few days, and then usually diarrhœa and septic infection set in, and the patient dies in about two weeks.

With regard to fistulæ, they ought to be thoroughly dissected out, and this may mean a very prolonged operation if it is to do any good.

Salvarsan has been used by several observers, some of whom claim good results.

Prophylaxis.—As the method of infection is unknown, it can only be suggested that bathing in polluted or possibly polluted water is dangerous, and drinking-water must be carefully boiled and filtered. The urine of persons suffering from the disease should be mixed with some disinfectant before being disposed of.

REFERENCES.

- ANDERSON (1905). Wellcome Research Laboratories' Reports.
 BANDI (1913). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
 BAUDI (1913). Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene.
 CASTELLANI (1903). Annali Med. Navale.
 ELGOOD (1908). British Medical Journal.
 FLU (1912). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie.
 LOOSS (1905). Mense's Tropenkrankheiten, i. ; (1911) Journal of Tropical Medicine.
 MADDEN (1907). Bilharziosis. London.
 MILTON (1902). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
 RUFFER (1909). British Medical Journal.
 SANDWITH (1905). Medical Diseases of Egypt, p. 214.
 SANDWITH (1904). Practitioner, October.
 SONSINO (1893). Davidson's Hygiene and Diseases of Warm Climates, p. 905.
 STOCK (1906). Lancet, ii. 857.
 WILLIAMSON (1907). Journal of Tropical Medicine, p. 333.

CHAPTER LVIII

DISEASES OF THE GENERATIVE ORGANS

General remarks—Endemic funiculitis—Sutika—References.

GENERAL REMARKS.

MOST of the diseases of the male and female generative organs are cosmopolitan, and exhibit but little difference in the temperate and tropical regions. *Syphilis* is very common, and some authors assert that it was originally a disease of the East. A few remarks on it will be found in the chapter on Cosmopolitan Skin Diseases. *Gonorrhœa* is very common among all classes of the population and all races. The clinical features are the same as observed in temperate zones, but complications are much more frequent, owing to the native patients consulting a doctor only when the disease is of long standing. We have seen several cases of gonococcus septicæmia with endocarditis ending fatally, and also several cases of so-called 'gonococcus rheumatism.' It may be noted that among certain natives there is a general belief that the disease is not of sexual origin. African porters firmly believe that it is due to prolonged marching. There are also various curious superstitions in connection with it. In Abyssinia, according to Annaratone, natives believe it is contracted by passing water on the ground illuminated by moonshine, or by passing water where dogs have previously urinated. Occasionally true cases of non-gonorrhœic urethritis are met with; in a few of these cases chlamydozoa-like bodies can be seen. Rare cases of urethritis, with black discharge due to the presence of *Aspergillus fumigatus*, and cases of balanopostitis due to monilias, are observed. *Neglected strictures* are by no means uncommon, and, as we have already stated, one of these apparently caused intestinal obstruction and death. Extravasation of urine is not rare—at all events, in Africa—as the result of neglected stricture. *Elephantiasis of the generative organs* is common in Africa and in many parts of tropical Asia and America. *Hydroceles*, *chyloceles*, *hæmatoceles*, *orchitis*, and *epididymitis* are all common. Displacements, inflammations, and tumours of the female generative organs are quite common, especially *uterine fibromata* and *ovarian*

cysts. *Bilharziosis* is capable of attacking both male and female generative organs, as has already been noted.

Malignant disease is most commonly epithelioma of the penis and cancer of the uterus. With regard to the former, we are inclined to associate it—at all events, at times—with phimosis and the accumulation of irritating secretions, which may cause a balanitis. In these circumstances, if no treatment is carried out, epithelioma may result. Certainly epithelioma of the penis is rare in races in which circumcision is performed.



FIG. 539.—ISCHIOPAGUS TRIPUS.

The deaths of women directly associated with *child-birth* are considerably higher in the Tropics than in the Temperate Zone. Thus, those of Ceylon are three times as many as those of England, and more than half of them are entered as being due to puerperal fever. In India, Pearse has recently drawn attention to the deaths caused by a puerperal diarrhœa called 'sutika,' with reference to which more will be said later (p. 1433).

Fœtal monstrosities and *abnormalities* appear to be much commoner in the tropics than in the other parts of the world, or else we have been singularly fortunate in meeting with them. This is hardly the place to give a classification of these abnormalities, but we should advise the tropical practitioner to have some elementary ideas, at all events, on the subject. We have met with the follow-



M. José de Silva
Calainho

FIG. 540.—SYNCEPHALUS OR JANUS.
(This form of monster is fairly common in Ceylon.)

ing : *Fœtus papyraceus*, cyclops, agnathia ; several double monsters of both general types, including a specimen of symmetrical janus ; acephalic monsters ; and rachischisis, meningocele, non-development of the eye, coloboma iridis, hare-lip, cleft palate, branchial fistula, non-development of the thigh. Macroactylism has been reported from the Philippines, and *pes gigas* from China.

With regard to the breast, we have seen extraordinary *hypertrophy* of the male and of the female breast and *supernumerary mammae*. *Cancer* of the breast is relatively much rarer in the tropics than in the temperate regions, though it is fairly common. The

parasite *Gnathostoma spinigerum* Owen, mentioned in Chapter XXI., belongs to the connective tissue, though it happened to be found in the breast of a young Siamese woman.

Certain diseases, however, require special reference, and these are *endemic funiculitis* and *sutika*.



FIG. 541.—ENDEMIC FUNICULITIS, SHOWING LONGITUDINAL SECTION OF THE CORD.

The testes and epididymis are normal.



FIG. 542.—TRANSVERSE SECTIONS OF THE CORD IN ENDEMIC FUNICULITIS.

The testes and epididymis were normal, but the tunica vaginalis held a small quantity of fluid. The sections of the cord are arranged in an arch from right to left. The dilated veins, which were filled with pus, are clearly visible.

ENDEMIC FUNICULITIS.

Synonyms.—Suppurative phlebitis of the spermatic cord, Suppurative corditis, Cellulitis of the spermatic cord, Cirsoitis (Pfister).

Definition.—Endemic funiculitis is an acute specific suppurative inflammation of the spermatic cord, of which the ætiology is not firmly established.

History.—For many years medical men practising in Ceylon have noticed the occurrence of a peculiar form of acute suppurative inflammation of the spermatic cord, which occasionally takes a true epidemic character, numerous cases occurring within a short period. References to this affection may be found in almost all the medical reports for the colony during the last twenty years, the disease being variously indicated by the name of phlebitis of the cord or corditis. It was considered by some to be of traumatic origin, by others of venereal origin. Some practitioners considered it to be a malarial affection. The disease was investigated by Castellani first in 1904, and more completely in 1907. He came to the conclusion that it had nothing to do with either malaria or gonorrhœa. He thought the malady had sufficiently characteristic symptoms to be ranked as a separate disease, and suggested the name 'endemic funiculitis.' The affection is not limited to Ceylon, as cases occur in Southern India, and an identical pathological condition has been described in Egypt by Madden in 1907 under the name of cellulitis of the spermatic cord. The condition described by Wise in the West Indies is probably the same pathological entity. Of great importance are the investigations by Coutts.

Ætiology.—Among Ceylon practitioners, the disease was considered by some to be of traumatic origin; others believed it to be of venereal origin, and yet others to be a malarial affection. Castellani found in all the cases virulent diplo-streptococci, and in some cases, one in 1904 and the others in 1909, and later, a microfilaria. This microfilaria is morphologically identical with *Microfilaria bancrofti*, but in our cases, though provided with a sheath, it showed translation movements. The cocci are practically indistinguishable from the ordinary streptococci but for the fact that some decolourize by Gram in sections of the tissues and in smears from the pus, while they are Gram-positive in cultures. According to Coutts these micrococci are often found in the urethra of natives. He regards the suppurative condition of the cord as due to the extension of an infection from the urethra by way of the vas deferens. Wise has found in his cases *F. bancrofti* and numerous streptococci. Pfister believes the disease to be connected with bilharziosis. We are inclined to consider the malady to be a filarial condition with a superadded streptococcus infection. The filaria probably plays the more important or only rôle in the subacute or chronic cases, while the streptococcus is probably the causative agent of the acute symptoms and the suppuration and of the symptoms of septicæmia.

Predisposing Causes.—A certain importance must be given to a sudden chill or to some form of traumatism. In nearly all the Ceylon cases the disease begins abruptly after taking a cold bath when feeling tired. In some cases the patient gives a history of having made an effort, such as in lifting a weight, etc.

Pathology.—The whole of the spermatic cord is highly inflamed and infiltrated. The circumference of the cord may be as much as 3 to 3½ inches. The tunica vaginalis is hyperæmic, but in most

cases there is no collection of fluid. On making a transverse section of the cord, yellow creamy pus will exude from the opened veins of the pampiniform plexus, as well as from the vas deferens. The inflammation is not localized to the cord only; it ordinarily extends to the epididymis. In two very recent cases of ours, however, the epididymis was normal. The testicle proper remains generally unaffected; there is occasionally some effusion of clear fluid into the tunica vaginalis. The histological lesions are, briefly, the following: The veins of the pampiniform plexus are much dilated, and present a cellular infiltration of all the coats, the lumen of some veins being occupied by pus cells or thrombi. The vas deferens also presents a well-marked cellular infiltration of its mucous membrane and various muscular coats. The type of cellular infiltration as noted by Coutts and Castellani is mostly mononuclear.

Morbid Anatomy.—At the post-mortem examination of the cases in which an operation has not been performed in time, the lesions found are those of a septicæmic process. The skin is jaundiced, and may present petechiæ; the lungs often show hypostatic congestion; the heart is flabby, and subpericardial hæmorrhages are often seen. The spleen is enlarged and soft. The liver is generally enlarged, and may show fatty degeneration or cloudy swelling. The kidneys are often congested.

Symptomatology.—The disease begins suddenly, generally after a hard day's work or severe exercise. In Ceylon the usual history is as follows: The patient, after an extra hard day's work, comes home in the evening very tired, but not feeling unwell, and takes a cold bath as usual. After the bath he is suddenly seized with a shivering fit, the temperature rising very high. He feels very sick, and there is often actual vomiting. At the same time he complains of pain along the cord and the epididymis. The condition becomes rapidly worse, and the patient is generally taken to hospital on the second or third day of the illness. On admission, it is usually found that the general condition is grave. There may be continuous vomiting, and occasionally hiccough; the temperature is generally above 102° F., and the pulse small and frequent. At the physical examination it will be seen that the inguinal region is occupied by a large cylindrical swelling in the direction of the cord. The swelling is very tender on pressure, and hard; the skin is not affected. Generally the epididymis is somewhat enlarged and tender, though in some very recent cases it may not appear to be affected. In all cases the testicle proper appears to be normal; there is, as a rule, no effusion in the tunica vaginalis. The affection is generally localized to one side only, but occasionally attacks both sides. On examination of the penis and scrotum no ulcers will be

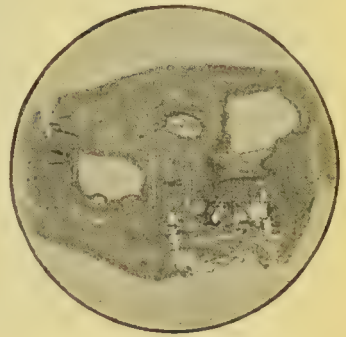


FIG. 543. — TRANSVERSE SECTION INFLAMED CORD. (ACTUAL SIZE.)

found, no signs of gonorrhœa, and no signs of any traumatic lesions, though in several cases the patient gives a history of having made an effort of some sort. As a rule, the disease has no tendency to spontaneous recovery. If an operation is not performed in time,

signs of general septicæmia usually set in. In such cases the skin of the patient often becomes jaundiced, cutaneous hæmorrhages may appear, the fever is of an intermittent or remittent type, the pulse becomes extremely small, there is often hiccough, and the patient dies in a few days.

Varieties.—A mild form, with thrombosis of the veins, but without suppuration, is at times met with. According to Coutts, a chronic form, also without suppuration, may occur.

Prognosis.—This is serious in the ordinary acute form. If an operation is not performed in time, symptoms of general septicæmia set in, and the case, as a rule, ends fatally.

Diagnosis.—The disease is

apt to be confused with strangulated hernia and an acute elephantoid condition of the testicle and cord. From the former endemic funiculitis may be differentiated by the history, the high fever, and the course, which is somewhat less acute. In some cases, especially in the fulminating forms, operative treatment alone will clear the diagnosis.

From an acute elephantoid condition it may be differentiated by the absence of the erysipelatous-like redness of the skin.

Treatment.—Except the rare mild forms, when lead lotion and ichthyol ointment, with or without ice application, may be sufficient, the only effective treatment is surgical, and orchiotomy, with section of the inflamed cord as high up as possible, is imperative. Coutts recommends exposure of the inflamed cord by a free incision through the skin and external oblique, to be followed by numerous incisions into the tumour. The wound is left open, and fomentations applied till the surface is clean. The wound is then left to heal by granulation. Coutts considers that in this way, though the testis loses its generative function owing to the obliteration of the spermatic duct caused by the inflammation, its internal secretion is unimpaired.



FIG. 544.—ENDEMIC FUNICULITIS IN A SINHALESE MAN.

When the disease has extended beyond the internal abdominal ring, orchiotomy must be performed and the veins left unligatured while fomentations are applied.

SUTIKA.

Synonym.—The puerperal diarrhœa of Bengal.

Under the above term Dr. Pearse, the Medical Officer of Calcutta, gives an account of a chronic diarrhœa associated with fever which causes a death-rate of 1·3 per cent. on the total number of registered births in Hindu and Mohammedan puerperal women of all ages in that city.

The disease begins with diarrhœa some two or three weeks after delivery, there being five to fifteen watery, frothy, fermenting motions per diem without blood or mucus. Along with the diarrhœa there may be loss of appetite and dyspeptic symptoms, rarely vomiting, but no griping pains or abdominal tenderness. The temperature is raised, and an irregular fever lasts throughout the illness. There is no vaginal discharge; œdema of the feet is noted as a late symptom. The course of the disease varies. Sometimes it is rapid, and kills the patient in a few months; more usually it lasts five to eight months, and less usually it continues for more than twelve months. Towards the end the patient becomes weak and emaciated, and dies of exhaustion. The case-mortality is not known.

The nature of this disease is obviously obscure, and requires investigation.

REFERENCES.

Endemic Funiculitis.

- CASTELLANI (1904-12). Ceylon Medical Reports.
 CASTELLANI (1908). *Lancet*. July.
 CASTELLANI (1909). *British Medical Journal*.
 COUTTS (1909). *Lancet*.
 GOEBEL (1911). *Chirurgie der Heissen Länder*.
 JONES (1909). *Lancet*.
 MADDEN (1907). *Lancet*.
 PFISTER (1909). *Folia Urologica*.
 WISE (1910). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*.

Sutika.

- PEARSE (1908). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*. November.

CHAPTER LIX

DISEASES OF THE LYMPHATIC SYSTEM AND SEROUS MEMBRANES

General remarks—Climatic bubo—Volvulosis—References.

GENERAL REMARKS.

THE lymphatic system is affected in many general diseases—as, for example, in plague and trypanosomiasis—and in cosmopolitan affections like septic disease, syphilis, tuberculosis, etc. In addition, there is the enlargement of the glands in the inguinal region called ‘climatic bubo,’ and the various pathological phenomena caused by *Filaria bancrofti*. These morbid changes are varices of lymph-channels, inflammations, and elephantiasis, and have already been discussed in the chapter on Filariasis. The pathological changes caused by *Onchocerca volvulus* must be mentioned here.

With regard to the serous membranes, pleurisy and empyema are common, while peritonitis from the perforation of a typhoid ulcer, or the perforation of the bowel by an *Ascaris*, as has been recorded by Ziemann in the Cameroons, or from the extension of some septic area—*e.g.*, a gonorrheal salpingitis—are all met with. Chylous ascites is rare.

CLIMATIC BUBO.

Synonym.—Glandula idiopathica (Brooke).

Definition.—Climatic bubo is the enlargement of the inguinal glands associated with pain and fever, the cause of which is unknown.

History.—The history of this disease only dates back to 1896, when Ruge reported several cases suffering from inguinal buboes, in which the usual causes of such an adenitis were all absent, and he was therefore inclined to consider the disease a separate entity dependent probably on climatic influences. About the same time Goding, independently of Ruge, published a series of observations apparently of the same nature, while more recently cases have been reported by many observers.

The disease has been recently investigated by many observers—*e.g.*, Rüffer, Luzzati, Vanzetti, Rost, Nattan-Larrier, Letulle, Ley, and others.

Climatology.—The chief geographical distribution of climatic bubo is the East Coast of Africa, the West Indies, the Straits Settlements, and China, but it may be met with in any tropical and subtropical region. Le Dantec quotes cases occurring in Mauritius, Tonkin, and Madagascar. Low and Castellani have described a case in Uganda, while Luzzatti has met with several cases in Chili. We have observed cases in Ceylon, and Skinner has described numerous cases in Bengal. Climatic bubo may also occur in the Temperate Zone, for Scheube has come across several cases in Japan, Gabbi in Sicily, and Rost in other Mediterranean districts.

Ætiology.—Though various micro-organisms have been described, the ætiology of the disease is still obscure.

Ferraro, from one of his cases, isolated an organism practically identical with *Bacillus pestis*. Hewlett isolated from the affected gland a bacillus not decolourized by Gram, the characters of which were somewhat similar to those given by Kitasato in his first description of *B. pestis*; for Kitasato stated at first that the *B. pestis* was not decolourized by Gram. Low and Castellani were not able to grow any organism from their case. Some authors have isolated the ordinary pyogenic cocci.

Martin, Suger, Le Sueur, and Fleurant consider climatic bubo to be a manifestation of malaria. Schimm believes the bubo to be secondary to some intestinal infection. G. Rost believes the affection to be of sexual origin, and due to a micro-organism living in the vaginal mucosa of native women.

According to Cantlie, climatic bubo is a form of attenuated plague—*Pestis minor*—basing this opinion on the fact that in Hong Kong he observed several cases of so-called climatic bubo to precede the outbreak of an epidemic of true plague. He has been confirmed in his opinion by Hewlett's discovery mentioned above. Cantlie's theory is supported by Luzzatti, who considers the climatic bubo to be a form of *Parapestis*. Ernest Black suggests that the disease may be due to an insect bite.

Letulle and Nattan-Larrier have seen in the cells of the capillaries minute bodies which they believe to be parasitic.

In our opinion, climatic bubo is a disease *per se*, and is not related to plague.

Predisposing Causes.—The condition is apparently most commonly met with in sailors and stokers. It occurs chiefly in young adults, and is said never to be found in children.

Pathology.—The results of our histological researches agree better with those obtained by Vanzetti in Italy on the material collected in South America by Luzzatti than with those of other authors.

The capsule of the affected gland is much thickened, and the interstitial tissue is very abundant. There is great proliferation of lymphocytes, and hæmorrhagic foci are noticeable here and there. Very characteristic is the presence of numerous typical plasma cells, while the so-called retractile Recklinghausen cells found in plague are absent. The histological structure of climatic bubo is, therefore, totally different from that of the plague bubo, in which, as was shown by the classical histological investigation of Duerck, plasma cells are absent or extremely rare, while the so-called retractile Recklinghausen cells are numerous.

Symptomatology.—The length of the incubation is not known, but according to some observers it may be prolonged. Ley and Rost believe that it can extend to many weeks. The onset is generally gradual; after perhaps two or three days of vague malaise and slight fever, the patient complains of pain in one or both of the inguinal regions, which increases on walking. On examining the parts, one or more inguinal glands, or occasionally the crural glands on both sides, or more frequently one side only, will be found to be enlarged, very painful on pressure, and hard. The swelling may be as large as a goose's egg. There will be no signs of lymphangitis present. The glands may become greatly enlarged, reaching the size of a hen's egg or larger, but in most cases do not suppurate. Aspiration by means of a syringe will draw only a little gland-juice, occasionally blood-stained, but no pus. The liquid will be found to be sterile.

Fever is often present of an irregularly remittent or intermittent type. It rarely exceeds 102° F.; and is higher at night than in the morning. The duration of the disease is variable, from a few days to several weeks, and rarely months. In time the pain in the affected region gradually disappears, the size of the enlarged glands decreasing. As a rule, the affected glands remain larger than normal, but not painful, long after the illness is over. Occasionally a relapse occurs. The general health is not much affected, though the patient may be very weak and unfit for work. The spleen is not enlarged. The examination of the blood may reveal a slight leucocytosis; Wassermann's reaction is negative; the urine is normal. Occasionally a trace of albumin may be present. Intestinal symptoms are generally absent.

Clinical Varieties.—In our experience an acute, a subacute, and a chronic type of climatic bubo may be distinguished. *The acute type* is always accompanied by fever and severe pains in the affected glands. All the symptoms disappear within five to ten days. In *the subacute and chronic type* lasting from a few weeks to several months the onset may be insidious, without any local pain at first, and fever may be absent altogether. Moreover, in some cases the periglandular tissues become inflamed, suppuration may take place, and fistulous tracks may develop.

Diagnosis.—The absence of soft chancre on the genital organs will exclude *venereal bubo*; the absence of lymphangitis, infected wounds, insect-bites on the legs and feet will exclude the ordinary symptomatic bubo. In contrast to *plague*, the patient does not look very ill, but the only satisfactory way to differentiate acute climatic bubo from a mild case of plague is the puncture of the affected glands and the bacteriological examination of the gland-juice. To do this the skin of the inguinal regions is thoroughly cleansed with spirit and ether, then disinfected with a perchloride (1 in 1,000) or carbolic lotion (5 per cent.), then washed again with ether or spirit, or more simply the skin may be painted with tincture of iodine. One of the enlarged glands is then aspirated with a sterilized syringe. The

gland-juice which is drawn off is then examined microscopically and by culture method in the ordinary way for the presence of the plague bacillus.

Climatic bubo is generally easily distinguishable from attacks of *filarial lymphadenitis*, which is generally accompanied by very high fever and severe lymphangitis, and an erysipelatous-like condition of the leg. During and after various *intestinal infections*—as, for instance, typhoid and paratyphoid—occasionally a suppurative inflammation of some lymphatic glands—sometimes the inguinal glands—occurs. In such cases the history of the case—the fact that the bubo comes, as a rule, to suppuration—and the bacteriological examination of the gland-juice, which in true climatic bubo is sterile, will clear the diagnosis.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is favourable, though in some cases the affection may last for several months. A relapse may occasionally occur shortly after the first attack is over, sometimes on the side previously affected, sometimes on the other side.

Treatment.—The treatment is merely symptomatic, consisting of complete rest, application of lead lotion on the affected region, or an ichthyol and belladonna ointment, together with the administration of a mild aperient, and, if there is much pain, a hot fomentation locally, together with small doses of opium by the mouth. In the rare cases, where signs of suppuration are noticeable, incision of the glands is necessary, using the ordinary aseptic precautions. In protracted cases complete surgical removal is the best treatment. When the glands remain enlarged after the acute stage has passed off, local applications of tincture of iodine, iodine valsol, or an ointment composed of 30 grains each of lead iodide and potassium iodide to 1 ounce of vaseline, may be of benefit. X-ray treatment has been recommended by G. Rost.

VOLVULOSIS.

Definition.—Volvulosis is a disease caused by *Onchocerca volvulus* Leuckart 1893, and characterized by the formation of fibrous, cutaneous, or subcutaneous tumours.

History.—As already mentioned on p. 540, these tumours were discovered by a German medical missionary to contain worms, which were described by Leuckart in 1893, and subsequently the disease and its causative worm were studied by Labadie-Lagrave and Deguy in 1899, Prout in 1901, Brumpt in 1904, Ziemann and Védy in 1907, and Fülleborn in 1908, the last paper being a most valuable contribution to our knowledge of the subject.

Climatology.—The disease is found in Africa, at Sierra Leone, on the Gold Coast, and in Dahomey, Cameroons, and the north-east of the Congo, where it is variously stated to affect from 1 per cent. to 10 per cent. of the population, being distributed along the banks of rivers.

Ætiology.—The disease is caused by *Onchocerca volvulus* Leuckart 1893, but the method by which this worm is introduced into the human body is quite unknown, as is also its life-cycle outside human beings. Brumpt has, however, suggested that it will probably be found in a tsetse-fly.

Pathology.—The adult worms lie in lymphatics, the anterior end of the female being in close approximation to the posterior end of the male, because the apertures of the genital apparatus lie in these positions. By some means—possibly by the presence of the *Microfilaria*, or possibly by toxic waste-products—these worms irritate the lymphatics, causing lymphangitis and perilymphangitis. These inflammatory processes eventually lead to the formation of a

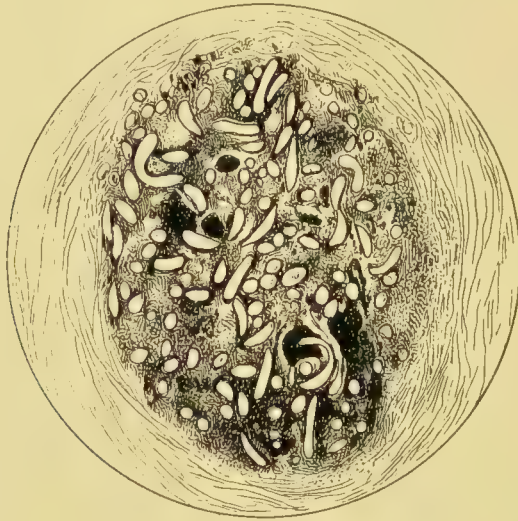


FIG. 545.—TUMOUR CONTAINING *ONCHOCERCA VOLVULUS* LEUCKART.
(After Fülleborn.)

fibrous capsule around the worms, which then lie in a portion of a vessel cut off (?) from the rest of the lymphatic system, and which forms a fibrous subcutaneous nodule containing male and female worms and *Microfilaria*.

On opening one of these tumours, it is seen to consist of a capsule of fibrous connective tissue, beneath which is some soft caseous material composed of endothelial cells, granular debris, and *Microfilaria*, and encloses a central space containing a greenish, semi-purulent fluid. The worms, which are usually cut across in several places when opening the tumour, lie partly in this central cavity and partly in narrow twisted tunnels, which ramify through the walls of the fibrous capsule, giving it a network-like appearance. Sometimes the central cavity is not obvious, and only the network of tunnels is seen ramifying through the connective tissue.

Symptomatology.—The disease, as a rule, begins insidiously with malaise, weakness, vague pains in various regions of the body, and

irregular fever, but it is said that at times attacks of lymphangitis may be noticed. In due course a tumour is discovered in the suboccipital region, the elbow, axilla, side of the chest, iliac region, gluteal region, or popliteal space. These tumours vary in size from a pea to that of an egg, and lie in the skin or subcutaneous tissue, in which they are freely movable. They may be elastic if they contain fluid, or firm if composed mainly of fibrous tissue. They usually remain quiescent for years, and but seldom ulcerate.

Bernard and Ouzilleau believe that *Onchocerca volvulus* may also give rise to true elephantiasis in certain parts of Africa.

Diagnosis.—The presence of an elastic tumour somewhat resembling a lipoma, or of a firm fibrous tumour in any part of the body of a person who has resided in the endemic region, should arouse suspicions as to the presence of *Onchocerca volvulus*.

When the nodules are in proximity of articulations the condition may closely resemble the 'juxta-articular nodules' which are caused by a fungus (*Nocardia carougeani* Brumpt 1910). The microscopical examination of the contents of the nodules obtained by tapping with a syringe or by excision will clear the diagnosis.

Prognosis.—These little tumours are not in any way dangerous to the life or health of the patient.

Treatment.—Removal by incision and enucleation is quite easy, and devoid of danger.

Prophylaxis.—As the life-cycle of the parasite is unknown, nothing can be said as to prophylaxis.

REFERENCES.

Climatic Bubo.

- CANTLIE, JAMES (1897). *Lancet*, January 2.
 CASTELLANI AND LOW (1903). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*, December 15.
 DUERCK (1903). Anatomischen Veränderung in der *Bubonic Pestin*. Wien.
 FERRARO (1903). *Ann. Med. Naval*.
 FLEISCHNER (1909). *Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene*.
 GABBI (1909). *Transactions of the International Medical Congress*, Budapest.
 GODING (1896-97). *British Medical Journal*, September 26, 1896; and June 12, 1897.
 LUZZATTI, A. (1906). *Ann. Med. Naval*, p. 585.
 MANSON (1907). *Tropical Diseases*. London.
 ROST, G. (1912). *Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene*.
 RUGE, R. (1896). *Archiv für Dermatol. u. Syph.*, No. 3.
 SKINNER (1897). *British Medical Journal*, January 9, p. 78.
 ZÜR, WERTH (1903). *Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene*, No. 1.

Volvulosis.

- BRUMPT (1904). *Revue de Médecine et Hygiène Trop.*
 FÜLLEBORN (1908). Beiheft 7, *Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene*, vol. xii.
 LABADIE-LAGRAVE ET DEGUY (1899). *Archiv. de Parasitologie*, p. 451.
 MANSON (1893). *Davidson's Hygiene and Diseases of Warm Climates*, p. 963.
 PROUT (1901). *British Medical Journal*, i. 209.
 VÉDY (1907). *Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene*, p. 565.

CHAPTER LX

DISEASES OF THE CONNECTIVE TISSUES, MUSCLES, BONES, AND JOINTS

General remarks — Somatic tæniasis — Dracontiasis — Loasis — Calabar swellings — Myositis purulenta tropica — Goundou — Endemic hypertrophy of the os calcis — Boomerang leg — References.

GENERAL REMARKS.

THE diseases of the connective tissues which concern us are mostly parasitic, being caused by the cysticerci of tapeworms, but round worms are also commonly met with, especially the Guinea-worm.

With regard to muscles, a disease which need be mentioned is trichiniasis, which is said to be far from rare in Northern India. Necrosis, caries, and tumours of bone are not uncommon, but rheumatoid arthritis is rare, and tubercular disease, at present, is very rare. Gonorrhœa and post-dysenteric arthritis are met with, and filarial synovitis of the knee-joint has been described by Maitland. Gout is rare, but we have seen a typical case in a native who had never left Ceylon.

SOMATIC TÆNIASIS.

By somatic tæniasis is meant the invasion of the body by the cysticercus of cestode worms. The subject is, therefore, divisible into—(a) cysticercosis, or infection with the larvæ of *Tænia solium*, which occurs now and again in the connective tissue of muscles, fasciæ, and in the brain; (b) echinococcosis, which is the infection of the body with the hydatids of *Echinococcus granulosus*, and of which we have only met with one example in the tropics, and even then it was imported; but, judging by Begbie's observations, it would appear as though the disease was endemic in Ceylon; (c) sparganosis, which is the invasion of the body by *Sparganum mansonii*, *S. baxteri*, or *S. prolifer*, all of which have been sufficiently described in Chapter XX.

DRACONTIASIS.

Synonym.—Dracunculosis.

Definition.—Dracontiasis is the infection of man with *Dracunculus medinensis* Linnæus 1758, the Guinea-worm.

History.—The history of the infection, together with the description of the worm and its life-history, have already been given in Chapter XXI. (p. 542), to which reference should be made. Scheube states that Cholokowski has described an unclassified *Filaria*, several inches in length, which causes ulceration of the fingers, and even gangrene, in Tiver, in Russia, which may or may not be the same worm. Recently the whole subject of dracontiasis has been studied by Turkhud.

Climatology.—Dracontiasis is a disease of the tropics, especially of tropical Africa, and particularly of the West Coast. It is also known in Asia Minor, Persia, and India. Although coolies infected with the worm frequently pass from India to Ceylon, we have no evidence that the latter island has so far become infected. It is also known in the Fiji Islands. It was introduced into America by the negro slaves, and has become endemic in British Guiana and Brazil.

Ætiology.—The causation of the disease is *Dracunculus medinensis* Linnæus 1758, taken into the body by drinking water containing infected *Cyclops*, which are most abundant during the dry season, and which mostly live near the bottom of wells and collections of water.

Pathology.—On entering the stomach the *Cyclops* is killed by the action of the acid of the gastric juice, but the *Dracunculus* is stimulated, and dashing about energetically, effects its escape from the *Cyclops*, and, piercing the walls of the stomach, enters the connective tissue of the mesentery and becomes an adult.

After a time the fully-developed female begins to travel in search of a means of depositing the larvæ in water, and therefore usually wanders into the leg, and forming first a vesicle and then an ulcer in the skin, discharges the larvæ.

Symptomatology.—The worm as a rule produces no symptoms until a little vesicle appears on the skin, or the outline of the worm is noticed under the skin, but urticarial eruptions have been observed by several authors and ourselves. The little vesicle bursts, leaving a round hollow, out of which exudes a clear fluid full of larvæ, and at the bottom of which lies the vaginal orifice of the worm. After discharging a certain amount of fluid, the anterior end of the worm extrudes through the skin opening, and is either twisted on a stick or fixed in position by a piece of string by the native patient. It is not advisable to pull vigorously on the protruded piece of worm, as it is liable to break, and if this happens a serious inflammation of the affected area may result. The wound usually quickly heals after the worm has finally been extracted.

The usual site for it to appear is about the feet or legs, more rarely the hands or arms, and still more rarely the head or trunk.

But all cases are not so simple, and aching or dragging sensations, sometimes accompanied by rigors and fever, may occur. Rarely it enters a knee-joint and causes synovitis or arthritis. Usually there is only one worm, but there may be more.

Blood.—Dudgeon and Child have investigated the blood in this disease, and find a marked eosinophilia. The average differential count was as follows: Polymorphonuclears, 63·6 per cent.; lymphocytes, 18·4 per cent.; large lymphocytes, 2·8 per cent.; mononuclears, 1·6 per cent.; eosinophiles, 13 per cent.

Diagnosis and Prognosis.—There is no difficulty in the diagnosis, and the prognosis is good.

Treatment.—It is a good plan to massage the area above the vesicle, and try with a little patience to get the worm out whole, or, if it is visible under the skin, to make an incision and remove it. Natives extract the worm by twisting the protruding portion on a stick, every day giving a turn or two. A better plan is to douche frequently with water the part occupied by the worm until she gets emptied of all the embryos, which generally takes place in from two to three weeks. When all the embryos have been exuded, the worm is either absorbed or tends to emerge, and no longer resisting extraction, can be easily removed. It has been advised (Emily) to inject a 1 per 1,000 solution of perchloride of mercury into the swelling caused by the worm. But this is very painful, and does not appear to be very successful. Some authors have advised the injection of 10 to 15 minims of a 2 per cent. solution of cocaine into the protruding portion of the worm.

Prophylaxis.—The prophylaxis is very simple—viz., the drinking of only boiled and filtered water. Another simple method suggested by Leiper is to pass steam into the wells, as described on p. 623.

LOASIS.

Loa loa, which is carried by a species of Chrysops, as discovered by Leiper, has frequently been noticed in the ocular and palpebral conjunctivæ, crossing the bridge of the nose, in the skin over the sterno-mastoid muscle, or that of the scalp, the fingers, the penis, etc., and much more rarely in the anterior chamber of the eye, though accounts of its presence in the vitreous humour require confirmation. The geographical distribution of the worm has already been given (p. 536). In our experience it usually causes but little disturbance, but at times, when in the conjunctiva, it is associated with piercing and lancinating pains, uncertain vision, and swelling of the eyelids. It is probably the cause of the Calabar swellings mentioned below. It can be removed by an incision and careful traction.

CALABAR SWELLINGS.

Synonyms.—Kamerungeschwülste, Tropical swellings.

Definition.—Calabar swellings are smooth, temporary, slightly raised tumours on the head, arms, hands, ankles, and feet, probably caused by the presence of *Loa loa* Cobbold 1864, and possibly other species of *Filaria* or allied genera in the subcutaneous tissue.

History.—For many years it has been known that peculiar swelling occurred in the people living in Old Calabar, and in due course accounts appeared in works of travels in West Africa, but it was not till 1895 that Argyll Robertson described them as a distinct disease, using their popular nomenclature. In subsequent years he published several accounts of his cases. In 1898 Plehn drew attention to the complaint, and in 1899 Thompstone published an account of a case, while Habershon and Kerr in 1904, Wurtz and Clerc and Stephens in 1905, and Ward in 1906, have all added to the literature of the subject.

The paper by Ward is, however, of especial interest, as it deals fully with the history of the disease.

Climatology.—The disease is only known on the West Coast of Africa, particularly in the regions of Southern Nigeria and the Cameroons. We have seen, though rarely, a similar condition in Ceylon, where the existence of *Loa loa* has not been reported.

Ætiology and Pathology.—There is a consensus of opinion that in some way these swellings are caused by *Loa loa* Cobbold 1864, but this has never been definitely proved.

The way in which the worm induces these peculiar lumps is a matter of conjecture, Argyll Robertson assigning them merely to the movements of the parasite. But this cannot be so, otherwise the swellings would occur as they cross the bridge of the nose, which they can do without any such disturbance.

The next theory is that the parasite irritates the skin, causing the patient to rub the affected area, which in this way becomes mechanically inflamed. This theory was originally propounded by Manson, who has relinquished it in favour of another and better explanation.

Two other theories suggest that the parasite, by irritating the nerve endings, either directly or by reflex action, causes the swelling; but this does not appear likely, as they ought to occur wherever the worm travels. Manson in 1903 suggested that they might be brought about by the expulsion of the *Microfilarie* from the uterus of the parent worm, and this appears not unlikely, and would explain their evanescent character.

Ward is not satisfied with Manson's theory, and suggests that they may be due to the expulsion of waste products from the worm.

Age, sex, and employment have no influence in the causation of the complaint.

Symptomatology.—Sometimes without prodromal symptoms, or at times after some nausea and headache, swellings appear on the

head, face, arms, wrists, hands, fingers, ankles, or toes, less commonly on other parts of the body. The reason of this distribution, according to some authors, is believed to be the small amount of connective tissue in those regions. The swellings are smooth, firm, slightly elevated areas, generally about the size of half a goose's egg (5 to 8 centimetres), often painless, though this is not invariable. There is either absence of or only very slight pruritus. They are hot, and do not pit much on pressure. They appear quickly, last for two or three days, and disappear gradually or rapidly, and are always associated with an intense eosinophilia. In many cases only one swelling appears at a time.

Stephens gives the differential count of his case as—Polymorphonuclears, 26 per cent. ; lymphocytes, 23 per cent. ; mononuclears, 1 per cent. ; eosinophiles, 50 per cent.

Diagnosis.—There is no difficulty in recognizing these fugitive swellings in persons who have resided in the endemic region. The presence of extremely well-marked eosinophilia may help in the diagnosis.

Prognosis.—They have never been known to cause serious symptoms, but may recur for many years after the patient has left the tropics.

Treatment.—This is unsatisfactory, but cool applications such as diluted liquor plumbi (5 per cent.) may be made to the swellings, and an ichthyol ointment or lotion applied.

Prophylaxis.—As the life-cycle of *Loa loa* is unknown, it is not possible to lay down rules for the prophylaxis.

MYOSITIS PURULENTA TROPICA.

Synonym.—Muma fever (Samoa).

History.—This condition has been observed in various parts of the tropics by several observers, among whom Van Polak, Ziemann, Külz, may be mentioned. The last-named author has given a good general account of the malady.

Climatology.—The disease is found in tropical Africa and Samoa.

Ætiology.—Some authorities suggest that it is due to a *Filaria*.

Symptomatology.—The patient complains of rheumatoid pains in the limbs associated with fever of a remittent or intermittent type. Abscesses form in the muscles in various parts of the body.

Treatment.—This is surgical, the abscesses being evacuated.

GOUNDOU.

Synonyms.—Anákhre = big-nose ; Henpuye = dog-nose.

Definition.—Goundou is a disease of unknown causation, characterized by a bony swelling, usually bilaterally symmetrical, situated on either side of the nose.

History.—The disease was first described by Macalister in 1882, under the term of 'the horned men of Africa.' Lamprey in 1887

also referred to the disease under a similar term, and Strachan drew attention to it in a West Indian child in 1894. Macclaud in 1895 described the disease which he saw on the Niger under the terms 'goundou' or 'anákhré.' In 1900 Chalmers gave an account of the disease as seen on the Gold Coast, and Renner as seen in Sierra Leone. Later Braddon recorded a case in Malaya, and others found the disease in Sumatra and in China. Friedrichsen gave an excellent description of it as seen in East Africa, and Nell gave an account of his cases on the Gold Coast, while Cantlie records a case of unilateral goundou in a European. Lastly, Roques and Bouffard, and more recently Roubaud, Blin, Marchoux, and, Mesnil and Léger, have recorded cases in monkeys—*Papio anubis*, *Cercopithecus* sp.? and *Callitricheus*.

The first three observers found that the condition affected many bones of the skeleton, besides the nasal bones. Letulle has noticed a somewhat similar condition in the skull of an ancient Inca found in a Peru necropolis.

Climatology.—The disease is most commonly met with in West Africa, but has been reported from East Africa, Malaya, Sumatra, South China, and the West Indies. It usually affects native races, but has been reported in one European. Usually it begins in the first two decades of life.

Ætiology.—This is unknown, though the association with yaws gave rise to the suspicion that this was the ætiological factor. Cantlie's European, however, had not suffered from yaws, and monkeys do not suffer spontaneously from yaws.

Occasionally in yaws patients a bilateral or unilateral swelling of the nose is present (pseudo-goundou of Brumpt), but it quickly disappears along with the other symptoms of yaws under treatment with potassium iodide or salvarsan, which has no effect on true goundou.

Other theories have been that it was a racial trait, or that it was due to a larva of a fly, but these are certainly not correct. As far as we know, it is never congenital. Braddon thinks that it is a disease *sui generis*, and in our opinion is probably right.

Pathology.—Whatever the cause may be, there seems no reasonable doubt that the infection begins in the nose; for although we were unable to find any abnormality in the nose of the cases we have seen, still, there was always a history of some obstruction, pain in the nose, and often of a bloody discharge. Moreover, Friedrichsen describes a swollen condition of nasal mucosa with almost polypoid excrescences. Léger has noted microscopically a proliferation of



FIG. 546.—GOUNDOU IN A NATIVE OF THE GOLD COAST.

embryonal cellular elements derived from the bone marrow infiltrating the bone tissues. This is followed later by a true process of cicatrization or osteosclerosis. If this is correct, it is quite easy to understand that the vessels passing from the nose through the *sutura notha*, in the nasal process of the superior maxilla, can carry that infection to the periosteum, which, being irritated, proceeds to an excessive formation of bone in the area of that suture. This results in the formation of a bony swelling, composed on the outside of a thin shell of compact bone, underneath which is spongy, bony substance continuous with that of the bone from which it is arising. The *sutura notha* is, of course, found in all human skulls, and is not peculiar to the negro race.

The bony growths are attached to the nasal bone, the nasal process of the superior maxilla, and at times to the maxilla itself. The periosteum strips off readily, but usually shows no signs of recent inflammation.

Symptomatology.—Generally the disease begins with pain in the nose, or headache, which may be severe, and a bloody nasal discharge, which may continue for some six to eight months. When this is disappearing, it is noticed that there is a swelling, usually symmetrically placed on either side of the nose, in the region of the nasal bone and nasal process of the superior maxilla. Slowly and steadily these lumps increase in size, interfering with vision (it is said at times destroying the eyes), and giving rise to a hideous deformity rather like a *Cynocephalus* monkey, and hence called 'dog-nose.' When fairly well developed, an oval, bony swelling, with its long axis directed downwards and outwards, is seen symmetrically placed on each side of the nose; the skin over the tumour is never affected, being freely movable; and usually, when examined, the nasal mucosa is found to be normal, and the nasal ducts are patent, but there may be swelling and even polypoid-like excrescences. Occasionally a similar growth may invade the nose, partially blocking the nasal cavity. The growth, however, may stop at any stage of its development and proceed no farther. Some authors describe a curvature of the tibiae as being associated with the disease.

Varieties.—Instead of being bilaterally symmetrical, the bony lump may develop only on one side of the nose. Orpen has described, in addition to the two usual tumours, a third in the malar region.

Diagnosis.—The symmetrical bony swellings at the root of the nose are characteristic, but must be distinguished from Brumpt's pseudo-goundou of frambœsial origin by the history and by the inutility of salvarsan and potassium iodide.

Treatment.—Medical treatment is useless, and removal is not merely easy, but most effective, as the disease is known not to have returned some six or seven years after the operation.

Prophylaxis.—As the causation is doubtful nothing can be said under this heading.

ENDEMIC ENLARGEMENT OF THE OS CALCIS.

Definition.—Endemic enlargement of the os calcis is a disease of unknown causation, characterized by fever, pain, and tenderness over, and subsequently enlargement of, the os calcis.

History and Climatology.—This disease was first described by MacLean in 1904 in Fantis and Krooboy in the Gold Coast Colony, and subsequently in 1905 by Maxwell in natives of Formosa.

Ætiology.—The ætiology and pathology are obscure, but in some way it is connected with the wet season, as attacks and recurrences take place then.

Symptomatology.—The disease begins suddenly with fever, great tenderness over the os calcis, with local pain so severe as to prevent sleeping and walking. In three to seven days the outer surface of the bone begins to increase in size, and continues to do so for some two weeks, during which time the pain lessens and the temperature falls to normal.

In about a month the swelling reaches its maximum size, at which it may remain for about one to two months, during which time the pain is moderate and walking is possible. After this the bone diminishes to about half the maximum size, but sometimes considerable enlargement persists. Usually the disease is bilaterally symmetrical, but it may occur on one side only. It affects the outer surface as a rule, but may also attack the posterior third of the bone.

Rarely it attacks other tarsal bones, but has never been reported as affecting a joint. Yearly recurrences during the wet season are common.

Treatment.—Medical treatment is useless, but relief is given by cutting down on to the affected area and trephining a hole into the bone.

Prophylaxis.—Concerning this nothing is known.

BOOMERANG LEG.

This disease, described by Ernest Black, occurs among the aboriginal natives of the north of Western Australia, and exists in the northern territory of the Commonwealth and the Torres Straits Islands.

It runs its course in young natives during the period of growth, but the resulting deformity may be seen at any age. It is quite distinct from rickets and osteomalacia, and is not associated with syphilis or tuberculosis. The cause is unknown. The first symptom is tenderness and pain in the tibia and fibula, which become soft, and bend gradually till they assume the 'boomerang' curve, with the convexity outwards. The subcutaneous tissues become inflamed and tender, and there is some febrile disturbance.

The progress is slow, but the symptoms disappear gradually; the bones resume their former hardness, but retain the 'boomerang' curve.

REFERENCES.

Somatic Tæniasis.

- CHALMERS (1904). *Spolia Zeylanica*.
 STILES (1906). Bull. No. 25, Hyg. Lab. U.S. Pub. Health and Mar.
 Hosp. Service, Washington, 1906.

Dracontiasis.

- DUDGEON AND CHILD (1903). Journal of Tropical Medicine, 1903.
 MACKENZIE (1898). Journal of Tropical Medicine, i. 113.
 REMLINGER (1904). Comptes Rendus de Soc. de Biolog lvii. 76. Paris.

Calabar Swellings.

- HABERSHON (1904). Journal of Tropical Medicine, vii. 3.
 KERR (1904). Journal of Tropical Medicine, vii. 195.
 STEPHENS (1905). Journal of Tropical Medicine, p. 107.
 ROBERTSON (1895). Ophthalmic Review, xiv. 93; 1897, Lancet, i. 1744.
 THOMPSTONE (1899). Journal of Tropical Medicine, p. 89.
 WARD (1906). Journal of Infectious Diseases, p. 37.
 WURTZ ET CLERC (1905). Comptes Rendus de la Soc. de Biolog., lv., 1704.
 Paris. Archiv. Med. Exper., xvii. 260.

Goundou.

- BOUFFARD (1909). Bulletin Société de Path. Exotique.
 BRUMPT (1909). *Ibid*.
 CHALMERS (1900). Lancet, vol. i.
 FRIEDRICHSSEN (1906). Journal of Tropical Medicine, p. 63.
 LÉGER (1912). Bulletin de la Société Path. Exotique.
 MARCHOUX AND MESNIL (1912). *Ibid*.
 ORPEN (1904). Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, ii. 4, 289.
 ROQUES ET BOUFFARD (1908). Bull. de la Société de Path. Exotique, i. 295.
 WEENBERG (1909). Bulletin Société de Path. Exotique.

Enlargement of the Os Calcis.

- MACLEAN (1904). Journal of Tropical Medicine, p. 333.
 MAXWELL (1905). *Ibid.*, p. 82.

Boomerang Leg.

- BLACK, ERNEST (1913). Private Communication.

CHAPTER LXI

DISEASES OF THE NERVOUS SYSTEM

General remarks—Endemic paralytic vertigo—Lâtah—Schamanismus—Âmok—Tropical neurasthenia—Endemic peripheral neuritis—Erythromelalgia tropica—Desert hallucinations—Emotional excitement—Delusions—Auto-suggestion—References.

GENERAL REMARKS.

THE nerve diseases of the tropics include many general diseases already dealt with—*e.g.*, pellagra, leprosy, beri-beri, etc. But apart from these conditions, *meningitis*, *cerebral tumours*, *cerebral hæmorrhages*, *spastic paralysis*, *alcoholic neuritis*, and, more rarely, *arsenical neuritis*, are all well known. *Locomotor ataxia* and *general paralysis*—the so-called parasymphilitic affections—are rare, though syphilis is rampant. The *cerebral tumours* which we have most commonly met with are endotheliomata and tubercular or syphilitic lesions. *Hysteria* is common among the better-class natives, especially among the young women educated according to Western ideas.

As regards insanity, *mania* and *melancholia* are the most usual; but *dementia*, *idiocy*, and *epileptic insanity* are not uncommon. According to Dr. Spence, formerly Superintendent of the Asylum at Colombo, the burden of lunacy in Ceylon is light as compared with England, Scotland, or Ireland, and it is possible that this applies not merely to Ceylon, but to other countries. But apart from these diseases, there are some curious nerve or mind affections which must be considered at greater length.

Sexual perversions are not uncommonly met with in native races.

Homicidal tendencies are generally due to alcoholism, or to long brooding over real or fancied injuries. *Suicide* is not rare, and may be approved by local custom.

Tropical 'kohler' has already been mentioned (p. 97), but tropical neurasthenia, endemic vertigo, and other conditions must be briefly touched upon.

ENDEMIC PARALYTIC VERTIGO.

Synonyms.—Vertige Paraly sant, Vertige Ptosique, Gerlier's disease, Kubisagari, Tourniquet.

Definition.—Endemic paralytic vertigo is characterized by eye symptoms, such as ptosis, dimness of vision, and by paralysis of the neck and extremities.

History.—The disease was first described by Gerlier in Ferney, in Switzerland, in 1886, and by Miura, in 1894, in Japan.

Climatology.—It is known in France, Switzerland, and Japan, where it is found in the northern provinces and in the island of Shikoku.

Ætiology.—The ætiology is entirely unknown, and hence there are many theories, which suggest alcohol, poisoned bread and lentils, and latent malaria; but the one which is favoured by both Gerlier and Miura is the association of the disease with stables. Gerlier says that in the valley of the Lake of Geneva it is not unusual for people to sleep in the stables; and Miura says that in the regions affected in Japan it is usual to have the house so arranged that a part is used as a stable, while the remainder is occupied by the family.

Further, it is associated with warm weather. Miura gives as exciting causes bodily exertion while hungry or after a full meal, writing, reading, steady attention to anything, uniform movements or mixing with crowds; while the attacks are diminished by rest and change.

Pathology.—This is quite unknown.

Symptomatology.—An attack begins with a blurring of objects, everything appearing as if in a fog, together with ptosis, and, less frequently, a diplopia due to paralysis of the internal rectus, with sometimes photophobia, disturbances of colour vision, and hyperæmia of the optic disc. Then follow disturbances of speech and loss of power in mastication, and, in bad cases, of deglutition. At the same time paralysis of the muscles of the back of the neck, the back, and the extremities are observed. The head falls forward, and is only raised with difficulty; hence the name of the disease, 'kubisagari,' which means 'he who hangs his head.' If the muscles of the back are paralyzed, there may be difficulty in raising the body from a stooping posture. Weakness in the hands, arms, and legs is often observed, and is first noticed in the muscles connected with symmetrical repeated movements. An attack lasts from ten to fifteen minutes, and varies in severity, in mild cases there being only ptosis and dimness of vision. Between the attacks the patient is perfectly well in every respect. After severe attacks there may be a little ptosis, or weakness of the muscles of the back, neck, hands, or legs, and increased reflexes.

Prognosis.—The disease is never fatal, though it may last for many years.

Treatment.—The first requirement is removal from the endemic area and from living in close proximity to stables. Medicines are not of much use, but a combination of potassium iodide and arsenic is recommended.

LĀTAH.

Synonyms.—Echomatism, Mimicismus, Sakitlatar, Jumping, Bah-tschi, Myriakit, Meriatschenje.

Definition.—Lātah is a mental condition in which suggestion is at once followed by uncontrollable action in the form of echolalia or echokinesia, of which the mind is usually, but not always, conscious.

History.—The convulsive tics have been carefully studied in Europe by Charcot, Gilles de la Tourette, and Guinon, but the allied condition 'lātah' found in Malaysia, as well as similar conditions found in other parts of the world, have as yet not been fully investigated. Thanks to the labours of O'Brien in 1883, Gilmour in 1892, Van Brero in 1895, Ellis in 1897, Gerrard in 1904, Manson in 1907, Fletcher in 1908, Plan in 1911, and Abraham in 1912, a fair amount of definite information with regard to Lātah is available.

Climatology.—Lātah is found principally in the Malay Peninsula, Java, Sumatra, and is also known in Siam, in Burma, in the Philippines, Siberia, and among the Jumpers of North America. Fletcher has rightly drawn attention to the fact that, while the disease is very common in the Malay States, it is, apparently, rare in the Malays who have emigrated. Thus, for example, it does not occur among the large colony of Malays in Ceylon, which may be due to the fact that they originally came from Batavia in Java, and not from Malaya, but it is said by Fletcher to occur in Chinese, Tamils, and in Europeans living in Malaya. The Ikota or Samoyeds and the Tigretier of Abyssinia, are said to suffer from similar symptoms. In children the disease is milder than in adults.

Ætiology.—The exciting cause appears to be any sudden start, producing some peculiar movement, after which any unlooked-for action may be imitated, and is generally accompanied by bad language. The mildest form of the disease is merely an exclamation or a scream when startled, but in severe cases the patient will imitate any sudden motion or obey any suggestion made to him.

Fletcher relates that in some parts of the Malay States it is occasionally impossible for a judge to examine the witnesses, as they can do nothing but imitate and repeat the questions put to them.

According to Abraham, the exciting causes are: (1) Auditory—*e.g.*, an unexpected noise behind the person; (2) visual—some unlooked-for movement; (3) tactile, such as a sudden touch.

The predisposing cause would appear to be racial.

Symptomatology.—On hearing an unexpected noise, seeing or performing a sudden movement, or being surprised by a touch, the

patient repeats either the action seen or the words uttered, and at the same time may use foul language. The unfortunate victim is generally conscious of his words and actions, of which he may be ashamed, but he is quite unable to control them. The most graphic account of the symptomatology of the fully-developed complaint is that given by Sir Hugh Clifford in his 'Brown Humanity,' from which we are kindly permitted to give an extract. The disease is best seen in the Malays, and as no white man knows these people as Sir Hugh Clifford knows them, the following is of peculiar value:—

'The most typical case of *lâtah* within my experience was that of a Selangor Malay named Sat, who, in 1887 and 1888, cooked the rice for me and for ten, twenty, or thirty Malays who were then living in my house at Pekai. He was a great big, heavy-featured, large-boned, clumsily-built fellow, very solid, very stupid, very phlegmatic—the last person in the world one would have thought to be the victim of any nervous disorder. To the lay mind any abnormal degree of sensitiveness should be accompanied by a somewhat ethereal physique, a delicate skin, a blue-veined forehead, tiny hands and feet, and a highly-strung organization. To none of these things could poor Sat lay any sort of claim; and though, no doubt, doctors will say that these are by no means invariable accompaniments of a highly nervous temperament, I must own that Sat looked vastly improbable as the possessor of anything so rarefied. All the other Malays in my household were accustomed to put upon Sat most unmercifully, making him do almost the whole of the work that should rightly have been shared between them all. Sat never appeared to resent this arrangement, and he never made any complaint to me then, or at any later time, of the manner in which his fellows treated him.

'He spent almost the whole of his day in the great ramshackle room, built out over the river on supporting piles of nibong, in which the large wooden box, filled with baked clay, which served as our simple cooking-range, occupied the chief place in the centre of the tala floor.

'When the others were most noisy, Sat was still silent. When some of my men boasted of the great deeds they had performed in the old days in Selangor, Sat would listen obediently to the thrice-told tales, stolidly, but without excitement. Most of the other men had their own particular chums, but Sat was always solitary, and he never appeared to have any ideas in that great bullet-head of his which he desired to exchange with his neighbours.

'He had been an inmate of my hut for nearly a year before anyone discovered that he was *lâtah*. The fact came to light quite accidentally, Sat being startled out of his self-possession by the sudden capsizing of a cooking-pot over which he was watching. A boy who chanced to be alone in the cook-room with Sat made an instantaneous grab at the fallen rice-pot, and in an instant Sat's hand was in the fire, grasping the burning hot metal. He withdrew his flayed fingers quickly, as the pain brought to him consciousness of what he had done, and he carried them at once to his head—that queer, groping, scratching motion which is an invariable accompaniment of *lâtah*—and the boy at his side needed no man to tell him that Sat was a victim to that extraordinary affliction.

'With the wanton cruelty and mischief of his age, the boy once more made a feint at the smoking rice-pot, and again Sat's fingers glued themselves for a moment to the scalding metal, and returned aimlessly to his head.

'I do not know how many times this was repeated, but Sat's fingers were in a terribly lacerated condition when at last someone chanced to enter the cook-room, and interfered to prevent the continuation of Sat's torture.

'After that, though I did all I could to protect him from molestation, Sat was never, I fancy, left in peace for long by the other men of my household. Gradually, in the course of a couple of months or so, this man, who for nearly a year had shown no signs of being the victim of any nervous disorder, was reduced to a really pitiable condition. The occasional *lâtah* seizures, which

were at first induced by the persecutions of his fellows, ceased to be abnormal phases, and became the chronic condition of his mind. If one spoke to him, with no matter how much gentleness, he would repeat the words addressed to him over and over again, aimlessly, unintelligently, without, apparently, comprehending their meaning, and that wandering, groping hand of his would steal to his head, and scratch helplessly at his close-cropped hair.

"Sat, listen, Sat!" I would say to him as quietly and as reassuringly as I knew how. "Listen! no man is worrying thee. Try to listen to what I say to thee." Sat would make answer, and then, very low, in a whisper under his breath: "Listen, listen, listen, listen, listen what I say to thee."

'I instituted a fine for anyone who was found annoying Sat, but it was impossible to get a conviction, for the unfortunate victim could never say who the man was who had teased him into a more than usually severe paroxysm of lâtah.

'It was about this time that a number of other people in my household began to develop signs of the affliction. I must not be understood as suggesting that they became infected with lâtah, for on inquiring, I found that they had one and all been subject to occasional seizures when anything chanced to startle them badly long before they joined my people; but the presence of so complete a slave to the affliction as poor Sat seemed to cause them to lose the control which they had hitherto contrived to exercise over themselves. One of the older men among my people—Pa'Chim, we called him—a Malay by birth, and of some standing with his fellows, came to me and begged that I would see that no one did anything to give him a sudden start, since, he said, only a very little was needed to make him lâtah also. Yet this man, neither then nor later, showed any signs of the affliction. He probably exercised a considerable amount of self-control, but I always knew that in a moment I could have broken through his guard, and have startled him into as complete a seizure of lâtah as those of which Sat was the victim.

'One day a curious thing happened, which I will relate as it occurred, though I only witnessed the end of the incident.

'A Trènggânu Malay, who had a cousin among my people, came in to visit his relative, and chanced to find no one but Sat in the house. The latter invited the Trènggânu man to partake of sirih, and they squatted down on the pèntas, or raised eating-platform, in the centre of the house, with the sirih-box between them. The villainous small boy who had first discovered Sat's weakness was playing about in the room, and in some unholy way he had learned that the Trènggânu visitor was also a lâtah subject. He seized a long rattan, which, I think, was kept in the room by one of the older men for his occasional correction, and smote the sirih-box as it lay between the two betel-chewers, making the wooden covering resound with the smart blow. The sudden and unexpected noise at once deprived both men of all power of self-restraint. Each gave a sharp cry and a "jump"—to use the colloquial expression—and, since there was nothing to distract their attention from one another, they fell to imitating each the other's gestures. For nearly half an hour, so far as I could judge from what I learned later, these two men sat opposite to one another, gesticulating wildly and aimlessly, using the most filthy language, and rocking their bodies to and fro. They never took their eyes off one another for sufficient time for the strange influence to be broken, and at length, utterly worn out and exhausted, first Sat and then the Trènggânu man fell over on the platform in fits, foaming horribly at the mouth with thin, white flakes of foam. Men came running to me for help, many having witnessed the end of this strange scene, and when I had doctored Sat and his companion back to consciousness, I tried to ascertain from them how they had come to fall victims to this seizure. They could tell me nothing, however, for they only remembered that before their trouble came upon them they had been chewing betel-nut. The matter was sifted out, none the less, and the small boy who had been the cause of the trouble again made the acquaintance of the piece of rattan, and, to judge by his cries, found the interview an unusually painful one.'

From the above account it will be seen that a sudden action will inhibit the higher centres and produce reflex movements in imitation of those performed by the exciting cause. The loss of memory of what has taken place and the peculiar movement of the hand to the head indicates the abrogation of the higher powers.

Varieties.—There are two varieties of the complaint—the impulsive and the mimetic. The former, produced by a sudden shock, results in violent action or bad language, of which the patient may be very ashamed. The mimetic is the form in which the sufferer, no matter how unwilling, is compelled to imitate.

Allied Complaints.—Lâtah must be closely related to those curious psychical phenomena, seen at times among different races, the afflicted people being variously known in Europe as ‘the Jumpers,’ ‘the Barkers,’ and ‘the Jerks,’ and must also be allied to those states of excitement into which people pass during times of religious revivals. In our experience it has also a certain resemblance to some cases of so-called ‘*Maladie de Gilles de la Tourette*,’ the main symptoms of which are acholalia and coprolalia.

A peculiar psychical outbreak took place in Madagascar in the years 1863-64 among the women of the lowest classes, consequent on the profound sensations caused by the violent death of King Ramada II., and the subsequent changes in the religion and laws. This outbreak is said to have been identical with the dancing mania of the Middle Ages. It is interesting to remember that there is a strong admixture of Malay blood in the natives of Madagascar, especially in the ruling classes.

It is thus seen that the condition, though at present most marked among the Malays, is, and has been, world-wide in its spread, and is really due to the possession of feeble higher centres which are easily upset, and then are unable to control the lower centres in the accustomed manner.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis of lâtah is based upon the individual uncontrollably performing or imitating actions, often with echolalia or coprolalia.

Prognosis.—Lâtah is said never to end in insanity.

Medico-Legal.—With regard to the medico-legal aspect of lâtah. Fletcher has performed an experiment with a severely affected subject, proving that suggestion can compel a lâtah subject to commit a crime even against his will. He concludes that in lâtah crime is a possibility either as—

1. An act resulting from an imperfectly controlled inco-ordinate reaction to a sudden impulse ; or as—
2. An act resulting from the suppression of volition in the severe forms, the determining cause of which is a criminal suggestion by a second person.

In evidence of the first, he cites two Malays going through a forest carrying their knives for cutting wood. A twig suddenly snaps, and the first man falls to the ground, which so upsets the second

one that he also falls to the ground, and in so doing accidentally wounds the first man with the knife he is carrying. In evidence of the second, he places a dummy in a bed previously occupied by a friend of a lâtah person who had been removed without the latter's knowledge. Suddenly the lâtah person was ordered to take a knife which was placed in a handy position, and stab the dummy in the bed. The lâtah person tried not to do this, but was compelled to obey the suggestion. Thus, it would appear that there may be a near connection between lâtah and crime.

Treatment.—The treatment is most unsatisfactory, but auto-suggestion might be tried. Abraham states that some patients have cured themselves by determination not to succumb.

SCHAMANISMUS.

Schamanismus is the condition of excitement into which certain of the Dayaks and other peoples are able to throw themselves for religious purposes. This state of excitement seems to be attained by leading an extremely erotic life, and appears, by its singing, shrieking, and dancing to utter weariness, to resemble the dancing mania of the Middle Ages, and, therefore, to be related to lâtah.

ÂMOK.

Definition.—Âmok is a psychical disturbance, which, after a period of depression, suddenly develops into a violent attempt to kill people, of which no memory may be left, and after which a stuporous condition supervenes.

Remarks.—Âmok, which means 'an impulse to murder,' is a disease frequently found among the Malays, but also occasionally in other Oriental races. Abraham thinks that there may be some relationship between âmok and lâtah.

Climatology.—Âmok is found in Malaysia among the Bugis of Celebes, the Malays of Indo-China, Malacca, and the Malay States. It is also said to occur at times in Trinidad and among the inhabitants of India and Siberia.

Ætiology.—The exciting cause appears to be a strong emotion of anger, sorrow, or fear, after which a pause or incubation period of depression follows, which may last for days or weeks, during which the patient broods over his wrongs. The Dutch believe that it is induced by opium smoking, and Miall that it is due to smoking haschisch (*Cannabis indica*); but these causes are insufficient.

Symptomatology.—The attack is ushered in by colour sensations of red or black, with or without vertigo, and the patient complains of the appearance of devils, which they attempt to kill. The âmoker usually rushes out of his abode and attacks friends or foes, young or old, males or females, with his kris, or flame-shaped knife, or by firing on them with a gun. The attack usually lasts but a short time, and the deeds performed during that period are not

remembered. After the attack, the patient passes into a stuporous condition or deep sleep, which may last for a long time, after which he remains in a peculiar excitable condition for some months.

Allied Complaints.—This is a curious pathological entity, and may be a genuine psychical obliquity closely related to those epileptoid seizures investigated in Europe by Lombroso.

Medico-Legal.—If a case is considered genuine, the patient must not be regarded as responsible for his actions, but each case should be judged on its own merits.

Treatment.—No treatment has so far been tried in the prodromal stage, as far as we know.

TROPICAL NEURASTHENIA.

No disease among Europeans in the tropics deserves more careful study by the practitioner than neurasthenia, because, though not in itself fatal, still it leads to many of the petty worries felt and bad tempers exhibited, and, in worse cases, may seriously hamper good work being performed. The subject has been ably studied by Fales in Americans returning from the Philippine Islands.

Ætiology.—Tropical neurasthenia is apt to develop in white people in any part of the tropics, but especially in those which are subject to moist heat, and in some cases an important predisposing cause is the sun's rays, the effects of which are often disregarded. Moreover, the white man is generally compelled to work hard throughout the heat of the day, and is often exposed to the midday sun. The liability to the disease increases with the length of residence in the tropics. Predisposing causes are any previous illness, alcoholism, and overwork. Fales states that he found 30 per cent. of the men and 50 per cent. of the women who had resided for a year or longer in the Philippine Islands the subjects of such severe neurasthenia as to be semi-invalids. In our experience the disease is extremely common all over the tropics in Europeans as well as in the natives of the educated class.

Symptomatology.—In addition to the ordinary signs of neurasthenia, the tropical form seems to markedly affect the vascular system; palpitation is very common, and the patients suffer from various kinds of phobia, especially relating to diseases of the tropics.

Treatment.—The best treatment is rest and change of climate and mild hydropathic treatment. If this is not possible, hypodermic injections of sodium glycerophosphate—0.1 gramme daily in bad cases—or some form of glycerophosphate, with or without polyformates, by the mouth in mild cases, may be tried. The patient should discontinue cold baths, and should use warm baths, which should be taken at night if there is sleeplessness. Bromides are occasionally useful.

Prophylaxis.—As in some cases the disease is predisposed by exposure to the sun, protection is required against the sun's rays

by topees lined with red, and, if necessary, by red underclothing or clothes made from the 'solaro' fabric already mentioned, and by avoidance of the midday sun as much as possible, and the total abstinence from alcohol.

Persons who are compelled to work hard under unfavourable conditions require change to the Temperate Zone at relatively short intervals—*i.e.*, about once in two or three years.

ENDEMIC PERIPHERAL NEURITIS.

Synonym.—Akatama.

Definition.—Endemic peripheral neuritis is a disease of unknown origin, characterized by numbness and intense prickling and burning sensations in the presence of cold or damp, which are temporarily relieved by the application of dry heat.

History.—The disease was first noticed by Wellman in Central Africa in 1896, and described by him in 1903. It affects 3 to 5 per cent. of the Bantu people, who are by profession porters, and are much impeded in their work by this complaint, which affects young and old, male and female alike. Their staple food is maize, which is eaten partially cooked.

Climatology.—The disease is found in that plateau of Africa which is 5,000 to 6,000 feet high, and is situated between 13° to 14° south latitude, and is inhabited by the Bihé, Bailundo, and Andulu peoples, all of whom are Bantus.

Ætiology.—Wellman was unable to find any causative organism in the blood or fæces. Some of the natives also suffered from filariasis, agchylostomiasis, and bilharziosis, but these were adventitious. His theories are that it may be caused by cold, fermented maize, or nerve-starvation; but he is not satisfied with any of these hypotheses.

Morbid Anatomy.—In bad cases there is some swelling, erythema, and slight œdema of the affected part; still, biopsies of the skin revealed nothing, and post mortem the nerves were found normal.

Symptomatology.—The disease usually begins with shooting, pricking, or crawling pains in the legs and forearms, accompanied by numbness, together with an erythematous rash and swelling of the affected area. All these symptoms are increased by cold and damp, and diminished by heat and dryness. They may also appear on the thighs and arms, and occasionally on any part of, or all over, the body. The gait is peculiar, the patient appearing to walk on the toes and heels. The disease may last for years, but spontaneous recovery is known.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis is easy, for it is distinguished from beri-beri by the absence of pain in the calves, by the absence of the heart symptoms, and of the paralysis; from elephantiasis by the swelling being transitory; from malaria by an examination of the blood, and from pellagra by the symptoms improving during the warm season.

Prognosis.—This is good as to life and general health, though the course of the malady may be very protracted.

Treatment.—No method of treatment is known to do any good.

ERYTHROMELALGIA TROPICA.

Under this term Gerrard describes a nerve condition in which natives who work barefoot on roads and plantations in Malaya complain of a feeling of pins and needles in the soles of the feet, followed by an acute burning sensation, which prevents walking and sleeping. Malaria is assigned to be the cause. The treatment recommended is to place the feet in hot salt-water, which is said to give great relief.

DESERT HALLUCINATIONS.

Synonym.—La Ragle.

D'Escayrac de Lauture describes hallucinations of the senses of sight, hearing, smell, or taste, or even of common sensations, which attack persons suffering from exhaustion in deserts. The causation is probably inanition. Generally the attack comes on at night, but it may occur in the day-time, when it is considered to be more serious. Usually hallucinations are visual, and thus stones look like buildings or large rocks, while caravans or files of soldiers may be seen which do not exist. It has nothing to do with true mirage.

EMOTIONAL EXCITEMENT.

Synonym.—Misala.

Howard, in a very interesting paper, has recorded cases of emotional excitement called 'misala,' which vary from an attack of tropical anger to a condition almost bordering on mania, which can be controlled by authoritative commands, or which, left to themselves, pass off in a few hours or days. It occurs among the young adult males of Nyasaland.

DELUSIONS.

Delusions of poisoning and of bewitchment are common in Africa and Asia, and probably elsewhere, and are common explanations of various forms of disease or of hysteria.

AUTO-SUGGESTION.

Every practitioner in Africa and Asia is acquainted with the extraordinary ease with which a native can die if he makes up his mind to do so. The actual cause of death is often exhaustion due to starvation.

REFERENCES.

- ABRAHAM (1912). *British Medical Journal*. London.
- BAKER, S. (1896). *Journal of Nervous and Mental Diseases*, vol. xxiii. (Auto-Mimesis.) New York.
- BARRY (1910). *Indian Medical Gazette*. (Nervous Breakdown in Burma.) Calcutta.
- BENNETT, A. C. (1889). *South African Medical Journal*. (Jumpers.) East London.
- BREITENSTEIN, H. (1899). *Aerztliche Centralblatt-Anzeiger*, vol. xi. Wien. (Die Lâtah-Krankheit.)
- BRERO (1095). *Mense's Tropenkrankheiten*, i. 210.
- CATROU, J. (1890). *Étude sur la Maladie des Tics convulsifs*. (Jumping Lâtah, Myriachit.) Paris.
- CLIFFORD. *Brown Humanity*. London.
- ELLIS (1897-98). *Journal of Medical Science*.
- ELLIS, W. G. (1897). *Journal of Mental Science*. (Lâtah.) London.
- FLETCHER (1908). *Lancet*, vol. ii.
- GERRARD (1904). *Dublin Journal of Medical Science* (Lâtah). Dublin.
- GILMOUR, A. (1902). *Scottish Medical and Surgical Journal*. (Lâtah among South African Natives.) Edinburgh.
- GIMLETTE (1897). *British Medical Journal*.
- HOWARD, R. (1910). *Transactions of the Society of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene*, June. (Emotional Psychoses among Dark-Skinned Races.) London.
- NEAL (1884). *British Medical Journal*. London.
- O'BRIEN (1883). *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*. Singapore.
- SCHEUBE (1910). *Die Krankheiten der Warmen Länder*. Jena.
- TOKARSKI, A. A. (1890). *Sborn: Statei po Neoropati Psichiat*. (Myriachit and Spasmodic Disease.) Moscow.

CHAPTER LXII

SKIN DISEASES—PYOGENIC INFECTIONS

Pyosis mansonii—Pyosis tropica—Tropical boils—Purulent folliculitis of the legs—Pyosis palmaris—Dermatitis rimosa—Dermatitis bullosa plantaris—Veldt sore—Barcoo—Botryomycosis—References.

PYOSIS MANSONI.

Synonym.—Pemphigus contagiosus (Manson).

Definition.—A type of bullous pyosis affecting the axillary and scroto-crural regions, very common in the low-lying districts of the tropics.

Historical and Geographical.—This dermatosis was first described by Manson under the term pemphigus contagiosus. It is very common during the hot season in China, the Malay Peninsula, Ceylon, and Southern India, and probably in many other parts of the tropics. Castor has reported it from Burma. Very often epidemics occur among the crews of men-of-war stationed in the tropics, as observed by Clayton.

Ætiology.—Manson found a diplococcus; other observers have described Leishmania-like bodies; in Clayton's and our experience the examination of the contents of the vesicles shows the presence of cocci generally arranged in pairs, and having often a gonococcus-like shape. They are, however, Gram-positive, and in cultures present all the characters of the *Staphylococcus pyogenes aureus* and *albus*. The disease is probably spread by contact.

Symptomatology.—The affection has nothing to do with that group of diseases to which writers on dermatology apply the term 'pemphigus,' for it is much more closely related to impetigo, of which we consider it to be a variety. The eruption attacks generally the axilla, the inguinal and crural regions, from whence it often extends to the abdomen and back and limbs; rarely affecting the face. It is extremely contagious, and is generally more severe in individuals who perspire profusely and suffer from prickly heat. The eruption is made up of flattened, roundish vesicles, which quickly enlarge to the size of a small pea. Very large, flabby, pemphigoid bullæ may occur, but not very frequently. The contents are at first transparent, but soon become turbid. The vesicles are often surrounded by a pinkish or reddish inflammatory

halo. On being pricked, the vesicle collapses. The eruption does not usually affect the general health, but may be very persistent, and may be followed by crops of boils. As soon as the patient goes to the hills or to a cool climate it disappears spontaneously.

That the malady is merely a type of pyosis or impetigo due to the usual pyogenic cocci is shown by some cases presenting the typical bullæ on the axillary regions, and soon after or—though rarely—at the same time, boils on the arms and legs and impetiginoid lesions on the face.

Diagnosis.—This is generally easy, the only difficulty being with chicken-pox. The absence of fever and the situation of the vesicles,



FIG. 547.—PYOSIS MANSONI.

which in pyosis mansonii usually appear in the crural or the axillary regions, however, should be sufficient to exclude this. The absence of crusty lesions differentiates the disease from the common type of impetigo contagiosa.

Prognosis.—The eruption is very persistent, but does not affect the general health, except when complications such as boils develop.

Treatment.—The affected regions should be disinfected regularly twice daily with a solution of perchloride of mercury (1 in 2,000), carbolic acid (2 per cent.), permanganate of potash (1 in 4,000), hydrogen peroxide (10 per cent.), cyllin (1 in 300), lysol or lysoform (2 to 5 per cent.). After this the vesicles are pricked, and

the parts again washed with the disinfectant, an antiseptic powder being then thickly applied, such as :—

Xeroform	..	..	..	..	5i.
Acidi borici (finely powdered)	..	..	..	..	5i.
Talci ven.	..	..	..	..	3i.
Euophen	..	..	..	..	5i.
Talci ven.	..	..	..	..	5i.
Dermatol	..	..	..	..	5i.
Talci ven.	..	..	..	..	5i.

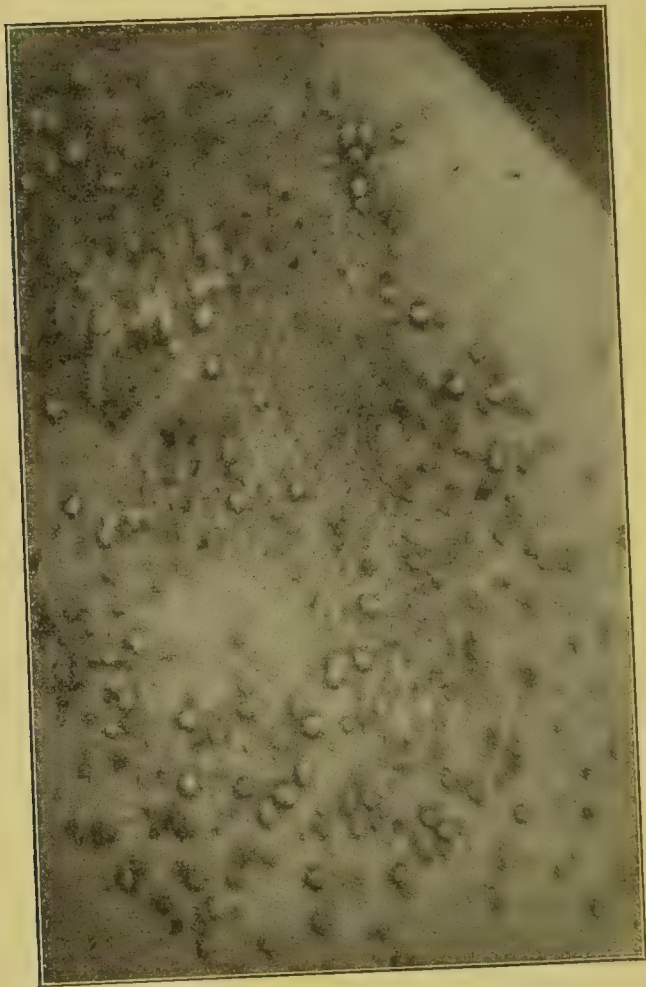


FIG. 548.—PYOSIS MANSONI.

Same case as Fig. 547, but more magnified.

In some patients an ointment (euophen, 2 per cent. ; protargol, 5 per cent.) answers better ; the protargol ointment should never be used for the face in Europeans, as it discolours the skin after a time. It may be noted that in our experience the white precipitate ointment (1 per cent.), which is so efficacious in the usual impetigo

of the Temperate Zones, has very little or no effect in pyosis mansonii. After the eruption has disappeared, it is advisable to use some Condy's fluid or other disinfectant in the bath to prevent relapses; and, if the skin is not too tender, a formalin soap may be regularly used. The underclothing should be regularly dusted with one of the above powders.

PYOSIS TROPICA.

Synonym.—Kurunegala ulcers.

Under the name 'pyosis tropica' Castellani has described a skin disease very common in Ceylon and Southern India. In Ceylon it is called by the natives Kurunegala sore, as it is especially common in that district. Pyosis tropica has been reported from other tropical countries, and recently has been observed in Tripoli by Gabbi and Sabella.

Ætiology.—The disease is probably due to the usual pyogenic cocci, and is allied to the ordinary impetiginous and ecthymatous conditions, though much more severe.

Symptomatology.—The patient, generally a young boy or girl, though adults may also suffer from it, presents on the legs, arms, and occasionally all over the body except the face, numerous crusty lesions, occasionally rupia-like, of a dirty blackish or yellowish colour. If the thick crust is removed, a shallow ulcer with an irregular margin and granulating fundus will be seen, or a small flattened, or hemispheric nodule the size of a pea, with a pinkish, smooth surface. Besides these large lesions small papulovesicles and minute pustules are often present. The larger lesions are frequently surrounded by a halo of hyperpigmentation. There is severe pruritus. On healing, also, the ulcers and nodules leave a zone of hyperpigmentation or, more rarely, depigmentation. In chronic cases plaques of hyperkeratosis may develop, especially on the exterior regions of the arms and the elbows.

Diagnosis.—On superficial examination, the disease might be easily mistaken for frambœsia. In contrast to frambœsia, the



FIG. 549.—PYOSIS TROPICA.
The white patches are in reality thick yellow crusts.

ulcers are superficial, and the nodules are generally smaller, have no moriform surface, and in scrapings from the lesions the *Treponema pertenue* is absent. From scabies it is distinguished by the absence of burrows and absence of the *Acarus*. From ecthyma, to which it is closely related, the condition differs by the fact that, on removing the crusts, besides the ulcerative lesions, rather large, smooth hemispheric nodules are seen.

Prognosis.—The disease is very persistent, but the general health is not affected.

Treatment.—If the disease is not properly treated, it has a tendency to become chronic. The treatment consists in removing the crusts by soaking them with a salicylic oil, made according to the following formula:—

Acidi salicylici	..	..	..	..	gr. xxx.
Olei ricini	..	..	..	..	q.s.
Olei olivæ	..	..	..	..	ad ʒiv.

or by compresses soaked in hot boric lotion.

All the lesions are then disinfected with a solution of perchloride of mercury (1 in 1,000), carbolic acid (2 per cent.), cyllin (1 in 300), or permanganate of potash (1 in 4,000). A slightly antiseptic ointment is then applied, such as euophen (2 per cent.), iodoform (2 per cent.), protargol (5 per cent.), calomel (5 to 10 per cent.). An ointment which in our experience is often efficacious is β -naphthol gr. ii.-v., acidi carbolic gr. v.-x., vaselini ad ʒi. In some cases the opsonic treatment gives satisfactory results. The vaccine should be prepared with staphylococci grown from the lesions.

TROPICAL BOILS.

Synonyms.—Tropical furunculosis, Nile boils.

Remarks.—Furunculosis is very common in the tropics. It does not differ from what one sees in Europe except that it is often of much severer type, and has a great tendency to spread all over the body. The individual boils are frequently of very large dimensions and extremely painful. There may be fever. The condition is very common in people who perspire much and suffer from prickly heat. It is due to the usual staphylococci. Carbuncle, especially of the neck and gluteal regions, with deep infiltration, and multiple openings, is not rarely associated in our experience with ordinary boils.

The so-called 'Nile boils' have been demonstrated by Modder, and more recently by Archibald, to be merely furuncles, due to the usual pyogenic organisms.

E. Black describes under the term 'furunculus contagiosus' a benign multiple furunculosis observed by him in Brazil.

Treatment.—The quickest and most reliable method of cure in cases of multiple boils is, in our experience, Wright's vaccine

treatment, the vaccine being prepared from staphylococci isolated from the patient. When this treatment cannot be carried out, the administration of fresh yeast, half a wine-glass full twice daily, or of yeast preparations internally will be found to be useful in some cases—*e.g.*, two or three ceridin pills twice daily. Ichthyol tablets (gr. v.), twice daily, may also be given, or calcium sulphide (gr. $\frac{1}{4}$), may be administered, but their beneficial effect is doubtful. Diluted sulphuric acid (M xx.-xxx.), well diluted, every four hours may be tried. Occasionally a small boil may be aborted by applying a droplet of pure carbolic acid by means of a pointed pencil of wood



FIG. 550.—PURULENT FOLLICULITIS OF THE LEGS AND THIGHS.

drilled into the centre of the papule, or four or five drops of 1 in 30 solution of carbolic acid may be injected beneath the boil, or Unna's carbolic and mercury plaster may be used, or spirit of camphor may be applied several times daily. For old indurated boils the continuous application of a carbolic lotion (2 to 5 per cent.) on lint occasionally causes them to become absorbed. Large boils in which suppuration has taken place should be opened, but it is a mistake to open them too soon. As a preventive, a salicylic-alcoholic lotion (1 to 2 per cent.), used after the daily bath, is advantageous, and it is also advisable to use a little Condyl's fluid or cyllin in the bath.

PURULENT FOLLICULITIS OF THE LEGS.

Definition.—A purulent inflammation attacking many hair follicles of the legs and thighs.

Historical and Geographical.—The condition is extremely common in Ceylon and Southern India, in the former especially among the moormen. It was investigated by one of us some years ago. A very similar or identical condition has been noted by R. Cranston Low in Scotland in miners working in mines flooded with water.

Ætiology.—It is apparently due to the usual pyogenic cocci.

Symptomatology.—The patient presents on his legs—especially the extensor region—numerous whitish conical pustules. Each pustule is pierced by a hair. The pustules remain, as a rule, separate, do not increase in size to any extent, and do not coalesce nor form crusty lesions. After a time the skin of the legs may show a peculiar parchment-like appearance. The examination of the pus contained in the pustules shows the presence of the ordinary staphylococci.

Prognosis.—The disease, if left untreated, runs a very long course.

Treatment.—The treatment consists in depilation, application of antiseptic dressings, and, later, the application of an antiseptic ointment or paste. In obstinate cases the opsonic treatment, carried out with a vaccine prepared from the staphylococci grown from the lesions, gives good results.

PYOSIS PALMARIS.

This is a rare disease met with in native children. It is characterized by the presence of numerous discrete, conical, white pustules on the palms of the hands. The pustules do not coalesce together nor form crusts; they are not surrounded by any marked inflammatory halo. Pruritus is slight or absent. The ordinary pyogenic cocci are found in the pus, but probably these are not the true cause of the eruption, inasmuch as neither the ordinary antiseptic treatment nor the opsonic treatment are of much use. The affection is differentiated from scabies by the pustular lesions not spreading outside the palms, by the absence of burrows and acari, and by the inefficacy of any anti-scabies treatment; from the vesicular type of ringworm by the absence of any fungus.

DERMATITIS RIMOSA OF THE TOES.

Synonyms.—Mango toe, Frieira.

Geographical Distribution.—It is extremely common in Southern India, Burma, Ceylon, and many other tropical countries, being the cause of great discomfort to European residents, especially during the hot season.

Ætiology.—The condition seems to be a pyogenic infection, starting, in some cases, on slight lesions produced by a localization of *Epidermophyton cruris* to the toes. This localization of the fungus was first observed by Sabouraud. The fungus *per se* in this situation gives rise to very slight symptoms, very often only some scaliness and pruritus.

Symptomatology.—The patient first complains of great itching between the toes, without there being present any papular or vesicular lesion. On scratching to relieve this itching, portions of the epidermis become removed, and small superficial, red irritable abrasions are seen. These become severer, and deep, extremely painful fissures appear between the toes in almost all the cases. This dermatitis is difficult to cure, but disappears rapidly on the patient going to the hills or to Europe. It may remain quiescent for long periods, and then reappear again. During the periods of quiescence some pruritus may occasionally be felt, and the skin between the toes may easily crack or be slightly scaly.

A somewhat similar affection was described long ago by Martin Costa in Brazil, who stated that the condition was very common among natives, who called it 'frieira.' He believed it to be caused by the heavy perspiration, and accumulation of dust and dirt between the toes.

Treatment.—This consists in keeping the patient at rest for a few days, dressing the affected parts continuously with diluted carbolic lotion ($\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.), or resorcin lotion ($\frac{1}{2}$ to 1 per cent.), and later applying a zinc oxide paste, hazeline cream, or a bismuth-boric ointment (bismuth subnitrat, gr. xxx.; acidi borici, gr. xv.; vaseline, lanoline, āā 3iv.). The stockings should be white, and should be changed at least twice daily, and should be boiled before use. If a fungus is found in the lesions, an antimycotic treatment should be carried out when the acute stage is over, or during the quiescent periods, by means of silver nitrate (3 per cent.), or a strong solution of potassium permanganate (gr. xxx. to 3i.), painted on once or twice daily; or tincture of iodine may be used if the lesions are dry and there are no excorations.

DERMATITIS BULLOSA PLANTARIS

Synonym.—Foot-tetter (Cantlie).

Historical and Geographical Distribution.—This affection was first described by Cantlie in China, but cases are met with in all tropical countries.

Ætiology.—The disease is probably a streptococcus infection, one of us having isolated a very virulent strain of the germ from the blebs of several cases. In two of our cases this streptococcus infection developed on some superficial lesions due to a localization of *Epidermophyton cruris* to the soles.

Symptomatology.—It commences with blebs on the sole of the foot. The blebs ultimately break, and by-and-by bare scaly flakes of skin form, and extend all over the sole and between the toes.

There is intense itching. Occasionally the condition spreads to other parts of the body. It usually dies away in the cold season, but recommences in the hot season. According to Cantlie, patients who have returned to Europe see their affection reappearing regularly every summer for ten or twenty years after leaving the tropics.

Prognosis.—The condition is of difficult cure and relapses occur.

Treatment.—In the acute stage the patient must stay at complete rest, and antiseptic dressings, such as mercury perchloride (1 in 4,000) or carbolic acid ($\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.), applied continuously. Later a lead lotion (liq. plumbi, ℥ii. , aq. destil. ad ℥x.), and still later some antiseptic powder (dermathol or zinc oxide) may be used. In our cases ointments were always badly borne. In mild cases we advise taking a foot-bath twice daily in warm boric (1 per cent.) or permanganate (1 in 4,000) solution, besides which the blebs should be pricked with a sterile needle and touched with a solution of permanganate (gr. xx.-xxx. to ℥i.), followed by dressing with zinc oxide, dermatol, or some similar powder.

If the eruption develops on lesions due to fungi, when the acute stage is passed off, an antimycotic treatment should be carried out by applying with care, and very little at a time, a silver nitrate solution (3 to 5 per cent.) if there are moist lesions, or tincture of iodine if the lesions are dry.

Cantlie recommends the application of pastes and plasters as palliatives. Manson advises the use of a daily foot-bath of a 2 per cent. solution of carbolic acid for half an hour.

VELDT SORE.

Synonyms.—Natal sore, Ulcerative dermatitis, and, according to some authorities, Barcoo rot.

Historical and Geographical.—The condition is known in South Africa since many years. During the Boer War the British Army, especially the mounted troops, suffered from it greatly. We have seen cases in tropical Africa. According to some authorities, the affection known in Australia under the name of 'barkoo' or 'barkoo rot,' is identical with veldt sore.

Ætiology.—The condition is probably of streptococcic origin, though Harland has grown the *Staphylococcus aureus* from his cases. In all our cases we found a streptococcus. Harman also has found a streptococcus from his cases which he calls *Streptococcus vesicans*.

Symptomatology.—The affection begins as very small superficial itching papules, which rapidly become papulo-vesicles or pustules, and coalesce, forming a crusty lesion, the size of a threepenny-piece to a crown. If the crusty exudation be removed, the sore will appear in most cases as a superficial, very shallow ulcer, with a red fundus and roundish or somewhat festooned margins. The ulcer exudes a fluid pus which soon dries into a thin, crusty mass.

The ulcer may be painful, but, especially at the beginning, there is frequently more itching than pain. The proximal lymphatic glands may be enlarged. Several such sores may be present at the same time. The hands, forearms, feet, and legs are mostly affected. Harman has seen as many as twenty such sores on one man. The duration of the affection varies between one and three months, but occasionally may last as long as six months.

Treatment.—The treatment consists in keeping the sores dressed with antiseptic lotions, such as perchloride of mercury (1 in 4000), or in washing the sores with a disinfecting lotion, and then applying an antiseptic powder, paste, or ointment such as eucrophen (1 to 3 per cent.), iodoform (1 to 3 per cent.), protargol (5 to 10 per cent.) or calomel (5 to 10 per cent.)

BARCOO.

Synonym.—Barcoo rot.

This condition is frequently observed in tropical Australia and in the interior of the subtropical zone of that continent. It has been studied by Ernest Black, Breinl, and others. According to Ernest Black, a somewhat similar condition is met with in Central and South America.

Ætiology.—This is unknown, but some authorities consider the disease to be a streptococcus infection, and identify it with veldt sore.

Symptomatology.—According to Black, the condition may develop on any slight abrasion of the skin. A crust forms which gradually becomes larger, thicker, and harder, until it is quite horny in consistence, and extremely difficult to remove. Occasionally the edges may appear inflamed, and a little pus and blood ooze from beneath; but as a rule, the typical lesion is dry and hard, and there is very little itching or pain.

Prognosis.—The condition is very persistent, but may disappear spontaneously. The general health is not affected.

Treatment.—A change of climate is very beneficial, and Black advises abundance of fresh fruit and fresh vegetables. If the lesion gets inflamed, a local treatment with antiseptic dressings is beneficial.

BOTRYOMYCOSIS.

Synonyms.—Botryomycosis Hominis, Granuloma Pyogenicum.

Definition.—A granulomatous condition characterized by the presence of peculiar spherical-shaped parasitic bodies of various size and collected in clusters.

Historical and Geographical Distribution.—The condition was first studied in horses, in which it occurs often in the testicular cord after castration; but it is common also in the pig, dog, and cattle. Later it was found in man by Poncet and Dor in Europe. In the tropics it has been observed in the Sudan by Archibald, and in Ceylon by one of us.

Ætiology.—The condition is probably due to an organism (*Botryomyces ascoformans*), the botanical position of which is not defined, though some authors class it among the micrococci, wrongly in our opinion. The organism appears in the lesions made under the form of spherical bodies of very different size (0.8 to 12 μ), singly or collected in clumps, Gram positive, and to a certain extent acid-fast. They seem to reproduce by a process of endosporulation. It is probable that the organism has not been grown, as the cultures obtained by some authors have all the characters of a staphylococcus.

Some authorities, in fact, consider the disease to be merely a type of pyosis due to the usual staphylococci. Letulle considers the disease to be due to an amœba, and his results have been confirmed by Bureau and Labbé. Archibald in the Sudan, and ourselves in Ceylon, have never found any amœba-like organisms, but only bodies with the characters of *Botryomyces ascoformans*. In our cases, which were typical and had developed on wounds which had been suppurating for a long time, numerous pyogenic cocci were also present and easily cultivated, but we do not believe they were the ætiological agents of the granulomatous tumours.

Pathology.—The condition, as seen by us in Ceylon, has all the characters of a granuloma. The microscopical examination of sections shows young connective tissue with large numbers of plasma cells. The lesions are very vascular. Later, denser fibrous tissue is observed. In Archibald's cases the histopathological features of mycetoma were present, his cases being apparently a mixed infection of mycetoma and botryomycosis, as a *Nocardia* was also present in most of them.

Symptomatology.—The condition generally develops on some suppurating wound, but may occur upon the site of any abrasion or wound. It appears as a small, generally cherry-red, granulomatous nodule or mass, often roundish, of various size—from a pea to a nut or larger. Occasionally the nodule may be pediculated. At first it is of rather soft elastic consistency; later may become fibrous and much harder. There is very little tendency to spontaneous cure. A very mild type of botryomycosis occasionally develops after vaccination. We have seen several such cases.

In Archibald's cases sinuses were present, and the condition resembled clinically mycetoma. His cases were apparently mixed infections, as a *Nocardia* was also found in most of them.

Prognosis.—The general health is not much affected, but the condition has little or no tendency to spontaneous cure.

Treatment.—Excision, followed by light cauterization with pure carbolic or chloride of zinc, is the only method of treatment. The pedunculated form may be cured by ligature. The disease may occur again after operation, but this is rare.

Prophylaxis.—Care should be taken to keep suppurating wounds thoroughly disinfected.

REFERENCES.**Pyosis mansonî.**

- CASTELLANI (1904-1912). Ceylon Medical Reports.
CASTOR (1911). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
MANSON (1909). Tropical Diseases.

Pyosis tropica.

- CASTELLANI (1904-1912). Ceylon Medical Reports.
GABBI AND SABELLA (1912). Malaria.

Purulent Folliculitis of the Legs.

- CASTELLANI (1904-1912). Ceylon Medical Reports.
CRANSTON LOW (1912). Communication by letter.

Pyosis palmaris.

- CASTELLANI (1904-1912). Ceylon Medical Reports.

Dermatitis rimosa.

- CASTELLANI (1904-1912). Ceylon Medical Reports.

Dermatitis bullosa plantaris.

- CANTLIE (1908). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
CASTELLANI (1904-1912). *Ibid.*
HARMAN (1908). British Journal of Dermatology.
MANSON (1908). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
MORRIS (1908). British Journal of Dermatology.

Veldt Sore and Barcoo.

- BLACK, ERNEST (1913). Communications by letters.
CROCKER (1907). Diseases of the Skin.
HARMAN (1902). Journal of Pathology.

Botryomycosis.

- ARCHIBALD (1911). Fourth Report of the Wellcome Tropical Research Laboratories. Vol. A. Khartoum.

CHAPTER LXIII

SKIN DISEASES (*continued*) —TROPICAL DERMATOMYCOSES

Tropical dermatomycoses—*Tinea cruris*—*Tinea alba*—*Tinea albigena*—*Tinea sabouraudi*—*Tinea nigro-circinata*—*Tinea imbricata*—*Tinea intersecta*—*Tinea flava*—*Tinea nigra*—*Blastomycosis*—*Sporotrichosis*—*Aspergillosis*—*Pennicilliosis*—*Pinta*—References.

TROPICAL dermatomycoses—that is to say, tropical skin diseases caused by fungi higher than bacteria—may be classified as follows:—

TROPICAL DERMATOMYCOSES.

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>I. Due to fungi of the genus <i>Epidermophyton</i> Lang 1879, <i>Trichophyton</i> Malmsten 1845, <i>Microsporon</i> Gruby 1843</p> | <p><i>Ep. cruris</i> Castellani 1905, common variety of <i>Tinea cruris</i> (dhobie itch).
 <i>Ep. perneti</i> Castellani 1907, variety of <i>Tinea cruris</i>.
 <i>Ep. rubrum</i> Castellani 1909, variety of <i>Tinea cruris</i>.
 <i>T. nodiformans</i> Castellani 1911, variety of <i>Tinea cruris</i>.
 <i>T. macfadyeni</i> Castellani 1905, variety of <i>Tinea alba</i>.
 <i>T. albiscicans</i> Nieuwenhuis 1907, <i>Tinea albigena</i>.
 <i>T. blanchardi</i> Castellani 1905, <i>Tinea sabouraudi tropicalis</i>.
 <i>T. ceylonense</i> Castellani 1908, <i>Tinea nigro-circinata</i>.
 <i>T. soudanense</i> Joyeux 1912, variety of <i>Tinea capitis</i>.
 <i>T. violaceum</i> Bodin 1902, variety of <i>Tinea capitis</i>.
 <i>T. violaceum</i> Bodin 1902, var. <i>decalvans</i> Castellani 1911, variety of <i>Tinea capitis</i>.
 <i>T. polygonum</i> Uriburu 1909.
 <i>T. exsiccatum</i> Uriburu 1909.
 <i>Microsporon flavescens</i> P. Horta 1912, variety of <i>Tinea capitis</i> and <i>corporis</i>.</p> |
| <p>II. Due to fungi of the genus <i>Endodermophyton</i> Castellani 1909</p> | <p><i>En. concentricum</i> Blanchard 1901, <i>Tinea imbricata</i>.
 <i>En. indicum</i> Castellani 1911, <i>Tinea imbricata</i>.
 <i>En. castellanii</i> Perry 1907, <i>Tinea intersecta</i>.</p> |
| <p>III. Due to fungi of the genus <i>Malassezia</i> Baillon 1889.</p> | <p><i>M. tropica</i> Castellani 1905, <i>Tinea flava</i>.</p> |

- IV. Due to fungi of the genus *Cladosporium* Link 1809 } *C. mansonii* Castellani 1905, Tinea nigra.
C. madagascariense Verdun 1913, peculiar nodular affection.
- V. Due to fungi of the genera *Saccharomyces* Meyer 1838, *Cryptococcus* Kützing, *Coccidioides* Rixford and Gilchrist 1897, *Monilia* Gmelin 1791 } Several species, some of which incompletely investigated } Varieties of blastomycosis.
- VI. Due to fungi of the genus *Nocardia* Toni and Trevisan 1889 } *N. minutissima* Burchardt 1859, erythrasma.
N. carougeaui Brumpt 1910, juxta-articular nodules.
N. tenuis Castellani 1912, trichomycosis axillarum.
N. thibiergei Pinoy and Ravaut 1909, nodular affection.
N. rivierei Verdun 1912, nodular affection.
- VII. Due to fungi of the genera *Sporotrichum* Link 1809, *Hemispora* Vuillemin 1906, *Enantiothamnus* Pinoy 1911, *Scopulariopsis* Bainier, *Cladosporium* Link 1809, *Acremonium* Link 1809 } *Sporotrichum beurmanni* Matruchot and Ramond 1905 } Varieties of sporotrichosis found in the tropics.
S. shenki Hektoen and Perkins 1900 }
S. asteroïdes Splendore 1911 }
S. indicum Castellani 1908 }
Hemispora stellata Vuillemin 1906 }
Enantiothamnus braulti Pinoy 1912 } Various types of gummatous affections.
Scopulariopsis blochi Matruchot 1911 }
Cladosporium madagascariense Verdun 1913 }
- VIII. Due to fungi of the genera *Aspergillus* Micheli 1725, *Sterigmatocystis* Cramer 1869, *Madurella* Brumpt 1905, *Indiella* Brumpt 1906, *Nocardia* Toni and Trevisan 1889, *Sporotrichum* Link 1806, *Monosporium* Bonord and Saccardo 1898 } *Aspergillus bouffardi* Brumpt 1906 } Varieties of mycetoma.
Sterigmatocystis nidulans Eidam 1883 }
Madurella mycetomi Laveran 1902 }
M. bovei Brumpt 1910 }
M. tozeuri Nicolle and Pinoy 1906 }
Indiella mansonii Brumpt 1906 }
I. reynieri Brumpt 1906 }
I. somaliensis Brumpt 1906 }
Nocardia maduræ Vincent 1894 }
N. asteroïdes Eppinger 1890 }
N. pelletieri Laveran 1906 }
N. bovis Harz 1877 }
N. israeli Kruse 1896 }
Sporotrichum beurmanni Matruchot and Ramond 1905 }
Monosporium apiospermum Saccardo 1911 }
- IX. Due to fungi of the genera *Aspergillus* Micheli 1727, *Penicillium* Link 1809 } *A. barbæ* Castellani 1907, Aspergillosis of hairy parts.
P. barbæ Castellani 1907, Penicilliosis of hairy parts.
- X. Due to fungi of the genera } *Aspergillus* Micheli 1725 } Pinta.
Penicillium Link 1809 }
Monilia Gmelin 1791 }
Montoyella Castellani 1907 }

- | | | |
|---|---|--|
| XI. Due to fungi of the
genus <i>Trichosporum</i>
Behrend 1890 | { <i>T. giganteum</i> Behrend, piedra.
Species as yet not well
determined | { Tropical varie-
ties of nodular
trichomycosis. |
| XII. Due to fungi of the
genus <i>Pityrosporum</i>
Sabouraud 1903 | { <i>Pityrosporum canthi</i> Castellani 1907, variety
of tropical seborrhœa. | |

From the above table it will be seen that tropical dermatomycoses *sensû stricto*—viz., occurring only in the tropics—are comparatively few. Most of them are endemic also in temperate zones, though occurring there rarely, or at any rate less frequently, than in the tropics. We may mention as examples tinea cruris and madura foot. The same remark, however, applies to every other branch of tropical medicine.

The frequency of dermatomycoses in the tropics is probably due to the hot, damp climate being very favourable to the growth of vegetal parasites.

TINEA CRURIS (DHOBBIE ITCH).

Synonyms.—Tinea tropicalis, Tinea inguinalis, Tinea axillaris, Eczema marginatum.

Definition.—The term 'tinea cruris.' indicates a group of epidermophytoses and trichophytoses which are clinically characterized by their tendency to develop on the scruto-crural and inguinal regions.

Historical and Geographical.—Tinea cruris is extremely common all over the tropics; it is met with also in subtropical regions, and in temperate zones, being first described by Hebra in Europe under the name of eczema marginatum. In 1905, Castellani, as the result of the investigation of numerous cases, came to the conclusion that it should be separated from the ordinary forms of tinea corporis, and MacLeod suggested the name tinea cruris for the affection. For the fungus most frequently found in such cases, characterized by the yellowish cultures, Castellani used the name *Trichophyton cruris*. Pernet found and described a fungus for which Castellani suggested later the name *Trichophyton perneti*. In 1907 Sabouraud investigated in a complete manner the condition in France which he called tinea inguinalis. There can be no doubt that tinea inguinalis and dhobie itch, or tinea cruris, are the same entity, as Sabouraud and Pinoy, having compared cultures of *Epidermophyton cruris* isolated in Ceylon with those found in France, have found them identical.

Castellani's further researches have shown that other fungi besides *Ep. cruris* may give rise to tinea cruris, each species giving rise to a slightly different clinical variety of the eruption.

Ætiology.—According to Castellani's researches, at least three different species of *Epidermophyton* and one of *Trichophyton* may give rise to the eruption—*Epidermophyton cruris*, *Ep. perneti*,

Ep. rubrum, and *Trichophyton nodoformans*—and there are probably several other not yet described species.

The description of these fungi is given in Chapter XXVII. (see p. 788). Attempts at experimental reproduction of the disease made by Sabouraud and one of us in human beings and monkeys have failed.

Symptomatology.—The term ‘dhobie itch’ is used very loosely in the tropics by the lay public to denote practically any pruriginous skin affection. The term is, however, specially used to denote a form of severe pruriginous affection which mostly affects the inner surface of the thighs, occasionally the axillæ, and, in stout women, the regions under the breasts. It is in this stricter meaning that the term is used by medical men practising in the tropics.

The clinical features of the affection correspond to Hebra’s ‘eczema marginatum.’ In a well-marked case the perineum, scrotum, and the inner surface of the thighs present large festooned patches, with an elevated abrupt margin; the whole of the patches are bright red, or, in a later period, the margin only is red, while the rest of the patch is of a fawnish colour, or even of normal colour. The pruritus is unbearable. Owing to scratching, a secondary pyogenic infection or an eczematous-like dermatitis may develop. The disease, if not properly treated, is extremely chronic; the condition improves during the cold season, but gets worse again during the hot months. Patients who suffer badly from dhobie itch may get almost well in a few days, without any treatment, on going to the hills; on returning to the plains the pruritus and all the other symptoms reappear. The affection has been known to last for many years. It is to be noted that after a time the eruption may spread to the other parts of the body—the abdomen, the trunk, legs, etc. In such situations it may develop in rings, or may form solid elevated dark red patches; while the disease may be clinically indistinguishable from ordinary tinea circinata. In some cases, though rarely, the eruption starts first on the chest and arms, and from there spreads later to the armpits and cruro-inguinal regions.

Clinical Varieties.—The above description mostly applies to the disease as produced by *Epidermophyton cruris*, which is the commonest fungus found, and by *Ep. perneti*. In the cases due to *Ep. rubrum* the affected parts often present from the very beginning an eczematoid appearance. The edge is perhaps not so raised as in other types of tinea cruris, but very abrupt, made up of numerous rather small, close-set papules, covered at times by minute bloody crusts due to scratching. The eruption may also be present in the shape of large complete or incomplete gyrations enclosing normal skin, or solid patches may be seen. The variety due to *Ep. rubrum* has great tendency to spread to other regions of the body.

In the cases caused by *Trichophyton nodoformans* the eruption has thick elevated margins, and along the edge deep-seated nodules resembling ‘blind boils’ are present, the fungus being capable of

attacking the hair follicles and having pyogenic properties. The infection may spread from the inguinal regions to other parts of the body. We have seen a case presenting a nodular eruption due to this fungus in the groins, and at the same time presenting a typical kerion barbae due to the same organism on the right cheek.

Regions of the Body affected.—The eruption, as already stated, is generally localized to the cruro-inguinal and axillary regions, hence the name 'tinea cruris seu inguinalis'; but the same fungi may spread in many cases from those regions to any other part of the body, except the scalp. In some few cases the eruption may first appear on the arms or chest, etc., and then spread to the groins



FIG. 551.—DHOBBIE ITCH OF THE CRURO-INGUINAL REGIONS: *TINEA CRURIS*.
From the same case (due to *Epidermophyton cruris*) as the coloured plate.

and armpits, or may never affect these regions. Hence the terms 'tinea cruris' and 'tinea inguinalis' are not altogether appropriate, and the term 'tinea tropicalis,' or the native term 'dhobie itch,' might be used as general terms to cover all the localizations.

A localization of great importance noted by Sabouraud and later by Whitfield, is when the fungi invade the skin between the toes (*tinea interdigitalis*). In this situation the fungus—it is generally *Ep. cruris*—may remain for years, the fungus *per se* giving rise to practically no objective symptom, except perhaps a little scaliness, but generally induces very severe pruritus, especially in the hot weather. This localization of the fungus is often the starting-point

PLATE VII.



Geo. Waterston & Sons, Lith. Edin.

TINEA CRURIS.

To face page 1476



of secondary bacterial affections causing a most distressing dermatitis, known to the planters by the name of 'mango toe,' and already described on p. 1466.

Communicability.—Tinea cruris is known in the East as dhobie itch, from the popular belief that it is contracted from linen which has been contaminated while being washed by the dhobie (native laundryman). As to how far this belief is correct we are not in a position to say. We have never succeeded in finding the fungus in clothes newly received from the dhobie, either microscopically or by inoculating small portions of the linen in sugar media. We are, however, inclined to think that the popular belief may to a cer-

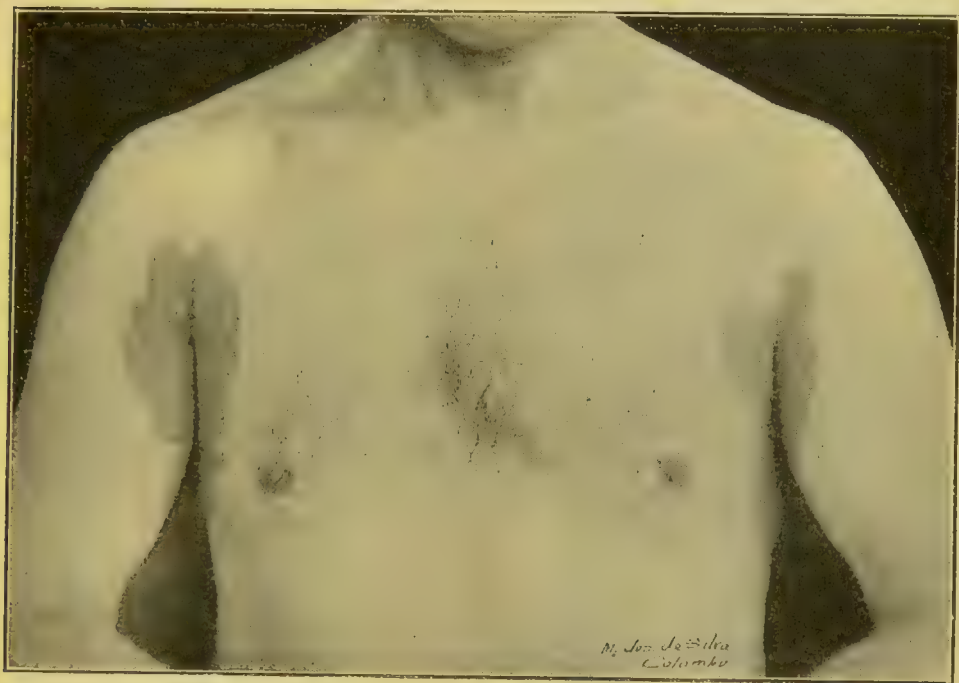


FIG. 552.—DHOBIE ITCH OF THE AXILLARY REGIONS: TINEA AXILLARIS.
Case due to *Epidermophyton cruris*.

tain extent be correct. We have been told by old sufferers from dhobie itch, who used to be frequently reinfected, that on their ceasing to give their clothes to the dhobie, and having them washed in the house instead, the disease did not again affect them. In Colombo dhobies are in the habit of washing the clothes in a lake, or in small pools of water more or less stagnant. It is certain that clothes belonging to infected persons are washed together with other clothes. Dhobie itch is very contagious; true epidemics occur in schools and among soldiers in barracks.

Prognosis.—If the affection is not energetically treated, it has a tendency to become very chronic and last for years. Occasionally the eruption spreads to the whole body, forming rings or solid

patches; at other times a distressing dermatitis develops on old dhobie-itch patches, due to scratching. Tinea cruris may disappear during the cold season or when the patient goes to the hills, only to reappear as soon as the hot season commences. During the period of quiescence the skin of the affected regions often shows a brownish discoloration, furfuraceous, somewhat similar to erythrasma.



FIG. 553.—DHOBBIE ITCH OF THE AXILLARY REGIONS: *TINEA AXILLARIS*.

Case due to *Epidermophyton cruris*.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis is easy in recent cases, the festooned appearance of the eruption, limited by a sharp, elevated, bright red edge, being quite typical. In old cases, especially when secondary lesions due to scratching are present, the diagnosis may be very difficult, the affection being often mistaken for eczema.

In doubtful cases the microscopical examination will be of great help. It must, however, be noted that in old cases the fungus may be extremely scarce, the mycelium being practically absent, and only a few spores being found; it is well to take the scrapings for microscopical examination from the edge of the eruption. The differential diagnosis must be made from erythrasma, intertrigo, and eczema.

In *erythrasma* the patches have a fawnish or dark reddish colour, and present often a fine pityriasis desquamata; the eruption is not limited by a raised red edge; the fungus *Nocardia minutissima* is quite different from the fungi found in dhobie itch.

Intertrigo is very common in the tropics, especially in corpulent persons. The lesions are very superficial, have not a festooned contour, and the margin is not sensibly elevated; no *Epidermophyton*- or *Trichophyton*-like fungi are found. Saccharomycetic intertrigo is rare; there is no elevated margin and the fungus is found to be a *Saccharomyces* (*S. samboni*).

Primary eczema of the scrotum, and of the skin of the thighs in contact with it, is as frequent in the tropics as it is in temperate zones. The eczema is generally of the moist variety; the moist surface, the absence of the festooned elevated margin, distinguish

it from tinea cruris. As already stated, however, an eczematous-like dermatitis due to scratching often develops after a time on old dhobie itch lesions.

Diagnosis of the Toes' Localization.—The complaining of severe itching between the toes, even if there are no objective symptoms whatever, should in the tropics always arouse the suspicion of a possible local fungus infection, especially if the patient suffers at the time, or has been suffering from tinea cruris, and scrapings should be made and examined microscopically. It is important to make the diagnosis, as by treating the condition the development of that distressing dermatitis known as mango toe (see p. 1466) may often be prevented.

Treatment.—Our usual line of treatment is as follows :—

Mild Cases.—A resorcin salicylic ointment applied twice daily : Resorcin, ḡi. ; acid salicylic, gr. x.; vaseline, lanoline, āā ḡiv. Tincture of iodine also is very efficacious, but induces a certain amount of smarting, and must be applied with care and in only very recent cases with no eczematoid lesions. In some cases we use Vleminckx' solution or lotio calcii sulphurati (slaked lime 4, sublimed sulphur 4, distilled water 35; boil together, evaporate, and filter to produce 20 of solution), pure or diluted. A sodium hyposulphite solution (sodium hyposulphite ḡii. , aq. ḡi.) may also be used.

Severe Cases.—We use a chrysarobin ointment (2 to 5 per cent., a good formula being chrysarobin gr. x.-xxv., unguentum zinci ḡi.). The result is generally fairly successful. The patient should be informed that the medicine stains the linen, often irritates the skin, which may become œdematous and dusky red, and that occasionally unpleasant evidences of absorption may take place, with fever, diffuse erythema, and hæmaturia. Chrysarobin should never be used when there is some affection of the kidneys. The irritation induced by the chrysarobin ointment may be allayed by calamine lotion, lead lotion, or an ichthyol ointment 1 per cent.

Chrysarobin is obtained from araroba, which is known by the name of 'goa-powder' all over the East. The crude goa-powder, partly dissolved in vinegar, is often used, but frequently induces very severe inflammatory symptoms.

In obstinate cases we use local applications of turpentine-oil in the morning, and at night a resorcin salicylic ointment; if the parts are much inflamed, at night simply a boric ointment. This treatment gives good results. Turpentine is generally well borne, but patients often complain of a smarting and burning sensation a quarter of an hour after the application. Exceptionally one meets with patients who cannot stand turpentine.

Cases complicated with Eczematous Dermatitis and Fissures.—In such cases, in our experience, it is better to use at first a soothing treatment by lead lotion, or a solution of resorcin ($\frac{1}{2}$ to 1 per cent.), or glycerin. boracis in rose-water, with the object of first healing the eczematous lesions. Later, to the rhagades which so often develop in the inguinal regions, we apply a solution of nitrate of silver (arg. nitr., gr. v.-xv.; sp. æth. nitr., ḡi.). We touch with this solution the rhagades and the moist parts; this application is some-

what painful, but the pain soon disappears, and the fearful itching is relieved almost immediately; moreover, the nitrate of silver destroys the fungus. At night we apply a mild ichthyol ointment (1 per cent.) or hazeline cream all over the eruption; as soon as the parts have become less moist, we begin the chrysarobin treatment. A precaution, which must always be observed during and after the treatment, to prevent reinfection is to dust all the undergarments with antiseptic powder—for instance, Manson's powder (ac. bor., zinc. ox., amyli, āā p. æq.); salicylic powder (ac. salicyl., gr. x.; talci venet., \bar{z} i.); menthol powder (menthol, gr. v.; alcohol, q.s.; talci venet., \bar{z} i.); dermatol powder (dermatol, gr. xx.; talci, \bar{z} i.). It is advisable to wear small bathing-pants, which can be washed in the house.

Treatment of Generalized Dhobie Itch.—When the eruption is diffused all over the body, the simplest treatment is as a rule the application of tr. iodi or lin. iodi, treating only one portion at a time. A chrysarobin ointment (2 to 5 per cent.) may also be used.

Treatment of Dhobie Itch localized to the Toes.—During the quiescent periods, or when there is only pruritus and a little scaliness, tincture of iodine may be used, or an alcoholic solution of salicylic acid (2 per cent.). When there are acute symptoms of dermatitis, the treatment must be at first a soothing one, as described on p. 1467.

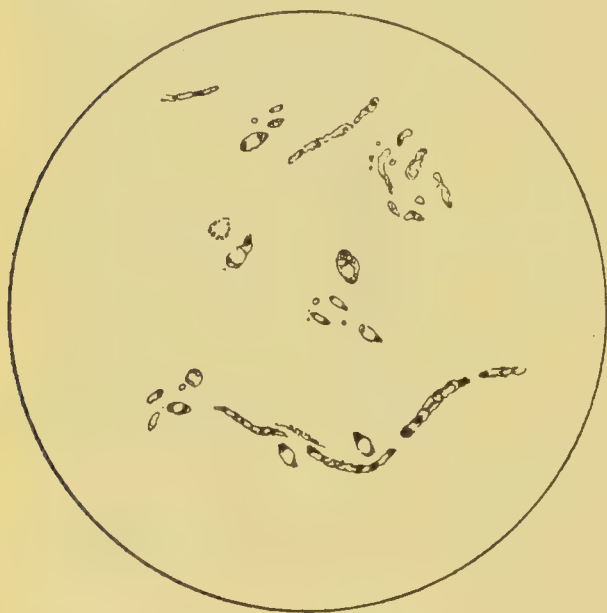


FIG. 554.—FUNGUS OF TINEA ALBA: TR. MACFADYENI CASTELLANI.

TINEA ALBA.

Remarks. — Tinea alba is in reality only a form of dhobie itch; the term is applied to various diffuse trichophytic and epidermophytic conditions which give a white powdery appearance to the skin of the natives.

Ætiology.—The commonest fungi found

are *Ep. rubrum* Castellani 1909 and *T. macfadyeni* Castellani 1905, the description of which is given on pp. 787 and 789.

Symptomatology.—The arms, legs, chest, and occasionally the whole body, present a diffuse eruption of white powdery appearance, this being due to the very numerous small white pityriatic

squamæ present. The margins of the eruption, especially if the causative fungus is *Ep. rubrum*, may be distinctly raised and dotted with minute, close-set papules.

Course and Prognosis.—The course is very chronic. Apparently the fungi have a disturbing action on the production of pigment in the skin, and after some years white leucodermic patches may develop, in which no fungus is found.

Diagnosis.—This is based on the diffuse eruption with the abundant fine pityriasic desquamation, and with well-marked limits—and the microscopical examination. It is quite easily distinguished from *tinea imbricata* by the squamæ being pityriasic, very small, easily detached. In leucoderma the surface is smooth, no squamæ being present and no fungus found. As already stated, however, if the eruption is left untreated for a long time, leucodermic patches may develop.



FIG. 555.—TINEA ALBA.

Treatment.—The best treatment is by a chrysarobin ointment (2 to 5 per cent.), applied with the precautions already mentioned. Tincture of iodine and liniment of iodine may also be used.

TINEA ALBIGENA.

This trichophytosis was first described by Nieuwenhuis in Java. Nieuwenhuis' researches have been confirmed and enlarged by Jeanselme in Indo-China and in Siam; in the latter country the disease is known as *khi*. The disease is fairly common in the Malay Archipelago, and is occasionally met with in Ceylon.

Ætiology.—The affection is due to a *Trichophyton* first described by Nieuwenhuis—*T. albiscicans* Nieuwenhuis 1907.

The spores in fresh preparations from scrapings are almost always absent; the mycelium tubes are straight, occasionally showing a double contour; they are often dichotomous. Nieuwenhuis has grown the fungus, using Sabouraud's sugar media; the growth is very slow; the colonies are whitish, and show a powdery surface.

Symptomatology.—The eruption generally affects the palms of the hands and the soles of the feet, but may extend to the forearms and legs, and may affect the nails. It begins with the appearance of small pruriginous spots on the palms and soles; the

epidermis becomes raised, and bullæ develop, containing at first clear serum; the bullæ break, and the skin remains dry and peels off; the parts remain tender, and there is desquamation and pruritus. A process of diffuse keratosis develops, the palms and soles becoming double their usual thickness; deep fissures may be formed at the natural folds. Several horny semidetached discs can often be



FIG. 556.—TINEA ALBIGENA.

seen at the dilated orifices of the sweat glands. The affection is very chronic; it may begin in youth or in adult life. After some time a process of apigmentation of the skin sets in, white patches, leucoderma-like, developing, and extending often to the legs and arms.

Treatment.—Tincture of iodine and chrysarobin ointment (1 to 5 per cent.) answer fairly well, but the apigmented patches are not cured.

TINEA SABOURAUDI TROPICALIS.

This trichophytosis was first described by Sabouraud in patients returning from Indo-China, Japan, and Tonkin. We have seen a few cases in Ceylon.

Ætiology.—The disease is caused by the fungus *Trichophyton blanchardi* Castellani 1905 (synonym, *T. sabouraudi* Castellani 1905). The term *T. sabouraudi* cannot be applied to this *Trichophyton*, as this name has already been used for another *Trichophyton*—

PLATE VIII.



TINEA NIGRO-CIRCINATA.

To face page 1483

T. sabouraudi R. Blanchard 1905. This fungus cannot be grown on Sabouraud's media or any other media we have tried. Microscopically the mycelial tubes do not show a double contour, and are not very straight; they are often banana-shaped. The segments of the mycelium are all separated; the mycelial spores are roundish, and are shed without forming a filament by their union. They are of various sizes.

Symptomatology.—The eruption generally commences on the uncovered parts of the body, generally on the legs; the patients often state that they think the disease is due to prolonged immersion in stagnant water. The affection begins with erythematous patches, the surfaces of which are covered with minute pityriasic squamæ. After reaching the diameter of about 1 or $1\frac{1}{2}$ inches, the patches become circinate. The circination, however, is incomplete; it is only segmentary. In dependent positions large polycyclic patches may be seen, but only one-half or one-third of the circles are clearly seen, the rest being badly defined. The base of the patches at this stage is of a very dark bistre-brown colour. The border shows polymorphic lesions, fine pityriasic squamæ, minute vesicles and papules. The pruritus is very marked, and excoriations, due to scratching, are constantly present. In chronic cases a thickening of the skin, with lichenification, takes place, specially at the circinate borders.

Treatment.—The disease is difficult of cure in the tropics, though it may disappear spontaneously on the patient proceeding to Europe. Chrysarobin ointment (1 to 4 per cent.) is the best treatment.

TINEA NIGRO-CIRCINATA.

This trichophytosis has been observed by one of us among Sinhalese natives.

Ætiology.—The eruption is due to a *Trichophyton*—*T. ceylonense* Castellani 1908. The spores are very few in number, roundish, rather large ($4\ \mu$), and showing a double contour. The mycelial tubes are about $3\frac{1}{2}\ \mu$ in breadth, generally straight. The fungus does not grow on any of the ordinary or Sabouraud's media.

Symptomatology.—The eruption is found most frequently on the neck and scrotum, and consists of a few rings with thick, elevated margins, the encircled skin being black—much darker than the healthy skin—but not thickened nor presenting papules, vesicles, or pustules. The edge is thick, elevated, of a dark colour, with the upper portion pinkish or occasionally covered by a dark crust. The eruption often heals spontaneously, leaving dark roundish patches at the previous seat of the lesions.

Prognosis.—The eruption may disappear spontaneously, and the treatment is easy.

Diagnosis.—The only dermatomycosis to which it has a slight resemblance is *Tinea sabouraudi*. The latter, however, is very

chronic, and invades large portions of the body; the rings are segmentary, not complete, and the edge is not so thick and elevated.

The condition may have also to be distinguished from a circinate frambœside or ringworm yaws, in which no fungus is found, while *Treponema pertenue* is present.

Treatment.—Tincture of iodine, freely applied, answers well.

TINEA CAPITIS TROPICALIS.

Geographical Distribution.—Tinea capitis is found in every part of the tropics, but its incidence varies from country to country, and is far less common than epidermophytoses and trichophytoses of the body.

In our experience tinea capitis is less common in India, Ceylon, and tropical Africa than in Europe and America. On the other hand, it is extremely common in American negroes.

Ætiology.—The fungi found are generally of the genus *Trichophyton*, but many of them have not yet been completely studied. In Ceylon the commonest fungus is *T. violaceum* Sabouraud var. *decalvans* Castellani; in tropical Africa, *T. soudanense* Joyeux is common; in South America *T. polygonum* Uriburu, *T. exsiccatum* Uriburu. We have never come across cases due to *Microsporon audouini*; but Jeanselme and



FIG. 557.—TINEA CAPITIS DUE TO *TR. VIOLACEUM* V. *DECALVANS*.

others have described a few such cases. Horta has described a rare species of *Microsporon*—*M. flavum*—in Brazil.

Symptomatology.—It may be said in a general way that the principal clinical signs are the same in the tropical types of the affection as in the temperate zones, though the medical man who has studied the subject thoroughly will soon be able to detect small clinical differences, and will soon realize that as a general rule each fungus gives rise to a slightly different type of the disease.

The principal signs are scaly patches on the scalp and the stumps in which the fungi will be found by examining them microscopically in liq. potassæ. A few remarks may be made on the commonest type of tinea capitis observed by us in Ceylon. It generally attacks children, especially of the moormen community.

The scalp presents one or several white patches covered with an enormous number of heaped-up white pityriasic scales. The scales and the broken hairs, examined microscopically, show presence of an endoectothrix fungus, which, when cultivated, shows practically every character of *T. violaceum* Bodin. A very serious symptom is that the patches as a rule remain permanently bald.

Prognosis.—This is rather bad in the common variety found in Ceylon, due to *T. violaceum* var. *decalvans*, as the patches in most cases remain permanently bald, though fortunately they are, as a rule, of small dimensions. The treatment of every type of tinea capitis is long unless X rays are used.

Treatment.—The Röntgen rays treatment, using Sabouraud's method, is by far the best and quickest. Details on the technique will be found in any up-to-date book on dermatology. In many tropical places this treatment is out of the question, and epilation and application of turpentine oil, tincture of iodine, or—with care—a chrysarobin ointment (2 to 5 per cent.) must be resorted to.

Garrett recommends the application of liquor ferri perchloridi fort. (B.P.) after thorough cleaning of the patches with benzene.

TINEA BARBÆ TROPICALIS.

The same remarks can be made on this subject as on tinea capitis. Cases are found in the tropics, though apparently less frequently than in temperate zones, and the fungi have so far been very little investigated. In Northern Africa a fungus commonly found is *T. violaceum* Bodin; in Ceylon *T. nodoformans* Castellani is often found.

Symptomatology.—The dry variety, with scaly often gyrated lesions, and the pustular variety, with purulent folliculitis, can be distinguished.

We have seen a typical case of kerion barbæ due to *T. nodoformans* in a person who was suffering from tinea cruris due to the same fungus.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis, in the pustular type, is based on the spreading folliculitis with brawny swelling and the microscopical examination of the hair; in the scaly type, on the frequent gyrate type of the eruption and the microscopical examination of the scales and hair.

Prognosis.—The disease takes a long time to get well, even under appropriate treatment.

Treatment.—This consists in epilation of the affected region, each day clearing a square inch or so, followed by the application of some antiseptic ointment such as Crocker's ointment of sulphur, ʒss.-ʒi.; ac. carbol., ʒss.; lanolin c̄ oleo, ʒi.; or oleate of copper, ʒss. to ʒi.

Tinea ciliorum.

We have seen a case of this affection in a man suffering from generalized dhobie itch, due to *T. nodoformans*. The lid was swollen and red, many cilia were broken, and there was purulent inflammation of the hair follicles.

TINEA UNGUIUM TROPICALIS.

Synonym.—Onychomycosis tropicalis.

Cases of tinea unguium, or onychomycosis, occur in the tropics, and are generally due to the same fungi producing dhobie itch, both *Epidermophyton* and *Trichophyton*s. The nails of the fingers as well as of the toes may be affected. Tinea unguium may be caused also by fungi of the genus *Endodermophyton*, the nails being often affected in tinea imbricata.

Symptomatology.—The affected nails have often a peculiar yellowish opaque or blackish discoloration, and a rough surface; they become brittle, and splitting and chipping of the free border takes place.

The diagnosis is principally based on the microscopical examination of scrapings. A soaking in liq. potassæ (40 per cent.) for twenty-four hours is often necessary to disintegrate the nail substance and to find the fungi.

Treatment.—This is most difficult. The affected nails must be softened by rubbing in liquor potassæ, and then wet dressings of hyposulphite of soda (25 per cent.), or a solution of potassium iodide grms. x., iodine grm. i., water 1,000 c.c., must be regularly applied. In the onychomycosis found in cases suffering, or having suffered, from tinea imbricata, the daily application of resorcin in tincture of benzoin (5i. to 3i.) is useful.

TINEA IMBRICATA (TOKELAU).

Synonyms.—Tokelau (Samoa); Gogo (Marshall Islands); Pita (Bowditch Islands); Cascado (Moluc Island); Dermatomycosis Chronica Figurata Exfoliativa (Thomson); Herpes Farinosus (Ritter); Herpes Desquamans (Turner); Herpes de Manson (Roux).

Historical and Geographical Distribution.—The first reference to this disease is found in Albert's atlas, 1832. Fox, in 1844, described it under the name of 'gune.' He observed it in the Gilbert Islands, and 'gune' was the term used by the natives to indicate it (gune=skin). It is to Manson that we owe the first scientific description of the disease; he introduced the term 'tinea imbricata,' under which the disease is now generally known. Manson's researches have remained classical. Further researches were made by Turner, Königer, MacGregor, and more recently by Tribondeau, Nieuwenhuis, and many others. The disease has long been known in the New Hebrides, Papua, the Gilbert Islands, and in the Malay Peninsula. It is at the present time extremely common in Fiji, where it was imported about the middle of last century, and many other of the Pacific Islands; it is found in the Philippine Islands, in Southern China, Tonkin, and Java. Lately the distribution of the disease has much extended; many cases have been seen by us in Ceylon and Southern India, in which countries the disease was

believed to be non-existent. Cases have also been reported from Brazil and other parts of tropical America.

Ætiology.—The ætiology of this dermatomycosis has been the subject of numerous controversies. Manson first, in 1872, described a trichophyton-like organism in the squamæ; with the laboratory technique of that time attempts at cultivation did not succeed. Blanchard considered it non-cultivable and called it

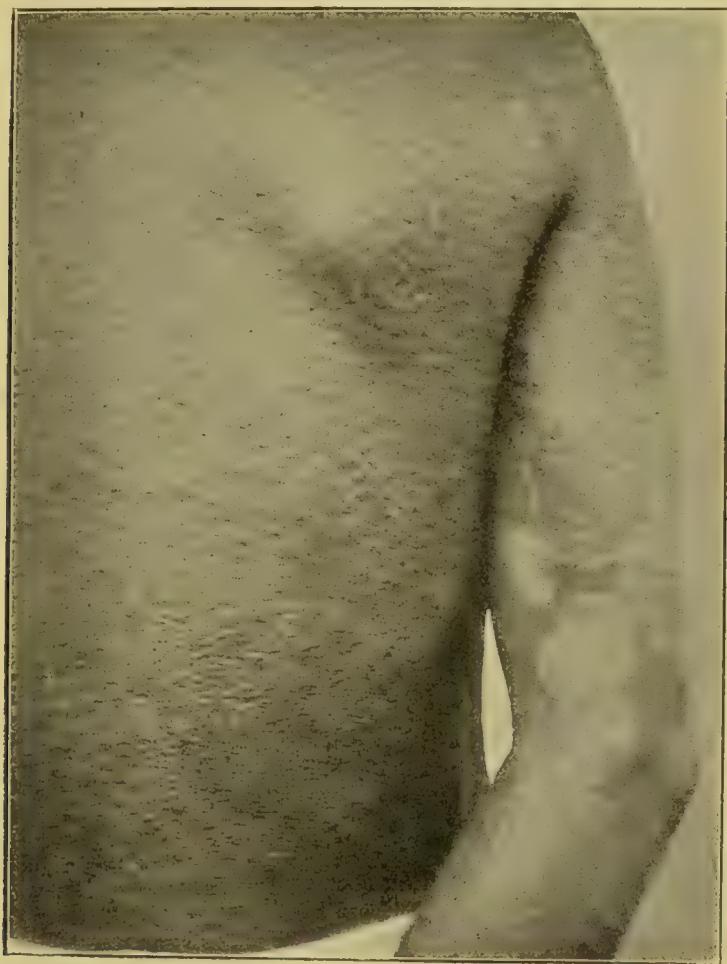


FIG. 558.—TINEA IMBRICATA.

'*Trichophyton concentricum*'; on the other hand, Nieuwenhuis stated that it was quite easily cultivated and was characterized by the colonies being crateriform. His results were not confirmed. In recent years the general opinion has been that aspergillus-like fungi were the real cause of the disease. Tribondeau described fructifications somewhat similar to those of an aspergillus, and created for the fungus the genus *Lepidophyton* (λέπις=scale; φυτόν=plant). Wehmer has described it as a true aspergillus—*Aspergillus*



FIG. 559.—TINEA IMBRICATA.

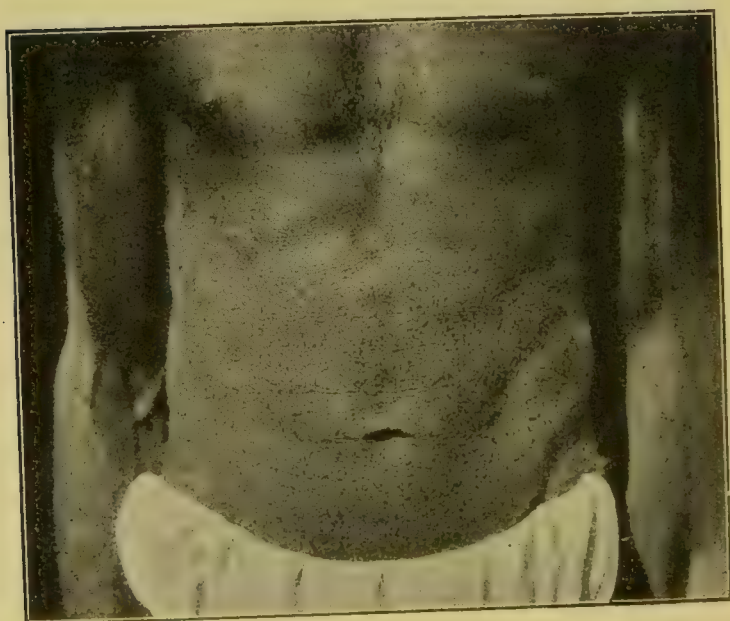


FIG. 560.—TINEA IMBRICATA.

tokelau. The investigations carried out by Castellani have demonstrated that the aspergillus and aspergillus-like fungi have nothing to do with the disease. When they are present in the squamæ, they are merely saprophytes or contaminations. By using a special technique he has succeeded in growing the true fungi causing the disease, which must be placed in the genus *Endodermophyton*. He has grown two species, and has suggested that the term 'concentricum' introduced by Blanchard should be retained for one species. For the other species he has suggested the term 'indicum.' It is probable that further investigation will reveal the existence of some more species.

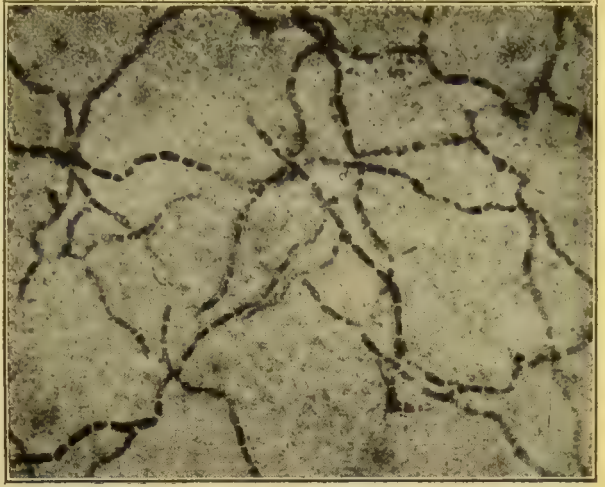


FIG. 561.—FUNGUS IN THE SCALES.
(From a stained preparation.)



FIG. 562.—TINEA IMBRICATA.

Predisposing Causes.—It is doubtful whether there is any racial disposition. In Fiji, however, while extremely common in the Fijians, it is comparatively rare in the immigrant Indian coolies.

The Tongans also are said to contract the disease rarely, and this relative immunity, according to them, is due to the habit they

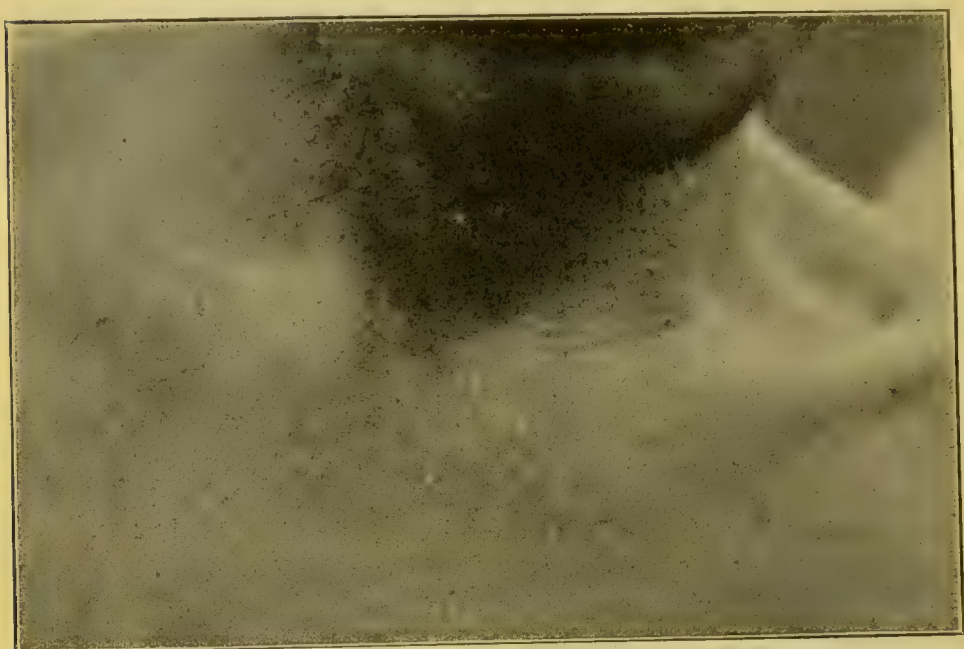


FIG. 563.—*TINEA IMBRICATA*.

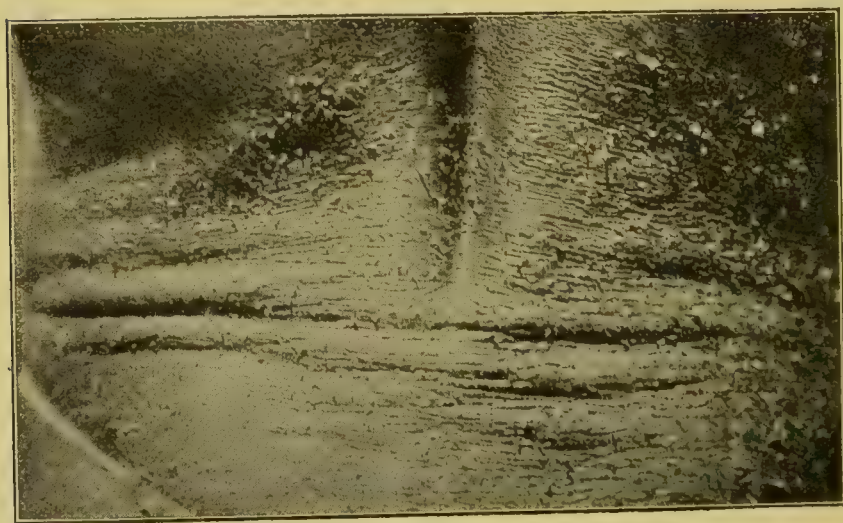


FIG. 564.—*TINEA IMBRICATA*.

have of regularly anointing their bodies, which the Fijians do not. A hot, moist climate seems to be the most suitable for the development of the fungus and the spreading of the disease.

Symptomatology.—In a well-marked case the skin of practically the whole body is covered with round patches, each of which presents several concentric scaly rings. The scales are flaky, resembling tissue-paper, dry, of a dirty greyish colour, and slightly curled. If the scales are removed, rings of concentric, circular, dark lines remain visible. The number of rings forming the patch varies. Tribondeau states that they are not more than four; we have, however, frequently counted as many as eight and ten in the same patch. The eruption may spread to any part of the body, except, in our experience, the scalp. Though several authors state that the eruption never affects the face and axilla, and rarely the palms and soles, we have often observed it in such situations. It is also stated that the nails are not affected, though Manson, who first



FIG. 565.—TINEA IMBRICATA OF THE FOREARM (OLD CASE.)

completely described the disease, said that the nails being affected was of frequent occurrence. Our experience tallies with that of Manson. The nails, when affected, are much thickened, have a rough surface and deep cracks. Scrapings examined in liquor potassæ show the fungus. The fungus never invades the hair follicles. The general health is not affected, but the patients complain of the disfigurement and of the unbearable pruritus. The pruritus greatly increases, apparently, if the patient is given certain diets—for instance, dry-fish diet. In the hot season the pruritus is much more marked. The disease is very chronic, and very difficult to cure.

In nearly all our cases the blood showed a certain degree of eosinophilia, the number of eosinophile leucocytes varying between 6 and 16 per cent. In some cases this eosinophilia was probably

due to the presence of intestinal worms ; the eosinophilia, however, was observed in some cases in which the microscopical examination of the faeces did not show any ova of worms. In very old cases the eosinophilia is more marked than in recent ones ; in old cases signs of anæmia may be present.

Clinical Varieties.—The eruption may after a time, or from the very beginning, have a diffuse appearance instead of showing con-

centric rings. The scales, however, are typical and identical to those found in the concentric type—viz., they are large, tissue paper-like, partially covering each other like the tiles of a roof, and most of them firmly adherent by their bases.

The same fungus—viz., either *Endodermophyton concentricum* or *E. indicum*—may give rise at times to the concentric type, at other times to the diffuse type. In some cases the lesions caused by *E. indicum* seem to be slightly different from those given by *E. concentricum*, the lesions being, perhaps, a little more superficial and the scales not situated so close together ; but further investigation is necessary on the point. We believe that further researches will show that there are several other species of *Endodermophyton*, each of which will probably give rise to a slightly different clinical variety.



FIG. 566.—TINEA IMBRICATA.

Experimental Reproduction of the Disease.—The malady can be easily reproduced in human beings either by inoculating squamæ from a patient, as done by Manson, or by inoculating pure cultures of the fungi, as done by Castellani. With the first procedure the period of incubation is shorter, varying between seven and ten days ; after this time a slightly elevated brown patch is seen at the place of inoculation, in the centre of which the epidermis gives way and a ring of scales is formed ; this ring expands peripherally, the scales being free towards the centre, and attached to the sound epidermis

PLATE IX.



at the periphery. While the ring expands towards the periphery, another dark patch appears in the centre, which later breaks, and another ring is formed inside the first, and so on.

Experimental Reproduction by Inoculating Pure Cultures.—The disease is easily reproduced in human beings by inoculating pure cultures of the fungi, as done by one of us. The incubation period is somewhat longer (twelve to twenty days), but the eruption develops typically, as may be seen in Figs. 567 and 568. It is interesting to note that if old cultures are used instead of young

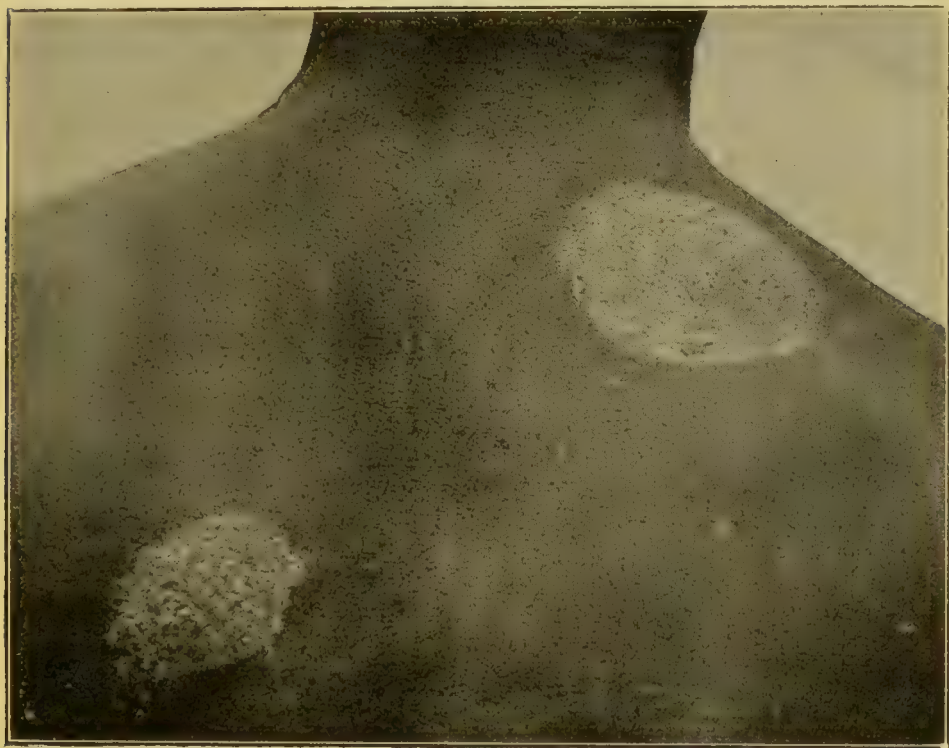


FIG. 567.—EXPERIMENTAL TINEA IMBRICATA OBTAINED BY INOCULATING CULTURES OF ENDODERMOPHYTON CONCENTRICUM.

ones, the inoculation may fail completely, or only an evanescent, superficial, papuloid, trichophytic-like patch may be induced.

Prognosis.—The general health is not affected. The patient complains of the disfigurement, which is very great, and of the pruritus, which in the hot season may be unbearable. Europeans complain also of pain, especially if the fungus attacks the hands. The disease has no tendency to recover spontaneously; its treatment is difficult, and cases apparently cured often show a return of the eruption after a few weeks or months.

Diagnosis.—The disease, once seen, cannot be confused with any other dermatomycosis; its development in concentric rings, fringed with large tissue-paper-like scales, is absolutely character-

istic. Even when the concentric rings are not present and the eruption is diffuse, the diagnosis is easy, being based on the characteristic large scales, partially covering each other like tiles on a roof.

Treatment.—Every medical man practising in the tropics well knows how difficult is the treatment of *tinea imbricata*. It is easy to obtain a temporary improvement, and even a disappearance of the eruption; but as soon as the treatment is discontinued, the eruption, as a rule, starts afresh.

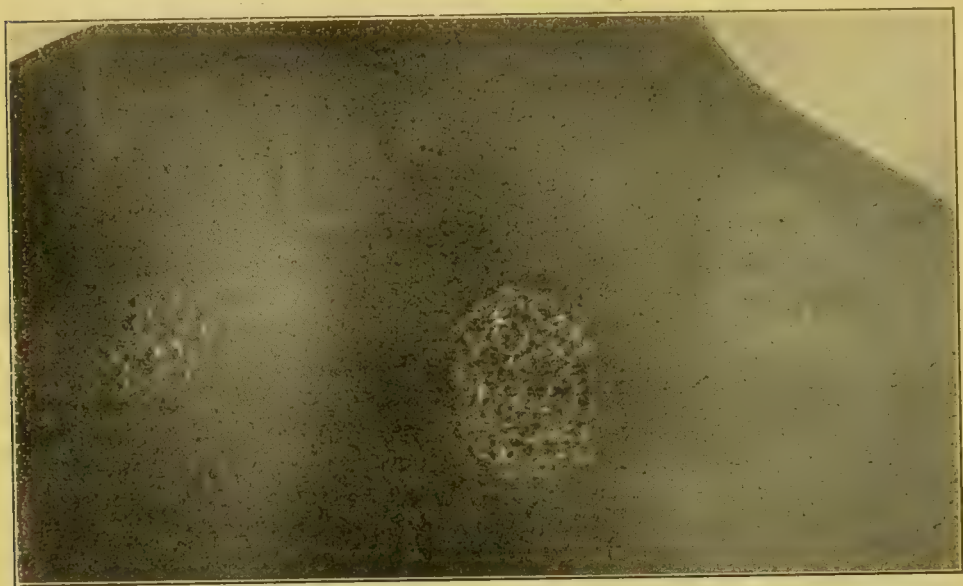


FIG. 568.—EXPERIMENTAL *TINEA IMBRICATA* OBTAINED BY INOCULATING CULTURES OF *ENDODERMOPHYTON INDICUM*.

Compare with Fig. 567. Note the different clinical appearance from experimental *tinea imbricata* induced by *Endodermophyton concentricum*.

Strong iodine liniment, as recommended by Manson, or resorcin dissolved in tincture of benzoin (resorcin, \bar{z} ii.; tr. benz. co., \bar{z} i.), as recommended by Castellani, or chrysarobin ointment (5 per cent.) give, on the whole, the best results.

In the Colombo Clinic of Tropical Medicine one of us has made various experiments to test the efficacy of the various medicaments by applying simultaneously different liniments, ointments, etc., to symmetrical parts of the body, and comparing the result. According to his results:—

Sulphur has practically no effect whatever on the fungus.

Turpentine generally induces a slight improvement, some scales disappearing, and the skin becoming smoother; the improvement, however, is not permanent, and as soon as the turpentine application is discontinued the typical scales reappear.

Calomel and other ointments of mercurial preparations do not induce any improvement in the eruption.

Thymol and *Naphthol* ointments may cause a slight improvement.

Carbolic Acid and *Epicarlin* ointments have no effect whatever.

Cyllin ointment (20 to 50 per cent.) may induce a temporary improvement.

Formalin is very effective for localized patches. The usual 40 per cent. solution is applied with care, treating each time a small portion of the erup-

tion. Formalin often causes severe pain and a certain degree of inflammation, which is best relieved by applications of iced water. Soon after the application of formalin the patches become dark brownish, which colour lasts for a few days, when they clear. Care must be taken not to apply the formalin to too large portions of the skin, and not to repeat the application too often; otherwise a peculiar form of apigmentation, similar to leucodermic patches, may appear later on, to which disfigurement coloured patients strongly object.

Chrysarobin.—The repeated application of chrysarobin ointment (30 grains to 1 ounce of vaseline) may induce a strikingly rapid improvement in cases which are not of long standing. The eruption, however, recommences a few days or weeks after its apparent disappearance. Chrysarobin is a very toxic medicament; the patient must be watched and the urine regularly examined. In one of our cases symptoms of absorption appeared after a single application.

Salicylic Acid and *Methyl Salicylate* have very little, if any, action on the fungus.

Tinctura Iodi and *Linimentum Iodi*.—*Tinctura iodi*, freely applied, induces a very marked improvement, which, however, is not permanent. Strong iodine liniment, as recommended by Manson, is most effective; it cannot be used freely, however, on patients with a delicate skin, such as women and children.

Resorcin and *Tincture of Benzoin*.—Resorcin, alone or mixed with salicylic acid in alcoholic solution and in ointments, has very little efficacy. If, however, resorcin be dissolved in *tinctura benzoini composita* (60 to 120 grains of resorcin to 1 ounce of the tincture of benzoin), very good results are obtained; it is now the routine treatment for *tinea imbricata* in the Colombo Clinic. It is to be noted that tincture of benzoin without resorcin has very little action on the eruption. The resorcin, dissolved in tincture of benzoin, should be applied freely once or twice daily on the affected regions. If the whole body be affected, one day one half is painted, and the other day the other half, alternately. The treatment must be continued for several weeks. Once or twice a week the patient is given a very hot bath, and scrubbed all over with sand-soap. Symptoms of absorption are rare; it is always prudent, however, to proceed at first with care, as it is well known that individuals may be met with, though rarely, showing idiosyncrasy for resorcin.

Prophylaxis.—Isolation, as recommended by some authorities, is hardly practicable in the regions where the dermatomycosis is, or has become, endemic, as the number of people suffering from the disease is usually very great. In tropical countries, however, where the disease has not yet appeared, the medical officers should be on the lookout, and if a case is reported, the patient should be kept isolated and thoroughly treated before allowing him to mix with the other patients or with the general population. We have seen a small epidemic of *tinea imbricata* in a hospital where a patient suffering from the complaint was allowed to mix with the other inmates.

TINEA INTERSECTA.

This dermatomycosis and its fungus were first described by Castellani in 1907. It occurs in Ceylon and Southern India.

Ætiology.—If a portion of one of the brown patches or a scale be removed and treated with liquor potassæ, the fungus is easily detected. The fungus (*Endodermophyton castellanii* Perry 1907) grows between the superficial and the deep strata of the epidermis.

It is present on the inner surface of the scales, but not on the external surface. A very remarkable fact is the extreme rarity of free spores ; in fact, in several cases one does not succeed in finding spores. The mycelium is fairly abundant, though far from being so abundant as in *tinea imbricata*. It is composed of long, straight articulated threads, which are sometimes dichotomous, the breadth

being between 3 and $3\frac{1}{2}$ μ . Each segment presents in fresh preparation two refractile bodies, one at each extremity. No aspergillar fructifications nor clusters of spores are seen. Attempts at growing the fungus have succeeded only in one case, the growth being very similar to that of *E. indicum*.

Symptomatology. —

The eruption begins with small oval or roundish, very slightly elevated itching patches, generally situated on the arms, legs, chest, and back.

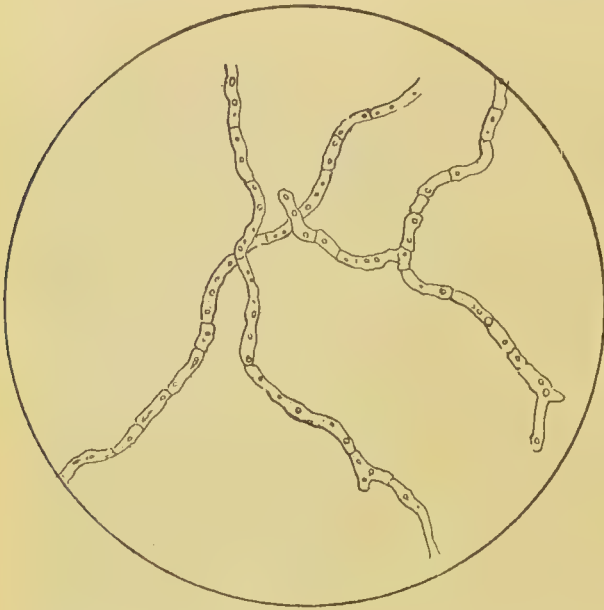


FIG. 569.—FUNGUS OF *TINEA INTERSECTA*.

The margins of these dark spots are at first slightly elevated, and dotted often with minute dark papules. The patches are dark brown in colour, much darker than the surrounding skin, and present a smooth, tense surface at first ; they increase in size slowly, and some coalesce. After a certain time the surface of the patches is no longer tense ; it becomes somewhat shrivelled and dry ; superficial cracks appear in it, so that white lines are visible intersecting the brown surface. Later the cracks become deeper, the epidermis splits, and several flaky, curled-up scales, whitish inside and dark on the outer surface, are seen ; the scales are often removed by friction, and whitish roundish patches only remain. The eruption never develops in concentric rings like *tinea imbricata* ; the patches remain isolated or fuse together, forming irregular larger patches. Some patches may disappear spontaneously after a time. The general health of the patient does not seem to be affected. In some patients there is a slight degree of eosinophilia.

Diagnosis.—When the eruption is in the very first stage it might be mistaken for a form of pityriasis versicolor. In pityriasis versicolor, however, the epidermis does not split ; moreover, in *tinea intersecta* the fungus is not found on the surface : it grows between the superficial and deep layers of the epidermis. *Tinea imbricata*

PLATE X.



TINEA INTERSECTA (FOREARM).

begins in a manner somewhat similar to *tinea intersecta*, dark brownish patches being present, and the fungus in both eruptions growing between the superficial and deep layers of the epidermis. In contrast to *tinea imbricata*, however, the eruption of *tinea intersecta* never develops in concentric rings; is far less severe, as patches may heal spontaneously; and is cured without much difficulty.

Treatment.—Tincture of iodine and the usual antiseptic ointments, such as chrysarobin (2 to 5 per cent.), answer well.

TINEA FLAVA (*vide* Plate XI.).

Synonyms.—Tropical Pityriasis Versicolor of the old authors, Microsporiasis Flava (Castellani), Achromie Parasitaire (Jeanselme), Pityriasis Versicolor Flava (Castellani), Achromia Squamosa (Crocker).

This dermatomycosis is extremely common in all tropical countries, and especially so in Southern India, Ceylon, Malaya, Java, Indo-China, and China. By many authors it has been, and is still, confused with the ordinary pityriasis versicolor of temperate zones; the investigations of Jeanselme and Castellani, however, have clearly proved that it is a different affection.

Ætiology. — The affection is due to *Malassezia tropica* Castellani 1905. The mycelial threads are generally thick, with numerous swellings, constrictions, and other irregularities in their shape. The spores are roundish or oval (3.50 to 4.50μ), and have a double contour. In recent cases the fungus is abundant, with plenty of mycelium and spores which often run into clusters. In old chronic patches the fungus becomes very scanty; the spores are not numerous, and generally do not collect in clusters; the mycelium is very scanty, and is even more irregular in shape than it is in recent patches (degeneration forms of the fungus).



FIG. 570.—FUNGUS OF TINEA FLAVA.
(From a specimen stained by the Morris-Walker method.)

Symptomatology.—The affected parts are yellowish, of much lighter colour than the surrounding healthy skin ; the yellow colour may be of various tinges, from dark, deep orange-yellow in some cases to very light canary-yellow in others. The patches are of various sizes, generally roundish, smooth, sharply defined, with margins not elevated, or only slightly so. Sometimes the patches are irregularly festooned, and may encircle an area of healthy skin. Occasionally the encircled healthy skin appears to be intersected

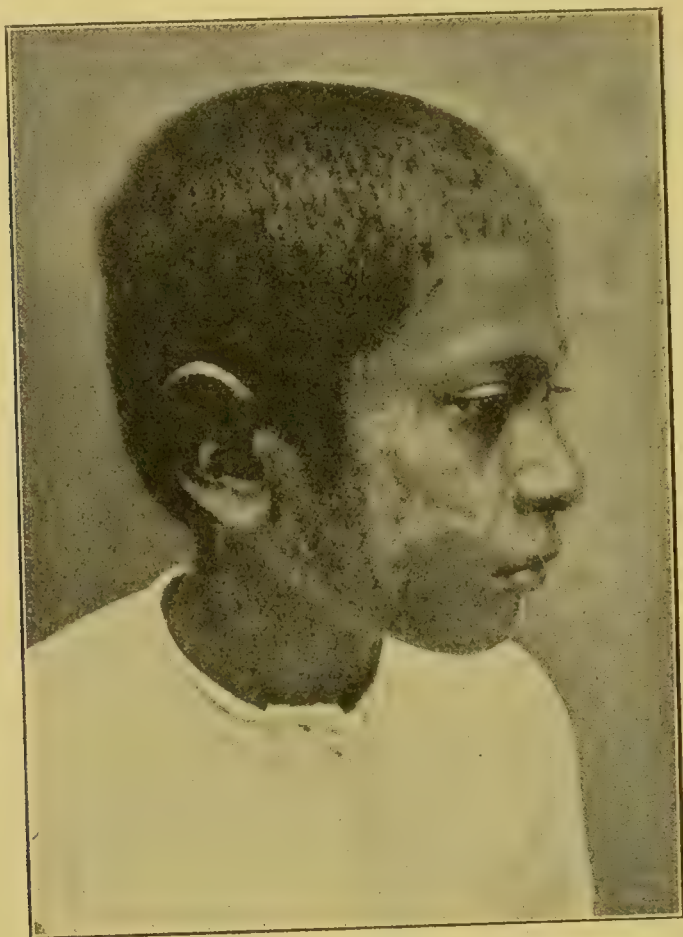


FIG. 571.—TINEA FLAVA ON THE FACE OF A SINHALESE.

by many yellowish, ribbon-like lines originating from the surrounding yellow patch. The regions more frequently affected are, in order of frequency, the face, neck, chest, and abdomen. Large portions of the body may be involved. There is, as a rule, no pruritus. The patches are not desquamating, or only very slightly so. The course of tinea flava is very chronic. In the natives of the lower classes it appears in childhood in the shape of tiny spots on the face and chest, spreading slowly during years ; they may

coalesce, covering practically the whole of the face and chest. One is occasionally surprised to see a native whose face and chest

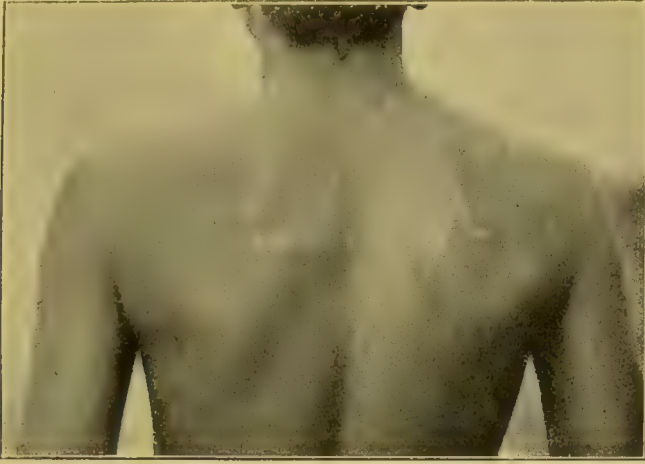


FIG. 572.—TINEA FLAVA ON THE BACK.



FIG. 573.—TINEA FLAVA OF THE ARM.

are quite light in colour ; on closer examination, it may be found that this lighter appearance is due to a diffuse, very light-coloured form of tinea flava, covering the whole of the face, neck, and chest.

In Ceylonese native women, when the patches of *tinea flava* are small, light, and situated on the face, they are considered to be beauty-spots, and are highly appreciated by the ladies and their admirers. Such patches are called in Sinhalese 'alu-hama,' which means ashy skin (*alu*, ash ; *hama*, skin). There is also another word used by native poets for such condition—'gomera,' which means skin dotted with beauty-spots. The disease, which is extremely common, attacks mostly natives, but occasionally Europeans also. In Europeans the patches are yellowish-reddish or pinkish (*tinea rosea*), and may be due to different strains of *M. tropica*.

Prognosis.—The disease is very chronic and has no tendency whatever to spontaneous cure, but the general health is not affected.

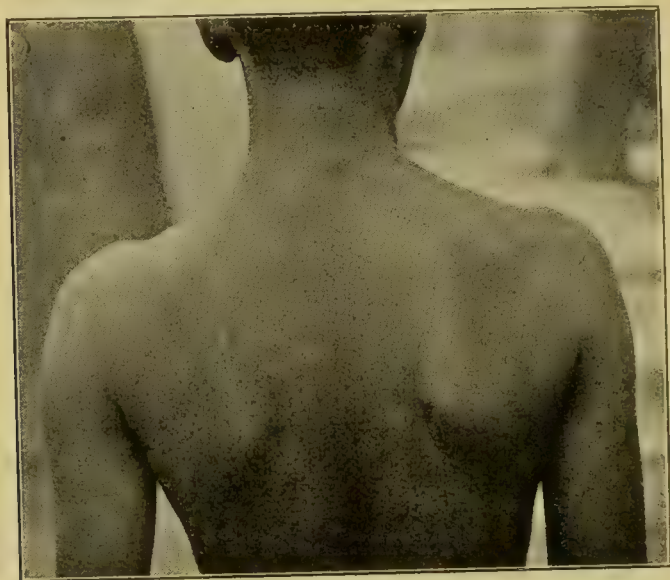


FIG. 574.—TINEA FLAVA : VARIETY GUTTATA.

Diagnosis.—*Pityriasis versicolor* of temperate zones is not of so light a tinge as *tinea flava*, never attacks the face, and is curable with the greatest facility ; while *tinea flava* affects the face more frequently than any other part of the body, and is curable only with difficulty.

Tinea Alba.—Occasionally there may be some difficulty in distinguishing *tinea flava* of a light variety from *tinea alba*. In contrast to *tinea flava*, the patches of *tinea alba* are not smooth, and the fungi belong to the genera *Trichophyton* and *Epidermophyton*.

Tinea Flava and *Pinta* are easily distinguished by the characters of their respective fungi, the fungus found in *pinta* never having the characters of a *Malassezia*.

Leucoderma patches have a characteristic dead-white colour, are often surrounded by a hyperpigmented border, and no fungus is found.

In *Circumscribed Scleroderma* (Morphœa) the patches may present a peculiar yellowish tinge, which in coloured patients may resemble tinea flava. In tinea flava, however, there is no change in the texture of the skin, which is still pliable, and does not exhibit the peculiar parchment-like feeling of scleroderma. The microscopical examination will clear the diagnosis in any doubtful case.

In Europeans, tinea flava, taking often a reddish colour (hence the term 'tinea rosea'), especially if the patient has been exerting himself, and is perspiring, might, on superficial examination, be mis-

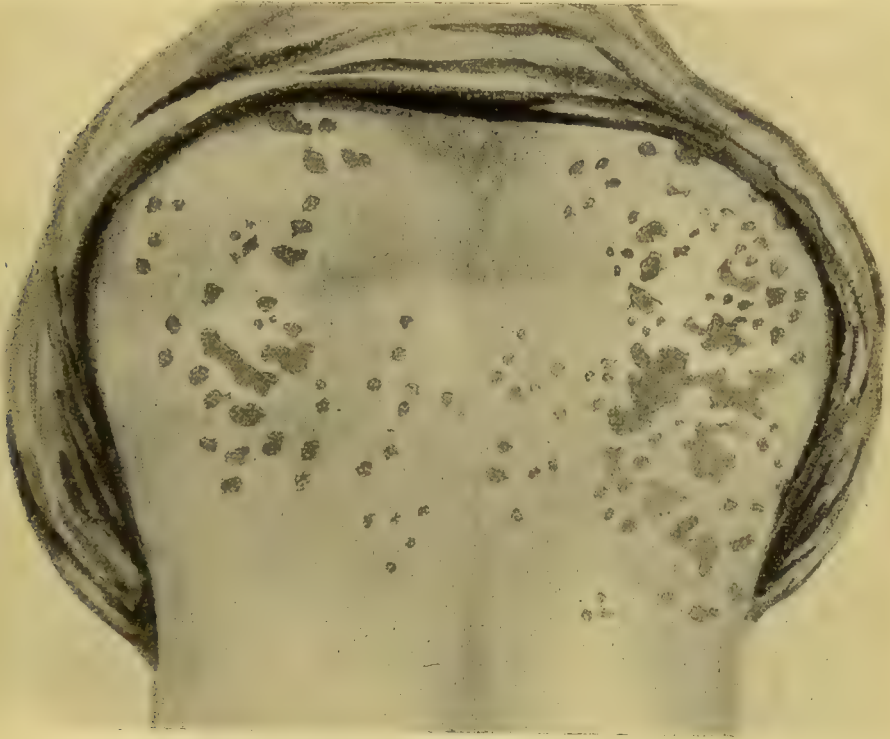


FIG. 575.—TINEA FLAVA ON THE BACK OF A EUROPEAN.

taken for a form of *Seborrhœa corporis*. The microscopical examination will clear the diagnosis, no *Malassezia* fungus being found in seborrhœa corporis.

Treatment.—Tinea flava shows no tendency to spontaneous cure, unless the patient moves to a cold climate. Even then, very often the cure is only apparent, as the condition reappears during the hot weather. The treatment is difficult. Turpentine applied daily, followed by a naphthol or epicarin ointment (2 to 5 per cent.), or a salicylic-resorcin ointment (resorcin $\mathfrak{z}\text{i}$., acidi salicyli gr. x., vaselini $\mathfrak{z}\text{i}$.), is often successful, but the treatment must be continued for months. On covered parts of the body tincture of iodine may be used, or a chrysarobin ointment (2 per cent.).

It is to be noted that in several cases the fungus of tinea flava has apparently a deep permanent disturbing action on the pigmentation processes of the

skin, as, even when the fungus has been destroyed, the patches may remain of a lighter colour than the surrounding skin for a long time, though ultimately they become again normally pigmented.

TINEA NIGRA.

Synonyms.—Pityriasis Nigra (Castellani), Microsporiasis Nigra (Castellani).

This affection is fairly common in India, Ceylon, Java, Federated Malay States, and China. The first account of this, or a very similar, dermatomycosis was published by Manson in China in 1872. Manson's observations, however, were forgotten, as they were not quoted by him in his subsequent works. Castellani, in 1905, redescribed the disease in Ceylon, and succeeded in growing the fungus.

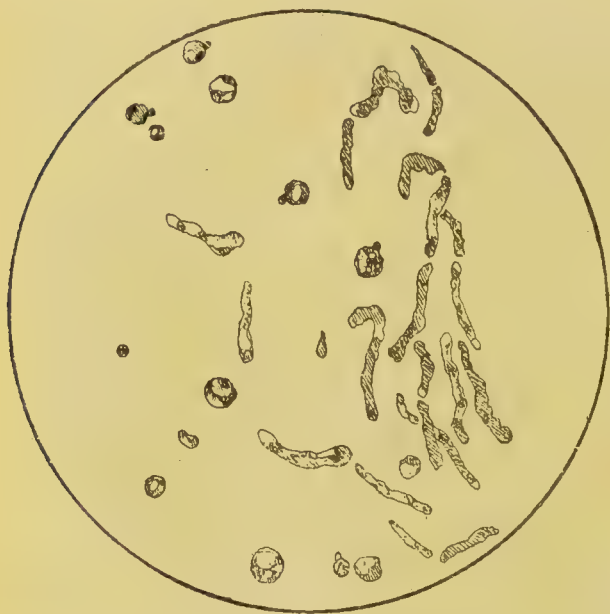


FIG. 576.—FUNGUS OF TINEA NIGRA.

Ætiology. — The affection is caused by a fungus of the genus *Cladosporium*—*C. mansoni* Castellani 1905. The fungus is found very abundantly in the lesions; the mycelial elements are rather short—18 to 20 μ in length, and $2\frac{1}{2}$ to $3\frac{1}{2}$ μ in breadth.

Sometimes they may be irregular in outline, bent, banana-shaped. The spores are globular, and most of them very large—5 to 8 μ . They are frequently arranged in clusters.

The fungus is easily cultivated by inoculating scrapings of the affected patches on maltose agar. After two to four days roundish hemispheric colonies appear, which are black, but at first have usually a greenish tinge, and may present at the periphery some radiating, delicate, pale greenish hyphæ. These colonies may remain separate or more often gradually coalesce into a jet-black knobby mass, deeply rooted into the medium.

The fungus grows well, though less abundantly, on the other sugar agars, and also on ordinary agar. In *broth* and *peptone-water* the growth is very slow, and takes place at the bottom of the tubes, with formation of a black or greenish-black sediment.

The *optimum temperature* for the growth of the fungus is between 30° and 32° C.; above 35° C. and under 25° C. the growth is much slower, and may be nil under 20° C. Further details on the fungus may be found on p. 837.

Symptomatology.—The affected parts are of a black, dull, lustreless colour, much darker than the surrounding dark, healthy skin

PLATE XI.



TINEA FLAVA ON THE FACE AND
TINEA NIGRA ON THE NECK.

borders. The borders are not elevated; the surface of the patches appears slightly furfuraceous, and has often a somewhat greasy feeling. There are no subjective symptoms, except occasionally slight itching.

Diagnosis.—Erythrasma is easily distinguished from tinea versicolor and tinea flava by the reddish tinge generally present; by the characteristic difference of its sites of development, and by the microscopical examination which will reveal the presence of *Nocardia minutissima*, a fungus morphologically very different from *Malassezia versicolor* or *M. tropica*. The differential diagnosis from tinea cruris has been discussed in this chapter under the heading Tinea Cruris.

As first noticed by Manson, after tinea cruris has been cured, the genito-crural region may in some cases present for years a peculiar brownish discoloration, and be slightly furfuraceous—a condition resembling erythrasma; in such cases neither *Epidermophyton cruris* nor *Nocardia minutissima* will be found.

Treatment.—Washing the parts with ordinary soap and warm water, carbolic, tar, or sand-soap, and then regularly applying a resorcin-salicylic ointment (resorcin, gr. x. to xxx.; ac. salicyl., gr. x. to xx.; vaseline, ʒi.), will soon cause the eruption to disappear. Instead of the ointment, a hyposulphite of soda (1 drachm to 1 ounce) or sulphurous acid lotion may be used.

BLASTOMYCOSIS.

Synonyms.—Saccharomycosis Hominis, Oidiomycosis, Dermatitis Blastomycetica, Blastomycetic Dermatitis, Zymonematosi.

Definition.—The term blastomycosis covers a group of closely allied pathological conditions due to fungi of the genera *Saccharomyces*, *Cryptococcus*, *Coccidioides*, and *Monilia*, generally characterized by the presence of warty patches and minute epidermal abscesses.

Historical and Geographical.—Wernike, in 1890, described in Buenos Ayres two cases of papillomatous eruption in which he found peculiar bodies which were at first considered to be protozoa, hence the disease was called 'protozoic dermatitis.' Later Gilchrist and Ophuls showed them to be vegetal parasites. Gilchrist, in 1894, described yeast-like organisms in sections taken from a scrofuloderma-like eruption. In the same year, independently, Busse and Bushke published a case of a pyæmia-like condition due to a *Saccharomyces*. The disease has been investigated chiefly by American observers, among whom Ricketts, Ormsby, Hyde, Montgomery, and Pusey may be mentioned. The malady occurs in the tropics, and one of us has reported several cases from Ceylon, while Phalen and Nichols have described numerous cases from the Philippine Islands, Léger two cases in Tonkin, and Lutz, Splendore, and others, cases from South America.

Ætiology.—The fungi found belong to the genera *Saccharomyces*, *Cryptococcus*, *Coccidioides*, *Monilia*, including in the last-mentioned genus the following non-sufficiently defined genera: *Zymonema*, *Parasaccharomyces*, *Parendomyces*. There are also higher, not yet well-determined fungi, all of which are apparently capable of inducing identical clinical conditions. In the tissues all the organisms exist as yeast-like, oval, or roundish cells.

Among the organisms which cause the disease, Ricketts distinguished four types:—

1. Blastomycetoid or yeast-like type: reproduction by budding; in cultures only oval or roundish cells are seen, while mycelial tubes are as a rule absent.

2. *Cryptococcus*-like type: reproduction by endosporulation within the tissues.

3. *Endomyces*-like type: the cultures present abundant submerged mycelium, which breaks up into chains of endoconidia; proliferation by budding is rare.

4. *Hyphomycetoid* type: cultures present aerial hyphæ and submerged mycelium; proliferation by gemmation occasionally seen. There are many transition forms between these four groups.

Histopathology.—There is marked proliferation of the epithelial layers, with elongated, irregularly shaped downgrowths into the corium, and epithelial globi are seen. The cells of the rete are swollen, and there is, between the cells, a polymorphonuclear leucocytic infiltration. Here and there minute miliary abscesses are present. In these, numerous polymorphonuclear and mononuclear leucocytes are found,

also epithelioid cells and giant cells, some containing the parasite. It is in the miliary abscesses that the organism is mostly found. The corium presents a general cellular infiltration made up of polymorphonuclear leucocytes and young connective-tissue cells. The vessels are dilated and their walls thickened. Splendore has noted that when the lymphatic glands are affected, which is of rare occurrence, they may present histologically a tubercular appearance.

Symptomatology.—The disease, as seen by us in Ceylon, is characterized by the presence of elevated warty patches showing, especially at their margins, minute epidermal abscesses, and often small ulcers covered by yellowish crusts. The eruption may be gyrate. The lesions at a later stage may become more deeply



FIG. 577.—BLASTOMYCOSIS OF LEG.

ulcerated, the process of ulceration generally beginning at their centre. There is very little or no pain, and very slight or no pruritus. The lesions may heal spontaneously, leaving, as a rule, soft smooth scars. Occasionally the affection recommences after a time in the scar. The lymphatic glands are not often involved. In some cases subcutaneous abscesses and gumma-like swellings may be formed. All regions of the body may be affected. The course is very chronic, the disease lasting often for many years.

Clinical Varieties.—Several varieties can be distinguished :—

1. The common cutaneous type, or North American and Asiatic type.
2. The oro-pharyngeal blastomycosis.
3. The *Coccidioides* blastomycosis.
4. The gluteal blastomycosis.

1. *Common Cutaneous Type.*—The description we have given of the disease refers to this type, which is quite common in Ceylon,



FIG. 578.—BLASTOMYCOSIS OF THE UPPER LIP : ULCERATIVE STAGE.
(From a case in the Colombo Clinic.)



FIG. 579.—BLASTOMYCOSIS OF THE MOUTH.
(From a photograph by Splendore.)

Southern India, Philippine Islands, Indo-China, Tonkin, and probably in many other parts of the tropics. A very frequent localization in Ceylon is the upper lip (see Fig. 578), the disease extending later occasionally to the nasal mucosa, and very rarely to the oral mucosa. In several of our cases a monilia-like fungus was grown.

2. *Oral Blastomycosis.*—This variety has been investigated by Lutz and Splendore in South America. Splendore considers the fungus to be a *Zymonema*, and calls the disease *zymonematosis*.

As most authorities do not accept the genus *Zymonema*, we place the fungus in the genus *Monilia* (see Chapter XXVIII.). The skin lesions are identical with those found in the common type of the malady, but the infection spreads to the oral mucosa, lips, gums, soft and hard palate, giving rise to numerous small verrucoid papillomatous or frambæsi-form patches, which later may undergo deep ulceration. The disease later invades the pharynx, nose, larynx, and bronchi, and often terminates fatally.



FIG. 580.—BLASTOMYCOLITIC ULCER.
(From a photograph by Splendore.)

3. *Blastomycosis Coccidioides* (synonym, Protozoic disease) was described by Wernike of Buenos Ayres in 1890, and later by Posadas; it was further investigated by Ophüls, Moffit, and others. It was at first considered to be of protozoal



FIG. 581.—BLASTOMYCOSIS GLUTEALIS.
(From a case in the Colombo Clinic.)

origin. The lesions on the skin are somewhat similar to those found in the more usual type of blastomycosis—viz., verrucose patches with minute epidermal abscesses, but are generally of larger size, and visceral complications are the rule, the malady termina-

ting almost always fatally. In the affected tissues peculiar large structures are seen, some of which may contain as many as 100 spore-like bodies (see chapters on Fungi, p. 771).

4. *Gluteal Blastomycosis*.—This condition was described by Kartulis some years ago in Egypt. We have often observed it in Ceylon. The skin of the gluteal region—one nate or both nates—presents a diffuse induration, and is cribrated with the opening of sinuses, from which a thin pus exudes. The sinuses may be very deep and connected with each other, but in our cases did not communicate with the intestine. The pus does not contain grains, as is the case with actinomycosis. The patient may complain of pain and discomfort on sitting down. The disease is chronic.

Maxwell has reported from Formosa cases of a fistulous disease of the buttocks, which may be of the same nature. He is inclined, however, to consider them to be of amœbic origin.

Diagnosis.—This is based, in the usual type of the malady, on the presence of verrucose patches with micro-abscesses, in which the fungi are found. The disease has been often confused with tuberculosis verrucosa, with a syphilide, with an epitheliomatous lesion, and, in the tropics, with atypical frambœsia and even ringworm. The microscopical examination and cultivation of scrapings, or, better, of the pus of the miliary abscesses present in the lesions, will be necessary to clear the diagnosis. A droplet of the pus, or a minute portion of teased tissue, is placed on a slide with a drop of a 30 per cent. solution of potassium hydrate, and a cover-glass is placed on the preparation; after about half an hour in a temperate climate, and generally a few minutes only in a tropical climate, the tissue and pus cells are disintegrated by the potash solution, while the organisms, being resistant, can be easily seen. Cultures should also be made from the pus. It is important to note that yeast-like organisms may be frequently found as saprophytes on the surface of various ulcerated skin lesions, which have nothing to do with true blastomycosis.

Oral blastomycosis may occasionally be confused with espundia, from which it is differentiated by the absence of *Leishmania* and presence of fungi. *Blastomycosis coccidioides* is easily diagnosed by the presence of bodies containing numerous—as many as 100—endospores. *Gluteal blastomycosis* is distinguished from actinomycotic and mycetomatous conditions by the absence of the grains and the characters of the fungi; from a syphilitic condition by the inefficacy of a mercurial treatment; from tubercular fistulous disease by the massive diffuse induration, and absence of tubercular cutireaction.

Prognosis.—The disease very rarely heals spontaneously. The general health in the common type of the malady is not much affected, but the patients complain of the disfigurement. Occasionally the organisms from the skin lesions enter the general circulation, and a condition similar to pyæmia develops. Cases of

systemic blastomycosis terminating fatally, without any skin lesion, have also been described. The prognosis of blastomycosis coccidioides and oral blastomycosis is bad, while blastomycosis glutealis is most persistent, though the general health is not much affected.

Treatment.—Potassium iodide, given in large doses (gr. xv. to xx. three or four times daily), has a beneficial effect, though it is not so efficacious as in sporotrichosis. The application of Röntgen rays to the lesions is useful. In mild cases the local application of various disinfectants—*e.g.*, perchloride of mercury (1 in 1,000), diluted tincture of iodine, etc., may bring about a cure. The following ointment is useful, especially in the localization to the upper lip: Ichthyol, gr. xv. ; ung. belladonnæ, ʒii. ; vaselini, ad ʒi. No treatment is apparently of much use in blastomycosis coccidioides, in oropharyngeal blastomycosis, or in blastomycosis glutealis.

SPOROTRICHOSIS.

Schenk, in 1898, described a case of multiple chronic abscesses in the pus of which a *Sporotrichum* was found. Hektoen and Perkins reported two similar cases also in the United States in 1900. De Beurmann published in 1903 a case of similar nature in France. De Beurmann and Gougerot, from 1906 onwards, have published many cases, and have completely investigated the subject of human sporotrichosis bacteriologically and histologically, as well as clinically. Their researches have been confirmed by Gaucher and Monier-Vinard, Duval and Fago, Vaquez, Bonnot, Lambry, Adamson, Esmeni, and many others. Cases have been reported recently from the tropics by Lutz and Splendore in Brazil, and by us in Ceylon. Clair has observed the disease in Arab stokers on board some steamers of the Messageries Maritimes Company.

Ætiology.—The fungi causing the disease belong to the genus *Sporotrichum* Link 1809, of which eight species have been so far described in man :—

<i>Sporotrichum</i> Link 1809	(	<i>S. schenki</i> Hektoen and Perkins 1901.
		<i>S. beurmanni</i> Matruchot and Ramond 1905.
		<i>S. dori</i> de Beurmann and Gougerot 1906.
		<i>S. gougeroti</i> Matruchot 1910.
		<i>S. jeanselmei</i> Brumpt and Langeron 1910.
		<i>S. indicum</i> Castellani 1908.
		<i>S. asteroides</i> Splendore 1909.
		<i>S. lesnei</i> Vuillemin 1910.

For the description of these organisms, see chapters on Fungi (p. 831).

The species so far found in the tropics are—*S. beurmanni* Matruchot and Ramond in Brazil and Africa, *S. asteroides* Splendore 1909 in Brazil, and *S. indicum* Castellani 1908 in Ceylon. These fungi are morphologically very similar. In the human lesions the fungus appears morphologically as a yeast, and is very scarce. In cultures

mycelial threads and numerous spores are seen. The spores are ovoid, 5 to 6 μ in length by 3 to 4 μ in breadth. The mycelial filaments are very slender (2 μ) in *S. beurmanni* and *S. schenki*; somewhat broader (2½ to 3 μ) in *S. indicum*. *S. asteroides* is characterized by the presence of peculiar radiate bodies in the affected tissues. These fungi grow easily on the ordinary culture media, best of all on Sabouraud's peptone-glucose agar. Colonies develop from the fourth to the tenth day as small white points, surrounded by a delicately rayed aureola of whitish colour. They gradually increase in size, coalesce, become convoluted, and take a dark greyish, brownish, and even black colour. These fungi live apparently saprophytic on vegetables (lettuce-leaves, and other kinds of vegetables used as salads) and on insects (flies, caterpillars, larvæ). According to De Beurmann, infection takes place by contact

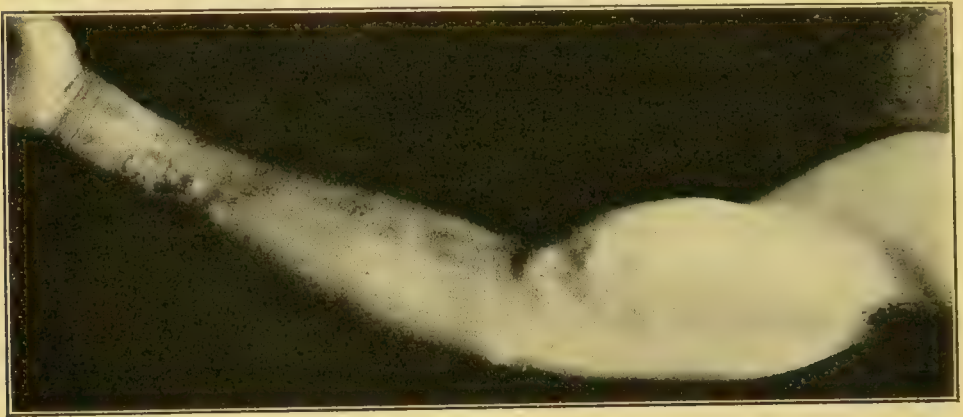


FIG. 582.—SPOROTRICHIC LYMPHANGITIS.

(From a photograph by Splendore.)

with unclean vegetables. The fungi may also, apparently, live saprophytically in the oral cavity and pharynx of certain individuals, who then become carriers.

The rat, mouse, monkey, cat, and very young guinea-pigs, are all more or less susceptible, and may be infected by subcutaneous or intraperitoneal inoculation. The rat is the most susceptible animal. In it Lutz and Splendore have described a spontaneous sporotrichosis due to a *Sporotrichum* apparently identical with *S. beurmanni*. The affection has also been observed to occur spontaneously in the dog (Gougerot and Caravan) and in the mule (Fonteynot and Carongeau) in Madagascar.

Histopathology.—The histopathology of the cases due to *S. beurmanni* has been investigated by De Beurmann and Gougerot; that of the cases due to *S. asteroides* by Splendore; that of the cases due to *S. indicum* by ourselves. Whatever the causative species of *Sporotrichum*, the histological lesions are apparently the same, and correspond to the three principal types described

by De Beurmann and Gougerot—viz.: (1) An epithelioid type, with presence of giant cells—this corresponds to the tuberculoid type of De Beurmann and Gougerot; (2) a lympho-connective tissue or syphiloid reaction; (3) a polymorphonuclear or a ecthymatiform type.

Symptomatology.—In a well-marked case, several gummatous-like swellings, situated in the subcutaneous tissue, are present on various parts of the body—the arms, legs, and trunk. The size varies from that of a small pea to that of an orange. On palpation, they are hard, resistant at first; later they soften, the skin becomes reddish or violaceous, and after a time perforates. From the fistulous opening a yellowish homogeneous pus is slowly evacuated, or at times a thin serous discharge. In some cases the suppuration ceases, granulation sets in, and a coarse cheloid-like scar remains. In other cases the fistulous opening enlarges and a crateriform ulcer, with often a fungating fundus, develops. The lymphatic glands may occasionally become affected. The course of the disease is very chronic. In some cases deep gummata develop under the periosteum of various bones, and in the muscles. Large granulating ulcerations may form in the buccopharynx and larynx. The general health, as a rule, is not much affected.

Clinical Varieties.—The commonest varieties met with are:—

1. The localized type, with sporotrichic chancre and ascending sporotrichic lymphangitis.
2. The disseminated gummatous type.
3. The disseminated ulcerative type, presenting often polymorphic lesions—viz., syphilitic-like, tubercular-like, ecthymatous, rupial, furuncular.
4. The extracutaneous type, with sporotrichic lesions of the mucous membranes, the muscles, the articulations, the bones, the organs of special sense, the internal organs—lungs, kidneys, etc.

De Beurmann has put on record a case of mycetoma of sporotrichic origin. Cases of systemic sporotrichosis have been described.

Diagnosis.—The principal clinical signs on which to base a *probable* diagnosis of sporotrichosis are the presence of gumma-like lesions while the patient is in a good general state of health; the mixture of lesions of different appearance; partial cup-shaped softening of the nodes, breaking down in the centre and ending in ulceration, with violaceous edges generally undermined; presence of viscous pus or of a serous lemon-yellow discharge; indolent evolutions; absence in most cases of enlarged glands. The definite diagnosis can only be made by bacteriological methods. The simple microscopical examination of the pus of the abscesses, or scrapings of the ulcers, is not sufficient, as the fungus is extremely scarce. Cultivation must be resorted to. A few glucose-agar tubes are inoculated in the usual way, and kept at room-temperature without capping. After four to ten days the first colonies of *Sporotrichum* will appear.

Treatment.—Potassium or sodium iodides in full doses (15 to 20 grains three to four times daily), well diluted in water or milk, induce a rapid disappearance of all the lesions. In persons who cannot take potassium iodide, saiodin in the same dose may be given in cachets. The ulcerated lesions may be dressed with a lotion of potass. iodide 10 parts, iodine 1 part, water 500 parts. Surgical measures should be avoided.

Prophylaxis.—Any small wound should be disinfected with tr. iodi.

SACCHAROMYCOSIS EPIDERMICA.

In Ceylon and Southern India it is not rare to observe on the arms and, occasionally the chest, of Europeans, small, roundish patches of a dirty yellow or brownish colour, which can be removed by thorough scraping. These patches consist of large numbers of blastomyces-like elements of various size—roundish or oval—which so far have not been cultivated.

INTERTRIGO SACCHAROMYCETICA.

Synonym.—Intertrigo Blastomycetica.

Remarks.—Cases of this affection have been observed by Castellani in Ceylon, and similar ones have been reported by Whitfield and others in Europe. The affection is apparently rare. It generally attacks the scroto-crural and axillary regions. The affected skin is red, and there may be slight exudation. The borders of the eruption are fairly well marked, but never elevated. In most cases there is not much itching, and the affection may recover spontaneously.

Ætiology.—In scrapings a *Saccharomyces* (*S. samboni* Castellani 1907), which is easily cultivated on sugar media, is found.

Treatment.—The treatment consists in washing the affected parts with potassium permanganate lotion, 1 in 4,000, or resorcin, 1 in 100; followed by the application of powders of boric acid \bar{z} i., talci \bar{z} i.; or salicylic acid gr. x., talci \bar{z} i.

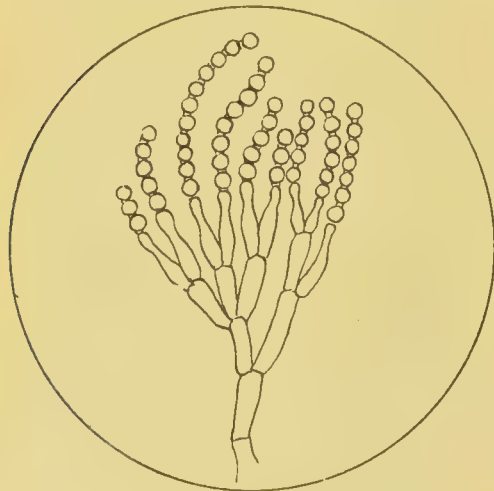


FIG. 583.—PENICILLIUM FRUCTIFICATION.

ASPERGILLOSIS AND PENICILLIOSIS OF HAIRY PARTS.

The affected hairs—generally those of the beard and moustache, occasionally of the axilla—present dirty greyish or

whitish punctiform formations, which on microscopical examination are seen to consist of penicillar or aspergillar fungi (*Penicillium barbæ*, *Aspergillus barbæ*). Occasionally both types of fungi are found on the same patient. The affection is very chronic. The diagnosis is easy, the characteristic aspergillus and penicillium fructifications distinguishing this condition from other parasitic nodular affections. The simplest method of treatment is by shaving, and afterwards using regularly a medicated soap, such as carbolic soap, tar soap, or sulphur soap. If the patient does not wish to shave his beard, turpentine may be tried.

In natives who do not bathe frequently, such as old persons and beggars, the skin presents often large dark patches due to accumulated dirt, in which aspergillar and penicillar fungi are often present, living saprophytically. This condition has nothing to do with pinta, as a thorough scrubbing with soap will remove the dirt and the aspergillar and penicillar fungi which may be present.

PINTA.

Synonyms.—Mal de los Pintos, Mal del Pinto, Caraate, Tina, Quirica, Pannus Carateus (Alibert), Tache Endémique des Cordillères (Alibert), Lota, Cativi.

Definition.—The term 'pinta' does not indicate a single disease, but a group of closely allied dermatomycoses characterized by the presence of patches of various colour, due to different species of fungi of the genera *Aspergillus*, *Penicillium*, *Monilia*, and *Montoyella*.

History.—The disease first began to draw the attention of medical writers in the eighteenth century, though it was apparently well known to the inhabitants of the affected regions since remote times, as it is found to have formed the subject of prayers and supplications used by the Aztecs, centuries before the Spanish Conquest.

A short description of the malady is found in the Encyclopædia of Polanko, of Mexico, in 1760; and in Juan de Velasco's 'Historia,' in 1789, in Columbia. Velasco believed the malady to have been imported by African slaves. A fairly complete description is given by Alibert, in 1829, under the name of 'tache endémique des Cordillères,' or 'pannus carateus.' Among the modern authors, the clinical and pathological investigation of Gomez, Uribe, Vribechyel, Iryz, Ruiz y Sandoval, Gastambide, may be mentioned.

More recently the investigation into the ætiology of pinta by Montoya has been of the greatest importance.

Climatology.—Pinta is practically limited to tropical America, where it is found in Venezuela, Peru, Chili, Central American States, Mexico. Cases have been reported from Brazil. It is extremely common in Columbia, where, according to Montoya, 4 per cent. of the total population is affected. There the patient affected with the disease is called 'caratejo.' The disease is not equally distributed; in each country there are localities where the disease is common, while other districts are almost unaffected. In Columbia

it is the northern province of Santander which is more particularly affected; in Mexico the disease is most frequently found in the provinces of Tabaxo, Chiaspas, Valladolid, Michoacan.

A few cases of pinta have been reported from Egypt by Madden, Goodman, and Sandwith, and previously Legrain described somewhat similar cases from Tripoli and the Sahara. Legrain, however, did not find any fungus. A few isolated cases have also been reported from the Gold Coast, and others from the Philippine Islands by P. G. Woolley. In Ceylon and India only imported cases are seen.

Ætiology.—Previously to Ruiz y Sandoval and Montoya's investigations the disease used to be ascribed to many different causes. Some authors believed it to be due to the mineral salts (sulphates) contained in the waters of the mines and other localities where the malady is endemic; others considered it to be due simply to insani-tary conditions, insufficient food, and a hot and damp climate; others, again, believed the affection to be induced by the action on the skin of volcanic cinders; while, according to some authorities, the malady was a hereditary complaint.

Ruiz y Sandoval, in Mexico, first detected the parasitic nature of pinta. He believed there was only one species of fungus to be found in the affection, and that the different colours of the patches were due to the different depths at which the fungus was growing in the various strata of the epidermis. Montoya's classical researches in 1898 clearly showed the plurality of species and genera of the fungi found in the disease, and demonstrated that each variety of pinta is due to a different fungus. More than twenty different species were found by him.

In the present state of our knowledge of pinta it is impossible to give a satisfactory classification of these fungi. The principal ones may be collected into the following groups:—

- I. Fungi of genus *Aspergillus*: *Aspergillus pictor* Blanchard 1895, and several other species. *A. pictor* is found in the pure violet variety of pinta; the other species are observed in the pure blue and bluish and violet-black varieties, as well as in a form of the red variety. Several of these species are not in reality true *Aspergilli*, as they possess organs of fructification intermediate between those of the genus *Aspergillus* and those of the genus *Penicillium*.
- II. Fungi of genus *Penicillium*: *Penicillium montoyai* Castellani 1907, and several other species. They are found in some greyish-violet varieties of pinta.
- III. Fungi of genus *Monilia*: *Monilia montoyai* Castellani 1907. Found in some cases of white pinta.
- IV. Fungi of genus *Montoyella*: *Montoyella nigra* Castellani 1907. Found in one variety of black pinta. *M. boxini* Castellani 1907. Found in a red variety of pinta.

The term *Aspergillus* (*Trichophyton*) *pictor*, introduced by Blanchard in 1895, when the plurality of species of the fungi found in pinta had not yet been demonstrated, is now used in a restricted sense to indicate the *Aspergillus* found in the pure violet variety of the disease.

Montoya believes that the fungi found in Columbian pinta, or caraate, are different species from those found in Mexican pinta.

Appearance of the Fungi in Fresh Preparations.—Scrapings from the patches examined in liquor potassæ show in most cases between the epithelial cells long dichotomous mycelial threads, from which shorter and thicker branches take origin at various points. These thicker branches terminate in comparatively large fructifications. The morphological characters of these fructifications vary according to the species and genus of the fungus present. They may be typical aspergillar or penicillium-like fructifications, or they may show intermediate characters between those of *Aspergillus* and *Penicillium*. In many cases the fructification organ is represented by a pear-shaped or triangular formation, surmounted by five to six rods (sterigmata), each of which supports a string of five to six spores. The number of these spores, however, may vary. They are globular, have a smooth surface, show a double contour, and their diameter is much larger than that of the mycelial tubes.

In the cases where the fungus present is a *Monilia* or a *Montoyella*, such or similar fructifications are absent, and only mycelial tubes and some scattered spores are seen.

Cultures.—The various fungi found in pinta are easily cultivated, the best medium being Sabouraud's maltose agar. The *optimum* temperature is between 30° and 40° C.

The composition of Sabouraud's medium is :—

Maltose	..	..	..	..	4 grammes.
Pepton (Chassaing)	..	..	..	..	1 gramme.
Agar	..	..	..	..	1.5 grammes.
Distilled water	..	..	..	..	100 c.c.

Culturally, the fungi may be divided in five groups :—

1. Those showing in cultures aspergillar fructifications.
2. Those showing penicillium fructifications.
3. Those showing intermediate fructifications between the *Aspergillus* and the *Penicillium*.
4. Those showing simpler fructifications characteristic of the genus *Monilia*—viz., a mycelial thread terminating in a single string or small bunch of roundish spores.
5. Those in which higher organs of reproduction are absent, and reproduction takes place somewhat similarly to what is observed in the genera *Microsporon* and *Trichophyton*—by conidia and terminal segmented and unsegmented 'spindles.' The fungi of this group, found by Montoya in a variety of black pinta, by Bodin, and later by Castellani, in a variety of red pinta, constitute the genus *Montoyella*.

Inoculation Experiments.—Montoya has tried to infect rabbits using various cultures of the fungi found in the disease. On several

occasions a desquamation of skin and loss of hair was observed, and some chromatic patches appeared. Uribe succeeded in inoculating several mulattoes.

According to Montoya, the fungi of pinta live saprophytically in certain waters, especially in those of mines and localities where the temperature is constantly high. He states that he obtained pure cultures of the pinta fungi direct from such waters. He has also found the same fungi as ectoparasites on the bodies of mosquitoes of the genus *Culex*, on sandflies (*Simulium*), and on the body of some bugs (*Clinocoris*), which are very common in the mines. He believes, therefore, that mosquitoes and other insects play a rôle in the transmission of the disease.

In some old chronic cases of pinta an *Acarus*—somewhat resembling *Acarus scabiei*, though larger—has been found to live in the epidermal squamæ, and some writers believe that this *Acarus* also plays a part in the transmission of the malady.

Predisposing Causes.—What the older authors believed to be the true causes of pinta—viz., a hot, damp, climate; insanitary surroundings and poor feeding; the mineral salts contained in the waters—are only predisposing causes, some of which, however, are of great importance. The hot, damp climate favours the growth of the fungi; the water of the mines, which contains a large amount of mineral salts (especially sulphates), produces after a time in those who use it for washing, etc., a dermatitis with fissures and other eczematous-like lesions which greatly facilitate the infection.

All races are liable to be attacked by the disease, but mulattoes seem to be particularly prone to become infected. Albinos are said to be immune. Both sexes are equally liable to become infected, though males, on account of their occupations, are more frequently affected. The malady generally appears between the age of fifteen and twenty-five, but it may appear at any age, and has been seen in children three or four years old.

It has been observed that individuals of the negro race are more liable to contract the black variety than any other kind of the disease, while whites are especially liable to contract the red variety. Miners and agricultural labourers are affected in most cases by the violet variety.

Symptomatology.—The disease begins very gradually. After an incubation period, varying, according to different authors, between a few weeks and some months, one or several small slightly pruriginous spots appear on uncovered parts of the body. The spots increase very slowly in size, and some may fuse together. They are roundish, or may have an irregular outline. At first they are hardly raised above the normal skin. The surface of the patches is generally dry and rough, and is covered with fine pityriasic squamæ in recent cases, with larger and thicker scales in older ones. Occasionally, in chronic cases, the surface of the patches, instead of being dry, may be moist or somewhat greasy or glutinous.

The hairs of the affected regions become atrophied, and later on fall out. The shedding of hair is not due to the fungi invading directly the hair; it is due to a peculiar fibrosis of the hair follicle, at the place of the hair a hard formation remaining, like a grain of sand (fibroid folliculitis of Montoya).

Pruritus is generally well marked, especially at night-time. There are often patches of hyperkeratosis in the palms and soles, and the normal lines and sulci appear much deeper.

Old chronic cases occasionally exhale a peculiar musty odour, which has been compared to the smell of cat's urine, or to the bad smell of dirty linen kept in a warm, damp place.

The affection may spread to the whole body, except the palms of the hands and the soles of the feet. The nails are never attacked. The scalp is not usually affected.

The disease has no tendency to spontaneous cure. Its course is very chronic, and may last the whole of the patient's life.

Some of the older authors state that the patients during the incubation period suffer from fever, vomiting, and diarrhoea. Montoya says that pinta patients have not got an odour *sui generis*, as stated by most observers. In cleanly patients no smell whatever is noticeable, apart from the peculiar odour of the negro race.

Clinical Varieties.—Clinically, six different varieties may be distinguished, each of which shows several subvarieties:—

1. The Black Variety.
2. The Blue Variety.
3. The Violet Variety.
4. The Red Variety.
5. The Yellow Variety.
6. The White Variety.

Black Variety.—The patches are of a black colour, and are very often found on the face, though they may be present on any other part of the body except the palms and soles, similarly to all the other varieties. The patches are hardly raised, and their surface is slightly desquamating. Pruritus is generally complained of, but is not, as a rule, so unbearable as in the other varieties. Black pinta is found in negroes more frequently than in individuals of Caucasian race. The course is very chronic. The treatment is difficult, though not so difficult as in the other varieties.

Black pinta shows two subvarieties—one is characterized by the presence of patches of a black-violet colour; the other by patches of jet-black, indian-ink black colour. The fungus found in the first is an *Aspergillus* (species undetermined); in the second a *Montoyella* (*M. nigra*).

Blue Variety.—This is much less frequent than black pinta. The patches are of a blue colour. They generally begin to appear first on the dorsum of the hands, and then tend to spread over the whole body—uncovered as well as covered parts. There generally is intense pruritus.

The fungus usually found in blue pinta is *Aspergillus*.

Violet Variety.—Apart from the colour of the patches, which is violet, the clinical symptoms and course of this variety are identical with those of blue pinta. It is extremely common among rural labourers and miners.

There are numerous subvarieties of violet pinta. In some cases the patches are of a pure violet cure; in other cases the colour may be violet-greyish, violet-brownish, violet-purplish. There are cases in which the patches are at first of a greenish colour, to become violet-bluish later on. The fungus found in the pure violet pinta is an *Aspergillus* (*A. pictor* Blanchard 1895); the fungus found in the violet-greyish cases is a *Penicillium*—*P. montoyai* Cast. 1907; the fungi found in the other varieties are *Aspergilli* or fungi presenting transition characters between the *Aspergillus* and the *Penicillium*.

Red Variety.—This is the commonest variety found in white patients. The patches first develop, as a rule, on the dorsum of the hands and feet, and spread to large portions of the body. The patches are red—often brick-red—and usually show a rather abundant desquamation. Pruritus is very distressing, especially at night-time. Secondary lesions due to scratchings and inoculation of pyogenic micro-organisms are not rare. Ulcerative lesions have been reported by several observers as occasionally occurring.

In some cases of red pinta an *Aspergillus* (species not determined) is found; in others a fungus of the genus *Montoyella*, *M. bodini* Cast. 1907, found by Bodin in 1903 in a patient who was under the treatment of Darier.

Castellani, in 1907, found the same or a very similar *Montoyella* in a case of red pinta observed in a European sailor who had long been in tropical America. In this case the disease had not yet spread much. Besides the red patches, there was on the right forearm a small greyish-violet spot, in which a fungus was found, which gave *Penicillium* fructifications in cultures (*P. montoyai*).

Red pinta is more serious than any other variety, as it affects not only the superficial strata of the epidermis, but the rete Malpighii as well as the corium.

Yellow Variety.—Very common among half-castes. It generally begins on the chest or arms. The patches are yellow, and at first are not pruriginous and not desquamating. In old cases, however, there is pruritus. This variety is very frequently mixed with patches of white pinta, and is difficult to cure. The fungi found belong to the genera *Monilia* and *Aspergillus*.

White Variety.—The patches are of a dull white colour, and are generally very large. The surface is usually rough and desquamating, but at times it may be smooth. In some cases a fungus of the genus *Monilia* is present, but, according to Montoya, in other cases no fungus whatever is to be found. Montoya considers the white variety of pinta to represent in many cases the ultimate retrogressive stage of all the other varieties except the red. The patches

of white pinta would be in such cases in reality unpigmented, leucoderma-like areas due to the disturbing action of the various fungi on the pigmentation processes of the skin.

Montoya's belief on the nature of white pinta in some cases is supported by Castellani's observations on *tinea flava* and *tinea alba*. In both these dermatomycoses white, pseudo-leucodermic patches may occasionally be seen long after the fungus had died out, and these patches may remain unpigmented for months and years.

Mixed Variety.—Not infrequently the same patient may be affected with several varieties of pinta, presenting a grotesque tattooed or piebald appearance.

It is especially white pinta which is found associated with one or more of the other varieties.

Diagnosis.—This does not present any difficulty in the countries where the disease is endemic. In any doubtful case the microscopical examination, supplemented when necessary by the use of cultural methods, will clear the diagnosis.

Differential Diagnosis: Tinea nigra.—In contrast to the black variety of pinta, *tinea nigra* is very superficial, does not extend to large portions of the body, may attack the palms of the hands, is not pruriginous, is easily cured except when affecting the palms. The microscopical examination of scrapings from patches of *tinea nigra* will show mycelial tubes of irregular shape and large globular spores collected in bunches. The spores are grouped together in a somewhat similar manner to what one sees in pityriasis versicolor.

Tinea flava.—In contrast to yellow pinta, the fungus of *tinea flava* is a *Malassezia*, has the same morphological characters of the fungus found in pityriasis versicolor, and cannot be grown artificially.

Tinea albigena and Tinea alba.—These are trichophytic affections, and are easily distinguished by the characters of the fungi.

Leprosy can be distinguished from white pinta lesions by the sensibility not being impaired in pinta.

Only white pinta patches with no fungus might be mistaken for *leucoderma* on superficial examination. White pinta is very often associated with other varieties of pinta, which are easily diagnosed. Leucodermic patches are smooth, non-pruriginous, and the skin surrounding them is often hyperpigmented.

Prognosis.—Pinta, though not a fatal disease, must be considered a serious affection, as its course is chronic, and the treatment very difficult. In most cases the general health remains satisfactory, but the disfigurement is very distressing to the patients, who often become nervous and irritable. The pruritus, which is generally more marked at night, is also a cause of great distress and sleeplessness.

Treatment.—The popular treatment in Columbia is citrine ointment (mercury nitrate ointment). Other parasitocides have been tried, with a varying degree of success. When the eruption is at the very beginning, tincture of iodine may suffice. The best results

have been obtained by using chrysarobin (chrysarobin, gr. x. to xxx.; ung. zinci ox., ʒi.). This must be applied cautiously. When the malady affects large tracts of the body, only a portion should be treated at a time, to prevent as far as possible symptoms of absorption. The urine should be regularly analyzed during the treatment. The chrysarobin ointment must not be applied to the face, lest a severe conjunctivitis should develop. For the face a resorcin, or resorcin-sulphur, or resorcin-salicylic, or salicylic acid ointment (resorcini, gr. xxx. to ʒi.; ac. salicylici, gr. xv.; vaseline, ʒi.), is advisable, or citrine ointment may be used.

Montoya recommends chrysarobin dissolved in chloroform (chrysarobin 10 parts, chloroform 90 parts). Apply with a fine brush. When dry, apply gutta-percha dissolved in chloroform (gutta-percha 10 parts, chloroform 90 parts).

Chrysarobin may conveniently be applied in the form of a vernisol varnish (5 to 10 per cent.).

PIEDRA.

Synonym.—Trichosporosis Tropica.

Definition.—Piedra is a mycotic disease of some parts of South America causing very hard, small nodosities on the hair.

Historical and Geographical.—The condition has been known locally in Columbia since remote times, but the first scientific descriptions are due to Desenne (1878), Morris (1879), Osaria, and Megalhaes. More recently the condition has been studied by

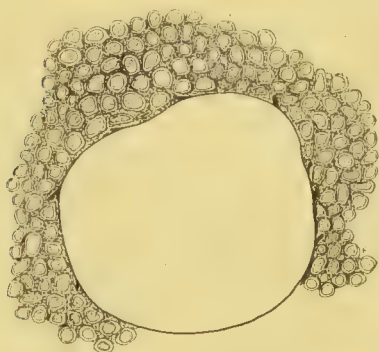


FIG. 584.—TRANSVERSE SECTION THROUGH A PIEDRA NODULE.



FIG. 585.—PIEDRA.

Juhel Renoy, J. M. H. MacLeod, Horta, and others. This disease of the hair is common in some districts of Columbia, especially the valley of Canca; but closely allied conditions are observed in

several parts of the tropics, and occasionally in temperate zones (*piedra nostras*).

Ætiology.—If an affected hair is washed in ether, and then treated with liquor potassæ, and examined microscopically, the nodules will be seen to consist of large polyhedric refringent bodies, held together by an amorphous substance acting as cement. These bodies are the spores of the fungus causing the disease (*Trichosporum giganteum* Behrend 1890). The description of the fungus is given on p. 834. In Columbia it is generally believed that the infection takes place by washing the hair with a mucilaginous oil, much used by the women of the country. In British

Guiana natives consider it to be due to bathing in certain white or milky waters, while it does not occur if they bathe in the brown peat bush waters.

Symptomatology.—The hair of the head of women, and less frequently the hair of the head and beard of men, is affected. The affected hairs present strings of pin-head-sized nodosities, which are better felt than seen. The nodosities may be very numerous and are found on the surface of the hair-shaft, either on one side or surrounding it like a sheath. They are black and hard, though not so hard as the name *pieira* (stone) would imply, and a kind of crepitation is produced when the hair is combed. There is often matting and knotting of the hair. The disease is chronic, and the nodosities do not disappear spontaneously.

Horta has described a variety of *pieira* in Brazil, characterized by the nodules containing large cyst-like structures, which Pinoy considers to be probably *asci* (see p. 834).

Diagnosis.—The microscopical examination of the nodosities renders the diagnosis easy.

Prognosis.—The affection is of long duration, and has no tendency to spontaneous cure.

Treatment.—This is difficult. It has been recommended to apply benzene and turpentine to the hair, and to wash the head regularly with a perchloride lotion (1 in 2,000). In obstinate cases it is necessary to shave the head.

Trichosporosis Indica.

In India and Ceylon a condition similar to *pieira* is occasionally observed. It is, however, much less severe, a few minute nodules only being present on the hairs of the beard and moustache, and the hair of the scalp being rarely affected. The fungus seems to be different from that of the Columbian *pieira*.

Trichosporosis of Temperate Zones.

Cases of trichosporosis of temperate zones or *pieira nostras* (*tinea nodosa*), have been described by Beigel (1869), Caro, Behrend, Unna, Pick, Vuillemin. The nodosities in such cases have been found on the hairs of the moustache and beard, not on the hairs of the head. The fungi are slightly different from *T. giganteum*. Several species have been described—*T. beigeli* Rabenhorst 1867, *T. ovoides* Behrend 1890, *T. ovale* Unna 1896.

TRICHOMYCOSIS AXILLARIS FLAVA RUBRA ET NIGRA.

Definition.—A nodular affection of the hair, generally of the axillary regions, caused by a *Nocardia*, either alone or in symbiosis with chromogenic cocci.

Historical and Geographical.—Castellani in 1911 called attention to this nodular affection of the hair of the axillary regions, observed in natives and Europeans living in the hot, damp, districts of Ceylon. The condition will probably be found occurring in every low-lying tropical region.

Ætiology.—The researches of one of us have demonstrated that the yellow variety is due to a very thin, bacillary-like fungus, for which he proposed the name *Nocardia tenuis*. The black and red varieties are due to a symbiosis of this fungus with chromogenic cocci, a coccus producing black pigment (*Micrococcus nigrescens*) in the black variety, a coccus producing a red pigment in the red type.

Nocardia tenuis Castellani 1912.—The microscopic examination of the nodules reveals the presence of enormous numbers of bacillary-like bodies, which are Gram-positive, but not acid-fast. If the nodules are kept in alcohol or formalin for several months the fungus apparently loses partially or totally its property of being stainable by Gram's method. They vary in length, 4 to 10 μ and more; they are rather thin, 1 to 1½ μ ; they may be straight or variously bent, occasionally branching; they are fairly closely packed together, and are embedded in an amorphous cementing substance. Attempts at cultivating the fungus have failed.

Characters of the Coccus-like Organism found in the Black Variety (*M. nigrescens* Castellani 1911).—It is a Gram-positive, rather large, non-motile coccus, which in certain media may take the appearance of a cocco-bacillus. Sugar media are more suitable for the growth of the organism than the ordinary agar.

Sabouraud Agar.—Colonies appear twenty-four to forty-eight hours after inoculation. They are roundish, at first white, but after a couple of days the centre of each colony turns black, and this pigmentation slowly spreads eccentrically. After a time the colonies coalesce into a jet-black mass.

Glucose.—Growth similar to Sabouraud but slightly less abundant. The black pigmentation develops from the centre of the colonies and slowly spreads towards the periphery.

Ordinary Laboratory Agar.—Growth much less abundant than on most sugar agars, and black pigmentation less marked.

Lævulose Agar.—Identical to glucose.

Saccharine Agar.—The pigmentation is less pronounced, and does not spread to the whole of the growth.

Raffinose Agar.—Same as saccharine.

Lactose Agar.—Scanty pigmentation.

Alkaline Maltose Agar.—Black pigmentation well marked, though in many cases it does not extend to the whole of the growth.

Acid Maltose Agar.—Growth less abundant than on acid maltose. Black pigmentation well marked.

Mannite Agar.—As alkaline maltose.

Inulin Agar.—As alkaline maltose, but pigmentation less pronounced.

Saccharose.—As inulin.

Glycerine Agar.—Abundant growth, the whole of which after a time becomes of jet-black colour.

Galactose.—As inulin.

Adonite.—Like acid maltose.

Serum.—Growth fairly abundant, but there is only a trace of pigmentation. The medium is not liquefied.

Gelatine.—No liquefaction. The growth on the surface shows after a time some dark pigmentation, but the colonies along the stab are white.

Milk.—No change.

Broth.—General turbidity. A thin pellicle is often present. The microscopical examination shows cocci arranged in pairs or irregularly. They are not capsulated.

Peptone Water.—Some growth at the bottom, while the rest of the tube is clear.

Sugar Broths.—No formation of acid or gas.

Indol.—Most strains produce a trace of indol.

Characters of the Coccus-like Organism found in the Red Variety of the Affection.—The coccus found in the red variety is more difficult to isolate and grow than the coccus observed in the black type of the affection. As a rule it grows better and shows more pigment on ordinary agar than on sugar media. It is non-motile and Gram-positive.

Agar.—The growth is at first white, then a red or red-yellowish spot appears in the centre. The pigmentation very slowly progresses towards the periphery, but, in my experience, never spreads to the whole of the growth; hence I was inclined for a long time to believe that I was growing two different cocci. Repeated plating, however, has convinced me that this is not the case. On maltose and glucose agar the same pigmentation is present, but on most of the other sugar media no pigment is produced. Gelatine and serum are not liquefied. This coccus, as already stated, is Gram-positive and non-motile.

The coccus is closely allied culturally to *Micrococcus ruber* of Trommsdorff, found in cases of chromidrosis, and also to *M. rubicus* of Hefferan. In none of our cases, however, was the condition associated with chromidrosis.

Symptomatology.—The affected hairs of the axilla present nodular formations, plainly visible to the naked eye, of rather soft

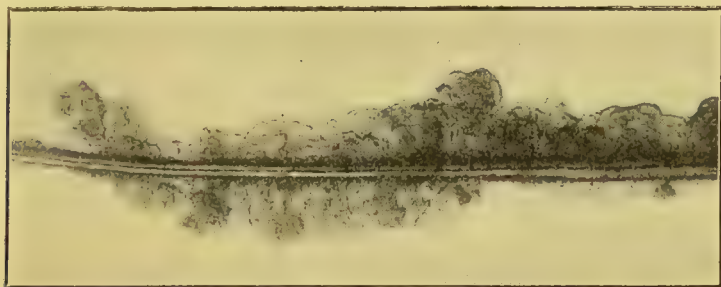


FIG. 586.—TRICHOMYCOSIS AXILLARIS FLAVA.

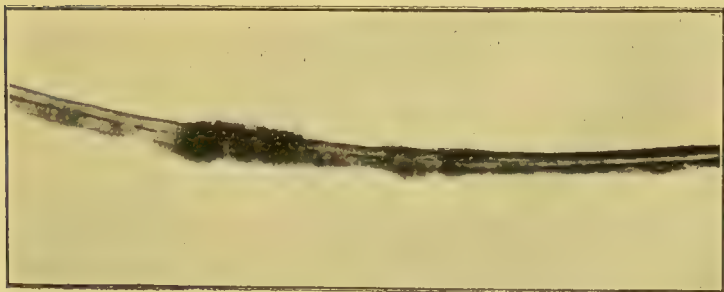


FIG. 587.—TRICHOMYCOSIS AXILLARIS NIGRA.

consistency. They are easily removed by scraping with a triangular needle or any similar instrument. The formations are either yellow or black, or, less frequently, red. They may be very abundant, and form a yellow, or black, or red sheath round the hair (Figs. 586 and 587). The same patient may have two varieties: The hairs of one armpit may show the yellow variety, while the hair of the other armpit may present the black type. Sometimes the

same individual hair may present some of the nodules yellow and others black, or, rarely, red. We have not yet observed all the three varieties present at the same time on the same patient.

The microscopical examination with a low power shows that the affected hair is covered at several places by roundish formations, partially or totally encircling the shaft. Using a higher power, these formations will be seen to consist, in the yellow variety, of enormous numbers of bacillary-like bodies embedded into an amorphous cementing substance. In the red and black varieties, in addition to these masses of bacillary bodies which are the mycelial segments of the *Nocardia*, large groups of cocci-like bodies are observed. The affection in our cases was never associated with chromidrosis.

In two of our patients the pubic hair was affected in addition to the hair of the axillæ.

Diagnosis.—This is based on the presence of yellow, black, or red, rather soft, nodules on the hairs of the axillary regions, which, on microscopical and cultural examination, show presence of *Nocardia tenuis* alone, or with chromogenic cocci.

Differential Diagnosis.—The condition must be differentiated from other nodular parasitic conditions of the hair. As is well known, the principal nodular affections of the hair of parasitic origin are:—

1. Trichosporosis tropica, or piedra.
2. Unna's trichosporosis, or piedra nostras.
3. Behrend's trichosporosis, or 'nodular trichomycosis.'
4. Beigel's trichosporosis, or tinea nodosa.
5. Du Bois's trichosporosis.
6. Lepothrix, or Pick's trichomycosis palmellina, or trichomycosis nodosa of temperate zones.

1. Trichosporosis tropica, or piedra, generally affects the hair of the head. The nodules are extremely hard, hence the name 'piedra.' The fungus found belongs to the genus *Trichosporon* (*Trichosporon giganteum* Behrend 1890).

2. Unna's trichosporosis, or piedra nostras, has been described by Unna in the hair of the moustache and beard. It is due to *Trichosporon ovale* (Unna, 1896).

3. Behrend's trichosporosis, or 'nodular trichomycosis,' described by Behrend, affecting the hair of the beard. It is due to *Trichosporon ovoides* (Behrend, 1890).

4. 'Beigel's trichosporosis,' or 'tinea nodosa,' discovered in London by Cheadle and Morris, and later in Breslau, Nancy, etc. It attacks the hairs of the head, and is due to *Trichosporon beigelii* (Rabenhorst, 1867).

5. Du Bois's trichosporosis of the hairs of the pubic region due to *Trichosporon glycochiles* (Du Bois, 1910).

6. Lepothrix (E. Wilson), or trichomycosis nodosa of temperate zones (Patterson), or trichomycosis palmellina (Pick). In this

condition, as described by Paxton, Wilson, Pick, and later by Payne, Patterson, Crocker, Pusey, etc., the hairs present irregular, lobed masses of hard consistency, in which are often embedded some of the fibres of the cortex. According to Crocker, the fibres of the whole shaft may be split up, and the hair may break off with a brush-like termination. The researches on the ætiology of this condition seem to have given widely different results: Payne and Patterson described a short bacillus which penetrates under the cortical scales. Eisner describes a diplococcus, his results being confirmed by Sonnenberg; Colombini has found cocci; Babès, Pick, Balzer, and Barthemly, having found the condition often associated with red sweat, consider the bacillus found to be the *Bacillus prodigiosus*.

Trichomycosis axillaris flava, rubra, and nigra has nothing to do with piedra or with any other form of trichosporosis, as no *Trichosporon* is found, the fungus being a *Nocardia*, with very thin, bacillary-like mycelium. The condition somewhat resembles leprothrix. It differs from the typical leprothrix of temperate zones by the nodules being soft, easily removed, and by the hairs not becoming brittle. Moreover, it is easily cured.

Course and Prognosis.—The course is chronic, but the condition may subside or disappear on the patient going to a cold climate. The affection, if of very little pathological importance, has a certain practical interest, being much objected to by patients, especially by ladies.

Treatment.—The treatment is not difficult: a very efficacious one consists in dabbing the hair two or three times daily with a solution of formalin in spirit (3i.-3vi.) and applying at night a sulphur ointment (2 to 5 per cent.).

REFERENCES.

Tropical Dermatomycoses.

- ADAMSON (1908-1912). British Journal of Dermatology.
 BROOKE (1908). Manual of Tropical Medicine.
 CASTELLANI (1905-1913). Various papers in British Medical Journal, Journal of Tropical Medicine, Transactions of the Royal Society of Medicine, Transactions International Congresses of Dermatology New York and Rome, Archiv f. Dermatologie u. Syphilis.
 CROCKER (1905). Skin Diseases.
 CROCKER (1908). The Journal of Cutaneous Diseases.
 DE BEURMANN AND GOUGEROT (1906). Annales de Dermatologie.
 DE BEURMANN AND RAMOND (1903). Annales de Dermatologie.
 JEANSELME (1907). Dermatologie Exotique. Paris.
 NIEUWENHUIS (1908). Archiv für Dermatologie u. Syphilis.
 PHALEN AND NICHOLS (1908). Philippine Journal of Science.
 RHO (1897). Malattie dei Paesi Caldi.
 SABOURAUD (1907). Archives de Médecine Expérimentale.
 SPLENDORE (1912). Bulletin Path. Exotique.
 WEHMER (1903). Centralblatt für Bakteriologie.
 WHITFIELD (1908). British Journal of Dermatology.

Pinta.

- BLANCHARD (1903). Parasites Végétaux in Bouchard's Traité de Pathologie Générale.
 BODIN (1903). Annales de Dermatologie.
 CASTELLANI (1906-09). Ceylon Medical Reports.
 CROCKER (1905). Diseases of the Skin.
 GASTAMBIDE (1881). Presse Med. Belg.
 JEANSELME (1904). Dermatologie Exotique. Paris.
 MADDEN AND GOODMAN (1901). Records of the English Government Medical School.
 MANSON (1907). Tropical Diseases.
 MONTOYA Y FLOREZ (1898). Thèse de Paris.
 RUIÈ Y SANDOYVAL. Quoted by Montoya.
 SANDWITH (1905). British Medical Journal.
 SHEUBE (1903). The Diseases of Warm Countries. London.
 WOOLLEY. Report on Pinto (Paño Blanco).

Trichosporosis.

- CASTELLANI (1904-11). Ceylon Medical Reports.
 CROCKER (1906). Diseases of the Skin.
 DESENNE (1878). Lancet.
 HORTA (1912). Memorias Instituto. Cruz.
 MANSON (1907). Tropical Diseases.
 MACLEOD, J. M. H. (1912). British Journal of Dermatology.
 MORRIS (1879). Lancet.
 VUILLEMIN (1907). Annales de Parasitologie.

Trichomycosis axillaris flava nigra et rubra.

- CASTELLANI (1911). British Journal of Dermatology; (1912) Transactions of the Royal Society of Medicine.

CHAPTER LXIV

SKIN DISEASES (*continued*)

--TROPICAL DERMATOMYCOSES (*concluded*)

Mycetoma—Mycetomatosis and actinomycosis—Pinoy's and Ravaut's nodular nocardiasis—Yuxta—Articular nodules—Rarer nodular and gummatous affections of hyphomycetic origin—References.

‘MYCETOMA.’

Synonyms.—Madura foot, the Fungus disease of India, Godfrey and Eyre's Tubercular disease, Endemic degeneration of the bones of the foot, Morbus tuberculosis Pedis, Morbus Pedis Entophyticus, Podelkoma, La Maladie de Ballingall, Slipada, Hatty-ka-Pung, Keerenagrah (signifying a dwelling of worms), Kirudeo (signifying a dwelling of worms), Ghootloo Mahdee (signifying eggs of insects; probably so called from the small bodies found in the discharge).

Definition.—‘Mycetoma’ is a generic term for the invasion of the tissues of the foot and hand, and more rarely other parts of the body by fungi belonging to the genera *Nocardia*, *Aspergillus*, *Sterigmatocystis*, *Indiella*, and *Monosporium*, which produce enlargement, deformity, and destruction of the affected area.

History.—It is probable that mycetoma was known to ancient Indian writers on medicine, for references are found in their works to a disease of the foot characterized by swellings like plum-stones, associated with a considerable amount of discharge, and thought to be due to injuries caused by thorns.

In 1712 Kaempfer drew attention to a disease of the foot, which he called ‘perical,’ or large foot, in natives of India. It is not very clear what he meant by this, as he may have confounded elephantiasis with mycetoma. In the early nineteenth century the disease was well known in the South of India, where it was called ‘Madura foot,’ being described by Heyne in 1806, and mentioned in Brett's ‘Surgery,’ in 1840 as a distinct disease. In 1842 Gill appears to have been the first to clearly differentiate it, and he was followed by Godfrey in 1844 and 1846, Morehead in 1846, Colebrook in 1848; but many of these early writers appear to have considered the disease to be tubercular.

Ballingall, in 1855, was the first to state that it was probably of parasitic origin, and he was followed by Rustomji, who gave careful clinical histories of eight cases.

In 1860 Eyre gave an account of the disease, and V. Carter published the first of a series of most important papers extending till 1874, in which he studied the whole subject most minutely, and found the causal agent to be a fungus. In 1859 he discovered the fungus of the melanoid or black variety, now called *Madurella mycetomi* Laveran 1902, and later, in the same year, he found the fungus of the ochroid, or white variety, which is at the present time

called *Nocardia maduræ* Vincent 1894. He was followed by a large number of observers, among whom may be mentioned H. J. Carter, who in 1862 described a fungus belonging to the Mucoridæ, which Berkeley in 1865 called *Chionyphe carteri*; but their methods of separating and growing this fungus were crude, and there is no doubt that it was a contaminative fungus. Lewis and Cunningham in 1875 did not believe in the *fungoid* origin, and ascribed the disease to degenerations; and in 1876 Kemper and Jamieson described a curious case of foot disease under the term 'podelcoma' as occurring in America. It is probable that this may have been a case of mycetoma, but if so, it was remarkably acute in its course. Bassini in 1888 described an undoubted case in Italy, and Wright a similar case in an Italian in America. In 1892 Kanthack and Hewlett independently studied the pathology of the disease, and concluded that it was really an actinomycosis. In 1893 Boyce and Surveyor examined a number of cases and grew the fungus artificially. In 1894 Vincent published an account of a case of the white variety occurring in Algeria. He cultivated the parasite, and inoculated it without success into animals, and finally named the variety *Streptothrix maduræ*, thus clearly differentiating one variety of the disease.

In 1895 Adami and Kirkpatrick published an account of the first undoubted case in Canada, and later similar cases were reported in other parts of America, and in 1897 Unna studied the pathology of the disease. In 1901-02 Bouffard described black and white varieties of the disease as occurring in Somaliland.

In 1902 Laveran investigated Carter's black variety, and named the fungus *Streptothrix mycetomi*; and Foulerton and Jones published an important paper on the *Streptothrix* group. Nicolle and Brunswic-le-Bihau described a case of white mycetoma in Tunis, caused by *Aspergillus nidulans*, cultivated by Nicolle and Pinoy. The fungus was probably introduced into the foot by a grain of barley. In 1906 Brumpt published a most valuable paper, showing that actinomycosis was the cause of one variety of mycetoma, and that Carter's, Vincent's, Nicolle's, and Bouffard's white and black mycetomata were all separate varieties of the disease caused by distinct fungi, and in addition, he described two other varieties, making a total of eight varieties due to separate fungi. In 1907 Musgrave and Clegg described a new form of the disease in the Philippine Islands, due to *Streptothrix freeri*, which they successfully inoculated into the foot of a monkey. This fungus they now consider to be identical with *Nocardia asteroides*.

In 1910 and 1911 Tarozzi and Radaeli grew from two cases in Italy a fungus which the first observer considered to be a *Nocardia*, while Radaeli and Saccardo have described it as a new species of the genus *Monosporium*.

In 1912 Brault in Africa succeeded in growing on artificial media *madurella* mycetoma, and probably the same fungus was grown in India by Chatterjee.

Climatology.—The disease is diffused throughout the world, being known in Asia, Africa, Europe, and America, but is far more commonly met with in the tropics than in the temperate zone, and is especially prevalent in India, particularly in the Madras Presidency about Madura, Bellary, Tanjore, and Trichinopoly.

In Asia it is known in India, not merely in Madras, but also in Cochin, Pondicherry, Sind, Cutch, Bengal, Rajputana, the North-West Provinces, the Punjab, and Kashmir. It also occurs in Ceylon and Aden. In Africa it is also widespread, being met with in Madagascar, Somaliland, Abyssinia, Jibuti, the Sudan, Egypt, Tripoli, Tunis, Algeria, Morocco, and Senegambia. In Europe it is rarely met with, but cases have been reported from Cyprus, Italy, Greece and France. In America it has been reported as occurring in Canada, the United States, Nicaragua, the West Indies, Argentina, Brazil, and Chili.

With regard to the known distribution of the varieties, the

actinomyotic has only been reported from Madagascar; Carter's black mycetoma from India, Italy, and Senegambia and Northern Africa; Carter's ochroid variety from India, Somaliland, Abyssinia, Algeria, Cyprus, Cuba, and Argentina; Bouffard's black and white varieties from Somaliland; Brumpt's white variety from India; Reynier's white variety from Paris; and Musgrave and Clegg's from the Philippine Islands. Lindenberg's white mycetoma from Brazil, Pelletier's red mycetoma from Senegal, Tarozzi-Radaeli white mycetoma from Italy. It is not definitely known what influence the season of the year has on the occurrence of the fungus, though probably when the saprophytic history is known some such influence may be discovered.

Ætiology.—The disease is due to the entry of a fungus into the subcutaneous tissue of some part of the body by means of a wound.

The region invaded is usually the foot, more rarely the hand, and still more rarely some other region.

The causal fungi may be classified as follows:—

Order.	Genus.	Species.
Ascomycetes	Aspergillus E. Micheli 1725	A. bouffardi Brumpt 1906.
	Sterigmatocystis Cramer 1869	S. nidulans Eidam 1883.
	Madurella Brumpt 1905	{ M. mycetomi Laveran 1902. M. tozeuri Nicolle and Pinoy 1908. M. bovoi Brumpt 1910.
	Indiella Brumpt 1906	{ I. mansonii Brumpt 1906. I. reynieri Brumpt 1906. I. somaliensis Brumpt 1906.
		{ N. maduræ Vincent 1894. N. asteroides Eppinger 1890. N. pelletieri Laveran 1906. N. bovis Harz 1877. N. israeli Kruse.
Hyphomycetes	Nocardia Toni and Trevisan 1889	
	Sporotrichum Link 1806	S. beurmanni Matruchot and Ramond 1905.
	Monosporium Bonord and Saccardo 1903	Monosporium apiospermum Saccardo 1911.

The saprophytic life of these parasites is quite unknown, with the sole exception of *Nocardia bovis*, which lives in the spikelets of various cereals.

The disease occurs most commonly in people who walk barefoot, and is therefore most usually met with in native races, though race *per se* has no predisposing influence. It is principally found in agricultural labourers, and is therefore more common in the poorer classes and in males.

Pathology.—The causal fungus is introduced into some part of the body by a wound produced by a thorn, a splinter of bamboo or other wood, by a sharp stone, knife, etc., but perhaps the most interesting recorded case is Nicolle's Tunis case, in which the disease was started by an injury to the foot by a grain of barley. Once introduced into the subcutaneous tissues, it commences to grow, the original wound in the meantime healing. Usually

the growth is slow ; but if Kemper and Jamieson's case was true mycetoma, it may be rapid, and, indeed, this is supported by Musgrave and Clegg's inoculation of *Nocardia asteroides* into a monkey's feet, in which the swelling developed in ten to sixteen days, and was quickly followed by suppurative lesions. As the fungus grows it destroys the tissues of the foot, and meets with but little reaction on the part of the body, and no attempt is made to repair its ravages. The reaction on the part of the body confines itself to a lymphocytic infiltration around the fungus, and later the formation of granulation tissue, with epithelioid and giant cells at times ; while, finally, fibrous tissue is formed around the fungus and its surrounding cells, and the vessels become blocked by an endarteritis and periarteritis. This appears to be an attempt to encapsule and prevent the spread of the parasite, as well as to damage it by cutting off its food-supply.

At the same time the cellular exudate becomes a thin, oily, occasionally stinking, pus, and works its way to the surface, forming apertures, and carrying the parasite with it. This must be considered to be an attempt to rid the body of the fungus.

In the meanwhile the parasite, if of certain species, forms special club-shaped hyphæ considered to be chlamydospores, which at first serve for extracting nutrition from the surrounding leucocytes, but later, breaking free from the main mass, form means of asexually propagating the fungus in the foot. Some of these separated clubs are attacked and engulfed by leucocytes, and though it is possible that in this way many may be destroyed, still, Brumpt's researches show that the leucocyte, with its enclosed club, may wander away from the diseased area into healthy tissue, and may be killed by the club, which, being set free, grows into a new mass of fungus. In this way the fungus may be disseminated by means of the phagocytes.

When surrounded by pus, the fungus gathers itself into granules, the so-called sclerotia, which show externally radially arranged fibres or clubs, and internally a mass of mycelium with crystals and débris, the latter being most marked in the centre. These granules escape to the exterior, and form the yellow, black, or pink granules in the discharge. As the fungus grows in the foot the connective tissues and the muscles undergo vitreous degeneration, and break up into débris, amongst which pieces of nerves and tendons may be found, while even the bone in some cases becomes attacked by a form of degeneration and disappears. The result is that the foot appears much swollen externally, and shows the openings of the sinuses, through which the pus and the fungoid granules escape ; while internally the normal structure may have completely disappeared, being replaced by degenerated tissue, débris, sinuses, and fibrous sacs containing the fungus and the pus.

The result is, however, not merely destruction of the foot, but also great bodily waste, due to the continuous discharge, so that the patient becomes emaciated, and may finally die of cachexia.

Very rarely do the fungi invade the body, as is the case with *Nocardia bovis* and *N. israeli*, which may give rise to a general infection.

The peculiarity of the pathology is the slight reaction which the body makes against the invasion by the fungus, and the entire absence of any attempt at repair.

The black varieties of mycetoma owe their colour to a dark substance which the fungi secrete. The nature of this black substance is not known. It is soluble in hot sulphuric acid, forming a yellowish-red solution, but is not soluble in cold sulphuric acid nor in potash solutions. According to Thudichum, it does not contain hæmoglobin in any form, though a small quantity of iron is present. The nature of the yellow pigment does not appear to have been investigated, though Musgrave and Clegg remark, with regard to *Nocardia asteroïdes*, that a pigment of the appearance of hæmoglobin may be found.

Experimental Reproduction.—Several observers have tried to reproduce the disease in monkeys and other animals, in some cases with a certain degree of success. We recommend Pinoy's method of inoculating the cultures on bits of wood which are inserted into a small wound. Pinoy has inoculated with success in the pigeon *Madurella tozeuri*. The experimental inoculation with *Madurella mycetomi* has not yet succeeded.

Morbid Anatomy.—Externally the swollen foot shows nodules and openings, the latter of which lead into the sinuses. In sectionizing the foot it will be noticed that the sinuses run in various directions are communicating, and end in small cavities containing pus and the fungus, and that these cavities are embedded in degenerated tissue and débris.

The bone may or may not be affected, but if it is, the whole foot can be easily cut by a knife.

Histopathology.—The histopathology has been studied by Unna, Vincent, and very completely by Polverini, Musgrave and Clegg. Microscopically the tissues show degeneration and débris, with fibrous tissue formation, endarteritis, and periarteritis, and at times absorption of the bone.

The microscopical examination of sections of the tissues typically affected—viz., of alveolar appearance—and containing mycotic grains show a central roundish mass—the mycotic grain—a clear circular space, and the surrounding degenerated tissues. The clear space is due to the fact that the thin purulent matter in which the granule is embedded contracts during fixation with alcohol. The mycotic granule is composed at the centre almost exclusively of mycelial elements with a few leucocytes; more externally there are masses of amorphous substance, staining lightly purplish with eosin, in which a few mycelial threads may be seen. The periphery shows a polymorphonuclear infiltration. The walls of the alveolar cavities containing the granules are formed of young connective tissue with numerous plasma cells and occasionally giant cells; there is a marked proliferation of bloodvessels.

Symptomatology.—The disease usually begins in the foot, more rarely in the hand, and still more rarely in the leg, knee, neck, or trunk. There may or may not be a history of a cut or injury some time previously. In any case this primary injury will have healed long before the disease is well established.

The incubation period in well-recorded cases would appear to be short; thus, in Musgrave and Clegg's case, one month after the primary injury the wound reopened and discharged pus, and in



FIG. 588.—MYCETOMA.

their experiments on monkeys it appeared to vary from ten to sixteen days. Further researches on this point are, however, required.

The earliest signs are either pain or swelling in the region of the original injury, which is usually on the sole of the foot, between the toes, or on the instep. The swelling becomes a hard lump, on the surface of which a bleb may form, which bursts and reveals a small opening discharging an oily, rarely sanious, thin, offensive pus, in which the granules characteristic of the fungus may be found.

Some new indurations and nodosities appear in various parts of the foot, and new openings are formed, while the whole foot begins to swell in a very characteristic manner. First the arch of the

PLATE XII.



MYCETOMA.

foot fills up and disappears, the whole sole becoming so swollen and convex that the toes are no longer able to touch the ground, and may be pushed apart, but are usually not affected by the disease. At the same time the dorsum of the foot becomes studded with nodules and openings. The colour of the integument may be normal, but is usually darker than in the healthy skin. It is rarely œdematous. The openings, when examined by a probe, are found to lead into sinuses, which penetrate deeply into the tissues, and at times even into the bones of the foot. The quantity of the discharge varies from time to time, being increased by motion. On palpating the affected area, it is found to be elastic, and the sensibility to be normal. The inguinal glands are often enlarged and hard.

As the disease progresses, pain, which at first was slight, becomes more marked, especially in cold weather. The patient ceases to be able to place the foot to the ground, and is compelled either to walk on the heel or to use a support. The leg begins to waste, and after a long time the patient becomes weak and anæmic from the constant drain on the system, by the discharge, and possibly also by toxins produced by the fungi. General constitutional disturbance of a febrile nature is rare.

The disease is very chronic, and has no tendency to heal, and if not treated, will eventually cause the death of the victim, from exhaustion or diarrhœa, after lasting some ten or twelve years.

Varieties.—The disease can be classified by the different causal fungi into varieties, which may be arranged, according to the colour of the granules or sclerotia, into the black or melanoid group, the white or ochroid group, and the red group, as follows :—

A. THE MELANOID GROUP.

1. Carter's black mycetoma.
2. Bouffard's black mycetoma.
3. Nicolle and Pinoy's black mycetoma.
4. De Beurmann's sporotrichic mycetoma.
5. Bovo's black mycetoma.

B. THE OCHROID GROUP.

6. Carter's white mycetoma.
7. The actinomycotic white mycetoma
8. Nicolle's white mycetoma.
9. Brumpt's white mycetoma.
10. Reynier's white mycetoma.
11. Bouffard's white mycetoma.
12. Musgrave and Clegg's white mycetoma.
13. Lindenberg's white mycteoma.
14. Tarozzi-Radaeli white mycetoma.

C. THE RED GROUP.

15. Pelletier's red mycetoma.

1. *Carter's Black Mycetoma*.—The sclerotia are hard, irregular, brittle, black or dark brown in colour, 1 to 2 millimetres in diameter. The hyphæ are white, but the interhyphal substance is dark brown. This is the type of the disease, and is caused by *Madurella mycetomi* Laveran 1902.

2. *Bouffard's Black Mycetoma*.—The sclerotia are moriform, elastic, and vary in size from a pin's head to a small pea. The disease, which is readily amenable to treatment by curetting, is caused by *Aspergillus bouffardi* Brumpt 1906.

3. *Nicolle and Pinoy's Black Mycetoma*.—The sclerotia are hard, small, and black. During parasitic life the mycelium is septate, 1 to 4 μ in breadth. Chlamydospores are present. It is found in Algeria and Tunis, and is due to *Madurella tozeuri* Nicolle and Pinoy 1908.

4. *De Beurmann's Black Mycetoma*.—A case with all the clinical features of Madura foot has been described by De Beurmann as due to *Sporotrichum beurmanni* Matruchot and Ramond 1905.

5. *Bovo's Black Mycetoma*.—This variety has not yet been completely investigated. Bovo in Italy observed a case of nodular affection of the foot, the affected tissues presenting mycotic black masses. He considered his case to be due either to *Aspergillus fumigatus* or to *Sterigmatocystis nigra*. Cultures were not obtained, while Brumpt considers the fungus *pro temp.* to be a *Madurella*—*M. bovoi* Brumpt 1910.

6. *Carter's White Mycetoma*.—The sclerotia are yellowish-white, mulberry-like, spherical grains, varying in size from minute pin-heads to peas. It is caused by *Nocardia maduræ* Vincent 1894.

7. *Actinomycotic White Mycetoma*.—The sclerotia are yellowish sulphur colour, and soft. The disease destroys the bones, and can spread throughout the body, forming metastases in distant organs. The causal fungi are *Nocardia bovis* Harz 1877 and *N. israeli* Kruse 1896.

8. *Nicolle's White Mycetoma*.—The sclerotia are large, rounded, and smooth, like peas. It attacks the bones. The causal fungus is *Sterigmatocystis nidulans* Eidam 1883.

9. *Brumpt's White Mycetoma*.—The sclerotia are very small, hard, and bean-shaped. The causal fungus is *Indiella mansonii* Brumpt 1906.

10. *Reynier's White Mycetoma*.—The sclerotia are small, white, soft, coiled masses. It is due to *Indiella reynieri* Brumpt 1906.

11. *Bouffard's White Mycetoma*.—The sclerotia are small, very hard spherical or polyhedral grains, sometimes white, sometimes reddish-yellow in colour. It destroys bone. It is caused by *Indiella somaliensis* Brumpt 1906.

12. *Musgrave and Clegg's White Mycetoma*.—The sclerotia vary in size from 0.25 to 5 millimetres. Oval at first, they become variously shaped when full-grown. The fungus which invades the medulla of the bone is *Nocardia asteroides* Eppinger 1890.

13. *Tarozzi-Radaeli White Mycetoma*.—This variety has been

found in Italy by Tarozzi and Radaeli. The foot presents several nodules, from which some purulent liquid exudes. The grains are yellowish, small, rather hard. The microscopical examination does not show clubs. The fungus causing it was first observed by Tarozzi, who considered it to be a *Nocardia*, and independently by Radaeli, who considered it to belong to some other genus. It has been described by Saccardo under the name of *Monosporum apiospermum* Saccardo 1911.

Radaeli does not consider his case to be mycetoma, as he limits this term only to conditions due to fungi of the genus *Nocardia*. Under our definition of the malady, however, the cases described by Tarozzi and himself come under this heading.



FIG. 589.—PSEUDO-MYCETOMA OF FRAMBÆCIAL ORIGIN.

14. *Lindenberg's White Mycetoma*.—This variety was found by Lindenberg in Brazil. The grains are very small, white-yellowish, soft, moriform. It is caused by *Nocardia braziliensis* Lindenberg 1909.

15. *Pelletier's Red Mycetoma*.—This variety is common in Senegal and other parts of Africa, and has been described by Pelletier and Thiroux. It often attacks other regions of the body besides the foot. The grains are very small and of a red colour. The fungus is *Nocardia pelletieri* Laveran 1906, a description of which will be found in the chapters on fungi.

Diagnosis.—The peculiar swelling of the foot, with a filling-up of the arch, and the formation of sinuses from which a discharge containing the typical sclerotia is escaping, enables the disease to be diagnosed with certainty from elephantiasis or tubercular disease of the foot.

The variety of the fungus may be determined by examining the grains or the scrapings of the sinuses microscopically, culturally, and by inoculations in animals.

It is to be noted that the typical grains may for a time be absent

from the purulent liquid exuding from the sinuses. In such cases squeezing of the nodules may make the grains appear, or a nodule which has not yet opened may be incised and the contents examined.

Pseudo-Mycetoma.—Occasionally one comes across conditions of the foot clinically somewhat resembling madura foot, but of tubercular, filarial, or some other origin. In Ceylon a type of pseudo-madura foot not uncommonly observed is merely a late manifestation of frambœsia. Austregesilo has described in South America a case of angiokeratoma of the foot clinically resembling mycetoma. The absence of the typical grains differentiates all these types of pseudo-mycetoma from true mycetoma.

Prognosis.—The disease is incurable unless treated surgically.

Treatment.—The diseased area, if localized, may be removed by curetting or excision; but if a large area of the foot is affected, amputation must be performed well above the boundary of the disease. Potassium iodide has very little or no effect.

Prophylaxis.—Prophylaxis consists in guarding against wounds from pieces of wood, stones, etc., by wearing boots, shoes, or sandals. Should a wound occur, it must be thoroughly cleaned with antiseptic lotions, or better perhaps tincture of iodine, before being allowed to heal.

MYCETOMIASIS OF THE BODY, ACTINOMYCOSIS AND PSEUDO-ACTINOMYCOSIS.

Remarks.—The fungi producing madura foot may occasionally invade other parts of the body instead of, or in addition to, the foot. They may attack the skin and deeper tissues of the hands, trunk, mammae in females, and also the deep organs, lungs, heart, liver, brain. For such conditions the term 'mycetomiasis' may be used, and when the fungi found are *Nocardia bovis* and *Nocardia israeli*, the term 'actinomycosis' is generally employed. These two fungi, in fact, very seldom attack the foot. Some authorities use the term 'pseudo-actinomycosis' to indicate the condition induced by *N. ponceti* Verdun 1912, *N. liquefaciens* Hesse 1892, *N. garteni* Brumpt 1910, and generally to conditions due to *Nocardias* not producing definite grains in the pus.

Symptomatology.—The lesions resemble, to a certain extent, those found in the foot. The condition generally begins with indolent nodules in the skin or subcutaneous tissues; the skin over them becomes tense and glossy, and finally the nodules break down with formation of sinuses from which a purulent liquid exudes, containing the characteristic granules, of various sizes and colour, as described in madura foot. Occasionally the ulcerated lesions become fungoid and large, and papillomatous purplish tumours may develop. The location of the lesions varies. The type caused by *Nocardia israeli* Kruse and *N. bovis* Herz, or true actinomycosis, as found also fairly frequently in temperate zones, is most frequently situated on the lower region of the face and neck, especially in the tissues under the jaw. In cattle it produces the well-known condition known as wooden tongue. It is characterized by the presence of sulphur-yellow grains in the pus. Of actinomycosis, besides the cervico-facial situation, which is the commonest, the following types have been described: The parietal, attacking the walls of the thorax and abdomen; the broncho-pulmonary; the abdominal (liver, etc.); the cerebral (very rare), in addition to the rare type situated on the foot (actinomycotic mycetoma).

Prognosis.—This depends greatly on the species of fungus causing the malady. The types due to *Nocardia bovis*, *N. israeli*, or true actinomycosis, answer well to a potassium iodide treatment.

Diagnosis.—This is based on the presence of indolent or nodular masses breaking down with formations of pus, in which grains containing the fungi are found.

Treatment.—Potassium iodide in full doses (gr. xx.) four times a day should always be administered.

Nodular Nocardiasis of Pinoy and Ravaut.

Historical and Geographical.—This condition and its fungus were studied by Pinoy and Ravaut in France.

Ætiology.—The condition is caused by a *Nocardia*. Only one case is known, described by Pinoy and Ravaut—and due to *N. thibiergei* Pinoy and Ravaut 1909 (see p. 817).

Symptomatology.—In the only case on record there were numerous subcutaneous and intramuscular gummatous nodules which had developed very slowly; they slowly softened, some ulcerating. In the pus the fungus was found.

Treatment.—Potassium iodide is to be recommended.

Other nodular affections of nocardial origin, and characterized by the presence of abscesses, or gummata in which fungi of the genus *Nocardia* are found, have been described by Rivière and others, and very ably in England, by Foulerton.

Juxta-Articular Nodules.

Synonyms.—‘Enno,’ Naridé, Steiner’s tumours, Jeanselme’s nodules.

Historical and Geographical.—This affection was first briefly described by Macgregor in 1901 in New Guinea, who also suggested a possible parasitic origin of it. It was later more fully studied by Steiner in natives of Java, by Jeanselme in natives of Siam, where it is known as ‘enno.’ Jeanselme introduced the very appropriate term of ‘juxta-articular nodules.’ Fontoynont and Carougeau in Madagascar discovered the cause of the affection to be a fungus, *Nocardia carougeau* Brumpt 1910. Cases have been observed in Northern Africa by Gros and in Ceylon by us. The disease will probably be found to occur in many other tropical and subtropical countries.

Ætiology.—Macgregor, Steiner, and Jeanselme considered the nodules to be of parasitic origin, while Fontoynont and Carougeau discovered the fungus which is the ætiological agent. The description of this fungus—*Nocardia carougeau* Brumpt 1910—is given in the chapters on fungi (see p. 817).

Symptomatology.—In the legs and arms, especially in proximity to the articulations, several nodules are found, some of them the size of a walnut or more, of rather hard consistency, and covered by healthy skin. According to Macgregor, these tumours occur most frequently, about the elbows, or the parts of the body coming in contact with the ground when the native is sleeping. These nodules at first are rather soft, and are situated in the subcutaneous tissue, and the skin may be moved above them. Later they may,

apparently, fuse together, forming hard, large tumours, and adhere to the skin, which generally does not present any alteration. The



FIG. 590.—JUXTA-ARTICULAR NODULES.

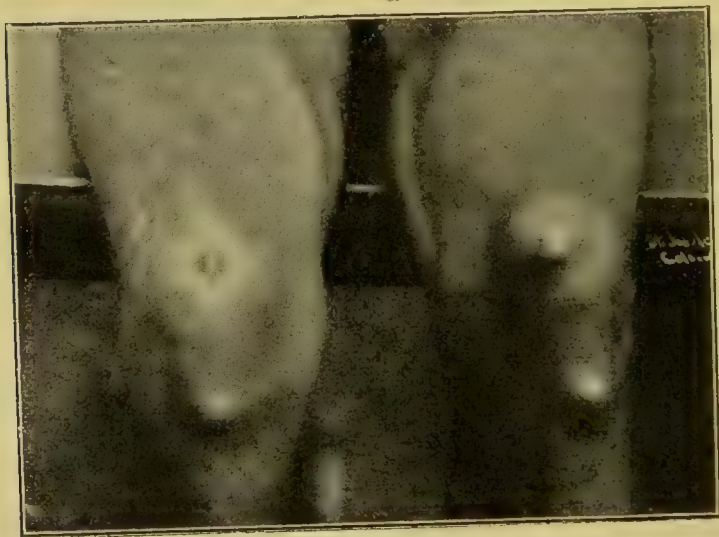


FIG. 591.—JUXTA-ARTICULAR NODULES.

course is very chronic, but occasionally the nodules may disappear spontaneously.

Treatment.—The nodules may be excised. In the very first stage of the disease a potassium iodide treatment might be tried.

RARER NODULAR AND GUMMATOUS AFFECTIONS OF HYPHOMYCETIC ORIGIN.

Hemisorosis.

Historical and Geographical.—Gougerot and Craven described a case of osteo-periostitis due to *Hemispora stellata* Vuillemin some years ago. Later Auvray and Bidot found the same fungus in a generalized nodular affection, and De Beurmann, Clair, and Gougerot found it in a gumma situated on the penis of a negro.

Ætiology.—The condition is due to a fungus, *Hæmispora stellata* Vuillemin, the description of which is given in the chapters on Fungi.

Histopathology.—The histological lesions resemble those of tuberculosis cutis, as noted by Auvray and Bidot.

Symptomatology.—Gumma-like swellings are present either single or multiple. These may later ulcerate. A chronic osteoperiostitis, with thickening of the tibia somewhat resembling the type due to syphilis, has been described. Mercury, however, had no effect.

Diagnosis.—This is based on isolating the fungus. The fungus microscopically is seldom if ever seen in the lesions, and cultures are necessary. These are carried out in the same manner as for sporotrichosis.

Treatment.—Potassium iodide given in full doses (gr. xv.-xx.) three times daily is very efficacious.

Acremoniosis.

There is only one case on record of this condition by Potron and Noisette in France. The condition is due to a fungus, *Acremonium potronii* Vuillemin 1911, which has been described in the chapters on Fungi (see p. 842). The patient had fever which was at first suspected to be typhoid, and several gumma-like swellings developed, which slowly ulcerated. They were not painful. The proximal glands were not enlarged.

Diagnosis.—This is based on finding the fungus by cultural methods.

Treatment.—In the only case known an intensive potassium iodide treatment cured the condition.

Enantiothamnosis.

Definition.—A nodular condition due to a fungus, *Enantiothamnus braulii* Pinoy 1911.

Historical and Geographical.—This condition has been described by Brault in Northern Africa, who isolated the fungus, the complete botanical description of which we owe to Pinoy.

Ætiology.—The causative fungus is *E. braulii* Pinoy 1911 (see p. 841).

Symptomatology.—The condition in the only case so far known was characterized by the presence of nodules on the gluteal regions,

the size of a pea to a small egg. The nodules had a central crateriform opening, from which some pus exuded.

Diagnosis.—This is based on cultivating the fungus from the lesions.

Treatment.—This is surgical, but first potassium iodide might be tried.

Cladosporiosis.

Definition.—A nodular condition due to *Cladosporium madagascariense* Verdun 1912.

Remarks.—There is another tropical condition due to a fungus of the genus *Cladosporium*—viz., tinea nigra—but this affection is clinically so different that we do not give it under the heading Cladosporiosis. We have given a separate description of it (see p. 1502).

Historical.—Fontoynt isolated the fungus from a case in Madagascar. Gueguen placed it in the genus *Cladosporium*, and Verdun called it *C. madagascariense* Verdun 1913.

Symptomatology.—In the only case so far known, that of Fontoynt, gummatous nodules were present on the leg, some of which slowly ulcerated.

Treatment.—Potassium iodide has apparently very little efficacy in this condition.

Scopulariopsis.

This condition is due to *Scopulariopsis blochi* Matruchot 1911, and *S. koningii* Vuillemin 1912. Two cases have been reported so far from France. The patients presented gummata and verrucose patches on the skin. Lymphangitis was noted in one case. The diagnosis is based on finding culturally the fungi. The treatment consists in giving large doses of iodides.

It is to be noted that Pinoy and other authorities doubt the pathogenic rôle attributed to *S. blochi*.

REFERENCES.

Mycetoma and Pseudo-Mycetoma.

- ADAMI AND KIRKPATRICK (1895). Transactions of the Association of American Physicians, x. 92.
- AUSTREGESILLO (1912). Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene.
- BASSINI (1888). Archiv. per le Sc. Med. Torino, xii. 309.
- BOUFFARD (1902). Ann. d'Hyg. et de Méd. Coloniale, p. 636.
- BOYCE AND SURVEYOR (1894). Phil. Trans. Roy. Soc., 185 B. London.
- BRUMPT (1906). Archiv. de Parasit., x. 489. (A most important paper.)
- CARTER (1874). Mycetoma, London. (Full account of the history, the fungus, and excellent illustrations.)
- CASTELLANI (1912). Ceylon Medical Reports.
- FOULERTON AND JONES (1902). Transactions Pathological Society, iii. 56. London.
- GODFREY (1846). Lancet, p. 593. (One of the earliest full accounts.)
- KAEMPFER (1712). Amœnitatum Exoticarum Politico - Physico - Medico, v. 561. (First modern account.)
- MUSGRAVE AND CLEGG (1907). Philippine Journal of Science, B. ii. 477.
- POLVERINI (1904). Lo Sperimentale.
- RADAELI (1911-12). *Ibid.*
- REYNIER AND BRUMPT (1906). Bull. et Mém. Soc. de Chir. de Par., xxxii. 618.
- SCHEUBE (1903). Diseases of Warm Countries, p. 552.
- WISE (1867). History of Oriental Medicine, ii. 365.

CHAPTER LXV

SKIN DISEASES (*continued*)—DERMATITIS VENENATA

Definition — Remarks — Classification — Rhus group — Euphorbia group—
Urtica group—Tectona group—References.

Definition.—The term ‘dermatitis venenata’ includes a number of inflammatory skin lesions caused by the irritative action of poisonous principles contained in certain plants.

Remarks.—By the above definition it will be observed that the term ‘dermatitis venenata’ is here used in the restricted sense of being only caused by plants, leaving the dermatitis caused by animals to be treated in the chapter dealing with the Dermat�oiases.

When the poisonous principle is contained in the juice of cultivated plants, the poisoning is largely met with among gardeners, florists, and people associated with plants in some way; when, however, the poisoning is due to a principle contained in some special hairs of a plant, whether cultivated or not, it is obvious that anyone may be affected; and when it is due to principles contained in the dust from dry wood, it is also obvious that carpenters and persons who cut or saw this wood will be most liable to be affected.

We should not be surprised if, in the future, it will be found that certain forms of dermatitis venenata are due in reality to some parasitic micro-organisms living in the plants or woods, and which get inoculated. The fact that, for instance, satin-wood dermatitis appears several weeks after handling the satin-wood sawdust is rather in favour of there being some *contagium vivum* which requires some time to develop and multiply sufficiently to cause symptoms of disease.

With regard to the first series of cases in our experience, there can be no doubt that some people are more liable to the affection than others, and it would appear that certain people suffering from any form of seborrhœa or allied condition, no matter how mild, are especially liable to be troubled by dermatitis venenata.

With regard to *geographical distribution*, it is a cosmopolitan complaint, being found in all parts of the world. It, however, requires further study in the tropics, and it is for this reason that we have specially brought it forward in connection with skin diseases.

Lacquer poisoning, due to *Rhus vernicifera* De Candolle (p. 168), has long been well known, as well as the collapse followed by local pain and swelling caused by *Jatropha urens* (p. 169), but few authors have drawn attention to other plants causing tropical dermatitis venenata.

Reynault in 1902, in his 'Médecine et Pharmacie chez les Chinois et chez les Annamites,' devotes a few paragraphs to the dermatitis venenata of Indo-China, and we have seen a few cases in Ceylon and Africa. The subject, however, is interesting, and we bring forward the following few remarks in the hope of stimulating further inquiry.

Classification.—The plants causing dermatitis venenata may be arranged in groups according to the form in which the poisonous principle is conveyed to the skin, each group being named after a well-known member :

- I. *The Rhus Group*: Plants in which the poisonous principle is contained in a clear watery fluid.
- II. *The Euphorbia Group*: Plants in which the poisonous principle is contained in a thick milky fluid.
- III. *The Urtica Group*: Plants in which the poisonous principle is contained in fluid in special hairs.
- IV. *The Tectona Group*: Dried hard woods, the dust of which contains the poisonous principle.

I. THE RHUS GROUP.

This group includes all those plants in which the poisonous principle is contained in a clear, watery juice. It may be subdivided into two subgroups or divisions:—

1. Poisonous principle non-volatile.
2. Poisonous principle volatile.

Poisonous Principle Non-Volatile.—This group includes the poisonous ivies, the lacquer poison, and the parsnips.

Poisonous Ivy.

The ivy or sumach belongs to the genus *Rhus* Linnæus, which is a genus belonging to the subfamily Anacardioidæ in the family Terebinthaceæ. The genus *Rhus* includes about 120 species, growing in nearly every part of the world, but fortunately only a few are poisonous to man, and they may be distinguished, as a rule, by their inconspicuous flowers being in loose, slender clusters or panicles in the axils of the leaves, and by their greyish-white or yellowish dry fruit.

They may be arranged in two sections, according to the structure of their leaves :—

1. *Leaves trifoliate.*

Rhus radicans Linnæus.
Rhus toxicodendron Linnæus.
Rhus diversiloba.

2. *Leaves pinnate.*

Rhus vernix Linnæus.
Rhus michauxiei.
Rhus vernicifera De Candolle.
Rhus succedanea Linnæus.

Rhus radicans is by many authorities considered to be merely a variety of *R. toxicodendron*. It is common in the Northern United States, while the latter is more common in the Southern United States. It has ovate or lozenge-shaped leaflets, which are either entire or toothed and pointed, while *R. toxicodendron* has obtusely crenated, lobed leaves.

Rhus diversiloba is the Californian poison ivy or poison oak, with rounded, obtuse leaflets.

Rhus vernix (synonym, *R. venenata*) is the poison elder or poison sumach of the United States, and is a large shrub or small tree. It is very poisonous.

Rhus michauxiei (synonym, *R. pumela*) is a small erect shrub, found in the Southern United States.

Rhus succedanea Linnæus is the Japanese wau-tree, and is well known in Tonkin and in South China.

Ætiology.—The poisonous principle is an oil (*Toxicodendrol*), which occurs in all parts of the plant, and at all seasons, and not toxicodendric acid, which is merely a synonym of acetic acid, as was formerly thought to be the case.

Symptomatology.—After an incubation of one to nine days, there is at first itching in the affected area, which gradually increases in intensity, and is associated with all the signs of inflammation, producing an appearance not unlike erysipelas, and sometimes goes on to vesiculation. The parts most commonly affected are the eyelids, face, and neck, but it may also occur on the hands and feet. Left to itself, the eruption remains well marked for some four to five days, and then gradually subsides, serum discharges from the vesicles, and after some desquamation the affected area returns to normal after some ten to twenty days.

Treatment.—Wash the affected parts thoroughly with soap and water, and then clean with a lotion of alcohol and ether, and finally apply the ordinary lead and opium lotion or a solution of acetate of aluminium. In mild cases calamin lotion is very efficacious.

Prophylaxis.—Remove the poisonous ivy. This can only be performed by digging up the roots.

The Lacquer Poison.

Rhus vernicifera De Candolle is the lacquer or varnish-tree of Japan. Lacquer poisoning has, however, been described on p. 168, and need not be repeated here.

The Parsnips.

In the same group with the poisonous ivies come the parsnips, of which *Pastinaca sativa*, the common parsnip, and *Heracleum lanatum* (*H. giganteum*), the cow parsnip, cause symptoms analogous to those described above. The treatment is similar.

Poisonous Principle Volatile.—It is well known that many plants possess irritating juices which cause no inflammation if merely applied to the skin, but which, if rubbed in or applied to the skin and then enclosed in a protective covering, will produce violent inflammation and even ulceration. On p. 147 we have already drawn attention to the fact that *Plumbago rosea* Linnæus of the Plumbagineæ, and *Anacardium occidentale* of Linnæus of the Anacardineæ are used to produce a dermatitis simulating a bruise, and it is well known that certain members of the Ranunculaceæ contain irritating principles—*e.g.*, the crowfoot, anemones, and the pulsatillas, which have been utilized by beggars to produce sores and ulcers. The essential feature of these poisonings is that the principle being volatile, it is necessary either to rub it into the skin thoroughly or to prevent its evaporation by some means, otherwise the inflammation cannot be produced. The treatment is to remove the cause and soothe the irritation with calamine lotion, or apply a weak carbolic lotion dressing to the ulcer.

II. THE EUPHORBIA GROUP.

In this group the poisonous principle is contained in a thick milky juice—the latex, which is contained in special lactiferous cells. *Hippomane mancinella* Linnæus (Euphorbiaceæ), which is the celebrated manchineel-tree of the Grenadine Islands, is also found in Colombia, South America, where it is called 'Pedro Fernandes' or 'Mansanillo.' It causes very severe pruriginous and painful urticaria in people who rest under its shade. According to Martinez Santa-Maria, this eruption usually disappears in about twenty-four hours, but occasionally it may last for two or three days, or even longer.

All Euphorbias possess more or less irritating juices which, if rubbed into the skin, cause inflammation. The thick milky latex is acid, and contains a thick oil, which is very irritating. As an example of this group may be mentioned *E. pilulifera* or *E. resinifer* Bergmann. The former is common in many parts of the tropics, and the latter occurs in North Africa.

III. THE URTICA GROUP.

The Urtica group is characterized by containing its poisonous principle in hairs.

This group includes the nettles which belong to the genus *Urtica* Linnæus, of which *U. urens* is the common European type, while *U. ferox* Forster is found in New Zealand, and *U. pilulifera* Linnæus occurs in the Mediterranean littoral.

Laportea Gauducheu is an allied genus of which *L. crenulata* Roxburg in Bengal, *L. stimulans* Weddel in Java, and *L. gigas* Weddel in New Holland, produce severe urticarial eruptions, associated with pain lasting for several days.

The genus *Urera* Gauducheu belongs to the same family, being found in tropical Africa and America, while the genus *Girardinia* Gauducheu is found in tropical Africa and Asia, and both contain species with markedly urticarial properties.

In all these the poisonous principle, which is said to be of the nature of an aldehyde, is contained in a special poison apparatus, which consists of secreting cells which pour their secretion into awl-shaped filaments, or hairs which are filled with an acrid non-volatile albuminoid acid liquid. These hairs penetrate the skin, and the tip, being broken in the process, discharges the poison into the dermis. The poison quickly produces the well-known urticarial eruption associated with itching, tingling, and even pain.

In the same group come quite a different series of plants—viz., the primulas, primroses, etc.—which belong to the family Primulaceæ. In the tribe Primuleæ there is a section called 'Sinesis,' which contains *Primula obconica* Hance, *P. sinensis* Sabine, *P. sieboldii* E. Moir, and *P. cortusoides* Linnæus, which possess poison glands associated with hard poisonous hairs, contact with which produces acute dermatitis, which often begins as an erythema on the face or back of the hands, and spreads quickly to other regions. Soon the erythema becomes œdematous and swollen, and vesicles may at times appear. The general aspect of the patient with the red and swollen eyelids, red and swollen face, and the similar eruption on other parts of the body, closely resembles erysipelas, and is, without doubt, one of the forms of the complaint often called 'the rose'—i.e., a non-contagious erysipelas.

It must, however, be admitted that some of the recurrent eruptions described on the hands and face of persons believed to be suffering from this or ivy-poisoning, are suggestive of pellagra (see p. 1253). The erythema of pellagra is, however, generally confined to areas exposed to the light, and is usually associated with some intestinal or nervous symptoms. It is, however, as well to bear in mind the possibility of pellagra in cases of dermatitis on the hands and face recurring in the spring or autumn.

Cypripedium spectabile of the Orchidaceæ is also said to possess venomous hairs.

Treatment.—The usual treatment is to apply calamine lotion, to which a little menthol or opium is added.

IV. THE TECTONA GROUP.

This group includes trees, the handsome wood of which is used for the ornamentation of saloons, and also for making furniture. The dried hard wood gives off dust, which is extremely irritating to some people, while others appear not to be affected. One attack appears to render the sufferer more liable to the complaint, and although certain authorities claim that immunity may be acquired by attacks, there appears to be considerable doubt on this point, and, in fact, the evidence points to quite the reverse being true. The best known of these dermatites was, until recently, that caused by the wood of *Tectona grandis* Linnæus, commonly called 'teak,' which gives off a dry essential oil in the dust created by sawing, and this produces a severe form of dermatitis in carpenters and joiners, which tends to become generalized, and may be of long duration, lasting sometimes for months.

The effects of the dust of 'satinwood'—i.e., the wood of *Chloroxylon swietenia* De Candolle from Ceylon and the East Indies, or the wood of *Fagara flava* (synonym, *Zanthoxylum flavum*) from the West Indies:—These woods contain a crystalline alkaloid ('chloroxylonne,' $C_{22}H_{23}O_7N$), which has been carefully studied by Cash, who finds that twenty-two days after application for the first time it causes a dermatitis which, beginning with itching, gives rise to papules, vesicles, and oozing-points on the inoculated limb, which in due course becomes brawny and pits on pressure. In a little time the swelling spreads to the eyelids and face, ears, lips, and nose, and great discomfort is experienced. In a few days a nasal catarrh and a laryngeal cough appear. This cough is of an explosive nature, as though a hair had become lodged in the throat, and although the secretion at first is slight, later it becomes more abundant. The experimental illness lasted about forty days. Another application of the active principle produced a relapse in forty minutes.

In the ordinary way the first attack is of slow development, the symptoms appearing some six weeks after the first handling of the wood, but a relapse is of rapid development.

The illness begins with the development of an acute inflammation of the skin of the hands, wrists, face, and neck, producing an appearance somewhat resembling erysipelas, but without fever or concomitant sickness. The inflamed surfaces discharge, dry, and finally desquamate. The most suitable treatment, according to Cash, is to apply the unguentum glycerinis plumbi subacetates of the British Pharmacopœia every four hours, to administer bromides to allay the irritation, and opium to relieve the laryngeal cough.

Other woods with similar properties are ebony (*Diospyrus ebenum* Kon), found in Ceylon and India originally, and rosewood (*Dalbergia latifolia* Roxburg), found in India.

LITTLE KNOWN FORMS OF DERMATITIS VENENATA.

The irritant poisoning caused by Kaju Rugas, the juice of which produces painful bullæ, by Kaju buta-buta, which causes violent dermatitis and conjunctivitis, have not been well studied, neither has the poisonous properties of the well-known daffodil; in fact, the whole subject requires further study.

Cane Dermatitis.—A peculiar dermatitis is found in people handling and cutting reeds (*Arundo donax*), in Provence, some parts of Italy, some districts of Greece, and other countries. The dermatitis, studied by many observers, among whom Thiebierge, Berlese, Brigi, Aravandinos, Sfameni, may be mentioned. It starts with severe itching and erysipeloid eruption, associated with the formation of blebs generally on the uncovered parts of the body, but also on the genital organs, which may become greatly œdematous, and febrile symptoms and signs of coryza may appear. After a few days the rash disappears, and is followed by desquamation.

The **Ætiology** is doubtful. Some authorities consider it to be due to the plant itself, others to a fungus (*Ustilago hypodytes* Sehlecht), and still others to a mite (*Aclerda berlesi*).

Treatment consists in applying calamine and lead lotions.

REFERENCES.

- The best general references are to be found in the Index Catalogue of the Library of the Surgeon General's Office, United States Army, Second Series, vol. xiv., 1909, p. 572: Rhus poisoning; vol. xiii., 1908, pp. 814 and 815: Primula poisoning. A very excellent general paper is Havard, v. (1899). Proceedings of the Association of Military Surgeons, vol. viii., p. 203.
- BALCH (1906). Journal of the American Medical Association.
- CASH (1911). British Medical Journal, October 7, p. 784. London.
- FORDYCE, J. A. (1912). Journal of American Medical Association, p. 2043.
- KANNGIESSER, F. (1911). Correspond. Blätter für Schweiz Aerzte, xli. 1041-1044. Baset (primula).
- LANCET (1890). Leading Article on Primula Obconica and Dermatitis, ii. 612.
- MARTINEZ SANTA-MARIA (1913). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
- SABOURAUD, R. (1908). Clinique, iii. 246. Paris.
- SFAMENI (1912). Malaria.

CHAPTER LXVI

SKIN DISEASES (*continued*)—ULCERATIONS

Oriental sore—Espundia—Indian Oro-pharyngeal leishmaniasis—Ulcus tropicum—Ulcus interdigitale—Ulcus infantum—Remarks on ulcers in the tropics—Granuloma inguinale—Papilloma inguinale—References.

ORIENTAL SORE (DERMAL LEISHMANIASIS).

Synonyms.—Delhi boil; Aleppo boil; Biskra boil; Bagdad boil; Ulcera de Bauru (Brazil); Bouton d'Orient; Ulcère d'Orient; Chancre du Sahara; Dermite Ulcereuse Circonscrite (Corre); Endemische Beulenkrankheit; Botone d'Oriente; Godownik, *i.e.*, 'yearly boil' (Caucasus); the Tartar name is 'Il-jarassy' ('il' = year, 'jarassy' = boil); Tschiban, *i.e.*, 'yearly sore'; Dous-el-Kourmati, *i.e.*, 'date disease' (Turkish); Hhab-el-Seneh, *i.e.*, 'yearly boil'; Bess-el-Temür, *i.e.*, 'date disease' (Arabian); Salek, *i.e.*, 'annual' (Persian); Pascha-churdj, *i.e.*, 'fly-bite'; Afghan Jara, *i.e.*, 'Afghan plague'; Jaman Dyscharagan, *i.e.*, 'malignant ulcer'; Taschkent Jarassi, *i.e.*, 'Tashkent ulcer' (Tashkent); Mycosis Cutis Chronica (Carter); Lupus Endemicus (Lewis and Cunningham); Endemic Boil Disease (Scheube); Granuloma Endemicum (Brooke); Furunculus Orientalis (Crocker); Pian-Bois (Guiana); Sudan nodules; Cutaneous leishmaniasis; Leishman nodules; Parasitic granuloma (Ferguson and Richards).

The so-called Nile boil has been demonstrated by Modder and Archibald to have nothing to do with Oriental sore, being of pyogenic origin. The so-called Bucharest boil, also, has apparently nothing to do with Oriental sore.

Definition.—A specific circumscribed ulcerative affection of the skin caused by *Leishmania tropica* Wright.

The term 'Oriental sore' has been much abused in the past, and there is little doubt that different diseases have been described under that name. The term should be limited to those ulcerative processes of the skin in which *L. tropica* is found.

History.—The earliest account of the disease is to be found in Russell's description of Aleppo boil in 1756, in which he states that the inhabitants believed that it was caused by the drinking-water. The disease was also described by Hasselquist in 1762,

Holland in 1780, Volney in 1787, Alibert in 1832, and Guillon in 1835. Tholozan, in 1866, appears to have been the first to doubt the ætiological value of the drinking-water; but Virchow is said by Hirsch to have been the first to suggest that the true cause might possibly be a parasite.

Smith in 1868 and Fleming in 1873 claimed to have found eggs of a species of *Distoma* in the sections of specimens of the tissues derived from cases of Delhi boil. Carter in 1875 described a mycelial fungus and spores. Depéret and Boniet, Duclaux and Heydenreich cultivated various cocci in 1884. In 1885 Cunningham described some peculiar parasitic organisms of various size and shape, often endocellular, easily brought in evidence by staining with gentian violet. Cunningham inclined to regard these bodies as representing various stages of the development of a mycetozoal parasite, probably belonging to the group of the Monadidæ.

Riehl (1886) isolated a capsulated micrococcus. Finkelstein and Chantemesse (1887) also cultivated a micrococcus similar to the organism described by Duclaux. Poncet in the same year described a coccus in sections and a very delicate bacillus. Le Dantec and Auché in 1894 found in a case of Biskra boil a streptococcus and the *Staphylococcus albus*. In 1897 Nicolle and Nourry Bey found a streptococcus which they believed to be specific. The organism was very slightly virulent. Attempts to inoculate monkeys with the disease did not succeed. In the same year Brocq and Veillon cultivated a streptothrix from a case of Aleppo boil. Crendiropuolo isolated in numerous cases a bacillus, probably belonging to the *Proteus* group. Firth in 1891 stated that he had been able to confirm the presence of the Cunningham parasitic bodies in numerous cases of Delhi boil. He proposed for the parasite the name of *Sporozoon furunculolum*. In 1898 Borowsky constantly observed in twenty cases of Sarten ulcer some peculiar organisms which he thought to be protozoa. In fresh preparations the bodies were very actively motile, and presented a spherical shape; sometimes they were spindle-shaped. The maximum diameter varied from 0.5 to 3 μ . The cell-body stained very faintly. The nucleus was placed eccentrically. No chromatin bodies could be put in evidence. Schulgin in 1902 confirmed Borowsky's results, and suggested that the disease might be conveyed by mosquitoes. In 1903, in a case of tropical ulcer occurring in a boy from Armenia, Wright described bodies very similar to those found in cases of kala-azar. These bodies may possibly be identical with those seen by Cunningham in 1885. Wright's discovery has been confirmed by Mesnil, Nicolle, James, Strong, Plehn, Nattan-Larrier, Splendore, Carini, Cardamatis, Wenyon, Gabbi, Lacava, Balfour, Archibald, and others, who have greatly extended our knowledge of the disease. Marzinowsky and Bogrow state that, independently from Wright, they found similar bodies in cases of Pendjeh ulcer from Persia.

Geographical Distribution.—The disease is endemic in many tropical and subtropical regions. It is found also in temperate zones. In Africa it is found in Morocco, Tunis, Tripoli, Algeria, and Sahara (Biskra, Gafsa), Egypt, Sudan, Congo, West and East Africa, and South Africa; in Asia it is common in Syria and Asia Minor, in Mesopotamia, Arabia, Persia, the Caucasus, Turkestan (Tashkent), in the Turkmene district (Pendhe). It is very common in some parts of India, especially along the Valley of the Indus, in the Rajputana States, and in the North-West Provinces (Delhi, Multan, Lahore). In Europe the affection occurs in the Crimea, Cyprus, Crete, and Greece. Cases have been reported by Gabbi, Lacava, and others from Italy. It is known also in Brazil and other countries of South America, and in French and British Guiana, where it is known as Pian-bois, or forest yaws, and has been observed by Darling in Panama, so that the name 'Oriental sore' is somewhat misleading.

It is generally much more common in large towns than in the country. In some cities it is so prevalent that even visitors of a few days only may not escape it. Its occurrence appears to be influenced by the seasons, as, according to Hirsch, in the tropics it is most prevalent at the beginning of the cool season, and in more temperate climates at the end of summer. Laveran says that in Biskra, from September to October inclusive, the slightest wound tends to become transformed into the 'bouton.' In some years it has been found to be more prevalent than in others.

A peculiarity of the geographical distribution of the disease is that in the countries where it is endemic its distribution is not general, but is confined to certain districts only; hence the numerous local names given to the malady, as Aleppo boil, Bagdad boil, etc.

Ætiology.—The disease is caused by *Leishmania tropica* Wright, 1903, the description of which has been given in Chapter XVI., p. 360. In the first edition of this book we expressed the belief that future investigation would show that there are several varieties of *L. tropica*, each giving rise to a slightly different clinical type of the affection. Vianna has already described a separate species (*L. braziliensis*) as the cause of some Brazilian cases, but the species apparently has not yet been accepted. Nicolle and Manceaux and others have occasionally succeeded in producing in monkeys Oriental sore by inoculation of cultures. Raw, by inoculating cultures of *L. donovani*, has produced cutaneous lesions in monkeys, but such lesions differ histologically from true Oriental sore.

Mesnil, Nicolle, and Remlinger have observed the parasites to be present occasionally in true polymorphonuclear leucocytes, besides being found in the mononuclear leucocytes as usual. Mesnil has observed in some cases a typical 'bacillary' form.

The medium used by Nicolle for the cultivation of the parasite is a modification of Novy-McNeal medium and is composed as follows:—

Agar	..	..	..	..	..	..	14 grammes.
Salt	..	..	..	..	..	..	6 "
Water	..	..	..	..	..	..	900 c.c.

This is dissolved in a large flask in a Koch's stove, and then distributed in tubes. After sterilization, to each tube is added one-third rabbit-blood, collected with all aseptic precautions. The tubes are kept aslant for twelve hours, then kept at 37° C. for five days, after which they are kept at the ordinary temperature for some days before using. This medium is often referred to as the N.N.N. medium. Row has introduced a simple hæmoglobinized saline culture medium.

Histopathology.—The histopathology of the disease has been studied by Unna, Leloir, Kumm, Riehl, Wright, Strong, Bettmann and von Vasielewski, Balfour, Archibald, Darling, and others. The histological lesions in the common ulcerative variety consist essentially in the atrophy and disappearance of the epidermis of the part, and in a very extensive cellular infiltration of the corium and papillæ by various kinds of lymphoid cells, plasma cells, and numerous large roundish cells containing a single faintly stained vesicular nucleus and large amount of cytoplasm. These large roundish cells, which are probably proliferated endothelial cells, contain often many Wright's bodies closely packed together, occupying most of the available space between the nucleus and the cell periphery. Darling in his case found that the corium and papillæ were infiltrated by newly-formed cells, lymphoid, endothelial, epithelioid, giant, and plasma cells. There were no necrotic areas, and a polymorphic leucocytic infiltration was not noted. Many interpapillary down-growths were seen in the rete. The squamous epithelium was surrounded by a mass of desquamated epithelium forming the crust. The lymphatic and blood vessels in the deeper layers of the skin were surrounded by collections of lymphoid cells. Balfour, Thomson, and Archibald, noted the following principal histological features in their cases: Presence of vertical epithelial columns extending deeply downward, with a few cell-nests and isolated masses of cell infiltration. The dermis is infiltrated with cells of the large round type, polymorphonuclear leucocytes, and large numbers of eosinophiles. This cellular infiltration may extend to the sebaceous glands and hair follicles.

Communicability.—The disease may be conveyed by direct infection from person to person, by absorption of the virus through some pre-existing abraded surfaces, or small wounds or ulcers of other nature present on the skin. Insects, especially flies, probably play a certain rôle in the transmission of the disease. That flies convey the disease was first claimed by Seriziat (1875) and by Tscherepkin (1876).

Tscherepkin states that by the people of Tashkent the disease is called 'pascha-churdj,' meaning 'fly-bite.' Laveran thinks that flies carry the virus on their feet and proboscis, and thus convey infection. Schulgin and others believe the disease to be conveyed by mosquitoes. Ed. Sergent and Pressat have suggested that some 'Phlebotomus' may play a rôle in the transmission of the disease, while Balfour and Thomson suggest that the bed-bug may carry the infection.

The disease is inoculable from man to man, as is clearly proved

by the experiments of Marzinowsky and Wenyon. It is also auto-inoculable.

Marzinowsky inoculated himself with Oriental sore by putting inside the bulla caused by an artificial burn on his hand some material (scraping) derived from an Oriental sore. After ten days from the inoculation he began to feel unwell and feverish, and suffered from headache and general debility. The fever lasted two weeks. With the beginning of these general symptoms a papule appeared at the seat of inoculation, which slowly developed into a typical Oriental sore. Scrapings contained many parasites. Wenyon has also inoculated himself, and he, too, presented fever before the skin lesion appeared. The Bagdad Jews, according to Colvilli, inoculated their children with the disease, as they thought that after having recovered once, there was no danger of getting it again.



FIG. 592.—ORIENTAL SORE.

Symptomatology.—After an incubation period varying from a few days to some weeks or several months, during which attacks of irregular fever often occur, one or several small pruriginous spots appear on the skin of uncovered parts of the body, not much dissimilar at the very beginning from mosquito-bites, for which they are often taken by the patients. The spots, however, instead of slowly fading, become red and shotty, with an inflamed areola, which later becomes markedly indurated. The papules slowly enlarge to the size of a pea or bean; the surface gradually loses its smooth and shiny appearance, and becomes covered with small thin scales. After a period of time, somewhat variable in length, but generally not exceeding three to four months, the ulceration of the nodule begins. At first the ulceration is very superficial, and exudes a yellowish secretion, which soon dries into a hard, adherent,

darkish scab. Underneath the scab the ulcerative process and disintegration of the nodule continues slowly to spread. The tissues surrounding the ulcers may become œdematous. If later the darkish scab be removed, an ulcer is seen, about an inch or more in diameter, with sharp-cut, jagged edges and irregular fundus, with reddish-yellow, sometimes fungating granulations. The ulcer is generally indolent, or but slightly painful. The neighbouring lymphatic glands are not, as a rule, sensibly enlarged, unless there is a secondary pyogenic infection. The examination of the blood



FIG. 593.—ORIENTAL SORE IN A PERSIAN SOLDIER.

(From a photograph of Drs. A. Bassière and Nattan-Larrier.)

taken from the finger shows often a distinct mononucleosis, and the coagulability is generally increased. The total number of leucocytes may be normal, or there may be leucopenia, or during the attacks of fever leucocytosis. In the blood taken from non-ulcerated lesions the mononucleosis is much more marked.

Healing generally sets in after six to twelve months by granulation, which begins in the centre of the ulcer, the unhealthy-looking, large, yellowish granulations giving place to healthy ones. A whitish or pinkish, often depressed and disfiguring, scar remains

at the seat of the ulceration. After cicatrization, the sore may break down again.

Oriental sore may be single or multiple. Two or three are frequently found on the same patient, but occasionally there are many more, and may spread to the mucous membranes of the mouth and nose. The sores are auto-inoculable by scratching.

The seat of the ulcers is generally on uncovered parts—feet, legs, hands, arms, face. They are very seldom observed on the palms, soles, or scalp. The affection attacks people of any race, sex, and age, if they expose themselves to the infection.

Course.—The length of the incubation period is not known with certainty. It is generally stated that it varies between a few days and six weeks. Manson, however, has observed that it may be as long as five months, and Wenyon, who inoculated himself, observed that the first skin lesions appeared six and a half months after inoculation. Manson in one case made the interesting observation that the appearance of the sore was preceded several months by a fever of an irregular remittent type, not influenced by quinine, and having some features of the fever of Indian kala-azar. This fever was also noted by Marzinowsky and Wenyon, who inoculated themselves experimentally. Attacks of irregular fever during the incubation and the course have been recorded by several other authors. During one of these febrile attacks Neumann observed *L. tropica* free in the liquor sanguinis of the patient.

The duration of the eruption varies from four or five months to twelve months and more. Repeated attacks of the disease often occur.

Clinical Varieties.—The following clinical varieties may be distinguished :—

1. The common variety, characterized by one or several nodules, which slowly ulcerate with or without symptoms of general infection, such as fever and enlargement of the spleen.

2. The variety in which, in addition to the cutaneous lesions, ulcers develop on the mucosa of the mouth and nose, as noted by Cardamatis in Greece and Lacava and Gabbi in Italy.

3. The verrucose type, described by Ferguson and Richards, and later by Archibald in Egypt.

4. The non-ulcerative variety, described by Cambillet, Balfour, and Thomson, characterized by the presence of pinkish nodules, somewhat keloid-like, which never ulcerate. A similar type has been described by Carter in India.

Diagnosis.—In countries where the affection is endemic the diagnosis in most cases is not difficult. The following are the principal data on which to base the diagnosis :—

1. The fact that the patient comes from or is living in an affected area.

2. The few eruptive elements—often one single element—situated on uncovered parts.

3. The course : a small papule, which slowly enlarges into an

indurated nodule, indolent, smooth, or slightly scaly, and after several months ulcerates.

4. The proximal lymphatic glands usually not enlarged.

5. Presence of *Leishmania tropica* in the scrapings.

The history, the absence of enlarged lymphatic glands and other symptoms of syphilis, and the uselessness of the mercurial treatment, will help in excluding syphilis. In frambœsia there is a primary lesion, which, after a time, is followed by a general granulomatous eruption. We have, however, seen cases of frambœsia patients who, after the general eruption has disappeared, have remained for months with a single or a few sores closely resembling the Oriental sore. In fact, we believe that in a certain number of cases it is very difficult to make the differential diagnosis between Oriental sore and ulcers of tubercular, syphilitic, or frambœtic origin; also from cancrroid when the ulcer is single and situated on the face. In our experience, the only reliable way to come to a definite diagnosis in difficult cases is the microscopical examination. To do this the scab is removed, and a scraping is taken from the floor and edges of the ulcer. The preparation is then coloured with Leishman's or Giemsa's stain, or any other of the numerous modifications of Romanowsky's method, and examined for the presence of *Leishmania tropica*. The search must be prolonged in some cases, as the parasites may be very rare.

Prognosis.—The prognosis is good, *quoad vitam*. Very occasionally the disease may end fatally, owing to the ulcers becoming phagedænic, and to secondary septicæmic and pyæmic processes. In some rare cases, as observed by Cardamatis in Greece, and Lacava and Gabbi in Italy, the ulcerative lesions may spread to the mucosa of the mouth. Sometimes the scars remaining after the ulcers have healed up, shrink considerably, and if they are on the face, may give rise to serious disfigurement.

Treatment.—The treatment of Oriental sore is very unsatisfactory. Nitrate of mercury ointment, alum ointment, boric acid, and various other antiseptics have been recommended, with very poor results. Formalin often irritates the ulcer, and may produce a dermatitis. Röntgen rays have been tried, without any good result. An expectant treatment is generally to be advised. The scabs should be removed by boracic acid fomentation and then the sores must be thoroughly disinfected once or twice daily with a 1 in 1,000 solution of perchloride of mercury or 2 per cent. carbolic acid, after which one of the ordinary antiseptic ointments (β -naphthol, gr. v.; vaseline, \bar{z} i.; iodoform or eucrophen, gr. v.; ung. ac. borici, \bar{z} i.; balsam peru, gr. v.; to vaseline, \bar{z} i.) or an antiseptic powder (iodoform or xeroform or boric acid) is applied.

Salvarsan and atoxyl have been used without any good result.

Marzinowsky, after removing the crust, and cleansing the ulcer with antiseptic lotion, applies a 10 per cent. lotion of ferropyrin to stop the bleeding, and then applies thoroughly a 50 per cent. lotion of chininum bimuriaticum daily. He says recovery takes place in between seven to eleven days.

Schulgin advises the freezing of the boil with ether. He used this method in 300 cases with good results.

Several French writers advise the use of permanganate of potassium, at first in powder form, and later as a 5 per cent. ointment.

Duncan advises placing a thin piece of lead over the ulcer, and then bandaging up.

Emily recommends the repeated applications of boric acid.

Ondiourminsky has applied to the treatment of Oriental sore Bier's stasis method, apparently with good results.

Chulguine recommends soaking the sore with a solution of methylene blue (10 per cent.).

Bussi re advises dilute tincture of iodine (10 per cent.).

In other cases Bussi re and Nattan-Larrier advise excision of the sore. Several physicians praise the use of silver nitrate.

Castellani had some fairly good results in two cases by washing the sores with a 5 per cent. solution of protargol, followed by the application of a 20 per cent. protargol ointment. The protargol ointment cannot be used on Europeans when the face is affected, as the protargol, after some time, induces a discoloration of the skin.

Lincoln and Aviss have obtained good results by painting the sores with a native gummy fluid, sold in native bazars under the name of 'raurath.'

Timpano injects 1 c.c. daily round the sore of a 1 per cent. solution of carbolic acid.

Prophylaxis.—The disease being very contagious, and being also probably spread by some blood-sucking insects, the slightest wound and any insect-bite should be thoroughly disinfected with carbolic acid 5 per cent., or tincture of iodine.

ESPUNDIA (NASO-ORAL LEISHMANIASIS).

Synonyms.—Bubas Braziliana (Breda), Breda's disease (Castellani), Verrotti, Bueno de Miranda and Splendore's Leishmaniasis, American Leishmaniasis (Laveran and Nattan-Larrier).

Definition.—A chronic ulcero-granulomatous affection of the skin and mucosa of the mouth and nose due to *L. tropica* Wright 1903 *var. americana* Laveran and Nattan-Larrier 1912.

Historical.—Espundia has been known to local medical men for many years in Peru and other parts of South America.

At the end of the last century Breda described, in a series of important publications, a similar entity in Italy in emigrants returning from Brazil, under the name of Bubas braziliana, and considered it to be due to a bacillus, the presence of which was confirmed by Fiocca, who claimed having reproduced the malady in the lower animals by the inoculation of pure cultures of it. Researches on the disease were carried out also by De Amicis, Verrotti and others. The term 'boubas' used by Breda was a rather unfortunate one, as it led to much confusion, this term being generally used by tropical authors as a synonym for framb esia; while the natives, as noted by Splendore, use it indiscriminately to indicate various ulcerative lesions of widely different nature.

Escomel in 1911 gave a very good description of espundia as

found in Peru. Further investigation has shown that the condition found in Brazil is identical with that found in Peru.

Bueno de Miranda and Splendore first found *Leishmania* bodies in the ulcerative lesions, Splendore making a very complete pathological and clinical investigation of the condition, and succeeding in experimentally inoculating it in monkeys. Splendore called attention to the fact that in cultures the flagellum of the *Leishmania* found was generally longer than in *L. tropica*; he observed also that with Giemsa the parasite stained usually deeper than *L. tropica*. Laveran and Nattan-Larrier have made an important study of the parasite in tissues sent to them by Escomel, and noting the very frequent peculiarity of the nucleus being flattened, have created a new variety (*L. tropica* Wright 1903 var. *americana* Laveran and Nattan-Larrier 1912).

The disease is probably transmitted by some blood-sucking insect, most patients stating that the first lesion appeared at the place where they had been bitten by some insect or bug.

Geographical Distribution.—The disease has, so far, been reported from Peru, Brazil, and Colombia; but further investigation will probably show that it is endemic in many other parts of South America. In Brazil it is especially common in the regions between the State of St. Paulo and the State of Matto Grosso, near the River Tiété; in Peru it is found in the regions of Caralaya and Sandia, and close to the river Madre de Dios.

Ætiology.—The disease is due to *L. tropica* Wright 1903 var. *americana* Laveran and Nattan-Larrier 1912 (see p. 360).

Morbid Anatomy and Histopathology.—Escomel, in a chronic case who died of cachexia, found the body extremely emaciated, and the espundial lesions extending from the oral cavity to the pharynx, larynx, and trachea. The œsophagus was also affected. The organs presented amyloid degeneration.

The histopathology of the disease has been well investigated by Breda, Escomel, De Amicis, Verrotti, Splendore, Carini, and recently very completely by Laveran and Nattan-Larrier. The lesions do not show any characteristic histological feature, the epithelial strata have disappeared, and are substituted by a fibro-leucocytic membrane; there is a large amount of granulating tissue, with numerous mononuclear leucocytes and plasma cells; a few macrophages may be seen.

Splendore has occasionally seen giant cells; no cell nests have been observed. The stroma consists of some fibrils, which are stained with difficulty. The lesions are not very vascular.



FIG. 594.—ESPUNDIA.
(After Splendore.)

Symptomatology.—The incubation period is unknown. The malady generally begins with a nodule on some uncovered part of the body, which fairly quickly breaks down, and an ulcer is formed. This first lesion is called by Escomel 'espundial chancre.' It is mostly found on the forearms, legs, chest, trunk, or more rarely on the face. The ulcer is generally atonic, roundish; there is very little or no pain, the fundus is granulating, and there is abundant purulent secretion, which dries up in thick crusts. The ulcer after some months, or even one or two years, heals up, leaving a thick scar. While this primary ulcer is still open, but oftener after it has healed, the characteristic lesions occur on the mucosa of the mouth and nose, with or without the appearance of further ulcerative



FIG. 595.—ESPUNDIA.
(After Splendore.)

lesions on the skin of various regions of the body. The lesions on the mucosa of the mouth are ulcero-granulomatous, often frambœsiform, and may invade the hard and soft palate, the gums, the labial mucosa; they may form on the palate a diffuse granulomatous mass, with deep furrows. The mucosa of the nose is very often attacked, and destruction of the cartilages may take place, inducing a marked deformation of the nose; the skin is often œdematous, and patches of hard œdema may be found below the eyes. The pathological process may extend to the pharynx and larynx. In some cases the patient may become aphonous, and complains of great pain during deglutition; his breathing may be very offensive.

The course is chronic; the disease may last for twenty to thirty years, death being generally due to some intercurrent disease. In

the last stage the patient becomes cachectic, and his appearance may be that of a carcinomatous patient.

Prognosis.—This is bad ; if, however, the diagnosis is made when the primary cutaneous lesion appears, and this is destroyed, the further progress of the disease may be prevented.

Diagnosis.—The disease is distinguished by the very long course from the usual type of dermal Leishmaniasis (Oriental sore), which invades the oral mucosa only exceptionally, though cases have been reported by Cardamatis in Greece, and Lacava and Gabbi in Italy. From blastomycosis it is distinguished by the presence of a Leishmania, and absence of yeast-like or monilia-like fungi. From syphilis it can be diagnosed by the uselessness of the mercurial and salvarsan treatment ; from morva by the absence of *B. mallei* ; moreover, morva is very rare or absent in those regions where espundia occurs. The condition is distinguishable from tuberculosis by the different histological lesions ; from frambæsia by the absence of the frambæsiiform eruption on the body, by the absence of the *Treponema pertenue*, and by the uselessness of the salvarsan treatment.

Treatment.—According to Escomel, if the primary lesion be excised or destroyed, the further course of the disease is prevented. When the generalized eruption and the lesions on the mucosa of the mouth have appeared, no treatment is of any avail ; this must be merely symptomatic. The ulcers may be cauterized, and mild antiseptic mouth-washes should be freely used, such as diluted glycotymolin and listerin, or permanganate of potassium (1 in 5,000).

Prophylaxis.—As the disease is probably transmitted by some blood-sucking insect, the slightest bite should be disinfected with tincture of iodine.

INDIAN ORO-PHARYNGEAL LEISHMANIASIS.

Remarks.—It may be of interest to give a brief account of an ulcerative condition of the throat observed by one of us in two Europeans who had long been living in India.

Ætiology.—In one of the two cases observed, scrapings from the ulcers contained typical Leishmania bodies very similar or identical to *Leishmania tropica* and *L. donovani*. In the other—which was the first case seen, and clinically identical to the second—no Leishmania was found, but the patient had to go back to India, and no repeated examinations could be carried out. We are inclined to think that it was of the same nature. The condition may have been kala-azar, with ulcerations on the throat, though this manifestation of kala-azar has never been described ; moreover, the general health was not so affected as in kala-azar of long standing. It was not Oriental sore with complications on the oral mucosa, as the skin had never been affected ; moreover, Oriental sore does not

run such a long course. It was not espundia, as there were no cutaneous lesions and the ulcers were not frambœsiform.

Symptomatology.—In the case in which Leishmania bodies were found there was no history of syphilis or of any ulcerative lesion on the skin. He had been residing for a long time in India, and when he consulted one of us at Colombo, was going on a long holiday. He was a tall, rather stout man (European) of thirty-eight years of age, in apparently good general health, but he complained of intractable ulcers on the pharynx and soft palate, which, according to him, had been present for the last nine years, and which gave a certain amount of discomfort, though they were not very painful. No enlarged lymphatic glands could be detected. The local examination showed the presence of several ulcers on the posterior wall of the pharynx and on the soft palate; they were of various sizes, but not very large, mostly $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{1}{2}$ centimetre in diameter; they were roundish, and some of them not very deep. Some were covered by débris; none had a frambœsiform appearance. The patient had been treated in various ways, including a very energetic antisyphilitic treatment, without any effect. The microscopical examination of scrapings from the lesions showed Leishmania bodies, apparently very similar or identical to *L. donovani*. On inquiry the fact was elicited that the patient had been occasionally suffering from attacks of fever, believed to be malaria, for the last five years. The physical examination of the patient revealed nothing abnormal, but the spleen on percussion appeared to be slightly enlarged, and on deep inspiration was just palpable.

In a clinically identical condition seen in a previous patient no Leishmania was found in the ulcers, but no repeated examinations could be carried out; he admitted having had many attacks of what he called 'malarial fever.' In that case the spleen was much enlarged, though the examination of the blood revealed absence of malarial parasites and pigment.

Prognosis.—This would seem to be bad, as the local ulcers were most intractable. The general health did not seem, however, to be very markedly affected.

Diagnosis.—This is based on the microscopical examination. Care should be taken to make a deep scraping of the ulcer.

Treatment.—This is most unsatisfactory. Locally, cauterization is to be advised.

ULCUS TROPICUM.

Synonyms.—Yemen ulcer, Aden ulcer, Annam ulceration, Cochin sore, Mozambique sore, Sarnes (Congo). *German*: Tropische Phagedenismus. *French*: Ulcère Phagédénique des Pays Chauds, Ulcère Phagédénique Endémique. *Italian*: Ulcera Tropicale. Phagedæna Tropica.

Definition.—Ulcus tropicum is a tropical chronic sloughing ulcer, which may take a phagedænic character, and spread down to the

muscles and bones, and which, left to itself, has hardly any tendency to healing.

History.—Phagedænic ulceration is mentioned in many of the early works on tropical medicine. Thus, Hunter in 1792 refers to it in Jamaica in the following terms :

‘Sores . . . spread quickly, and form large ulcerated surfaces. . . . The granulations turn flaccid, and even mortify in parts. The portion skinned over ulcerates afresh, and the sore becomes larger than ever. Ulcers of some standing . . . could not be healed in that country. . . . Opportunity was taken to send home men with ulcers.’

After this date there are numerous references to the complaint, which is generally described under the name of the locality in which it was found, which accounts for many of the above synonyms. In 1862, Rochard took a broader view of the disease, and in 1864 Le Roy de Méricourt introduced the term ‘Phagedænic ulcer of warm countries.’

In 1874, Treille suggested that the disease was likely to prove to be of a parasitic origin, but he failed to demonstrate any parasite. Bacteria have since been described by many observers, and more recently spirochætes have been considered to be the cause of the disease, as will be described in the section on Ætiology.

Climatology.—*Ulcus tropicum* is found in all tropical and sub-tropical regions of Africa, Asia, and America. There are localities, however, such as the hinterland of Aden, the low, marshy plains of Cochin-China and Tonkin, and some islands of the Red Sea, where the affection is particularly common. It may be found also, though rarely, in temperate zones, cases having been reported from Greece, and one having been observed at Bovalino in South Italy by Lacava.

Ætiology.—Numerous bacteria have been described by Petit, Boniet, Le Dantec, Blaise, Crendropoulo, as being the cause of the disease. Vincent believes the affection to be due to the association of spirochætes and fusiform bacilli so frequently found in such ulcers. Vincent’s observations have been confirmed by Smith and Peil in Sierra Leone, Patton in Aden, and many other observers in various parts of the tropics. Prowazek has fully described as cause of the disease a spirochæte which he named *Spirochæta schaudinni*. The important researches of Keysselitz and Mayer, and the more recent ones of Wolbach and Todd, confirm Prowazek’s work.

Spiroschaudinna schaudinni Prowazek 1907. — This is a spiral-shaped organism, very actively motile, its length varying between 10 μ and 22 μ , though much shorter or longer individuals may be met with. The coils are few in number, and elongated. The organism possesses a well-marked undulating membrane, which is best brought into evidence by using Löffler’s flagellar stain. A delicate, rather short flagellum is occasionally seen at one of the extremities. Forms undergoing longitudinal division are frequently observed. Prowazek distinguishes, also, male and female forms. Various shaped regressive and rest forms may be seen. According to Prowazek,

Spiroschaudinna schaudinni, apart from being more slender, has the greatest resemblance to the spirochæte which Prowazek himself and Hofman have described in a form of balanoposthitis.

The *S. schaudinni* is often found mixed with other types of spirochætes, some slender, some thick.

According to Le Dantec, Brault, Vincent, and others, *ulcus tropicum* is identical with the so-called 'hospital phagedæna' which used to rage in hospitals of all countries before the antiseptic era. In our opinion *ulcus tropicum* is a separate disease, though occasionally, owing to secondary infections, it may take phagedænic characters similar to those found in hospital gangrene.

Inoculation Experiments—Communicability.—Experiments to inoculate the disease in men and in the lower animals have been made by several authors. Blaise inoculated himself with the secretion of a case of *ulcus tropicum*, but no ulcer was produced—only a slight superficial, purulent lesion, probably due to pyogenic cocci present as secondary infectious agents in the secretion which had been used for the inoculation. Blaise tried to inoculate the disease, also, in guinea-pigs, but without any definite result. Similar experiments on the lower animals by Jourdeuil and Gayer failed. Halberstädter tried to reproduce the affection in monkeys (orang-outang and *Macacus cynomolgus*), but without success.

It would seem, therefore, that, to a certain extent, the disease is not directly contagious. It is probable that some insects or other blood-sucking vermin may play an important rôle in the transmission of the disease. In Ceylon, patients often state that the ulcer developed at the site of a leech-bite. Leeches are extremely common in Ceylon and other tropical countries. Prowazek in Java has examined many leeches, but he never found any spirochætes except once. The spirochæte observed, however, was quite different from *Spiroschaudinna schaudinni*. Prowazek examined, also, on many occasions the mud of rice-fields, but of spirochætes he found only *S. plicatilis*, and once a very thin, short, very actively mobile spirochæte.

Predisposing Causes.—A hot damp climate is said to have a predisposing influence, as cases of *ulcus tropicum* occur more frequently in the hot rainy season and marshy lowland localities rather than in dry or higher regions. It may be that it is in hot, marshy places that the carriers of the infection thrive.

The disease is very common among the poorer classes of the population, who go barefooted, and wear but scanty clothes. We have observed it very often in beggars and in scabies patients. The disease is much more common in adults than in children, in men than in women.

Histopathology.—This has been thoroughly studied by Keysselitz and Mayer, and more recently by Wolbach and Todd. The surface of the ulcer is covered often by a tenacious membrane composed almost solely of coarse-meshed hyaline fibrin, with detritus and masses of spirochætes and various bacteria. The fundus and walls consist of granulation tissue, which does not present any characteristic feature. The deeper tissues and corium

surrounding the ulcer present a heavy lymphoid and plasma cell infiltration, and, as noted by Wolbach and Todd, numerous eosinophiles are found in the vicinity of small vessels. On microscopical examination of vertical sections of the ulcer, it will be seen that the superficial layers of the fundus show a large amount of granular detritus and numerous foci of leucocytic infiltration, while the deeper layers consist of fairly dense fibrous tissue. Hæmorrhagic foci are to be seen in various parts, and, as observed by Keysselitz



FIG. 596.—ULCUS TROPICUM: TYPICAL.

and Mayer, fusiform bacilli and spirochætes are found in the superficial layers, while in the deeper strata only spirochætes are present.

Symptomatology.—The affection is generally found on the lower limbs, especially the lower third of the leg, the ankle and dorsum of the foot. Occasionally it may develop on other uncovered parts of the body. It is single in most cases, but two or more ulcers may be found in some patients.

Ulcus tropicum begins with the appearance of a small, painful, occasionally pruriginous papule or papulo-pustule, surrounded by

a deeply infiltrated dusky red areola. The initial lesion soon undergoes purulent and degenerative changes, which rapidly extend to the infiltrated area. A sloughing process sets in, and an ulcer is formed, which gradually extends in depth and surface. The margins are not sensibly raised, nor thickened, unless the case be very old. They are not perpendicularly cut, nor undermined, as a rule, the whole ulceration having generally a roundish or oval outline, and, when the secretion is removed, a concave fundus. The parts surrounding the ulcers are often œdematous, and somewhat painful on pressure. It is remarkable, however, how comparatively little pain there is in many cases.

When the patients are first seen, the whole ulcer is generally covered with a thickish, dirty greyish secretion, exhaling a highly

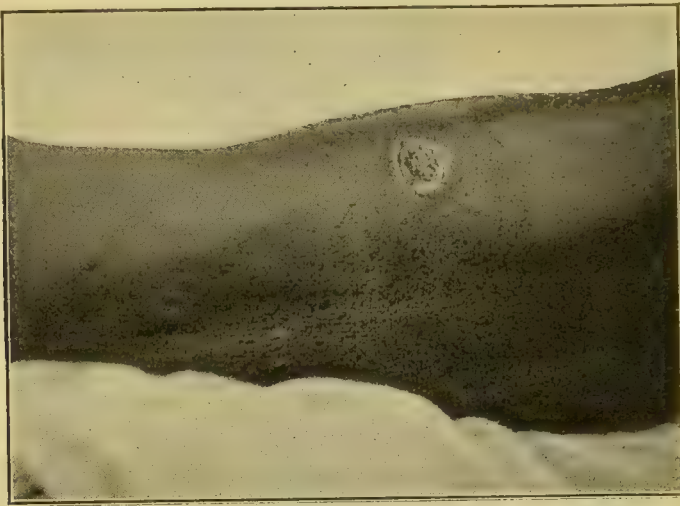


FIG. 597.—ULCUS TROPICUM: EARLY STAGE.

offensive odour. On removing the secretion, the fundus will be found to be of a red colour, or in chronic cases pale pinkish, and feebly granulating.

The fundus is often somewhat infundibular in its central area, and not rarely may present a circular raised ridge, which divides the ulcer into two portions—an external more superficial one, and an internal infundibuliform one.

Occasionally, if left untreated, the ulcer may take a real phagædænic character, involving a large surface, and deepening till the deeper structures—muscles, tendons, and periosteum—are affected.

The course is always chronic, lasting for months—in fact, the ulcer has hardly any tendency to spontaneous healing if untreated. Healing takes place by a very slow process of granulation, and begins from the periphery. A thick, whitish, often disfiguring scar is left at the place of the ulcerations. At times, however, the cicatrix is at first very delicate, and the ulcer may break out again after the least irritation.

The microscopical examination of the greyish, bad-smelling secretion shows leucocytes, undergoing various degenerations, some red-blood cells, threads of connective tissue, and very often spirochætes and fusiform bacteria, of various types, sometimes accompanied by the usual pyogenic cocci. In old untreated cases larvæ of flies may be found, small acarids, and ants.

Diagnosis.—According to Le Dantec, Vincent, and several other observers, *ulcus tropicum* is identical with 'hospital phagedæna.' The fact, however, that, in contrast to 'hospital phagedæna,' *ulcus*



FIG. 598.—ULCUS TROPICUM.

tropicum shows very little or no direct contagiousness, and in most cases is self-limited, clearly shows, in our opinion, that the two are separate diseases.

Differential Diagnosis—Framboesia.—The lesions in *framboesia* are generally multiple—either granulomatous or ulcerative. Scrapings from *framboesia* lesions—after the superficial strata have been removed—will often reveal the *Treponema pertenue*, which is much more slender than any of the spirochætes found in *ulcus tropicum*. Occasionally an ulcerative *framboesia* lesion may become infected with the virus of *ulcus tropicum*. In our experience, however, the reverse is much more common—viz., an *ulcus tropicum* becomes infected with *framboesia* virus, takes a papillomatous appearance, and is followed by a general eruption of *framboesia granulomata*.

Syphilis.—*Ulcus tropicum* does not show usually the clean-cut margins and the punched-out circular or reniform appearance, with

the frequent wash-leather slough on the surface, of a tertiary ulcer. The mercury and potassium iodide treatment has no influence on it.

Oriental Sore.—An old-standing Oriental sore may present some characters of a chronic *ulcus tropicum*, though generally a tropical ulcer is much larger. The process of ulceration and breaking down is very slow in Oriental sore, while it is very rapid in *ulcus tropicum*. In difficult cases the search for *Leishmania tropica*, which is present in Oriental sore, will clear the diagnosis.

Ulcus Cruris Varicosum.—There are often varicose veins visible, the parts surrounding the ulcer are congested and frequently eczematous, the ulcer is often shallow and irregular.

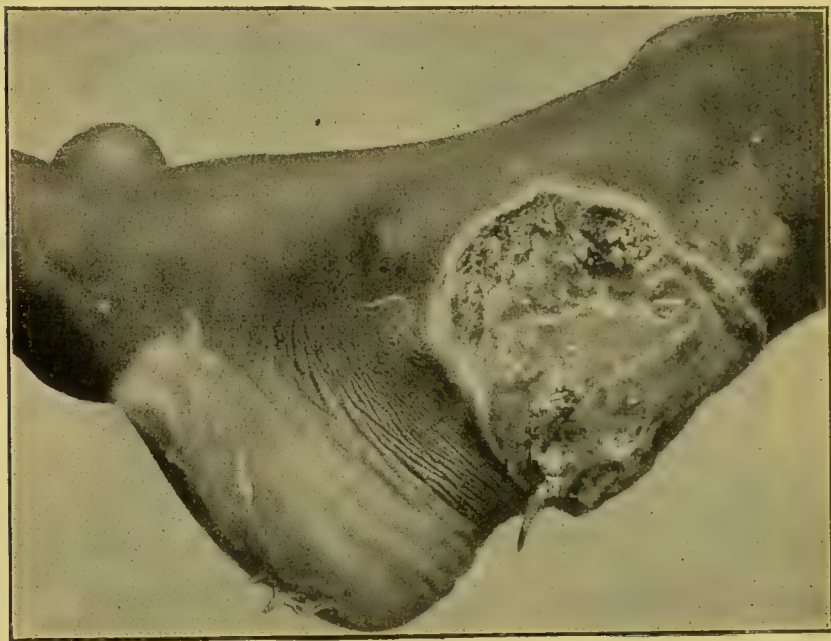


FIG. 599.—ULCUS TROPICUM, WITH CORNU CUTANEUM.

Ulcers of Tubercular Origin.—They are rare on the lower extremities, and their development is long and insidious. In *ulcus tropicum* the tubercular cuti and ophthalmic reactions are negative unless the ulcer develops in a tubercular patient.

Blastomycosis—Sporotrichosis.—In blastomycosis there are generally warty patches with minute abscesses; while the lesions of sporotrichosis often show at first the characters of gummata. The bacteriological examination will reveal the presence of the fungi.

Mycosis Fungoides.—Is generally preceded by a general pruriginous dermatitis of various character, lichen-planus-like, psoriasis-like, eczematous-like. The ulcerative lesions are multiple, and have the characters of granulomata.

Prognosis.—If untreated, tropical ulcer has very little or no tendency to spontaneous recovery, and in some cases may extend,

damaging the deeper structures, tendons, muscles, nerves, and vessels. Occasionally a general septicæmia and pyæmia may supervene. In countries where framboesia is endemic the ulcer often gets infected with its virus, and the patient develops a general eruption of framboesia.

Treatment.—Salvarsan has been administered by intravenous or intramuscular injection by Werner, Hallenberger, and others, with success in many cases. The details of the treatment are found in the chapter on Framboesia. Mercury and potassium and sodium iodides are useless, but calcium iodide (gr. iii.), well diluted, three times daily, seems occasionally to be of some slight benefit. As regards local treatment, the patient, whenever possible, being kept at rest, the dirty greyish, foul-smelling secretion is removed by using a disinfecting solution, such as mercury perchloride, 1 in 1,000; cyllin, 1 in 300; hydrogen peroxide, 10 per cent.; permanganate of potash, 1 in 2,000.

For the first few days it is better not to apply any so-called disinfectant ointments or powders: simply keep the ulcer covered with gauze, moistened as often as possible with one of the disinfecting solutions already mentioned. This generally stops the formation of the greyish, dirty secretion. The ulcer will then appear clean and of a pinkish colour; but whatever be the further treatment used, whether powders (iodoform, boracic acid) or disinfecting ointments (white, red precipitate, or iodoform ointments), the improvement will be very slow, and several weeks, and often months, will elapse before a firm cicatrix is formed. Much quicker results will be obtained by using a protargol ointment. The ulcer is cleaned every morning with a perchloride lotion (1 in 1,000); then a protargol ointment (5 to 10 or 20 per cent.) is thickly spread on a piece of lint or gauze and applied to the ulcer, which is then fairly firmly bandaged.

The superiority of the protargol treatment over other kinds of local treatment is patent in many cases. Castellani, who introduced it for *ulcus tropicum*, made the following experiment: In a patient presenting two ulcers of little difference in size and deepness, one on the right leg, one on the left, he treated the one on the right leg, which was slightly larger and deeper, with protargol, and the one on the left leg with iodoform. The ulcer treated with protargol healed in three weeks, the one treated with iodoform in two months.

A silver nitrate ointment ($\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.), or a silver nitrate ($\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.) balsam of Peru (2 per cent.), ointment may also be used.

To accelerate cicatrization allantoin preparations have been used, and also scharlachroth powder. Salvarsan has been used locally as a powder, but this method is not advisable, as it induces a very severe, painful inflammation.

ULCUS INTERDIGITALE.

This affection is common among natives of Ceylon. The patient complains of some itching between the toes, though no papules or vesicles are seen. After a few days a fissure appears, which rapidly deepens, and enlarges into a large oval ulcer with a dull, dark red fundus and sodden-looking margins. There is practically no dis-

charge whatever. The ulcer is generally very painful. The skin surrounding the ulcers does not show signs of inflammation. Under proper treatment the ulcer heals in a few days. The patient must remain at rest, washing the ulcer twice daily with a 1 per cent. carbolic lotion, followed by dressing with a bismuth-boric acid ointment :—

Bismuth subnitratis	gr. xxx.
Acidi borici	gr. xv.
Vaseline	ʒi.

ULCUS INFANTUM.

Historical and Geographical.—Under this name Castellani described a rather rare ulcerative condition of the legs met with in



FIG. 600.—ULCUS INFANTUM.

Ceylon among children, both native and European. His researches have been confirmed by various observers, among whom recently Gabbi and Sabella in Tripoli. The condition is found in Ceylon, India, and North Africa.

Ætiology.—This is unknown. A bacillus which cannot be grown is the only germ present in most cases; but as to its ætiological rôle nothing can be said definitely.

Symptomatology.—A reddish spot appears on some part of the leg. The spot becomes slightly elevated, and shows a yellowish central point. The yellowish point breaks down, and a small ulcer appears, generally of circular shape, and with a red fundus. The ulcer secretes a yellowish, thickish secretion, which dries into a yellow crust. If after some days the crust is removed, the ulcer will be found much larger and deeper—the size of a shilling to a half-crown piece. The ulcer is generally indolent, except on pressure. There may be a little pruritus. The ulcer may be single or multiple. The inguinal lymphatic glands may become enlarged, and occasionally the child has fever. The duration is between four to six weeks and three or four months. On healing a permanent whitish scar is left.

Diagnosis.—The *ulcus infantum* is differentiated from *ulcus tropicum* by the less severe symptoms, by being almost always multiple, by the smaller dimensions of the sore, by the absence of spirochaetes, and by the absence of any tendency to phagedæna. In contrast to *veldt* sore the ulcers are deep, and the crust very thick. No streptococcus is found.

Treatment.—Touch the ulcers with pure hydrogen peroxide once every other day, and dress them with simple boric acid lotion (2 per cent.).

REMARKS ON ULCERS.

Ulcerative conditions of the skin are extremely common in the tropics. They may be classified as follows:—

1. Oriental sore.
2. *Ulcus tropicum*.
3. *Ulcus infantum*.
4. *Veldt* sore.
5. *Ulcus interdigitale*.
6. Gangosa ulcers.
7. Leprotic ulcers.
8. Ulcers of framboesial origin.
9. Elephantoid ulcers.
10. Blastomycetic, sporotrichitic, and, generally, hyphomycetic ulcers.
11. Cancerous and sarcomatous ulcers.
12. Tubercular ulcers.
13. Syphilitic ulcers.
14. Glanders ulcerations.
15. Ulcers of pyogenic origin (*pyosis tropica*).
16. Ulcers due to varicose veins.
17. Undetermined chronic or subchronic ulcerations.

The ulcerative conditions which may be considered as strictly tropical and well defined, such as Oriental sore, *ulcus tropicum*, etc., have already been described. The *cosmopolitan ulcerations*, such as the syphilitic ones and those due to varicose veins show the same characters in the tropics as in temperate zones, except that very often, owing to their being neglected for a long time, they may present enormous dimensions, and may show secondary infections, and become phagedanic. Ulcers due to varicose veins are very common among rickshaw coolies, who have to run and stand for hours at a time. It is remarkable how quickly they heal in most cases in these coolies, if the patient is kept at rest for some time; whereas in temperate zones the healing of varicose veins ulcers is of very long duration.

Undetermined Subchronic and Chronic Ulcers.

Knowledge of this group of ulcers is scanty, but the investigations of Strong, Stitt, Rho, Wherry, and Clegg, and others have thrown some light on this subject. Our experience tallies with that of Stitt, and we therefore consider that such ulcers may be roughly divided into three groups:—

1. Septic Ulcers—Ulcerations following on Neglected Wounds.
2. Painless Chronic Ulcers.
3. Diphtheroid Ulcers.

Septic Ulcers—Ulcerations following on Neglected Wounds.—These are of pyogenic origin and often very large dimensions. They are generally of roundish or irregular shape, and may be very deep. The secretion is abundant, purulent, and contains the various staphylococci. If the pus is removed, and a scraping taken from the fundus, the preparation will show numerous polymorphonuclear leucocytes and various cocci. These ulcers do not show tendency to spontaneous cure, but heal quickly under an antiseptic treatment. We generally treat them with hydrargyrum perchloride (1 in 2,000). The opsonic treatment also gives good results.

Nichols has called attention to discharging sores in the Philippine Islands, called 'puente,' which are produced by the natives applying some lime to the skin, and afterwards betel-powder, with the object of counter-irritation.

Painless Chronic Ulcers.—A small red scaly, slightly itching spot appears, generally on the legs, and gradually enlarges for about four to eight weeks, when the affected area begins to exude a serum which quickly dries into crusts. Under the crust ulceration slowly takes place. At first the ulcers are shallow, and may have undermined edges; later they are often punched out, and may become indurated. There is no pain, except slight pain on pressure, and the general health is not affected. Healing takes place under the crust, and lasts between two and twelve months. A pale cicatrix, with hyperpigmented margins, is left.

As noted by Stitt, scrapings from the fundus show a prevalence

of mononuclear cells, polymorphonuclears being practically absent. No pyogenic organisms are found.

Treatment.—The treatment is difficult. Cauterization does very little. In some cases the application of bismuth subnitrate, xeroform, novoform, dermatol, and firm bandaging is useful. In others a protargol ointment (5 to 10 per cent.), or a nitrate of silver ($\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.) balsam of Peru (1 per cent.) ointment is of advantage. Allantoin preparations may also be used. When the ulcers are very large and atonic, skin transplantation may be necessary.

Diphtheroid Ulcers.—An angry red, painful spot, often surrounded by vesicles, appears on the legs. Within a few hours—twelve to forty-eight—the affected area is turned into a dark greyish or blackish membrane. If this membrane be removed, an ulcer will be found, covered with greenish pus. The membrane reforms rapidly, and, apart from the dark colour, it closely resembles a diphtheria membrane. These ulcers extend rapidly, but do not take, as a rule, a true phagedænic character. The margins after some time may become indurated, but do not show a punched-out appearance. Scrapings taken from the fundus show numerous polymorphonuclears. The course is very long. These ulcers are with difficulty distinguishable from true *ulcus tropicum* except by the absence of *Spiroschaudinna schaudinni* Prowazek.

Treatment.—Excision is not to be advised, as in Stitt's and our own experience, when this has been done, additional lesions have appeared. Bier's passive congestion method is painful, and does not improve the condition. On the whole, the best treatment is to keep the ulcers well disinfected with a perchloride lotion (1 in 2,000), occasionally touching them with pure hydrogen peroxide. Should the ulcers become phagedænic, the application of pure carbolic is advisable.

GRANULOMA INGUINALE.

Synonyms.—Ulcerating granuloma of the pudenda, Granuloma Venereum (Brooke).

Definition.—Granuloma inguinale is a chronic granulomatous affection of probable protozoal origin attacking the generative organs, from which it spreads to the inguinal region and the perineum.

History.—In 1896 Conyers and Daniels described a disease of the generative organs in both men and women in British Guiana which was very painful, disfiguring, and contagious. Daniels thinks that it was previously described by Macleod and Maitland in India. Since then papers have appeared on the subject by Ozzard, Galloway, Wise, Donovan, Siebert, Flu, Martini, Gabbi, and Sabella, and many others.

Climatology.—It occurs in British Guiana, the West Indian Islands, West Africa, India, South China, and Northern Australia; but is rare in Ceylon, Malaya, Sudan, and Central Africa. It has

been reported from Northern Africa (Tripoli) by Gabbi and Sabella. A similar or identical condition has rarely been met with in Europe.

Ætiology.—It appears in the genitalia of both sexes after puberty, but is rare after forty-five years of age. Donovan has described small, rod-like, or coccus-like parasites $2\ \mu$ by $1\ \mu$, which lie singly or in groups in mononuclear cells obtained by scraping the sores. His results have been confirmed and enlarged by Siebert, and later by Flu.

De Beaurepaire, Aragão, and Vianna, claim that they have cultivated the capsulated coccus-like bodies described by the above-mentioned authorities. They state they have successfully inoculated the cultures in the lower animals. Cultivations have been obtained also by Martini.

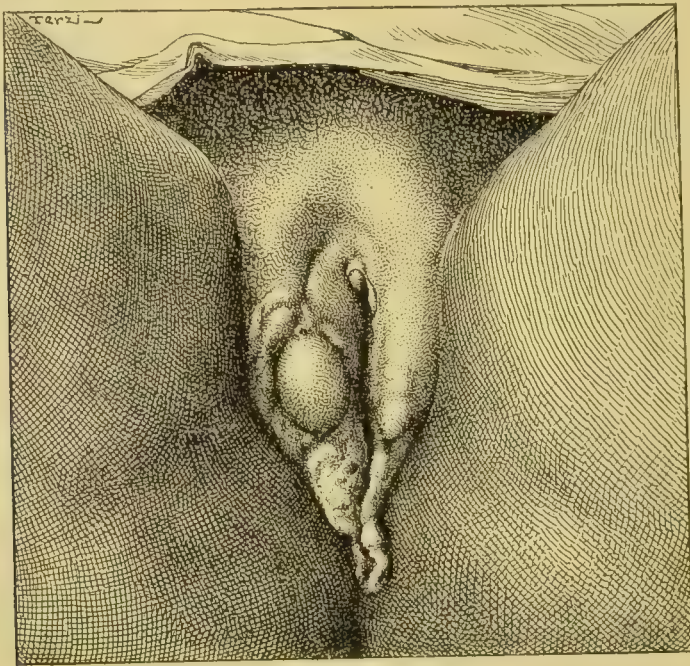


FIG. 601.—GRANULOMA INGUINALE.

Wise in 1907 found in the eruption spirochaetes resembling *Treponema pallidum* and *Spirochæta refringens*, together with some small bodies consisting of a thin capsule surrounding a clear unstained space, in the middle of which was a curved chromatic rod, which was thinner in the centre, and club-shaped at either end. He found from two to twenty-five of these in leucocytes. Cleland confirmed Wise's observations, and has called the spirochæte *S. aboriginalis* Cleland 1909.

The disease is generally transmitted by sexual intercourse. Cleland states that in West Australia the disease is especially prevalent among 'gins' (native women), and there is an idea present among the white settlers that the girls become infected by connection with dogs, which, however, is open to considerable doubt, though it is well known that dogs may suffer from granulosomatous tumours in which spirochaetes have been found by several authors. Ernest Black, who has made a thorough investigation, states that Cleland's hypothesis is untenable.

Pathology.—According to Galloway, the microscopical changes begin some distance from the lesion, and consist of a round-celled infiltration into the upper regions of the corium. This induces the papillæ to increase in length, thus producing the typical papule, and at the same time causes an elongation of the inter-papillary processes of the epidermis, until they are some eight or ten times their original length.

The connective tissue of the corium swells and disappears, and its place is taken by a round-celled infiltration, which consists of leucocytes, Unna's plasma cells, mast cells, and connective-tissue cells. Giant cells are not found. The leucocytes are the ordinary polymorphonuclear leucocytes, while Unna's cells are characterized by possessing a rounded nucleus, with a certain amount of surrounding protoplasm containing basophile granules. The connective-tissue cells are spindle-shaped. The cells of the epidermis are modified over the papule by becoming swollen, hyaline, and showing mitosis. The stratum granulosum fails to develop its keratohyalin granules, and eventually disappears halfway up the papule, as does the stratum corneum, so that on the summit the different layers of the epidermis cannot be differentiated.

There is neither caseation nor suppuration, but in the older parts of the specimen the cells of the infiltration become swollen and disappear, and in their place there appears cicatricial connective tissue, which causes the papule to shrink and the whole area to assume a scar-like appearance.

Symptomatology.—The disease in the male begins on the penis, as a rule, as a papule or small nodule, which extends over skin and mucosa by peripheral growth, which is aided by the formation of new papules and nodules at the growing margin and in the healthy skin.

It grows into the groins, causing the hair to fall out, and between the scrotum and the thighs, and from thence backwards into the perineum and around the anus, into which it may pass.

When fully developed, it appears as a mass of nodules or papules, without deep ulceration as a rule, but with a thin, offensive discharge. In the older regions it shows some attempt at healing in the formation of dense scar tissue. There is very little pain or pruritus.

In the female the process begins as a papule on the labium minus, and then extends into the vagina, along the perineum, around the anus, and up the rectum, and into the groins. The growth extends into the tissue between the rectum and the vagina, and may give rise to rectovaginal fistulæ. The whole growth is also much more liable to ulcerate in the female than in the male.

The lesions may become œdematous, and present an appearance analogous to elephantiasis.

Varieties.—Daniels lays stress upon the fact that the disease varies much in different races. In negroes it is more granular, and spreads farther; in Indians it is less marked; in Fijians it is softer, and separate areas more common.

Diagnosis.—It is most likely to be confused with syphilis, lupus, and epithelioma. From syphilis it can be differentiated by the absence of the secondary eruption and the inefficacy of mercurial treatment. Lupus is very rare in such situations, and in epithelioma the lymphatic glands would be early infected. In doubtful cases microscopical examination of a piece of the diseased tissue will enable the diagnosis to be made from lupus as well as from epithelioma.

Prognosis.—The disease as a rule does not affect the general health, but is extremely chronic, lasting for years.

Treatment.—The best local treatment is radiotherapy with X rays, which has been found quite successful in Madras. If these are not available, antiseptic lotions should be applied, and then portions excised, or the diseased areas may be scraped and then cauterized. Conyers and Daniels recommend the application of an ointment of salicylic acid (gr. xxx.), unguentum creosoti (ʒi.).

Salvarsan and neosalvarsan have been given with good results. The technique of the treatment has been described in the chapter on *Framboesia*. Large doses of iodide of potash are said to be useful.

PAPILLOMA INGUINALE TROPICUM.

Synonym.—*Acanthoma Inguinale* (Castellani).

A peculiar papillomatous affection of the inguinal region is not rare among Tamils. Further experience will probably show that other races are also affected. Women are apparently more liable to the disease than men, inasmuch as, although the number of male patients in the Colombo Clinic and hospitals is much larger than the number of female patients, not a single case has been detected among men.

Symptomatology.—One or both inguinal regions are occupied by extremely numerous tall filiform vegetations of a pinkish or darkish colour. No ulcerative lesions are present. There is neither pain nor pruritus. The general health does not seem to be affected. The affection is very chronic, and is probably contagious, but nothing is known of the ætiology. In the cases so far observed the genital organs of the patient were normal, and there was no history of gonorrhœa or any other venereal disease.

Treatment.—The treatment is surgical—removal of the vegetation by the knife and cauterization. The patient, as a rule, however, will not consent to the operation.

REFERENCES.

Oriental Sore.

- BETTMANN AND V. WASIELEWSKI (1909). *Beihefte Archiv für Schiffs u. Tropen-Hygiene*.
 BOIGEY (1907). *Arch. Génér. de Méd.*, No. 9.
 BOROWSKY (1898). *Wojenno-Medizinsky Journal*, p. 925.
 BROcq AND VEILLON (1897). *Ann. de Derm. et de Syph.*, p. 553.

- BUSSIÈRE AND NATTAN-LARRIER (1909). *Bulletin Société Path. Exotique*.
- CARINI AND PARANHOS (1909). *Bulletin Société Path. Exotique*.
- CARTER (1909). *British Medical Journal*.
- CHANTEMESSE (1887). *Ann. de l'Inst. Pasteur*, i. 477.
- CHULGUINE. Quoted by Oudiourminsky.
- CRENDIROPOULO-MILTON (1897). *Ann. de l'Inst. Pasteur*, xi. 784.
- CUNNINGHAM (1885). *Scientific Memoirs of the Medical Officers, Army of India*, i. 21.
- DARLING (1912). *Arch. of Intern. Med.*
- DEPERET AND BOINET (1884). *Arch. de Méd. et de Pharmacie Mil.*, iii. 296.
- DJELALED-DIN-MOUKHTAR (1897). *Ann. de Derm. et de Syph.*, p. 218.
- DUCLAUX AND HEYDENREICH (1884). *Arch. d. Phys. Normale et Path.*, iii., Série iv., 106. *Bull. de l'Acad. de Med.* (1884), p. 74.
- DUHRING (1898). *Realencyclopædie der ges. Heilkunde*, xviii. 82.
- FINKELSTEIN (1886). *Medizinski Sbornik Kawkasskago Medizinskago Obschtschestwa*, xl. 45 (cited by Marzinowsky and Borgrow, *Vichow's Archiv*, vol. clxxviii.).
- FIRTH (1891). *British Medical Journal*, i. 60.
- FLEMING (1868). *British Army Medical Reports*, x.; (1869) xi. 511.
- GABBI (1912). *Malaria*.
- GEBER (1874). *Vjsch. f. Derm.*, p. 445.
- JAMES, S. P. (1905). *Scientific Memoirs of the Officers Medical and Sanitary Departments, Government of India*, N. S., p. 13.
- JEANSELME, E. (1904). *Cours de Dermatologie Exotique. Inst. Méd. Colonial de Paris*, p. 196.
- KAPOSI (1884). *Wien. Med. Blätter*, p. 46; (1885) *Anzig. d. Wien. Aerzte*, p. 6.
- KUHN, J. (1887). *Virchow's Archiv*, cl. 372.
- LACAVA (1912). *Malaria*.
- LAVERAN (1880). *Annales de Dermatologie*, pp. 173-197.
- LE DANTEC AND AUICHE (1897). *Arch. Clin. de Bordeaux*.
- LELOIR AND VIDAL (1890). *Atlas des Pays Chauds*.
- LOUSTALOT AND LELOIR (1886). *Thèse de Lille* (cited by Leloir and Vidal, *Descript. des Maladies de la Peau*, 1889).
- MANSON (1907). *Journal of Tropical Medicine*.
- MARZINOWSKY (1907). *Zeit. für Hygiene*.
- MARZINOWSKY AND BOGROFF (1904). *Virchow's Archiv*, clxxviii. 112.
- MESNIL, NICOLLE, AND REMLIEGER (1904). *C. R. Soc. Biologie*, p. 167; (1908) *Bullet. Soc. Pathologie Exotique*, p. 41.
- MURRAY (1883). *British Medical Journal*.
- NATTAN-LARRIER, AND TONIN AND HECKENROTH (1909). *Bullet. Soc. Path. Exot.*
- NEUMANN (1909). *Centralblatt für Bakteriologie*.
- NICOLLE (1908). *C. R. Acad. Sciences*, p. 842.
- NICOLLE AND NOURRY-BEY (1897). *Ann. de l'Inst. Pasteur*, xi. 784.
- NICOLLE AND SICRE (1908). *Compte Rendus Soc. Biolog.*
- NUTTALL (1899). *The Role of Insects, etc., as Carriers of Disease*. Johns Hopkins Hospital Reports, vol. viii., October.
- ODIOURMINSKY (1907). *Vratcheb Gaz.*
- PLEHN, ALBERT (1905). *Handbuch der Tropenkrankheiten*, herausg. von C. Menze, i. 52; Leipzig.
- PONCET (1887). *Ann. de l'Inst. Pasteur*, i. 518.
- RAPTSCHESKY (1889). *Beilage zu Wojenno-Medizinski Journal*.
- RIEHL, G. (1886). *Vjsch. f. Derm. u. Syph.*, p. 805.
- SCHULGIN (1902). *Russkii Vratch*, pp. 1150, 1180. (Reference: *Centralbl. f. Chir.*, 1920, p. 1062).
- SMITH (1868). *British Army Annual Medical Report*, x. 321.
- SPLENDORE (1912). *Bull. Path. Exotique*.
- STRONG (1906). *Philippine Journal of Science*, p. 91.
- TIMPANO (1912). *Malaria*.
- UNNA (1896). *Histopathology of Diseases of the Skin*, p. 475.
- WERNER (1912). *Arch. f. Sh. v. Trop.*
- WRIGHT (1903). *Journal of Medical Research*, x. 472.

Granuloma Inguinale.

- CLELAND, BURTON, AND HICKINBOTHAM (1909). *Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene*.
 DANIELS (1906). Allbutt and Rolleston's *System of Medicine*, vol. ii., part ii., p. 708.
 FLU (1912). *Centralb. f. Bak.*
 GALLOWAY (1897). *British Journal of Dermatology*, ix. 133.
 GABBI AND SABELLA (1912). *Malaria*.
 GOEBEL (1911). *Chirurgie der Heissen Länder*.
 MACLEOD (1907). *British Journal of Dermatology*, p. 73.
 MANSON (1907). *Tropical Diseases*. London.
 MARTINI (1913). *Arch. f. Sh. v. Trop. Hyg.*

Ulcus Tropicum.

- BLAIZE (1897). *Gaz. Hebd. de Méd. et de Chir.*, October 10.
 BOINET (1890). *Annales de Dermatologie et Syph.*
 BRAULT (1898). *Janus*.
 CASTELLANI (1904-13). *Ceylon Medical Reports*.
 CRENDIROPOULO (1897). *Ann. de l'Inst. Pasteur*.
 DÄUBLER (1900). *Grundzüge der Tropenhygiene*. Berlin.
 GROS (1907). *Bull. Path. Exotique*.
 HALLENBERGER (1912). *Arch. f. Sch. u. Trop. Hygiene*.
 JOURDEUIL (1898). *Arch. de Méd. Nav.*
 KEYSSELITZ AND MOYER (1909). *Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene*.
 LACAVA (1912). *Malaria*.
 LE DANTEC (1885 and 1898). *Arch. Med. Navale*.
 MANSON (1907). *Tropical Diseases*.
 PEILL AND SMITH. Quoted by Prowazek.
 PETIT (1886). *Archiv. Med. Nav.*
 PLEHN (1906). *Mense's Handbuch der Tropenkrankheiten*, vol. iii.
 PROWAZEK (1907). *Arbeiten aus dem Kaiserlichen Gesundheitsamte*, Bd. xxvi., Heft i.
 VINCENT (1896). *Annales de l'Institut Pasteur*.
 WOLBACK AND TODD (1912). *Journal of Medical Research*.

Ulcus Infantum.

- CASTELLANI (1905-12). *Ceylon Medical Reports*.
 GABBI AND SALELLA (1912). *Malaria*.

Undetermined Ulcers.

- CASTELLANI (1905-12). *Ceylon Medical Reports*.
 RHO, F. (1905). *Mense's Tropenkrankheiten*, vol. i.
 STITT, E. R. (1908). *Journal of Cutaneous Diseases*.
 STRONG, R. P. (1906). *Philippine Journal of Science*.

Papilloma Inguinale.

- CASTELLANI (1905-12). *Ceylon Medical Reports*.

Espundia.

- BUENO DE MIRANDA (1910). *Arch. de Soc. de Med. de S. Paulo*.
 BREA (1899-1912). Numerous papers in *Giornale Malattie della Pelle e Annali Medicina Navale*.
 CARINI (1911). *Bull. Path. Exot.*
 DE AMICIS (1909). *Trans. Int. Congress, Budapest*.
 ESCOMEL (1911). *Bull. Path. Exot.*
 LAVERAN AND NATTAN-LARRIER (1912). *Bull. Path. Exot.*
 SPLENDRE (1910-12). Numerous papers in *Brazilian Medical Journals*, in the *Bull. Path. Exot.*, etc.
 VERROTTI (1911). *Giorn. Int. Scienze Mediche*.

CHAPTER LXVII

SKIN DISEASES (*continued*)—THE DERMATOZOIASES

The Dermatozoiases—Hexapode dermatoses—Creeping eruption—Circinate creeping eruption—Dermatitis macrogyrata—Chilopode dermatoses—Acarine dermatoses—Nematode dermatoses—Cestode dermatoses—References.

The Dermatozoiases.—The term ‘dermatozoiasis,’ in the widest sense of the word, means any skin disease of animal origin, but it is usually restricted to indicate those skin lesions which are caused by metazoan parasites. Used in this restricted sense, dermatozoiasis includes :

- I. Hexapode dermatoses.
- II. Chilopode dermatoses.
- III. Acarine dermatoses.
- IV. Nematode dermatoses.
- V. Cestode dermatoses.

I. HEXAPODE DERMATOSES.

The Hexapode Dermatoses include the lesions of the skin caused by either the bites, the stings, or the presence of the larvæ or the pregnant female of various species of the *Hexapoda*.

These Hexapode dermatoses may be divided into four classes :—

1. Dermatoses caused by bites.
2. Dermatoses caused by stings.
3. Dermatoses caused by the presence of the larvæ.
4. Dermatoses caused by the presence of the imago.

1. Dermatoses caused by Bites.

These lesions are most commonly due to bites of species of the families Pediculidæ (p. 631) ; Clinocoridæ (p. 636) ; Anthocoridæ (p. 640) ; Reduviidæ (p. 640) ; Aradidæ (p. 643) ; Culicidæ (p. 198) ; Psychodidæ (p. 680) ; Simuliidæ (p. 684), Tabanidæ (p. 689), Muscidæ (p. 708), and by species of the orders Siphonaptera (p. 739) and Hymenoptera (p. 194), in which comes the family Formicidæ, or

ants (p. 197). Besides the actual insects one larva (p. 732), that of *Auchmeromyia luteola* Fabricius 1805, is known to bite man and suck blood.

The bites of these insects are either considered in pp. 193-201, or in the references given above, and need not be further considered, except with regard to the Pediculidæ, which cause the dermatosis called Pediculosis.

Pediculosis.

Synonyms.—Phthiriasis, Vagabond's disease.

Definition.—Pediculosis is a term applied to the various lesions, primary and secondary, induced by the bites of *Pediculus humanus* Linnaeus 1758, *Pediculus corporis* de Geer 1778, and *Phthirus pubis* Linnaeus 1758 (pp. 631-634).

Remarks.—Pediculosis is extremely common in the tropics, where it is an everyday sight to see the lower class natives busily employed in killing the lice in their friends' heads.

Ætiology.—Pediculosis is due to the irritation caused by the venom injected during the bites of the three species of lice mentioned in the definition.

Pathology.—The mouth-parts of a louse consist of two tubes one inside the other; the outer chitinous tube, called the *proboscis*, is composed of the fused labrum and labium, and is armed with a collar of minute curved hooklets, while the inner membranous tube is composed of the maxillæ and mandibles, and is called the *suctorial tube*. When about to bite, the louse inserts its hard proboscis into a sweat duct, everts its small hooklets, and thus obtains a hold upon the skin. It then protrudes the suctorial tube, which it drives deep into the skin of the host until it reaches the blood. It is during this process that it probably injects the venom from its salivary glands, but the nature of this poison is quite unknown, although its presence is with reason suspected owing to the pruritus caused by the bites of the lice.

Having reached the blood, it proceeds to fill itself to repletion, pumping the blood into its alimentary canal by means of the chitinous pharyngeal pump. After feeding, it withdraws its proboscis, and the blood fills up the orifice and coagulates, forming a minute red papule. Considerable pruritus is now felt, and the victim scratches vigorously to relieve this sensation, and often produces marked excoriations, which may become secondarily infected with the common pyogenic cocci, causing purulent lesions. Repeated biting, associated with injection of the venom, and constant scratching, leads to pigmentation of the skin, causing the so-called pityriasis nigra of William, or melanoderma pediculis. If this process is continued, the skin becomes thickened and deeply pigmented, and forms the so-called 'vagabond's disease.' The pigmentation is naturally not observable in very dark skins, and may not be so entirely dependent upon the scratching as is usually stated, but may be, in part at least, caused by the venom.

Symptomatology.—The essential symptom is pruritus, which need not be localized but may be general, accompanied by the presence of the minute papules with bright red centres, but this simple picture is generally complicated by the erythema or excoriations set up by the scratching induced by the pruritus, and this again may be complicated by the appearance of pustules, due to secondary pyogenic infections, which dry and leave scabs. In these cases the neighbouring lymph glands are usually enlarged. Very rarely may pediculosis give rise to general symptoms, such as fever.

Varieties.—Three clinical varieties of pediculosis are described—viz., *Pediculosis capitis*, *Pediculosis corporis*, and *pediculosis pubis*.

Pediculosis Capitis is caused by *Pediculus humanus* Linnaeus 1758, which, though usually confined to the hairy regions of the head, may rarely be found in other parts of the body. They are grey on Europeans, and brownish or even black in colour upon dark-skinned natives, and are said to be yellow on Chinese, and orange-coloured on Hottentots. They often infect European ladies, probably coming from the native ayahs, and thus a very dark pediculus may be found on a fair European. They cause intense irritation of the head, and may give rise to secondary impetiginous lesions and enlargement of the lymphatic glands, especially those of the back of the head, and in very dirty people with long hair they may cause the peculiar condition of matted hair called 'plica polonica.'

Pediculosis Corporis.—This is caused by *Pediculus corporis* de Geer 1778. These pediculi live in the clothing, especially in thick seams, and are therefore to be found on natives in the region of the waist, where the clothing is twisted into a thickish roll. In Europeans the most common site for their attacks is the back of the shoulders, where the small papules with the bright red centres and the linear scratches may be seen.

Pediculosis Pubis.—*Phthirius pubis* lives wherever there are large thick hairs—viz., on the hairs of the pubis, of the eyelids or eyebrows, and of the beard and armpits. Here again it is accompanied by the characteristic signs. In addition, Morrison's spots or maculae ceruleae may be seen in the form of small, roundish or oval greyish-blue maculae, which are thought by some authorities to arise from the pigment on the thorax of the louse opposite the anterior pair of legs, but which more probably arise from the action of the venom. The reddish deposits seen on the hairs are said to be the faeces of the parasite. The eggs may be seen as small, oval bodies attached to the hairs.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis depends upon the history of pruritus of a more or less severe type, usually worse in some given region, and by the appearance of scratches associated with the little papules and the discovery of the lice on the body or in the clothing, which must be that usually worn by the patient. The rare diffuse pigmented forms of pediculosis may be mistaken for Addison's disease, or the suprarenal form of malaria, but may be recognized by the

finding of the lice, the non-diminution of the muscular power, and by the presence of the pruritus. From scabies it may be distinguished by the lack of lesions on the hands and wrists, and the absence of the sarcopes.

Treatment.—*Pediculosis Capitis* may be treated by soaking the hair with petroleum (care being taken not to approach a light) followed by a good wash with soap and water, the whole process being repeated in twenty-four hours. Another method is to sponge the hair little by little with carbolic acid (1 in 40), or soak long hair in carbolic lotion (1 in 80) followed by a good wash with soap and water, and later by a lotion of acetic acid (25 per cent.), used to loosen the eggs, which are then removed by the use of a small-toothed comb.

Another method of killing the parasites is by dabbing the hair with xylol, remembering, however, the danger of fire with this inflammable substance.

Impetigo contagiosa may be treated by an ointment composed of ammoniated mercury (5 grains) and lard (1 ounce), and in children the hair may be cut and this ointment may be applied.

Pediculosis Corporis.—The clothing and the bedding must be disinfected by the usual steam sterilizers, and the patient must have several large baths, with free use of soap and water as well as a soothing calamine lotion (40 grains calamine to 1 ounce of water) for application to the irritated skin.

Pediculosis Pubis.—A white precipitate ointment (5 to 10 per cent.) or an ointment of oleate of mercury (5 per cent., 6 drachms) with ether (2 drachms) will kill parasites and ova, after which calamine lotion may be applied to allay the irritation.

Clinocorosis.

Bugs produce wheals, with central red spots surrounded by zones of hyperæmia. A solution of menthol (5 grains in 1 ounce of rectified spirits) will relieve the irritation; or, if the area has been scratched, the application of a lotion of carbolic acid (1 in 40) is preferable (see p. 636).

Siphonapteriasis.

Flea-bites are characterized by small red papules with dark red centres, and are to be distinguished from the maculo-papules of enteric fever, which disappear on pressure. The linen of a person probably suffering from flea-bites should be inspected for the brown faecal marks made by the fleas. For further details, see p. 739. To keep these pests away, some powdered camphor may be used.

Formiciasis.

Ant-bites usually only produce local pain, inflammation, and swelling; but the larger tropical ants may cause faintness, shivering, and even temporary paralysis by their bites. In Ceylon the very small ants, which infest the beds, produce urticarial pomphi. These bites are best treated by applying a solution of carbolic acid (1 in 20), and as a preventative against ants infecting beds some powdered camphor may be dusted in the sheets (see p. 197).

2. Dermatoses caused by Stings.

Stings are mainly caused by species belonging to the family Apidæ of the Hymenoptera, which includes the bees and wasps. A description of these stings will be found on pp. 194-196, while that of the effects of caterpillar hairs (Lepidoptera) will be found on pp. 197-198.

3. Dermatoses caused by Larvæ.

The larvæ of various species of the Œstridæ and Muscidæ are compelled to undergo their development in the skin of some warm-blooded animal, and as these are plentiful, as a rule the flies do not attack man, who only occasionally suffers from their effects, and when he does the pathological condition is usually named dermal myiasis. Other larvæ—as, for example, that of *Auchmeromyia luteola* Fabricius 1805—are blood-suckers. We will first consider dermal myiasis.

Dermal Myiasis.

Synonyms.—Cutaneous myiasis, Subcutaneous myiasis. *French*: Myase Cutanée, Myase Furunculeuse, Myase Rampante Sous-cutanée. *German*: Myasis. *Italian*: Myasis cutanea.

Definition.—Dermal myiasis is the invasion of the skin by the larvæ of species of the Œstridæ, especially by *Dermatobia cyaniventris* Macquart 1843, and by those of the Muscidæ, especially *Cordylobia anthropophaga* Blanchard.

Remarks.—It is necessary to be careful to consider the zoological region when determining the species of the fly to which a maggot found in a case of dermal myiasis belongs, as it is unlikely that a species known to occur in Africa will be found in America and *vice versa*. Further, it is desirable to determine definitely the nature of the fly causing the myiasis, and therefore this should be bred out as described under Nasal Myiasis (p. 1280).

Dermal myiasis may be divided into the American, the African, the Asian, and the European.

American Dermal Myiasis.

The dermal myiasis of Tropical America is usually said to be due to the fly *Dermatobia cyaniventris* Macquart 1843, which is common in that region, and the larval stage of which is normally found in the subcutaneous tissues of cattle and other mammals. By analogy it is believed to be the fly which causes human dermal myiasis in the same region, but, according to Austen, this has never been definitely proved by hatching out the fly from the pupa.

It is known as the 'ver moyoquil' in Mexico, 'ver macaque' in Cayenne, 'cormollote' in British Guiana, 'torcel' in Venezuela, 'nuche' in Colombia, 'ura' and 'berne' in Brazil, 'anal coshol' in British Guiana, 'nuche' or 'gusano' in New Granada. The description of the fly can be found on p. 704.

Symptomatology.—The patient complains of pain and itching in the affected region, followed by swelling and œdema in the surrounding parts, giving rise to a boil-like swelling, rather hard, and of a deep red colour, with a central opening inside which the stigmata of the larva may be seen from time to time appearing and disappearing.

Treatment.—There is usually no difficulty in seizing the parasite with a pair of forceps and forcibly removing it, after which the wound must be treated antiseptically.

African Dermal Myiasis.

Definition.—African dermal myiasis is the invasion of the skin and subcutaneous tissue by the larvæ of *Cordylobia anthropophaga* Blanchard (Tumbu-fly disease), and *G. rodhaini* Geddoelst 1905.

Remarks.—Recently several new and valuable papers on this affection, which is often called the 'Tumbu-fly disease,' have appeared, especially those by Austen, Smith and Blenkinsop in 1908.

Symptomatology.—The eggs are apparently sometimes laid on the clothing, the fly, perhaps, being attracted by the odour, or perhaps the larva wanders from the floor on to the human being, especially when using the latrine. The parts most affected are the thigh and buttocks in Europeans, but the forearm, axilla (especially in natives), and the head also may be invaded. The infected area presents the appearance of a boil, in the central portion of which there is an opening, more or less clearly defined, which is marked by black matter (the excrement of the larva). In this hole the posterior end of the larva may be noted, and on pressing on it considerable pain is produced, probably due to the movements of the larva. Surrounding the central opening is an inflamed area about $\frac{3}{4}$ inch in diameter. The opening may, however, be obscured by dried-up discharge.

Treatment.—Removal of the larva is very simply effected by seizing it by a pair of forceps and pulling it out.

Asian Dermal Myiasis.

Myiasis has not been sufficiently studied in Asia, though it is fairly common there. *Sarcophaga ruficornis* is reported as causing occasionally a very severe form of cutaneous myiasis, but beyond this much cannot be said.

European Dermal Myiasis.

The myiasis of Europe scarcely come under the scope of tropical medicine, but it may be mentioned that dermal myiasis are known to be caused by *Hypoderma bovis* de Geer 1776 (p. 703), *H. diana* Brauer, *H. lineata* de Villers 1789, *Gastrophilus nasalis* Linnæus 1758, *G. hæmorrhoidalis* Leach 1761, *G. veterinus*, and *Lucilia sericata*.

Creeping Eruption.

Synonyms.—Larva migrans. *Bulgarian*: Nova Bolest, Pulziasta Bolest. *German*: Hautmaulwurf.

History.—This disease was first described by A. Lee in 1875. Later on, Procke, Blanchard, Topsent, Fülleborn, and others have recorded several cases. It is not rare in some parts of Europe, Africa, and Asia, and in South America. We have seen numerous cases in Ceylon. It is extremely rare in North America.

Ætiology and Pathology.—Larvæ of the genera *Gastrophilus*, *G. hæmorrhoidalis* and *G. nasalis*, *Æstromya satyrus*, *Hypoderma bovis*, and *H. lineata* have been found in several cases. In others no larva whatever was found. Looss states that the same clinical picture may be caused occasionally by agchylostoma and strongyloides (*Anguillula*) larvæ, or even by an inanimate object like a piece of horsehair.

Symptomatology.—The eruption is characterized by the presence of a narrow raised red line, $\frac{1}{6}$ to 1 inch broad. This line extends daily one or several inches, and is generally sinuous, but may be straight. While the advancing end progresses, the opposite end slowly fades away. The duration of the malady is long—generally several months, but occasionally two or three years. There is much pruritus.

Treatment.—Hypodermic injections of various disinfectants have been tried with little success. Hutchins recommends a cocaine injection, followed by the injection of 1 or 2 drops of chloroform.

Circinate Creeping Disease.

In Ceylon cases are met with of a peculiar eruption, which is possibly of the same nature as the creeping disease previously described, though larvæ were not found.

The condition is characterized by the presence on the back of the hands of a ringed eruption, with markedly elevated, thick, angry, red borders. In all the cases the eruption started suddenly after the patient had been gardening and handling turf. There may be one ring or several. The skin inside the rings is normal. The rings expand eccentrically. The patients complain of the extreme irritation, and in all the cases stated that they felt something creeping along the red circles, as though a worm had got inside in handling the turf. The duration varies, but it generally does not exceed two or three weeks.

Ætiology.—The eruption does not appear to be a form of dermatitis venenata, due to touching certain plants and vegetables. Possibly it is due to some larva entering the skin, but so far the search for larvæ has been fruitless. No trichophyton-like fungus is present.

Treatment.—Liq. plumbi and other soothing applications are generally useless. The best results are obtained by continuously applying on lint a diluted alcoholic solution of resorcin :—

Resorcin	..	..	..	..	..	℥i.
Sp. rect.	..	..	..	..	..	℥ii.
Aq. dest.	..	..	..	..	..	ad ℥xii.

Dermatitis Macrogyrata.

Dermatitis macrogyrata is a rare condition found in Ceylon and South India, of unknown causation, and characterized by the presence on the palms of the hands of one or two very large gyrations formed by scaly and crusty lesions. On removing the crusts



FIG. 602.—DERMATITIS MACROGYRATA.

and scales a broad shallow furrow can be seen situate in the epidermis. The eruption is associated with pain, sometimes severe, but there is seldom any pruritus. The condition is most persistent, and in our cases neither fly larvæ could be found nor fungi isolated. In none of our cases was there history of syphilis, and potassium iodide and mercury had no effect. The treatment is most unsatisfactory. Antimycotic substances, such as chrysarobin and tincture of iodine, have no effect. The application of a lotion of liquor plumbi (℥ii.), tincture of opium (℥i.) diluted with 8 ounces of water, or of dressing soaked in 0.5 per cent. of resorcin, may cause a slight improvement.

4. Dermatoses caused by the Presence of the Imago.

At times the impregnated female insect burrows into the skin while the eggs mature.

A good example of this is *Dermatophilus penetrans* Guérin 1838.

Dermatophiliasis (Jigger).

Definition.—Dermatophiliasis is the invasion of the skin and subcutaneous tissue by the pregnant female jigger (*Dermatophilus penetrans*).

Remarks.—The home of the jigger is in tropical America, from 23° N. to 28° S., but it and its wanderings over the world have been



FIG. 603.—DERMATOPHILIASIS. (After Newstead.)

a, Group of jiggers ; *b*, isolated jiggers ; *c*, pits left by jiggers ;
d, lateral view of jiggers deep in the skin.

sufficiently described on p. 744. At present it is found in South America, West and East Africa, Madagascar, Uganda, India, and, it is said, China.

Pathology.—The pregnant female jigger pierces the skin obliquely near the nails and between the toes, but it may occur in any part of the foot, and even on the arms, scrotum, and face. All but the

last two segments are embedded in the skin. These last segments plug the orifice, and discharge the eggs.

Symptomatology.—The symptoms begin with itching and irritation, generally in some part of the foot, especially the toes, and often under the toe-nail. On inspection, a small dark dot (the last two abdominal segments of the parasite) is noticed in the skin. If left alone, painful inflammation and suppuration develops around the distended abdomen of the parasite, giving rise to a swelling which may attain the size of a small pea, in the centre of which is seen a depression containing the black dot, and, finally, ulceration takes place, and the body of the parasite is thrown off, but not until all the eggs are laid.

When the parasite has been dislodged by treatment or suppuration, a small ulcer is left, which is very liable to septic or other bacterial infections. These infections may lead to phagedæna, gangrene, and tetanus. When the feet are badly affected, walking is impossible, which is of especial importance in carriers and native troops.

Treatment.—The treatment is the careful removal of the little insect with a clean needle, after rubbing weak carbolic ointment or lotion into the foot, and cleansing and dressing the little wound antiseptically.

Prophylaxis.—Prophylaxis consists in keeping the house clean, and pigs, poultry, and cattle kept away therefrom. High boots should be used, and especial care should be taken not to go to a ground-floor bathroom with bare feet. The feet, especially the toes and under the nails, should be carefully examined every morning to see if any black dot can be discovered, when the jigger should be at once removed, and in this way suppuration will be prevented. It is advisable, also, to sprinkle the floors with carbolic lotion, Jeyes' fluid, or with pyrethrum powder, or with a strong infusion of native tobacco, as recommended by Low and Castellani.

II. CHILOPODE DERMATOSES.

Centipedes, when they bite, cause local itching followed by intense pain which spreads over the whole limb when the bite is on an extremity. A red spot appears at the site of the bite, and this enlarges and becomes black, and is sometimes associated with lymphangitis, adenitis, headache, vomiting, dizziness, irregular pulse, and mental anxiety.

The treatment is to bathe the parts with a solution of ammonia (1 in 5 or 1 in 10), and to apply a dressing of the same solution, and if there is much swelling, an ice-bag, while if the pain is severe an injection of morphia may be necessary; while later, fomentations are required for the local inflammation (see also pp. 192-193).

III. ACARINE DERMATOSES.

The *Acarine Dermatoses* include the skin lesions caused by the ticks and mites. The tick bites are described on pp. 190 and 586.

The mites (pp. 579-580 and 611-616) which most commonly attack man are:—

DERMANYSSINÆ.

Dermanyssus gallinæ de Geer 1778.

Dermanyssus hirudinis Hermann 1804.—These mites produce a papular eczematous dermatitis in poultrymen.

Holothyrus coccinella Gervais 1842 cause a swelling in the part attacked.

TROMBIDIDÆ.

Trombidium akamushi Brumpt 1910 is the cause of Tsutsugamushi disease.

Trombidium tlalsahuatl Lemairé 1867 is the tlalsahuatl of Mexico, which, with the allied species called the balata-mite of the Guianas, are well-known plagues, burrowing into the skin, and causing intolerable itching and painful little blisters; but the zoological names of these, as well as of the 'pou d'agonte' of Guiana, the 'niaibi' of New Granada, the 'colorado' of Cuba, the 'mouqui' of Para, and the 'bête rouge' of Martinique and Honduras, are not known.

Trombidium wichmanni Oudemans 1905 is the gonone of Celebes, whose larvæ attack man, burrowing into the skin as just described above.

Trombidium vandersandei Oudemans 1905 is the gonone of New Guinea, which acts like *T. wichmanni*.

Trombidium holosericeum Linnæus 1746 has a larva (*Leptus autumnalis*) which causes similar irritation in England in the autumn.

The *Leptus* stage of an unknown *Trombidium* is reported in North Queensland.

TETRANYCHIDÆ.

Tetranychus molestissimus Weyenbergh 1886 causes severe itching in the Argentine and Uruguay during the months December to February, by thrusting its hypostome into the skin, and thus causes 'Bicho-colorado itch.'

EUPOPIDÆ.

Tydeus molestus Moniez 1889 is the cause of 'Guano itch.'

TARSONEMIDÆ.

Pediculoides ventricosus Newport 1850 is the cause of 'grain itch.'

Tarsonemus uncinatus and *T. inlectus* are also known to attack man:

TYROGLYPHIDÆ.

Tyroglyphus longior Gervais var. *castellani* Hirst 1912 is the cause of 'copra itch.'

Tyroglyphus siro Linnaeus 1758 and *Aleurobis farinae* de Geer are believed to be the cause of vanillismus.

Glyciphagus prunorum Hermann is the cause of 'grocer's itch.'

Rhizoglyphus parasiticus Dalgetty 1901 is the cause of a type of so-called 'coolie itch' of the feet. Bell states that it causes a large circular superficial sore on the sole of the foot. This is produced by numbers of the parasite invading the skin.

SARCOPTIDÆ.

Sarcoptes scabiei var. *hominis* Linnaeus 1758 is the cause of scabies in man.

In addition to this common parasite, there are several varieties, usually occurring in the domestic animals, which may at times attack man—e.g., *Sarcoptes scabiei* var. *canis*, found in the dog; *S. scabiei* var. *ovis* in the sheep, *S. scabiei* var. *equi* in the horse, *S. scabiei* var. *suus* in the pig, *S. scabiei* var. *aucheniae* in the lama.

Notoedres cati var. *cati* Hering 1838, found in cats, may occur in man.

DEMODICIDÆ.

Demodex folliculorum Simon 1842 is said to be the cause of certain inflammations in seborrhœa. Some authors consider them to be of importance in the carriage of certain diseases, such as leprosy and cancer.

Rarer *Acarinæ*, which attack man occasionally, are *Trombidium strialiceps* Heim and Oudemans 1904, on fowls and dogs; *T. americanum* Riley and *T. irritans*; *Metatrombidium poriceps* Heim and Oudemans 1904, on fowls and dogs; *Microtrombidium meridionale*, and *M. pusillum* Hermann.

Copra Itch.

Definition.—A very pruriginous dermatitis, found in people handling copra, and caused by *Tyroglyphus longior* Gervais var. *castellani* (p. 614).

Historical and Geographical.—This dermatitis was described by Castellani in 1911, who observed it in Ceylon in people handling copra, and considered it to be due to an acarus-like parasite, swarming in many samples of copra. He sent the specimens of the para-



FIG. 604. — RHIZOGLYPHUS PARASITICUS: MALE.

(After Dalgetty.)

site to Hirst, who described it as a new variety of *Tyroglyphus*.—*Tyroglyphus longior* Gervais var. *castellanii* Hirst.

Ætiology.—The mite is present in huge numbers in certain samples of copra, and may occasionally be found on the skin of the patients, but remains on the skin only temporarily, as it does not bury itself. It apparently induces the dermatitis in the same manner as *Pediculoides ventricosus* Newport, which lives in diseased cereals, produces an eruption in persons handling such cereals.

Experimental Reproduction.—When copra dust containing the mite is rubbed into the skin, itching frequently begins very shortly after, and twenty-four to forty-eight hours later an extremely pruriginous urticarial or papuloid eruption often develops. The same result is obtained by picking the mites out of copra dust and placing them (alone, without any dust) on the skin under a covering, such as a piece of lint kept in place by a bandage. The pustular stage did not occur, but this being due to scratching and secondary pyogenic infections, there was no time for it to develop, all the people refusing to go on with the experiment after the second day. Some individuals seem to be unaffected by the presence of the mite or the copra dust containing it.

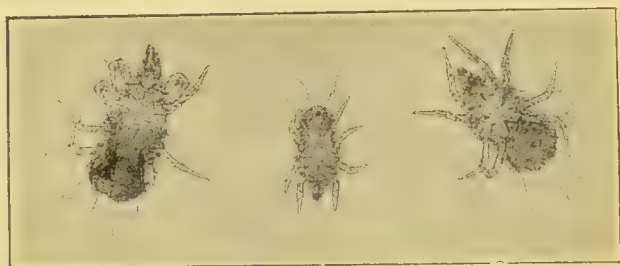


FIG. 605.—MICROPHOTOGRAPH OF THE TYROGLYPHUS OF COPRA ITCH ($\times 40$).

Symptomatology.—The hands, arms, legs, and sometimes the whole body except the face present fairly numerous, very pruriginous papules, often covered by small, bloody crusts due to scratching; papulo-pustules and pustules are also generally present. The eruption has no tendency to spontaneous cure while the patient goes on working in the infected mills.

Diagnosis.—On superficial examination the condition may be easily mistaken for scabies, but burrows are not present and the two parasites are very different.

Treatment.—The best treatment is the daily application of β -naphthol ointment (5 to 10 per cent.). The action in these cases cannot be compared to what takes place in scabies, because in copra itch the acarus-like parasite remains for only a short time on the body, and in most cases when the ointment is applied at night the mites are no longer there. It may act as an antipruritic antiseptic, and in this way diminish scratching and secondary pyogenic infections. It is probable also that a small amount of the ointment may remain on the skin after the morning bath and be repellent to the mite, in this way preventing the daily reinfection which otherwise takes place.

Grain Itch.

Synonyms.—Straw itch, Dermatitis Schambergi, Urticarioid Dermatitis, Dermatitis Ditropenotus, Aureoveridis, Acara Dermatitis urticarioides, Schamberg's disease, Straw-mattress disease.

Definition.—Grain itch is a dermatosis caused by *Pediculoides ventricosus* Newport 1850 (*vide* Fig. 251, p. 613).

History.—During the last fifty to sixty years this disease has been recognized in Europe, but only since 1901 in America, when Schamberg described it. In 1909, Goldberger and Schamberg found that it was caused by the same mite as in Europe.

Climatology.—It is found in Algeria, where it is common, and in other parts of Northern Africa, in Italy, and it is said to occur in India. Cases have also been recorded from France, Austria, and Germany. In France there was an epidemic as long ago as 1850 in Bordeaux. In 1867 some cases were found in the department of Indre and in 1872 in the Canton of Creon.

Ætiology.—The disease is caused by *Pediculoides ventricosus* Newport, which usually feeds upon the wheat-straw worm (*Isosoma grande* Riley), the joint worm (*Isosoma tritici* Fitch), and the Angoumois grain moth (*Sitotropa cerealella*). When it attacks people, it attaches itself to the skin by its sucking discs and claws, and probably injects some irritating substance into the skin while attempting to obtain nourishment.

Symptomatology.—The mite causes an urticarial and papuloid eruption on the breast, arms, face, neck, and shoulders of persons handling corn and barley, which has no tendency to spontaneous cure while the people continue to handle the infected grain. The symptoms begin after an incubation of twelve to sixteen hours with itching and the appearance of wheals surmounted by vesicles, which are usually about the size of a pin's head. These vesicles become pustules in a few hours. Severe cases show febrile symptoms, vomiting, and albuminuria.

Diagnosis.—The presence of the typical eruption in people handling grain or straw, or sleeping on new straw mattresses, should always arouse suspicion of the presence of this mite, and search for it should be made in the grain or straw.

Treatment.—The treatment consists in removal of the cause—*i.e.*, of handling the infected grain—and the application of soothing lotions, such as calamine lotion, or a dilute carbolic acid or acetic acid lotion.

Scabies.

Scabies (pp. 614-615) is so common in the tropics that a few remarks may be made. It is more frequently met with in the low country than in the hills. Clinically it does not differ from the same condition in the temperate zone, and is due to the same mite—

Sarcoptes scabiei var. *hominis*. In our experience it often starts on the genital organs, giving rise to very pruriginous papules and papulo-pustules, and in clean patients not spreading to other parts of the body. This localization on the genital organs is characteristic, and is known to the European planters of Ceylon as 'low-country itch,' because it is very prevalent in those regions.

The diagnosis is based on the polymorphic eruption, the presence of burrows—which are, however, not very evident when the mite attacks the genital organ—and on the finding of the sarcoptes. Several tropical skin diseases are apt to be mistaken for scabies; for example, crawl-crawl, various types of trichophytoses, and copra itch. From crawl-crawl it may be distinguished by the pustular lesions, which are not present, except as a secondary infection, in true crawl-crawl. From the trichophytoses it is distinguished by the absence of the fungi. In scabietic-like clinical conditions produced by various other mites, the diagnosis may be made by the absence of the burrows due to the sarcoptes.

The treatment is either sulphur ointment (10 to 20 per cent.) or a β -naphthol ointment (5 to 10 per cent.), or balsam of Peru, alone, or diluted with equal quantity of olive-oil or vaseline.

The horse, sheep, dog, cat, wolf, fox, pig, poultry, and many other animals, suffer from scabietic conditions due to mites more or less closely allied to the *Sarcoptes scabiei* of man. These mites may occasionally be transferred to man, and induce a dermatitis which clinically may resemble scabies, though as a rule much less severe.

IV. NEMATODE DERMATOSES.

Several species of the Nematode cause dermatoses—e.g., *Rhabditis niellyi* Blanchard 1885 (p. 518), *Strongyloides stercoralis* Bavay 1876 (p. 519), *Filaria bancrofti* Cobbold 1877 (p. 352), *Onchocerca volvulus* Leuckart 1893 (p. 540), *Loa loa* Guiyot 1778 (p. 536), *Agamofilaria georgiana* Stiles 1906 (p. 532), *Agchylostoma duodenale* Dubini 1843 (p. 555), and *Necator americanus* Stiles 1902 (p. 560).

The most important of these is the dermatitis caused by the two last-named worms. This dermatosis is described under the heading Agchylostomiasis, on p. 1307.

V. CESTODE DERMATOSES.

The cestode dermatoses are usually due to *Sparganum prolifer* Ijima 1905 (p. 500), which produces nodules in the skin, which are associated with considerable swelling, thus giving rise to an appearance not unlike elephantiasis. In addition there may be an acne-like eruption all over the body, which is very irritable and causes pruritus. On scratching the papules and producing excoriations, the worms may escape, while on incising a nodule a cyst, with one

or two worms embedded in slimy jelly, or a watery fluid, may be found.

After lasting for some weeks or months the cyst walls become firm and thick, and so encapsulate the worms. The condition may last for years. There is no known treatment.

REFERENCES.

Creeping Eruption.

- BLANCHARD (1901). Arch. de Parasitologie.
 BRAUN-SEIFERT (1908). Die tierischen Parasiten des Menschen.
 CROCKER (1906). Diseases of the Skin.
 FÜLLEBORN (1908). Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene.
 HUTCHINS (1908). Journal of Cutaneous Diseases.

Circinate Creeping Disease.

- CASTELLANI (1905-12). Ceylon Medical Reports.

Dermatophiliasis.

- FÜLLEBORN (1908). Beihefte Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene.

Dermatomyiasis.

- BLANCHARD (1892). Annales de la Société Entomologique de France
 (Œstrides Américains dans la peau de l'homme).
 PÉTROVSKAÏA (1910). Myases Produites chez l'Homme Thèse de Paris.

Acarine Dermatoses.

- CASTELLANI (1912). Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene. London.
 (Copra Itch.)
 CLELAND (1913). Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene. London.
 (Australian Acarine dermatoses.)
 GOLDBERGER (1910). The Straw Itch. Washington.
 HIRST (1912). Journal of Tropical Medicine.

CHAPTER LXVIII

SKIN DISEASES (*continued*)

Craw-craw—Dermatitis nodosa rubra—Lichen convex—Symmetrical ear nodules—Ear lipomata—Porters' lipomata—Subcutaneous nodular lipomatosis—Keratoma plantare sulcatum—Multiple pruriginous tumours of the skin—Angiofibroma contagiosum tropicum—Multiple pruriginous tumours—West Indian nodules—Mossy foot—References.

CRAW-CRAW.

Synonym.—Nodular dermatitis (A. Plehn).

Ætiology.—The cause of the malady is unknown.

In the Ceylon gaols, where the disease is common, the prisoners believe it is due to the diet and to the manner of cooking the rice.

O'Neil described in his case a *Microfilaria* which Manson is inclined to believe to be probably *Microfilaria perstans*. Nielly described, under the name of 'dermatose parasitaire' or 'craw-craw,' a papulo-vesicular eruption in which he found nematode embryos in the papulo-vesicles and blood of the general circulation. The conditions described by these authors are not the dermatosis we call craw-craw, and resemble more what Daniels and ourselves call cooly itch.

Symptomatology.—Under the term 'craw-craw' African natives denote practically any pruriginous skin disease. Our African experience has taught us that most of the so-called craw-craw cases are cases of neglected scabies or of tinea corporis, or what Daniels and ourselves call cooly itch. We apply the term 'craw-craw' to a dermatosis met with in Africa, in Ceylon, and in various parts of the tropics, characterized by the presence of numerous hard, *almost* horny papules, occasionally slightly exfoliating at the top, varying in size between a millet-seed and a small pea. Some of the papules may be follicular. They are not of constant shape; some may be roundish and flattened, and others acuminate. When disappearing, they may leave zones of hyperpigmentation. The eruption generally affects the legs and arms, but may spread to the whole body, excepting, as a rule, the face and scalp. Suppurative and ulcerative lesions are absent, except as secondary lesions due to scratching. The proximal lymphatic glands may be hard and enlarged. The disease, if not properly treated, may last many months,

and even several years ; some cases, however, become cured spontaneously.

Diagnosis.—The disease with which crawl-crawl presents the greatest resemblance is prurigo. It is distinguished from prurigo by the eruption appearing at any time of life, and not only in childhood ; by most of the papules being larger, of horny consistency, and not covered by a small bloody crust, as is often the case in prurigo ; and by the fact that it may be cured spontaneously.

The disease may be distinguished from tinea corporis by the absence of any fungus, and from scabies by absence of burrows, and, of course, the absence of the *Acarus*.

Treatment.—The regular application of a salicylic spirit lotion (2 per cent.), followed by β -naphthol ointment (5 to 10 per cent.) for long periods of time, often induces a marked improvement, and, in many instances, a cure. Internal treatment (arsenic, ichthyol, etc.) does not seem to influence the disease.

Dermatitis Pruriginosa Tropica (Cooly Itch).

The term 'cooly itch' is often applied to dermatoses of various nature including scabies. We use it to denote an extremely pruriginous dermatitis affecting coolies and occasionally Europeans in certain parts of the tropics, especially in the low country. No acari or similar parasites are found.

Ætiology.—The ætiology is unknown ; neither fungi nor animal parasites have been found. It may possibly be due to some parasitic agent which remains on the body only for a short time in analogy to Copra Itch (p. 1588).

Symptomatology.—The eruption is generally found on the arms and legs, but may extend all over the body, even, though rarely, to the face. The patient complains of unbearable pruritus. The eruption is made up of small papules often covered by bloody crusts ; vesicles, papulo-pustules, and pustules may be present, and the patient, on superficial examination, may be considered to be suffering from scabies, but no cunicula are found, and no acarus is observed.

Prognosis.—The eruption is very obstinate, and may last for months.

Diagnosis.—The absence of cunicula and of the sarcoptes differentiates it from scabies.

Treatment.—Sulphur (3 to 10 per cent.) and naphthol ointments (3 to 10 per cent.) are very useful, though their action, as remarked by Daniels, is much slower than in scabies.



FIG. 606.—CRAW-CRAW.



PLATE XIII.



DERMATITIS NODOSA RUBRA.

IN REALITY THE PAPULES ARE OF A BRIGHTER ANGRY-RED COLOUR.

DERMATITIS NODOSA RUBRA.

Historical and Geographical.—This condition has been described by Castellani in Ceylon.

Ætiology.—This is unknown.

Symptomatology.—The first impression received on seeing a patient suffering from this peculiar disease is that he is suffering from smallpox in the papular stage of the eruption, but the absence of fever and the closer inspection of the eruption will exclude smallpox at once. In a well-marked case the patient presents on his face, arms, chest, back, and practically on the whole body numerous large papules and nodules. The colour of the eruptive elements is an angry red; the shape, hemispherical or roundish; the size, from a small split-pea to a large pea. The surface of the papules and nodules is smooth, does not show umbilication, nor scales; their consistency is hard; most of the papules are not follicular. There is unbearable pruritus, but the malady has no urticarial element whatever. Several of the superficial lymphatic glands are enlarged and hard. In several cases a well-marked enlargement of the parotid gland is present. The blood shows a certain degree of eosinophilia. The course of the disease is long—six months to a year, and sometimes much longer; the nodules become gradually smaller, and may disappear completely; they leave no scar or zones of hyperpigmentation, but occasionally the skin may take a slightly scaly or eczematoid appearance. Recurrences may be observed.



FIG. 607.—DERMATITIS NODOSA RUBRA.

Diagnosis.—From a *syphilide* by the extreme pruritus and the inefficacy of mercury and potassium iodide.

From *smallpox*, the papular stage of which it closely resembles, by the absence of fever, by the chronic course, and by the fact that the papules never undergo a purulent change nor leave scars on healing.

From *lichen planus* by the papules being very large, and by their not being flattened, umbilicated, nor polyhedral.

From *pityriasis rubra pilaris* by the papules being very large, and most of them not follicular, and by the absence of plugs and scaling.

From *acnitis* by the unbearable pruritus and by the eruption not being chiefly limited to the face, as well as by the absence of subsequent necrosis.



FIG. 608.—DERMATITIS NODOSA RUBRA.

From *folliculitis* by the condition not being limited to the extremities, and by the absence of central crusts.

From *erythema multiforme* by the eruptive elements being well-defined, persistent, solid papules and nodules.

Prognosis.—The general health is not much affected, but the patient complains of the disfigurement and the severe pruritus, and the course of the disease is a long one.

Treatment.—Arsenic, potassium iodide, mercury, do not influence the disease. To allay the pruritus salicylic-alcoholic lotions (2 per cent.) and ointments may be used.

LICHEN CONVEX.

Synonym.—Lichen Pilaris Convex (Castellani).

Historical and Geographical.—This affection—which has been described by Castellani—is very common in Ceylon, especially among natives.

Symptomatology.—The regions of the body mostly affected are the thorax, dorsum, and shoulders. The disease is characterized by the presence of numerous firm papules, all of which are follicular.



FIG. 609.—LICHEN CONVEX.

The surface of the papules is smooth; no squamæ or plugs are found; they have always a convex surface, and may be almost hemispheric, $\frac{1}{12}$ to $\frac{1}{8}$ inch in diameter. The colour of the papules has a pinkish hue in natives, and red in Europeans; they have no inflammatory base, they are not surrounded by any halo of inflammation, nor is there hyperpigmentation, nor do they leave pigmented areas on healing. The eruption is very pruriginous. The regions affected may show hyperidrosis. The general health is not affected; the lymphatic glands are not enlarged; in a few cases the blood may show a slight degree of eosinophilia.

The course is long, the eruption lasting about three to nine

months, and often recurring. When the eruption heals, no hyper-pigmentation is left.

Diagnosis.—From *pityriasis rubra pilaris* by the papules never showing plugs and by the absence of scaling ; from *lichen planus* by the papules not being flattened, nor polyhedral, nor umbilicated ; from *dermatitis nodosa rubra* by the papules being always follicular and not so large ; from a *syphilide* by the intense pruritus ; from *papular eczema* by the papules being always follicular and larger and dome-like, with absolutely no inflammatory base, and by the skin not presenting a diffuse inflammation, whatever the stage of the disease. Moreover, even when the eruption is of long standing, the appearance of the skin between the papular elements remain quite normal, and there is no sign of what the French call *lichenification*.

Prognosis.—The eruption lasts for several months, but generally heals spontaneously ; recurrences are observed. The general health is not affected.

Treatment.—Potassium iodide, mercury, and arsenic have no effect. Externally, antipruriginous lotions and ointments may be used—as, for instance, a salicylic-alcoholic lotion (2 per cent.), followed by a naphthol ointment (2 to 5 per cent.). Change to a cool climate is very beneficial. One of our cases improved on a vegetarian diet.

SYMMETRICAL EAR NODULES.

This condition has been observed by one of us in Ceylon, but further experience will probably show that it is to be found also in other tropical countries. In the deep substance of the lobule of both ears—generally the condition is symmetrical—on palpation, a spherical nodule, hardly visible, is felt. Now and then the nodule becomes much larger, very tense, and may then present a somewhat translucid appearance ; after some days it becomes smaller again, and may be hardly visible. There is, as a rule, no subjective symptom during the periods of quiescence ; a feeling of tension and slight pain during the periods of increase of size of the nodules.

The condition is not leprotic, there being no anæsthesia or other sign of leprosy, it may possibly be of parasitic origin, but nothing definite can be stated, as none of our patients would allow the removal of the nodule. Further investigation may show that it is allied or identical to the peculiar condition called Nepal tumour (see Chapter LXXI.).

EAR LIPOMATA.

Symmetrical lipomata of the lobules are not rare (see Chapter LXXI.).

PORTERS' LIPOMATA.

Porters and hammock carriers often show one large lipomatous mass on one or both shoulders, where they carry weights, or where the pole on which the weight is carried presses.

SUBCUTANEOUS NODULAR LIPOMATOSIS.

Synonym.—Polymicrolipomatosis.

This condition seems to be common in the tropics in Europeans and natives alike. It is characterized by the presence of subcutaneous nodules, found only on palpation, roundish or oval, painless, the size of a pea to a nut. These are generally situated in the subcutaneous tissue of the arms, legs, and abdomen, and in our experience are not rarely mistaken for enlarged lymphatic glands. On tapping them with a sterile syringe only a trace of fatty material is removed, which, when placed on a slide, promptly dissolves when heated or treated with ether. The microscopical examination of one of these nodules, surgically removed, showed it to be composed of fatty tissue.

KERATOMA PLANTARE SULCATUM.

Historical and Geographical.—This disease was first described by Castellani in Ceylon. It is found also in India and tropical Africa.

Ætiology.—This is unknown. The affection is much more frequent during the rainy season, and occurs generally in natives who do not wear shoes or sandals; but we have seen a typical case in a European of good social standing. It improves or disappears completely during the dry season.

Symptomatology.—The epidermis of the soles—especially the anterior portion—and the heels is greatly thickened, and is generally of a dark yellowish colour, and presents numerous deep segmentary furrows, straight, semicircular, or ellipsoid; these furrows appear black, but if the dirt and dust accumulated in them is removed, the fundus of these sulci will be found to be whitish or pinkish. There is no sign of any local inflammation, though the patient generally complains of tenderness of the feet after much walking.

Diagnosis.—This is based on the presence of the characteristic deep sulci and punched-out holes in the thickened epidermis, which are absent in lesions of the soles of the feet of syphilitic origin. Moreover, a mercury and potassium iodide treatment has no effect whatever on the malady. In yaws the lesions of the soles of the feet are, generally, either granulomatous, with large frambœsiform nodules piercing through the thick epidermis, or a diffuse scaly condition with thickened epidermis is observed. The rare pitted condition of the soles of the feet (p. 1184) found in yaws is distinguished by its lack of seasonal incidence and by the history. In

the condition known as 'symmetrical keratoderma of the extremities' no deep sulci are found. The so-called 'mal de meleda,' which is very common in the Island of Meleda in the Adriatic, is, according to Neumann and others, identical to symmetrical keratoderma, and no deep sulci are present.



FIG. 610.—KERATOMA PLANTARE SULCATUM.

Prognosis.—The general health is not affected, but the condition may last for months, and if the patient has much walking to do, may become very painful.

Treatment.—Potassium iodide, mercury, and salvarsan are useless. Rest and local applications of salicylic ointment or salicylic collodion (ac. salicyl., $\bar{5}$ i. ; collodion, $\bar{3}$ i.), or salicylic plasters induce a marked improvement.

ANGIOFIBROMA CONTAGIOSUM TROPICUM.

This disease was first described by Unna and von Bassowitz. So far cases have been reported from the southern regions of Brazil only.

Symptomatology.—The incubation period varies from fifteen to twenty-five days. There are no prodromal symptoms. The eruption consists of vivid red papules, which soon enlarge into nodules the size of a large pea to an almond. The eruption may affect any part of the body, but more frequently the face, neck, axillæ, and genital organs. It is rarely found on the legs. It very frequently affects the various mucosæ—oral, nasal, rectal, and urethral. The nodules present a smooth surface, of a violaceous colour, and they are somewhat of soft consistency; they bleed severely after the slightest traumatism. They may disappear spon-

taneously without leaving any scar, or in other cases secondary infections may set in, and large ulcers develop. The eruption is not pruriginous, there is no fever, and the general health is not impaired.

Ætiology.—This is unknown, but the disease is considered to be infectious. According to Bassowitz, the infection takes place during sexual intercourse, or by the habit the people of Brazil have of taking their maté (national beverage), using the same cannule.

Histopathology.—According to Unna's investigation, the histopathology is quite different from what is observed in frambœsia and syphilis. The nodules consist of fibrous tissue, with scanty cells intersected by extremely numerous bloodvessels.

Diagnosis.—The disease must be distinguished from verruga peruviana and frambœsia. In verruga peruviana there are severe constitutional symptoms—fever, and often enlargement of the liver and spleen. In frambœsia the nodules have a moriform surface, and do not bleed so easily.

Treatment.—Mercury and potassium iodide are useless. Bassowitz recommends iron and arsenic internally, and externally the injection into the base of the nodules of a few drops of formalin, or their excision, using the galvano-cautery.

MULTIPLE PRURIGINOUS TUMOURS OF THE SKIN.

Schamberg and Hirschler reported in 1905 two cases of multiple tumours of the skin in negroes, associated with itching. The tumours were sharply circumscribed nodules, from the size of a small pea to a large hazel-nut, situated on the extremities. They were of a blackish colour—the smaller smooth, the larger covered with a horny epidermis. These tumours showed, on histological examination, dilated vessels, cellular infiltration, with numerous mast cells, and the formation of new collagenous fibres. The same eruption was previously described in 1880 by Hardway in a white woman.

WEST INDIAN NODULES.

This affection, which seems to be very similar to the preceding one, has been described by Numa Rat in natives of the West Indies, who often confuse it with Guinea-worm. The eruption may attack any part of the body, and consists of subcutaneous nodules varying from the size of a pea to that of a small nut. There is extremely severe pruritus, and the natives destroy the skin covering the nodules with caustics, and extract the nodules, which appear yellowish-white and have a cartilaginous consistency.

Histologically, according to Macleod, they consist mainly of hypertrophied connective tissue made up of thickened collagen bundles. The ætiology is unknown.

MOSSY FOOT.

This affection is fairly common, according to Thomas, in the region of the Amazon.

The foot is covered with dense, warty, very vascular, painful masses, as much as a half to three-quarters of an inch thick, which may spread to the leg.

The disease is very chronic, and probably of parasitic origin.

The suggestion has been made by Cranston Low that it may be a type of tuberculosis cutis verrucosa.

REFERENCES.

Craw-Craw and Allied Conditions.

CASTELLANI (1904-12). Ceylon Medical Reports.

DANIELS (1912). Tropical Medicine, London.

MANSON (1908). Tropical Diseases.

O'NEIL (1875). Lancet.

A. PLEHN (1905). Mense.

F. PLEHN. Quoted by A. Plehn.

Dermatitis Nodosa Rubra.

CASTELLANI (1906-13). Ceylon Medical Reports.

Lichen Convex.

CASTELLANI (1906-12). Ceylon Medical Reports.

CASTELLANI. Journal of the Ceylon Branch of the British Medical Association, 1909.

Symmetrical Ear Nodules.

CASTELLANI (1906-13). Ceylon Medical Reports.

CASTELLANI. Journal of the Ceylon Branch of the British Medical Association, 1909.

Keratoma Plantare Sulcatum.

CASTELLANI (1906-12). Ceylon Medical Reports.

CASTELLANI. Journal of the Ceylon Branch of the British Medical Association, 1909.

Angiofibroma Contagiosum.

BASSOWITZ (1906). Archiv für Schiffs- u. Tropen-Hygiene.

Multiple Pruriginous Tumours.

HARDWAY (1880). Archives de Dermatologie.

SCHAMBERG AND HIRSCHLER (1906). Journal of Cutaneous Diseases.

West Indian Nodules.

NUMA RAT (1909). Transactions of the Society of Tropical Medicine.

Mossy Foot.

THOMAS (1910). Transactions of the Society of Tropical Medicine.

CHAPTER LXIX

SKIN DISEASES (*continued*)—DYSIDROSES AND DYSTROPHIES

Hyperidrosis—Bromidrosis—Chromidrosis, etc.—Dysidroses: Prickly heat—Cheiropompholyx—Dysidrosis exfoliativa. Dystrophies: Leucoderma—Albinism—Melung—Chloasma Bronzinum—Black pigmentation of the nails—Xantoderma areatum—Tattooing—Ainhum—Symmetrical palmar erythema—References.

HYPERIDROSIS.

Remarks.—This condition, as well as bromidrosis, is a cosmopolitan one, but for climatic reasons both are so common and important in the tropics that a short account of them is given in this chapter.

Synonyms.—Idiopathic hyperidrosis, Idrosis, Polyidrosis, Ephidrosis Sudatoria.

Symptomatology.—Excessive perspiration may be generalized or localized. In the latter case it is generally symmetrical, the regions most frequently affected being the axillary regions, hands, feet, and genital regions. Other regions may be affected. In one of our native assistants during the hot season there is an extremely severe localized hyperidrosis of the anterior region of the neck, the sweat falling down continually in large drops.

Symptomatic Hyperidrosis.—This occurs in many tropical diseases, especially in malaria, Malta fever, etc. Localized one-sided hyperidrosis has been observed by us in some cases of frambœsia.

Prognosis.—In the idiopathic type the prognosis is good, the condition disappearing when the hot season is over, but it is often associated with prickly heat.

Treatment.—For the general hyperidrosis common during the hot season we are not in favour of any drastic internal treatment such as the administration of belladonna. In fact, we think it may be dangerous to stop suddenly this hyperidrosis, which is in reality merely a physiological fact. For such cases we simply recommend using some potassium permanganate, or cyllin, or a little menthol alcoholic solution in the daily bath, and dusting of the body with any simple antiseptic powder, such as zinc oxide, starch, and boric acid in equal parts (see Prickly Heat, p. 1605).

In really severe cases of generalized hyperidrosis, belladonna or atropin may be administered; but they stop the secretion only for a time, and must be pushed till unpleasant symptoms appear. Sulphur and acid drinks have very little effect, but they are harmless. Sulphur is occasionally given by us in cachets (3 grains) three times daily after meals.

In localized hyperidrosis the treatment varies according to the parts being non-excoriated or excoriated. In patients not presenting excoriations, naphthol or salicylic or formalin-alcoholic lotions (1 per cent.), followed by a salicylic, boric, or tannoform powder, are very useful. If there are excoriations or inflammatory signs, no alcoholic lotions should be used, but merely water solutions of boric acid (2 per cent.), carbolic (1 per cent.), permanganate of potassium (1 in 4,000), and occasionally hydrogen perchloride (1 in 2,000 to 1 in 4,000), after which a salicylic or boric powder is applied. It should be always remembered to sprinkle with the same powder the socks, shoes, and undergarments.

BROMIDROSIS.

This term is used to denote offensive sweating.

Ætiology.—The bad odour seems to be due to the growth of various bacteria, as observed by Thin, and is due not only to the sweat, but also, and probably in a higher degree, to the sebaceous secretion. The condition is very common in native races. Negroes, Indians, and Chinamen—most natives seem to have it to some extent, in fact. On the other hand, however, it is to be noted that certain natives state that they can detect in almost every European a special, disagreeable odour.

Symptomatology.—As a rule, when the sweat has an offensive odour, there is also hyperidrosis, but in certain cases the quantity of sweat is not more than usual. The condition is usually localized, occasionally general. The situation of bromidrosis is in order of frequency, the feet, the axillary regions, the perineum, and genital organs. When the condition affects the feet—the commonest localization—the odour is most offensive, and has been compared to that of putrid cheese. When it affects the axillary regions, the odour is offensive, but as a rule is of a different character.

Symptomatic bromidrosis has been described in pinta, in certain cases of Madura foot, in acanthosis nigricans, after eating certain foods, etc.

In contrast to bromidrosis, cases have been described of certain individuals having a pleasing smelling sweat, with the odour of violets or musk. There is a tradition that certain saints exhaled a pleasant odour.

Prognosis.—Except in those cases when the bad smell is due to accumulated dirt—when a thorough washing with carbolic soap will cure the condition—bromidrosis is not of easy cure, but the bad smell may be hidden in various ways.

Treatment.—This is the same as for hyperidrosis, but formalin lotions ($\frac{1}{2}$ to 3 per cent.), alcoholic or watery, are especially useful. Lysoform (2 to 5 per cent.) is efficacious. Afterwards a powder, such as ac. salicyl. gr. x., talci \bar{z} i. or ac. borici \bar{z} i., talci \bar{z} i., should be used, and some boric acid should be sprinkled in the socks and also in the boots. If there are excoriations, formalin should not be used, but instead hydrogen peroxide (10 per cent.) or potassium permanganate (1 in 4,000), followed by a dermatol xeroform or tannoform powder (\bar{z} i. of any of these drugs to \bar{z} i. of talci). Internal treatment is not of much use, but sulphur (gr. iii.) three times daily may be tried. One of us had good results in a case by the administration of urotropin, gr. x., thrice daily.

Chromidrosis.

The term is applied to coloured excretion of sweat or sebum. The condition affects in most cases the armpits, but cases have been described affecting the face, chest, abdomen, inguinal regions, hands, and feet. The colour has been described as black, blue, red, green, yellow, and violet. We have personally observed only two cases of chromidrosis. In both the axillary regions were affected, the colour was brick-red, and the sweat stained the clothes red. In one of the cases it was due to *B. prodigiosus*, in the other to a red pigment-producing coccus.

Phosphoridrosis.

Synonym.—Phosphorescent sweat.

This condition has been described by Koster and others, but is very rare. In one case it was stated that it appeared after eating phosphorescent fish. According to Beyerink's experiments, the phosphorescence is due to photobacteria.

Uridrosis.

Small white crystals, forming a sort of hoar-frost, are present on the skin, due to excretion by the skin of urinary constituents, especially urea and chlorides. Nash records several cases of a whitish deposit on the skin in native children and natives, which, according to some authorities, may have been the same condition.

Anidrosis.

Idiopathic total anidrosis, or absence of sweat, is exceedingly rare, but a diminution in the secretion of sweat is often observed. There are people in whom the bringing about of perspiration by hot-air baths and drugs is very difficult.

Symptomatic anidrosis is present in leprotic patches, and may be of diagnostic value. It is seen also in sclerodermia, general or circumscribed (morphæa), and in xerodermia. The secretion of sweat may be much decreased in diabetes and certain nervous conditions.

DYSIDROSES.

Prickly Heat.

Synonyms.—Lichen Tropicus, Sudamina Papulosa, Miliaria Rubra, Miliaria Papulosa, Salpullido (Cuba), Calor Picante (Minorca).

Definition.—Prickly heat is a papular or papulo-vesicular eruption, with marked pruritus and associated with profuse sweating.

Geographical Distribution.—The condition is found all over the tropics and subtropics. It may be observed also in temperate zones during the hot season, especially at sea-bathing places.

History.—Bontius described the affection in his work, 'De Medicina Indorum'; Cleghorn in his book, 'Diseases of Minorca,' identifies it with sudamina; he states that the term used in Minorca to indicate the eruption was *calor picante*. William Johnson (1821) and other English observers described it in India and other tropical countries with the term *Lichen tropicus*. Armand in 1854 describes it in his book, 'L'Algerie Médicale,' using the name *Lichen miliar pruriginosus*; he mentions that sea-bathing often increases the severity of the eruption. Mestre, in Cuba in 1862, wrote a very complete paper on the condition; he uses the term 'salpullido.' In more recent times the eruption has been studied by Robinson, Török, Durham, and many others.

Ætiology and Pathology.—Politzer considers the disease to be due to the obstruction of the flow of sweat brought about by the cells of the epidermis swelling by imbibition from the excessive sweat. Pearse considers it to be due to an acute distension of the sebaceous glands by their own secretion. Robinson states that the inflammation is about the sweat-pore, while, according to Török, it has nothing to do with it. In our experience, the inflammation is not always about the sweat-pore.

Durham believes prickly heat to be an infective disease, caused by a minute actively motile amœba; his results, however, have not been confirmed.

Symptomatology.—This affection is extremely common in tropical countries, especially in new arrivals. The eruption consists of small pin-head papules, which may enlarge to the size of a millet-seed, and even larger. The papules are generally conical, angry red, and often occupy the orifices of the sudoriferous follicles; they are occasionally topped by a small vesicle, the contents of which may later, occasionally, become purulent. Besides the papules, roseola-like spots are often seen; these in some cases may coalesce and form large erythematous patches. Occasionally minute glass-like vesicles of sudamina crystallina are also present. The eruption is found on the parts of the body where the patient perspires most. It is very commonly observed round the waist, the back, chest, arms, and forehead; it may extend to the whole surface of the body, except, it is generally stated, the palms and soles. In our experience, when the eruption is general, the palms and soles also may be affected; in such situations, however, no papules are found, but only roseola-like spots. We would also call attention to another feature found in cases of acute severe general prickly heat eruption: in several such cases the oral mucosa and the fauces will appear acutely congested. The congestion subsides on the disappearance of the cutaneous lesions.

Diagnosis.—This is generally easy; from eczema it is distinguished by the greatly increased flow of perspiration, and by

the absence of any moist lesions during the whole course of the malady. Our experience is, however, that in some cases true eczema—especially of the papular type—develops on prickly heat lesions. In cases of generalized prickly heat, with roseola-like spots on the palms and soles, acute patchy congestion in the oral mucosa and pharynx, a syphilide must be excluded, for several of our patients believed themselves to be affected with syphilis; but the extreme pruritus is generally sufficient to exclude it.

Prognosis.—As a rule, the prognosis is good, the eruption disappearing quickly under proper treatment. The patient, however, complains of the severe itching which often keeps him awake at night. In some few cases no treatment is of any avail, and the patient must be sent up to the hills; in others, crops of boils develop, or pyosis mansonii or impetigo contagiosa may supervene, especially in children.

Treatment.—The patient must be kept cool; he should not take much to drink, and should abstain from drinking hot tea. Too warm clothing should be avoided; flannel and woollen things often make prickly heat worse. In such cases silk underclothing may be recommended, but not in people liable to abdominal chills. All underclothing must be changed at least once daily and after taking any violent exercise. Sea-bathing is injurious. The treatment which in our experience has answered best is the free use, several times daily, of a salicylic-alcoholic lotion (ac. salicyl. \bar{z} i., spir. rect. \bar{z} viii.), followed by the general application of a salicylic or boracic powder, such as ac. salicyl. gr. x., talci \bar{z} i. or ac. borici \bar{z} i., talci ven. \bar{z} i. It is better, as a rule, to avoid greasy preparations.

After the eruption is cured the patient should be directed to use some Condyl's fluid, cyllin, or other disinfectant in the bath, and afterwards to apply one of the powders mentioned above.

Cheiopompholyx.

Synonyms.—Dysidrosis, Pompholyx.

This affection is seen in the tropics, and is also met with in temperate zones during the hot season. To Tilbury Fox and J. Hutchinson belongs the merit of having separated this affection from eczema.

Ætiology and Histopathology.—Tilbury Fox believed the disease to be due to accumulation of sweat induced by the blocking of the pores of the sudoriparous glands. The more recent researches of Unna, Norman Walker, Williams, and others show that the lesions are of an inflammatory character; the vesicles are found in the prickly layer, and often press to one side of the sweat-channel.

Unna has described a bacillus as the cause of the disease; his results have not been confirmed. Some authorities consider the disease to be of neurotic origin.

Symptomatology.—The eruption is found in individuals who suffer from hyperidrosis. It is characterized by the presence of deeply seated translucent or opalescent, sago-like vesicles between

the fingers and toes ; the vesicles are not, as a rule, surrounded by an inflammatory halo ; they very rarely coalesce, and usually do not break, but dry up gradually, being thrown off with the exfoliating epidermis. The vesicles in many cases are few in number ; in others they may be numerous, and the eruption may extend to the palms, backs of the hands, and occasionally the arms. There is unbearable pruritus, and in some cases, owing to the scratching, an eczematous dermatitis may develop, especially between the toes.

Diagnosis.—Some authorities still maintain that cheiropompholyx is merely eczema. In our experience, the disease must be separated from eczema, the principal characters of differentiation being the deep situation of the vesicles, the fact that they very rarely rupture, and that, as a rule, they are not surrounded by an inflammatory zone ; moreover, the parts affected are generally bathed in sweat.

Prognosis.—The disease is not a serious one, and, under proper treatment, the eruption heals ; but the tendency to recur is great.

Treatment.—When the vesicles are few in number, pricking them with a sterile needle, washing them with a perchloride lotion (1 in 2,000), followed by the application of a 1 to 2 per cent. naphthol ointment, gives much relief. When the vesicles are numerous, and the eruption has spread to the backs of the hands and arms, calamine lotion, to which a little menthol and alcohol has been added, answers well.

Dysidrosis Exfoliativa.

This affection is closely related to cheiropompholyx. The affected parts—generally the palms of the hands—are bathed in continuous perspiration, and large flakes of epidermis exfoliate. In most cases no cheiropompholyx-like vesicles are found ; in fact, no vesicles of any type can be detected. The affection becomes cured spontaneously on the patient going to the hills or during the cold season, but it is apt to recur.

Bathing the affected parts with a resorcin lotion ($\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.) at first, and later, when the desquamation has ceased, the application of calamine lotion, is useful.

Sweat Desquamation.

Schorberg has applied the term '*sweat desquamation*' to the minute whitish scales, often arranged in rings, and found on the palms of persons who perspire profusely. The condition may occasionally be confused with a syphilide, from which it is differentiated by the absence of other syphilitic signs, such as enlargement of the lymphatic glands, etc., and by the fact that it disappears on the patient going to the hills.

DYSTROPHIES.

Leucoderma.

Synonyms.—Leucopathia, Vitiligo, Acquired leucopathia, Acquired leukasmus, Acquired achromia, Acquired piebald skin, Maladie de depigmentation (O'Zoux).

Leucoderma is much more common in tropical countries than in temperate zones. The natives of Ceylon and India have a dread of developing leucoderma, and look upon it as a loathsome disease.

Ætiology and Pathology.—

The ætiology is unknown. It is generally considered to be a trophoneurosis. Occasionally there is evidence of hereditary influences, several members of the same family being affected. The malady may start without any apparent cause, or in some cases may begin after an injury, after a burn, after too strong a caustication. In fact, the application of strong remedies should be used with care in natives. We have seen leucoderma patches appearing after the application of pure formalin. Patches of leucoderma may develop also in chronic epiphytic skin diseases, the fungi apparently having a deeply disturbing effect on the pigment formation.



FIG. 611.—LEUCODERMA IN A SINHALESE WOMAN.

Symptomatology.—Leucoderma is characterized by the presence of non-pigmented areas, white, ivory-like, or pinkish. The patches are roundish or oval, with a smooth surface; they slowly enlarge

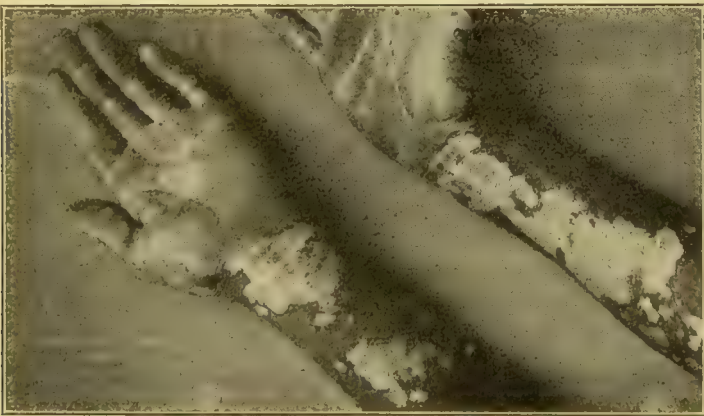


FIG. 612.—LEUCODERMA OF THE HANDS AND ARMS.

and coalesce, giving rise to large, irregularly outlined areas. Occasionally almost the whole body becomes affected; more often it is

the face and hands which are affected, and there may be a certain symmetry. The initial patches are often surrounded by a zone of hyperpigmentation. Occasionally within the white areas small dot-like zones of pigmentation are left. The hairs of the affected parts frequently become white, but sometimes remain of normal colour. The white patches do not show any marked change in sensation; there is never anæsthesia; in many cases there is hyperæsthesia to heat and light stimulation. The texture of the skin remains normal; occasionally slight atrophic processes may be noted.

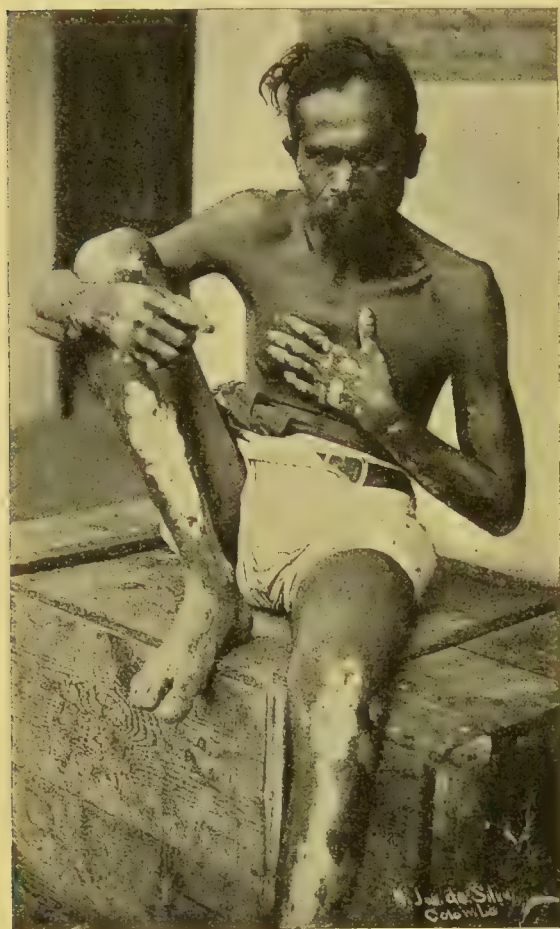


FIG. 613.—LEUCODERMA IN A SINHALESE.

It is usually stated that the general health is not impaired. In our experience, however, when the patches are large and situated on uncovered parts of the body, especially the face, symptoms of severe asthenia have been noticed. Moreover, the patients complain that they cannot do any work in the sun, as they experience a burning sensation in the white patches, and they suffer from giddiness.

Clinical Varieties—*Melung (Beta)*.—This type of leucoderma was first described by Ziemann, and is fairly common among West African negroes. It is found also in Ceylon, India, and Burmah, in the last-mentioned country having been described by Castor. The affection is always symmetric, and attacks only the palms or the soles, or both palms and soles. Small areas of the skin undergo a slow

process of depigmentation, becoming whitish or yellowish; there is no alteration of sensibility. The depigmented areas, which are generally of various shape, are intermixed with patches of normally pigmented skin, so that the palms and soles present a marmoriform appearance.

The disease is chronic and incurable. It often develops in childhood, and several members of the same family may be affected.

A variety of leucoderma in the shape of two small, often triangular

spots, one at each angle of the mouth, has been observed by Pusey in a Burmese girl and by one of us in Ceylon. The mucosa of the lips may also show leucodermic patches.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis is generally easy. The patches, in contrast to leprosy, do not show anæsthesia; from *morphæa* it is distinguished by the absence of any abnormality in the texture of the skin; from *tinea flava*, *tinea alba*, and *pinta*, by the absence of any fungus.

Prognosis.—The disease is incurable. When large patches are present, the patient complains often of asthenia, and may become unfit for work, especially work in the open air and sun.

Treatment.—The disease is generally incurable, but the spreading of the patches may be prevented, and occasionally a slight improvement may be brought about, in our experience, by an energetic arsenical treatment. We generally give arsenious acid in a pill (gr. $\frac{1}{50}$) three to six times a day, or atoxyl injections (5 grains every other day). Gillmore has tried soamin with fairly good results. We have seen no benefit from the administration of suprarenal extract, as recommended by several authors. The white colour may be partially hidden by applying a lotion of nitrate of silver or potassium permanganate, or by tattooing.

Heidingsfelt has devised an instrument consisting of a group of ten needles, which are put in movement by electrical power. In this way tattooing may be performed much more rapidly than by hand.

Sommer claims to have cured several cases of leucoderma by injections of adrenalin.

Albinism.

Synonyms.—Congenital leucoderma, Congenital leukopathia, Congenital achromia, Congenital leukasmus.

The affection is found in the tropics more frequently than in temperate zones. It is characterized by congenital absence of pigment in the skin, hair, iris, and choroid. There are cases, however, of partial albinism in which only the skin is affected. The skin has a milky-white or pinkish appearance; the iris is rose-coloured, and the pupil red. There is intolerance to light; hence the pupils will be generally found to be contracted, and the patient, to avoid the strong light stimulus, may go about with the head downwards. Nystagmus is observed in several cases. The hair is generally white or yellowish-white, fine and silky. We have seen albinos with red hair. Albinos are generally poorly built, weak and feeble individuals.

Ætiology and Pathology.—The ætiology is unknown. The affection is more often observed among coloured races than in the white races. It shows a certain family tendency. It is said that cases occur more frequently in the offsprings of consanguineous marriages. The histological examination of the skin shows absence of pigment as the only abnormality.

Treatment.—The affection is incurable.

Erythema Solare.

The effects of sunlight on the skin, including the histology of the lesions, have already been discussed in Chapter IV. They are caused by the active effects of the rays at the violet end of the spectrum. The skin of the parts exposed becomes erythematous, swollen, and vesicles and bullæ may appear. Desquamation follows, and the skin is often left pigmented (sunburn).

The treatment consists in applying calamin lotion, and later any bland ointment.

Dermatitis Solaris.

After repeated attacks of erythema solare—or at times without any history of such—the skin of the hands and exposed parts in planters and other people living an outdoor life in the tropics becomes slowly reddened, and may be slightly rough to the touch. Freckles and hyperpigmented spots are generally present, and not rarely small telangiectasia. In a later stage warty patches often appear, and the dermatitis, as noted by McLeod, may somewhat resemble the dermatitis produced by X rays.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis from pellagra has already been discussed (see p. 1260).

Prognosis.—The dermatitis is very obstinate, but generally becomes cured spontaneously in a cold climate.

Treatment.—A change to a temperate climate is the only efficacious treatment. Exposure to the sun is to be avoided as much as possible.

Chloasma.

Chloasma, which, as is well known, is characterized by the presence of dark brownish or dirty yellowish patches, situated commonly on the face, is of frequent occurrence in the tropics in Europeans as well as natives. The patches are plainly distinguishable in the skin of Indian and Sinhalese natives, though in African negroes they may be indistinguishable. The condition may be due to several causes, and the following types may be mentioned:—

1. **Chloasma solare (melasma solare)**, due to exposure to the sun. A similar condition may be due to exposure to a powerful light or glare of any kind, and may even occasionally develop in people who pass a long time on glaciers and fields of snow. Chloasma solare is found among Europeans, half-castes, and also in natives. In natives who wear clothes it is easy to see that the parts exposed to the sun are darker. The condition is generally found on the face, and it may be diffuse, or one or two small patches only may be present. The colour varies from a slight yellowish-brownish to a deep black bronzine one (see Chloasma Bronzinum). On close examination it will be found that often patches of hyperpigmentation are seen side by side or alternate with patches of depigmentation of various degree, but generally slight. The patches of chloasma solare may appear quite suddenly without being preceded by erythema solare; in one of our cases they appeared on the fore-





CHLOASMA BRONZINUM.

head twenty-four hours after a motor-car drive in the midday sun without the hood on; in another, a European lady, who had a very delicate skin and was used to wearing gloves, very dark hyperpigmented patches appeared on the back of the hands and wrists twelve hours after exposing her hands without gloves to the midday sun. In addition to hyperpigmented spots, depigmented patches also developed.

2. **Chloasma caloricum**, from exposure to heat, or possibly the glare of fires. We have seen it several times in stokers.

3. **Chloasma traumaticum**, from mechanical irritation of any kind, scratching, etc.

4. **Chloasma toxicum**, due to irritating drugs, as, for instance, after a blister.

5. **Chloasma symptomaticum**, as, for instance, chloasma uterinum, found during pregnancy or during chronic diseases of the female genital organs. Chloasma uterinum is quite common in Sinhalese women, and is plainly distinguishable.

6. **Chloasma malaricum** and **kala-azar chloasma**, an important type of chloasma symptomaticum is found in patients suffering from chronic malaria and kala-azar. A diffuse type of hyperpigmentation observed in chronic malaria and closely resembling Addison's disease has already been described (see p. 888).

Hyperpigmentation may occur also in syphilis, leprosy, tuberculosis, diabetes, and many other chronic diseases.

In India a 'pigmentary fever' has been described of short duration, and said to be characterized by the appearance of hyperpigmented patches on the face (see p. 1085).

Chloasma Symmetricum.

This condition, which has been described by one of us, is often met with in Sinhalese, who greatly object to it. It is characterized by the presence of two dark brownish chloasma patches situated symmetrically one on each cheek, generally on the malar region. In some cases, in addition to these two patches, a third one is found on the nose. The colour of the patches is generally dark brownish, very rarely bronzine. The causation is unknown; it does not seem to be congenital. No treatment is of any avail.

Chloasma Bronzinum.

Synonym.—Tropical mask (Cantlie).

This somewhat rare affection is met with among natives as well as Europeans in India, Ceylon, the Malay States, China, and other tropical countries. It was first observed by Cantlie, who called it 'tropical mask,' and was later described by one of us.

Ætiology.—This is unknown, but a life in the open air with daily long exposure to a tropical sun is apparently an important predisposing cause. All our patients were European planters, or native overseers or coolies.

Symptoms.—Part of the face or the neck, or occasionally the whole face, neck, and chest, presents a peculiar pigmentation, resembling a black bronzine mask; the pigmented areas slowly but steadily increase. The disease is very chronic and incurable if the patient remains in the tropics. The general health is not impaired. The examination of the various organs is negative. The blood and urine are normal.

Diagnosis.—This is easy, even in very dark-skinned natives, the affected parts being completely black, and having a characteristic bronzine hue.

From ordinary *chloasma*, which is not rare—especially among women—the affection is easily distinguished by the bronzine tint. The absence of asthenia, loss of flesh, and diarrhoea, will suffice to distinguish *chloasma bronzinum* from *Addison's disease*; the history and the examination of the blood will differentiate it from malarial *pseudo-Addison's disease*; the examination of the urine will distinguish it from *diabetes bronzinum*. *Argyria* will be excluded by the history and by the fact that in *chloasma bronzinum* the mucosæ are not affected. In *ochronosis* the cartilages, ligaments, and fibrous structures become pigmented, and the discoloration is best seen about the knuckles and the tendons of the hands and feet; moreover, the urine often blackens on exposure to the air (alcaptonuria).

Prognosis and Treatment.—The disease seems to be incurable, but a long stay in a temperate zone generally improves it.

Melanonychia.

Synonym.—Black pigmentation of nails.

Castellani has described in two European ladies a peculiar condition of the nails characterized by a band of black pigmentation along the free border of the nail. On superficial examination, it has the same appearance as though some dirt had accumulated beneath the free border of the nail, but on scraping this pigmentation does not disappear, and this shows that the condition is due to some pigmentation in the substance of the nail. The sufferers were in general good health, not using any internal or external medicine which could account for the pigmentation, and the nails, apart from this line of pigmentation, appeared perfectly normal. We have, later, come across a case in a European gentleman.

The condition slowly disappears spontaneously.

Xanthoderma Areatum.

This affection, which has been described by one of us, is not infrequently met with among Europeans; it generally affects the lower parts of the legs; it starts very insidiously, with a yellowish or reddish-yellow spot, which is not elevated; the surface is smooth, not furfuraceous; there is no infiltration, and, apart from the colour, the affected skin is normal. There is no pruritus and no pain. The yellow spot slowly increases, and one or more other

PLATE XV.



XANTHODERMA AREATUM.

spots may appear near the first one or at a distance. Some of the spots may coalesce together, forming a large yellow-red patch of irregular or various outline. The larger patches also, apart from the colour, are normal, being of normal consistency and elasticity. The disease is very chronic. The general health is not impaired; the lymphatic glands are not enlarged, and the blood does not show any abnormality; urine normal. In all our cases syphilis could be excluded; in none was there any history of traumatism.

Diagnosis.—From chloasma, xanthoderma areatum is readily differentiated by the lighter yellow or yellowish-red, and by the different situation. The affection can be easily distinguished from xanthoma, as the texture of the skin is normal, and the patches are not elevated. In pseudo-xanthoma elasticum of Balzer there is an eruption consisting of mesh-like patches of buff-coloured infiltration, lumpy in some places, in others linear. It must be distinguished also from Schamberg's so-called 'cayenne-paper' condition, characterized by the presence of brownish-yellowish patches on the legs, made up of small puncta giving rise to a cayenne-like appearance of the skin, found at times on people suffering from varicose veins.

Treatment.—This is difficult; in some cases an energetic exfoliating treatment by resorcin pastes (resorcin, ʒi. ; ac. salic., gr. xx.; Lassar's paste, ʒi.) improves the condition after the inflammation induced by the paste subsides.

Mongolian Spots.

Synonym.—Mongolian maculæ.

Definition.—A congenital condition characterized by the presence of dark-bluish spots on the lower sacral region, not disappearing on pressure.

History.—The first complete description has been given by Baelz, who found them almost constantly in Chinese, Koreans, Japanese, and Malays. Later Adachi, Ashmead, Martinotti, Consiglio, and others have further investigated the subject. Castor and Fink have made a very complete study of it in Burma, where it is extremely common.

Geographical.—The condition was at one time considered to be limited to Mongolian races, but further investigations show that it is found in other races, including Europeans. Martinotti, and later Consiglio, have found it in Italy.

Ætiology.—The condition is of unknown origin; it is probably congenital.

Symptomatology.—'Mongolian spots' appear as blackish-bluish or mulberry-coloured, smooth, non-elevated areas. The colour does not disappear on pressure; it is, as already stated, blackish-blue. Some portions of the same spot may be darker than others. The texture of the skin is normal; there is no pain and no pruritus. They are mostly roundish, but they may be oblong or almost square; they may be single, but are often multiple, five or six or more, each

spot varying in size from half a centimetre to 12 centimetres and even more. The patch may be sharply limited or the colour may fade gradually into that of the healthy skin. The commonest situation is on the lower spine, sacral region, and buttocks, but they may be found practically on any other part of the body. The patches appear at birth, and, as a rule, disappear between the third and fourth year.

In Burmese, Castor has found that Mongolian spots are extremely frequent, and are situated in order of frequency on the sacral region and buttocks, waist, arms, legs, shoulders, head, face, neck. Castor identifies with the Mongolian spots also the pigmented patches so often found in natives on the oral mucosa, tongue, and lips.

Diagnosis.—The condition is easily recognized, the roundish or variously shaped bluish patches generally on the sacral region and buttocks being characteristic; its being present from birth distinguishes it from patches of pigmentation of other origin. The complete smoothness and normal texture of the skin differentiates the condition easily from pigmented moles. In those rare cases in which confusion with some mycotic condition might arise, the microscopical examination will clear the diagnosis, no fungi, of course, being present in Mongolian spots.

Course and Prognosis.—The patches generally fade or disappear completely about the third or fourth year.

Treatment.—The treatment is *nil*, nor is it generally asked for, the patches most frequently being on covered parts of the body.

Tattooing.

Nomenclature.—The word 'tattoo' is derived from 'tattow,' used by Cook and Banks in their journals in 1789. Tattow was derived from 'tau' or 'tatu,' a word which meant 'marking.' The Maori word is 'amoca' or 'moko,' which, however, refers to the furrowing of the skin—a more formidable operation than tattooing.

Definition.—Tattooing is the formation of more or less indelible marks in the skin by means of rubbing pigments or irritating substances into slight wounds made for the purpose.

General Account.—It appears to us that tattooing was originally preceded by face and body painting, which in the form of 'war paint' is well known to have been used in many savage tribes when about to enter into combat with their enemies. At first this painting was very simple, and consisted in merely smearing the face with some form of pigment, but eventually in certain peoples it became more and more elaborate. Painting, however, is only a temporary method of adornment, and many peoples have adopted in its place the permanent tattooing. The essential reason for tattooing is the ornamentation of the person, but taking its origin in the custom of painting the face before going to war, it is generally more elaborate in men than in women.

In Africa the marks have a most varied significance. Thus,

according to Hobley, the Ja-Luo girls are tattooed because it is thought that unless this is done a woman will not bear children. Among the Ketosh, the warrior, after killing an enemy in warfare, has two rows of marks tattooed on his right chest and shoulder, to prevent the spirit of his dead enemy bewitching him.

In its simplest form it is seen in West Africa, where short straight skin-cuts are made by means of a sharp piece of iron, after which some pigment or irritating substance is rubbed into the wound, the idea being to produce a keloid. If this fails, another cut is made into the same place, and more pigment is rubbed in, until the desired result is attained. These cuts, and hence the subsequent



FIG. 614.—TATTOOING.

keloids, are arranged in some primitive form of pattern. More elaborate patterns, however, may be met with, being generally in the forms of curved lines or scrolls of keloids.

In the Naga Hills of Assam the lines of the tattoo follow the contours of the face.

The most elaborate designs are found among the Maoris of New Zealand and the natives of the Pacific Islands. The Polynesians use lines and curves, but not spirals, the highest art being found among the Marquesans. The Maoris are, however, not content with mere tattooing, in which pigment is rubbed into slight cuts, for in their 'moko' they make deep furrows, which remain more or less permanently during life. According to Ling Roth, the Maoris use seven patterns: the first, *the linear*, composed of lines of dots or strokes; the second is *the mat* or *plait-work pattern*, composed of parallel lines, in groups of three, arranged more or less alternately.

The third is *the ladder pattern*, in which the lines are arranged in horizontal groups separated by clear spaces. The fourth is *the chevron pattern*, being composed of coils with long tails or handles, the interspaces between which are filled in by slanting lines. The fifth pattern is *the circinate coil*; the sixth, *the anchor*; and the seventh, *the trilateral scroll*. This last pattern is said to imitate a flower—*Clianthus puniceus*. According to the same author, the Papuans are much addicted to the use of the spiral in tattooing. The Polynesians use simple pricking instruments, while the Maoris, in order to produce the deep furrows, use special instruments, shaped somewhat like a miniature garden-hoe, the cutting edge of which is toothed. These instruments were at first made of bone or hard wood, but later iron was introduced. They are made to cut the skin by means of blows from a hammer or a stick. As a result of the wound, the blood flows freely, and is wiped away by the hand or a piece of stick, after which the pigment is rubbed into the wound. The nature of this pigment appears to vary, and may consist of charcoal, obtained by burning various animal or vegetal substances. The hair of the beard has to be pulled out by the roots, as it would spoil the effect of the tattoo or moko.

The pain of the operation of moko is naturally very great, especially when performed on the lips, and hence but little tattooing can be done at a time, and it takes years for an extensive moko to be produced. Inflammation often sets in, and it may be weeks before the wounds heal. The Maoris perform post-mortem tattooing and moko at times, but this is to be distinguished from tattooing made during life by the appearance of the cuts and the absence of subcutaneous colour.

In modern times the art of tattooing has been much developed by the Japanese, into whose country it was introduced about 300 years ago. The Japanese artists, by using special instruments composed of fine and coarse needles, and by rubbing in various coloured pigments, produce the well-known designs so commonly seen on the arms and bodies of Europeans and Asiatics.

Varieties.—The different varieties of tattooing described above may be classified as follows :—

I. Simple tattooing.

- (a) Without furrows—tattooing of Japan and elsewhere.
- (b) With furrows—moko of New Zealand.

II. Keloid tattooing—tattooing of Africa.

Tattooing is not free from danger, for blood-poisoning, and even death, may result, while syphilis and tuberculosis of the skin may be acquired through the wounds.

Treatment.—When the marks are small, excision may be resorted to, but in general any attempt at removal fails. Nicurowsky removes the tattoo marks by blistering with Finsen light applied in the same way as for lupus. Carbide snow may also be used, but the application must be prolonged, and a scar results. When the

tattooing is performed with gunpowder, it is said that the marks can be removed by painting with di-iodide of ammonium in solution, and afterwards with dilute hydrochloric acid.

Ainhum.

Synonyms.—Quigila (Brazil), Sukha Pakla (India), Faddidite (Madagascar), Gundurum, Affovi-burunkue (Gêgès tribes), Banko-kerendé (Sudan), Excresis Spontanea (A. Collas), Dactylolysis essentialis (G. Beauregard), Silva Lima's disease (Egas Moniz de Aragao).

'Anyum,' or 'ainhum,' is derived from a Yoruba word meaning to saw or to cut, and is used by the Nagôs.

Definition.—Ainhum is a chronic disease of the fifth, and more rarely of the fourth and other toes which occurs in native races, and is characterized by the formation of a furrow at the digito-plantar fold, which deepens and extends until it encircles the toe, which is finally severed from the foot.

History.—The disease was first described by Da Silva Lima in 1852. Clarke, in 1860, in his description of the Gold Coast, drew attention

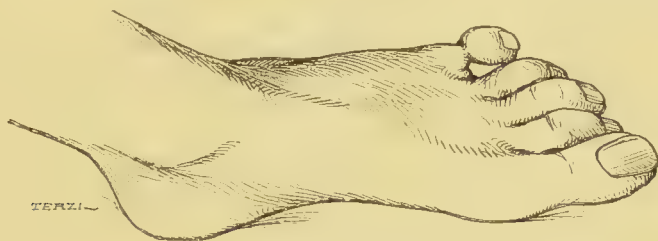


FIG. 615.—AINHUM.

to a dry gangrene of the little toe found in negroes in that region, and considered it to be a manifestation of yaws. In 1867 Da Silva Lima further studied the disease, and with Wucherer described fifty cases of it in Brazil, and introduced the term 'ainhum'; in the same year Collas wrote an account of the disease. Da Silva Lima ventured no explanation of the disease. In 1873 Crombie described the disease as occurring in India; in 1876 Pirovano found it in Buenos Ayres; and in 1877 Corre mentions it in Réunion.

It is reported in the West Indies by Potoppidian in 1879; in North Carolina by Hornaday and Pitman in 1881; in Nossi-Bé by Deblenne in 1883; in Western Virginia by Duhring in 1884. This last observer, along with Wile, studied the disease microscopically, considering the essential pathological feature to be an inflammatory œdema of the hypodermis. In 1886 Eyles wrote an excellent account of the pathological histology of the disease as seen in the Gold Coast, concluding that irritation caused an internal proliferation of the epithelium, which, extending into the cutis, damaged the vasomotor nerves, leading to a spasm of the vessels, endarteritis obliterans, fibrosis of the cutis, and rarefying osteitis, whereby the digit is separated from the foot. After this date there are a number

of papers, among which may be specially mentioned those by Moreira, Dalgetty, and Maxwell in 1900, Muir in 1903, Ashley-Emile in 1905, and Egas Moniz de Aragao in 1910.

Climatology.—The disease is known in South America, especially in Brazil and the Argentina, and also in British Guiana; in North America, especially in the Southern United States, but also, though rarely, in the Northern, and in Canada. It also occurs in the West Indies. In Africa it is especially well known on the West Coast, and particularly in the Gold Coast, but it also occurs in Algeria, Egypt, Sudan, East Africa, Madagascar, and the Transvaal. In Asia it is known in India, China (?), and Ceylon. It also occurs in Polynesia. We have seen a case in an Italian peasant.

Ætiology.—The causation of the disease is not known. The theories suggesting that the disease is due to leprosy, wearing rings or other tight bands, self-mutilation, may be dismissed at once, as there is nothing to support them.

According to some authorities—Le Dantec, Da Silva Lima, etc.—the hereditary factor has a certain importance. Da Silva Lima quotes the example of a negro family all the members of which presented the condition.

The racial factor has also been given much prominence, for the condition practically occurs only among natives and mulattoes.

Zambacho Pasha, Eyles and Moreira, are, in our opinion, correct in their view that the reason why the native races are attacked is because they walk barefoot, and that irritation or injury to the skin of the little toe is more likely to occur in negroes, who often are flat-footed. It is more common in males than in females, in adults than in children, and, though it can apparently be found at any age, is most common between thirty to thirty-five years.

We are inclined to believe that the condition is of parasitic origin, the infection taking place probably through the small superficial lesions or wounds which may be found in people going barefooted.

Pathology.—The constant irritation causes the epithelium to proliferate internally and depress the skin, and cause the fibrous tissue of the cutis to proliferate. There is also an endarteritis, by which the blood-supply is gradually cut off the distal portion of the toe, which therefore becomes œdematous and fatty, while the bone undergoes rarefying osteitis, so that the digit is gradually separated from the foot, a process which takes place through the bone of a phalanx. The histological examination at the line of the furrow shows proliferation of the epidermis, which projects downwards into the cutis, in which the connective tissue is increased in quantity. The vessels show endarteritis and periarteritis; the sweat-glands show proliferation and fatty degeneration of the cells. The bone is in a condition of rarefying osteitis.

Distally to the furrow the joints are effaced; the tissues show fatty degeneration and œdematous infiltration. No organisms can be found.

Symptomatology.—The disease is purely local, and is not, in our experience, attended by any general symptoms. It begins, as a rule, as a furrow on the inner side of the digito-plantar furrow, which slowly deepens and extends laterally and dorsally until the two wings meet on the dorsum of the toe. While this is proceeding the distal portion of the toe becomes swollen, and may appear as a small globule surrounded posteriorly by a deep groove, by which it is separated from the rest of the foot. Often an ulcer forms on the inner side of the groove, and may cause much pain.

Left to itself, the disease will last from two to ten years, though cases have been reported of fifteen to fifty years' duration; but eventually the toe drops off, or is knocked off, or is removed. The process may, however, begin again in the stump.

Usually the fifth toe is affected, but in about 10 per cent. of cases the fourth toe may be affected, and much more rarely the second or the hallux. There are reports of the affection occurring also in the fingers.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis affords no difficulty, the presence of the constricting furrow being typical. It is easily differentiated from leprotic lesions of the toes by the sensibility being normal and by the absence of signs of leprosy in other parts of the body.

The history makes the diagnosis clear between true ainhum and a peculiar congenital ring-like constriction of the toes described by some authors. This condition is present at birth, and its course is not progressive.

Prognosis.—There is no danger to life in the disease.

Treatment.—The disease is best treated by making a longitudinal cut into the groove, when its progress may be stopped.

Prophylaxis.—The essentials of the prophylaxis are cleanliness, and the wearing of stockings and boots to protect the foot from injury.

Symmetrical Palmar Erythema.

Chalmers, in 1899, drew attention to a symmetrical non-pruriginous palmar erythema found in Europeans on the Gold Coast, and extending along the ulnar side of the palms of the hands. The affection was very persistent. We have seen similar cases in Ceylon.

Acrodermatitis Vesiculosa Tropica.

Historical and Geographical.—This skin disease was described by Castellani in Ceylon. It is of rare occurrence.

Ætiology.—This is unknown, but the affection may be of neuritic origin. It does not seem to be connected with leprosy; in all our cases the search for Hanse's bacillus being negative, and anæsthesia and other signs of leprosy being absent. No history of traumatism was elicited in our patients.

Symptomatology.—In a well-marked case the skin of both hands, especially the fingers, appears glossy and tense, the fingers assuming often a tapering shape. Translucid vesicles the size of a millet or

little more are seen deeply embedded in the skin of the fingers. They have clear contents, and the bacteriological examination reveals absence of any bacterium. They may apparently remain unchanged for a long time, then may slowly disappear ; or a few may break, leaving very small superficial ulcers, which heal spontaneously and do not coalesce. The patient generally complains of very severe pains in the hands and fingers, which may be continuous, or may be of a neuralgic intermittent type. Pruritus is absent. There is often diffuse hyperæsthesia ; anæsthesia is never present. No thickenings are found along the nerves of the arm. The general health is not affected.

Course and Prognosis.—The course of the disease extends to several months, and occasionally to two or three years, with periods



FIG. 616.—ACRODERMATITIS VESICULOSA TROPICA.

of great improvement. Ultimately the condition gets cured spontaneously. The general health is not affected, but the patient is unable to work with his hands.

Diagnosis.—This is based on the patient complaining of severe pains in the hands and fingers, on the presence of deep-seated cheiropompholyx-like vesicles, on the glossy skin, and on the long course of the complaint.

The condition is differentiated from cheiropompholyx by the severe pains and absence of hyperidrosis ; from a leprotic condition by the absence of anæsthetic patches, and absence of other signs of leprosy on other parts of the body. Moreover, though the course is long, the disease generally becomes cured spontaneously. From dermatitis repens of Crocker and acrodermatitis perstans of Hallopeau by there not being history of traumatism, by absence of

exfoliative lesions, by the less severe objective signs, and by the absence of the large foci of disease with marked borders and fringed with sodden epidermis, which is thrown up by the undermining exudate.

Treatment.—The regular application of an ichthyol ointment (2 to 5 per cent.) to the hands and fingers, and the administration of the same drug (gr. iii.) three times daily by the mouth is beneficial.

REFERENCES.

Melung.

- BALFOUR (1911). Wellcome Reports.
 CASTELLANI (1904-1912). Ceylon Medical Reports.
 CASTOR (1911). Journal of Tropical Medicine. Leucoderma.
 ZIEMANN (1903). Über 'Melung,' Archiv für Dermatologie u. Syphilis.

Chloasma Symmetricum—Chloasma Bronzinum—Xanthoderma Areatum.

- CANTLIE (1908). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
 CASTELLANI (1904-1912). Ceylon Medical Reports.

Mongolian Spots.

- ADACHI (1902). Anatomischer Anzeiger.
 ASHMEAD (1905). Journal of Cutaneous Diseases.
 CASTOR (1912). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
 CONSIGLIO (1912). La Pediatria.
 MARTINOTTI (1909). Giorn. Mal. vener. e della Pelle.

Dysidrosis Exfoliativa.

- CASTELLANI (1904-12). Ceylon Medical Reports.

Sweat Desquamation.

- SCHOMBERG (1908). Journal of American Medical Association.

Prickly Heat.

- BONTIUS (1641). De Medicina Indorum.
 CLEGHORN. Quoted by Mestre.
 MESTRE (1879). Cronica Medico-Quirurgica de la Habana.

Tattooing.

- LING ROTH (1901). Journal of the Anthropological Institute, xxxi. 29.

Ainhum.

- ARAGAO (1910). Dermatologie Tropicale. Paris. Contains full bibliography.
 CLARKE (1860). Transactions of the Epidemiological Society, i. 105.
 COLLAS (1867). Archives de Médecine Navale, p. 357.
 CROMBIE (1873). Indian Medical Gazette, viii. 200.
 DALGETTY (1900). Journal of Tropical Medicine, ii. 193.
 DA SILVA LIMA (1852). Gazeta Medica da Bahai.
 EYLES (1886). Lancet, ii. 576. (A most important paper.)
 MAXWELL (1900). Journal of Tropical Medicine, ii. 110.
 MOREIRA (1900). Monatshefte f. Prak. Dermatologie, xxx. 361.
 MUIR (1903). Journal of Tropical Medicine, vi. 75.

Symmetrical Palmar Erythema.

- CHALMERS (1899). Lancet.

CHAPTER LXX

SKIN DISEASES (*concluded*)—COSMOPOLITAN SKIN DISEASES

General Remarks—Pyogenic infections—The erythemata—The exanthemata—Urticaria—Dermatitis venenata—Parasitic diseases—Bullous eruptions—Herpes—Eczema, psoriasis, seborrhœa, and dermatitis exfoliativa—Acne—Hyperidrosis and bromidrosis—Lichen—Tumours—Tuberculosis—Syphilis—Ichthyosis—Kaposi's disease—Chloasma—Diseases of the hair and nails—Some cosmopolitan diseases of mucous membranes.

GENERAL REMARKS.

IN our experience, all the skin diseases met with in temperate zones are also found in the tropics, except those due to intense cold, such as erythema pernio and frost-bite, and even these may also be found in the high mountainous regions of the tropics.

The diagnosis of some of the cosmopolitan dermatoses may, owing to the colour of the skin of native races, be very difficult to the medical man newly arrived in the tropics. This is probably the cause of some of the statements that such common diseases as lichen planus and psoriasis are absent. There is no doubt, however, that some dermatoses which are frequently met with in temperate zones are less common in the tropics.

It is stated by some authorities that coloured races are, on the whole, less liable to skin diseases than the white races, but the reverse is more in accordance with our experience.

A few remarks as to the normal skin of native races may be useful before proceeding to review the various cosmopolitan diseases. In the African races and American negroes who descend from African negro stock (Guinea negroes, Yollofs, Caffres) the whole skin, especially the derma, is thicker than in the white races. In Indian races the skin is about the same thickness as in Europeans, except in the Tamils, whose skin is somewhat thicker. As noted by Howard Fox, the glandular system—sweat glands and sebaceous glands—is much more highly developed in the native races, especially the African negroes. The sebaceous secretion is the cause of their peculiar odour and the shining appearance of the skin, and

the large secretion of sweat, which, owing to the high temperature, quickly evaporates, is the probable cause of the skin feeling cooler when touched. In native races the hairy system is less developed, except on the scalp; in the African races the hair of the head is generally curly or woolly; in Indian races it is usually smooth. The slight development of lanugo hair is the cause, as noted by Fox, of the peculiar velvety feeling of the negro skin.

The most important characteristic of the skin of tropical native races is the dark pigmentation. It is said that this pigmentation is not present at birth, but develops within a few hours to several days after birth. In our experience, it cannot be doubted that at the time of birth in many cases the babies present a much lighter colour than the adult people. The skin, however, is not whitish, but of a muddy brownish colour, and darkens greatly within a few days—in some cases is quite dark also at the time of birth. It is said that the pigmentation increases till puberty, and then, after remaining stationary during adult life, slowly decreases during old age. The maximum pigmentation is found on the loins, posterior portion of the trunk, shoulders, buttocks, and thighs; the least pigmentation is found on the prepuce, vulva, palms, and soles. In some races the oral mucosa is not pigmented; in others there is a patchy dark pigmentation which extends often to the tongue. The dark patches on the tongue have been considered by several writers to be a pathological condition, and a sign of agchylostomiasis. We have observed such patches, however, in numbers of normal natives. The hair is said to become white at a later date among negro races than in Europeans; we have not noted any distinct difference, either among them or the natives of Asia.

It is said by some writers that native races, and especially the negro African races, are less susceptible to pain than the white man. In our experience there is hardly any difference in the ordinary dolorific sensibility, but the thermic sensibility is probably less.

PYOGENIC INFECTIONS.

These are very common in tropical countries. **Impetigo** and **Ecthyma** lesions are frequently met with. The symptoms and course are identical with what one finds in temperate zones, and the treatment is the same—removal of the crusts, disinfection with a lotion, such as a perchloride of mercury (1 in 2,000), and dressing with a white precipitate ointment (1 per cent.).

Boils.—This is a common affection in the tropics, very stubborn, and difficult to cure. The quickest and most reliable method of cure in cases of multiple boils is, in our experience, Wright's vaccine treatment, the vaccine being prepared from staphylococci isolated from the patient. When this treatment cannot be carried out, the administration of yeast preparations internally will be found to be useful in some cases—*e.g.*, ceridin pills. Occasionally a small boil

may be aborted by applying a droplet of pure carbolic acid by means of a pointed pencil of wood drilled into the centre of the papule. For old indurated boils the continuous application of a carbolic lotion (2 to 5 per cent.) on lint occasionally causes them to become absorbed.

As a preventive, a salicylic-alcoholic lotion (1 to 2 per cent.) used after the daily bath is advantageous.

Sycosis Coccogenica.—This is fairly common in both Europeans and natives. In the negroes Fox has often observed the formation of tiny cheloidal tumours after this affection. Depilation—by X rays when possible—is the best method of treatment. We have observed a case of *Dermatitis papillaris capillitii* (Kaposi).

Erysipelas.—Ordinary erysipelas due to streptococci, and to be distinguished from the filarial erysipelatoid attacks preceding the development of elephantiasis, is not rare. Ichthyol ointment or lotion (10 per cent.) answers well.

THE ERYTHEMATA.

Erythema solare is common in Europeans recently arrived, and in those who live an open-air life, such as planters. It is followed by pigmentation (sunburn; see Chapter III.). The application of calamine lotion, followed by the use of boric vaseline or rose-ointment, is beneficial.

Erythema intertrigo is very frequently observed in corpulent persons. Washing the parts with a potassium permanganate solution (1 in 5,000), followed by application of boric-talc or salicylic-talc powder (acid. boric. $\frac{3}{4}$ i., talci $\frac{3}{4}$ i. or ac. salicyl. gr. x., talci $\frac{3}{4}$ i.), is useful. Persons suffering from intertrigo are very liable to become infected with tinea cruris.

Erythema nodosum—**Erythema multiforme.**—These affections are occasionally met with, but much more rarely than in temperate zones.

Erythema annulatum and **Erythema gyratum**, in persons suffering from fever, and coming from tropical Africa, should always arouse the suspicion of trypanosomiasis.

Diffuse **Erythema scarlatiniforme** and **Erythema morbilliforme** may be seen in some malarial patients. It may occasionally be caused by quinine, but in most cases is of malarial origin. The diagnosis of erythemata in dark natives is difficult. The medical man of long experience, however, will be able to detect a peculiar shiny aspect of the skin, with a distinct pinkish tinge.

Purpura.—Schönlein's purpura, Henoch's purpura, and Werlhof's purpura are not common in the tropics, though we have seen cases. A symptomatic purpura eruption is occasionally seen in the last stage of kala-azar.

THE EXANTHEMATA.

Smallpox, chicken-pox, and measles are very common in the tropics, though scarlet fever is but rarely met with.

Smallpox, of which we have already given a description (p. 1101), is very common, and often spreads in extensive epidemics, and may present the confluent type and the hæmorrhagic type, which is rare in Europe. In colonies under European rule vaccination is extensively practised. The vaccine does not retain its immunizing properties for more than a few weeks in the tropics, and hence it is advisable for each colony to be provided with a central vaccine depot where the lymph can be prepared under careful supervision. Owing to the habits of the lower classes and to many of the vaccinators being non-medical men, serious infections with other diseases may occur.

Measles may be difficult to recognize, as the eruption in dark-skinned races is better felt than seen, but the coryza and other symptoms are generally sufficient to enable a correct diagnosis to be made.

URTICARIA—LICHEN URTICATUS—PRURIGO.

Urticarial eruptions are as frequent in the tropics as in temperate zones, though to the new-comer the diagnosis of urticaria in dark-skinned natives is far from easy. Of **lichen urticatus** we have seen several cases among European and half-caste children, and of **urticaria pigmentosa** we have seen one case—a European child. We have observed true **prurigo** of Hebra in two native girls.

DERMATITIS VENENATA.

Several tropical plants and grasses produce substances highly irritating to the skin, but the subject has already been treated in Chapter LXV. The dermatitis so caused may be urticarial, erythematous, eczematous-like, or bullous, and may extend to large portions of the body. The forms of dermatitis venenata due to animal agents, such as ants, bugs, caterpillars, etc., have been already mentioned in Chapters XI. and LXVII.

PARASITIC DISEASES.

Trichophytoses.—In tropical countries, in addition to the trichophytosis peculiar to the tropical climate, several other forms of trichophytic affections occur which are clinically identical with those met with in temperate zones, such as *tinea circinata*, *tinea capitis*, *tinea barbæ*. The fungi are, however, in most cases different species. In our experience, *tinea capitis* is less common in India, Ceylon, and tropical Africa, than in Europe and America.

On the other hand, it is extremely common in the American negroes. The fungi found in the tropics are generally large-spored ones. *Microsporon audouini* has never been found by us. *Favus* is rare in tropical Africa and Asia, but common in China.

Pityriasis versicolor.—The pityriasis versicolor of temperate zones may be found in the tropics. It is to be noted, however, that several writers on tropical medicine confuse pityriasis versicolor with another dermatomycosis which is extremely common—*tinea flava*.

Pediculosis and Scabies.

—*Pediculosis capitis* is extremely common, although natives generally take great care to keep their hair in good condition by regularly combing, washing, and oiling it. According to Fox, Carmichael, and Pendergast, *pediculosis capitis* in the Southern States of North America is much less frequent in the negroes than in the whites, as, according to them, the negroes take greater pains in the care of the scalp than the lower-class whites. *Pediculosis corporis* and *pediculosis pubis* are as frequent in the tropics as in temperate zones, and so is scabies. *Pediculosis pubis* may, however, be very rare or absent in races accustomed to regular shaving of the pubic hair.



FIG. 617.—SEPTIC PEMPHIGUS.

BULLOUS ERUPTIONS.

Epidermolysis bullosa is occasionally observed.

Pemphigus vulgaris and **Septic pemphigus** cases are not rare in the

tropics. In the cases of septic pemphigus we have always found virulent streptococci. The eruption is similar to what one sees in temperate zones. We have seen a case of **Pemphigus vegetans**, and we have observed a typical case of **Pemphigus folia-**

ceus, contracted in Ceylon, and another in Indo-China. **Dermatitis herpetiformis** is not rare.

Of **Hydroa vacciniformis** we have seen two cases in European children.

HERPES.

Herpes facialis febrilis is common during attacks of malarial fever and other fevers, but very rare, as is well known, in enteric.

We have seen in European children a similar condition to what some French writers call *fièvre herpétique*. The condition, as seen by us, is characterized by a sharp attack of fever lasting about twenty-four hours, and at the same time by the appearance of a few herpetic vesicles—in our cases on the thighs and buttocks.

Herpes progenitalis is very common, especially in Europeans.

Herpes zoster (zona, shingles) is frequently met with in Europeans and natives.

ECZEMA—ACRODERMATITIS PERSTANS—PSORIASIS— PARAPSORIASIS—SEBORRHŒA—DERMATITIS EXFOLIATIVA.

Eczema is extremely common, and all varieties of it are found in the tropics, as in temperate zones, both in natives and Europeans. The treatment is often very difficult. In our experience greasy preparations and even pastes are as a rule badly borne except in some chronic cases. Generally speaking, it is best to use lotions such as resorcin ($\frac{1}{2}$ to 1 per cent.) or liq. plumbi (2 per cent.). Some cases of eczema will improve only on the patient going to a cooler climate. Wilson's **eczema verrucosum**, characterized by great dryness and hardness and warty appearance of the affected part, is frequently met with among natives, in whom it mostly attacks the toes.

Acrodermatitis perstans.—We have seen two cases of a very obstinate chronic dermatitis, with exfoliation, on the extremities of Sinhalese



FIG. 618.—PSORIASIS.

natives, apparently identical with *acrodermatitis perstans* of Hallopeau. They were different clinically from the *acrodermatitis vesiculosa* described by one of us.

Psoriasis is considered by most writers to be extremely rare or absent in native races in the tropics. Rutz states that he never saw a single case of psoriasis in a negro during his many years of practice in Martinique. Howard Fox, senior, thinks that possibly



FIG. 619.—PSORIASIS IN A SINHALESE.



FIG. 620.—DERMATITIS EXFOLIATIVA IN A SINHALESE.

the savages of Africa are free from psoriasis on account of exposure of the skin to sunlight, and that the negroes of North America have inherited this peculiarity. In our experience, psoriasis is frequently met with in the tropics in Europeans and natives of every race.

Seborrhœic affections are common in the tropics, especially in Europeans. A *seborrhœide* of the chest is frequently met with, and often confused with ringworm. The microscopical examination will clear the diagnosis. The use of a sulphur ointment (5 per cent.) is the best treatment.

In Ceylon a peculiar form of seborrhœa capitis with yellowish scales is occasionally seen in European children between four and twelve years of age. This affection is probably due to *Pityrosporum canthiei* Castellani 1908, and quickly disappears when the child goes to cooler climates.

Dermatitis exfoliativa (pityriasis rubra) is not rarely met with, occasionally following on psoriasis. In Ceylon we have observed two cases in Sinhalese natives. The amount of desquamation was enormous. On removing the scales, which were white, the skin appeared of an angry red colour.

ACNE VULGARIS—ACNE ROSACEA—ACNE VARIOLIFORMIS— ACNE CHELOID.

Acne vulgaris and **Comedos** are extremely common in all races. Both types of acne—**Acne indurata** and **Acne papulosa et pustulosa**—are observed. The treatment, which is as difficult in the tropics as in temperate zones, is based on the use of medicated soaps and sulphur or ichthyol lotions or ointments. The vaccine treatment may give good results.

Acne rosacea is, in our experience, comparatively rare in the tropics, though we have seen cases in all races. True *rhinophyma* we have also observed.

Acne varioliformis.—This, in our experience, is as frequent in the tropics as in temperate zones, and may be found in all races. The regions of the body more commonly affected are the forehead, temples, the front of the sternum, and the interscapular region.

Acne cheloid is very common, especially among native races. The back of the neck is generally affected. Cases of *Acnitis* and *Folliculitis* are occasionally seen. These are probably tuberculides.

HYPERIDROSIS AND BROMIDROSIS.

These conditions are, for climatic reasons, very common in the tropics, and have already been considered. The treatment may be very difficult. Naphthol or salicylic-alcoholic lotions (1 per cent.), followed by a salicylic, boric, or tannoform powder, are useful. If there is much inflammation of the skin, no alcoholic lotions should be used, but simply water solutions of boric acid (2 per cent.), carbolic acid ($\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.), permanganate of potassium (1 in 5,000), and occasionally hydrargyrum perchloride (1 in 2,000 or 4,000), after which a salicylic or boric powder is applied. It should be always remembered to sprinkle with the same powder the socks and shoes and undergarments. Internal treatment by sulphur, acid drinks, etc., is not of much use. Belladonna and atropin will stop the secretion for a time, but they must be pushed till unpleasant symptoms occur. We have seen a case of *chromidrosis*

of the axilla in a native boy due to the presence of a bacillus closely allied to the *Bacillus prodigosus*, and another due to a red-pigment-producing coccus.

Granulosis rubra nasi is occasionally seen in half-caste and European children.

LICHEN PLANUS—LICHEN SPINULOSUS—PITYRIASIS RUBRA PILARIS—PARAKERATOSIS VARIEGATA— POROKERATOSIS.

Lichen planus is common in the tropics among Europeans and natives of the various races. In very dark skinned natives the diagnosis may be difficult to the medical man used to seeing skin diseases in Europeans only. Apart from the colour, however, the skin lesions are identical, the papules having an angular outline and a flat, occasionally umbellicated, shiny surface. When the eruption disappears, it generally leaves behind some pigmentation, which is extremely well marked in natives. *Lichen nitidus* has been seen by us on the penis of a half-caste and several Europeans.

Lichen spinulosus is occasionally met with in children.

Of **Pityriasis rubra pilaris** we have seen a case in a European.

Parakeratosis variegata was seen by us in a half-caste patient. We have come across two cases among natives of Mibelli and Resphighi's **Porokeratosis**. We have seen a case of **Granuloma annulare** in a planter.

TUMOURS OF THE SKIN.

The tumours met with in temperate zones are met with also in the tropics in Europeans as well as natives. There is no doubt, however, that native races are more subject to some classes of tumours than to others. We would call attention to the extreme frequency among the natives of cheloid, the common occurrence of fibroma molluscum, and the comparative rarity of epithelioma of the face.

CONNECTIVE-TISSUE TUMOURS.

Benign Connective-Tissue Tumours.

Simple fibroma, **Fibroma pendulum**, and **Fibroma molluscum** (neuro-fibromatosis of Recklinghausen) are very frequently met with in natives. **Myomata** are occasionally observed—in our cases always on the face.

Angiomata are not rare, and **multiple Telangiectasis** are fairly common, and **Lymphangiomata** very frequent.

Xanthoma planum and **Xanthoma tuberosum** are frequently observed.

Xanthoma diabeticorum is very common in India and Ceylon, where the better classes suffer greatly from diabetes. An example

of Balzer's **Pseudo-Xanthoma** or **Elastorrhaxis** affecting the abdomen was observed by us in a half-caste woman.

Cheloid.—This is extremely frequent in native races. According to some authors, negroes suffer from it sixteen to eighteen times as much as whites. In Indian races it is not so frequent as in African natives, but still, much more frequent than in Europeans. The smallest wounds, such as those made in tattooing, may be followed by cheloid. In Chinamen it often follows hypodermic injections of morphia.

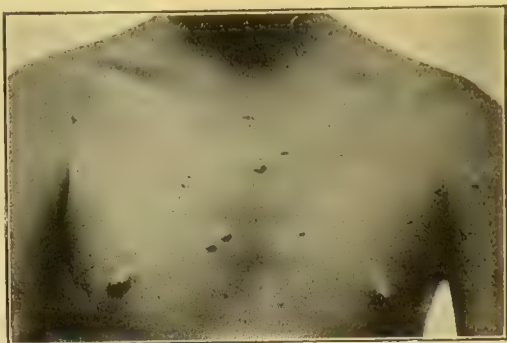


FIG. 621.—CHELOIDS.

Malignant Connective-Tissue Tumours.

Multiple sarcomatosis of the skin is rare. We have seen two cases, both in Sinhalese girls. Of the so-called **Lymphoderma perniciosis** we have also seen a case in a Sinhalese man.

Mycosis fungoides has been observed by us once only in a half-caste man.

EPITHELIAL TUMOURS.

Benign Epithelial Tumours.

Epithelial moles are frequently observed.

Molluscum contagiosum is met with in all races.

Verrucæ and **Warts** are extremely common. In two instances we have seen Sinhalese boys covered all over the body with hundreds of warts. *Filiform warts* are met with, and *warts* on the genital organs are very



FIG. 622.—FIBROMA MOLLUSCUM IN A SINHALESE.

common. *Verruca senilis* and *Verruca seborrhæica* are frequent. The best treatment for ordinary warts is carbon dioxide snow.



FIG. 623.—FIBROMA MOLLUSCUM : LARGER VARIETY.

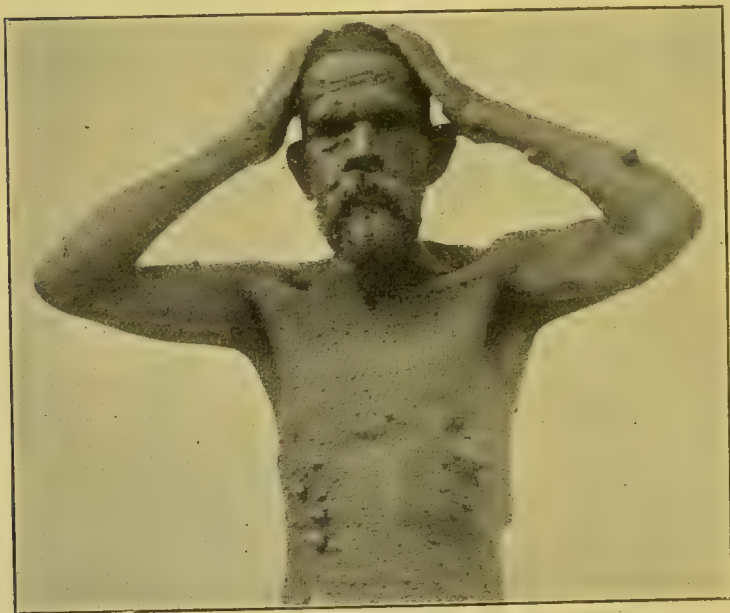


FIG. 624.—FIBROMA MOLLUSCUM : LARGER VARIETY.

Escomel has drawn attention to a peculiar treatment for warts in vogue among certain races in South America. These people apply the crushed body of a beetle belonging to the genus *Meloe* to the wart, the horny layer of which has been first scraped off. The wart disappears, leaving a slight whitish scar. The active principle is to be found in the beetle's blood.

Hyperkeratosis of the whole sole is often observed in natives going barefoot. We have seen several cases of *Cornu cutaneum*; the situation was generally on the hands, but in a case the condition developed at the edge of an ulcer tropicum (see p. 1566).

Malignant Epithelial Tumours.

Rodent ulcer is comparatively rare among natives, but we have seen one case in a Sinhalese woman. We have observed a case of **Melanotic carcinoma** and two of **Paget's disease** of the nipple among half-castes.

MIXED TUMOURS.

Adenoma sebaceum of the face has been seen but rarely by us. We have never observed in the tropics cases of true **Angiokeratoma** on the hands, but we have seen a somewhat similar tumour on the scrotum of a European. A diffuse type of angiokeratoma of the foot somewhat resembling mycetoma has been described in South America.

RHINOSCLEROMA.

A case of rhinoscleroma has been observed by us in an Indian coolie, and Gros has reported the occurrence of the disease in Algiers.

TUBERCULOSIS AND TUBERCULIDES—LUPUS ERYTHEMATOSUS.

Lupus vulgaris is met with in the tropics in all races, but, according to our observation, is far from being so common as in Europe.

Tuberculosis verrucosa cutis is very rare, and **Serofulodermia** much less common than in temperate zones. All the so-called tuberculides—**Lichen serofulosorum**, **Aene serofulosorum**, **Bazin's Erythema induratum**, **Folliculitis**, and **Aenitis**—are observed but rarely in the tropics.

Lupus erythematosus, as regards which we agree with those writers who do not consider it of tubercular origin, is very rare in the tropics.



FIG. 625.—LUPUS VULGARIS IN A SINHALESE.

While tuberculosis of the lungs is at the present time extremely common in many parts of the tropics, skin affections of tubercular origin are, comparatively speaking, infrequently met with.

SYPHILIS—VENEREAL SORES—BALANO-POSTHITIS.

At the present date syphilis is rampant all over the tropics. In the past there is reason to believe that it was unknown in many



FIG. 626.—PAPULO-SQUAMOUS SYPHILIDE.

of those tropical regions which were unopened to the cosmopolitan trade. According to Lambkin, in some parts of Uganda syphilis affects more than half of the population, and this enormous diffusion of the malady has taken place during recent years since the country has been opened up. Syphilis is very frequently observed now also in all the other regions of Africa, and is very common in tropical

Asia. It has been noted by Fox that in America it is much more frequent among negroes than among whites. In our experience, the virulence, as well as the symptoms of the disease, are not much different from what one sees in Europe. We can, however, confirm Brault's observation on the frequency of the primary sore on the supra-pubic region of natives, who regularly shave their pubis. Perhaps the general enlargement of the lymphatic glands is more marked in natives, and circinate and pustular syphilides, as ob-



FIG. 627.—ULCER: TERTIARY SYPHILIS.



FIG. 628.—ICHTHYOSIS IN A SINHALESE.

served by H. Fox, are more common. The tertiary ulcerative lesions are apt to become of enormous proportions, owing to secondary infections, and to the patient not seeking proper medical advice for a long time. Of great interest is the fact that in uncivilized native races the so-called parasymphilitic affections (progressive paralysis and tabes dorsalis) are extremely rare.

As regards the treatment of syphilis in the tropics, inunctions are very unpleasant in a hot damp climate. We generally prefer the ordinary internal treatment by hydrargyrum cum cretâ, gr. i., three

times daily, and give also in most cases one or two injections of salvarsan or neosalvarsan. The technique of the salvarsan treatment has been given in the chapter on *Frambœsia*. We use also injections of various preparations of mercury. A mixed mercury and potassium iodide treatment is of advantage in some cases. Natives are said by some authors to be extremely susceptible to mercury, but in our experience this has been exaggerated. We generally give them the same doses as to Europeans. Native doctors give often mercury disguised in various ways. Decoctions of various herbs are also administered. In Abyssinia and Erythræa

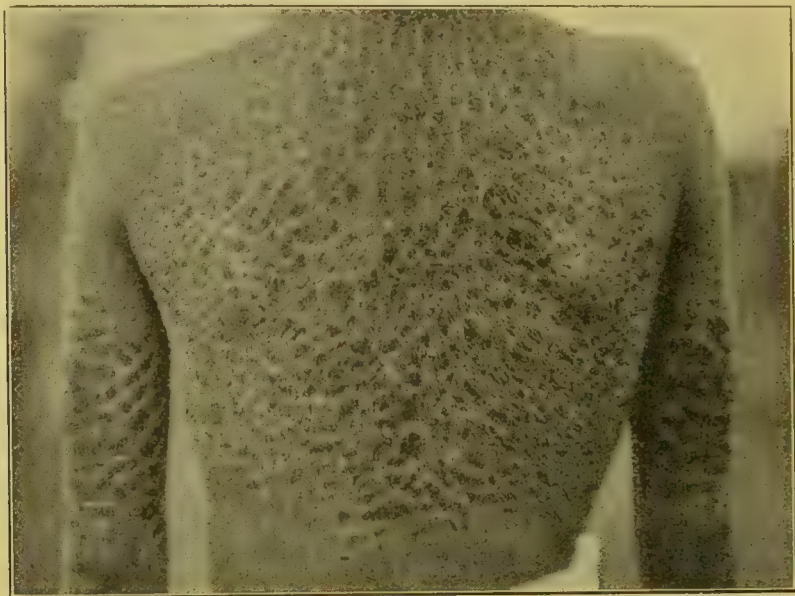


FIG. 629.—*ICHTHYOSIS*.

a decoction of a herb related to sarsaparilla and called 'usciva,' is much used according to Annaratone.

Venereal Sores.—These are common in all races, but are more apt to take a phagedænic character in the tropics.

Balano-posthitis.—Every type of balano-posthitis is met with in the tropics.

ICHTHYOSIS—SCLERODERMIA—MORPHEA.

Every type of **Ichthyosis** is met with in the tropics, from simple **Xerodermia** to **Ichthyosis hystrix**. Diffuse **Sclerodermia** is rare, but circumscribed sclerodermia (morphea) is rather frequent. We have seen a case of **Sclerema neonatorum** in a Sinhalese baby.

KAPOSI'S DISEASE—ACANTHOSIS NIGRICANS—DARIER'S DISEASE.

We have seen in the tropics several cases of **Kaposi's disease** (xerodermia pigmentosa) among European and half-caste children. We have not yet come across in the tropics cases of **Acanthosis nigricans**. We have recently observed in Ceylon a typical case of Darier's disease in a Sinhalese beggar.

LENTIGO—CHLOASMA.

Freckling cannot be seen in very dark-skinned natives, but is easily visible in half-castes. It is very common among Europeans, especially those who live an open-air life, and are much exposed to the sun.

Chloasma is a very common affection in the tropics, and is found among Europeans as well as natives. The dark brownish or dirty yellowish patches of chloasma are plainly distinguishable in the skin of Indian and Sinhalese natives, though in African negroes they may be indistinguishable. (For more details see p. 1612.)

BIOTRIPSIS.

Cheatle has described under the name 'biotripsis,' or 'life-wear,' the trophic changes which take place in the skin of old people. In Europeans the skin, especially of the hands, may become at places shiny, smooth, inelastic, more or less pigmented than normal, and scar-like lesions may be present. In old Sinhalese we have often noticed the skin on the legs presenting a peculiar appearance, becoming atrophic, and the superficial layers cracking. The condition, on superficial examination, might be taken for a mild type of ichthyosis. It is, however, probably a trophic condition due to old age.



DISEASES OF THE HAIR AND NAILS.

The diseases of parasitic origin are common, and have been described. Cases of **Hypertrichosis** in man and woman are occasionally met with. The so-called 'fragilitas crinium,' as well as **Trichorrhexis nodosa**, are

FIG. 630—BIOTRIPSIS IN AN OLD SINHALESE MAN, SIMULATING A MILD TYPE OF ICHTHYOSIS.

rare in natives, this being probably due to the habit they have of frequently oiling and greasing the hair. We have seen cases of **Moniliform hair** (monilithrix) in Sinhalese and Tamils. In several Sinhalese decrepit old men, who wear their hair long, and do not take care of it, we have seen a condition of inextricable matting of the hair somewhat resembling **Plica**.

Canities is said to take place at a later age in negroes than in Europeans, but in our experience neither in negroes nor in Indian races is there any distinct difference. **Alopecia** of every origin is met with in the tropics. **Alopecia seborrhœica** is very frequent among Europeans and educated natives. It is rare among the low classes and coolies. **Alopecia senilis** is less frequent in natives than in Europeans. **Alopecia areata** is apparently rare among natives, but recently we have come across several cases; it is fairly frequent among Europeans. We have seen a case of **pseudo-pelade** of Brocq (folliculitis decalvans) in a Sinhalese man.

All the diseases of the nails met with in temperate zones are found also in the tropics. **Brittle nails** (onychorrhaxis), **ridged nails**, **transverse furrowing**, and **thinning of the nails**, **eggshell nails**, **shedding of the nails**, are conditions occasionally seen. **Leuconychia**, or whitening of the nails, either in spots (**leuconychia punctata**), linear (**leuconychia striata**), or affecting the whole nail (**leuconychia totalis**), is observed. We have described at p. 1614 a peculiar black pigmentation of the nails. **Onychia**, or inflammation of the nail matrix, is not rare. Ingrowing toenail is common. So-called **nail pterygium**, or outgrowth of the posterior nail fold, is occasionally seen, or the opposite condition, exposure of the root of the nail (**ficus unguium**), may be met with.

We have never observed a case of congenital atrophy, but we have seen one case of supernumerary nails. We have noted with comparative frequency a form of **onychogryphosis** affecting several members of the same family, and apparently hereditary to a certain extent. The nails are enormously thickened, and much longer than usual. All the nails may be affected, both those of the fingers and those of the toes.

Onychomycosis of various origin is a common affection, and has already been considered (p. 1486).

SOME COSMOPOLITAN DISEASES OF MUCOUS MEMBRANES.

Patches of **Leucoplakia** of the tongue are common in natives, and may be of various origin—syphilitic, frambœtic, or due to irritation caused by smoking or chewing various substances. Cases of the so-called **circinate pityriasis linguæ** or **annulus migrans** are not rare. **Lingua nigra** is occasionally seen. We have already called attention to the *dark patches* found on the tongue in natives, and which by some writers have been described as a sign of agchylo-

stomiasis. These pigmented patches are roundish or oval, and may be found also on the gums, the mucosa of the lips, on the soft and hard palate, and are apparently congenital. A condition which might be called **red or purple tongue**, and which often puzzles the newly arrived medical man, who does not know its origin, is extremely common in Ceylon among the coolies and lower-class natives, and is simply due to chewing betel. The pigmentation slowly disappears on the native discontinuing the use of betel. Cases of **furrowed tongue** (scrotal tongue) are not rare. We have seen a case of **Fordyce's disease** (pseudo-colloid of the lips) in a half-caste. A case of **Chelitis exfoliativa** in a European lady and cases of **perleche** have been observed by us among European children. Under the term *seasonal recurrent ulceration of the lips*, Gros has described a very superficial ulceration on the lower lips in Algerian natives which is very common in the hot season, and is due, according to him, to a diplobacillus.

REFERENCES.

- ANNARATONE (1912). Condizioni Igieniche Colonia Eritrea. Roma.
BRAULT (1909). Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique.
CASTELLANI (1904-12). Ceylon Medical Reports.
CROCKER (1903). Skin Diseases. London.
ESCOMEL (1909). Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique.
FOX, H. (1907). Transactions Dermatological Congress, New York. Observations on Skin Diseases in the Negro. (This is an important paper.)
GROS (1909). Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique.
JEANSELME (1904). Dermatologie Exotique.
PUSEY (1907). Dermatology, London.

CHAPTER LXXI

DISEASES OF THE ORGANS OF SPECIAL SENSE

General Remarks—Diseases of the Eye—Diseases of the Ear—Diseases of the Nose—References.

GENERAL REMARKS.

It is not usual to consider the diseases of the organs of special sense in a work on tropical medicine, but all the diseases of the tropics are being carefully studied at the present time, and therefore we are of the opinion that a few cursory remarks on the above subjects, from the point of view of the general practitioner, may be of some interest.

DISEASES OF THE EYE.

The history of the study of eye disease in the tropics has still to be written, but anyone interested in the general history of this branch of medical science is referred to Hirsch 'Geschichte der Augenheilkunde' (Leipzig, 1877), which, though issued as a separate little volume, was originally part of Graefe's and Saemich's 'Handbuch der Augenheilkunde,' vol. vii. In this book there is an account of the ophthalmology known in ancient Egypt and India, as well as the history before and during the Alexandrine period of medical development. It will suffice to say that eye disease is described and treated in the Ebers papyrus, and that Suśruta mentioned 76 diseases of the eye, of which 9 were of the joinings of the eye, 21 of the eyelids, 11 of the sclerotic, 4 of the black part of the eye, 17 of the eye in general, 12 of the true organ of vision, and 2 were injuries. In recent years the work of the ophthalmic surgeons of India and Egypt and elsewhere has been beneficial, not merely in an extension of knowledge, but more importantly in benefit to the communities of the lands in which they live. Excellent work has been done by the travelling ophthalmic hospitals, such as those provided by private generosity in Egypt, which go from district to district. By this means, natives at a distance from

main hospitals are enabled to obtain expert advice and treatment, which can be carried on in the interval between a visit by the local hospital and dispensary.

Another excellent institution of more or less recent origin is the Central Ophthalmic Hospital, to which the patient can be sent for more prolonged expert treatment. A model hospital of this nature can be found in the Victoria Eye Memorial in Colombo, Ceylon. The prevalence and importance of eye disease in the tropics cannot be too strongly insisted upon. The cases of ophthalmia are so frequent that it has been stated that in no region of the world is conjunctivitis so common, which may be due to the high temperature which favours the growth of micro-organisms; to the overcrowded and filthy native dwellings, which favour their dissemination; to the dirty habits of the lower-class natives; and to the presence of large numbers of flies at certain seasons, which also materially assist in the spread of infection from the diseased to the healthy. Moreover, these factors are reinforced by the irritation caused by the glare of the sun, and by the dust. Blindness is also very prevalent in the tropics. Denham, in his report on the census in Ceylon in 1911, states that, in a population of 4,106,350 persons, there were 3,957 blind persons, which figures, when analyzed, showed that there were 11 blind men and 8 blind women in every 10,000 men and women in Ceylon. In India, in 1901, there were 12 blind men and 12 blind women per 10,000 of each sex; while in England, in 1901, there were 8 blind men and 7 blind women per 10,000 of each sex.

Dr. Andreas Nell in his statistics of the Victoria Eye Memorial Hospital in Colombo, Ceylon, for the years 1906-1911 shows that the causes of blindness in Ceylon may be classified as follows:—

Congenital Causes.—These included malformations of the eyeball, and syphilis acting upon the optic nerve, retina and choroid.

Local Eye Diseases.—Ophthalmia neonatorum, Purulent ophthalmia in adults, Catarrhal ophthalmia, Granular ophthalmia, Ulceration of the cornea, Severe paralysis of the ocular muscles, and Glaucoma.

Traumatisms.—Injuries from sticks, thorns, and edges of leaves in the jungle, from spikes in the paddy ear, from the tips of the blades of water-grasses. Some of these injuries are at first trifling, but may become septic, and so cause blindness.

Constitutional Diseases.—These include syphilis, malignant tumours, leprosy, tuberculosis and enteric fever, but malarial cachexia was not met with as a cause of blindness, nor was achylostomiasis.

Drugs.—Alcohol (most common); tobacco (rare); quinine and opium (very rare).

There can be no doubt that blindness arises from neglect of the trivial cases of eye disease, and from septic infection, and that, as medical aid becomes more readily available and hygiene is improved, this serious affliction will diminish in the tropics.

For the purposes of the few remarks which we propose to make it will be convenient to divide the subject into: A—Eye Diseases Proper; and B—Eye Complications of Tropical Diseases.

A. EYE DISEASES PROPER. .**Congenital Defects.**

These are by no means uncommon in the tropics, and our experience includes cases of apparent anophthalmus or microphthalmus, coloboma, and albinism.

Colour Blindness.

This is of importance, and natives who are to be employed as pilots or on railways should be examined as to their power of distinguishing colours ; and, indeed, if this has been neglected, it is advisable to examine the existing employés, as the results of such examinations are sometimes surprising. In testing, only the Eldridge-Green lamp and method should be used.

Errors of Refraction.

A subject which has begun to attract a considerable amount of attention is the condition of the eyes of native children in the more modern and higher class native schools, as regards errors of refraction ; but the medical inspection of native schools in the tropics is at present neglected, though the children suffer from what may be termed book hunger, and so strain their eyes excessively.

Foreign Bodies.

In addition to the usual foreign bodies met with in the temperate zone, small flies are apt to get into the eye in the early evening, and some of these are very irritating, and may cause congestion ; or, by introducing micro-organisms, conjunctivitis.

Pterygium.

In this disease the pinguecula, being irritated, spreads on to the cornea, and carries the conjunctiva with it, thus giving rise to triangular folds extending from the ocular conjunctiva to the cornea on the inner or outer aspects of the eye. It is very common in the tropics, especially among coolies in Indo-China.

The treatment is removal.

Hyperæmia of the Conjunctiva.

This is extremely common, being caused by the glare of the sun or by the dust, especially in sandy regions, and is especially apt to occur in persons who have some slight, and perhaps unnoticed, error of refraction. It is also more liable to occur in persons who have some congestion of the naso-pharynx, and is one of the symptoms of rhinitis spastica vasomotoria. Usually the symptoms are but slight, but the eyes are inclined to water ; this is aggravated

by exposure to light, while the patient may complain of a slight feeling of grit in the eye or of a burning sensation.

On examination, a portion of the palpebral and of the ocular conjunctiva is seen to be congested, while the secretion from the Meibomian glands is noticed to be increased in amount and the eyes to be watery. Treatment consists in bathing with warm 2 per cent. solution of boric acid, in giving the eye rest, and in wearing neutral-tinted or yellowish-tinted glasses (Xanthophylline), which can be obtained in three strengths—light, medium, or strong.

Conjunctivitis.

This is extremely common in the tropics among natives and Europeans, and may be clinically subdivided into—(1) Conjunctivitis catarrhalis; (2) Conjunctivitis gonorrhoea; (3) Ophthalmia neonatorum; (4) Conjunctivitis trachomatosa; (5) Epitheliosis desquamativa; (6) Conjunctivitis phlyctenulosa; (7) Conjunctivitis vernalis. Diphtheria is not common in the tropics, and diphtheritic conjunctivitis is rare, while ophthalmia nodosa is extremely rare, but can be caused by caterpillar hairs, or plant hairs, becoming embedded in the conjunctiva.

Conjunctivitis Catarrhalis.

This may be subdivided into the acute, the chronic and the follicular forms.

The Acute Variety.—This is very common in the tropics, where it may occur in epidemics. The most common cause is the Koch-Weeks bacillus, which may induce a very severe form of inflammation; while almost as frequently the Morax-Axenfeld bacillus causes a milder though more prolonged attack, often called angular conjunctivitis. Rarer causes are the pneumococcus and staphylococcus. The small eye fly of Ceylon is suspected of being an agent in the spread of this disease in Colombo.

The disease begins with photophobia, burning and itching in the eyes, with a sensation of grit, all of which symptoms are more pronounced in the morning than in the evening, when the eyelids are often glued together by the dried conjunctival secretion.

On examination, the palpebral and ocular conjunctivæ are seen to be red and congested, and sometimes to be marked by red spots indicative of small hæmorrhages, while the conjunctival secretion is increased in amount, and may have particles of mucus swimming in it, or it may be largely composed of mucus, or in severe cases it may be purulent. Usually both eyes are attacked. The disease may disappear in eight to fourteen days if untreated, but more usually it becomes chronic. The complications most commonly observed are corneal ulcer and iritis.

The best treatment in severe cases is to evert the eyelids, and to lightly mop the inflamed conjunctiva with 2 per cent. solution of silver nitrate, followed by a weak solution of salt, or by instilling a

10 per cent. solution of protargol, or 10 to 25 per cent. of argyrol. Ice compresses are very soothing. For the inflammation due to the diplobacillus of Morax and Axenfeld, the best treatment is to instil a 0.25 per cent. solution of zinc sulphate two or three times a day, or a 0.50 per cent. solution once a day. When the acute symptoms have subsided, a little adrenalin may be added to the zinc sulphate solution.

In order to prevent the sticking together of the eyelids, a 2 per cent. ointment of boric acid, or a $\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. strength of white precipitate ointment, may be used.

It is almost unnecessary to state that no bandage should be applied to the eye, or that the disease is contagious, and that it is necessary to warn the patient's friends of the danger of the attack.

The Chronic Variety may be the sequela to an acute attack, or may be in the form of the angular conjunctivitis due to the Morax-Axenfeld bacillus, or due to eyestrain or local injury by wind, dust or foreign bodies, or the use of alcoholic liquors.

The symptoms are most marked at night, when the patient feels as though a foreign body was in the eye or has sensations of rainbow colours. The eyes are apt to burn and to be dazzled by light. In the morning the lids are stuck together. Sometimes there is excessive secretion, and sometimes there is lessened secretion. If neglected, this chronic variety may last for years, and may lead to epiphora, ectropion, or ulceration of the cornea.

The treatment is the same as for the acute stage, but the best therapy is the zinc sulphate drops in the form of a $\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. solution applied night and morning.

The Follicular Variety may occur in epidemics, and may be acute, when it is usually of bacterial origin; or chronic, when it is usually non-bacterial. It is characterized by the formation of small round pale granules about the size of a pin's head, and is easily mistaken for conjunctivitis trachomatosa; but the granules are usually best marked in the inferior fornix, while those of trachoma are more marked in the superior fornix and tarsus, which must be most carefully examined by retroverting the lid and the retrotarsal fold in order to be certain that trachoma is absent. In the acute form the treatment is the same as for acute catarrhal conjunctivitis, but when chronic it is usual to apply copper sulphate treatment. An ointment of 1 in 1,000 copper sulphate or 1 in 100 copper citrate is recommended by some authorities.

Conjunctivitis Gonorrhoeica.

This is so well known that no special reference need be made to it.

Conjunctivitis Neonatorum.

This is usually due to the gonococcus, but may be caused by a streptococcus or probably by a chlamydozoon.

Micrococci and Conjunctivitis.

The presence of Gram-negative micrococci may be due to infection from the generative organs by the gonococcus, but it may also be due to infection from the nasopharynx viâ the lachrymal ducts by the meningococcus and the *Micrococcus catarrhalis*, which is merely a term for a group of Gram-negative cocci. The Gram-negative cocci of the conjunctiva may be roughly separated from one another by cultivation in sugar media.

Organism.				Glucose.	Maltose.
Gonococcus	+	-
Meningococcus	+	+
Micrococcus catarrhalis	-	-

Acid only, + ; acid and gas, ‡ ; neither, -.

Conjunctivitis Trachomatosa.

Synonym.—Ophthalmia Ægyptiaca.

This is exceedingly common in China, where 70 per cent. of the children in Hong Kong are said to be infected. It is also common in many other parts of the tropics, especially in India, Japan, and South America ; but it is also prevalent in North Africa, especially in Egypt, in South Africa, and in Southern Europe. It is an infectious disease, believed by many authorities to be due to a chlamydozoon described by Halberstaedter and Prowazek. A fungus—e.g., the *Microsporon trachomatosum*—has been described by Noiszewski, which is only distinguishable from *Malassezia furfur* by the smallness of its conidia. With regard to the chlamydozoon, it occurs in the cytoplasm of epithelial cells as fine granules, which increase in size, and separate so as to enclose a cavity at first free from granules, in which subsequently very minute granules appear.

Probable Ætiology.—There is a growing suspicion that trachoma is essentially a disease arising from chronic urethritis in men and chronic vaginitis in women, because cell-inclusions of a chlamydozoan nature have been found by several observers in the discharge from the urethra of men suffering from gonorrhœa, while Castellani has found similar inclusions in a man in Colombo who is believed never to have had gonorrhœa. Further, similar bodies have been found in the vaginal discharge of women whose children have suffered from the form of ophthalmia neonatorum in which no gonococci or streptococci can be found. Further, Castellani has found similar bodies in a case which may have been one of the rare acute inflammations of a pure trachoma without granule formation, and which may have been induced in the acute form because the woman in question was run down owing to the acute attack of malaria from which she suffered. This case emphasizes the fact that these bodies should be looked for in those so-called attacks of malarial conjunctivitis which are found associated with attacks of malarial fever. Finally, Linder has produced a chronic conjunctivitis by transferring the secretion of vagina and urethra mentioned above to monkeys. This experimental conjunctivitis was associated with the formation of granules clinically and anatomically resembling the conjunctivitis trachomatosa of man.

Method of Infection.—The infection is carried by the hands, towels, handkerchiefs, etc., from the sick to the healthy. There is no evidence of aerial transmission. The agency of flies in the transmission of eye disease has long been known—for example, Budd, in 1862, considered it proven that they transmitted ophthalmia ægyptiaca; while Laveran, in 1880, announced that the same fact applied to the conjunctivitis seen in Biskra; and Howe, in 1888, stated that the number of cases of conjunctivitis in Egypt increased in proportion with the increase of flies, and were more prevalent in the Delta, where there were many flies, than in the Desert, where there were few. Nuttall and Jephson consider the spread of ophthalmia ægyptiaca by the agency of flies to be definitely proved. The ‘pink eye’ of school-children in Florida is believed to be spread by minute flies of the genus *Hippelates*.

That some other factor, in addition to those mentioned above, is necessary to explain the epidemiology of trachoma is evident from the fact that the disease does not often spread to the attendants or to inhabitants of the same house as the infected person. This other factor may be some local derangement—as, for example, a slight attack of conjunctivitis; or some general derangement, as, for example, an attack of fever.

Pathology.—The essential feature of the disease is a round-celled infiltration into the conjunctiva associated with hypertrophy of the papillæ of that membrane.

Morbid Anatomy.—The papillæ of the conjunctiva are hypertrophied and the trachoma granules are formed from accumulations of round cells which are peripherally lymphocytes and centrally mononuclear leucocytes, with a few macrophages. These cells are supported by a delicate connective tissue which contains plasma cells. Pannus is a layer of new-formed connective tissue which is rich in cells and bloodvessels.

Symptomatology.—An acute attack may begin with acute inflammatory symptoms, œdema of the eyelids, great swelling of the conjunctiva, and profuse purulent secretion. On examination, the conjunctiva is studded with the typical nodules, but these may not be apparent, and may even at first be absent. These acute attacks may be complicated with corneal ulcers.

A chronic attack often begins insidiously, the acute phase being absent, very mild, or unnoticed, and usually the patient is not seen until the eyesight is dimmed by the pannus over the cornea. In other cases the disease sets in with photophobia, pain, and watering of the eye; the lids stick together in the morning, and there is diminution of visual acuity. The eye is not fully opened, partly because of the photophobia, and partly because the upper lid is swollen and heavy. On everting the lids, the tarsal and transitional conjunctivæ are found to be swollen and red, and either velvety in appearance, or with distinct nodules which are most marked on the upper lid. These nodules or granules are of considerable importance in the differentiation between trachoma and follicular conjunctivitis, and it is to be specially noted that those of trachoma are larger in the

superior fornix than in the inferior fornix. It is therefore important to examine the superior retrotarsal fold very carefully. On the tarsal conjunctiva the granules are not so prominent, and are therefore less easily seen. A trachoma granule is typically a grey, roundish, translucent granule, comparable to a grain of boiled sago in appearance. Harston's sign is a linear groove running almost horizontally outwards from the external canthus. The hypertrophy of the conjunctiva increases until some indefinite limit is reached, when it ceases and cicatrization sets in ; but if the hypertrophy is excessive, it may last for years, and the cicatrization may develop slowly but surely.

The cicatrization shows itself at first as whitish striæ on the tarsal conjunctivæ, which, becoming more numerous, unite into a network, the meshes of which are occupied by the hypertrophied conjunctiva, which gradually diminish as cicatrization proceeds, until the conjunctiva becomes pale in colour. In some cases this cicatrization is very slight and hardly noticeable, while in others it may produce serious complications.

The loss of vision is due to pannus and ulceration of the cornea, the former being a deposit of vesicular gelatinous tissue on the cornea, which becomes uneven and raised in fine projections ; while the latter may occur with the pannus or separately.

The sequelæ of trachoma may be classified into :—

- (a) Corneal ulceration and pannus, leading to *opacities*.
- (b) Cicatrization, leading to (1) *Trichiasis*, in which the cilia are turned backwards and may touch the cornea ; (2) *Entropion*, in which the border of the lid is turned backward ; (3) *Ectropion*, in which the lid is everted ; (4) *Symblepharon posterius*, in which the fornix is diminished in depth, and the lid is tightly fastened to the eyeball.

(c) Conjunctival xerosis, in which the conjunctiva, owing to atrophy, loses its secreting powers, and becomes dry and shrunken.

Treatment.—The acute cases are to be treated with silver preparations, as described for conjunctivitis.

When the follicles are well developed it is usual to express them by means of a flat Grady's forceps or by the roller forceps of Knapp, but this must be performed under an anæsthetic. The ruptured surface is then painted with a solution of perchloride of mercury, and after one or two days' interval the daily application of solid copper sulphate is commenced, which may be applied pure or as a Ginestou's crayon, which consists of sulphate of copper, 1.0 gramme ; orthoform, 0.5 gramme ; holocain hydrochloride, 0.5 gramme ; gum tragacanth, 0.1 gramme ; and water as may be required. The above are the quantities required to make a pencil 5 centimetres in length.

Harston strongly recommends treatment by carbon dioxide snow, which has produced excellent results in many hands, and as it has only to be applied once a fortnight is useful for general out-patient

work. It is, however, very painful, and this pain is not prevented by cocaine, which therefore need not be used.

Hegner and Baumm have advised treatment by quartz light, while other methods are Galezowski's excision of the retrotarsal folds, Kuhnt's removal of the tarsus, while treatment by Merk's extract of abrin, Mayon's X-ray method, and Treacher Collins's radium treatment may be mentioned.

Epitheliosis Desquamativa.

Synonym.—Samoan eye disease.

Under this term Leber and von Prowazek have described a form of conjunctivitis which they met with in Samoa, where they examined and treated seventy-nine fresh infections. They consider the causation to be a chlamydozoon—*Lyozone atrophicans* Leber and von Prowazek 1911, which is found in the milky secretion in the form of trachoma-like bodies, which, when coloured by Giemsa, show blue poles and a central lacuna. These bodies are either intracellular or extracellular. The intracellular bodies form what is commonly called a 'cell inclusion of small granules,' which take on a violet-red colour when stained by Giemsa, and are called the 'elementary bodies,' and lie in the centre, while the larger initial bodies lie at the periphery. These parasites cause a hypertrophy of the cell nucleus, which eventually leads to an atrophy of the cell. The disease was conveyed to guinea-pigs.

The symptoms begin with pain, photophobia, and livid coloration of the upper and lower lids, while a milky secretion is poured out, which is composed at first of epithelial cells only, but may become purulent. Granules similar to those of trachoma do not develop, but atrophy of the conjunctiva ensues. The treatment recommended is pyoktanin in the proportion of 1 in 1,000 to 1 in 100.

Conjunctivitis Vernalis.

Synonyms.—Conjunctivitis Æstivalis, Spring catarrh.

Definition.—A chronic form of conjunctivitis, resembling conjunctivitis trachomatosa, but occurring in the spring and summer, and disappearing in the autumn and winter.

Remarks.—Spring catarrh is apparently not so rare in the Tropics as in the Temperate Zone, as Nell informs us that he has met with thirty-eight cases in Ceylon.

Ætiology.—The cause is unknown, but some authorities consider that it is due to sunlight, while others hold that it is an infection from the skin.

Symptomatology.—On the approach of the warm weather in spring the eyes begin to itch and water. The conjunctiva becomes red, and photophobia is experienced. On examination, the conjunctiva is seen to be covered with broad, flattened papillæ, over which a bluish-white film is seen. The affection lasts during the

summer, wanes in the autumn, and disappears in the winter, only to recur in the spring.

Diagnosis.—The diagnosis must be made by the history and by the bluish-white sheen over the papillæ. It resembles trachoma, but the granules are broader, harder, and paler, while the history is distinctive.

Treatment.—Protective glasses must be worn, and zinc sulphate lotion ($\frac{1}{2}$ per cent.) dropped into the eyes. If the itching is very severe, it is recommended to apply a few drops of a very weak solution of acidum aceticum dilutum. Iron tonics are also advised.

Lachrymal Sac.

The lachrymal sac, being in direct connection with the nose, is very liable to harbour micro-organisms and fungi, and is therefore a possible source of infection for the conjunctiva and cornea.

Cornea.

Phlyctenular keratitis is common as a sequela to conjunctivitis phlyctenulosa, both of which act as common predisposing causes to pterygium, which, according to Harston, is extremely common among the Chinese.

Ulcus Serpens Corneæ.

This appears as a greyish-white or yellowish slightly depressed disc near the centre of the cornea, the rest of which is clouded. It is associated with iritis and turbidity of the vitreous, hypopyon, and more or less œdema of the lids, with conjunctivitis, cyclitis, photophobia, and pain, except in the so-called 'torpid' cases. The ulcers increase in depth and extent; perforation occurs into the anterior chamber, which contains *sterile* pus, which now escapes, and at the same time prolapse of the iris may occur. The inflammation now comes to an end, but panophthalmia may occur. The most common cause in the tropics is the pneumococcus, which may often be found in the nose of the same patient. The prognosis is serious.

Treatment.—The cauterization of the ulcer and apparently clear border with the actual cautery is an imperative immediate treatment, followed by application of atropine, iodoform, or orthoform powder, or 1 per cent. xeroform ointment, or callaryol ointment 3 per cent., and moist and warm compresses. Harston recommends douching with hydrogen peroxide as an adjuvant to the usual treatment, while 1 in 40 formalin solution is also recommended, but must be preceded by cocain, as it is very painful. Perforated ulcers are best treated by iridectomy on each side of the synechia. Harston operates on the worst eye of the two when both are involved, as operative interference is apt to set up a severe irido-cyclitis in the poorly-nourished Chinese coolie, with eventual loss of sight in the eye. The nasal infection must also be treated by antiseptic douches.

Iris.

Diseases of the iris are as common in the Tropics as in the Temperate Zone. Those which are specially connected with tropical disease will be mentioned below, but it is well to remember that in native races the stroma of the iris is laden with pigment, which probably accounts for its slow reaction to mydriatics.

Cataract.

This disease is said to be on the wane in the Temperate Zone, but is very rife in the Tropics. In fact, its home is said to be in India, the ophthalmic surgeons of which have great reputation. Colonel Smith, of Jullundur, has perfected a complicated but most successful operation for intracapsular extraction.

Sometimes in the Tropics it is impossible to wait until the cataract ripens, and operations may have to be performed on immature cataracts. To meet this difficulty, Nell has devised a modification of the usual procedure, which consists in performing a zonulotomy by means of a special hook introduced through the corneal wound made for a cataract extraction and under the iris. After this preliminary proceeding he completes the operation by intracapsular extraction of the lens.

Glaucoma.

Acute glaucoma is rare in the Tropics, while chronic glaucoma is common; but the signs, symptoms, and treatment are the same as in the Temperate Zone. The Elliot operation of trephining, with or without subsequent iridectomy, is recommended.

Fundus Oculi.

The colour of the fundus oculi depends upon the amount of retinal pigment present and to a less degree upon the amount of the choroidal pigment visible. It therefore shows variations from the European standard in dark and yellow races. In these races the amount of retinal pigment is increased, and may completely conceal that of the choroid, and so produce a uniform yellowish colour, as seen in the Chinese; or a dark reddish, or even an almost greyish-red colour, as seen in the various negro races.

On the other hand, when the retinal and choroidal pigments are diminished, as in albinism; then the white sclerotic shows through, and the fundus becomes of a lighter red colour than normal.

Sunlight.

The effect of sunlight on the eyes has been studied by Sisson, who considers that there is ample proof that light injures the eye, and that it may possibly be the cause of some diseases of the eye, the ætiology of which is but little understood. Schmidt considers that nyctalopia and hemeralopia may be caused by excessive light. The use of protective xanthophylline glasses is recommended.

B. EYE COMPLICATIONS OF TROPICAL DISEASES.

Malaria.

Malaria is held to be responsible for conjunctivitis, serpiginous corneal ulcers, malarial iritis, and retino-choroiditis, as well as amaurosis.

Until a few years ago, the majority of the fevers of the tropics, including enteric fever, were classified as malaria, and any local affection of an unknown nature was also classified in the same manner. The case of conjunctivitis in which one of us found cell-inclusions would a few years ago have been named malarial. We are therefore of the opinion that the existence of malarial conjunctivitis has not been proved.

Keratitis Dendritica.—This keratitis is that variety of herpes corneæ febrilis (sometimes called ‘herpes corneæ zoster’) which gives rise to those ulcers (formed from the ruptured herpetic vesicles) which extend in certain directions only as grey forked striæ with lateral branches, which break down, thus forming a branched ulcer with grey margins. The ulcer then becomes clean, and heals after one to three months, leaving a branched opacity of the cornea. This is one form of corneal ulcer to which the name ‘serpiginous’ is given, but it equally applies to *ulcus rodens* and *keratitis marginalis superficialis*, which, as far as we know, have never been stated to be of malarial origin. *Keratitis dendritica* was first described by Kipp in America, who stated that nine out of every ten cases were malarial.

The treatment must be that described for malaria, as well as constitutional, and it is usual to recommend that the ulcers be treated by a piece of blue stone whittled to a fine point, and carried carefully along the furrow made by the ulcer, or by careful cauterization by the actual cautery.

Keratitis Profunda.—*Synonyms.*—*Keratitis parenchymatosa circumscripta*, or Central Parenchymatous Infiltration of the Cornea.

This is said by Arlt, among other causes, to be brought about by chronic malarial cachexia. It begins with a grey opacity, situate in the middle and deep layers of the centre of the cornea, and over which the corneal surface is grey and punctate. Seen with a magnifying-glass, the opacity resolves into dots and maculæ, or grey interlacing striæ. After remaining four to eight weeks, it slowly abates without ulceration. The iris may be hyperæmic, and there may or may not be symptoms of inflammation of the cornea, which may recover completely, or with some opacity. The treatment would be the same as for malaria, but it must be definitely stated that the cause is unknown.

Iritis.—Secondary iritis is said to be very rarely caused by malaria, but even this is open to doubt.

Vitreous Opacities.—Hæmorrhage and serous infusion have been described.

Amaurosis.—Malarial amaurosis is described in Chapter XXIX. under the term 'Amaurotic Pernicious Fever,' but may occur, not merely during an attack of malaria, but as a sequel, and as such was described by Jacobi in 1868, and later by Chiarini. It is due to atrophy of the optic nerve.

Retino-choroiditis.—This was first described by Poucet as occurring in chronic malaria, but it is also found in the acute and in the chronic forms. In the acute affection the vessels of the retina are filled with corpuscles, many of which contain malarial parasites. In the choroid the larger vessels contain pigmented leucocytes, and many of which contain red corpuscles with malarial parasites. The retina is hazy, the papilla is obscured, and there are retinal hæmorrhages.

The amblyopia may be temporary or permanent. In the chronic condition there is atrophy of the capillaries of the choroid. The macular region shows small whitish dots, in the centre of which retinal pigment can be seen. These changes extend to the periphery. Pathologically, they are colloid masses in Bruch's membrane.

Suppurative Uveitis.—Suppurative choroiditis, leading to destruction of the eye, has only been described by Pennoff.

Accommodation Paralysis.—Accommodation paralysis and spasm of the muscles of accommodation have been described by Bull and Slitting.

Trypanosomiasis.

Choroiditis, cyclitis, iritis, and optic neuritis of a temporary nature, are reported as occurring in sleeping-sickness, as well as engorgement of the iris and loss of the light reflex, with wide dilatation of the pupil.

Relapsing Fevers.

Iridocyclitis, or iritis, is a frequent complication of the relapsing fevers, and though it ultimately ends in a cure, it is usually protracted.

Plague.

Conjunctivitis is common in plague as an initial symptom; later a plastic uveitis with hypopyon and keratitis may occur, and call for special treatment by administration of mercury, local installation of atropine, and blood extraction by leeches.

Leprosy.

In tubercular leprosy yellowish translucent nodules of a non-vascular nature may develop in the conjunctiva near the cornea. Iritis and cyclitis, with or without the formation of nodules, may occur; but the eye complications are more fully dealt with in Chapter XLIII., to which the reader is referred.

Cholera.

Focal necrosis in the cornea and conjunctiva has been reported in convalescence from cholera, while a form of cataract depending upon the abstraction of water takes place at times in the last stage of the disease.

Dysentery.

Keratitis, iritis, and irido-cyclitis are reported in dysentery, but in which variety is not stated.

Hikan.

Under this term a curious disease is described by various observers, among whom Jeanselme and Risb. The main symptoms appear to be hemeralopia, xerophthalmia, dryness of the skin, and diarrhoea occurring in young children in Russia, Brazil, and Japan. The causation is unknown, but treatment by cod-liver oil is said to be very efficacious.

Quinine.

Amaurosis associated with complete deafness may set in after doses of less than 1 gramme of quinine, though more usually after a dose of 3 grammes and upwards. The amaurosis gradually disappears, leaving an amblyopia with a much contracted field of vision. This result is due to a destruction of the ganglion cells of the retina by the quinine, after which a degeneration of the optic nerve sets in.

The symptoms are a blanching of the retina and disc, due to spasm of the vessels, and loss of the pupillary light reflex, the pupils being widely dilated.

Atoxyl.

Sudden amaurosis may be caused by atoxyl.

Animal Parasites.

Ocular Paragonimiasis.—Cysts containing *Paragonimus westermani* have been reported as occurring on the eyelids and orbit, and so hindering the movements of the eyeball and obstructing the vision.

Ocular Filariasis.—Loa loa has been noticed in the ocular and palpebral conjunctiva (*vide* Chapter XXI., p. 536; and Chapter LX., p. 1442).

In addition to paragonimiasis and filariasis, the following parasites occur in the eye or its adnexa: *Agamodistomum ophthalmobium* Diesing 1850 (*vide* p. 472); *Monostomum lentis* von Nordmann 1832 (p. 480)—both of which may be stages of *Dicrocoelium lanceatum* Stiles and Hassell 1896; *Sparganum mansonii* Cobbold 1883 (p. 499); *Agamofilaria oculi humani* von Nordmann 1832; *Agamofilaria palpebralis* Pace 1867 *nec* Wilson 1844; *Dermanyssus gallinæ* De Geer 1778 (which may be seen as a dark spot embedded in the cornea);

Demodex folliculorum Simon 1842, which is found in the Meibomian glands, and may cause a blepharitis. The larvæ of *Dermatobia cyaniventris* Macquart 1843 has been found by Malgahães under the palpebral conjunctiva and in the lachrymal sacs in Brazil. A larva of *Sarcophaga magnifica* Schiner 1862 has been found in the anterior chamber of the eye, and a larva of a species of *Necrobia* in a sclerotic tumour.

Cysticercus cellulosæ has been found in the choroid, which it may leave, and, passing under the retina, may cause detachment; later it may perforate the retina and enter the vitreous, or it may enter the retina or the ciliary region, and so pass directly into the vitreous where it appears as a bluish-white bladder, with or without a protruded head. The eye may be destroyed by irido-cyclitis. Echinococcal invasion is very rare.

Ophthalmomycoses.

Definition.—Diseases of the eye and its adnexa caused by various fungi.

History.—The word mycosis was introduced by Virchow to signify a disease caused by fungi, being first used for aspergillosis of the lungs. The interest in fungi as causes of disease was first aroused by Gruby, who in 1847 appears to have noticed fungal structures in lachrymal concretions, although he did not publish his observations. Helmbrecht and Robin were the first to actually assign a disease of the eyes to the action of fungi. They observed a fungus, which they called *Leptomitus*, in a case of conjunctival inflammation associated with epiphora. In 1854 Graeffe described the fungal nature of lachrymal concretions, and in 1873 Cohn showed that these fungi belonged to the genus *Streptothrix* (*Nocardia*). In 1879 Leber discovered the first case of keratomycosis caused by *Aspergillus fumigatus*. From this date until comparatively recently fungi went out of fashion, being replaced by interest in bacteria, but with the revival of interest created largely by Sabouraud eye diseases were again investigated, and in 1906 De Beurmann and Gougerot gave an account of ocular sporotrichosis, and in 1907 Danlos and Blanc of palpebral sporotrichosis, and Morax described a form of keratomycosis caused by *Genospora graphii*, and Liegard and Landrieu a form of conjunctivitis due to *Nocardia dassonvillei*, while in 1912 Landrieu reviewed the whole subject of ocular mycoses in a singularly able manner.

Fungi.—The following fungi have been recognized in various diseases of the eye:—

A. ORDER ASCOMYCETES.

I. Suborder Gymnoacees.

(a) Family Saccharomycetes.

(1) Genus *Cryptococcus*.

C. dermatitis Gilchrist and Stokes 1898.

(2) Genus *Saccharomyces*, several species.

(b) Family Gymnoasceæ.

(1) Genus *Microsporon*.

M. lanosum Sabouraud 1907.

(2) Genus *Trichophyton*.

T. tonsurans Malmsten 1845, and other species of the same genus.

(3) Genus *Achorion*.

A. schoenleini Lebert 1845.

II. Suborder Carpoascees.

Family Perisporiaceæ.

Genus *Aspergillus*.

A. fumigatus Fresenius 1775.

B. ORDER HYPHOMYCETES.

(1) Genus *Nocardia*.*N. bovis* Harz 1877.*N. israeli* Kruse 1896.*N. foersteri* Cohn 1874.*N. dassonvillei* Brocq-Rousseau 1907.(2) Genus *Monilia*.*M. albicans* Robin 1853, and other species of the same genus.(3) Genus *Glenospora*.*G. graphii* Siebenmann 1889.(4) Genus *Sporotrichum*.*S. beurmanni* Matruchot and Ramond 1905.

Pathogenicity.—The ocular diseases caused by the above fungi may be grouped as follows :—

Fungus.	Disease.
<i>Cryptococcus dermatitis</i> and various species of the genus <i>Saccharomyces</i>	Ocular Blastomycosis.
<i>Microsporon lanosum</i>	Ocular Tineæ.
<i>Trichophyton tonsurans</i>	
<i>Achorion schoenleini</i>	
<i>Aspergillus fumigatus</i>	Ocular Aspergillosis.
<i>Nocardia bovis</i>	Ocular Nocardiasis.
<i>Nocardia israeli</i>	
<i>Nocardia foersteri</i>	
<i>Nocardia dassonvillei</i>	
<i>Monilia albicans</i> and other species of the same genus	Ocular Moniliasis.
<i>Genospora graphii</i>	Ocular Genosporosis.
<i>Sporotrichum beurmanni</i>	Ocular Sporotrichosis.

Ocular Blastomycosis.

Ocular blastomycosis is seen in the form of **Palpebral Blastomycosis**, which begins as papules which increase in size and give rise to pustules covered with crusts, and, later, to a warty condition, which may become red, moist, and granular. In other cases a subdermal nodule is formed, which may ulcerate. The causal agent is *Cryptococcus dermatitis* Gilchrist and Stokes 1898. The diagnosis is made by culture of the fungus.

Ocular Tineæ.

Tinea palpebrarum may be caused by *Microsporon lanosum* Sabouraud 1907, by various species of *Trichophyton*, of which that most commonly found is *T. tonsurans* Malmsten 1845. These fungi may or may not attack the cilia. If they do so, then small yellow crusts will be seen surrounding a cilium. On the removal of these crusts, small pustules will be seen. When they do not attack the cilia, they give rise to herpetiform lesions on the eyelids proper. The diagnosis is made by culture of the fungus. The treatment consists in epilation, warm compresses, and tincture of iodine.

Achorion schoenleini Lebert 1845, the fungus of favus, may also attack the eyelids.

Ocular Aspergillosis.

About two days after a slight traumatism to the eye, irritation is felt, followed by pains, and the formation of an abscess, and later an ulcer. The diagnosis can only be made by the microscopical or cultural examination of scrapings from the ulcer or of the pus from the abscess. The treatment consists in curetting and applying a lotion of silver nitrate and atropine drops.

Ocular Nocardiasis.

Actinomycotic conjunctivitis was first described by Demichéri in 1899, actinomycotic corneal ulcers by de Bernardinis and de Donna in 1905, and miliary actinomycotic metastases in the choroid by Müller in 1903. Conjunctivitis due to *N. dassonvillei* has been recorded by Liégard and Landrieu in 1911.

Ever since the days of Césolin in 1670 lachrymal concretions have from time to time been recorded, but their parasitic nature was not recognized until Gruby in 1848 found that they were really fungal in origin. This fungus is known to be *Nocardia foersteri*. The concretions occur in the form of minute grains in the lachrymal sac from which they can easily be removed.

Ocular Moniliasis.

Monilia albicans Robin 1853, the organism of 'thrush,' may very rarely attack the conjunctiva, as first described by Piehler in 1895. Cases due to other species of monilia have been seen by us in Ceylon.

Ocular Glenosporosis.

So far, only one case in the cornea is recorded. It was found in 1910 by Morax.

Ocular Sporotrichosis.

Sporotrichal infection of the eyelids, conjunctiva, lachrymal sac, and iris have been recorded, but are as yet rare. The first case was found in 1905 by Danlos and Blanc, the second case in 1908, the third in 1909. Four cases were recorded in 1910, and three in 1911, and several in 1912.

DISEASES OF THE EAR.

The diseases of the ear in the Tropics require more attention than has hitherto been bestowed upon them. The majority are believed to resemble those found in the Temperate Zone. A few remarks will be offered with regard to the diseases of the auricle, of the external auditory meatus, and with regard to ear complications in tropical diseases.

The Auricle.

Deformities of the lobule are common among Indian girls and women, who drag the lobule into a long, pendulous loop by means of heavy golden ornaments, or, failing these, by pieces of other metals or even wood. A similar condition is reported by Bland-Sutton as occurring among the Masai and the Kikuyu people of East Africa.

Nepaul Tumour.—In 1833, Campbell, and in 1835, Bramley, drew attention to a peculiar disease of the skin of the auricle which was endemic in the village of Nilkantha, situate in one of the Nepaul Valleys, at the foot of the Sheopuri Hills. The disease begins as a small firm swelling of the skin on the external aspect of the auricle, which is elastic to the touch, and which increases until it reaches the size of a pigeon's egg in four to eight weeks. It is adherent to the subcutaneous tissues, but is slightly movable. If it grows rapidly, the superjacent skin becomes bluish, and a painful feeling of tension is produced. If the swelling is punctured, a thick whitish

fluid exudes. It grows until it reaches the size of an orange or of a child's head, and it may attain such a size that it reaches to the patient's shoulder. After a time its contents soften and become absorbed, while the sac of the tumour shrinks, leaving the ear much thickened and shapeless. Usually both ears are affected, and sometimes a succession of tumours, one after the other, may take place. The causation is unknown. It is more common in women than in men. Campbell thinks that it occurs associated with goitre, which would suggest a parasitic causation, but Bramley is opposed to this view.

It is curious that there is so little literature on this subject, and that neither Scheube nor ourselves are acquainted with any further papers describing this disease.

Lipoma.—Lipoma of the lobule of the ear, often on both ears, is reported in Loango. This tumour may reach the size of a walnut or a child's head, and is thought to be due to the fact that the negroes bore their ears with thorns or with pointed strips of palm-leaves, which are retained in the lobe of the ear for some time.

Fibromata.—We have often met with soft small fibromata attached to the lobules of the ears of the negroes on the Gold Coast, which can readily be removed. Perhaps the lipomata of loango are really soft fibromata.

Keloid.—Keloid is met with on the auricle in West African natives, arising after insignificant wounds such as ear-piercing, etc., and may form large tumours.

External Auditory Meatus.

Foreign Bodies are commonly met with in the tropics, and may consist of animate objects, such as beetles, flies, etc.; or inanimate objects, such as pieces of wood, etc. Usually their presence can easily be determined by inspection, which should always be carried out before any treatment is resorted to. The first treatment should be to attempt to wash the body out of the meatus by means of hot boracic lotion and an ear syringe, unless the body be a pea, bean, or grain of maize, because these would become swollen with the water. Under these circumstances, it is better to instil some glycerine mixed with a little rectified spirit and solution of cocaine, which causes them to contract, when a camel's-hair brush dipped in thick collodion may be carefully applied to the object. After waiting a little time for the collodion to set, traction can be made, and the object removed. Failing these, attempts must be made to remove the body by Guye's fenestrated forceps, Politzer's gouge forceps, Tröltsch's aural hook, an aural curette, or, in the case of impacted steel bodies, the electro-magnet. If there is much swelling of the mucous membrane of the passage, it may be necessary to apply a solution of cocaine and adrenalin, after which extraction may be attempted. It is often advisable to administer an anæsthetic if a body is impacted in a child's ear. If all attempts fail,

an operation is necessary, which is generally performed by detaching the auricle from behind and exposing the bone wall of the external auditory meatus, a portion of which is removed if necessary.

Animal Parasites.—Apart from foreign bodies, the following animals have been found parasitic in the external auditory meatus : *Cheyletidæ* : *C. heyletus*, *C. eruditus* Schrank 1781. *Tyroglyphidæ* : *Rhizoglyphus parasiticus* Dalgetty 1901. *Demodicidæ* : *Demodex folliculorum* Simon 1842. Larvæ belonging to the Anthomyidæ, to *Sarcophaga carnaria* Linnæus 1758, to *Wohlfaktia magnifica* Schiner 1862, and to *Chrysomyia macellaria* Fabricius 1794.

Otomycosis.—Otitis externa parasitica, or otomycosis, is fairly common in the tropics, and is due to a number of fungi, among which may be mentioned : *Mucor pusillus* Lindt 1886, *Lichtheimia corymbifera* Cohn 1884, *Lichtheimia ramosa* Lindt 1886 (these cause otomucormycosis) ; *Saccharomyces ellipsoides* Rhees 1870, *Monilia rhoi* Castellani 1909, *Aspergillus fumigatus* Fresenius 1775, *Aspergillus niger* von Tieghem 1867, *Aspergillus flavus* De Bary 1870, *Aspergillus malignus* Lindt 1889, *Aspergillus repens* De Bary 1870 (these cause otomycosis aspergillina).

These fungi cause mild inflammations of the external auditory meatus, and are found not merely in natives, but also in Europeans.

If they grow superficially, they cause no symptoms ; but if they penetrate into the mucous membrane, they give rise to itching, and sometimes to pain. If they grow into the cerumen, they may give rise to blocking of the passage, and cause tinnitus aurium and deafness.

On inspecting the ear, it will be seen that the wall of the auditory meatus is covered with a white or black macerated mucosa. The diagnosis can be made by microscopical examination, and, if necessary, by cultivation. The treatment is to syringe with a watery solution of peroxide of hydrogen or peroxide solution (2 parts) and alcohol (1 part) once or twice a day, followed by the insufflation of boracic powder, or, if there is eczema, some boracic ointment. The treatment should be continued for some time, and should be repeated after an interval in order to destroy the spores.

Hypersecretion.—Excessive secretion of the products of the ceruminous and sebaceous glands of the external auditory meatus is common in the tropics, and is probably induced by some hyperæmia, perhaps in part due to irritating dust, and partly to the hot, damp air. As a rule, both ears are affected, giving rise to a sensation of fulness and heaviness in head, diminution in hearing, and tinnitus aurium, and more rarely to autophony, while pain is rare, though neuralgia may occur, and reflex coughing. The diagnosis is easily made by seeing the brownish-red or black mass filling up the meatus.

If the plug is soft, it can easily be removed by warm syringing ; if hard, it requires to be softened by a warm solution of bicarbonate of soda (20 grains to 1 ounce of water) or glycerin of borax, and then to be removed by syringing. If deafness persists after the

cerumen has been removed, it is necessary to inflate the middle ear by a Politzer's bag, which must be used with care.

Otitis Externa Circumscripta.—Boils due to the entrance of pyogenic germs into a sebaceous gland or hair-follicle. They usually cause much pain, which is aggravated by moving the jaw or touching the auricle, and may cause toothache, salivation, and vertigo.

The treatment should be to relieve pain by cocain, and the meatus should be lightly packed with gauze soaked in weak carbolic lotion. Later an incision may be made into the boil with a Dundas Grant's furuncle knife, and the meatus dressed with carbolized glycerine on gauze. To relieve the irritable condition of the meatus, which often persists after the boil has been relieved, a little cocain or boracic ointment combined with lanoline may be applied, and a general tonic prescribed.

Otitis Externa Ossificans.—Müller has described a diffuse inflammation of the mucosa of the external auditory meatus in the tropics which often invades the periosteum and leads to ossification, and may cause exostosis.

Deaf and Dumb.

The number of deaf and dumb people is relatively high in certain parts of the tropics—*e.g.*, in Ceylon there are 9 deaf and dumb males and 7 females out of 10,000 persons of each sex. In India there are 6 males and 4 females out of 10,000 persons of each sex. There is a deaf and dumb school in Ceylon.

Ménière's Disease.

This disease is characterized by severe tinnitus, and vertigo is often met with in the Tropics. It occurs especially in planters, who are exposed to the midday sun. The patients frequently recover on their return to the Temperate Zone. Large doses of bromides are useful.

EAR COMPLICATIONS OF TROPICAL DISEASES.

Leprosy.

The lobules of the ear are especially liable to be attacked in tubercular leprosy, and are usually left long and thickened when the disease has abated.

Quinine.

The prolonged or considerable use of quinine may cause simple hyperæmia of the labyrinth, and may be associated with middle-ear congestion, as described by Kirchner. The symptoms are usually tinnitus aurium and deafness. It is bilateral, and comes on gradually. The quinine should be stopped, and bromide of ammonium prescribed, and afterwards euquinine, associated with bromides, may be administered.

Arsenic.

A native treatment for ear disease in the Dutch East Indies is by the application of a powder, Warangangpulver, containing some 90 to 96 per cent. of arsenious acid. According to Benjamins, this may lead to destruction of the auricle and obliteration of the external auditory meatus, with sometimes necrosis of the bone, and even fatal hæmorrhage from the internal carotid artery.

Malaria.

Reports of suppurative otitis media being caused by malaria cannot be accepted as proven, but intermittent otalgia, intermittent attacks of deafness, and labyrinthine vertigo may be of malarial origin, especially if relieved by quinine.

DISEASES OF THE NOSE.

Disease of the nose is intimately connected with disease of the ear, and to a less degree with disease of the conjunctiva. The acute catarrhal rhinitis, or common cold, may be induced by prolonged exposure to the sun's rays, as well as to chills, and is in every case an infection, though it is difficult to determine the actual micro-organism causing the disease. The commonest organism is the *Diplococcus catarrhalis*. The tropical affections are, however, described in Chapter XLIX.

REFERENCES.**Eye Diseases.**

- CASTELLANI (1912). Journal of Tropical Medicine.
 DANIELS (1911). Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene, June. London. (Keratitis caused by trypanosomes.)
 DENHAM, E. B. (1912). Census of Ceylon. Colombo.
 FABER AND STARCKE (1908). Nederlandsch Tijdschrift von Genees-Kunde, No. 14, p. 1106. (Optic atrophy in trypanosomes.)
 FEHR (1907). Deutsche Medizinische Wochenschrift, No. 49. Berlin. (Atoxyl and the optic nerve.)
 FUCHS, E. (1911). Textbook of Ophthalmology. Philadelphia. (An English translation of Professor Fuch's book, which is one of the most useful of the larger books on ophthalmology.)
 GREEF, K. (1909). Klinisches, Jahr. xxi, 3, 606. (Trachoma.)
 HARSTON, G. M. (1912). Transactions of the Hong Kong Medical Congress. Hong Kong. (A most excellent paper dealing with a number of tropical eye diseases.)
 IGERSCHEIMER (1909). Münchener Medizinische Wochenschrift, No. 24. (Atoxyl.)
 LANDRIEU (1912). Thèse de Paris, No. 396 (Les Mycoses Oculaires).
 LEBER AND V. PROWAZEK (1911). Archiv für Schiffs- und Tropen-Hygiene. xiii. 409.
 MORAX, V. (1906). Annales d'Oculistique, cxxxvi. 394; (1907) *ibid.*, cxxxvii. 311 (1910); Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique, May. (Ocular manifestations in trypanosomiasis.)
 NATTAN-LARRIER AND MONTHUS (1908). Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique. (Iritis and trypanosomiasis.)
 SERGENT, E. (1909). Annales de l'Institut Pasteur, xxiii. 2 3. (Trachoma in Algeria.)
 SISSON, E. O. (1909). Ophthalmology, January.

- ULBRICK, H. (1910). Bulletin de la Société de Pathologie Exotique, iii. 303-305.
YORKE (1911). Lancet, clxxx.; (1911) Annals of Tropical Medicine and Parasitology, No. 4, p. 585. (Cornea in trypanosomiasis.)

Diseases of the Ear.

- BRAMLEY (1835). Transactions Calcutta Medical Society, vii. 71.
CAMPBELL (1833). Transactions Calcutta Medical Society, vi. 428.
MILLIGAN AND WINGRAVE (1911). Diseases of the Ear. London. (An excellent account of the diseases of the ear and associated diseases of the nose and throat.)
SUTTON, J. B. (1910). Lancet, June 11. London. (Deformities in Masai, etc.)

INDEX

(The figures in heavy type denote the chief references.)

- ABDOMINAL typhus, 1046
 Abortion, 155
 poisons used for, 147, **155-6**
 Ab-oukine (Gaboon), 1170
Abramis brama, 345-7
Abrus precatorius, 159
 Abscess of liver, 112
 entamœbic, 1407
Acalyptus, 222
Acanthia, 637
Acanthobdellida, 576
Acanthocephala, 565.
Acanthocheilonema, 522, **533**, 594
Acanthoma inguinale, 1574
Acanthophis, 220-1
Acanthopterygii, 206
Acanthosis nigrissans, 1639
Acanthosporidæ, 419
Acanthuridæ, 206
Acanthurus luridus, 206-8
Acarina, 182, 190, **577**, 625 ref.
 Acarine dermatosis, 1586
Acaropsis, 613
Acarus ægyptus, 610
 dysentericæ, 615
 folliculorum, 616
 gallinæ, 579
 marginatus, 590
 reduvius, 607
 reflexus, 590
 reticulatus, 603
 ricinus, 607
 tritici, 613
 Accadia, medicine in, 4
 Accidental poisoning, 157
 Acclimatization, 104
 Acclimatizing fever, 1004
Acephalina, 419
Acephalocystis, 509
 Acetabulum, 460
Achorion, species of, 789-92
Achromaticus, 350, **376**
Achromia squamosa, 1497
 acquired, 1608
 Achromie parasite, 1497
 Acids, mineral, 146
Acinetaria, 266
Acis spinosa, 503
Aclerda berlesei, 810, **1547**
 Acne, varieties of, 165, **1631**
Acnea sebacea, 616
Acocanthera (arrow-poison), 162-3
 deflersi, 164
 ouabaio, 163
 schimperi, 163
 venenata, 164
 Acocantherin, 163
Acocculus, 167
 Aconite, **148**, 159
 arrow poison, 167
Aconitum, species of, 148, **167**
 Acquired achromia, 1608
 leucopathia, 1608
 leukasmus, 1608
 piebald skin, 1608
 Acremoniosis, 1539
Acremonium potronii, **842**, 1539
Acrochordinæ, 219
 Acrodermatitis perstans, 1629
 vesiculosa tropica, 1621
Actinocephalidæ, 419
Actinomyces, 813
 Actinomycetine, 757
 Actinomycosis, 814, **1536**
Actinomyxidæ, 434
 Acwins, 6
Acystina, **294**, 302
Acytosporea, 378
Acytosporidia, 378
 Adder, death from, 221, 223
 Addison's disease, **1417**, **1579**
Adelea, 421
 Aden ulcer, 1561
Adenium, 160, 164
 Adenoma sebaceum, 1635
 Adobe tick, 590
Adolia, 197
 Adrenalin in snake-bite, 248
 Adriatic Ry. Co., 902
Æacta, 680

- Ædinæ*, 674, 853
Aeropneusta, 576
 Aerotropism, 392
Ætobatis narinari, 206, 214
 Afghan Jara, 1548
 Africa, races of (map), 70
 African arrow-poisons, 163
 dermal myiasis, 1582
 tick fever, 398, 586, 593, **934**,
 trypanosomiasis, 966, 990 ref.
 (vide Trypanosomiasis)
 Africanische schlafkrankheit, 966
 Afridol blue, 981
 violet, 981
Agama tuberculata, 432
Agamodistomum, 472
 ophthalmobium, 472, 487 ref.
Agamofilaria, 522, 532
Agamomeris, 523, **543**
 Agar, Sabouraud's maltose, 780
Agchylostoma, 9, 13
 caninum, **455-6**, 558
 duodenale, 182, 486, **554**, 978,
 1119, 1292, 1303
 Agchylostomiasis, 36, 108, 110, 112,
 114, 287, 557, 891, 1209, **1303**
Agchylostomidæ, 533-9
Agchylostominæ, other species of,
 554-9
Agelaius phæniceus, 343
 'Agglomeration' of trypanosomes,
 320
 Agglutinins, 227, 230
Aggregatidæ, 419
Aglypha, 218
Agrostemma githago, 174
 Ague, 111, **847**
 Aguivesa, 6
 Ainhum, 20, **1619**
Aipysurus, 222
 Aka mushi disease, 613, **945**
 Akatama, 1457
 Aker lampong (Malacca), 166
 Akkad, medicine in, 4
 Albinism, 1611
 Albinos, 103
 Albumon, Chabrié's, 232
 Alcohol, **106**, 153
 danger of, 83
 in heat-stroke, 129, **132**
 Alcoholic coma, 131
 neuritis, 1450
 Alcoholism, 153
 Alder-fly, 565
Aldrichia, 666
Alectorobius, 595
 capensis, 595
 coniceps, 595
 talaje, 586
 Aleppo boil, 1548
 Alexandrian medicine, 11
Algæ, 756
 Algide pernicious fever, 882
 Alimentary canal, diseases of, 1291
 Alligators, traumatism, 140
Allobosca, 736
 Allotriophagia, 1303
 Alopecia, 1639-40
 Altitude, 39
 Alu-hama (Ceylon), 1500
 Alypin, 1337
 Ama-apaka, 1361
 Amaurosis, 885
 Amaurotic pernicious fever, 884
Amblyoma, 586
 hebræum, 609
 America, medicine in, 6
 relapsing fever of, 930
 American arrow-poisons, 167
 dermal myiasis, 1581
 disease prevention, 1317
 Amerind division of man, 62, 73
 Amitosis, 313
Ammania baccifera, 148
Ammodromus manimbe, 436
 Ammonia in snake-bite, 249
 Amnesia, tropical, 104
Amæba, 308
 febris flava, 377
 rotatoria, 321
Amæbæ, 267-9
 Amæbiasis, 1362
 Amæbic dysentery, 16, 270, **1362**
Amæbina, 266, 267
 Amæboid forms, 325
Amæbosporidium, 368
 polyphagum, 373
 Amôk, 1455
Amomum zingiber, 156
Amorphophallus campanulatus, 166
 Amos tribes, 166
Amphibia, 214-5 ref.
Amphimonadidæ, 284
Amphistomum hominis, 464
 watsoni, 463
Amphitretidæ, 498
 Amulets, 4, 5
 Amyloidosis, 861
Anacardiaceæ, 168
Anacardium occidentale, 154, 157,
 1544
 Anæmia, 110-13, 1416
 Egyptian, 554
 febrile splenic, 958
 infantum a Leishmania, 958
 pernicious, 131
 post-malarial, 868
 profound, 404
 tropical, 554
 Anæmic dropsy, acute, 1226
 Anákhre, 1445
 Anal coshol (Br. Guiana), 704

- Analysis, snake venom, 226, 228
 Analyst, public, 145
Anamirtæ, 148, 167
 Anaphylaxis in blackwater fever, 917
Anaplasma, 350, **376**
Anboyna pox, 1171
 Anchylostomiasis. *Vide* Agchylos-
 tomiasis
Ancistrodon, 223, **226-9**, 431
Ancylostoma americanum, 554, 560
Androctonus funestus, 183
 Andrum (India), 1123
 Anémie des Pays Chauds, 1303
Anemone scutellatus, 180
 Anemones, 179
Anethum graveolens, 155
 Angina vincenti, 402
Angiofibroma contagiosum tropicum,
 1600
Angiokeratoma, 1633-5
Angiomata, 1632
Angiosporea, 419
Angiostomidæ, 518
 Anglo-Indian, diet of, 81
Anguilliformes, 206
Anguillula, 517
 aceti, **517**, 566 ref.
 intestinalis et stercoralis, **519**,
 1301
Anguillulidæ, 517
Anguillulina, 517
Anhalonium lewinii, 154
 Anidrosis, 1605
 Animal food-poisoning, 170
 parasites, 254
 Animals, bites of, 11
 inoculation of, 980
 venomous, 179
Anisolabis annulipes, 503
Anistomata, 596
 Ankylostomiasis. *Vide* Agchylos-
 tomiasis
 Annam ulceration, 1555
Annulata, 570
Anodonta, cygnea, 395
 mutabilis, 395
Anommomeristica, 576
Anopheles, 14, 19, 258, **666**
 albimanus, 528
 annulipes, 665
 bifurcatus, 665, 667, 854
 costalis, 117
 maculipennis, 198, 355, 357, 365,
 404, 529, **650**, 660, 665, 667,
 854
 martini, 665-7
 musivus, 529
 nigripes, 667, 854
 pursati, 664, 667
 vincenti, 665
 other varieties, 667
Anophelinæ, 19, **665-6**
 and *culicinæ*, differences, 661
 malaria-carrying, 853
 prophylaxis, 905
Anopleura, 631
 Ant bites, 1580
 common red house, 640
 venom of, 197
 Antheridium, 760
 Antherozoids, 760
Anthomyia canicularis, 734
 desjardensii, 734
 radicum, 724
Anthomyidæ, 733
 Anthrax fever, 375
Anthropopithecus troglodytes, 387
 Antiarin, 166
Antiaris toxicaria, 166-7
 Anti-hæmolytins, 228, **234**
 Antimony, 146
 and atoxyl treatment, 981
 Antivenene, 217
 Calmette's, 187
 cobra, 184
 intravenous injection of, 248
 Anurádhapura, hospital at, 8
Aphaniptera, 739
 Aphasic pernicious fever, 884
Aphidæ, 635
 Aphrodisiacs, 147, 156
Aphthoides chronica, 1325
Aphthous stomatitis, 1325
Apidæ, 194, 203 ref.
Apiosoma bigeminum, 373
Apis mellifica, 194
Apocynaceæ, **147**, 149, 151, 162-3, 166
Apodes, 206
Aponomma gervaisi, 608, 609
 Apoplexy, 131
 Appendicitis, 108, 456, **1291**, 1301,
 1388
 Appendicostomy, 1371, **1392**
Aptera, 739
 Arabian medicine, 12
Arachnida, **182**, 202 ref., 576
 Arachnolysin, 187-8
Aradidæ, 643
Aranea, 182, **187**, 202 ref., 576
 Archibald's bacillus, 1091
 fever, 1091
Archidæ, 197
 Archoplasm, 259
Arctomys bobæ, 1034
Argas, 589
Argas americanus, **400**, 590, 594
 brumpti, 191, **590**
 canestrinii, 595
 chinche, 590
 erraticus, 595
 mauritanus, 590
 magnini, 594

- Argas miniatus*, 590
 moubata, 593
 papillipes, 595
 parsicus, 404
 persicus, 191, 403, **586**, 588, **590**,
 949
 reflexus, 191, 586, 589, **590**
 sanchezi, 590
 savignyi, 592
 tholozani, 595
 other varieties, 591
Argasidæ, 191, **588**
Argasturicata, 594
Arkyncobdellida, 572
 Arm, elephantiasis of, 1144
 Army and Navy doctors, 22
Aroidæ, 166
Arpagostoma, 580
 Arrack, 153
Arribalzagia, 666
 Arrow-poisons, 161
 African, 163
 Am rican, 167
 Asian, 165
 Australasian, 166
 Arsenic, **146**, 332, 334
 in abortion, 155
 in snake-bite, 249
 sulphide, 159
 Arsenical neuritis, 1450
 Arsenious oxide, 159
 Arseno-phenyl-glycin, 979-80
Arthropoda, **182**, 575, 616 ref.
 Arthropodic dysenteries, 1374
Arum montanum, 168
Arundo donax, 810, 1547
Arvicola arvalis, 292
 arvensis, 293
 amphibius, 293
 natanedzumi, 946
 Ascariasis, 1317
 Ascarides, 181
Ascaris, 9, **544**, 580
 alata, 547
 apri, 551
 canis et martis, 546, **562**
 lumbricoides, 456, 978, 1119,
 1292, 1317
 marginata, 546
 (?) *maritima*, 1293
 texana, 1292
 trichiura, **563**, 1301
 vermicularis, 547
 visceralis et renal, 562
 Asci, **759**, 765
Asclepiadæ, 155, **168**
 Asclepiades, 10
Ascomycetes, 765
 Ascospores, 759
 Ascus fructifications, 759
 Asia, races of, map, 65
 Asian arrow-poisons, 165
 dermal myiasis, 1582
Asilidæ, 698
Asopia farinalis, 503
 Asp, Cleopatra's, 220
 Aspergilli, **802-807**
 Aspergillosis, 1512
Aspergillus barbæ, **805**, 1512
 bronchialis, 803
 bouffardi, **805**, 1529
 flavescens, 803
 flavus, 803
 fumigatus, **802**, 1534
 glaucus, 804
 malignus, 804
 maydis, 805
 nidulans, **806**, 1529
 niger, 806
 nigrescens, 805
 nigricans, 806
 pictor, **805**, 1514, 1517
 repens, 805
 tokelau, 807
Aspidelaps, 220
Aspidobothrii, 461
Aspidocotylea, 461
Asporocystidæ, 421
 Astānga Hrdaya Samhitā, 7
Astigmata, **579**, 614
Astragalinus tristis, 343
Asturinula monogrammia, 307
 Ataxic pernicious fever, 885
Atelosaccharomyces, 770
 Atharvaveda, 6
Athene noctua, **303**, 307, 345
 Athermanous vapour, 31
 Atheroma, 1416
 Atisar, 1361
 Atometry, 51
 Atmosphere, circulation of, 46
 humidity of, 87
 pressure of, 42
 temperature of, 87
 Atoxyl, 21, 899, 937, 967, **980-1**,
 1193
 Atreya, 6
Atriplex, species of, 177
 Atriplicismus, 172, **177**, 178 ref.
 Atropine, 1225
 Attridi assara, 914
Atylotus, species of, 694
Auchmeromyia depressa, 737 ref.
 guteola, 737 ref.
 luleola, 731
Aulastoma, 573
Aurata, 566
 Aussatz, 1147
 Australasian arrow-poisons, 167
 Auto-suggestion, 1458
 Autumnal fever, 1046, 1054
 Ayurveda, 6

Axilla, temperature in, 85

Aztec medicine, 4

Babesia, 19, 190, 350, **368**, 941

allied genera, 368

annulatum, 588

aristotelis, 374. See also *Nuttalia*

bigemina, **373**, 586, 601, 608

bovis, 373

canis, 19, **369**, 586, 588-9, 606, 608

cervi, 374

equi, **375**, 586, 589

gibsoni, 372

hominis, 377

minense, 374

muris, 374

ovis, **373**, 588, 599

parva, 374, 599

pitheci, **373**

references, 415

spreaders of, 586

starcovici, 350, 368

Babesiasis, 351, **375**

canine, 607

Bacelli's sublimate solution, 982

Bacillary dysenteries, 1374

complications of, 1388

diagnosis of, 1388

diet in, 1394

morbid anatomy of, 992

pathology of, 1379

prognosis of, 1390

prophylaxis of, 1394

sequelæ to, 1388

symptomatology of, 1385

treatment of, 1390

Bacillenruhr, 1374

Bacillus acidi lactici, 1380

anthracis, 15

asiaticus, 1091, 1092

asylum dysenteriae, 1380

Barton's, 1203

breslavensis, 1380

ceylonensis, 1093, **1380**

cholerae suis, 1005

cloacæ, 1380

coli, 1093

coli communis, 230, **1001**, 1375,

1380, 1408

coli dysentericus, 1375, **1377**

coli immobilis, 1380

cultural reaction table, 1380

dysenteriae, 1380

El Tor No. 1, 1376

entericus, 1380

enteriditis, 1380

Flexner's, **1375**, 1388

Gärtner's, 172, **1198**

grünthali, 1380

Hamilton Wright's, 1217

Bacillus, Harris's, 1377

hog cholera, 1380

icteroides, 377, 1005, **1380**

infantile diarrhoea, 1380

lactis ærogenes, 1380

lepræ, 1380

mallei, 1093

morgan, No. 1, 1380

neapolitanus, 1380

paracolon, **1048**, 1380

paradysenteriae, 1375-6, 1380, 1388

para-entericus, 1380

para-typhoid, **1047**, 1048, 1380

para-typhosus, 172, **1047**, 1049,

1053, 1198

pestis, 1034

prodigiosus, **1525**, 1632

pseudo-coli, 1380

pseudo-dysentericus, 1377

psittacosis, 1380

pyocyaneus, **1375**, 1408

pyogenes fætidus, 1380

Shiga's, 1375

Shiga-Kruse, 1368

tuberculosis, 457

typhi murinum, 755

typhosus, 230, 264, **1047**, 1380

X, 1005

Backorana tribe, 165

Bacteriaceæ, 756

Bactericide, 1042

Bacteriology, 14

Badger, 342

Bael fruit, 1392

Bagdad boil, 1548

Bailey's patent latrine, 1312

Balanitis, 404

Balano-posthitis, 1636

Balantidic dysentery, 1373

Balantidium, 451

coli, 15, **451**, 1292, 1295, 1373

giganteum, 453

minutum, **452**, 1292, 1295

Baleri (disease), 327, 338

Balfour's infective granule, 426

Balla mal, 1174

Balzer's pseudo-xanthoma, 1632

Bamber-green oil, 905

Bamboo-leaves, juice of, 155

Bambusa, 155

Bananas, 1337

Banti's disease, 1416

Barawa, 1138

Barbadoes leg, 1138

Barbeiro, 985

Barbus fluviatilis, 345, 347

Barcoo, 1469

Barkoo rot, 1469

Barographic curve, 43

Barringtonia acutangula, 167

- Barringtonia speciosa*, 147
Barronsia, 421
 Barton's bacillus, 1203
 Basal granule, 280
 Basidia fructifications, 759
Basidiomycetes, 810
 Basidio-spore, 760
Bassia, 154
 Bat, Italian, 342
 Bath, cold, 1407
Batrachidæ, 207, 210
 Battaks of Sumatra, 166
Bdellolarynx sanguinolentus, 708, **723**
 Beauperthuy treatment, 1167
 Becho, el (Venezuela), 1402
 Bed-bug, 398
 Bee, stings of, 12, 190
 venom of, 194
 Beef-worm, 507
 Beetles, 201
 arrow-poison, 161
Belascaris, 546, 1293, 1317
 Belt, equatorial, 57
 trade-wind, 57
Benedenia, 421
 Bengali, diet of, 81
Bengalia depressa, 733
 Benzine enemata, 1302
 Benzoin, tincture of, 1495
 Benzoyl chloride, 1168
 Berbiers, 1208
 Berlin papyrus, 9
 Beri-beri, 20, 110, 113, 116, 175, 889,
 1208
 acute pernicious form of, 1221
 complications of, 1223
 diagnosis of, 1223
 important features of, 1218
 Miura's rule, 1222
 morbid anatomy of, 1218
 pathology of, 1217
 predisposing causes to, 1217
 prognosis of, 1224
 prophylaxis in, 1226
 references, 1229
 reinfection in, 1223
 relapses in, 1223
 rudimentary form of, 1223
 sequelæ to, 1223
 symptomatology of, 1217
 treatment of, 1224
 typical form of, 1221
 vitamine, 83
 Berne (Brazil), 704
 Berrugas, 1196
Bertramia, 438
Bertramiidæ, 438
 Bess-el-Temür (Arab), 1548
 Beta (Mellung), 1610
 Beta-naphthol, 1311
 Bête-rouge (Martinique), 611
 Betel, 153
Bezzia, 677, 680
 Bhang, 153
 Bharadwaja, 6
 Bhava Prakasa, 7
 Bhela, 6
 Bible medicine, 9
 Bibo (Uganda), 593
 Bier's passive congestion method,
 1571
Bignomiaceæ, 168
 Bihimbo disease, 1210
 Bikh, 148
Bilharzia, 481
 disease, 1421 (*vide* Urinary Schis-
 tosomiasis)
 Bilharziosis, 114, **1421**
 intestinal, 1398
 Biliary fever, 375
 dogs, 369
 Bilio-gastric fever, 1046
 Bilious continued fever, 1046
 fever, 1046
 hæmoglobinuric fever, 913
 remittent fever, **881**, 913, 1004
 typhoid, 925
 Binary fission, **260**, 312
 Binnenkörper, 259
Binucleata, 259, 262, 282-3, **293-4**
 Biological causes of disease, 254
 Biotripsis, 1639
Bironella, 666
 Bish, 148
 Bishop ray, 214
 Biskra boil, 1548
 Bismuth-boric ointment, 1468
 Bite of man, 251
 Bites of animals, 11, **135**
Bitis arietans, 223, 229, **241**
 bite of, 240
 nasicornis, 619
 Black fever, 940
 death, 1028
 pigmentation of nails, 1614
 pitted tick (S. A.), 600
 Blackwater fever, 20, 115, 378, **913**
 attack of, 624
 climate, 924
 complications of, 921
 diagnosis of, 921
 malarial theory of, 914
 morbid anatomy of, 919
 mortality in, 921
 pathology of, 918
 predisposing causes to, 918
 prodromata of, 920
 prognosis of, 921
 prophylaxis in, 924
 quinine theory, 915
 references, 924
 sequelæ to, 921

- Blackwater fever, symptomatology
of, 920
treatment of, 922
varieties of, 921
- Blaps mucronata*, 566
- Blastomycetic dermatitis, 769, **1504**
- Blastomycosis, 768, **1504**
- Blastocystis enterocola*, 291
ocular, 1657
palpebral, 1657
- Blastulidium, 438
- Blepharoblast, **280**, 310
- Blood, condition of, 90
- Blood-sucking flies, collection of, 647
- Bloody flux, 1361
- Blow-fly, 706, **724**
- Blue disease, 940
tick, **376**, 404, 601
- Bluebottle fly, 728
- Boa-constrictor, 432
- Bodo*, 286, 287, **351**
asiaticus, 287
lacertæ, 286
muscæ domesticæ, 348, 351
- Bodonidæ*, 283-4, 286
- Body temperature, effect of heat on,
90
- Boils, 200 ref., **1625**
eastern, 1548 (*vide* Oriental sore)
- Bombus*, species of, 194
- Bombycidæ*, 197
- Bont tick, 609
- Boomerang leg, 1447
- Boöphilus*, 600-1
- Borborus equinus*, **701**, 724
- Boric fomentations in snake-bite, 247
- Bos indicus*, 508, 1334
taurus, 429, 1334
- Bothriocephalus*, 498-9
tropicus, 507
other species of, 498
- Botone d'Oriente, 1548
- Botryomyces ascoformans*, 1470
- Botryomycosis*, 1469
- Botrytis bassiana*, 14
- Boubas, 1171, **1191**
- Boulengerina*, 220
- Bouton d'Alep, 360
d'Orient, 1548
des Andes, 1196
- Bovidæ*, wounds from, 140
- Box boöps*, 346
- Brachyasps curta*, 229
serum for, 245
- Brachycera*, 647, **688**
- Brachypogon*, 680
- Brachyurus calvus*, 389
- Brahma, 6
- Brahmans and medicine, 8
- Brainard's remedy, 250
- Branchiobdellida*, 575
- Branumia jassylensis*, 501
- Braulidæ*, 736
- Brazil's pure *Crotalus horridus* serum,
245
- Breakbone fever, 995
- Breakheart fever, 995
- Brcam, 345, 347
- Breast, elephantiasis of, 1144
- Breda's disease, 1536
- Breeze-flies, 689
- Bright's disease, 112
- Brill's disease, 1094
- British Guiana, disease in, 112
- Broden and Rodhain's method, 980
- Broken-wing fever, 995
- Bromatoxismus, 170
- Bromides in heat-stroke, 132
- Bromidrosis, **1604**, 1631-2
- Bromine in snake-bite, 249
- Bronchial spirochætosis, 1283
references, 1290
- Bronchitis, 109, 112
- Bronchoblastomycosis, 1285
- Brown tick (S.A.), 596
- Bruce's septicæmia, 1018
- Brucia*, species of, 1372
- Brush-buck, 333
- Bubas, 1170
Braziliana, 1556
- Bubo, 5, 10
climatic, 1434
parotid, 1388
- Bucnemia tropica*, 1138
- Bud-fission, 278
- Buena (Burma), 1170
- Bueno de Miranda and Splendore's
Leishmaniasis, 1536
- Bufo reticulatus*, 344
vulgaris, 292
- Bufonin, 214
- Bufotalin, 214
- Bug, 19, **193**
bed-, 18, **637**
Indian, **638**
-bites, 1580
Malay, 642
masked, 640
of Utah, 642
wheel, 640
- Bulbar pernicious fever, 885
- Bullous eruptions, 1628
- Bumble-bee, 194
- Bunches (Cornwall), 1303
- Bungarus*, 217
candidus, 220, 232
bite of, 238
M.L.D., 236
serum for, 245
ceylonicus, 221
bite of, 239
immunity from, 244

- Bungarus fasciatus*, 221, 232, 239
 immunity from, 245
 M.L.D., 236
 immunity from, 248
Bunostominae, 560
 Burghers, 108
Bursarinidae, 451
 Bushmen, S.A., 165
Buthus, 182-6
Buttneria cordata, 1206
 Button scurvy (Ireland), 1171

Cachexie africaine, 1303
Cadicera, 695
Cælopeltis monspessulana, 219
 Calabar bean, 160
 swellings, 539, **1443**
 Calcutta, diurnal variation pressure,
 43
 Calenture (heat-stroke), 21
Caligus curtus, 624
Callionymidae, 207
Callionymus, 212
 lyra, 207-8
Calliphora, species of, 724, 728
Callithrix, 328
Callophis, 220
 Calmette's serum, 247
 Calomel, 172
 in heat-stroke, 132
Calotropis procera, 147, 152, 155, 159
 gigantea, 155, 159
 Cambay sore, 360
Camelidae, wounds from, 139
 Cameroons, cattle disease in, 319
 Cammidge's reaction, 1331
 Camphor, 149
 in heat-stroke, 134
 Canal zone of Central America, 105
Canalis gynæcophorus, 481
 Cancer, 110-13, **1291**
 tropic of, 28
Canidae, wounds from, 139
 Canine babesiasis, 369
Canis aureus, 372
 familiaris, 423, 427
 fulvus, 474
 Canities, 1639
Cannabis sativa, 147, 153, 156
 Cannula, Roger's, 1353
Cantharis vesicatona, 156
 Cantlie's treatment, 1337
Capoeta fratercula, 1280
 Capricorn, tropic of, 28
Capsicum annum, 157
 Capsicums, 157
 Capybara, 334
 Caraate, 1513
Carassius vulgaris, 345
 Caratejo (Columbia), 1513
 Carawalla (snake), 221

 Carceag, 18
Carcharias gangeticus, 141
 Cardinal's bark, 12
 Caribi (British Guiana), 1402
Carica papaya (seeds), 155
Carios vespertilionis, 591
Caris, 589, 591
Carois, 589
 Carpinchós, 335
Carpoascees, 765, **799**
Carpoglyphus, 615
 Carrion's fever, 1201
 Carrot (seeds), 154
 Carter's fever, 939 ref.
Caryophyllus aromaticus, 156
 Cascado (Moluc Island), 1486
 Cashew nuts, 1167
 Cassava, 157
Cassia beareana, 923
 Caste, effect on medicine, 8
 Castellani's absorption test, 1351,
 1377
 method, trypanosome, 979
 vaccine, dysentery, 1394
 Castellani-Low symptom, 979
 Castor-oil plant, 155
 tick, 607
 Cat-flea, 501
 Cat-louse, 501
 Cataract, 1652
 Cataracts, worms in, 533
 Caterpillars, 197
 Cativi, 1512
Catoblepas gnu, 333
 Cattle-poisoning, 159
 Cattle, prevention of ticks in, 587
 Caucasian, division of man, 62
 Caul, superstition of, 4
 Causes of disease, biological, 254
 physical, 123
 Caustics in snake-bite, 249
Celastrus paniculatus (seeds), 155
Cellia, 666, 671
 albimana, 665, **671**, 1126
 argyrotarsis, 660, 665, 671
 other species, 671
 Cellulitis of the spermatic cord,
 1429
 Centipede, 419
 venom, 193
 Centrodese, **260**, 280
 Centrosome, 259, **310**
Cephalina, 419
Cerastes, 217
 cornutus, 223, 225
 immunity from, 244
Ceratolophus, 677, 680
Ceratomyxia, 433
Ceratomyxidae, 433
Ceratophyllus, 739, 746
 acutus, 1034

- Ceratophyllus fasciatus*, 339, 340, **749-50**, 753, 1033
Ceratopogon sensu stricto, 677
Ceratopogoninæ, 418, **676**
Ceratopsyllidæ, 753
Ceratotixodes, 609
Cerbera lactaria, 147
 odallum, 147, 149, 152
 thevetia, 147, **149**, 159
Cercariæ, 155, **470**
Cercocystis, 493
Cercomonadidæ, 283-4
Cercomonas, **284**, 351
 hominis, 275, **284-5**, 291, 1292, 1295, 1373
 intestinalis, 291
 other species, 285
Cercomonata, 275
Cercopithecus, 331, 373, **403**
Cerebellar pernicious fever, 885
Cerebral hæmorrhage, 1450
 meningitis, 1093
 symptoms, pernicious fever, 883
 tumours, 1450
Cerebro-spinal fever, 131
Ceridin, 1626
Cervus, species of, 374
Cervus elaphus, 373
Cesaris-Demel method, 1410
Cesspool fever, 1046
Cestoidaria, 494
Cestodæ, 494
 digeneses, 494
 polyzoa, 494
Cestode dermatoses, 1592
 parasites, 1295
 in man, 495
Cestoidæa, 490, 494
 table of genera, 496
Cetonia, 566
Ceylon anæmia, 1303
 diseases in, 109
 poisonous plants of, 148
 rainfall, map of, 41
 sore mouth, 1325
 superstitions, 3
 Tamil invasion of, 8
Chabrié's albumen, 233
Chæromyia, 733
Chætechelyne vesuviana, **625**, 1293
Chætopelina olivaceæ, 188, 190
Chagasia, 666
Chailletiacæ, 158
Chailletia toxicaria, 158, 168
Chaldeans, medicine of, 4
Chancre du Sahara, 1548
Charaka-Samhita, 6
Charas, 153
Charcot-Leyden crystals, 1307, **1367**, 1408
Charms, 9
Chaulmoogra oil, 1167
Cheiracanthus, 520
Cheirpompholyx, 1607
Chelicera, 183, 188
Chelitis exfoliativa, 1640
Cheloid, 1632
Chemical heat regulation, 84
Chenopodiaceæ, 177
Cheyletidæ, 613
Cheyletus mericourti, 613
Chick-peas, 173
Chicken-pox, **1093**, 1101
 -tick, 590
Chigoe, 744
Child-birth, 111
 superstitions of, 4
Chiliferidæ, 451
Chills, 85
Chilodon, 450
 dentatus, **450**, 1292, 1295
 uncinatus, **450**, 1292, 1295
Chilomastix, 289-90
Chilongatha, 575
Chilopoda, **192**, 203 ref., 624, 1280
Chilopode dermatoses, 1586
Chimpanzee, **387**, 1008
China, disease in, 115
 medicine in, 4
Chinch (S. Amer.), **400**, 595, 637
Chinese medicine, 4
Chionyphe carteri, 1527
Chiracanthum nutrix, 187
Chironomidæ, 676, 687
Chironomii, 676
Chironomus plumosus, 357
Chlamydodontidæ, 450
Chlamydothryx enchelys, 269, 277-8
 stercorea, 267
Chlamydospores, 759
Chlamydotomus beigelii, 835
Chlamydozoa, 442, 444
Chloasma, **1612-13**, 1639
 bronzinum, 1621
Chloroform in heat-stroke, 132
Chloromyxidæ, 433
Chlorops lepræ, 1153
Chlorosis, 1416
Chloroxylon swietenia, 1546
Choanoflagellidæ, 284
Cholera, 11, 15, 113-4, **1343**
 ætiology, 1345
 Asiatic, 1343
 complications of, 1351
 diagnosis, 1351
 morbid anatomy, 1348
 pathology, 1353
 prognosis, 1353
 prophylaxis, 1356
 references, 1359
 sequelæ, 1351
 symptomatology, 1349

- Cholera, treatment, 1353
 varieties of, 1350
 Cholera belts, 106
 Choleraic pernicious fever, 885
 Cholerine, 1350
 Chorea saltatoria, 190
Christya, 666
 Chromatin, 259
 Chromatolysis, 129
 Chromatopsia, 130
 Chromidial fragmentation, 260
 Chromidiosomes, 259
 Chromidrosis, **1605**, 1632
Chromomonadina, 283
 Chronic malaria, 886
 skin irritation, 100
Chrothoptes monunguiculosus, 614
Chrozofora plicata, 148
 Chrysarobin, 1478-9
Chrysomyia, 728, 730, 738
Chrysops dimidiatus, 539
 other species, 694
Chrysozona, 692
Chthonobdella, 574
 Chunam, 153
 Cicadas, 635
 Cilia dysenteries, 1372
Ciliata, 266, 448
Ciliophora, 266
Cimænomonas hominis, 291
Cimex. See *Clinorcoris*
 Cinchona bark, 4
Cinchona officinalis, 13
 Cinchonism, 885
Cinnamomum zeylanicum, 158
 Cinnamon bark, 158
 Circinate creeping disease, 1583
 dysidriiform trichophytosis fram-
 boesia, 1183
 Circulation, atmosphere, tempera-
 ture, and, 89
 in snake-bite, 248
 of atmosphere, 46
 Circulatory organs, diseases of, 1416
 parasites of, 1417
 Circumcision, 1426
 Circumscribed elephantiasis, 1146
 scleroderma, 1500
 Cirrhosis liver, 889, 1404
Cistudo, 430
Citellus beecheyi, **750**, 1034
 macrourus, 751
 Citrine ointment, 1520
 Citronella oil, 983
Cladocælium hepaticum, 465
Cladorchiinæ, 462-3
Cladorchis, 462-3
 watsoni, **463**, 1292, 1295
 Cladosporiosis, 1540
Cladosporium mansonii, 837, **839**, 1502,
 1540
Cladosporium, other species, 837-40
Cladothrix. See also *Nocardia*
 actinomyses, 813
 asteroides, 815
 liquefaciens, 818
 Classification of protozoa, 266
 of races of man, 61
 Clayton apparatus, **755**, 1042
Cleisthanthus collina, 147, 149
Clennys leprosa, 431
 Cleopatra's asp, 220
Cletus varius, 357
Clianthus puniceus, 1618
 Climacteric, 98
 Climate, psychophysical aspects of,
 79
 Climates, mountain, 57
 tropical, 28
 Climatic bubo, 1434
 factors, 31
 fevers, 1003
 Climatology, tropical, 28
 Clinical researches, 20
Clinocoridae, 193, 636
Clinocoris, 637
 boulti, 330
 ciliatus, 640
 lectularius, 330, 398, 529, **637**,
 926, 1051, 1054, 1094-5, 1153
 macrocephalus, 358, 423, 490,
 639
 rotundatus, 358, 361, **639**, 1034
 other species, 637
 Clinocorosis, 1580
 Clonorchiosis, 1414
Clonorchis, 475-6, 488, 1414
 Clothing, 85
 in tropics, 102, 105
 Clouded sky tables, 37
Clupea, species of, 170-1
Cnemidosphora, 419
 Cnidoblasts, 179
 Coast fever, 847
 memory, 104
 Cobb's formula, 524
 pigmentary fever, 1085
Cobitis barbatula, 347
 fossilis, 345
 Cobra venom, 236
 immunity from, **243**, 248
 M.L.D., 236
 Cocaine, **153**, 1337
 in scorpion bite, 187
Coccidia, 440
Coccidiidae, 419
Coccidioides, **441**, 772
Coccidium, **421**, 1005
 hominis, 422
 lacazei, 421
 oviforme, 421
 perforans, 421-2

- Coccidium posades*, 441
 seeberi, 437
Cocculus amazonum, 167
 indicus, 159
 toxiferus, 167
Coccus cacti, 635
 Cochin leg, 1123, **1138**
 sore, 1561
 Cockroach, 640
 Cock's operation, 1424
 Coco (Fiji), 1170
Cœlenterata, 178, 308, **347**
Cœlosporidiidæ, 438
Cœlozoic, 418
Cænogonimus heterophes, 479
Cohnistrepthothrix, 814-5
 Coir fibre, 1314
 Coitus in murrina, 337
 Coleman and Buxton's glycerine ox-
 bile medium, 1073
Coleoptera, **201**, 203 ref., 753, 755
Colitis polyposa, 1385
 Collection of insects, 630
 Colombo, diurnal barographic curve
 at, 43
 variations in, 36
 height of, 42
 pressure tables in, 44-5
 rainfall in, 38, 41
 temperature tables in, 32
 Colorado (Cuba), 611
Colpoda, 451
 cucullus, **451**, 1140, 1292
 Colpo di sole, 126
Colubra, 216
Colubridæ, 218
Colubrinæ, 219
 Colubrine venom, 237
 type of, 218
Columba livia, 300
 Coma, alcoholic, 131
 renal, 131
 Comatose pernicious fever, 883
Combretum grandiflorum, 165
 Comedos, 1630
 Commensalism, 457
 Common continued fever, 1046
Compsomyia, 337
 Comstock silver mines, 125
 Cone-nose, 640
 Congenital achromia, 1605
 leucoderma, 1605
 leukasmus, 1605
 leukopathia, 1605
 malaria, 888
 Congestive, 180
 Congestion of the liver, 1405
 Congo floor maggot, 731
 Conidia, 759
Conipalpi, 597
 Conjunction of planets, 3
 Conjunctivitis, 1645
 æstivalis, 1650
 gonorrhœal, 442
 vernalis, 1650
 Connective tissues, diseases of, 144
 tumours of, 1632
Conorhinus, 17, **641**, 642, 947
 rubrofasciolatus, 359
 sanguisuga, 640
 Contagion, theory of, 12
 Contagium vivum, 14
 Convulsions, 112-13
 infantile, 110
 puerperal, 111
 Coolie itch, 456, **1594**
Copepoda, 623
 Copper (abortion), 155
 salts, 146
 sulphate, 159
 Copperhead snake, 223
 Copra itch, 1588
 Coral snake, 222
 Corals, 179
Cordiceps sinensis, 156
 Corditis, 1430
Cordylobia anthropophaga, 730
Coregonus, 499
Corella austriaca, 219
Corethra, 676
Corethridæ, 676
Coriaria, 154
 Cormollote (British Guiana), 704
 Corn cockle, 174
 Cornea, disease of, 1651
Cornu cutaneum, 1633, **1635**
Corvus corax, 307
Corynanthe yohimbi, 156
Coryzaspasmodica, 1274
 Cos, 10
 Cosmopolitan diseases, 20
 fevers, **1085**, 1089
 skin diseases, 1624
Cotopsylla, 748
Cottidæ, 206
Cottus, 211
 bubalis, 208
 globio, **208**, 347
 scorpius, **206**, 212
Cotylogonimus heterophyes, 479
 Coup de chaleur, 126
 de soleil, 126
 Crane, 343
 Craw-craw, 518, 1593
 Creeping disease, circinate, 1583
 eruption, 1583
Cricetus cricetus, 341
 Cripples, institutions for, 8
Cristispira, 394
Crithidia, 348-50, 355, 365
 campanulata, 357
 cleli, 357

- Crithidia ctenophthalini*, 365
cunninghami, 360
fasciculata, 357
gerridis, 355-6
hystrichopsyllæ, 357, 365
melophagia, 314-15, 357
minuta, 357
pulicis, 357, 365, 423
tabani, 694
 'Critical temperature,' 84
Crocodile, traumatism, 140
 trypanosomes of, 345
Crocodylia, trypanosomes of, 344
Crocodilus cataphoractes, 430
 Crombie's molar ulcer, 1330
 simple continued fever, 1001
Crotalinæ, 223
Crotalus cerastes, 223
 confluentus, 223, 225, 431
 durissus, 223, 225, 227
 serum for, 245
 horridus, 223, 229
 bite of, 241
 scutulatus, 223
Croton tiglium, 148, 152
 Crustacea, 623
 Cryptobia, 346
 Cryptocerata, 366
 Cryptococcus, 770, 771
 farciminosus, 367
 xanthogenes, 377
 other species, 770
 Cryptocystes, 433-4
 Cryptocystis trichodectis, 502
 Cryptomonadinæ, 276
 Cryptostigmata, 578
 Crystallospora, 421
Ctenocephalus agyrtes, 354, 365
 canis, 501, 749-50
 felis, 501, 749-50
 musculi, 750
 serratriceps, 365, 750
Ctenodactylus gondii, 368, 375
Ctenomyces serratus, 772
Ctenopsylla, 748
 Cuban itch, 1104
Cucumis trigonus, 155
Cucurbitaceæ, 155
Culex, 19, **674**
 calopus, 672
 fatigans, 19, 357, 387, 523, 528,
 531, **674**, 996, 998, 1124, 1126
 frater, 672
 hispidosus, 529
 nemorosus, 387
 pipiens, 345, 404, 648, **674**
 pungens, 674, 1151, 1153
 other species, 528, **674**
Culicidæ, **198**, 203 ref., 648
 Theobald's classification, 664
Culicinæ, 345, 671
Culicinæ and anophelinæ, differences,
 661
Culicites, 676
Culicoides, 677
Cultripalpi, 597
 Culture zone, 61
 Cuprein, 899
 Curari, 166-7
 Curdled milk, 1337
 Curin, 167
 Currents, 30
Cuscuta reflexa, 155
 Cutaneous myiasis, 1581
 Cuvierian organs, 181
Cyanea capillata, 180
Cyanophyceæ, 756
Cyclasterella scarlatinialis, 441
 Cycle of Golgi, 379
Cyclophyllidæ, 494, 501
Cyclopteron, 655, 666
Cyclops, 1441
Cyclopterus lumpus, 347
Cyclorrhapha, 648, 699
Cyclospora, 421
 Cyllin and petrol, 1042
Cyniphes, 684
Cynocephalus maimon, 619
Cynomolgus philippinensis, 413, 1174
Cynomyia mortuorum, 707
Cynorhæstea, 579
Cynorhæstes, 607
Cyprini-siluriformes, 206
Cyprinus carpis, 345-6
Cypripedium spectabile, 1545
 Cyprus fever, 1018
 Cysticeroid, 493
 Cysticercosis, 1440
Cysticercus, 493
 acanthotrias, 495, 506
 bovis, 507
 cadjan, 172
 cellulosæ, 495, 506
 fasciolanus, 493
Cystoflagellata, 283
Cystotrypanosoma, 344-5
Cytamæba, 378
Cytoleichus sarcoptoides, 614
 Cytolysins, 227
 Cytooonkon group, 444
Cytoryctes, 405, 438, 440, 444
Cytospermium villorum intestinalium
 canis et felis, 421
Cytosporon, 378
 malariæ avium, 387
 Cytostome, 281
 Dacsha, 6
Dactylophoridæ, 419
 Dadane, 966
 Da-fil, 1123, 1138
 Daffodil, 1547

- Dajaksch, dart-poison, 166
 Dal kesari, 173
 oordh, 173
Dalbergia latifolia, 1546
 Dambul fever (Ceylon), 847
Damonia reevesii, 343, 431
 Dancing mania, 1454
 Daniel's post-hæmoglobinuric fever, 920
 Danysz bacillus, 754
 Darier's disease, 1639
 Darnel, 174
 Dart-poison, Brandwood's, 165
Dasyveltina, 219
Dasyveltis scabra, 219
Dasyphora pratorum, 354
Datura fastuosa, 147-8, 157
 Dau-ool-fil, 156, **1123**, 1138
Daucus carota, (seeds), 155
Davainea, 504
 asiatica, 495, 498, 505, 1292
 madagascariensis, 495, 504, 1292
 Death adder, 221
 fish of Hawaii, 171
 Debility, 109, 112, 115
 Decomposition, post-mortem, 172
 Deficiency disease, 1210
 Delhi boil, 1548
 sore, 360
 Delirious pernicious lever, 884
 Delusions, 1458
Demodex, species of, 616
Demodicidae, 578, 616
 Denderah, temple of, 9
Dendraspis, 220
Dendrocalamus strictus, 150
Dendrocæli, 346
 Dengue, 19, 20, 674, 992
 complications of, 1000
 continued fever, 1000
 diagnosis of, 1000
 evanescent, 1000
 interrupted, 1000
 -like fevers, 1000
 morbid anatomy of, 997
 pathology of, 997
 prognosis of, 1000
 prophylaxis for, 1003
 references, 1003
 saddle-back, 1000
 sequelæ to, 1000
 seven days' fever, 1000
 symptomatology of, 997
 treatment of, 1000
Denisonia, 220
 Dentomerite, 418
Dermacentor, 602
 albicollis, 603
 andersoni, 377, 586-8, **602**, 604, 722, 940
 ferrugineus, 603
 occidentalis, 586-8, **602**, 604, 950
 pordalinus, 603
 reticulatus, 371, 374, 377, 586 603, 941
 venustus, 604, 941
 Dermal leishmaniasis, 1548
 myiasis, 1581
Dermanyssidae, 578
Dermanyssina, 579
Dermanyssus, 423, 579
 avium, 579
 gallinae, 579
 hirudinis, 579
 Dermatitis blastomycotica, 1504
 bullosa plantaris, 1467, 1471 ref.
 chronic ulcerative, 769
 copra itch, 1588
 ditropenotus, 1590
 exfoliativa, 1630
 from Rhus, 168
 herpetiformis, 1629
 nodosa rubra, 1595
 pruriginosa tropica, 1594
 rimosa of the toes, 1466, 1471
 solaris, 1612
 urticaroid, 1590
 venenata, 1541, 1627
Dermatobia, 704, 737
 cyaniventris, 704
 kenia, 706
 noxialis, 704
 Dermotagra, 1257
 Dermatol powder, 1481
 Dermatomycosis, 757
 chronica figurata exfoliativa, 1486
 tropical, 1472
 Dermatophiliasis, 1585
Dermatophilus, 743
 cæcata, 743, 750
 penetrans, **743**, 749, 971, 979
 Dermatoze parasitaire, 1593
 Dermatoses, 1585
 acarine, 1586
 cestode, 1592
 chilopode, 1586
 hexapode, 1577
 nematode, 1591
 Dermatozoiasis, 1577
 Dermite ulcereuse circonscrite, Corre, 1548
 Derrid, 168
Derris elliptica, 165, 168
 root, 168
 uliginosa, 168
 Desert hallucinations, 1458
 Devil-dancing, 4
 Dhanvantari, 7
 Dhobie itch, 1474
 Dhome (India), 177

- Diabetes, 7, 110
 Diagnosis of ancients, 7
Diamphidia simplex, 162
Dianella nemorosa, 168
 Diaphoretic pernicious fever, 882
Diarrhœa, 109-12, 114-15, **1095**
 alba, 979
 choleraic, 1350
 dysenteric, 473, 1388
 epidemic infantile, 1388
 flagellate, 1373
 hill, 1339
 puerperal, 1433
Diathermanous, 31
Diathermasia, 126
Dibothriocephalidæ, 496, 498
Dibothriocephalinæ, 498
Dibothriocephalus cordatus, **495**, 498,
 511, 1292
 latus, 181, 456, 492, **495-6**, 498,
 1292
 parvus, **495-6**, 498, 1292
Dibothrium mansoni, 499
 latus, 498
Dibothrius, 498
Dichapetalaceæ, 168
Dicrocoelium, 480
 lanceatum, 480, 488, 1403
 lanceolatum, 480
Didymophyidæ, 419
Diemenia, Gray, 220
Dienycleitus viridescens, 344
 Diet, 79
 of Anglo-Indian, 81
 of Bengalis, 81
 of Eurasian, 81
 Dietetics, ancient, 8
 Differential characters of malarial
 parasites, 391
Digenæa, 461
 Digestion, effects of atmospheric tem-
 perature on, 87
 Digitalin, in heat-stroke, 132
 Dilution method, 1039
Dimorphus muris, 292
Dinoflagellata, 283
Diocetophymina, 561
Dioscorea hirsuta, 166
Diospyros montana, 148
Diospyrus ebenum, 1546
 Diphtheria, 1093
 Diphtheroid ulcers, 1571
Diphyllidæ, 494
Diphyllbothrium, 498
Diplacanthus, 502
 nanus, 503
Diplodiscinæ, 462
Diplogonoporus, 499
 grandis, **499**, 511, 1292
Diplopoda, 575, 625 ref.
 Diplosome, 259
Diplospora, 421
Diplozoa, 283
Dipsadomorphinæ, 219
Diptera, 198, 201, **645**
Dipylidiinæ, 501
Dipylidium caninum, **502**, 512, 739,
 1292
 cucumerinum, 502
Dirofilaria, 522, 535
 Discovery of Cinchona-bark, 12
 Disease, biological causes of, 254
 from light, 104
 heart-water, 599
 of the cornea, 1651
 of the ear, 1658
 of the eye, 1642, 1644
 of the iris, 1652
 of the nose, 1662
 physical causes of, 123
 Diseases, cosmopolitan, 20
 unknown, 20
 Dispnee tropicale, 1274
Disporea, 433
Disporocystidæ, 421
Dissenterica bacterica, 1374
Distera semperi, 222
Distichodonta, 573
Distoma capense, 481
 cerebrale, 477
 conjunctum, 474
 conus, 474
 crotali, 623
 echinatum, 471
 hæmatobia, 481
 hepaticum, 477
 *hepatis endemicum sive pernicio-
 sum*, 475
 japonicum, 475
 pulmonale, 477
 ringeri, 477
 sinense, 475
 spathulatum, 475-6
 westermanni, 477
Distomatidæ, 283
Distomea, 460
Distomum buski, 472
 caviæ, 465
 crassum, 472
 hepaticum, 465
 hepatis innocuum, 475
 heterophyes, 479
 lanceolatum, 474, 480
 oculi humani, 465, 472
 rathouisi, 472
 sibiricum, 474
 tenuicolle, 474
Distra cyanocincta, 240
 Division of mankind, Amerind, 62, 73
 Caucastic, 62
 Ethiopic, 62, 68
 Mongolic, 62, 71

Division of mankind, Negroid, 62

Dochmiasis, 1303

Dochmius, 111, **554**

anchylostomum, 554

duodenalis, 554, 560

Doença de sono, 966

Dog-bites, 139

Dog-flea, 501

Dog-louse, 501

Dog-tick, common, 600

European, 608

S.A., 606

Doldrums, 47

Dolichandrone falcata, 168

Dolichos filosa, 172

Dolichus catani, 172

Doliocystidæ, 419

Doliophis, 220

Donaldson's separator latrine, 1316

Donedia suffrutescens, 116

Double continued fever, 1087

quartan fever, 853

subtertian fever, 880

tertian fever, 878

Dourine, 17, 319, 335

Dous-el-kourmati (Turk), 1548

Dracontiasis, 542-3, **1441**

Dracunculosis, 1441

Dracunculus, 11, 522, **541**

loa, 536

medinensis, 9, 523, **541**, 1441

oculi, 536

Dravidians, 66

Drepanidium, 422

ranarum, 432

Drepanidotænia lanceolata, 495, **504**,
512

Dressler's case (eimeriasis), 422

Dromedary disease, 336-7, **691**

Dropsy, 110, 113

epidemic, 1208, **1226**

Drosophila ampelophila, **1054**

confusa, 354

Drosophilidæ, 701

Dryophis prasinus, 219

Duba (Arabic), 1343

Dubi (Gold Coast), 1170

Duboisia hopwoodi, 154

Ducks, poisoning of, 174

Dufour, gland of, 194

Dumas (Ceylon), 1183

Dum-dum fever, 17, **357**

Dunbar's agglutinative test, 1351

Dun-fly, 724

Dusting powder, 1480

Dutton's disease, 16, 967

membrane, 529

relapsing fever, 578, 587, **593**

Dutton-Todd's method, 979

Dyaks of Borneo, 166

Dypilidium, 501

Dysenteric diarrhoea, 1388

pernicious fever, 885

Dysenteries, arthropodic, 1374

bacillary, 1374

ciliar, 1372

nemathelminthic, 1374

platyhelminthic, 1374

the, 1361

Dysentery, 7, 11, 16, 109-114, 404,
888, **1361**

acute bacterial, 1385

and flies, 20, 724

bacillus, 15

balantidic, 1373

chronic, 1332

bacterial, 1388

entamæbic, 1362

entero-, 1387

flagellate, 1373

gangrenous, 1387

Laveranic, 1372

Leishmanic, 1372

spirochætic, 1374

Dysidroses, 1605

Dysidrosis exfoliativa, 1608

Dyspepsia, 1291

Ear, aspergillosis of, 1660

disease of, 1658

lipomata, 1590

mucormycosis of, 763

nodules, symmetrical, 1598

Earth temperatures, 36

East African relapsing fever, 400

Coast fever, 374

Eau de Javel, 196

Ebers papyrus, 8, 554, 1147, 1642

Echidin, 226

Echidna, 216

Echidnine, 217

Echidnophaga, 743

gallinacea, 750

rhynchopsylla, 749-50

Echinococcifer echinococcus, 509

Echinococcosis, 1440

Echinococcus, **509**, 513 ref.

cysticus, 510

granulosus, 495, 509

hydatidosus, 510

multilocularis, 495, 509, 510

osteoklaster, 510

Echinodermata, 181, 201 ref.

Echinorhynchidæ, 566

Echinorhyncus gigas, 256, 1121

hominis, 566, 1293

crotali, 623

Echinostoma, 465, 466, 470-1

ilocana, 471

Echis, 216

carinatus, 240, **223**

bite of, 241

- Echis carinatus*, immunity, 245
 Echitoxin, 226
 Echuja (arrow poison), 164
 Echuin, 164
 Eclamptic pernicious fever, 884
 Ecthyra, 1625
 Ectoparasites, 255
 Ecuador, cinchona in, 4
 Eczema, 1629
 marginatum, 1474
 primary, 1478
 verrucosum, 1629
 Edyuo (disease), 1272
 Eia (snake), 223
 Egypt, disease in, 114
 Egyptian Æsculapius, 9
 anæmia, 554
 chlorosis, 554
 medicine, 8
 papyri, 8
 Ehrlich-Hata, 1191
 Eimeria, 421
 cases, Dreissler's, 422
 Gubler's, 422
 Perl's, 422
 Sattler's, 422
 Silcock's, 422
 cuniculi, 422
 hominis, 1295
 Blanchard, 1292
 Rivolta, 421
 stiedæ, 421-2, 1292, 1295, 1404
 Eimeriella, 421
 nova, 421
 Eirmocystis, 419
 Eisowy tribes, 243
 Ekiri (Japan), 1388
 Elachistodontinæ, 219
 Elæodendron glaucum, 148
 Elapinæ, 220, 223, 239
 Elapognathus, 220
 Elaps corallinus, 220, 222, 239
 Elasmobranchii, 206, 214
 Elastorrhæxis, 1632
 El debab (disease), 336
 Electric fans, 143, 905
 Elephant, trypanosomes in, 343
 leg, 1138
 Elephantiasis, 529, 1123, 1138
 arabum, 11, 13, 1138
 arm, 1144
 breast, 1144
 circumscribed, 1145
 glabra, 1129
 græcorum, 11, 1147
 indica, 1138
 leg, 1138
 scalp, 1145
 scrotum, 1143
 treatment, 1138
 tuberosa, 1138
 Elephantiasis verruca, 1129
 vulva, 1144
 Elephantoid fever, 529, 1131
 Elephants, traumatism, 140
 Elisha's treatment, 125
 Elleipsisoma, 349-50, 368
 Embryo, infection of the, 258
 Emerods, 10
 Emetine, 21
 Emmenagogues, reputed, 155
 Emotional excitement, 1458
 Empidæ, 699
 Empyema, 1434
 Emyda granosa, 431
 vittata, 316, 343, 431
 Emys orbicularis, 430
 Enantiothamnosis, 1539
 Enantiothamnus braulii, 840, 1539
 Enchylema, 259
 Encystina, 294
 Endemic boil disease (Scheube), 1548
 degeneration of the bones of the
 foot, 1451
 diarrhœa, 1325
 enlargement of the os calcis, 1447
 fever, 1046
 funiculitis, 1429
 hæmoptysis, 1114
 index, 857
 paralytic vertigo, 1450-1
 peripheral neuritis, 1457
 Endemicity of disease, 116
 Endemische beulenkrankheit, 1548
 Endocarditis, 1416
 Endoconidia, 760
 Endodermphyton, 792
 castellanii, 798, 1486, 1495
 concentricum, 793
 indicum, 796
 Endomyces, 766-7. See also *Monilia*
 Endosome, 259
 Endospores, 759
 Endothrix, 780
 Endotrypanum, 307-8, 342
 Enemata, benzene, 1303
 Enerum vandee (Tamil), 1343
 Engineering works, malaria, 906
 England, mosquitoes in, 854
 Enhydrina, bite of, 240, 243
 M.L.D., 236
 serums for, 245, 248
 species of, 222, 225
 Enhydria, 222
 Enoplidæ, 516
 Entamæba, 269. See also *Löschia*
 africana, 271
 blattæ, 267, 276
 buccalis, 276
 coli, 16, 269-70
 dysentericæ, 271
 histolytica, 16, 271, 273-4

- Entamæba hominis*, 275
 in abscesses, 267
 in animals, 268
minuta, 271, 275
nipponica, 269, 275
phagocytoides, 275
tetragena, 271
tropicalis, 274-5
undulans, 275
williamsi, 269
- Entamæbæ* of dysentery, 117
- Entamæbiasis, 1363
- Entamæbic abscess of the liver, 1407
 dysentery, 270, 1363
- Enteric fever, 21, 1000, 1046
 ætiology, 1050
 agglutination test, 1071
 complications and sequelæ,
 1070
 cuti-reaction, 1073
 definition of, 1047
 diagnosis of, 1071
 of mixed infections, 1076
 differential diagnosis, 1074
 Ehrlich's diazo-reaction,
 1074
 epidemicity, 1054
 history of, 1047
 incubation period, 1062
 intestinal carriers, 1050
 morbid anatomy, 1059
 ophthalmal-diagnosis, 1073
 pathology, 1057
 predisposing causes, 1055
 prognosis, 1076
 prophylaxis, 1082
 references, 1083
 relapse, 1071
 sequelæ, 1070
 Silvestrini's test, 1073
 spleen puncture, 1074
 symptomatology, 1062
 synonyms, 1046
 treatment during attack,
 1078
 of convalescence, 1082
 of special symptoms,
 1080
 of the acute carrier, 1082
 urinary carriers, 1053
 varieties, 1070
 Vincent's spleno-reaction,
 1074
 Widal's reaction, 1071
- Enteric-like septicæmias, 1091
- Entero-dysentery, 1387
- Enterotomy, 1401
- Entozoa, 254, 487 ref.
- Epatite suppurativa*, 1407
- Epectinata*, 577
- Epeira diadema*, 187, 190
- Ephoboscida*, 735
- Epidemic dropsy, 1226
- gangrenous rectitis, 1401
 remittent fever, 925
- Epidemicity, 119
- Epidemiology, modern, 12
- Epidermolysis bullosa, 1628
- Epidermophyton*, 787, 1486
cruris, 788, 1474
gallinæ, 792
inguinalis, 788, 1474
perneti, 788, 1474-5
repens, 789
rubrum, 180, **789**, 1474-5
simii, 789
- Epididymitis, 1426
- Epilepsy, 131
- Epimerite, 418
- Epimys musculus*, 293, 341, 503, 748
norvegicus, 427, 562, 748, 752-5,
 1031
rattus, 293, 339, 423, 562, 750,
 752-3, 1031-3
- Epithelial moles, 1633
 tumours, 1633
- Epithelioma of penis, 1426
- Epitheliosis desquamativa, 1650
- Epochs of medicine, 8
- Eproboscida*, 735
- Epuvi*, 197
- Equatorial belt, 57
- Ergotism, 172, 175
- Erinaceus æthiopicus*, 619
- Eriophyidæ*, 578
- Erukam (Tamil), 155
- Erysipelas, 1093, 1626
- Erythema, 1626
 other species, 1626
 solar, 100, 1613, 1626
 symmetrical, palmar, 1621
- Erythemata, the, 1626
- Erythrasma, 1478, **1503**
- Erythrokatalysis, 918
- Erythrolamprus æsculapius*, 344
- Erythromelalgia, 178
 tropica, 1458
- Erythrophloem*, 164
guineense, 165
judiciale, 160, 164
- Eryx conicus*, 432
- Eschatocephalidæ*, 597
- Eschatocephalus*, 608
- Esox lucius*, 499
- Esplenomegalia, tropical, 963
- Espundia, 1556
- Essenes, 10
- Etheogenesis, 264, 381
- Ether in heat syncope, 134
 hypodermic, 149
- Ethiopic man, division of, 62, 68
- Euarachnida*, 576

- Euarthropoda*, 575
Eucaïne, 1337
 in scorpion bite, 187
Eucalyptol, 1311
Eucalyptus globulus, 949
 oil, 949, 1311
Euflagellata, 283-4, 289
Euglenoidina, 283
Eugregarinida, 419
Euphorbia, 165
 group, 1544
 pilulifera, 354
 tirucalli, 148, 167
 other species, 165
Euphorbiaceæ, 147, 149, 157-8, 162
Eupopidæ, 613
Eupopoidea, 578, 611, 613
Euquinine, 891
Eurasians, 108
 diet of, 81
Eurhipicaphalus appendiculatus, 375,
 586, 589, **598**, 600
 bilenus, 599
 bursa, 373, **599**, 729
 decoloratus, 376
 evertsi, 586, 600
 sanguineus, 345, 371, 423, 429,
 586, 597, **600**
 simus, 376, **600**
Europe, dog-tick, 608
 relapsing fever, 925
European dermal myiasis, 1581
Eurotium, species of, 803-6
Euscorpius europæus, 182-5
Euspora, 419
Eustrongylidæ, 561
Eustrongylus visceralis, 562
Evil eye, the, 3
Evolution of foods, 80
 of man, 59
Exanthemata, the, 1101, 1627
Exanthesis athrosta, 995
Excæcaria aggalocha, 148
Exorcism in snake-bite, 249
Exospores, 759
External auditory meatus, animal
 parasites in, 1660
 fungi in, 1660
Eye, animal parasites in, 1665
 complications of tropical dis-
 eases, 1652
 diseases of, 1642, 1644
 effect of sunlight on, 1652
 fungi in, 1656
Factors, climatic, 31
Fadditite (Madagascar), 1619
Fagara flava, 1546
Faget's sign, 1011
Fagopyrism, 173
Fanapepea, 289-90
Fannia, 734, 738 ref.
 species of, **734**
Fasciola, 465
 angusta, 470
 gigantea, 470
 gigantica, 470, 487
 hepatica, **465**, 483, 487
 humana, 465
 lanceolata, 480
Fascioletta. See *Echinostoma*
Fasciolidæ, 465
Fasciolopsis, 465, 472
 buski, **472**-3, 487, 1292, 1295,
 1374, 1404
 fulleborni, **473**, 487, 1292, 1295
 rathousi, 1295
Favus, 757, 791
Febbre emoglobinare, 913
 ricorrente, 926
Febricula, 992
Febris endemica cum roseola, 995
 flava, 1004
 recurrens, 925
 sudoralis, 1018
 undulans, 1018
Felidæ, wounds from, 136
Felis domestica, 423
 leo, 619
Feltinella, 666
Fer-de-lance (snake), 223
Ferment, antifebrin, 235
 fibrin, 235
 proteolytic, 235
Fermentation, 15
Festucaria lentis, 481
Fetish man, 3, 146
Fever, acclimatizing, 1004
 African tick, 398, 586, 593
 algide pernicious, 882
 anthrax, 375
 Antilles, of the, 1086
 Archibald's, 1091
 autumnal or fall, 1046, 1054
 Bacillus asiaticus, 1092
 biliary, 375
 bilious, 1046
 continued, 1046
 remittent, 881, **1004**
 bilo-gastric, 1046
 black-vomit, 1086
 blackwater, 20, 115, 378, **913**
 Carrion's, 1201
 cerebro-spinal, 131
 climatic, 847, 1003
 coast, 599
 South African, 598, 600, 847
 Cobb's pigmentary, 1085
 Crombie's simple continued, 1001
 Cyprus, 1018
 Dambul, 847
 dengue, 19, 445, 992, **995**
 106

- Fever, dengue-like, 1003
 double continued, 1087
 quartan, 875
 subtertian, 880
 tertian, 877
 dum-dum, 17, 357
 Dutton's relapsing, 578, 586, 593
 East Coast, 374
 elephantoid, 529, 1131
 endemic, 1046
 enteric, 1004
 Gambia, 16
 filarial, 1131
 Forrest's, 1086
 gastric, 1046
 remittent, 1019
 Gibraltar, 1018
 giraffe, 996
 glandular, 114
 hæmoglobinuric, 373, 378, **913**
 hæmorrhagic pernicious, 882
 high intermittent non-malarial,
 1089
 hill, 847
 hyperpyrexial, 1087
 icteric, 933
 im-pyeng, 1090
 inflammatory, 1004
 intermittent, 10, 96, 847
 irregular, 436, 441
 low, 1046
 sub-continuous tertian, 878
 Japanese river, 613
 jungle, 847
 Kurunegala, 847
 leptotic, 1157
 little, 1046
 low, 1046
 intermittent non-malarial,
 1088
 macular fever of Tunisia, 1097
 malaria, 847
 Malta, 1018-19
 marsh, 847
 Massowah, 1086
 Mediterranean, 114, **1018**
 remittent, 1019
 mosquito and, 8
 Mossman, 1089
 mountain, 847
 muma, 1444
 Nasha, 1090
 Neapolitan, 1018
 nervous, 1046
 night-soil, 1046
 Obermeyer's relapsing, 637
 Oroya, 1201
 pappataci, 446, 683, **992**
 papular, 1111
 paratyphoid, 1093
 para-undulant, 1021
 Fever, peritonetic pernicious, 885
 pernicious scarlatiniform, 883
 subtertian, 881
 Pfeiffer, glandular, 1093
 phlebotomus, 992
 pigmentary, 1613
 prison, 1093
 pseudo-dengue fever of Cochinchina, 1003
 psittacosis, 1098
 pythogenic, 1046
 quartan, 10, 873
 rarer forms of, 876
 quotidian, 10
 Rangoon, local, 1086
 rat-bite, 1099
 Red Sea, 1086
 redwater, 601
 relapsing, 10, 114, 399, 400.
 See also Relapsing fever
 European, 399, **925**
 remittent, 111, 880, 847, 1047
 Robles, 1085
 Rocky Mountain, 378, 587, 602,
 604, **940**, 1095, 1200
 Roman, 847
 sand-fly, 992
 scarlet, 1101
 seven days', 995, **1001**
 Sierra, 847
 simple, 111-12
 quartan, 873
 subtertian, 879
 tertian, 876
 slow, 1046
 spotted, 377, 1093
 subtertian, 879
 summer, 992
 tertian, 10, **876**
 irregular, 878
 malarial, 11, 383
 simple, 876
 Texas, 373, 601
 thermic, 124-6
 three days', 398, 681, **992**, 996
 tick, 398, 934
 Tientsin, 1091
 triple quartan, 875
 trypanosome, 16
 tsutsugamushi, 377
 typhoid, **1046**, 1089, 1388
 typhus, 446
 undefined, 112-14
 undulant, 1018
 modes of infection, 1021
 urticarial, 1086
 van der Scheer's, 1090
 vesicular, 1110
 Whitmore's, 1093
 yellow, 19, 20, 445, **1004**
 Fevers, cosmopolitan, **1085**, 1089

- Fevers, quartan, 873
 unclassified, 1085
 Fibrin ferment, 235
 Fibroid folliculitis of Montoya, 1517
 Fibrolysin injections, 1141
 Fibroma, 1632
 Fiebre amarilla, 1004
 de la oroya, 1196
 Fièvre à rechute, 925
 bilieuse grave, 913
 jaune, 913
 palustre, 847
 rouge, 995
Filaria, 19, 455, **522**, 978
 ethiopica, 541
 agamofilaria, 532
 apapillocephala, 532
 bancrofti, 13, **522**, 529, 535, 539,
 597, 1123-4
 communis, 523
 cystica, 522
 demarquayi, 522, **529**
 dermatemica, 523
 diurna, 536
 dracunculus, 541
 equina, 532
 fictitia, 523
 gigas, 522
 hominis, 522
 bronchiolus, 539
 oris, 522
 inermis, 532
 junceae, 529
 kilimaræ, 523
 krankheit, 1123
 martis, 521-2
 medinensis, 624, 1441
 microfilaria, 530
 niellyi, 522
 nocturna, 523
 ozzardi, 529-30, 533
 papillosa, 539
 peritoniei hominis, 532
 perstans, 529, **533**, 594
 philippinensis, 1125
 piscium, 523
 restiformis, 523, **543**
 romanorum orientalis, 523
 sanguinis hominis, 523
 ægyptica, 523
 major, 536
 minor, 533
 oris, 524
 perstans, 529, **533**
 hominum, 523
 nocturna, 523
 species (?) Cholodkowsky, 523
 (?) Prout, 523
 subconjunctivalis, 536
 taniguchi, 522, 529
 wucheri, 523
Filaria zebra, 522
Filariadea, 521
 Filarial abscesses, 1134
 chylous extravasations, 1137
 disease, 1123
 fever, 1131
 lymph and chylous extravasa-
 tions, 1136
 lymphangitis, 1131
 phlebeetasis, 1135
 Filariasis, 13, 529, 627, **1123**
 ætiology of, 1126
 blood in, 1129
 climatology of, 1125
 history of, 1123
 morbid anatomy of, 1129
 rarer affections, 1145
 spreaders of, 666
Filaridæ, 521
Filaridea, 521
 Filarides, 521
 Filariose, 1123
 File fish, 171
Fileraria, 522
 Filterable virus, def., 444
 Finsen light treatment, 1168
 Fish, mosquito-eating, 663
 trypanosomes of, 344
 venomous, 204
 Fishing, poisons used in, 167
 Fission, binary, 261
 Five days' fever, 925
 Flagellar vacuole, 359
Flagellata, 283
 Flagellate diarrhoea, 1373
 dysentery, 1373-4
 Flagellosis, 354
 Flame cells, 458
 Flea-bites, 1580
 Fleas, 201 ref., **739**
 in plague, 1030
 rat, 19, 752
 Fleckfieber, 1093
 Flies, 687
 collection of, 631, 647. See also
 Fly
 Flints, parasite, 622
 Flood fever, 945
Florideæ, 756
 Flusso sanguigno, 1361
 Fly, bacilli-carrying, 1379
 blow-, 706, 725
 blue-bottle, 728
 breeze, 689
 dun, 724
 fruit, 724
 gad-, 689
 horse, 689
 house, 724
 mangrove, 689, 694
 motuca, 691

- Fly, ngumba, 706
 root, 724
 serut, 689
 stable, 711
 tsetse, 714
 typhoid-carrying, 19
 Foetal monstrosities, 1426
 Folliculitis decalvans, 1640
 Food, effect on man, 79
 evolution of, 80
 in heat-stroke, 132
 of the tropics, 80
 poisoning, animal, 170
 vegetal, 172
 poisonous, 170
 post-mortem changes, 172
 Foot-binding, 142
 Foot-tetter, 1467
Foraminifera, 267
 Fordyce's disease, 1640
 Forest yaws, 1550
 Formation of tissues, 79
 Formic acid, 197
Formiciasis, 1580
Formicidæ, 197, 203 ref.
Foxia. See *Cladosporium*
 Fra-fra (arrow-poison), 161, 163
Fragilitas crinium, 1639
Frambæsia tropica, 20, 21, 411, **1170**,
 1536
 ætiology of, 1172
 blood in, 1187
 boubas, 1191
 communicability of, 1188
 definition of, 1170
 diagnosis of, 1189
 eruptions in, 1183
 eyes in, 1187
 genito-urinary system in,
 1187
 geographical distribution of,
 1172
 granulomatous stage, 1178
 hair, lesions of, 1184
 history of, 1170
 hyperidrosis, 1186
 immunity from, 413-14
 inoculation experiments,
 412, 1173
 late stage, 1188
 locomotor system in, 1186
 lymphatic glands in, 1184
 nervous system, 1186
 pathology of, 1175
 pian, 1191
 primary stage of, 1176
 prognosis of, 1190
 prophylaxis for, 1193
 references, 1195
 respiratory system in, 1186
 secondary stage of, 1178
Frambæsia tropica, symptomatology
 of, 1176
 synonyms of, 1170
 tertiary stage of, 1188
 treatment of, 1193
 treponema, 1172
 yaws, 1170
 Framosi (Calabar), 1170
 Freckles, 103
 Frieira, 1406
 Frieir disease, 810
 Frogs, trypanosomes of, 344
 Frontier sore, 360
 Fruit-fly, 724, 1054
 Fuguismus, **171**, 178
Funambulus palmarum, 342
 pennati, 423, 430
Fundus oculi, 1652
 Fungi, 756-7
 budding, 765
 cultivation of, **758**, 1516
 imperfecti, 812
 Fungus-cellulose, 757
 disease of India, 1447
 Funiculitis, endemic, 1429
 Furma, 220
Furunculus orientalis, 1548
Fusaria mystax, 547
 vermicularis, 547
 Gad-flies, 689
 Gall-bladder, disease of, 1404
 Gall-sickness, 17, 339
 Galle leg, 1138
 Gallenfieber, 913
 Gallinippers, 648
Gallus ferrugineus, 307
 Galziekté, 17, 339
Gamasidæ, 580
Gamasoidea, 578
 Gambia fever, 16, 17, **967**
 horse-sickness, 319
Gambusea molliensia, 663
 Gametes, 293
 Gametocytes, 263
Gammarus pulex, 1293
Gamocystis, 419
 Gangosa, 1275
 Ganja, 153
 Garib-guez, 590, **949**
 Gastric fever, 1046
 remittent fever, 1018, 1019
 ulcer, 1291
 (fox), 404
Gastrodiscus, 462, **464**
 hominis, **464**, 487, 1292
 Gastro-enteritis, 992
Gastrolobium, 159
Gastrophilus, **702**-1583
 equi, 704
Gastrothylax, 462

- Gattoo (African West Coast), 1170
Gavialis gangeticus, 430
 Gecko, 389
 Gelbfieber, 1004
 Gemmation, 261
 Generative organs, disease of, 1426
 effects of heat on, 97
Geobdella, 574
 Geophagia, 1303
Geophilus carpophagus, 624, 1280
 cephalicus, 624, 1280
 electricus, 624, 1280, 1293
 longicornis, 192
 similis, 624, 1280
Gerbilis pyramidis, 186
Gerbillus indicus, 423, 429, 632
 Gerhardt's urobilin icterus, 886
 Gerlier's disease, 1450
 German measles, 1093
Gerris fossarum, 355
 paludum, 357
 Ghibli (wind), 50
 Ghootloo Mahdee, 1447
 Gibraltar fever, 1018
Gigantorhynchus gigas, **566**, 1293
 Gila monster, 251
 Giraffe fever, 996
Girardinia, 1545
Girardinus formosus, 663
 pæciloides, 663
 versicolor, 653
 Gland-holder, Balfour's, 979
 Gland-juice, examination of, 1436
 Glandular disease of Barbadoes, 1138
 fever, 108, 114
 Glass, powdered, 146
Glaucidium noctuæ, 295, 303-4
 Glaucoma, 1652
Glenospora, 835-6
Globidium, 349-50, 368
Globius minutus, 368
Gloriosa superba, 117, 147, 150, 152, 156
Glossina, 714, 737
 austeni, 721
 bionomics, 719
 caliginea, 721
 classification of, 721
 fusca, 333, 721
 internal anatomy of, 718
 life-history of, 719
 longipalpis, 336, 339, 714, 721
 longipennis, 721
 morphology of, 715
 morsitans, 17, 315, 317, 326, 332,
 333, 336, 719, 721, 966
 pallicera, 721
 pallidipes, 333, 721
 palpalis, 17, 315-16-17, 320, 325,
 336, 338-9, 345, 721, 966-7
 tachinoides, 336, 339, 720
Glossinæ, 708
Glossinella schillingsi, 713
Glossiphonia, 316, 572
Glossiphoniidæ, 572
Glugea, 434
 anomala, 434
 Glycerine ox-bile medium, Coleman
 and Buxton, 1073
Glyciphagus domesticus, 615
 prunorum, 614
Glyphodon, 220
 Gmelin's reaction, 919
Gnathobdellidæ, 572
Gnathostoma, 520
 robustum, 520
 siamense, 520, 1428
 spinigerum, 520
Gnathostomidæ, 520
 Gnat-proof rooms, 904
 Goa powder, 1478
 Goat's milk, 1018
 Goats, trypanosomes in, 343
 Goat-suckers, 343
 Gobiæ, 331, 337
Gobio fluviatilis, 345
 Goddess Pattini, 4
 Godfrey and Eyres' tubercular dis-
 ease, 1447
 Godownik boil (Caucasus), 1548
 Gogo (Marshall Islands), 1486
 Goitre, 1417
 exophthalmic, 1417
 Golgi, cycle of, 379
 Gomera (Ceylon), 1500
 Gondwanaland, 59
 Gonidia, 760
Goniopsylla, 748
 Gonoblenorrhœa, 443
 Gonorrhœa, 1426
 Gora harik, 177
 Gordiaceæ, 564
Gordius aquaticus, 523, 565, 1293
 chiliensis, 565, 1293
 equinus, 539
 medinensis, 541
 pulmonalis apri, 541
 Goundou, 21, **1444**
 Gouni (India), 243
 Græco-Roman medicine, 11
 Gram itch, 1590
 Granuloma annulare, 1632
 endemicum, 1548
 inguinale, 402, **1571-3**
 pyogenicum, 1469
 venereum, 1571
 Granulosis rubra nasi, 1632
Graphium penicillioïdes, 836
 Grass sickness (Australia), 403
 Grecian medicine, 8, 10
 Green vision, 175
 Greenwich, diurnal variation, pres-
 sure, 43

- Gregarina*, 419
Gregarinida, 417
Gregarinidæ, 419
Gregarinosus pulmonum, 477
 Greig-Grey's method, 979
 Grocco's paravertebral triangle, 1410
 Grocers' itch, 614
Gromiidæ, 277
 Ground-itch, 556
 Grouse-fly, 302, 306
 Growth, effect of heat on, 98
 Guanine, 596
Guatteria veneficium, 167
 Gubler's case (*eimeria*), 422
 Guerib-guez, 949
 Guinea-worm, 115, 541, 1441, 1534
 ref.
 Gune (Gilbert Islands), 9, 1486
 Gurjon oil, 1167
Gurleya, 434
 Gusano (New Granada), 704
Gymnamæbidæ, 266, 268
Gymnoasceæ, **766**, 772
Gymnocerata, 636
Gymnosporea, 419
Gymnosporidia, 378
Gymnostomata, 450
 Gynæcophoric canal, 481
Gynæcophorus, 481

 Habit poisons, 147, 153
Hadrus lepidotus, 691
 Haeckel's monera, 266
Hæmadipsa, 574
 ceylonica, 570, **572**
 fallax, 574
 japonica, 574
 javanica, 574
 morsitans, 574
 tallagalla, 574
 umbata, 574
 vagans, 574
 zeylanica, 574
Hæmadipsinæ, 574
Hæmalastor, 574
Hæmamæba, 302
 immaculata, 389, 853
 laverani, 389
 var. *quartana*, 385
 malaria, 385, 389
 Laveran, 389
 var. *magna*, 383, 385
 var. *quartana*, 385
 var. *tertianæ*, 383
 præcox, 389, **853**
 relicta, 387
 vivax, 383
 ziemannii, 303
Hæmamæbidæ, 378
Hæmanthus toxicaria, 165
Hæmaphysalis, 606

Hæmaphysalis concinna, 606
 flavii, 606
 leachi, 371, **606**
 mamorata, 603
 punctata, 581, **606**
Hæmatobia, 708, 722
Hæmatobosca, 708, 722
Hæmatocele, 1426
Hæmatochyluria, 1124, 1137
Hæmatococcus, 19, 368, 373
 ovis, 373
Hæmatomonas, 308
 evansi, 331
Hæmatophyllum, 378
 malariae, 378
Hæmatopinidæ, 634
Hæmatopinus, 635
 stephensi, 423, 429, **632**
 ventricosus, 342
 vituli, 540
Hæmatopota, 691-2
 guineensis, 694
 italica, 354, 691
 obscura, 694
 pluvialis, 691
 pulchrithorax, 694
 strigipennis, 693
Hæmatozoon falciparum, 389
Hæmatustoridæ, 597
Hæmentaria ghiilarii, 572
 officinalis, 572
Hæmochus, species of, 552
Hæmocystidium, 389
Hæmocytzoa, 293
Hæmoflagellata, 258, 265, **282-3**,
 293
Hæmoglobin, **103**, 910
Hæmoglobinuria, 372, 893, **910**
 malarial, 910
 quinine, 893, **911**
 toxic, 910
 tropical, 910
Hæmoglobinuric fever, 378, **910**
 malarial, 913
Hæmogregarina bagensis, **423**, 431
 balfouri, 430
 billeti, 431
 bovis, 429
 canis, 423, **427**, 600
 cantliei, 432
 crocodilorum, 430
 crotali, 431
 felis, 430
 funambuli, 430
 gerbilli, **429**, 434, 631
 hankini, 430
 jaculi, 423, 434
 lacertarum, 431
 laverani, 431
 leptodactyli, 432
 masoni, 431

- Hæmogregarina mauretania*, 431
mesnili, 431
minima, 423, 432
mirabilis, 431
mocassini, 431
muris, 424, 427
najæ, 431
nicoriæ, 431
pococki, 431
pythonis, 431
ranarum, 432
rara, 431
rarefaciens, 426, 432
ratti, 430
refringens, 431
schaudinni, 432
seligmanni, 427, 431
shattocki, 431
simondi, 432
splendens, 432
stepanovi, 423, 430
stepanoviani, 431
terzii, 432
thomsoni, 432
vittatæ, 424, 431
zamenis, 431
Hæmogregarines, 265, 302
Hæmogregarinida, 422
Hæmolysins, 195
Hæmolysis, 912
Hæmomenas præcox, 389
Hæmophysalis leachi, 588
marmorata, 603
rosea, 601
Hæmopis, 573
lacustre, 573
sanguisuga, 573
Schmarda, 574
Hæmoproteidæ, 282-3, 294
Hæmoproteus, 294
columbæ, 294, 300
mansonii, 295, 302
noctuæ, 258, **282**, 283, 294-5
302, 309
Hæmoproteus, 258, 292, 293
Hæmorrhagic febrile gastro-enteritis
of children, 1112
malarial fever, 913
pancreatitis, 780
pernicious fever, 883
Hæmorrhagins, 227, 233
Hæmosiderin, 861, 864
Hæmosporea, 422
Hæmosporidia, 258, 265, 282-3, 293
422
Hæmosporidium, 378
sedecimanæ, 389
tertianum, 383
undecimanæ, 389
Hæmozoin (Sambon), 262, **379**,
864
Haffkine's plague prophylactic, 1043
vaccine, 1044
Hair, chopped, 159
diseases of the, 1639
Haldane and Lorraine Smith's
method, 1307
Hallucinations, desert, 1458
Halteridium, **282**, 294, 298
Halysis lanceolata, 504
solum, 506
Hamadryad, 220
Hamburg School, 20
Hamites, 63
Hamster, 341
Hamularia, 522, **539**
equi, 539
lymphatica, 539
Handley's lymphangioplasty, 1143
Hapale pencillata, 339
Haplosporidia, 438
Haplosporidium, 438
Har boul (Arab), 1421
Harita Samhita, 554
Harmattan, 50
Harpulia arborea, 168
Harvest-bug, 611
-mite, 611
-mouse, 341
Haschisch, 153
Hatty-ka-Pung, 1447
Head-gear, 105
Hearst papyrus, 8, 9
Heart-block, 1416
Heart, tropical, 1417
Heart-water, 599, 610
Heat exhaustion, 126, 133
production of, 83
prophylaxis of, 105
regulation of, 83
chemical, 84
physical, 84
-stroke, 21, 79, 108, **124-5-6**
historical account of, 126
syncope, 124, 126, **133**
Hectopsyllidæ, 743
Helcosoma, 357
tropicum, 18, **360**
Heliconia brasiliensis, 663
Heliopolis, 9
Heliozoa, 267
Helmets, 105
Helminthiasis, 456
Helminthology, 13
Helminthoma elastica, 1136
Helobdella algira, 322, 344
Heloderma horridum, 250
suspectum, 251
Helodermatidæ, 250
Heltu (worm), **9**, 554
Hemibungarus, 220
Hemiclepsis, 346, 572

- Hemiclepsis marginata*, 316, 347
Hemidactylus leschenaulti, **344**, 389
triedri pleschenaulti, 344
Hemiplegic pernicious fever, 884
Hemiptera, 193, **635**, 644
Hemispora stellata, 840, 1539
Hemisorosis, 1539
Henoch's purpura, 1626
Henpuye, 1445
Hepatic abscess, 1407 (*vide* Entæ-
mæbic Abscess)
bilharziosis, 1398
phlebotomy, 1412
Hepatitis, **1368**, 1406
Hepatooon perniciosum, 423, 427
Heracleum giganteum, 1544
lanatum, 1544
Hermasson minutus, 684
Hermes Trismegistus, 9
Hernia, 1291
Herpes, 1629
de Manson (Roux), 1486
desquamans (Turner), 1486
farinosus (Ritter), 1486
progenitalis, 1629
zoster, 1629
Herpestes ichneumon, 243, **375**
Herpetomonas, 308, 341, 349-52, 354
ctenophthalmi, 365
lewisi, 339, 353
muscæ-domesticæ, 264, 294, 349,
351-3
Rogers, 357
subulata, **354**, 691
other species, 354, 365
Herpctomonidæ, 282, 294, **348**
Herpobdellidæ, 572
Heterocotylea, 461
Heterokaryota, 259, **266**
Heteromastigote, 280, 308
Heterometrus maurus, 183, **185-6**
Heteromita, 289, 290
Heteronychia dolorosa, 674
Heterophyes, **478**
heterophyes, 479, 488, 1292
Heteroptera, 635
Heteropus ventricosus, 613
Heterotricha, 448, 451
Hexamitus, 292
duodenalis, 292
intestinalis, 292
muris, 292
vulgaris, 292
Hexapoda **193**, 627
Hexapode dermatoses, 1577
Hhab-el-Seneh (Arab), 1548
Hiaza (Hind.), 1343
Hibiscus, 197
High air temperatures, 134
intermittent non-malarial fever,
1089
Hill diarrhœa, 1332, 1339
ætiology of, 1339
definition of, 1339
diagnosis of, 1341
history of, 1339
mica theory of, 1339
pathology of, 1339
prognosis of, 1341
prophylaxis for, 1341
references, 1342
sequelæ to, 1341
symptomatology of, 1339
treatment of, 1341
Hill fever, 847
Himantarium gervaisi, 625, 1293
Hinchazon de los negros y chinos,
1208
Hindus, 64
Hippelates, 700, 1648
Hippobosca, 339, **736**
camelina, 736
equina, 736
maculata, 736
rufipes, 339, **736**
Hippoboscidæ, 337, **736**
Hippocentrum, 693
Hippomane mancinella, 158, **1544**
Hirudinaria, 574
Hirudinea, 570, **625** ref.
Hirudiniasis, 1279-80
Hirudininae, 345, 573
Hirudo, 573
asiatica, 573
hildebrandti, 573
javanica, 573
medicinalis, 346, **571**, 573
multistriata, 571, **573**
nipponia, 573
quinquestriata, 573
saigonensis, 573
septemstriata, 573
sinica, 573
timorensis, 573
trottina, 573
Histiogaster spermaticus, 615
Histoplasma, 18, 350, **367**
Histoplasmosis, 351
History of tropical medicine, 3
Histrichopsylla talpæ, 357
Histriobdellida, 575
Hitzschlag, 126
Hive-bee, 194
Holocanthus imperator, 207
Holomastigote, 280
Holophrya coli, 451
Holothuria argus, 181
Holothurians, 181
Holothyrinidæ, 580
Holothyrus coccinella, 177, **580**
Holotricha, 450
Ho-louan (China), 1343

- Homa el Hugga, 926
 el Naxy, 926
Homalomyia brevis, 724
 canicularis, 724, 734
 desjardensii, 734
 scalaris, 724
Homalopsinæ, 219
 Homicidal poisons, 147, 155
 Homma typhuisa, 1093
Homo neanderthalensis, 62
 primigenius, 62
 sapiens, 62
Homoptera, 635
 Hondziékté, 369
 Hong Kong, prophylaxis, 905
 Hook-worm disease, 1303
Hoplocephalus, 217
 curtus, 229
Hoplopsyllus, 753
 Hornet, 194
 Horoscope, 3
 Horse-flies, 689
 Horsehair worms, 565
 Horsehairs, 564
 Horses, poisoning of, 174
 Hospital phagedæna, 421, **1565**
 Hospitals, first, 8
 Hottentots, 165
 House-fly, 20, 724
 Houses, colour of, 102, 106
 Humidity, atmospheric, 50, **87**
 Hungerpeste, die, 926
 Hunting, poisons used in, 167
Hura crepitans, 152
Hyænanche globosa, 165
Hyalococcus beigelii, 835
Hyalomma, 609
 ægyptium, 586, **611**
 affine, 609
 crassitarsus, 609
 hippopotamense, 609
 rhhipicephaloides, 609
 syriacum, 609
Hyalospora, 419
Hydnocarpus venenata, 168
Hydrelaps, 222
Hydroa vacciniiformis, 1629
Hydrocarpus wigtiana, 1167
Hydrocele, 1426
 endemic, 1123
Hydrochærus capybara, 334
 Hydrocyanic acid, 168
Hydrometridæ, 643
Hydrophidæ, 240
Hydrophinæ, 222, 223
Hydrophis cantoris, bite of, 222, 240
 Hydrophobia, 140, 440
Hydropneusta, 576
 Hydrops asthmaticus, 1208
Hydrotæa meteorica, 735
Hydrus platurus, 221-2
 Hyæna, 333
 Hyetometry, 51
 Hygiene, mosaic, 10
 personal, 457
 public, 458
 Hygrometry, 51
Hyla arborea, 292, 322
Hymenolepis, 502
 deminuta, **495-6**, 498, 502, 512,
 1292
 lanceolata, 498, **504**, 1292
 nana, 495, 498, **503**, 512, 1292
 fraterna, 503
Hymenoptera, 194
Hymenostomata, 451
 Hyperæmia of the liver, 1405
 Hyperchloridia, 1291
 Hyperidrosis, 1603, 1607, **1631-2**
 Hyperkeratosis of sole, 1633, 1635
 Hyperparasitism, **118**, 256, 268
 Hyperpyrexia, 124
 Hyperpyrexial fever, 1112
 Hypersarcosis, 1138
 Hypertrichosis, 1639
 Hyphæ, 757
Hyphomycetes, 812
 Hypnotics in heat-stroke, 132
 Hypnotoxin, 180
Hypoderma, 703
Hypotricha, 448
Hyoscyamus falezlez, 147, 150
 muticus, 154
 Hysteria, 153
Hystriehopsylla, 748
 narbelli, 749
 talpæ, 365, 749
 tripectinata, 749-50
Hystriehopsyllinæ, 746, 748
Ichthyobdellidæ, 572
Ichthyosporidium, 438
 Ichthyotoxismus, 1211
 Icteric fever, 933
 typhus, 925
 Icterus, Gerhard's urobilin, 886
Ictonyx libyca, 186
 Idrosis, 1603
Ikan saban (fish), 209
 Il-jarassy (Tartar), 1548
 Illegitimacy, 112
 Images, ju-ju, 3
 Imbundi (W.A.), 160
 Imhotep of Memphis, 9
Immanoplasma, 350, 368
 Immunity, bee, 195
 scorpion, 186
 snake, 243
 Impetigo, 634, **1625**
 primarium viarum, 1325
 Im-pyeng fever, 1090
 Incas, medicine of the, 4

- Inchaço (Brazil), 1208
 Incidence of disease in tropics, 108
 Incinerator, 1314
 Inclusion-blenorrhœa, 443
 Incubation period of trypanosomes,
 311
 of yellow fever, 1007
Indaceæ, 151
 India, disease in, 113
 Moslem invasion of, 8
 relapsing fever in, 931
 Indian hemp, 153
 ' liver,' 1405
 medicine, 6
 Indian oro-pharyngeal leishmaniasis,
 1559
Indiella, 809, 1529
 Indische spruw, 1325
 Indonsians, 63, 66
 Indra, 6, 7
 Infanticide, 154
 poisons used for, 147
 Infantile beri-beri, 1226
 biliary cirrhosis, 1414
 convulsions, 109-10
 diarrhœa, epidemic, 1388
 treatment, 1393
 Infection of the embryo, 258
 -rate, 857
 Infectious jaundice, 114
 Infective granule, 311
 Inflammatory fever, 1004
 Influenza, 113, **1093**
Infusoria, 265
 Injection, intravenous, technique
 248
 Injuries, poisons to simulate, 148
 simulation of, 157
 Inoculation against smallpox, 8
 of animals, 980
 Inorganic poisons, 146
 Insanity, **110**, 1449
 Philippine army, 104
Insecta, 627
 Insects as disease carriers, 19
 collection of, 630
 Intermediary host, 117
 Intermittent fever, 96, **847**
 tick fever of Wyoming, 950
 International code, zoologists', 256
 Intertrigo, 1478
 blastomycetica, 1512
 saccharomycetica, 1512
 Intestinal anguillulosis, 1295
 bilharziosis, 1398
 climatology of, 1398
 complications in, 1401
 definition of, 1398
 diagnosis of, 1401
 history of, 1398
 pathology of, 1398
 Intestinal bilharziosis, prognosis in,
 1401
 symptomatology of, 1401
 synonyms of, 1398
 treatment of, 1401
 irrigation, 1371
 obstruction, 1291
 sand, 1291
 Intoxications, tropical, 145
 Intramuscular injections, quinine, 896
 Intravenous injection, technique of,
 248
 quinine, 897
 Intussusception, 1291
 Iodine in snake-bite, 249
 Iodoform, 1567
 Ipecacuanha, 1369
 in scorpion-bite, 187
 Ipoh aker, 166
 arrow-poison, 162, **166**
 Ipuh, arrow-poison, 166
 Iris, diseases of, 1652
 Iritis, 936
 Iron, sulphate of, 159
 Irregular fever, 436, 441
 low fever, 1046
 subtertian fever, 881
 Irrigation, intestinal, 1371
 rectal, 1393
 Irritants in abortion, 155
 Island disease, 945
 Ismailia, prophylaxis in, 905
Isomastigote, 280
Isospora, 421
 bigeminum, 421, 1292
 Issatchenko's bacillus, 755
 Itch, coolie, 456
 Cuban, 1104
 dhobie, 1474
 grocer's, 614
 vanilla, 158
Ixodæ, 579
Ixode, 597
Ixodea, 579
Ixodei, 596
Ixodes, 596, 597, 607
 annulatus, 601
 autumnalis, 608
 bovis, 601, 1190
 camelinus, 610
 erinacei, 608
 hexagonus, 608
 leachi, 606
 marmoratus, 603
 moubata, 593
 reduvius, 369, 371, 373, **608**
 reticulatus, 603
 ricinus, 191, 432, 586, **607**
 rufus, 600
 sanguineus, 600
 sexpunctatus, 608

- Ixodida*, 579
Ixodidae, 191, 579
 Marx, 597
 Murray, 588, **596**
Ixodidea, 597
Ixodiden, 596
Ixodides, 579
Ixodinæ, 597
Ixodini, 596
Ixodioplasma, 368
Ixodoidea, 190, 203 ref., **580**, 626
 ref.
 Jackal, 372
 Jacobabad tables, 33, 38, **40**
Jaculus gordonii, 423, **430**
 jaculis, 186
 orientalis, 430
 Jalousies, 106
 Jamaica, disease in, 113
 dogwood, 168
 Jaman dyscharagan, 1548
Jambosa aromatica, 156
 Jambos malaccensis, 1167
 Japan, disease in, 115
 Japanese medicine, 6
 river fever, 613, **945**
Jatropha curcas, L., 147, **151**
 manihot, L., 157
 poisoning, 169
 urens, **169**, 1542
 Jaundice, 1405
 infectious, 114
 Javel, eau de, 196
 Jeanselme's nodules, 1537
 Jelly-fishes, 179, **180**
 Jerboa, 186
 Jesuits' bark, 12
 Jeun-Ehenn (root), 156
 Jewish medicine, 9
 Jigger, 254, **744**, 971
Johannseniella, 680
 Journals, modern, 22
 Judam, 12
 Ju-ju against disease, 3
Julidae, 575
Juliformia, 575
Julus londinensis, **575**, 1293
 terrestris, 575
 Jumpers, 1454
 Jungle fowl, 985
 Jupiter, 3
 Jura-tree, 151
 Juxta-articular nodules, 1537
 Juzam, 12
Kachuga tectum, 431
 Kaju Rugas, 1547
 buta-buta, 1547
 Kaki-lem-but, 1208
 Kakke, 1208
 Kala-azar, 18, 108, 110, 114, 359,
 361, 640, 891, **952**, 1559
 ætiology of, 953
 blood in, 954
 canine, 363, 365
 chloasma, 1639
 climatology of, 953
 complications in, 956
 definition of, 952
 diagnosis of, 956
 history of, 952
 Indian, 360, 952
 infantile, 362, **958**
 morbid anatomy of, 954
 pathology of, 953
 prognosis in, 957
 prophylaxis of, 958
 references, 965
 symptomatology of, 954
 treatment of, 957
 Kalawa, 4
 Kaltesieber malaria, 847
 Kamerungeschwulste, 1442
 Kandy, temperature tables, 42
 Kaposi's disease, 104, 1639
 Kara Kist (Russia), 187
 Karabin, 151
 Karang gatal, 180
 Karawala (Ceylon), 239
 Karyolysins, 422
 Karyosome, 259
 Kasauli, Pasteur Institute at, 247
 Katayama disease, 486, **1116-17**, 1120
 Kathiawar palm-squirrel, 430
 Katipo (N.Z.), 187
 Kaumpuli (Uganda), 1028
 Kawa, 154
 Kawain, 154
 Kedani disease, 946
 Keerengrah, 1447
 Kenyah tribe, 166
 Kerandel symptom, 979
 Keratitis punctata leprosa, 1158
 Keratoma plantare sulcatum, 1598,
 1599
 Kernig's sign, 131
 Kerosene emulsion, 950
 Kesari dal, 173
 Khamsin, 50
 Khi (Siam), 1481
 Kho-sam powder, 1371
 Killa, 3
 Kineto-nucleus, 259, **280**, 310
 Kirudeo, 1447
 Kiso (larva), 731
 Klang, prophylaxis at, 905
Klinophilos, 637
Klossia, 421
Klossiella, 421
 Knokkelkoorts, 995
 Knowledge, primitive, of medicine, 3

- Kombi arrow-poison, 164
 Komlah (Terai), 197
 Konje Marree, 966
 Koo-doo, 333
 Koormat (fish), 209
 Koplik's spots, 1097
 Kosharriddki, 1138
 Kota-wen (China), 1028
Krabbea, 499
 Krait (Ceylon), 220, **239**, 248
 Kreotoxismus, 172
 Kruse's serum, 1391
 Kubisagari, 1450
 Kurloff's bodies, **303**, 306
 Kurrakan, 1174
 Kurunegala fever, 847
 ulcers, 1463
 Kwan's fluke, 1292, **1295**
 Kyass arrow-poisoning, 166
- Láá La-negulo, 966
 Laborrague's solution, 1371
Lacerta agilis, 292, 431
 muralis, 431
 oscellata, 431
 viridi, 431
Lacertilia, 250, 253 ref.
Lachesis, 223
 anamellensis, 223, 229, **232**
 bite of, 241-2
 flavoviridis, 232
 gramineus, 245
 lanceolatus, 223, 225, **232**
 mutus, 431
Lachnosterna arenata, 566
 Lachrymal sac, disease of, 1651
 Lacquer-poisoning, 1542, 1544
Lælaps, 580
Læmopsylla, 740, 742, 751-2. See also
 Xenopsylla
 Laffe (fish), 209
Lagenaria vulgaris, 148
Lagocheilascaris, 547
Lagopus scoticus, 302, **306-7**
 Lahore sore, 366
 Lalangola, 966
Lambliia, 292
 intestinalis, 15, 292, 1292, **1295**,
 1373
 Lamb sera, 244
 polyvalent serum, 245
Lamus, 312, 642
 megistus, 315, 317, 327, 329, **985**
 Land wind, 49
 Langhan's cells, 1154
Lankesterella, 423
 vanarum, 432
Lankesteriæ, 419
Lanthonotus borneensis, 251
Laportea, 1545
 Laroche virus, 755
- Larva migrans, 1583
Lasianthus flavescens, 165
Lasiosiphon eriocephalus, 148, **167**
 speciosus, 155
 Latah, 1451
 Lathirismo, 173
 Lathyrin, 174
 Lathyrism, 172-3
 Lathyrismus, 178 ref.
Lathyrus, species of, 172-3
 Latrines, 1312
Latrobdella, 573
Latrodectus, species of, 187, 189
 Laurer's canal, 460
Laverania, 294, 378, **978**
 danilewskyi, 387
 malariae, 383, 385, 389, 847, 869,
 879, 918, **1372**
 vanarum, 432
 Laveranic dysentery, 1372
Lazopus scoticus, 301
 Lead in abortion, 155
 oxide, 159
 Lebbra, 1147
 Lecithide, 184
 Leech, 347, 570, **1279**
 Leg elephantiasis, 1138
 Legumes as food, 83,
Leguminosæ, 147, 151, 160, 162, 165,
 168
 Lehedanpachanai, 1361
 Leipsic papyrus, 8
 Leishman-Donovan parasite, 258
Leishmania, 341, **349-50**, 357
 braziliensis, 362, 1550
 donovani, 18, **357**, 361-2, 366,
 640, 1372, 1404, 1417, 1559
 furunculosa, 357, **360**
 infantum, 18, 19, 357, **362**, 366,
 368, 1404
 tropica, 357, 366, **1548**, 1559
 var. *americana*, **362**, 1556
 Leishmaniasis, 20, **351**
 American, 1556
 Indian oro-pharyngeal,
 Leishmanic anæmia, 958
 dysentery, 1372
Lelaps echidninus, 425
Lencytozoidæ, **282-3**, 294
 Lenses, 14
 Lentigo, 1639
 Leontiasis, 1157
Lepidophyton, 1487
Lepidoptera, 197, 203 ref.
 Leprolin, 1167
 Leprosy, 10, 11, 15, 20, 110, 112, **1147**
 ætiology of, 1149
 Bible and, 10, 45, 112
 climatology of, 1149
 complications in, 1165
 cultivation of bacillus, 1150

- Leprosy, definition of, 1147
 diagnosis of, 1165
 eye lesions in, 1157
 history of, 1147
 maculo-anæsthetic, 1162
 mixed, 1165
 morbid anatomy of, 1154
 pathology of, 1153
 prognosis of, 1165
 prophylaxis in, 1168
 references, 1168
 symptomatology of, 1156
 synonyms of, 1147
 treatment of, 1167
 tubercular, 1157
 urine in, 1161
 Leprotic fever, 1157
 Leptidæ, 698
 Leptoconops, 677-8
 Leptodira, 518
 annulata, 219
 intestinalis et stercoralis, 519
 niellyi, 518
 pellio, 518
 Leptomonas, 348-351, **354**
 bütschlii, 349, **354**
 davidi, 354
 drosophilæ, 349
 Leptotheca, 433
 Leptothrix, 1526
 Leptus pycnosomæ, 354
 other species, 611
 Lepus cuniculus, 342
 Lessertia annularis, 159
 Letargia dei Negri, 966
 Lethal dose, snake-venom, 236
 Leuciscus, 345
 erythrophthalmus, 346
 Leucocytozoidæ, 302
 Leucocytozoon, **302**, 367
 beristnieffi, **306-7**
 canis, 427
 cobayæ, 306
 danielewskyi, 282, **302-3**, 305,
 307
 funambuli, 430
 lovati, **302-3**, 306-7
 muris, 427
 ziemanni, 302-3
 other species, 307
 Leucoderma, 1500, 1520, **1608-9**
 Leucolysins, 227, **233**
 Leucopathia, 1608
 Leucophrys coli, 451
 Leucoplakia, 1640
 Leukæmia, **109-10**, 1416
 Leydenia, 277-8
 Lice, 193, **631**
 Lichen convex, 1597
 pilaris convex, 1597
 planus, 1632
 Lichen spinulosus, 1632
 tropicus, 1605
 urticatus, 1627
 Lichtheilia, 762
 Life-cycle of parasites, 118
 Life-history of protozoa, 260
 Light, dermatitis from, 99
 disease from, 104
 effect of, 98
 harmful influences of, 99
 skin irritation from, 100, 103
 stimulative influence of, 102
 vascular modification from, 103
 Lightning traumatism, 143
 Ligula mansonii, 499
 Ligulinæ, 498, **501**, 512 ref.
 Liliaceæ, 147, **150**, 168
 Lilla viridis, 185
 Limasodidæ, 197
 Limatinæ, 676
 Limatus, 676
 Limax agrestis, 292
 Limnatis, species of, 574
 Limnoddella, species of, 574
 Linchia, 736
 Lingua nigra, 770, **1640**
 Linguatula, 623
 rhinaria, 1280
 serrata, 617, 624
 tænoides, 617
 Linguatulea, 621
 Linguatilida, species of, **616**, 618, 626
 Linnæus as hosts, species of, **469**,
 589
 Liparidæ, 197
 Lipomata, ear, 1598
 porters', 1599
 Lipoptena, 736
 Lips, seasonal recurrent ulceration,
 1641
 pseudo-colloid of the, 1640
 Lisbon School, 20
 Lister institute serum, 1391
 Lithobiidæ, 624
 Lithobius forficatus, 419, 624, **1280**
 melanops, 624, **1280**
 Little fever, 1046
 Liver abscess, **108**, 112, 1415 ref.
 cirrhis, 889
 disease of, 1403
 entamæbic abscess of, 1407
 (*vide Entamæbic Abscess*)
 fluke, 470
 rupture of, 1405
 soup, 1328, **1337**
 tropical, **1405-7**, 1415 ref.
 Liverpool School, 20
 virus, 755
 Lizards, see also Heloderma
 trypanosomes of, 344
 venom of, 250

- Loa*, 536
Loach, the, 347
Loa Loa, 254, 532, **535-6**, 691, 1442, 1655
Loasis, 1442
Local winds, 49
Locomotor ataxia, 110, **1440**
Lobelia nicotianæ folia, 148
Lobster-claw plant, 663
Loempoe, 1208
Loganiaceæ, 147, 152, **162**, 165, 167
Loliin, 175
Loliismus, 176
Lolium temulentum, 172, **174-5**
London School, 20
'Loo marna' (wind), 129
Lophophyton, 792
Lophoscelomyia, 666
Löschia, **268-276**, 291, 1292, 1363
 brasiliensis, 276
 buccalis, 269, 276
 bütschlii, 276
 cobayæ, 269
 coli, 257, 261, 268, **269**, 275-6, 1363
 dentalis, 269
 enterica, 269
 fecalis, 269
 galloparvæ, 269
 genito-urinary, 269
 gingivalis, 269
 hartmanni, 276
 hepatic and renal, 269
 hexagonus, 586
 hystolytica, 268, 269, 271, **272**, 275
 in abscesses, 269
 in serous exudations, 269
 intestinal, 268
 intestinalis, 269
 kartulisi, 269
 minurai, 269
 minuta, 268, **275**
 mortinatalium, 269
 muris, 269
 nipponica, 268, **275**
 nuttalli, 269
 phagocytoides, 268, **275**
 pulmonalis, 269
 pulmonary, 269
 ranarum, 269
 tetragena, 256-7, **268-272**, 1363
 tropicalis, 268-9, **274**, 1292
 undulans, 268, **275**, 291
 urogenitalis, 269
 williamsi, 268, **276**
Loschiæ in animals, 269 ref., 279
Löschial dysentery, 256, **1363**
Löschiasis, 256
Lota (disease), 1512
Lota vulgaris (fish), 499
Lotio calcii sulphurati, 1481
Lotion, salicylic-spirit, 1607
Low country itch, 1591
 fever, 1046
 intermittent non-malarial fever, 1088, 1112
Lowenthal's reaction, 929
Loxa, 12
Loxaspis, 640
Lucilia, 730
 cæsar, **728**, 1294
 macellaria, 728
 mominivorax, 728
 nobilis, 728
 regina, **728**, 1294
 serenissima, 354
 sericata, 728
Lues, 1028
Lutrine, 407
Lumbar puncture, technique, 979
Lumbricus agricola, 419
 canis, 546
 terrestris, **418**, 518
Lund's larva, 731
Lungs, aspergillosis of, 803
 mucormycosis of, 765
Lupani tono (Samoa), 1170
Lupus endemicus, 1548
Lustig's serum, 1040-1
Lycopsylla, 748
Lycosa singoriensis, 188
 tarantula, 190
Lymph scrotum, 529, **1133**
Lymphadenitis, 200 ref.
Lymphangiomata, 1632
Lymphangioplasty (Handley), 1143
Lymphangitis, 200 ref., 541, **1123**, 1437
 epizootica, 367
Lymphatic system, diseases of, 1434
 varix, 1133
Lymphocele, 1138
Lymphococcus, 1128
Lymphodermia perniciosa, 1633
Lymphosporidium, species of, 350, **367**
Lynchia brunea, 301
 maura, 301
Lyzoon atrophicans, 443, **1650**
Lyperosia, 713
 irritans, 714
 minuta, 714
 punctigera, 714
Lysæmia, 918
Lytta ruficeps, 201
 vesicatoria, 156
 villata, 201
Mabinzu (larva), 731
Mabuia raddonii, 344
 cynocephalus, 402

- Macacus cynomolgus*, 387, 1562
 nemestrinus, 387
 pileatus, 285, 375
 rhesus, 435-6
Machoiria (fish), 209
Macrobdella, 574
 sestertia, 574
Macroconidia, 759
Macrogamete, 263, **381**
Macrogametocyte, 263, 305, **380**
Macrogaster platypus, 616
Macromerozoites, 426
Macronucleus, 259
Macropodus viridi auratus, 345
Macropsylla, 748
 hercules, 749
Macrostoma, 289
 mesnili, 290
Macular fever of Tunisia, 1097
Maculo-anæsthetic leprosy, 1162
Madarosis, 1158
Mador (Hind.), 155
Madura foot, 15, 1123, 1447
Madurella, 807-8, 1531, **1527**, 1529
Mæsa indica, 167
Magberi (Sierra Leone), 158
Magnesium sulphate, 156
Mahamari (Ind.), 1028
Maize as food, 83
Majara harik, 177
Majun, 153
Mal d'Asturias, 1230
 de caderas, 17, **319**, 334
 de Cayenne, 1138
 de chicot (Canada), 1171
 de cœur, 1303
 de coit, 335
 de los Pintos, 1513
 del Pinto, 1513
Malacobothrii, 461
Malacocotylea, 461
Maladie de Ballingall, 1447
 de Gilles de la Tourette, 1454
 des Plongeurs, 180
 des Sucreries, 1200
 du Sommeil, 966
Maladies filariennes, 1123
Malaria, 16, 19, 109, 110, 112-115,
 627, **847**. See also Fever
 acute, 872
 ætiology of, 849
 Africa, 859
 America, 859
 anæmia in, 868
 Asia, 859
 Australia, 859
 blood in, 864
 parasite, 849
 cachexia, **871**, 901
 carriers of, 665
 chemical pathology of, 862
 Malaria, children, 875
 chronic, 861, **886**
 lesions, 871
 treatment, 901
 climatology of, 859
 cold stage of, 874
 complications in, 888
 congenital, 888
 convalescence, 901
 diagnosis of, 670
 diet in, 901
 double quartan fever, 875
 tertian fever, 877
 endemic index, 857
 engineering work in, 908
 erythrocytes, 865
 Europe, 859
 fish, larvæ-eating, 907
 hæmoglobinuria in, 916
 history of, 847
 hot stage of, 874
 interval, 875
 investigation, 857
 irregular subcontinuous tertian
 fever in, 878
 irregularities, 875
 latent, 850, **872**, 888
 lesions in, 868
 leucocytes in, 866
 masked, 888
 microscopic post-mortem ex-
 amination, 870
 morbid anatomy of, 888
 mosquito, the, 853
 nursing of, 899
 parasites, 5, 386, 856
 differential characteristics,
 390
 parthenogenesis, 848
 pathology of, 860
 Poisson-Pearson formula, 858
 Polynesia, 859
 predisposing causes, 857
 prognosis in, 890
 prophylaxis of, 902, 908
 quartan fever, simple, 873
 sanitary work, 908
 sequelæ, 889
 spleen rate, 857
 statistical error, 857
 subtertian fevers, 879
 sulphur in, 905
 sweating stage, 875
 synonyms, 847
 treatments, various, 899
 triple quartan fever, 875
 vomiting in, 900
 Malarial cachexia, 110-11, 861, **871-2**
 fever, tertian, 11, 876
 fevers, clinical description, 872
 hæmoglobinuria, 910

- Malarial hæmoglobinuric fever, 913
 nephritis, 889
 parasites, 378
 differential characters of, 391
 prophylaxis, 118
 pneumonia, 889
 pseudo-Addison's disease, 888
 reinfections, 887
 relapses, 887
 treatment, 902
Malassezia, species of, **837**, 1647
 tropica, 837, **1497**
 versicolor, 1503
Malattia del Sonno, 966
 della Insolazione di Primavera,
 1230
 Malaysia, races of, maps, 67
 Male-fern, 1311-12
 Malignant bilious fever, 913
 epithelial tumours, 1633, 1635
 jaundice (dogs), 369
 malaria (dogs), 369
 Mallet de Mianch, 949
 Mallophaga, 635
 Malta fever, 15, 1018, 1019
 Maltose agar, Sabouraud's, 780
Mammalia, 251, 252 ref.
 Mammalian poisons, 168
 Mammals, trypanosomes of, 330
 Man, effects of tropical climates on,
 79
 primitive, history of, 61
 trypanosomes of, 322
 Mana Kodra (India), 177
 Manchineel-tree, **158**, 1544
 Mango-fly, 539
 toe, 1466
 Mangosteen rind, 1393
 Mangrove flies, 689, 694
 Mania, 110
Manihot utilissima, 148, 157
 Mannite, 1376
 Manson's method (atoxyl), 980
 powder, 1481
 son's experiment, 849
 Manson-Ross method, 1039
Mansonia ovata, 1392
 pseudo-titillans, 665, **1126**
 uniformis, 665, **1126**
 Manuch, 158
 Map, world, Supan's lines, 29
 Marasmus, 112
 Maréchal's reaction, 919
Margaropus, 600
 annulatus, 373, 579, **581**, 586,
 600-1, 1190
 argentinus, 601
 australis, 373, **601**, 1190
 calcaratus, 601
 caudatus, 601
 decoloratus, 373, 403-4, 586, **601**
Margaropus dugesi, 601
 microphilus, 601
 Marking nut-tree, 154
 Marmoset, 339
 Mars, 3
 Marscholka, cells of, 972
 Marsh fever, 847
 Marsi (Italy), 243
 Masked malaria, 888
Mastigocladium blochii, 841
Mastigophora, 265-6, **280**, 283, 284,
 293, 347 ref., 349
 Mastigote, 280
 Maternal impressions, 4
 Mauls from wild beasts, 136
 Maurer's dots, 390, **865**
 Mazamorra (Porto Rico), 1303
 M'bori (disease), 332, 338, 342
 M'Boundon, 160
 Meal-moth, 503
 Measles, 1093, **1101**, 1627
 Measurement of parasites, 310
 Mechanical infection, 315
 Medicine, Accadian, 4
 Alexandrian, 11
 American, 6
 Aztecs, 4
 Bible, 9
 Chaldean, 4
 Chinese, 4
 Egyptian, 8
 Græco-Roman, 11
 Grecian, 8, 10
 Indian, 6
 Japanese, 6
 Jewish, 9
 modern, 12
 primitive knowledge of, 3
 religious, 4
 theurgic, 4
 tropical, beginning of, 13
 history of, 3
 schools of, 20
 Mediterranean fever, 114, 1018, 1019
 remittent, 1018
 Medium, Nicolle's, 1550
 Novy-McNeal, Matthias, 321
 Meeta bish, 152
Megastoma entericum, 292
 intestinale, 292
Melæ vesicatorius, 156
 Melanin, 103, 378
 Melanochroi, 63
 Melanoderma pediculis, 1578
Melanolestes morio, 643
 Melanonychia, 1614
 cayenne pepper condition, 1615
 Melanosis, 103
 Melanotic carcinoma, 1633, 1635
Meleagris gallapavo domestica, 303,
 307

- Meles taxus*, 342, 751
Melianthus aregeana, 147, 151
 conosus, 147
 major, 147
 minor, 147
Melolontha vulgaris, 292
Melophagus, 736
 ovinus, 357, **736**
 Melung, 1611
Melusinidæ tepulariæ, 684
Menabea venenata, 160
 Menière's disease, 1662
 Meningitic pernicious fever, 884
 Meningitis, 1450
 acute, 125
 Meningo-encephalitis, 319, 966
 -myelitis, 966
Menispermaceæ, 168
Menosporidæ, 419
 Mercury, 159
 and atoxyl, 982
 in abortion, 155
 perchloride, 146
Mermithidæ, 522, 543
 Merozoites, 261, 282, 332, 379
Merula migratoria, 389
Merus, 670
Mesobdella gemmata, 574
Mesogonimus heterophyes, 479
 pulmonale, 477
 westermanni, 477
 Mesomitosis, 260
 Mesosoma, 183
 Metachromatic granules, 259
 Metamitosis, 260
 Metaplastic granules, 259
 Metasoma, 183
Metastatica, 461
Metastigmata, 578-9
Metatrombidium, 612
Metastrongylinæ, species of, 551
Metazoa, 455
 Method, Bandi's, 1352
 Broden and Rotham's, 980
 Bruce-Nabarro, 979
 Castellani's, 979
 absorption, 1351
 Cesaris-Demel, 1410
 cholera examination, 1351
 dilution, 1039
 Dunbar's agglutinative, 1351
 Dutton-Todd, 979
 Greig-Grey, 979
 Haldane and Lorraine-Smith,
 1307
 lumbar puncture, 979
 Manson's, 980
 Manson-Ross, 1039
 Ottolenghi's, 1353
 Pfeiffer's, 1351
 Simpson's, 1043
 Methylene blue, **899**, 1373
Metorchis truncatus, 476
 Meura Djilben (Algeria), 173
 M'Faug, 160
 Mexico, northern, diseases in, 116
 Miana bug, 949
 disease, 577
 tick fever of, 949
 Mibori, 338, 342
 Mica in water, 1339
Micrococcus beigeii, 835
 catarrhalis, 1647
 melitensis, 997, 1018
 nigrescens, 1522
 paramelitensis, 1018, 1020, 1024
 pelletieri, 816
 pseudomelitensis, 1018, 1020
 Microconidia, 757
 Microfilaria, 522
 bancrofti, 530, 539
 diurna, 536, 538
 loa, 536
 perstans, 1593
 philippinensis, 531
 Microgamete, **263**, 295, 381, 760
 Microgametocyte, 262, 305, 380
 Microneurum, 700
 Micronucleus, 259
Microspironema pallidum, 405
 Microsporidia, 433
 Microsporidian, 264
Microsporidium polyedricum, 434
Microsporoides minutissimus, 819,
 1478
 Microsporon, 772
 audouini, 774, 776, 1628
 depauperatum, 778
 felineum, 776
 flavescens, 777
 fulvum, 776
 furfur, 837
 iris, 777
 lanosum, 776
 mansonii, 837
 mentagrophytes, 783
 minimum, 776
 pubescens, 777
 tardum, 776
 tomentosum, 777
 trachomatousum, 1647
 tropicum, 837
 umbonatum, 776
 velveticum, 775
 villosum, 777
 other varieties, 777, 778
 Microsporosis *flava*, 497
 nigra, 1502
Microsporum gracile, 819
 minutissimum, 819
Microtrombidium, 612
Microtus arvalis, 341, 376

- Microvelia*, 355
 Midges. See *Chironomidæ*
 Midwifery, ancient Indian, 7
 Midday heat, 106
 Midge, Owl-, 724
 Migration of primitive man, 60
 Miliaria rubra, 1605
 Miliary fever, 925
 Milk, curdled, 1337
 supply, 1333
Millepora, 180
 alcicornis, 180
 complanata, 180
 verrucosa, 180
 Miller's thumb, 499
 Millet as food, 83
Milletia seriacea, W., 147, 151
 Mimicry, 1451
Minchinia, 421
 Mineral acids, 146
 Miners' anæmia, 1303
Miniopterus schrenkii, 342
 Minnow, 346
Miracidium, 460, 1120
 Misala, 1458
 Mites, 182
 Mitosis in protozoa, 260
Mitragyna speciosa, 154
 Mixed leprosy, 1165
 tumours, 1635
Mochlonyx, 676
 Modern epidemiology, 12
 journals, 22
 medicine, 12
Mæopsylla, 747
 Mohammedan invasion of India, 8
 Mois (Cochin-China), 166
Mollusca, 201, 203
Molluscum contagiosum, 1633
 Momba (Angola), 1170
Momordica charanta, 155
 cymbalaria, 155
 Monadidæ, 283, 284, 289
Monas, 289
 pyophila, 289
 rotatoria, 321
 Monbattu dwarfs, 165
Monera, 266
 Mongolian spots, 1615
 Mongolic division of man, 62, 71
 Mongoose, 375
 immunity of, 243
 Mongota, 966
Monilia, 820, 1507
 albicans, 841
 aurea, 803
 blanchardi, 829
 bronchialis, 826
 burgessi, 828
 candida, 830
 caoi, 831
Monilia chalmersi, 826
 cutanea, 830
 decolorans, 822
 digitata, 800
 enterica, 827
 fæcalis, 827
 guillermonti, 826
 harteri, 831
 insolita, 827
 intestinalis, 827
 kochi, 830
 koningii, 841
 krusei, 826
 lustigi, 828
 montoyai, 830, 1514
 negrii, 822
 nitida, 826
 nivea, 826
 paratropicalis, 825
 perryi, 829
 pictor, 830
 pinoyi, 826
 pseudotropicalis, 825
 pulla, 806
 pulmonalis, 828
 pulmonea, 829
 rhei, 828
 rosea, 829
 rotunda, 828
 rugosa, 827
 subtilis, 829
 tropicalis, 824
 zeylanica, 826
 table of reactions of, 822
 Moniliform hair, 1639-40
Moniliformis, 502
Monilithrix, 1639
Monoceromonas hominis, 291
Monocystidea, 419
Monocystis agilis, 418
Monogenea, 461
Monomastigoda, 308
Monomastigote, 280
Monomorium pharaonis, 640
Monopteres javanensis, 345
Monosporogenea, 434
Monosporum apiospermum, 843, 1535
Monostichodonta, 573
Monostomidæ, 461
Monostomum, 481
 lentis, 465, 481, 488
Monotremata, 251
Monozoa, 283
 Monsoon belt, 57
 Monsoons, 39, 45, 47, 49
 Monthly pressure table, Colombo, 44
Montoyella, 799, 1514
Moquinia, 574-5
Morbus dormitivus, 966
 elephas, 1138

- Morbus pedis entophyticus, 1447
 tuberculosis pedis, 1447
Morea collina, 147, 151
Moringa pterygosperina (bark), 155
 Morphœa, 1500
 Morphology, 259
 Morvan's disease, 1165
 Mosaic medicine, 10
 Moschni (N.W. Prov.), 175
 Mosquito, 14, 948
 and fever, 8
 bionomics, 661
 bites, 200
 brown house, 674
 classification of, 663
 curtain, 904
 in England, 854
 internal anatomy, 655
 life-history of, 657
 morphology of, 650
 oil protection, 905
 Mossman fever, 1088
 Mossy foot, 1602
 Mostaki (Punjab), 175
 Motion-nucleus, 259
 of the atmosphere, 46
 Motuca-fly (Brazil), 691
 Moubata (Angola), 593
 Mountain climates, 57
 fever, 847
 wind, 49
 Mouqui (Para), 611
 Mouth, temperature in, 86
 Mozambique sore, 1561
Mucidinees, 812
Mucor, 761
 corymbifer, 763
 crustaceus albus, 800
 herbariorum, 804
 niger, 764
 ramosus, 763
 septatus, 764
Mucoraceæ, 761
 Mucormycosis, 761, 765
 Mucous membranes, diseases of, 1640
 Muculo (disease), 734
 Mudar, 159
 Muki-muki (fish), 171
 Mulattoes, 108
 Mule disease, 337
 Multiple pruriginous tumours of the
 skin, 1601
 sarcomatosis, 1633
 Muma Fever (Samoa), 1444
 Mumps, 1093
 Munchi (arrow-poison), 164
Mundulea suberosa, 168
 Munhinyo, 1018
Murænidæ, 206
Muridæ, 753
Murinæ, 753
Murrina (disease), 337
Mus chrysophilus, 752
 decumanus, 423, 754
 minutus, 341
 musculus, 293, 341, 503, 748.
 See also *Epimys* (rattus)
 norvegicus, 293, 339, 425, 703,
 562, 752, 753, 755, 1031-2.
 See also *Epimys* (rattus)
 rattus, 293, 339, 562, 752-3,
 1031-3. See also *Epimys*
 (rattus)
 alexandrinus, 503, 753
 rufescens, 339, 753
 silvestris, 293
Musca, 337, 738 ref.
 corvina, 1294
 domestica, 361, 365, 721, 723,
 724, 1052
 hispaniola, 156
 lepræ, 1142
 luteola, 731
 nebula, 354
Muscardin, 810
Muscardinum avellanarius, 341
Muscidæ and allied families, 688, 707
 acalyptrata, 648
 calyptrata, 648
Muscineæ, 723
 Muscles, diseases of, 1440
 Muscoidea, 699
Mustela martes, 521
 Mutualism, 457
 Mvidi (larva), 731
 Mycelium, 757
Mycetoma, 1527
 actinomycotic, white, 1534
 ætiology of, 1530
 Beurmann's black, 1534
 black, 808
 Bouffard's black, 1533
 white, 809, 1534
 Bovo's black, 1534
 Brumpt's white, 1529
 Carter's black, 808, 1534
 white, 1534
 climatology of, 1528
 definition of, 1527
 diagnosis of, 1534
 history of, 1527
 Lindenberg's white, 1535
 Manson's white, 809
 morbid anatomy of, 1531
 Musgrave and Clegg's, 1534
 Nicolle and Pinoy's black, 1534
 Nicolle's white, 1534
 pathology of, 1529
 Pelletier's red, 1535
 prognosis in, 1534
 prophylaxis of, 1534
 red variety of, 1534

- Mycetoma*, references, 1540
 Reynier's white, 809, 1534
 symptomatology of, 1532
 synonyms of, 1532
 tarozzi-radacchi, 1533
 treatment of, 1534
 varieties of, 1533
Mycetomiasis of the body, 1536
Mycodermia caninum, 799
 tozeuri, 808
Mycology, 757
Mycosis, 757, 764
 cutis chronica (Carter), 1548
 fungoides, 1633
 tongue, 764
Mycterotypus, 678
Myelopathica tropica scorbutica, 1208
Mygale (spider), 189
Myiasis, African dermal, 1582
 American dermal, 1582
 Asian dermal, 1582
 cutaneous, 1581
 European dermal, 1582
 intestinal, 706, 724, **734**
 rhinal, 280
 urinary tract, 734
Mylabris cichorii, 156, 201
Myliobatidæ, 206, 214
Mylobatis aquila, L., 206
Myomalacia cordis, 1416
Myomata, 1632
Myonemes, 280, 394, 417
Myositis purulenta tropica, 1444
Myotis myotis, 389
Myoxis glis, 341
Myristica fragrans, 158
Myrmica (ant), 197
Myxidiidæ, 433
Myxidium, 433
Myxobolidæ, 433
Myxococcidium stegomyiæ, 1005
Myxocystes, 434
Myxœdema, 1417
Myxomycetes, 760
Myxosporidia, 433, 440
Myzomyia, 666, 668
 aconita, 669
 albirostris, 669
 culicifacies, 661, 665, 669
 elegans, 669
 funesta, 529, 665, 667
 hispaniola, 669
 indefinita, 669
 leptomeres, 669
 listoni, 665, 669
 longipalpis, 669
 ludlowii, 669
 lutzii, 667
 nili, 669
 pyretophorides, 669
Myzomyia rhodesiensis, 669
 rossii, 529, 660, 665, 667, 1126
 superpicta, 665
 tesselata, 669
 thorntonii, 669
 turkhuudi, 665, 669
Myzorhynchella, 666
Myzorhynchus, 535, 666, 670
 albotæniatus, T., 670
 bancroftii, 670
 barbirostris, 665, 670
 coustani, 665
 mauritanus, 670
 minutus, T., 665, 670, 1126
 nigerrimus, 665, 670, 1126
 paludis, T., 665, 670
 pseudobarbirostris, 670
 pseudopictus, 665, 670
 sinensis, 665, 670
 strachanii, T., 670
 umbrosus, T., 670
 vanus, 670
 Nagana, 17, 319, 320, 714
 Nagaria, 336
 Nails, black pigmentation of the, 1614
 diseases of the, 1639
Naja bungarus, 220, 223, 232, 245
 bite of, 238
 M. L. D., 236
 flava, 240
 haje, 217, 220, 225
 bite of, 238
 immunity, 244
 melanoleuca, 240
 nigricollis, 220, 240, 344
 regalis, 220
 tripudians, 218, 220, 223, 227,
 237, 240, 243-4, 245,
 431
 M. L. D., 236
 Naphthol, 172
 Naridé, 1537
 Nasha fever, 1090
 Nastin, 1149, 1167, 1168
 Natal sore, 1468
 Native knowledge of plants, 4
 Naushah (Egypt), 926
 Nchichi (larva), 731
 Neanderthaloid man, 62
 Neapolitan fever, 1018
 Nebenkörper, 276
Necator americanus, 555, 560 ref.,
 1119, 1293, 1303
 Negri bodies, 440
 Negritos, 167
 Negro consumption, 1303
 lethargy, 966
 Negroid man, division of, 62
 Nelavare, 966

- Nemathelminthes*, 181, 202 ref., 514,
 566 ref.
Nemathelminthic dysenteries, 1374
Nematocera, 647-8
Nematocysts, 179
Nematoda, classification of, 516
Nematode dermatoses, 1591
Nematodirus, species of, 551
Nematoideum tracheale, 523
Nemorhina, 714
 palpalis, 714
Neocellia, 666
Necera lepida, 197
Neomyzomyia, 669
Neopsylla, 748
 bidentiformis, 750
 isacanthus, 749
 pentacanthus, 749
Neo-salvarsan, 899, 1191
Neosporidia, 266, 432
Nepaul tumour, 1598
Nephritis, malarial, 889
Nephrolithiasis, 1421
Nephrophages, 614
Neriodorin, 151
Nerium odorum, 147, 151-2, 155
Nervous diseases, 1450
 fever, 1046
 system, effects of temperature
 on, 97
Nesokia bandicotti, 342
 bengaliensis, 753
Nettles, 1545
Neumann's bacillus, 755
Neurasthenia, 97, 104
 tropical, 1456
Neuritis, 889
 endemic peripheral, 1457
 multiplex endemica, 1208
Neurofibromatosis of Recklinghausen,
 1632
Neuroryctes hydrophobiae, 440
Neurotoxins, 195, 227-8
Newera Eliya, tables, 42
New Guinea, diseases in, 115
Newt, trypanosome of, 344
Ngumba-fly, 706
Niaibi (New Granada), 611
Nicollia, 350, 375
 quadrigemina, 375
Nicolle's medium, 1551
Nicoria trijuga, 431
Nicotiana tabacum, 147
Nidana, 7
Night-soil fever, 1046
Nile boil, 1548
Nissl bodies, 129
N.N.N. medium, 1551
Nocardia, 812
 actinomyces, 813
 asteroides, 815, 1531
 aurea, 818
 bovis, 813, 1536
 brasiliensis, 816, 1535
 buccalis, 815, 819
 candida, 818
 carnea, 818
 carougeani, 817, 1537
 dassonvillei, 816
 decussata, 817
 enteriditis, 819
 færstéri, 815, 817
 fusca, 818
 garteni, 818, 1536
 hominis, 819
 israeli, 814, 1536
 lasserei, 819
 lingualis, 819
 liquefaciens, 808, 1536
 luteola, 818
 madurae, 816, 1534
 minutissima, 819, 1503
 odorifera, 818
 pelletieri, 816, 1535
 ponceti, 818, 1536
 pulmonalis, 817
 rivierei, 819
 rosenbachi, 815
 tenuis, 820, 1522
 thibiergeii, 817, 1537
Nodular dermatitis, 1593
 leprosy, 1157
 nocardiasis, 1537
Nodules, ear, 1598
 juxta-articular, 1537
Noguchi's snake-venom serum, 243
Nohu (fish), 209
Noma, 402
Nomenclature, rules for, 256
Nomomeristica, 576
Non-bursata, 517
Normal temperature, 85, 95
North-East monsoon, 45
Nose, disease of, 1662
 mucormycosis of, 763
Nosema apis, 434
 bombycis, 434
Nostocaceæ, 756
Notechis pseudechis, 220, 221, 225
 scutatus, 221, 225, 244
Notostigmata, 578
 serum, 244
N'tansi, 966
Ntunga (larva), 731
Nuche (Colombia), 706
 (New Granada), 704
Nuclear division, 260
Nucleolus, 259
Nucleophaga, 268
Nucleus, composition of, 259
 dereliquat, 262, 300, 379, 381
Numidia ptilorhynca, 303, 307

- Nursing, malaria, 899
 Nutmegs, 158
 Nutrition-nucleus, 259
Nuttallia herpeledis, 375
 equi, 350, 375
Nux vomica, 134, 159
Nycteribidæ, 736
Nyctotherus, 450, 452
 africanus, 450, 453, 1292
 faba, 450, 453, 1292, 1295
 giganteus, 450, 453, 1292, 1295
Nyssorhynchus, 665-6, 671
 diagnostic table, 671
- Obermeyer's relapsing fever, 637
 Oceania, races of, map, 67
 Ochindundu, 640
 Ochipia (Angola), 197
 Ochisia (beetle), 201
Ochromyia anthropophaga, 730
Octomitidæ, 292
Octosporea muscæ-domesticæ, 264
 Ocular blastomycosis, 1657
 aspergillosis, 1657
 glenosporosis, 1658
 moniliasis, 1658
 nocardiases, 1658
 sporotrichosis, 1658
 tineæ, 1657
 Oculomycoses, 1656
Odontopsyllus charlottensis, 749
 telegoni, 749
Æcacta furens, 677
 hostilissima, 679
Æsophagostoma brumpti, 1374
Æsophagostomum, species of, 550
Estridæ, 701, 737 ref.
Ogmodon, 220
Oidium, 770
 albicans, 821
 coccidioides, 772
 cutaneum, 830
 furfur, 837
 immitis, 772
 porriginis, 790
 protozoides, 772
 pulmoneum, 829
 roseum, 824
 schænleini, 790
 subtile, 829, 837
 tonsurans, 781
 Oidomycosis, 770, 1504
 Oil, bamber-green, 905
 of sassafras, 950
 Oils in snake-bite, 249
 Oleander, white, 151
Olfersia, 736
Oligosporogenea, 434
 Omens, 3
Onchocerca, 522, 540
Onchocersiasias, 540
Onchophora, 575
Onchorhynchus perryi, 499
 Onchosphere, 493
 Onicomycosis, 757, 1486
 Onychogryphosis, 1640
 Onychomycosis, 1640
 Oöcyst, 383, 420
 Oogonium, 760
 Oökinete, 263, 294, 296-7, 381
Oomyceles, 760
 Oordh dal, 172
 Oospheres, 760
Oospora, 799, 813. See also *Nocardia*
 asteroides, 815
 bovis, 813
 canina, 799
 porriginis, 790
 pulmonea, 829
 tozeuri, 808, 1529
Oosporaceæ, 760
Oosporangium, 760
 Oospores, 760
 Oötype, 464
 Operation, elephantiasis scrotum, 1143
 lymphangioplasty, 1143
Ophidia, 252 ref.
 trypanosomes in, 344
 Ophidismus, 216
 Ophiodes, 609
 Ophiotoxin, 227
Ophryocystis, 418
 Ophthalmia ægyptica, 1647
 Opilação, 985
Opilioacaridæ, 578
Opiliones, 576
Opisthoglypha, 219
 Opisthorchiosis, 1413
Opisthorchis, 473
 felineus, 488 ref., 1413
 noverca, 473-4, 488 ref., 1413
 pseudo-felineus, 474
 Opium, 99, 153, 155
 Opsonin treatment, 1024
 Orang-outang, 387, 1562
 Orchiotomy, 1433
 Orchitis, 1123, 1426
 Ordeal, trial by, 159
 Organic poisons, 147
Oribatidæ, 578
 Oriental plague, 9, 10
 sore, 17, 360, 1548
 ætiology of, 1550
 Bier's stasis method, 1556
 clinical varieties, 1554
 communicability of, 1551
 definition of, 1548
 diagnosis of, 1554
 geographical distribution of,
 1550
 histopathology of, 1551

- Oriental sore, history of, 1548
 prognosis in, 1555
 prophylaxis of, 1556
 references, 1574
 symptomatology of, 1552
 synonyms of, 1548
 treatment of, 1555
Ornithoctona, 736
Ornithodoros, 192, 591, 595
 æqualis, 591
 americanus, 594
 moubata, 18, 191, 330, 399, 400,
 403, 534, 577, 586, 592-3, 640,
 934
 pavimentosus, 592, 595
 savignyi, 582, 595
 var. *cæcus*, 593
 talaje, 191, 192, 595
 tholozani, 586, 593, 595
 turicata, 191, 586, 592, 934
 other species, 586, 592, 595
Ornithomyia lagopodis, 302, 306, 736
Ornithorhynchus paradoxus, 251
 Oro (Sierra Leone), 147
 Oroya fever, 1197
 Orpiment and atoxyl treatment, 982
Ortholfersia, 736
Orthorrhapha, 647, 688
 Os calcis, endemic enlargement, 1447
Oscillaria, 378
Oscinidæ, 700, 738
Ostariophysi, 206
 Osteoplastic periostitis, 1446
Osteotæmus tetraspis, 430
Ostrea, species of, 292
 Otitis media (fungi of), 768
 Otomucormycosis, 763
 Otomycosis, 757, 763
 aspergillina, 1660
 Ouabain, 163
 Ouabaio (arrow-poison), 163
 Ourari, 167
 Ovænyo (disease), 734
 Ovambo tribes, 164
 Overfeeding, danger of, 83
 Ovovitellin, 233
 Owl-midge, 724
 Ox, trypanosomes in, 343
 Oxygen in heat-stroke, 132
 Oxyphile cells, 184
Oxyuris, 9, 547
 vermicularis, L., 255, 522-3, 1293

Pachydermia hernia carnosæ, 1138
Pachyrrhizus angulatus, 168
Pachyrrhizid, 168
Padda oryzivora, 302, 343
 Paget's disease, 1635
 Pakitzar, 1361
Palamæus indus, 183
Palisota barteri, 165

 Palm-leaf horoscope, 3
Palpigrada, 576
Palpomysia, 680
 Paludism, 847
 Paludismo malaria, 847
 Pamperos, 50
 Panama, prophylaxis in, 908
Panax quinquefolium, 156
 Pancreas, disease of, 1403
 Pancreatitis, 1405, 1415
 chronic, 1332
 hæmorrhagic, 885
 Panduroga, 554
Pangonia, 696
 Pan-mas (beetle), 156
 Panneuritis endemica, 1208
 Pannus carateus, 1513
Panoplitæ africanus, 529, **534**
 Pansporoblasts, **261**, 434
Papaver somniferum, 147
 Papilloma inguinale tropicum, **1574**,
 1576
Papio anubis, 1445
 Pappataci fever, 683, **992**
 Papular fever, 1111
 Papyrii, Berlin, 8, 9
 British Museum, 9
 Ebers, 8, 9, 1642
 Egyptian, 8, 9
 Hearst, 8, 9
 Leipsic, 8
 Paris, 8
Parachordodes alpestris, **565**, 1293
 pustulosus, **565**, 1293
 tolosanus, **565**, 1293
 violaceus, **565**, 1293
 Para-colon, 1048
 Paradysenteric bacillus, 1375
 Paradyntery, 1388
 Parafuchsin, 983
 Paragonimiasis, 256, 479, **1114**, **1122**
 ref.
 Musgrave on, 1114
Paragonimus, 477
 westermani, 258, 456, **477**, 488
 ref., 1114, 1290
Paragordius cinctus, **566**, 1293
 tricuspidatus, **565**, 1293
 varius, **565**, 1293
 Parakeratosis variegata, 1632
 Paraleprosis, 1165
 Paramastigote, 280
 Parametritis, 1390
Paramæba, 267
 eilharði, 266, **276**
 hominis, **277**, 1292
Paramæcioides costatus, 321
Paramæcium aurelia, 449
 coli, 451
 costatum, 321
 loricatum, 321

- Paramphistomidae*, 376 ref., **461-2**
Paramphistominae, 462
Paramphistomum, 462
 watsoni, 463
 Parangi (Ceylon), 1170
 Parapetis, 1435
Paraplasma, 350, **377**
 flavigenum, 1006-7
 Paraplegia mephitica, 1208
 spastic, 173
Parapsyllus, 748
Parasaccharomyces, 831
 life-cycle of, 118
 Parasites, animal, 254
 chance, 256
 disease from, 113
 Leishman-Donovan, 258
 malarial, 378
 of fleas, 365
 periodical, 255
 permanent, 255
 stationary, 254
 temporary, 254
 Parasitic diseases, 1627
 mastigophora, 293
 protozoa, 15
 Parasitism, chance, 457
 true, 457
 Parasyphilitic affections, 1636
 diseases, 110
 Paratyphoid fever, 110, **1047**, 1093
 Para-undulant fever, 1021
Parendomyces balzeri, 769
Parodontitis, 746
 Paris School, 20
Paropisthorchis caninus, 474
 Parotid buboes, 1388
 Parthenogenesis, **264**, 381
Parus major, 307
 Pascha-churdj, 1548
 Paspalismus, 172, **176**, 178 ref.
Paspalum scrobiculatum, 148, 172,
 176
 Pasteur-Chamberland B bougie, 1008
 Pasteur Institute's sera, 248, 1391
 virus, 755
Pastinaca sativa, 1544
 Petak (Dutch Indies), 1170
 Pathogenicity of protozoa, 264
 Pathometry, 857
 Pattini, goddess, 4
Paullinia pinnata, 147, **152**, 167
Pauloixodes, 597
Paulonnia imperialis, 949
Pausinystalia yohimba, 156
Pavo cristatus, 307
Pavus major, 389
 Pebrine, 435
 Pechadi, 177
Pectinifera, 576
Pectobothrii, 461
Pediculidae, **631**, 644 ref.
Pediculoides ventricosus, 613
 Pediculosis, 1578
 capitis, 1628
 corporis, 1628
 pubis, 1628
Pediculus capitis, 632
 cervicalis, 632
 corporis, **634**, 931
 humanus, 632
 inguinalis, 634
 pediculi, 1153
 pubis, 634
 tabescentium, 634
 vestimenti, 634
 vestimentorum, 1095
Pedipalpi, **183**, 188, 576
Pelargonium flabellifolium, 1392
 tuberosa, 1392
 Pellagra, 104, 114, 173, **1230**, 1545
 aetiology of,
 climatology of, 1236
 complications in, 1258, **1264**
 definition of, 1230
 diagnosis of, 1258
 differential diagnosis of, 1260
 etymology of, 1230
 histopathology of, 1250
 history of, 1230
 maize theory of, 1233, 1239
 morbid anatomy of, 1250
 parasitic theory of, 1243, 1248
 pathology of, 1248
 predisposing causes of, 1247
 prognosis in, 1262
 prophylaxis of, 1440
 protozoan theory of, 1244
 references, 1265
 symptomatic treatment of, 1263
 symptomatology of, 1252
 synonyms of, 1230
 treatment of, 1262
 Pellote, 154
Pelodera pellio, 518
Pelor filamentosum, 206-7
 filamentosus, 280
 japonicum, 214
 Pemphigus, 1460
 contagiosus, **1460**, 1471
 foliaceus, 1628
 vegetans, 1628
 Penciliosis of hairy parts, 1512
 Pendjeh ulcer, 1549
Penicillium, 800-802
 barbæ, **802**, 1512
 glaucum, 800
 montoyai, 801, 1514, 1517
Pentastoma denticulatum, 617
 moniliformis, 621
 proboscideum, 623
 tænioides, 617

- Pentastomum*, 618
 Pepper, black, 155
Perca fluviatilis, 499
 Perchloride of mercury, 146
 Periblast, 281
 Perical, 1123, 1138, **1527**
 Pericarditis, 1416
 Pericoma, 681
 Perilymphangitis, **541**, 1437
 Periodic variations, temperature, 36
 Periodical winds, 46-7
 Period-incubation, 1010
 Peripheral neuritis, 1388
Periplaneta americana, 505
 orientalis, 505
 Periplast, **280**, 292
Perisporiaceæ, 800
 Peritonitis, 997
 Perleche, 1640
 Perl's case (*eimeria*), 422
 Permanent winds, 46
 Perneiras (Brazil), 1208
 Pernicious anæmia, 131
 fever, algide, 882
 amaurotic, 884
 aphasic, 884
 ataxic, 885
 bulbar, 885
 cerebellar, 885
 choleraic, 885
 comatose, 883
 delirious, 884
 diaphoretic, 882
 dysenteric, 885
 eclamptic, 884
 gastro-intestinal, 885
 hæmorrhagic, 883
 hemiplegic, 884
 local symptoms of, 883
 meningitic, 884
 scarlatiniform, 883
 subtertian, 882
 tetanic, 884
 with cardiac symptoms, 886
 with pulmonary symptoms, 886
 malaria, 125
Perillopus, 355
 Peru, balsam of, 949
 Peruvian wart, 1196
 Pes febricitans, 1138
 Peste, die, 1028
 la, 1028
 Pestilences, 4
 as punishments, 3
 Pestis, 1028
 americana, 1004
 minor, 1435
 Peyottl, 154
Pfeifferia princeps, 421
 Pfeiffer's glandular fever, 1093
 Pfeiffer's reaction, 1377
 test, 1351
Phacelia infundibuliformis, 116
Phænocystes, 433
Phagedæna tropica, 1561
 Phagocytosis, 262
 Phanerogamia, 756
Phasianus colchicus, **303**, 307
Phauloixodes, 598
 rufus, 600
Pheophyceæ, 756
Philæmatomyia insignis, 709
Philæmon grandidieri, 575
 pungens, 575
 Philippine Islands' arrow-poisons, 167
 Phlebitis of the cord, 1425
Phlebotomus, 68
 duboscqui, 683
 papatasii, 683, 993
Phlegmasia malabarbarica, 1138
 Phlyctenular keratitis, 1651
Phonergates bicoloripes, 193, 577, **640**
Phopalopsylla, 748
Phora femorata, 724
Phoridæ, 699
 Phosphoridrosis, 1605
Phoxinus lævis, 345, 346
 Phrenitis, 126
 Phthiriasis, 1578
Phthirius, 634
 inguinalis, 634
 pubis, 634
 Phthisis, 108, 110-14, 1122
 abominalis, 1325
Phycomycetes, 760
 Phyla, 264
 Phylum *Arthropoda*, 182
Physalia pelagica, 180
Physaloptera caucasica, 1292
 mordens, 1292
Physalopteridæ, 521
 Physic nut, 151
 Physical causes of disease, 123
 conditions, 20
 heat regulation, 84
Physoclisti, 206
Physogaster larvarum, 613
Physostigma venenosum, 160
Physostomi, 206
Phytomonadina, 283
Phytomonas, 354
Phytobdella meyeri, 575
 moluccensis, 575
 Pian-bois, 1550
Pica pica, 307
 Piedra (Columbia), 1520
 nostras, 1521
 ponsona, 249
 Pigmentation, 103
 Pigmy tribe, 164
 Pigs, poisoning of, 174

- Pike, 344, 347, 499
 Pilocarpin nitrate, 157, 1337
 Pimple, 1171
 Pin worm, 548
 Pineapple, unripe, 155
 Pinta, 1512
 aetiology of, 1513
 black, 1517
 climatology of, 1513
 cultures of, 1516
 definition of, 1512
 diagnosis of, 1518
 history of, 1513
 inoculation experiments in, 1516
 predisposing causes of, 1516
 prognosis in, 1520
 red, 1518
 references, 1526
 symptomatology of, 1517
 synonyms of, 1512
 treatment of, 1520
 varieties of, 772
 clinical, of, 1517
 white, 1518
Piper methysticum, 154
 nigrum, L., 155
Piperaceæ, 153
 Pirit, 4
Piroplasma, 19, 357, **368**
 annulatum, 373
 bigeminum, 373
 canis, 369
 donovani, 18
 equi, 375
 mutans, 575
 ovis, 373
 pitheci, 373
 theileri, 374
Pisces, **204**, 215 ref.
Piscicicola, 572
Piscidia erythrina, 167-8
Piscidin, 168
Pisciola geometra, 346-7
 Pita (Bowditch Island), 1486
Pittosporæ, 168
Pittosporum densiflorum, 168
 samboni, 1630
 Pituri, 154
 Piturine, 154
 Pityriasis nigra, **1502**, 1578
 rubra, 1630
 pilaris, 1632
 versicolor, **1497**, 1628
 flava, 1497
Pityrosporum, 836-7
Placobdella, 572
 catenigera, **423**, 430-1
Plagiotomimidæ, 451
 Plague, 10, 11, 12, 15, 19, 113-14, **1028**
 aetiology of, 1030
 Black's methods, 1043
 Plague, climatology of, 114, 1030
 definition of, 1028
 diagnosis of, 1039
 epidemiology of, 1028
 fiery serpents, 9
 history of, 1028
 morbid anatomy of, 1035
 oriental, 10
 pathology of, 1034
 prognosis in, 1040
 prophylaxis in, 1041
 references, 1045
 sequelæ of, 1039
 symptomatology of, 1036
 synonyms of, 1028
 treatment of, 1040
 vaccines for, 1044
 varieties of, 1038
 Planets, conjunction of, 3
Planobdella, 575
 molesta, 575
 quoyi, 575
Planorbis marginatus, 481
 Plants, native knowledge of, 4
Plasmodia, 978
Plasmodidæ, 282-3, 294, **378**
Plasmodium, 378
 bovis, 388
 brasilianum, 389
 canis, 388
 cynomolgi, 388
 danilewskyi, 387
 equi, 388
 golgi, 385
 inui, 387
 kochi, 387
 malariae, 383, **385**, 847, 849
 lesions, 868
 quartanum, 385
 tertianum, 383
 var. *quartana*, 385
 var. *quotidianæ*, 389
 pitheci, 387
 relicum, 387
 vivax, 262-3-4, **383**, 847-9, 869
 876
 lesions, 876
 ziemanni, 303
 other varieties, 389
Plasmodromata, 265-6
Plasmogamy, 278
Plasmotomy, **261**, 433. See also
 Schizogony
Plastin, 259
Platodes, 458
Platterbsenkrankheit, 173
Platurus, 222
Platydbella soleæ, 432
Platyhelminia, 181, 202 ref., **458**, 487
 ref.
Platyhelminthes, 458

- Platyhelminthic dysenteries, 1374
 Plehn's reaction, 919
Pleistophora, 434
Plerocercoid, 493
Plerocercus proliferum, 500
 Pleurisy, 997, 1434
 Pleuritic pernicious fever, 886
Pleurococcus beigeli, 835
Plica, 1639
Plica polonica, 1579
 Plimmer's salt, 981
Plotosus arab, 206-9
 Plumbagin, 156
Plumbago rosea, L., **156**, 157, 1544
 zeylanica, L., 148, **156**
 Pneumomycosis, 165
 Pneumonia, 109, 111-12, 889
 malarial, 889
 Podagona, 576
 Podelkoma, 1447
 Poisoning, animal food, 170
 cattle, 159
 criminal, 146
 jatropha, 169
 lacquer, **168**, 1542-4,
 snake, 216
 vegetal food, 172
 Poison-foot (New Zealand), 154
 -ivy (U.S.A.), 168
 -pea (Australia), 159
 Poisons, accidental, 157
 aphrodisiacs, 147, **156**
 arrow, 161
 d'épreuve, 160
 for abortion, 147
 habit, 147, **153**
 homicidal, 147
 infanticide, 147
 inorganic, 146
 mammalian, 168
 on weapons, 161
 organic, 147
 rat, 168
 stupefying, 147
 suicidal, 147, **152**
 to simulate injuries, 148
 used against man, 145
 in fishing, 167
 in hunting, 167
 in trade, 168
 Poisonous foods, 170
 plants, rhus group, 1542
 euphorbia group, 1545
 urtica group, 1545
 Poisson-Pearson formula, 857
 Poisson's formula, 857
Polagarynum, 438
 Polarity of a parasite, 310
Pollaplasiogonei, 494
Polycystidea, 419
Polydesmida, 575
Polydesmus complanatus, 576, 1293
Polymastigidae, 289, **292**
Polymastigina, 183, **289**, 290
Polymastiginea, 283
Polymastigote, 280
Polymastix, 292
Polymicrolipomatosis, 1599
Polymitus, 378
 Polymitus stage, 381
 Polyneuritis endemica, 83, **1208**
Polypapilloma tropicum, 1170
Polysporea, 433
Polysporocystidae, 421
Polysporogenea, 434
Polystoma proboscideum, 623
 teanoides, 617
Polystomea, 461
 Polyvalent sera, 244
Pompholyx, 1607
Ponera (ant), 197
 Ponos, **362**, 1403, 1414
Pontobdella, 572
 muricata, **316**, 345
 Poön arrow-poison, 166
Populus spinosa, 156
 Porocephalosis, **623**, 1120-2
Porocephalus, **618**, 1121
 armillatus, **618**, 813, 1329
 moniliformis, 624, 813
 Porokeratosis, 1632
Porospora gigantea, 419
Porosporidae, 419
 Port Swettenham, prophylaxis, 905
 Porters' lipomata, 1599
Porthesia chrysorrhæa, 197
 Portuguese man-o'-war, 180
Posadasia esferiforme, 772
 Post-flagellate stage, 326
 -malarial anæmia, 868
 -mortem decomposition, 172
 Potass. iodid. in yaws, 1193
 permanganate in arrow-poison,
 162-3
 in fish-venom, 206
 in snake-bite, 247
 Pou d'agouti (Guiana), 611
 Pre-flagellate stage, 326
 Pregnancy, superstitions of, 4
 Premature birth, 112
 Prematurity, 109
 Pressure, atmospheric, 42
 Prickly heat, 1605, 1607
 Priests, 3
 Primitive knowledge of medicine, 3
Primulaceæ, 1545
Prionurus amoureuni, 183
 citrinus, 183
 Prison fever, 1093
Proboscidae, wounds from, 140
Proflagellata, 283, **391**
 Proglottides, 490

- Promitosis, 260
 Prostatic abscess, 1421
 hypertrophy, 1421
Prostigmata, 578, **611**
 Prostratio thermica, 133
 Protargol, 1556, 1567
Protarthropoda, 575
 Protogonoplasm (Calkins), 438
 Protein in diet, 80
Proteles cristatus, 619
Proteosoma, 282, 378
 grassii, 387
Proteroglypha, 219
 Protomerite, 418
Protomonadina, 283, **284**, 286
 Protokaryon, 259
Protozoa, 179, 256, **257**
 and disease, 264
 classification of, 264
 incertæ sedis, 433, **438**
 life-history of, 260
 parasitic, discovery of, 15
 pathogenicity of, 257, **264**
 power of movement, 260
 references, 279
 reproduction in, 260
 Protozoic disease, 1507
Prowazekia, 286
 asiatica, 286-8
 cruzi, 286, 289
 lacertæ, 286
 parva, 286, 289
 trilhesii, 156
 urinaria, 286-7
 weinbergi, 286, 289
 Prurigo, 1627
Pseudaspes cana, L., 431
Pseudechis, 220, **217**
 immunity, 244
Pseudelaps, 220
 Pseudoactinomycosis, 1536
 Pseudo-Addison's disease, malarial,
 888
 -Banti's disease, 965
 colloid of the lips, 1640
 dysenteries, 1396
 dysentery, 1377
 gounod of Brumpt, 1445
 intestinal sand, 1292
 leukæmia, 109-10, **1416**
 -kala-azar, 963
 mycetoma, 1536
 parasites, 256
 pelade of Brocq, 1640
 tuberculosis aspergillina, 806
Pseudochirus peregrinus, 441
Pseudocostalis, 670
Pseudofersia, 736
Pseudophyllidea, 494, **498**
Pseudorhabditis, 519
 stercoralis, 519
Pseudoscorpiones, 576
Pseudostrongyles, 561
Psilosis linguae et mucosæ intestini,
 1325
 pigmentosa (Barbadoes), 1332
Psittacosis, **1098**, 1112
Psoralea corylifolia, 156
 Psoriasis, 1630
Psorospermium cuniculi, 421
 Psorosperms, 433
Psychoda phælaenoides, **681**, 725
Psychodidæ, **680**, 687
 Psychoneurosis maidica, 1230
 Psychophysical effects of climate, 57
 Psylli of Africa, 243
Pterois antennata, Bl., 206-8, **213**
Pteroptus verpertilionis, 350
Pterostichus niger, 565
 Ptomaine-poisoning, 172
Ptychobothriidæ, 498
 Public prophylaxis, plague, 1041
Puccinia rosea, 836
 Puente, 1570
 Puerperal convulsions, 110-11
 diarrhœa of Bengal, 1433
 fever, 1426
 Puff-adder, 223
Pulex, 749, **750**
 ater, 751
 brasiliensis, 752
 cheopis, 572
 dugesii, 751
 fasciatus, 340-1
 gallinæ, 579
 goniocephalus, 342
 hominis, 751
 irritans, 357, 364, 501, 739, 749,
 750-1, 1033
 minimans cutem penetrans, 743
 minutissimus nigricans, 743
 murinus, 752
 pallidus, 752
 penetrans, 743
 philippinensis, 752
 serraticeps, 364, 529
 simulans, 751
 vulgaris, 751
Pulicidæ, 739, **746**
 Pulicide, 1042
Pulicina, 746
 Pulmonary distomatosis, 1114
 Pulvis comitissæ, 12
 Punaise de Miana, **590**, 949
 Punkahs, 905
Pupipara, **735**, 738 ref.
 Purgatives (abortion), 155
 Purpura, 1626
Purpura variolosa, 1103
 Puru (Bornea), 1170
 Purulent folliculitis of the legs, 1471
 Pyans (Carib), 1171

- Pycnosoma putoyium*, 354, 708, **730**
 Pyelitis, 1421
Pygiopsylla, 747, 749
 Pyogenic infections, 1625
 Pyonephrosis, 1421
 Pyosis mansonii, 1460
 palmaris, **1466**, 1471
 tropica, **1463**, 1471
Pyrenomyces, 810
Pyrethrophorus, 666, **669**, 854
 ardensis, 665, 670
 aureosquamiger, 670
 austeni, 670
 chaudoyei, 669
 cinereus, 670
 costalis, 529, 665, 669, 854, 1126
 elegans, 670
 jeyporensis, 669
 leucosphyrus, 670
 marshallii, 670
 minimus, 669
 myzomyfacies, 669
 nigrifasciatus, 669
 nursei, 669
 palestinensis, 669
 pitchfordi, 665
 sergentii, 669
 superpictus, 669
Pyroplasmosis hominis, 940
Pyrosoma, 368
 bigeminum, 373
 Pythogenic fever, 1046
Pyxinia frenzeli, 418
- Quarantine, Mosaic, 10
 Quartan fever, 10, **853**
 double, 11
 rarer forms of, 876
 fevers, 873
 Quartana duplex, 873
 simplex, 873
 triplex, 873
Querquedula crecca, 307
 Quicklime (abortion), 155
 Quigila (Brazil), 1619
 Quina-quina, 12
 Quinine amaurosis, 885
 amblyopia, 893
 Bacelli's formula, 896
 cacodylate, 901, 1089
 duration of treatment, 899
 effects on man, 892
 on malarial parasites, 893,
 899, 908
 Giemsa's mixture, 896
 hæmoglobinuria, 911
 in heat-stroke, 132
 intravenous injection of, 897
 method of administration, 895
 Nocht's method, 899, **922**
 salts, 891, 899
- Quinine sterilettes, 897
 time of administration, 894
 Quirica, 1513
 Quotidian fever, 10
 Qushuf, 1230
- Rabbit, experiments on, 124
Rabelaisia philippinensis, 167
 Race classification, 61
 Races, tropical, 59
 Radesyge, 1171
 Radiant heat, 30
 Radiation, solar, 34, 36
 terrestrial, 35, 36
Radiolaria, 267
 Radiotherapy, 1573
Raii, 206
Raillettiella, 617
 Rain-belt, 55
 Rainfall, 55
 Colombo, 38
Raja punctata, 344
Rana angolensis, 344
 esculenta, 292, 321, 344, 432
 speciosum, 321
 temporaria, 292, 321
 theileri, 344
 trinodis, 321
Randia dumetorum, 155, 168
 Rangoon local fever, 1086
Ranunculaceæ, 148, 162, 167
 Rapeau de mer, 209
Rasahus biguttatus, 643
 Rat, 755
 bite fever, 1099
 desert, 186
 destruction of, 755
 flea, 191, 339, 340, **748**
 leprosy-like disease in, 1148
 louse, 339
 poisons, 168
 Ratin, 755
 Rattlesnakes, 223
Rauwolfia serpentina, 148
 Rawrath, 1556
 Raynaud's disease, 178
 Reaction, Cammidge's, 1331
 Gmelin's, 919
 Lowenthal's, 929
 Marechal's, 919
 Plehn's, 919
 Schmidt's, 1331
 Stephens and Christopher's, 919
 Recessus intermesocolicus trans-
 versa, 1291
 Rectal bilharziosis, 1398
 irrigations, 1393
 Rectitis, epidemic gangrenous, 1401
 Rectum, temperature in, 86
 Red buck, trypanosomes in, 343
 Red-leg tick, 600

- Reduviidæ*, 193
Reduviidæ, 578, **641**, 985
Reduviolus, 643
Reduvius personatus, 641
 Red-water fever, 19, 58, **373**
 Regulation of heat in man, 87
Reighardia, 617
 Relapsing fever, 10, 108, 114, **925**
 African, 934
 American, 930
 European, 925
 Indian, 931
 Religion, medicine a part of, 3, 4
 Remittent fever, 111, 847, 925, 1046
 bilious, 881
 subtertian fever, 881
 Renal coma, 131
 disease, 1421
 Repair of tissues, 79
Reptilia, 216
 trypanosomes of, 343
 Resorcin, 1495
 Respiration in snake-bite, 248
 effects of atmospheric temperature, 87
 Respiratory organs, diseases of, 1274
 Rest-body, **262**, 300, 379, 381
Rhabditis, 518
 genitalis, 518
 niellyi, 518, 522
Rhabdonema, 519
 intestinale, 519
 strongyloides, 519
 Rheumatism, 1093
 Rhinal chilopodiasis, **1280**
 myiasis, **1280**, 1283
 Rhinitis nervosa, 1274
 spastica vasomotoria, **1274-75**, 1290
 Rhinoceri, wounds from, 140
Rhinomyza, 697
Rhinoeladium. See *Sporotricha*, 111
 Rhinopharyngitis mutilans, 1275-76, 1290 ref.
 Rhinophyma, 1632
Rhinoplephalus, 220
 Rhinoscleroma, 1633, 1635
 Rhinosporidiosis, 1290 ref.
Rhinosporidium, 437
Rhipicentor, 602
 bicornis, 586
Rhipicephalæ, 597
Rhipicephalina, 597
Rhipicephaline, 598
Rhipicephalus, 598
 bilenus, 599
 decoloratus, 376
 ellipticum, 606
 sanguineus, 345
 senegalensis, 600
Rhipicephalus. See *Eurhipicephalus*
Rhipidostoma, 606
Rhipistoma leachi, 606
Rhipistomidæ, 597
 Koch, 597
Rhizoglyphus parasiticus, 615
 Rhizoids, 760
Rhizomastigina, 280, 282
Rhizomucor, 763, 764
Rhizophora mangle, 1168
 Rhizoplast, 260, 280
Rhizopoda, 266-67
Rhizopus, 764, 769
Rhizostoma cuvieri, 180
 pulini, 180
Rhododendron arboreum, 148
Rhodomyses erubescens, 830
 Rhus group of plants,
 lobata, 168
 pumila, 168
 toxicodendron, 168
 venenata, 168
 verniciifera, **1542**, 168.
Rhynchelaps, 220
Rhynchoidomonas, 350, **354**
 luciliæ, 354
Rhynchoporon columbæ, 590
 penetrans, 739
Rhynchoprion, 589
 Oken, 743
 penetrans, 743
 persicum, 590
 spinosum, 594
Rhynchostomi, 576
Rhyncobdellida, 572
Rhyncoprionidæ, 743
 Rice as food, 80
 Rice-water, 1337
Ricinus communis, 148, **158**
 Rig Veda, 6, 1147
 Ringworm, 772
 black-dotted, 781
 Risipola Lombarda, 1230
 Roble's fever, 1085
 Rocky-Mountain fever, 378, 588, 602, 604, **940**, 950, 1095, 1200
 Rodent ulcer, 1633, 1635
 Rogers' canula, **1353**, 1412
 Roman fever, 847
 Roosbeen von Surinam, 1138
 Root-fly, 724
Rophoteira, 739
 Rosa mal de la, 1230
 Rose, the, 1545
 Ross's black spores, 383
 coefficient jelly, 408
Rubiaceæ, **154**, 165
 Rückfallfieber, 925
 Rudd (fish), 346
 Ruhr, 1361

- Sablier crepitans*, 152
 Sabouraud's maltose agar, 1516
Saccharomyces, 15, **767**, 768, 769. See also *Monilia* and *Pityrosporum*
albicans, 821
Busse, 770
linguæ pilosæ, 770
ranulatus,
samboni, **768**, 1512
Saccharomycetes, 766
Saccharomycosis epidermica, 1513
hominis, 1504
Saccobranchus fossilis, 206, **210**, 345
 Safat, 1170
 Sahafati, 1170
 Sakais tribes, Malacca, 166
 Salamandarin, 214
 Salamanders, 214
 Salek (Persian), 1548
 Salerno, School of, 12
 Salicylic spirit lotion, 1597, **1607**
 Saliva reaction, 1023
Salmo fario, 321, 344, 347
umbla, 499
 Salol, 172
 Salvarsan, 21, **1191**, 899
 Samaveda, 6
 Samoan eye disease, 1650
 Sanbilang (fish), 209
 Sandwith's bald tongue, 1256
 Sand-fly, 684
 intestinal, 1291
 Sandworm (disease), 116
 Sanitation, ancient Indian, 8
 importance of, 104
 improvement of, 21
 in malaria, 908
Sapindaceæ, 168
Sapindus varak, 168
Sapium insigne, 148
Sapondaceæ, 152
Sapotaceæ, 154
 Saraat, 1170
Sarcocèle d'Egypte, 1138
Sarcocystidæ, 258
Sarcocystin, 179
Sarcocystis, **434**, 436
 tenellæ, 179, 436
 bubali, 436
 other varieties, 436
Sarcodinia, 265-67
Sarconissus kolenati, 608
Sarcophaga, 337, **706**
 affinis, 707, 1293
 carnaria, 706, 1293
 chrysostoma, 707
 hæmalodes, 707, 926, 1293
 hæmorrhoidalis, 354, 707, 1293
 magnifica, 707, 1293
 trivialis, 724
 wohljahrli, 707
Sarcophagidæ, 706
Sarcophila latifrons, 707
 meigeni, 707
 ruralis, 707
Sarcopsylla, 743
Sarcopsyllidæ, 743
Sarcoptes, 614
 minor, 614
 scabei, 1153
 var. *hominis*, 614
Sarcoptidæ, **614-15**, 626
Sarcoptoida, 578
Sarcoptoidæ, 614
Sarcosporidiotoxin, 264
Sardinella neohowii, 171
 Sarmes (Congo), 1561
 Sassafras, oil of, 950
 'Satinwood,' 1546
 Sattler's case (*eimeria*), 422
 Satyriasis, 1157
 Scabies, 1591
Scalophaga stercoraria, 724
 Scalp, elephantiasis of, 1146
Scardinius erythrophthalmus, 345
 Scarlatiniform pernicious fever, 883
 Scarlet fever, **441**, 1093, 1101
Scaurus striatus, 503
Scenofinidæ, 699
 Schamamismus, 1455
 Scheer, van der, fever, 1090
Schinus molle, 1206
Schistosoma, 481
 cattoi, 486
 hæmatobium, **481**, 488, 1124, 1417, 1421
 japonicum, 481, **486**, 488, 1086, 1116, 1374, 1404
 mansoni, 481, **484**, 488, 978, 1374, 1398, 1404, 1417
 (?) Christophers and Stephens, 486
 (?) Salome and Belli, 487
 Schistosomiasis, intestinal, 483, **486**
 liver in, 1414
Schistosomidæ, 461, **481**
Schiurus griseimanus, 389
Schizocystis, 418
Schizogregarinida, 418
 Schizogony, 257, **262**, 293, 379
 Schizont, **261**, 379
Schizopora, 647
Schizotrypanum cruzi, 307-8, 313, 1327
 Schlesinger's test for urobilin, 863
 Schmidt's test, urobilin, 1331
 Schönlein's purpura, 1626
 Schools of Tropical Medicine, 20
 Schüffner's dots, 264, 384, 865
 Schwarzwasserfieber, 913
 Scilletin, 150
Scleroparei, 206

- Sclerostoma duodenale*, 554
Sclerotium beigelianum, 835
Scolex, 488
Scolopendra cingulata, 192
 gigantea, 192
 heros, 192
 morsitans, 192
Scolopendridæ, 192, **642**
Scopulariopsis, **841**, 1540
Scorbuto alpino, 1230
Scorpena diabolus, 206, 213
 grandicornis, 206
 porcus, 207-8
 scrofa, 208, **212**
Scorpænidæ, 206
Scorpionidea, **182**, 576
Scorpion arrow-poison, 161
 bites, 190
 venom, 184
Scorpions, 182
Scott's dressing, 1026
Scrotum, elephantiasis of the, 1143
Scuterigeridæ, 624
Scutigera coleoptrata, **624**, 1293
Scyllium canicula, 368
Sea-snake. See *Enhydrina*
Seborrhœic affections, 1630
Segestra perfida, 187
Selachii, 206
Semites, 64
Semnopithecus priamus, 285
Sen-iang-hoa, 156
Sepedon hæmochates, 220, **222**, 240
Sepsidæ, 700
Septic blood arrow-poison, 166
 pemphigus, 1628
 ulcers, 1570
Septicæmia, Bruce's, 1018
 melitensis, 1018
Septicæmias, enteric-like, 1091
Sera, antivenene, 244
 polyvalent, 245
Sergentella hominis, 441
Sero-phthisis perniciosa endemica, 1208
Serous membranes, diseases of, 1434
Serranus outabali, 207
Serum, antitetanic, 162
 Brazil's, 245
 Calmette's, 248
 Indian Pasteur Institute, 248
 Kitajima's, 245
 Kruse's, 1391
 Lamb's, 245
 Lister Institute, 1391
 Lustig's, 1041
 Noguchi's, 245
 Pasteur Institute, 1391
 polyvalent, 1391
 Shiga's, 1391
 Tidswell's, 245
 Serum, Yersin's, 1039
Serut-flies, 689
Seven days' fever, 925, **995**, 1001
Sewage systems, 1394
Sexual cycle, 293
 intercourse, 1127, 1152, 1572
Shark, traumatism, 141
Shashitsu, 945
Sheep, disease of, 319, 337
 -rot, 470
Shiga's serum, 1391
Shima Mushi disease, 945
Shingles, 1629
Shlipada, 1138
Shone system (sewage), 1394
Sialis lutaria, 565
Sibbens (Scotland), 1171
Sierra fever, 847
Siesta, midday, 104
Sigmoidoscopy, 1372
Sign, Faget's, 1011
Signatera, 170
Silkworm disease, 14, 434
Siluridæ, 206
Silvanus surinamensis, 201
Silvius, 695
Simaruba bark, 1393
 officinalis, 1371
Simia satyrus, 387
Simonea folliculorum, 616
Simple continued fever, 1085
 fever, 111-12
 fibroma, 1632
 quartan fever, 873
 subtertian fever, 879
 tertian fever, 876
Simpson's method, 1043
Simulidæ, **684**, 687, 1152
Siphonapteriasis, 1580
Siphonophora, 347
Siphunculata, 193, **631**
Siriasis, 11, 124
Sirocco, 50
Sisturus, 223
 miliarius, 223
 ravus, 223
Sitotoxismus, 172, **1211**
Sivvens (Scotland), 1171
Skin, aspergillosis of, 1512
 diseases, 1460
 cosmopolitan, 1625
 effects of light on, 100
 tuberculide of, 769
 tumours of the, 1632
Sleeping dropsy, 966
 sickness, 16, 319, 715, **966**, 990
 Bureau, 991
 vide Trypanosomiasis
Slipada, 1447
Slow or Lent fever, 1046

- Smallpox, 8, 114, 1093, 1101
 West Indian modified, 440,
 1101
Smithia Franca, 350, 376
 Smooth leprosy, 1157
 Snail, venomous, 201
 Snake, Australian, 239
 copperhead, 223
 coral, 222
 egg-eating, 219
 hooded, 219
 Indian rat, 219
 poison, excretion of, 242
 rattle-, 243
 spitting, 240
 stones, 388
 striking of, 223
 water moccasin, 219, 223
 Snake-bite, 114, 216
 diagnosis of, 245
 treatment of, 246
 Snake-venom, 159, 225
 arrow-poison, 161
 effects of, 237
 immunity from, 243
 minimum lethal dose, 236
 Snakes, geographical distribution,
 223
 Soamin, 979
Solanaceæ, 156
 Solano, 50
 Solar erythema, 100
 radiation, tables, 34
 Solaro cloth, 105
Solea vulgaris, 432
Solifuga, 576
 Somatic tæniasis, 1440, 1534
Somomyia montevidensis, 728
 Sonnenstich, 126, 319, 338
 Souma (disease), 691
 South America, races of, map, 76
 South American trypanosomiasis,
 985, 991
 South-West monsoon, 45
 Sparganosis, 1440
Sparganum, 495, 499
 baxteri, 512, 500
 mansoni, 499, 512
 prolifer, 500, 512
Spargosis fibroareolaris, 1138
 Sparrow, Java, 343
 Spedalskhed, 1147
 Speech, scanning, 884
 Spermatocord, suppurative phle-
 bitis of, 1429
 Spermatozoid, 760
Spermophilus columbianus, 941
Sphærocystes, 419
Sphærogyna ventricosa, 613
Sphærospora, 433
 Spiders, 182, 187
 Spiders, arrow-poison, 161
 venom, 188
Spigelia anthelmia, 152, 1402
Spirillum duttoni, 18, 399
 fever, 925
 See also *Spiroschaudinna*
Spirochæta, 190, 282-3, 391, 393, 395,
 405
 classification, 394
 illustrations of, 393
 of relapsing fevers, 118
 aboriginalis, 1572
 acuminata, 1173
 anodontæ, 395
 bronchialis, 1283
 duttoni, 395, 399, 587, 593-4,
 925, 934
 gallinarum, 403
 macaci, 403
 marchouxi, 587, 590, 949
 obermeyer, 398, 926
 pallida, 18, 405
 pallidula, 410
 pertenuis, 18, 410
 plicitalis, 391, 395, 1562
 recurrentis, 398, 925-6
Spirochætacea, 391
Spirochætæ, spreaders of, 586
Spirochætæ, 258, 265
 Spirochætic dysentery, 1374
Spirochætidae, 391
 Spirochætosis, bronchial, 1170,
 1283
Spiroflagellata, 391
Spironema, 405
Spiroptera hominis, 523
Spiroschaudinna, 638
Spiroschaudinna, 391-2, 395
 aboriginalis, 402
 anserina, 403
 berbera, 402
 bronchialis, 402
 carteri, 401, 705
 duttoni, 18, 395-9, 401
 equi, 404
 granulosa, 404
 macaci, 403
 marchouxi, 395, 397, 403
 neveuixii, 404
 novyii, 397, 400-1
 ovina, 404
 phagedenio, 403
 recurrentis, 18, 392-8
 rossii, 397, 400
 Sambon, 302
 schaudinni, 402
 theileri, 404
 vincenti, 402
Spirulina, 393
 Spleen, diseases of, 1420
 rate, 857

- Splenomegaly, tropical, 18, 357, 640
afebrile, 965
 Sporangium, 759
 Spore-formation, 262. See Sporogony
 Sporidia, 282
 Sporo-agglutination, 759
Sporocephalum roseum, 836
 Sporocyst, 470
 Sporogony, 257, **263**, 264, 293, 381
 Sporont, 263
Sporophora, 757
 Sporoplasm (Minchin), 418
 Sporotrichosis, 832, **1509**
 aetiology of, 1509
 diagnosis of, 1510
 histopathology of, 1510
 symptomatology of, 1510
 treatment of, 1512
Sporothrix. See *Sporotrichum*
Sporotricha, **831-4**. See also No-cardia
 minutissimum, 819
 schenki, **831**, 1504
Sporotrichum beurmanni, **832**, 1510,
 1534
 dermatodes, 810
 furfur, 837
 indicum, **833**, 1510
 mentagrophytes, 783
Sporozoa, 265
 Sporozoites, 263, 1549
Sporozoon furunculorum, 360
 Spotted fever, 1093
 of Idaho, 940
 of Montana, 940
 of Rocky Mountains, 377,
 940
 aetiology of, 942
 climatology of, 941
 complications in, 944
 definition of, 940
 diagnosis of, 944
 history of, 940
 pathology of, 943
 symptomatology of, 943
 synonyms of, 943
 prognosis in, 945
 prophylaxis in, 945
 treatment of, 945
 Spring catarrh, 1650
 Sprue, 20, 113, **1325**, 1386
 aetiology of,
 climatology of,
 complications in, 1331
 Crombie's molar ulcer in, 1338
 definition of, 1325
 diagnosis of, 1332
 diet in, 1333
 faeces in, 1330
 Sprue, history of, 1325
 morbid anatomy of, 1328
 pathology of, 1327
 prognosis in, 1332
 prophylaxis in, 1339
 references, 1341
 symptomatology of, 1328
 synonyms of, 1325
 treatment of, 1302
 urine in, 1330
Squalius cephalis, 345
 Squirrel, Indian, 342
 Kathiawar palm-, 430
 Stable-fly, 711
Staphylococcus albus, 1550
 aureus, 1468
 pyogenicus aureus, 1130, 1460
 Statistical error, 858
Stealozoon folliculorum, 616
Stegomyia africana, 673
 amesii, 674
 annulirostris, 672
 argenteomaculata, 673
 calopus, 19, 672, 1004, 1007,
 1008, 1014
 crassipes, 674
 fasciatus, 19, 342, 345, 361, 377,
 529, 534, 672, 1004, 1008
 frater, 672, 1008
 grantii, 673
 mediopunctata, 673
 minuta, 674
 nigeria, 672
 perisketa, 672
 poweri, 673
 pseudonivea, 673
 pseudo-scutellans, 523, 527, 531,
 1124, 1126
 punctolateralis, 673
 scutellaris, 672
 simpsoni, 673
 thomsoni, 673
 W-alba, 672
 Steiner's tumours, 1537
Stemphylium polymorphum, 836
Stenophora, 419
 Stenosis, cicatricial, 1388
Stephanocircus, 748
 dasyuri, 749
 simsoni, 749
 thomasi, 749
Stephanopharynginae, 462
Stephanolepsis hispidus, 171
 Stephansort, malaria in, 904
 Stephens and Christophers' reaction,
 920
Sterigmata, 760
Sterigmatocystis, 806
 nigra, 1534
Sterigmatocystomycoses, 806
 Sternberg's mixture, 1013

- Stethomyia*, 666
Stigmatogaster subterraneus, 625, 1293
 Stiles' pamphlet on nomenclature, 256
 Stimulants in snake-bite, 248-9
 Stings, 12, 1581
 Stomatitis, 1332
Stomoxys, 708-9
Stomoxys, 342, 529, **709, 711, 737** ref.
 bilineata, 710
 bouffordi, 710
 brunnipes, 710
 calcitrans, 332, **711-12, 724**
 geniculatus, 332
 glauca, 710
 inornata, 710
 korogwensis, 710
 limbata, 710
 nigra, 711
 omega, 710
 stellata, 710
 siliens, 710
 tæniatus, 710
 Storms, 50
 Stovain, 1337
 Straits Settlements, diseases in, 112
 Straw itch, 1590
Streblidæ, 736
Strepsiceros capensis, 333
Streptothrix. See also *Nocardia*
 actinomyces, 813
 eppingeri, 815
 færsteri, 815-16
 hominis, 819
 pyogenes, 1130
 leproides, 1149, 1168
 maduræ, **816**, 1527
 mycetomi, **808**, 1527
 rosenbachi, 815
 spitzi, 813
 Stricture, 1426
Strombodes jenneri, 440
Strongylas gigas, 562
 renalis, 562
Strongyles, 549, **552-4**
Strongylidæ, 548
Strongyloides, 519
 intestinalis, 447 ref.
 stercoralis, 519, 978, 1293, 1295
 Strongyloidosis, 1295
Strongylus bronchialis, 539
 gibsoni, 1293
 gigas, 562
 renalis, 562
 species of, 551-9
Strophanthus arrow-poison, 163, 164
 barika, 164
 ciabe, 164
 glabris, 164
Strophanthus hispidus, 164
 kambe, 164
 lanosus, 164
 Strychnine, 166, 172
 in arrow-poisons, 162
 in heat stroke, 132
 in snake-bite, 248-9
Strychnos, 147, 162
 castelnicæana, 167
 colubrina, 152
 crevauxii, 167
 icaia, **160**, 165
 ignatia, 152
 nux vomica, **152**, 168
 tieuté, 165-6
 toxifera, 167
 wallichiana, 165-6
 Stupefying, poisons for, 147, **156**
Stygeromyia, 708, **713**
 maculosa, 714
 sanguinaria, 714
Stylorhynchidæ, 419
 Subcutaneous myiasis, 1581
 Subtertian fevers, 879
 irregular, 881
 pernicious, 882
 remittent, 881
 malarial fevers, 853
 simple, 879
 Subtropical belts, 47
 zone, 30
 Sudamina papulosa, 1605
 Sudan, cattle sickness in, 319
 Suicidal poisons, 147, **152**, 155
 Suidæ, wounds from, 140
 Sumerians, 4
 Sun burn, 100
 stroke, 126
 traumatism, 126
 Superbina, 150
 Supernatural causes of disease, 3
 Superstitutions, caul, 4
 Ceylon, 3
 of child-birth, 4
 of pregnancy, 4
 West African, 3
 Suppurative conditions, 404
 corditis, 1429
 Suprarenal hæmorrhage, acute, 1417
 disease, 1417
 Surra, 17, 319, 320, **331**
 Surya, 6
Sus scrofa ferox, 342-3, 563, 711
 Susruta, 7
 Sutika, 1433
 Sweating, offensive, 1604
Sycorax silacea, 681
 Sycosis coccogenica, 1626
 trichophytic, 782
 Symmetrical palmar erythema, 1621, 1623

Symmetrical ear nodules, 598
 Symptom, Castellani-Low, 979

Keraudel, 979

Winterbottom, 979

Symptomatology, ancient, 8

Synanceia brachio, 205-9
verrucosa, 208-9

Syncitium, 515

Synclonus beriberia, 1208

Syncope, heat, 124, **133-4**

Syngamus, 564

Synkaryon, 263, **381**

Synochus putrida, 1093

Syphilis, 7, 12, 110, 405, 1190, 1426, 1636

Syringomelia, 1165

Syringospora robini, 821

Syrnicum aluco, 302-3

Tabadillo, 21

Tabanidæ, 336-7, 342, 539, 689, 737

Tabaninæ, 691

Tabanus, 693

africanus, 694

bovinus, 694

ditentatus, 691, 694

fasciatus, 694

glaucoptis, 354, 691

gratus, 694

hilaris, 694

humæus, 694

lincola, 332

nemoratus, 691

nigritus, 691

socius, 694

tergestinus, 357

tropicus, 332

virgatus, 694

other genera, 694

Tabernæmontana malaccensis, 165

Tabificidæ, 434

Tables, of *Anophelinæ*, 666

of barometric pressure, 44-5

of blood analysis, 82

of blood observations, 82

of causes of death, 111

of *cestodes* in man, 495

of Ceylon plants, 148

of *culicinæ*, 171

of dermatomycoses, tropical, 1472

of dermatozoiases, 1577

of diet, 81

of dysentery bacilli, 1380

of evaporation, 85

of *fasciolidæ*, 466

of fleas on rats and mice, 749

of humidity, 52-3

of intestinal bacteria, 1380

of modern journals, 21

Tables, of parasites of alimentary canal, 1292

of poisons, 147

of rainfall, 52-4

of solar radiation, 34

of *spirochaudinna data*, 401

of *stomoxys*, 710

of *tænia*, 495-6

of temperature, 32, 37, 40, 93

of body, 88

of terrestrial radiation, 35

of ulcers, 1569

of urinary observations, 82

Tache endémique des Cordillères (Alibert), 1512

Tænia, **490**, 495, 505

acutissima, 504

ægyptiaca, 503

africana, 496, 508, 512, 1293

anseris, 504

anserum, 504

armata humana, 506

bremneri, 496, 509, 512, 1293

canina, 502

confusa, 496, **509**, 513, 1293

crassicolis, 494

cucumerina, 502

cucurbitaceæ, 506

cucurbitina, 507

demarariensis, 504

dentata, 498, 506, 507

diminuta, 503

echinococcus, 509

elliptica, 502

flavopunctata, 503

grisea, 498

hominis, **508**, 512 ref., 1293

hydatigena, 509

lanceola, 504

lanceolata, 504

lata, 498, 507

leptocephala, 503

madagascariensis, 504

mediocanellata, 504

membraneacea, 498

mermis, 507

minima, 503

murina, 503

nana, 503, 509

pellucida, 506

philippina, 496, **508**, 512, 1293

pissiformis, 495

rhinaria, 617

saginata, 181, 456, 491, 496,

498, **507**, 512, 1293, 1404

solium, 491, 496, 498, **506-7**, 512,

1293, 1404

var. *abietina*, 507

tables of, 495-6

tenella, 498

- Tænia teniaformis*, 495
 tropica, 507
 varesina, 503
 vulgaris, 498, 506
 zittavensis, 507
Tæniarhynchus, 496, 508
 fuscopennatus, 534
Tæniasis, somatic, 1440
Tæniidæ, 501
Tæniinæ, 505
Takaga (disease), 336
Talmud, 9, 10
Tamil invasion of Ceylon, 8
Tampan (Zambezi), 593
Tanghinia venenifera, Poir, 160
Tanjore pill, 250
Tanypus, 354
Taon, 1226
Tapeworm, 9. *Vide Tænia*
Tapioca, 157
Tarantismus, 190
Tarantula dance, 190
Tarbardillo, El, 1093
Tarbophis savignyi, 219
Tarsonemidæ, 613
Tarsonemus infectus, 614
 monoungueulosus, 614
Taschkent Jarassi, 1548
Tatties, 106
Tattooing, 1611, 1614, 1616
Tch'oungtis'aô (mushroom), 156
Teak, 1546
Tectona grandis, 1546
Telangiectases, multiple, 1632
Teleostei, **206**, 214
Teleostomi, 207
Telesporidia, 262, **283**
Telosporidia, 265-6, **417**
Telson, 183
Temperature, 31
 atmospheric, effects of, 87
 body, 85
 effect of heat on, 90
 earth, 36
 experiments, 123
 normal, 85
 tables, 32
Tench, 347
Ténésie, 1361
Tenesmus, 11
Tentacularia, 539
 subcompressa, 539
Teori, 173
Tephrosia piscatoria, 168
 toxicaria, Pers., 168
Ternek, arrow-poison, 166
Ternideus deminubus, 549
Terrestrial radiation, 35-6
Tersesthes torrens, 678
Tertian fever, malarial, 10, 11, **383**,
 853
Tertian fever, double, 878
 fevers, irregular, 876
Tertiana duplex, 876
 simplex, 876
Testudo ibera, 431
Tetanic pernicious fever, 884
Tetanus, 15, 109
Tetia (Congo Coast), 1170
Tetramitidæ, 283, 289, 292
Tetramitus, 289, 290
Tetranychidæ, 612
Tetranychus molestissimus, 613
 telarius, var. *russeolus*, 613
Tetrao urogallus, 303, 307
Tetraphyllidea, 494
Tetrapoda, 578
Tetrasporocystidæ, 421
Tetrodin, 171
Tetrodon fluviatilis, 208
 hispidus, 171
 poicelonotus, 171
 porphyreus, 171
 rubripes, 171
 stellatus, 171
 sticonotus, 171
 vermicularis, 171
Tetrodonic acid, 171
Texas fever, 373, 601
Thalassin, 180
Thalassophis, 222
Thalassophyrne maculosa, 207-8, 210
 reticulata, 207
Thallophyta, 756
Thallus, 757
Thanatophidia, 218
Thecamæbida, 267, **277**
Thecosoma, 481
Theileria bellencourt, 350, 374
 buffele, 375
 cellii, 375
 mutans, 375
 parva, 374
Thélohania, 434
Theobald's classification of *Culicidæ*,
 664
Theonin, 1167
Thermic fever, 124-6
Theraphosa avicularia, L., 187, 189
 blondi, 187
 javanesis, 187, 189.
Therapia sterilans magna, 1191
Theriac, 216
Theridium lugubre, 187-8
 tredecim guttatim, 187
Therioplectes, 694
 borealis, 694
 micans, 694
 montanus, 694
 tropicus, 694
Theurgic medicine, 4
Thevetia ahovai, 147, **150**

- Thevetin, 149
 Thiosinnamin, 1141
 Thiroux' formula, 982
 Threadworm, 548
 Three days fever, 681, 996, 1112
 Thrombosis, 1416
 Thrush, 766, 1332
 Thugs, 156
Thymalis vulgaris, 499
 Thymol, 1302, 1311
 Thymus, disease of, 1420
 Thyroid, disease of, 1417
 Tic polonga (Ceylon), 222, **240**
 Tick, 19, 182, **190**, 576
 black pitted (South Africa), 600
 blue (South Africa), 601
 " bont," 609
 brown (South Africa), 598
 castor-oil, 607
 dog, 600
 European, 608
 South African, 606
 fever, 19, 108, **934**
 of Miana, 949
 of the Rocky Mountains, 940
 of Wyoming, 950
 red-leg, 600
 trypanosomes in, 380
 Tidswell's pure serum, 244
 Tientsin fever, 1091
 Tifo esantematico, 1093
 Tiger-moth, 197
 Tina, 1513
Tilletia levis, 810
Tinea alba, **1480**, 1500
 albigena, 1481
 axillaris, 1475
 barbæ, 627, 782
 tropicalis, **1485**
 capitis, 772, 776, **1627**
 tropicalis, **1484**
 ciliorum, 1485
 circinata, 781, **1627**
 corporis, 776, 781
 cruris, 1474-5, 1478
 flava, 1497, 1500, 1502
 imbricata, **1486**, 1491, 1494
 inguinalis, 1474
 interdigitalis, 1476
 intersecta, 1495, 1497
 macfadyni, 1480
 nigra, 1502-3
 nigro-circinata, 1483
 nodosa, 1521
 sabouraudi, 1482-3
 tinea, 345
 unguium, 1486
Tipiladæ, 676
Tipulariæ culiciformis, 676
 Tlalsahuat (Mexico), 611
 T'neuta (Karoo), 159
 Toads, 214
 Toar, 172
 Tobacco, 147, 155
 Tochu-bio, 945
Toddia França, 349-50, 368
 Toes, dermatitis rimosa of the, 1466
 Tokelau (Samoa), 1486
 Tona (Tonga Island), 1170
 Tondante peladoide, 781
 Tonga (New Caledonia), 1170
 Tongue, black, 765, **770**
 furrowed, 1640
 mycosis of, 763
 purple, 1640
 scrotal, 1640
 Topees, 105
 Torcel (Venezuela), 704
 Tormina, 1361
 Tortoises, trypanosomes of, 343
 Toruahehue, 966
Torula epizoa corda, 840
 Torulin, 1213
 Tourniquet, 1450
 in snake-bite, 247
Toxascaris, 546
 canis, 1293, 1317
 Toxicodendrol, 1543
 Toxicology, ancient, 8
Toxoplasma, varieties of, 349-50, 367-8
Trachinidæ, 207
Trachinus araneus, 207-8
 draco, 207-8
 radiatus, 207-8, 211
 vipera, 205, 207-8
 Trachoma, 443, 446, **1647**
Trachyhæderma horridum, 250
Trachymedusæ, 180
 Trade, poisons used in, 168
 winds, 47
 belt, 57
Tragelaphus scriptus sylvaticus, 333
 Trambusti's serum, 1025
 Traumatism, general, 135, 143
Trelobius gracilis, 354
Trematoda, 13, 455, **459**, 487
 diseases due to, 115
Treponema, 18
 bovidæ, 139
 calligyrum, 414
 camelidæ, 139
 canidæ, 139
 felidæ, 136
 hippopotami, 140
 in man, 142
 other varieties, 414
 pallidum, 306, 404
 pertenue, 18, 20, **410**, 1173, 1174, 1205
 reptilia, 140

- Treponema rhinoceri*, 140
selachii, 141
suidæ, 140
treatment, Nuttall and Hadwen.
373
ungulata, 139
ursidæ, 136
Treponemata, 265
Treponemidæ, 404
Trial by ordeal, 160
Trichina contorta, 517
cystica, 523
Trichinella spiralis, 254, **456**, 1293
Trichinellidæ, 562
Trichiniasis, 456
Trichocephaliasis, 1301
Trichocephalus dispar, 563
hominis, 563
trichiura, 1301
Trichodectes canis, 501
subrostratus, 501
Trichoderma roseum, 836
Trichomastix, 292
Trichomonas, 281, 289, 292
batrachorum, 292
caviæ, 292
columbarum, Prowazek, 292
development of, 315
dysentericæ, 291
evansi, 291-2, 331
hominis, 15, 290-1, 1373
intestinalis, 291, 978, 1292, 1295
irregularis, 290
lacertæ, 292
lewisi, 339
limacis, 292
methods of infection, 317
perronciti, 292
pulmonalis, 290, 291
suis, 292
vaginalis, **290-1**, 979
Trichomonata, 275
Trichomyces crateriforme, 781
megalosporum endothrix, 781
tonsurans, 781
Trichomycosis axillaris, 1521, 1523
nodosa of temperate zones, 1524
tropica, 1524
Trichophyton acuminatum, 781
albisciscans, 786, 1481
album, 780, 785
asteroides, 783
blanchardi, 787, 1482
castellani, 788, 1474
cerebriforme, 782
ceylonense, **787**, 1483
circonvolutum, 782
crateriforme flavum, 781
cruris, 788, 1474
denticulatum, 785
depilans, 780
Trichophyton discoides, 785
effractum, 783
equinum, 780, 785
exsiccatum, 783
farinulentum, 784
felineum, 780, 784
flavum, 782
foxi, 780
fumatum, 783
glabrum, 782
granulosum, 784
gypseum, 783-4
lacticolor, 784
macfadyeni, **787**, 1482
mansonii, 1486
magnini, 780, 786
mentagrophytes, 783
minimum, 776
niveum, 784
nodoformans, 786
ochraceum, 780, 785
parvetti, 1474
persicolor, 784
pictor, **805**, 1514
pilosum, 781
plicatile, 782
polygonum, 783
purpureum, 789
radians, 784
radiolatum, 784
regulare, 783
rosaceum, 786
roseum, 786
sabouraudi, 787, 1081
soudanense, 782
sulphureum, 782
tonsurans, 781
verrucosum, 780, 785
vinosum, 786
violaceum, 782
umbilicatum, 783
Trichophyton, 778, 1484, 1486
in man, 780
Trichophytoses, 1627
Trichorrhæxis nodosa, 1639
Trichosporosis indica, 1521
of temperate zones, 1521
tropica, 1520, 1526
Trichosporum, **834-5**, 1521
Trichostrongylidæ, 552-3
Trichothecium, 836
Trichuriasis, 1301
Trichuris, **563**
trichiura, 456, 1119, 1293, **1301**
trichuris, 978
Tridontophorus, 549
deminutus, 1293
Trigla hirundo, 206-8
Triglidæ, 206
Triglifomes, 206
Trilobius gracilis, 348

- Trimorphodon biscutatus*, 219
Trionyx cartilagineus, 431
 Triple quartan fever, 876
Triton cristatus, 214
Trombididae, 611
Trombidium, 611
 holosericeum, 611
 tlalsahuatl, 611
Trombidioidea, 578, 611
Tropenkohler, 97
Trophonucleus, 259, 310
Trophozoites, 261, 378
 Tropic of Cancer, 28
 of Capricorn, 28
 Tropics, clothing in, 102
 incidence of disease in, 108
 Tropical Africa, disease in, 115
 amnesia, 104
 anæmia, 554
 aphtha, 1325
 Australia, disease in, 116
 chlorosis, 1303
 climates, 28
 effects on man, 87
 climatology, 28
 dermatomycoses, 1472, 1526
 exhaustion, 102
 febrile splenomegaly, 963
 foods, 80
 fury, 97
 hæmoglobinurias, 910
 heart, 1417
 intoxications, 145, 170
 liver, 1405
 mask, 1613
 medicine, beginning of, 13
 history of, 3
 schools of, 20
 neurasthenia, 97, 1456
 pityriasis versicolor, 1497
 races, 59
 swellings, 1442, 1443
 traumatism, 135
 winds, 48
Tropidechis, 220
Tropidonotus fasciatus, 219
 natrix, 219
 piscator, 218, 431
Tropische phagedenismus, 1561
Tropischer leberabszess, 1407
 Trout, brown, 344
Trutta lacustris, 499
 vulgaris, 499
Trygon pastinaca, 206, 214
 sephen, 241
 walga, 214
Trygonidae, 206, 214
Trypanbleu, 372, 607
Trypanomonas, 308
 lewisi, 339
 murium, 339
Trypanomorpha, 302
Trypanophis, 307-8, 347
 grobbei, 347
Trypanoplasma, 307-8, **345**
 abramidis, 347
 barbi, 347
 borreli, 315, 346
 claricæ, 347
 cyprini, 346
 dendrocæli, 346
 guernei, 347
 gurneyorum, 347
 intestinalis, 346
 keysseltzi, 347
 truttæ, 347
 varium, 347
 ventriculi, 347
Trypanorhyncea, 494
Trypanosoma, **307-8**
 abramidis, 345
 acouchii, 331
 annamense, 330, **337**
 avium minus, 343
 bandicotti, 331, **342**
 barbæ, 345
 blanchardi, 331, **341**
 boneti, 344
 bovis, **343**
 brucei, 16, 311, 316, 319, 320, 327,
 330, **332**, 978
 capræ, 331, 343
 carassi, 345
 castellani, 322
 cazalboui, 316, 319, 330, **336**,
 342
 cellii, 330, 331, **337**
 chagaski, 345
 chai-chai, 338
 christophersi, 345
 citelli, 331
 cobitis, 345
 confusum, 338, 343
 congolense, 320, 331, **337**, 338
 criceti, 331, **341**
 cruzi, 17, 314-5, 319, 320, 322,
 327-30, 985-6, 990
 culicis, 345
 cuniculi, 331, **342**, 347
 damoniæ, 343
 danilewskyi, 345
 dimorphon, 319, 331, **337**, 338-9
 dionisi, 342
 duttoni, 331, **341**
 Edington's Zanzibar, 338
 elegans, 345
 elmassiani, 334
 elephantis, 331, **343**
 equinum, 17, 319, 320, 330,
 334
 equiperdum, 17, 319, 320, 330,
 335, 978

Trypanosoma erytholampri, 330, 344
evansi, 17, 314, 319, 320, **330-1-2**,
 336-7
 var. *mborii*, 332
evotomys, 331
fordii, 322
frobeniusi, 331, **338**
gambiense, 17, 308, 311, 315, 319,
320-2, 326, 332, 345, 966-7,
 969, 970-1, 980, 984
giganteum, **343**
 Gluge, 321
grayi, 317, 319, **345**
grosi, 331
 Gruby, **307-8**
hippicum, 330, **337**
hominis, 322
indicum, 331, **342**
ingens, 331, **343**
inopinatum, 308, **344**
laverani, 343
legeri, 331
leporis sylvatici, 331
leptodactyli, 308
leschenaultii, 343-4
leucisci, 345
lewisi, 17, 307-8, 311-2, 315, 320,
 331, **339**, 342, 343-4
luis, 405
megaderma, 331
meolleurum, 331
microti, 331, **341**
minaseuse, 331, **339**
musculi, 331, **341**
myoxi, 331, **341**
nabiasi, 331
najæ, 344
nanum, 319, 331, **338**
nelspruitense, 344
nepveu, 322
nicolleurum, 331, **342**
noctuae, 283, 345
otospermophili, 331
paddæ, 343
pecaudi, 319, 327, 331, **338**
pecorum, 331, **338**
pellegrini, 345
peromysci, 331
pertenne, 344
pestanai, 331, **342**
phoxini, 345
pocuadi, 338
primeti, 344
prowazeki, 331
pythonis, 344
rabinowitschi, 341
rajæ, 308, 316, 318, 324, 344
rattorum, 330
remaki, 344
rhesii, 331
 Rhodesia, Southern, 338

Trypanosoma rhodesiense, 17, 311, 315,
 317, 319, 322, **325**, 327, 966-7,
 969, 970-1, 980, 983-4
rotatorium, 321-2, 343-4, 422-3
rougeti, 335
roulei, 345
rouliti, 345
saccobranchi, 345
sanguinis, 321, 339
scardini, 345
 Schaudinn, 294
schaudinni, 331, **342**
somalense, 331, 344
soricis, 331
soudanense, 330, **336**, 343
sp. 1, 344
spermophili, 331
squalii, 345
suis, 331
talapæ, 331
theileri, 331, **339**, 736
tincae, 345
togolense, 330, **336**
transvaaliense, 339
tullochi, 345
ugandense, 322
undulans, 308
undulina, 422
uniforme, 331, **343**
urnblewskii, 339
venezuelense, 330, **331**
vespertilionis, 331, **342**
vickersæ, 331
vittatæ, 316, 343
vivax, 316, 319, 331, **342**
ziemannii, 345
 Trypanosome fever, 974
 Trypanosomen Fieber, 966
 Trypanosomes from Chai-Chai, 338
 from Southern Rhodesia, 338
 in bats, 342
 in birds, 343
 in bugs, 329
 in fish, 316, 344
 in frogs, 343-4
 in invertebrata, 345
 in louse, 340
 in mammals, 319, 330, 339
 in man, 322
 in mosquitoes, 325
 in reptiles, 343
 in ticks, 345
 Trypanosomiasis, the, 966
 immunity from, 320
 treatment, 981-82
 Trypanosomiasis, 108, 115, 404, 715,
966
 African, 966
 ætiology of, 969
 blood in, 977
 cerebral stage of, 975

- Trypanosomiasis, African, complications in, 978
 definition of, 966
 diagnosis of, 978
 epidemiology of, 968
 febrile stage of, 975
 geography of, 968
 history of, 966
 morbid anatomy of, 972
 pathology of, 971
 prognosis in, 980
 prophylaxis in, 983
 symptomatology, 974
 synonyms of, 966
 treatment of, 980
 urine in, 978
 references, 990
 South American, 319, 330, 985, 991
Trypanosomidae, 282-3, 294, 307
Trypanozoon, 308
lewisii, 339
 Trypan red, 607, 968, 981
 Trypanrot, 334, 607
 Tschiban (Turkish), 1548
 Tsetse-fly, 17, 316, 714. See also Glossina
 Tsutsugamushi disease, 577, 612, 946, 951
 account of, 946-949
 Tubercular leprosy, 1157
 Tuberculosis, 115, 1291
 Tula Manugina, 966
 Tulip, wild S. A., 151
 Tumbu-fly disease, 1582
 Tumours, malignant epithelial, 1635
 mixed, 1635
 of the skin, 1632
 Tunnelkrankheit, 1303
Turtur humilis, 307
 Twining's pills, 1393
Tydeus molestus, 613
Tylenchus, 517
putrefaciens, 517
Tylophora fasciculata, 168
Typhloceras, 748
poppei, 749
Typhlopsylla, 748
prosuma, 749
pseudogytes, 749
Typhlopsyllinae, 748
 Typhoid, 15, 108 *et seq.*, 890, 1388
 and flies, 20, 724
 Typho-malaria, 888
 Typhus, 12, 114, **1093**
 carriers of, 633
 exanthematicus, 1093
 exanthématique, 1093
 icteroides, 1004
 recurrens, 925
Tyroglyphidae, 614
Tyroglyphus longior, 614
siro, 615
 Uciunga poison, 165
 Ulcera de Bauru (Brazil), 1548
 Ulcerating granuloma of the pudenda, 1571, 1576 ref.
 Ulcerative dermatitis, 1468
 Ulcère d'Orient, 1548
 phagédénique des Pays Chauds, 1560
 endémique, 1560
 Ulcers, chronic, 1570
 diphtheroid, 1571
 painless chronic, 1570
 remarks on, 1569
 septic, 1570
 subchronic, 1570
 undetermined, 1570
 Ulcus infantum, 1568-9
 interdigitalis, 1567
 serpens corneae, 1651
 tropicum, 402, **1560**, 1576 ref.
 'Ultramicroscopic,' definition of, 444
Uncinaria americana, 560
 Uncinariasis, 1303
 Unclassified fevers, 1085
 'Unclean person,' 3
 Underclothing in tropics, 106
 modes of infection, 1021
 Undulant fever, 108, **1018**, 1027 ref.
Undulina, 308, 321
 Unknown diseases, 20
 Unna's ointment, 1167
 Upas arrow-poison, 166
 tree of Malaya, 166
 Ura (Brazil), 704
Uranoscopidae, 207
 Urera, 1545
 Ureteritis cystica, 441
 Urhur, 172
 Uridrosis, 1605
 Urinary organs, diseases of, 1421
 schistosomiasis, 1421
 Urobilin, 1328
 test for, 920
Uropidae, 578
Urosporidium, 438
Urticaceae, 162, 165
 Urticaria, 1627
 pigmentosa, 1627
 Urticarial fever, 1086
 Ustilago, 810, 1547
 Vaccine treatment, dysentery, 1393
 Vaccinia, 446
 Vacuoli 260
 Vagabond's disease, 1578
Vahlkampia, 266-67, 276
 Vanilla itch, 158

- Vanilla planifolia*, 158
 Vanillismus, 158, 614
 Variable winds, 46, 49
 Variations, periodic temperature, 36
 Varicocele, 1416
 Varicose lymphatic glands, 1136
 veins, 1416
 Variola, 446, 1101
 hæmorrhagica pustulosa, 1103
 Vascular modifications (light), 103
 Veda, 6
 Vegetal food-poisoning, 172
 parasites, 756
 Vegetation in prophylaxis, 106
 Vegetative cycle, 293
 Veldt sore, 1468, 1471 ref.
 Venereal sores, 1636
 Venom, ant, 197
 bee, 194
 centipede, 194
 lizard, 250
 scorpion, 184
 snake, 225
 spider, 188
 Venomous animals, 179
 fish, 204
 Ver du Cayor, 728
 macique, 704
 moyoquil, 704
Vermiformia, 578, 616
 Verruca seborrhœica, 1633
 senilis, 1633
 Verrucæ, 1633
 Verruga Andicola, 1196
 Blanda, 1196
 de Castilla, 1196
 de Crapaud, 1196
 de Sangre, 1196
 de Zapó o de Quinua, 1196
 mular, 1196
 of the Andes, 1196
 peruviana, 1190, 1196
 ætiology of, 1190, 1196
 complications of, 1203
 critical period of, 1205
 definition of, 1196
 diagnosis of, 1206
 history of, 1196
 pathology of, 1200
 prognosis of, 1206
 references, 1207
 symptomatology of, 1202
 synonyms of, 1196
 treatment of, 1206
 varieties of, 1203
Verticillium graphii, 836
 Vertige paralytant, 1450
 ptosique, 1450
 Vertigo, endemic paralytic, 1450,
 1458 ref.
 Vesicular fever, 1110
Vespa, species of, 194, 196, 354
Vespertilio, 403
 kuhli, 342
 myotis, 342
Vesperugio, 377, 389
 Vetch, red, 173
 Spanish, 173
 Vibrio carriers, 1346
 cholerae, 1343
Viereckia, 269, 271
 limax, 276
 punctata, 276
Vigna catjang, 172
 filosa, 172
 Viper, horned, 223
Vipera berus, 223, 230
 russelli, 218, 223, 225, 229, 236,
 240
 bite of, 244, 248
 M.L.D., 236, 245
Viperidæ, 222
Viperinæ, 222-3
 Viperine, 217
 type of venom, 218
 venom, immunity, 244
 Vinegar eel, 517
 Vision, green, 175
 Vital spot, 4
 Vitiligo, 1608
 Vlekkoorts, 1093
 Vleminckx' solution, 1479
 Volutine granules, 259
 Vulva, elephantiasis of, 1144
 Waba (arrow-poison), 163
 Wabain, 163
 Wabajo (arrow-poison), 163
 Wafiomi tribes, 165
 Wagogo tribes, 165
 Wakamma tribes, 164-5
 Wall louse, 637
Walsura piscidia, 168
 Warburg's tincture, 892
 Warra, 159
 Warts, filiform, 1633
 gonorrhœal, 1633
 Wasp, 194
 stings, 12
 Wataita tribes, 163
 Water-moccasin snake, 219, 223
Watsonius watsoni, 463
 Weapons, poison on, 161
 Wechselfieber, 847
 Weever, lesser, 205
 Weil's disease, 921
 Werlhof's purpura, 1626
 West Indian nodules, 1601
 modified smallpox, 1108
 West monsoon, 49
 Whey diet, 1334
 Whip-worm, 563

- Whip-worm infection, 1301
 Whitehead's operation, 1401
Whitemania, species of, 574
 Whooping-cough, 1093
 Vidal's reaction, 929, 1071
 Wildebeeste, 333
 Wilson's eczema verrucosum, 1629
 Wind, Harmattan, 50
 Khamsin, 50
 land, 49
 mountain, 49
 pamperos, 50
 sirocco, 50
 solano, 50
 storms, 50
 Winds, 46
 local, 49
 periodical, 47
 permanent, 46
 trade, 47
 variable, 49
 Winterbottom's sign, 975, 979
 Wire-netting, 904
 Witch-doctors, 3
Withania somnifera, 148
 Worms, disease due to, 7
 Wright's method, 1295
 reaction, 1089

 Xanthochroi, 63
 Xanthoderma areatum, 1614, 1621
 Xanthoma, species of, 1632
Xanthum macrocarpum, 613
Xenodon severus, 219
Xenopsylla, 748, 751
 cheopsis, 19, 750, 752-3, 1033
 cleopatræ, 365, 423
 Xeroderma pigmentosum, 104, 1639
Xilocopa violacea, 194
Xylocrypta, 680

 Yangonin, 154
 Yaws, 18, 180, 1170, 1444. See also
 Frambæsia tropica
 forest, 1550
 Yaya (Carib), 1171

 Yellow fever, 20, 1004
 ætiology of, 1007
 blood in, 1009
 climatology of, 1006
 complications of, 1012
 definitions of, 1004
 diagnosis of, 1012
 Faget's sign in, 1011
 history of, 1004
 incubation period of, 1010
 morbid anatomy of, 1009
 pathology of, 1008
 prognosis of, 1012
 prophylaxis in, 1014
 references, 1016
 sequelæ of, 1012
 Sternberg's mixture in, 1013
 symptomatology of, 1010, 1013
 synonyms of, 1004
 treatment of, 1012
 varieties of, 1011
 urine in, 1009
 Yemen ulcer, 1561
 Yohimbine hydrochlor., 156
 Yohimbehe bark, 156

Zamenis flagelliformis, 431
 hippocrepis, 431
 mucosus, 218-9
Zanthoxylum flavum, 1546
 Zerilla, 186
Zoantharia, 180
 Zona, 1629
 Zone, subtropical, 30
 tropical, 28
 Zooparasites, 254
 Zoosporangium, 759
 Zoospores, 759
Zootrophotoximus, 176
 Zousfana (disease), 366
 Zygocystis, 404
 Zygomycetes, 760
 Zygonema, 264, 297
Zygosporaceæ, 760
 Zygosporangium, 759
Zymonema, 769, 1506
 Zymonematoses, 1504

LIST OF AUTHORITIES

- ABBÉ, 57 ref.
 Abrahams, 1167, 1451, 1459 ref.
 Abrami, 759
 Achalme, 769
 Achard, 202 ref.
 Adachi, 1615, 1623 ref.
 Adami, 1375, 1448 ref., 1527, 1540 ref.
 Adams, 1170
 Adamson, 832, 1525 ref.
 Adie, 423
 Ægineta, Paulus, 125
 Æsculapius, 9, 10
 Afzelius, Adam, 714
 Agassiz, 62
 Agatharchides, 11
 Agniveša, 67
 Agramonte, 19, 377, 996, 1005, 1007, 1016 ref.
 Aitken, 1120
 Alard, 1124, 1146 ref.
 Albert, 909 ref., 1215
 Alcock, 252 ref., 643 ref., 1083
 Aldridge, 727
 Ales Hrdlicka, 116, 120 ref.
 Alessandrini, 182, 738 ref., 1243, 1305, 1324 ref.
 Alexeiff, 286, 290
 Ali Abbas, 1170
 Alibert, 1513, 1549
 Alilaire, 351
 Allan, W., 1324 ref.
 Allaria, 1324 ref.
 Allbutt, 26 ref., 86, 513
 Allman, 205
 Alpago-Novello, 1241
 Alpinus, P., 23
 Alston, 1192, 1194 ref.
 Alvarez, 362, 365, 1276
 Alvaro, M., 1234
 Amicis, de, 1148, 1191
 Ammon, 488 ref.
 Anderson, 19, 377, 445, 940-2, 950 ref., 1108, 1229 ref., 1425
 Angeny, 1276, 1278, 1290 ref.
 Anger, 508
 Angot, 57 ref.
 Annaratone, 1298, 1323 ref., 1641 ref.
 Annett, 14, 526, 656, 909 ref.
 Anschütz, 302
 Antin, Boyer, J. d', 829
 Antonini, 1265 ref.
 Aragao, 294, 300-1, 404, 415 ref., 447 ref., 1620, 1623 ref.
 Arango, Posada, 202 ref.
 Aravandinos, 362, 1547
 Archard, 1048
 Archer, 362, 1113 ref.
 Archibald, 22 ref., 57 ref., 363, 411, 958, 990, 1091, 1469-71 ref., 1548-9, 1551, 1554
 Archigenes, 1362
 Ardate, 997
 Ardusset, 1235
 Aretæus, 11, 1148, 1361
 Aristotle, 205, 490, 579, 1148
 Arkwright, 1084 ref., 1397 ref.
 Arlt, 1653
 Armstrong, 143 ref., 193 ref., 226
 Arnaud, 1375
 Arning, 1151
 Arnold, 706, 1275, 1290 ref.
 Aron, 98, 102
 Arribáizaga, 649, 728
 Artault, St., 291
 Arthus, 181
 Arunadatta, 7
 Aschoff, 489 ref.
 Ascole, 864, 908 ref.
 Ashburn, 13, 14, 19, 941, 946, 948, 996, 1000, 1003 ref.
 Ashburn and Craig, 413, 416 ref., 445, 531, 941-2, 948, 950 ref., 1172, 1174, 1194 ref.
 Asher, 173
 Ashford, 1304, 1308, 1311, 1316
 Ashley-Emile, 1620
 Ashmead, 1210, 1615, 1623 ref.
 Askanazy, 569 ref.
 Atkins, J., 24 ref., 966
 Aubrey, T., 24 ref.
 Auché, 1549, 1575 ref.
 Auclair, 757
 Audain, 26 ref.
 Audouin, 628
 Auerbach, 267, 1073
 Augustin, 1016
 Augyán, 1094
 Austen, 631, 647, 678, 680, 685, 687 ref., 692, 693, 695, 721, 735, 738 ref., 1281, 1319, 1581-2
 Austregesilo, 1536, 1540 ref.
 Avicenna, 12, 1123, 1170
 Avis, 1556
 Awray, 1539
 Axenfeld, 815
 Axisa, 1027 ref.
 Babcock, 1265 ref.
 Babès, 19, 363, 532, 829, 1148, 1150, 1235, 1244, 1265 ref., 1525
 Babington, 363
 Bachelier, 203 ref.

- Bacon, 98
 Badaloni, 217, 252 ref.
 Baelz, 476-8, 488 ref., 946, 950 ref., 1114, 1209, 1214, 1220
 Baglivi, 1047
 Bagshawe, 720-1, 982-3 ref. 985, 990 ref.
 Bahr, 13, 14, 524, 527, 531, 567 ref., 1126, 1129, 1130, 1134, 1144, 1146 ref., 1397 ref.
 Baillie, 169 ref.
 Bainbridge, 1077, 1083 ref.
 Baker, 739, 1034, 1459 ref.
 Baker, C., 755 ref.
 Baker, S. W., 137, 143 ref.
 Balch, 1547 ref.
 Baldoni, 818
 Baldwin, A. E., 143 ref.
 Balfour, 21, 22 ref., 186, 311, 338, 360, 396, 403-4, 423, 590, 693, 914, 918, 924 ref., 938-9 ref., 979, 984, 1091, 1094, 1356, 1549, 1551, 1554, 1623 ref.
 Balfour and Archibald, 22 ref., 990 ref.
 Balfour, F., 24 ref.
 Ballardini, 1233, 1242
 Ballingall, 25 ref., 1527
 Ballon, 687 ref.
 Bally, M., 1016 ref.
 Balme, A., 1016 ref.
 Baly, 101
 Balzer, 769, 830, 1525, 1614
 Bancroft, 13, 14, 523, 528, 1016 ref., 1124, 1146 ref.
 Bancroft, J., 160 ref.
 Bande, 365
 Bandi, 965 ref., 1044
 Bang, 789
 Banks, 577, 854, 1614
 Banks, N., 626 ref.
 Bannerji, 82 ref., 97, 1355
 Bannerman, 1043 ref.
 Banti, 1098
 Baraban, 436, 1271
 Barbagallo, 267, 270, 452, 1363, 1396 ref.
 Barber, 1033, 1045 ref.
 Barker, 488 ref., 909 ref.
 Barlow, 1047
 Barratt, 912, 914, 919, 924 ref.
 Barret, 1195 ref.
 Barry, 169 ref., 177, 1459 ref.
 Bartarelli, 626 ref.
 Barth, 1301
 Barthélemy, 913, 1525
 Bartholomew, 57 ref.
 Bartlett, 1047
 Barton, 1197, 1200
 Basile, 18, 363-5, 959, 962-3
 Bass, 27 ref., 383, 1311
 Basset - Smith, 1019, 1021, 1023, 1027, 1086, 1198, 1200, 1207 ref.
 Bassi, 14, 909 ref.
 Bassini, 1527, 1540 ref.
 Bassowitz, Von, 1601, 1602 ref.
 Bastian, 542
 Bastianelli, 383, 387, 415 ref.
 Bateman, 325
 Batinos, 362
 Battaglia, 334, 340, 342
 Baujeau, 1398, 1402 ref.
 Baumm, 1650
 Baur, 1377
 Baxter, 500
 Bayer, 201 ref., 1122 ref.
 Bayon, 1148, 1150-1, 1169 ref., 1304
 Beattie, 437, 446 ref., 1269, 1273 ref.
 Beaumetz, Dujardin, 1411
 Beauverie, 769, 771
 Becher, 92
 Begbie, 509, 513, 1403
 Begg, 1326, 1341 ref.
 Behla, 278
 Behrend, 834, 1521
 Beigel, 1521
 Beijerinck, 444
 Bell, 551, 615, 1341
 Bellesme, J. de, 184
 Bellet, 923
 Belli, 487, 489 ref., 1246
 Bellingham, 568 ref.
 Beltman, 1574 ref.
 Beneden, Van, 459
 Benham, 487 ref.
 Benjamins, 1661
 Bennett, 829, 1085, 1087
 Bennett, A. C., 1459 ref.
 Benoit, 913
 Bensaude, 1048
 Bensen, 271, 454 ref., 1169 ref.
 Benson, 1151
 Bentley, 423, 427, 568 ref., 914, 918
 Berdnikoff, 1355
 Berdoe, E., 27 ref.
 Béranger - Féraud, 26 ref., 78 ref., 913, 915, 921, 924 ref., 1016 ref.
 Berestneff, 303, 306
 Bergmann, 1148
 Berk, 766
 Berkeley, 1527
 Berlese, 584, 810, 1547
 Berliner, 351
 Bernabo, Count, 1028
 Bernard, 99
 Bernard, Claude, 125
 Bernardinis, 1658
 Bernier, 61
 Bert, 183, 194, 202 ref., 214
 Bertorelli, 969, 1168
 Bertram, 434
 Bertrand, 217, 218, 226, 244, 253 ref., 1341 ref.
 Besredka, 15, 1048, 1083
 Besta, 757, 803
 Bettencourt, 342, 971-972
 Bettmann, 1551
 Beurmann, de, 759, 830, 832, 840, 843 ref., 1168, 1509-10, 1511, 1525 ref., 1534, 1656
 Bevan, 325
 Beyer, 1006, 1017 ref.
 Beyerinks, 1605
 Bezold, 836
 Bhaskara Bhatta, 7
 Bhava Misra, 7
 Bidot, 1539
 Bielt, 785
 Biffi, 1197-8, 1200, 1201, 1207 ref.
 Bignami, 11, 16, 383, 387, 415 ref., 865, 868, 869, 879, 901 ref., 908-9
 Bigot, 738 ref.
 Bilharz, 13, 479, 481, 489 ref., 503, 557, 619, 1120, 1304, 1398, 1421

- Billet, 291, 423-4, 432,
 866, 922, 924 ref.,
 1367
 Billings, 866
 Billod, 1235, 1265 ref.
 Binz, 891
 Bircher, 1418
 Birt, 938 ref., 992-3,
 1003 ref., 1083 ref.,
 1112 ref., 1113 ref.
 Bishop, 626 ref.
 Bizzozzero, 404, 837
 Black, Ernest, 403, 1043,
 1169 ref., 1322, 1417,
 1419, 1435, 1471 ref.,
 1572
 Blackwell, 187, 202 ref.
 Blagden, 90
 Blaise, 1561-2, 1576 ref.
 Blaizot, 938-9 ref., 1149
 Blanc, 396, 1656, 1658
 Blanchard, 13, 15, 410-
 1, 487, 488 ref., 490,
 502, 511-2 ref., 535,
 567-8 ref., 573, 575,
 608, 625 ref., 793, 805,
 843 ref., 967, 970,
 1197 ref., 1487, 1526
 ref., 1583, 1592 ref.
 Blanchard, R., 432, 479,
 626 ref., 687 ref., 704
 Blandford, 45, 57 ref.,
 977
 Bland-Sutton, 1048
 Blane, G., 24 ref., 1016
 ref.
 Blankmeyer, 734, 738
 ref.
 Blasi de, 179, 848, 861,
 909, 911, 914, 1377
 Blaxal, 774
 Blell, 1359 ref.
 Blenkinsop, 1582
 Bley, 175
 Bleyer, 197, 203 ref.
 Blin, 1445
 Bloch, 757, 841
 Blore, 1094
 Blossville, 92, 107 ref.
 Blum, 1311
 Blumenbach, 61
 Blumentritt, 804
 Blunt, 99
 Blyth, 217
 Bodin, 773-5, 792, 1518,
 1526 ref.
 Boeck, 1124, 1148, 1157,
 1169 ref.
 Boedin, 1516
 Boelter, 755 ref.
 Boerhaave, 125
 Bognoff, 360
 Bogroff, 18, 1575 ref.
 Bogrow, 1549, 1575 ref.
 Boigey, 1574 ref.
 Boileau, 96, 1019
 Boinet, 1549, 1576 ref.
 Bois, du, 835
 Boismont, 1235
 Böke, 763
 Bollinger, 15
 Bon, 1258
 Bonaparte, Prince Lu-
 cien, 20, 217, 226
 Bonberger, 251
 Bonis, de, 1359 ref.
 Bonneau, J. D., 1017 ref.
 Bonnet, 582, 584
 Bontius, 20, 23 ref.,
 1171, 1209, 1229 ref.,
 1606, 1623 ref.
 Bordier, 191
 Bordonì, 1241
 Bordonì-Uffredozi, 1150
 Borne, 523, 1192, 1195
 ref.
 Borowsky, 1549, 1574
 ref.
 Borrel, 446, 616
 Borthen, 1149, 1157,
 1165, 1169 ref.
 Bosanquet, 394
 Bose, 160 ref., 1562
 Botelo, 1323
 Botkin, 517, 567 ref.
 Bottard, 204-5, 211-2,
 215 ref.
 Botteri, 443
 Bouchard, 1235, 1323
 Bouche, 726
 Bouffard, 805, 990 ref.,
 1445, 1534, 1540 ref.
 Boulanger, 252 ref.
 Bourlier, 173
 Bourne, 202 ref., 1124
 Bourret, 1149, 1151,
 1153, 1160, 1165, 1169
 ref.
 Bourse, 1197, 1207 ref.
 Bousfield, 363, 938-9
 ref., 1027 ref.
 Bovo, 808, 1534
 Bowhill, 371
 Bowlby, 535
 Bowman, 1378, 1397 ref.
 Box, 1265 ref.
 Boyce, 909 ref., 967,
 990 ref., 1006, 1017
 ref., 1527, 1540 ref.
 Boycott, 90, 181, 202,
 568-9 ref., 1077, 1304,
 1308, 1324
 Boyer, de, 829
 Boyle, J., 25 ref.
 Bozzolo, 1312
 Braddon, 1209, 1212,
 1217, 1225, 1229 ref.,
 1445
 Bradford, 17, 334
 Brainard, 250
 Bramley, 1659, 1663
 ref.
 Branch, 1195 ref., 1284
 1290 ref., 1321, 1323
 ref.
 Brandt, 194
 Brandwood, 166
 Brau, 1348
 Brault, 26 ref., 808, 841,
 843 ref., 1539, 1562,
 1576 ref., 1637, 1641
 ref.
 Braun, 13, 421, 474,
 487 ref., 490, 494, 511
 ref., 533, 535, 755
 ref.
 Braun-Seifert, 1592 ref.
 Braush, 1172
 Bray, 186
 Brazil, 252 ref.
 Breda, 1171, 1191, 1195
 ref., 1556-7, 1576 ref.
 Breinl, 18, 308, 310-2,
 320-2, 324, 332, 334-8,
 340, 368, 371, 398,
 400, 934-5, 968, 972-3,
 990-1 ref.
 Breinl and Kinghorn,
 399, 416 ref., 939 ref.
 Breitenstein, H., 1459
 ref.
 Brem, 911
 Brémaud, 1214
 Brera, 539
 Brereton, 377, 941
 Brero, 126, 1275, 1290
 ref., 1451, 1459 ref.
 Breton, Raymond, 1171
 Bretonneau, 1047-8
 Brett, 15
 Brewer, 771
 Brie, Jehan de, 13, 459
 Brieger, 165
 Brigi, 1547
 Brimont, 991 ref., 1313
 Brinton, 78 ref., 1161
 Briot, 205, 211-2, 215
 ref.
 Bristowe, 551
 Broca and Topinard, 62
 Brochet, 1291
 Brocklesby, R., 24 ref.
 Brocq, 1549, 1574 ref.

- Broden, 968, 971, 981,
 990 ref., 1120, 1122
 ref., 1194, 1398
 Brodie, 166
 Brook, 126
 Brooke, 197, 201, 203
 ref., 1525
 Broquet, 1040
 Bröscke, 1291
 Broussais, 1362
 Brown, 1017 ref., 1235,
 1326, 1337, 1355
 Brown, Carnegie, 134
 ref.
 Brown-Séguard, 92, 93,
 96, 106 ref.
 Browne, M. H., 909 ref.
 Bruce, 16, 17, 316, 321,
 322, 325, 333, 338,
 715, 719, 967-8, 1019,
 1021, 1025, 1027 ref.
 Bruch, 1097
 Brugant, 488 ref.
 Brugia, 1249-50
 Brühl, 1094
 Brum, de, 1026
 Brumpt, 15, 17, 290-1,
 322, 327, 329-30, 339,
 344-6, 404, 423-4, 536,
 540-1, 550, 590, 967,
 801, 805, 808-9, 811
 ref., 814, 833, 843 ref.,
 848, 866, 1021, 1272,
 1374, 1437-9 ref.,
 1527, 1540 ref.
 Brunswic-le-Bihan, 1527
 Brunton, Sir Lauder,
 212, 215 ref., 217, 229,
 235, 248, 252 ref.
 Bryson, A., 25 ref.
 Buchanan, 178 ref.
 Bucholz, 480
 Budd, G., 488 ref., 1648
 Bueno, Cosme, 1196
 Buenode, Miranda, 1576
 ref.
 Büldow, 934
 Bull, 1149, 1169 ref.,
 1654
 Bulloch, 939 ref.
 Burckhardt, 1503
 Bureau, 1470
 Burg, Van de, 1003 ref.,
 1325, 1337
 Burmeister, 459
 Burnett, 348, 992
 Burnier, 769, 830
 Burt, 1023, 1027 ref.
 Burton, 163, 169 ref.,
 540, 1005
 Busk, 472
 Busse, 770, 1504
 Bussière, 1556, 1574-5
 ref.
 Bütschli, 348
 Büttner, 1300
 Byerley, 205
 Byloff, 312
 Bylon, 996
 Caccioppoli, 961
 Caddy, 160 ref., 169 ref.
 Cafiero, 1324 ref.
 Cailliot, Louis, 1017 ref.
 Calamida, 181, 201 ref.,
 1324 ref.
 Calandrucchio, 545, 566,
 569 ref., 1319
 Calkins, 265, 440, 447
 ref., 449, 454 ref.
 Calmarza, 1234
 Calmette, 20, 184, 186,
 196, 202 ref., 215, 217,
 225, 227 ref., 236, 238,
 244, 252 ref., 1094,
 1376
 Calumella, 14
 Calvert (India), 1294
 Cambillet, 1554
 Camerano, 565
 Caminiti, 814
 Cammidge, 1341 ref.
 Campagna, 1113 ref.
 Campana, 1148, 1169 ref.
 Campbell, 80, 1229 ref.,
 1658, 1663 ref.
 Campbell, D., 24 ref.
 Campenhout, Van, 968
 Campet, P., 24 ref.
 Canizaries, Don Lopez
 de, 12
 Cannata, 363
 Canstatt, 1048
 Cantani, 1355
 Cantlie, 923, 1030, 1326,
 1338, 1341, 1388, 1415
 ref., 1435, 1439 ref.,
 1445, 1467, 1468, 1471
 ref., 1613, 1623 ref.
 Cao, 181, 831, 1324 ref.
 Caparelli, 214
 Caradelli, 913
 Cararoz, 182
 Caravan, 1510
 Carbajal, 1198
 Carbone, 864
 Cardamatis, 363, 914,
 917, 924 ref., 1549,
 1554-5, 1559
 Cardamus, 125
 Carini, 308, 339, 360
 1549, 1557, 1576 ref.
 Carini and Paranhos,
 1575 ref.
 Carlet, 194
 Carlisle, 930, 939 ref.
 Carmichael, 1628
 Caro, 1521
 Carougeau, 804, 832,
 1510, 1537
 Carpano, 404
 Carpenter, 996
 Carpi, 195, 202 ref.
 Carr, E. M., 78 ref.
 Carrarioli, 1243
 Carrasquilla, 1167
 Carrion, Daniel A., 1197
 Carroll, 19, 445, 1005-7,
 1017 ref.
 Cartaya, 377
 Carter, 15, 22, 360, 416
 ref., 935, 936, 939,
 1010, 1209, 1540 ref.,
 1549, 1554, 1574 ref.
 Carter, H. J., 1527
 Carter, Vandyke, 932,
 1124, 1148, 1527
 Casa, 1324 ref.
 Casagrandi, 179, 267,
 270, 452, 864, 909
 ref., 1363, 1396 ref.
 Casal, Gaspar, 1231-3
 Casey, 86
 Cash, 1546-7 ref.
 Cassius, Dio, 125
 Cassuto, 362, 965 ref.
 Castellani, 16-8, 20, 275,
 279 ref., 285, 287, 313,
 322, 324-5, 354, 363,
 403, 411-4, 416 ref.,
 423, 427, 435, 437,
 442-3, 446-7 ref., 453-
 4, 456, 568, 615, 626
 ref., 700, 738 ref.,
 787-9, 793-4, 796-8,
 811 ref., 820-1, 824-9,
 833, 843 ref., 908 ref.,
 938 ref., 965 ref., 967,
 971, 990 ref., 1039,
 1048, 1077, 1083-7,
 1091-2, 1112 ref.,
 1141, 1146 ref., 1169
 ref., 1172-5, 1191-3,
 1195 ref., 1271, 1273
 ref., 1283, 1290 and
 ref., 1308, 1324, 1327,
 1329, 1341 ref., 1375,
 1379, 1393-4, 1397
 ref., 1415 ref., 1425
 ref., 1430, 1433, 1435,
 1439 ref., 1463, 1471
 ref., 1474-5, 1482,
 1492, 1494, 1495

- 1512, 1516, 1518,
 1521, 1525 ref., 1540
 ref., 1556, 1568, 1576
 ref., 1587-8, 1592 ref.,
 1599, 1602 ref., 1614,
 1623 ref., 1641 ref.,
 1647, 1653
 Castellani and Low, 1341
 ref., 1439 ref.
 Castelman, 1304
 Castor, 1460, 1471 ref.,
 1610, 1615, 1616, 1623
 ref.
 Cathoire, 362
 Caton, 10
 Catouillard, 186-7
 Catrou, 1459 ref.
 Cattaneo, 181, 1324 ref.
 Cattani, 20
 Catto, 486, 488 ref., 489,
 1117, 1122 ref.
 Caullery, 446 ref., 449,
 454 ref.
 Cavaroz, 202 ref.
 Caventou, 13, 166
 Cazalbou, 17
 Celli, 11, 16, 19, 20, 301,
 378, 723, 873, 904,
 908, 909 ref., 923,
 1375, 1377
 Celli and Sanfelice, 302
 Celsus, 11, 136, 216,
 246, 879, 1123, 1125,
 1361
 Ceni, 757, 803, 1243
 Certés, 292
 Cerutti, 1043
 Cesoin, 815, 1658
 Cestan, 909 ref.
 Chabrie, 232 ref.
 Chadberts, 1304
 Chagas, 17, 287, 314,
 317, 320, 327-9, 339,
 642, 644 ref., 985,
 989-91 ref., 1418
 Chalachnikov, 322
 Chalmers, 120 ref., 169,
 437, 446 ref., 568 ref.,
 619, 626 ref., 738, 909,
 1084 ref., 1122 ref.,
 1248, 1266 ref., 1323
 ref., 1415 ref., 1445,
 1448 ref., 1621
 Chamberlain, Joseph,
 21, 89, 101, 1055,
 1213, 1225
 Chanson, 181, 1324 ref.
 Chantemesse, 20, 1048,
 1374, 1549, 1574 ref.
 Chantemesse et Widal,
 1289
 Chapotin, 1124, 1146
 ref.
 Charaka, 6, 7, 1343,
 1361
 Charas, Morse, 217
 Charcot, 99, 100, 1451
 Charles, Sir H., 542, 1003
 ref., 1136
 Charlouis, 412, 1170-3
 Charougeau, 817
 Charrain, 99, 757
 Chartres, 1019
 Chastang, 1199, 1207
 ref.
 Chatterjee, 808, 817,
 843 ref.
 Chatton, 267-9, 349
 Chatton and Lalung-
 Bonnaire, 279 ref.
 Chaussat, 422, 424
 Cheatle, 1639
 Chevalier, 817, 833,
 1232, 1265 ref., 1304
 Chevers, 1143
 Chevrel, 738 ref.
 Cheyril, 734, 738 ref.
 Chiari, 804
 Chiarini, 1654
 Chichester, 968
 Child, 1441-2, 1448 ref.
 Chinchon, Countess of,
 12
 Chisholm, C., 25 ref.
 Chittenden, 82
 Choksy, 939 ref., 1040,
 1045 ref., 1355, 1359
 ref.
 Cholodkowski, 1441
 Chowning, 19, 377, 941-2,
 950 ref.
 Christison, 160
 Christomanos, 362
 Christophers, 16, 19,
 357, 371, 387, 415 ref.,
 422-3, 428, 446 ref.,
 486, 489 ref., 582,
 588, 592-3, 632, 648,
 656, 687 ref., 857,
 866, 893, 908 ref.,
 913, 914, 918, 924,
 952, 965 ref.
 Christophers and Bent-
 ley, 924 ref.
 Christophers and New-
 stead, 644 ref.
 Christopherson, 1322,
 1324 ref.
 Christy, 534, 593, 629
 ref., 687 ref., 731,
 738 ref., 967-8, 977,
 990 ref.
 Chulgine, 1556, 1574
 ref.
 Chussat, 339
 Ciagliniski, 764-5
 Cicoli, 992
 Cienkowski, 279 ref.
 Citron, 779
 Clair, 840, 1003 ref.
 Clarc, 1509
 Clark, John, 24 ref.
 Clark, S., 25 ref.
 Clarke, 952, 966, 1017
 ref., 1123, 1304, 1619,
 1623 ref.
 Clarke, Jackson, 440
 Claypole, 843 ref.
 Clayton, 1001
 Cleaves, 134 ref.
 Clegg, 268, 1150, 1302,
 1448 ref., 1527, 1531,
 1570
 Cleghorn, 1606, 1623
 ref.
 Cleland, 402, 540, 917,
 1592 ref.
 Clemow, 1195 ref.
 Clere, 1443
 Cleyer, A. H. C., 24 ref.
 Clifford, Sir Hugh, 1451,
 1459 ref.
 Clozel, 829
 Cluss, 737
 Cobb, 19, 1085, 1112
 ref.
 Cobbett, 854
 Cobbold, 13, 472, 474,
 478, 488 ref., 512 ref.,
 568 ref., 1124
 Cochrane, 961
 Cockin, 1194 ref.
 Codrington, 78 ref.
 Cohn, 815, 1656
 Cohnheim, 815
 Colebrook, 1527
 Coleman, 1003 ref.
 Collas, 1619, 1623 ref.
 Colombbine, 1525
 Columbus, 1231
 Colvilli, 1551
 Comstock, 628, 646
 Comte, 363
 Concetti, 757
 Conheim, 815
 Conor, 1025, 1027 ref.
 1097
 Conradi, 1072, 1375
 Conseil, 899, 938-9 ref.
 Consiglio, 1615, 1623
 ref.
 Contine, 404
 Conyers, 1571, 1574
 109

- Conyngham, 463, 487 ref.
 Cook, 969, 990 ref.,
 1146, 1614
 Cooper, 191, 606
 Cope, 251
 Corbett, 909 ref.
 Cordier, 175, 178 ref.
 Corini, 1109
 Cornwall, 18
 Corre, 22, 26 ref., 205,
 215 ref., 913, 915, 966,
 990 ref., 1619
 Corredor, 1153
 Corselli, 771
 Corvallo, 1202
 Costallat, 1233
 Costantin, 763
 Councilman, 440, 976,
 1363
 Courier, 377
 Courmont, 792
 Couteaud, 1415 ref.
 Coutière, 205, 215 ref.
 Coutts, 1430-3 ref.
 Craig, 13, 14, 268, 279
 ref., 413, 416 ref.,
 445, 888, 908-9 ref.,
 915, 941, 946, 948,
 950 ref., 996-7, 1000,
 1003 ref., 1125, 1174-
 5, 1397 ref.
 Cramer, 806
 Craven, 1539
 Crawford, 20, 619, 683,
 1094
 Crawly, 346
 Crendiropuolo, 1549,
 1561, 1576 ref.
 Crendiropuolo and Mil-
 ton, 1574 ref.
 Crevaux, 89, 214
 Cristina, 363, 960
 Critien, 362-3, 960
 Crocker, 169 ref., 990
 ref., 1195 ref., 1471
 ref., 1525, 1592 ref.,
 1641 ref.
 Crombie, 85, 86, 94, 95,
 106 ref., 1085, 1088,
 1112 ref., 1339, 1342
 ref., 1619, 1623 ref.
 Crookshank, 996
 Cropper, 276, 409, 1329
 Crosse, 914
 Crowell, 1035, 1229 ref.
 Cruickshank, 1113 ref.
 Cuboni, 1242
 Cumming, 1077
 Cummings, 913, 938-9
 ref., 956, 1073, 1084
 ref.,
 Cummins, 1077
 Cunningham, 16, 18, 22,
 36, 237, 270, 360,
 474, 488 ref., 1325,
 1363, 1527, 1549, 1574
 ref.
 Curtis, 739, 768
 Curtis, C., 25 ref.
 Cutting, 1265 ref.
 Cuvier, 215 ref.
 Czermak, 621
 Dabry, P., 27 ref.
 Da Costa, 867
 Da Orta, 23 ref.
 Dalange, 186, 202 ref.
 Dalgetty, 1620, 1623
 ref.
 Dalla Farera, 783
 Dallana, 7
 Damien, Father, 1151
 D'Anfreville, 979, 990
 ref.
 Daniels, C. W., 14, 16,
 26 ref., 529, 530, 533,
 633, 675, 853, 854, 909
 ref., 966, 1126, 1146
 ref., 1172, 1190, 1195
 ref., 1215, 1218, 1229
 ref., 1276, 1294, 1571,
 1574, 1576 ref., 1593-
 4, 1602 ref., 1662 ref.
 Danielssen, 1124, 1148,
 1157, 1169 ref.
 Danilewsky, 302-3, 306,
 422-3
 Danlos, 1656, 1658
 Dantec, Le, 166, 404,
 567 ref., 1112 ref.,
 1128, 1327, 1374,
 1435, 1561-2, 1565,
 1575 ref., 1576 ref.,
 1620
 Darier, 1518
 Dariste, 1017 ref.
 Darling, 18, 279 ref.,
 350, 367, 447 ref.,
 931, 939 ref., 1040,
 1267, 1271, 1273 ref.,
 1397 ref., 1550, 1551,
 1575 ref.
 Darre, 320, 991 ref.
 D'Arsonval, 99
 Darwin, 103, 644 ref.
 Das, 97
 Da Silva, 363, 365, 485
 Da Sylva Lima, 1229
 ref., 1619
 Dassonville, 772
 Däubler, 1576 ref.
 Daulle, 913
 Davaine, 15, 285, 487
 ref., 512 ref., 545, 568
 ref.
 Davidson, 26 ref., 120
 ref., 1049
 Davis, 966
 Davy, John, 86, 87, 92,
 93, 95-6, 106, 217,
 252 ref., 572, 1018,
 1209, 1210
 Day, 963, 965 ref.
 D'Azille, 24 ref.
 Dean, 1148, 1151, 1169
 ref.
 Deblenne, 1619
 Deelas, 916, 1003 ref.
 Defant, 1049
 Deguy, 540, 1437
 Dehio, 1373
 Deirij, 166
 De Korté, 440
 Delamere, 1137
 Delange, 183
 Delany, 1227, 1229 ref.
 Delisle, 166
 Della Torne, von K. W.,
 644 ref.
 Demarquay, 13, 523,
 1124
 De Matteis, 1324 ref.
 Demichere, 1658
 Denburgh, Van, 251
 Denham, 1643, 1662 ref.
 Denier, 1348, 1355
 Deniker, J., 62, 78 ref.
 De Oviedo, 20, 23 ref.
 Depéret, 1549
 Depéret et Boinet, 1574
 ref.
 Desaint, Constant, 26
 ref.
 D'Escayrac de Lauture,
 1458
 Deschamps, 238
 De Silva, 1169 ref.
 Desir de Fortunet, 792
 Désmarres, 815
 Des Moulins, 61
 Desparanche, 173
 Desportes, 1304
 Dessene, 1520, 1526 ref.
 Deuntzer, 521
 Devoto, 1262
 Deycke, 1149, 1169 ref.
 Diamare, 512
 Dias, 986, 990 ref.
 Dickson, 996, 1003 ref.
 1108
 Di Cristina, 363
 Diesing, 551, 621
 Dieudonné, 1359 ref.

- Dieulafoy, 1289
 Dio Cassius, 1208
 Dionisi, 16, 342, 376, 866
 Dissard, 215 ref.
 Distant, 636 ref.
 Djelaleddin Moukhtar, 1574 ref.
 Dobell, 279 ref., 389, 394, 414
 Dobson (India), 1294
 Doerr, 445, 992-3 ref., 1112
 Doflein, 17, 265, 279 ref., 282-3, 289, 392, 434
 Doflein and Koehler, 347 ref.
 Döhle, 405
 Dönitz, 926
 Donna de, 1658
 Donovan, 17, 342, 357, 359, 363, 588, 915, 953, 1571-2
 Dony, 126
 Dopter, 1390
 Dor, 818, 832, 1469
 Dounon, 1196, 1207 ref.
 Doux, Le, 371
 Dove, 49, 57
 Dowd, J., 78 ref.
 Dowell (Galveston), 1005
 Downes, 99
 Dragendorff, 172, 178 ref.
 Drake, 1392
 Dr̥idhabala, 6
 Drieberg, 148, 167
 Drigalstro, 1072
 Drury, 203 ref.
 Drysdale, 1005
 Dubieff, 1094
 Dubini, 13, 532, 554, 568 ref., 1304
 Dubois, 502
 Dubruel, 1146 ref.
 Duckworth, W. L. H., 78 ref.
 Duclaux, 1550
 Duclaux and Heydenreich, 1549, 1574 ref.
 Ducrey, 820, 1503
 Dudgeon, 1217, 1441-2, 1448 ref.
 Dudgeon, J., 144 ref.
 Duerck, 1036, 1215, 1218, 1220, 1229 ref., 1435, 1439 ref.
 Dufougeré, 1128
 Dugnet, 634
 Duhring, 1574 ref., 1619
 Duhring, Von, 1165
 Dujardin, 487 ref.
 Duke, 338, 984, 1355, 1359 ref.
 Duke, Colonel, 187, 250
 Dulartre, 214
 Dumolard, 888
 Dumolard and Viallet, 909 ref.
 Dunbar, 215 ref., 1352, 1359 ref.
 Duncan, 124, 134, 249, 1339, 1342 ref., 1556
 Duncan, A., 26 ref.
 Dundas, 97
 Dunn, 804
 Dupré, 949, 951 ref.
 Duprey, 1175
 Duque, 1168
 Durham, 342, 345, 424, 432, 977, 1048, 1071, 1077, 1215, 1218, 1229 ref., 1606, 1607
 Durme, Van, 519
 Dutroulau, 25 ref., 913
 Dutton, 14, 16-18, 82 ref., 97, 303, 306, 322, 337, 341, 399, 427, 526, 656, 731, 738 ref., 934, 936-7, 967, 969, 977, 983, 1120
 Dutton and Todd, 399, 400, 415 ref., 626 ref., 939 ref., 990 ref.
 Duval, 441, 447 ref., 1148, 1150, 1169 ref., 1375, 1390, 1509
 Dyar, 664
 Dymock, 160 ref.
 Eager, 1045 ref.
 Easmon, 914
 Eberth, 15, 569 ref., 1048, 1098
 Ebstein, 15
 Eckers, 1402
 Edens, 568 ref.
 Eder, 1198
 Edie, 1213
 Edington, 338 ref.
 Edwards, 1304, 1348
 Edwards, Vincent, 217
 Eeke, Van, 435
 Ehrenberg, 392
 Ehrlich, 21, 968, 980-1, 991 ref., 1193
 Eijkman, 95, 1172, 1211, 1210, 1212-3
 Einhorn, 804
 Eisath, 973
 Eisner, 1525
 Eklund, 789
 Elders, 330
 Elgood, Miss, 1422, 1425 ref.
 Elkington, 499
 Ellia, 1233
 Elliott, 14, 57, 252 ref., 526
 Ellis, 57, 78 ref., 90, 1451, 1459 ref.
 Ellis, W. G., 1459 ref.
 Elmassian, 17, 279 ref.
 Emile, 1418, 1420 ref.
 Emily, 1442, 1556
 Emin Pasha, 968
 Ensor, Captain, 144 ref., 991 ref.
 Epstein, 545, 568 ref.
 Escallier, 1084 ref.
 Escomel, 1201, 1556-7, 1559, 1576 ref., 1634, 1641 ref.
 Esmarch and Kulenkampf, 1146 ref.
 Esmeni, 1509
 Eulenberg, 125
 Evans, 17, 205, 211, 215 ref., 331, 1213
 Everest, 1345
 Eversmann, 644
 Ewens, 203 ref.
 Ewing, 227, 234, 868, 909 ref.
 Eximeno, 1234
 Eydoux, 92
 Eykmann, 83
 Eyles, 913, 924 ref., 1620, 1623 ref.
 Eyre, 1019, 1527
 Eysell, 664
 Faber, 1324 ref., 1662 ref.
 Fabre, 203 ref.
 Fago, 1509
 Fairchild, W. F., 144 ref.
 Fairweather, 1094, 1505
 Fales, 1214, 1217, 1229 ref., 1456
 Fantham, 17, 265, 282, 302-3, 306-7, 311, 324-6, 394-5-6, 399, 415, ref., 434, 446 ref., 437, 967
 Farera, Dalla, 783
 Faust, 183, 201 ref., 205, 214-5 ref., 219, 227, 253 ref.
 Fayrer, 20, 134, 229, 238, 241, 248-9, 253 ref., 1209, 1342 ref.

- Fayrer, Sir Joseph, 26
ref., 126, 127, 141, 144
ref., 217, 226, 235,
1325
- Fazio, 1018
- Fearnside (India), 1294
- Febbre, 1017 ref.
- Fede, 958
- Fedschenko, 542
- Fehr, 1662 ref.
- Fehrmann, 938 ref.
- Feijóo, 1232-3
- Feldman, 534, 594, 1226
ref., 1272, 1273 ref.
- Feletti, 294, 362
- Felkin, R. W., 26 ref.
- Felt, 660
- Fenger, 619, 1120
- Feokistow, 230
- Ferguson, 963, 965 ref.,
1143, 1554
- Fergusson, W., 1102
- Feris, 89
- Fermi, 383, 848
- Fernando, 1309
- Ferran, 1356
- Ferraro, 1435, 1439 ref.
- Ferreira, 966
- Ferrel, 46, 57
- Feutrie de la, 1232, 1234
- Ficalbi, 649, 687 ref.
- Fiebig, 1211
- Field, 441
- Fièvre, J. (rapport), 1017
ref.
- Figeira de Saboio, 535
- Fijardo, 1216
- Fink, 190, 202 ref., 924
ref., 1615
- Finkelstein, 1549, 1574
ref.
- Finlay, 19
- Finlay, Charles, 1005
- Finsen, 99, 100, 101
- Flnzi, 969
- Fiocca, 1556
- Firket, 1398
- Firth, 20, 360, 724, 1549,
1574 ref.
- Fisch, 917
- Fischoeder, 487 ref.
- Fitzsimons, F. W., 252
ref.
- Fleischner, 1439 ref.
- Fleming, 1549, 1574 ref.
- Fletcher, 1222, 1451,
1454, 1459 ref.
- Fleurant, 1435
- Flexner, 218, 225, 230,
233, 252 ref., 445,
375-6, 1378, 1397 ref.
- Florez, 1197, *v.* Montoya
- Flower, 62
- Flu, 264, 315, 357, 362,
485, 489 ref., 1172,
1398, 1402 ref., 1571-
2, 1576 ref.
- Flückeger and Hanbury,
160 ref.
- Flügge, 926
- Flynn, 1318
- Foley, 938-9 ref.
- Folsom, J. W., 643 ref.
- Fontan, 1341 ref.
- Fontana, 230, 250, 217
- Fontana, N., 24 ref.
- Fontoynont, 804, 817,
839, 1510, 1537, 1540
- Forau, 917
- Forbes, 180, 201 ref.
- Forde, 16, 322, 967
- Fordyce, 90, 1275, 1290
ref., 1547 ref.
- Fornet, 1051
- Forrest (Rangoon), 1086
- Forster, 1393
- Fortunet, Désir de, 792
- Fossagries, J. B., 26
ref.
- Fossati, 1243
- Foster, 1019
- Foulerton, 819, 843 ref.,
1128, 1288, 1527, 1537,
1540 ref.
- Fournier, 1098, 1112 ref.,
1197, 1207 ref.
- Fox, 774-5, 1486, 1637,
1641 ref.
- Fox, Colcott, 782, 1091,
1112 ref.
- Fox, Howard, 1624, 1626,
1628, 1630, 1640 ref.
- Fox, Tilbury, 1607
- Fracastori, 12, 1093
- Fracastorius, 12, 405,
1047, 1093
- França, 308, 311, 322,
342, 368, 424
- Franchini, 365, 1397 ref.
- Francis, 201 ref., 1006
- Franco, 935
- Frank, 25 ref.
- Franke, 968
- Fränkel, 934, 938, 1048
- Frankland, 566 ref.
- Franklin, 738 ref.
- Frantzuis, 202
- Franz, 992, 995
- Franzago, 1233
- Frapolli, 1232
- Fraser, 83, 217, 244,
1210
- Fraser and Stanton, 107
ref., 1212-3, 1225,
1229 ref.
- Freeman, 175, 178 ref.
- Freer, 98
- Freire, 377, 1005
- Freund, 99, 134
- Friedrichsen, 1445, 1448
ref.
- Frisco, 771
- Fritsch, 484
- Fröhlich, 169 ref.
- Frosch, 444-5
- Frugoni, 1099, 1113,
1166
- Fry, 311, 1345
- Fuchs, 1662 ref.
- Führmann, 490
- Fujinami, 1117
- Fukh, 203 ref.
- Fülleborn, 363, 371, 403,
520, 524, 526, 540,
558, 591, 1125, 1128,
1146 ref., 1304, 1310,
1437, 1439 ref., 1583,
1592 ref.
- Fülleborn, James, 14
- Fumouze, 949
- Funk, C., 83, 107 ref.,
1210, 1212, 1229 ref.
- Furbringer, 762, 806
- Furnell, 96
- Gabbi, 18, 27 ref., 50,
362-3-4-5, 963, 965
ref., 1023, 1027 ref.,
1172, 1194 ref., 1305,
1309, 1323 ref., 1435,
1439 ref., 1471 ref.,
1549, 1550, 1554,
1555, 1559, 1568,
1571-2, 1575 ref.,
1576 ref.
- Gabbi e Nadala, 1324
- Gabucinus, 13, 459
- Gaffkey, 1048
- Gagnoni, 1324
- Galandruccio, 503
- Galen, 11, 542, 1123,
1361, 1407
- Galleotti, 843, ref., 1030,
1043
- Galli-Valerio, 19, 341,
369, 489 ref.
- Galloway, 1342 ref.,
1571, 1573, 1576 ref.
- Gamaleia, 1356
- Gama, Vasco da, 1343
- Gann, 1085
- Garcilazo, 1196
- Garrett, 1485

- Garrison, 471, 488 ref.,
 513, 1294, 1323 ref.
 Garrod, 1319
 Gasco, 202 ref.
 Gasperini, 814, 817
 Gastambide, 1513, 1526,
 Gastraburn, 1200
 Gates, 500
 Gaubert, 202 ref.
 Gaucher, 1509
 Gauducheau, 268, 275-
 6, 279 ref., 291, 1364
 Gaule, 422
 Gauthier, 25 ref.
 Gautier, 217
 Gauyerot, 1526 ref.
 Gayer, 1562
 Gayon, 20
 Geber, 1574 ref.
 Gedoelst, 811 ref., 843
 ref.
 Geer, de, 726
 Gellit, 1408 ref.
 Gelpke, 1211, 1217
 Gererd, 1005
 Gerhard, 1047
 Gerlier, 1450
 Gerrard, 992, 1451, 1457,
 1458, 1459
 Gescheidt, 488 ref., 533
 Ghosal, 82 ref., 97
 Ghose, 1403, 1415 ref.
 Giard, 1120
 Giava de, 1242
 Gibbons, C. K., 663-4
 Gibbs, 98, 102
 Gibier, 1005
 Giesma, 360, 399, 400
 Giesma u. Schaumann,
 687 ref.
 Gihon, 134
 Gilbert, 26 ref., 1048,
 1098, 1112 ref.
 Gilchrist, 441, 768-9,
 1094, 1504
 Gildemeister, 1073
 Giles, 52, 57, 134, 687 ref.,
 737 ref., 952
 Gill, 1527
 Gilles de la Tourette,
 1451
 Gillmore, 1451, 1459 ref.,
 1611
 Gilruth and Sweet, 567
 ref.
 Gimletti, 1459 ref.
 Giodano, 1415 ref.
 Giovanni de, 1305
 Girard, 25 ref., 26 ref.,
 1301
 Girotti, 334, 1324 ref.
- Gleeson, 144 ref.
 Glogner, 1216, 1420 ref.
 Gluck, 1165
 Gluge, 321
 Goebel, 1146 ref., 1576
 ref.
 Godard, E., 25 ref.
 Godfrey, 1527, 1540 ref.
 Godner, 350, 374, 377,
 415 ref.
 Goding, 1434, 1439 ref.
 Goetze, 1301
 Goldberger, 445, 463,
 1590, 1592 ref.
 Goldschmidt, 485
 Goldzieher, 1094
 Golgi, 11, 16, 383
 Gomara, 1196
 Gomez, 1513
 Gonsalves, 215 ref.
 Goodbody, 1330, 1331,
 1334, 1342 ref.
 Goodeve, 1049
 Goodhue, 1149, 1153,
 1265 ref.
 Goodman, 1514, 1526 ref.
 Gordon, 22, 25 ref. 26
 ref.
 Gorgas, 21
 Gorge de, 1192, 1194
 Gotschlich, 1094
 Gougerot, 769, 830, 832,
 840, 1509-10, 1539,
 1656
 Gouvea, 487 ref.
 Gradenigo, 768-9, 801
 Graefe, A. de, 815, 1656
 Graham, 19, 532, 626,
 885, 996-7, 1003
 Graham-Smith, 369, 371,
 374-5-6-7, 938
 Grall and Clarac, 27 ref.,
 160 ref., 1112 ref.,
 1402 ref.
 Grant, 1108, 1325, 1339,
 1342 ref.
 Grassi, 14, 16, 20, 270,
 293, 294, 383, 387,
 415 ref., 490, 503, 512
 ref., 524, 545, 555,
 566, 568 ref., 569 ref.,
 588, 627, 855, 902,
 1124, 1304, 1363
 Gray, 310, 967, 1034,
 1236
 Greef, 442, 1662 ref.
 Green, 252 ref., 663
 Green, 663
 Greenhalgh, 1059
 Greig, 967, 969, 990,
 1227, 1393
- Grenet, 505, 512 ref.
 Gressin, 205, 211, 215
 ref.
 Gresswell, 107 ref.
 Grey, 151, 159, 160 ref.,
 169 ref., 320
 Griesinger, 13, 554, 558,
 926, 1304
 Griesüger, 938
 Grieve, 144 ref.
 Griffith, 1172
 Grigoriew, 1374
 Grimm, 289, 1210
 Grinbert, 811 ref.
 Grocco, 911, 913, 915
 Gros, 339, 342, 1537,
 1576 ref., 1633, 1635,
 1641 ref.
 Grossman, 1149, 1168-9
 ref.
 Gruber, 757, 1048, 1071,
 1077
 Gruby, 15, 17, 321, 344,
 774, 766, 815, 1656,
 1658
 Grun, 1398
 Grünbaum, 1048, 1071
 Grünberg, 694, 710, 722,
 737 ref.
 Grünow, 421
 Gryns, 83
 Guarnieri, 440
 Gueguen, 778, 840, 1540
 Guérin, 966, 991 ref.
 Guerreiro, 986, 990, 991
 ref.
 Guesde, 1112
 Guglielmi, 375
 Guiart, 450, 454 ref.,
 568 ref., 811 ref. 1301
 Guidi, 1324 ref.
 Guillaume, 57
 Guillermond, 771
 Guillon, 27 ref., 1548
 Guinon, 1451
 Guiteras, 377, 996, 998,
 1005
 Günther, 205, 211, 229
 Gutierrez, 1308, 1311
 Guyon, 183, 186, 202 ref.
 Guyot, 536
 Gwim, 940
- Haan, de, 919
 Habershon, 1442, 1534,
 ref.
 Haddon, 63, 68 ref., 77,
 78 ref.
 Hadwen, 372, 606
 Haeckel, 62

- Haeser, H., 27 ref.
 Haffkine, 15, 1030, 1044,
 1346, 1356, 1359 ref.
 Hahn, 57, 996
 Hake, 419
 Halberstadter, 412-3,
 442, 985, 1172-3, 1562,
 1647
 Haldane, 85, 86, 93, 107
 ref., 127, 134, 134 ref.,
 1304, 1307-8, 1324 ref.
 Hall, 1207 ref.
 Hallenberger, 1576 ref.
 Hallepeau, 1630
 Halliburton, 129, 134,
 687, 1094, 1217
 Hallier, 1094
 Hamann, 566 ref.
 Hamean, 1234, 1239
 Hamer, 1055
 Hamerton, 325, 338, 967
 Hammond, 687 ref.
 Handley, 1143, 1146 ref.
 Hanna, 218, 241, 252 ref.
 Hannington, 991 ref.
 Hansen, 1148-9, 1169
 ref.
 Hanson, 15
 Hara, 1113 ref.
 Harding, 625 ref.
 Hardway, 1601, 1602 ref.
 Hare, 321, 508
 Harland, 1468
 Harley, 481, 1331, 1342
 ref.
 Harley, Vaughan, 1328,
 1330, 1334
 Harman, 1468, 1471 ref.
 Harston, 1649, 1662 ref.
 Harte, 738 ref.
 Harter, 831
 Hartigan, 1342 ref.
 Hartmann, 265, 268,
 270-2, 279 ref., 282-3,
 287, 380, 406, 416 ref.,
 1364
 Hartmann and Prowa-
 zek, 279 ref.
 Hartmann and Whit-
 more, 279 ref.
 Hartog, 276
 Hasler, 21
 Hasper, M., 25 ref.
 Hassall, 202 ref., 286,
 512
 Hasselquist, 1548
 Hassestein, 836
 Hata, 1113 ref.
 Hayat, 1097
 Heanley, 488
 Hearsey, 923
 Hebra, 1146, 1474-5
 Hedbon, 166
 Hegner, 1650
 Hehir, 909 ref.
 Heidingsfelt, 1611
 Heinhorn, 801
 Heinsel, 202 ref.
 Heiser, 1213
 Heister, 136
 Hektoen, 1509
 Heller, 949
 Helmbrecht, 1656
 Henderson, 926
 Hendy, 1124-5, 1146 ref.
 Henle, 616
 Henly, 536
 Henneguy, 643 ref.
 Hennen, 1018
 Henning, 144 ref.
 Henriquez, 1234
 Henry, 426
 Hercules, 1201
 Hermann, 745, 1167
 Hermant, 939 ref.
 Herrick, 909 ref.
 Herschel, 39
 Herzog, 1210, 1215,
 1218, 1229 ref., 1404,
 1416, 1420 ref.
 Hessler, 771
 Heusinger, 27 ref.
 Hewelke, 764-5
 Hewett, 821
 Hewitt, 726, 738 ref.
 Hewlett, 129, 1048,
 1150, 1216, 1218,
 1229 ref., 1435, 1528
 Heydenreich, 1549, 1575
 ref.
 Heymann, 442, 991 ref.
 Heyne, 1527
 Hickinbotham, 540
 Hickson, 454 ref.
 Hildegard, St., 14
 Hildenbrand, 1047
 Hill, 84, 125, 134
 Hillary, 24 ref., 1123,
 1125, 1146 ref., 1325,
 1326, 1342 ref.
 Hilton, 562
 Hinde, 934
 Hindle, 308, 312, 332,
 337, 340, 368, 371,
 396, 935
 Hindman, 1251
 Hine, 738 ref.
 Hintze, 432
 Hippocrates, 10, 173,
 509, 853, 925, 1018,
 1093, 1148, 1362, 1407
 Hirota, 1215
 Hirsch, 134, 1094, 1146
 ref., 1170 ref., 1242,
 1359 ref., 1549
 Hirschfelder, 1241
 Hirschler, 1601
 Hirst, 1589
 Hiss, 1375
 Hlava, 1094, 1363, 1374
 Hopley, 1617
 Hodge, 982 ref.
 Hodges, 720, 738 ref.,
 968, 978, 983, 991 ref.
 Hodges and Ross, 939
 ref.
 Hoffman, 404
 Hoffmann, 991 ref.
 Hofman, 1562
 Holcomb, 485, 1398,
 1402 ref.
 Holland, 15, 1233, 1548
 Hollander, 1235, 855
 Hollenhagen, 1232
 Hollmann, 1167
 Holmes, 314, 332
 Holst, 1217, 1229 ref.
 Homer, 10 ref.
 Hooker, Bishop, and
 Wood, 626 ref.
 Hopkins, 20 ref.
 Hora, 1099
 Horder, 1099
 Horiachi, 1094
 Hornaday, 1619
 Horrocks, 20, 724
 Horta, 777, 811 ref.,
 834, 1484, 1520, 1526
 ref.
 Horton, J. A., 26 ref.
 Hossack, 755 ref.
 Houghton, 1113 ref.,
 1119, 1122 ref.
 Houten, Van, 1151, 1148
 Howard, 1458-9 ref.,
 738, 1018
 Howard and Marlett,
 644 ref.
 Howard, L. O., 643 ref.
 Howe, 1648
 Howlett, 681
 Hübener, 320
 Huber, 737 ref., 1319
 Huber, J., 625 ref., 625
 Huckel, 763, 765
 Huertas, F., 1265
 Huggard, 57, 89, 97
 Hughes, 1019, 1023,
 1027 ref.
 Huiteras, 1234
 Hulberstaedter, 443
 Humboldt, 623
 Hume, 377, 1170

- Hunt, 1397 ref.
 Hunter, 244, 1217, 1304, 1561
 Hunter and Koch, 1229 ref.
 Hunter, W., 24 ref.
 Hunter, John, 24, ref.
 Husband, 1094-5, 1097
 Hutcheon, 369, 375
 Hutchins, 1592 ref.
 Hutchinson, 1169 ref.
 Hutchinson, J., 1171, 1607
 Hutchinson, Sir J., 1153
 Huxham, 1094, 1362
 Hyde, 769, 1504

 Igershiemer, 1662 ref.
 Ijima, 500, 511 ref., 553, 568 ref.
 Ijima and Murata, 512
 Iman, 1172
 Imms, 648
 Ingaravdez, 1316
 Inglis and Leiper, 567 ref.
 Ingram, 1215, 1229 ref., 1269
 Innes, 687 ref., 1148
 Irving, 173, 178 ref.
 Iryz, 1513
 Iwanowski, 444
 Izquierdo, 1197, 1202

 Jackson, 26 ref., 1283, 1290 ref.
 Jackson, R., 24 ref.
 Jackson Clarke, 440
 Jacoby, 1654
 Jacobash, 126
 Jaffé, 291
 Jakoby and Schaudinn, 454 ref.
 Jakowski, 762-3
 Jaksch, 293
 Jamamento, 1169 ref.
 Jamayo, 1201
 Jambon, 1235
 James, 14, 360, 423, 446 ref., 524, 890, 909 ref., 916, 965 ref., 992, 1549
 James and Liston, 687, ref.
 James, S. P., 1574 ref.
 Jamieson, 1527
 Jamieson, Sir J., 253 ref.
 Jammes, 181
 Jamsetjee, 1124, 1146 ref.
 Jancsó, 855

 Janowski, 1338
 Jataki, 1209
 Jeanselme, 26 ref., 833, 1163, 1165, 1172, 1175, 1195, 1201, 1481, 1484, 1525 ref., 1526 ref., 1537, 1574, 1628, 1641 ref., 1655
 Jeans, F., 144 ref.
 Jeffry and Maxwell, 27 ref.
 Jemma, 363, 960
 Jenner, 1047
 Jennings, 405
 Jensen, 1232
 Jenyns, 644 ref.
 Jephson, 728, 1397, 1648
 Giovanni, De, 1303
 Jobim, 1304
 Jobjet, 342
 John, 383
 Johnson, J., 25 ref., 982
 Johnson, W., 1606
 Johnston, C., 25 ref., 540
 Johnstone, 96, 967
 Joly, 1153
 Jones, 180, 1433, 1448 ref., 1527, 1540 ref.
 Jones, Sir Alfred, 20
 Jonge, Kiewet de, 996
 Jonnes, de, 1304
 Jonnés, Moreau de, 966
 Jordan, 215 ref., 739, 743, 752, 755 ref.
 Jordan and Rothschild, 755
 Jordansky, 1034
 Jourdain, 27 ref.
 Jourdeuil, 169, 1576 ref.
 Jousset, 88-9, 95-6, 107 ref., 202 ref.
 Joyeux, 183-4
 Joyeux, 202 ref., 782
 Jürgens, 272, 1363

 Kaempfer, 24 ref., 1123, 1527, 1540 ref.
 Kambacho Pasha, 1620
 Kanngiesser, F., 1547 ref.
 Kanthack, 243, 977, 1527
 Kaposi, 1424 ref.
 Karlbach, 217
 Karlinski, 926, 938 ref., 992
 Karrewij, 848

 Kartulis, 267, 270, 436, 483, 1271, 1363, 1392, 1507
 Karwacki, 818
 Kastagir, A. C., 144 ref.
 Kastalky, 815
 Katsurada, 13, 476, 486, 489 ref., 1114, 1117, 1122
 Kaufmann, 243
 Kawachi, 252 ref.
 Keane, 62, 72, 78 ref.
 Kearney, 619
 Keating, 1236
 Kebert, 488 ref.
 Kedrousky, 1148, 1150-1
 Keegel, 27 ref.
 Kefalinos, 362
 Kellogg, V. L., 643 ref.
 Kelsch, 913, 921, 924 ref.
 Kelsck and Kiener, 26 ref., 908 ref., 1342 ref.
 Kemper, 332, 1527
 Kempner, 320
 Kendall, 341
 Kent, 348, 351, 404
 Kent, Saville, 17, 201 ref.
 Keogh, Sir A., 127
 Kerandel, 975, 980, 991 ref.
 Kerbert, 477
 Kermorgant, 991 ref.
 Kerr, 536, 1276, 1278, 1442, 1448
 Ketchen, 911
 Keysselitz, 315, 346, 395, 415 ref., 1561-3
 Keysselitz and Mayer, 447 ref., 1576 ref.
 Kieffer, 678, 950-1 ref.
 Kiener, 908 ref., 913, 921, 924 ref.
 Kilborne, 19
 Kiliani, 166
 Kilvington, 229
 Kinealy, 437, 446 ref., 1269
 King, 193, 377, 564, 644, ref., 941, 1308, 1311, 1316
 King, H. H., 626 ref.
 Kinghorn, 17, 18, 315, 317, 325, 398, 399, 416 ref., 720, 934, 967-8, 970, 991 ref.
 Kingsley, 175
 Kinoshita, 371
 Kipp, 1653
 Kircher, Athanasius, 14
 Kirke, 172-3, 934

- Kirkpatrick, 1448 ref.,
 1527, 1540 ref.
 Kitajima, 242, 252 ref.
 Kitasato, 15, 1029-30,
 1044, 1435
 Kiyono, 476
 Kladnitsky, 1034
 Klebs, 377, 406, 1094,
 1374
 Klein, 715, 724, 996,
 1044
 Kleine, 17, 315, 317, 322,
 325, 333, 371, 967,
 970, 980
 Klemeniko, 1373
 Knab, 664
 Knapp, 18, 392, 398-9,
 401, 415 ref, 930, 934,
 939 ref.
 Knox, R., 625 ref.
 Kobayashi, 476
 Kobert, 160 ref., 169
 ref, 187-8, 190, 202
 ref.
 Koch, 15, 19, 270, 322,
 341, 375, 384, 415 ref.,
 436, 903-4, 909 ref.,
 911, 914, 915, 921,
 934, 937, 939 ref., 967-
 8, 970, 984, 991 ref.,
 1217, 1271, 1347,
 1363
 Kohl - Yakimoff, 350,
 367, 377
 Koidzumi, 275, 279 ref.
 Kolar, 995
 Kolb, 522, 706
 Kolenati, 739, 755 ref.
 Kolle, 15, 1030, 1039,
 1044, 1168, 1355, 1359
 ref.
 Königer, 1486
 Kopke, 971-2
 Korté, 405, 435-6, 438,
 1108, 1216, 1218, 1229
 ref.
 Kostor, 1605
 Kotzebue, 949, 951 ref.
 Kraepelin, 202 ref.
 Krägerud, 373
 Krause, 169 ref., 453-4
 ref., 1348
 Kreon, R., 625 ref.
 Krompecher, 1094
 Krompecher, Goldziener
 and Augyán, 1112 ref.
 Kroner, 442 ref.
 Kruse, 15, 16, 270, 293,
 1363, 1375-6, 1378,
 1390, 1394, 1396,
 1397 ref., 1407, 1410-1
 Krzysztalowicz, 392, 406,
 416 ref.
 Ktesias, 8
 Küchenmeister, 487 ref.,
 490
 Kuchner, 480
 Kuenen, 1226
 Kuhn, J., 1575 ref.
 Kühnt, 533
 Kumm, 1551
 Kunstler, 286, 422
 Kurloff, 303, 306
 Kustermann, 1219
 Kwan King Hung, 473
 Kyes, 184, 202 ref., 218,
 230, 232, 252 ref.
 Kynsey, 1209
 Labadie-Lagrange, 540,
 1437, 1439 ref.
 Labat, 1170, 1304
 Labbé, 294, 422, 424,
 1470
 Lacava, 1549, 1550,
 1554-5, 1559, 1561,
 1567, 1575 ref., 1576
 ref.
 Lacerda, 217, 377, 986
 Lachaise, 1235
 Lafleur, 1363
 Lafont, 953
 Lafora, 909 ref.
 Lalung-Bonnaire, 267,
 269
 Lamb, 20, 218, 227, 234,
 236, 239, 241, 244,
 246, 247, 252 ref., 932,
 1019, 1023, 1027 ref.,
 1048
 Lamb and Pain, 1027
 ref.
 Lambert, 1086, 1113 ref.,
 1122 ref.
 Lambinet, 558
 Lambkin, 1636
 Lambl, 15, 270, 293, 569
 ref., 1363
 Lambry, 764, 1509
 Lamprey, 1445
 Lancet (1890), 1547 ref.
 Lancisi, 13, 1047
 Landis, 1090
 Landois, 644 ref.
 Landrieu, 766, 815-6-7,
 1656, 1658, 1662 ref.
 Landsteiner, 445
 Lanfranchi, 334, 969
 Langard, 1323
 Langer, 203 ref., 204
 Langeron, 801, 817, 833
 Langley, 96
 Lankester, 472, 625 ref.
 Lankester, Ray, 422-4,
 575, 577, 625
 Laplanche, 993
 Larrier, Nattan, 1555,
 1574 ref. v. Nattan
 Lartigan, 1375
 Lasselle, 1108
 Lasserre, 819
 Lauenstein, 278
 Laurent, 1214
 Laurer, 459
 Lauture, D'Escayrac de,
 1458
 Lavender, 1236, 1265
 ref.
 Laveran, 16, 26 ref., 177,
 179, 303, 306, 334,
 362-3, 378, 415 ref.
 423, 869, 909, 968
 972, 980, 982, 991,
 1375, 1527, 1550-1,
 1557, 1574 ref., 1576
 ref., 1648
 Laveran and Mesnil, 17,
 19, 201 ref., 266, 320,
 322, 330, 343, 346
 Lawson, 87, 97
 Lazear, 19, 1005-6, 1007
 Lear, 501, 512 ref.
 Lebeau, 913
 Leber, 320, 443, 991 ref.,
 1650, 1656, 1662 ref.
 Lebert, 926
 Lebeuf, 967, 974, 991
 ref., 1165, 1166, 1167,
 1169 ref.
 Lebrede, 529
 Leclainche, 372
 Le Dantec, 26 ref., 167
 Ledingham, 1084 ref.,
 1397 ref.
 Lee, A., 1583
 Leeuwenhoek, 13 15,
 1373
 Legendre, 771, 998
 Léger, 310, 320, 346,
 349, 351, 355, 421,
 993, 1415 ref., 1445,
 1448 ref., 1504, 1514
 Legrain, 768
 Lehman, 1377
 Leicester, 687 ref.
 Leidy, 543
 Leiper, 13, 459, 471-2,
 486, 490, 514, 520,
 521, 523, 539, 549,
 542, 543, 549, 553,
 555, 560, 566, 567 ref.,
 568 ref., 623, 691, 694,
 1442

- Leishman, Colonel Sir
 W. B., 15, 17, 357,
 385, 396, 400, 403-4,
 415 ref., 868-9, 914,
 917, 924 ref., 935,
 952-3, 965 ref., 1048,
 1084 ref.
 Leitz, 1376
 Leloir, 1148, 1169 ref.,
 1551
 Leloir et Vidal, 1575
 ref.
 Lemaire, 362
 Lentz, 445
 Leon, 512, 687 ref.
 Leonicensus, 1123
 Lepage, 27 ref.
 Leredde, 100
 Lesage, 273-4, 279 ref.,
 424, 1363
 Lesieur, 769, 771
 Le Sueur, 1435
 Letulle, 1197, 1201, 1210
 ref., 1398, 1434, 1435,
 1469
 Leuckart, 13, 388 ref.,
 419, 456, 459-60, 476
 ref., 487 ref., 490, 511
 ref., 515, 519, 545,
 551, 563, 626 ref.
 Levacher, 1049
 Levaditi, 411, 413, 445,
 927, 980-1, 1174
 Levaditi and Manone-
 lian, 416 ref.
 Levi, 991 ref.
 Levick, 125
 Levinsen, 567 ref.
 Lewaschew, 1094
 Lewin, 154, 158, 169
 Lewis, 13, 17, 22, 36,
 339, 445, 523, 1124,
 1145, 1363, 1527
 Lewis and Cunningham,
 270, 488 ref.
 Lewis and McConnell,
 464, 487 ref.
 Ley, 1434
 Leyden, 278, 291
 Leys, 1276, 1290
 Lichliene, 1289
 Lie, 1154, 1156, 1159,
 1161
 Lieberkühn, 278, 419
 Liégard, 816, 1656, 1658
 Lignièrès, 373, 814
 Lima, Da Sylva, 1209,
 1620, 1623 ref.
 Lincoln, 1556
 Lindemann, 436, 566,
 1191, 1195 ref., 1271
 Lindenberg, 816
 Linder, 442-3, 447 ref.,
 1647
 Lind, James, 24 ref.
 Lindt, 804
 Ling, Roth, 78 ref.
 Lingard, 17, 968
 Lining, 90
 Linnæus, 13, 14, 61, 615,
 648, 739, 1153
 Linstow, Von, 13, 512
 ref., 539
 Lipschütz, 443
 Liston, 687
 Listow, von, 490, 545
 Liversedge, A., 160 ref.
 Livingstone, 95, 107,
 163, 169 ref., 934, 967
 Locha-Lina, 327
 Loeb, 182, 1305
 Loesch, 1363
 Loew, 675
 Löffler, 444-5, 981
 Logan, 486, 1113 ref.,
 1117
 Löhe, 1175, 1195 ref.
 Lombard, 57, 363
 Lombroso, 1233, 1242,
 1265 ref., 1456
 Long, 1265 ref.
 Longmore, 130
 Loomis, 57
 Looss, 13, 14, 459-60,
 475, 477, 478-9, 482-3,
 485, 489 ref., 503, 511
 ref., 522, 553, 555,
 558, 559, 568 ref.,
 1117, 1304, 1398, 1415
 ref., 1425 ref., 1583
 Lösch, 15, 16, 267, 270
 Losdorfer, 405
 Louis, 1047
 Loundsbury, 191, 372,
 586, 738, 950-1 ref.
 Lour, 811 ref.
 Loustalot and Leloir,
 1575 ref.
 Low, 13, 14, 522, 524,
 564, 569 ref., 918, 924,
 953, 957, 965 ref., 967,
 977, 982-3, 991 ref.,
 1020, 1027 ref., 1124,
 1127-9, 1137, 1146
 ref., 1235, 1252, 1265
 ref., 1327-9, 1332,
 1342 ref., 1453, 1439
 ref.
 Low and Castellani, 991
 ref.
 Low, Cranston, 1466,
 1471 ref., 1602 ref.
 Low and Leiper, 531
 Lowden, 440
 Löwenthal, 415 ref.
 Lucet, 303, 306, 421,
 763, 770, 803, 1375
 Ludke, 1084 ref., 1397
 ref.
 Ludwig, 166
 Lugo, Cardinal de, 12
 Lühe, 313, 331, 339, 446
 ref., 490
 Lüke, 459
 Lumbau, 383, 848
 Luna, Marchese de, 1324
 Lund, 1017
 Lussana, 1309
 Lustig, 909 ref., 1030,
 1043
 Lustig and Galeotti, 15,
 1025, 1045 ref.
 Lutz, 545, 664, 832,
 1005, 1504, 1506,
 1509-10
 Luzzani, 447 ref.
 Luzzati, 1434-5, 1439
 ref.
 Lyall, 931
 Lyell, 1094
 Lyons, 1094
 Macalister, 1445
 Macallum, 295
 Macaulay, 471
 Macdonald, 27 ref.
 Macfadyen, 996, 1048,
 1326, 1348
 MacGregor, 115, 1275,
 1486
 Mackelvie, 1129, 1137,
 1353, 1360 ref.
 Mackenzie, 527, 967,
 1125, 1403, 1415 ref.,
 1448 ref.
 Mackie, 325, 416 ref.,
 421, 930, 932, 967,
 1345
 Mackinnon, 349, 352,
 415 ref.
 Macland, 1445
 Maclean, 26 ref., 1447-8
 ref.
 MacLeod, 144 ref., 1169
 ref., 1175, 1195 ref.,
 1229 ref., 1417, 1420
 ref., 1474 ref., 1520,
 1526 ref., 1571, 1576
 ref., 1601, 1612
 Macnamara, 1343, 1359
 ref.
 Macquart, 728
 Macrae, 1359 ref.

- MacWalters, 203 ref.,
378, 1094-5, 1097
Macy, 1327
McCalla, 377, 941
McCallum, 815
McCarrison, 992 ref.,
1085, 1112 ref., 1113,
1418, 1420 ref.
McDonagh, 306, 405,
409, 411
McCay, 81-3, 89, 97-8,
107, 750, 916, 924 ref.,
1034
McConkie, 1074
McConnell, 464, 474,
487-8 ref.
McCrae, 926, 1104
McCullough, 940
McDill, 1138
McLaughlin, 996
McLean, 1276
McLennan, 416 ref.
McNaught, 952
McNeal, 294, 301, 320,
341, 343, 351
McWilliam, 25 ref.
Madden, 1143, 1398,
1401-2, 1422, 1425
ref., 1430, 1433 ref.,
1514, 1526 ref.
Madden and Goodman,
1526 ref.
Madhava, 7
Magalhães, 535, 552,
567 ref., 1520
Magendie, 166
Maggiara, 768-9, 801,
1375
Magrath, 440
Mahly, 913
Maison, M., 144 ref.
Maitland, 524, 1124,
1145, 1440, 1571
Majocchi, 1243
Malassez, 837
Malcolmson, 1229 ref.
Malenchini, 1098
Mallory, 441, 447 ref.
Malmsten, 15, 451, 1373
Malo, 1196
Malone, A., 160 ref.
Manceaux, 363
Manders, 711
Mandoul, 181, 1324 ref.
Mangold, 511
Mannaberg, 887, 908 ref.
Manonelian, 416 ref.
Manson, 13, 14, 15, 20,
26, 126, 134, 415, 450,
478, 484, 486, 500,
510, 528-30, 533, 535-
6, 539, 542, 567 ref.,
627, 793, 908 ref., 911,
917, 950, 953, 957,
965 ref., 968, 970, 982,
991, 996, 1003 ref.,
1008, 1021, 1085,
1087, 1112, 1114 ref.,
1124-5, 1130, 1144,
1146 ref., 1195 ref.,
1215, 1309, 1325,
1331, 1342, 1371,
1398, 1402, 1410,
1413, 1439 ref., 1443,
1451, 1460, 1468, 1471
ref., 1486, 1491-2,
1494, 1502, 1504, 1526
ref., 1554, 1576, 1593,
1602 ref.
Manson, son of Sir P.
Manson, 849
Mantegazza, 1148, 1169
ref.
Manteufel, 400, 416 ref.,
930
Manzini, 1017 ref.
Maragliano, 1324 ref.
Marchand, 1235
Marchiafava, 11, 16,
378, 868-9, 873, 875,
879
Marchiafava and Brig-
ham, 908 ref.
Marchoux, 362, 619,
915, 1005, 1008, 1010,
1017 ref., 1151, 1153-
4, 1166, 1169 ref.,
1291, 1415 ref., 1445,
1448 ref.
Marchoux and Bourrett,
1149, 1169 ref.
Marchoux, Salimbeni,
and Simond, 1017,
1148
Maré, J., 25 ref.
Marfoglio, 404
Marinesco, 129, 229
Marini, 1306, 1324 ref.
Markwald, 1227
Marlett, 644 ref.
Marocchi, 566 ref.
Marratt, 992
Marriott, 58
Marshall, 87, 201 ref.,
362-3, 572, 1175, 1195
ref., 1229 ref., 1276
Marston, 1019, 1027 ref.
Martin, 20, 217, 225-7,
234, 236, 247, 289,
320, 404, 411, 967,
970, 974, 991 ref.,
1172, 1435
Martin, C. J., 218, 224-5,
230, 233, 243, 246-7,
252 ref.
Martin, J. C., 253 ref.
Martin, Ranald, 25 ref.
Martin, Mayer, 327
Martindale, W. H., 1193
Martinez, 1195 ref.,
1316, 1547 ref.
Martini, 17, 1030, 1368
Martinotte, 1615, 1623
ref.
Martinowski, 360, 366
Martoglio, 403
Martzinowsky, 18, 1549,
1552, 1554-5, 1575
ref.
Martzinowsky and Bog-
roff, 1575 ref.
Marx, 603
Marzari, 1233
Marzinowsky, 361-2
Massaglia, 334
Massey, 714, 1049, 1272-
3 ref.
Masterman, 1279, 1290
ref.
Mathis, 1398, 1402 ref.,
1415 ref.
Mathis and Léger, 286,
307, 1398
Matignon, 167, 1090-1
Matruchot, 774
Matthew, R. G., 144 ref.
Maude, 971-2
Maupertius, 182
Maurel, 107
Maurer, 1211
Mawakami, 940 ref., 950
ref.
Maxwell, 1272, 1420
ref., 1447-8 ref., 1508,
1620, 1623 ref.
Maxy, 940
May, 1378
Mayer, 313, 320-1, 339,
447 ref., 693, 1198,
1200, 1207 ref., 1561-3
Mayo Robson, 1342 ref.
Mazini, 1116
Mazocchi, 365
M'Cave, J., 25 ref.
Meederwoort, Van, 1209
Megasthenes, 8
Megaw, 1000, 1348, 1359
Mégnin, 177, 950
Meigen, 649, 737 ref.
Mello, 1308
Melnikow, 502
Melnikow - Rasweden-
kow, 511

- Menetries, 521
 Mense, 26 ref., 126, 1272, 1273 ref.
 Mercier, 267
 Mercurialis, 20
 Mericourt, Le Roy, de, 913, 1561 ref.
 Merk, 1235, 1265 ref.
 Merkel, 16
 Mesnil, 179, 266, 321, 343-4, 346, 437, 446 ref., 968, 970, 980-2, 991 ref., 1445, 1448 ref., 1549, 1551
 Mesnil and Brimont, 991 ref.
 Mesnil, Nicolle, and Remliger, 1575 ref.
 Messerschmidt, 1378, 1397 ref.
 Messineo, 181, 1324 ref.
 Messineo and Calamida, 202 ref.
 Mestre, 1606, 1623 ref.
 Metcalfe, 449
 Metchnikoff, 15, 186, 378, 926, 1048, 1083, 1301
 Meyer, 180
 Miall and Hammond, 687 ref.
 Michaelides, 362
 Michele, 820
 Miescher, 436
 Migone, 334
 Miller, 422-4, 580
 Milley, 1049
 Milligan, 1663 ref.
 Milne, 18, 416 ref., 934
 Milton, 1425 ref.
 Minakata, 1029
 Minchin, 279 ref., 282, 294, 310, 317, 340, 347 ref., 357, 392, 418, 424, 435, 437, 446 ref., 718, 738 ref., 967, 982, 985, 990-1 ref.
 Minchin and Fantham, 1269
 Minett, 1168, 1169 ref.
 Mingazzini, 504, 1324 ref.
 Mink, 1276
 Mink and McLean, 1278, 1290 ref.
 Minne, 777
 Minnett, 907
 Miorcec, 993
 Miranda, Bueno de, 1557
 Mitchell, 251, 253 ref.
 Mitra, N. C., 144 ref.
 Miura, 13, 1114, 1210, 1450
 Miyajima, 368, 375, 946-7
 Miyake, 252 ref., 1099
 Modder, 1190, 1195 ref., 1548
 Moffit, 441, 1507
 Mohn, 58
 Möller, 124, 400
 Monestier, 549
 Monge, 1199, 1203, 1205, 1207 ref.
 Mongin, 536
 Monier-Vinard, 1509
 Monselice, 1242
 Montegazza, 107
 Montgomery, 441, 967-8, 991 ref., 1504
 Monthus, 1662 ref.
 Monti, 1242-3
 Monticelli, 459, 494
 Montoya, 801, 807, 830, 1197, 1514-8, 1520, 1526 ref.
 Moore, 20, 58, 307, 312, 968, 982, 991 ref., 1213
 Moore, E. J., 968
 Moore, Salvin, 309-10, 322, 324
 Moore, W. J., 25 ref.
 Moore and Breinl, 324
 Moore, Breinl, and Hindle, 312
 Moorhof, 818
 Moquin-Tandon, 625 ref.
 Morax, 815, 836, 991 ref., 1656, 1658, 1662 ref.
 Morehead, 87, 1049, 1527
 Morehead, Charles, 25 ref.
 Moreira, 1620, 1623 ref.
 Moreno, 1168
 Morgagni, 136, 1407
 Morgan, 99, 144 ref.
 Morgenroth, 195, 985
 Morgenroth and Carpi, 203 ref.
 Moritz, 293, 404
 Morris, 1471 ref., 1520, 1526 ref.
 Morton, 13
 Moseley, B., 24 ref.
 Mott, 129, 406, 967, 971, 973, 991 ref., 1094, 1217, 1251, 1266 ref.
 Mouzels, 929, 939 ref., 1193, 1194 ref.
 Movlyavkar, 405
 Moyer, 1575 ref.
 Mozaé-Azema, 1124
 Mozoechi, 519
 Mühlens, 406
 Muir, 1620, 1623 ref.
 Mulder, 166
 Müller, 13, 249, 459, 511, 1008, 1397 ref., 1658, 1661
 Munch (Moscow), 926
 Murata, 511 ref.
 Murchison, 929, 1046, 1048, 1063
 Murray, 502, 967, 1575 ref.
 Murray (Siam), 1087
 Mursell, 1291, 1324 ref.
 Musgrave, 13, 478, 488, 1114-6, 1122 ref., 1138, 1276, 1302, 1364, 1392, 1451, 1531
 Musgrave and Clegg, 268, 274, 1540 ref.
 Musgrave and Marshall, 1278, 1290 ref.
 Musgrave, Clegg, and Polp, 1324 ref.
 Muttermilch, 980
 Mutzer, 404
 Muzio, C., 26 ref.
 Myers, 231, 234
 Naab, 1324 ref.
 Nabarro, 16, 18, 322, 715, 934, 939 ref., 967, 977, 990-1 ref.
 Naboïs, 342
 Nagal, 706
 Nägele, 1086
 Nair (Madras), 437
 Nakahama, 476
 Nanson, 1134, 488 ref.
 Napolitani, 993
 Nascimbeni, 1232
 Nash, Franser, 1605
 Nassee, 840
 Nattan - Larrier, 290, 360, 362, 411, 1312, 1549, 1556-7, 1574-6, 1662 v. Larrier
 Nattan-Larrier and A. Bussière, 1434, 1435, 1574-5 ref.
 Nauss, 320, 919, 924 ref.
 Neale, 1459 ref.
 Neave, 303, 693
 Neboni, 1324 ref.
 Neebe, 792, 848, 1090
 Needham, 628, 646
 Nègre, 1018, 1021, 1024, 1027 ref., 1050

- Negri, 18, 266, 440, 447
 ref., 903, 909 ref., 1244
 Neilly, 518, 567 ref.
 Neisser, 412-3, 513,
 1148, 1154, 1172-3-4,
 1193, 1195 ref.
 Neiva, 415 ref.
 Nell, 1445, 1643, 1650,
 1652
 Nepveu, 322
 Neuberg and Rosenberg,
 203 ref.
 Neuhauss, 92, 107
 Neumann, 350, 592, 603,
 1165, 1377, 1554, 1575
 ref., 1600
 Neumann, G., 626 ref.
 Neumann, L. G., 626
 ref.
 Neve, 1169 ref.
 Neven, 991 ref.
 Newstead, 616, 632, 683,
 684, 711, 721, 725,
 738 ref.
 Newstead, of Liverpool,
 726
 Newstead, R., 626, 644
 ref.
 Nguyen-Xuan-Mai, 939
 ref.
 Nicholls, 1168, 1172,
 1195 ref., 1266 ref.
 Nichols, 414, 416 ref.,
 1172, 1191, 1244, 1415
 ref., 1570, 1504, 1526
 Nicholson, 1169 ref.
 Niclot, 993
 Nicol, 85, 107, 486
 Nicolaidi, 1263
 Nicolaier, 15
 Nicolas, 412, 1030, 1173,
 1235
 Nicoll, 1053
 Nicolle, 18, 186-7, 321,
 360, 362-3, 365, 404,
 445, 806, 899, 938-9
 ref., 953, 958, 962,
 981, 1024, 1027 ref.,
 1053, 1095, 1097,
 1149, 1151, 1169,
 1197, 1527, 1549,
 1551, 1575 ref.
 Nicolle and Manceau,
 415 ref., 1550
 Nicolle and Nourry-Bey,
 1575 ref.
 Nicolle et Sicre, 1575 ref.
 Nicols, 486
 Nielly, 26 ref., 528, 1593
 Nierenstein, 968, 977,
 991 ref.
- Nieuwenhuis, 786, 793,
 1481, 1525 ref.
 Nightingale, 923, 1239
 Niles, 1236, 1266 ref.
 Nissle, 307
 Nivison, 203 ref.
 Noc, 293, 1017 ref., 1305,
 1398
 Nocard, 15, 372, 1098
 Nocht, 313, 339, 898,
 1217
 Noë, 14, 215 ref, 1124
 Noguchi, 218, 225-234,
 253 ref., 397, 401, 403,
 406-7, 414, 410 ref.,
 1195
 Nogue, 215 ref.
 Noisette, 842, 1539
 Nordmann, Von, 480,
 488 ref., 533
 Normand, 519
 Nott, 1005
 Nourry Bey, 1549
 Novy, 18, 166, 167 ref,
 215, 294, 300, 320,
 333, 340, 341, 345,
 351, 398, 965 ref.
 Novy and Knapp, 392,
 399, 415 ref., 930, 934,
 939 ref.
 Novy and McNeal, 302,
 341, 343
 Nuttall, 19, 20, 190, 198,
 340, 350, 369, 371-2,
 374-5-6-7, 392, 398-9,
 415 ref., 590-1, 595,
 606, 626 ref., 854, 909
 ref., 926, 934, 938-9
 ref., 950-1, 1153, 1195
 ref., 1397 ref., 1575
 ref., 1648
 Nuttall and Hadwen,
 606
 Nuttall and Jephson, 27
 ref.
 Nuttall and Warburton,
 597
 Nuttall, Cooper, and
 Robinson, 626 ref.
 Nuttall and Shipley,
 650, 658, 687 ref.
- Obermeyer, 398, 416 ref.,
 926, 938 ref.
 O'Brien, 1083, 1451,
 1459 ref.
 O'Connell, 96
 Odhner, 459, 471, 488
 ref.
 Odoardi, 1232
 O'Donnell, 203 ref.
- Odriozola, E., 1197, 1207
 ref.
 Odriozola, Manuel, 1196,
 1200, 1203, 1207 ref.
 Oerley, 518
 Ogata, Prof., 946-7, 951
 ref., 1030, 1375
 Ogle, 86
 O'Gorman, 1355, 1360
 ref.
 O'Halloran, T., 1017 ref.
 Oliva, 737 ref.
 O'Meara, 1360 ref.
 Ondaatjie, 160 ref.
 O'Neil, 518, 913, 1593,
 1602 ref.
 Ophüls, 441, 1507
 Oppenheim, 769
 Orfila, 175
 Oribasius, 125
 Ormsby, 1504
 Orpen, 1446, 1448 ref.
 Osaria, 1520
 Osler, 909 ref., 926 ref.,
 1104
 Ost (Berne), 1098
 Ostrowsky, 757
 O'Sullivan-Beare, 923
 Otani, 478
 Otto, 757
 Ottolenghi, 991 ref.
 Oudemans, 626 ref.
 Oudenhoven, 1209, 1229
 ref.
 Oudieurminsky, 1555,
 1575 ref.
 Oviedo, 744
 Owen, 562, 569 ref.
 Ozanam, 202
 O'Zoux, 1275, 1290 ref.
 Ozzard, 1571
- Packard, 253 ref., 643
 ref.
 Padilla, 1168
 Padoa, 1324
 Padon, 1306
 Paget, 562
 Pain, 1019, 1027 ref.
 Palamidessi, 1098
 Pallam, G., 1017 ref.
 Pallas, 509
 Palm, 946, 950 ref.
 Palmer, Ezra, Dr., 503
 Paltauf, 765, 1243
 Pancheri, 202 ref.
 Pancorvo, 1197, 1199
 Panec, 992
 Pantrie, 100
 Papaño, 913, 924 ref.
 Papi, 1324 ref.

- Paranhös, 1323
 Pariez, 1172
 Parker, 201 ref., 1005, 1017 ref.
 Parker, Beyer, and Pothier, 1017
 Parkes, 87, 89
 Parona, 555, 1304
 Pasini, 777, 1168, 1192
 Pasquale, 16, 22, 270, 1363, 1407
 Pasteur, 15
 Patterson, 1525
 Patton, 18, 19, 315, 351-2, 353, 357-62, 372, 415 ref., 423, 430, 637, 640, 643-4 ref., 694, 738 ref., 953, 956, 965, 1094, 1561-2
 Paulet, 412, 1173
 Paulus, 11
 Paxton, 1525
 Payne, 12, 1525
 Pazzio, 996
 Peacock, 562
 Peake, 1117-8, 1122 ref.
 Pearse, 1129, 1606-7, 1426, 1433 ref.
 Pearson, 858, 905
 Peiffer, 133, 1319
 Peil, 1561
 Peill and Smith, 1576 ref.
 Peiper, 703, 706, 728, 735, 737-8 ref.
 Peiper and Westphal, 567 ref.
 Pekarharing, 1209, 1217
 Pelagatti, 777
 Pellarin, 913
 Pelletier, 13, 166, 816
 Pembrey, 86, 95, 107
 Pemnoff, 1654
 Penel, 525, 527, 530, 534, 536, 539, 567 ref.
 Pepper, 626 ref., 1310
 Perez, 434
 Perguis, 1084 ref.
 Perkins, 1509
 Pernet, 788, 1474
 Perrin, 436
 Perroncito, 13, 285, 292, 555, 843 ref., 1244
 Perry, 1003 ref., 1195 ref.
 Perry and Castellani, 739 ref.
 Perry, C., 24 ref.
 Perry, Sir Allan, 700
 Petit, 1561, 1576 ref.
 Petrovskala, 1592 ref.
 Pettit, 363
 Pfeiffer, 440
 Pfister, 430, 1433 ref.
 Phalen and Nichols, 1415 ref., 1504, 1525 ref.
 Philip, 446 ref.
 Philipson, 1148
 Phillips, 993
 Phisalix, 203 ref., 211, 215 ref., 217-8, 226, 244, 253 ref.
 Piaget, 644 ref.
 Piana, 19, 369, 371
 Pianese, 18, 368, 953, 958, 959, 965 ref.
 Piccardi, 285
 Pick, 992, 1521, 1525
 Picou, 181
 Picou and Ramond, 202 ref.
 Piehler, 1658
 Pierantoni, 532
 Pigg, Strangeways, 909 ref.
 Pinkerton, 107
 Pinoy, 15, 766, 771, 787-9, 793, 806, 808, 811 ref., 813-4-5, 817, 832, 834, 836, 841, 843 ref., 1073, 1474, 1527, 1531, 1539, 1540
 Pirovano, 1619
 Pisani, 939 ref.
 Piso, 1170, 1304
 Pison, G., 23 ref.
 Pitman, 1619
 Pitres, 422
 Pitt, 1304
 Pittaluga, 680, 967, 1234
 Pizarre, François, 1196
 Plan, 1451
 Plato, 757
 Playfair, 144 ref.
 Plehn, 58, 92, 93, 96-7, 104, 706, 903, 911, 914-5, 918, 99, 1175 ref., 1218, 1392, 1442, 1443, 1549, 1576 ref.
 Plehn, A., 921, 924, 1575, 1602 ref.
 Plehn, F., 602 ref., 917, 921
 Plimmer, 17, 21, 313, 334, 403, 770, 968, 982
 Pohl, 211-2, 215
 Poirier, P., 488 ref.
 Polanko, 1513
 Poleck, 1003 ref.
 Polk, 1302
 Pollender, 15
 Pollitzer, 1606
 Polverini, 1040, 1045 ref., 1531, 1540 ref.
 Poncet, 818, 1469, 1549, 1575 ref.
 Porter, 180, 349, 351, 353-4, 357, 365, 399, 1094
 Porthier, 377
 Portshinski, 1319
 Posada-Arango, 186, 202 ref., 394, 415 ref., 434
 Posadas, 768, 1507
 Poser, 1077
 Possadas, 441
 Pothier, 1005, 1017 ref.
 Pottoppidian, 1619
 Potron, 842, 1539
 Pottien, 819
 Poucet, 1654
 Pound, 371
 Powell, 412, 530, 1172-3, 1195, 1357
 Prajapati, 4
 Prendergast, 1628
 Prentiss, 1324 ref.
 Pressat, 1551
 Preti, 182
 Pricolo, 340-1
 Prior, 1374
 Procke, 1583
 Procopius, 11, 1266 ref.
 Procopius of Casarea, 1039
 Prout, 536, 540, 914, 1396, 1437, 1439 ref.
 Prowazek, 264, 271, 276, 279 ref., 282, 294, 308-9, 313, 312, 315, 324, 333, 339-40, 347 ref., 349, 351-3, 402, 404, 440, 410-3, 415 ref., 442-3, 447 ref., 1172-4, 1561, 1576 ref., 1647, 1650, 1662 ref.
 Pruner Bey, 13, 62, 554, 619, 1120, 1236
 Pujati, 1232
 Pujol, 909 ref.
 Pulvirenti, 363
 Purvis, Dr. Corrington, 371
 Pusey, 1504, 1525, 1610, 1641
 Pym, 992
 Pythagoras, 10 ref.
 Quelch, 219
 Quelch, J. J., 253 ref.
 Quevedo, 805

- Quevenne, 1124
 Quincke, 1363

 Rabagliati, 939 ref., 1200
 Rabinowitsch, 320, 1148, 1151
 Radaeli, 843, 1534, 1540 ref.
 Raël, 1234, 1266 ref.
 Ragle, La, 1458
 Raillet, 13, 478
 Raillet, A., 487 ref.
 Raillet and Henry, 549 567 ref.
 Raillet and Lucet, 421
 Raimbert, 20
 Rainey, 551
 Ramazzini, 1231-2
 Ramond, 181, 201, 832, 1146 ref., 1525 ref.
 Ranke, 96, 107, 311
 Ransom, 512 ref.
 Raptschewsky, 1575 ref.
 Raspail, 144 ref.
 Raswedenkow, 513
 Rat, Numa, 1171, 1195 ref., 1276, 1601-2 ref.
 Rattray, 86-8, 92, 96, 98, 107
 Ratzeburg, 194
 Ratzel, 78 ref.
 Raubitschek, 1241, 1243, 1266 ref.
 Rauken, 410-11, 416 ref., 1195
 Ravaut, 815, 817
 Raven, 282
 Ray, 512
 Raymond, 1050
 Raymondi, 1199
 Raynaud, 1018, 1021, 1024, 1027 ref.
 Reale, 820, 1503
 Rebowski, 1349
 Redi, 182, 202 ref., 217, 249, 470, 490, 509
 Reece, 25 ref.
 Reed, 19, 445, 1005-7, 1017 ref.
 Reed, Mc C., 25 ref.
 Regis, 909 ref.
 Reichert, 217-8, 226, 229-30, 233-4, 241, 251, 253 ref.
 Remak, 419, 757
 Remlinger, 1448, 1551, 1575 ref.
 Remy, St., 436, 1271
 Renner, 158, 160 ref. 169, ref., 1445
 Renoy Juhel, 1520

 Reschad, 1149
 Reynaud, 26 ref., 92, 107
 Reynault, 1542
 Reynier, 809, 1540 ref.
 Reynolds, 921
 Rezeide, 971-2
 Rhazea, 12
 Rhazes, 1123
 Rho, 22, 26-7 ref., 165, 215 ref., 1017 ref., 1112 ref., 1397 ref., 1415 ref., 1525 ref.
 Rho, F., 169 ref., 1570, 1576 ref.
 Ribas, 1005, 1009
 Ricardo, Miss, 696
 Ricchi, 902
 Richards, 1554
 Richardson, 125
 Richet, 180, 201 ref.
 Ricketts, 378, 768-9, 941, 943, 950 ref., 1504-5
 Ridley, 150
 Riecke, 1048
 Riehl, 1549, 1551, 1575
 Rieyer, Overbeck de, 1209
 Ringer, 107, 478
 Risb, 1655
 Ritchie, 1046, 1047
 Ringenbach, 320
 Ripley, 78 ref., 1049
 Ritter, 1098, 1112 ref.
 Rivas, 411, 1191, 1195
 Riviere, 819, 1537
 Rixford, 441
 Rizzuti, 1113 ref.
 Robelado, 930
 Roberts, 1084 ref., 1236, 1257, 1266 ref.
 Robertson, 446 ref., 1448 ref.
 Robertson, Argyll, 1442-3
 Robertson, Miss, 282, 308, 311, 314-7, 324-5, 354, 357, 422-3, 967
 Robertson, R., 24 ref.
 Robin, 1656
 Robineau - Desvoidy, 714, 728
 Robinson, 191, 606, 1606-7
 Robledo, 931, 934-5, 939 ref., 1191, 1195
 Robles, of Quezaltenango, 1085
 Rocamara, 1168
 Rochard, 1561
 Roche, 927

 Rochefort, 1170
 Rochoux, J. A., 1017 ref.
 Rodenwaldt, 473, 488 ref.
 Rodhain, 971, 990 ref., 1120, 1122 ref.
 Rodschild, 1304
 Roehl, 968
 Roger, G. H., 757
 Rogers, 18, 21, 27, 126, 215 ref., 217-8, 227-8, 238, 240-1, 248, 252-3 ref., 357, 757, 908, 932, 933, 939 ref., 952, 954-6, 965 ref., 1001, 1003, 1057, 1084-5 ref., 1209, 1227, 1229 ref., 1345, 1348, 1353-4, 1360 ref., 1397, 1409-10, 1415, 1445
 Rogers and Mackelvie, 1360 ref.
 Rogers and Megaw, 1360 ref.
 Rogers and Wilson, 513 ref.
 Rolander, 1153.
 Rolleston, 26 ref., 513
 Rollo, J., 24 ref.
 Roncali, 771
 Rondoni, 334, 1242
 Roos, 1363
 Roques et Bouffard, 1532 ref.
 Rosenau, 179, 201 ref., 862, 1006
 Rosenbach, 815
 Rosenberg, 202 ref., 436, 1271
 Rosenhof, 13
 Rosenthal, 128, 1379
 Ross, 16, 18, 21, 294, 308, 321, 351, 374, 387, 415 ref., 627, 848, 850, 854, 856-9, 865, 867, 887, 894, 902, 905, 909 ref., 934, 936-7, 939 ref., 952, 1006, 1021, 1210, 1329
 Ross, E. H., 303, 306, 405, 407, 409, 909 ref.
 Ross, H. C., 411, 1329
 Ross, P. H., 1093 ref.
 Ross, R., 909 ref.
 Ross and Milne, 416 ref. 939
 Rost, 1148, 1150, 1167, 1434-5, 1437

- Roth, Ling, 1617, 1623 ref.
 Roth, W. E., 27 ref.
 Rothschild, 739, 743, 745, 748, 752, 755 ref.
 Roubaud, 316, 686, 733, 967, 1445
 Rouget, 17
 Roussel, 1234-5, 1266 ref.
 Rousseau, 1112 ref.
 Rousseau (China), 1087
 Roux, 1326
 Rovelli, 512 ref.
 Royal, 1294
 Row, 361, 1551
 Rowland, 1043, 1045 ref.
 Rubard, 991
 Rubner, 85, 107
 Rudolphi, 13, 459
 Ruffer, 1421, 1434
 Ruffer and Ferguson, 1102
 Ruftz, 152
 Ruge, 27 ref., 1434, 1439 ref.
 Ruhs, 746
 Ruiz y Sandoval, 1514
 Rush, 1005
 Russell, 217, 411, 1375, 1548
 Rustomji, 1527
 Rutherford, 1229 ref.
 Rutz, 1630
 Ruysch, 510

 Sabatier, 25 ref.
 Sabella, 1172, 1192, 1194 ref., 1195 ref., 1471 ref., 1568, 1571-2, 1576 ref.
 Sabouraud, 774, 776-7, 779, 782-93, 811 ref., 837, 1474-5, 1482, 1525 ref., 1547 ref.
 Sabrazés, 1152
 Saccardo, 843, 1535
 Sachs, 187-8, 190, 202 ref., 218, 230
 Saint-Hilaire, 62
 Saint Vel, 26 ref.
 Saint-Vincent, Bory de, 61
 Saisawa, 1024
 Sakharoff, 302, 306, 926
 Salanque-Ipin, 27 ref.
 Salazar 1196, 1203
 Salese, 1124
 Salimbeni, 1005, 1010, 1017, 1355
 Salisbury, 286, 802

 Salm, 1120
 Salmon and Stiles, 606, 626 ref.
 Salomon, 404
 Salomone, 487, 489 ref.
 Salveraglio, 1265 ref.
 Salvin, 309, 324
 Salvin-Moore, 335
 Sambon, 13, 17, 101, 105, 107, 124, 126, 134, 254, 256, 265-6, 281-2, 294, 302-3, 322, 342, 344, 351, 376, 379-80, 393, 403-4, 422-3, 426, 431, 441, 446 ref., 450, 456, 484-6, 489, 490, 512, 531, 558-9, 618-22, 626 ref., 917, 945, 967, 970, 986, 990 ref., 1095, 1120, 1122 ref., 1215, 1229 ref., 1231, 1233, 1235, 1237, 1240, 1244-5, 1266 ref., 1304, 1398, 1402 ref.
 Sambon and Seligmann, 306
 Samoilowitz, 1043
 Sanarelli, 185, 202 ref., 377, 1005
 Sander, 982
 Sanderson, 967
 Sandifors, 815
 Sandoval, Rinz de, 1513, 1526 ref.
 Sandwith, 58, 488 ref., 929, 938, 939 ref., 1094, 1112 ref., 1236, 1257, 1266 ref., 1324, 1397 ref., 1423-4-5 ref., 1514, 1526 ref.
 Sanfelice, 300, 768
 Santiocchi, 551
 Saquel, 126.
 Sartory, 771, 818
 Saulie, 203 ref.
 Sauvage, 1170
 Savage, 619
 Savtschenko, 205, 215 ref.
 Schamberg, 1108, 1590, 1601
 Schamberg and Hirschler, 1602 ref.
 Schaudinn, 16, 18, 199, 203 ref., 265, 270-4, 276, 278-9, 282, 294-5-6, 300, 302-3, 306, 345, 379, 381, 384, 391, 393, 405, 415 ref., 419, 421, 452-3-4 ref., 568 ref., 848, 855, 872, 909 ref., 926, 1362
 Schaudinn and Hoffmann, 416 ref.
 Schaumann, 181, 202 ref., 909
 Scheer, Van der, 1090, 1215, 1332
 Schellac, 392
 Schellach, 400, 416 ref., 931
 Schellong, 913, 921
 Schenk, 831, 1509
 Schereschewsky, 406, 416 ref.
 Scheube, 26 ref., 169, 171, 178 ref., 214, 500, 950 ref., 1195 ref., 1208, 1209, 1211, 1215, 1216, 1218, 1220, 1229 ref., 1392, 1397 ref., 1415 ref., 1435, 1441, 1459 ref., 1526, 1540 ref., 1659
 Scheult, 1108
 Schiller, 1301
 Schilling, 27 ref., 909 ref.
 Schilling-Torgau, 377, 520, 558, 918, 1304
 Schimm, 1435
 Schiner, 737.
 Schlimmer, 949, 951 ref.
 Schmeichler, 442
 Schmidt, 201, 291, 1652
 Schmitz, 1360 ref.
 Schnauss, 626 ref.
 Schnee, 203 ref.
 Schneider, 566 ref.
 Schomberg, 128, 1623 ref.
 Schönlein, 757
 Schorer, 1375
 Schornberg, 1608
 Schötmüller, 1049, 1073
 Schubert, 763, 810
 Schufeldt, 251
 Schüffner, 1176, 1226
 Schulgin, 1549, 1551, 1556, 1575 ref.
 Schüller and Thayer, 377
 Schutz, 1350, 1360 ref.
 Sclavo, 15
 Scordo, 1113 ref.
 Scott, 58, 1049
 Searcy, 1236
 Sebastiany, 203 ref.

- Seeber, 437, 1268
 Seidelin, 377, 1003 ref.,
 1006, 1007, 1017 ref.
 Sein y Sein, 1316
 Seligmann, 27 ref., 60,
 78 ref., 115, 119, 166,
 303, 422-3, 446 ref.,
 1275
 Semple, 1019, 1048
 Sen, B.M.C., 144 ref.
 Seneca, 14
 Seniyyak, 763
 Séquinaud, 993
 Sergeant, 644 ref., 737
 ref., 938-9 ref., 993,
 1018
 Sergeant, Ed., 17, 1271,
 1273 ref., 1281, 1551,
 1662 ref.
 Sergeant, frères, 294, 300,
 303, 342, 363, 441,
 866, 1272
 Seriziat, 1551
 Sevenet, 363
 Sewall, 130
 Sfameni, 1547, 1547 ref.
 Sharp, 644 ref., 755 ref.
 Shattuck, 1047
 Shaw, 1021, 1024
 Sheeman, 178 ref.
 Shein, 375
 Shennen, 1176
 Shichore, 991 ref.
 Shiga, 15, 968, 1150,
 1375-6, 1386, 1390,
 1394, 1397 ref.
 Shillong, 17
 Shipley, 198, 463, 487
 ref., 566 ref., 626 ref.,
 648, 658, 687 ref., 755
 ref.
 Shufeldt, R. W., 253 ref.
 Shwayama 1045 ref.
 Sibthorpe, 1124
 Sicard, 832
 Siccordi, 1324
 Sick, 568 ref.
 Sicre, 1575 ref.
 Siebenmann, 764, 801,
 803, 805, 836
 Siebert, 415 ref., 1175,
 1195 ref., 1571-2
 Siebold, Von, 13
 Siedlecki, 392, 406, 416
 ref.
 Siegel, 405, 423, 445
 Sigaud, J. F., 25 ref.,
 1124
 Sigmund, 1235
 Signoret, 644 ref.
 Sikul, 399
 Siler, 1236, 1244-5
 Silva, da, 485, 489 ref.,
 1149, 1398
 Simon, G. (Berlin), 616
 Simond, 1005, 1008,
 1010, 1017 ref., 1048
 Simonin, 404
 Simpson, 25 ref., 130,
 134, 144 ref., 187,
 1040, 1042, 1045,
 1213, 1225, 1346,
 1360 ref.
 Singer, 20, 27 ref., 1339,
 1417, 1420 ref., 1435
 Sion, 1265 ref.
 Sircar, M. L., 144 ref.
 Sisson, 1652, 1662 ref.
 Skelton, 921, 923
 Skinner, 1122 ref., 1435,
 1439
 Slitting, 1654
 Sluka, 362
 Smith, 19, 160 ref., 169,
 178 ref., 182, 217, 226,
 436, 626 ref., 706,
 1196, 1207 ref., 1305,
 1307, 1549, 1561, 1575,
 1582
 Smith, Colonel, 1652
 Smith, G. A., 939 ref.
 Smith, Theobald, 303
 Smith and Goeth, 568
 ref.
 Smithson, 1089
 Snow, 1360 ref.
 Solovieff, 1397 ref.
 Soltau, 1319
 Sommer, 1153, 1611
 Sonnenberg, 1525
 Sonsino, 13, 15, 490, 500,
 558, 1398, 1425 ref.
 Sorel, 1148, 1151, 1169
 ref.
 Soulayet, 92
 Spagnolio, 962
 Spence, 1449
 Spencer and Gillen, 78
 ref.
 Spigelius, 1047
 Spiller, 909 ref.
 Spitz, 814
 Splendore, 360, 368, 415
 ref., 446 ref., 643 ref.,
 832-3, 843 ref., 1191,
 1319, 1504, 1506,
 1509-10, 1525 ref.,
 1549, 1557, 1575 ref.,
 1576 ref.
 Sprengel, 27 ref.
 Sprouk, 1176
 Sriot, 203 ref.
 Stanley, 968, 1217, 1229
 ref.
 Stanton, 83, 471, 1209,
 1210
 Starcke, 1662 ref.
 Starcovich, 19
 Stargardt, 442
 St. Artault, 291
 Statham, 953
 Steffen, 203 ref.
 Steiner, 1537
 Steinkuhl, 125
 Stendel, 921
 Stendener, 836
 Stephansky, 1148, 1151
 Stephens, 16, 17, 234,
 310, 321, 387, 486,
 489 ref., 513, 568 ref.,
 660, 712, 738 ref., 857,
 866, 893, 913-4, 916-7,
 924 ref., 952, 967,
 1442, 1444, 1448 ref.
 Stephens and Christo-
 phers, 908 ref., 924 ref.
 Sterling, 510, 513
 Sternberg, 1005, 1012
 Stevenel, 1172
 Stevens, 325, 513, 551,
 1443
 Stewart, 227, 234
 Sticker, 1151, 1156
 Stiles, 13, 14, 20, 125,
 377, 463, 478, 487
 ref., 488 ref., 490,
 496, 503, 511, 512,
 513, 521, 543, 545,
 555, 560, 564, 566
 ref., 567 ref., 568 ref.,
 569 ref., 602, 617,
 1117, 1122, 1304, 1324
 ref., 1448 ref.
 Stiles, Ch. Wardell, and
 Garrison, 512
 Stiles and Frankland,
 566 ref.
 Stiles and Garrison, 1324
 ref.
 Stiles and Goldberger,
 487.
 Stiles and Hassell, 512
 ref.
 Stiles and Ray, 511 ref.
 Stiles and Taylor, 511
 ref.
 Still, 996, 1094, 1275
 Stimson, 377, 1006, 1017
 ref.
 Stinton, 286
 Stirling, 511
 Stirling and Verco, 512
 ref.

- Stitt, 1290, 1570, 1576
 Stiven, 1238
 Stock, 1425 ref.
 Stockman, 169, 606
 Stokes, 769
 Stolnikoff, 350, 377
 Stott, 931
 Strabo, 1208
 Strachan, 1445
 Strahan, 706
 Strambio, 1230, 1233,
 1266 ref.
 Strangeways-Pigg, 854
 St. Remy, 436
 Strickland, 340, 590
 Strikarathudatta, 7
 Strong, 401, 452, 567
 ref., 932, 1030, 1033,
 1035, 1044, 1172,
 1192, 1195 ref., 1229
 ref., 1348, 1355, 1357,
 1360 ref., 1373, 1375,
 1377, 1397 ref., 1486,
 1549, 1551, 1570, 1575
 ref., 1576 ref.
 Strothers, 926, 1094.
 Stuart, 107
 Sturgess, 435, 1271
 Styles, 941-2
 Suga, 476, 1114
 Sullivan, J., 26 ref.
 Sumichrast, 250, 253
 ref.
 Supan, 28, 58
 Surveyor, 899, 1527,
 1540 ref.
 Susruta, 7, 1343, 1361
 Sutton, 996, 1658, 1663
 ref.
 Swammerdam, 13
 Sweet, 567 ref., 1378
 Swelengrebell, 324, 340
 Swift, 125
 Swingle, 349
 Sydenham, 13, 20, 1047
 Symmers, 483, 1398,
 1402 ref.
 Tabara, 171
 Takaki, 83 ref., 1214
 Takana, 946
 Takinioff, 977
 Tallquist, 201 ref.
 Tamancheff, 1356
 Tamayo, 1199
 Tanaka, 947, 950 ref.
 Tarozzi, 843, 1534
 Taschenberg, 739, 755
 ref., 949
 Tashim Ibrayhim, 362
 Tasset, 1197
 Tausig, 992
 Taute, 325
 Taylor, 511 ref., 1216
 Teague, 1030, 1033,
 1035, 1145 ref.
 Tedeschi, 993
 Teilleux, 173
 Telemann, 1311
 Tennent, 171, 574, 625
 ref.
 Terni, 1041, 1044
 Terry, 203 ref.
 Tertre, P. du, 1004
 Terzaghi, 1232
 Thayer, 908 ref.
 Thebbult, 1319
 Theiler, 17, 19, 344, 404,
 415 ref.
 Themison of Laodicea,
 11
 Theobald, 615, 644 ref.,
 647, 649, 663, 666-8,
 687 ref., 738 ref.,
 1008, 1126
 Theodori, 1235
 Thevenot, 25 ref.
 Thevet, 20, 23
 Thiebierge, 1547
 Thiéry, 1232, 1234
 Thin, 1154, 1326, 1330,
 1342 ref., 1604
 Thiroux, 294, 334, 341,
 816, 979, 982, 991
 Thoinot, 1094
 Tholozan, 1548
 Thomas, 24 ref., 321, 334,
 460, 968, 982, 1008,
 1017 ref., 1019, 1602
 ref.
 Thomas, P., 487 ref.
 Thomas, R., 24 ref.,
 320
 Thomas and Breinl, 968,
 991
 Thomas, Wolferston, 550
 Thompson, 203 ref., 340
 866, 905, 1030, 1166,
 1169, 1213
 Thompstone, 1443, 1614,
 1630 ref.
 Thompstone and Ben-
 nett, 1085, 1087, 1112
 ref.
 Thomson, 21, 327, 850,
 867, 894, 1049, 1225,
 1551, 1554
 Thornley, 96
 Thorpe, 1087, 1112 ref.,
 1125
 Thudicum, 1626
 Tictin, 926, 939 ref.
 Tidswell, 244, 253 ref.,
 1148
 Timpano, 1575 ref.
 Tiraboschi, 748, 755 ref.,
 993
 Tirielli, 1242-3
 Tizzoni, 20, 1243
 Tobey, 303, 306, 344,
 427
 Todd, 16, 17, 18, 187,
 303, 306, 337, 341,
 399, 400, 427, 616,
 731, 738 ref., 934,
 936-7, 967, 969, 977,
 982-3, 990 ref., 1120,
 1561-2, 1576 ref.
 Tokarski, A. A., 1459
 ref.
 Tomaselli, 363, 911, 913,
 915, 924 ref.,
 Tommasini, G., 1017
 ref.
 Tonkin, 1169 ref.
 Topping, 616
 Topsent, 1583
 Torok, 1606-7
 Torrey, 1377
 Torrigiani, F., 1017 ref.
 Torte, 13, 909 ref., 913
 Touatre, 1012, 1017 ref.
 Toussaint, 144 ref., 404
 Towne, 1017 ref.
 Townsend, 1234
 Tozzetti, 173
 Travers, 906, 909 ref.,
 1211
 Treille, 1561
 Trembley, 15
 Treutlein, 359, 1210
 Treutzler, 539
 Treves, 909 ref.
 Tribondeau, 793, 1486,
 1491
 Troisier, 769
 Truffi, 757
 Tscherepkin, 1551
 Tschudi, 1196, 1207 ref.
 Tsugitani, 268
 Tulloch, 310, 320, 738
 ref., 967, 991 ref.
 Tulpus, 1209
 Tupper, 1197
 Turkhud, 1441
 Turnbull, 568 ref.
 Turner, 483, 1190, 1398,
 1486
 Turnour, 27 ref.
 Turton, 1321, 1324
 Twining, 1325
 Twort, 1397 ref.
 Tyler, 57-8, 1236

- Tyrrel, 755 ref.
 Tyson, 490
 Tyzzer, 198, 203 ref.
 Ucke, 202 ref.
 Uhlenhuth, 320, 442, 981
 Ulbrick, 1663
 Umachigi, 144 ref.
 Unna, 100, 792, 835, 1148, 1154, 1169 ref., 1175, 1521, 1527, 1531, 1551, 1576 ref., 1601, 1607
 Uribe, 1513
 Uriburu, 776, 783
 Urriola, 863
 Vachaspati, 7
 Vadela, 532
 Vāgbhata, 7
 Vahlkamfia, 267
 Valdez, Oviedo, 1170
 Valenciennes, 215
 Valenta, 202 ref.
 Valentin, 17, 183-4, 186, 321, 344
 Valerio, Galli, 18, 368, 371
 Valle, C., 1005
 Vallin, 125
 Vamberg, 996
 Van der Bing, 1342 ref.
 Van der Burg, 1229 ref.
 Van Eecke, 436
 Van Houten, 1169 ref.
 Van Overbeck de Meyer, 1229 ref.
 Vannini, 1324 ref.
 Van Standel, 105
 Vanzetti, 1434-5
 Vaquez, 1509
 Varandaens, 1123
 Wasielewski, 1551
 Vassal, 389, 1094
 Vaucher, 830
 Vaughan, 166, 167 ref., 178 ref., 215 ref., 1005
 Veale, 1019, 1027
 Vecchi, 1207 ref.
 Vecchio, de, 1200, 1201
 Vedder, 21, 1213, 1225, 1229 ref., 1397 ref.
 Védy, 1437, 1439 ref.
 Vega, Don Juan de, 12
 Vega, Garcilas de, 1196
 Vegrès, 1073
 Veillon, 1549, 1574 ref.
 Velasco, Juan de, 1513
 Veratas, 911, 913
 Verco, 511, 513
 Verdun, 811 ref., 843 ref., 1540
 Verdun and Brugant, 488 ref.
 Verbac, 757
 Verez, 1196
 Verjbitski, 739, 1034
 Verral, 737 ref.
 Verth, 27 ref.
 Véry, 445
 Verybitski (St. Petersburg), 1030
 Viallet, 888, 909 ref.
 Vianna, 308, 327, 362, 985, 991 ref., 1550
 Vicentini, 965 ref.
 Vickery and Richardson, 1112 ref.
 Vidá, 385
 Viereck, 271, 1364
 Vierordt, 84
 Vijaya Rakshita, 7
 Villers, de, 1008
 Vincent, 14, 15, 924, 1074, 1368, 1371, 1401, 1527, 1530, 1531, 1561-2, 1565, 1576 ref.
 Viola, 866
 Violle, 1397 ref.
 Virchow, 16, 421, 510, 1148, 1154, 1289, 1549, 1656
 Virey, 61
 Vivaldi, 1363, 1375
 Voges, 17
 Vohl, 125
 Volney, 1548
 Volpino, 363, 440, 1241
 Voorthuis, 1211, 1216
 Vorderman, 1210-1
 Vribechyel, 1513
 Vuillemin, 763, 766, 768, 829, 840, 842, 1521, 1526 ref.
 Vulpian, 214
 Waddell, 146, 154, 156-7, 159-60 ref, 167, 169, 176, 178 ref.
 Wade, P., 24 ref.
 Wagner, 755 ref., 1078
 Waldheim, Fischer de, 949, 951 ref.
 Waldo, 58 ref.
 Walker, 217, 237-8, 240-1, 253 ref., 275, 332, 687, 728, 737, 1034, 1607
 Wall, 993, 1360 ref.
 Waltz, 103
 Ward, 57-8, 478, 485, 487 ref., 511, 513, 565, 567, ref. 1442-3, 1448 ref.
 Wardell, Ch., 512 ref.
 Waring, 25 ref.
 Warnock, 1236, 1266
 Warren, 1017 ref.
 Wasielewski, 440, 1574 ref.
 Wassermann, 1195 ref.
 Waters, 1283, 1290 ref., 1355
 Watson, 377, 904, 906, 909 ref.
 Watt, 178
 Watts, 1172
 Webster, 1213
 Wedding, 100
 Weenberg, 1448 ref.
 Wehmer, 793, 1525 ref.
 Weigenberger, 202 ref.
 Weikard, 125
 Weinberg, 568 ref., 1305
 Weir-Mitchell, 217, 218, 224-34, 242, 253 ref., 252 ref.
 Weiss, 1235
 Welch, 1108, 1120, 1122 ref.
 Wellman, 144 ref., 192-3, 197, 201, 203 ref., 416 ref., 534, 578, 594, 640, 644 ref., 735, 755 ref., 936, 1168, 1172, 1195 ref., 1272, 1273 ref., 1294, 1319, 1457-8
 Wells, 201, 215 ref., 268
 Welting, 166
 Wemberg, 1308
 Wenyon, 268-72, 279 ref., 290, 361, 363, 404, 542, 549, 1364, 1552, 1554
 Werner, 202 ref., 360, 909 ref., 939 ref., 1576 ref.
 Wernich, 1209
 Wernicke, 437, 441, 768, 772, 1269, 1504, 1507
 Wersung, 737 ref.
 Wertheim, 801
 West, 253 ref.
 Westbrook, 19, 377
 Weszpremi, 1043
 Wettstein, 830
 Wherry, 1034, 1360 ref., 1570
 Whipple, 182, 202 ref.
 White, 1146 ref.

- Whitfield, 768, 1474,
 1525 ref.
 Whitman, 575, 625 ref.
 Whitmore, 268, 270, 279
 ref., 287, 1093, 1364
 Whittle, 27 ref.
 Widal, 759, 1048, 1071,
 1073, 1289, 1374
 Widmark, 99
 Wied, 19
 Wiedmann, 714
 Wienfeld, 805
 Wight, 251
 Wijesinghe, 27 ref.
 Wild, 58
 Wile, 1619
 Willey, 285, 423, 442,
 446 ref., 447 ref.,
 1271, 1273 ref.
 Williams, 440, 1607
 Williamson, 1422, 1425
 ref.
 Willis, 1047
 Williston, 687 ref.
 Willson, 253 ref.
 Wilson, 19, 184, 186-7-
 8, 202, 377, 513, 1525
 Wilson, Erasmus, 634
 Wilson, J., 25 ref.
 Wilson and Chowning,
 415 ref., 941-2, 950
 ref.
 Wiltshire, 375
 Wimberley, 1027 ref.
 Winckel, 1124
 Winckler, 1209, 1217
 Windsor, 150, 160 ref.,
 169 ref.
 Wingrave, 1663 ref.
 Winogradoff, 474
 Winterbottom, 24 ref.
 966, 991 ref.
 Wintreher, 1324
 Wise, 27 ref., 402, 907,
 909 ref., 1129, 1130,
 1134, 1137, 1146, 1156,
 1168, 1169 ref., 1433
 ref., 1540 ref., 1571
 Woit, 1169 ref.
 Wolbach, 447 ref., 1561-
 2, 1576 ref.
 Wolf, 1084 ref.
 Wolfenden, 217
 Wolfrum, 442
 Wood, 134, 203 ref.,
 626 ref., 771, 1236,
 1243, 1266 ref.
 Wood, H. C., 125
 Wood, Major M. W., 940
 Woodcock, 258, 282, 294,
 296, 300, 310, 351
 Woodruff, 95, 101, 102,
 104, 107
 Woods, 83
 Woodward, 543
 Woolley, 489 ref., 963,
 965 ref., 1117, 1122
 ref., 1169, 1514
 Worcester, 78 ref.
 Worthe, 320
 Wreden, 803
 Wrench and Boycott,
 569 ref.
 Wright, 15, 18, 202,
 360, 366, 372, 808,
 814, 996, 1019, 1027
 ref., 1048, 1084 ref.,
 1229 ref., 1527, 1548,
 1549, 1551, 1576 ref.
 Wright, Hamilton, 1209,
 1211, 1217, 1218, 1220,
 1221
 Wright, of Boston, 17
 Wucherer, 523, 555, 1124,
 1304
 Wunderlich, 92, 96
 Wurtz, 536, 1442
 Wurtz et Clerc, 1443,
 1448 ref.
 Wyman, 619
 Yahoub, 144 ref.
 Yakimoff, 344, 350, 367,
 377
 Yale Massey, 714
 Yamagata, 476
 Yamagiwa, 478, 1211
 Yamanouchi, 981
 Yanin, 842
 Versin, 15, 917, 1030,
 1094
 Versin and Vassal, 1112
 ref.
 Yorke, 17, 315, 317, 320,
 325, 912, 914, 919,
 924 ref., 967, 970,
 983, 1663 ref.
 Young, 1125, 1128, 1130,
 1146
 Younge, 1342 ref.
 Zalesky, 214
 Zambaco, 1148, 1165
 Zammit, 1018, 1019
 Zanardini, 1371
 Zanetti, 1232
 Zarate, Agustin de,
 1196
 Zarfl, 362
 Zecchinelli, 1233
 Zeder, 13, 459, 490
 Zegers, 1274
 Zeiler, 911
 Zenoni, 829
 Zérvos, Dr. Skévos, 180
 201 ref.
 Ziegler, 1374
 Ziemann, 17, 303, 306,
 342, 899, 908 ref.,
 1434, 1437, 1610,
 1623 ref.
 Zschokke, 512 ref.
 Zupitza, 345, 982
 Zupnik, 1077
 Zurtz, 138
 Zür, Werth, 1439

An Abridged List of Works

PUBLISHED BY

BAILLIÈRE, TINDALL & COX.

ADAMS & CASSIDY'S Acute Abdominal Diseases, including Abdominal Injuries and the Complications of External Hernia. Demy 8vo. Pp. x+572, with 28 Illustrations. Price 12s. 6d. net.

AXENFELD'S Bacteriology of the Eye.

Translated by ANGUS MACNAB, F.R.C.S. Royal 8vo. Pp. xv+410, with 105 Illustrations, mostly coloured. Price 21s. net.

BAYLY'S Clinical Pathology of Syphilis and Para-Syphilis. Fcap 8vo. Pp. xiv+194, with 3 Plates and 20 Illustrations in the text. Limp leather, gilt top. Price 5s. net.

BRÜNING'S Direct Laryngoscopy, Bronchoscopy, and Œsophagoscopy. Translated and Edited by W. G. HOWARTH, F.R.C.S. Demy 8vo., xiv+370, with 114 Plates and other Illustrations. Price 15s. net.

BUCHANAN'S Manual of Anatomy, Systematic and Practical, including Embryology. In 2 volumes. Price 12s. 6d. each net. Or complete in 1 volume. Price 21s. net. Demy 8vo. Pp. 1572, with 631 Illustrations, mostly original, and in several colours. (*University Series.*)

CABOT'S Physical Diagnosis.

Fifth Edition. Royal 8vo. Pp. xxii+520, with 5 Plates and 268 Illustrations. Price 15s. net.

CASTELLANI & CHALMERS' Manual of Tropical Medicine. Second Edition. Demy 8vo, Pp. xxxii+1748, with 15 Coloured Plates and 630 Illustrations, mostly original. Price 21s. net. (*University Series.*)

CLARKE'S Errors of Accommodation, and Refraction of the Eye. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. Pp. x+230, with 88 Illustrations, plain and coloured. Price 5s. net.

DIEULAFOY'S Text-Book of Medicine.

Translated by V. E. COLLINS and J. A. LIEBMANN. In 2 volumes. Second Edition. Royal 8vo. Pp. xxiv+2156, with 9 Coloured Plates and 99 Illustrations. Price 25s. net.

FINDLEY'S Diseases of Women.

Royal 8vo. Pp. 954, with 38 Plates, Coloured and Plain, and 632 Illustrations in the text. Price 30s. net.

FITZWILLIAMS' Operative Surgery, with Surgical Anatomy and Surface Markings. Demy 8vo. Pp. viii+450, with 284 Illustrations. Price 10s. 6d. net.

FRENCH'S Medical Laboratory Methods and Tests. Third Edition. Pp. viii+202, with 88 Figures, plain and coloured. Leather, gilt tops. Price 5s. net.

GRAY'S Diseases of the Ear. Demy 8vo. Pp. xii+388, with 53 Plates, of which 37 are Stereoscopic, and 70 other Illustrations. Price, with Stereoscope, 12s. 6d. net.

GREEN'S Pathology. Eleventh Edition. Royal 8vo. Pp. x+642, with 350 Illustrations. Price 15s. net. (*University Series.*)

HARSTON'S Care and Treatment of European Children in the Tropics. Crown 8vo. Pp. xvi+232, with 17 Plates, plain and coloured. Price 7s. 6d.

HYDE'S Diseases of the Skin. Eighth Edition. Royal 8vo. Pp. xxviii+1126, with 58 Plates and 223 Illustrations, Plain and Coloured. Price 25s. net.

JELLETT'S Manual of Midwifery. Second Edition. Demy 8vo. Pp. xiv+1210, with 17 Plates and 557 Illustrations, plain and coloured. Price 21s. net. (*University Series.*)

JONES' Papers of Psycho-Analysis. Demy 8vo. Pp. xvi+432. Price 10s. 6d. net.

KANAVEL'S Infections of the Hand. A Guide to the Surgical Treatment of Acute and Chronic Suppurative Processes in the Fingers, Hand, and Forearm. Royal 8vo. Pp. xiv+448, with 133 Illustrations. Price 15s. net.

KERR'S Operative Midwifery. Second Edition. Royal 8vo. Pp. xiv+704, with 299 Illustrations, mostly original. Price 21s. net.

KNOCKER'S Accidents in their Medico-Legal Aspect. A Practical Guide for the Expert Witness, Solicitor, and Barrister, by leading Medical Authorities. Royal 8vo. Pp. xxviii+1266. With 206 Illustrations, Plates, and Diagrams. Price 30s. net.

KRAEPELIN'S Lectures on Clinical Psychiatry. Authorised Translation of the Second German Edition. Revised and Edited by THOMAS JOHNSTONE, M.D. EDIN., M.R.C.P. LOND. Third English Edition. Pp. xviii+368. Price 10s. 6d. net.

LAKE'S Handbook of Diseases of the Ear. Fourth Edition. Demy 8vo. Pp. xiv+286, with 4 Coloured Plates and 48 original Illustrations, and 77 Figures in the text. Price 7s. 6d. net.

LAMB'S Diseases of the Throat, Nose, and Ear. Third Edition. Crown 8vo. Pp. xvi+352, with 55 Illustrations. Price 7s. 6d. net.

LUYS' Gonorrhœa and its Complications.

Translated by A. FOERSTER, M.R.C.S. Demy 8vo. Pp. xx+384, with 200 Illustrations and 3 Coloured Plates. Price 15s. net.

McCAW'S Diseases of Children.

Demy 8vo. Pp. xii+524. With 14 Plates and Illustrations. Price 10s. 6d. net.

McKISACK'S Dictionary of Medical Diagnosis.

Second Edition. Demy 8vo. Pp. xii+590, with 76 Illustrations. Price 10s. 6d. net.

MARSHALL'S Syphilology and Venereal Disease.

Second Edition. Demy 8vo. Pp. xii+560 with 18 Illustrations. Price 10s. 6d. net.

MAY & WORTH'S Diseases of the Eye.

Third Edition. Demy 8vo. Pp. viii+428, with 336 Illustrations, including 22 Coloured Plates. Price 10s. 6d. net.

MINETT'S Diagnosis of Bacteria and Blood-Parasites.

Second Edition. Fcap. 8vo. Pp. viii+80. Price 2s. 6d. net.

MONRO'S Manual of Medicine.

Third Edition. Demy 8vo. Pp. xxii+1024, with 42 Illustrations, plain and coloured. Price 15s. net. (*University Series.*)

MUMMERY'S After-Treatment of Operations.

Third Edition. Crown 8vo. Pp. x+252, with 38 Illustrations. Price 5s. net.

ROBERTS' Surgery of Deformities of the Face, including Cleft Palate.

Royal 8vo. Pp. viii+274. Price 12s. 6d. net.

ROSE & CARLESS' Manual of Surgery.

Eighth Edition. Demy 8vo. Pp. xii+1406. With 12 Coloured Plates and 581 Illustrations. Price 21s. net. (*University Series.*)

SCHMIEDEN'S The Course of Operative Surgery.

Translated from the Second German Edition and Edited by ARTHUR TURNBULL, M.A., M.B., B.Sc. GLASG. Royal 8vo. Pp. xx+346, with 435 Illustrations, mostly coloured. Price 12s. 6d. net.

SIMON'S Infection and Immunity, including Serum Therapy, Vaccine Therapy, Chemo-Therapy, and Serum Diagnosis.

Second Edition. Royal 8vo. Pp. x+325, with 18 Illustrations and 11 Coloured Plates. Price 14s. net.

SIMON & BASE'S Manual of Chemistry (specially adapted for Students of Medicine, Pharmacy, and Dentistry).

Tenth Edition. Royal 8vo. Pp. xviii+774, with 64 Chemical Reactions in colour, and 82 other Illustrations. Price 15s. net.

SMALLWOOD'S Text-Book of Biology.

Royal 8vo. Pp. 285, with 243 Illustrations and 13 Coloured Plates.
Price 10s. 6d. net.

STARR'S Organic and Functional Nervous Diseases.

Fourth Edition. Royal 8vo. Pp. 970, with 30 Plates, plain and coloured, and 323 Figures in the text. Price 25s. net.

STEWART'S Manual of Physiology.

Sixth Edition. Demy 8vo. Pp. xx + 1064, with 2 Coloured Plates and 449 Illustrations. Price 18s. net. (*University Series.*)

TOROK & GROUT'S Surgery of the Eye.

Royal 8vo. Pp. 508, with 2 Coloured Plates and 509 Illustrations, Plain and Coloured. Price 18s. net.

TUCKEY'S Treatment by Hypnotism and Suggestion.

Sixth Edition. Demy 8vo. Pp. xxviii + 432. Price 10s. 6d. net.

TURNER'S Radium : Its Physics and Therapeutics.

Second Edition. Crown 8vo. Pp. xiv + 170. With 40 Plates and Illustrations. Price 5s. net.

VULPIUS' The Treatment of Infantile Paralysis.

Translated by ALAN H. TODD, M.B., B.S., B.Sc. LOND. Royal 8vo. Pp. x + 318, with 243 Illustrations. Price 10s. 6d. net.

WALSH'S Diseases of the Skin.

Demy 8vo. Pp. xvi + 300, with 29 Illustrations. Price 6s. net.

WHEELER'S Operative Surgery.

Second Edition. Demy 8vo. Pp. xiv + 296, with 157 Illustrations. Price 7s. 6d. net.

WHITLA'S Medicine. In two volumes. Pp. 1900. Price 25s. net.

„ **Materia Medica.** Ninth Edition. Pp. xiv + 674, with 23 Illustrations. Price 9s. net.

„ **Dictionary of Treatment.** Fifth Edition.
Pp. x + 1204. Price 16s. net.

WILLIAMS' Minor Maladies and their Treatment.

Third Edition. Crown 8vo. Pp. viii + 396. Price 5s. net.

WITTHAUS' Manual of Toxicology.

Second Edition. Royal 8vo. Pp. x + 1262, with 36 Illustrations. Price 30s. net.

YOUNGER'S Insanity in Everyday Practice.

Second Edition. Crown 8vo. Pp. viii + 124. Price 3s. 6d. net.

LONDON :

BAILLIÈRE, TINDALL & COX, 8, HENRIETTA ST., COVENT GARDEN.

1939-1

1090-1

PLEASE DO NOT
REMOVE FROM
LIBRARY.



13-10-21



